

*The*  
COMPLETE  
POETICAL  
WORKS OF

*Browning*



*Cambridge Edition*

# The Works of

## *Browning*

Although passionately interested in the revolutionary social, political, and religious issues of the nineteenth century, Robert Browning remained philosophically less disturbed than any other major English literary figure of his time. Two chief tenets of his consistently optimistic philosophy permeate his poetry: that the proof of the existence of a benevolent God and of the immortal value of man is expressed in love; and that "man's reach should exceed his grasp."

Browning seems never to have been haunted by Tennyson's fear that the collapse of Victorian idealism would mean the destruction of value. On the contrary, he could join Hopkins in the praise of undealized reality, "All things counter, spare, strange," as evidence of the power of God and the fertility of His universe.

Believing that the highest truth is to be found in the individual, Browning was led to the study of man's soul and mind; and in his dramatic monologues, he attempted to reveal the innermost selves of the persons he portrayed. He possessed an alertness, an exuberance, an intellectual subtlety, that made every object with which he came in contact a possible subject for his fertile, dramatic imagination.















**The Cambridge Edition of the Poets**

**BROWNING**

EDITED BY

**HORACE E. SCUDDER**

## The Cambridge Poets

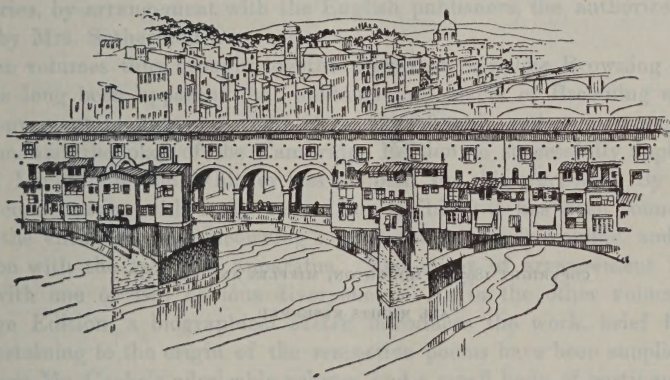
---

*Edited by*

BROWNING	HORACE E. SCUDDER
MRS. BROWNING	HARRIET WATERS PRESTON
BURNS	W. E. HENLEY
BYRON	PAUL E. MORE
CHAUCER	F. N. ROBINSON
DRYDEN	GEORGE R. NOYES
ENGLISH AND SCOTTISH	HELEN CHILD SARGENT
POPULAR BALLADS	GEORGE L. KITTREDGE
HOLMES	HORACE E. SCUDDER
KEATS	HORACE E. SCUDDER
LONGFELLOW	HORACE E. SCUDDER
LOWELL	HORACE E. SCUDDER
MILTON	HARRIS FRANCIS FLETCHER
POPE	HENRY W. BOYNTON
SCOTT	HORACE E. SCUDDER
SHAKESPEARE	W. A. NEILSON
SHELLEY	GEORGE E. WOODBERRY
SPENSER	R. E. NEIL DODGE
TENNYSON	WILLIAM J. ROLFE
WHITTIER	HORACE E. SCUDDER
WORDSWORTH	A. J. GEORGE



*The*  
*Complete Poetical Works*  
*of*  
**BROWNING**

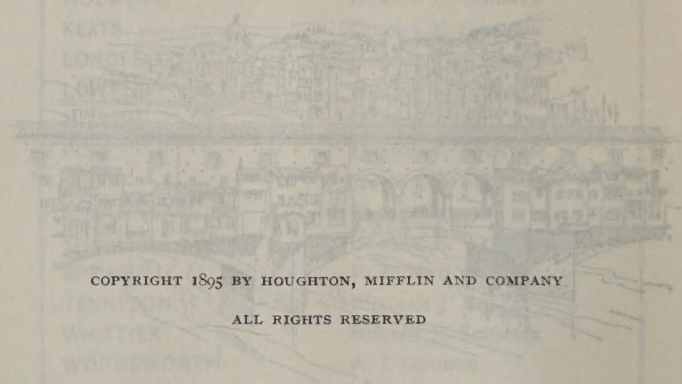


HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY BOSTON

*Cambridge Edition*

*The Riverside Press Cambridge*

# BROWNING



COPYRIGHT 1895 BY HOUGHTON, MIFFLIN AND COMPANY  
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY BOSTON

The Riverside Press  
CAMBRIDGE • MASSACHUSETTS  
PRINTED IN THE U.S.A.



## PUBLISHERS' NOTE

THE Riverside Edition of the *Poetic and Dramatic Works of Robert Browning* was published first in 1887. It included all the writings which the American publishers had from time to time brought out by arrangement with Mr. Browning or his representatives. A year later the English publishers issued a new and revised edition, whereupon the Riverside Edition was carefully compared with the author's latest revision and made to agree with it. There had grown up, moreover, about the writings a considerable body of comment and interpretation, and to facilitate the study and enjoyment of the poems, the American publishers engaged Mr. George Willis Cooke to prepare a *Guide-Book* which served as a very desirable accompaniment to the Riverside Edition of the works. They added also to the series, by arrangement with the English publishers, the authorized Life of the poet by Mrs. Sutherland Orr.

The ten volumes thus brought together furnish a complete Browning collection, but it has long been apparent that students and lovers of Browning would find it very convenient to have the complete works of their author in a single portable volume, and the plan of the Cambridge Edition so successfully applied to the poems of Longfellow and Whittier was adopted for this purpose. By a careful study of condensation with every regard for legibility it has been found possible to bring the entire body of Browning's work into a single volume, and to equip the edition with the requisite apparatus. The order of arrangement is chronological, with one or two obvious divergences. As in the other volumes of the Cambridge Edition, a biographical sketch introduces the work, brief head-notes chiefly pertaining to the origin of the respective poems have been supplied, drawn largely from Mr. Cooke's admirable volume, and a small body of pertinent notes of an explanatory character added, though the reader will readily see that the exigencies of the volume have compelled the editor to be very frugal in this respect. The appendix also contains the one notable piece of Browning's prose, a chronological list of his writings, and indexes of titles and first lines.

BOSTON, 4 PARK STREET, August 1, 1895.



## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH . . . . .	ix
PAULINE: A FRAGMENT OF A CONFESSION . . . . .	1
SONNET: "EYES, CALM BESIDE THEE, (LADY, COULDEST THOU KNOW!)" . .	11
PARACELsus.	
I. PARACELsus ASPIRES . . . . .	12
II. PARACELsus ATTAINS . . . . .	19
III. PARACELsus . . . . .	25
IV. PARACELsus ASPIRES . . . . .	34
V. PARACELsus ATTAINS . . . . .	40
STRAFFORD: A TRAGEDY . . . . .	49
SORDELLO . . . . .	74
PIPPA PASSES: A DRAMA . . . . .	128
KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES: A TRAGEDY . . . . .	145
DRAMATIC LYRICS.	
CAVALIER TUNES.	
I. MARCHING ALONG . . . . .	163
II. GIVE A ROUSE . . . . .	163
III. BOOT AND SADDLE . . . . .	163
THE LOST LEADER . . . . .	164
"HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD NEWS FROM GHENT TO AIX" . .	164
THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD- EL-KADR . . . . .	165
NATIONALITY IN DRINKS . . . . .	166
GARDEN FANCIES.	
I. THE FLOWER'S NAME . . . . .	166
II. SIBRANDUS SCHAFNABURGEN- SIS . . . . .	167
SOLILOQUY OF THE SPANISH CLOIS- TER . . . . .	167
THE LABORATORY . . . . .	168
THE CONFESSONAL . . . . .	169
CRISTINA . . . . .	169
THE LOST MISTRESS . . . . .	170
EARTH'S IMMORTALITIES . . . . .	170
MEETING AT NIGHT . . . . .	170
PARTING AT MORNING . . . . .	170
SONG: "NAY BUT YOU, WHO DO NOT LOVE HER" . . . . .	170
A WOMAN'S LAST WORD . . . . .	171
EVELYN HOPE . . . . .	171

	PAGE
LOVE AMONG THE RUINS . . . . .	171
A LOVERS' QUARREL . . . . .	172
UP AT A VILLA — DOWN IN THE CITY . . . . .	174
A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI'S . . . . .	175
OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE . . . . .	176
"DE GUSTIBUS —" . . . . .	178
HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM ABROAD . . . . .	179
HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM THE SEA . . . . .	179
SAUL . . . . .	179
MY STAR . . . . .	184
BY THE FIRESIDE . . . . .	185
ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND . . . . .	187
TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA . . . . .	189
MISCONCEPTIONS . . . . .	189
A SERENADE AT THE VILLA . . . . .	189
ONE WAY OF LOVE . . . . .	190
ANOTHER WAY OF LOVE . . . . .	190
A PRETTY WOMAN . . . . .	190
RESPECTABILITY . . . . .	191
LOVE IN A LIFE . . . . .	191
LIFE IN A LOVE . . . . .	191
IN THREE DAYS . . . . .	192
IN A YEAR . . . . .	192
WOMEN AND ROSES . . . . .	193
BEFORE . . . . .	193
AFTER . . . . .	194
THE GUARDIAN-ANGEL . . . . .	194
MEMORABILIA . . . . .	195
POPULARITY . . . . .	195
MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE-GOTHA . . . . .	195
THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES . . . . .	197
A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON . . . . .	216
COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY . . . . .	230
DRAMATIC ROMANCES.	
INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH CAMP . . . . .	251
THE PATRIOT . . . . .	251
MY LAST DUCHESS . . . . .	252
COUNT GISMOND . . . . .	252
THE BOY AND THE ANGEL . . . . .	253
INSTANS TYRANNUS . . . . .	254
MESMERISM . . . . .	255
THE GLOVE . . . . .	256
TIME'S REVENGES . . . . .	258
THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND . . . . .	258

THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY . . . . .	260	IX. ON DECK . . . . .	376
IN A GONDOLA . . . . .	262	GOLD HAIR: A STORY OF PORNIC . . . . .	376
WARING . . . . .	264	THE WORST OF IT . . . . .	378
THE TWINS . . . . .	266	DIS ALITER VISUM; OR, LE BYRON DE NOS JOURS . . . . .	379
A LIGHT WOMAN . . . . .	267	TOO LATE . . . . .	380
THE LAST RIDE TOGETHER . . . . .	267	ABT VOGLER, AFTER HE HAS BEEN EXTEMPORIZING UPON THE MU- SICAL INSTRUMENT OF HIS INVEN- TION . . . . .	382
THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN . . . . .	268	RABBI BEN EZRA . . . . .	383
THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS . . . . .	271	A DEATH IN THE DESERT . . . . .	385
A GRAMMARIAN'S FUNERAL . . . . .	279	CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS; OR, NATU- RAL THEOLOGY IN THE ISLAND . . . . .	392
THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY . . . . .	280	CONFESSIONS . . . . .	394
HOLY-CROSS DAY . . . . .	281	MAY AND DEATH . . . . .	395
PROTUS . . . . .	283	DEAF AND DUMB: A GROUP BY WOOLNER . . . . .	395
THE STATUE AND THE BUST . . . . .	283	PROSPICE . . . . .	395
PORPHYRIA'S LOVER . . . . .	286	EURYDICE TO ORPHEUS: A PICTURE BY LEIGHTON . . . . .	395
"CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER CAME" . . . . .	287	YOUTH AND ART . . . . .	396
A SOUL'S TRAGEDY . . . . .	289	A FACE . . . . .	396
LURIA . . . . .	299	A LIKENESS . . . . .	396
CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER- DAY . . . . .		MR. SLUDGE, "THE MEDIUM" . . . . .	397
CHRISTMAS-EVE . . . . .	316	APPARENT FAILURE . . . . .	412
EASTER-DAY . . . . .	327	EPILOGUE . . . . .	413
MEN AND WOMEN.		THE RING AND THE BOOK.	
"TRANSCENDENTALISM: A POEM IN TWELVE BOOKS" . . . . .	335	I. THE RING AND THE BOOK . . . . .	414
HOW IT STRIKES A CONTEMPORARY . . . . .	336	II. HALF-ROME . . . . .	427
ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES . . . . .	337	III. THE OTHER HALF-ROME . . . . .	441
AN EPISTLE, CONTAINING THE STRANGE MEDICAL EXPERIENCE OF KARSHISH, THE ARAB PHY- SICIAN . . . . .	338	IV. TERTIUM QUID . . . . .	456
JOHANNES AGRICOLA IN MEDITA- TION . . . . .	341	V. COUNT GUIDO FRANCESCHINI . . . . .	471
PICTOR IGNOTUS . . . . .	341	VI. GIUSEPPE CAPONSACCHI . . . . .	489
FRA LIPPO LIPPI . . . . .	342	VII. POMPILIA . . . . .	508
ANDREA DEL SARTO . . . . .	346	VIII. DOMINUS HYACINTHUS DE ARCH- ANGELIS, PAUPERUM PROCURA- TOR . . . . .	525
THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB AT SAINT PRAXED'S CHURCH . . . . .	348	IX. JURIS DOCTOR JOHANNES-BAP- TISTA BOTTINIUS, FISCUS ET REV. CAM. APOSTOL. ADVOC- ATUS . . . . .	540
BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY . . . . .	349	X. THE POPE . . . . .	554
CLEON . . . . .	358	XI. GUIDO . . . . .	572
RUDEL TO THE LADY OF TRIPOLI . . . . .	361	XII. THE BOOK AND THE RING . . . . .	594
ONE WORD MORE . . . . .	361	HELEN'S TOWER . . . . .	601
IN A BALCONY . . . . .	364	BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE, IN- CLUDING A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURIPIDES . . . . .	602
BEN KARSHOOK'S WISDOM . . . . .	372	ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY, INCLUD- ING A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURI- PIDES, BEING THE LAST ADVEN- TURE OF BALAUSTION . . . . .	628
DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.		PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWAN- GAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY . . . . .	681
JAMES LEE'S WIFE.		FIFINE AT THE FAIR.	
I. JAMES LEE'S WIFE SPEAKS AT THE WINDOW . . . . .	373	PROLOGUE . . . . .	701
II. BY THE FIRESIDE . . . . .	373	FIFINE AT THE FAIR . . . . .	702
III. IN THE DOORWAY . . . . .	373	EPILOGUE . . . . .	735
IV. ALONG THE BEACH . . . . .	374		
V. ON THE CLIFF . . . . .	374		
VI. READING A BOOK, UNDER THE CLIFF . . . . .	374		
VII. AMONG THE ROCKS . . . . .	375		
VIII. BESIDE THE DRAWING- BOARD . . . . .	375		



RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY; OR TURF AND TOWERS	736
THE INN ALBUM . . . . .	773
PACCHIAROTTO, WITH OTHER POEMS.	
PROLOGUE . . . . .	802
OF PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER . . . . .	802
AT THE "MERMAID" . . . . .	807
HOUSE . . . . .	808
SHOP . . . . .	809
PISGAH-SIGHTS . . . . .	810
FEARS AND SCRUPLES . . . . .	811
NATURAL MAGIC . . . . .	811
MAGICAL NATURE . . . . .	812
BIFURCATION . . . . .	812
NUMPHOLEPTOS . . . . .	812
APPEARANCES . . . . .	814
ST. MARTIN'S SUMMER . . . . .	814
HERVE RIEL . . . . .	815
A FORGIVENESS . . . . .	817
CENCIAJA . . . . .	820
FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL . . . . .	823
EPILOGUE . . . . .	827
THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS	830
LA SAISIAZ . . . . .	849
THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC . . . . .	859
OH LOVE! LOVE . . . . .	874
DRAMATIC IDYLS: FIRST SERIES.	
MARTIN RELPH . . . . .	875
PHÉDIPIDES . . . . .	877
HALBERT AND HOB . . . . .	879
IVAN IVANOVITCH . . . . .	880
TRAY . . . . .	887
NED BRATTS . . . . .	887
DRAMATIC IDYLS: SECOND SERIES.	
PROLOGUE . . . . .	892
ECHELOS . . . . .	892
CLIVE . . . . .	893
MULÉYKEH . . . . .	897
PIETRO OF ABANO . . . . .	899
DOCTOR — . . . . .	906
PAN AND LUNA . . . . .	909
TOUCH HIM NE'ER SO LIGHTLY . . . . .	910
THE BLIND MAN TO THE MAIDEN . . . . .	910
GOLDONI . . . . .	910
JOCOSERIA.	
WANTING IS — WHAT? . . . . .	911
DONALD . . . . .	911
SOLOMON AND BALKIS . . . . .	913
CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI . . . . .	914
MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT AND FUSELI . . . . .	916
ADAM, LILITH, AND EVE . . . . .	916
IXION . . . . .	916

JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH . . . . .	918
NEVER THE TIME AND THE PLACE	928
PAMBO . . . . .	928
FERISHTAH'S FANCIES.	
PROLOGUE . . . . .	929
I. THE EAGLE . . . . .	929
II. THE MELON-SELLER . . . . .	930
III. SHAH ABBAS . . . . .	930
IV. THE FAMILY . . . . .	932
V. THE SUN . . . . .	933
VI. MIHRAB SHAH . . . . .	934
VII. A CAMEL-DRIVER . . . . .	936
VIII. TWO CAMELS . . . . .	937
IX. CHERRIES . . . . .	938
X. PLOT-CULTURE . . . . .	939
XI. A PILLAR AT SEBZEVAR . . . . .	940
XII. A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO APPLE-EATING . . . . .	942
EPILOGUE . . . . .	946
RAWDON BROWN . . . . .	947
THE FOUNDER OF THE FEAST . . . . .	947
THE NAMES . . . . .	947
EPITAPH ON LEVI LINCOLN THAXTER . . . . .	947
WHY I AM A LIBERAL . . . . .	948
PARLEYINGS WITH CERTAIN PEOPLE OF IMPORTANCE IN THEIR DAY.	
APOLLO AND THE FATES . . . . .	948
WITH BERNARD DE MANDEVILLE . . . . .	952
WITH DANIEL BARTOLI . . . . .	955
WITH CHRISTOPHER SMART . . . . .	959
WITH GEORGE BUBB DODINGTON . . . . .	961
WITH FRANCIS FURINI . . . . .	964
WITH GERARD DE LAIRESSE . . . . .	970
WITH CHARLES AVISON . . . . .	974
FUST AND HIS FRIENDS: AN EPILOGUE . . . . .	979
ASOLANDO: FANCIES AND FACTS.	
PROLOGUE . . . . .	987
ROSNY . . . . .	987
DUBIETY . . . . .	987
NOW . . . . .	988
HUMILITY . . . . .	988
POETICS . . . . .	988
SUMMUM BONUM . . . . .	988
A PEARL, A GIRL . . . . .	988
SPECULATIVE . . . . .	988
WHITE WITCHCRAFT . . . . .	989
BAD DREAMS. I. . . . .	989
BAD DREAMS. II. . . . .	989
BAD DREAMS. III. . . . .	990
BAD DREAMS. IV. . . . .	990
INAPPREHENSIVENESS . . . . .	991
WHICH? . . . . .	991
THE CARDINAL AND THE DOG . . . . .	991
THE POPE AND THE NET . . . . .	992
THE BEAN-FEAST . . . . .	992
MUCKLE-MOUTH MEG . . . . .	993
ARCADES AMBO . . . . .	993

THE LADY AND THE PAINTER . . .	993
PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE . . .	994
BEATRICE SIGNORINI . . . . .	996
FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH AN ACCOMPANIMENT . . . . .	999
"IMPERANTE . . . . . AUGUSTO . . . . . NATUS . . . . . EST —" . . . . .	1001
DEVELOPMENT . . . . .	1002
REFRAN . . . . .	1003
REVERIE . . . . .	1005
EPILOGUE . . . . .	1007

## APPENDIX.

I. AN ESSAY ON SHELLEY . . . . .	1008
II. NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS . . . . .	1014
III. A LIST OF MR. BROWNING'S POEMS AND DRAMAS, ARRANGED IN THE ORDER OF FIRST PUBLICATION IN BOOK FORM . . . . .	1023
INDEX OF FIRST LINES OF POEMS . . . . .	1027
GENERAL INDEX OF TITLES . . . . .	1031

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH.<sup>1</sup>

If one sought to build any genealogical structure to account for Robert Browning's genius, he would find but slight foundation in fact, though what he found would be substantial so far as it went. Browning's father was a bank clerk in London; his father again was a bank clerk. Both of these Brownings were christened Robert. The father of the poet's grandfather was Thomas Browning, an innkeeper and small proprietor in Dorsetshire, and his stock apparently was west-country English. Browning himself liked to believe that an earlier ancestor was a certain Captain Micaiah Browning who raised the siege of Derry in 1689 by an act of personal bravery which cost him his life. It is most to the point that Browning was London born with two generations of city Londoners behind him. His mother was Sarah Anne — a name which became Sarianna in the poet's sister — Wiedemann, the Scottish daughter of a Hamburg German, a shipowner in Dundee.

The characters of the poet's parents are clearly defined. Robert Browning, senior, was a man of business who performed his business duties punctiliously, and by frugality acquired a tolerably comfortable fortune, but he was not a money-making man; his real life was in his books and in the gratification of literary and æsthetic tastes. He was a voracious reader, and in a prudent way a book and print collector. "It was his habit," says Mrs. Orr, "when he bought a book — which was generally an old one allowing of this addition — to have some pages of blank paper bound into it. These he filled with notes, chronological tables, or such other supplementary matter as would enhance the interest, or assist the mastering, of its contents: all written in a clear and firm, though by no means formal, handwriting." He had a talent for versifying which he used for his entertainment; he had a cheerful nature and that genuine sociability which made him a delightful companion in the small circle which satisfied his simple, ingenuous nature. He was born and bred in the Church of England, but in middle life became by choice a Dissenter, though never an exclusive one.

Mrs. Browning, the poet's mother, was once described by Carlyle as "the true type of a Scottish gentlewoman." She inherited from her father a love for music and drawing which in him was manifested in execution, in her in good taste and appreciation. She was a woman of serene, gentle and affectionate nature, and of simple, earnest religious belief. She was brought up in the kirk of Scotland, but, like her husband, connected herself in middle life with the Congregationalists. She communicated of her own religious conviction to her children; it is said that she handed down also a nervous organization.

Of these parents Robert Browning was born in the parish of St. Giles, Camberwell, London, May 7, 1812. He was the oldest of the small family, having two sisters, one, Clara, who died in childhood, and Sarianna, two years younger than himself, who outlived him. The country in which he was born and where he spent his childhood has been delightfully described by his great contemporary, Ruskin, whose Herne Hill was in the immediate neighborhood. Camberwell at that time was a suburb of London, with rural spaces and near access to the open country, though the stony foot of the metropolis was already stepping outward upon the pleasant lanes and fields. There was room for gardening and the keeping of pets, while the country gave opportunity for forays into nature's fastnesses. The boy kept owls and monkeys, magpies and hedgehogs, an eagle, snakes even, and was touched with the collector's pride, as when he started a collection of rare creatures with a couple of lady-birds brought home one winter day and placed in a box lined with cotton

<sup>1</sup> The materials for this sketch are drawn from Mrs. Sutherland Orr's *Life and Letters of Robert Browning*, Mr. William Sharp's *Life of Robert Browning*, and Mr. Edmund Gosse's *Robert Browning: Personalities*.

wool and labelled, "Animals found surviving in the depths of a severe winter." It is easy for a reader of his poems to detect the close, sympathetic observation which he disclosed for all lower life.

Indeed the characteristics of his mind as seen in his writings afterward were readily disclosed in the evidence which remains to us of his boyhood. He was insatiably curious and he was imaginatively dramatic, and he had from the first the sane and generous aid of his parents in both these particulars. His father was passionately fond of children, and gave his own that best of gifts, appreciative companionship. "He was fond," says Mr. Sharp in his *Life of Browning*, "of taking the little Robert in his arms and walking to and fro with him in the dusk in 'the library,' soothing the child to sleep by singing to him snatches of Anacreon in the original to a favorite old tune of his, 'A Cottage in a Wood ;'" and again the same biographer says : "One of his own [Robert's] recollections was that of sitting on his father's knees in the library, and listening with enthralled attention to the Tale of Troy, with marvellous illustrations among the glowing coals in the fireplace ; with, below all, the vaguely heard accompaniment — from the neighboring room, where Mrs. Browning sat 'in her chief happiness, her hour of darkness and solitude and music' — of a wild Gaelic lament, with its insistent falling cadences."

The boy had an indifferent experience of formal schooling in his youth. The more fertilizing influence of his intellectual taste was found in his father's books. As has been said, his father had an intelligent and cultivated love of books, and eagerly shared his knowledge and his treasures with his boy. A seventeenth century edition of Quarles's *Emblems*, the first edition of *Robinson Crusoe*, an early edition of Milton, bought for him by his father, old Bibles, a wide range of Elizabethan literature — these were pastures in which the boy browsed. Besides, he knew the eighteenth century writers, Walpole, Junius, and even Voltaire being included by the catholic minded father. The special acquaintance with Greek came later, but Latin he began early.

His attendance at school ceased when he was fourteen, then came four years of private tutors, and at eighteen he was matriculated at London University, where he spent two years. In this period of private and public tuition, his scope was widening with systematic intent. He learned dancing, riding, boxing and fencing. He became versed in French. He visited galleries, and made some progress in drawing, especially from casts. He studied music with able teachers. He had a strong interest in the stage, and displayed on occasions a good deal of histrionic ability himself.

It is said that in this growing, restless period, when indeed he had the wilfulness and aggressiveness of the young man who has the consciousness of inner power, but not yet the mastery either of art or of himself, it was an open question with him whether he should be poet, painter, sculptor or musician ; an artist at any rate he knew he must be. To that all his being moved, and in his youth he manifested that temperament, by alternation dreamy and dramatic, which under favoring conditions is the background from which artistic possibilities are projected. From the vantage ground of a wooded spot near his home he could look out on the distant city lying on the western horizon, and fretting the evening sky with its spires and towers and ragged lines. The sight for him had a great fascination. Here would he lie for hours, looking and dreaming, and he has told how one night of his boyhood he stole out to these elms and saw the great city glimmering through the darkness. After all, the vision was more to him than that which brought woods and fields beneath his ken. It was the world of men and women, toward which his gaze was directed all his life.

In Browning's case, as in that of more than one recent poet, it is possible to see a very distinct passing of the torch into his hand from that of a great predecessor. He had versified from childhood. He would scarcely have been his father's child had he not. His sister remembers that when he was a very little child he would walk round and round the dining-room table, spanning the table with his palm as he marked off the scansion of the verses he had composed. Even before this rhyme had been put into his hands as an instrument, for his father had taught him words by their rhymes, and aided his memorizing of Latin declensions in the same way. So the boy lisped in numbers, for the numbers came, and by the time he was twelve had accumulated a formidable amount of matter, chiefly Byronic in manner. With the confidence of the very youthful poet, he tried to find a publisher who would venture on the issue. He could not find one who would put his verses



into print, but he found one of another sort in his mother, who read them with pride and showed them to her friends. Thus they fell into the hands of Miss Flower, who showed them to her sister, Sarah Flower Adams, whose name is firmly held in hymnologies, and with her appreciation showed them also to the Rev. William Johnson Fox, who as preacher, editor, and man of letters had a tolerably distinct position which has not yet been forgotten. Mr. Fox read and was emphatic in his recognition of promise, but with good sense advised against any attempt to get the book into print. Book it was in manuscript, and this was the publication it received. Like other first ventures, its audience was fit though few, and as will be seen later, Browning gained the best thing that first ventures are likely to bring, a generous critic.

But shortly after this came the real fructifying of the poetic germ which lay in this youthful nature. "Passing a bookstall one day," says Mr. Sharp, "he saw, in a box of second-hand volumes, a little book advertised as 'Mr. Shelley's Atheistical Poem: very scarce.' He had never heard of Shelley, nor did he learn for a long time that the *Dæmon of the World* and the miscellaneous poems appended thereto constituted a literary piracy. Badly printed, shamefully mutilated, these discarded blossoms touched him to a new emotion. Pope became further removed than ever: Byron, even, lost his magnetic supremacy. From vague remarks in reply to his inquiries, and from one or two casual allusions, he learned that there really was a poet called Shelley; that he had written several volumes; that he was dead." His mother set herself to search for more of Shelley for her son, and after recourse to Mr. Fox, made her way to the Olliers in Vere Street, and brought back not only a collection of Shelley's volumes, but of Keats's also, and thus these two poets fell into Browning's hands.

It was on a May night, Browning told a friend, he entered upon this hitherto unknown world. In a laburnum near by, and in a great copper beech not far away, two nightingales sang together. So he sat and listened to them, and read by turns from these two poets. It was his initiation into the same society. He did not at once join them, but when he made his first appearance in public, at the age of twenty, it was with a poem, *Pauline*, which not only held a glowing apostrophe to Shelley but was throughout colored by his ardent devotion to the poet. Twenty years later he wrote a prose *apologia* for Shelley in the form of an introduction to a collection of letters purporting to come from Shelley, but which were discovered to be spurious immediately upon publication. Both *Pauline* and an *Essay on Percy Bysshe Shelley* will be found in this volume, with introductions explaining the circumstances of publication, but the reader of Browning's poetry is likely to carry longest in his mind the short lyric *Memorabilia*, beginning: —

"Ah, did you once see Shelley plain,"

in which as in a parable one may read how the sudden acquaintance with this poet was to Browning the one memorable moment in his period of youthful dreaming.

The publication anonymously of *Pauline*, in January, 1833, was followed by a period of travel. He went to Russia nominally as secretary to the Russian consul-general, and became so enamored of diplomatic life that he essayed to enter it, but failed; so strong a hold did it take on him that he would have been glad in later life if his son had chosen this career.

The life of a poet who is not also a man of action is told mainly in the succession of his writings. Two or three sonnets followed *Pauline*, but the first poem to which Browning attached his name was *Paracelsus*, the dedication to which is dated March 15, 1835. The dedication — and the succession of these graceful compliments discloses many of Browning's friendships — was to Count de Ripert-Monclar, a young French royalist, who was a private agent of the royal family, and had become intimate with the poet, who was four years his junior. The count suggested the life of Paracelsus to his friend as a subject for a poem, but on second thought advised against it as offering insufficient materials for the treatment of love. A young poet, however, who would prefix a quotation from Cornelius Agrippa to his first publication was one easily to be enticed by such a subject, and Browning fell upon the literature relating to Paracelsus which he found in the British Museum, and quickly mastered the facts, which became fused by his ardent imagination and eager speculation into a consistent whole. But though he sought his material among books, as he needs must, he found his constructive power in the silence of nature in the night. He had a great love for walking in the dark. "There was in particular," says Mr. Sharp, "a wood near Dulwich,

whither he was wont to go. There he would walk swiftly and eagerly along the solitary and lightless byways, finding a potent stimulus to imaginative thought in the happy isolation thus enjoyed. . . . At this time, too, he composed much in the open air. This he rarely, if ever, did in later life. Not only many portions of *Paracelsus* but several scenes in *Strafford* were enacted first in these midnight silences of the Dulwich woodland. Here, too, as the poet once declared, he came to know the serene beauty of dawn: for every now and again, after having read late, or written long, he would steal quietly from the house, and walk till the morning twilight graded to the pearl and amber of the new day."

Poetry, it may be, more than any other form of literature, clears the way for friendship. At any rate, *Paracelsus* introduced Browning to John Forster, and it was at this time also that Dickens, Talfourd and Macready, Leigh Hunt, Barry Cornwall, Wordsworth and Landor were more than names to the young poet. There was doubtless something in the man as well as in his work which won him recognition. Macready says he looked more the poet than any man he had ever met. His head was crowned with wavy dark brown hair. He had singularly expressive eyes, a sensitive, mobile mouth, a musical voice, and an alertness of manner, so that he was like a quivering, high bred animal. How marked he was by his companions, and singled out to be, as Macready says, "a leading spirit of his time," is instanced by a notable occurrence at Talfourd's house after the first performance of *Ion*, when Talfourd included Browning with Wordsworth and Landor, who were present, in a toast to the poets of England.

It was on this occasion that Macready, whom Browning already knew well, proposed to the poet that he should write him a play as narrated in the Introduction to *Strafford*. The play was produced at the Covent Garden Theatre in May, 1837, and Macready and Miss Helen Faucit, afterward Lady Martin, gave distinction to its representation. It came, however, at an unfortunate time in the management, and though it gave promise of a long run, certain difficulties in the theatre compelled its withdrawal. It was published at once by Longmans, but like Browning's former book, was a failure with the public.

The monologue of *Pauline* had been succeeded by what may be called the conversational drama of *Paracelsus*, and that by the dramatic *Strafford*. The form now experimented with was to be the dominant one for the next ten years, though his next attempt was in form almost a reversion to *Pauline*. During the remainder of 1837 and until Easter, 1838, Browning was engaged on *Sordello*, but interrupted this poem for a couple of years which have a special interest as the years when he first visited Italy, and when he entered upon an order of production which was to be very significant of his poetic choice of subject and treatment. Browning himself recognized the importance to him of his acquaintance with Italy. "It was my university," he was wont to say, when asked if he had been a student at Oxford or Cambridge. The companion poems, *The Englishman in Italy* and *The Italian in England*, illustrate that double nationality in Browning's mind by which the two countries were, so to speak, married for him. The latter of these two poems was one which Mazzini used to read to his countrymen when he would demonstrate how generously an Englishman could enter into the Italian's patriotic aspirations. The journey was a rapid one. "I went," Browning says, "to Trieste, then Venice — then through Treviso and Bassano to the mountains, delicious Asolo, all my places and castles, you will see. Then to Vicenza, Padua, and Venice again. Then to Verona, Trent, Innspruck, Munich, Salzburg in Franconia, Frankfurt and Mayence; down the Rhine to Cologne, then to Aix-la-Chapelle, Siège and Antwerp; then home."

It would seem as if he had begun *Sordello* with a bookish knowledge only of Italy, and later charged it with a more informing spirit of love for that country and embroidered it with descriptive scenes drawn from his personal observation. The poem was published in 1840, but the result of the journey in Italy and of the poet's more complete finding of himself — a process by the bye which may almost be taken as having its analogue in *Sordello* — were made most evident by the next publication, the story of which is told in the Introduction to *Pippa Passes*. The very form chosen for *Bells and Pomegranates* was a challenge to the public not so fantastically arrogant as Horne's famous publication of *Orion* at a farthing, but noticeable as an earnest of Browning's appeal to his generation and not to a select circle of admiring friends. In this series of writings, extending from 1841 through 1846, Browning struck the note again and again, in drama, lyric, and

romance, which was to be the dominant note of his poetry, that disclosure of the soul of man in all manner of circumstances, as if the world were to the poet a great laboratory of souls, and he was forever to be engaged in solving, dissolving, and resolving the elements.

It is noticeable also that with this series closed Browning's serious attempts at dramatic composition for the stage. It would almost seem as if he finally parted company with theatrical managers, partly because of the constant difficulty he had in making them subordinate to his purpose, partly and no doubt more profoundly because his own genius, bent as it was upon the interpretation of spiritual phenomena, could ill brook the demands of the acted drama that all this interpretation should stop with visible, intelligible, and satisfactory action, capable of histrionic expression. Browning's eager penetration of the arcana of life was too absorbing to permit him to call a halt when the actor on the stage could go no farther.

An example of the practical difficulties he encountered with managers will be found in the vicissitudes of *A Blot in the 'Scutcheon*, which was put on the stage in 1843 and formed the fifth in the series of *Bells and Pomegranates*. Browning has himself told the story of his misfortunes so fully and so graphically in a letter to Mr. Frank Hill, editor of the *London Daily News*, forty years after the event, that it seems worth while to introduce it here. The letter, from which the following passage is taken, was dated 19, Warwick Crescent, December 15, 1884; and was written in consequence of a paragraph concerning the revival of the play, which Mr. Hill had sent in proof to Browning, from a doubt he felt of its accuracy:—

"Macready received and accepted the play, while he was engaged at the Haymarket, and retained it for Drury Lane, of which I was ignorant that he was about to become the manager; he accepted it 'at the instigation' of nobody,—and Charles Dickens was not in England when he did so: it was read to him after his return by Forster—and the glowing letter which contains his opinion of it, although directed by him to be shown to myself, was never heard of nor seen by me till printed in Forster's book some thirty years after. When the Drury Lane season began, Macready informed me that he should act the play when he had brought out two others—*The Patrician's Daughter*, and *Plighted Troth*. Having done so, he wrote to me that the former had been unsuccessful in money-drawing, and the latter had 'smashed his arrangements altogether,' but he would still produce my play. I had—in my ignorance of certain symptoms better understood by Macready's professional acquaintances—no notion that it was a proper thing, in such a case, to 'release him from his promise;' on the contrary, I should have fancied that such a proposal was offensive. Soon after, Macready begged that I would call on him; he said the play had been read to the actors the day before, and 'laughed at from beginning to end;' on my speaking my mind about this, he explained that the reading had been done by the prompter, a grotesque person with a red nose and wooden leg, ill at ease in the love scenes, and that he would himself make amends by reading the play next morning—which he did, and very adequately—but apprised me that, in consequence of the state of his mind, harassed by business and various trouble, the principal character must be taken by Mr. Phelps; and again I failed to understand—what Forster subsequently assured me was plain as the sun at noonday—that to allow at Macready's theatre any other than Macready to play the principal part in a new piece was suicidal,—and really believed I was meeting his exigencies by accepting the substitution. At the rehearsal, Macready announced that Mr. Phelps was ill, and that he himself would read the part; on the third rehearsal, Mr. Phelps appeared for the first time, and sat in a chair while Macready more than read—rehearsed the part. The next morning Mr. Phelps waylaid me at the stage-floor to say, with much emotion, that it never was intended that *he* should be instrumental in the success of a new tragedy, and that Macready would play Tresham on the ground that himself, Phelps, was unable to do so. He added that he could not expect me to waive such an advantage, but that, if I were prepared to waive it, 'he would take ether, sit up all night, and have the words in his memory by next day.' I bade him follow me to the green-room, and hear what I decided upon—which was that as Macready had given him the part, he should keep it: this was on a Thursday; he rehearsed on Friday and Saturday,—the play being acted the same evening,—*of the fifth day after the 'reading' by Macready*. Macready at once wished to reduce the importance of the 'play'—as he styled it in the bills,—tried to leave out so much of the text that I baffled him by getting it printed in four-and-twenty hours, by Moxon's assistance. He wanted me to call it *The*



*Sister!* and I have before me, while I write, the stage-acting copy, with two lines of his own insertion to avoid the tragical ending — Tresham was to announce his intention of going into a monastery! all this, to keep up the belief that Macready, and Macready alone, could produce a veritable 'tragedy,' unproduced before. Not a shilling was spent on scenery or dresses, and a striking scene which had been used for *The Patrician's Daughter* did duty a second time. If your critic considers this treatment of the play an instance of 'the failure of powerful and experienced actors' to ensure its success, I can only say that my own opinion was shown by at once breaking off a friendship of many years — a friendship which had a right to be plainly and simply told that the play I had contributed as a proof of it would, through a change of circumstances, no longer be to my friend's advantage — all I could possibly care for. Only recently, when by the publication of Macready's journals the extent of his pecuniary embarrassments at that time was made known, could I in a measure understand his motives for such conduct, and less than ever understand why he so strangely disguised and disfigured them. If 'applause' meant success, the play thus maimed and maltreated was successful enough; it 'made way' for Macready's own *Benefit*, and the theatre closed a fortnight after."

Of the more profound separation between Browning and the theatre, due to the inherent impossibility of his arresting his thought before it got beyond the actor's use, *Luria* and *The Return of the Druses* afford good examples, and an illustration might fairly be taken from *Colombe's Birthday*, which was put on the stage in 1853, but scarcely held its own, though Helen Faucit took the heroine's part, and, when revived forty years after, was so cut and slashed that though the splendid idea of Valence was retained in situation, the delicate, subtle shadows which passed and passed before the reader's mind were wanting.

The period when Browning was writing his dramas was one of spendthrift enjoyment of life. For it was a time not only of work in the British Museum and of excursions into all sorts of remote fields of literature, but of long rambles, half gypsy experiences, hours when, stretched at full length beneath the sky, he made familiar and minute acquaintance with bird and leaf, insect and snail, the wind in the trees, the search for the northwest passage of argosies of clouds. He pursued all manner of interests which absorbed him for the moment; he was living, in short, that abundant life which was reflected later in multitudinous dramatic assumptions.

Then all at once there came a concentration of his passion and a sudden revelation to him which never lost its wondrous light. Elizabeth Barrett and Robert Browning, knowing each other through their writings, then by a common service to a common friend, then by an intermittent correspondence, finally were brought together by John Kenyon, already a dear friend of each. The fragile creature, scarce able to leave her couch, and the robust, exuberantly vital man, were as far separate in external, superficial agreement as could well be, but each knew the other with an instantaneousness of knowledge and need. Again and again, not only in verses directed openly to his wife, but in those which like *By the Fireside* thinly veil personal feeling, the passionate constancy of this experimenting, daringly inquisitive poet towards his poet wife is splendidly disclosed, with a certain glory of frank confession which is the vehement sincerity of one who is in this one feeling genuine poet and genuine man.

Miss Barrett was an invalid, guarded with the greatest care, and Browning, in urging marriage upon her, met with all the obstacles which the circumstances raised. He confronted indeed the indomitable refusal of Miss Barrett's father. A physician had held out hopes that a removal to Italy would give the invalid a chance to regain some degree of health, but Mr. Barrett, for some not very clear reason, refused his consent to her taking the journey with her brother. It was then that Browning, who can readily be conceived of as a masterful man, won Miss Barrett's consent to a sudden and clandestine marriage, and a journey to Italy as his wife. "When she had finally assented to this course," writes Mrs. Orr, "she took a preparatory step which, in so far as it was known, must itself have been sufficiently startling to those about her; she drove to Regent's Park, and when there, stepped out of the carriage and on to the grass. I do not know how long she stood — probably only for a moment; but I well remember hearing that when, after so long an interval, she felt earth under her feet and air about her, the sensation was almost bewilderingly strange."

They were married September 12, 1846. She would not entangle Mr. Kenyon or any of her



friends by announcing even her engagement; she preferred marrying without her father's knowledge, to marrying against his prohibition. For a week the husband and wife did not see each other. Then they met by agreement and went to Paris. Mr. Barrett never forgave his daughter, but the consternation with which the Browning family heard of the event quickly turned to affectionate regard for the frail wife. So far as Mrs. Browning's physical well-being was concerned, it is clear that the marriage gave her a new lease of life; and what seemed at the moment an audacious taking of fate into their own hands proved to be a case where nature obtained her best of both.

From Paris, by slow stages, they passed through France into Italy, and made their first long halt in Pisa. It was here, we are told, that Mrs. Browning showed to her husband in manuscript those *Sonnets from the Portuguese* which were her offering to him out of the darkness of her chamber. From Pisa they went to Florence, to Ancona, and again back to Florence, where at last they obtained a foothold in the old palace called Casa Guidi, a name to be endeared to the readers of Mrs. Browning's poetry. Mr. George S. Hillard, in his *Six Months in Italy*, gives a pleasant account of the Brownings when he met them in Florence in 1847.

"It is well for the traveller to be chary of names. It is an ungrateful return for hospitable attentions to print the conversation of your host, or describe his person, or give an inventory of his furniture, or proclaim how his wife and daughters were dressed. But I trust I may be pardoned if I state that one of my most delightful associations with Florence arises from the fact that here I made the acquaintance of Robert and Elizabeth Browning. These are even more familiar names in America than in England, and their poetry is probably more read, and better understood with us than among their own countrymen. A happier home and a more perfect union than theirs it is not easy to imagine; and this completeness arises not only from the rare qualities which each possesses, but from their adaptation to each other. Browning's conversation is like the poetry of Chaucer, or like his own, simplified and made transparent. His countenance is so full of vigor, freshness, and refined power, that it seems impossible to think that he can ever grow old. His poetry is subtle, passionate, and profound; but he himself is simple, natural, and playful. He has the repose of a man who has lived much in the open air; with no nervous uneasiness and no unhealthy self-consciousness. Mrs. Browning is in many respects the correlative of her husband. As he is full of manly power, so she is a type of the most sensitive and delicate womanhood. She has been a great sufferer from ill-health, and the marks of pain are stamped upon her person and manner. Her figure is slight, her countenance expressive of genius and sensibility, shaded by a veil of long brown locks; and her tremulous voice often flutters over her words, like the flame of a dying candle over the wick. I have never seen a human frame which seemed so nearly a transparent veil for a celestial and immortal spirit. She is a soul of fire enclosed in a shell of pearl. Her rare and fine genius needs no setting forth at my hands. She is also, what is not so generally known, a woman of uncommon, nay, profound learning, even measured by a masculine standard. Nor is she more remarkable for genius and learning, than for sweetness of temper, tenderness of heart, depth of feeling, and purity of spirit. It is a privilege to know such beings singly and separately, but to see their powers quickened, and their happiness rounded, by the sacred tie of marriage, is a cause for peculiar and lasting gratitude. A union so complete as theirs — in which the mind has nothing to crave nor the heart to sigh for — is cordial to behold and something to remember."

During the fifteen years of their married life the Brownings lived for the most part in Italy, with occasional summers in England and long sojourns in Paris. The record of Browning's productions during this period is meagre, if one regards the fulness of his poetic activity both before and after. The explanation is made that these new responsibilities, — for two sons were born to them, one of whom died, — carried also great anxieties, for the frailty of Mrs. Browning's health was a constant factor in the movements of the household. But though the record is meagre as to quantity, lovers of Browning's poetry would be likely to regard this as not only a central period, chronologically, but the period when he reached his highest expression. The first collected edition of his poems appeared in 1849, to be followed the next year by *Christmas-Eve* and *Easter-Day*, and then, five years after that, in 1855, by *Men and Women*, a group of poems which still remains the flower of Browning's genius.

The great range taken by these poems is a witness to the fecundity and versatility of Browning's genius. It is possible, also, that to the circumstances of his life, especially its beautiful distractions, we owe the fact of a multitude of short poems rather than longer-sustained efforts. While Mrs. Browning, sheltered by the constant care exerted by her husband and stimulated by his companionship, composed her longest work, *Aurora Leigh*, he, never long freed from anxious thought, broke into more fragmentary production. A very good illustration of the alacrity of his mind and the instantaneous power of seizing upon opportunity is given in a passage in Mr. Gosse's *Personalia* :—

"In recounting a story of some Tuscan noblemen who had shown him two exquisite miniature-paintings, the work of a young artist who should have received for them the prize in some local contest, and who, being unjustly defrauded, broke his ivories, burned his brushes, and indignantly foreswore the thankless art forever, Mr. Browning suddenly reflected that there was, as he said, 'stuff for a poem' in that story, and immediately with extreme vivacity began to sketch the form it should take, the suppression of what features and the substitution of what others were needful; and finally suggested the non-obvious or inverted moral of the whole, in which the act of spirited defiance was shown to be, really, an act of tame renunciation, the poverty of the artist's spirit being proved in his eagerness to snatch, even though it was by honest merit, a benefit simply material. The poet said, distinctly, that he had never before reflected on this incident as one proper to be versified; the speed, therefore, with which the creative architect laid the foundations, built the main fabric, and even put on the domes and pinnacles of his poem was, no doubt, of uncommon interest. He left it, in five minutes, needing nothing but the mere outward crust of the versification."

It was an incident in Browning's life that when he was producing his most glorious work and receiving the admiration and intelligent appreciation of his poetical wife, he was a very insignificant figure in English literature of the day. Mrs. Browning was indignant over the neglect her husband suffered, and in her letters drew sharp comparison between the attention paid Browning in America and the neglect he received in England. Meanwhile, whether living in Florence or sojourning in Paris or London, a choice company was always to be found welcoming and honoring the two poets. Mr. and Mrs. Story, the Hawthornes, Cardinal Manning, Massimo d'Azeglio, Sir Frederick Leighton, Mr. Odo Russell, Rossetti, Val Prinsep, Forster, Landor, Fanny Kemble,—these are some of the names closely associated with that of the Brownings in this period.

The death of Mrs. Browning, June 29, 1861, closed this most beautiful human companionship. It made also a great change in Browning's habit of life, and no doubt affected in important ways his poetical productiveness. He left Italy for England. He became absorbed, so far as personal responsibilities went, in the education of his son. By some strange caprice, he chose to make his home in an ugly part of London, and he approached it through a region of disorder and squalor. But he also, with his robust nature, denied himself the luxury of a persistent solitariness, and little by little returned to society, especially grateful for the friendship of women like Miss Isa Blagden, who stepped in at the moment of his descent into the valley of grief with their gentle ministrations.

The months that followed Mrs. Browning's death were in a way given to taking up again dropped threads of work, and to intellectual occupations, which both satisfied and stimulated his nature. He read Euripides again, perhaps in part because of the association in his mind with his wife's scholarly interests. He resumed the poems on which he had been engaged in the last months at Casa Guidi, and he pondered over his *magnum opus*, the germ of which had been in his mind for many months. But first, in 1863, he saw through the press a new and complete collection of his poetical works in three volumes. Then, the year following, he gathered the poems which immediately preceded and followed Mrs. Browning's death into the volume of *Dramatis Personæ*. The reissue of his older poems and this new accession were accompanied by a clear reinforcement of his position as an English poet. He had come, too, to the point where volumes of selections from his work were in demand, a pretty good sign of a widening of his audience. Other signs followed. In 1867 he received the honorary degree of M. A. from the University of Oxford, and a few months later was made honorary fellow of Balliol College. In the year following he

was asked to stand for the Lord Rectorship of the University of St. Andrews, rendered vacant by the death of J. S. Mill.

His mother had died in 1849, and in 1866 his father, who had been one of his most constant companions since his wife's death, died also. Thereafter, he and his sister Sarianna, who had passed a life of devotion to their parents, became inseparable. Though England was their home, they spent many summers in Brittany, as his poems indicate, and now and then returned to Italy, where his son was established finally as a painter.

In 1868 appeared the six volume uniform edition of his poems, and immediately afterward began the publication, to be completed in four volumes, of *The Ring and the Book*. Mrs. Orr traces, in an ingenious manner, the influence which Mrs. Browning's personality had in the conception of *Pompilia* in this poem. However much a single character may have been affected, it is easy to believe that this elaborate construction building in Browning's mind during the closing years of his wife's life and actually brought into existence in the years immediately following was, more than any single work, a great monument which the poet raised to the memory of that companion whose own poetic achievement always seemed to him of a higher worth than his own. "The simple truth is," he wrote to a common friend, "that *she* was the poet and I the clever person by comparison: remember her limited experience of all kinds, and what she made of it. Remember, on the other hand, how my uninterrupted health and strength and practice with the world have helped me."

After *The Ring and the Book* the only new departure, so to speak, of Browning's genius was in the group of poems which were built upon the foundation of Greek poetry. In 1871 appeared *Balaustion's Adventure*, in 1875 *Aristophanes' Apology*, and in 1877 *The Agamemnon of Æschylus*. They have their value as expressive of Browning's catholicity, and more particularly as his one great literary feat. With all his interest in Italy, and his delving in Renaissance literature, there can scarcely be said to be any criticism of Italian literature in the form of his own poetry. In like manner his dramatic works are not, except in a very remote or general sense, criticism of the Elizabethan drama. But his three poems above named do represent the thought and criticism of a Gothic mind confronting and admiring the Greek art and thought. Browning in these works is not a reproducer in his own terms of Greek life; he is a poet of varied experience, who, coming in contact with a great and distinct manifestation of human life, is moved to strike in here also with his thought and fancy, and because of the very elemental nature of the material, to find the keenest delight in exercising his genius upon it.

Meanwhile the facility which his long and varied practice with the English language had brought him made every new subject that appealed to him a plaything for his fertile imagination; and the speculative temper which grew upon him as the maturity of experience enlarged and enriched his material for thought, led him into long and tortuous ways. *The Ring and the Book* stands about midway in the bulk of his work, but whereas all the poetry and drama before that work represent thirty-five years of his life, that which follows, nearly as great in amount, represents but twenty years.

In these last years of his life, when fame had come to him and his versatility made him a ready companion, he led a semi-public life. He was in demand in all directions. As Mr. Sharp has rapidly summed it up: "Everybody wished him to come and dine; and he did his utmost to gratify everybody. He said everything; read all the notable books; kept himself acquainted with the leading contents of the journals and magazines; conducted a large correspondence; read new French, German, and Italian books of mark; read and translated Euripides and Æschylus; knew all the gossip of the literary clubs, salons, and the studios; was a frequenter of afternoon-tea parties; and then, over and above it, he was Browning: the most profoundly subtle mind that has exercised itself in poetry since Shakespeare."

In 1881 was founded the English Browning Society, one of the most singular testimonials to the interest awakened by a contemporaneous poet known in literary history. The great mass of his writings, the recordite nature of some of the material which he had used, but more than all, the astounding variety of problems in human life and character which he had presented and either solved or opened the way to solve, made Browning an object of the greatest interest to the curious, the sympathetic, and the restless of his day. Any such movement has on its edge a frayed



sort of membership, but no one can note the names of members or read the communications which appear in the society's proceedings without recognizing the intellectual ability that carried the movement along. Browning's own attitude toward the society is pretty clearly expressed in the following words which he wrote to Mr. Edmund Yates at the time of the society's foundation :—

"The Browning Society, I need not say, as well as Browning himself, are fair game for criticism. I had no more to do with the founding it than the babe unborn; and, as Wilkes was no Wilkesite, I am quite other than a Browningite. But I cannot wish harm to a society of, with a few exceptions, names unknown to me, who are busied about my books so disinterestedly. The exaggerations probably come of the fifty-years'-long charge of unintelligibility against my books; such reactions are possible, though I never looked for the beginning of one so soon. That there is a grotesque side to the thing is certain; but I have been surprised and touched by what cannot but have been well intentioned, I think. Anyhow, as I never felt inconvenienced by hard words, you will not expect me to wax bumptious because of undue compliment: so enough of 'Browning'—except that he is yours very truly 'while the machine is to him.'"

In 1887 Browning removed to a more agreeable quarter in De Vere Gardens in the west end of London, and with his affection for Asolo, he set about purchasing a residence there in 1889, and it was while engaged in negotiations for the purchase that he was taken ill with bronchial troubles, and died at his son's home in Venice, December 12, 1889. He was buried in Poet's Corner, Westminster Abbey, on the last day of the year. Italy rightly divided honors with England, and on the outer wall of the Rezzonico Palace in Venice is a memorial tablet with the inscription :—

A  
ROBERTO BROWNING  
morto in questo palazzo  
il 12 Dicembre 1889  
Venezia  
pose

Below, in the corner, are placed two lines from his poem, *De Gustibus* :—

"Open my heart and you will see  
Graved inside of it, 'Italy.'"

H. E. S.



## PAULINE: THE FRAGMENT OF A CONFESSION

THE history of the earliest printed of Browning's writings is so curious that it seems worth while to give it at greater length than its intrinsic merit would require. As a boy Browning wrote an inordinate amount of verse, imitative largely of Byron, and some of it written when he was twelve struck his father as good enough to deserve printing, but no publisher could be found ready to confirm this faith. Then Browning fell into a Shelleyan mood, and when he was twenty projected a great work of which the introduction only was written. This introduction was *Pauline*, which to be precise was completed October 22, 1832. Browning's aunt volunteered to pay the expenses of publication, and it was published anonymously early in 1833 by Saunders & Otley. The most authoritative person on literary matters in the young poet's circle of friends was the Rev. William Johnson Fox, a Unitarian clergyman and editor of the *Monthly Repository*. He had a few years before given emphatic commendation to the boy's verse, and now reviewed the poem with great warmth in his own magazine, so winning the poet's gratitude as to draw from him the extravagant expression: "I shall never write a line without thinking of the source of my first praise, be assured." The poem missed what would have been from its writer a more notable review. Mr. John Stuart Mill, six years Browning's senior, was so delighted with *Pauline* that he wrote to the editor of *Tait's Magazine*, the only periodical in which he could write freely, asking leave to review the poem. The editor replied that he had just printed a curt, contemptuous notice, and could not at once take the other track. When Mill died his copy of *Pauline*, crowded with annotations, fell into Browning's hands and may now be seen in the South Kensington Museum.

In spite of such hopeful promise the poem was still-born from the press. Five years later, Browning wrote in a copy "the only remaining crab of the shapely Tree of Life in my Fool's Paradise." He appears never to have spoken of it until a striking circumstance

brought it again into light. Many years after it was printed Dante Gabriel Rossetti was browsing among the volumes of forgotten poetry in the British Museum. He came upon a book in which a number of pamphlet poems were bound in a heterogeneous collection. Among these was *Pauline*. He read it, and from its internal evidence was convinced that it was an unacknowledged poem of Browning's. The book was wholly out of print, and he made a copy of it. He wrote to Browning afterwards taxing the poet with the production, and Browning, greatly surprised at Rossetti's discovery, acknowledged the authorship. In 1865, the editor of this Cambridge edition, meeting Rossetti in London, mentioned the fact that he had been copying at the British Museum Browning's prose introduction to the suppressed spurious collection of Shelley's Letters, whereupon Rossetti told him of this other rare book. Afterwards on learning that he had copied *Pauline* also he said: "I suppose you will print it when you go back to America." "By no means," replied the editor; "that would be a breach of faith. I copied it as a student of Browning. I never would make it public without Browning's consent." A year or two later therefore when a new edition of the collected poems was published, he thought himself not unlikely the unwitting occasion of the inclusion of *Pauline*, for in the introduction Browning wrote as follows:

"The first piece in the series (*Pauline*), I acknowledge and retain with extreme repugnance, indeed purely of necessity; for not long ago I inspected one, and am certified of the existence of other transcripts, intended sooner or later to be published abroad: by forestalling these, I can at least correct some misprints (no syllable is changed) and introduce a boyish work by an exculpatory word. The thing was my earliest attempt at "poetry always dramatic in principle, and so many utterances of so many imaginary persons, not mine," which I have since written according to a scheme less extravagant and scale less impracticable than were ventured upon in this crude preliminary

sketch, — a sketch that, on reviewal, appears not altogether wide of some hint of the characteristic features of that particular *dramatis persona* it would fain have reproduced: good draughtsmanship, however, and right handling were far beyond the artist at that time.

LONDON, December 25, 1867.

R. B."

Twenty years later, upon sending out his final collective edition, Browning added to the preface just quoted the following sentences: —

"I preserve, in order to supplement it, the foregoing preface. I had thought, when compelled to include in my collected works the poem to which it refers, that the honest course would be to reprint, and leave mere literary errors unaltered. Twenty years' endurance of an eyesore seems more than sufficient: my faults remain duly recorded against me, and I claim permission to somewhat diminish these, so far

### PAULINE

*Plus ne suis ce que j'ai été,  
Et ne le saurois jamais être.*

Marot.

Non dubito, quin titulus libri nostri raritate sua quamplurimos alliciat ad legendum: inter quos nonnulli obliquæ opinionis, mente languidi, multi etiam maligni, et in ingenium nostrum ingrati accedent, qui temeraria sua ignorantia, vix conspecto titulo clamabunt. Nos vetita docere, hæresium semina jacere: piis auribus offendiculo, præclaris ingeniis scandalo esse: . . . adeo conscientiæ suæ consulentes, ut nec Apollo, nec Musæ omnes, neque Angelus de cælo me ab illorum execratione vindicare queant: quibus et ego nunc consulo, ne scripta nostra legant, nec intelligant, nec meminerint: nam noxia sunt, venenosa sunt: Acherontis ostium est in hoc libro, lapides loquitur, caveant, ne cerebrum illis exeat. Vos autem, qui æqua mente ad legendum venitis, si tantam prudentiæ discretionem adhibueritis, quantam in melle legendo apes, jam securi legite. Puto namque vos et utilitatis hand parum et voluptatis plurimum accepturos. Quod si qua repereritis, quæ vobis non placeant, mittite illa, nec utimini. NAM ET EGO VOBIS ILLA NON PROBO, SED NARRO. Cætera tamen propterea non respicite . . . Ideo, si quid liberius dictum sit, ignorescite adolescentiæ nostræ, qui minor quam adolescens hoc opus composui. — *Hen. Corn. Agrippa, De Occult. Philosoph. in Præfat.*

LONDON: January, 1833.

V. A. XX.

as style is concerned, in the present and final edition, where *Pauline* must needs, first of my performances, confront the reader. I have simply removed solecisms, mended the metre a little and endeavored to strengthen the phraseology — experience helping, in some degree, the helplessness of juvenile haste and heat in their untried adventure long ago."

LONDON, February 27, 1888.

The text here given, as throughout this volume, is that of Mr. Browning's latest revision. The text of the first revision, i. e. 1867, may be found at the close of volume i. of the Riverside edition.

The quotations from Marot and Cornelius Agrippa which follow were prefixed to the original edition of the poem. The note enclosed in brackets was Browning's comment on reprinting the poem the last time.

[This introduction would appear less absurdly pretentious did it apply, as was intended, to a completed structure of which the poem was meant for only a beginning and remains a fragment.]

PAULINE, mine own, bend o'er me — thy soft  
breast  
Shall pant to mine — bend o'er me — thy sweet  
eyes,  
And loosened hair and breathing lips, and arms  
Drawing me to thee — these build up a screen  
To shut me in with thee, and from all fear;  
So that I might unlock the sleepless brood  
Of fancies from my soul, their lurking-place,  
Nor doubt that each would pass, ne'er to return  
To one so watched, so loved and so secured.  
But what can guard thee but thy naked love?  
Ah dearest, whoso sucks a poisoned wound  
Envenoms his own veins! Thou art so good,  
So calm — if thou shouldst wear a brow less  
light  
For some wild thought which, but for me, were  
kept  
From out thy soul as from a sacred star!  
Yet till I have unlocked them it were vain  
To hope to sing; some woe would light on me;  
Nature would point at one whose quivering lip  
Was bathed in her enchantments, whose brow  
burned  
Beneath the crown to which her secrets knelt,  
Who learned the spell which can call up the  
dead,  
And then departed smiling like a fiend  
Who has deceived God, — if such one should  
seek  
Again her altars and stand robed and crowned  
Amid the faithful! Sad confession first,  
Remorse and pardon and old claims renewed.  
Ere I can be — as I shall be no more.

I have been spared this shame if I had sat  
By thee forever from the first, in place  
Of my wild dreams of beauty and of good,  
Or with them, as an earnest of their truth :  
No thought nor hope having been shut from thee,  
No vague wish unexplained, no wandering aim  
Sent back to bind on fancy's wings and seek  
Some strange fair world where it might be a  
law ;

But, doubting nothing, had been led by thee,  
Through youth, and saved, as one at length  
awaked

Who has slept through a peril. Ah vain, vain !

Thou lovest me ; the past is in its grave  
Though its ghost haunts us ; still this much is  
ours,

To cast away restraint, lest a worse thing  
Wait for us in the dark. Thou lovest me ;  
And thou art to receive not love but faith,  
For which thou wilt be mine, and smile and  
take

All shapes and shames, and veil without a fear  
That form which music follows like a slave :  
And I look to thee and I trust in thee,  
As in a Northern night one looks away  
Unto the East for morn and spring and joy.  
Thou seest then my aimless, hopeless state,  
And, resting on some few old feelings won  
Back by thy beauty, wouldst that I essay  
The task which was to me what now thou art :  
And why should I conceal one weakness more ?

Thou wilt remember one warm morn when  
winter

Crept aged from the earth, and spring's first  
breath

Blew soft from the moist hills ; the black-thorn  
boughs,

So dark in the bare wood, when glistening  
In the sunshine were white with coming buds,  
Like the bright side of a sorrow, and the banks  
Had violets opening from sleep like eyes.  
I walked with thee who knew'st not a deep  
shame

Lurked beneath smiles and careless words  
which sought

To hide it till they wandered and were mute,  
As we stood listening on a sunny mound  
To the wind murmuring in the damp copse,  
Like heavy breathings of some hidden thing  
Betrayed by sleep ; until the feeling rushed  
That I was low indeed, yet not so low

As to endure the calmness of thine eyes.  
And so I told thee all, while the cool breast

I leaned on altered not its quiet beating :

And long ere words like a hurt bird's complaint  
Bade me look up and be what I had been,

I felt despair could never live by thee :

Thou wilt remember. Thou art not more dear  
Than song was once to me ; and I ne'er sung

But as one entering bright halls where all  
Will rise and shout for him : sure I must own  
That I am fallen, having chosen gifts

Distinct from theirs — that I am sad and fain  
Would give up all to be but where I was,

Not high as I had been if faithful found,  
But low and weak yet full of hope, and sure

Of goodness as of life — that I would lose  
All this gay mastery of mind, to sit  
Once more with them, trusting in truth and love  
And with an aim — not being what I am.

O Pauline, I am ruined who believed  
That though my soul had floated from its  
sphere

Of wild dominion into the dim orb  
Of self — that it was strong and free as ever !  
It has conformed itself to that dim orb,  
Reflecting all its shades and shapes, and now  
Must stay where it alone can be adored.  
I have felt this in dreams — in dreams in which  
I seemed the fate from which I fled ; I felt  
A strange delight in causing my decay.  
I was a fiend in darkness chained forever  
Within some ocean-cave ; and ages rolled,  
Till through the cleft rock, like a moonbeam,  
came

A white swan to remain with me ; and ages  
Rolled, yet I tired not of my first free joy  
In gazing on the peace of its pure wings :  
And then I said, " It is most fair to me,  
Yet its soft wings must sure have suffered  
change

From the thick darkness, sure its eyes are dim.  
Its silver pinions must be cramped and numbed  
With sleeping ages here ; it cannot leave me,  
For it would seem, in light beside its kind,  
Withered, though here to me most beautiful."  
And then I was a young witch whose blue eyes,  
As she stood naked by the river springs,  
Drew down a god : I watched his radiant form  
Growing less radiant, and it gladdened me ;  
Till one morn, as he sat in the sunshine  
Upon my knees, singing to me of heaven,  
He turned to look at me, ere I could lose  
The grin with which I viewed his perishing :  
And he shrieked and departed and sat long  
By his deserted throne, but sunk at last  
Murmuring, as I kissed his lips and curled  
Around him, " I am still a god — to thee."

Still I can lay my soul bare in its fall,  
Since all the wandering and all the weakness  
Will be a saddest comment on the song :  
And if, that done, I can be young again,  
I will give up all gained, as willingly  
As one gives up a charm which shuts him out  
From hope or part or care in human kind.  
As life wanes, all its care and strife and toil  
Seem strangely valueless, while the old trees  
Which grew by our youth's home, the waving  
mass

Of climbing plants heavy with bloom and dew,  
The morning swallows with their songs like  
words,

All these seem clear and only worth our  
thoughts :

So, aught connected with my early life,  
My rude songs or my wild imaginings,  
How I look on them — most distinct amid  
The fever and the stir of after years !

I ne'er had ventured e'en to hope for this,  
Had not the glow I felt at His award,  
Assured me all was not extinct within :



His whom all honor, whose renown springs up  
Like sunlight which will visit all the world,  
So that e'en they who sneered at him at first,  
Come out to it, as some dark spider crawls  
From his foul nets which some lit torch invades,  
Yet spinning still new films for his retreat.  
Thou didst smile, poet, but can we forgive ?

Sun-treader, life and light be thine forever !  
Thou art gone from us ; years go by and spring  
Gladdens and the young earth is beautiful,  
Yet thy songs come not, other bards arise,  
But none like thee : they stand, thy majesties,  
Like mighty works which tell some spirit there  
Hath sat regardless of neglect and scorn,  
Till, its long task completed, it hath risen  
And left us, never to return, and all  
Rush in to peer and praise when all in vain.  
The air seems bright with thy past presence yet,  
But thou art still for me as thou hast been  
When I have stood with thee as on a throne  
With all thy dim creations gathered round  
Like mountains, and I felt of mould like them,  
And with them creatures of my own were  
mixed,

Like things half-lived, catching and giving life.  
But thou art still for me who have adored  
Though single, panting but to hear thy name  
Which I believed a spell to me alone,  
Scarce deeming thou wast as a star to men !  
As one should worship long a sacred spring  
Scarce worth a moth's flitting, which long  
grasses cross,

And one small tree embowers droopingly —  
Joying to see some wandering insect won  
To live in its few rushes, or some locust  
To pasture on its boughs, or some wild bird  
Stoop for its freshness from the trackless air :  
And then should find it but the fountain-head,  
Long lost, of some great river washing towns  
And towers, and seeing old woods which will live  
But by its banks untrod of human foot,  
Which, when the great sun sinks, lie quivering  
In light as some thing lieth half of life  
Before God's foot, waiting a wondrous change ;  
Then girt with rocks which seek to turn or stay  
Its course in vain, for it does ever spread  
Like a sea's arm as it goes rolling on,  
Being the pulse of some great country — so  
Wast thou to me, and art thou to the world !  
And I, perchance, half feel a strange regret  
That I am not what I have been to thee :  
Like a girl one has silently loved long  
In her first loneliness in some retreat,  
When, late emerged, all gaze and glow to view  
Her fresh eyes and soft hair and lips which  
bloom

Like a mountain berry : doubtless it is sweet  
To see her thus adored, but there have been  
Moments when all the world was in our praise,  
Sweeter than any pride of after hours.  
Yet, sun-treader, all hail ! From my heart's  
heart

I bid thee hail ! E'en in my wildest dreams,  
I proudly feel I would have thrown to dust  
The wreaths of fame which seemed o'erhanging  
me,  
To see thee for a moment as thou art.

And if thou livest, if thou lovest, spirit !  
Remember me who set this final seal  
To wandering thought — that one so pure as thou  
Could never die. Remember me who flung  
All honor from my soul, yet paused and said,  
" There is one spark of love remaining yet,  
For I have naught in common with him, shapes  
Which followed him avoid me, and foul forms  
Seek me, which ne'er could fasten on his mind ;  
And though I feel how low I am to him,  
Yet I aim not even to catch a tone  
Of harmonies he called profusely up ;  
So, one gleam still remains, although the last."  
Remember me who praise thee e'en with tears,  
For never more shall I walk calm with thee ;  
Thy sweet imaginings are as an air,  
A melody some wondrous singer sings,  
Which, though it haunt men oft in the still eve,  
They dream not to essay ; yet it no less  
But more is honored. I was thine in shame,  
And now when all thy proud renown is out,  
I am a watcher whose eyes have grown dim  
With looking for some star which breaks on him  
Altered and worn and weak and full of tears.

Autumn has come like spring returned to us,  
Won from her girlishness ; like one returned  
A friend that was a lover, nor forgets  
The first warm love, but full of sober thoughts  
Of fading years ; whose soft mouth quivers yet  
With the old smile, but yet so changed and still !  
And here am I the scoffer, who have probed  
Life's vanity, won by a word again  
Into my own life — by one little word  
Of this sweet friend who lives in loving me,  
Lives strangely on my thoughts and looks and  
words,

As fathoms down some nameless ocean thing  
Its silent course of quietness and joy.  
O dearest, if indeed I tell the past,  
May'st thou forget it as a sad sick dream !  
Or if it linger — my lost soul too soon  
Sinks to itself and whispers we shall be  
But closer linked, two creatures whom the earth  
Bears singly, with strange feelings unrevealed  
Save to each other ; or two lonely things  
Created by some power whose reign is done,  
Having no part in God or his bright world.  
I am to sing whilst ebbing day dies soft,  
As a lean scholar dies worn o'er his book,  
And in the heaven stars steal out one by one  
As hunted men steal to their mountain watch.  
I must not think, lest this new impulse die  
In which I trust ; I have no confidence :  
So, I will sing on fast as fancies come ;  
Rudely, the verse being as the mood it paints.

I strip my mind bare, whose first elements  
I shall unveil — not as they struggle forth  
In infancy, nor as they now exist,  
When I am grown above them and can rule —  
But in that middle stage when they were full  
Yet ere I had disposed them to my will ;  
And then I shall show how these elements  
Produced my present state, and what it is.

I am made up of an intensest life,  
Of a most clear idea of consciousness



Of self, distinct from all its qualities,  
 From all affections, passions, feelings, powers ;  
 And thus far it exists, if tracked, in all :  
 But linked, in me, to self-supremacy,  
 Existing as a centre to all things,  
 Most potent to create and rule and call  
 Upon all things to minister to it ;  
 And to a principle of restlessness  
 Which would be all, have, see, know, taste,  
 feel, all —  
 This is myself ; and I should thus have been  
 Though gifted lower than the meanest soul.

And of my powers, one springs up to save  
 From utter death a soul with such desire  
 Confined to clay — of powers the only one  
 Which marks me — an imagination which  
 Has been a very angel, coming not  
 In fitful visions, but beside me ever  
 And never failing me ; so, though my mind  
 Forgets not, not a shred of life forgets,  
 Yet I can take a secret pride in calling  
 The dark past up to quell it regally.

A mind like this must dissipate itself,  
 But I have always had one lode-star ; now,  
 As I look back, I see that I have halted  
 Or hastened as I looked towards that star —  
 A need, a trust, a yearning after God :  
 A feeling I have analyzed but late,  
 But it existed, and was reconciled  
 With a neglect of all I deemed his laws,  
 Which yet, when seen in others, I abhorred.  
 I felt as one beloved, and so shut in  
 From fear : and thence I date my trust in signs  
 And omens, for I saw God everywhere ;  
 And I can only lay it to the fruit  
 Of a sad after-time that I could doubt  
 Even his being — e'en the while I felt  
 His presence, never acted from myself,  
 Still trusted in a hand to lead me through  
 All danger ; and this feeling ever fought  
 Against my weakest reason and resolve.

And I can love nothing — and this dull truth  
 Has come the last : but sense supplies a love  
 Encircling me and mingling with my life.

These make myself : I have long sought in vain  
 To trace how they were formed by circumstance,  
 Yet ever found them mould my wildest youth  
 Where they alone displayed themselves, converted  
 All objects to their use : now see their course !

They came to me in my first dawn of life  
 Which passed alone with wisest ancient books  
 All halo-girt with fancies of my own ;  
 And I myself went with the tale — a god  
 Wandering after beauty, or a giant  
 Standing vast in the sunset — an old hunter  
 Talking with gods, or a high-crested chief  
 Sailing with troops of friends to Tenedos.  
 I tell you, naught has ever been so clear  
 As the place, the time, the fashion of those  
 lives :  
 I had not seen a work of lofty art,  
 Nor woman's beauty nor sweet nature's face,

Yet, I say, never morn broke clear as those  
 On the dim clustered isles in the blue sea,  
 The deep groves and white temples and wet  
 caves :  
 And nothing ever will surprise me now —  
 Who stood beside the naked Swift-footed,  
 Who bound my forehead with Proserpine's hair.

And strange it is that I who could so dream  
 Should e'er have stooped to aim at aught be-  
 neath —

Aught low or painful ; but I never doubted :  
 So, as I grew, I rudely shaped my life  
 To my immediate wants ; yet strong beneath  
 Was a vague sense of power though folded up —  
 A sense that, though those shades and times  
 were past,  
 Their spirit dwelt in me, with them should rule.

Then came a pause, and long restraint chained  
 down

My soul till it was changed. I lost myself,  
 And were it not that I so loathe that loss,  
 I could recall how first I learned to turn  
 My mind against itself ; and the effects  
 In deeds for which remorse were vain as for  
 The wanderings of delirious dream ; yet thence  
 Came cunning, envy, falsehood, all world's  
 wrong

That spotted me : at length I cleansed my soul.  
 Yet long world's influence remained ; and  
 naught

But the still life I led, apart once more,  
 Which left me free to seek soul's old delights.  
 Could e'er have brought me thus far back to  
 peace.

As peace returned, I sought out some pursuit ;  
 And song rose, no new impulse but the one  
 With which all others best could be combined.  
 My life has not been that of those whose heaven  
 Was lampless save where poesy shone out ;  
 But as a clime where glittering mountain-tops  
 And glancing sea and forests steeped in light  
 Give back reflected the far-flashing sun ;  
 For music (which is earnest of a heaven,  
 Seeing we know emotions strange by it,  
 Not else to be revealed,) is like a voice,  
 A low voice calling fancy, as a friend,  
 To the green woods in the gay summer time :  
 And she fills all the way with dancing shapes  
 Which have made painters pale, and they go on  
 Till stars look at them and winds call to them  
 As they leave life's path for the twilight world  
 Where the dead gather. This was not at first,  
 For I scarce knew what I would do. I had  
 An impulse but no yearning — only sang.

And first I sang as I in dream have seen  
 Music wait on a lyrist for some thought,  
 Yet singing to herself until it came.  
 I turned to those old times and scenes where all  
 That's beautiful had birth for me, and made  
 Rude verses on them all ; and then I paused —  
 I had done nothing, so I sought to know  
 What other minds achieved. No fear outbroke  
 As on the works of mighty bards I gazed,  
 In the first joy at finding my own thoughts

Recorded, my own fancies justified,  
And their aspirings but my very own.  
With them I first explored passion and mind, —  
All to begin afresh! I rather sought  
To rival what I wondered at than form  
Creations of my own; if much was light  
Lent by the others, much was yet my own.

I paused again: a change was coming — came:  
I was no more a boy, the past was breaking  
Before the future and like fever worked.  
I thought on my new self, and all my powers  
Burst out. I dreamed not of restraint, but  
gazed

On all things: schemes and systems went and  
came,

And I was proud (being vainest of the weak)  
In wandering o'er thought's world to seek some  
one

To be my prize, as if you wandered o'er  
The White Way for a star.

And my choice fell

Not so much on a system as a man —  
On one, whom praise of mine shall not offend,  
Who was as calm as beauty, being such  
Unto mankind as thou to me, Pauline, —  
Believing in them and devoting all  
His soul's strength to their winning back to  
peace;

Who sent forth hopes and longings for their sake,  
Clothed in all passion's melodies: such first  
Caught me and set me, slave of a sweet task,  
To disentangle, gather sense from song:  
Since, song-inwoven, lurked there words which  
seemed

A key to a new world, the muttering  
Of angels, something yet unguessed by man.  
How my heart leapt as still I sought and found  
Much there, I felt my own soul had conceived,  
But there living and burning! Soon the orb  
Of his conceptions dawned on me; its praise  
Lives in the tongues of men, men's brows are  
high

When his name means a triumph and a pride,  
So, my weak voice may well forbear to shame  
What seemed decreed my fate: I threw myself  
To meet it, I was vowed to liberty,  
Men were to be as gods and earth as heaven,  
And I — ah, what a life was mine to prove!  
My whole soul rose to meet it. Now, Pauline,  
I shall go mad, if I recall that time!

Oh let me look back ere I leave forever  
The time which was an hour one fondly waits  
For a fair girl that comes a withered hag!  
And I was lonely, far from woods and fields,  
And amid dullest sights, who should be loose  
As a stag; yet I was full of bliss, who lived  
With Plato and who had the key to life;  
And I had dimly shaped my first attempt,  
And many a thought did I build up on thought,  
As the wild bee hangs cell to cell; in vain,  
For I must still advance, no rest for mind.

'T was in my plan to look on real life,  
The life all new to me: my theories  
Were firm, so then I left, to look and learn

Mankind, its cares, hopes, fears, its woes and joys;  
And, as I pondered on their ways, I sought  
How best life's end might be attained — an end  
Comprising every joy. I deeply mused.

And suddenly without heart-wreck I awoke  
As from a dream: I said, "'T was beautiful,  
Yet but a dream, and so adieu to it!"  
As some world-wanderer sees in a far meadow  
Strange towers and high-walled gardens thick  
with trees,

Where song takes shelter and delicious mirth  
From laughing fairy creatures peeping over,  
And on the morrow when he comes to lie  
Forever 'neath those garden-crests fruit-flushed  
Sung round by fairies, all his search is vain.  
First went my hopes of perfecting mankind,  
Next — faith in them, and then in freedom's self  
And virtue's self, then my own motives, ends  
And aims and loves, and human love went last.  
I felt this no decay, because new powers  
Rose as old feelings left — wit, mockery,  
Light-heartedness; for I had oft been sad,  
Mistrusting my resolves, but now I cast  
Hope joyously away: I laughed and said,  
"No more of this!" I must not think: at  
length

I looked again to see if all went well.

My powers were greater: as some temple seemed  
My soul, where naught is changed and incense  
rolls

Around the altar, only God is gone  
And some dark spirit sitteth in his seat.  
So, I passed through the temple and to me  
Knelt troops of shadows, and they cried, "Hail,  
king!

We serve thee now and thou shalt serve no  
more!

Call on us, prove us, let us worship thee!"  
And I said, "Are ye strong? Let fancy bear me  
Far from the past!" And I was borne away,  
As Arab birds float sleeping in the wind,  
O'er deserts, towers and forests, I being calm.  
And I said, "I have nursed up energies,  
They will prey on me." And a band knelt low  
And cried, "Lord, we are here and we will  
make

Safe way for thee in thine appointed life!  
But look on us!" And I said, "Ye will worship  
Me; should my heart not worship too?" They  
shouted,

"Thyself, thou art our king!" So, I stood  
there

Smiling — oh, vanity of vanities!  
For buoyant and rejoicing was the spirit  
With which I looked out how to end my course;  
I felt once more myself, my powers — all mine;  
I knew while youth and health so lifted me  
That, spite of all life's nothingness, no grief  
Came nigh me, I must ever be light-hearted;  
And that this knowledge was the only veil  
Betwixt joy and despair: so, if age came,  
I should be left — a wreck linked to a soul  
Yet fluttering, or mind-broken and aware  
Of my decay. So a long summer morn  
Found me; and ere noon came, I had resolved  
No age should come on me ere youth was spent

For I would wear myself out, like that morn  
Which wasted not a sunbeam ; every hour  
I would make mine, and die.

And thus I sought  
To chain my spirit down which erst I freed  
For flights to fame : I said, " The troubled life  
Of genius, seen so gay when working forth  
Some trusted end, grows sad when all proves  
vain —  
How sad when men have parted with truth's  
peace

For falsest fancy's sake, which waited first  
As an obedient spirit when delight  
Came without fancy's call : but alters soon,  
Comes darkened, seldom, hastens to depart,  
Leaving a heavy darkness and warm tears.  
But I shall never lose her ; she will live  
Dearer for such seclusion. I but catch  
A hue, a glance of what I sing : so, pain  
Is linked with pleasure, for I ne'er may tell  
Half the bright sights which dazzle me ; but  
now

Mine shall be all the radiance : let them fade  
Untold — others shall rise as fair, as fast !  
And when all's done, the few dim gleams trans-  
ferred," —

(For a new thought sprang up how well it were,  
Discarding shadowy hope, to weave such lays  
As straight encircle men with praise and love,  
So, I should not die utterly, — should bring  
One branch from the gold forest, like the knight  
Of old tales, witnessing I had been there) —  
" And when all's done, how vain seems e'en  
success —

The vaunted influence poets have o'er men !  
'T is a fine thing that one weak as myself  
Should sit in his lone room, knowing the words  
He utters in his solitude shall move  
Men like a swift wind — that though dead and  
gone,  
New eyes shall glisten when his beauteous  
dreams

Of love come true in happier frames than his.  
Ay, the still night brings thoughts like these,  
but morn

Comes and the mockery again laughs out  
At hollow praises, smiles allied to sneers ;  
And my soul's idol ever whispers me  
To dwell with him and his unhonored song :  
And I foreknow my spirit, that would press  
First in the struggle, fail again to make  
All bow enslaved, and I again should sink.

" And then know that this curse will come on us,  
To see our idols perish ; we may wither,  
No marvel, we are clay, but our low fate  
Should not extend to those whom trustingly  
We sent before into time's yawning gulf  
To face what dread may lurk in darkness there.  
To find the painter's glory pass, and feel  
Music can move us not as once, or, worst,  
To weep decaying wits ere the frail body  
Decays ! Naught makes me trust some love is  
true,  
But the delight of the contented lowness  
With which I gaze on him I keep forever  
Above me ; I to rise and rival him ?

Feed his fame rather from my heart's best blood.  
Wither unseen that he may flourish still."

Pauline, my soul's friend, thou dost pity yet  
How this mood swayed me when that soul found  
thine,

When I had set myself to live this life,  
Defying all past glory. Ere thou earnest  
I seemed defiant, sweet, for old delights  
Had flocked like birds again ; music, my life,  
Nourished me more than ever ; then the lore  
Loved for itself and all it shows — that king  
Treading the purple calmly to his death,  
While round him, like the clouds of eve, all  
dusk,

The giant shades of fate, silently flitting,  
Pile the dim outline of the coming doom ;  
And him sitting alone in blood while friends  
Are hunting far in the sunshine ; and the boy  
With his white breast and brow and clustering  
curls

Streaked with his mother's blood, but striving  
hard

To tell his story ere his reason goes.  
And when I loved thee as love seemed so oft,  
Thou lovedst me indeed : I wondering searched  
My heart to find some feeling like such love,  
Believing I was still much I had been.  
Too soon I found all faith had gone from me,  
And the late glow of life, like change on clouds,  
Proved not the morn-blush widening into day,  
But eve faint-colored by the dying sun  
While darkness hastens quickly. I will tell  
My state as though 'twere none of mine —  
despair

Cannot come near us — this it is, my state.

Souls alter not, and mine must still advance ;  
Strange that I knew not, when I flung away  
My youth's chief aims, their loss might lead to  
loss

Of what few I retained, and no resource  
Be left me : for behold how changed is all !  
I cannot chain my soul : it will not rest  
In its clay prison, this most narrow sphere :  
It has strange impulse, tendency, desire,  
Which nowise I account for nor explain,  
But cannot stifle, being bound to trust  
All feelings equally, to hear all sides :  
How can my life indulge them ? yet they live,  
Referring to some state of life unknown.

My selfishness is satiated not,  
It wears me like a flame ; my hunger for  
All pleasure, howsoe'er minute, grows pain ;  
I envy — how I envy him whose soul  
Turns its whole energies to some one end,  
To elevate an aim, pursue success  
However mean ! So, my still baffled hope  
Seeks out abstractions ; I would have one joy,  
But one in life, so it were wholly mine,  
One rapture all my soul could fill : and this  
Wild feeling places me in dream afar  
In some vast country where the eye can see  
No end to the far hills and dales bestrewn  
With shining towers and towns, till I grow  
mad

Well-nigh, to know not one abode but holds



Some pleasure, while my soul could grasp the world,

But must remain this vile form's slave. I look  
With hope to age at last, which quenching much,  
May let me concentrate what sparks it spares.

This restlessness of passion meets in me  
A craving after knowledge: the sole power  
Of yet commanding will is in that power  
Repressed; for I beheld it in its dawn,  
The sleepless harpy with just-budding wings,  
And I considered whether to forego  
All happy ignorant hopes and fears, to live,  
Finding a recompense in its wild eyes.  
And when I found that I should perish so,  
I bade its wild eyes close from me forever,  
And I am left alone with old delights;  
See! it lies in a chained thing, still prompt  
To serve me if I loose its slightest bond:  
I cannot but be proud of my bright slave.

How should this earth's life prove my only  
sphere?

Can I so narrow sense but that in life  
Soul itself exceeds it? In their elements  
My love outsoars my reason; but since love  
Perforce receives its object from this earth  
While reason wanders chainless, the few truths  
Caught from its wanderings have sufficed to  
quell

Love chained below; then what were love, set  
free,

Which, with the object it demands, would pass  
Reason companioning the seraphim?

No, what I feel may pass all human love  
Yet fall far short of what my love should be.  
And yet I seem more warped in this than aught,  
Myself stands out more hideously: of old  
I could forget myself in friendship, fame,  
Liberty, nay, in love of mightier souls;  
But I begin to know what thing hate is—  
To sicken and to quiver and grow white—  
And I myself have furnished its first prey.  
Hate of the weak and ever-wavering will,  
The selfishness, the still-decaying frame . . .  
But I must never grieve whom wing can waft  
Far from such thoughts—as now. Andromeda!  
And she is with me: years roll, I shall change,  
But change can touch her not—so beautiful  
With her fixed eyes, earnest and still, and hair  
Lifted and spread by the salt-sweeping breeze,  
And one red beam, all the storm leaves in  
heaven,

Resting upon her eyes and hair, such hair,  
As she awaits the snake on the wet beach  
By the dark rock and the white wave just  
breaking

At her feet; quite naked and alone; a thing  
I doubt not, nor fear for, secure some god  
To save will come in thunder from the stars.  
Let it pass! Soul requires another change.  
I will be gifted with a wondrous mind,  
Yet sunk by error to men's sympathy,  
And in the wane of life, yet only so  
As to call up their fears; and there shall come  
A time requiring youth's best energies;  
And lo, I fling age, sorrow, sickness off,  
And rise triumphant, triumph through decay.

And thus it is that I supply the chasm  
'Twixt what I am and all I fain would be;  
But then to know nothing, to hope for nothing.  
To seize on life's dull joys from a strange fear  
Lest, losing them, all's lost and naught remains!

There's some vile juggle with my reason here;  
I feel I but explain to my own loss  
These impulses: they live no less the same.  
Liberty! what though I despair? my blood  
Rose never at a slave's name proud as now.  
Oh sympathies, obscured by sophistries!—  
Why else have I sought refuge in myself,  
But from the woes I saw and could not stay?  
Love! is not this to love thee, my Pauline?  
I cherish prejudice, lest I be left  
Utterly loveless? witness my belief  
In poets, though sad change has come there too;  
No more I leave myself to follow them—  
Unconsciously I measure me by them—  
Let me forget it: and I cherish most  
My love of England—how her name, a word  
Of hers in a strange tongue makes my heart  
beat!

Pauline, could I but break the spell! Not  
now—

All's fever—but when calm shall come again,  
I am prepared: I have made life my own.  
I would not be content with all the change  
One frame should feel, but I have gone in  
thought

Through all conjuncture, I have lived all life  
When it is most alive, where strangest fate  
New-shapes it past surmise—the throes of men  
Bit by some curse or in the grasps of doom  
Half-visible and still-increasing round,  
Or crowning their wide being's general aim.

These are wild fancies, but I feel, sweet friend,  
As one breathing his weakness to the ear  
Of pitying angel—dear as a winter flower,  
A slight flower growing alone, and offering  
Its frail cup of three leaves to the cold sun,  
Yet joyous and confiding like the triumph  
Of a child: and why am I not worthy thee?  
I can live all the life of plants, and gaze  
Drowsily on the bees that flit and play,  
Or bare my breast for sunbeams which will  
kill,

Or open in the night of sounds, to look  
For the dim stars; I can mount with the bird  
Leaping airily his pyramid of leaves  
And twisted boughs of some tall mountain tree.  
Or rise cheerfully springing to the heavens;  
Or like a fish breathe deep the morning air  
In the misty sun-warm water; or with flower  
And tree can smile in light at the sinking sun  
Just as the storm comes, as a girl would look  
On a departing lover—most serene.

Pauline, come with me, see how I could build  
A home for us, out of the world, in thought!  
I am uplifted: fly with me, Pauline!

Night, and one single ridge of narrow path  
Between the sullen river and the woods  
Waving and muttering, for the moonless night



Has shaped them into images of life,  
Like the uprising of the giant-ghosts,  
Looking on earth to know how their sons fare :  
Thou art so close by me, the roughest swell  
Of wind in the tree-tops hides not the panting  
Of thy soft breasts. No, we will pass to morn-  
ing —

Morning, the rocks and valleys and old woods.  
How the sun brightens in the mist, and here,  
Half in the air, like creatures of the place,  
Trusting the element, living on high boughs  
That swing in the wind — look at the silver  
spray

Flung from the foam-sheet of the cataract  
Amid the broken rocks ! Shall we stay here  
With the wild hawks ? No, ere the hot noon  
come,

Dive we down — safe ! See this our new retreat  
Walled in with a sloped mound of matted  
shrubs,

Dark, tangled, old and green, still sloping down  
To a small pool whose waters lie asleep  
Amid the trailing boughs turned water-plants :  
And tall trees overarch to keep us in,  
Breaking the sunbeams into emerald shafts,  
And in the dreamy water one small group  
Of two or three strange trees are got together  
Wondering at all around, as strange beasts herd  
Together far from their own land : all wildness,  
No turf nor moss, for boughs and plants pave all,  
And tongues of bank go shelving in the lymph,  
Where the pale-throated snake reclines his head,  
And old gray stones lie making eddies there,  
The wild-mice cross them dry-shod. Deeper in !  
Shut thy soft eyes — now look — still deeper in !  
This is the very heart of the woods all round  
Mountain-like heaped above us ; yet even here  
One pond of water gleams ; far off the river  
Sweeps like a sea, barred out from land ; but  
one —

One thin clear sheet has overleaped and wound  
Into this silent depth, which gained, it lies  
Still, as but let by suffrance ; the trees bend  
O'er it as wild men watch a sleeping girl,  
And through their roots long creeping plants  
out-stretch

Their twined hair, steeped and sparkling ; far-  
ther on,

Tall rushes and thick flag-knots have combined  
To narrow it ; so, at length, a silver thread,  
It winds, all noiselessly through the deep wood  
Till through a cleft-way, through the moss and  
stone,

It joins its parent-river with a shout.

Up for the glowing day, leave the old woods !  
See, they part like a ruined arch : the sky !  
Nothing but sky appears, so close the roots  
And grass of the hill-top level with the air —  
Blue sunny air, where a great cloud floats laden  
With light, like a dead whale that white birds  
pick,

Floating away in the sun in some north sea.  
Air, air, fresh life-blood, thin and searching air,  
The clear, dear breath of God that loveth us,  
Where small birds reel and winds take their de-  
light !

Water is beautiful, but not like air :

See, where the solid azure waters lie  
Made as of thickened air, and down below,  
The fern-ranks like a forest spread themselves  
As though each pore could feel the element ;  
Where the quick glancing serpent winds his  
way,

Float with me there, Pauline ! — but not like air.

Down the hill ! Stop — a clump of trees, see, set  
On a heap of rock, which look o'er the far plain :  
So, envious climbing shrubs would mount to rest  
And peer from their spread boughs ; wide they  
wave, looking

At the muleteers who whistle on their way,  
To the merry chime of morning bells, past all  
The little smoking cots, mid fields and banks  
And copses bright in the sun. My spirit wan-  
ders :

Hedgerows for me — those living hedgerows  
where

The bushes close and clasp above and keep  
Thought in — I am concentrated — I feel ;  
But my soul saddens when it looks beyond :  
I cannot be immortal, taste all joy.

O God, where do they tend — these struggling  
aims ?

What would I have ? What is this "sleep"  
which seems

To bound all ? can there be a "waking" point  
Of crowning life ? The soul would never rule ;  
It would be first in all things, it would have  
Its utmost pleasure filled, but, that complete,  
Commanding, for commanding, sickens it.  
The last point I can trace is — rest beneath  
Some better essence than itself, in weakness ;  
This is "myself," not what I think should be :  
And what is that I hunger for but God ?

My God, my God, let me for once look on thee  
As though naught else existed, we alone !  
And as creation crumbles, my soul's spark  
Expands till I can say, — Even from myself  
I need thee and I feel thee and I love thee.  
I do not plead my rapture in thy works  
For love of thee, nor that I feel as one  
Who cannot die : but there is that in me  
Which turns to thee, which loves or which  
should love.

Why have I girt myself with this hell-dress ?  
Why have I labored to put out my life ?  
Is it not in my nature to adore,  
And e'en for all my reason do I not  
Feel him, and thank him, and pray to him —  
now ?

Can I forego the trust that he loves me ?  
Do I not feel a love which only ONE . . .  
O thou pale form, so dimly seen, deep-eyed !  
I have denied thee calmly — do I not  
Pant when I read of thy consummate power,  
And burn to see thy calm pure truths out-flash  
The brightest gleams of earth's philosophy ?  
Do I not shake to hear aught question thee ?  
If I am erring save me, madden me,  
Take from me powers and pleasures, let me die  
Ages, so I see thee ! I am knit round  
As with a charm by sin and lust and pride,

Yet though my wandering dreams have seen  
 all shapes  
 Of strange delight, oft have I stood by thee —  
 Have I been keeping lonely watch with thee  
 In the damp night by weeping Olivet,  
 Or leaning on thy bosom, proudly less,  
 Or dying with thee on the lonely cross,  
 Or witnessing thine outburst from the tomb.

A mortal, sin's familiar friend, doth here  
 Avow that he will give all earth's reward,  
 But to believe and humbly teach the faith,  
 In suffering and poverty and shame,  
 Only believing he is not unloved.

And now, my Pauline, I am thine forever!  
 I feel the spirit which has buoyed me up  
 Desert me, and old shades are gathering fast;  
 Yet while the last light waits, I would say much,  
 This chiefly, it is gain that I have said  
 Somewhat of love I ever felt for thee  
 But seldom told; our hearts so beat together  
 That speech seemed mockery; but when dark  
 hours come,  
 And joy departs, and thou, sweet, deem'st it  
 strange

A sorrow moves me, thou canst not remove,  
 Look on this lay I dedicate to thee,  
 Which through thee I began, which thus I end,  
 Collecting the last gleams to strive to tell  
 How I am thine, and more than ever now  
 That I sink fast: yet though I deeper sink,  
 No less song proves one word has brought me  
 bliss,

Another still may win bliss surely back.  
 Thou knowest, dear, I could not think all calm,  
 For fancies followed thought and bore me off,  
 And left all indistinct; ere one was caught  
 Another glanced; so, dazzled by my wealth,  
 I knew not which to leave nor which to choose,  
 For all so floated, naught was fixed and firm.  
 And then thou said'st a perfect bard was one  
 Who chronicled the stages of all life,  
 And so thou bad'st me shadow this first stage.  
 'Tis done, and even now I recognize  
 The shift, the change from last to past — discern  
 Faintly how life is truth and truth is good.  
 And why thou must be mine is, that e'en now  
 In the dim hush of night, that I have done,  
 Despite the sad forebodings, love looks  
 through —

Whispers, — E'en at the last I have her still,  
 With her delicious eyes as clear as heaven  
 When rain in a quick shower has beat down  
 mist,  
 And clouds float white above like broods of  
 swans.

How the blood lies upon her cheek, outspread  
 As thinned by kisses! only in her lips  
 It wells and pulses like a living thing,  
 And her neck looks like marble misted o'er  
 With love-breath, — a Pauline from heights  
 above,

Stooping beneath me, looking up — one look  
 As I might kill her and be loved the more.

So, love me — me, Pauline, and naught but me,  
 Never leave loving! Words are wild and weak,

Believe them not, Pauline! I stained myself  
 But to behold thee purer by my side,  
 To show thou art my breath, my life, a last  
 Resource, an extreme want: never believe  
 Aught better could so look on thee; nor seek  
 Again the world of good thoughts left for mine!  
 There were bright troops of undiscovered suns,  
 Each equal in their radiant course; there were  
 Clusters of far fair isles which ocean kept  
 For his own joy, and his waves broke on them  
 Without a choice; and there was a dim crowd  
 Of visions, each a part of some grand whole;  
 And one star left his peers and came with peace  
 Upon a storm, and all eyes pined for him;  
 And one isle harbored a sea-beaten ship,  
 And the crew wandered in its bowers and  
 plucked

Its fruits and gave up all their hopes of home;  
 And one dream came to a pale poet's sleep,  
 And he said, "I am singled out by God,  
 No sin must touch me." Words are wild and  
 weak,

But what they would express is, — Leave me  
 not,

Still sit by me with beating breast and hair  
 Loosened, be watching earnest by my side,  
 Turning my books or kissing me when I  
 Look up — like summer wind! Be still to me  
 A help to music's mystery which mind fails  
 To fathom, its solution, no mere clue!  
 O reason's pedantry, life's rule prescribed!  
 I hopeless, I the loveless, hope and love.  
 Wiser and better, know me now, not when  
 You loved me as I was. Smile not! I have  
 Much yet to dawn on you, to gladden you.  
 No more of the past! I'll look within no more,  
 I have too trusted my own lawless wants,  
 Too trusted my vain self, vague intuition —  
 Draining soul's wine alone in the still night,  
 And seeing how, as gathering films arose,  
 As by an inspiration life seemed bare  
 And griming in its vanity, while ends  
 Foul to be dreamed of, smiled at me as fixed  
 And fair, while others changed from fair to foul  
 As a young witch turns an old hag at night.  
 No more of this! We will go hand in hand,  
 I with thee, even as a child — love's slave,  
 Looking no farther than his liege commands.

And thou hast chosen where this life shall be:  
 The land which gave me thee shall be our home,  
 Where nature lies all wild amid her lakes  
 And snow-swathed mountains and vast pines  
 begirt

With ropes of snow — where nature lies all bare,  
 Suffering none to view her but a race  
 Or stunted or deformed, like the mute dwarfs  
 Which wait upon a naked Indian queen.  
 And there (the time being when the heavens  
 are thick

With storm) I'll sit with thee while thou dost  
 sing

Thy native songs, gay as a desert bird  
 Which crieth as it flies for perfect joy,  
 Or telling me old stories of dead knights;  
 Or I will read great lays to thee — how she,  
 The fair pale sister, went to her chill grave  
 With power to love and to be loved and live:

Or we will go together, like twin gods  
Of the infernal world, with scented lamp  
Over the dead, to call and to awake,  
Over the unshaped images which lie  
Within my mind's cave : only leaving all,  
That tells of the past doubt. So, when spring  
comes

With sunshine back again like an old smile,  
And the fresh waters and awakened birds  
And budding woods await us, I shall be  
Prepared, and we will question life once more,  
Till its old sense shall come renewed by change,  
Like some clear thought which harsh words  
veiled before ;

Feeling God loves us, and that all which errs  
Is but a dream which death will dissipate.  
And then what need of longer exile ? Seek  
My England, and, again there, calm approach  
All I once fled from, calmly look on those  
The works of my past weakness, as one views  
Some scene where danger met him long before.  
Ah that such pleasant life should be but  
dreamed !

But whate'er come of it, and though it fade,  
And though ere the cold morning all be gone,  
As it may be ; — though music wait to wile,  
And strange eyes and bright wine lure, laugh  
like sin

Which steals back softly on a soul half saved,  
And I the first deny, deary, despise,  
With this avowal, these intents so fair, —  
Still be it all my own, this moment's pride !  
No less I make an end in perfect joy.  
E'en in my brightest time, a lurking fear  
Possessed me : I well knew my weak resolves,  
I felt the witchery that makes mind sleep  
Over its treasure, as one half afraid  
To make his riches definite : but now  
These feelings shall not utterly be lost,  
I shall not know again that nameless care  
Lest, leaving all undone in youth, some new  
And undreamed end reveal itself too late :  
For this song shall remain to tell forever  
That when I lost all hope of such a change,  
Suddenly beauty rose on me again.  
No less I make an end in perfect joy,  
For I, who thus again was visited,  
Shall doubt not many another bliss awaits,  
And, though this weak soul sink and darkness  
whelm,  
Some little word shall light it, raise aloft,

To where I clearer see and better love,  
As I again go o'er the tracts of thought  
Like one who has a right, and I shall live  
With poets, calmer, purer still each time,  
And beauteous shapes will come for me to seize,  
And unknown secrets will be trusted me  
Which were denied the waverer once ; but now  
I shall be priest and prophet as of old.

Sun-treader, I believe in God and truth  
And love ; and as one just escaped from death  
Would bind himself in bands of friends to feel  
He lives indeed, so, I would lean on thee !  
Thou must be ever with me, most in gloom  
If such must come, but chiefly when I die,  
For I seem, dying, as one going in the dark  
To fight a giant : but live thou forever,  
And be to all what thou hast been to me !  
All in whom this wakes pleasant thoughts of me  
Know my last state is happy, free from doubt  
Or touch of fear. Love me and wish me well.

## SONNET.

Mr. Gosse in his *Personalia* copies from the  
*Monthly Repository* the following sonnet. Three  
other pieces first printed in the same periodical  
will be found as afterward grouped in *Bells*  
and *Pomegranates*.

EYES, calm beside thee (Lady, couldst thou  
know !)  
May turn away thick with fast gathering  
tears :

I glance not where all gaze : thrilling and low  
Their passionate praises reach thee — my  
cheek wears

Alone no wonder when thou passest by ;  
Thy tremulous lids, bent and suffused, reply  
To the irrepressible homage which doth glow  
On every lip but mine : if in thine ears  
Their accents linger — and thou dost recall

Me as I stood, still, guarded, very pale,  
Beside each votarist whose lighted brow  
Wore worship like an aureole, "O'er them all  
My beauty," thou wilt murmur, "did pre-  
vail

Save that one only : " — Lady, couldst thou  
know !

August 17, 1834.



## PARACELSUS

INSCRIBED TO

AMÉDÉE DE RIPERT-MONCLAR

BY HIS AFFECTIONATE FRIEND

LONDON, March 15, 1835.

R. B.

THE dedication of *Paracelsus* was, in a degree, the payment of a debt, for it was the young count, four years older than Browning, and at the time a private agent in England between the Duchesse de Berri and her royalist friends in France, who suggested the subject to the poet. When first published *Paracelsus* had the following Preface: "I am anxious that the reader should not, at the very outset, — mistaking my performance for one of a class with which it has nothing in common, — judge it by principles on which it was never moulded, and subject it to a standard to which it was never meant to conform. I therefore anticipate his discovery, that it is an attempt, probably more novel than happy, to reverse the method usually adopted by writers whose aim it is to set forth any phenomena of the mind or the passions, by the operation of persons and events; and that, instead of having recourse to an external machinery of incidents to create and evolve the crisis I desire to produce, I have ventured to display somewhat minutely the mood itself in its rise and progress, and have suffered the agency by which it is influenced and determined, to be generally discernible in its effects alone, and subordinate throughout, if not altogether excluded: and this for a reason. I have endeavored to write a poem, not a drama: the canons of the drama are well known, and I cannot but think that, inasmuch as they have

immediate regard to stage representation, the peculiar advantages they hold out are really such only so long as the purpose for which they were at first instituted is kept in view. I do not very well understand what is called a Dramatic Poem, wherein all those restrictions only submitted to on account of compensating good in the original scheme are scrupulously retained, as though for some special fitness in themselves — and all new facilities placed at an author's disposal by the vehicle he selects, as pertinaciously rejected. It is certain, however, that a work like mine depends on the intelligence and sympathy of the reader for its success, — indeed were my scenes stars, it must be his coöperating fancy which, supplying all chasms, shall collect the scattered lights into one constellation — a Lyre or a Crown. I trust for his indulgence towards a poem which had not been imagined six months ago; and that even should he think slightly of the present (an experiment I am in no case likely to repeat) he will not be prejudiced against other productions which may follow in a more popular, and perhaps less difficult form."

Mr. Browning, senior, paid for the publication of *Paracelsus*. In its final form, as here given, it is greatly changed, not in structure but in phrase. Mr. Cooke states that the change affects nearly a third of the lines.

## PERSONS

AUREOLUS PARACELSUS, a student.  
FESTUS and MICHAL, his friends.  
AFRILE, an Italian poet.

## I. PARACELSUS ASPIRES

SCENE, Würzburg: a garden in the environs. 1512.

FESTUS, PARACELSUS, MICHAL.

*Paracelsus.* Come close to me, dear friends; still closer; thus!

Close to the heart which, though long time roll by  
Ere it again beat quicker, pressed to yours,  
As now it beats — perchance a long, long time —  
At least henceforth your memories shall make  
Quiet and fragrant as befits their home.  
Nor shall my memory want a home in yours —  
Alas, that it requires too well such free  
Forgiving love as shall embalm it there!

For if you would remember me aright,  
As I was born to be, you must forget  
All fitful, strange and moody waywardness  
Which e'er confused my better spirit, to dwell  
Only on moments such as these, dear friends!  
— My heart no truer, but my words and ways  
More true to it: as Michal, some months  
hence,

Will say, "this autumn was a pleasant time,"  
For some few sunny days; and overlook  
Its bleak wind, hankering after pining leaves.  
Autumn would fain be sunny; I would look  
Liker my nature's truth: and both are frail,  
And both beloved, for all our frailty.

*Michal.*

*Aureole!*

*Par.* Drop by drop! she is weeping like a child!

Not so! I am content — more than content;  
Nay, autumn wins you best by this its mute  
Appeal to sympathy for its decay:  
Look up, sweet Michal, nor esteem the less



Your stained and drooping vines their grapes  
bow down,  
Nor blame those creaking trees bent with their  
fruit,

That apple-tree with a rare after-birth  
Of peeping blooms sprinkled its wealth among !  
Then for the winds — what wind that ever raved  
Shall vex that ash which overlooks you both,  
So proud it wears its berries ? Ah, at length,  
The old smile meet for her, the lady of this  
Sequestered nest ! — this kingdom, limited  
Along by one old populous green wall  
Tenanted by the ever-busy flies,  
Gray crickets and shy lizards and quick spiders,  
Each family of the silver-threaded moss —  
Which, look through near, this way, and it  
appears

A stubble-field or a cane-brake, a marsh  
Of bulrush whitening in the sun : laugh now !  
Fancy the crickets, each one in his house,  
Looking out, wondering at the world — or best,  
Yon painted snail with his gay shell of dew,  
Travelling to see the glossy balls high up  
Hung by the caterpillar, like gold lamps.

*Mich.* In truth we have lived carelessly and  
well.

*Par.* And shall, my perfect pair ! — each,  
trust me, born

For the other ; nay, your very hair, when mixed,  
Is of one hue. For where save in this nook  
Shall you two walk, when I am far away,  
And wish me prosperous fortune ? Stay : that  
plant

Shall never wave its tangles lightly and softly,  
As a queen's languid and imperial arm  
Which scatters crowns among her lovers, but you  
Shall be reminded to predict to me  
Some great success ! Ah see, the sun sinks broad  
Behind Saint Saviour's : wholly gone, at last !

*Festus.* Now, Aureole, stay those wandering  
eyes awhile !

You are ours to-night, at least ; and while you  
spoke

Of Michal and her tears, I thought that none  
Could willing leave what he so seemed to love :  
But that last look destroys my dream — that  
look

As if, where'er you gazed, there stood a star !  
How far was Würzburg with its church and spire  
And garden-walls and all things they contain,  
From that look's far alighting ?

*Par.* I but spoke

And looked alike from simple joy to see  
The beings I love best, shut in so well  
From all rude chances like to be my lot,  
That, when afar, my weary spirit, — disposed  
To lose awhile its care in soothing thoughts  
Of them, their pleasant features, looks and  
words, —

Needs never hesitate, nor apprehend  
Encroaching trouble may have reached them  
too,

Nor have recourse to fancy's busy aid  
And fashion even a wish in their behalf  
Beyond what they possess already here ;  
But, unobstructed, may at once forget  
Itself in them, assured how well they fare.  
Beside, this Festus knows he holds me one

Whom quiet and its charms arrest in vain,  
One scarce aware of all the joys I quit,  
Too filled with airy hopes to make account  
Of soft delights his own heart garners up :  
Whereas behold how much our sense of all  
That's beautiful proves alike ! When Festus  
learns

That every common pleasure of the world  
Affects me as himself ; that I have just  
As varied appetite for joy derived  
From common things ; a stake in life, in short,  
Like his ; a stake which rash pursuit of aims  
That life affords not, would as soon destroy ; —  
He may convince himself that, this in view,  
I shall act well advised. And last, because,  
Though heaven and earth and all things were  
at stake,

Sweet Michal must not weep, our parting eve.

*Fest.* True : and the eve is deepening, and  
we sit

As little anxious to begin our talk  
As though to-morrow I could hint of it  
As we paced arm-in-arm the cheerful town  
At sun-dawn ; or could whisper it by fits  
(Trithemius busied with his class the while)  
In that dim chamber where the noon-streaks peer  
Half-frightened by the awful tomes around ;  
Or in some grassy lane unbosom all  
From even-blush to midnight : but, to-morrow !  
Have I full leave to tell my inmost mind ?  
We have been brothers, and henceforth the  
world

Will rise between us : — all my freest mind ?

'Tis the last night, dear Aureole !

*Par.* Oh, say on !

Devise some test of love, some arduous feat  
To be performed for you : say on ! If night  
Be spent the while, the better ! Recall how oft  
My wondrous plans and dreams and hopes and  
fears

Have — never wearied you, oh no ! — as I  
Recall, and never vividly as now,  
Your true affection, born when Einsiedeln  
And its green hills were all the world to us ;  
And still increasing to this night which ends  
My further stay at Würzburg. Oh, one day  
You shall be very proud ! Say on, dear friends !

*Fest.* In truth ? 'Tis for my proper peace, in-  
deed,

Rather than yours ; for vain all projects seem  
To stay your course : I said my latest hope  
Is fading even now. A story tells  
Of some far embassy despatched to win  
The favor of an eastern king, and how  
The gifts they offered proved but dazzling dust  
Shed from the ore-beds native to his clime.  
Just so, the value of repose and love,  
I meant should tempt you, better far than I  
You seem to comprehend ; and yet desist  
No whit from projects where repose nor love  
Has part.

*Par.* Once more ? Alas ! As I foretold.

*Fest.* A solitary brier the bank puts forth  
To save our swan's nest floating out to sea.

*Par.* Dear Festus, hear me. What is it you  
wish ?

That I should lay aside my heart's pursuit,  
Abandon the sole ends for which I live,

Reject God's great commission, and so die !  
 You bid me listen for your true love's sake :  
 Yet how has grown that love ? Even in a long  
 And patient cherishing of the self-same spirit  
 It now would quell ; as though a mother hoped  
 To stay the lusty manhood of the child  
 Once weak upon her knees. I was not born  
 Informed and fearless from the first, but shrank  
 From aught which marked me out apart from  
 men :

I would have lived their life, and died their  
 death,

Lost in their ranks, eluding destiny :  
 But you first guided me through doubt and fear,  
 Taught me to know mankind and know myself ;  
 And now that I am strong and full of hope,  
 That, from my soul, I can reject all aims  
 Save those your earnest words made plain to me,  
 Now that I touch the brink of my design,  
 When I would have a triumph in their eyes,  
 A glad cheer in their voices — Michal weeps,  
 And Festus ponders gravely !

*Fest.* When you deign  
 To hear my purpose . . .

*Par.* Hear it ? I can say  
 Beforehand all this evening's conference !  
 'Tis this way, Michal, that he uses : first,  
 Or he declares, or I, the leading points  
 Of our best scheme of life, what is man's end  
 And what God's will ; no two faiths e'er agreed  
 As his with mine. Next, each of us allows  
 Faith should be acted on as best we may ;  
 Accordingly, I venture to submit  
 My plan, in lack of better, for pursuing  
 The path which God's will seems to authorize.  
 Well, he discerns much good in it, avows  
 This motive worthy, that hope plausible,  
 A danger here to be avoided, there  
 An oversight to be repaired : in fine,  
 Our two minds go together — all the good  
 Approved by him, I gladly recognize,  
 All he counts bad, I thankfully discard,  
 And naught forbids my looking up at last  
 For some stray comfort in his cautious brow.  
 When lo ! I learn that, spite of all, there lurks  
 Some innate and inexplicable germ  
 Of failure in my scheme ; so that at last  
 It all amounts to this — the sovereign proof  
 That we devote ourselves to God, is seen  
 In living just as though no God there were ;  
 A life which, prompted by the sad and blind  
 Folly of man, Festus abhors the most ;  
 But which these tenets sanctify at once,  
 Though to less subtle wits it seems the same,  
 Consider it how they may.

*Mich.* Is it so, Festus ?  
 He speaks so calmly and kindly : is it so ?

*Par.* Reject those glorious visions of God's  
 love  
 And man's design ; laugh loud that God should  
 send

Vast longings to direct us ; say how soon  
 Power satiates these, or lust, or gold ; I know  
 The world's cry well, and how to answer it.  
 But this ambiguous warfare . . .

*Fest.* . . . Wearies so  
 That you will grant no last leave to your friend  
 To urge it ? — for his sake, not yours ? I wish

To send my soul in good hopes after you ;  
 Never to sorrow that uncertain words  
 Erringly apprehended, a new creed  
 Ill understood, begot rash trust in you,  
 Had share in your undoing.

*Par.* Choose your side,  
 Hold or renounce : but meanwhile blame me not  
 Because I dare to act on your own views,  
 Nor shrink when they point onward, nor espy  
 A peril where they most ensure success.

*Fest.* Prove that to me — but that ! Prove  
 you abide

Within their warrant, nor presumptuous boast  
 God's labor laid on you ; prove, all you covet,  
 A mortal may expect ; and, most of all,  
 Prove the strange course you now affect, will  
 lead

To its attainment — and I bid you speed,  
 Nay, count the minutes till you venture forth !  
 You smile ; but I had gathered from slow  
 thought —

Much musing on the fortunes of my friend —  
 Matter I deemed could not be urged in vain ;  
 But it all leaves me at my need : in shreds  
 And fragments I must venture what remains.

*Mich.* Ask at once, Festus, wherefore he  
 should scorn. . . .

*Fest.* Stay, Michal : Aureole, I speak guard-  
 edly

And gravely, knowing well, whate'er your error,  
 This is no ill-considered choice of yours,  
 No sudden fancy of an ardent boy.  
 Not from your own confiding words alone  
 Am I aware your passionate heart long since  
 Gave birth to, nourished and at length matures  
 This scheme. I will not speak of Einsiedeln,  
 Where I was born your elder by some years  
 Only to watch you fully from the first :  
 In all beside, our mutual tasks were fixed  
 Even then — 't was mine to have you in my view  
 As you had your own soul and those intents  
 Which filled it when, to crown your dearest  
 wish,

With a tumultuous heart, you left with me  
 Our childhood's home to join the favored few  
 Whom, here, Trithemius condescends to teach  
 A portion of his lore : and not one youth  
 Of those so favored, whom you now despise,  
 Came earnest as you came, resolved, like you,  
 To grasp all, and retain all, and deserve  
 By patient toil a wide renown like his.  
 Now, this new ardor which supplants the old  
 I watched, too ; 't was significant and strange,  
 In one matched to his soul's content at length  
 With rivals in the search for wisdom's prize,  
 To see the sudden pause, the total change ;  
 From contest, the transition to repose —  
 From pressing onward as his fellows pressed,  
 To a blank idleness, yet most unlike  
 The dull stagnation of a soul, content,  
 Once foiled, to leave betimes a thriveless quest.  
 That careless bearing, free from all pretence  
 Even of contempt for what it ceased to seek —  
 Smiling humility, praising much, yet waiving  
 What it professed to praise — though not so well  
 Maintained but that rare outbreaks, fierce and  
 brief,

Revealed the hidden scorn, as quickly curbed.

That ostentatious show of past defeat,  
That ready acquiescence in contempt,  
I deemed no other than the letting go  
His shivered sword, of one about to spring  
Upon his foe's throat; but it was not thus:  
Not that way looked your brooding purpose  
then,

For after-signs disclosed, what you confirmed,  
That you prepared to task to the uttermost  
Your strength, in furtherance of a certain aim  
Which — while it bore the name your rivals gave  
Their own most puny efforts — was so vast  
In scope that it included their best flights,  
Combined them, and desired to gain one prize  
In place of many, — the secret of the world,  
Of man, and man's true purpose, path and fate.  
— That you, not nursing as a mere vague dream  
This purpose, with the sages of the past,  
Have struck upon a way to this, if all  
You trust be true, which following, heart and  
soul,

You, if a man may, dare aspire to know:  
And that this aim shall differ from a host  
Of aims alike in character and kind,  
Mostly in this, — that in itself alone  
Shall its reward be, not an alien end  
Blending therewith; no hope nor fear nor joy  
Nor woe, to elsewhere move you, but this pure  
Devotion to sustain you or betray:  
Thus you aspire.

*Par.* You shall not state it thus:  
I should not differ from the dreamy crew  
You speak of. I profess no other share  
In the selection of my lot, than this  
My ready answer to the will of God  
Who summons me to be his organ. All  
Whose innate strength supports them shall suc-  
ceed

No better than the sages.

*Fest.* Such the aim, then,  
God sets before you; and 'tis doubtless need  
That he appoint no less the way of praise  
Than the desire to praise; for, though I hold,  
With you, the setting forth such praise to be  
The natural end and service of a man,  
And hold such praise is best attained when man  
Attains the general welfare of his kind —  
Yet this, the end, is not the instrument.  
Presume not to serve God apart from such  
Appointed channel as he wills shall gather  
Imperfect tributes, for that sole obedience  
Valued perchance! He seeks not that his altars  
Blaze, careless how, so that they do but blaze.  
Suppose this, then; that God selected you  
To know (heed well your answers, for my faith  
Shall meet implicitly what they affirm),  
I cannot think you dare annex to such  
Selection aught beyond a steadfast will,  
An intense hope; nor let your gifts create  
Scorn or neglect of ordinary means  
Conducive to success, make destiny  
Dispense with man's endeavor. Now, dare you  
search

Your inmost heart, and candidly avow  
Whether you have not rather wild desire  
For this distinction than security  
Of its existence? whether you discern  
The path to the fulfilment of your purpose

Clear as that purpose — and again, that purpose  
Clear as your yearning to be singled out  
For its pursuer. Dare you answer this?

*Par.* (after a pause). No, I have naught to  
fear! Who will may know  
The secret'st workings of my soul. What  
though

It be so? — if indeed the strong desire  
Eclipse the aim in me? — if splendor break  
Upon the outset of my path alone,  
And duskest shade succeed? What fairer seal  
Shall I require to my authentic mission  
Than this fierce energy? — this instinct striving  
Because its nature is to strive? — enticed  
By the security of no broad course,  
Without success forever in its eyes!  
How know I else such glorious fate my own,  
But in the restless irresistible force  
That works within me? Is it for human will  
To institute such impulses? — still less,  
To disregard their promptings! What should I  
Do, kept among you all; your loves, your cares,  
Your life — all to be mine? Be sure that God  
Ne'er dooms to waste the strength he deigns  
impart!

Ask the geier-eagle why she stoops at once  
Into the vast and unexplored abyss,  
What full-grown power informs her from the  
first,

Why she not marvels, strenuously beating  
The silent boundless regions of the sky!  
Be sure they sleep not whom God needs! Nor  
fear

Their holding light his charge, when every hour  
That finds that charge delayed, is a new death.  
This for the faith in which I trust; and hence  
I can abjure so well the idle arts  
These pedants strive to learn and teach; Black  
Arts,

Great Works, the Secret and Sublime, forsooth —  
Let others prize: too intimate a tie  
Connects me with our God! A sullen fiend  
To do my bidding, fallen and hateful sprites  
To help me — what are these, at best, beside  
God helping, God directing everywhere,  
So that the earth shall yield her secrets up,  
And every object there be charged to strike,  
Teach, gratify her master God appoints?  
And I am young, my Festus, happy and free!  
I can devote myself; I have a life  
To give; I, singled out for this, the One!  
Think, think! the wide East, where all Wis-  
dom sprung;

The bright South, where she dwelt; the hopeful  
North,

All are passed o'er — it lights on me! 'Tis time  
New hopes should animate the world, new light  
Should dawn from new revealings to a race  
Weighed down so long, forgotten so long; thus  
shall

The heaven reserved for us at last receive  
Creatures whom no unwonted splendors blind,  
But ardent to confront the unclouded blaze,  
Whose beams not seldom blessed their pilgrim-  
age,

Not seldom glorified their life below.

*Fest.* My words have their old fate and  
make faint stand



Against your glowing periods. Call this, truth —  
 Why not pursue it in a fast retreat,  
 Some one of Learning's many palaces,  
 After approved example? — seeking there  
 Calm converse with the great dead, soul to soul,  
 Who laid up treasure with the like intent  
 — So lift yourself into their airy place,  
 And fill out full their unfulfilled careers,  
 Unravelling the knots their baffled skill  
 Pronounced inextricable, true! — but left  
 Far less confused. A fresh eye, a fresh hand,  
 Might do much at their vigor's waning-point;  
 Succeeding with new-breathed new-hearted  
 force,

As at old games the runner snatched the torch  
 From runner still: this way success might be.  
 But you have coupled with your enterprise  
 An arbitrary self-repugnant scheme  
 Of seeking it in strange and untried paths.  
 What books are in the desert? Writes the sea  
 The secret of her yearning in vast caves  
 Where yours will fall the first of human feet?  
 Has wisdom sat there and recorded aught  
 You press to read? Why turn aside from her  
 To visit, where her vesture never glanced,  
 Now — solitudes consigned to barrenness  
 By God's decree, which who shall dare impugn?  
 Now — ruins where she paused but would not  
 stay,

Old ravaged cities that, renouncing her,  
 She called an endless curse on, so it came:  
 Or worst of all, now — men you visit, men,  
 Ignoblest troops who never heard her voice  
 Or hate it, men without one gift from Rome  
 Or Athens, — these shall Aureole's teachers be!  
 Rejecting past example, practice, precept.  
 Aidless 'mid these he thinks to stand alone:  
 Thick like a glory round the Stagirite  
 Your rivals throng, the sages: here stand you!  
 Whatever you may protest, knowledge is not  
 Paramount in your love; or for her sake  
 You would collect all help from every source —  
 Rival, assistant, friend, foe, all would merge  
 In the broad class of those who showed her  
 haunts,  
 And those who showed them not.

*Par.* What shall I say?  
 Festus, from childhood I have been possessed  
 By a fire — by a true fire, or faint or fierce.  
 As from without some master, so it seemed,  
 Repressed or urged its current: this but ill  
 Expresses what I would convey: but rather  
 I will believe an angel ruled me thus,  
 Than that my soul's own workings, own high  
 nature,

So became manifest. I knew not then  
 What whispered in the evening, and spoke out  
 At midnight. If some mortal, born too soon,  
 Were laid away in some great trance — the ages  
 Coming and going all the while — till dawned  
 His true time's advent; and could then record  
 The words they spoke who kept watch by his  
 bed, —

Then I might tell more of the breath so light  
 Upon my eyelids, and the fingers light  
 Among my hair. Youth is confused; yet never  
 So dull was I but, when that spirit passed,  
 I turned to him, scarce consciously, as turns

A water-snake when fairies cross his sleep.  
 And having this within me and about me  
 While Einsiedeln, its mountains, lakes and  
 woods

Confined me — what oppressive joy was mine  
 When life grew plain, and I first viewed the  
 thronged,

The everlasting concourse of mankind!  
 Believe that ere I joined them, ere I knew  
 The purpose of the pageant, or the place  
 Consigned me in its ranks — while, just awake,  
 Wonder was freshest and delight most pure —  
 'T was then that least supportable appeared  
 A station with the brightest of the crowd,  
 A portion with the proudest of them all.  
 And from the tumult in my breast, this only  
 Could I collect, that I must thenceforth die  
 Or elevate myself far, far above  
 The gorgeous spectacle. I seemed to long  
 At once to trample on, yet save mankind,  
 To make some unexampled sacrifice  
 In their behalf, to wring some wondrous good  
 From heaven or earth for them, to perish, win-  
 ning

Eternal weal in the act: as who should dare  
 Pluck out the angry thunder from its cloud.  
 That, all its gathered flame discharged on him,  
 No storm might threaten summer's azure sleep:  
 Yet never to be mixed with men so much  
 As to have part even in my own work, share  
 In my own largess. Once the feat achieved,  
 I would withdraw from their officious praise,  
 Would gently put aside their profuse thanks.  
 Like some knight traversing a wilderness,  
 Who, on his way, may chance to free a tribe  
 Of desert-people from their dragon-foe;  
 When all the swarthy race press round to kiss  
 His feet, and choose him for their king, and yield  
 Their poor tents, pitched among the sand-hills,  
 for

His realm: and he points, smiling, to his scarf  
 Heavy with riveled gold, his burgenet  
 Gay set with twinkling stones — and to the East,  
 Where these must be displayed!

*Fest.* Good: let us hear  
 No more about your nature, "which first shrank  
 From all that marked you out apart from men!"

*Par.* I touch on that; these words but analyze  
 The first mad impulse: 't was as brief as fond,  
 For as I gazed again upon the show,  
 I soon distinguished here and there a shape  
 Palm-wreathed and radiant, forehead and full  
 eye.

Well pleased was I their state should thus at once  
 Interpret my own thoughts: — "Behold the clue  
 To all," I rashly said, "and what I pine  
 To do, these have accomplished: we are peers.  
 They know and therefore rule: I, too, will  
 know!"

You were beside me, Festus, as you say;  
 You saw me plunge in their pursuits whom fame  
 Is lavish to attest the lords of mind,  
 Not pausing to make sure the prize in view  
 Would satiate my cravings when obtained,  
 But since they strove I strove. Then came a  
 slow

And strangling failure. We aspired alike,  
 Yet not the meanest plodder, Tritheim counts



A marvel, but was all-sufficient, strong  
Or staggered only at his own vast wits ;  
While I was restless, nothing satisfied,  
Distrustful, most perplexed. I would slur over  
That struggle ; suffice it, that I loathed myself  
As weak compared with them, yet felt somehow  
A mighty power was brooding, taking shape  
Within me ; and this lasted till one night  
When, as I sat revolving it and more,  
A still voice from without said — " Seest thou  
not,  
Desponding child, whence spring defeat and  
loss ?  
Even from thy strength. Consider : hast thou  
gazed

Presumptuously on wisdom's countenance,  
No veil between ; and can thy faltering hands,  
Unguided by the brain the sight absorbs,  
Pursue their task as earnest blinkers do  
Whom radiance ne'er distracted ? Live their life  
If thou wouldst share their fortune, choose their  
eyes

Unfed by splendor. Let each task present  
Its petty good to thee. Waste not thy gifts  
In profitless waiting for the gods' descent,  
But have some idol of thine own to dress  
With their array. Know, not for knowing's sake,  
But to become a star to men forever ;  
Know, for the gain it gets, the praise it brings,  
The wonder it inspires, the love it breeds :  
Look one step onward, and secure that step ! "  
And I smiled as one never smiles but once,  
Then first discovering my own aim's extent,  
Which sought to comprehend the works of God,  
And God himself, and all God's intercourse  
With the human mind ; I understood, no less,  
My fellows' studies, whose true worth I saw,  
But smiled not, well aware who stood by me.  
And softer came the voice — " There is a way :  
'Tis hard for flesh to tread therein, imbued  
With frailty — hopeless, if indulgence first  
Have ripened inborn germs of sin to strength :  
Wilt thou adventure for my sake and man's,  
Apart from all reward ? " And last it breathed —  
" Be happy, my good soldier ; I am by thee,  
Be sure, even to the end ! " — I answered not,  
Knowing him. As he spoke, I was endued  
With comprehension and a steadfast will ;  
And when he ceased, my brow was sealed his  
own.

If there took place no special change in me,  
How comes it all things wore a different hue  
Thenceforward ? — pregnant with vast conse-  
quence,  
Teeming with grand result, loaded with fate ?  
So that when, quailing at the mighty range  
Of secret truths which yearn for birth, I haste  
To contemplate undazzled some one truth,  
Its bearings and effects alone — at once  
What was a speck expands into a star,  
Asking a life to pass exploring thus,  
Till I near craze. I go to prove my soul !  
I see my way as birds their trackless way.  
I shall arrive ! what time, what circuit first,  
I ask not : but unless God send his hail  
Or blinding fireballs, sleet or stifling snow,  
In some time, his good time, I shall arrive :  
He guides me and the bird. In his good time !

*Mich.* Vex him no further, Festus ; it is so !  
*Fest.* Just thus you help me ever. This  
would hold

Were it the trackless air, and not a path  
Inviting you, distinct with footprints yet  
Of many a mighty marcher gone that way.  
You may have purer views than theirs, perhaps,  
But they were famous in their day — the proofs  
Remain. At least accept the light they lend.

*Par.* Their light ! the sum of all is briefly  
this :

They labored and grew famous, and the fruits  
Are best seen in a dark and groaning earth  
Given over to a blind and endless strife  
With evils, what of all their lore abates ?  
No ; I reject and spurn them utterly  
And all they teach. Shall I still sit beside  
Their dry wells, with a white lip and filmed eye,  
While in the distance heaven is blue above  
Mountains where sleep the unsunned tarns ?

*Fest.* And yet  
As strong delusions have prevailed ere now.

Men have set out as gallantly to seek  
Their ruin. I have heard of such : yourself  
Avow all hitherto have failed and fallen.

*Mich.* Nay, Festus, when but as the pilgrims  
faint

Through the drear way, do you expect to see  
Their city dawn amid the clouds afar ?

*Par.* Ay, sounds it not like some old well-  
known tale ?

For me, I estimate their works and them  
So rightly, that at times I almost dream  
I too have spent a life the sages' way,  
And tread once more familiar paths. Perchance  
I perished in an arrogant self-reliance  
Ages ago ; and in that act, a prayer  
For one more chance went up so earnest, so  
Instinct with better light let in by death,  
That life was blotted out — not so completely  
But scattered wrecks enough of it remain,  
Dim memories, as now, when once more seems  
The goal in sight again. All which, indeed,  
Is foolish, and only means — the flesh I wear,  
The earth I tread, are not more clear to me  
Than my belief, explained to you or no.

*Fest.* And who am I, to challenge and dis-  
pute

That clear belief ? I will divest all fear.

*Mich.* Then Aureole is God's commissary !  
he shall

Be great and grand — and all for us !

*Par.* No, sweet !  
Not great and grand. If I can serve mankind  
'T is well ; but there our intercourse must end :  
I never will be served by those I serve.

*Fest.* Look well to this ; here is a plague-  
spot, here,

Disguise it how you may ! 'T is true, you utter  
This scorn while by our side and loving us ;

'T is but a spot as yet : but it will break  
Into a hideous blotch if overlooked.

How can that course be safe which from the first  
Produces carelessness to human love ?

It seems you have abjured the helps which men  
Who overpass their kind, as you would do,  
Have humbly sought ; I dare not thoroughly  
probe

This matter, lest I learn too much. Let be  
That popular praise would little instigate  
Your efforts, nor particular approval  
Reward you; put reward aside; alone  
You shall go forth upon your arduous task,  
None shall assist you, none partake your toil,  
None share your triumph: still you must retain  
Some one to cast your glory on, to share  
Your rapture with. Were I elect like you,  
I would encircle me with love, and raise  
A rampart of my fellows; it should seem  
Impossible for me to fail, so watched  
By gentle friends who made my cause their  
own.

They should ward off fate's envy — the great  
gift,

Extravagant when claimed by me alone,  
Being so a gift to them as well as me.  
If danger daunted me or ease seduced,  
How calmly their sad eyes should gaze re-  
proach!

*Mich.* O Aureole, can I sing when all alone,  
Without first calling, in my fancy, both  
To listen by my side — even I! And you?  
Do you not feel this? Say that you feel this!

*Par.* I feel 't is pleasant that my aims, at  
length  
Allowed their weight, should be supposed to  
need

A further strengthening in these goodly helps!  
My course allures for its own sake, its sole  
Intrinsic worth; and ne'er shall boat of mine  
Adventure forth for gold and apes at once.

Your sages say, "if human, therefore weak;"  
If weak, more need to give myself entire  
To my pursuit; and by its side, all else . . .  
No matter! I deny myself but little

In waiving all assistance save its own.  
Would there were some real sacrifice to make!  
Your friends the sages threw their joys away,  
While I must be content with keeping mine.

*Fest.* But do not cut yourself from human  
weal!

You cannot thrive — a man that dares effect  
To spend his life in service to his kind  
For no reward of theirs, unbound to them  
By any tie; nor do so, Aureole! No —  
There are strange punishments for such. Give  
up

(Although no visible good flow thence) some  
part

Of the glory to another; hiding thus,  
Even from yourself, that all is for yourself.  
Say, say almost to God — "I have done all  
For her, not for myself!"

*Par.* And who but lately  
Was to rejoice in my success like you?  
Whom should I love but both of you?

*Fest.* I know not:  
But know this, you, that 't is no will of mine  
You should abjure the lofty claims you make;  
And this the cause — I can no longer seek  
To overlook the truth, that there would be  
A monstrous spectacle upon the earth,  
Beneath the pleasant sun, among the trees:  
— A being knowing not what love is. Hear  
me!  
You are endowed with faculties which bear

Annexed to them as 't were a dispensation  
To summon meaner spirits to do their will  
And gather round them at their need; inspiring  
Such with a love themselves can never feel.  
Passionless 'mid their passionate votaries.

I know not if you joy in this or no,  
Or ever dream that common men can live  
On objects you prize lightly, but which make  
Their heart's sole treasure: the affections seem  
Beauteous at most to you, which we must taste  
Or die: and this strange quality accords,  
I know not how, with you; sits well upon  
That luminous brow, though in another it  
scowls

An eating brand, a shame. I dare not judge  
you.

The rules of right and wrong thus set aside,  
There's no alternative — I own you one  
Of higher order, under other laws  
Than bind us; therefore, curb not one bold  
glance!

'T is best aspire. Once mingled with us all . . .  
*Mich.* Stay with us, Aureole! cast those  
hopes away,

And stay with us! An angel warns me, too,  
Man should be humble; you are very proud:  
And God, dethroned, has doleful plagues for  
such!

— Warns me to have in dread no quick repulse.  
No slow defeat, but a complete success:  
You will find all you seek, and perish so!

*Par.* (after a pause). Are these the barren  
first-fruits of my quest?

Is love like this the natural lot of all?  
How many years of pain might one such hour  
O'erbalance? Dearest Michal, dearest Festus,  
What shall I say, if not that I desire

To justify your love; and will, dear friends,  
In swerving nothing from my first resolves.  
See, the great moon! and ere the mottled owls  
Were wide awake, I was to go. It seems

You acquiesce at last in all save this —  
If I am like to compass what I seek  
By the untried career I choose; and then,  
If that career, making but small account  
Of much of life's delight, will yet retain  
Sufficient to sustain my soul: for thus  
I understand these fond fears just expressed.

And first; the lore you praise and I neglect,  
The labors and the precepts of old time,  
I have not lightly disesteemed. But, friends,  
Truth is within ourselves; it takes no rise  
From outward things, whate'er you may be-  
lieve.

There is an inmost centre in us all,  
Where truth abides in fulness; and around,  
Wall upon wall, the gross flesh hems it in,  
This perfect, clear perception — which is truth.  
A baffling and perverting carnal mesh  
Binds it, and makes all error: and, to know,  
Rather consists in opening out a way  
Whence the imprisoned splendor may escape,  
Than in effecting entry for a light  
Supposed to be without. Watch narrowly  
The demonstration of a truth, its birth,  
And you trace back the effluence to its spring  
And source within us; where broods radiance  
vast,

To be elicited ray by ray, as chance  
Shall favor : chance — for hitherto, your sage  
Even as he knows not how those beams are  
born,

As little knows he what unlocks their fount :  
And men have oft grown old among their books  
To die case-hardened in their ignorance,  
Whose careless youth had promised what long  
years

Of unremitted labor ne'er performed :  
While, contrary, it has chanced some idle day,  
To autumn loiterers just as fancy-free  
As the midges in the sun, gives birth at last  
To truth — produced mysteriously as cape  
Of cloud grown out of the invisible air.  
Hence, may not truth be lodged alike in all,  
The lowest as the highest ? some slight film  
The interposing bar which binds a soul  
And makes the idiot, just as makes the sage  
Some film removed, the happy outlet whence  
Truth issues proudly ? See this soul of ours !  
How it strives weakly in the child, is loosed  
In manhood, clogged by sickness, back com-  
pelled

By age and waste, set free at last by death :  
Why is it, flesh enthalls it or enthrones ?  
What is this flesh we have to penetrate ?  
Oh, not alone when life flows still, do truth  
And power emerge, but also when strange  
chance

Ruffles its current ; in unused conjuncture,  
When sickness breaks the body — hunger,  
watching,

Excess or languor — oftenest death's approach,  
Peril, deep joy or woe. One man shall crawl  
Through life surrounded with all stirring things,  
Unmoved ; and he goes mad : and from the  
wreck

Of what he was, by his wild talk alone,  
You first collect how great a spirit he hid.  
Therefore, set free the soul alike in all,  
Discovering the true laws by which the flesh  
Accloys the spirit ! We may not be doomed  
To cope with seraphs, but at least the rest  
Shall cope with us. Make no more giants, God,  
But elevate the race at once ! We ask  
To put forth just our strength, our human  
strength,

All starting fairly, all equipped alike,  
Gifted alike, all eagle-eyed, true-hearted —  
See if we cannot beat thine angels yet !  
Such is my task. I go to gather this  
The sacred knowledge, here and there dispersed  
About the world, long lost or never found.  
And why should I be sad or lorn of hope ?  
Why ever make man's good distinct from God's,  
Or, finding they are one, why dare mistrust ?  
Who shall succeed if not one pledged like me ?  
Mine is no mad attempt to build a world  
Apart from his, like those who set themselves  
To find the nature of the spirit they bore,  
And, taught betimes that all their gorgeous  
dreams

Were only born to vanish in this life,  
Refused to fit them to its narrow sphere,  
But chose to figure forth another world  
And other frames meet for their vast desires, —  
And all a dream ! Thus was life scorned ; but life

Shall yet be crowned : twine amaranth ! I am  
priest !

And all for yielding with a lively spirit  
A poor existence, parting with a youth  
Like those who squander every energy  
Convertible to good, on painted toys,  
Breath-bubbles, gilded dust ! And though I  
spurn

All adventitious aims, from empty praise  
To love's award, yet whoso deems such helps  
Important, and concerns himself for me,  
May know even these will follow with the rest —  
As in the steady rolling Mayne, asleep  
Yonder, is mixed its mass of schistous ore.  
My own affections, laid to rest awhile,  
Will waken purified, subdued alone  
By all I have achieved. Till then — till then . . .  
Ah, the time-wiling loitering of a page  
Through bower and over lawn, till eve shall  
bring

The stately lady's presence whom he loves —  
The broken sleep of the fisher whose rough coat  
Enwraps the queenly pearl — these are faint  
types !

See, see, they look on me : I triumph now !  
But one thing, Festus, Michal ! I have told  
All I shall e'er disclose to mortal : say —  
Do you believe I shall accomplish this ?

*Fest.* I do believe !

*Mich.* I ever did believe !

*Par.* Those words shall never fade from out  
my brain !

This earnest of the end shall never fade !  
Are there not, Festus, are there not, dear  
Michal,

Two points in the adventure of the diver,  
One — when, a beggar, he prepares to plunge,  
One — when, a prince, he rises with his pearl ?  
Festus, I plunge !

*Fest.* We wait you when you rise !

## II. PARACELSUS ATTAINS

SCENE, *Constantinople : the house of a Greek conjurer.*  
1521.

PARACELSUS.

Over the waters in the vaporous West  
The sun goes down as in a sphere of gold  
Behind the arm of the city, which between,  
With all that length of domes and minarets,  
Athwart the splendor, black and crooked runs  
Like a Turk verse along a scimitar.  
There lie, sullen memorial, and no more  
Possess my aching sight ! 'Tis done at last.  
Strange — and the juggles of a sallow cheat  
Have won me to this act ! 'Tis as yon cloud  
Should voyage unwrecked o'er many a moun-  
tain-top

And break upon a molehill. I have dared  
Come to a pause with knowledge ; scan for once  
The heights already reached, without regard  
To the extent above ; fairly compute  
All I have clearly gained ; for once excluding  
A brilliant future to supply and perfect  
All half-gains and conjectures and crude hopes :  
And all because a fortune-teller wills



His credulous seekers should inscribe thus much

Their previous life's attainment, in his roll,  
Before his promised secret, as he vaunts,  
Make up the sum: and here, amid the scrawled  
Uncouth recordings of the dupes of this  
Old arch-genethliac, lie my life's results!

A few blurred characters suffice to note  
A stranger wandered long through many lands  
And reaped the fruit he coveted in a few  
Discoveries, as appended here and there,  
The fragmentary produce of much toil,  
In a dim heap, fact and surmise together  
Confusedly massed as when acquired; he was  
Intent on gain to come too much to stay  
And scrutinize the little gained: the whole  
Slit in the blank space 'twixt an idiot's gibber  
And a mad lover's ditty — there it lies.

And yet those blottings chronicle a life —  
A whole life, and my life! Nothing to do,  
No problem for the fancy, but a life  
Spent and decided, wasted past retrieve  
Or worthy beyond peer. Stay, what does this  
Remembrancer set down concerning "life"?  
"Time fleets, youth fades, life is an empty  
dream,"

It is the echo of time; and he whose heart  
Beat first beneath a human heart, whose speech  
Was copied from a human tongue, can never  
Recall when he was living yet knew not this.  
Nevertheless long seasons pass o'er him  
Till some one hour's experience shows what no-  
thing,  
It seemed, could clearer show; and ever after,  
An altered brow and eye and gait and speech  
Attest that now he knows the adage true,  
"Time fleets, youth fades, life is an empty  
dream."

Ay, my brave chronicler, and this same hour  
As well as any: now, let my time be!

Now! I can go no farther; well or ill,  
'Tis done. I must desist and take my chance.  
I cannot keep on the stretch: 'tis no back-  
shrinking —

For let but some assurance beam, some close  
To my toil grow visible, and I proceed  
At any price, though closing it, I die.  
Else, here I pause. The old Greek's prophecy  
Is like to turn out true: "I shall not quit  
His chamber till I know what I desire!"  
Was it the light wind sang it o'er the sea?

An end, a rest! strange how the notion, once  
Encountered, gathers strength by moments!  
Rest!

Where has it kept so long? this throbbing brow  
To cease, this beating heart to cease, all cruel  
And gnawing thoughts to cease! To dare let  
down

My strung, so high-strung brain, to dare unnerve  
My harassed o'ertasked frame, to know my  
place,

My portion, my reward, even my failure,  
Assigned, made sure forever! To lose myself

Among the common creatures of the world,  
To draw some gain from having been a man,  
Neither to hope nor fear, to live at length!  
Even in failure, rest! But rest in truth  
And power and recompense . . . I hoped that  
once!

What, sunk insensibly so deep? Has all  
Been undergone for this? This the request  
My labor qualified me to present  
With no fear of refusal? Had I gone  
Slightly through my task, and so judged fit  
To moderate my hopes; nay, were it now  
My sole concern to exculpate myself,  
End things or mend them, — why, I could not  
choose

A humbler mood to wait for the event!  
No, no, there needs not this; no, after all,  
At worst I have performed my share of the  
task:

The rest is God's concern; mine, merely this,  
To know that I have obstinately held  
By my own work. The mortal whose brave foot  
Has trod, unscathed, the temple-court so far  
That he deserves at length the shrine of shrines,  
Must let no sneering of the demons' eyes,  
Whom he could pass unquailing, fasten now  
Upon him, fairly past their power; no, no —  
He must not stagger, faint, fall down at last,  
Having a charm to baffle them; behold,  
He bares his front: a mortal ventures thus  
Serene amid the echoes, beams and glooms!  
If he be priest henceforth, if he wake up  
The god of the place to ban and blast him there,  
Both well! What's failure or success to me?  
I have subdued my life to the one purpose  
Whereto I ordained it; there alone I spy,  
No doubt, that way I may be satisfied.

Yes, well have I subdued my life! beyond  
The obligation of my strictest vow,  
The contemplation of my wildest bond,  
Which gave my nature freely up, in truth,  
But in its actual state, consenting fully  
All passionate impulses its soil was formed  
To rear, should wither; but foreseeing not  
The tract, doomed to perpetual barrenness,  
Would seem one day, remembered as it was,  
Beside the parched sand-waste which now it is,  
Already strewn with faint blooms, viewless then,  
I ne'er engaged to root up loves so frail  
I felt them not; yet now, 'tis very plain  
Some soft spots had their birth in me at first,  
If not love, say, like love: there was a time  
When yet this wolfish hunger after knowledge  
Set not remorselessly love's claims aside.  
This heart was human once, or why recall  
Einsiedeln, now, and Würzburg which the  
Mayne

Forsakes her course to fold as with an arm?

And Festus — my poor Festus, with his praise  
And counsel and grave fears — where is he now  
With the sweet maiden, long ago his bride?  
I surely loved them — that last night, at least.  
When we . . . gone! gone! the better. I am  
saved

The sad review of an ambitious youth

Choked by vile lusts, unnoticed in their birth,  
 But let grow up and wind around a will  
 Till action was destroyed. No, I have gone  
 Purging my path successively of aught  
 Wearing the distinct likeness of such lusts.  
 I have made life consist of one idea :  
 Ere that was master, up till that was born,  
 I bear a memory of a pleasant life  
 Whose small events I treasure ; till one morn  
 I ran o'er the seven little grassy fields,  
 Startling the flocks of nameless birds, to tell  
 Poor Festus, leaping all the while for joy,  
 To leave all trouble for my future plans,  
 Since I had just determined to become  
 The greatest and most glorious man on earth.  
 And since that morn all life has been forgotten :  
 All is one day, one only step between  
 The outset and the end : one tyrant all-  
 Absorbing aim fills up the interspace,  
 One vast unbroken chain of thought, kept up  
 Through a career apparently adverse  
 To its existence : life, death, light and shadow,  
 The shows of the world, were bare receptacles  
 Or indices of truth to be wrung thence,  
 Not ministers of sorrow or delight :  
 A wondrous natural robe in which she went.  
 For some one truth would dimly beacon me  
 From mountains rough with pines, and flit and  
 wink

O'er dazzling wastes of frozen snow, and tremble  
 Into assured light in some branching mine  
 Where ripens, swathed in fire, the liquid gold —  
 And all the beauty, all the wonder fell  
 On either side the truth, as its mere robe ;  
 I see the robe now — then I saw the form.  
 So far, then, I have voyaged with success,  
 So much is good, then, in this working sea  
 Which parts me from that happy strip of land :  
 But o'er that happy strip a sun shone, too !  
 And fainter gleams it as the waves grow rough,  
 And still more faint as the sea widens ; last  
 I sicken on a dead gulf streaked with light  
 From its own putrefying depths alone.  
 Then, God was pledged to take me by the hand ;  
 Now, any miserable juggle can bid  
 My pride depart. All is alike at length :  
 God may take pleasure in confounding pride  
 By hiding secrets with the scorned and base —  
 I am here, in short : so little have I paused  
 Throughout ! I never glanced behind to know  
 If I had kept my primal light from wane,  
 And thus insensibly am — what I am !

Oh, bitter ; very bitter !

And more bitter,  
 To fear a deeper curse, an inner ruin,  
 Plague beneath plague, the last turning the first  
 To light beside its darkness. Let me weep  
 My youth and its brave hopes, all dead and gone,  
 In tears which burn ! Would I were sure to win  
 Some startling secret in their stead, a tincture  
 Of force to flush old age with youth, or breed  
 Gold, or imprison moonbeams till they change  
 To opal shafts ! — only that, hurling it  
 Indignant back, I might convince myself  
 My aims remained supreme and pure as ever !  
 Even now, why not desire, for mankind's sake,  
 That if I fail, some fault may be the cause,

That, though I sink, another may succeed ?  
 O God, the despicable heart of us !  
 Shut out this hideous mockery from my heart !

'T was politic in you, Aureole, to reject  
 Single rewards, and ask them in the lump ;  
 At all events, once launched, to hold straight on :  
 For now 't is all or nothing. Mighty profit  
 Your gains will bring if they stop short of such  
 Full consummation ! As a man, you had  
 A certain share of strength ; and that is gone  
 Already in the getting these you boast.  
 Do not they seem to laugh, as who should say —  
 " Great master, we are here indeed, dragged  
 forth

To light ; this hast thou done : be glad ! Now,  
 seek  
 The strength to use which thou hast spent in  
 getting ! "

And yet 't is much, surely 't is very much,  
 Thus to have emptied youth of all its gifts,  
 To feed a fire meant to hold out till morn  
 Arrived with inexhaustible light ; and lo,  
 I have heaped up my last, and day dawns not !  
 And I am left with gray hair, faded hands,  
 And furrowed brow. Ha, have I, after all,  
 Mistaken the wild nursing of my breast ?  
 Knowledge it seemed, and power, and recom-  
 pense !

Was she who glided through my room of nights,  
 Who laid my head on her soft knees and  
 smoothed  
 The damp locks, — whose sly soothings just began  
 When my sick spirit craved repose awhile —  
 God ! was I fighting sleep off for death's sake ?

God ! Thou art mind ! Unto the master-mind  
 Mind should be precious. Spare my mind alone !  
 All else I will endure ; if, as I stand  
 Here, with my gains, thy thunder smite me  
 down,

I bow me ; 't is thy will, thy righteous will ;  
 I o'erpass life's restrictions, and I die ;  
 And if no trace of my career remain  
 Save a thin corpse at pleasure of the wind  
 In these bright chambers level with the air,  
 See thou to it ! But if my spirit fail,  
 My once proud spirit forsake me at the last,  
 Hast thou done well by me ? So do not thou !  
 Crush not my mind, dear God, though I be  
 crushed !

Hold me before the frequency of thy seraphs  
 And say, — " I crushed him, lest he should dis-  
 turb

My law. Men must not know their strength :  
 behold,  
 Weak and alone, how he had raised himself ! "

But if delusions trouble me, and thou,  
 Not seldom felt with rapture in thy help  
 Throughout my toils and wanderings, dost in-  
 tend

To work man's welfare through my weak en-  
 deavor,

To crown my mortal forehead with a beam  
 From thine own blinding crown, to smile, and  
 guide

This puny hand and let the work so wrought  
Be styled my work, — hear me! I covet not  
An influx of new power, an angel's soul:  
It were no marvel then — but I have reached  
Thus far, a man; let me conclude, a man!  
Give but one hour of my first energy,  
Of that invincible faith, but only one!  
That I may cover with an eagle-glance  
The truths I have, and spy some certain way  
To mould them, and completing them, possess!

Yet God is good: I started sure of that,  
And why dispute it now? I'll not believe  
But some undoubted warning long ere this  
Had reached me: a fire-labour was not deemed  
Too much for the old founder of these walls.  
Then, if my life has not been natural,  
It has been monstrous: yet, till late, my course  
So ardently engrossed me, that delight,  
A pausing and reflecting joy, 't is plain,  
Could find no place in it. True, I am worn;  
But who clothes summer, who is life itself?  
God, that created all things, can renew!  
And then, though after-life to please me now  
Must have no likeness to the past, what hinders  
Reward from springing out of toil, as changed  
As bursts the flower from earth and root and  
stalk?

What use were punishment, unless some sin  
Be first detected? let me know that first!  
No man could ever offend as I have done . . .

(*A voice from within.*)

I hear a voice, perchance I heard  
Long ago, but all too low,  
So that scarce a care it stirred  
If the voice were real or no:  
I heard it in my youth when first  
The waters of my life outburst:  
But, now their stream ebbs faint, I hear  
That voice, still low, but fatal-clear —  
As if all poets, God ever meant  
Should save the world, and therefore lent  
Great gifts to, but who, proud, refused  
To do his work, or lightly used  
Those gifts, or failed through weak endeavor,  
So, mourn cast off by him forever, —  
As if these leaned in airy ring  
To take me; this the song they sing.

“Lost, lost! yet come,  
With our wan troop make thy home.  
Come, come! for we  
Will not breathe, so much as breathe  
Reproach to thee,  
Knowing what thou sink'st beneath.  
So sank we in those old years,  
We who bid thee, come! thou lost  
Who, living yet, hast life o'erpast.  
And altogether we, thy peers,  
Will pardon crave for thee, the last  
Whose trial is done, whose lot is cast  
With those who watch but work no more,  
Who gaze on life but live no more.  
Yet we trusted thou shouldst speak  
The message which our lips, too weak,  
Refused to utter, — shouldst redeem  
Our fault: such trust, and all a dream!  
Yet we chose thee a birthplace

Where the richness ran to flowers:  
Couldst not sing one song for grace?  
Not make one blossom man's and ours?  
Must one more recreant to his race  
Die with unexerted powers,  
And join us, leaving as he found  
The world, he was to loosen, bound?  
Anguish! ever and forever;  
Still beginning, ending never!  
Yet, lost and last one, come!  
How couldst understand, alas,  
What our pale ghosts strove to say,  
As their shades did glance and pass  
Before thee night and day?  
Thou wast blind as we were dumb:  
Once more, therefore, come, O come!  
How should we clothe, how arm the spirit  
Shall next thy post of life inherit —  
How guard him from thy speedy ruin?  
Tell us of thy sad undoing  
Here, where we sit, ever pursuing  
Our weary task, ever renewing  
Sharp sorrow, far from God who gave  
Our powers, and man they could not save!”

(*APRILE enters.*)

Ha, ha! our king that wouldst be, here at last?  
Art thou the poet who shall save the world?  
Thy hand to mine! Stay, fix thine eyes on  
mine!

Thou wouldst be king? Still fix thine eyes on  
mine!

*Par.* Ha, ha! why crouchest not? Am I  
not king?

So torture is not wholly unavailing!  
Have my fierce spasms compelled thee from  
thy lair?

Art thou the sage I only seemed to be,  
Myself of after-time, my very self  
With sight a little clearer, strength more firm,  
Who robes him in my robe and grasps my  
crown

For just a fault, a weakness, a neglect?  
I scarcely trusted God with the surmise  
That such might come, and thou didst hear  
the while!

*Aprile.* Thine eyes are lustreless to mine:  
my hair

Is soft, nay silken soft: to talk with thee  
Flushes my cheek, and thou art ashy-pale.  
Truly, thou hast labored, hast withstood her  
lips,

The siren's! Yes, 't is like thou hast attained!  
Tell me, dear master, wherefore now thou  
comest?

I thought thy solemn songs would have their  
need

In after-time; that I should hear the earth  
Exult in thee and echo with thy praise,  
While I was laid forgotten in my grave.

*Par.* Ah fiend, I know thee, I am not thy  
dupe!

Thou art ordained to follow in my track,  
Reaping my sowing, as I scorned to reap  
The harvest sown by sages passed away.  
Thou art the sober searcher, cautious striver,  
As if, except through me, thou hast searched  
or striven!

Ay, tell the world! Degrade me after all,



To an aspirant after fame, not truth —

To all but envy of thy fate, be sure!

*Apr.* Nay, sing them to me; I shall envy not:

Thou shalt be king! Sing thou, and I will sit  
Beside, and call deep silence for thy songs,  
And worship thee, as I had ne'er been meant  
To fill thy throne: but none shall ever know!  
Sing to me; for already thy wild eyes  
Unlock my heart-strings, as some crystal-shaft  
Reveals by some chance blaze its parent fount  
After long time: so thou reveal'st my soul.  
All will flash forth at last, with thee to hear!

*Par.* (His secret! I shall get his secret — fool!)

I am he that aspired to know: and thou?

*Apr.* I would LOVE infinitely, and be loved!

*Par.* Poor slave! I am thy king indeed.

*Apr.* Thou deem'st

That — born a spirit, dowered even as thou,  
Born for thy fate — because I could not curb  
My yearnings to possess at once the full  
Enjoyment, but neglected all the means  
Of realizing even the frailest joy,  
Gathering no fragments to appease my want,  
Yet nursing up that want till thus I die —  
Thou deem'st I cannot trace thy safe sure  
march

O'er perils that o'erwhelm me, triumphing,  
Neglecting naught below for aught above,  
Despising nothing and ensuring all —  
Nor that I could (my time to come again)  
Lead thus my spirit securely as thine own.  
Listen, and thou shalt see I know thee well.  
I would love infinitely . . .

Ah, lost! lost!

Oh ye who armed me at such cost,

How shall I look on all of ye

With your gifts even yet on me?

*Par.* (Ah, 'tis some moonstruck creature after all!

Such fond fools are like to haunt this den:  
They spread contagion, doubtless: yet he  
seemed

To echo one foreboding of my heart  
So truly, that . . . no matter! How he stands  
With eve's last sunbeam staying on his hair  
Which turns to it as if they were akin:  
And those clear smiling eyes of saddest blue  
Nearly set free, so far they rise above  
The painful fruitless striving of the brow  
And enforced knowledge of the lips, firm-set  
In slow despondency's eternal sigh!  
Has he, too, missed life's end, and learned the  
cause?)

I charge thee, by thy fealty, be calm!

Tell me what thou wouldst be, and what I am.

*Apr.* I would love infinitely, and be loved.

First: I would carve in stone, or cast in brass,  
The forms of earth. No ancient hunter lifted  
Up to the gods by his renown, no nymph  
Supposed the sweet soul of a woodland tree  
Or sapphire spirit of a twilight star,  
Regal be too hard for me; no shepherd-king  
Regal for his white locks; no youth who  
stands

Silent and very calm amid the throng,  
His right hand ever hid beneath his robe

Until the tyrant pass; no lawgiver,  
No swan-soft woman rubbed with lucid oils  
Given by a god for love of her — too hard!  
Every passion sprung from man, conceived by  
man,

Would I express and clothe it in its right form,  
Or blend with others struggling in one form,  
Or show repressed by an ungainly form.

Oh, if you marvelled at some mighty spirit  
With a fit frame to execute its will —  
Even unconsciously to work its will —

You should be moved no less beside some strong  
Rare spirit, fettered to a stubborn body,  
Endeavoring to subdue it and inform it  
With its own splendor! All this I would do:

And I would say, this done, "His sprites  
created,

God grants to each a sphere to be its world,  
Appointed with the various objects needed  
To satisfy its own peculiar want;

So, I create a world for these my shapes  
Fit to sustain their beauty and their strength!"

And, at the word, I would contrive and paint  
Woods, valleys, rocks and plains, dells, sands  
and wastes,

Lakes which, when morn breaks on their quiv-  
ering bed,

Blaze like a wyvern flying round the sun,  
And ocean isles so small, the dog-fish tracking  
A dead whale, who should find them, would  
swim thrice

Around them, and fare onward — all to hold  
The offspring of my brain. Nor these alone:  
Bronze labyrinth, palace, pyramid and crypt,  
Baths, galleries, courts, temples and terraces,  
Marts, theatres, and wharfs — all filled with  
men,

Men everywhere! And this performed in turn,  
When those who looked on, pined to hear the  
hopes

And fears and hates and loves which moved the  
crowd,

I would throw down the pencil as the chisel,  
And I would speak; no thought which ever  
stirred

A human breast should be untold; all passions,  
All soft emotions, from the turbulent stir  
Within a heart fed with desires like mine.

To the last comfort shutting the tired lids  
Of him who sleeps the sultry noon away  
Beneath the tent-tree by the wayside well:

And this in language as the need should be,  
Now poured at once forth in a burning flow,  
Now piled up in a grand array of words.

This done, to perfect and consummate all,  
Even as a luminous haze links star to star,  
I would supply all chasms with music, breathing  
Mysterious motions of the soul, no way

To be defined save in strange melodies.  
Last, having thus revealed all I could love,  
Having received all love bestowed on it,

I would die: preserving so throughout my course  
God full on me, as I was full on men:

He would approve my prayer, "I have gone  
through

The loveliness of life; create for me  
If not for men, or take me to thyself,  
Eternal, infinite love!"

If thou hast ne'er  
Conceived this mighty aim, this full desire,  
Thou hast not passed my trial, and thou art  
No king of mine.

*Par.* Ah me!

*Apr.* But thou art here!  
Thou didst not gaze like me upon that end  
Till thine own powers for compassing the bliss  
Were blind with glory; nor grow mad to grasp  
At once the prize long patient toil should claim,  
Nor spurn all granted short of that. And I  
Would do as thou, a second time: nay, listen!  
Knowing ourselves, our world, our task so great,  
Our time so brief, 't is clear if we refuse  
The means so limited, the tools so rude  
To execute our purpose, life will fleet,  
And we shall fade, and leave our task undone.  
We will be wise in time: what though our work  
Be fashioned in despite of their ill-service,  
Be crippled every way? 'T were little praise  
Did full resources wait on our goodwill  
At every turn. Let all be as it is.  
Some say the earth is even so contrived  
That tree and flower, a vesture gay, conceal  
A bare and skeleton framework. Had we means  
Answering to our mind! But now I seem  
Wrecked on a savage isle: how rear thereon  
My palace? Branching palms the props shall be,  
Fruit glossy mingling; gems are for the East;  
Who heeds them? I can pass them. Serpents'  
scales,

And painted birds' down, furs and fishes' skins  
Must help me; and a little here and there  
Is all I can aspire to: still my art  
Shall show its birth was in a gentler clime.  
"Had I green jars of malachite, this way  
I'd range them: where those sea-shells glisten  
above,

Cressets should hang, by right: this way we set  
The purple carpets, as these mats are laid,  
Woven of fern and rush and blossoming flag."  
Or if, by fortune, some completer grace  
Be spared to me, some fragment, some slight  
sample

Of the prouder workmanship my own home  
boasts,

Some trifle little heeded there, but here  
The place's one perfection — with what joy  
Would I enshrine the relic, cheerfully  
Foregoing all the marvels out of reach!  
Could I retain one strain of all the psalm  
Of the angels, one word of the fiat of God,  
To let my followers know what such things are!  
I would adventure nobly for their sakes:  
When nights were still, and still the moaning sea,  
And far away I could descry the land  
Whence I departed, whither I return,  
I would dispart the waves, and stand once more  
At home, and load my bark, and hasten back,  
And fling my gains to them, worthless or true.  
"Friends," I would say, "I went far, far for  
them,

Past the high rocks the haunt of doves, the  
mounds

Of red earth from whose sides strange trees  
grow out,

Past tracts of milk-white minute blinding sand,  
Till, by a mighty moon, I tremblingly

Gathered these magic herbs, berry and bud,  
In haste, not pausing to reject the weeds,  
But happy plucking them at any price.  
To me, who have seen them bloom in their own  
soil,

They are scarce lovely: plait and wear them,  
you!

And guess, from what they are, the springs that  
fed them,

The stars that sparkled o'er them, night by  
night,

The snakes that travelled far to sip their dew!"  
Thus for my higher loves; and thus even weak-  
ness

Would win me honor. But not these alone  
Should claim my care; for common life, its wants  
And ways, would I set forth in beauteous hues:  
The lowest hind should not possess a hope,  
A fear, but I'd be by him, saying better  
Than he his own heart's language. I would live  
Forever in the thoughts I thus explored,  
As a discoverer's memory is attached  
To all he finds; they should be mine henceforth,  
Imbued with me, though free to all before:  
For clay, once cast into my soul's rich mine,  
Should come up crusted o'er with gems. Nor  
this

Would need a meaner spirit than the first:  
Nay, 't would be but the selfsame spirit, clothed  
In humbler guise, but still the selfsame spirit:  
As one spring wind unbinds the mountain snow  
And comforts violets in their hermitage.

But, master, poet, who hast done all this,  
How didst thou 'scape the ruin whelming me?  
Didst thou, when nerving thee to this attempt,  
Ne'er range thy mind's extent, as some wide  
hall,

Dazzled by shapes that filled its length with  
light,

Shapes clustered there to rule thee, not obey,  
That will not wait thy summons, will not rise  
Singly, nor when thy practised eye and hand  
Can well transfer their loveliness, but crowd  
By thee forever, bright to thy despair?

Didst thou ne'er gaze on each by turns, and ne'er  
Resolve to single out one, though the rest  
Should vanish, and to give that one, entire  
In beauty, to the world; forgetting, so,  
Its peers, whose number baffles mortal power?  
And, this determined, wast thou ne'er seduced  
By memories and regrets and passionate love,  
To glance once more farewell? and did their  
eyes

Fasten thee, brighter and more bright, until  
Thou couldst but stagger back unto their feet,  
And laugh that man's applause or welfare ever  
Could tempt thee to forsake them? Or when  
years

Had passed and still their love possessed thee  
wholly,

When from without some murmur startled thee  
Of darkling mortals famished for one ray  
Of thy so-hoarded luxury of light,  
Didst thou ne'er strive even yet to break those  
spells

And prove thou couldst recover and fulfil  
Thy early mission, long ago renounced,

And to that end, select some shape once more ?  
And did not mist-like influences, thick films,  
Faint memories of the rest that charmed so long  
Thine eyes, float fast, confuse thee, bear thee  
off,

As whirling snow-drifts blind a man who treads  
A mountain ridge, with guiding spear, through  
storm ?

Say, though I fell, I had excuse to fall ;  
Say, I was tempted sorely : say but this,  
Dear lord, Aprile's lord !

*Par.* Clasp me not thus,  
Aprile ! That the truth should reach me thus !  
We are weak dust. Nay, clasp not or I faint !

*Apr.* My king ! and envious thoughts could  
outrage thee ?

Lo, I forget my ruin, and rejoice  
In thy success, as thou ! Let our God's praise  
Go bravely through the world at last ! What  
care

Through me or thee ? I feel thy breath. Why,  
tears ?

Tears in the darkness, and from thee to me ?

*Par.* Love me henceforth, Aprile, while I  
learn

To love ; and, merciful God, forgive us both !  
We wake at length from weary dreams ; but  
both

Have slept in fairy-land : though dark and drear  
Appears the world before us, we no less  
Wake with our wrists and ankles jewelled still.  
I too have sought to KNOW as thou to LOVE —  
Excluding love as thou refusedst knowledge.  
Still thou hast beauty and I, power. We wake :  
What penance canst devise for both of us ?

*Apr.* I hear thee faintly. The thick dark-  
ness ! Even

Thine eyes are hid. 'Tis as I knew : I speak,  
And now I die. But I have seen thy face !  
O poet, think of me, and sing of me !  
But to have seen thee and to die so soon !

*Par.* Die not, Aprile ! We must never part.  
Are we not halves of one dissevered world,  
Whom this strange chance unites once more ?  
Part ? never !

Till thou the lover, know ; and I, the knower,  
Love — until both are saved. Aprile, hear !  
We will accept our gains, and use them — now !  
God, he will die upon my breast ! Aprile !

*Apr.* To speak but once, and die ! yet by  
his side.

Hush ! hush !

Ha ! go you ever girt about  
With phantoms, powers ? I have created such,  
But these seem real as I.

*Par.* Whom can you see  
Through the accursed darkness ?

*Apr.* Stay ; I know,  
I know them : who should know them well as I ?  
White brows, lit up with glory ; poets all !

*Par.* Let him but live, and I have my re-  
ward !

*Apr.* Yes ; I see now. God is the perfect  
poet.

Who in his person acts his own creations.  
Had you but told me this at first ! Hush ! hush !

*Par.* Live ! for my sake, because of my  
great sin,

To help my brain, oppressed by these wild words  
And their deep import. Live ! 't is not too  
late.

I have a quiet home for us, and friends.  
Michal shall smile on you. Hear you ? Lean  
thus,

And breathe my breath. I shall not lose one  
word

Of all your speech, one little word, Aprile !

*Apr.* No, no. Crown me ? I am not one of  
you !

'T is he, the king, you seek. I am not one.

*Par.* Thy spirit, at least, Aprile ! Let me  
love.

I have attained, and now I may depart.

### III. PARACELSUS

SCENE, *Basel : a chamber in the house of PARACELSUS.*  
1526.

#### PARACELSUS, FESTUS.

*Par.* Heap logs and let the blaze laugh out !  
*Fest.* True, true !

'T is very fit all, time and chance and change  
Have wrought since last we sat thus, face to  
face

And soul to soul — all cares, far-looking fears,  
Vague apprehensions, all vain fancies bred  
By your long absence, should be cast away,  
Forgotten in this glad unhopd renewal  
Of our affections.

*Par.* Oh, omit not aught  
Which witnesses your own and Michal's own  
Affection : spare not that ! Only forget  
The honors and the glories and what not,  
It pleases you to tell profusely out.

*Fest.* Nay, even your honors, in a sense, I  
waive :

The wondrous Paracelsus, life's dispenser,  
Fate's commissary, idol of the schools  
And courts, shall be no more than Aureole still,  
Still Aureole and my friend as when we parted  
Some twenty years ago, and I restrained  
As best I could the promptings of my spirit  
Which secretly advanced you, from the first,  
To the pre-eminent rank which, since, your own  
Adventurous ardor nobly triumphing,  
Has won for you.

*Par.* Yes, yes. And Michal's face  
Still wears that quiet and peculiar light  
Like the dim circlet floating round a pearl ?

*Fest.* Just so.

*Par.* And yet her calm sweet countenance,  
Though saintly, was not sad ; for she would sing  
Alone. Does she still sing alone, bird-like,  
Not dreaming you are near ? Her carols dropt  
In flakes through that old leafy bower built  
under

The sunny wall at Würzburg, from her lattice  
Among the trees above, while I, unseen,  
Sat conning some rare scroll from Tritheim's  
shelves,

Much wondering notes so simple could divert  
My mind from study. Those were happy days.  
Respect all such as sing when all alone !



*Fest.* Scarcely alone : her children, you may guess,

Are well beside her.

*Par.* Ah, those children quite Unsettle the pure picture in my mind : A girl, she was so perfect, so distinct : No change, no change ! Not but this added

grace  
May blend and harmonize with its compeers,  
And Michal may become her motherhood ;  
And 't is a change, and I detest all change,  
And most a change in aught I loved long since.  
So, Michal — you have said she thinks of me ?

*Fest.* O very proud will Michal be of you !  
Imagine how we sat, long winter-nights,  
Schening and wondering, shaping your pre-  
sented

Adventure, or devising its reward ;  
Shutting out fear with all the strength of hope.  
For it was strange how, even when most secure  
In our domestic peace, a certain dim  
And fitting shade could sadden all ; it seemed  
A restlessness of heart, a silent yearning,  
A sense of something wanting, incomplete —  
Not to be put in words, perhaps avoided  
By mute consent — but, said or unsaid, felt  
To point to one so loved and so long lost.  
And then the hopes rose and shut out the fears —  
How you would laugh should I recount them  
now !

I still predicted your return at last  
With gifts beyond the greatest of them all,  
All Trithem's wondrous troop ; did one of which  
Attain renown by any chance, I smiled,  
As well aware of who would prove his peer.  
Michal was sure some woman, long ere this,  
As beautiful as you were sage, had loved . . .

*Par.* Far-seeing, truly, to discern so much  
In the fantastic projects and day-dreams  
Of a raw restless boy !

*Fest.* Oh, no : the sunrise  
Well warranted our faith in this full noon !  
Can I forget the anxious voice which said,  
" Festus, have thoughts like these e'er shaped  
themselves

In other brains than mine ? have their possessors  
Existed in like circumstance ? were they weak  
As I, or ever constant from the first,  
Despising youth's allurements and rejecting  
As spider-films the shackles I endure ?  
Is there hope for me ?" — and I answered gravely  
As an acknowledged elder, calmer, wiser,  
More gifted mortal. O you must remember,  
For all your glorious . . .

*Par.* Glorious ? ay, this hair,  
These hands — nay, touch them, they are mine !  
Recall

With all the said recallings, times when thus  
To lay them by your own ne'er turned you pale  
As now. Most glorious, are they not ?

*Fest.* Why — why —  
Something must be subtracted from success  
So wide, no doubt. He would be scrupulous,  
truly,  
Who should object such drawbacks. Still, still,  
Aureole,  
You are changed, very changed ! 'T were los-  
ing nothing

To look well to it : you must not be stolen  
From the enjoyment of your well-won meed.

*Par.* My friend ! you seek my pleasure, past  
a doubt :

You will best gain your point, by talking, not  
Of me, but of yourself.

*Fest.* Have I not said  
All touching Michal and my children ? Sure  
You know, by this, full well how Aennchen looks  
Gravely, while one disparts her thick brown hair ;  
And Aureole's glee when some stray gannet  
builds

Amid the birch-trees by the lake. Small hope  
Have I that he will honor (the wild imp)  
His namesake. Sigh not ! 't is too much to ask  
That all we love should reach the same proud  
fate.

But you are very kind to humor me  
By showing interest in my quiet life ;  
You, who of old could never tame yourself  
To tranquil pleasures, must at heart despise . .

*Par.* Festus, strange secrets are let out by  
death

Who blabs so oft the follies of this world :  
And I am death's familiar, as you know.  
I helped a man to die, some few weeks since,  
Warped even from his go-cart to one end —  
The living on princes' smiles, reflected from  
A mighty herd of favorites. No mean trick  
He left untried, and truly well-nigh wormed  
All traces of God's finger out of him :  
Then died, grown old. And just an hour before,  
Having lain long with blank and soulless eyes,  
He sat up suddenly, and with natural voice  
Said that in spite of thick air and closed doors  
God told him it was June ; and he knew well,  
Without such telling, harebells grew in June ;  
And all that kings could ever give or take  
Would not be precious as those blooms to him.  
Just so, allowing I am passing sage,  
It seems to me much worthier argument  
Why pannies,<sup>1</sup> eyes that laugh, bear beauty's  
prize  
From violets, eyes that dream — (your Michal's  
choice) —

Than all fools find to wonder at in me  
Or in my fortunes. And be very sure  
I say this from no prurient restlessness,  
No self-complacency, itching to turn,  
Vary and view its pleasure from all points.  
And, in this instance, willing other men  
May be at pains, demonstrate to itself  
The realness of the very joy it tastes.  
What should delight me like the news of friends  
Whose memories were a solace to me oft,  
As mountain-baths to wild fowls in their flight ?  
Ofter than you had wasted thought on me  
Had you been wise, and rightly valued bliss.  
But there 's no taming nor repressing hearts :  
God knows I need such ! — So, you heard me  
speak ?

*Fest.* Speak ? when ?

*Par.* When but this morning at my class ?  
There was noise and crowd enough. I saw you  
not.

Surely you know I am engaged to fill

<sup>1</sup> Citrulina (flammula) herba Paracelsi multum fami-  
liaris. — DORN.

The chair here? — that 't is part of my proud fate

To lecture to as many thick-skulled youths  
As please, each day, to throng the theatre,  
To my great reputation, and no small  
Danger of Basel's benches long unused  
To crack beneath such honor?

*Fest.* I was there ;  
I mingled with the throng: shall I avow  
Small care was mine to listen? — too intent  
On gathering from the murmurs of the crowd  
A full corroboration of my hopes!  
What can I learn about your powers? but they  
Know, care for naught beyond your actual state,  
Your actual value; yet they worship you,  
Those various natures whom you sway as one!  
But ere I go, be sure I shall attend . . .

*Par.* Stop, o' God's name: the thing 's by no means yet

Past remedy! Shall I read this morning's labor  
— At least in substance? Naught so worth the gaining

As an apt scholar! Thus then, with all due  
Precision and emphasis — you, beside, are clearly  
Guiltless of understanding more, a whit,  
The subject than your stool — allowed to be  
A notable advantage.

*Fest.* Surely, Aureole,

You laugh at me!

*Par.* I laugh? Ha, ha! thank heaven,  
I charge you, if 't be so! for I forget  
Much, and what laughter should be like. No less,

However, I forego that luxury  
Since it alarms the friend who brings it back.  
True, laughter like my own must echo strangely  
To thinking men; a smile were better far;  
So, make me smile! If the exulting look  
You wore but now be smiling, 't is so long  
Since I have smiled! Alas, such smiles are born

Alone of hearts like yours, or herdsmen's flocks  
Of ancient time, whose eyes, calm as their souls,  
Saw in the stars mere garnishry of heaven,  
And in the earth a stage for altars only.

Never change, Festus: I say, never change!

*Fest.* My God, if he be wretched after all!

*Par.* When last we parted, Festus, you declared,

— Or Michal, yes, her soft lips whispered words  
I have preserved. She told me she believed  
I should succeed (meaning, that in the search  
I then engaged in, I should meet success)

And yet be wretched: now, she augured false.

*Fest.* Thank heaven! but you spoke strangely:  
could I venture

To think bare apprehension lest your friend,  
Dazzled by your resplendent course, might find  
Henceforth less sweetness in his own, could move  
Such earnest mood in you? Fear not, dear friend,

That I shall leave you, inwardly repining  
Your lot was not my own!

*Par.* And this forever!

Forever! gull who may, they will be gulled!  
They will not look nor think; 't is nothing new  
In them: but surely he is not of them!

My Festus, do you know, I reckoned, you —

Though all beside were sand-blind — you, my friend,

Would look at me, once close, with piercing eye  
Untroubled by the false glare that confounds  
A weaker vision: would remain serene,  
Though singular amid a gaping throng.  
I feared you, or I had come, sure, long ere this,  
To Einsiedeln. Well, error has no end,  
And Rhasis is a sage, and Basel boasts  
A tribe of wits, and I am wise and blest  
Past all dispute! 'T is vain to fret at it.

I have vowed long ago my worshippers  
Shall owe to their own deep sagacity  
All further information, good or bad.  
Small risk indeed my reputation runs,  
Unless perchance the glance now searching me  
Be fixed much longer; for it seems to spell  
Dimly the characters a simpler man  
Might read distinct enough. Old eastern books  
Say, the fallen prince of morning some short space

Remained unchanged in semblance; nay, his brow

Was hued with triumph: every spirit then  
Praising, his heart on flame the while: — a tale!  
Well, Festus, what discover you, I pray?

*Fest.* Some foul deed sullies then a life which else

Were raised supreme?

*Par.* Good: I do well, most well!

Why strive to make men hear, feel, fret themselves

With what is past their power to comprehend?  
I should not strive now: only, having nursed  
The faint surmise that one yet walked the earth,  
One, at least, not the utter fool of show,  
Not absolutely formed to be the dupe  
Of shallow plausibilities alone:

One who, in youth, found wise enough to choose  
The happiness his riper years approve,  
Was yet so anxious for another's sake,  
That, ere his friend could rush upon a mad  
And ruinous course, the converse of his own,  
His gentle spirit essayed, prejudged for him  
The perilous path, foresaw its destiny,

And warned the weak one in such tender words,  
Such accents — his whole heart in every tone —  
That oft their memory comforted that friend

When it by right should have increased despair:  
— Having believed, I say, that this one man  
Could never lose the light thus from the first  
His portion — how should I refuse to grieve  
At even my gain if it disturb our old  
Relation, if it make me out more wise?

Therefore, once more reminding him how well  
He prophesied, I note the single flaw  
That spoils his prophet's title. In plain words,  
You were deceived, and thus were you deceived —

I have not been successful, and yet am  
Most miserable; 't is said at last; nor you  
Give credit, lest you force me to concede  
That common sense yet lives upon the world!

*Fest.* You surely do not mean to banter me?  
*Par.* You know, or — if you have been wise enough

To cleanse your memory of such matters — knew,

As far as words of mine could make it clear,  
That 't was my purpose to find joy or grief  
Solely in the fulfilment of my plan  
Or plot or whatsoe'er it was; rejoicing  
Alone as it proceeded prosperously,  
Sorrowing then only when mischance retarded  
Its progress. That was in those Würzburg days!  
Not to prolong a theme I thoroughly hate,  
I have pursued this plan with all my strength;  
And having failed therein most signally,  
Cannot object to ruin utter and drear  
As all-excelling would have been the prize  
Had fortune favored me. I scarce have right  
To vex your frank good spirit late so glad  
In my supposed prosperity, I know,  
And, were I lucky in a glut of friends,  
Would well agree to let your error live,  
Nay, strengthen it with fables of success.  
But mine is no condition to refuse  
The transient solace of so rare a godsend,  
My solitary luxury, my one friend:  
Accordingly I venture to put off  
The wearisome vest of falsehood galling me,  
Secure when he is by. I lay me bare,  
Prone at his mercy — but he is my friend!  
Not that he needs retain his aspect grave;  
That answers not my purpose; for 't is like,  
Some sunny morning — Basel being drained  
Of its wise population, every corner  
Of the amphitheatre crammed with learned  
clerks,

Here Cicolampadius, looking worlds of wit,  
Here Castellanus, as profound as he,  
Munsterus here, Frobenius there, all squeezed  
And staring, — that the zany of the show,  
Even Paracelsus, shall put off before them  
His trappings with a grace but seldom judged  
Expedient in such cases: — the grim smile  
That will go round! Is it not therefore best  
To venture a rehearsal like the present  
In a small way? Where are the signs I seek,  
The first-fruits and fair sample of the scorn  
Due to all quacks? Why, this will never do!

*Fest.* These are foul vapors, Aureole; naught  
beside!

The effect of watching, study, weariness.  
Were there a spark of truth in the confusion  
Of these wild words, you would not outrage thus  
Your youth's companion. I shall ne'er regard  
These wanderings, bred of faintness and much  
study.

'T is not thus you would trust a trouble to me,  
To Michal's friend.

*Par.* I have said it, dearest Festus!  
For the manner, 't is ungracious probably;  
You may have it told in broken sobs, one day,  
And scalding tears, ere long: but I thought best  
To keep that off as long as possible.  
Do you wonder still?

*Fest.* No; it must oft fall out  
That one whose labor perfects any work,  
Shall rise from it with eye so worn that he  
Of all men least can measure the extent  
Of what he has accomplished. He alone  
Who, nothing tasked, is nothing weary too,  
May clearly scan the little he effects:  
But we, the bystanders, untouched by toil,  
Estimate each aright.

*Par.* This worthy Festus  
Is one of them, at last! 'T is so with all!  
First, they set down all progress as a dream;  
And next, when he whose quick discomfiture  
Was counted on, accomplishes some few  
And doubtful steps in his career, — behold,  
They look for every inch of ground to vanish  
Beneath his tread, so sure they spy success!  
*Fest.* Few doubtful steps? when death re-  
tires before

Your presence — when the noblest of mankind,  
Broken in body or subdued in soul,  
May through your skill renew their vigor, raise  
The shattered frame to pristine stateliness?  
When men in racking pain may purchase dreams  
Of what delights them most, swooning at once  
Into a sea of bliss or rapt along  
As in a flying sphere of turbulent light?  
When we may look to you as one ordained  
To free the flesh from fell disease, as frees  
Our Luther's burning tongue the fettered soul?

*Par.* When and where, the devil, did you get  
This notable news?

*Fest.* Even from the common voice;  
From those whose envy, daring not dispute  
The wonders it decries, attributes them  
To magic and such folly.

*Par.* Folly? Why not  
To magic, pray? You find a comfort doubtless  
In holding, God ne'er troubles him about  
Us or our doings: once we were judged worth  
The devil's tempting . . . I offend: forgive me,  
And rest content. Your prophecy on the whole  
Was fair enough as prophesying; go;  
At fault a little in detail, but quite  
Precise enough in the main; and hereupon  
I pay due homage: you guessed long ago  
(The prophet!) I should fail — and I have failed.

*Fest.* You mean to tell me, then, the hopes  
which fed

Your youth have not been realized as yet?  
Some obstacle has barred them hitherto?  
Or that their innate . . .

*Par.* As I said but now,  
You have a very decent prophet's fame,  
So you but shun details here. Little matter  
Whether those hopes were mad, — the aims  
they sought,

Safe and secure from all ambitious fools;  
Or whether my weak wits are overcome  
By what a better spirit would scorn: I fail.  
And now methinks 'twere best to change a  
theme

I am a sad fool to have stumbled on.  
I say confusedly what comes uppermost;  
But there are times when patience proves at  
fault,

As now: this morning's strange encounter — you  
Beside me once again! you, whom I guessed  
Alive, since hitherto (with Luther's leave)  
No friend have I among the saints at peace,  
To judge by any good their prayers effect.  
I knew you would have helped me — why not he,  
My strange competitor in enterprise,  
Bound for the same end by another path,  
Arrived, or ill or well, before the time,  
At our disastrous journey's doubtful close?



How goes it with April? Ah, they miss  
Your lone sad sunny idleness of heaven,  
Our martyrs for the world's sake; heaven shuts  
fast:

The poor mad poet is howling by this time!  
Since you are my sole friend then, here or there,  
I could not quite repress the varied feelings  
This meeting wakens; they have had their vent,  
And now forget them. Do the rear-mice still  
Hang like a fretwork on the gate (or what  
In my time was a gate) fronting the road  
From Einsiedeln to Lachen?

*Fest.* Trifle not:  
Answer me, for my sake alone! You smiled  
Just now, when I supposed some deed, unworthy  
Yourself, might blot the else so bright result;  
Yet if your motives have continued pure,  
Your will unfaltering, and in spite of this,  
You have experienced a defeat, why then  
I say not you would cheerfully withdraw  
From contest — mortal hearts are not so fash-  
ioned —

But surely you would ne'ertheless withdraw.  
You sought not fame nor gain nor even love,  
No end distinct from knowledge, — I repeat  
Your very words: once satisfied that knowledge  
Is a mere dream, you would announce as much,  
Yourself the first. But how is the event?  
You are defeated — and I find you here!

*Par.* As though "here" did not signify de-  
feat!

I spoke not of my little labors here,  
But of the break-down of my general aims:  
For you, aware of their extent and scope,  
To look on these sage lecturings, approved  
By beardless boys, and bearded dotards worse,  
As a fit consummation of such aims,  
Is worthy notice. A professorship  
At Basel! Since you see so much in it,  
And think my life was reasonably drained  
Of life's delights to render me a match  
For duties arduous as such post demands, —  
Be it far from me to deny my power  
To fill the petty circle allotted out  
Of infinite space, or justify the host  
Of honors thence accruing. So, take notice,  
This jewel dangling from my neck preserves  
The features of a prince, my skill restored  
To plague his people some few years to come:  
And all through a pure whim. He had eased  
the earth

For me, but that the droll despair which seized  
The vermin of his household, tickled me.  
I came to see. Here drivelled the physician,  
Whose most infallible nostrum was at fault;  
There quaked the astrologer, whose horoscope  
Had promised him interminable years;  
Here a monk fumbled at the sick man's mouth  
With some undoubted relic — a sudary  
Of the Virgin; while another piebald knave  
Of the same brotherhood (he loved them ever)  
Was actively preparing 'neath his nose  
Such a suffumigation as, once fired,  
Had stunk the patient dead ere he could groan.  
I cursed the doctor and upset the brother,  
Brushed past the conjurer, vowed that the first  
gust

Of stench from the ingredients just alight

Would raise a cross-grained devil in my sword,  
Not easily laid: and ere an hour the prince  
Slept as he never slept since prince he was.  
A day — and I was posting for my life,  
Placarded through the town as one whose spite  
Had near availed to stop the blessed effects  
Of the doctor's nostrum which, well seconded  
By the sudary, and most by the costly smoke —  
Not leaving out the strenuous prayers sent up  
Hard by in the abbey — raised the prince to life:  
To the great reputation of the seer  
Who, confident, expected all along  
The glad event — the doctor's recompense —  
Much largess from his highness to the monks —  
And the vast solace of his loving people,  
Whose general satisfaction to increase,  
The prince was pleased no longer to defer  
The burning of some dozen heretics  
Remanded till God's mercy should be shown  
Touching his sickness: last of all were joined  
Ample directions to all loyal folk  
To swell the complement by seizing me  
Who — doubtless some rank sorcerer — endeavor-  
ored

To thwart these pious offices, obstruct  
The prince's cure, and frustrate heaven by help  
Of certain devils dwelling in his sword.  
By luck, the prince in his first fit of thanks  
Had forced this bauble on me as an earnest  
Of further favors. This one case may serve  
To give sufficient taste of many such,  
So, let them pass. Those shelves support a pile  
Of patents, licenses, diplomas, titles  
From Germany, France, Spain, and Italy;  
They authorize some honor; ne'ertheless,  
I set more store by this Erasmus sent;  
He trusts me; our Frobenius is his friend,  
And him "I raised" (nay, read it) "from the  
dead."

I weary you, I see. I merely sought  
To show, there's no great wonder after all  
That, while I fill the class-room and attract  
A crowd to Basel, I get leave to stay,  
And therefore need not scruple to accept  
The utmost they can offer, if I please:  
For 't is but right the world should be prepared  
To treat with favor e'en fantastic wants  
Of one like me, used up in serving her.  
Just as the mortal, whom the gods in part  
Devooured, received in place of his lost limb  
Some virtue or other — cured disease, I think;  
You mind the fables we have read together.

*Fest.* You do not think I comprehend a word.  
The time was, Aureole, you were apt enough  
To clothe the airiest thoughts in specious  
breath;

But surely you must feel how vague and strange  
These speeches sound.

*Par.* Well, then: you know my hopes;  
I am assured, at length, those hopes were vain;  
That truth is just as far from me as ever;  
That I have thrown my life away; that sorrow  
On that account is idle, and further effort  
To mend and patch what's marred beyond re-  
pairing,

As useless: and all this was taught your friend  
By the convincing good old-fashioned method  
Of force — by sheer compulsion. Is that plain?

*Fest.* Dear Aureole, can it be my fears were just ?

God wills not . . .

*Par.* Now, 't is this I most admire —  
The constant talk men of your stamp keep up  
Of God's will, as they style it ; one would swear  
Man had but merely to uplift his eye,  
And see the will in question characterized  
On the heaven's vault. 'T is hardly wise to moot  
Such topics : doubts are many and faith is weak.  
I know as much of any will of God  
As knows some dumb and tortured brute what  
Man,

His stern lord, wills from the perplexing blows  
That plague him every way ; but there, of  
course,

Where least he suffers, longest he remains —  
My case ; and for such reasons I plod on,  
Subdued but not convinced. I know as little  
Why I deserve to fail, as why I hoped  
Better things in my youth. I simply know  
I am no master here, but trained and beaten  
Into the path I tread ; and here I stay,  
Until some further intimation reach me,  
Like an obedient drudge. Though I prefer  
To view the whole thing as a task imposed  
Which, whether dull or pleasant, must be done —  
Yet, I deny not, there is made provision  
Of joys which tastes less jaded might affect ;  
Nay, some which please me too, for all my  
pride —

Pleasures that once were pains : the iron ring  
Festering about a slave's neck grows at length  
Into the flesh it eats. I hate no longer  
A host of petty vile delights, undreamed of  
Or spurned before ; such now supply the place  
Of my dead aims : as in the autumn woods  
Where tall trees used to flourish, from their  
roots

Springs up a fungous brood sickly and pale,  
Chill mushrooms colored like a corpse's cheek.

*Fest.* If I interpret well your words, I own  
It troubles me but little that your aims,  
Vast in their dawning and most likely grown  
Extravagantly since, have baffled you.  
Perchance I am glad ; you merit greater praise ;  
Because they are too glorious to be gained,  
You do not blindly cling to them and die ;  
You fell, but have not sullenly refused  
To rise, because an angel worsted you  
In wrestling, though the world holds not your  
peer ;

And though too harsh and sudden is the change  
To yield content as yet, still you pursue  
The ungracious path as though 't were rosy-  
strewn.

'T is well : and your reward, or soon or late,  
Will come from him whom no man serves in  
vain.

*Par.* Ah, very fine ! For my part, I conceive  
The very pausing from all further toil,  
Which you find heinous, would become a seal  
To the sincerity of all my deeds.  
To be consistent I should die at once ;  
I calculated on no after-life ;  
Yet (how crept in, how fostered, I know not)  
Here am I with as passionate regret  
For youth and health and love so vainly lavished,

As if their preservation had been first  
And foremost in my thoughts ; and this strange  
fact

Humbled me wondrously, and had due force  
In rendering me the less averse to follow  
A certain counsel, a mysterious warning —  
You will not understand — but 't was a man  
With aims not mine and yet pursued like mine  
With the same fervor and no more success,  
Perishing in my sight ; who summoned me,  
As I would shun the ghastly fate I saw,  
To serve my race at once ; to wait no longer  
That God should interfere in my behalf,  
But to distrust myself, put pride away,  
And give my gains, imperfect as they were,  
To men. I have no leisure to explain  
How, since, a singular series of events  
Has raised me to the station you behold,  
Wherein I seem to turn to most account  
The mere wreck of the past, — perhaps receive  
Some feeble glimmering token that God views  
And may approve my penance : therefore here  
You find me, doing most good or least harm.  
And if folks wonder much and profit little  
'T is not my fault ; only, I shall rejoice  
When my part in the farce is shuffled through,  
And the curtain falls : I must hold out till then.

*Fest.* Till when, dear Aureole ?

*Par.* Till I'm fairly thrust  
From my proud eminence. Fortune is fickle  
And even professors fall : should that arrive,  
I see no sin in ceding to my bent.  
You little fancy what rude shocks apprise us  
We sin ; God's intimations rather fail  
In clearness than in energy : 't were well  
Did they but indicate the course to take  
Like that to be forsaken. I would fain  
Be spared a further sample. Here I stand,  
And here I stay, be sure, till forced to flit.

*Fest.* Be you but firm on that head ! long  
ere then

All I expect will come to pass, I trust :  
The cloud that wraps you will have disappeared.  
Meantime, I see small chance of such event :  
They praise you here as one whose lore, already  
Divulged, eclipses all the past can show,  
But whose achievements, marvellous as they be,  
Are faint anticipations of a glory  
About to be revealed. When Basel's crowds  
Dismiss their teacher, I shall be content  
That he depart.

*Par.* This favor at their hands  
I look for earlier than your view of things  
Would warrant. Of the crowd you saw to-day,  
Remove the full half sheer amazement draws,  
Mere novelty, naught else ; and next, the tribe  
Whose innate blockish dulness just perceives  
That unless miracles (as seem my works)  
Be wrought in their behalf, their chance is  
slight

To puzzle the devil ; next, the numerous set  
Who bitterly hate established schools, and help  
The teacher that oppugns them, till he once  
Have planted his own doctrine, when the  
teacher

May reckon on their rancor in his turn ;  
Take, too, the sprinkling of sagacious knaves  
Whose cunning runs not counter to the vogue

But seeks, by flattery and crafty nursing,  
To force my system to a premature  
Short-lived development. Why swell the list?  
Each has his end to serve, and his best way  
Of serving it: remove all these, remain  
A scantling, a poor dozen at the best,  
Worthy to look for sympathy and service,  
And likely to draw profit from my pains.

*Fest.* 'Tis no encouraging picture: still  
these few  
Redeem their fellows. Once the germ im-  
planted,  
Its growth, if slow, is sure.

*Par.* God grant it so!  
I would make some amends; but if I fail,  
The luckless rogues have this excuse to urge,  
That much is in my method and my manner,  
My uncouth habits, my impatient spirit,  
Which hinders of reception and result  
My doctrine: much to say, small skill to speak!  
These old aims suffered not a looking-off  
Though for an instant; therefore, only when  
I thus renounce them and resolved to reap  
Some present fruit — to teach mankind some  
truth

So dearly purchased — only then I found  
Such teaching was an art requiring cares  
And qualities peculiar to itself:  
That to possess was one thing — to display  
Another. With renown first in my thoughts,  
Or popular praise, I had soon discovered it:  
One grows but little apt to learn these things.

*Fest.* If it be so, which nowise I believe,  
There needs no waiting fuller dispensation  
To leave a labor of so little use.

Why not throw up the irksome charge at once?  
*Par.* A task, a task!

But wherefore hide the whole  
Extent of degradation once engaged  
In the confessing vein? Despite of all  
My fine talk of obedience and repugnance,  
Docility and what not, 't is yet to learn  
If when the task shall really be performed,  
My inclination free to choose once more,  
I shall do aught but slightly modify  
The nature of the hated task I quit.  
In plain words, I am spoiled; my life still tends  
As first it tended; I am broken and trained  
To my old habits: they are part of me.  
I know, and none so well, my darling ends  
Are proved impossible: no less, no less,  
Even now what humors me, fond fool, as when  
Their faint ghosts sit with me and flatter me  
And send me back content to my dull round?  
How can I change this soul? — this apparatus  
Constructed solely for their purposes,  
So well adapted to their every want,  
To search out and discover, prove and perfect;  
This intricate machine whose most minute  
And meanest motions have their charm to me  
Though to none else — an aptitude I seize,  
An object I perceive, a use, a meaning,  
A property, a fitness, I explain  
And I alone: — how can I change my soul?  
And this wronged body, worthless save when  
tasked

Under that soul's dominion — used to care  
For its bright master's cares and quite subdue

Its proper cravings — not to ail nor pine  
So he but prosper — whither drag this poor  
Tried patient body? God! how I essayed  
To live like that mad poet, for a while,  
To love alone; and how I felt too warped  
And twisted and deformed! What should I do,  
Even though released from drudgery, but re-  
turn

Faint, as you see, and halting, blind and sore,  
To my old life and die as I began?  
I cannot feed on beauty for the sake  
Of beauty only, nor can drink in balm  
From lovely objects for their loveliness;  
My nature cannot lose her first imprint;  
I still must hoard and heap and class all truths  
With one ulterior purpose: I must know!  
Would God translate me to his throne, believe  
That I should only listen to his word  
To further my own aim! For other men,  
Beauty is prodigally strewn around,  
And I were happy could I quench as they  
This mad and thriveless longing, and content  
me

With beauty for itself alone: alas,  
I have addressed a frock of heavy mail  
Yet may not join the troop of sacred knights;  
And now the forest-creatures fly from me,  
The grass-banks cool, the sunbeams warm no  
more.

Best follow, dreaming that ere night arrive,  
I shall o'ertake the company and ride  
Glittering as they!

*Fest.* I think I apprehend  
What you would say: if you, in truth, design  
To enter once more on the life thus left,  
Seek not to hide that all this consciousness  
Of failure is assumed!

*Par.* My friend, my friend,  
I toil, you listen; I explain, perhaps  
You understand: there our communion ends.  
Have you learnt nothing from to-day's dis-  
course?

When we would thoroughly know the sick  
man's state

We feel awhile the fluttering pulse, press soft  
The hot brow, look upon the languid eye,  
And thence divine the rest. Must I lay bare  
My heart, hideous and beating, or tear up  
My vitals for your gaze, ere you will deem  
Enough made known? You! who are you,  
forsooth?

That is the crowning operation claimed  
By the arch-demonstrator — heaven the hall,  
And earth the audience. Let April and you  
Secure good places: 't will be worth the while.

*Fest.* Are you mad, Aureole? What can I  
have said

To call for this? I judged from your own  
words.

*Par.* Oh, doubtless! A sick wretch de-  
scribes the ape  
That mocks him from the bed-foot, and all  
gravely

You thither turn at once: or he recounts  
The perilous journey he has late performed,  
And you are puzzled much how that could be!  
You find me here, half stupid and half mad;  
It makes no part of my delight to search



Into these matters, much less undergo  
Another's scrutiny ; but so it chances  
That I am led to trust my state to you :  
And the event is, you combine, contrast  
And ponder on my foolish words as though  
They thoroughly conveyed all hidden here —  
Here, loathsome with despair and hate and  
rage !

Is there no fear, no shrinking and no shame ?  
Will you guess nothing ? will you spare me no-  
thing ?

Must I go deeper ? Ay or no ?

*Fest.* Dear friend . . .

*Par.* True : I am brutal — 't is a part of it ;  
The plague's sign — you are not a lazar-haunter,  
How should you know ? Well then, you think  
it strange

I should profess to have failed utterly,  
And yet propose an ultimate return  
To courses void of hope : and this, because  
You know not what temptation is, nor how  
'T is like to ply men in the sickliest part.  
You are to understand that we who make  
Sport for the gods, are hunted to the end :  
There is not one sharp volley shot at us,  
Which 'scaped with life, though hurt, we  
slacken pace

And gather by the wayside herbs and roots  
To stanch our wounds, secure from further  
harm :

We are assailed to life's extremest verge.  
It will be well indeed if I return,  
A harmless busy fool, to my old ways !  
I would forget hints of another fate,  
Significant enough, which silent hours  
Have lately scared me with.

*Fest.* Another ! and what ?

*Par.* After all, Festus, you say well : I am  
A man yet : I need never humble me.  
I would have been — something, I know not  
what ;

But though I cannot soar, I do not crawl.  
There are worse portions than this one of mine.  
You say well !

*Fest.* Ah !

*Par.* And deeper degradation !  
If the mean stimulants of vulgar praise,  
If vanity should become the chosen food  
Of a sunk mind, should stifle even the wish  
To find its early aspirations true,  
Should teach it to breathe falsehood like life-  
breath —

An atmosphere of craft and trick and lies ;  
Should make it proud to emulate, surpass  
Base natures in the practices which woke  
Its most indignant loathing once . . . No, no !  
Utter damnation is reserved for hell !  
I had immortal feelings ; such shall never  
Be wholly quenched : no, no !

My friend, you wear  
A melancholy face, and certain 't is  
There 's little cheer in all this dismal work.  
But was it my desire to set abroad  
Such memories and forebodings ? I foresaw  
Where they would drive. 'T were better we  
discuss

News from Lucerne or Zurich ; ask and tell  
Of Egypt's flaring sky or Spain's cork-groves.

*Fest.* I have thought : trust me, this mood  
will pass away !

I know you and the lofty spirit you bear,  
And easily ravel out a clue to all.  
These are the trials meet for such as you,  
Nor must you hope exemption : to be mortal  
Is to be plied with trials manifold.  
Look round ! The obstacles which kept the rest  
From your ambition, have been spurned by you ;  
Their fears, their doubts, the chains that bind  
them all.

Were flax before your resolute soul, which  
naught

Avails to awe save these delusions bred  
From its own strength, its selfsame strength dis-  
guised,

Mocking itself. Be brave, dear Aureole ! Since  
The rabbit has his shade to frighten him,  
The fawn a rustling bough, mortals their cares,  
And higher natures yet would slight and laugh  
At these entangling fantasies, as you  
At trammels of a weaker intellect, —  
Measure your mind's height by the shade it  
casts !

I know you.

*Par.* And I know you, dearest Festus !  
And how you love unworthily ; and how  
All admiration renders blind.

*Fest.* You hold  
That admiration blinds ?

*Par.* Ay and alas !

*Fest.* Naught blinds you less than admiration,  
friend !

Whether it be that all love renders wise  
In its degree ; from love which blends with  
love —

Heart answering heart — to love which spends  
itself

In silent mad idolatry of some  
Pre-eminent mortal, some great soul of souls,  
Which ne'er will know how well it is adored.  
I say, such love is never blind ; but rather  
Alive to every the minutest spot  
Which mars its object, and which hate (supposed  
So vigilant and searching) dreams not of.  
Love broods on such : what then ? When first  
perceived

Is there no sweet strife to forget, to change,  
To overflow those blemishes with all  
The glow of general goodness they disturb ?  
— To make those very defects an endless source  
Of new affection grown from hopes and fears ?  
And, when all fails, is there no gallant stand  
Made even for much proved weak ? no shrinking-  
back

Lest, since all love assimilates the soul  
To what it loves, it should at length become  
Almost a rival of its idol ? Trust me,  
If there be fiends who seek to work our hurt,  
To ruin and drag down earth's mightiest spirits  
Even at God's foot, 't will be from such as love,  
Their zeal will gather most to serve their cause ;  
And least from those who hate, who most essay  
By contumely and scorn to blot the light  
Which forces entrance even to their hearts :  
For thence will our defender tear the veil  
And show within each heart, as in a shrine,  
The giant image of perfection, grown

In hate's despite, whose calumnies were spawned  
In the untroubled presence of its eyes.  
True admiration blinds not ; nor am I  
So blind. I call your sin exceptional ;  
It springs from one whose life has passed the  
bounds

Prescribed to life. Compound that fault with  
God !

I speak of men ; to common men like me  
The weakness you reveal endears you more,  
Like the far traces of decay in suns.

I bid you have good cheer !

*Par.* *Præclare ! Optime !*  
Think of a quiet mountain-cloistered priest  
Instructing Paracelsus ! yet 't is so.

Come, I will show you where my merit lies.

'T is in the advance of individual minds

That the slow crowd should ground their expect-  
tation

Eventually to follow ; as the sea

Waits ages in its bed till some one wave

Out of the multitudinous mass, extends

The empire of the whole, some feet perhaps,

Over the strip of sand which could confine

Its fellows so long time : thenceforth the rest,

Even to the meanest, hurry in at once,

And so much is clear gained. I shall be glad

If all my labors, failing of aught else,

Suffice to make such inroad and procure

A wider range for thought : nay, they do this ;

For, whatsoe'er my notions of true knowledge

And a legitimate success, may be,

I am not blind to my undoubted rank

When classed with others : I precede my age :

And whose wills is very free to mount

These labors as a platform whence his own

May have a prosperous outset. But, alas !

My followers — they are noisy as you heard ;

But, for intelligence, the best of them

So clumsily wield the weapons I supply

And they extol, that I begin to doubt

Whether their own rude clubs and pebble-stones

Would not do better service than my arms

Thus vilely swayed — if error will not fall

Sooner before the old awkward batterings

Than my more subtle warfare, not half learned.

*Fest.* I would supply that art, then, or with-  
hold

New arms until you teach their mystery.

*Par.* Content you, 't is my wish ; I have  
recourse

To the simplest training. Day by day I seek

To wake the mood, the spirit which alone

Can make those arms of any use to men.

Of course they are for swaggering forth at once

Graced with Ulysses' bow, Achilles' shield —

Flash on us, all in armor, thou Achilles !

Make our hearts dance to thy resounding step !

A proper sight to scare the crows away !

*Fest.* Pity you choose not then some other  
method

Of coming at your point. The marvellous art

At length established in the world bids fair

To remedy all hindrances like these :

Trust to Frobenius' press the precious lore

Obscured by uncouth manner, or unfit

For raw beginners ; let his types secure

A deathless monument to after-time ;

Meanwhile wait confidently and enjoy

The ultimate effect : sooner or later

You shall be all-revealed.

*Par.* The old dull question

In a new form ; no more. Thus : I possess

Two sorts of knowledge ; one, — vast, shadowy,

Hints of the unbounded aim I once pursued :

The other consists of many secrets, caught

While bent on nobler prize, — perhaps a few

Prime principles which may conduct to much :

These last I offer to my followers here.

Now, bid me chronicle the first of these,

My ancient study, and in effect you bid

Revert to the wild courses just abjured :

I must go find them scattered through the world.

Then, for the principles, they are so simple

(Being chiefly of the overturning sort),

That one time is as proper to propound them

As any other — to-morrow at my class,

Or half a century hence embalmed in print.

For if mankind intend to learn at all,

They must begin by giving faith to them

And acting on them : and I do not see

But that my lectures serve indifferent well :

No doubt these dogmas fall not to the earth,

For all their novelty and rugged setting.

I think my class will not forget the day

I let them know the gods of Israel,

Aëtius, Oribasius, Galen, Rhasis,

Serapion, Avicenna, Averroës,

Were blocks !

*Fest.* And that reminds me, I heard some-  
thing

About your waywardness : you burned their

books,

It seems, instead of answering those sages.

*Par.* And who said that ?

*Fest.* Some I met yesternight

With Ecolampadius. As you know, the purpose

Of this short stay at Basel was to learn

His pleasure touching certain missives sent

For our Zuinglius and himself. 'T was he

Apprised me that the famous teacher here

Was my old friend.

*Par.* Ah, I forgot : you went . . .

*Fest.* From Zurich with advices for the ear

Of Luther, now at Wittenberg — (you know,

I make no doubt, the differences of late

With Carolostadius) — and returning sought

Basel and . . .

*Par.* I remember. Here's a case, now,

Will teach you why I answer not, but burn

The books you mention. Pray, does Luther

dream

His arguments convince by their own force

The crowds that own his doctrine ? No, indeed !

His plain denial of established points

Ages had sanctified and men supposed

Could never be oppugned while earth was under

And heaven above them — points which chance

or time

Affected not — did more than the array

Of argument which followed. Boldly deny !

There is much breath-stopping, hair-stiffening

Awhile ; then, amazed glances, mute awaiting

The thunderbolt which does not come : and next,

Reproachful wonder and inquiry ; those

Who else had never stirred, are able now

To find the rest out for themselves, perhaps  
To outstrip him who set the whole at work,  
— As never will my wise class its instructor.  
And you saw Luther ?

*Fest.* 'T is a wondrous soul !

*Par.* True : the so-heavy chain which galled mankind

Is shattered, and the noblest of us all  
Must bow to the deliverer — nay, the worker  
Of our own project — we who long before  
Had burst our trammels, but forgot the crowd,  
We should have taught, still groaned beneath  
their load :

This he has done and nobly. Speed that may !  
Whatever be my chance or my mischance,  
What benefits mankind must glad me too ;  
And men seem made, though not as I believed,  
For something better than the times produce.  
Witness these gangs of peasants your new lights  
From Suabia have possessed, whom Münzer

leads,  
And whom the duke, the landgrave and the  
elector  
Will calm in blood ! Well, well ; 't is not my  
world !

*Fest.* Hark !

*Par.* 'T is the melancholy wind astir  
Within the trees ; the embers too are gray :  
Morn must be near.

*Fest.* Best ope the casement : see,  
The night, late strewn with clouds and flying  
stars,

Is blank and motionless : how peaceful sleep  
The tree-tops altogether ! Like an asp,  
The wind slips whispering from bough to bough.

*Par.* Ay ; you would gaze on a wind-shaken  
tree

By the hour, nor count time lost.

*Fest.* So you shall gaze :  
Those happy times will come again.

*Par.* Gone, gone,  
Those pleasant times ! Does not the moaning  
wind

Seem to bewail that we have gained such gains  
And bartered sleep for them ?

*Fest.* It is our trust  
That there is yet another world to mend  
All error and mischance.

*Par.* Another world !  
And why this world, this common world, to be  
A make-shift, a mere foil, how fair soever,  
To some fine life to come ? Man must be fed  
With angels' food, forsooth ; and some few  
traces

Of a diviner nature which look out  
Through his corporeal baseness, warrant him  
In a supreme contempt of all provision  
For his inferior tastes — some straggling marks  
Which constitute his essence, just as truly  
As here and there a gem would constitute  
The rock, their barren bed, one diamond.  
But were it so — were man all mind — he gains  
A station little enviable. From God  
Down to the lowest spirit ministrant,  
Intelligence exists which casts our mind  
Into immeasurable shade. No, no :  
Love, hope, fear, faith — these make humanity ;  
These are its sign and note and character,

And these I have lost ! — gone, shut from me  
forever.

Like a dead friend safe from unkindness more !  
See, morn at length. The heavy darkness seems  
Diluted, gray and clear without the stars ;  
The shrubs bestir and rouse themselves as if  
Some snake, that weighed them down all night,  
let go

His hold ; and from the East, fuller and fuller  
Day, like a mighty river, flowing in ;  
But clouded, wintry, desolate and cold.

Yet see how that broad prickly star-shaped  
plant,

Half-down in the crevice, spreads its woolly  
leaves

All thick and glistening with diamond dew.  
And you depart for Einsiedeln this day,  
And we have spent all night in talk like this !  
If you would have me better for your love,  
Revert no more to these sad themes.

*Fest.* One favor,  
And I have done. I leave you, deeply moved ;  
Unwilling to have fared so well, the while  
My friend has changed so sorely. If this mood  
Shall pass away, if light once more arise  
Where all is darkness now, if you see fit  
To hope and trust again, and strive again,  
You will remember — not our love alone —  
But that my faith in God's desire that man  
Should trust on his support, (as I must think  
You trusted) is obscured and dim through you :  
For you are thus, and this is no reward.  
Will you not call me to your side, dear Aureole ?

#### IV. PARACELSUS ASPIRES

SCENE, Colmar in Alsatia : an Inn. 1528.

PARACELSUS, FESTUS.

*Par.* (to JOHANNES OPORINUS, his Secretary).  
*Sic itur ad astra !* Dear Von Visenburg  
Is scandalized, and poor Torinus paralyzed,  
And every honest soul that Basel holds  
Aghast ; and yet we live, as one may say,  
Just as though Liechtenfels had never set  
So true a value on his sorry carcass,  
And learned Pütter had not frowned us dumb.  
We live ; and shall as surely start to-morrow  
For Nuremberg, as we drink speedy scathe  
To Basel in this mantling wine, suffused  
A delicate blush, no fainter tinge is born  
I' the shut heart of a bud. Pledge me, good  
John —

“ Basel ; a hot plague ravage it, and Pütter  
Oppose the plague ! ” Even so ? Do you too share  
Their panic, the reptiles ? Ha, ha ; faint through  
these,

Desist for these ! They manage matters so  
At Basel, 't is like : but others may find means  
To bring the stoutest braggart of the tribe  
Once more to crouch in silence — means to breed  
A stupid wonder in each fool again,  
Now big with admiration at the skill  
Which stript a vain pretender of his plumes :  
And, that done, — means to brand each slavish  
brow



So deeply, surely, ineffaceably,  
That henceforth flattery shall not pucker it  
Out of the furrow ; there that stamp shall stay  
To show the next they fawn on, what they are,  
This Basel with its magnates, — fill my cup, —  
Whom I curse soul and limb. And now dispatch,  
Dispatch, my trusty John ; and what remains  
To do, whate'er arrangements for our trip  
Are yet to be completed, see you hasten  
This night ; we'll weather the storm at least :  
to-morrow  
For Nuremberg ! Now leave us ; this grave clerk  
Has divers weighty matters for my ear :

[OPORINUS goes out.]

And spare my lungs. At last, my gallant Festus,  
I am rid of this arch-knave that dogs my heels  
As a gaunt crow a gasping sheep ; at last  
May give a loose to my delight. How kind,  
How very kind, my first best only friend !  
Why, this looks like fidelity. Embrace me !  
Not a hair silvered yet ? Right ! you shall live  
Till I am worth your love ; you shall be proud,  
And I — but let time show ! Did you not wonder ?

I sent to you because our compact weighed  
Upon my conscience — (you recall the night  
At Basel, which the gods confound ! ) — because  
Once more I aspire. I call you to my side :  
You come. You thought my message strange ?  
*Fest.* So strange

That I must hope, indeed, your messenger  
Has mingled his own fancies with the words  
Purporting to be yours.

*Par.* He said no more,  
'Tis probable, than the precious folk I leave  
Said fiftyfold more roughly. Welladay,  
'Tis true ! poor Paracelsus is exposed  
At last ; a most egregious quack he proves :  
And those he overreached must spit their hate  
On one who, utterly beneath contempt,  
Could yet deceive their topping wits. You heard

Bare truth ; and at my bidding you come here  
To speed me on my enterprise, as once  
Your lavish wishes sped me, my own friend !

*Fest.* What is your purpose, Aureole ?  
*Par.* Oh, for purpose,

There is no lack of precedents in a case  
Like mine ; at least, if not precisely mine,  
The case of men cast off by those they sought  
To benefit.

*Fest.* They really cast you off ?  
I only heard a vague tale of some priest,  
Cured by your skill, who wrangled at your  
claim,  
Knowing his life's worth best ; and how the  
judge

The matter was referred to saw no cause  
To interfere, nor you to hide your full  
Contempt of him ; nor he, again, to smother  
His wrath thereat, which raised so fierce a  
flame

That Basel soon was made no place for you.  
*Par.* The affair of Liechtenfels ? the shal-  
lowest fable,

The last and silliest outrage — mere pretence !  
I knew it, I foretold it from the first,  
How soon the stupid wonder you mistook

For genuine loyalty — a cheering promise  
Of better things to come — would pall and pass ;  
And every word comes true. Saul is among  
The prophets ! Just so long as I was pleased  
To play off the mere antics of my art,  
Fantastic gambols leading to no end,  
I got huge praise ; but one can ne'er keep down  
Our foolish nature's weakness. There they  
flocked,

Poor devils, jostling, swearing and perspiring,  
Till the walls rang again ; and all for me !  
I had a kindness for them, which was right ;  
But then I stopped not till I tacked to that  
A trust in them and a respect — a sort  
Of sympathy for them ; I must needs begin  
To teach them, not amaze them, " to impart  
The spirit which should instigate the search  
Of truth," just what you bade me ! I spoke out.  
Forthwith a mighty squadron, in disgust,  
Filed off — " the sifted chaff of the sack," I  
said,

Redoubling my endeavors to secure  
The rest. When lo ! one man had tarried so  
long

Only to ascertain if I supported  
This tenet of his, or that ; another loved  
To hear impartially before he judged,  
And having heard, now judged ; this bland  
disciple

Passed for my dupe, but all along, it seems,  
Spied error where his neighbors marvelled  
most ;

That fiery doctor who had hailed me friend,  
Did it because my by-paths, once proved wrong  
And beacons properly, would commend again  
The good old ways our sires jogged safely o'er,  
Though not their squeamish sons ; the other  
worthy

Discovered divers verses of St. John,  
Which, read successively, refreshed the soul,  
But, mumbled backwards, cured the gout, the  
stone,

The colic and what not. *Quid multa ?* The end  
Was a clear class-room, and a quiet leer  
From grave folk, and a sour reproachful glance  
From those in chief who, cap in hand, installed  
The new professor scarce a year before ;  
And a vast flourish about patient merit  
Obscured awhile by flashy tricks, but sure  
Sooner or later to emerge in splendor —  
Of which the example was some luckless wight  
Whom my arrival had discomfited,  
But now, it seems, the general voice recalled  
To fill my chair and so efface the stain  
Basel had long incurred. I sought no better,  
Only a quiet dismissal from my post,  
And from my heart I wished them better suited  
And better served. Good night to Basel.  
then !

But fast as I proposed to rid the tribe  
Of my obnoxious back, I could not spare them  
The pleasure of a parting kick.

*Fest.* You smile :  
Despise them as they merit !

*Par.* If I smile,  
'T is with as very contempt as ever turned  
Flesh into stone. This courteous recompense,  
This grateful . . . Festus, were your nature fit

To be defiled, your eyes the eyes to ache  
At gangrene-blotches, eating poison-blains,  
The ulcerous barkscurf of leprosy  
Which finds — a man, and leaves — a hideous  
thing

That cannot but be mended by hell-fire,  
— I would lay bare to you the human heart  
Which God cursed long ago, and devils make  
since

Their pet nest and their never-tiring home.  
Oh, sages have discovered we are born  
For various ends — to love, to know: has ever  
One stumbled, in his search, on any signs  
Of a nature in us formed to hate? To hate?  
If that be our true object which evokes  
Our powers in fullest strength, be sure 't is hate!  
Yet men have doubted if the best and bravest  
Of spirits can nourish him with hate alone.  
I had not the monopoly of fools,  
It seems, at Basel.

*Fest.* But your plans, your plans!  
I have yet to learn your purpose, Aureole!

*Par.* Whether to sink beneath such ponderous  
shame,

To shrink up like a crushed snail, undergo  
In silence and desist from further toil,  
And so subside into a monument  
Of one their censure blasted? or to bow  
Cheerfully as submissively, to lower  
My old pretensions even as Basel dictates,  
To drop into the rank her wits assign me  
And live as they prescribe, and make that use  
Of my poor knowledge which their rules allow,  
Proud to be patted now and then, and careful  
To practise the true posture for receiving  
The amplest benefit from their hoofs' appliance  
When they shall condescend to tutor me?  
Then, one may feel resentment like a flame  
Within, and deck false systems in truth's garb,  
And tangle and entwine mankind with error,  
And give them darkness for a dower and false-  
hood

For a possession, ages: or one may mope  
Into a shade through thinking, or else drowse  
Into a dreamless sleep and so die off.  
But I, — now Festus shall divine! — but I  
Am merely setting out once more, embracing  
My earliest aims again! What thinks he now?

*Fest.* Your aims? the aims? — to Know?  
and where is found

The early trust . . .

*Par.* Nay, not so fast; I say,  
The aims — not the old means. You know  
they made me

A laughing-stock; I was a fool; you know  
The when and the how: hardly those means  
again!

Not but they had their beauty; who should  
know

Their passing beauty, if not I? Still, dreams  
They were, so let them vanish, yet in beauty  
If that may be. Stay: thus they pass in song!

[*He sings.*]

Heap cassia, sandal-buds and stripes  
Of labdanum, and aloë-balls,  
Smeared with dull nard an Indian waps  
From out her hair: such balsam falls  
Down sea-side mountain pedestals,

From tree-tops where tired winds are fain,  
Spent with the vast and howling main,  
To treasure half their island-gain.

And strew faint sweetness from some old  
Egyptian's fine worm-eaten shroud  
Which breaks to dust when once unrolled;  
Or shredded perfume, like a cloud  
From closet long to quiet vowed,  
With moth and dropping arras hung,  
Mouldering her lute and books among,  
As when a queen, long dead, was young.

Mine, every word! And on such pile shall die  
My lovely fancies, with fair perished things,  
Themselves fair and forgotten; yes, forgotten,  
Or why abjure them? So, I made this rhyme  
That fitting dignity might be preserved;  
No little proud was I; though the list of drugs  
Smacks of my old vocation, and the verse  
Halts like the best of Luther's psalms.

*Fest.* But, Aureole,  
Talk not thus wildly and madly. I am here —  
Did you know all! I have travelled far, in-  
deed,

To learn your wishes. Be yourself again!  
For in this mood I recognize you less  
Than in the horrible despondency  
I witnessed last. You may account this, joy;  
But rather let me gaze on that despair  
Than hear these incoherent words and see  
This flushed cheek and intensely-sparkling eye.

*Par.* Why, man, I was light-hearted in my  
prime,

I am light-hearted now; what would you have?  
Aprile was a poet, I make songs —  
'Tis the very augury of success I want!  
Why should I not be joyous now as then?

*Fest.* Joyous! and how? and what remains  
for joy?

You have declared the ends (which I am sick  
Of naming) are impracticable.

*Par.* Ay,  
Pursued as I pursued them — the arch-fool:  
Listen: my plan will please you not, 't is like  
But you are little versed in the world's ways.  
This is my plan — (first drinking its good luck, —  
I will accept all helps; all I despised  
So rashly at the outset, equally  
With early impulses, late years have quenched:  
I have tried each way singly: now for both!  
All helps! no one sort shall exclude the rest.  
I seek to know and to enjoy at once,  
Not one without the other as before.  
Suppose my labor should seem God's own cause  
Once more, as first I dreamed, — it shall not  
balk me

Of the meanest earthliest sensualet delight  
That may be snatched; for every joy is gain,  
And gain is gain, however small. My soul  
Can die then, nor be taunted — "what was  
gained?"

Nor, on the other hand, should pleasure follow  
As though I had not spurned her hitherto,  
Shall she o'ercloud my spirit's rapt communion  
With the tumultuous past, the teeming future,  
Glorious with visions of a full success.

*Fest.* Success!

*Par.* And wherefore not? Why not prefer  
Results obtained in my best state of being,  
To those derived alone from seasons dark  
As the thoughts they bred? When I was best,  
my youth

Unwasted, seemed success not surest too?  
It is the nature of darkness to obscure.  
I am a wanderer: I remember well  
One journey, how I feared the track was missed,  
So long the city I desired to reach  
Lay hid; when suddenly its spires afar  
Flashed through the circling clouds; you may  
conceive

My transport. Soon the vapors closed again,  
But I had seen the city, and one such glance  
No darkness could obscure: nor shall the present —

A few dull hours, a passing shame or two,  
Destroy the vivid memories of the past.  
I will fight the battle out; a little spent  
Perhaps, but still an able combatant.  
You look at my gray hair and furrowed brow?  
But I can turn even weakness to account:  
Of many tricks I know, 't is not the least  
To push the ruins of my frame, whereon  
The fire of vigor trembles scarce alive,  
Into a heap, and send the flame aloft.  
What should I do with age? So, sickness lends  
An aid; it being, I fear, the source of all  
We boast of: mind is nothing but disease,  
And natural health is ignorance.

*Fest.* I see  
But one good symptom in this notable scheme.  
I feared your sudden journey had in view  
To wreak immediate vengeance on your foes.  
To rest is not so: I am glad.

*Par.* And if I please  
To spit on them, to trample them, what then?  
'T is sorry warfare truly, but the fools  
Provoke it. I would spare their self-conceit,  
But if they must provoke me, cannot suffer  
Forbearance on my part, if I may keep  
No quality in the shade, must needs put forth  
Power to match power, my strength against  
their strength,  
And teach them their own game with their  
own arms —

Why, be it so and let them take their chance!  
I am above them like a god, there's no  
Hiding the fact: what idle scruples, then,  
Were those that ever bade me soften it,  
Communicate it gently to the world,  
Instead of proving my supremacy,  
Taking my natural station o'er their head,  
Then owning all the glory was a man's!  
— And in my elevation man's would be.  
But live and learn, though life's short, learning  
hard!

And therefore, though the wreck of my past self,  
I fear, dear Pütter, that your lecture-room  
Must wait awhile for its best ornament,  
The penitent empiric, who set up  
For somebody, but soon was taught his place;  
Now, but too happy to be let confess  
His error, snuff the candles, and illustrate  
(*Fiat experientia corpore vili*)  
Your medicine's soundness in his person. Wait,  
Good Pütter!

*Fest.* He who sneers thus, is a god!

*Par.* Ay, ay, laugh at me! I am very glad  
You are not gulled by all this swaggering; you  
Can see the root of the matter! — how I strive  
To put a good face on the overthrow  
I have experienced, and to bury and hide  
My degradation in its length and breadth;  
How the mean motives I would make you think  
Just mingle as is due with nobler aims,  
The appetites I modestly allow  
May influence me as being mortal still —  
Do goad me, drive me on, and fast supplant  
My youth's desires. You are no stupid dupe:  
You find me out! Yes, I had sent for you  
To palm these childish lies upon you, Festus!  
Laugh — you shall laugh at me!

*Fest.* The past, then, Aureole,  
Proves nothing? Is our interchange of love  
Yet to begin? Have I to swear I mean  
No flattery in this speech or that? For you,  
Whate'er you say, there is no degradation;  
These low thoughts are no inmates of your mind,  
Or wherefore this disorder? You are vexed  
As much by the intrusion of base views,  
Familiar to your adversaries, as they  
Were troubled should your qualities alight  
Amid their murky souls: not otherwise,  
A stray wolf which the winter forces down  
From our bleak hills, suffices to affright  
A village in the vales — while foresters  
Sleep calm, though all night long the famished  
troop

Snuff round and scratch against their crazy huts.  
These evil thoughts are monsters, and will flee.

*Par.* May you be happy, Festus, my own  
friend!

*Fest.* Nay, further; the delights you fail  
would think

The superseders of your nobler aims,  
Though ordinary and harmless stimulants,  
Will ne'er content you.

*Par.* Hush! I once despised them  
But that soon passes. We are high at first  
In our demand, nor will abate a jot  
Of toil's strict value; but time passes o'er,  
And humbler spirits accept what we refuse:  
In short, when some such comfort is doled out  
As these delights, we cannot long retain  
Bitter contempt which urges us at first  
To hurl it back, but hug it to our breast  
And thankfully retire. This life of mine  
Must be lived out and a grave thoroughl  
earned:

I am just fit for that and naught beside.

I told you once, I cannot now enjoy,  
Unless I deem my knowledge gains through joy;  
Nor can I know, but straight warm tears reveal  
My need of linking also joy to knowledge:  
So, on I drive, enjoying all I can,  
And knowing all I can. I speak, of course,  
Confusedly; this will better explain — feel here  
Quick beating, is it not? — a fire of the heart  
To work off some way, this as well as any.  
So, Festus sees me fairly launched; his calm  
Compassionate look might have disturbed m  
once,

But now, far from rejecting, I invite  
What bids me press the closer, lay myself



Open before him, and be soothed with pity ;  
 I hope, if he command hope, and believe  
 As he directs me — satiating myself  
 With his enduring love. And Festus quits me  
 To give place to some credulous disciple  
 Who holds that God is wise, but Paracelsus  
 Has his peculiar merits: I suck in  
 That homage, chuckle o'er that admiration,  
 And then dismiss the fool ; for night is come,  
 And I betake myself to study again,  
 Till patient searchings after hidden lore  
 Half wring some bright truth from its prison ;  
 my frame

Trembles, my forehead's veins swell out, my  
 hair

Tingles for triumph. Slow and sure the morn  
 Shall break on my pent room and dwindling  
 lamp

And furnace dead, and scattered earths and  
 ores ;

When, with a failing heart and throbbing brow,  
 I must review my captured truth, sum up  
 Its value, trace what ends to what begins,  
 Its present power with its eventual bearings,  
 Latent affinities, the views it opens,  
 And its full length in perfecting my scheme.  
 I view it sternly circumscribed, cast down  
 From the high place my fond hopes yielded it,  
 Proved worthless — which, in getting, yet had  
 cost

Another wrench to this fast-falling frame.  
 Then, quick, the cup to quaff, that chases sor-  
 row !

I lapse back into youth, and take again  
 My fluttering pulse for evidence that God  
 Means good to me, will make my cause his own.  
 See ! I have cast off this remorseless care  
 Which clogged a spirit born to soar so free,  
 And my dim chamber has become a tent,  
 Festus is sitting by me, and his Michal . . .  
 Why do you start ? I say, she listening here,  
 (For yonder — Würzburg through the orchard-  
 bough !)

Motions as though such ardent words should  
 find

No echo in a maiden's quiet soul,  
 But her pure bosom heaves, her eyes fill fast  
 With tears, her sweet lips tremble all the while !  
 Ha, ha !

*Fest.* It seems, then, you expect to reap  
 No unreal joy from this your present course,  
 But rather . . .

*Par.* Death ! To die ! I owe that much  
 To what, at least, I was. I should be sad  
 To live contented after such a fall,  
 To thrive and fatten after such reverse !  
 The whole plan is a makeshift, but will last  
 My time.

*Fest.* And you have never mused and said,  
 " I had a noble purpose, and the strength  
 To compass it ; but I have stopped half-way,  
 And wrongly given the first-fruits of my toil  
 To objects little worthy of the gift.  
 Why linger round them still ? why clench my  
 fault ?

Why seek for consolation in defeat,  
 In vain endeavors to derive a beauty  
 From ugliness ? why seek to make the most

Of what no power can change, nor strive instead  
 With mighty effort to redeem the past  
 And, gathering up the treasures thus cast down,  
 To hold a steadfast course till I arrive  
 At their fit destination and my own ? "

You have never pondered thus ?  
*Par.* Have I, you ask ?  
 Often at midnight, when most fancies come,  
 Would some such airy project visit me :  
 But ever at the end . . . or will you hear  
 The same thing in a tale, a parable ?  
 You and I, wandering over the world wide,  
 Chance to set foot upon a desert coast.  
 Just as we cry, " No human voice before  
 Broke the inveterate silence of these rocks ! " —  
 Their querulous echo startles us ; we turn :  
 What ravaged structure still looks o'er the sea ?  
 Some characters remain, too ! While we read,  
 The sharp salt wind, impatient for the last  
 Of even this record, wistfully comes and goes,  
 Or sings what we recover, mocking it.  
 This is the record ; and my voice, the wind's.

[*He sings.*]

Over the sea our galleys went,  
 With cleaving prows in order brave  
 To a speeding wind and a bounding wave

A gallant armament :  
 Each bark built out of a forest-tree  
 Left leafy and rough as first it grew,  
 And nailed all over the gaping sides,  
 Within and without, with black bull-hides,  
 Seethed in fat and suppled in flame,  
 To bear the playful billows' game :  
 So, each good ship was rude to see,  
 Rude and bare to the outward view.

But each upbore a stately tent  
 Where cedar pales in scented row  
 Kept out the flakes of the dancing brine,  
 And an awning drooped the mast below,  
 In fold on fold of the purple fine,  
 That neither noontide nor starshine  
 Nor moonlight cold which maketh mad,

Might pierce the regal tenement.  
 When the sun dawned, oh, gay and glad  
 We set the sail and plied the oar ;  
 But when the night-wind blew like breath,  
 For joy of one day's voyage more,  
 We sang together on the wide sea,  
 Like men at peace on a peaceful shore ;  
 Each sail was loosed to the wind so free,  
 Each helm made sure by the twilight star,  
 And in a sleep as calm as death,

We, the voyagers from afar,  
 Lay stretched along, each weary crew  
 In a circle round its wondrous tent  
 Whence gleamed soft light and curled rich  
 scent,

And with light and perfume, music too :  
 So the stars wheeled round, and the darkness  
 past,

And at morn we started beside the mast,  
 And still each ship was sailing fast.

Now, one morn, land appeared — a speck  
 Dim trembling betwixt sea and sky :  
 " Avoid it," cried our pilot, " check  
 The shout, restrain the eager eye ! "  
 But the heaving sea was black behind

For many a night and many a day,  
And land, though but a rock, drew nigh;  
So, we broke the cedar pales away,  
Let the purple awning flap in the wind,  
And a statue bright was on every deck!  
We shouted, every man of us,  
And steered right into the harbor thus,  
With pomp and pæan glorious.

A hundred shapes of lucid stone!

All day we built its shrine for each,  
A shrine of rock for every one,  
Nor paused till in the westering sun  
We sat together on the beach  
To sing because our task was done.  
When lo! what shouts and merry songs!  
What laughter all the distance stirs!  
A loaded raft with happy throngs  
Of gentle islanders!

"Our isles are just at hand," they cried,  
"Like cloudlets faint in even sleeping.

Our temple-gates are opened wide,  
Our olive-groves thick shade are keeping  
For these majestic forms" — they cried.  
Oh, then we awoke with sudden start  
From our deep dream, and knew, too late,  
How bare the rock, how desolate,  
Which had received our precious freight:

Yet we called out — "Depart!  
Our gifts, once given, must here abide.  
Our work is done; we have no heart  
To mar our work," — we cried.

*Fest.* In truth?

*Par.* Nay, wait: all this in tracings faint  
On rugged stones strewn here and there, but  
piled  
In order once: then follows — mark what fol-  
lows!

"The sad rhyme of the men who proudly clung  
To their first fault, and withered in their pride."

*Fest.* Come back then, Aureole; as you fear  
God, come!

This is foul sin; come back! Renounce the past,  
Forswear the future; look for joy no more,  
But wait death's summons amid holy sights,  
And trust me for the event — peace, if not joy.  
Return with me to Einsiedeln, dear Aureole!

*Par.* No way, no way! it would not turn to  
good.

A spotless child slumber on the flowering moss —  
'T is well for him; but when a sinful man,  
Envyng such slumber, may desire to put  
His guilt away, shall he return at once  
To rest by lying there? Our sires knew well  
(Spite of the grave discoveries of their sons)  
The fitting course for such: dark cells, dim  
lamps,

A stone floor one may writhe on like a worm:  
No mossy pillow blue with violets!

*Fest.* I see no symptom of these absolute  
And tyrannous passions. You are calmer now.  
This verse-making can purge you well enough  
Without the terrible penance you describe.  
You love me still: the lusts you fear will never  
Outrage your friend. To Einsiedeln, once more!  
Say but the word!

*Par.* No, no; those lusts forbid:

They crouch, I know, cowering with half-shut  
eye

Beside you; 't is their nature. Thrust yourself  
Between them and their prey; let some fool  
style me

Or king or quack, it matters not — then try  
Your wisdom, urge them to forego their trait!  
No, no; learn better and look deeper, Festus!  
If you knew how a devil sneers within me  
While you are talking now of this, now that,  
As though we differed scarcely save in trifles!

*Fest.* Do we so differ? True, change must  
proceed,

Whether for good or ill; keep from me, which!  
Do not confide all secrets: I was born  
To hope, and you . . .

*Par.* To trust: you know the fruits!

*Fest.* Listen: I do believe, what you call trust  
Was self-delusion at the best: for, see!

So long as God would kindly pioneer  
A path for you, and screen you from the world,  
Procure you full exemption from man's lot,  
Man's common hopes and fears, on the mere  
pretext

Of your engagement in his service — yield you  
A limitless license, make you God, in fact,  
And turn your slave — you were content to say  
Most courtly praises! What is it, at last,  
But selfishness without example? None  
Could trace God's will so plain as you, while  
yours

Remained implied in it; but now you fail,  
And we, who prate about that will, are fools!  
In short, God's service is established here  
As he determines fit, and not your way,  
And this you cannot brook. Such discontent  
Is weak. Renounce all creatureship at once!  
Affirm an absolute right to have and use  
Your energies; as though the rivers should  
say —

"We rush to the ocean; what have we to do  
With feeding streamlets, lingering in the vales,  
Sleeping in lazy pools?" Set up that plea,  
That will be bold at least!

*Par.* 'T is like enough.

The serviceable spirits are those, no doubt,  
The East produces: lo, the master bids, —  
They wake, raise terraces and garden-grounds  
In one night's space; and, this done, straight  
begin

Another century's sleep, to the great praise  
Of him that framed them wise and beautiful,  
Till a lamp's rubbing, or some chance akin,  
Wake them again. I am of different mould.  
I would have soothed my lord, and slaved for  
him

And done him service past my narrow bond,  
And thus I get rewarded for my pains!  
Beside, 't is vain to talk of forwarding  
God's glory otherwise: this is alone  
The sphere of its increase, as far as men  
Increase it; why, then, look beyond this sphere?  
We are his glory; and if we be glorious,  
Is not the thing achieved?

*Fest.* Shall one like me  
Judge hearts like yours? Though years have  
changed you much,  
And you have left your first love, and retain

Its empty shade to veil your crooked ways,  
Yet I still hold that you have honored God.  
And who shall call your course without reward?  
For, wherefore this repining at defeat  
Had triumph ne'er inured you to high hopes?  
I urge you to forsake the life you curse,  
And what success attends me? — simply talk  
Of passion, weakness and remorse; in short,  
Anything but the naked truth — you choose  
This so-despised career, and cheaply hold  
My happiness, or rather other men's.  
Once more, return!

*Par.* And quickly. John the thief  
Has pilfered half my secrets by this time:  
And we depart by daybreak. I am weary,  
I know not how; not even the wine-cup soothes  
My brain to-night . . .  
Do you not thoroughly despise me, Festus?  
No flattery! One like you needs not be told  
We live and breathe deceiving and deceived.  
Do you not scorn me from your heart of hearts,  
Me and my cant, each petty subterfuge,  
My rhymes and all this frothy shower of words,  
My glozing self-deceit, my outward crust  
Of lies which wrap, as tetter, morpew, furfur  
Wrap the sound flesh? — so, see you flatter not!  
Even God flatters: but my friend, at least,  
Is true. I would depart, secure henceforth  
Against all further insult, hate and wrong  
From puny foes; my one friend's scorn shall  
brand me:

No fear of sinking deeper!

*Fest.* No, dear Aureole!  
No, no; I came to counsel faithfully.  
There are old rules, made long ere we were  
born,  
By which I judge you. I, so fallible,  
So infinitely low beside your mighty  
Majestic spirit! — even I can see  
You own some higher law than ours which call  
Sin, what is no sin — weakness, what is strength.  
But I have only these, such as they are,  
To guide me; and I blame you where they bid,  
Only so long as blaming promises  
To win peace for your soul: the more, that  
sorrow

Has fallen on me of late, and they have helped me  
So that I faint not under my distress.  
But wherefore should I scruple to avow  
In spite of all, as brother judging brother,  
Your fate is most inexplicable to me?  
And should you perish without recompense  
And satisfaction yet — too hastily  
I have relied on love: you may have sinned,  
But you have loved. As a mere human mat-  
ter —

As I would have God deal with fragile men  
In the end — I say that you will triumph yet!

*Par.* Have you felt sorrow, Festus? — 't is  
because

You love me. Sorrow, and sweet Michal yours!  
Well thought on: never let her know this last  
Dull winding-up of all: these miscreants dared  
Insult me — me she loved: — so, grieve her not!

*Fest.* Your ill success can little grieve her  
now.

*Par.* Michal is dead! pray Christ we do not  
craze!

*Fest.* Aureole, dear Aureole, look not on me  
thus!

Fool, fool! this is the heart grown sorrow-  
proof —

I cannot bear those eyes.

*Par.* Nay, really dead?

*Fest.* 'T is scarce a month.

*Par.* Stone dead! — then you have laid her  
Among the flowers ere this. Now, do you  
know,

I can reveal a secret which shall comfort  
Even you. I have no julep, as men think,  
To cheat the grave; but a far better secret.  
Know, then, you did not ill to trust your love  
To the cold earth: I have thought much of it:  
For I believe we do not wholly die.

*Fest.* Aureole!

*Par.* Nay, do not laugh; there is a reason  
For what I say: I think the soul can never  
Taste death. I am, just now, as you may see,  
Very unfit to put so strange a thought  
In an intelligible dress of words;  
But take it as my trust, she is not dead.

*Fest.* But not on this account alone? you  
surely,

— Aureole, you have believed this all along?

*Par.* And Michal sleeps among the roots  
and dews,

While I am moved at Basel, and full of schemes  
For Nuremberg, and hoping and despairing,  
As though it mattered how the farce plays out,  
So it be quickly played. Away, away!  
Have your will, rabble! while we fight the  
prize,

Troop you in safety to the snug back-seats  
And leave a clear arena for the brave  
About to perish for your sport! — Behold!

## V. PARACELSUS ATTAINS

SCENE, Salzburg: a cell in the Hospital of St. Sebastian.  
1541.

FESTUS, PARACELSUS.

*Fest.* No change! The weary night is well-  
nigh spent,

The lamp burns low, and through the casement-  
bars

Gray morning glimmers feebly: yet no change!

Another night, and still no sigh has stirred

That fallen discolored mouth, no pang relit

Those fixed eyes, quenched by the decaying  
body,

Like torch-flame choked in dust. While all  
beside

Was breaking, to the last they held out bright,

As a stronghold where life intrenched itself;

But they are dead now — very blind and dead:  
He will drowse into death without a groan.

My Aureole — my forgotten, ruined Aureole!  
The days are gone, are gone! How grand thou  
wast!

And now not one of those who struck thee  
down —

Poor g'lorious spirit — concerns him even to stay



And satisfy himself his little hand  
Could turn God's image to a livid thing.

Another night, and yet no change! 'Tis much  
That I should sit by him, and bathe his brow,  
And chafe his hands; 'tis much: but he will  
sure

Know me, and look on me, and speak to me  
Once more — but only once! His hollow cheek  
Looked all night long as though a creeping  
laugh

At his own state were just about to break  
From the dying man: my brain swam, my  
throat swelled,

And yet I could not turn away. In truth,  
They told me how, when first brought here, he  
seemed

Resolved to live, to lose no faculty;  
Thus striving to keep up his shattered strength,  
Until they bore him to this stifling cell:  
When straight his features fell, an hour made  
white

The flushed face, and relaxed the quivering  
limb,

Only the eye remained intense awhile  
As though it recognized the tomb-like place,  
And then he lay as here he lies.

Ay, here!  
Here is earth's noblest, nobly garlanded —  
Her bravest champion with his well-won  
prize —

Her best achievement, her sublime amends  
For countless generations fleeting fast  
And followed by no trace; — the creature-god  
She instances when angels would dispute  
The title of her brood to rank with them.  
Angels, this is our angel! Those bright forms  
We clothe with purple, crown and call to  
thrones,

Are human, but not his; those are but men  
Whom other men press round and kneel before;  
Those palaces are dwelt in by mankind;  
Higher provision is for him you seek  
Amid our pomps and glories: see it here!  
Behold earth's paragon! Now, raise thee,  
clay!

God! Thou art love! I build my faith on that.  
Even as I watch beside thy tortured child  
Unconscious whose hot tears fall fast by him,  
So doth thy right hand guide us through the  
world

Wherein we stumble. God! what shall we say?  
How has he sinned? How else should he have  
done?

Surely he sought thy praise — thy praise, for all  
He might be busied by the task so much  
As half forget awhile its proper end.

Dost thou well, Lord? Thou canst not but pre-  
fer

That I should range myself upon his side —  
How could he stop at every step to set  
Thy glory forth? Hadst thou but granted him  
Success, thy honor would have crowned success,  
A halo round a star. Or, say he erred, —  
Save him, dear God; it will be like thee: bathe  
him

In light and life! Thou art not made like us;

We should be wroth in such a case; but thou  
Forgivest — so, forgive these passionate thoughts  
Which come unsought and will not pass away!  
I know thee, who hast kept my path, and made  
Light for me in the darkness, tempering sorrow  
So that it reached me like a solemn joy;  
It were too strange that I should doubt thy love.  
But what am I? Thou madest him and knowest  
How he was fashioned. I could never err  
That way: the quiet place beside thy feet,  
Reserved for me, was ever in my thoughts:  
But he — thou shouldst have favored him as  
well!

Ah! he awakens! Aureole, I am here! 'tis  
Festus!

I cast away all wishes save one wish —  
Let him but know me, only speak to me!  
He mutters; louder and louder; any other  
Than I, with brain less laden, could collect  
What he pours forth. Dear Aureole, do but  
look!

Is it talking or singing, this he utters fast?  
Misery that he should fix me with his eye,  
Quick talking to some other all the while!  
If he would husband this wild vehemence  
Which frustrates its intent! — I heard, I know  
I heard my name amid those rapid words.  
Oh, he will know me yet! Could I divert  
This current, lead it somehow gently back  
Into the channels of the past! — His eye  
Brighter than ever! It must recognize me!

I am Erasmus: I am here to pray  
That Paracelsus use his skill for me.  
The schools of Paris and of Padua send  
These questions for your learning to resolve.  
We are your students, noble master: leave  
This wretched cell, what business have you  
here?

Our class awaits you; come to us once more!  
(O agony! the utmost I can do  
Touches him not; how else arrest his ear?)  
I am commissioned . . . I shall craze like him.  
Better be mute and see what God shall send.

*Par.* Stay, stay with me!

*Fest.* I will; I am come here  
To stay with you — Festus, you loved of old;  
Festus, you know, you must know!

*Par.* Festus! Where's  
Aprile, then? Has he not chanted softly  
The melodies I heard all night? I could not  
Get to him for a cold hand on my breast,  
But I made out his music well enough,  
O well enough! If they have filled him full  
With magical music, as they freight a star  
With light, and have remitted all his sin,  
They will forgive me too, I too shall know!

*Fest.* Festus, your Festus!

*Par.* Ask him if Aprile  
Knows as he Loves — if I shall Love and Know?  
I try; but that cold hand, like lead — so cold!

*Fest.* My hand, see!

*Par.* Ah, the curse, Aprile, Aprile!  
We get so near — so very, very near!  
'Tis an old tale: Jove strikes the Titans down,  
Not when they set about their mountain-piling  
But when another rock would crown the work.

And Phaeton — doubtless his first radiant plunge  
Astonished mortals, though the gods were calm,  
And Jove prepared his thunder: all old tales!

*Fest.* And what are these to you?

*Par.* Ay, fiends must laugh  
So cruelly, so well! most like I never  
Could tread a single pleasure underfoot,  
But they were grinning by my side, were chuck-  
ling

To see me toil and drop away by flakes!  
Hell-spawn! I am glad, most glad, that thus I  
fail!

Your cunning has o'ershot its aim. One year,  
One month, perhaps, and I had served your  
turn!

You should have curbed your spite awhile. But  
now,

Who will believe 't was you that held me back?  
Listen: there's shame and hissing and con-  
tempt,

And none but laughs who names me, none but  
spits

Measureless scorn upon me, me alone,  
The quack, the cheat, the liar, — all on me!  
And thus your famous plan to sink mankind  
In silence and despair, by teaching them  
One of their race had probed the inmost truth,  
Had done all man could do, yet failed no less —  
Your wise plan proves abortive. Men despair?  
Ha, ha! why, they are hooting the empiric,  
The ignorant and incapable fool who rushed  
Madly upon a work beyond his wits;  
Nor doubt they but the simplest of themselves  
Could bring the matter to triumphant issue.  
So, pick and choose among them all, accursed!  
Try now, persuade some other to slave for you,  
To ruin body and soul to work your ends!  
No, no; I am the first and last, I think.

*Fest.* Dear friend, who are accursed? who  
has done . . .

*Par.* What have I done? Fiends dare ask  
that? or you,  
Brave men? Oh, you can chime in boldly,  
backed

By the others! What had you to do, sage peers?  
Here stand my rivals; Latin, Arab, Jew,  
Greek, join dead hands against me: all I ask  
Is, that the world enroll my name with theirs,  
And even this poor privilege, it seems,  
They range themselves, prepared to disallow.  
Only observe! why, fiends may learn from them!  
How they talk calmly of my throes, my fierce  
Aspirings, terrible watchings, each one claiming  
Its price of blood and brain; how they dissect  
And sneeringly disparage the few truths  
Got at a life's cost; they too hanging the while  
About my neck, their lies misleading me  
And their dead names browbeating me! Gray  
crew,

Yet steeped in fresh malevolence from hell,  
Is there a reason for your hate? My truths  
Have shaken a little the palm about each prince?  
Just think, Aprile, all these leering dotards  
Were bent on nothing less than to be crowned  
As we! That yellow blear-eyed wretch in chief  
To whom the rest cringe low with feigned re-  
spect,

Galen of Pergamos and he! — nay speak

The tale, old man! We met there face to face:  
I said the crown should fall from thee. Once  
more

We meet as in that ghastly vestibule:  
Look to my brow! Have I redeemed my pledge?

*Fest.* Peace, peace; ah, see!

*Par.* Oh, emptiness of fame!  
O Persie Zoroaster, lord of stars!  
— Who said these old renowns, dead long ago,  
Could make me overlook the living world  
To gaze through gloom at where they stood, in-  
deed,

But stand no longer? What a warm light life  
After the shade! In truth, my delicate witch,  
My serpent-queen, you did but well to hide  
The juggles I had else detected. Fire  
May well run harmless o'er a breast like yours!  
The cave was not so darkened by the smoke  
But that your white limbs dazzled me: oh, white,  
And panting as they twinkled, wildly dancing!  
I cared not for your passionate gestures then,  
But now I have forgotten the charm of charms,  
The foolish knowledge which I came to seek,  
While I remember that quaint dance; and thus  
I am come back, not for those mummeries,  
But to love you, and to kiss your little feet  
Soft as an ermine's winter coat!

*Fest.* A light  
Will struggle through these thronging words at  
last,

As in the angry and tumultuous West  
A soft star trembles through the drifting clouds.  
These are the strivings of a spirit which hates  
So sad a vault should coop it, and calls up  
The past to stand between it and its fate.

Were he at Einsiedeln — or Michal here!

*Par.* Cruel! I seek her now — I kneel — I  
shriek —

I clasp her vesture — but she fades, still fades;  
And she is gone; sweet human love is gone!  
'T is only when they spring to heaven that angels  
Reveal themselves to you; they sit all day  
Beside you, and lie down at night by you  
Who care not for their presence, muse or sleep,  
And all at once they leave you, and you know  
them!

We are so fooled, so cheated! Why, even now  
I am not too secure against foul play;  
The shadows deepen and the walls contract:  
No doubt some treachery is going on.

'T is very dusk. Where are we put, Aprile?  
Have they left us in the lurch? This murky  
loathsome

Death-trap, this slaughter-house, is not the hall  
In the golden city! Keep by me, Aprile!  
There is a hand groping amid the blackness  
To catch us. Have the spider-fingers got you,  
Poet? Hold on me for your life! If once  
They pull you! — Hold!

'T is but a dream — no more!  
I have you still; the sun comes out again;  
Let us be happy: all will yet go well!  
Let us confer: is it not like, Aprile,  
That spite of trouble, this ordeal passed,  
The value of my labors ascertained,  
Just as some stream foams long among the  
rocks

But after glideth glassy to the sea,

So, full content shall henceforth be my lot?  
What think you, poet? Louder! Your clear  
voice

Vibrates too like a harp-string. Do you ask  
How could I still remain on earth, should God  
Grant me the great approval which I seek?  
I, you, and God can comprehend each other,  
But men would murmur, and with cause enough;  
For when they saw me, stainless of all sin,  
Preserved and sanctified by inward light,  
They would complain that comfort, shut from  
them,

I drank thus unespied; that they live on,  
Nor taste the quiet of a constant joy,  
For ache and care and doubt and weariness,  
While I am calm; help being vouchsafed to me,  
And hid from them. — 'T were best consider  
that!

You reason well, Aprile; but at least  
Let me know this, and die! Is this too much?  
I will learn this, if God so please, and die!

If thou shalt please, dear God, if thou shalt  
please!

We are so weak, we know our motives least  
In their confused beginning. If at first  
I sought . . . but wherefore bare my heart to  
thee?

I know thy mercy; and already thoughts  
Flock fast about my soul to comfort it,  
And intimate I cannot wholly fail,  
For love and praise would clasp me willingly  
Could I resolve to seek them. Thou art good,  
And I should be content. Yet — yet first show  
I have done wrong in daring! Rather give  
The supernatural consciousness of strength  
Which fed my youth! Only one hour of that,  
With thee to help — O what should bar me  
then!

Lost, lost! Thus things are ordered here!  
God's creatures,

And yet he takes no pride in us! — none, none!  
Truly there needs another life to come!  
If this be all — (I must tell Festus that)  
And other life await us not — for one,  
I say 't is a poor cheat, a stupid bungle,  
A wretched failure. I, for one, protest  
Against it, and I hurl it back with scorn.

Well, onward though alone! Small time re-  
mains,

And much to do: I must have fruit, must reap  
Some profit from my toils. I doubt my body  
Will hardly serve me through; while I have la-  
bored

It has decayed; and now that I demand  
Its best assistance, it will crumble fast:  
A sad thought, a sad fate! How very full  
Of wormwood 't is, that just at altar-service,  
The rapt hymn rising with the rolling smoke,  
When glory dawns and all is at the best,  
The sacred fire may flicker and grow faint  
And die for want of a wood-pile's help!  
Thus fades the flagging body, and the soul  
Is pulled down in the overthrow. Well, well —  
Let men catch every word, let them lose naught  
Of what I say; something may yet be done.

They are ruins! Trust me who am one of you!  
All ruins, glorious once, but lonely now.

It makes my heart sick to behold you crouch  
Beside your desolate fane: the arches dim,  
The crumbling columns grand against the moon,  
Could I but rear them up once more — but that  
May never be, so leave them! Trust me,  
friends,

Why should you linger here when I have built  
A far resplendent temple, all your own?  
Trust me, they are but ruins! See, Aprile,  
Men will not heed! Yet were I not prepared  
With better refuge for them, congue of mine  
Should ne'er reveal how blank their dwelling is:  
I would sit down in silence with the rest.

Ha, what? you spit at me, you grin and shriek  
Contempt into my ear — my ear which drank  
God's accents once? you curse me? Why men,  
men,

I am not formed for it! Those hideous eyes  
Will be before me sleeping, waking, praying,  
They will not let me even die. Spare, spare me,  
Sinning or no, forget that, only spare me  
The horrible scorn! You thought I could sup-  
port it.

But now you see what silly fragile creature  
Cowers thus. I am not good nor bad enough,  
Not Christ nor Cain, yet even Cain was saved  
From Hate like this. Let me but totter back!  
Perhaps I shall elude those jeers which creep  
Into my very brain, and shut these scorched  
Eyelids and keep those mocking faces out.

Listen, Aprile! I am very calm:  
Be not deceived, there is no passion here  
Where the blood leaps like an imprisoned thing:  
I am calm: I will exterminate the race!  
Enough of that: 't is said and it shall be.  
And now be merry: safe and sound am I  
Who broke through their best ranks to get at  
you.

And such a havoc, such a rout, Aprile!

*Fest.* Have you no thought, no memory for  
me,

Aureole? I am so wretched — my pure Michal  
Is gone, and you alone are left me now,  
And even you forget me. Take my hand —  
Lean on me thus. Do you not know me, Au-  
reole?

*Par.* Festus, my own friend, you are come at  
last?

As you say, 't is an awful enterprise;  
But you believe I shall go through with it:  
'T is like you, and I thank you. Thank him  
for me,

Dear Michal! See how bright St. Saviour's spire  
Flames in the sunset; all its figures quaint  
Gay in the glancing light: you might conceive  
them

A troop of yellow-vested white-haired Jews  
Bound for their own land where redemption  
dawns.

*Fest.* Not that blest time — not our youth's  
time, dear God!

*Par.* Ha — stay! true, I forget — all is done  
since,  
And he is come to judge me. How he speaks,



How calm, how well! yes, it is true, all true;  
 All quackery; all deceit; myself can laugh  
 The first at it, if you desire: but still  
 You know the obstacles which taught me tricks  
 So foreign to my nature — envy and hate,  
 Blind opposition, brutal prejudice,  
 Bald ignorance — what wonder if I sunk  
 To humor men the way they most approved?  
 My cheats were never palmed on such as you,  
 Dear Festus! I will kneel if you require me,  
 Impart the meagre knowledge I possess,  
 Explain its bounded nature, and avow  
 My insufficiency — whate'er you will:  
 I give the fight up: let there be an end,  
 A privacy, an obscure nook for me,  
 I want to be forgotten even by God.  
 But if that cannot be, dear Festus, lay me,  
 When I shall die, within some narrow grave,  
 Not by itself — for that would be too proud —  
 But where such graves are thickest; let it look  
 Nowise distinguished from the hillocks round,  
 So that the peasant at his brother's bed  
 May tread upon my own and know it not;  
 And we shall all be equal at the last,  
 Or classed according to life's natural ranks,  
 Fathers, sons, brothers, friends — not rich, nor  
 wise,  
 Nor gifted: lay me thus, then say, "He lived  
 Too much advanced before his brother men;  
 They kept him still in front: 't was for their  
 good,

But yet a dangerous station. It were strange  
 That he should tell God he had never ranked  
 With men: so, here at least he is a man."

*Fest.* That God shall take thee to his breast,  
 dear spirit,

Unto his breast, be sure! and here on earth  
 Shall splendor sit upon thy name forever.  
 Sun! all the heaven is glad for thee: what care  
 If lower mountains light their snowy phares  
 At thine effulgence, yet acknowledge not  
 The source of day? Their theft shall be their  
 bale:

For after-ages shall retrack thy beams,  
 And put aside the crowd of busy ones  
 And worship thee alone — the master-mind,  
 The thinker, the explorer, the creator!  
 Then, who should sneer at the convulsive throes  
 With which thy deeds were born, would scorn  
 as well

The sheet of winding subterranean fire  
 Which, pent and writhing, sends no less at last  
 Huge islands up amid the simmering sea.  
 Behold thy might in me! thou hast infused  
 Thy soul in mine; and I am grand as thou,  
 Seeing I comprehend thee — I so simple,  
 Thou so august. I recognize thee first;  
 I saw thee rise, I watched thee early and late,  
 And though no glance reveal thou dost accept  
 My homage — thus no less I proffer it,  
 And bid thee enter gloriously thy rest.

*Par.* Festus!

*Fest.* I am for noble Aureole, God!  
 I am upon his side, come weal or woe.  
 His portion shall be mine. He has done well.  
 I would have sinned, had I been strong enough,  
 As he has sinned. Reward him or I waive  
 Reward! If thou canst find no place for him,

He shall be king elsewhere, and I will be  
 His slave forever. There are two of us.

*Par.* Dear Festus!

*Fest.* Here, dear Aureole! ever by you!

*Par.* Nay, speak on, or I dream again.  
 Speak on!

Some story, anything — only your voice,  
 I shall dream else. Speak on! ay, leaning so!

*Fest.* Thus the Mayne glideth

Where my Love abideth.

Sleep 's no softer: it proceeds

On through lawns, on through meads,

On and on, whate'er befall,

Meandering and musical,

Though the niggard pasturage

Bears not on its shaven ledge

Aught but weeds and waving grasses

To view the river as it passes,

Save here and there a scanty patch

Of primroses too faint to catch

A weary bee.

*Par.* More, more; say on!

*Fest.* And scarce it pushes

Its gentle way through strangling rushes

Where the glossy kingfisher

Flutters when noon-heats are near,

Glad the shelving banks to shun,

Red and steaming in the sun,

Where the shrew-mouse with pale throat

Burrows, and the speckled stoat;

Where the quick sandpipers flit

In and out the marl and grit

That seems to breed them, brown as they:

Naught disturbs its quiet way,

Save some lazy stork that springs,

Trailing it with legs and wings,

Whom the shy fox from the hill

Rouses, creep he ne'er so still.

*Par.* My heart! they loose my heart, those  
 simple words;

Its darkness passes, which naught else could  
 touch:

Like some dark snake that force may not expel,  
 Which glideth out to music sweet and low.

What were you doing when your voice broke  
 through

A chaos of ugly images? You, indeed!

Are you alone here?

*Fest.* All alone: you know me?  
 This cell?

*Par.* An unexceptionable vault:  
 Good brick and stone: the bats kept out, the  
 rats

Kept in: a snug nook: how should I mistake it?

*Fest.* But wherefore am I here?

*Par.* Ah, well remembered!

Why, for a purpose — for a purpose, Festus!

'T is like me: here I trifle while time fleets,

And this occasion, lost, will ne'er return.

You are here to be instructed. I will tell

God's message; but I have so much to say,

I fear to leave half out. All is confused

No doubt; but doubtless you will learn in time.  
 He would not else have brought you here: no  
 doubt

I shall see clearer soon.

*Fest.* Tell me but this —

You are not in despair?

*Par.* I? and for what?  
*Fest.* Alas, alas! he knows not, as I feared!  
*Par.* What is it you would ask me with that earnest

Dear searching face?

*Fest.* How feel you, Aureole?  
*Par.* Well:

Well. 'Tis a strange thing: I am dying, Festus, And now that fast the storm of life subsides, I first perceive how great the whirl has been. I was calm then, who am so dizzy now — Calm in the thick of the tempest, but no less A partner of its motion and mixed up With its career. The hurricane is spent, And the good boat speeds through the brightening weather;

But is it earth or sea that heaves below?  
 The gulf rolls like a meadow-swell, o'erstrewn With ravaged boughs and remnants of the shore;  
 And now some islet, loosened from the land, Swims past with all its trees, sailing to ocean;  
 And now the air is full of upturn canes, Light strippings from the fan-trees, tamarisks Unrooted, with their birds still clinging to them, All high in the wind. Even so my varied life Drifts by me; I am young, old, happy, sad, Hoping, desponding, acting, taking rest, And all at once: that is, those past conditions Float back at once on me. If I select Some special epoch from the crowd, 'tis but To will, and straight the rest dissolve away, And only that particular state is present With all its long-forgotten circumstance Distinct and vivid as at first — myself A careless looker-on and nothing more, Indifferent and amused, but nothing more. And this is death: I understand it all. New being waits me; new perceptions must Be born in me before I plunge therein;  
 Which last is Death's affair; and while I speak, Minute by minute he is filling me With power; and while my foot is on the threshold

Of boundless life — the doors unopened yet, All preparations not complete within — I turn new knowledge upon old events, And the effect is . . . but I must not tell;  
 It is not lawful. Your own turn will come One day. Wait, Festus! You will die like me.  
*Fest.* 'Tis of that past life that I burn to hear.

*Par.* You wonder it engages me just now?  
 In truth, I wonder too. What's life to me? Where'er I look is fire, where'er I listen Music, and where I tend bliss evermore. Yet how can I refrain? 'Tis a refined Delight to view those chances, — one last view. I am so near the perils I escape, That I must play with them and turn them over, To feel how fully they are past and gone. Still, it is like, some further cause exists For this peculiar mood — some hidden purpose; Did I not tell you something of it, Festus? I had it fast, but it has somehow slipped Away from me; it will return anon.

*Fest.* (Indeed his cheek seems young again, his voice Complete with its old tones: that little laugh

Concluding every phrase, with upturned eye, As though one stooped above his head to whom He looked for confirmation and approval, Where was it gone so long, so well preserved? Then, the forefinger pointing as he speaks, Like one who traces in an open book The matter he declares; 'tis many a year Since I remarked it last; and this in him, But now a ghastly wreck!)

And can it be, Dear Aureole, you have then found out at last That worldly things are utter vanity? That man is made for weakness, and should wait In patient ignorance, till God appoint . . .

*Par.* Ha, the purpose: the true purpose: that is it!

How could I fail to apprehend! You here, I thus! But no more trifling: I see all, I know all: my last mission shall be done If strength suffice. No trifling! Stay; this posture

Hardly befits one thus about to speak: I will arise.

*Fest.* Nay, Aureole, are you wild? You cannot leave your couch.

*Par.* No help; no help; Not even your hand. So! there, I stand once more!

Speak from a couch? I never lectured thus. My gown — the scarlet lined with fur; now put The chain about my neck; my signet-ring Is still upon my hand, I think — even so; Last, my good sword; ah, trusty Azoth, leapest Beneath thy master's grasp for the last time? This couch shall be my throne: I bid these walls Be consecrate, this wretched cell become A shrine, for here God speaks to men through me.

Now, Festus, I am ready to begin.

*Fest.* I am dumb with wonder.

*Par.* Listen, therefore, Festus! There will be time enough, but none to spare. I must content myself with telling only The most important points. You doubtless feel That I am happy, Festus; very happy.

*Fest.* 'Tis no delusion which uplifts him thus! Then you are pardoned, Aureole, all your sin?

*Par.* Ay, pardoned: yet why pardoned?

*Fest.* 'Tis God's praise That man is bound to seek, and you . . .

*Par.* Have lived! We have to live alone to set forth well God's praise. 'Tis true, I sinned much, as I thought,

And in effect need mercy, for I strove To do that very thing; but, do your best Or worst, praise rises, and will rise forever. Pardon from him, because of praise denied — Who calls me to himself to exalt himself? He might laugh as I laugh!

*Fest.* But all comes To the same thing. 'Tis fruitless for mankind

To fret themselves with what concerns them not; They are no use that way: they should lie down Content as God has made them, nor go mad In thriveless cares to better what is ill.

*Par.* No, no; mistake me not; let me not work

More harm than I have worked ! This is my case :

If I go joyous back to God, yet bring  
No offering, if I render up my soul  
Without the fruits it was ordained to bear,  
If I appear the better to love God  
For sin, as one who has no claim on him,  
Be not deceived ! It may be surely thus  
With me, while higher prizes still await  
The mortal persevering to the end.  
Beside I am not all so valueless :  
I have been something, though too soon I left  
Following the instincts of that happy time.

*Fest.* What happy time ? For God's sake,  
for man's sake,

What time was happy ? All I hope to know  
That answer will decide. What happy time ?

*Par.* When but the time I vowed myself to  
man ?

*Fest.* Great God, thy judgments are inscrutable !

*Par.* Yes, it was in me ; I was born for it —  
I, Paracelsus : it was mine by right.

Doubtless a searching and impetuous soul  
Might learn from its own motions that some task  
Like this awaited it about the world ;  
Might seek somewhere in this blank life of ours  
For fit delights to stay its longings vast ;  
And, grappling Nature, so prevail on her  
To fill the creature full she dared thus frame  
Hungry for joy ; and, bravely tyrannous,  
Grow in demand, still craving more and more,  
And make each joy conceded prove a pledge  
Of other joy to follow — bating naught  
Of its desires, still seizing fresh pretence  
To turn the knowledge and the rapture wrung  
As an extreme, last boon, from destiny,  
Into occasion for new covetings,  
New strifes, new triumphs : — doubtless a strong  
soul,

Alone, unaided might attain to this,  
So glorious is our nature, so august  
Man's inborn uninstructed impulses,  
His naked spirit so majestic !  
But this was born in me ; I was made so ;  
Thus much time saved : the feverish appetites,  
The tumult of unproved desire, the unaimed  
Uncertain yearnings, aspirations blind,  
Distrust, mistake, and all that ends in tears  
Were saved me ; thus I entered on my course.  
You may be sure I was not all exempt  
From human trouble ; just so much of doubt  
As bade me plant a surer foot upon  
The sun-road, kept my eye unruined 'mid  
The fierce and flashing splendor, set my heart  
Trembling so much as warned me I stood there  
On sufferance — not to idly gaze, but cast  
Light on a darkling race ; save for that doubt,  
I stood at first where all aspire at last  
To stand : the secret of the world was mine.  
I knew, I felt, (perception unexpressed,  
Uncomprehended by our narrow thought,  
But somehow felt and known in every shift  
And change in the spirit, — nay, in every pore  
Of the body, even,) — what God is, what we are,  
What life is — how God tastes an infinite joy  
In infinite ways — one everlasting bliss,  
From whom all being emanates, all power

Proceeds ; in whom is life forevermore,  
Yet whom existence in its lowest form  
Includes ; where dwells enjoyment there is he :  
With still a flying point of bliss remote,  
A happiness in store afar, a sphere  
Of distant glory in full view ; thus climbs  
Pleasure its heights forever and forever.  
The centre-fire heaves underneath the earth,  
And the earth changes like a human face ;  
The molten ore bursts up among the rocks,  
Winds into the stone's heart, outbranches bright  
In hidden mines, spots barren river-beds,  
Crumbles into fine sand where sunbeams bask —  
God joys therein. The wroth sea's waves are  
edged

With foam, white as the bitten lip of hate,  
When, in the solitary waste strange groups  
Of young volcanos come up, cyclops-like,  
Staring together with their eyes on flame —  
God tastes a pleasure in their uncouth pride.  
Then all is still ; earth is a wintry clod :  
But spring-wind, like a dancing psaltress, passes  
Over its breast to waken it, rare verdure  
Buds tenderly upon rough banks, between  
The withered tree-roots and the cracks of frost,  
Like a smile striving with a wrinkled face ;  
The grass grows bright, the boughs are swoln  
with blooms

Like chrysalids impatient for the air,  
The shining dorrs are busy, beetles run  
Along the furrows, ants make their ado ;  
Above, birds fly in merry flocks, the lark  
Soars up and up, shivering for very joy ;  
Afar the ocean sleeps ; white fishing-gulls  
Flit where the strand is purple with its tribe  
Of nested limpets ; savage creatures seek  
Their loves in wood and plain — and God renews  
His ancient rapture. Thus he dwells in all,  
From life's minute beginnings, up at last  
To man — the consummation of this scheme  
Of being, the completion of this sphere  
Of life : whose attributes had here and there  
Been scattered o'er the visible world before,  
Asking to be combined, dim fragments meant  
To be united in some wondrous whole,  
Imperfect qualities throughout creation,  
Suggesting some one creature yet to make,  
Some point where all those scattered rays should  
meet

Convergent in the faculties of man.

Power — neither put forth blindly, nor controlled

Calmly by perfect knowledge ; to be used  
At risk, inspired or checked by hope and fear :  
Knowledge — not intuition, but the slow  
Uncertain fruit of an enhancing toil,  
Strengthened by love : love — not serenely pure,  
But strong from weakness, like a chance-sown  
plant

Which, cast on stubborn soil, puts forth changed  
buds

And softer stains, unknown in happier climes ;  
Love which endures and doubts and is oppressed  
And cherished, suffering much and much sustained,

And blind, oft-failing, yet believing love,  
A half-enlightened, often-checked trust : —  
Hints and previsions of which faculties,



Are strewn confusedly everywhere about  
The inferior natures, and all lead up higher,  
All shape out dimly the superior race,  
The heir of hopes too fair to turn out false,  
And man appears at last. So far the seal  
Is put on life; one stage of being complete,  
One scheme wound up: and from the grand  
result

A supplementary reflux of light,  
Illustrates all the inferior grades, explains  
Each back step in the circle. Not alone  
For their possessor dawn those qualities,  
But the new glory mixes with the heaven  
And earth; man, once desecrated, imprints forever  
His presence on all lifeless things: the winds  
Are henceforth voices, wailing or a shout,  
A querulous mutter or a quick gay laugh,  
Never a senseless gust now man is born.

The herded pines commune and have deep  
thoughts,

A secret they assemble to discuss  
When the sun drops behind their trunks which  
glare

Like grates of hell: the peerless cup afloat  
Of the lake-lily is an urn, some nymph  
Swims bearing high above her head: no bird  
Whistles unseen, but through the gaps above  
That let light in upon the gloomy woods,  
A shape peeps from the breezy forest-top,  
Arch with small puckered mouth and mocking  
eye.

The morn has enterprise, deep quiet droops  
With evening, triumph takes the sunset hour,  
Voluptuous transport ripens with the corn  
Beneath a warm moon like a happy face:  
— And this to fill us with regard for man,  
With apprehension of his passing worth,  
Desire to work his proper nature out,  
And ascertain his rank and final place,  
For these things tend still upward, progress is  
The law of life, man is not Man as yet.  
Nor shall I deem his object served, his end  
Attained, his genuine strength put fairly forth,  
While only here and there a star dispels  
The darkness, here and there a towering mind  
O'erlooks its prostrate fellows: when the host  
Is out at once to the despair of night,  
When all mankind alike is perfected,  
Equal in full-blown powers — then, not till then,  
I say, begins man's general infancy.  
For wherefore make account of feverish starts  
Of restless members of a dormant whole,  
Impatient nerves which quiver while the body  
Slumbers as in a grave? Oh, long ago  
The brow was twitched, the tremulous lids

astir,  
The peaceful mouth disturbed; half uttered  
speech

Ruffled the lip, and then the teeth were set,  
The breath drawn sharp, the strong right-hand  
clenched stronger,

As it would pluck a lion by the jaw;  
The glorious creature laughed out even in  
sleep!

But when full roused, each giant-limb awake,  
Each sinew strung, the great heart pulsing fast,  
He shall start up and stand on his own earth,  
Then shall his long triumphant march begin,

Thence shall his being date, — thus wholly  
roused,

What he achieves shall be set down to him.

When all the race is perfected alike  
As man, that is; all tended to mankind,  
And, man produced, all has its end thus far:  
But in completed man begins anew

A tendency to God. Prognostics told  
Man's near approach; so in man's self arise  
August anticipations, symbols, types  
Of a dim splendor ever on before  
In that eternal circle life pursues.

For men begin to pass their nature's bound,  
And find new hopes and cares which fast sup-  
plant

Their proper joys and griefs; they grow too  
great

For narrow creeds of right and wrong, which  
fade

Before the unmeasured thirst for good: while  
peace

Rises within them ever more and more.  
Such men are even now upon the earth,  
Serene amid the half-formed creatures round  
Who should be saved by them and joined with  
them.

Such was my task, and I was born to it —  
Free, as I said but now, from much that chains  
Spirits, high-dowered but limited and vexed  
By a divided and delusive aim,  
A shadow mocking a reality

Whose truth avails not wholly to disperse  
The fitting mimic called up by itself,  
And so remains perplexed and nigh put out  
By its fantastic fellow's wavering gleam.  
I, from the first, was never cheated thus;  
I never fashioned out a fancied good  
Distinct from man's; a service to be done,  
A glory to be ministered unto  
With powers put forth at man's expense, with-  
drawn

From laboring in his behalf; a strength  
Denied that might avail him. I cared not  
Lest his success ran counter to success  
Elsewhere: for God is glorified in man,  
And to man's glory vowed I soul and limb.  
Yet, constituted thus, and thus endowed,  
I failed: I gazed on power till I grew blind.  
Power; I could not take my eyes from that:  
That only, I thought, should be preserved, in-  
creased

At any risk, displayed, struck out at once —  
The sign and note and character of man.  
I saw no use in the past: only a scene  
Of degradation, ugliness and tears,  
The record of disgraces best forgotten,  
A sullen page in human chronicles  
Fit to erase. I saw no cause why man  
Should not stand all-sufficient even now,  
Or why his annals should be forced to tell  
That once the tide of light, about to break  
Upon the world, was sealed within its spring:  
I would have had one day, one moment's space,  
Change man's condition, push each slumbering  
claim

Of mastery o'er the elemental world  
At once to full maturity, then roll  
Oblivion o'er the work, and hide from man

What night had ushered morn. Not so, dear child

Of after-days, wilt thou reject the past  
Big with deep warnings of the proper tenure  
By which thou hast the earth: for thee the present

Shall have distinct and trembling beauty, seen  
Beside that past's own shade when, in relief,  
Its brightness shall stand out: nor yet on thee  
Shall burst the future, as successive zones  
Of several wonder open on some spirit  
Flying secure and glad from heaven to heaven:  
But thou shalt painfully attain to joy,  
While hope and fear and love shall keep thee man!

All this was hid from me: as one by one  
My dreams grew dim, my wide aims circumscribed,

As actual good within my reach decreased,  
While obstacles sprung up this way and that  
To keep me from effecting half the sum,  
Small as it proved; as objects, mean within  
The primal aggregate, seemed, even the least,  
Itself a match for my concentrated strength —  
What wonder if I saw no way to shun  
Despair? The power I sought for man, seemed God's.

In this conjuncture, as I prayed to die,  
A strange adventure made me know, one sin  
Had spotted my career from its uprise;  
I saw Aprile — my Aprile there!  
And as the poor melodious wretch disburdened  
His heart, and moaned his weakness in my ear,  
I learned my own deep error; love's undoing  
Taught me the worth of love in man's estate,  
And what proportion love should hold with power

In his right constitution; love preceding  
Power, and with much power, always much more love;

Love still too straitened in his present means,  
And earnest for new power to set love free.  
I learned this, and supposed the whole was learned:

And thus, when men received with stupid wonder

My first revealings, would have worshipped me,  
And I despised and loathed their proffered praise —

When, with awakened eyes, they took revenge  
For past credulity in casting shame

On my real knowledge, and I hated them —  
It was not strange I saw no good in man,  
To overbalance all the wear and waste  
Of faculties, displayed in vain, but born  
To prosper in some better sphere: and why?  
In my own heart love had not been made wise  
To trace love's faint beginnings in mankind,  
To know even hate is but a mask of love's,  
To see a good in evil, and a hope  
In ill-success; to sympathize, be proud  
Of their half-reasons, faint aspirings, dim  
Struggles for truth, their poorest fallacies,  
Their prejudice and fears and cares and doubts;  
All with a touch of nobleness, despite  
Their error, upward tending all though weak,  
Like plants in mines which never saw the sun,  
But dream of him, and guess where he may be,

And do their best to climb and get to him.  
All this I knew not, and I failed. Let men  
Regard me, and the poet dead long ago  
Who loved too rashly; and shape forth a third  
And better-tempered spirit, warned by both:  
As from the over-radiant star too mad  
To drink the life-springs, beamless thence itself —

And the dark orb which borders the abyss,  
Ingulfed in icy night, — might have its course,  
A temperate and equidistant world.  
Meanwhile, I have done well, though not all well.

As yet men cannot do without contempt;  
'Tis for their good, and therefore fit awhile  
That they reject the weak, and scorn the false,  
Rather than praise the strong and true, in me:  
But after, they will know me. If I stoop  
Into a dark tremendous sea of cloud,  
It is but for a time; I press God's lamp  
Close to my breast; its splendor, soon or late,  
Will pierce the gloom: I shall emerge one day.  
You understand me? I have said enough!

*Fest.* Now die, dear Aureole!

*Par.* Festus, let my hand —  
This hand, lie in your own, my own true friend!  
Aprile! Hand in hand with you, Aprile!

*Fest.* And this was Paracelsus!

## STRAFFORD

## A TRAGEDY

DEDICATED, IN ALL AFFECTIONATE ADMIRATION,  
TO

WILLIAM C. MACREADY

LONDON, APRIL 23, 1837

*Paracelsus* found an enthusiastic reader in the actor Macready, who begged Browning to write him a play, even suggesting the subject to him, which did not awaken the poet's interest. More than a year passed, when the two met at a supper given by Macready after the successful presentation of Talfourd's *Ion*. As the guests were leaving, Macready said to Browning: "Write a play, Browning, and keep me from going to America." "Shall it be historical and English?" replied Browning. "What do you say to a drama on *Strafford*?" and the poet now had his subject. His choice is readily explained by the fact that he was at this time helping his friend John Forster with his *Life of Strafford* contained in *Lives of Eminent British Statesmen*. Indeed, Mr. Furnivall says without hesitation that the agreement of the *Strafford* of the play with the *Strafford* of Forster's biography is due to the fact that Browning wrote the whole of the *Life of Strafford* after the first seven paragraphs.

When the play was rehearsing Browning gave Macready a lilt which he had composed for the children's song in Act V. It was not used, because the two children who were to sing wished a more pretentious song. The lilt which Browning composed was purposely no more than a *crooning* measure. He afterward gave it to Miss Hickey for her special edition of *Strafford*, and it is reproduced here in its place. The following is Browning's preface to the first edition:—

"I had for some time been engaged in a Poem of a very different nature, when induced

to make the present attempt; and am not without apprehension that my eagerness to freshen a jaded mind by diverting it to the healthy natures of a grand epoch, may have operated unfavorably on the represented play, which is one of Action in Character, rather than Character in Action. To remedy this, in some degree, considerable curtailment will be necessary, and, in a few instances, the supplying details not required, I suppose, by the mere reader. While a trifling success would much gratify, failure will not wholly discourage me from another effort: experience is to come; and earnest endeavor may yet remove many disadvantages.

"The portraits are, I think, faithful; and I am exceedingly fortunate in being able, in proof of this, to refer to the subtle and eloquent exposition of the characters of Eliot and Strafford, in the *Lives of Eminent British Statesmen*, now in the course of publication in Lardner's *Cyclopædia*, by a writer [John Forster] whom I am proud to call my friend; and whose biographies of Hampden, Pym, and Vane, will, I am sure, fitly illustrate the present year—the Second Centenary of the Trial concerning Ship-Money. My Carlisle, however, is purely imaginary: I at first sketched her singular likeness roughly in, as suggested by Matthews and the memoir-writers—but it was too artificial, and the substituted outline is exclusively from Voiture and Waller.

"The Italian boat-song in the last scene is from Redi's 'Bacco,' long since naturalized in the joyous and delicate version of Leigh Hunt."

## PERSONS

CHARLES I.  
Earl of HOLLAND.  
Lord SAVILE.  
Sir HENRY VANE.  
WENTWORTH, Viscount WENTWORTH, Earl of STRAFFORD.  
JOHN PYM.  
JOHN HAMPDEN.  
The younger VANE.  
DENZIL HOLLIS.  
BENJAMIN RUDYARD.  
NATHANIEL FIENNES.  
Earl of LOUDON.  
MAXWELL, *Usher of the Black Rod*.

BALEFOUR, *Constable of the Tower*.

A PURITAN.

QUEEN HENRIETTA.

LUCY PERCY, *Countess of Carlisle*.

Presbyterians, Scots Commissioners, Adherents of Strafford, Secretaries, Officers of the Court, etc.

Two of Strafford's CHILDREN.

## ACT I

SCENE I. *A House near Whitehall*. HAMPDEN, HOLLIS, the younger VANE, RUDYARD, FIENNES and many of the Presbyterian Party: LOUDON and other Scots Commissioners.



*Vane.* I say, if he be here —  
*Rudyard.* (And he is here!) —  
*Hollis.* For England's sake let every man be still

Nor speak of him, so much as say his name,  
 Till Pym rejoin us! Rudyard! Henry Vane!  
 One rash conclusion may decide our course  
 And with it England's fate — think — England's fate!

Hampden, for England's sake they should be still!

*Vane.* You say so, Hollis? Well, I must be still.

It is indeed too bitter that one man,  
 Any one man's mere presence, should suspend  
 England's combined endeavor: little need  
 To name him!

*Rud.* For you are his brother, Hollis!  
*Hampden.* Shame on you, Rudyard! time to tell him that

When he forgets the Mother of us all.

*Rud.* Do I forget her? *Vane.* You talk idle hate  
 Against her foe: is that so strange a thing?  
 Is hating Wentworth all the help she needs?

*A Puritan.* The Philistine strode, cursing as he went:

But David — five smooth pebbles from the brook  
 Within his scrip . . .

*Rud.* Be you as still as David!  
*Fiennes.* Here's Rudyard not ashamed to wag a tongue

Stiff with ten years' disuse of Parliaments;  
 Why, when the last sat, Wentworth sat with us!

*Rud.* Let's hope for news of them now he returns —

He that was safe in Ireland, as we thought!  
 — But I'll abide Pym's coming.

*Vane.* Now, by Heaven,  
 Then may be cool who can, silent who will —  
 Some have a gift that way! Wentworth is here,  
 Here, and the King's safe closeted with him  
 Ere this. And when I think on all that's past  
 Since that man left us, how his single arm  
 Rolled the advancing good of England back  
 And set the woeful past up in its place,  
 Exalting Dagon where the Ark should be, —  
 How that man has made firm the fickle King  
 (Hampden, I will speak out!) — in aught he feared

To venture on before; taught tyranny  
 Her dismal trade, the use of all her tools,  
 To ply the scourge yet screw the gag so close  
 That strangled agony bleeds mute to death —  
 How he turns Ireland to a private stage  
 For training infant villanies, new ways  
 Of wringing treasure out of tears and blood,  
 Unheard oppressions nourished in the dark  
 To try how much man's nature can endure  
 — If he dies under it, what harm? if not,  
 Why, one more trick is added to the rest  
 Worth a king's knowing, and what Ireland bears  
 England may learn to bear: — how all this while  
 That man has set himself to one dear task,  
 The bringing Charles to relish more and more  
 Power, power without law, power and blood too  
 — Can I be still?

*Hamp.* For that you should be still.

*Vane.* Oh Hampden, then and now! The year he left us,

The People in full Parliament could wrest  
 The Bill of Rights from the reluctant King;  
 And now, he'll find in an obscure small room  
 A stealthy gathering of great-hearted men  
 That take up England's cause: England is here!

*Hamp.* And who despairs of England?

*Rud.* That do I.  
 If Wentworth comes to rule her. I am sick  
 To think her wretched masters, Hamilton,  
 The muckworm Cottington, the maniac Land,  
 May yet be longed-for back again. I say,  
 I do despair.

*Vane.* And, Rudyard, I'll say this —  
 Which all true men say after me, not loud  
 But solemnly and as you'd say a prayer!  
 This King, who treads our England underfoot.  
 Has just so much . . . it may be fear or craft,  
 As bids him pause at each fresh outrage;  
 friends,

He needs some sterner hand to grasp his own,  
 Some voice to ask, "Why shrink? Am I not  
 by?"

Now, one whom England loved for serving her,  
 Found in his heart to say, "I know where best  
 The iron heel shall bruise her, for she leans  
 Upon me when you trample." Witness, you!  
 So Wentworth heartened Charles, so England fell.

But inasmuch as life is hard to take  
 From England . . .

*Many Voices.* Go on, Vane! 'Tis well said,  
*Vane!*

*Vane.* Who has not so forgotten Runnymede! —

*Voices.* 'Tis well and bravely spoken, Vane!  
 Go on!

*Vane.* There are some little signs of late she knows

The ground no place for her. She glances round,  
 Wentworth has dropped the hand, is gone his way

On other service: what if she arise?  
 No! the King beckons, and beside him stands  
 The same bad man once more, with the same smile

And the same gesture. Now shall England crouch,

Or catch at us and rise?

*Voices.* The Renegade!  
*Haman!* Ahithophel!

*Hamp.* Gentlemen of the North,  
 It was not thus the night your claims were urged,  
 And we pronounced the League and Covenant,  
 The cause of Scotland, England's cause as well:  
 Vane there, sat motionless the whole night through.

*Vane.* Hampden!

*Fien.* Stay, Vane!

*Loudon.* Be just and patient, Vane!

*Vane.* Mind how you counsel patience, London! you

Have still a Parliament, and this your League  
 To back it; you are free in Scotland still;  
 While we are brothers, hope's for England yet.  
 But know you wherefore Wentworth comes?  
 to quench

This last of hopes? that he brings war with him?  
Know you the man's self? what he dares?

*Lou.* We know,  
All know — 't is nothing new.

*Vane.* And what's new, then,  
In calling for his life? Why, Pym himself —  
You must have heard — ere Wentworth dropped  
our cause

He would see Pym first; there were many more  
Strong on the people's side and friends of his,  
Eliot that's dead, Rudyard and Hampden here,  
But for these Wentworth cared not; only, Pym  
He would see — Pym and he were sworn, 'tis  
said,

To live and die together; so, they met  
At Greenwich. Wentworth, you are sure, was  
long,

Specious enough, the devil's argument  
Lost nothing on his lips; he'd have Pym own  
A patriot could not play a purer part  
Than follow in his track; they two combined  
Might put down England. Well, Pym heard  
him out;

One glance — you know Pym's eye — one word  
was all:

"You leave us, Wentworth! while your head  
is on,

I'll not leave you."

*Hamp.* Has he left Wentworth, then?  
Has England lost him? Will you let him speak,  
Or put your crude surmises in his mouth?

Away with this! Will you have Pym or Vane?  
*Voices.* Wait Pym's arrival! Pym shall speak.

*Hamp.* Meanwhile  
Let London read the Parliament's report  
From Edinburgh: our last hope, as Vane says,  
Is in the stand it makes. London!

*Vane.* No, no!  
Silent I can be: not indifferent!

*Hamp.* Then each keep silence, praying God  
to spare

His anger, cast not England quite away  
In this her visitation!

*A Puritan.* Seven years long

The Midianite drove Israel into dens  
And caves. Till God sent forth a mighty man,  
(*Pym enters.*)

Even Gideon!

*Pym.* Wentworth's come: nor sickness, care,  
The ravaged body nor the ruined soul,  
More than the winds and waves that beat his  
ship,

Could keep him from the King. He has not  
reached

Whitehall: they've hurried up a Council there  
To lose no time and find him work enough.

Where's our Loudon? your Scots' Parliament . . .  
*Lou.* Holds firm:

We were about to read reports.

*Pym.* The King

Has just dissolved your Parliament.

*Lou.* And other Scots. Great God!  
An oath-breaker! Stand by us, England, then!

*Pym.* The King's too sanguine; doubtless  
Wentworth's here;

But still some little form might be kept up.

*Hamp.* Now speak, Vane! Rudyard, you  
had much to say!

*Hol.* The rumor's false, then . . .

*Pym.* Ay, the Court gives out  
His own concerns have brought him back: I  
know

'T is the King calls him. Wentworth supersedes  
The tribe of Cottingtons and Hamiltons  
Whose part is played; there's talk enough, by  
this, —

Merciful talk, the King thinks: time is now  
To turn the record's last and bloody leaf  
Which, chronicling a nation's great despair,  
Tells they were long rebellious, and their lord  
Indulgent, till, all kind expedients tried,  
He drew the sword on them and reigned in  
peace.

Laud's laying his religion on the Scots  
Was the last gentle entry: the new page  
Shall run, the King thinks, "Wentworth thrust  
it down

At the sword's point."

*A Puritan.* I'll do your bidding, Pym,  
England's and God's — one blow!

*Pym.* A goodly thing —  
We all say, friends, it is a goodly thing  
To right that England. Heaven grows dark  
above:

Let's snatch one moment ere the thunder fall,  
To say how well the English spirit comes out  
Beneath it! All have done their best, indeed,  
From lion Eliot, that grand Englishman,  
To the least here: and who, the least one here,  
When she is saved (for her redemption dawns  
Dimly, most dimly, but it dawns — it dawns)  
Who'd give at any price his hope away  
Of being named along with the Great Men?

We would not — no, we would not give that up!

*Hamp.* And one name shall be dearer than all  
names,

When children, yet unborn, are taught that  
name

After their fathers', — taught what matchless  
man . . .

*Pym.* . . . Saved England? What if Went-  
worth's should be still

That name?

*Rud. and others.* We have just said it, Pym!  
His death

Saves her! We said it — there's no way be-  
side!

I'll do God's bidding, Pym! They struck  
down Joab

And purged the land.

*Vane.* No villainous striking-down!  
*Rud.* No, a calm vengeance: let the whole  
land rise

And shout for it. No Feltons!

*Pym.* Rudyard, no!  
England rejects all Feltons; most of all

Since Wentworth . . . Hampden, say the trust  
again

Of England in her servants — but I'll think  
You know me, all of you. Then, I believe,

Spite of the past, Wentworth rejoins you,  
friends!

*Vane and others.* Wentworth? Apostate!  
Judas! Double-dyed

A traitor! Is it Pym, indeed . . .  
*Pym.* . . . Who says

Vane never knew that Wentworth, loved that man,

Was used to stroll with him, arm locked in arm,  
Along the streets to see the people pass,  
And read in every island-countenance  
Fresh argument for God against the King, —  
Never sat down, say, in the very house  
Where Eliot's brow grew broad with noble  
thoughts,

(You've joined us, Hampden — Hollis, you as well.)

And then left talking over Gracchus's death . . .  
*Vane.* To frame, we know it well, the choicest clause

In the Petition of Right: he framed such clause  
One month before he took at the King's hand  
His Northern Presidency, which that Bill  
Denounced.

*Pym.* Too true! Never more, never more  
Walked we together! Most alone I went.  
I have had friends—all here are fast my  
friends—

But I shall never quite forget that friend.  
And yet it could not but be real in him!  
You, Vane, — you, Rudyard, have no right to  
trust

To Wentworth: but can no one hope with me?  
Hampden, will Wentworth dare shed English  
blood

Like water?

*Hamp.* Ireland is Aeldama.

*Pym.* Will he turn Scotland to a hunting-  
ground

To please the King, now that he knows the  
King?

The People or the King? and that King,  
Charles!

*Hamp.* Pym, all here know you: you'll not  
set your heart

On any baseless dream. But say one deed  
Of Wentworth's, since he left us . . . [*Shouting*  
*without.*

*Vane.* There! he comes,  
And they shout for him! Wentworth's at  
Whitehall,

The King embracing him, now, as we speak,  
And he, to be his match in courtesies,  
Taking the whole war's risk upon himself,  
Now, while you tell us here how changed he is!  
Hear you?

*Pym.* And yet if 't is a dream, no more,  
That Wentworth chose their side, and brought  
the King

To love it as though Laud had loved it first.  
And the Queen after; that he led their cause  
Calm to success, and kept it spotless through,  
So that our very eyes could look upon  
The travail of our souls, and close content  
That violence, which something mars even right  
Which sanctions it, had taken off no grace  
From its serene regard. Only a dream!

*Hamp.* We meet here to accomplish certain  
good

By giv'ng means, and keep tradition up  
Of free assemblages, else obsolete,  
In this poor chamber: nor without effect  
Has friend met friend to counsel and confirm,  
As, listening to the beats of England's heart,

We spoke its wants to Scotland's prompt reply  
By these her delegates. Remains alone  
That word grow deed, as with God's help it  
shall—

But with the devil's hindrance, who doubts too?  
Looked we or no that tyranny should turn  
Her engines of oppression to their use?

Whereof, suppose the worst be Wentworth  
here—

Shall we break off the tactics which succeed  
In drawing out our formidablest foe,  
Let bickering and disunion take their place?  
Or count his presence as our conquest's proof,  
And keep the old arms at their steady play?

Proceed to England's work! Fiennes, read the  
list!

*Fien.* Ship-money is refused or fiercely  
paid

In every county, save the northern parts  
Where Wentworth's influence . . . [*Shouting.*

*Vane.* I, in England's name,  
Declare her work, this day, at end! Till now,  
Up to this moment, peaceful strife was best.

We English had free leave to think; till now,  
We had a shadow of a Parliament  
In Scotland. But all's changed: they change

the first,  
They try brute-force for law, they, first of  
all . . .

*Voices.* Good! Talk enough! The old true  
hearts with Vane!

*Vane.* Till we crush Wentworth for her,  
there's no act

Serves England!

*Voices.* Vane for England!

*Pym.* Pym should be  
Something to England. I seek Wentworth,  
friends.

#### SCENE II. *Whitehall.*

*Lady CARLISLE and WENTWORTH.*

*Wentworth.* And the King?  
*Lady Carlisle.* Wentworth, lean on me!

Sit then!  
I'll tell you all; this horrible fatigue  
Will kill you.

*Went.* No; — or, Lucy, just your arm;  
I'll not sit till I've cleared this up with him:  
After that, rest. The King?

*Lady Car.* Confides in you.

*Went.* Why? or, why now? — They have  
kind throats, the knaves!

Shout for me — they!

*Lady Car.* You come so strangely soon:  
Yet we took measures to keep off the crowd —  
Did they shout for you?

*Went.* Wherefore should they not?  
Does the King take such measures for himself?

Beside, there's such a dearth of malcontents,  
You say!

*Lady Car.* I said but few dared carp at you.  
*Went.* At me? at us, I hope! The King  
and I!

He's surely not disposed to let me hear  
The fame away from him of these late deeds  
In Ireland? I am yet his instrument  
Be it for well or ill? He trusts me, too!



*Lady Car.* The King, dear Wentworth, purposes, I said,

To grant you, in the face of all the Court . . .

*Went.* All the Court! Evermore the Court about us!

Savile and Holland, Hamilton and Vane About us, — then the King will grant me — what?

That he for once put these aside and say —

“Tell me your whole mind, Wentworth!”

*Lady Car.* You professed You would be calm.

*Went.* Lucy, and I am calm!

How else shall I do all I come to do,  
Broken, as you may see, body and mind,  
How shall I serve the King? Time wastes meanwhile,

You have not told me half. His footstep! No, Quick, then, before I meet him, — I am calm — Why does the King distrust me?

*Lady Car.* He does not Distrust you.

*Went.* Lucy, you can help me; you Have even seemed to care for me: one word! Is it the Queen?

*Lady Car.* No, not the Queen: the party That poisons the Queen's ear, Savile and Holland.

*Went.* I know, I know: old Vane, too, he's one too?

Go on — and he's made Secretary. Well? Or leave them out and go straight to the charge; The charge!

*Lady Car.* Oh, there's no charge, no precise charge;

Only they sneer, make light of — one may say, Nibble at what you do.

*Went.* I know! but, Lucy,

I reckoned on you from the first! — Go on!

— Was sure could I once see this gentle friend

When I arrived, she'd throw an hour away

To help her . . . what am I?

*Lady Car.* You thought of me, Dear Wentworth?

*Went.* But go on! The party here!

*Lady Car.* They do not think your Irish government

Of that surpassing value . . .

*Went.* The one thing Of value! The one service that the crown

May count on! All that keeps these very Vanes

In power, to vex me — not that they do vex, Only it might vex some to hear that service

Decried, the sole support that's left the King!

*Lady Car.* So the Archbishop says.

*Went.* Ah? well, perhaps

The only hand held up in my defence

May be old Laud's! These Hollands then, these Saviles

Nibble? They nibble? — that's the very word!

*Lady Car.* Your profit in the Customs, Bristol says,

Exceeds the due proportion: while the tax . . .

*Went.* Enough! 't is too unworthy, — I am not

So patient as I thought! What's Pym about?

*Lady Car.* Pym?

*Went.* Pym and the People,

*Lady Car.* Oh, the Faction!

Extinct — of no account: there'll never be Another Parliament.

*Went.* Tell Savile that!

You may know — (ay, you do — the creatures here

Never forget!) that in my earliest life

I was not . . . much that I am now! The King

May take my word on points concerning Pym

Before Lord Savile's, Lucy, or if not,

I bid them ruin their wise selves, not me,

These Vanes and Hollands! I'll not be their tool

Who might be Pym's friend yet.

But there's the King!

Where is he?

*Lady Car.* Just apprised that you arrive.

*Went.* And why not here to meet me? I was told

He sent for me, nay, longed for me.

*Lady Car.* Because, —

He is now . . . I think a Council's sitting now About this Scots affair.

*Went.* A Council sits?

They have not taken a decided course

Without me in the matter?

*Lady Car.* I should say . . .

*Went.* The war? They cannot have agreed to that?

Not the Scots' war? — without consulting me — Me, that am here to show how rash it is,

How easy to dispense with? — Ah, you too Against me! well, — the King may take his time.

— Forget it, Lucy! Cares make peevish: mine Weigh me (but 't is a secret) to my grave.

*Lady Car.* For life or death I am your own, dear friend!

*Went.* Heartless! but all are heartless here. Go now,

Forsake the People! I did not forsake

The People: they shall know it, when the King

Will trust me! — who trusts all beside at once,

While I have not spoke Vane and Savile fair,

And am not trusted: have but saved the throne:

Have not picked up the Queen's glove prettily,

And am not trusted. But he'll see me now.

Weston is dead: the Queen's half English now —

More English: one decisive word will brush

These insects from . . . the step I know so well!

The King! But now, to tell him . . . no — to ask

What's in me he distrusts: — or, best begin

By proving that this frightful Scots affair

Is just what I foretold. So much to say,

And the flesh fails, now, and the time is come,

And one false step no way to be repaired.

You were avenged, Pym, could you look on me.

(*Pym enters.*)

*Went.* I little thought of you just then.

*Pym.* No? I

Think always of you, Wentworth.

*Went.* The old voice!

I wait the King, sir.

*Pym.* True — you look so pale!

A Council sits within; when that breaks up

He'll see you.

*Went.* Sir, I thank you.

*Pym.* Oh, thank Laud!

You know when Laud once gets on Church affairs

The case is desperate : he 'll not be long To-day : he only means to prove, to-day, We English all are mad to have a hand In butchering the Scots for serving God After their fathers' fashion : only that !

*Went.* Sir, keep your jests for those who relish them !

(Does he enjoy their confidence ?) 'T is kind To tell me what the Council does.

*Pym.* You grudge That I should know it had resolved on war Before you came ? no need : you shall have all The credit, trust me !

*Went.* Have the Council dared — They have not dared . . . that is — I know you not.

Farewell, sir : times are changed.

*Pym.* — Since we two met At Greenwich ? Yes : poor patriots though we be,

You cut a figure, makes some slight return For your exploits in Ireland ! Changed indeed, Could our friend Eliot look from out his grave ! Ah, Wentworth, one thing for acquaintance' sake,

Just to decide a question ; have you, now, Felt your old self since you forsook us ?

*Went.* Sir !

*Pym.* Spare me the gesture ! you misapprehend.

Think not I mean the advantage is with me. I was about to say that, for my part, I never quite held up my head since then — Was quite myself since then : for first, you see, I lost all credit after that event

With those who recollect how sure I was Wentworth would outdo Eliot on our side. Forgive me : Savile, old Vane, Holland here, Eschew plain-speaking : 't is a trick I keep.

*Went.* How, when, where, Savile, Vane, and Holland speak,

Plainly or otherwise, would have my scorn, All of my scorn, sir . . .

*Pym.* . . . Did not my poor thoughts Claim somewhat ?

*Went.* Keep your thoughts ! believe the King Mistrusts me for their prattle, all these Vanes And Saviles ! make your mind up, o' God's love, That I am discontented with the King !

*Pym.* Why, you may be : I should be, that I know,

Were I like you.

*Went.* Like me ?

*Pym.* I care not much

For titles : our friend Eliot died no lord, Hampden's no lord, and Savile is a lord ; But you care, since you sold your soul for one. I can't think, therefore, your soul's purchaser Did well to laugh you to such utter scorn When you twice prayed so humbly for its price, The thirty silver pieces . . . I should say, The Earlom you expected, still expect, And may. Your letters were the movingest ! Console yourself : I've borne him prayers just now

From Scotland not to be oppressed by Laud,

Words moving in their way : he 'll pay, be sure. As much attention as to those you sent.

*Went.* False, sir ! Who showed them you ? Suppose it so,

The King did very well . . . nay, I was glad When it was shown me : I refused, the first ! John Pym, you were my friend — forbear me once !

*Pym.* Oh, Wentworth, ancient brother of my soul,

That all should come to this !

*Went.* Leave me !

*Pym.* My friend,

Why should I leave you ?

*Went.* To tell Rudyard this,

And Hampden this !

*Pym.* Whose faces once were bright At my approach, now sad with doubt and fear, Because I hope in you — yes, Wentworth, you Who never mean to ruin England — you Who shake off, with God's help, an obscene dream

In this Ezekiel chamber, where it crept Upon you first, and wake, yourself, your true And proper self, our Leader, England's Chief, And Hampden's friend !

This is the proudest day ! Come, Wentworth ! Do not even see the King ! The rough old room will seem itself again !

We 'll both go in together : you've not seen Hampden so long : come : and there's *Fiennes* : you 'll have

To know young Vane. This is the proudest day !

[*The King enters.* WENTWORTH lets fall PYM's hand.

*Charles.* Arrived, my lord ? — This gentleman, we know

Was your old friend.

The Scots shall be informed What we determine for their happiness.

[*Pym goes out.*

You have made haste, my lord.

*Went.* Sir, I am come . . .

*Cha.* To see an old familiar — nay, 't is well ; Aid us with his experience : this Scots' League And Covenant spreads too far, and we have proofs

That they intrigue with France : the Faction too,

Whereof your friend there is the head and front, Abets them, — as he boasted, very like.

*Went.* Sir, trust me ! but for this once, trust me, sir !

*Cha.* What can you mean ?

*Went.* That you should trust me, sir !

Oh — not for my sake ! but 't is sad, so sad That for distrusting me, you suffer — you Whom I would die to serve : sir, do you think That I would die to serve you ?

*Cha.* But rise, Wentworth !

*Went.* What shall convince you ? What does Savile do

To prove him . . . Ah, one can't tear out one's heart

And show it, how sincere a thing it is !

*Cha.* Have I not trusted you ?

*Went.* Say aught but that !

There is my comfort, mark you : all will be So different when you trust me — as you shall !

It has not been your fault, — I was away,  
Mistook, maligned, how was the King to know?  
I am here, now — he means to trust me, now —  
All will go on so well!

*Cha.* Be sure I do —  
I've heard that I should trust you : as you came,  
Your friend, the Countess, told me . . .

*Went.* No, — hear nothing —  
Be told nothing about me! — you're not told  
Your right-hand serves you, or your children  
love you!

*Cha.* You love me, Wentworth : rise!  
*Went.* I can speak now.

I have no right to hide the truth. 'Tis I  
Can save you : only I. Sir, what must be?

*Cha.* Since Laud's assured (the minutes are  
within)

— Louth as I am to spill my subjects' blood . . .

*Went.* That is, he'll have a war : what's  
done is done!

*Cha.* They have intrigued with France;  
that's clear to Laud.

*Went.* Has Laud suggested any way to meet  
The war's expense?

*Cha.* He'd not decide so far  
Until you joined us.

*Went.* Most considerate!  
He's certain they intrigue with France, these  
Scots?

The People would be with us.

*Cha.* Pym should know.  
*Went.* The People for us — were the People  
for us!

Sir, a great thought comes to reward your trust :

Summon a Parliament! in Ireland first,  
Then, here.

*Cha.* In truth?

*Went.* That saves us! that puts off  
The war, gives time to right their grievances —

To talk with Pym. I know the Faction — Laud  
So styles it — tutors Scotland : all their plans

Suppose no Parliament : in calling one  
You take them by surprise. Produce the proofs

Of Scotland's treason; then bid England help:  
Even Pym will not refuse.

*Cha.* You would begin  
With Ireland?

*Went.* Take no care for that : that's sure  
To prosper.

*Cha.* You shall rule me. You were best  
Return at once : but take this ere you go!

Now, do I trust you? You're an Earl: my  
Friend

Of Friends : yes, while . . . You hear me not!

*Went.* Say it all o'er again — but once again:  
The first was for the music : once again!

*Cha.* Strafford, my friend, there may have  
been reports,

Vain rumors. Henceforth touching Strafford is  
To touch the apple of my sight : why gaze

So earnestly?

*Went.* I am grown young again,  
And foolish. What was it we spoke of?

*Cha.* Ireland,  
The Parliament, —

*Went.* I may go when I will?  
— Now?

*Cha.* Are you tired so soon of us?

*Went.* My King!

But you will not so utterly abhor  
A Parliament? I'd serve you any way.

*Cha.* You said just now this was the only  
way.

*Went.* Sir, I will serve you!  
*Cha.* Strafford, spare yourself :

You are so sick, they tell me.

*Went.* 'Tis my soul  
That's well and prospers now.

This Parliament —  
We'll summon it, the English one — I'll care  
For everything. You shall not need them much.

*Cha.* If they prove restive . . .  
*Went.* I shall be with you.

*Cha.* Ere they assemble?

*Went.* I will come, or else  
Deposit this infirm humanity

I' the dust. My whole heart stays with you,  
my King!

[As WENTWORTH goes out, the QUEEN enters.  
*Cha.* That man must love me.

*Queen.* Is it over then?  
Why, he looks yellower than ever! Well,

At least we shall not hear eternally  
Of service — services : he's paid at least.

*Cha.* Not done with : he engages to surpass  
All yet performed in Ireland.

*Queen.* I had thought  
Nothing beyond was ever to be done.

The war, Charles — will he raise supplies  
enough?

*Cha.* We've hit on an expedient; he . . .  
that is,

I have advised . . . we have decided on  
The calling — in Ireland — of a Parliament.

*Queen.* O truly! You agree to that? Is that  
The first-fruit of his counsel? But I guessed  
As much.

*Cha.* This is too idle, Henriette!  
I should know best. He will strain every nerve,  
And once a precedent established . . .

*Queen.* Notice  
How sure he is of a long term of favor!

He'll see the next, and the next after that;  
No end to Parliaments!

*Cha.* Well, it is done.  
He talks it smoothly, doubtless. If, indeed,  
The Commons here . . .

*Queen.* Here! you will summon them  
Here? Would I were in France again to see  
A King!

*Cha.* But, Henriette!

*Queen.* Oh, the Scots see clear!  
Why should they bear your rule?

*Cha.* But listen, sweet!

*Queen.* Let Wentworth listen — you confide  
in him!

*Cha.* I do not, love, — I do not so confide!  
The Parliament shall never trouble us!

. . . Nay, hear me! I have schemes, such  
schemes : we'll buy

The leaders off : without that, Wentworth's  
counsel

Had ne'er prevailed on me. Perhaps I call it  
To have excuse for breaking it forever,

And whose will then the blame be? See you  
not?



Come, dearest! — look, the little fairy, now,  
That cannot reach my shoulder! Dearest,  
come!

## ACT II

SCENE I. (As in Act I. Scene 1.)

*The same Party enters.*

*Rud.* Twelve subsidies!  
*Vane.* O Rudyard, do not laugh  
At least!

*Rud.* True: Strafford called the Parli-  
ament —

'T is he should laugh!

*A Puritan.* Out of the serpent's root  
Comes forth a cockatrice.

*Fien.* — A stinging one,  
If that's the Parliament: twelve subsidies!  
A stinging one! but, brother, where's your  
word

For Strafford's other nest-egg, the Scots' war?  
*The Puritan.* His fruit shall be a fiery flying  
serpent.

*Fien.* Shall be? It chips the shell, man;  
peeps abroad.

Twelve subsidies! — Why, how now, Vane?

*Rud.* Peace, Fiennes!  
*Fien.* Ah? — But he was not more a dupe  
than I,

Or you, or any here, the day that Pym  
Returned with the good news. Look up, friend  
Vane!

We all believe that Strafford meant us well  
In summoning the Parliament.

(HAMPDEN enters.)

*Vane.* Now, Hampden,  
Clear me! I would have leave to sleep again:  
I'd look the People in the face again:  
Clear me from having, from the first, hoped,  
dreamed

Better of Strafford!

*Hamp.* You may grow one day  
A steadfast light to England, Henry Vane!

*Rud.* Meantime, by flashes I make shift to  
see

Strafford revived our Parliaments; before,  
War was but talked of; there's an army, now:  
Still, we've a Parliament! Poor Ireland bears  
Another wrench (she dies the hardest death!) —  
Why, speak of it in Parliament! and lo,  
'T is spoken, so console yourselves!

*Fien.* The jest!  
We clamored, I suppose, thus long, to win  
The privilege of laying on our backs  
A sorer burden than the King dares lay.

*Rud.* Mark now: we meet at length, com-  
plaints pour in

From every county, all the land cries out  
On loans and levies, curses ship-money,  
Calls vengeance on the Star Chamber; we lend  
An ear. "Ay, lend them all the ears you  
have!"

Puts in the King: "my subjects, as you find,  
Are fretful, and conceive great things of you.  
Just listen to them, friends; you'll sanction me  
The measures they most wince at, make them  
yours,

Instead of mine, I know: and, to begin,  
They say my levies pinch them, — raise me  
straight

Twelve subsidies!"

*Fien.* All England cannot furnish  
Twelve subsidies!

*Hol.* But Strafford, just returned  
From Ireland — what has he to do with that?  
How could he speak his mind? He left be-  
fore

The Parliament assembled. Pym, who knows  
Strafford

*Rud.* Would I were sure we know ourselves!  
What is for good, what, bad — who friend, who  
foe!

*Hol.* Do you count Parliaments no gain?

*Rud.* A gain?

While the King's creatures overbalance us?  
— There's going on, beside, among ourselves

A quiet, slow, but most effectual course  
Of buying over, sapping, leavening

The lump till all is leaven. Glanville's gone.  
I'll put a case; had not the Court declared

That no sum short of just twelve subsidies  
Will be accepted by the King — our House,

I say, would have consented to that offer  
To let us buy off ship-money!

*Hol.* Most like,  
If, say, six subsidies will buy it off,

The House . . .  
*Rud.* Will grant them! Hampden, do you  
hear?

Congratulate with me! the King's the king,  
And gains his point at last — our own assent  
To that detested tax! All's over, then  
There's no more taking refuge in this room,  
Protesting, "Let the King do what he will,  
We, England, are no party to our shame:  
Our day will come!" Congratulate with me!

(PYM enters.)

*Vane.* Pym, Strafford called this Parliament,  
you say,

But we'll not have our Parliaments like those  
In Ireland, Pym!

*Rud.* Let him stand forth, your friend!  
One doubtful act hides far too many sins;  
It can be stretched no more, and, to my mind,  
Begins to drop from those it covered.

*Other Voices.* Good!  
Let him avow himself! No fitter time!

We wait thus long for you.

*Rud.* Perhaps, too long!  
Since nothing but the madness of the Court,

In thus unmasking its designs at once,  
Has saved us from betraying England. Stay —

This Parliament is Strafford's: let us vote  
Our list of Grievances too black by far

To suffer talk of subsidies: or best,  
That ship-money's disposed of long ago

By England: any vote that's broad enough:  
And then let Strafford, for the love of it,

Support his Parliament!  
*Vane.* And vote as well

No war to be with Scotland! Hear you, Pym?  
We'll vote, no war! No part nor lot in it

For England!  
*Many Voices.* Vote, no war! Stop the new  
levies!

No Bishops' war! At once! When next we meet!

*Pym.* Much more when next we meet! Friends, which of you

Since first the course of Strafford was in doubt, Has fallen the most away in soul from me?

*Vane.* I sat apart, even now under God's eye, Pondering the words that should denounce you,

*Pym.*  
In presence of us all, as one at league  
With England's enemy.

*Pym.* You are a good  
And gallant spirit, Henry. Take my hand  
And say you pardon me for all the pain  
Till now! Strafford is wholly ours.

*Many Voices.* Sure? sure?  
*Pym.* Most sure: for Charles dissolves the

Parliament  
While I speak here.

— And I must speak, friends, now!  
Strafford is ours. The King detects the change,  
Casts Strafford off forever, and resumes  
His ancient path: no Parliament for us,  
No Strafford for the King!

Come, all of you,  
To bid the King farewell, predict success  
To his Scots' expedition, and receive  
Strafford, our comrade now. The next will be  
Indeed a Parliament!

*Vane.* Forgive me, *Pym*!  
*Voices.* This looks like truth: Strafford can  
have, indeed,

No choice.  
*Pym.* Friends, follow me! He's with the  
King.

Come, Hampden, and come, Rudyard, and  
come, *Vane*!

This is no sullen day for England, sirs!  
Strafford shall tell you!

*Voices.* To Whitehall then! Come!

#### SCENE II. *Whitehall.*

CHARLES and STRAFFORD.

*Cha.* Strafford!

*Strafford.* Is it a dream? my papers, here —  
Thus, as I left them, all the plans you found  
So happy — (look! the track you pressed my  
hand

For pointing out) — and in this very room,  
Over these very plans, you tell me, sir,  
With the same face, too — tell me just one thing  
That ruins them! How's this? What may  
this mean?

Sir, who has done this?

*Cha.* Strafford, who but I?  
You bade me put the rest away: indeed  
You are alone.

*Straf.* Alone, and like to be!  
No fear, when some unworthy scheme grows  
ripe,

Of those, who hatched it, leaving me to loose  
The mischief on the world! Laud hatches war,  
Falls to his prayers, and leaves the rest to me,  
And I'm alone.

*Cha.* At least, you knew as much  
When first you undertook the war.

*Straf.*

My liege,  
Was this the way? I said, since Laud would lap  
A little blood, 't were best to hurry over

The loathsome business, not to be whole months  
At slaughter — one blow, only one, then, peace,  
Save for the dreams. I said, to please you both  
I'd lead an Irish army to the West.

While in the South an English . . . but you look  
As though you had not told me fifty times  
'T was a brave plan! My army is all raised,  
I am prepared to join it . . .

*Cha.* Hear me, Strafford!  
*Straf.* . . . When, for some little thing, my  
whole design

Is set aside — (where is the wretched paper?)  
I am to lead — (ay, here it is) — to lead  
The English army: why? Northumberland,  
That I appointed, chooses to be sick —  
Is frightened: and, meanwhile, who answers for  
The Irish Parliament? or army, either?  
Is this my plan?

*Cha.* So disrespectful, sir?  
*Straf.* My liege, do not believe it! I am yours,  
Yours ever: 't is too late to think about:

To the death, yours. Elsewhere, this untoward  
step  
Shall pass for mine; the world shall think it  
mine.

But here! But here! I am so seldom here,  
Seldom with you, my King! I, soon to rush  
Alone upon a giant in the dark!

*Cha.* My Strafford!  
*Straf.* [*Examines papers awhile.*] "Seize  
the passes of the Tyne!"

But, sir, you see — see all I say is true?  
My plan was sure to prosper, so, no cause  
To ask the Parliament for help; whereas  
We need them heartily.

*Cha.* Need the Parliament?  
*Straf.* Now, for God's sake, sir, not one error  
more!

We can afford no error; we draw, now,  
Upon our last resource: the Parliament  
Must help us!

*Cha.* I've undone you, Strafford!

*Straf.* Nay —  
Nay — why despond, sir, 't is not come to that!  
I have not hurt you? Sir, what have I said  
To hurt you? I unsay it! Don't despond!

Sir, do you turn from me?  
*Cha.* My friend of friends!  
*Straf.* We'll make a shift. Leave me the  
Parliament!

Help they us ne'er so little and I'll make  
Sufficient out of it. We'll speak them fair.  
They're sitting, that's one great thing; that  
half gives

Their sanction to us; that's much: don't de-  
spond!

Why, let them keep their money, at the worst!  
The reputation of the People's help  
Is all we want: we'll make shift yet!

*Cha.* Good Strafford!  
*Straf.* But meantime, let the sum be ne'er so  
small

They offer, we'll accept it: any sum —  
For the look of it: the least grant tells the Scots  
The Parliament is ours — their stomach ally

Turned ours : that told, there 's half the blow to strike!

What will the grant be? What does Glanville think?

*Cha.* Alas!

*Straf.* My liege?

*Cha.* Strafford!

*Straf.* But answer me!

Have they . . . Oh surely not refused us half?

Half the twelve subsidies? We never looked

For all of them. How many do they give?

*Cha.* You have not heard . . .

*Straf.* (What has he done?) — Heard what? But speak at once, sir, this grows terrible!

[*The King continuing silent.*]

You have dissolved them! — I'll not leave this man.

*Cha.* 'T was old Vane's ill-judged vehemence.

*Straf.* Old Vane?

*Cha.* He told them, just about to vote the half,

That nothing short of all twelve subsidies

Would serve our turn, or be accepted.

*Straf.* Vane!

Vane! Who, sir, promised me, that very Vane . . .

O God, to have it gone, quite gone from me,

The one last hope — I that despair, my hope —

That I should reach his heart one day, and cure

All bitterness one day, be proud again

And young again, care for the sunshine too,

And never think of Eliot any more, —

God, and to toil for this, go far for this,

Get nearer, and still nearer, reach this heart

And find Vane there!

[*Suddenly taking up a paper, and continuing with a forced calmness.*]

Northumberland is sick :

Well, then, I take the army : Wilmot leads

The horse, and he, with Conway, must secure

The passes of the Tyne : Ormond supplies

My place in Ireland. Here, we'll try the City :

If they refuse a loan — debase the coin

And seize the bullion! we've no other choice.

Herbert . . .

And this while I am here! with you!

And there are hosts such, hosts like Vane! I go,

And, I once gone, they'll close around you, sir,

When the least pique, pettiest mistrust, is sure

To ruin me — and you along with me!

Do you see that? And you along with me!

— Sir, you'll not ever listen to these men,

And I away, fighting your battle? Sir,

If they — if She — charge me, no matter how —

Say you, "At any time when he returns

His head is mine!" Don't stop me there! You know

My head is yours, but never stop me there!

*Cha.* Too shameful, Strafford! You advised the war,

And . . .

*Straf.* I! I! that was never spoken with

Till it was entered on! That loathe the war!

That say it is the maddest, wickedest . . .

Do you know, sir, I think within my heart,

That you would say I did advise the war;

And if, through your own weakness, or, what's worse,

These Scots, with God to help them, drive me back,

You will not step between the raging People

And me, to say . . .

I knew it! from the first

I knew it! Never was so cold a heart!

Remember that I said it — that I never

Believed you for a moment!

— And, you loved me?

You thought your perfidy profoundly hid

Because I could not share the whisperings

With Vane, with Savile? What, the face was masked?

I had the heart to see, sir! Face of flesh,

But heart of stone — of smooth cold frightful stone!

Ay, call them! Shall I call for you? The Scots

Goaded to madness? Or the English — Pym —

Shall I call Pym, your subject? Oh, you think

I'll leave them in the dark about it all?

They shall not know you? Hampden, Pym shall not?

(*PYM, HAMPDEN, VANE, etc., enter.*)

[*Dropping on his knee.*] Thus favored with your gracious countenance

What shall a rebel League avail against

Your servant, utterly and ever yours?

So, gentlemen, the King's not even left

The privilege of bidding me farewell

Who haste to save the People — that you style

Your People — from the mercies of the Scots

And France their friend?

[*To CHARLES.*] Pym's grave gray eyes are fixed Upon you, sir!

Your pleasure, gentlemen.

*Hamp.* The King dissolved us — 't is the King we seek

And not Lord Strafford.

*Straf.*

Strafford, guilty too

Of counselling the measure. [*To CHARLES.*]

(Hush . . . you know —

You have forgotten — sir, I counselled it)

A heinous matter, truly! But the King

Will yet see cause to thank me for a course

Which now, perchance . . . (Sir, tell them so!)

— he blames.

Well, choose some fitter time to make your charge :

I shall be with the Scots, you understand?

Then yelp at me!

Meanwhile, your Majesty

Binds me, by this fresh token of your trust . . .

[*Under the pretence of an earnest farewell, STRAFFORD conducts CHARLES to the door, in such a manner as to hide his agitation from the rest : as the King disappears, they turn as by one impulse to PYM, who has not changed his original posture of surprise.*]

*Hamp.* Leave me this arrogant strong wicked man!

*Vane and others.* Hence, Pym! Come out of this unworthy place

To our old room again! He's gone.

[*STRAFFORD, just about to follow the King, looks back.*]

*Pym.*

Not gone!

[*To STRAFFORD.*] Keep tryst! the old appointment's made anew:

Forget not we shall meet again!

*Straf.*

So be it!



And if an army follows me ?

*Vane.*

His friends

Will entertain your army !

*Pym.*

I'll not say

You have misreckoned, Strafford : time shows.

Perish

Body and spirit ! Fool to feign a doubt,

Pretend the scrupulous and nice reserve

Of one whose prowess shall achieve the feat !

What share have I in it ? Do I affect

To see no dismal sign above your head

When God suspends his ruinous thunder there ?

Strafford is doomed. Touch him no one of you !

[PYM, HAMPDEN, etc., go out.]

*Straf.* Pym, we shall meet again !

(*Lady CARLISLE enters.*)

You here, child ?

Hush —

*Lady Car.*

I know it all : hush, Strafford !

*Straf.*

Ah ! you know ?

Well, I shall make a sorry soldier, Lucy !

All knights begin their enterprise, we read,

Under the best of auspices ; 't is morn,

The King girds his sword upon the Youth

(He 's always very young) — the trumpet sound,

Cups pledge him, and, why, the King blesses

him —

You need not turn a page of the romance

To learn the Dreadful Giant's fate. Indeed,

We 've the fair Lady here ; but she apart, —

A poor man, rarely having handled lance,

And rather old, weary, and far from sure

His Squires are not the Giant's friends. All 's

one :

Let us go forth !

*Lady Car.*

Go forth ?

*Straf.*

What matters it ?

We shall die gloriously — as the book says.

*Lady Car.* To Scotland ? not to Scotland ?

*Straf.*

Am I sick

Like your good brother, brave Northumber-

land ?

Beside, these walls seem falling on me.

*Lady Car.*

Strafford,

The wind that saps these walls can undermine

Your camp in Scotland, too. Whence creeps

the wind ?

Have you no eyes except for Pym ? Look here !

A breed of silken creatures lurk and thrive

In your contempt. You 'll vanquish Pym ? Old

Vane

Can vanquish you. And Vane you think to fly ?

Rush on the Scots ! Do nobly ! Vane's slight

sneer

Shall test success, adjust the praise, suggest

The faint result : Vane's sneer shall reach you

there.

— You do not listen !

*Straf.*

Oh, — I give that up !

There 's fate in it : I give all here quite up.

Care not what old Vane does or Holland does

Against me ! 'T is so idle to withstand !

In no case tell me what they do !

*Lady Car.*

But, Strafford . . .

*Straf.* I want a little strife, beside ; real strife ;

This petty palace-warfare does me harm :

I shall feel better, fairly out of it.

*Lady Car.*

Why do you smile ?

*Straf.*

I got to fear them, child !

I could have torn his throat at first, old Vane's,

As he leered at me on his stealthy way

To the Queen's closet. Lord, one loses heart !

I often found it on my lips to say,

" Do not traduce me to her ! "

*Lady Car.*

But the King . . .

*Straf.* The King stood there, 't is not so long ago,

— There ; and the whisper, Lucy, " Be my friend

Of friends ! " — My King ! I would have . . .

*Lady Car.*

. . . Died for him ?

*Straf.* Sworn him true, Lucy : I can die for

him.

*Lady Car.* But go not, Strafford ! But you

must renounce

This project on the Scots ! Die, wherefore die ?

Charles never loved you.

*Straf.*

And he never will.

He 's not of those who care the more for men

That they 're unfortunate.

*Lady Car.*

Then wherefore die

For such a master ?

*Straf.*

You that told me first

How good he was — when I must leave true

friends

To find a truer friend ! — that drew me here

From Ireland, — " I had but to show myself,

And Charles would spurn Vane, Savile, and the

rest " —

You, child, to ask me this ?

*Lady Car.*

(If he have set

His heart abidingly on Charles !)

Then, friend,

I shall not see you any more.

*Straf.*

Yes, Lucy.

There 's one man here I have to meet.

*Lady Car.*

(The King !

What way to save him from the King ?

My soul —

That lent from its own store the charmed dis-

guise

Which clothes the King — he shall behold my

soul !)

Strafford, — I shall speak best if you 'll not gaze

Upon me : I had never thought, indeed,

To speak, but you would perish too, so sure !

Could you but know what 't is to bear, my

friend,

One image stamped within you, turning blank

The else imperial brilliance of your mind, —

A weakness, but most precious, — like a flaw

I' the diamond, which should shape forth some

sweet face

Yet to create, and meanwhile treasured there

Let nature lose her gracious thought forever !

*Straf.* When could it be ? no ! Yet . . . was

it the day

We waited in the anteroom, till Holland

Should leave the presence-chamber ?

*Lady Car.*

What ?

*Straf.*

— That I

Described to you my love for Charles ?

*Lady Car.*

(Ah, no —

One must not lure him from a love like that !

Oh, let him love the King and die ! 'T is past.

I shall not serve him worse for that one brief

And passionate hope, silent forever now !)

And you are really bound for Scotland then?  
I wish you well: you must be very sure  
Of the King's faith, for Pym and all his crew  
Will not be idle — setting Vane aside!

*Straf.* If Pym is busy, — you may write of Pym.

*Lady Car.* What need, since there's your King to take your part?

He may endure Vane's counsel; but for Pym — Think you he'll suffer Pym to . . .

*Straf.* Child, your hair is glossier than the Queen's!

*Lady Car.* Is that to ask A curl of me?

*Straf.* Scotland — the weary way!  
*Lady Car.* Stay, let me fasten it.

— A rival's, Strafford?  
*Straf.* [showing the George.] He hung it there: twine yours around it, child!

*Lady Car.* No — no — another time — I trifle so!

And there's a masque on foot. Farewell. The Court

Is dull; do something to enliven us  
In Scotland: we expect it at your hands.

*Straf.* I shall not fail in Scotland.  
*Lady Car.* Prosper — if

You'll think of me sometimes!

*Straf.* How think of him And not of you? of you, the lingering streak

(A golden one) in my good fortune's eve.  
*Lady Car.* Strafford . . . Well, when the

eve has its last streak  
The night has its first star. [She goes out.

*Straf.* That voice of hers — You'd think she had a heart sometimes! His

voice  
Is soft too.

Only God can save him now.  
Be Thou about his bed, about his path!

His path! Where's England's path? Diverging wide,

And not to join again the track my foot  
Must follow — whither? All that forlorn way

Among the tombs! Far — far — till . . . What, they do

Then join again, these paths? For, huge in the dusk,

There's — Pym to face!

Why then, I have a foe  
To close with, and a fight to fight at last

Worthy my soul! What, do they beard the King,

And shall the King want Strafford at his need?  
Am I not here?

Not in the market-place,  
Pressed on by the rough artisans, so proud

To catch a glance from Wentworth! They lie down

Hungry yet smile, "Why, it must end some day:

Is he not watching for our sake?" Not there!  
But in Whitehall, the whited sepulchre,

The . . .  
Curse nothing to-night! Only one name

They'll curse in all those streets to-night.  
Whose fault?

Did I make kings? set up, the first, a man

To represent the multitude, receive  
All love in right of them — supplant them so,  
Until you love the man and not the king —  
The man with the mild voice and mournful eyes  
Which send me forth.

— To breast the bloody sea  
That sweeps before me: with one star for guide.  
Night has its first, supreme, forsaken star.

## ACT III

SCENE I. *Opposite Westminster Hall.*

SIR HENRY VANE, LORD SAVILE, LORD HOLLAND and others of the Court.

*Sir H. Vane.* The Commons thrust you out?  
*Savile.* And what kept you

From sharing their civility?  
*Vane.* Kept me?

Fresh news from Scotland, sir! worse than the last.

If that may be. All's up with Strafford there:  
Nothing to bar the mad Scots marching hither

Next Lord's-day morning. That detained me, sir!

Well now, before they thrust you out, — go on, —  
Their Speaker — did the fellow Lenthal say

All we set down for him?  
*Holland.* Not a word missed.

Ere he began, we entered, Savile, I  
And Bristol and some more, with hope to breed

A wholesome awe in the new Parliament.  
But such a gang of graceless ruffians, Vane,

As glared at us!

*Vane.* So many?  
*Sav.* Not a bench

Without its complement of burly knaves;  
Your hopeful son among them: Hampden leant

Upon his shoulder — think of that!

*Vane.* I'd think  
On Lenthal's speech, if I could get at it.

Urged he, I ask, how grateful they should prove  
For this unlooked-for summons from the King?

*Holl.* Just as we drilled him.  
*Vane.* That the Scots will march

On London?  
*Holl.* All, and made so much of it,

A dozen subsidies at least seemed sure  
To follow, when . . .

*Vane.* Well?  
*Holl.* 'Tis a strange thing now!

I've a vague memory of a sort of sound,  
A voice, a kind of vast unnatural voice —

Pym, sir, was speaking! Savile, help me out.  
What was it all?

*Sav.* Something about "a matter" —  
No, "work for England."

*Holl.* "England's great revenge"  
He talked of.

*Sav.* How should I get used to Pym  
More than yourselves?

*Holl.* However that may be,  
'T was something with which we had naught to

do,  
For we were "strangers," and 't was "Eng-

land's work" —  
(All this while looking us straight in the face)

In other words, our presence might be spared.  
So, in the twinkling of an eye, before  
I settled to my mind what ugly brute  
Was likest Pym just then, they yelled us out,  
Locked the doors after us, and here are we.

*Vane.* Eliot's old method . . .

*Sav.* Prithee, Vane, a truce  
To Eliot and his times, and the great Duke,  
And how to manage Parliaments! 'T was you  
Advised the Queen to summon this: why, Strafford

(To do him justice) would not hear of it.

*Vane.* Say rather, you have done the best of turns

To Strafford: he's at York, we all know why.  
I would you had not set the Scots on Strafford  
Till Strafford put down Pym for us, my lord!

*Sav.* Was it I altered Strafford's plans? did I . . .

(*A Messenger enters.*)

*Mes.* The Queen, my lords — she sends me:  
follow me

At once; 'tis very urgent! she requires  
Your counsel: something perilous and strange  
Occasions her command.

*Sav.* We follow, friend!  
Now, Vane; — your Parliament will plague us  
all!

*Vane.* No Strafford here beside!

*Sav.* If you dare hint  
I had a hand in his betrayal, sir . . .

*Holl.* Nay, find a fitter time for quarrels —  
Pym

Will overmatch the best of you; and, think,  
The Queen!

*Vane.* Come on, then: understand, I loathe  
Strafford as much as any — but his use!  
To keep off Pym, to screen a friend or two,  
I would we had reserved him yet awhile.

## SCENE II. *Whitehall.*

*The QUEEN and Lady CARLISLE.*

*Queen.* It cannot be.

*Lady Car.* It is so.

*Queen.* Why, the House  
Have hardly met.

*Lady Car.* They met for that.

*Queen.* No, no!  
Meet to impeach Lord Strafford? 'T is a jest.

*Lady Car.* A bitter one.

*Queen.* Consider! 'T is the House  
We summoned so reluctantly, which nothing  
But the disastrous issue of the war  
Persuaded us to summon. They'll wreak all  
Their spite on us, no doubt; but the old way  
Is to begin by talk of grievances:

They have their grievances to busy them.

*Lady Car.* Pym has begun his speech.

*Queen.* Where's Vane? — That is,  
Pym will impeach Lord Strafford if he leaves  
His Presidency; he's at York, we know,  
Since the Scots beat him: why should he leave  
York?

*Lady Car.* Because the King sent for him.

*Queen.* Ah — but if  
The King did send for him, he let him know  
We had been forced to call a Parliament —

A step which Strafford, now I come to think,  
Was vehement against.

*Lady Car.* The policy  
Escaped him, of first striking Parliaments  
To earth, then setting them upon their feet  
And giving them a sword: but this is idle.  
Did the King send for Strafford? He will come.

*Queen.* And what am I to do?

*Lady Car.* What do? Fail, madam!  
Be ruined for his sake! what matters how,  
So it but stand on record that you made  
An effort, only one?

*Queen.* The King away

At Theobald's!

*Lady Car.* Send for him at once: he must  
Dissolve the House.

*Queen.* Wait till Vane finds the truth  
Of the report: then . . .

*Lady Car.* — It will matter little  
What the King does. Strafford that lends his  
arm

And breaks his heart for you!

(*Sir H. VANE enters.*)

*Vane.* The Commons, madam,  
Are sitting with closed doors. A huge debate,  
No lack of noise; but nothing, I should guess,  
Concerning Strafford: Pym has certainly  
Not spoken yet.

*Queen.* [To Lady CARLISLE.] You hear?

*Lady Car.* I do not hear  
That the King's sent for!

*Vane.* Savile will be able  
To tell you more.

(*HOLLAND enters.*)

*Queen.* The last news, Holland?

*Holl.* Pym  
Is raging like a fire. The whole House means  
To follow him together to Whitehall  
And force the King to give up Strafford.

*Queen.* Strafford?

*Holl.* If they content themselves with Strafford! Laud

Is talked of, Cottington and Windebank too.

Pym has not left out one of them — I would

You heard Pym raging!

*Queen.* Vane, go find the King!  
Tell the King, Vane, the People follow Pym  
To brave us at Whitehall!

(*SAVILE enters.*)

*Sav.* Not to Whitehall —  
'T is to the Lords they go: they seek redress  
On Strafford from his peers — the legal way,  
They call it.

*Queen.* (Wait, Vane!)

*Sav.* But the adage gives  
Long life to threatened men. Strafford can save  
Himself so readily: at York, remember,  
In his own county: what has he to fear?  
The Commons only mean to frighten him  
From leaving York. Surely, he will not come.

*Queen.* Lucy, he will not come!

*Lady Car.* Once more, the King  
Has sent for Strafford. He will come.

*Vane.* Oh doubtless!  
And bring destruction with him: that's his way.  
What but his coming spoilt all Conway's plan?  
The King must take his counsel, choose his  
friends,



Be wholly ruled by him! What's the result? The North that was to rise, Ireland to help, — What came of it? In my poor mind, a fright is no prodigious punishment.

*Lady Car.* A fright?  
Pym will fail worse than Strafford if he thinks To frighten him. [*To the QUEEN.*] You will not save him then?

*Sav.* When something like a charge is made, the King

Will best know how to save him: and 't is clear, While Strafford suffers nothing by the matter, The King may reap advantage: this in question, No dunning you with ship-money complaints!

*Queen.* [*To Lady CARLISLE.*] If we dissolve them, who will pay the army?

Protect us from the insolent Scots?  
*Lady Car.* In truth,

I know not, madam. Strafford's fate concerns Me little: you desired to learn what course Would save him: I obey you.

*Vane.* Notice, too,  
There can't be fairer ground for taking full Revenge — (*Strafford's revengeful*) — than he 'll have

Against his old friend Pym.

*Queen.* Why, he shall claim  
Vengeance on Pym!

*Vane.* And Strafford, who is he  
To 'scape unscathed amid the accidents  
That harass all beside? I, for my part,  
Should look for something of discomfiture  
Had the King trusted me so thoroughly  
And been so paid for it.

*Holl.* He 'll keep at York:  
All will blow over: he 'll return no worse,  
Humbled a little, thankful for a place  
Under as good a man. Oh, we 'll dispense  
With seeing Strafford for a month or two!

(*STRAFFORD enters.*)

*Queen.* You here!  
*Straf.* The King sends for me, madam.

*Queen.* Sir,  
The King . . .

*Straf.* An urgent matter that imports  
the King!

[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] Why, Lucy, what's in  
agitation now,

That all this muttering and shrugging, see,  
Begins at me? They do not speak!

*Lady Car.* 'T is welcome!  
For we are proud of you — happy and proud

To have you with us, Strafford! You were  
stanch

At Durham: you did well there! Had you not  
Been stayed, you might have . . . we said, even

now,  
Our hope's in you!

*Vane.* [*To Lady CARLISLE.*] The Queen  
would speak with you.

*Straf.* Will one of you, his servants here,  
vouchsafe

To signify my presence to the King?

*Sav.* An urgent matter?

*Straf.* None that touches you,  
Lord Savile! Say, it were some treacherous

Sly pitiful intriguing with the Scots —

You would go free, at least! (*They half divine*

My purpose!) Madam, shall I see the King?  
The service I would render, much concerns  
His welfare.

*Queen.* But his Majesty, my lord,  
May not be here, may . . .

*Straf.* Its importance, then,  
Must plead excuse for this withdrawal, madam,  
And for the grief it gives Lord Savile here.

*Queen.* [*Who has been conversing with VANE  
and HOLLAND.*] The King will see you,  
sir!

[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] Mark me: Pym's worst  
Is done by now: he has impeached the Earl,  
Or found the Earl too strong for him, by now.

Let us not seem instructed! We should work  
No good to Strafford, but deform ourselves

With shame in the world's eye. [*To STRAFFORD.*] His Majesty

Has much to say with you.  
*Straf.* Time fleeting, too!

[*To Lady CARLISLE.*] No means of getting  
them away? And She —

What does she whisper? Does she know my  
purpose?

What does she think of it? Get them away!

*Queen.* [*To Lady CARLISLE.*] He comes to  
baffle Pym — he thinks the danger

Far off: tell him no word of it! a time  
For help will come; we 'll not be wanting then.

Keep him in play, Lucy — you, self-possessed  
And calm! [*To STRAFFORD.*] To spare your

lordship some delay  
I will myself acquaint the King. [*To LADY  
CARLISLE.*] Beware!

[*The QUEEN, VANE, HOLLAND, and SAVILE go out.*  
*Straf.* She knows it?

*Lady Car.* Tell me, Strafford!  
*Straf.* Afterward!

This moment's the great moment of all time.  
She knows my purpose?

*Lady Car.* Thoroughly: just now  
She bade me hide it from you.

*Straf.* Quick, dear child,  
The whole o' the scheme?

*Lady Car.* (Ah, he would learn if they  
Connive at Pym's procedure! Could they but

Have once apprised the King! But there's no  
time

For falsehood, now.) Strafford, the whole is  
known.

*Straf.* Known and approved?

*Lady Car.* Hardly discountenanced.

*Straf.* And the King — say, the King con-  
sents as well?

*Lady Car.* The King's not yet informed,  
but will not dare

To interpose.  
*Straf.* What need to wait him, then?

He 'll sanction it! I stayed, child, tell him,  
long!

It vexed me to the soul — this waiting here.  
You know him, there's no counting on the

King.  
Tell him I waited long!

*Lady Car.* (What can he mean?  
Rejoice at the King's hollowness?)

*Straf.* I knew  
They would be glad of it, — all over once,

I knew they would be glad: but he 'd contrive,  
The Queen and he, to mar, by helping it,  
An angel's making.

*Lady Car.* (Is he mad?) Dear Strafford,  
You were not wont to look so happy.

*Straf.* Sweet,  
I tried obedience thoroughly. I took  
The King's wild plan: of course, ere I could  
reach

My army, Conway ruined it. I drew  
The wrecks together, raised all heaven and  
earth,

And would have fought the Scots: the King at  
once

Made truce with them. Then, Lucy, then,  
dear child,

God put it in my mind to love, serve, die  
For Charles, but never to obey him more!

While he endured their insolence at Ripon  
I fell on them at Durham. But you'll tell

The King I waited? All the anteroom  
Is filled with my adherents.

*Lady Car.* Strafford — Strafford,  
What daring act is this you hint?

*Straf.* No, no!  
'Tis here, not daring if you knew? all here!

[*Drawing papers from his breast.*  
Full proof; see, ample proof — does the Queen  
know

I have such damning proof? Bedford and  
Essex,

Brooke, Warwick, Savile (did you notice Sa-  
vile?

The simper that I spoil?), Saye, Mandeville —  
Sold to the Scots, body and soul, by Pym!

*Lady Car.* Great heaven!  
*Straf.* From Savile and his lords, to Pym

And his losels, crushed! — Pym shall not ward  
the blow

Nor Savile creep aside from it! The Crew  
And the Cabal — I crush them!

*Lady Car.* And you go —  
Strafford, — and now you go? —

*Straf.* — About no work  
In the background, I promise you! I go

Straight to the House of Lords to claim these  
knaves,

Mainwaring!  
*Lady Car.* Stay — stay, Strafford!

*Straf.* She'll return,  
The Queen — some little project of her own!

No time to lose: the King takes fright perhaps.  
*Lady Car.* Pym's strong, remember!

*Straf.* Very strong, as fits  
The Faction's head — with no offence to Hamp-

den,  
Vane, Rudyard, and my loving Hollis: one

And all they lodge within the Tower to-night  
In just equality. Bryan! Mainwaring!

[*Many of his Adherents enter.*  
The Peers debate just now (a lucky chance)

On the Scots' war; my visit's opportune.  
When all is over, Bryan, you proceed

To Ireland: these dispatches, mark me, Bryan,  
Are for the Deputy, and these for Ormond:

We want the army here — my army, raised  
At such a cost, that should have done such good,

And was inactive all the time! no matter,

We'll find a use for it. Willis . . . or, no —  
you!

You, friend, make haste to York: bear this, at  
once . . .

Or, — better stay for form's sake, see yourself  
The news you carry. You remain with me

To execute the Parliament's command,  
Mainwaring! Help to seize these lesser knaves,

Take care there's no escaping at backdoors:  
I'll not have one escape, mind me — not one!

I seem revengeful, Lucy? Did you know  
What these men dare!

*Lady Car.* It is so much they dare!  
*Straf.* I proved that long ago; my turn is  
now.

Keep sharp watch, Goring, on the citizens!  
Observe who harbors any of the brood

That scramble off: be sure they smart for it!  
Our coffers are but lean.

And you, child, too,  
Shall have your task; deliver this to Laud.

Laud will not be the slowest in my praise:  
"Thorough," he'll cry! — Foolish, to be so  
glad!

This life is gay and glowing, after all:  
'Tis worth while, Lucy, having foes like mine

Just for the bliss of crushing them. To-day  
Is worth the living for.

*Lady Car.* That reddening brow!  
You seem . . .

*Straf.* Well — do I not? I would be well —  
I could not but be well on such a day!

And, this day ended, 't is of slight import  
How long the ravaged frame subjects the soul

In Strafford.  
*Lady Car.* Noble Strafford!

*Straf.* No farewell!  
I'll see you anon, to-morrow — the first thing.

— If She should come to stay me!  
*Lady Car.* Go — 't is nothing —

Only my heart that swells: it has been thus  
Ere now: go, Strafford!

*Straf.* To-night, then, let it be.  
I must see Him: you, the next after Him.

I'll tell you how Pym looked. Follow me,  
friends!

You, gentlemen, shall see a sight this hour  
To talk of all your lives. Close after me!

"My friend of friends!"  
[*STRAFFORD and the rest go out.*

*Lady Car.* The King — ever the King!  
No thought of one beside, whose little word

Unveils the King to him — one word from me,  
Which yet I do not breathe!

Ah, have I spared  
Strafford a pang, and shall I seek reward

Beyond that memory? Surely too, some way  
He is the better for my love. No, no —

He would not look so joyous — I'll believe  
His very eye would never sparkle thus,

Had I not prayed for him this long, long while.

SCENE III. *The Ante-chamber of the House of Lords.*  
*Many of the Presbyterian Party. The Adherents of*

STRAFFORD, etc.

*A Group of Presbyterians.* — 1. I tell you he  
struck Maxwell: Maxwell sought

To stay the Earl ; he struck him and passed on.  
2. Fear as you may, keep a good countenance  
Before these rufflers.

3.                               Strafford here the first,  
With the great army at his back !

4.                               No doubt.  
I would Pym had made haste : that's Bryan,  
hush—

The gallant pointing.

*Strafford's Followers.* — 1. Mark these wor-  
thies, now !

2. A goodly gathering ! "Where the carcass  
is

There shall the eagles" — What's the rest ?

3.                               For eagles  
Say crows.

*A Presbyterian.* Stand back, sirs !

*One of Strafford's Followers.* Are we in  
Geneva ?

*A Presbyterian.* No, nor in Ireland ; we have  
leave to breathe.

*One of Strafford's Followers.* Truly ? Be-  
hold how privileged we be

That serve "King Pym" ! There's Some-one  
at Whitehall

Who skulks obscure ; but Pym struts . . .

*The Presbyterian.*                               Nearer.

*A Follower of Strafford.*                               Higher,  
We look to see him. [*To his Companions.*] I'm  
to have St. John

In charge ; was he among the knaves just now  
That followed Pym within there ?

*Another.*                               The gaunt man

Talking with Rudyard. Did the Earl expect  
Pym at his heels so fast ? I like it not.

(MAXWELL enters.)

*Another.* Why, man, they rush into the net !  
Here's Maxwell—

Ha, Maxwell ? How the brethren flock around  
The fellow ! Do you feel the Earl's hand yet  
Upon your shoulder, Maxwell ?

*Maxwell.*                               Gentlemen,  
Stand back ! a great thing passes here.

*A Follower of Strafford.* [*To another.*] The  
Earl

Is at his work ! [*To M.*] Say, Maxwell, what  
great thing !

Speak out ! [*To a Presbyterian.*] Friend, I've  
a kindness for you ! Friend,

I've seen you with St. John : O stockishness !

Wear such a ruff, and never call to mind

St. John's head in a charger ? How, the plague,  
Not laugh ?

*Another.* Say, Maxwell, what great thing !

*Another.*                               Nay, wait :

The jest will be to wait.

*First.*                               And who's to bear

These demure hypocrites ? You'd swear they  
came . . .

Came . . . just as we come !

[*A Puritan enters hastily and without observing STRAF-  
FORD's Followers.*

*The Puritan.*                               How goes on the work ?

Has Pym . . .

*A Follower of Strafford.* The secret's out at  
last. Aha,

The carrion's scented ! Welcome, crow the  
first !

Gorge merrily, you with the blinking eye !

"King Pym has fallen !"

*The Puritan.*                               Pym ?

*A Strafford.*                               Pym !

*A Presbyterian.*                               Only Pym ?

*Many of Strafford's Followers.* No, brother,  
not Pym only ; Vane as well,

Rudyard as well, Hampden, St. John as well !

*A Presbyterian.* My mind misgives : can it be  
true ?

*Another.*                               Lost ! Lost !

*A Strafford.* Say we true, Maxwell ?

*The Puritan.*                               Pride before destruction,

A haughty spirit goeth before a fall.

*Many of Strafford's Followers.* Ah now ! The  
very thing ! A word in season !

A golden apple in a silver picture

To greet Pym as he passes !

[*The doors at the back begin to open, noise and light  
issuing.*

*Max.*                               Stand back, all !

*Many of the Presbyterians.* I hold with Pym !  
And I !

*Strafford's Followers.*                               Now for the text !

He comes ! Quick !

*The Puritan.* How hath the oppressor ceased !

The Lord hath broken the staff of the wicked !

The sceptre of the rulers, he who smote

The people in wrath with a continual stroke,

That ruled the nations in his anger — he

Is persecuted and none hindereth !

[*The doors open, and STRAFFORD issues in the greatest  
disorder, and amid cries from within of "Void the  
House !"*

*Straf.* Impeach me ! Pym ! I never struck, I  
think,

The felon on that calm insulting mouth

When it proclaimed — Pym's mouth proclaimed  
me . . . God !

Was it a word, only a word that held

The outrageous blood back on my heart —  
which beats !

Which beats ! Some one word — "Traitor,"  
did he say,

Bending that eye, brimful of bitter fire,  
Upon me ?

*Max.* In the Commons' name, their servant  
Demands Lord Strafford's sword.

*Straf.*                               What did you say ?

*Max.* The Commons bid me ask your lord-  
ship's sword.

*Straf.* Let us go forth : follow me, gentlemen !  
Draw your swords too : cut any down that bar-  
rus.

On the King's service ! Maxwell, clear the way !  
[*The Presbyterians prepare to dispute his passage.*

*Straf.* I stay : the King himself shall see me  
here.

Your tablets, fellow !

[*To MAINWARING.*] Give that to the King !

Yes, Maxwell, for the next half-hour, let be !  
Nay, you shall take my sword !

[MAXWELL advances to take it.

Or, no — not that !

Their blood, perhaps, may wipe out all thus far.  
All up to that — not that ! Why, friend, you see

When the King lays your head beneath my foot  
It will not pay for that. Go, all of you !



*Max.* I dare, my lord, to disobey : none stir !  
*Straf.* This gentle Maxwell ! — Do not touch him, Bryan !

[*To the Presbyterians.*] Whichever cur of you will carry this

Escapes his fellow's fate. None saves his life ? None ?

[*Cries from within of "STRAFFORD !"*] Slingsby, I've loved you at least : make haste ! Stab me ! I have not time to tell you why.

You then, my Bryan ! Mainwaring, you then ! Is it because I spoke so hastily

At Allerton ? The King had vexed me. You ! — Not even you ? If I live over this,

The King is sure to have your heads, you know ! But what if I can't live this minute through ?

Pym, who is there with his pursuing smile !

[*Louder cries of "STRAFFORD !"*] The King ! I troubled him, stood in the way

Of his negotiations, was the one Great obstacle to peace, the Enemy

Of Scotland : and he sent for me, from York, My safety guaranteed — having prepared

A Parliament — I see ! And at Whitehall The Queen was whispering with Vane — I see

The trap ! [Tearing off the George.]

I tread a gewgaw underfoot, And cast a memory from me. One stroke, now !

[*His own Adherents disarm him. Renewed cries of "STRAFFORD !"*]

England ! I see thy arm in this and yield. Pray you now — Pym awaits me — pray you now !

[*STRAFFORD reaches the doors : they open wide. HAMPDEN and a crowd discovered, and, at the bar, PYM standing apart. As STRAFFORD kneels, the scene shuts.*]

## ACT IV

## SCENE I. Whitehall.

*The KING, the QUEEN, HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE. (VANE, HOLLAND, SAVILE, in the background.)*

*Lady Car.* Answer them, Hollis, for his sake ! One word !

*Cha.* [*To HOLLIS.*] You stand, silent and cold, as though I were

Deceiving you — my friend, my playfellow Of other times. What wonder after all ?

Just so, I dreamed my People loved me.

*Hol.* Sir, It is yourself that you deceive, not me.

You'll quit me comforted, your mind made up That, since you've talked thus much and

grieved thus much, All you can do for Strafford has been done.

*Queen.* If you kill Strafford — (come, we grant you leave,

Suppose) —

*Hol.* I may withdraw, sir ?

*Lady Car.* Hear them out ! 'Tis the last chance for Strafford ! Hear them out !

*Hol.* "If we kill Strafford" — on the eighteenth day

Of Strafford's trial — "We !"

*Cha.* Pym, my good Hollis —

Pym, I should say !

*Hol.* Ah, true — sir, pardon me !

You witness our proceedings every day ; But the screened gallery, I might have guessed,

Admits of such a partial glimpse at us, Pym takes up all the room, shuts out the view.

Still, on my honor, sir, the rest of the place Is not unoccupied. The Commons sit

— That's England ; Ireland sends, and Scotland too,

Their representatives ; the Peers that judge Are easily distinguished ; one remarks

The People here and there : but the close curtain

Must hide so much !

*Queen.* Acquaint your insolent crew, This day the curtain shall be dashed aside !

It served a purpose.

*Hol.* Think ! This very day ? Ere Strafford rises to defend himself ?

*Cha.* I will defend him, sir ! — sanction the past

This day : it ever was my purpose. Rage At me, not Strafford !

*Lady Car.* Nobly ! — will he not Do nobly ?

*Hol.* Sir, you will do honestly ; And, for that deed, I too would be a king.

*Cha.* Only, to do this now ! — "deaf" (in your style)

"To subjects' prayers," — I must oppose them now !

It seems their will the trial should proceed, — So palpably their will !

*Hol.* You peril much, But it were no bright moment save for that,

Strafford, your prime support, the sole roof-tree

Which props this quaking House of Privilege, (Flood comes, winds beat, and see — the treacherous sand !)

Doubtless, if the mere putting forth an arm Could save him, you'd save Strafford.

*Cha.* And they dare Consummate calmly this great wrong ! No hope ?

This ineffaceable wrong ! No pity then ?

*Hol.* No plague in store for perfidy ? — Farewell !

You call me, sir — [*To Lady CARLISLE.*] You, lady, bade me come

To save the Earl : I came, thank God for it, To learn how far such perfidy can go !

You, sir, concert with me on saving him Who have just ruined Strafford !

*Cha.* I ? — and how ?

*Hol.* Eighteen days long he throws, one after one,

Pym's charges back : a blind moth-eaten law ! — He'll break from it at last : and whom to thank ?

The mouse that gnawed the lion's net for him Got a good friend, — but he, the other mouse,

That looked on while the lion freed himself — Fared he so well, does any fable say ?

*Cha.* What can you mean ?

*Hol.* Pym never could have proved Strafford's design of bringing up the troops

To force this kingdom to obedience: Vane — Your servant, not our friend, has proved it.

*Cha.* Vane?

*Hol.* This day. Did Vane deliver up or no Those notes which, furnished by his son to Pym, Seal Strafford's fate?

*Cha.* Sir, as I live, I know Nothing that Vane has done! What treason next?

I wash my hands of it. Vane, speak the truth! Ask Vane himself!

*Hol.* I will not speak to Vane, Who speak to Pym and Hampden every day.

*Queen.* Speak to Vane's master then! What gain to him Were Strafford's death?

*Hol.* Ha? Strafford cannot turn As you, sir, sit there — bid you forth, demand If every hateful act were not set down In his commission? — whether you contrived Or no, that all the violence should seem His work, the gentle ways — your own, — his part,

To counteract the King's kind impulses — While . . . but you know what he could say! And then

He might produce — mark, sir! — a certain charge

To set the King's express command aside, If need were, and be blameless. He might add . . .

*Cha.* Enough!

*Hol.* — Who bade him break the Parliament,

Find some pretence for setting up sword-law!

*Queen.* Retire!

*Cha.* Once more, whatever Vane dared do, I know not: he is rash, a fool — I know Nothing of Vane!

*Hol.* Well — I believe you. Sir, Believe me, in return, that . . . [*Turning to Lady CARLISLE.*] Gentle lady, The few words I would say, the stones might hear

Sooner than these, — I rather speak to you, You, with the heart! The question, trust me, takes

Another shape, to-day: not, if the King Or England shall succumb, — but, who shall pay The forfeit, Strafford or his master. Sir, You loved me once: think on my warning now!

[*Goes out.*]

*Cha.* On you and on your warning both! — Carlisle!

That paper!

*Queen.* But consider!

*Cha.* Give it me!

There, signed — will that content you? Do not speak!

You have betrayed me, Vane! See! any day, According to the tenor of that paper, He bids your brother bring the army up, Strafford shall head it and take full revenge. Seek Strafford! Let him have the same, before He rises to defend himself!

*Queen.* In truth?

That your shrewd Hollis should have worked a change

Like this! You, late reluctant . . .

*Cha.* Say, Carlisle,

Your brother Percy brings the army up, Falls on the Parliament — (I'll think of you, My Hollis!) say, we plotted long — 't is mine, The scheme is mine, remember! Say, I cursed Vane's folly in your hearing! If the Earl Does rise to do us shame, the fault shall lie With you, Carlisle!

*Lady Car.* Nay, fear not me! but still That's a bright moment, sir, you throw away. Tear down the veil and save him!

*Queen.* Go, Carlisle!

*Lady Car.* (I shall see Strafford — speak to him: my heart

Must never beat so, then! And if I tell The truth? What's gained by falsehood?

There they stand

Whose trade it is, whose life it is! How vain To gild such rottenness! Strafford shall know, Thoroughly know them!)

*Queen.* Trust to me! [*To CARLISLE.*]

Carlisle,

You seem inclined, alone of all the Court, To serve poor Strafford: this bold plan of yours Merits much praise, and yet . . .

*Lady Car.* Time presses, madam.

*Queen.* Yet — may it not be something premature?

Strafford defends himself to-day — reserves Some wondrous effort, one may well suppose!

*Lady Car.* Ay, Hollis hints as much.

*Cha.* Why linger then?

Haste with the scheme — my scheme: I shall be there

To watch his look. Tell him I watch his look!

*Queen.* Stay, we'll precede you!

*Lady Car.* At your pleasure.

*Cha.* Say —

Say, Vane is hardly ever at Whitehall!

I shall be there, remember!

*Lady Car.* Doubt me not.

*Cha.* On our return, Carlisle, we wait you here!

*Lady Car.* I'll bring his answer. Sir, I follow you.

(Prove the King faithless, and I take away All Strafford cares to live for: let it be — 'T is the King's scheme!)

My Strafford, I can save, Nay, I have saved you, yet am scarce content, Because my poor name will not cross your mind. Strafford, how much I am unworthy you!)

SCENE II. A passage adjoining Westminster Hall.

Many groups of Spectators of the Trial. Officers of the Court, etc.

1st Spec. More crowd than ever! Not know Hampden, man?

That's he, by Pym, Pym that is speaking now. No, truly, if you look so high you'll see Little enough of either!

2d Spec. Stay: Pym's arm Points like a prophet's rod.

3d Spec. Ay, ay, we've heard Some pretty speaking: yet the Earl escapes.

4th Spec. I fear it: just a foolish word or two

About his children — and we see, forsooth,  
Not England's foe in Strafford, but the man  
Who, sick, half-blind . . .

*2d Spec.* What's that Pym's saying now  
Which makes the curtains flutter? look! A  
hand

Clutches them. Ah! The King's hand!

*5th Spec.* I had thought  
Pym was not near so tall. What said he,  
friend?

*2d Spec.* "Nor is this way a novel way of  
blood,"

And the Earl turns as if to . . . Look! look!

*Many Spectators.* There!

What ails him? No — he rallies, see — goes on,  
And Strafford smiles. Strange!

*An Officer.* Haselrig!

*Many Spectators.* Friend? Friend?

*The Officer.* Lost, utterly lost: just when  
we looked for Pym

To make a stand against the ill effects

Of the Earl's speech! Is Haselrig without?

Pym's message is to him.

*3d Spec.* Now, said I true?

Will the Earl leave them yet at fault or no?  
*1st Spec.* Never believe it, man! These  
notes of Vane's

Ruin the Earl.

*5th Spec.* A brave end: not a whit  
Less firm, less Pym all over. Then, the trial  
Is closed. No — Strafford means to speak  
again?

*An Officer.* Stand back, there!

*5th Spec.* Why, the Earl is coming hither!  
Before the court breaks up! His brother,  
look, —

You'd say he'd deprecated some fierce act  
In Strafford's mind just now.

*An Officer.* Stand back, I say!

*2d Spec.* Who's the veiled woman that he  
talks with?

*Many Spectators.* Hush —

The Earl! the Earl!

[Enter STRAFFORD, SLINGSBY, and other Secretaries,  
HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE, MAXWELL, BALFOUR, etc.  
STRAFFORD converses with Lady CARLISLE.

*Hol.* So near the end! Be patient —  
Return!

*Straf.* [To his Secretaries.] Here — any-  
where — or, 't is freshest here!

To spend one's April here, the blossom-month:  
Set it down here!

[They arrange a table, papers, etc.

So, Pym can quail, can cower  
Because I glance at him, yet more's to do.

What's to be answered, Slingsby? Let us end!

[To Lady CARLISLE.] Child, I refuse his offer;  
whatsoever

It be! Too late! Tell me no word of him!

'T is something, Hollis, I assure you that —

To stand, sick as you are, some eighteen days

Fighting for life and fame against a pack

Of very curs, that lie through thick and thin,

Eat flesh and bread by wholesale, and can't say

"Strafford" if it would take my life!

*Lady Car.* Be moved!

Glance at the paper!

*Straf.* Already at my heels!

Pym's faulting bloodhounds scent the track  
again.

Peace, child! Now, Slingsby!

[Messengers from LANE and other of STRAFFORD's Coun-  
sel within the Hall are coming and going during the  
Scene.

*Straf.* [setting himself to write and dictate.]

I shall beat you, Hollis!

Do you know that? In spite of St. John's tricks,  
In spite of Pym — your Pym who shrank from  
me!

Eliot would have contrived it otherwise.

[To a Messenger.] In truth? This slip, tell

Lane, contains as much

As I can call to mind about the matter.

Eliot would have disdained . . .

[Calling after the Messenger.] And Radcliffe,  
say,

The only person who could answer Pym,

Is safe in prison, just for that.

Well, well!

It had not been recorded in that case,

I baffled you.

[To Lady CARLISLE.] Nay, child, why look so  
grieved?

All's gained without the King! You saw Pym  
quail?

What shall I do when they acquit me, think  
you,

But tranquilly resume my task as though

Nothing had intervened since I proposed

To call that traitor to account! Such tricks,

Trust me, shall not be played a second time,

Not even against Laud, with his gray hair —

Your good work, Hollis! Peace! To make  
amends,

You, Lucy, shall be here when I impeach

Pym and his fellows.

*Hol.* Wherefore not protest

Against our whole proceeding, long ago?

Why feel indignant now? Why stand this while

Enduring patiently?

*Straf.* Child, I'll tell you —

You, and not Pym — you, the slight graceful girl

Tall for a flowering lily, and not Hollis —

Why I stood patient! I was fool enough

To see the will of England in Pym's will;

To fear, myself had wronged her, and to wait

Her judgment: when, behold, in place of it . . .

[To a Messenger who whispers.] Tell Lane to

answer no such question! Law, —

I grapple with their law! I'm here to try

My actions by their standard, not my own!

Their law allowed that levy: what's the rest

To Pym, or Lane, any but God and me?

*Lady Car.* The King's so weak! Secure

this chance! 'T was Vane,

Never forget, who furnished Pym the notes . . .

*Straf.* Fit, — very fit, those precious notes

of Vane.

To close the Trial worthily! I feared

Some spice of nobleness might linger yet

And spoil the character of all the past.

Vane eased me . . . and I will go back and say

As much — to Pym, to England! Follow me,

I have a word to say! There, my defence

Is done!

Stay! why be proud? Why care to own



My gladness, my surprise? — Nay, not surprise!  
Wherefore insist upon the little pride  
Of doing all myself, and sparing him  
The pain? Child, say the triumph is my King's!  
When Pym grew pale, and trembled, and sank  
down,

One image was before me: could I fail?  
Child, care not for the past, so indistinct,  
Obscure — there's nothing to forgive in it,  
'Tis so forgotten! From this day begins  
A new life, founded on a new belief  
In Charles.

*Hol.* In Charles? Rather believe in Pym!  
And here he comes in proof! Appeal to Pym!  
Say how unfair . . .

*Straff.* To Pym? I would say nothing!  
I would not look upon Pym's face again.

*Lady Car.* Stay, let me have to think I  
pressed your hand!

[STRAFFORD and his Friends go out.]

[Enter HAMPDEN and VANE.]

*Vane.* O Hampden, save the great misguided  
man!  
Plead Strafford's cause with Pym! I have re-  
marked

He moved no muscle when we all declaimed  
Against him: you had but to breathe — he turned  
Those kind calm eyes upon you.

[Enter PYM, the Solicitor-General ST. JOHN, the Man-  
agers of the Trial, FIENNES, RUDYARD, etc.]

*Rud.* Horrible!  
Till now all hearts were with you: I withdraw  
For one. Too horrible! But we mistake  
Your purpose, Pym: you cannot snatch away  
The last spar from the drowning man.

*Fien.* He talks  
With St. John of it — see, how quietly!  
[To other Presbyterians.] You'll join us?

Strafford may deserve the worst:  
But this new course is monstrous. Vane, take  
heart!

This Bill of his Attainder shall not have  
One true man's hand to it.

*Vane.* Consider, Pym!  
Confront your Bill, your own Bill: what is  
it?

You cannot catch the Earl on any charge, —  
No man will say the law has hold of him  
On any charge; and therefore you resolve  
To take the general sense on his desert,  
As though no law existed, and we met  
To found one. You refer to Parliament  
To speak its thought upon the abortive mass  
Of half-borne-out assertions, dubious hints  
Hereafter to be cleared, distortions — ay,  
And wild inventions. Every man is saved  
The task of fixing any single charge  
On Strafford: he has but to see in him  
The enemy of England.

*Pym.* A right scruple!  
I have heard some called England's enemy  
With less consideration.

*Vane.* Pity me!  
Indeed you make me think I was your friend!  
I who have murdered Strafford, how remove  
That memory from me?

*Pym.* I absolve you, Vane.  
Take you no care for aught that you have done!

*Vane.* John Hampden, not this Bill! Re-  
ject this Bill!

He staggers through the ordeal: let him go,  
Strew no fresh fire before him! Plead for us!  
When Strafford spoke, your eyes were thick  
with tears!

*Hamp.* England speaks louder: who are we,  
to play

The generous pardoner at her expense,  
Magnanimously waive advantages,  
And, if he conquer us, applaud his skill?

*Vane.* He was your friend.

*Pym.* I have heard that before.

*Fien.* And England trusts you.  
*Hamp.* Shame be his, who turns

The opportunity of serving her  
She trusts him with, to his own mean account —  
Who would look nobly frank at her expense!

*Fien.* I never thought it could have come to  
this.

*Pym.* But I have made myself familiar,  
Fiennes,

With this one thought — have walked, and sat,  
and slept,

This thought before me. I have done such  
things,

Being the chosen man that should destroy  
The traitor. You have taken up this thought  
To play with, for a gentle stimulant,  
To give a dignity to idler life

By the dim prospect of emprise to come,  
But ever with the softening, sure belief,  
That all would end some strange way right at  
last.

*Fien.* Had we made out some weightier  
charge!

*Pym.* You say  
That these are petty charges: can we come  
To the real charge at all? There he is safe  
In tyranny's stronghold. Apostasy  
Is not a crime, treachery not a crime:  
The cheek burns, the blood tingles, when you  
speak

The words, but where's the power to take re-  
venge

Upon them? We must make occasion serve, —  
The oversight shall pay for the main sin  
That mocks us.

*Rud.* But this unexampled course,  
This Bill!

*Pym.* By this, we roll the clouds away  
Of precedent and custom, and at once  
Bid the great beacon-light God sets in all,  
The conscience of each bosom, shine upon  
The guilt of Strafford: each man lay his hand  
Upon his breast, and judge!

*Vane.* I only see  
Strafford, nor pass his corpse for all beyond!

*Rud.* and others. Forgive him! He would  
join us, now he finds

What the King counts reward! The pardon,  
too,

Should be your own. Yourself should bear to  
Strafford

The pardon of the Commons.  
*Pym.* Meet him? Strafford?

Have we to meet once more, then? Be it so!  
And yet — the prophecy seemed half fulfilled

When, at the Trial, as he gazed, my youth,  
Our friendship, divers thoughts came back at  
once

And left me, for a time . . . 'Tis very sad !  
To-morrow we discuss the points of law  
With Lane — to-morrow ?

*Vane.* Not before to-morrow —  
So, time enough ! I knew you would relent !

*Pym.* The next day, Hasebrig, you introduce  
The Bill of his Attainder. Pray for me !

SCENE III. *Whitehall.*

*The KING.*

*Cha.* My loyal servant ! To defend himself  
Thus irresistibly,—withholding aught  
That seemed to implicate us !

We have done  
Less gallantly by Strafford. Well, the future  
Must recompense the past.

She tarries long.  
I understand you, Strafford, now !

The scheme —  
Carlisle's mad scheme — he 'll sanction it, I fear,  
For love of me. 'T was too precipitate :  
Before the army's fairly on its march,  
He 'll be at large : no matter.

Well, Carlisle ?

(*Enter PYM.*)

*Pym.* Fear me not, sir :—my mission is to  
save,  
This time.

*Cha.* To break thus on me ! unannounced !

*Pym.* It is of Strafford I would speak.

*Cha.* No more  
Of Strafford ! I have heard too much from  
you.

*Pym.* I spoke, sir, for the People ; will you  
hear

A word upon my own account ?

*Cha.* Of Strafford ?  
(So turns the tide already ? Have we tamed  
The insolent brawler ? — Strafford's eloquence  
Is swift in its effect.) Lord Strafford, sir,  
Has spoken for himself.

*Pym.* Sufficiently.  
I would apprise you of the novel course  
The People take : the Trial fails.

*Cha.* Yes, yes :  
We are aware, sir : for your part in it  
Means shall be found to thank you.

*Pym.* Pray you, read  
This schedule ! I would learn from your own  
mouth

— (It is a matter much concerning me) —  
Whether, if two Estates of us concede  
The death of Strafford, on the grounds set forth  
Within that parchment, you, sir, can resolve  
To grant your own consent to it. This Bill  
Is framed by me. If you determine, sir,  
That England's manifested will should guide  
Your judgment, ere another week such will  
Shall manifest itself. If not, — I cast  
Aside the measure.

*Cha.* You can hinder, then,  
The introduction of this Bill ?

*Pym.* I can.

*Cha.* He is my friend, sir : I have wronged  
him ; mark you,

Had I not wronged him, this might be. You  
think

Because you hate the Earl . . . (turn not away,  
We know you hate him) — no one else could love  
Strafford : but he has saved me, some affirm.

Think of his pride ! And do you know one  
strange,

One frightful thing ? We all have used the man  
As though a drudge of ours, with not a source  
Of happy thoughts except in us ; and yet  
Strafford has wife and children, household cares,  
Just as if we had never been. Ah, sir,  
You are moved, even you, a solitary man  
Wed to your cause — to England if you will !

*Pym.* Yes—think, my soul — to England !  
Draw not back !

*Cha.* Prevent that Bill, sir ! All your course  
seems fair

Till now. Why, in the end, 't is I should sign  
The warrant for his death ! You have said much  
I ponder on ; I never meant, indeed,  
Strafford should serve me any more. I take  
The Commons' counsel ; but this Bill is yours —  
Nor worthy of its leader : care not, sir,  
For that, however ! I will quite forget  
You named it to me. You are satisfied ?

*Pym.* Listen to me, sir ! Eliot laid his hand,  
Wasted and white, upon my forehead once ;  
Wentworth — he's gone now ! — has talked on,  
whole nights,

And I beside him ; Hampden loves me ; sir,  
How can I breathe and not wish England well,  
And her King well ?

*Cha.* I thank you, sir, who leave  
That King his servant. Thanks, sir !

*Pym.* Let me speak !  
— Who may not speak again ; whose spirit yearns  
For a cool night after this weary day ;  
— Who would not have my soul turn sicker yet  
In a new task, more fatal, more august,  
More full of England's utter weal or woe.

I thought, sir, could I find myself with you,  
After this trial, alone, as man to man —  
I might say something, warn you, pray you,  
save —

Mark me, King Charles, save — you !  
But God must do it. Yet I warn you, sir —  
(With Strafford's faded eyes yet full on me)  
As you would have no deeper question moved,  
— "How long the Many must endure the One,"  
Assure me, sir, if England give assent  
To Strafford's death, you will not interfere !  
Or —

*Cha.* God forsakes me. I am in a net  
And cannot move. Let all be as you say !

(*Enter Lady CARLISLE.*)

*Lady Car.* He loves you — looking beautiful  
with joy

Because you sent me ! he would spare you all  
The pain ! he never dreamed you would forsake  
Your servant in the evil day — nay, see  
Your scheme returned ! That generous heart  
of his !

He needs it not — or, needing it, disdains  
A course that might endanger you — you, sir,  
Whom Strafford from his inmost soul . . .

[*Seeing Pym.*] Well met!  
No fear for Strafford! All that's true and brave  
On your own side shall help us: we are now  
Stronger than ever.

Ha — what, sir, is this?  
All is not well! What parchment have you  
there?

*Pym.* Sir, much is saved us both.  
*Lady Car.* This Bill! Your lip  
Whitens — you could not read one line to me  
Your voice would falter so!

*Pym.* No recreant yet!  
The great word went from England to my soul,  
And I arose. The end is very near.

*Lady Car.* I am to save him! All have  
shrunk beside;

'Tis only I am left. Heaven will make strong  
The hand now as the heart. Then let both die!

## ACT V

SCENE I. *Whitehall.*

HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE.

*Hol.* Tell the King then! Come in with me!  
*Lady Car.* Not so!

He must not hear till it succeeds.

*Hol.* Succeed?  
No dream was half so vain — you'd rescue Strafford

And outwit Pym! I cannot tell you . . . lady,  
The block pursues me, and the hideous show.  
To-day . . . is it to-day? And all the while  
He's sure of the King's pardon. Think, I have  
To tell this man he is to die. The King  
May rend his hair, for me! I'll not see Strafford

*Lady Car.* Only, if I succeed, remember —  
Charles

Has saved him. He would hardly value life  
Unless his gift. My stanch friends wait. Go in —  
You must go in to Charles!

*Hol.* And all beside  
Left Strafford long ago. The King has signed  
The warrant for his death! the Queen was  
sick

Of the eternal subject. For the Court, —  
The Trial was amusing in its way,  
Only too much of it: the Earl withdrew  
In time. But you, fragile, alone, so young,  
Amid rude mercenaries — you devise  
A plan to save him! Even though it fails,  
What shall reward you!

*Lady Car.* I may go, you think,  
To France with him? And you reward me,  
friend,

Who lived with Strafford even from his youth  
Before he set his heart on state-affairs  
And they bent down that noble brow of his.  
I have learned somewhat of his latter life,  
And all the future I shall know: but, Hollis,  
I ought to make his youth my own as well.  
Tell me, — when he is saved!

*Hol.* My gentle friend,  
He should know all and love you, but 'tis vain!

*Lady Car.* Love? no — too late now! Let  
him love the King!

'Tis the King's scheme! I have your word,  
remember!

We'll keep the old delusion up. But, quick!  
Quick! Each of us has work to do, beside!  
Go to the King! I hope — Hollis — I hope!  
Say nothing of my scheme! Hush, while we  
speak

Think where he is! Now for my gallant friends!

*Hol.* Where he is? Calling wildly upon

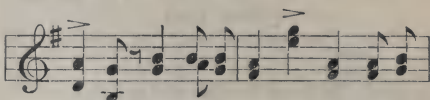
Charles,  
Guessing his fate, pacing the prison-floor.  
Let the King tell him! I'll not look on Strafford.

SCENE II. *The Tower.*STRAFFORD sitting with his Children. *They sing.*

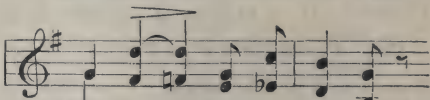
O bell' andare  
Per barca in mare,  
Verso la sera  
Di Primavera!

*Andante.*

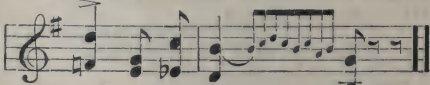
O bell' an-da-re, Per bar-ca in



ma-re, Ver-so la se-ra, Di pri-ma-



ve-ra, O bell' an-da-re,

*slentando e diminuendo.*

O bell' an-da-re.

*William.* The boat's in the broad moonlight  
all this while —

Verso la sera  
Di Primavera!

And the boat shoots from underneath the moon  
Into the shadowy distance; only still  
You hear the dipping oar —

Verso la sera,

And faint, and fainter, and then all's quite gone,  
Music and light and all, like a lost star.

*Anne.* But you should sleep, father: you  
were to sleep.

*Straf.* I do sleep, Anne; or if not — you must  
know

There's such a thing as . . .



*Wil.* You're too tired to sleep?  
*Straf.* It will come by-and-by and all day long,  
 In that old quiet house I told you of:

We sleep safe there.

*Anne.* Why not in Ireland?

*Straf.* No!

Too many dreams!—That song's for Venice,  
*William:*

You know how Venice looks upon the map—  
 Isles that the mainland hardly can let go?

*Wil.* You've been to Venice, father?

*Straf.* I was young, then.

*Wil.* A city with no King; that's why I like  
 Even a song that comes from Venice.

*Straf.* William?

*Wil.* Oh, I know why! Anne, do you love  
 the King?

But I'll see Venice for myself one day.

*Straf.* See many lands, boy—England last  
 of all,—

That way you'll love her best.

*Wil.* Why do men say

You sought to ruin her, then?

*Straf.* Ah,—they say that.

*Wil.* Why?

*Straf.* I suppose they must have words to say,  
 As you to sing.

*Anne.* But they make songs beside:  
 Last night I heard one, in the street beneath,  
 That called you . . . Oh, the names!

*Wil.* Don't mind her, father!  
 They soon left off when I cried out to them.

*Straf.* We shall so soon be out of it, my boy!  
 'Tis not worth while: who heeds a foolish song?

*Wil.* Why, not the King.

*Straf.* Well: it has been the fate  
 Of better; and yet,—wherefore not feel sure  
 That Time, who in the twilight comes to mend  
 All the fantastic day's caprice, consign  
 To the low ground once more the ignoble Term,  
 And raise the Genius on his orb again,—  
 That Time will do me right?

*Anne.* (Shall we sing, William?  
 He does not look thus when we sing.)

*Straf.* For Ireland,  
 Something is done: too little, but enough  
 To show what might have been.

*Wil.* (I have no heart  
 To sing now! Anne, how very sad he looks!  
 Oh, I so hate the King for all he says!)

*Straf.* Forsook them? What, the common  
 songs will run

That I forsook the People? Nothing more?  
 Ay, Fame, the busy scribe, will pause, no doubt,  
 Turning a deaf ear to her thousand slaves

Noisy to be enrolled,—will register  
 The curious glosses, subtle notices,  
 Ingenious clearings-up one fain would see

Beside that plain inscription of The Name—  
 The Patriot Pym, or the Apostate Strafford!

[The Children resume their song timidly, but break off.]

(Enter Hollis and an Attendant.)  
*Straf.* No,—Hollis? in good time!—Who  
 is he?

*Hol.* One  
 That must be present.

*Straf.* Ah—I understand.  
 They will not let me see poor Laud alone.

How politic! They'd use me by degrees  
 To solitude: and, just as you came in,  
 I was solicitous what life to lead  
 When Strafford's "not so much as Constable  
 In the King's service." Is there any means  
 To keep one's self awake? What would you do  
 After this bustle, Hollis, in my place?

*Hol.* Strafford!

*Straf.* Observe, not but that Pym and you  
 Will find me news enough—news I shall hear  
 Under a quince-tree by a fish-pond side  
 At Wentworth. Garrard must be re-engaged  
 My newsman. Or, a better project now—  
 What if when all's consummated, and the Saints  
 Reign, and the Senate's work goes swim-  
 ingly,—

What if I venture up, some day, unseen,  
 To saunter through the Town, notice how Pym,  
 Your Tribune, likes Whitehall, drop quietly  
 Into a tavern, hear a point discussed,  
 As, whether Strafford's name were John or  
 James—

And be myself appealed to—I, who shall  
 Myself have near forgotten!

*Hol.* I would speak . . .

*Straf.* Then you shall speak,—not now. I  
 want just now,

To hear the sound of my own tongue. This  
 place  
 Is full of ghosts.

*Hol.* Nay, you must hear me, Strafford!

*Straf.* Oh, readily! Only, one rare thing  
 more,—

The minister! Who will advise the King,  
 Turn his Sejanus, Richelieu and what not,  
 And yet have health—children, for aught I  
 know—

My patient pair of traitors! Ah,—but, Wil-  
 liam—

Does not his cheek grow thin?

*Wil.* 'Tis you look thin.  
 Father!

*Straf.* A scamper o'er the breezy wolds  
 Sets all to-rights.

*Hol.* You cannot sure forget  
 A prison-roof is o'er you, Strafford?

*Straf.* No.  
 Why, no. I would not touch on that, the first.

I left you that. Well, Hollis? Say at once,  
 The King can find no time to set me free!

A mask at Theobald's?

*Hol.* Hold: no such affair  
 Detains him.

*Straf.* True: what needs so great a matter?  
 The Queen's lip may be sore. Well: when he  
 pleases,—

Only, I want the air: it vexes flesh

To be pent up so long.

*Hol.* The King—I bear  
 His message, Strafford: pray you, let me speak!

*Straf.* Go, William! Anne, try o'er your  
 song again!

[The Children retire.]

They shall be loyal, friend, at all events.  
 I know your message: you have nothing new  
 To tell me: from the first I guessed as much.  
 I know, instead of coming here himself,  
 Leading me forth in public by the hand,

The King prefers to leave the door ajar  
As though I were escaping — bids me trudge  
While the mob gapes upon some show prepared  
On the other side of the river ! Give at once  
His order of release ! I've heard, as well,  
Of certain poor manoeuvres to avoid  
The granting pardon at his proper risk ;  
First, he must prattle somewhat to the Lords,  
Must talk a trifle with the Commons first,  
Be grieved I should abuse his confidence,  
And far from blaming them, and . . . Where's  
the order ?

*Hol.* Spare me !

*Straf.* Why, he'd not have me steal away ?  
With an old doublet and a steeple hat  
Like Prynne's ? Be smuggled into France,  
perhaps ?

Hollis, 'tis for my children ! 'Twas for them  
I first consented to stand day by day  
And give your Puritans the best of words,  
Be patient, speak when called upon, observe  
Their rules, and not return them prompt their  
lie !

What 's in that boy of mine that he should prove  
Son to a prison-breaker ? I shall stay  
And he'll stay with me. Charles should know  
as much,

He too has children !  
[Turning to HOLLIS'S companion.] Sir, you  
feel for me !

No need to hide that face ! Though it have  
looked

Upon me from the judgment-seat . . . I know  
Strangely, that somewhere it has looked on  
me . . .

Your coming has my pardon, nay, my thanks :  
For there is one who comes not.

*Hol.* Whom forgive,  
A's one to die !

*Straf.* True, all die, and all need  
Forgiveness : I forgive him from my soul.

*Hol.* 'Tis a world's wonder : Strafford, you  
must die !

*Straf.* Sir, if your errand is to set me free  
This heartless jest mars much. Ha ! Tears in  
truth ?

We'll end this ! See this paper, warm — feel  
— warm

With lying next my heart ! Whose hand is  
there ?

Whose promise ? Read, and loud for God to  
hear !

"Strafford shall take no hurt" — read it, I say !  
"In person, honor, nor estate" —

*Hol.* The King . . .  
*Straf.* I could unking him by a breath !  
You sit

Where London sat, who came to prophesy  
The certain end, and offer me Pym's grace  
If I'd renounce the King : and I stood firm  
On the King's faith. The King who lives . . .

*Hol.* To sign  
The warrant for your death.

*Straf.* "Put not your trust  
In princes, neither in the sons of men,  
In whom is no salvation !"

*Hol.* Trust in God !  
The scaffold is prepared : they wait for you :

He has consented. Cast the earth behind !

*Cha.* You would not see me, Strafford, at  
your foot !

It was wrung from me ! Only, curse me not !

*Hol.* [To STRAFFORD.] As you hope grace  
and pardon in your need,  
Be merciful to this most wretched man.

[Voices from within.]

*Verso la sera  
Di Primavera.*

*Straf.* You'll be good to those children, sir ?  
I know

You'll not believe her, even should the Queen  
Think they take after one they rarely saw.  
I had intended that my son should live  
A stranger to these matters : but you are  
So utterly deprived of friends ! He too  
Must serve you — will you not be good to him ?  
Or, stay, sir, do not promise — do not swear !  
You, Hollis — do the best you can for me !  
I've not a soul to trust to : Wandesford's dead,  
And you've got Radcliffe safe, Laud's turn  
comes next :

I've found small time of late for my affairs,  
But I trust any of you, Pym himself —  
No one could hurt them : there's an infant,  
too, —

These tedious cares ! Your Majesty could spare  
them.

Nay — pardon me, my King ! I had forgotten  
Your education, trials, much temptation,  
Some weakness : there escaped a peevish  
word —

'T is gone : I bless you at the last. You know  
All's between you and me : what has the world  
To do with it ? Farewell !

*Cha.* [at the door.] Balfour ! Balfour !  
(Enter BALFOUR.)

The Parliament ! — go to them : I grant all  
Demands. Their sittings shall be permanent :  
Tell them to keep their money if they will :  
I'll come to them for every coat I wear  
And every crust I eat : only I choose  
To pardon Strafford. As the Queen shall  
choose !

— You never heard the People howl for blood,  
Beside !

*Balfour.* Your Majesty may hear them now :  
The walls can hardly keep their murmurs out :  
Please you retire !

*Cha.* Take all the troops, Balfour !  
*Bal.* There are some hundred thousand of  
the crowd.

*Cha.* Come with me, Strafford ! You'll not  
fear, at least !

*Straf.* Balfour, say nothing to the world of  
this !

I charge you, as a dying man, forget  
You gazed upon this agony of one . . .  
Of one . . . or if . . . why, you may say, Bal-  
four.

The King was sorry : 'tis no shame in him :  
Yes, you may say he even wept, Balfour.  
And that I walked the lighter to the block  
Because of it. I shall walk lightly, sir !  
Earth fades, heaven breaks on me : I shall  
stand next

Before God's throne: the moment's close at hand

When man the first, last time, has leave to lay  
His whole heart bare before its Maker, leave  
To clear up the long error of a life  
And choose one happiness for evermore.  
With all mortality about me, Charles,  
The sudden wreck, the dregs of violent death --  
What if, despite the opening angel-song,  
There penetrate one prayer for you? Be saved  
Through me! Bear witness, no one could prevent

My death! Lead on! ere he awake -- best, now!

All must be ready: did you say, Balfour,  
The crowd began to murmur? They'll be kept

Too late for sermon at St. Antholin's!  
Now! But tread softly -- children are at play  
In the next room. Precede! I follow --

(Enter Lady CARLISLE, with many Attendants.)

Lady Car. Me!  
Follow me, Strafford, and be saved! The King?

[To the KING.] Well -- as you ordered, they are ranged without,

The convoy . . . [seeing the KING's state.]

[To STRAFFORD.] You know all, then! Why, I thought

It looked best that the King should save you, -- Charles

Alone; 'tis a shame that you should owe me aught.

Or no, not shame! Strafford, you'll not feel shame

At being saved by me?

Hol. All true! Oh Strafford,  
She saves you! all her deed! this lady's deed!  
And is the boat in readiness? You, friend,  
Are Billingsley, no doubt. Speak to her, Strafford!

See how she trembles, waiting for your voice!  
The world's to learn its bravest story yet.

Lady Car. Talk afterward! Long nights in France enough,

To sit beneath the vines and talk of home.

Straf. You love me, child? Ah, Strafford can be loved

As well as Vane! I could escape, then?

Lady Car. Haste!

Advance the torches, Bryan!

Straf. I will die.

They call me proud: but England had no right,  
When she encountered me -- her strength to mine --

To find the chosen foe a craven. Girl,

I fought her to the utterance, I fell,

I am hers now, and I will die. Beside,

The lookers-on! Eliot is all about

This place, with his most uncomplaining brow.

Lady Car. Strafford!

Straf. I think if you could know how much I love you, you would be repaid, my friend!

Lady Car. Then, for my sake!

Straf. Even for your sweet sake, I stay.

Hol. For their sake!

Straf. To bequeath a stain?

Leave me! Girl, humor me and let me die!

Lady Car. Bid him escape -- wake, King!

Bid him escape!

Straf. True, I will go! Die and forsake the King?

I'll not draw back from the last service.

Lady Car. Strafford!

Straf. And, after all, what is disgrace to me? Let us come, child! That it should end this way!

Lead then! but I feel strangely: it was not To end this way.

Lady Car. Lean -- lean on me!

Straf.

My King!

Oh, had he trusted me -- his friend of friends!

Lady Car. I can support him, Hollis!

Straf.

Not this way!

This gate -- I dreamed of it, this very gate.

Lady Car. It opens on the river: our good boat

Is moored below, our friends are there.

Straf.

The same:

Only with something ominous and dark,

Fatal, inevitable.

Lady Car. Strafford! Strafford!

Straf. Not by this gate! I feel what will be there!

I dreamed of it, I tell you: touch it not!

Lady Car. To save the King, -- Strafford, to save the King!

[As STRAFFORD opens the door, Pym is discovered with HAMPTON, VANE, etc. STRAFFORD falls back: Pym follows slowly and confronts him.]

Pym. Have I done well? Speak, England!

Whose sole sake

I still have labored for, with disregard

To my own heart, -- for whom my youth was made

Barren, my manhood waste, to offer up

Her sacrifice -- this friend, this Wentworth here --

Who walked in youth with me, loved me, it may be,

And whom, for his forsaking England's cause, I hunted by all means (trusting that she

Would sanctify all means) even to the block

Which waits for him. And saying this, I feel

No bitter pang than first I felt, the hour

I swore that Wentworth might leave us, but I

Would never leave him: I do leave him now.

I render up my charge (be witness, God!)

To England who imposed it. I have done

Her bidding -- poorly, wrongly, -- it may be,

With ill effects -- for I am weak, a man:

Still, I have done my best, my human best,

Not faltering for a moment. It is done.

And this said, if I say . . . yes, I will say

I never loved but one man -- David not

More Jonathan! Even thus, I love him now:

And look for my chief portion in that world

Where great hearts led astray are turned again,

(Soon it may be, and, certes, will be soon:

My mission over, I shall not live long.) --

Ay, here I know I talk -- I dare and must,

Of England, and her great reward, as all

I look for there; but in my inmost heart,

Believe, I think of stealing quite away



To walk once more with Wentworth — my  
youth's friend

Purged from all error, gloriously renewed,  
And Eliot shall not blame us. Then indeed . . .  
This is no meeting, Wentworth! Tears in-  
crease

Too hot. A thin mist — is it blood? — enwraps  
The face I loved once. Then, the meeting be!

*Straf.* I have loved England too; we'll meet  
then, Pym;

As well die now! Youth is the only time  
To think and to decide on a great course:  
Manhood with action follows; but 'tis dreary  
To have to alter our whole life in age —

The time past, the strength gone! As well die  
now.

When we meet, Pym, I'd be set right — not  
now!

Best die. Then if there's any fault, fault too  
Dies, smothered up. Poor gray old little Laud  
May dream his dream out, of a perfect Church,  
In some blind corner. And there's no one  
left.

I trust the King now wholly to you, Pym!

And yet, I know not: I shall not be there:  
Friends fail — if he have any. And he's weak,  
And loves the Queen, and . . . Oh, my fate is  
nothing —

Nothing! But not that awful head — not that!

*Pym.* If England shall declare such will to  
me . . .

*Straf.* Pym, you help England! I, that am  
to die,

What I must see! 'tis here — all here! My  
God,

Let me but gasp out, in one word of fire,  
How thou wilt plague him, satiating hell!

What? England that you help, become through  
you

A green and putrefying charnel, left  
Our children . . . some of us have children,  
Pym —

Some who, without that, still must ever wear  
A darkened brow, an over-serious look,  
And never properly be young! No word?

What if I curse you? Send a strong curse  
forth

Clothed from my heart, lapped round with hor-  
ror till

She's fit with her white face to walk the world  
Scaring kind natures from your cause and you —

Then to sit down with you at the board-head,  
The gathering for prayer . . . O speak, but  
speak!

. . . Creep up, and quietly follow each one home,

You, you, you, be a nestling care for each  
To sleep with, — hardly moaning in his dreams,

She gnaws so quietly, — till, lo he starts,  
Gets off with half a heart eaten away!

Oh, shall you 'scape with less if she's my child?  
You will not say a word — to me — to Him?

*Pym.* If England shall declare such will to  
me . . .

*Straf.* No, not for England now, not for  
Heaven now, —

See, Pym, for my sake, mine who kneel to you!  
There, I will thank you for the death, my  
friend!

This is the meeting: let me love you well!  
*Pym.* England, — I am thine own! Dost  
thou exact

That service? I obey thee to the end.

*Straf.* O God, I shall die first — I shall die  
first!

## SORDELLO

BROWNING began *Sordello* in 1837, inter-  
rupted his work to write the earlier parts of  
*Bells and Pomegranates*, but resumed it and  
completed it in 1840, when it was published by  
Moxon. In 1863, when reprinting the poem,  
Browning dedicated it as below to M. Milsand,  
and in his dedication wrote practically a pre-  
face to the poem.

TO J. MILSAND, OF DIJON

DEAR FRIEND, — Let the next poem be in-  
troduced by your name, therefore remembered  
along with one of the deepest of my affections,  
and so repay all trouble it ever cost me. I wrote  
it twenty-five years ago for only a few, counting  
even in these on somewhat more care about its  
subject than they really had. My own faults of  
expression were many: but with care for a man

or book such would be surmounted, and with-  
out it what avails the faultlessness of either?  
I blame nobody, least of all myself, who did my  
best then and since; for I lately gave time and  
pains to turn my work into what the many  
might — instead of what the few must — like;  
but after all, I imagined another thing at first,  
and therefore leave as I find it. The historical  
decoration was purposely of no more importance  
than a background requires; and my stress lay  
on the incidents in the development of a soul:  
little else is worth study. I, at least, always  
thought so; you, with many known and un-  
known to me, think so; others may one day  
think so; and whether my attempt remain for  
them or not, I trust, though away and past it,  
to continue ever yours,

R. B.

LONDON, June 9, 1863.

Concerning this revised edition he wrote to a friend :—

"I do not understand what — can mean by saying that Sordello has been 'rewritten.' I did certainly at one time intend to rewrite much of it, but changed my mind, — and the edition which I reprinted was the same in all respects as its predecessors — only with an elucidatory heading to each page, and some few alterations,

# SORDELLO

## BOOK THE FIRST

WHO will, may hear Sordello's story told :  
His story? Who believes me shall behold  
The man, pursue his fortunes to the end,  
Like me : for as the friendless-people's friend  
Spied from his hill-top once, despite  
A Quixotic the din  
attempt.

And dust of multitudes, Pentapolin  
Named o' the Naked Arm, I single out  
Sordello, compassed murky about  
With ravage of six long sad hundred years.  
Only believe me. Ye believe?

Verona . . . Never, I should warn you first,  
Of my own choice had this, if not the worst  
Yet not the best expedient, served to tell  
A story I could body forth so well  
By making speak, myself kept out of view,  
The very man as he was wont to do,  
And leaving you to say the rest for him.  
Since, though I might be proud to see the dim  
Abysmal past divide its hateful surge,  
Letting of all men this one man emerge  
Because it pleased me, yet, that moment past,  
I should delight in watching first to last  
His progress as you watch it, not a whit  
More in the secret than yourselves who sit  
Fresh-chapleted to listen. But it seems  
Your setters-forth of unexampled themes,  
Makers of quite new men, producing them,  
Would best chalk broadly on each vesture's  
hem

The wearer's quality ; or take their stand,  
Motley on back and pointing-pole in hand,  
Beside him. So, for once I face ye, friends,  
Why the Summoned together from the world's  
self ad- four ends,  
dresses his  
audience—  
Dropped down from heaven or cast  
up from hell,

To hear the story I propose to tell.  
Confess now, poets know the dragnet's trick,  
Catching the dead, if fate denies the quick,  
And shaming her ; 'tis not for fate to choose  
Silence or song because she can refuse  
Real eyes to glisten more, real hearts to ache  
Less oft, real brows turn smoother for our sake :  
I have experienced something of her spite ;  
But there's a realm wherein she has no right  
And I have many lovers. Say, but few  
Friends fate audience me? Here they are : now  
view

The host I muster ! Many a lighted face  
Foul with no vestige of the grave's disgrace ;

presumably for the better, in the text, such as occur in most of my works. I cannot remember a single instance of any importance that is rewritten, and I only suppose that — has taken project for performance, and set down as 'done' what was for a while intended to be done."

For the sake of such elucidation as these head-lines give, they are introduced here as side-notes.

What else should tempt them back to taste our  
air

Except to see how their successors fare ?  
My audience ! and they sit, each ghostly man  
Striving to look as living as he can,  
Brother by breathing brother ; thou art set,  
Clear-witted critic, by . . . but I'll not fret  
A wondrous soul of them, nor move death's  
spleen

Who loves not to unlock them. Friends ! I mean  
The living in good earnest — ye elect  
Few liv- Chiefly for love — suppose not I reject  
ing, many Judicious praise, who contrary shall  
dead. peep,

Some fit occasion, forth, for fear ye sleep,  
To glean your bland approvals. Then, appear,  
Verona ! stay — thou, spirit, come not near  
Shelleyde- Now — not this time desert thy  
parting, cloudy place  
Verona ap- To scare me, thus employed, with  
pears. that pure face !

I need not fear this audience, I make free  
With them, but then this is no place for thee !  
The thunder-phrase of the Athenian, grown  
Up out of memories of Marathon,  
Would echo like his own sword's griding screech  
Braying a Persian shield, — the silver speech  
Of Sidney's self, the starry paladin,  
Turn intense as a trumpet sounding in  
The knights to tilt, — wert thou to hear ! What  
heart

Have I to play my puppets, bear my part  
Before these worthies?

Lo, the past is hurled  
In twain : up-thrust, out-staggering on the world,  
Subsiding into shape, a darkness rears  
Its outline, kindles at the core, appears  
Verona. "Tis six hundred years and more  
Since an event. The Second Friedrich wore  
The purple, and the Third Honorius filled  
The holy chair. That autumn eve was stilled :  
A last remains of sunset dimly burned  
O'er the far forests, like a torch-flame turned  
By the wind back upon its bearer's hand  
In one long flare of crimson ; as a brand,  
The woods beneath lay black. A single eye  
From all Verona cared for the soft sky.  
But, gathering in its ancient market-place,  
Talked group with restless group ; and not a face  
But wrath made livid, for among them were  
Death's stanch purveyors, such as have in care  
To feast him. Fear had long since taken root  
In every breast, and now these crushed its fruit,  
The ripe hate, like a wine : to note the way  
It worked while each grew drunk ! Men grave  
and gray

Stood, with shut eyelids, rocking to and fro,  
 Letting the silent luxury trickle slow  
 How her Guefts are About the hollows where a heart  
 discom- should be ;  
 fited. But the young gulped with a delirious  
 glee

Some foretaste of their first debauch in blood  
 At the fierce news: for, be it understood,  
 Envoys apprised Verona that her prince  
 Count Richard of Saint Boniface, joined since  
 A year with Azzo, Este's Lord, to thrust  
 Taurello Salinguerra, prime in trust  
 With Ecelin Romano, from his seat  
 Ferrara, — over-zealous in the feat  
 And stumbling on a peril unaware,  
 Was captive, trammelled in his proper saare,  
 They phrase it, taken by his own intrigue.

Immediate succor from the Lombard  
 League  
 Why they Of fifteen cities that affect the Pope,  
 entreat the Lombard  
 League, For Azzo, therefore, and his fellow-  
 hope

Of the Gueft cause, a glory overcast !  
 Men's faces, late agape, are now aghast.  
 " Prone is the purple pavis ; Este makes  
 Mirth for the devil when he undertakes  
 To play the Ecelin ; as if it cost  
 Merely your pushing-by to gain a post  
 Like his ! The patron tells ye, once for all,  
 There be sound reasons that preferment fall  
 On our beloved "

" Duke o' the Rood, why not ? "  
 Shouted an Estian, " grudge ye such a lot ?  
 The hill-cat boasts some cunning of her own,  
 Some stealthy trick to better beasts unknown,  
 That quick with prey enough her hunger blunts,  
 And feeds her fat while gaunt the lion hunts."  
 " Taurello," quoth an envoy, " as in wane  
 Dwelt at Ferrara. Like an osprey fain  
 To fly but forced the earth his couch to make  
 Far inland, till his friend the tempest wake,  
 Waits he the Kaiser's coming ; and as yet  
 That fast friend sleeps, and he too sleeps : but let  
 Only the billow freshen, and he snuffs  
 The aroused hurricane ere it enroughs  
 The sea it means to cross because of him.  
 Sinketh the breeze ? His hope-sick eye grows  
 dim ;

Creep closer on the creature ! Every day  
 Strengthens the Pontiff ; Ecelin, they say,  
 Dozes now at Oliero, with dry lips  
 Telling upon his perished finger-tips  
 How many ancestors are to depose  
 Ere he be Satan's Viceroy when the doze  
 Deposits him in hell. So, Guefts rebuilt  
 Their houses ; not a drop of blood was spilt  
 When Cino Bocchimpane chanced to meet  
 Buccio Virtù — God's wafer, and the street  
 Is narrow ! Tutti Santi, think, a-swarm  
 With Ghibellins, and yet he took no harm !  
 This could not last. Off Salinguerra went  
 To Padua, Podestà, ' with pure intent,'  
 Said he, ' my presence, judged the single bar  
 To permanent tranquillity, may jar  
 No longer ' — so ! his back is fairly turned ?  
 The pair of goodly palaces are burned,  
 The gardens ravaged, and our Guefts laugh,  
 drunk

A week with joy. The next, their laughter sunk  
 In sobs of blood, for they found, some strange  
 way,

Old Salinguerra back again — I say,  
 Old Salinguerra in the town once  
 In their more  
 changed Uprooting, overturning, flame before,  
 fortune at Blood fetlock-high beneath him.  
 Ferrara: Azzo fled ;

Who 'scaped the carnage followed ; then the  
 dead

Were pushed aside from Salinguerra's throne,  
 He ruled once more Ferrara, all alone,  
 Till Azzo, stunned awhile, revived, would  
 pounce

Coupled with Boniface, like lynx and ounce,  
 On the gorged bird. The burghers ground their  
 teeth

To see troop after troop encamp beneath  
 I' the standing corn thick o'er the scanty patch  
 It took so many patient months to snatch  
 Out of the marsh ; while just within their walls  
 Men fed on men. At length Taurello calls  
 A parley : ' let the Count wind up the war !  
 Richard, light-hearted as a plunging star,  
 Agrees to enter for the kindest ends  
 Ferrara, flanked with fifty chosen friends,  
 No horse-boy more, for fear your timid sort  
 Should fly Ferrara at the bare report.  
 Quietly through the town they rode, jog-jog ;  
 ' Ten, twenty, thirty, — curse the catalogue  
 Of burnt Gueft houses ! Strange, Taurello shows  
 Not the least sign of life ' — whereat arose  
 A general growl : ' How ? With his victors by ?  
 I and my Veronese ? My troops and I ?  
 Receive us, was your word ? ' So jogged they on,  
 Nor laughed their host too openly : once gone  
 Into the trap ! " —

Six hundred years ago !  
 Such the time's aspect and peculiar woe  
 (Yourselves may spell it yet in chronicles,  
 Albeit the worm, our busy brother, drills  
 His sprawling path through letters anciently  
 Made fine and large to suit some abbot's eye)  
 When the new Hohenstauffen dropped the mask,  
 Flung John of Brienne's favor from his casque,  
 Forswore crusading, had no mind to leave  
 Saint Peter's proxy leisure to retrieve  
 Losses to Otho and to Barbaross,  
 Or make the Alps less easy to recross ;  
 And, thus confirming Pope Honorius' fear,  
 Was excommunicate that very year.  
 " The triple-bearded Teuton come to life ! "  
 Groaned the Great League ; and, arming for the

strife,  
 For the Wide Lombardy, on tiptoe to begin,  
 timesgrow Took up, as it was Gueft or Ghibellin,  
 stormy Its cry ; what cry ?  
 again.

" The Emperor to come ! "  
 His crowd of feudatories, all and some,  
 That leapt down with a crash of swords, spears,  
 shields,

One fighter on his fellow, to our fields,  
 Scattered anon, took station here and there,  
 And carried it, till now, with little care —  
 Cannot but cry for him ; how else rebut  
 Us longer ? Cliffs, an earthquake suffered jut  
 In the mid-sea, each domineering crest



Which naught save such another throe can wrest  
From out (conceive) a certain chokeweed grown  
Since o'er the waters, twine and tangle thrown  
Too thick, too fast accumulating round,  
Too sure to over-riot and confound  
Ere long each brilliant islet with itself,  
Unless a second shock save shoal and shelf,  
Whirling the sea-drift wide : alas, the bruised  
And sullen wreck ! Sunlight to be diffused  
For that ! Sunlight, 'neath which, a scum at  
first,

The million fibres of our chokeweed nurst  
Dispread themselves, mantling the troubled  
main,

And, shattered by those rocks, took hold again,  
So kindly blazed it — that same blaze to brood  
O'er every cluster of the multitude  
Still hazarding new clasps, ties, filaments,  
An emulous exchange of pulses, vents  
Of nature into nature ; till some growth  
Unfancied yet, exuberantly clothe

The Ghil- A surface solid now, continuous, one :  
bellins' "The Pope, for as the People, who  
wish : the begun  
Guelfs' The People, carries on the People  
wish, thus,

To keep that Kaiser off and dwell with us !"  
See you ?

Or say, Two Principles that live  
Each fitly by its Representative.  
"Hill-cat" — who called him so ? — the grace-  
fullest

Adventurer, the ambiguous stranger-guest  
Of Lombardy (sleek but that ruffling fur,  
Those talons to their sheath !) whose velvet  
purr

Soothes jealous neighbors when a Saxon scout  
— Arpo or Yoland, is it ? — one without  
A country or a name, presumes to couch  
Beside their noblest ; until men avouch  
That, of all Houses in the Trevisan,  
Conrad deseries no fitter, rear or van,

Than Ecello ! They laughed as they  
were enrolled

How Ece- That name at Milan on the page of  
lo's house grew head gold,  
of those, Godego's lord, — Ramon, Marostica,

Cartiglion, Bassano, Loria,

And every sheep-cote on the Suabian's fief !  
No laughter when his son, "the Lombard Chief"  
Forsooth, as Barbarossa's path was bent  
To Italy along the Vale of Trent,

Welcomed him at Roncaglia ! Sadness now —  
The hamlets nested on the Tyrol's brow,

The Asolan and Euganean hills,  
The Rhetian and the Julian, sadness fills

Them all, for Ecelin vouchsafes to stay  
Among and care about them ; day by day

Choosing this pinnacle, the other spot,  
A castle building to defend a cot,

A cot built for a castle to defend,  
Nothing but castles, castles, nor an end

To boasts how mountain ridge may join with  
ridge

By sunken gallery and soaring bridge.  
He takes, in brief, a figure that besseems

The griesliest nightmare of the Church's dreams,  
— A Signory firm-rooted, unestranged

From its old interests, and nowise changed  
By its new neighborhood : perchance the vaunt  
Of Otho, "my own Este shall supplant  
Your Este," come to pass. The sire led in  
A son as cruel ; and this Ecelin  
Had sons, in turn, and daughters sly and tall  
And curling and compliant ; but for all  
Romano (so they styled him) throve, that neck  
Of his so pinched and white, that hungry cheek  
Proved 't was some fiend, not him, the man's-  
flesh went

To feed : whereas Romano's instrument,  
Famous Taurello Salinguerra, sole  
I' the world, a tree whose boughs were slipt the  
bole

Successively, why should not he shed blood  
To further a design ? Men understood  
Living was pleasant to him as he wore  
His careless surcoat, glanced some missive o'er,  
Propped on his truncheon in the public way,  
While his lord lifted writhen hands to pray,  
Lost at Oliero's convent.

Hill-cats, face  
Our Azzo, our Guelf-Lion ! Why disgrace  
As Azzo A worthiness conspicuous near and  
Lord of far  
Este heads (Atii at Rome while free and consu-  
these, lar,

Este at Padua who repulsed the Hun)  
By trumpeting the Church's princely son ?

— Styled Patron of Rovigo's Polesine,  
Ancona's march, Ferrara's . . . ask, in fine,  
Our chronicles, commenced when some old monk  
Found it intolerable to be sunk

(Vexed to the quick by his revolting cell)  
Quite out of summer while alive and well :

Ended when by his mat the Prior stood,  
'Mid busy promptings of the brotherhood,

Striving to coax from his decrepit brains  
The reason Father Porphyry took pains

To blot those ten lines out which used to stand  
First on their charter drawn by Hildebrand.

The same night wears. Verona's rule of yore  
Was vested in a certain Twenty-four ;

Count And while within his palace these de-  
Richard's bate

Palace at Concerning Richard and Ferrara's  
Verona. fate,

Glide we by clapping doors, with sudden glare  
Of cressets vented on the dark, nor care

For aught that 's seen or heard until we shut  
The smother in, the lights, all noises but

The carroch's booming : safe at last ! Why  
strange

Such a recess should lurk behind a range  
Of banquet-rooms ? Your finger — thus — you  
push

A spring, and the wall opens, would you rush  
Upon the banqueters, select your prey,

Waiting (the slaughter-weapons in the way  
Strewing this very bench) with sharpened ear

A preconcerted signal to appear ;  
Or if you simply crouch with beating heart,

Of the Bearing in some voluptuous pageant  
couple part

found To startle them. Nor mutes nor  
therein, masquers now ;

Nor any . . . does that one man sleep whose brow

The dying lamp-flame sinks and rises o'er ?  
 What woman stood beside him ? not the more  
 Is he unfasted from the earnest eyes  
 Because that arras fell between ! Her wise  
 And lulling words are yet about the room,  
 Her presence wholly poured upon the gloom  
 Down even to her vesture's creeping stir.  
 And so reclines he, saturate with her,  
 Until an outcry from the square beneath  
 Pierces the charm : he springs up, glad to  
 breathe,

Above the cunning element, and shakes  
 The stupor off as (look you) morning breaks  
 On the gay dress, and, near concealed by it,  
 The lean frame like a half-burnt taper, lit  
 Erst at some marriage-feast, then laid away  
 Till the Armenian bridegroom's dying day,  
 In his wool wedding-robe.

For he — for he,  
 Gate-vein of this hearts' blood of Lombardy,  
 (If I should falter now) — for he is thine !  
 Sordello, thy forerunner, Florentine !  
 A herald-star I know thou didst absorb  
 Relentless into the consummate orb  
 That scared it from its right to roll along  
 A sempiternal path with dance and song  
 Fulfilling its allotted period,  
 Serenest of the progeny of God —  
 Who yet resigns it not ! His darling stoops  
 With no quenched lights, desponds with no blank  
 troops

Of disenfranchised brilliances, for, blent  
 Utterly with thee, its shy element  
 Like thine upburneth prosperous and clear.  
 Still, what if I approach the august sphere  
 Named now with only one name, disintwine  
 That under-current soft and argentine  
 From its fierce mate in the majestic mass  
 Leavened as the sea whose fire was mixt with  
 glass

In John's transcendent vision, — launch once  
 more

That lustre ? Dante, pacer of the shore  
 Where gluttied hell disgorgeth filthiest gloom,  
 Unbitten by its whirling sulphur-spume —  
 Or whence the grieved and obscure waterslope  
 Into a darkness quieted by hope ;  
 Plucker of amarantus grown beneath God's eye  
 In gracious twilights where his chosen lie, —  
 I would do this ! If I should falter now !

In Mantua territory half is slough,  
 Half pine-tree forest ; maples, scarlet  
 oaks  
 One be-  
 long to  
 Dante ; his  
 Birthplace. Breed o'er the river-beds ; even Min-  
 cio chokes

With sand the summer through : but 't is mo-  
 rass

In winter up to Mantua walls. There was,  
 Some thirty years before this evening's coil,  
 One spot reclaimed from the surrounding spoil,  
 Goito ; just a castle built amid  
 A few low mountains ; firs and larches hid  
 Their main defiles, and rings of vineyard bound  
 The rest. Some captured creature in a pound,  
 Whose artless wonder quite precludes distress,  
 Secure beside in its own loveliness,  
 So peered with airy head, below, above,  
 The castle at its toils, the lapwings love

To glean among at grape-time. Pass within.  
 A maze of corridors contrived for sin,  
 Dusk winding-stairs, dim galleries got past,  
 You gain the inmost chambers, gain at last  
 A maple-panelled room : that haze which seems  
 Floating about the panel, if there gleams  
 A sunbeam over it, will turn to gold  
 And in light-graven characters unfold  
 The Arab's wisdom everywhere ; what shade  
 Marred them a moment, those slim pillars made,  
 Cut like a company of palms to prop  
 The roof, each kissing top entwined with top,  
 Leaning together ; in the carver's mind  
 Some knot of bacchanals, flushed cheek com-  
 bined

With straining forehead, shoulders purpled, hair  
 Diffused between, who in a goat-skin bear  
 A vintage ; graceful sister-palms ! But quick  
 To the main wonder, now. A vault, see ; thick

Black shade about the ceiling, though  
 fine slits  
 A Vault  
 inside the  
 Castle at  
 Goito, Across the buttress suffer light by fits  
 Upon a marvel in the midst. Nay,  
 stoop —

A dullish gray-streaked cumbrous font, a group  
 Round it, — each side of it, where'er one sees, —  
 Upholds it ; shrinking Caryatides  
 Of just-tinged marble like Eve's lilyd flesh  
 Beneath her maker's finger when the fresh  
 First pulse of life shot brightening the snow.  
 The font's edge burdens every shoulder, so  
 They nurse upon the ground, eyelids half closed ;  
 Some, with meek arms behind their backs dis-  
 posed,

Some, crossed above their bosoms, some, to veil  
 Their eyes, some, propping chin and cheek so  
 pale,

Some, hanging slack an utter helpless length  
 Dead as a buried vestal whose whole strength  
 Goes when the grate above shuts heavily.  
 So dwell these noiseless girls, patient to see,  
 Like priestesses because of sin impure  
 Penanced forever, who resigned endure,  
 Having that once drunk sweetness to the dregs.  
 And every eve, Sordello's visit begs  
 Pardon for them : constant as eve he came  
 To sit beside each in her turn, the same  
 As one of them, a certain space : and awe

Made a great indistinctness till he saw  
 Sunset slant cheerful through the  
 And what  
 Sordello  
 would see  
 there. buttress-chinks,  
 Gold seven times globed ; surely our  
 maiden shrinks

And a smile stirs her as if one faint grain  
 Her load were lightened, one shade less the stain  
 Obscured her forehead, yet one more bead slept  
 From off the rosary whereby the crypt  
 Keeps count of the contritions of its charge ?  
 Then with a step more light, a heart more large,  
 He may depart, leave her and every one  
 To linger out the penance in mute stone.  
 Ah, but Sordello ? 'Tis the tale I mean  
 To tell you.

In this castle may be seen,  
 On the hill-tops, or underneath the vines,  
 Or eastward by the mound of firs and pines  
 That shuts out Mantua, still in loneliness,  
 A slender boy in a loose page's dress,

Sordello: do but look on him awhile  
 Watching 'tis autumn) with an earnest smile  
 The noisy flock of thievish birds at work  
 Among the yellowing vineyards; see him lurk  
 (Tis winter with its sullenest of

His boy-  
 hood in  
 the domain  
 of Ecelin.  
 (storms)  
 Beside that arras-length of brodered  
 forms,

On tiptoe, lifting in both hands a light  
 Which makes yon warrior's visage flutter bright  
 — Ecelo, dismal father of the brood,  
 And Ecelin, close to the girl he wooed,  
 Auria, and their Child, with all his wives  
 From Agnes to the Tuscan that survives,  
 Lady of the castle, Adelaide. His face  
 — Look, now he turns away! Yourselves shall  
 trace

(The delicate nostril swerving wide and fine,  
 A sharp and restless lip, so well combine  
 With that calm brow) a soul fit to receive  
 Delight at every sense; you can believe  
 Sordello foremost in the regal class  
 Nature has broadly severed from her mass  
 Of men, and framed for pleasure, as she frames  
 Some happy lands, that have luxurious names,  
 For loose fertility; a footfall there  
 Suffices to upturn to the warm air  
 Half-germinating spices; mere decay  
 Produces richer life; and day by day  
 New pollen on the lily-petal grows,  
 And still more labyrinthine buds the rose.  
 You recognize at once the finer dress  
 Of flesh that amply lets in loveliness  
 At eye and ear, while round the rest is furled  
 (As though she would not trust them with her  
 world)

A veil that shadows a sky not near so blue,  
 And lets but half the sun look fervid through.

How a  
 poet's soul  
 comes into  
 play.  
 How can such love? — like souls on  
 each full-fraught  
 Discovery brooding, blind at first to  
 aught

Beyond its beauty, till exceeding love  
 Becomes an aching weight; and, to remove  
 A curse that haunts such natures — to preclude  
 Their finding out themselves can work no good  
 To what they love nor make it very best  
 By their endeavor, — they are fain invest  
 The lifeless thing with life from their own soul,  
 Availing it to purpose, to control,  
 To dwell distinct and have peculiar joy  
 And separate interests that may employ  
 That beauty fitly, for its proper sake.  
 Nor rest they here; fresh births of beauty wake  
 Fresh homage, every grade of love is past,  
 With every mode of loveliness: then cast  
 Inferior idols off their borrowed crown  
 Before a coming glory. Up and down  
 Runs arrowy fire, while earthly forms com-  
 bine

To throb the secret forth; a touch divine —  
 And the scaled eyeball owns the mystic rod;  
 Visibly through his garden walketh God.

What de-  
 notes such  
 a soul's  
 progress.  
 So fare they. Now revert. One  
 character  
 Denotes them through the progress  
 and the stir, —  
 A need to blend with each external charm,

Bury themselves, the whole heart wide and  
 warm, —

In something not themselves; they would be-  
 long

To what they worship — stronger and more  
 strong

Thus prodigally fed — which gathers shape  
 And feature, soon imprisons past escape  
 The votary framed to love and to submit  
 Nor ask, as passionate he kneels to it,  
 Whence grew the idol's empery. So runs  
 A legend; light had birth ere moons and suns,  
 Flowing through space a river and alone,  
 Till chaos burst and blank the spheres were  
 strown

Hither and thither, foundering and blind:  
 When into each of them rushed light — to find  
 Itself no place, foiled of its radiant chance.

Let such forego their just inheritance!  
 For there's a class that eagerly looks, too,

On beauty, but, unlike the gentler crew,  
 Proclaims each new revelation born a twin

With a distinctest consciousness within,  
 Referring still the quality, now first

Revealed, to their own soul — its instinct nursed  
 In silence, now remembered better, shown

More thoroughly, but not the less their own;  
 A dream come true; the special exercise

How poets Of any special function that implies  
 class at The being fair, or good, or wise, or  
 length — strong,

Dormant within their nature all along —  
 Whose fault? So, homage, other souls direct

Without, turns inward. "How should this de-  
 ject

Thee, soul?" they murmur; "wherefore  
 strength be quelled

Because, its trivial accidents withheld,  
 Organs are missed that clog the world, inert,

Wanting a will, to quicken and exert,  
 Like thine — existence cannot satiate,

Cannot surprise? Laugh thou at envious fate,  
 Who, from earth's simplest combination stamp

With individuality — uncramped  
 By living its faint elemental life,

Dost soar to heaven's complexest essence, rife  
 With grands, unaffronted to the last,

For honor, Equal to being all!"

In truth? Thou hast  
 Life, then — wilt challenge life for us: our race

Is vindicated so, obtains its place  
 In thy ascent, the first of us; whom we

May follow, to the meanest, finally,  
 Or shame — With our more bounded wills?

Ah, but to find  
 A certain mood enervate such a mind,

Counsel it slumber in the solitude  
 Thus reached, nor, stooping, task for man-

kind's good  
 Its nature just as life and time accord

" — Too narrow an arena to reward  
 Emprise — the world's occasion worthless since

Not absolutely fitted to evince  
 Its mastery!" Or if yet worse befall,

And a desire possess it to put all  
 That nature forth, forcing our straitened sphere

Contain it, — to display completely here  
 The mastery another life should learn,



Thrusting in time eternity's concern,—  
So that Sordello . . .

Which Fool, who spied the mark  
may the Of leprosy upon him, violet-dark  
Gods avert as he loiters? Born just  
now,

With the new century, beside the glow  
And efflorescence out of barbarism;  
Witness a Greek or two from the abyss  
That stray through Florence-town with studi-  
ous air,

Calming the chisel of that Pisan pair:  
If Nicolo should carve a Christus yet!  
While at Siena is Guidone set,  
Forehead on hand; a painful birth must be  
Matured ere Saint Eufemia's sacristy  
Or transept gather fruits of one great gaze  
At the moon: look you! The same orange  
haze,—

The same blue stripe round that—and, in the  
midst,

Thy spectral whiteness, Mother-maid, who didst  
Pursue the dizzy painter!

Woe, then, worth  
Any officious babble letting forth  
The leprosy confirmed and ruinous  
To spirit lodged in a contracted house!  
Go back to the beginning, rather; blend  
It gently with Sordello's life; the end  
Is piteous, you may see, but much between  
Pleasant enough. Meantime, some pyx to screen  
The full-grown pest, some lid to shut upon  
The goblin! So they found at Babylon,  
(Colleagues, mad Lucius and sage Antonine)  
Sacking the city, by Apollo's shrine,  
In rummaging among the rarities,  
A certain coffer; he who made the prize  
Opened it greedily; and out there curled  
Just such another plague, for half the world  
Was stung. Crawl in then, hag, and couch  
asquat,

Keeping that blotchy bosom thick in spot  
Until your time is ripe! The coffer-lid  
Is fastened, and the coffer safely hid  
Under the Loxian's choicest gifts of gold.

Who will may hear Sordello's story told,  
And how he never could remember when  
He dwelt not at Goito. Calmly, then,

About this secret lodge of Ade-  
From Sor- laide's  
dello, now Glided his youth away; beyond the  
in child- glades  
hood.

On the fir-forest border, and the rim  
Of the low range of mountain, was for him  
No other world: but this appeared his own  
To wander through at pleasure and alone.  
The castle too seemed empty; far and wide  
Might he disport; only the northern side  
Lay under a mysterious interdiction—

Slight, just enough remembered to restrict  
His roaming to the corridors, the vault  
Where those font-bearers expiate their fault,  
The maple-chamber, and the little nooks  
And nests, and breezy parapet that looks  
Over the woods to Mantua: there he strolled.  
Some foreign women-servants, very old,  
Tended and crept about him—all his clue  
To the world's business and embroiled ado

Distant a dozen hill-tops at the most.

And first a simple sense of life  
The de- engrossed  
lights of Sordello in his drowsy Paradise;  
his child- The day's adventures for the day  
ish fancy, suffice—

Its constant tribute of perceptions strange,  
With sleep and stir in healthy interchange,  
Suffice, and leave him for the next at ease  
Like the great palmer-worm that strips the  
trees,

Eats the life out of every luscious plant,  
And, when September finds them sere or scant,  
Puts forth two wondrous winglets, alters quite,  
And hies him after unforeseen delight.  
So fed Sordello, not a shard dissheathed;  
As ever, round each new discovery, wreathed  
Luxuriantly the fancies infantine  
His admiration, bent on making fine  
Its novel friend at any risk, would fling  
In gay profusion forth; a ficklest king,  
Confessed those minions!—eager to dispense  
So much from his own stock of thought and  
sense

As might enable each to stand alone  
And serve him for a fellow; with his own,  
Joining the qualities that just before  
Had graced some older favorite. Thus they  
wore

A fluctuating halo, yesterday  
Set flicker and to-morrow filched away,—  
Those upland objects each of separate name,  
Each with an aspect never twice the same,  
Waxing and waning as the new-born host  
Of fancies, like a single night's hoar-frost,

Gave to familiar things a face gro-  
tesque;  
Which Only, preserving through the mad  
could blow out barlesque  
a great bubble, A grave regard. Conceive! the  
orpine patch

Blossoming earliest on the log-house thatch  
The day those archers wound along the vines—  
Related to the Chief that left their lines  
To climb with clinking step the northern stair  
Up to the solitary chambers where  
Sordello never came. Thus thrall reached  
thrall;

He o'er-festooning every interval,  
As the adventurous spider, making light  
Of distance, shoots her threads from depth to  
height,

From barbican to battlement: so flung  
Fantasies forth and in their centre swung  
Our architect,—the breezy morning fresh  
Above, and merry,—all his waving mesh  
Laughing with lucid dew-drops rainbow-edged.

This world of ours by tacit pact is pledged  
To laying such a spangled fabric low  
Whether by gradual brush or gallant blow.  
But its abundant will was balked here: doubt

Being Rose tardily in one so fenced about  
secure From most that nurtures judgment,  
awhile care and pain:  
from in- Judgment, that dull expedient we  
trusion, are fain,

Less favored, to adopt betimes and force  
Stead us, diverted from our natural course

Of joys — contrive some yet amid the dearth,  
 Vary and render them, it may be, worth  
 Most we forego. Suppose Sordello hence  
 Selfish enough, without a moral sense  
 However feeble; what informed the boy  
 Others desired a portion in his joy?  
 Or say a ruthless chance broke woof and  
 warp —

A heron's nest beat down by March winds sharp,  
 A fawn breathless beneath the precipice,  
 A bird with unsoiled breast and unfilmed eyes  
 Warm in the brake — could these undo the  
 trance

Lapping Sordello? Not a circumstance  
 That makes for you, friend Naddo! Eat fern-  
 seed

And peer beside us and report indeed  
 If (your word) "genius" dawned with throes  
 and stings

And the whole fiery catalogue, while springs,  
 Summers and winters quietly came and went.

Time put at length that period to content,  
 By right the world should have imposed: be-  
 reft

Of its good offices, Sordello, left  
 To study his companions, managed rip  
 Their fringe off, learn the true relationship,  
 Core with its crust, their nature with his own:  
 Amid his wild-wood sights he lived alone.  
 As if the poppy felt with him! Though he  
 Partook the poppy's red effrontery  
 Till Autumn spoiled their fleeing quite with  
 rain,

And, turbanless, a coarse brown rattling crane  
 Lay bare. That's gone: yet why renounce,  
 for that,

His disenchanted tributaries — flat  
 Perhaps, but scarce so utterly forlorn,  
 Their simple presence might not well be borne  
 Whose parley was a transport once: recall  
 The poppy's gifts, it flaunts you, after all,  
 A poppy: — why distrust the evidence  
 Of each soon satisfied and healthy sense?

But it The new-born judgment answered,  
 comes; "little boots"  
 and new- Beholding other creatures' attributes  
 born And having none!" or, say that it  
 judgment sufficed,

"Yet, could one but possess, one's self," (enticed  
 Judgment) "some special office!" Naught  
 beside  
 Serves you? "Well then, be somehow justi-  
 fied

For this ignoble wish to circumscribe  
 And concentrate, rather than swell, the tribe  
 Of actual pleasures: what, now, from without  
 Effects it? — proves, despite a lurking doubt,  
 Mere sympathy sufficient, trouble spared?  
 That, tasting joys by proxy thus, you fared

Decides The better for them?" Thus much  
 that he craved his soul.

Alas, from the beginning love is  
 whole  
 And true; if sure of naught beside,  
 most sure

Of its own truth at least; nor may endure  
 A crowd to see its face, that cannot know  
 How hot the pulses throb its heart below.

While its own helplessness and utter want  
 Of means to worthily be ministrant  
 To what it worships, do but fan the more  
 Its flame, exalt the idol far before  
 Itself as it would have it ever be.  
 Souls like Sordello, on the contrary,  
 Coerced and put to shame, retaining will,  
 Care little, take mysterious comfort still,  
 But look forth tremblingly to ascertain  
 If others judge their claims not urged in vain,  
 And say for them their stifled thoughts aloud.  
 So, they must ever live before a crowd:  
 — "Vanity," Naddo tells you.

Whence contrive  
 A crowd, now? From these women just alive,  
 That archer-troop? Forth glided — not alone  
 Each painted warrior, every girl of stone,  
 Nor Adelaide (bent double o'er a scroll,  
 One maiden at her knees, that eve, his soul  
 Shook as he stumbled through the arras'd  
 glooms

On them, for, 'mid quaint robes and weird per-  
 fumes,

Started the meagre Tuscan up, — her eyes,  
 The maiden's, also, bluer with surprise)  
 — But the entire out-world: whatever, scraps  
 And snatches, song and story, dreams per-  
 haps,

Conceited the world's offices, and he  
 Had hitherto transferred to flower or tree,  
 Not counted a befitting heritage  
 Each, of its own right, singly to engage  
 Some man, no other, — such now dared to stand  
 Alone. Strength, wisdom, grace on every hand  
 Soon disengaged themselves, and he discerned  
 A sort of human life: at least, was turned

He there- A stream of lifelike figures through  
 fore his brain.  
 creates Lord, liegeman, valvassor and suze-  
 such a rain,  
 company; Ere he could choose, surrounded  
 him; a staff

To work his pleasure on; there, sure enough:  
 But as for gazing, what shall fix that gaze?  
 Are they to simply testify the ways  
 He who convoked them sends his soul along  
 With the cloud's thunder or a dove's brood-  
 song?

— While they live each his life, boast each his  
 Each of own  
 which, Peculiar dower of bliss, stand each  
 leading alone  
 its own In some one point where something  
 life, dearest loved

Is easiest gained — far worthier to be proved  
 Than aught he envies in the forest-wights!  
 No simple and self-evident delights,  
 But mixed desires of unimagined range,  
 Contrasts or combinations, new and strange,  
 Irsome perhaps, yet plainly recognized  
 By this, the sudden company — loves prized  
 By those who are to prize his own amount  
 Of loves. Once care because such make ac-  
 count,

Allow that foreign recognitions stamp  
 The current value, and his crowd shall vamp  
 Him counterfeits enough; and so their print  
 Be on the piece 't is gold, attests the mint.

And "good," pronounce they whom his new appeal

Is made to : if their casual print conceal —  
This arbitrary good of theirs o'ergloss  
What he has lived without, nor felt the loss —  
Qualities strange, ungainly, wearisome,  
— What matter? So must speech expand the dumb

Part-sigh, part-smile with which Sordello, late  
Whom no poor woodland-sights could satiate,  
Betakes himself to study hungrily  
Just what the puppets his crude fantasy  
Supposes notablest, — popes, kings, priests,  
knights, —

May please to promulgate for appetites ;  
Accepting all their artificial joys  
Not as he views them, but as he employs  
Each shape to estimate the other's stock  
Of attributes, whereon — a marshalled flock  
Of authorized enjoyments — he may spend  
Himself, be men, now, as he used to blend  
With tree and flower — nay more entirely,  
else

'T were mockery : for instance, "How excels  
My life that chieftain's?" (who apprised the youth

Ecelin, here, becomes this month, in truth,  
Imperial Vicar?) "Turns he in his tent  
Remissly? Be it so — my head is bent  
Deliciously amid my girls to sleep.  
What if he stalks the Trentine-pass? Yon steep  
I climbed an hour ago with little toil :  
We are alike there. But can I, too, foil  
The Gueif's paid stabber, carelessly afford  
Saint Mark's a spectacle, the sleight o' the sword

Baffling the treason in a moment?" Here  
No rescue! Poppy he is none, but peer  
To Ecelin, assuredly : his hand,  
Fashioned no otherwise, should wield a brand  
With Ecelin's success — try, now! He soon  
Was satisfied, returned as to the moon  
From earth; left each abortive boy's-attempt  
Has quali- For feats, from failure happily ex-  
possible to a empt,  
boy, In fancy at his beck. "One day I  
will

Accomplish it! Are they not older still  
— Not grown up men and women? 'Tis be-  
side

Only a dream; and though I must abide  
With dreams now, I may find a thorough vent  
For all myself, acquire an instrument  
For acting what these people act; my soul  
Hunting a body out may gain its whole  
Desire some day!" How else express chagrin  
And resignation, show the hope steal in  
With which he let sink from an aching wrist  
The rough-hewn ash-bow? Straight, a gold  
shaft hissed

Into the Syrian air, struck Malek down  
Superbly! "Crosses to the breach! God's  
Town

Is gained him back!" Why bend rough ash-  
bows more?

Thus lives he : if not careless as before,  
Comforted : for one may anticipate,  
Rehearse the future, be prepared when fate

Shall have prepared in turn real men whose  
names

Startle, real places of enormous fames,  
Este abroad and Ecelin at home  
To worship him, — Mantua, Verona, Rome  
To witness it. Who grudges time so spent?  
Rather test qualities to heart's content —  
Summon them, thrice selected, near and far —  
Compress the starriest into one star,  
So, only to And grasp the whole at once!  
be appropri- The pageant thinned  
ated in in fancy, Accordingly; from rank to rank,  
like wind

His spirit passed to winnow and divide;  
Back fell the simpler phantasms; every side  
The strong clave to the wise; with either  
classed

The beauteous; so, till two or three amassed  
Mankind's beseeemngnesses, and reduced  
Themselves eventually, graces loosed,  
Strengths lavished, all to heighten up One  
Shape

Whose potency no creature should escape,  
Can it be Friedrich of the bowmen's talk?  
Surely that grape-juice, bubbling at the stalk,  
Is some gray scorching Sarasenian wine  
The Kaiser quaffs with the Miramoline —  
Those swarthy hazel-clusters, seamed and  
chapped,

Or filberts russet-sheathed and velvet-capped,  
Are dates plucked from the bough John Bri-  
enne sent,

To keep in mind his sluggish armament  
Of Canaan : — Friedrich's, all the pomp and  
fierce  
Demeanor! But harsh sounds and sights trans-  
pierce

So rarely the serene cloud where he dwells,  
And pract- Whose looks enjoin, whose lightest  
tised on words are spells  
till the real On the obdurate! That right arm in-  
come. deed

Has thunder for its slave; but where's the  
need

Of thunder if the stricken multitude  
Hearkens, arrested in its angriest mood,  
While songs go up exulting, then dispread,  
Dispart, disperse, lingering overhead  
Like an escape of angels? 'Tis the tune,  
Nor much unlike the words his women croon  
Smilingly, colorless and faint-designed  
Each, as a worn-out queen's face some remind  
Of her extreme youth's love-tales. "Eglamor  
Made that!" Half minstrel and half emperor,  
What but ill objects vexed him? Such he  
slew.

The kinder sort were easy to subdue  
By those ambrosial glances, dulcet tones;  
And these a gracious hand advanced to thrones  
Beneath him. Wherefore twist and torture  
this,

Striving to name afresh the antique bliss,  
Instead of saying, neither less nor more,  
He means He had discovered, as our world be-  
to be per- fore,  
fect — say, Apollo? That shall be the name;  
Apollo; nor bid

Me rag by rag expose how patchwork hid



The youth — what thefts of every clime and day

Contributed to purfle the array

He climbed with (June at deep) some close ravine

'Mid clatter of its million pebbles sheen,  
Over which, singing soft, the rummel slipped  
Elate with rains : into whose streamlet dipped  
He foot, yet trod, you thought, with unwet sock —

Though really on the stubs of living rock  
Ages ago it crenelled ; vines for roof,  
Lindens for wall ; before him, aye aloof,  
Flittered in the cool some azure damsel-fly,  
Born of the simmering quiet, there to die.  
Emerging whence, Apollo still, he spied  
Mighty descents of forest ; multiplied  
Tuft on tuft, here, the frolic myrtle-trees,  
There gendered the grave maple stocks at ease,  
And, proud of its observer, straight the wood  
Tried old surprises on him ; black it stood  
A sudden barrier ('t was a cloud passed o'er)  
So dead and dense, the tiniest brute no more  
Must pass ; yet presently (the cloud dispatched)  
Each clump, behold, was listening detached  
A shrub, oak-boles shrunk into ilex-stems !  
Yet could not he denounce the stratagems  
He saw thro', till, hours thence, aloft would hang

White summer-lightnings ; as it sank and sprang

To measure, that whole palpitating breast  
Of heaven, 't was Apollo, nature prest  
At eve to worship.

Time stole : by degrees

The Pythons perish off ; his votaries  
Sink to respectful distance ; songs redeem  
Their pains, but briefer ; their dismissals seem  
Emphatic ; only girls are very slow  
To disappear — his Delians ! Some that glow  
O' the instant, more with earlier loves to wrench  
Away, reserves to quell, disdains to quench ;  
Alike in one material circumstance —  
All soon or late adore Apollo ! Glance  
The bevy through, divine Apollo's choice,  
And Apol- His Daphne ! "We secure Count  
lomustone Richard's voice  
day find In Este's counsels, good for Este's  
Daphne, ends

As our Taurello," say his faded friends,  
"By granting him our Palma !" — the sole child,

They mean, of Agnes Este who beguiled  
Ecelin, years before this Adelaide  
Wedded and turned him wicked : "but the maid

Rejects his suit," those sleepy women boast.  
She, scorning all beside, deserves the most  
Sordello : so, conspicuous in his world  
Of dreams saf Palma. How the tresses curled  
Into a sumptuous swell of gold and wound  
About her like a glory ! even the ground  
Was bright as with spilt sunbeams ; breathe not, breathe

Not ! — poised, see, one leg doubled underneath,  
Its small foot buried in the dimpling snow,  
Rests, but the other, listlessly below,  
O'er the couch-side swings feeling for cool air,

The vein-streaks swollen a richer violet where  
The languid blood lies heavily ; yet calm  
On her slight prop, each flat and outspread palm,  
As but suspended in the act to rise  
By consciousness of beauty, whence her eyes  
But when Turn with so frank a triumph, for  
will this she meets  
dream turn Apollo's gaze in the pine glooms.  
truth ?

Time fleets :

That's worst ! Because the pre-appointed age  
Approaches. Fate is tardy with the stage  
And crowd she promised. Lean he grows and pale,

Though restlessly at rest. Hardly avail  
Fancies to soothe him. Time steals, yet alone  
He tarries here ! The earnest smile is gone.  
How long this might continue matters not ;

For the — Forever, possibly ; since to the spot  
time is None come : our lingering Taurello  
ripe, and quits  
he ready.

Mantua at last, and light our lady flits  
Back to her place disburdened of a care.  
Strange — to be constant here if he is there !  
Is it distrust ? Oh, never ! for they both  
Goad Ecelin alike, Romano's growth  
Is daily manifest, with Azzo dumb  
And Richard wavering : let but Friedrich come,  
Find matter for the minstrelsy's report !  
— Lured from the Isle and its young Kaiser's court

To sing us a Messina morning up,  
And, double rillet of a drinking cup,  
Sparkle along to ease the land of drouth,  
Northward to Provence that, and thus farsouth  
The other. What a method to apprise  
Neighbors of births, espousals, obsequies !  
Which in their very tongue the Troubadour  
Records ; and his performance makes a tour,  
For Trouvers bear the miracle about,  
Explain its cunning to the vulgar rout,  
Until the Formidable House is famed  
Over the country — as Taurello aimed,  
Who introduced, although the rest adopt,  
The novelty. Such games, her absence stopped,  
Begin afresh now Adelaide, recluse  
No longer, in the light of day pursues  
Her plans at Mantua : whence an accident  
Which, breaking on Sordello's mixed content,  
Opened, like any flash that cures the blind,  
The veritable business of mankind.

## BOOK THE SECOND

The woods were long austere with snow : at last  
This bub- Pink leaflets budded on the beech,  
ble of and fast  
fancy. Larches, scattered through pine-tree  
solitudes,

Brightened, "as in the slumbrous heart o' the woods

Our buried year, a witch, grew young again  
To placid incantations, and that stain  
About were from her caldron, green smoke blent  
With those black pines" — so Eglamor gave vent

To a chance fancy. Whence a just rebuke  
From his companion ; brother Naddo shook

The solemnest of brows ; " Beware," he said,  
 " Of setting up conceits in nature's stead !"  
 Forth wandered our Sordello. Naught so sure  
 As that to-day's adventure will secure  
 Palma, the visioned lady — only pass  
 O'er yon damp mound and its exhausted grass,  
 Under that brake where sundawn feeds the  
 stalks

Of withered fern with gold, into those walks  
 Of pine and take her ! Buoyantly he went.  
 Again his stooping forehead was besprent  
 With dew-drops from the skirting ferns. Then  
 wide

Opened the great morass, shot every side  
 With flashing water through and through ;  
 a-shine,

Thick steaming, all alive. Whose shape di-  
 vine,

Quivered i' the farthest rainbow-vapor, glanced  
 Athwart the flying herons ? He advanced,  
 But warily ; though Mincio leaped no more,  
 Each footfall burst up in the marsh-floor  
 A diamond jet : and if he stopped to pick  
 Rose-lichen, or molest the leeches quick,  
 And circling blood-worms, minnow, newt or  
 loach,

A sudden pond would silently encroach  
 This way and that. On Palma passed. The  
 verge

Of a new wood was gained. She will emerge  
 Flushed, now, and panting, — crowds to see, —  
 will own

She loves him — Boniface to hear, to groan,  
 To leave his suit ! One screen of pine-trees still  
 Opposes : but — the startling spectacle —  
 Mantua, this time ! Under the walls — a crowd  
 Indeed, real men and women, gay and loud  
 Round a pavilion. How he stood !

In truth  
 When No prophecy had come to pass : his  
 greatest youth  
 and bright-est, bursts. In its prime now — and where was  
 homage poured

Upon Sordello ? — born to be adored,  
 And suddenly discovered weak, scarce made  
 To cope with any, cast into the shade  
 By this and this. Yet something seemed to  
 prick

And tingle in his blood ; a sleight — a trick —  
 And much would be explained. It went for  
 naught —

The best of their endowments were ill bought  
 With his identity : nay, the conceit,  
 That this day's roving led to Palma's feet  
 Was not so vain — list ! The word, " Palma !"  
 Steal

Aside, and die, Sordello ; this is real,  
 And this — abjure !

What next ? The curtains see  
 Dividing ! She is there ; and presently  
 He will be there — the proper You, at length —  
 In your own cherished dress of grace and  
 strength :

Most like, the very Boniface !

Not so.  
 It was a showy man advanced ; but though  
 A glad cry welcomed him, then every sound  
 Sank and the crowd disposed themselves around,

— " This is not he," Sordello felt ; while, " Place  
 For the best Troubadour of Boniface !"

Hollaed the Jongleurs, — " Eglamor, whose lay  
 Concludes his patron's Court of Love to-day !"  
 Obsequious Naddo strung the master's lute  
 With the new lute-string, " Elys," named to suit

At a Court The song : he stealthily at watch, the  
 of Love a while,  
 minstrel Biting his lip to keep down a great  
 sings. smile

Of pride : then up he struck. Sordello's brain  
 Swam ; for he knew a sometime deed again ;  
 So, could supply each foolish gap and chasm  
 The minstrel left in his enthusiasm,  
 Mistaking its true version — was the tale  
 Not of Apollo ? Only, what avail

Luring her down, that Elys an he pleased,  
 If the man dared no further ? Has he ceased ?

And, lo, the people's frank applause half done,  
 Sordello was beside him, had begun  
 (Spite of indignant twitchings from his friend  
 The Trouvere) the true lay with the true end,  
 Taking the other's names and time and place  
 For his. On flew the song, a giddy race,

Sordello, After the flying story ; word made  
 before Palma leap

Out word, rhyme — rhyme ; the lay  
 quers him, could barely keep

Pace with the action visibly rushing past :  
 Both ended. Back fell Naddo more aghast

Than some Egyptian from the harassed bull  
 That wheeled abrupt and, bellowing, fronted  
 full

His plague, who spied a scarab 'neath the  
 tongue,

And found 't was Apis' flank his hasty prong  
 Insulted. But the people — but the cries,  
 The crowding round, and proffering the prize !  
 — For he had gained some prize. He seemed  
 to shrink

Into a sleepy cloud, just at whose brink  
 One sight withheld him. There sat Adelaide,  
 Silent ; but at her knees the very maid  
 Of the North Chamber, her red lips as rich,  
 The same pure fleecy hair ; one web of which,  
 Golden and great, quite touched his cheek as  
 o'er

She leant, speaking some six words and no more.

He answered something, anything ; and she  
 Unbound a scarf and laid it heavily  
 Upon him, her neck's warmth and all. Again  
 Moved the arrested magic ; in his brain  
 Noises grew, and a light that turned to glare,  
 And greater glare, until the intense flare  
 Engulfed him, shut the whole scene from his  
 sense.

And when he woke 't was many a furlong  
 thence,

At home ; the sun shining his ruddy wont ;  
 The customary birds'-chirp ; but his front

Receives Was crowned — was crowned ! Her  
 the prize, scented scarf around

and rumi- His neck ! Whose gorgeous vesture  
 nates. heaps the ground ?

A prize ? He turned, and peeringly on him  
 Brooded the women-faces, kind and dim,  
 Ready to talk — " The Jongleurs in a troop  
 Had brought him back, Naddo and Squarcialupo

And Tagliafer; how strange! a childhood spent  
In taking, well for him, so brave a bent!  
Since Eglamor," they heard, "was dead with  
spite,  
And Palma chose him for her minstrel."

Light

Sordello rose — to think, now; hitherto  
He had perceived. Sure, a discovery grew  
Out of it all! Best live from first to last  
The transport o'er again. A week he passed,  
Sucking the sweet out of each circumstance,  
From the bard's outbreak to the luscious trance  
Bounding his own achievement. Strange! A  
man

Recounted an adventure, but began  
Imperfectly; his own task was to fill  
The frame-work up, sing well what he sung ill,  
Supply the necessary points, set loose  
As many incidents of little use  
— More imbecile the other, not to see  
Their relative importance clear as he!  
But, for a special pleasure in the act  
Of singing — had he ever turned, in fact,  
From Elys, to sing Elys? — from each fit  
Of rapture to contrive a song of it?  
True, this snatch or the other seemed to wind  
Into a treasure, helped himself to find  
A beauty in himself; for, see, he soared  
By means of that mere snatch, to many a hoard  
Of fancies; as some falling cone bears soft  
The eye along the fir-tree spire, aloft  
To a dove's nest. Then, how divine the cause  
Why such performance should exact applause  
From men, if they had fancies too? Did fate  
Decree they found a beauty separate  
In the poor snatch itself? — "Take Elys, there,  
— 'Her head that's sharp and perfect like a  
pear,

So close and smooth are laid the few fine locks  
Colored like honey oozed from topmost rocks  
Sun-blanch the liveliest summer' — if they  
heard

Just those two rhymes, assented at my word,  
And loved them as I love them who have run  
These fingers through those pale looks, let the  
sun

Into the white cool skin — who first could clutch,  
Then praise — I needs must be a god to such.  
Or what if some, above themselves, and yet  
How had Beneath me, like their Eglamor,  
he been su- have set  
perior to An impress on our gift? So, men  
Eglamor? believe

And worship what they know not, nor receive  
Delight from. Have they fancies — slow, per-  
chance,

Not at their beck, which indistinctly glance  
Until, by song, each floating part be linked  
To each, and all grow palpable, distinct?"  
He pondered this.

Meanwhile, sounds low and drear  
Stole on him, and a noise of footsteps, near  
And nearer, while the underwood was pushed  
Aside, the larches grazed, the dead leaves  
crushed

At the approach of men. The wind seemed laid;  
Only, the trees shrunk slightly and a shade  
Came o'er the sky although 't was mid-day yet:

You saw each half-shut downcast floweret  
Flutter — "a Roman bride, when they'd dispart  
Her unbound tresses with the Sabine dart,  
Holding that famous rape in memory still,  
Felt creep into her curls the iron chill,  
And looked thus," Eglamor would say — indeed  
This is "T is Eglamor, no other, these precede  
answered Home hither in the woods. "T were  
by Eglamor him- surely sweet  
self: Far from the scene of one's forlorn  
defeat

To sleep!" judged Naddo, who in person led  
Jongleurs and Trouveres, chanting at their head,  
A scanty company; for, sooth to say,  
Our beaten Troubadour had seen his day.  
Old worshippers were something shamed, old  
friends

Nigh weary; still the death proposed amends.  
"Let us but get them safely through my song  
And home again!" quoth Naddo.

All along,

This man (they rest the bier upon the sand)  
— This calm corpse with the loose flowers in his  
hand,

Eglamor, lived Sordello's opposite.  
For him indeed was Naddo's notion right,  
And verse a temple-worship vague and vast,  
A ceremony that withdrew the last  
Opposing bolt, looped back the lingering veil  
Which hid the holy place: should one so frail  
Stand there without such effort? or repine  
If much was blank, uncertain at the shrine  
He knelt before, till, soothed by many a rite,  
The power responded, and some sound or sight

Grew up, his own forever, to be fixed,  
One who In rhyme, the beautiful, forever! —  
belonged to what mixed  
he loved,

With his own life, unloosed when he  
should please,

Having it safe at hand, ready to ease  
All pain, remove all trouble; every time  
He loosed that fancy from its bonds of rhyme,  
(Like Perseus when he loosed his naked love)  
Faltering; so distinct and far above  
Himself, these fancies! He, no genius rare,  
Transfiguring in fire or wave or air  
At will, but a poor gnome that, cloistered up  
In some rock-chamber with his agate cup,  
His topaz rod, his seed-pearl, in these few  
And their arrangement finds enough to do  
For his best art. Then, how he loved that art!  
The calling marking him a man apart

From men — one not to care, take counsel for  
Cold hearts, comfortless faces — (Eglamor  
Was neediest of his tribe) — since verse, the gift,  
Was his, and men, the whole of them, must shift  
Without it, e'en content themselves with wealth  
And pomp and power, snatching a life by stealth.  
So, Eglamor was not without his pride!

Loving his The sorriest bat which cowers  
art and re- throughout noontide  
warded by While other birds are jocund, has one  
it, time

When moon and stars are blinded, and the prime  
Of earth is his to claim, nor find a peer;  
And Eglamor was noblest poet here —  
He well knew, 'mid those April woods, he cast  
Conceits upon in plenty as he passed,



That Naddo might suppose him not to think  
 Entirely on the coming triumph : wink  
 At the one weakness ! 'Twas a fervid child,  
 That song of his ; no brother of the guild  
 Had e'er conceived its like. The rest you know,  
 The exaltation and the overthrow :  
 Our poet lost his purpose, lost his rank,  
 His life — to that it came. Yet envy sank  
 Within him, as he heard Sordello out,  
 And, for the first time, shouted — tried to shout  
 Like others, not from any zeal to show  
 Pleasure that way : the common sort did so.  
 What else was Eglamor ? who, bending down  
 As they, placed his beneath Sordello's crown,  
 Printed a kiss on his successor's hand,  
 Left one great tear on it, then joined his band  
 — In time ; for some were watching at the door :  
 Who knows what envy may effect ? " Give  
 o'er,

Nor charm his lips, nor craze him ! " (here one  
 spied

And disengaged the withered crown) — " Beside  
 His crown ? How prompt and clear those verses  
 rang

To answer yours ! nay, sing them ! " And he  
 sang

Them calmly. Home he went ; friends used to  
 wait

His coming, zealous to congratulate ;  
 But, to a man, — so quickly runs report, —  
 Could do no less than leave him, and escort  
 His rival. That eve, then, bred many a thought :  
 What must his future life be ? was he brought  
 So low, who stood so lofty this Spring morn ?  
 At length he said, " Best sleep now with my  
 scorn,

And by to-morrow I devise some plain  
 Expedient ! " So, he slept, nor woke again.

Ending They found as much, those friends,  
 with what when they returned  
 had pos- O'erflowing with the marvels they  
 sessed him. had learned

About Sordello's paradise, his roves  
 Among the hills and vales and plains and groves,  
 Wherein, no doubt, this lay was roughly cast,  
 Polished by slow degrees, completed last  
 To Eglamor's discomfiture and death.

Such form the chanter now, and, out of  
 breath,

They lay the beaten man in his abode,  
 Naddo reciting that same luckless ode,  
 Doleful to hear. Sordello could explore  
 By means of it, however, one step more  
 In joy ; and, mastering the round at length,  
 Learnt how to live in weakness as in strength,  
 When from his covert forth he stood, addressed  
 Eglamor, bade the tender ferns invest,  
 Primæval pines o'er canopy his couch,  
 And, most of all, his fame — (shall I avouch  
 Eglamor heard it, dead though he might look,  
 And laughed as from his brow Sordello took  
 The crown, and laid on the bard's breast, and  
 said

It was a crown, now, fit for poet's head ? )  
 — Continue. Nor the prayer quite fruitless fell,  
 A plant they ha'e, yielding a three-leaved bell  
 Which whitens at the heart ere noon, and ails  
 Till evening ; evening gives it to her gales

To clear away with such forgotten things  
 As are an eyesore to the morn : this brings  
 Him to their mind, and bears his very name.  
 Eglamor So much for Eglamor. My own  
 done with, month came ;  
 Sordello 'T was a sunrise of blossoming and  
 begins. May.

Beneath a flowering laurel thicket lay  
 Sordello ; each new sprinkle of white stars  
 That smell fainter of wine than Massie jars  
 Dug up at Baixæ, when the south wind shed  
 The ripest, made him happier ; filleted  
 And robed the same, only a lute beside  
 Lay on the turf. Before him far and wide  
 The country stretched : Goito slept behind  
 — The castle and its covert, which confined  
 Him with his hopes and fears ; so fain of old  
 To leave the story of his birth untold.  
 At intervals, ' spite the fantastic glow  
 Of his Apollo-life, a certain low  
 And wretched whisper, winding through the  
 bliss,

Admonished, no such fortune could be his,  
 All was quite false and sure to fade one day :  
 The closelier drew he round him his array  
 Of brilliance to expel the truth. But when  
 A reason for his difference from men  
 Surprised him at the grave, he took no rest  
 While aught of that old life, superbly dressed  
 Down to its meanest incident, remained  
 A mystery : alas, they soon explained  
 Away Apollo ! and the tale amounts  
 To this : when at Vicenza both her counts  
 Who he Banished the Vivaresi kith and kin,  
 really was, Those Maltraversi hung on Ecelin,  
 and why Reviled him as he followed ; he for  
 at Goito. spite

Must fire their quarter, though that self-same  
 night

Among the flames young Ecelin was born  
 Of Adelaide, there too, and barely torn  
 From the roused populace hard on the rear,  
 By a poor archer when his chieftain's fear  
 Grew high ; into the thick Elcorte leapt,  
 Saved her, and died ; no creature left except  
 His child to thank. And when the full escape  
 Was known — how men impaled from chine to  
 nape

Unlucky Prata, all to pieces spurned  
 Bishop Pistore's concubines, and burned  
 Taurello's entire household, flesh and fell,  
 Missing the sweeter prey — such courage well  
 Might claim reward. The orphan, ever since,  
 Sordello, had been nurtured by his prince  
 Within a blind retreat where Adelaide —  
 (For, once this notable discovery made,  
 The past at every point was understood)  
 — Might harbor easily when times were rude,  
 When Azzo schemed for Palma, to retrieve  
 That pledge of Agnes Este — loth to leave  
 Mantua unguarded with a vigilant eye,  
 While there Taurello bode amb'gously —  
 He who could have no motive now to moil  
 For his own fortunes since their utter spoil —  
 As it were worth while yet (went the report)  
 To disengage himself from her. In short,  
 Apollo vanished ; a mean youth, just named  
 His lady's minstrel, was to be proclaimed

—How shall I phrase it? — Monarch of the  
He, so lit- World!  
tie, would For, on the day when that array was  
fain be so furled  
much:

Forever, and in place of one a slave  
To longings, wild indeed, but longings save  
In dreams as wild, suppressed — one daring  
not

Assume the mastery such dreams allot,  
Until a magical equipment, strength,  
Grace, wisdom, decked him too, — he chose at  
length,

Content with unproved wits and failing frame,  
In virtue of his simple will, to claim  
That mastery, no less — to do his best  
With means so limited, and let the rest  
Go by, — the seal was set: never again  
Sordello could in his own sight remain

Leaves the One of the many, one with hopes and  
dream he cares  
may be And interests nowise distinct from  
something, theirs,

Only peculiar in a thriveless store  
Of fancies, which were fancies and no more;  
Never again for him and for the crowd  
A common law was challenged and allowed  
If calmly reasoned of, how'er denied  
By a mad impulse nothing justified  
Short of Apollo's presence. The divorce

Is clear: why needs Sordello square his course  
By any known example? Men no more  
Compete with him than tree and flower before.

Himself, inactive, yet is greater far  
Than such as act, each stooping to his star,  
Acquiring thence his function; he has gained  
The same result with meaner mortals trained  
To strength or beauty, moulded to express  
Each the idea that rules him; since no less  
He comprehends that function, but can still  
Embrace the others, take of might his fill

With Richard as of grace with Palma, mix  
Their qualities, or for a moment fix  
On one; abiding free meantime, uncramped  
By any partial organ, never stampered  
Strong, and to strength turning all energies —  
Wise, and restricted to becoming wise —

That is, he loves not, nor possesses One  
Idea that, star-like over, lures him on  
To its exclusive purpose. "Fortunate!  
This flesh of mine ne'er strove to emulate  
A soul so various — took no casual mould  
Of the first fancy and, contracted, cold,  
Clogged her forever — soul averse to change  
As flesh: whereas flesh leaves soul free to range,  
Remains itself a blank, cast into shade,  
Encumbers little, if it cannot aid.

For the So, range, free soul! — who, by self-  
fact that consciousness,  
he can do The last drop of all beauty dost ex-  
nothing, press —

The grace of seeing grace, a quintessence  
For thee; while for the world, that can dispense  
Wonder on men who, themselves, wonder —  
make

A shift to love at second-hand, and take  
For idols those who do but idolize,  
Themselves, — the world that counts men strong  
or wise,

Who, themselves, court strength, wisdom, — it  
shall bow  
Surely in unexampled worship now,  
Discerning me!" —

(Dear monarch, I beseech,  
Notice how lamentably wide a breach  
Is here: discovering this, discover too  
What our poor world has possibly to do  
With it! As pigmy natures as you please —  
So much the better for you; take your ease,  
Look on, and laugh; style yourself God alone;  
Strangle some day with a cross olive-stone!  
All that is right enough: but why want us  
To know that you yourself know thus and thus?)  
"The world shall bow to me conceiving all  
Man's life, who see its blisses, great and small,  
Afar — not tasting any; no machine  
To exercise my utmost will is mine:  
Be mine mere consciousness! Let men perceive  
What I could do, a mastery believe,  
Asserted and established to the throng  
By their selected evidence of song  
Which now shall prove, whate'er they are, or  
seek

To be, I am — whose words, not actions speak,  
Who change no standards of perfection, vex  
With no strange forms created to perplex,  
But just perform their bidding and no more,  
At their own satiating-point give o'er,  
While each shall love in me the love that leads  
His soul to power's perfection." Song, not  
deeds,

(For we get tired) was chosen. Fate would  
brook

Mankind no other organ; he would look  
For not another channel to dispense  
His own volition by, receive men's sense  
Of its supremacy — would live content,  
Obstructed else, with merely verse for vent.

Yet is able Nor should, for instance, strength an  
to imagine outlet seek  
every- And, striving, be admired; nor grace  
thing, bespeak

Wonder, displayed in gracious attitudes;  
Nor wisdom, poured forth, change unseemly  
moods:

But he would give and take on song's one point.  
Like some huge throbbing stone that, poised  
a-joint,

Sounds, to affect on its basaltic bed,  
Must sue in just one accent; tempests shed  
Thunder, and raves the windstorm: only let  
That key by any little noise be set —  
The far benighted hunter's halloo pitch  
On that, the hungry curlew chance to scritch  
Or serpent hiss it, rustling through the rift,  
However loud, however low — all lift  
The groaning monster, stricken to the heart.

Lo ye, the world's concernment, for its part,  
If the And this, for his, will hardly inter-  
world es- fere!  
tem this Its businesses in blood and blaze this  
equivalent. year

But while the hour away — a pastime slight  
Till he shall step upon the platform: right!  
And, now thus much is settled, cast in rough,  
Proved feasible, be counselled! thought  
enough, —

Slumber, Sordello! any day will serve:  
 Were it a less digested plan! how swerve  
 To-morrow? Meanwhile eat these sun-dried  
 grapes,  
 And watch the soaring hawk there! Life es-  
 capes  
 Merrily thus.

He thoroughly read o'er  
 His truchman Naddo's missive six times more,  
 Praying him visit Mantua and supply  
 A famished world.

The evening star was high  
 When he reached Mantua, but his fame ar-  
 rived

Before him: friends applauded, foes connived,  
 And Naddo looked an angel, and the rest  
 Angels, and all these angels would be blest  
 Supremely by a song — the thrice-reowned  
 Goito-manufacture. Then he found  
 (Casting about to satisfy the crowd)

That happy vehicle, so late allowed,  
 A sore annoyance; 't was the song's  
 effect  
 He cared for, scarce the song itself:  
 reflect!

In the past life, what might be singing's use?  
 Just to delight his Delians, whose profuse  
 Praise, not the toilsome process which procured  
 That praise, enticed Apollo: dreams abjured,  
 No overleaping means for ends — take both  
 For granted or take neither! I am loth  
 To say the rhymes at last were Eglamor's;  
 But Naddo, chuckling, bade competitors  
 "To pine; " the master certes meant to waste  
 No effort, cautiously had probed the taste  
 He'd please anon: true bard, in short, disturb  
 His title if they could; nor spur nor curb,  
 Fancy nor reason, wanting in him; whence  
 The staple of his verses, common sense:  
 He built on man's broad nature — gift of gifts,  
 That power to build! The world contented  
 shifts

With counterfeits enough, a dreary sort  
 Of warriors, statesmen, ere it can extort  
 Its poet-soul — that's, after all, a freak  
 (The having eyes to see and tongue to speak)  
 With our herd's stupid sterling happiness  
 So plainly incompatible that — yes —  
 Yes — should a son of his improve the breed  
 And turn out poet, he were cursed indeed!"  
 "Well, there's Goito and its woods anon,  
 If the worst happen; best go stoutly on  
 Now!" thought Sordello.

So, must  
 effect this  
 to obtain  
 those.      Ay, and goes on yet!  
 You pother with your glossaries to  
 get

A notion of the Troubadour's intent  
 In rondel, tenzon, virlai, or sirvent —  
 Much as you study arras how to twirl  
 His angelot, plaything of page and girl  
 Once; but you surely reach, at last, — or, no!  
 Never quite reach what struck the people so,  
 As from the welter of their time he drew  
 Its elements successively to view,  
 Followed all actions backward on their course,  
 And catching up, unmingled at the source,  
 Such a strength, such a weakness, added then  
 A touch or two, and turned them into men.

Virtue took form, nor vice refused a shape;  
 Here heaven opened, there was hell agape,  
 As Saint this simpered past in sanctity,  
 Sinner the other flared portentous by  
 A greedy people. Then why stop, surprised  
 At his success? The scheme was realized  
 Too suddenly in one respect: a crowd  
 Praising, eyes quick to see, and lips as loud  
 To speak, delicious homage to receive,  
 The woman's breath to feel upon his sleeve,  
 Who said, "But Anafest — why asks he less  
 Than Lucio, in your verses? how confess,  
 It seemed too much but yestereve!" — the  
 youth,

Who bade him earnestly, "Avow the truth!  
 You love Bianca, surely, from your song;  
 I knew I was unworthy!" — soft or strong,  
 In poured such tributes ere he had arranged  
 Ethereal ways to take them, sorted, changed,  
 Digested. Courted thus at unawares,  
 In spite of his pretensions and his cares,  
 He caught himself shamefully hankering  
 After the obvious petty joys that spring  
 From true life, fain relinquish pedestal

And condescend with pleasures —  
 one and all  
 little, but To be renounced, no doubt; for, thus  
 fails to chain  
 more;      Himself to single joys and so refrain  
 From tasting their quintessence, frustrates.  
 sure,  
 His prime design; each joy must he abjure  
 Even for love of it.

He laughed: what sage  
 But perishes if from his magic page  
 He look because, at the first line, a proof  
 'T was heard salutes him from the cavern roof?  
 "On! Give yourself, excluding aught beside,  
 To the day's task; compel your slave provide  
 Its utmost at the soonest; turn the leaf  
 Thoroughly comed. These lays of yours, in  
 brief —

Cannot men bear, now, something better? —  
 fly  
 A pitch beyond this unreal pageantry  
 Of essences? the period sure has ceased  
 For such: present us with ourselves, at least,  
 Not portions of ourselves, mere loves and hates  
 Made flesh: wait not!"

While the poet waits  
 again, is However. The first trial was  
 no better enough:

satisfied,      He left imagining, to try the stuff  
 That held the imaged thing, and let it writhe  
 Never so fiercely, scarce allowed a tithe  
 To reach the light — his Language. How he  
 sought

The cause, conceived a cure, and slow re-  
 wrought

That Language, — welding words into the crude  
 Mass from the new speech round him, till a  
 rude

Armor was hammered out, in time to be  
 Approved beyond the Roman panoply  
 Melted to make it, — boots not. This obtained  
 With some ado, no obstacle remained  
 To using it; accordingly he took  
 An action with its actors, quite forsook



Himself to live in each, returned anon  
With the result — a creature, and, by one  
And one, proceeded leisurely to equip  
Its limbs in harness of his workmanship.  
"Accomplished! Listen, Mantuans!" Fond  
essay!

Piece after piece that armor broke away,  
Because perceptions whole, like that he sought  
To clothe, reject so pure a work of thought  
As language: thought may take perception's  
place

But hardly co-exist in any case,  
Being its mere presentment — of the whole  
By parts, the simultaneous and the sole  
By the successive and the many. Lacks  
The crowd perception? painfully it tacks  
Thought to thought, which Sordello, needing  
such,

Has rent perception into: it's to clutch  
And reconstruct — his office to diffuse,  
Destroy: as hard, then, to obtain a Muse  
As to become Apollo. "For the rest,  
E'en if some wondrous vehicle expressed  
The whole dream, what impertinence in me  
So to express it, who myself can be  
The dream! nor, on the other hand, are those  
I sing to, over-likely to suppose

And declines A higher than the highest I present  
Now, which they praise already: be  
from the content  
ideal of Both parties, rather — they with the  
song. old verse,

And I with the old praise — far go, fare  
worse!"

A few adhering rivets loosed, upsprings  
The angel, sparkles off his mail, which rings  
Whirled from each delicate limb it warps,  
So might Apollo from the sudden corpse  
Of Hyacinth have cast his luckless quoits.  
He set to celebrating the exploits  
Of Montfort o'er the Mountaineers.

Then came

The world's revenge: their pleasure, now his aim  
Merely, — what was it? "Not to play the fool  
So much as learn our lesson in your school!"

Replied the world. He found that, every time  
He gained applause by any ballad-rhyme,  
His auditory recognized no jot  
As he intended, and, mistaking not  
Him for his meanest hero, ne'er was dunce  
Sufficient to believe him — all, at once.

His will . . . conceive it caring for his will!  
— Mantuans, the main of them, admiring still  
How a mere singer, ugly, stunted, weak,  
Had Montfort at completely (so to speak)  
His fingers' ends; while past the praise-tide  
swept

To Montfort, either's share distinctly kept:  
The true need for true merit! — his abates

What is Into a sort he most repudiates,  
the And on them angrily he turns. Who  
world's were  
recognition The Mantuans, after all, that he  
worth? should care

About their recognition, ay or no?  
In spite of the convention months ago,  
(Why blink the truth?) was not he forced to  
help

This same ungrateful audience, every whelp  
Of Naddo's litter, make them pass for peers  
With the bright band of old Goito years,  
As erst he toiled for flower or tree? Why,  
there

Sat Palma! Adelaide's funereal hair  
Ennobled the next corner. Ay, he strewed  
A fairy dust upon that multitude,  
Although he feigned to take them by them-  
selves;

His giants dignified those puny elves,  
Sublime their faint applause. In short, he  
found

Himself still footing a delusive round,  
Remote as ever from the self-display  
He meant to compass, hampered every way  
By what he hoped assistance. Wherefore then  
Continue, make believe to find in men  
A use he found not?

Weeks, months, years went by,  
And lo, Sordello vanished utterly,

Sundered in twain; each spectral part at strife  
With each; one jarred against another life;  
How, poet The Poet thwarting hopelessly the  
no longer Man,

in unity Who, fooled no longer, free in fancy  
with man, ran

Here, there, — let slip no opportunities  
As pitiful, forsooth, beside the prize  
To drop on him some no-time and acquit  
His constant faith (the Poet-half's to wit —  
That waiving any compromise between  
No joy and all joy kept the hunger keen  
Beyond most methods) — of incurring scoff  
From the Man-portion — not to be put off  
With self-reflectings by the Poet's scheme,  
Though ne'er so bright. Who sauntered forth  
in dream,

Dressed anyhow, nor waited mystic frames,  
Immeasurable gifts, astounding claims,  
But just his sorry self? — who yet might be  
Sorrier for aught he in reality

Achieved, so pinioned Man's the Poet-part,  
Fondling, in turn of fancy, verse; the Art  
Developing his soul a thousand ways —  
Potent, by its assistance, to amaze  
The multitude with majesties, convince  
Each sort of nature, that the nature's prince  
Accosted it. Language, the makeshift, grew  
Into a bravest of expedients, too;  
Apollo, seemed it now, perverse had thrown  
Quiver and bow away, the lyre alone  
Sufficed. While, out of dream, his day's work  
went

To tune a crazy tenzon or sirvent —  
So hampered him the Man-part, thrust to judge  
Between the bard and the bard's audience,  
grudge

A minute's toil that missed its due reward!  
But the complete Sordello, Man and Bard,

John's cloud-girt angel, this foot on  
The whole the land,  
visible Sordello That on the sea, with, open in his  
goes hand,  
wrong A bitter-sweetling of a book — was  
gone.

Then, if internal struggles to be one  
Which frittered him incessantly piecemeal,

Referred, ne'er so obliquely, to the real  
 Intruding Mantuans! ever with some call  
 To action while he pondered, once for all,  
 Which looked the easier effort — to pursue  
 This course, still leap o'er paltry joys, yearn  
 through

The present ill-appreciated stage  
 Of self-revelment, and compel the age  
 Know him; or else, forswearing bard-craft, wake  
 From out his lethargy and nobly shake  
 Off timid habits of denial, mix  
 With men, enjoy like men. Ere he could fix  
 On aught, in rushed the Mantuans; much they  
 cared

For his perplexity! Thus unprepared,  
 The obvious if not only shelter lay  
 With those In deeds, the dull conventions of his  
 too hard day  
 for half of Prescribed the like of him: why not  
 him, be glad

'T is settled Palma's minstrel, good or bad,  
 Submits to this and that established rule?  
 Let Vidal change, or any other fool,  
 His murrey-colored robe for filamot,  
 And crop his hair; too skin-deep, is it not,  
 Such vigor? Then, a sorrow to the heart,  
 His talk! Whatever topics they might start  
 Had to be groped for in his consciousness  
 Straight, and as straight delivered them by  
 guess.

Only obliged to ask himself, "What was,"  
 A speedy answer followed; but, alas,  
 One of God's large ones, tardy to condense  
 Itself into a period; answers whence  
 A tangle of conclusions must be stripped  
 At any risk ere, trim to pattern clipped,  
 They matched rare specimens the Mantuan flock  
 Regaled him with, each talker from his stock  
 Of sorted-o'er opinions, every stage,  
 Juicy in youth or desecate with age,  
 Fruits like the fig-tree's, rather-ripe, rotten-rich,  
 Sweet-sour, all tastes to take: a practice which  
 He too had not impossibly attained,  
 Once either of those fancy-flights restrained;  
 (For, at conjecture how might words appear  
 To others, playing there what happened here,  
 And occupied abroad by what he spurned  
 At home, 't was slipped, the occasion he returned  
 To seize:) he'd strike that lyre adroitly —  
 speech,

Would but a twenty-cubit plectre reach;  
 A clever hand, consummate instrument,  
 Were both brought close; each excellency went  
 For nothing, else. The question Naddo asked,  
 Had just a lifetime moderately tasked  
 To answer, Naddo's fashion. More disgust  
 Of whom And more: why move his soul, since  
 he is also move it must  
 too con- At minute's notice or as good it  
 temptuous. failed

To move at all? The end was, he retailed  
 Some ready-made opinion, put to use  
 This quip, that maxim, ventured reproduce  
 Gestures and tones — at any folly caught  
 Serving to finish with, nor too much sought  
 If false or true 't was spoken; praise and blame  
 Of what he said grew pretty nigh the same  
 — Meantime awards to meantime acts: his soul,

Unequal to the compassing a whole,  
 Saw, in a tenth part, less and less to strive  
 About. And as for men in turn . . . contrive  
 Who could to take eternal interest  
 In them, so hate the worst, so love the best!  
 Though, in pursuance of his passive plan,  
 He hailed, decried, the proper way.

As Man  
 So figured he; and how as Poet? Verse  
 Came only not to a stand-still. The worse,  
 That his poor piece of daily work to do  
 Was, not sink under any rivals; who  
 He pleases Loudly and long enough, without  
 neither these qualms,  
 himself Turned, from Bocafoli's stark-naked  
 nor them: psalms,

To Plara's sonnets spoilt by toying with,  
 "As knops that stud some almsgut to the pith  
 Pricked for gum, wry thence, and crinkled  
 worse

Than pursed eyelids of a river-horse  
 Sunning himself o' the slime when whirrs the  
 breeze" —

*Gad-fly*, that is. He might compete with these!  
 But — but —

"Observe a pompion-twine afloat;  
 Pluck me one cup from off the castle-moat!  
 Which the Along with cup you raise leaf, stalk  
 best judges and root,  
 account The entire surface of the pool to  
 for. boot.

So could I pluck a cup, put in one song  
 A single sight, did not my hand, too strong,  
 Twich in the least the root-strings of the whole.  
 How should externals satisfy my soul?"

"Why that's precise the error Squarcialupe"  
 (Hazarded Naddo) "finds; 'the man can't stoop  
 To sing us out,' quoth he, 'a mere romance;  
 He'd fain do better than the best, enhance  
 The subjects' rarity, work problems out  
 Therewith.' Now, you're a bard, a bard past  
 doubt,

And no philosopher; why introduce  
 Crotchets like these? fine, surely, but no use  
 In poetry — which still must be, to strike,  
 Based upon common sense; there's nothing like  
 Appealing to our nature! what beside  
 Was your first poetry? No tricks were tried  
 In that, no hollow thrills, affected throes!  
 'The man,' said we, 'tells his own joys and  
 woes:

We'll trust him.' Would you have your songs  
 endure?

Build on the human heart! — why, to be sure  
 Yours is one sort of heart — but I mean theirs,  
 Ours, every one's, the healthy heart one cares  
 To build on! Central peace, mother of strength,  
 That's father of . . . nay, go yourself that  
 length,

Ask those calm-hearted doers what they do  
 When they have got their calm! And is it  
 true,

Fire rankles at the heart of every globe?  
 Perhaps. But these are matters one may probe  
 Too deeply for poetic purposes:  
 Rather select a theory that . . . yes,  
 Laugh! what does that prove? — stations you  
 midway

And saves some little o'er-refining. Nay,  
That's rank injustice done me! I restrict  
The poet? Don't I hold the poet picked  
Out of a host of warriors, statesmen . . . did  
I tell you? Very like! As well you hid  
That sense of power, you have! True bards  
believe

All able to achieve what they achieve —  
That is, just nothing — in one point abide  
Profounder simpletons than all beside.  
Oh, ay! The knowledge that you are a bard  
Must constitute your prime, nay sole, reward! ”  
So prattled Naddo, busiest of the tribe  
Of genius-haunters — how shall I describe  
What grubs or nips or rubs or rips — your louse  
For love, your flea for hate, magnanimous,  
Their Malignant, Pappacoda, Tagliafer,  
criticisms Picking a sustenance from wear and  
give small tear  
comfort: By implements it sedulous employs  
To undertake, lay down, mete out, o'er-toise  
Sordello? Fifty creepers to elude  
At once! They settled stanchly: shame ensued:  
Behold the monarch of mankind succumb  
To the last fool who turned him round his  
thumb,

As Naddo styled it! 'T was not worth oppose  
The matter of a moment, gainsay those  
He aimed at getting rid of; better think  
Their thoughts and speak their speech, secure  
to slink

Back expeditiously to his safe place,  
And chew the cud — what he and what his race  
Were really, each of them. Yet even this  
Conformity was partial. He would miss  
Some point, brought into contact with them ere  
Assured in what small segment of the sphere  
Of his existence they attended him;  
Whence blunders, falsehoods rectified — a grim  
List — slur it over! How? If dreams were  
tried,

His will swayed sickly from side to side,  
Nor merely neutralized his waking act  
But tended e'en in fancy to distract  
The intermediate will, the choice of means.  
He lost the art of dreaming: Mantuan scenes  
Supplied a baron, say, he sang before,  
Handsomely reckless, full to running o'er  
Of gallantries; “abjure the soul, content  
With body, therefore!” Scarcely had he bent  
Himself in dream thus low, when matter fast  
Cried out, he found, for spirit to contrast  
And task it duly; by advances slight,  
The simple stuff becoming composite,  
Count Lori grew Apollo — best recall  
His fancy! Then would some rough peasant-  
Paul,

Like those old Ecelin confers with, glance  
His gay apparel o'er; that countenance  
Gathered his shattered fancies into one,  
And, body clean abolished, soul alone  
Sufficed the gray Paulician: by and by,

And his To balance the ethereality,  
own de- Passions were needed; foiled he sank  
gradation again.

Meanwhile the world rejoiced ('tis  
complete, time explain)

Because a sudden sickness set it free

From Adelaide. Missing the mother-bee,  
Her mountain-hive Romano swarmed; at once  
A rustle-forth of daughters and of sons  
Blackened the valley. “I am sick too, old,  
Half-crazed I think; what good's the Kaiser's  
gold

To such an one? God help me! for I catch  
My children's greedy sparkling eyes at watch —  
“He hears that double breastplate on,” they say,  
“So many minutes less than yesterday!”  
Beside, Monk Hilary is on his knees  
Now, sworn to kneel and pray till God shall  
please

Exact a punishment for many things  
You know, and some you never knew; which  
brings

To memory, Azzo's sister Beatrix  
And Richard's Giglia are my Alberic's  
And Ecelin's betrothed; the Count himself  
Must get my Palma: Ghibellin and Gueff  
Mean to embrace each other.” So began  
Adelaide's Romano's missive to his fighting  
death: man  
what hap- Taurello — on the Tuscan's death,  
pens on it: away

With Friedrich sworn to sail from Naples' bay  
Next month for Syria. Never thunder-clap  
Out of Vesuvius' throat, like this mishap  
Startled him. “That accursed Vicenza! I  
Absent, and she selects this time to die!  
Ho, fellows, for Vicenza!” Half a score  
Of horses ridden dead, he stood before  
Romano in his reeking spurs: too late —  
“Boniface urged me, Este could not wait,”  
The chieftain stammered; “let me die in  
peace —

Forget me! Was it I who craved increase  
Of rule? Do you and Friedrich plot your worst  
Against the Father: as you found me first  
So leave me now. Forgive me! Palma, sure,  
Is at Goito still. Retain that lure —  
Only be pacified!”

The country rung  
With such a piece of news: on every tongue,  
How Ecelin's great servant, congeed off,  
Had done a long day's service, so, might doff  
The green and yellow, and recover breath  
At Mantua, whither, — since Retrude's death,  
(The girlish slip of a Sicilian bride  
From Otto's house, he carried to reside  
At Mantua till the Ferrarese should pile  
A structure worthy her imperial style,  
The gardens raise, the statues there enshrine,  
She never lived to see) — although his line  
Was ancient in her archives and she took  
A pride in him, that city, nor forsook  
Her child when he forsook himself and spent  
A prowess on Romano surely meant  
For his own growth — whither he ne'er resorts  
If wholly satisfied (to trust reports)  
With Ecelin. So, forward in a trice  
Were shows to greet him. “Take a friend's  
advice,”

Quoth Naddo to Sordello, “nor be rash  
Because your rivals (nothing can abash  
Some folks) demur that we pronounced you best  
To sound the great man's welcome; 'tis a test,  
Remember! Strojavecce looks askint,



The rough fat sloven; and there's plenty hint  
Your pinions have received of late a shock —  
Outsoar them, cobswan of the silver flock!

Sing well!" A signal wonder, song's  
no whit  
Facilitated.

Fast the minutes flit;  
Another day, Sordello finds, will  
bring

The soldier, and he cannot choose but sing;  
So, a last shift, quits Mantua — slow, alone:  
Out of that aching brain, a very stone,  
Song must be struck. What occupies that  
front?

Just how he was more awkward than his wont  
The night before, when Naddo, who had seen  
Taurello on his progress, praised the mien  
For dignity no crosses could affect —  
Such was a joy, and might not he detect  
A satisfaction if established joys  
Were proved imposture? Poetry annoys  
Its utmost: wherefore fret? Verses may come  
Or keep away! And thus he wandered, dumb  
Till evening, when he paused, thoroughly spent,  
On a blind hill-top: down the gorge he went,  
Yielding himself up as to an embrace.  
The moon came out; like features of a face,  
A querulous fraternity of pines,  
Sad blackthorn clumps, leafless and grovelling  
vines

Also came out, made gradually up  
The picture; 't was Goito's mountain-cup  
And castle. He had dropped through one de-  
file

He never dared explore, the Chief erewhile  
Had vanished by. Back rushed the  
He dream, unwrapped  
chances Him wholly. 'T was Apollo now  
upon his they lapped,  
old en- Those mountains, not a pettish min-  
vironment, strel meant

To wear his soul away in discontent,  
Brooding on fortune's malice. Heart and brain  
Swelled; he expanded to himself again,  
As some thin seedling spice-tree starved and  
frail,

Pushing between cat's head and ibis' tail  
Crusted into the porphyry pavement smooth,  
— Suffered remain just as it sprung, to soothe  
The Soldan's pining daughter, never yet  
Well in her chilly green-glazed minaret, —  
When rooted up, the sunny day she died,  
And flung into the common court beside  
Its parent tree. Come home, Sordello! Soon  
Was he low muttering, beneath the moon,  
Of sorrow saved, of quiet evermore, —  
Since from the purpose, he maintained before,  
Only resulted wailing and hot tears.

Sees but Ah, the slim castle! dwindled of  
failure in late years,  
all done But more mysterious; gone to ruin  
since, — trails

Of vine through every loop-hole. Naught avails  
The night as, torch in hand, he must explore  
The maple chamber: did I say, its floor  
Was made of intersecting cedar beams?  
Worn now with gaps so large, there blew cold  
streams

Of air quite from the dungeon; lay your ear  
Close and 't is like, one after one, you hear  
In the blind darkness water drop. The nests  
And nooks retain their long ranged vesture-  
chests

Empty and smelling of the iris root  
The Tuscan grated o'er them to recruit  
Her wasted wits. Palma was gone that day,  
Said the remaining women. Last, he lay  
Beside the Carian group reserved and still.  
The Body, the Machine for Acting Will,  
Had been at the commencement proved unfit;  
That for Demonstrating, Reflecting it,  
Mankind — no fitter: was the Will Itself  
In fault?

His forehead pressed the moonlit shelf  
Beside the youngest marble maid awhile;  
Then, raising it, he thought, with a long smile,  
and re- "I shall be king again!" as he  
solves to withdrew  
desist The envied scarf; into the fount he  
from the threw  
like. His crown.

Next day, no poet! "Wherefore?" asked  
Taurello, when the dance of Jongleurs, masked  
As devils, ended; "don't a song come next?"  
The master of the pageant looked perplexed  
Till Naddo's whisper came to his relief.  
"His Highness knew what poets were: in brief.  
Had not the tetchy race prescriptive right  
To peevishness, caprice? or, call it spite,  
One must receive their nature in its length  
And breadth, expect the weakness with the  
strength!"

— So phrasing, till, his stock of phrases spent.  
The easy-natured soldier smiled assent,  
Settled his portly person, smoothed his chin,  
And nodded that the bull-bait might begin.

### BOOK THE THIRD

And the foot took them: let our laurels lie!  
Braid moonfern now with mystic trifoly  
Because once more Goito gets, once more,  
Sordello to itself! A dream is o'er,  
And the suspended life begins anew;  
Quiet those throbbing temples, then, subdue  
Nature That cheek's distortion! Nature's  
may strict embrace,  
triumph Putting aside the past, shall soon  
therefore; efface  
Its print as well — factitious humors grown  
Over the true — loves, hatreds not his own —  
And turn him pure as some forgotten vest  
Woven of painted byssus, silkiest  
Tufting the Tyrrhene whelk's pearl-sheeted  
lip,

Left welter where a trireme let it slip  
I' the sea, and vexed a satrap; so the stain  
O' the world forsakes Sordello, with its pain.  
Its pleasure: how the tint loosening escapes.  
Cloud after cloud! Mantua's familiar shapes  
Die, fair and foul die, fading as they flit,  
Men, women, and the pathos and the wit,  
Wise speech and foolish, deeds to smile or sigh  
For, good, bad, seemly or ignoble, die.  
The last face glances through the eglantines.

The last voice murmurs, 'twixt the blossomed vines,

Of Men, of that machine supplied by thought  
To compass self-perception with, he sought  
By forcing half himself — an insane pulse  
Of a god's blood, on clay it could convulse,  
Never transmute — on human sights and sounds,  
To watch the other half with ; irksome bounds  
It ebbs from to its source, a fountain sealed  
Forever. Better sure be unrevealed  
Than part revealed : Sordello well or ill  
Is finished : then what further use of Will,  
Point in the prime idea not realized,  
An oversight ? inordinately prized,  
No less, and pampered with enough of each  
Delight to prove the whole above its reach.

"To need become all natures, yet retain  
The law of my own nature — to remain  
Myself, yet yearn . . . as if that chestnut, think,  
Should yearn for this first larch-bloom crisp and pink,

Or those pale fragrant tears where zephyrs stanch

March wounds along the fretted pine-tree branch !

Will and the means to show will, great and small,

Material, spiritual, — abjure them all  
Save any so distinct, they may be left  
To amuse, not tempt become ! and, thus bereft,  
Just as I first was fashioned would I be !

Nor, moon, is it Apollo now, but me  
For her Thou visitest to comfort and be-  
son, lately friend !

Swim thou into my heart, and there  
again, an end,

Since I possess thee ! — nay, thus shut mine eyes  
And know, quite know, by this heart's fall and rise,

When thou dost bury thee in clouds, and when  
Out-standest : wherefore practise upon men  
To make that plainer to myself ? "

Slide here

Over a sweet and solitary year  
Wasted ; or simply notice change in him —  
How eyes, once with exploring bright, grew dim  
And satiate with receiving. Some distress  
Was caused, too, by a sort of consciousness  
Under the imbecility, — naught kept  
That down ; he slept, but was aware he slept,  
So, frustrated : as who brainsick made pact  
Erst with the overhanging cataract  
To deafen him, yet still distinguished plain  
His own blood's measured clicking at his brain.

To finish. One declining Autumn day —  
Few birds about the heaven chill and gray,  
No wind that cared trouble the tacit woods —  
He sauntered home complacently, their moods  
According, his and nature's. Every spark  
Was found Of Mantua life was trodden out ; so  
and is lost. dark

The embers, that the Troubadour, who sung  
Hundreds of songs, forgot, its trick his tongue,  
Its craft his brain, how either brought to pass  
Singing at all ; that faculty might class  
With any of Apollo's now. The year  
Began to find its early promise sere  
As well. Thus beauty vanishes ; thus stone

Outlingers flesh : nature's and his youth gone,  
They left the world to you, and wished you joy,  
When, stopping his benevolent employ,  
A presage shuddered through the welkin ; harsh  
The earth's remonstrance followed. 'T was the  
marsh

Gone of a sudden. Mincio, in its place,  
Laughed, a broad water, in next morning's face,  
And, where the mists broke up immense and  
white

T' the steady wind, burned like a spilth of light  
Out of the crashing of a myriad stars.

And here was nature, bound by the same bars  
Of fate with him !

But nature " No ! youth once gone is gone :  
is one Deeds let escape are never to be done.  
thing, man Leaf-fall and grass-spring for the  
another — year ; for us —

Oh forfeit I unalterably thus

My chance ? nor two lives wait me, this to spend,  
Learning save that ? Nature has time, may  
mend

Mistake, she knows occasion will recur ;  
Landslip or seabreach, how affects it her  
With her magnificent resources ? — I  
Must perish once and perish utterly.

Not any strollings now at even-close  
Down the field-path, Sordello ! by thorn-rows  
Alive with lamp-flies, swimming spots of fire  
And dew, outlining the black cypress' spire  
She waits you at, Elys, who heard you first  
Woo her, the snow-month through, but ere she  
durst

Answer 't was April. Linden-flower-time-long  
Her eyes were on the ground ; 't is July, strong  
Now ; and because white dust-clouds overwhelm  
The woodside, here or by the village elm  
That holds the moon, she meets you, somewhat  
pale,

But letting you lift up her coarse flax veil  
And whisper (the damp little hand in yours)  
Of love, heart's love, your heart's love that en-  
dures

Till death. Tush ! No mad mixing with the  
rout

Of haggard ribalds wandering about  
The hot torchlit wine-scented island-house  
Where Friedrich holds his wickedest carouse,  
Parading, — to the gay Palermitans,  
Soft Messinese, dusk Saracenic clans

Having Nuocera holds, — those tall grave  
multifari- dazdling Norse,  
ous sym- High-cheeked, lank-haired, toothed  
pathies, whiter than the morse,

Queens of the caves of jet stalactites,  
He sent his barks to fetch through icy seas,  
The blind night seas without a saving star,  
And here in snowy birdskin robes they are,  
Sordello ! — here, mollitious alcoves gilt  
Superb as Byzant domes that devils built !  
— Ah, Byzant, there again ! no chance to go  
Ever like august cheery Dandolo,  
Worshipping hearts about him for a wall,  
Conducted, blind eyes, hundred years and all,  
Through vanquished Byzant where friends note  
for him

What pillar, marble massive, sardius slim,  
'T were fittest he transport to Venice' Square —

Flattered and promised life to touch them there  
Soon, by those fervid sons of senators!  
No more lives, deaths, loves, hatreds, peaces,  
wars!

Ah, fragments of a whole ordained to be,  
Points in the life I waited! what are ye  
But roundels of a ladder which appeared  
Awhile the very platform it was reared  
To lift me on? — that happiness I find  
Proofs of my faith in, even in the blind  
Instinct which bade forego you all unless  
Ye led me past yourselves. Ay, happiness  
He may Awaited me; the way life should be  
neither re- used  
nouncenor Was to acquire, and deeds like you  
satisfy; conducted

To teach it by a self-revelment, deemed  
Life's very use, so long! Whatever seemed  
Progress to that, was pleasure; aught that  
stayed

My reaching it — no pleasure. I have laid  
The ladder down; I climb not; still, aloft  
The platform stretches! Bliss strong and  
soft,

I dared not entertain, elude me; yet  
Never of what they promised could I get  
A glimpse till now! The common sort, the  
crowd,

Exist, perceive; with Being are endowed,  
However slight, distinct from what they See,  
However bounded; Happiness must be,  
To feed the first by gleanings from the last,  
Attain its qualities, and slow or fast  
Become what they behold; such peace-in-strife  
By transmutation, is the Use of Life,  
The Alien turning Native to the soul  
Or body — which instructs me; I am whole  
There and demand a Palma; had the world  
Been from my soul to a like distance hurled,  
'T were Happiness to make it one with me:  
Whereas I must, ere I begin to Be,  
Include a world, in flesh, I comprehend  
In spirit now; and this done, what's to blend  
With? Naught is Alien in the world — my  
Will

Owens all already; yet can turn it — still  
Less — Native, since my Means to correspond  
With Will are so unworthy, 't was my bond  
In the To tread the very joys that tantalize  
process to Most now, into a grave, never to rise.  
which is I die then! Will the rest agree to  
pleasure, die?

Next Age or no? Shall its Sordello try  
Clue after clue, and catch at last the clue  
I miss? — that's underneath my finger too,  
Twice, thrice a day, perhaps, — some yearning  
traced

Deeper, some petty consequence embraced  
Closer! Why fled I Mantua, then? — com-  
plained

So much my Will was fettered, yet remained  
Content within a tether half the range  
I could assign it? — able to exchange  
My ignorance (I felt) for knowledge, and  
Idle because I could thus understand —  
Could e'en have penetrated to its core  
Our mortal mystery, yet — fool — forbore,  
Preferred elaborating in the dark

My casual stuff, by any wretched spark  
Born of my predecessors, though one stroke  
Of mine had brought the flame forth! Mantua's  
yoke,

My minstrel's-trade, was to behold mankind, —  
My own concern was just to bring my mind  
Behold, just extricate, for my acquist,  
Each object suffered stifle in the mist  
Which hazard, custom, blindness interpose  
Betwixt things and myself."

Whereat he rose,  
The level wind carried above the firs  
Clouds, the irrevocable travellers,  
Onward.

"Pushed thus into a drowsy copse,  
Arms twine about my neck, each eyelid drops  
Under a humid finger; while there fleets,  
Outside the screen, a pageant time repeats  
Never again! To be deposed, immured  
While re- Clandestinely — still petted, still as-  
nunciation sured  
ensures de- To govern were fatiguing work —  
spair. the Sight

Fleeting meanwhile! 'Tis noontide: wreak  
ere night

Somehow my will upon it, rather! Slake  
This thirst somehow, the poorest impress take  
That serves! A blasted bud displays you,  
torn,

Faint rudiments of the full flower unborn;  
But who divines what glory coats o'erclasp  
Of the bulb dormant in the mummy's grasp  
Taurello sent?" . . .

"Taurello? Palma sent  
Your Trouvere," (Naddo interposing leant  
Over the lost bard's shoulder) — "and, believe,  
You cannot more reluctantly receive  
Than I pronounce her message: we depart  
Together. What avail a poet's heart  
Verona's pomps and gauds? five blades of grass  
Suffice him. News? Why, where your marish  
was,

On its mud-banks smoke rises after smoke  
I' the valley, like a spout of hell new-broke,  
Oh, the world's tidings! small your thanks, I  
guess,

For them. The father of our Patroness  
Has played Taurello an astounding trick,  
Parts between Ecelin and Alberic  
His wealth and goes into a convent: both  
Wed Guelfs: the Count and Palma plighted  
troth

A week since at Verona: and they want  
You doubtless to contrive the marriage-chant  
Ere Richard storms Ferrara." Then was told  
The tale from the beginning — how, made bold  
By Salinguerra's absence, Guelfs had burned  
And pillaged till he unawares returned  
To take revenge: how Azzo and his friend  
Were doing their endeavor, how the end  
O' the siege was nigh, and how the Count, re-  
leased

From further care, would with his marriage-  
There is feast  
yet a way Inaugurate a new and better rule,  
of escaping Absorbing thus Romano.  
this; "Shall I school

My master," added Naddo, "and suggest



How you may clothe in a poetic vest  
These doings, at Verona? Your response  
To Palma! Wherefore jest? 'Depart at once?'  
A good resolve! In truth, I hardly hoped  
So prompt an acquiescence. Have you groped  
Out wisdom in the wilds here? — Thoughts  
may be

Over-poetical for poetry.  
Pearl-white, you poets liken Palma's neck;  
And yet what spoils an orient like some speck  
Of genuine white, turning its own white gray?  
You take me? Curse the cicala!"

One more day,  
One eve — appears Verona! Many a group,  
(You mind) instructed of the osprey's swoop  
On lynx and ounce, was gathering — Christen-  
dom

Sure to receive, whate'er the end was, from  
The evening's purpose cheer or detriment,  
Since Friedrich only waited some event  
Like this, of Ghibellins establishing  
Themselves within Ferrara, ere, as King  
Of Lombardy, he'd glad descend there, wage  
Old warfare with the Pontiff, disengage  
His barons from the burghers, and restore  
The rule of Charlemagne, broken of yore  
By Hildebrand.

Which he I' the palace, each by each,  
now takes Sordello sat and Palma: little speech  
by obeying At first in that dim closet, face with  
Palma: face

(Despite the tumult in the market-place)  
Exchanging quick low laughter: now would  
rush

Word upon word to meet a sudden flush,  
A look left off, a shifting lips' surmise —  
But for the most part their two histories  
Who there- Ran best through the locked fingers  
upon be- and linked arms.  
comes his And so the night flew on with its  
associate. alarms

Till in burst one of Palma's retinue;  
"Now, Lady!" gasped he. Then arose the  
two

And leaned into Verona's air, dead-still.  
A balcony lay black beneath until  
Out, 'mid a gush of torchfire, gray-haired men  
Came on it and harangued the people: then  
Sea-like that people surging to and fro  
Shouted, "Hale forth the carroch — trumpets,  
ho,

A flourish! Run it in the ancient grooves!  
Back from the bell! Hammer — that whom  
behooves

May hear the League is up! Peal — learn who  
list,

Verona means not first of towns break tryst  
To-morrow with the League!"

Enough. Now turn —  
Over the eastern cypresses: discern!  
Is any beacon set a-glimmer?

Range  
The air with shouts that overpowered the clang  
Of the incessant carroch, even: "Haste —  
The candle's at the gateway! ere it waste,  
Each soldier stand beside it, armed to march  
With Tiso Sampier through the eastern arch!"  
Ferrara's succored, Palma!

Once again

They sat together; some strange thing in train  
To say, so difficult was Palma's place  
In taking, with a coy fastidious grace  
Like the bird's flutter ere it fix and feed.  
But when she felt she held her friend indeed  
Safe, she threw back her curls, began implant  
Her lessons; telling of another want

As her Goito's quiet nourished than his  
own histo- own;  
ry will ac- Palma — to serve him — to be served,  
count for, alone

Importing; Agnes' milk so neutralized  
The blood of Ecelin. Nor be surprised  
If, while Sordello fain had captive led  
Nature, in dream was Palma subjected  
To some out-soul, which dawned not though she  
pined

Delaying till its advent, heart and mind,  
Their life. "How dared I let expand the force  
Within me, till some out-soul, whose resource  
It grew for, should direct it? Every law  
Of life, its every fitness, every flaw,  
Must One determine whose corporeal shape  
Would be no other than the prime escape  
And revelation to me of a Will  
Orb-like o'erhrouded and inscrutable  
Above, save at the point which, I should know,  
Shone that myself, my powers, might overflow  
So far, so much; as now it signified  
Which earthly shape it henceforth chose my  
guide,

Whose mortal lip selected to declare  
Its oracles, what fleshly garb would wear  
— The first of intimations, whom to love;  
The next, how love him. Seemed that orb,  
above

The castle-covert and the mountain-close,  
Slow in appearing, — if beneath it rose  
Cravings, aversions, — did our green precinct  
Take pride in me, at unawares distinct  
With this or that endowment, — how, repressed  
At once, such jetting power shrink to the rest!  
Was I to have a chance touch spoil me, leave  
My spirit thence unfitted to receive  
The consummating spell? — that spell so near  
Moreover! 'Waits he not the waking year?  
His almond-blossoms must be honey-ripe  
By this; to welcome him, fresh runnels stripe  
The thawed ravines; because of him, the wind  
Walks like a herald. I shall surely find  
Him now!"

"And chief, that earnest April morn  
Of Richard's Love-court, was it time, so worn  
A reverse And white my cheek, so idly my  
to, and blood beat,  
comple- Sitting that morn beside the Lady's  
tion of, his. feet

And saying as she prompted; till outburst  
One face from all the faces. Not then first  
I knew it; where in maple chamber glooms,  
Crowned with what sanguine-heart pomegran-  
ate blooms

Advanced it ever? Men's acknowledgment  
Sanctioned my own: 'twas taken, Palma's  
bent, —

Sordello, — recognized, accepted.

"Dumb

Sat she still scheming. Ecelin would come  
Gaunt, scared, 'Cesano baffles me,' he'd say :  
'Better I fought it out, my father's way !  
Strangle Ferrara in its drowning flats,  
And you and your Taurello yonder ! — what 's  
Romano's business there ?' An hour's concern  
To cure the froward Chief ! — induce return  
As heartened from those overmeaning eyes,  
Wound up to persevere, — his enterprise  
Marked out anew, its exigent of wit  
Apportioned, — she at liberty to sit  
And scheme against the next emergence, I —  
To covet her 'Taurello-sprite, made fly  
Or fold the wing — to con your horoscope  
For leave command those steely shafts shoot  
ope,

Or straight assuage their blinding eagerness  
In blank smooth snow. What semblance of  
success

To any of my plans for making you  
How she Mine and Romano's ? Break the  
ever as- first wall through.

aspired for Tread o'er the ruins of the Chief,  
his sake, supplant

His sons beside, still, vainest were the vaunt :  
There, Salinguerra would obstruct me sheer,  
And the insuperable Tuscan, here,  
Stay me ! But one wild eve that Lady died  
In her lone chamber : only I beside :  
Taurello far at Naples, and my sire  
At Padua, Ecelin away in ire

With Alberic. She held me thus — a clutch  
Circum- To make our spirits as our bodies  
stances touch —  
helping or And so began flinging the past up,  
hindering, heaps

Of uncouth treasure from their sunless sleeps  
Within her soul ; deeds rose along with dreams,  
Fragments of many miserable schemes,  
Secrets, more secrets, then — no, not the last —  
'Mongst others, like a casual trick o' the past,  
How . . . ay, she told me, gathering up her  
face,

All left of it, into one arch-grimace  
To die with . . .

"Friend, 'tis gone ! but not the fear  
Of that fell laughing, heard as now I hear.  
Nor faltered voice, nor seemed her heart grow  
weak

When i' the midst abrupt she ceased to speak  
— Dead, as to serve a purpose, mark ! — for in  
Rushed o' the very instant Ecelin  
(How summoned, who divines ?) — looking as if  
He understood why Adelaide lay stiff  
Already in my arms ; for, 'Girl, how must  
I manage Este in the matter thrust  
Upon me, how unravel your bad coil ? —  
Since ' (he declared) 't is on your brow — a soil  
Like hers there !' then in the same breath,  
'he lacked

No counsel after all, had signed no pact  
With devils, nor was treason here or there,  
Goito or Vicenza, his affair :  
He buried it in Adelaide's deep grave,  
Would begin life afresh, now, — would not  
slave

For any Friedrich's nor Taurello's sake !  
What bootied him to meddle or to make

In Lombardy ?' And afterward I knew  
The meaning of his promise to undo  
All she had done — why marriages were made,  
New friendships entered on, old followers paid  
With curses for their pains, — new friends'  
amaze

At height, when, passing out by Gate Saint  
Blaise,

He stopped short in Vicenza, bent his head  
Over a friar's neck, — 'had vowed,' he said,  
'Long since, nigh thirty years, because his wife  
And child were saved there, to bestow his life  
On God, his gettings on the Church.'

"Exiled

Within Goito, still one dream beguiled  
My days and nights ; 't was found, the orb I

sought  
How suc- To serve, those glimpses came of  
cess at last seemed Fomalhaut,  
possible, No other : but how serve it ? —  
authorize

You and Romano mingled destinies ?  
And straight Romano's angel stood beside  
Me who had else been Boniface's bride,  
For Salinguerra 't was, with neck low bent,  
And voice lightened to music, (as he meant  
To learn, not teach me,) who withdrew the pall  
From the dead past and straight revived it all,  
Making me see how first Romano waxed,  
Wherefore he waned now, why, if I relaxed  
My grasp (even I ! ) would drop a thing effete,  
Frayed by itself, unequal to complete  
Its course, and counting every step astray  
By the in- A gain so much. Romano, every  
tervention way  
of Salin- Stable, a Lombard House now — why  
guerra : start back

Into the very outset of its track ?  
This patching principle which late allied  
Our House with other Houses — what beside  
Concerned the apparition, the first Knight  
Who followed Conrad hither in such plight  
His utmost wealth was summed in his one  
steed ?

For Ecelo, that prowler, was decreed  
A task, in the beginning hazardous  
To him as ever task can be to us ;  
But did the weather-beaten thief despair  
When first our crystal cincture of warm air,  
That binds the Trevisan, — as its spice-belt  
(Crusaders say) the tract where Jesus dwelt, —  
Furtive he pierced, and Este was to face —  
Despaired Saponian strength of Lombard  
grace ?

Tried he at making surer aught made sure,  
Maturing what already was mature ?  
No ; his heart prompted Ecelo, 'Confront  
Este, inspect yourself. What 's nature ? Wont.  
Discard three-parts your nature, and adopt  
Who rem- The rest as an advantage !' Old  
edied ill strength propped  
wrought The man who first grew Podestà  
by Ecelin, among

The Vicentines, no less than, while there  
sprung

His palace up in Padua like a threat,  
Their noblest spied a grace, unnoticed yet  
In Conrad's crew. Thus far the object gained

Romano was established — has remained —  
 'For are you not Italian, truly peers  
 With Este? "Azzo" better soothes our ears  
 Than "Alberic"? or is this lion's-crine  
 From over-mounts' (this yellow hair of mine)  
 'So weak a graft on Agnes Este's stock?'  
 (Thus went he on with something of a mock)  
 'Wherefore recoil, then, from the very fate  
 Conceded you, refuse to imitate  
 Your model farther? Este long since left  
 Being mere Este: as a blade its heft,  
 Este required the Pope to further him:  
 And you, the Kaiser — whom your father's  
 whim

Foregoes or, better, never shall forego  
 If Palma dare pursue what Ecclō  
 Commenced, but Ecclō desists from: just  
 As Adelaide of Susa could intrust  
 Her donative, — her Piedmont given the Pope,  
 Her Alpine-pass for him to shut or ope  
 'Twixt France and Italy, — to the superb  
 Matilda's perfecting, — so, lest aught curb  
 Our Adelaide's great counter-project for  
 Giving her Trentine to the Emperor  
 With passage here from Germany, — shall you  
 Take it, — my slender plodding talent, too!  
 — Urged me Taurello with his half-smile.

"He

As Patron of the scattered family  
 Conveyed me to his Mantua, kept in bruit  
 Azzo's alliances and Richard's suit  
 Until, the Kaiser excommunicate,  
 'Nothing remains,' Taurello said, 'but wait  
 Some rash procedure: Palma was the link,  
 As Agnes' child, between us, and they shrink  
 And had a From losing Palma: judge if we  
 project advance,  
 for her Your father's method, your inheri-  
 own tance!'  
 glory.

The day I was betrothed to Boniface  
 At Padua by Taurello's self, took place  
 The outrage of the Ferrarese: again,  
 The day I sought Verona with the train  
 Agreed for, — by Taurello's policy  
 Convicting Richard of the fault, since we  
 Were present to annul or to confirm, —  
 Richard, whose patience had outstayed its  
 term,  
 Quitted Verona for the siege.

"And now  
 What glory may engird Sordello's brow  
 Through this? A month since at Oliero slunk  
 All that was Ecclō into a monk;  
 But how could Salinguerra so forget  
 His liege of thirty years as grudge even yet  
 One effort to recover him? He sent  
 Forthwith the tidings of this last event  
 To Ecclō — declared that he, despite  
 The recent folly, recognized his right  
 To order Salinguerra: 'Should he wring  
 Its uttermost advantage out, or fling  
 This chance away? Or were his sons now

Head  
 O' the House?' Through me Taurello's mis-  
 sive sped;

My father's answer will by me return.  
 Behold! 'For him,' he writes, 'no more con-  
 cern

With strife than, for his children, with fresh  
 plots

Of Friedrich. Old engagements out he blots  
 For aye: Taurello shall no more subserve,  
 Nor Ecclō impose.' Lest this unnerve  
 Taurello at this juncture, slack his grip  
 Of Richard, suffer the occasion slip, —  
 I, in his sons' default (who, mating with  
 Este, forsake Romano as the frith  
 Its mainsea for that firmland, sea makes head  
 Against) I stand, Romano, — in their stead  
 Assume the station they desert, and give  
 Still, as the Kaiser's representative,  
 Taurello license he demands. Midnight —  
 Morning — by noon to-morrow, making light  
 Which she Of the League's issue, we, in some  
 would gay weed  
 change Like yours, disguised together, may  
 to Sor- precede  
 dello's. The arbitrators to Ferrara: reach  
 Him, let Taurello's noble accents teach  
 The rest! Then say if I have misconceived  
 Your destiny, too readily believed  
 The Kaiser's cause your own!"

And Palma's fled.

Though no affirmative disturbs the head,  
 A dying lamp-flame sinks and rises o'er,  
 Like the alighted planet Pollux wore,  
 Until, morn breaking, he resolves to be  
 Gate-vein of this heart's blood of Lombardy,  
 Soul of this body — to wield this aggregate  
 Of souls and bodies, and so conquer fate  
 Though he should live — a centre of disgust  
 Even — apart, core of the outward crust  
 He vivifies, assimilates. For thus  
 I bring Sordello to the rapturous  
 Thus then, Exclaim at the crowd's cry, because  
 having one round  
 completed Of life was quite accomplished; and  
 a circle, he found

Not only that a soul, whate'er its might,  
 Is insufficient to its own delight,  
 Both in corporeal organs and in skill  
 By means of such to body forth its Will —  
 And, after, insufficient to apprise  
 Men of that Will, oblige them recognize  
 The Hid by the Revealed — but that, the last  
 Nor lightest of the struggles overpast,  
 Will he bade abdicate, which would not void  
 The throne, might sit there, suffer he enjoyed  
 Mankind, a varied and divine array  
 Incapable of homage, the first way,  
 Nor fit to render incidentally  
 Tribute connived at, taken by the by,  
 In joys. If thus with warrant to rescind  
 The ignominious exile of mankind —  
 Whose proper service, ascertained intact  
 As yet, (to be by him themselves made act,  
 Not watch Sordello acting each of them)  
 Was to secure — if the true diadem  
 Seemed imminent while our Sordello drank  
 The wisdom of that golden Palma, — thank  
 Verona's Lady in her citadel  
 Founded by Gaulish Brennus, legends tell:  
 And truly when she left him, the sun reared  
 A head like the first clamberer's who peered  
 A-top the Capitol, his face on flame  
 With triumph, triumphing till Manlius came.



Nor slight too much my rhymes — that spring,  
dispread,

Dispart, disperse, lingering overhead  
Like an escape of angels! Rather say,  
The poet My transcendental platan! mounting  
may pause gay  
and (An archimage so courts a novice-  
breathe, queen)

With tremulous silvered trunk, whence branches  
sheen

Laugh out, thick foliated next, a-shiver soon  
With colored buds, then glowing like the moon  
One mild flame, — last a pause, a burst, and  
all

Her ivory limbs are smothered by a fall,  
Bloom-flinders and fruit-sparkles and leaf-dust,  
Ending the weird work prosecuted just  
For her amusement; he decrepit, stark,  
Dozes; her uncontrolled delight may mark  
Apart —

Yet not so, surely never so!  
Only, as good my soul were suffered go  
O'er the lagune: forth fare thee, put aside —  
Entrance thy synod, as a god may glide  
Out of the world he fills, and leave it mute  
For myriad ages as we men compute,  
Returning into it without a break  
Being O' the consciousness! They sleep,  
really in and I awake  
the flesh O'er the lagune, being at Venice.  
at Venice, Note,

In just such songs as Eglamor (say) wrote  
With heart and soul and strength, for he be-  
lieved

Himself achieving all to be achieved  
By singer — in such songs you find alone  
Completeness, judge the song and singer one,  
And either purpose answered, his in it  
Or its in him: while from true works (to wit  
Sordello's dream-performances that will  
Never be more than dreamed) escapes there  
still

Some proof, the singer's proper life was 'neath  
The life his song exhibits, this a sheath  
To that; a passion and a knowledge far  
Transcending these, majestic as they are,  
Smouldered; his lay was but an episode  
In the bard's life: which evidence you owed  
To some slight weariness, some looking-off  
Or start-away. The childish skit or scoff  
In "Charlemagne," (his poem, dreamed divine  
In every point except one silly line  
About the restiff daughters) — what may lurk  
In that? "My life commenced before this  
work,"

(So I interpret the significance  
Of the bard's start aside and look askance) —  
"My life continues after: on I fare  
With no more stopping, possibly, no care

To note the undercurrent, the why  
And how,  
watching Where, when, o' the deeper life, as  
his own thus just now.  
life some- But, silent, shall I cease to live?  
times, Alas

For you! who sigh, 'When shall it come to pass  
We read that story? How will he compress  
The future gains, his life's true business,

Into the better lay which — that one flout,  
Howe'er inopportune it be, lets out —  
Engrosses him already, though professed  
To meditate with us eternal rest,  
And partnership in all his life has found? " "  
"Tis but a sailor's promise, weather-bound:  
"Strike sail, slip cable, here the bark be moored  
For once, the awning stretched, the poles as-  
sured!

Noontide above; except the wave's crisp dash,  
Or buzz of colibri, or tortoise' splash,  
The margin's silent: out with every spoil  
Made in our tracking, coil by mighty coil,  
This serpent of a river to his head  
I' the midst! Admire each treasure, as we  
spread

The bank, to help us tell our history  
Aright: give ear, endeavor to descry  
The groves of giant rushes, how they grew  
Like demons' endlong tresses we sailed through,  
What mountains yawned, forests to give us vent  
Opened, each doleful side, yet on we went  
Till . . . may that beetle (shake your cap) at-  
test

The springing of a land-wind from the West! "  
— Wherefore? Ah yes, you frolic it to-day!  
To-morrow, and, the pageant moved away  
Down to the poorest tent-pole, we and you  
Part company: no other may pursue  
Eastward your voyage, be informed what fate  
Intends, if triumph or decline await  
The tempter of the everlasting steppe.

I muse this on a ruined palace-step  
At Venice: why should I break off, nor sit  
Longer upon my step, exhaust the fit  
England gave birth to? Who's adorable  
Enough reclaim a — no Sordello's Will  
Alack! — be queen to me? That Bassanese  
Busied among her smoking fruit-boats? These  
Perhaps from our delicious Asolo  
Who twinkle, pigeons o'er the portico  
Not prettier, bind June lilies into sheaves  
To deck the bridge-side chapel, dropping leaves  
Because it Soiled by their own loose gold-meal?  
is pleasant Ah, beneath  
to be The cool arch stoops she, brownest  
young, cheek! Her wreath

Endures a month — a half month — if I make  
A queen of her, continue for her sake  
Sordello's story? Nay, that Paduan girl  
Splashes with barer legs where a live whirl  
In the dead black Gudecca proves sea-weed  
Drifting has sucked down three, four, all indeed  
Save one pale-red striped, pale-blue turbaned  
post

For gondolas. You sad dishevelled ghost  
That pluck at me and point, are you advised  
I breathe? Let stay those girls (e'en her dis-  
guised  
— Jewels! the locks that love no crownnet like  
Their native field-buds and the green wheat-  
spike,

So fair! — who left this end of June's turmoil,  
Shook off, as might a lily its gold soil,  
Pomp, save a foolish gem or two, and free  
In dream, came join the peasants o'er the sea),  
Look they too happy, too tricked out? Confess

There is such niggard stock of happiness  
To share, that, do one's uttermost, dear wretch,  
One labors ineffectually to stretch

Would but It o'er you so that mother and child-  
suffering dren, both  
humanity May equitably flaunt the sumpter-  
allow! cloth!

Divide the robe yet farther : be content  
With seeing just a score pre-eminent  
Through shreds of it, acknowledged happy  
wights,

Engrossing what should furnish all, by rights !  
For, these in evidence, you clearer claim  
A like garb for the rest, — grace all, the same  
As these my peasants. I ask youth and strength  
And health for each of you, not more — at length  
Grown wise, who asked at home that the whole  
race

Might add the spirit's to the body's grace,  
And all be dizen'd out as chiefs and bards.  
But in this magic weather one discards  
Much old requirement. Venice seems a type  
Of Life — 'twixt blue and blue extends, a stripe,  
As Life, the somewhat, hangs 'twixt naught  
and naught :

'T is Venice, and 't is Life — as good you  
sought

To spare me the Piazzas's slippery stone  
Or keep me to the unchoked canals alone,  
As hinder Life the evil with the good  
Which make up Living, rightly understood.

Which Only, do finish something ! Peasants,  
instigates queens,  
to tasks Take them, made happy by whatever  
like this, means,

Parade them for the common credit, vouch  
That a luckless residue, we send to crouch  
In corners out of sight, was just as framed  
For happiness, its portion might have claimed  
As well, and so, obtaining joy, had stalked  
Fastuous as any ! — such my project, balked  
Already ; I hardly venture to adjust

The first rags, when you find me. To mistrust  
Me ! — nor unreasonably. You, no doubt,  
Have the true knack of tiring suitors out  
With those thin lips on tremble, lashless eyes  
Inveterately tear-shot — there, be wise,  
Mistress of mine, there, there, as if I meant  
You insult ! — shall your friend (not slave) be  
shent

For speaking home ? Beside, care-bit erased  
Broken-up beauties ever took my taste  
Supremely ; and I love you more, far more  
Than her I looked should foot Life's temple-  
floor.

Years ago, leagues at distance, when and where  
A whisper came, " Let others seek ! — thy care  
And doubt- Is found, thy life's provision ; if thy  
lessly com- race  
pensates Should be thy mistress, and into one  
them, face

The many faces crowd ? " Ah, had I, judge,  
Or no, your secret ? Rough apparel — grudge  
All ornaments save tag or tassel worn  
To hint we are not thoroughly forlorn —  
Slouch bonnet, unloop mantle, careless go  
Alone (that's saddest, but it must be so)  
Through Venice, sing now and now glance aside,

Aught desultory or undignified, —  
Then, ravishingest lady, will you pass  
Or not each formidable group, the mass  
Before the Basilic (that feast gone by,  
God's great day of the Corpus Domini)  
And, wistfully foregoing proper men,  
Come timid up to me for alms ? And then  
The luxury to hesitate, feign do  
Some unexampled grace ! — when, whom but  
you

Dare I bestow your own upon ? And hear  
Further before you say, it is to sneer  
I call you ravishing ; for I regret  
Little that she, whose early foot was set  
Forth as she 'd plant it on a pedestal,  
Now, i' the silent city, seems to fall  
Toward me — no wreath, only a lip's unrest  
To quiet, surcharged eyelids to be pressed  
Dry of their tears upon my bosom. Strange  
Such sad chance should produce in thee such  
change,

My love ! Warped souls and bodies ! yet God  
spoke

Of right-hand, foot and eye — selects our yoke,  
Sordello, as your poetship may find !  
So, sleep upon my shoulder, child, nor mind  
Their foolish talk ; we 'll manage reinstate  
Your old worth ; ask moreover, when they prate  
Of evil men past hope, " Don't each contrive,  
Despite the evil you abuse, to live ? —  
Keeping, each losel, through a maze of lies,  
His own conceit of truth ? to which he hies  
By obscure windings, tortuous, if you will,  
But to himself not inaccessible ;  
He sees truth, and his lies are for the crowd  
Who cannot see ; some fancied right allowed  
His vilest wrong, empowered the losel clutch  
One pleasure from a multitude of such

As those Denied him." Then assert, " All  
who desist men appear  
should To think all better than themselves,  
remember. by here

Trusting a crowd they wrong ; but really," say,  
" All men think all men stupider than they,  
Since, save themselves, no other comprehends  
The complicated scheme to make amends  
— Evil, the scheme by which, through Ignorance,

Good labors to exist." A slight advance, —  
Merely to find the sickness you die through,  
And naught beside ! but if one can't eschew  
One's portion in the common lot, at least  
One can avoid an ignorance increased  
Tenfold by dealing out hint after hint  
How naught were like dispensing without sin  
The water of life — so easy to dispense  
Beside, when one has probed the centre whence  
Commotion's born — could tell you of it all !  
" — Meantime, just meditate my madrigal  
O' the mugwort that conceals a dewdrop safe ! "  
What, dullard ? we and you in smothery chafe,  
Babes, baldheads, stumbled thus far into Zin  
The Horrid, getting neither out nor in,  
A hungry sun above us, sands that bung  
Our throats, — each dromedary lolls a tongue,  
Each camel churns a sick and frothy chap,  
And you, 'twixt tales of Potiphar's mishap,  
And sonnets on the earliest ass that spoke.

— Remark, you wonder any one needs choke  
With founts about! Potsherd him, Gibeon-  
ites!

While awkwardly enough your Moses smites  
The rock, though he forego his Promised Land  
Thereby, have Satan claim his carcass, and  
Figure as Metaphysic Poet . . . ah,  
Mark ye the dim first ooziings? Meribah!  
Then, quaffing at the fount my courage gained,  
Recall—not that I prompt ye—who ex-  
plained . . .

“Presumptuous!” interrupts one. You, not I  
’Tis, brother, marvel at and magnify

Let the poet take his own part, then,  
Such office: “office,” quotha? can we get  
To the beginning of the office yet?  
What do we here? simply experiment  
Each on the other’s power and its intent  
When elsewhere tasked, —if this of mine were  
trucked

For yours to either’s good, —we watch con-  
struct,

In short, an engine: with a finished one,  
What it can do, is all, — naught, how ’t is done.  
But this of ours yet in probation, dusk  
A kernel of strange wheelwork through its husk  
Grows into shape by quarters and by halves;  
Remark this tooth’s spring, wonder what that  
valve’s

Fall bodes, presume each faculty’s device,  
Make out each other more or less precise —  
The scope of the whole engine’s to be proved;  
We die: which means to say, the whole’s  
removed,

Dismounted wheel by wheel, this complex  
gin, —

To be set up anew elsewhere, begin  
A task indeed, but with a clearer clime  
Than the murky lodgment of our building-time.  
And then, I grant you, it behoves forget  
How ’t is done — all that must amuse us yet  
So long: and, while you turn upon your heel,  
Pray that I be not busy slitting steel

Should any Or shredding brass, camped on some  
object that virgin shore  
he was Under a cluster of fresh stars, be-  
dull fore

I name a tithe o’ the wheels I trust to do!

So occupied, then, are we: hitherto,  
At present, and a weary while to come,  
The office of ourselves, — nor blind nor dumb,  
And seeing somewhat of man’s state, — has been,  
For the worst of us, to say they so have seen;  
For the better, what it was they saw; the best  
Impart the gift of seeing to the rest:

“So that I glance,” says such an one, “around,  
And there’s no face but I can read profound  
Disclosures in; this stands for hope, that — fear,  
For a speech, a deed in proof, look here!

’Stoop, else the strings of blossom, where the  
nuts

O’erarch, will blind thee! Said I not? She  
shuts

Both eyes this time, so close the hazels meet!

Thus, prisoned in the Piombi, I repeat  
Events one rove occasioned, o’er and o’er,  
Putting ’twixt me and madness evermore  
Thy sweet shape, Zanze! Therefore stoop!’

‘That’s truth!’

(Adjudge you) ‘the incarcerated youth  
Would say that!’

Youth? Plara the bard? Set down  
That Plara spent his youth in a grim town  
Whose cramped ill-featured streets huddled  
about

The minster for protection, never out  
Of its black belfry’s shade and its bells’ roar.  
The brighter shone the suburb, — all the more  
Ugly and absolute that shade’s reproof  
Of any chance escape of joy, — some roof,  
Taller than they, allowed the rest detect, —  
Before the sole permitted laugh (suspect  
Who could, ’t was meant for laughter, that  
ploughed cheek’s

Repulsive gleam!) when the sun stopped both  
peaks

Of the cleft belfry like a fiery wedge,  
Then sank, a huge flame on its socket edge,  
With leavings on the gray glass oriel-pane  
Ghastly some minutes more. No fear of rain —  
The minster minded that! in heaps the dust  
Lay everywhere. This town, the minster’s trust,  
Beside his Held Plara; who, its denizen, bade  
sprightlier hail

predecessors. In twice twelve sonnets, Tempe’s  
dewy vale.”

“Exact the town, the minster and the  
street!’”

“As all mirth triumphs, sadness means defeat:  
Lust triumphs and is gay, Love’s triumphed  
o’er

And sad: but Lucio’s sad. I said before,  
Love’s sad, not Lucio; one who loves may  
be

As gay his love has leave to hope, as he  
Downcast that lusts’ desire escapes the springe:

’T is of the mood itself I speak, what tinge  
Determines it, else colorless, — or mirth,  
Or melancholy, as from heaven or earth.”

“Ay, that’s the variation’s gist!’

Indeed?

Thus far advanced in safety then, proceed!  
And having seen too what I saw, be bold  
And next encounter what I do behold  
(That’s sure) but bid you carry on trust!’

Attack

The use and purpose of such sights? Alack,  
Not so unwisely does the crowd dispense  
On Salinguerras praise in preference  
One ought To the Sordellos: men of action,  
not blame these!

but praise Who, seeing just as little as you  
this; please,

Yet turn that little to account, — engage  
With, do not gaze at, — carry on, a stage,  
The work o’ the world, not merely make report  
The work existed ere their day! In short,  
When at some future no-time a brave band  
Sees, using what it sees, then shake my hand  
In heaven, my brother! Meanwhile where’s  
the hurt

Of keeping the Makers-see on the alert,  
At whose defection mortals stare aghast  
As though heaven’s bounteous windows were  
slammed fast

Incontinent? Whereas all you, beneath,



Should scowl at, bruise their lips and break their teeth

Who ply the pullies, for neglecting you :  
And therefore have I moulded, made anew  
A Man, and give him to be turned and tried,  
Be angry with or pleased at. On your side,  
Have ye times, places, actors of your own ?

Try them upon Sordello when full-  
grown,  
At all events, his own audience may :  
And then — ah then ! If Hercules  
first parched  
His foot in Egypt only to be marched

A sacrifice for Jove with pomp to suit,  
What chance have I ? The demigod was mute  
Till, at the altar, where time out of mind  
Such guests became oblations, chaplets twined  
His forehead long enough, and he began  
Slaying the slayers, nor escaped a man.  
Take not affront, my gentle audience ! whom  
No Hercules shall make his hecatomb,  
Believe, nor from his brows your chaplet rend —  
That's your kind suffrage, yours, my patron-  
friend,

Whose great verse blares unintermittent on  
Like your own trumpeter at Marathon, —  
You who, Plataea and Salamis being scant,  
Put up with Aetna for a stimulant —  
And did well, I acknowledged, as he loomed  
Over the midland sea last month, presumed  
Long, lay demolished in the blazing West  
At eve, while towards him tilting cloudlets  
pressed

Like Persian ships at Salamis. Friend, wear  
A crest proud as desert while I declare  
Had I a flawless ruby fit to wring  
Tears of its color from that painted king  
Who lost it, I would, for that smile which  
went

To my heart, fling it in the sea, content,  
What if Wearing your verse in place, an  
things amulet  
brighten, Sovereign against all passion, wear  
who knows ? and fret !

My English Eyebright, if you are not glad  
That, as I stopped my task awhile, the sad  
Dishevelled form, wherein I put mankind  
To come at times and keep my pact in mind,  
Renewed me, — hear no crickets in the hedge,  
Nor let a glowworm spot the river's edge  
At home, and may the summer showers gush  
Without a warning from the missel thrush !  
So, to our business, now — the fate of such  
As find our common nature — overmuch  
Despised because restricted and unfit  
To bear the burden they impose on it —  
Cling when they would discard it ; craving  
strength

To leap from the allotted world, at length  
They do leap, — flounder on without a term,  
Each a god's germ, doomed to remain a germ  
In unexpanded infancy, unless . . .  
But that's the story — dull enough, confess !  
There might be fitter subjects to allure ;  
Still, neither misconceive my portraiture  
Nor undervalue its adornments quaint :  
What seems a fiend perchance may prove a saint.  
Ponder a story ancient pens transmit,  
Then say if you condemn me or acquit.

John the Beloved, banished Antioch  
For Patmos, bade collectively his flock  
Where- Farewell, but set apart the closing  
upon, with eve  
a story to To comfort those his exile most  
the point, would grieve,  
He knew : a touching spectacle, that house  
In motion to receive him ! Xanthus' spouse  
You missed, made panther's meat a month  
since ; but

Xanthus himself (his nephew 't was, they shut  
'Twixt boards and sawed asunder), Polycarp,  
Soft Charicle, next year no wheel could warp  
To swear by Caesar's fortune, with the rest  
Were ranged ; through whom the gray disciple  
pressed,

Busily blessing right and left, just stopped  
To pat one infant's curls, the hangman cropped  
Soon after, reached the portal. On its hinge  
The door turns and he enters : what quick  
twinge

Ruins the smiling mouth, those wide eyes fix  
Whereon, why like some spectral candlestick's  
Branch the disciple's arms ? Dead swooned he,  
woke

Anon, heaved sigh, made shift to gasp, heart-  
broke.

"Get thee behind me, Satan ! Have I toiled  
To no more purpose ? Is the gospel foiled  
Here too, and o'er my son's, my Xanthus'  
hearth,

Portrayed with sooty garb and features  
swarth —

Ah, Xanthus, am I to thy roof beguiled  
To see the — the — the Devil domiciled ?"  
Whereto sobbed Xanthus, "Father, 'tis your-  
self

Installed, a linning which our utmost pelf  
Went to procure against to-morrow's loss ;  
He takes And that's no twy-prong, but a pas-  
up the toral cross,  
thread of You're painted with !"  
discourse.

His puckered brows unfold —  
And you shall hear Sordello's story told.

#### BOOK THE FOURTH

Meantime Ferrara lay in rueful case ;  
The lady-city, for whose sole embrace  
Her pair of suitors struggled, felt their arms  
A brawny mischief to the fragile charms  
They tugged for — one discovering that to  
twist

Her tresses twice or thrice about his wrist  
Secured a point of vantage — one, how best  
He'd parry that by planting in her breast  
His elbow spike — each party too intent  
Men suf- For noticing, how'er the battle went,  
fered much, The conqueror would but have a  
corpse to kiss.

"May Boniface be duly damned for this !"  
— Howled some old Ghibellin, as up he turned,  
From the wet heap of rubbish where they  
burned

His house, a little skull with dazzling teeth :  
"A boon, sweet Christ — let Salanguerra see the  
In hell forever, Christ, and let myself

Be there to laugh at him!" — moaned some young Gueff

Stumbling upon a shrivelled hand nailed fast  
To the charred lintel of the doorway, last  
His father stood within to bid him speed.  
The thoroughfares were overrun with weed  
— Docks, quitchgrass, loathy mallows no man  
plants.

The stranger, none of its inhabitants  
Whichever Crept out of doors to taste fresh air  
of the par- again,  
ties was And ask the purpose of a splendid  
victor. train

Admitted on a morning; every town  
Of the East League was come by envoy down  
To treat for Richard's ransom: here you saw  
The Vicentine, here snowy oxen draw  
The Paduan carroch, its vermilion cross  
On its white field. A-tiptoe o'er the fosse  
Looked Legate Montelungo wistfully  
After the flock of steeples he might spy  
In Este's time, gone (doubts he) long ago  
To mend the ramparts: sure the laggards know  
The Pope's as good as here! They paced the  
streets

More soberly. At last, "Taurello greets  
The League," announced a pursuivant, — "will  
match

Its courtesy, and labors to dispatch  
At earliest Tito, Friedrich's Pretor, sent  
On pressing matters from his post at Trent,  
With Mainard Count of Tyrol, — simply waits  
Their going to receive the delegates."  
"Tito!" Our delegates exchanged a glance,  
And, keeping the main way, admired askance  
The lazy engines of outlandish birth,  
Couched like a king each on its bank of earth —  
Arbalist, manganel and catapult;  
While stationed by, as waiting a result,  
Lean silent gangs of mercenaries ceased  
Working to watch the strangers. "This, at  
least,

Were better spared; he scarce presumes gainsay  
The League's decision! Get our friend away  
And profit for the future: how else teach  
Fools 't is not safe to stray within claw's reach  
Ere Salinguerra's final gasp be blown?  
Those mere convulsive scratches find the bone.  
Who bade him bloody the spent osprey's nare?"

The carrochs halted in the public square.  
Pennons of every blazon once a-flaunt,  
Men prattled, freelier that the crested gaunt

How White ostrich with a horse-shoe in  
Gueffs her beak  
criticise Was missing, and whoever chose  
Ghibellin might speak  
work "Ecelin" boldly out: so, — "Ecelin

Needed his wife to swallow half the sin  
And sickens by himself: the devil's whelp,  
He styles his son, dwindles away, no help  
From conserves, your fine triple-curved froth  
Of virgin's blood, your Venice viper-broth —  
Eh? Jubilate!" — "Peace! no little word  
You utter here that's not distinctly heard  
Up at Oliero: he was absent sick  
When we besieged Bassano — who, i' the thick  
O' the work, perceived the progress Azzo made,  
Like Ecelin, through his witch Adelaide?

She managed it so well that, night by night,  
At their bed-foot stood up a soldier-sprite,  
First fresh, pale by-and-by without a wound,  
And, when it came with eyes filmed as in swoond,  
They knew the place was taken." — "Ominous  
That Ghibellins should get what cautious  
Old Redbeard sought from Azzo's sire to wrench  
Vainly; Saint George contrived his town a  
trench

O' the marshes, an impermeable bar."  
" — Young Ecelin is meant the tutelar  
Of Padua, rather; veins embrace upon  
His hand like Brenta and Bacchiglion."  
What now? — "The founts! God's bread,  
touch not a plank!

A crawling hell of carrion — every tank  
As unusu- Choke full! — found out just now to  
ally ener- Cino's cost —  
getic in The same who gave Taurello up for  
this case. lost,

And, making no account of fortune's freaks,  
Refused to budge from Padua then, but sneaks  
Back now with Concorezzi — 'faith! they drag  
Their carroch to San Vitale, plant the flag  
On his own palace, so adroitly razed  
He knew it not; a sort of Gueff folk gazed  
And laughed apart; Cino disliked their air —  
Must pluck up spirit, show he does not care —  
Seats himself on the tank's edge — will begin  
To hum, *za, za, Cavalier Ecelin* —  
A silence; he gets warmer, clinks to chime,  
Now both feet plough the ground, deeper each  
time,

At last, *za, za*, and up with a fierce kick  
Comes his own mother's face caught by the  
thick

Gray hair about his spur!"

Which means, they lift  
The covering, Salinguerra made a shift  
To stretch upon the truth; as well avoid  
Further disclosures; leave them thus employed.  
Our dropping Autumn morning clears apace,  
And poor Ferrara puts a softened face  
On her misfortunes. Let us scale this tall  
Huge foursquare line of red brick garden-wall

Bastioned within by trees of every  
How, pass- sort  
through On three sides, slender, spreading,  
the rare long and short;  
garden, Each grew as it contrived, the poplar  
ramped,

The fig-tree reared itself, — but stark and  
cramped.

Made fools of, like tamed lions: whence, on the  
edge,

Running 'twixt trunk and trunk to smooth one  
ledge

Of shade, were shrubs inserted, warp and woof,  
Which smothered up that variance. Scale the  
roof

Of solid tops, and o'er the slope you slide  
Down to a grassy space level and wide,  
Here and there dotted with a tree, but trees  
Of rarer leaf, each foreigner at ease,  
Set by itself: and in the centre spreads,  
Borne upon three uneasy leopards' heads,  
A laver, broad and shallow, one bright spirt  
Of water bubbles in. The walls begirt

With trees leave off on either hand ; pursue  
Your path along a wondrous avenue  
Those walls about on, heaped of gleamy stone,  
With aloes leering everywhere, gray-grown  
From many a Moorish summer : how they wind  
Out of the fissures ! likelier to bind  
The building than those rusted cramps which  
drop

Already in the eating sunshine. Stop,  
You fleeting shapes above there ! Ah, the pride  
Or else despair of the whole country-side !

A range of statues, swarming o'er with wasps,  
Salinguer- God, goddess, woman, man, the  
ra con- Greek rough-rasps  
trived for In crumpling Naples marble — meant  
a purpose, to look

Like those Messina marbles Constance took  
Delight in, or Taurello's self conveyed  
To Mantua for his mistress, Adelaide,  
A certain font with caryatides  
Since cloistered at Goito ; only, these  
Are up and doing, not abashed, a troop  
Able to right themselves — who see you, stoop  
Their arms o' the instant after you ! Unplucked  
By this or that, you pass ; for they conduct  
To terrace raised on terrace, and, between,  
Creatures of brighter mould and braver mien  
Than any yet, the choicest of the Isle  
No doubt. Here, left a sullen breathing-while,  
Up-gathered on himself the Fighter stood  
For his last fight, and, wiping treacherous  
blood

Out of the eyelids just held ope beneath  
Those shading fingers in their iron sheath,  
Steadied his strengths amid the buzz and stir  
Of the dusk hideous amphitheatre  
At the announcement of his over-match  
To wind the day's diversion up, dispatch  
The pertinacious Gaul : while, limbs one heap,  
The Slave, in her round mouth,  
watched leap

Dart after dart forth, as her hero's ear  
Clove dizzily the solid of the war  
— Let coil about his knees for pride in him.  
We reach the farthest terrace, and the grim  
San Pietro Palace stops us.

Such the state  
Of Salinguerra's plan to emulate  
Sicilian marvels, that his girlish wife  
Retrude still might lead her ancient life  
In her new home : whereat enlarged so much  
Neighbors upon the novel princely touch  
He took, — who here imprisons Boniface.  
Here must the Envoys come to sue for grace ;  
And here, emerging from the labyrinth  
Below, Sordello paused beside the plinth  
Of the door-pillar.

Sordello He had really left  
pondersall Verona for the cornfields (a poor theft  
seen and From the morass) where Este's camp  
heard, was made.

The Envoys' march, the Legate's cavalcade —  
All had been seen by him, but scarce as when, —  
Eager for cause to stand aloof from men  
At every point save the fantastic tie  
Acknowledged in his boyish sophistry, —  
He made account of such. A crowd, — he meant  
To task the whole of it ; each part's intent

Concerned him therefore : and, the more he  
pried,

The less became Sordello satisfied  
With his own figure at the moment. Sought  
He respite from his task ? Descried he aught  
Novel in the anticipated sight  
Of all these livers upon all delight ?  
This phalanx, as of myriad points combined,  
Whereby he still had imaged the mankind  
His youth was passed in dreams of rivalling,  
His age — in plans to prove at least such thing  
Had been so dreamed, — which now he must  
impress

With his own will, effect a happiness  
By theirs, — supply a body to his soul  
Thence, and become eventually whole  
With them as he had hoped to be without —

Finds in Made these the mankind he once  
men no raved about ?  
machine Because a few of them were notable,  
for his Should all be figured worthy note ?  
sake, As well

Expect to find Taurello's triple line  
Of trees a single and prodigious pine.  
Real pines rose here and there ; but, close among,  
Thrust into and mixed up with pines, a throng  
Of shrubs, he saw, — a nameless common sort  
O'erpast in dreams, left out of the report  
And hurried into corners, or at best  
Admitted to be fancied like the rest.  
Reckon that morning's proper chiefs — how few !  
And yet the people grew, the people grew,  
Grew ever, as if the many there indeed,  
More left behind and most who should suc-  
ceed, —

Simply in virtue of their mouths and eyes,  
Petty enjoyments and huge miseries, —  
Mingled with, and made veritably great  
Those chiefs : he overlooked not Mainard's state  
Nor Concorezzi's station, but instead  
Of stopping there, each dwindled to be head  
Of infinite and absent Tyrolese  
Or Paduans ; startling all the more, that these  
Seemed passive and disposed of, uncared for,  
Yet doubtless on the whole (like Eglamor)  
Smiling ; for if a wealthy man decays

And out of store of robes must wear, all days,  
One tattered suit, alike in sun and shade,  
'Tis commonly some tarnished gay brocade  
Fit for a feast-night's flourish and no more :  
Nor otherwise poor Misery from her store  
Of looks is fain upgather, keep unfurled  
For common wear as she goes through the world,  
The faint remainder of some worn-out smile  
Meant for a feast-night's service merely. While  
Crowd upon crowd rose on Sordello thus, —  
(Crowds no way interfering to discuss,  
Much less dispute, life's joys with one employed  
In envying them, — or, if they aught enjoyed,  
Where lingered something indefinable

In every look and tone, the mirth as well  
As woe, that fixed at once his estimate  
Of the result, their good or bad estate) —  
But a Old memories returned with new  
thing with effect :

life of its And the new body, ere he could sus-  
own, pect,  
Cohered, mankind and he were really fused.



The new self seemed impatient to be used  
 By him, but utterly another way  
 Than that anticipated : strange to say,  
 They were too much below him, more in thrall  
 Than he, the adjunct than the principal.  
 What bootied scattered units ? — here a mind  
 And there, which might repay his own to find,  
 And stamp, and use ? — a few, howe'er august,  
 If all the rest were grovelling in the dust ?  
 No : first a mighty equilibrium, sure,  
 Should he establish, privilege procure  
 For all, the few had long possessed ! He felt  
 An error, an exceeding error melt —  
 While he was occupied with Mantuan chants,  
 Behoved him think of men, and take their  
 wants,

Such as he now distinguished every side,  
 As his own want which might be satisfied, —  
 And, after that, think of rare qualities  
 Of his own soul demanding exercise.  
 It followed naturally, through no claim  
 On their part, which made virtue of the aim  
 At serving them, on his, — that, past retrieve,  
 He felt now in their toils, theirs, — nor could  
 leave

Wonder how, in the eagerness to rule,  
 Impress his will on mankind, he (the fool !)  
 Had never even entertained the thought  
 That this his last arrangement might be fraught  
 With incidental good to them as well,

And rights And that mankind's delight would  
 hitherto help to swell  
 ignored by His own. So, if he sighed, as for-  
 him, merly

Because the merry time of life must fleet,  
 'T was deeper now, — for could the crowds re-  
 peat

Their poor experiences ? His hand that shook  
 Was twice to be deplored. "The Legate, look !  
 With eyes, like fresh-blown thrush-eggs on a  
 thread,

Faint-blue and loosely floating in his head,  
 Large tongue, moist open mouth ; and this long  
 while

That owner of the idiotic smile

A fault he Serves them !"  
 is now He fortunately saw in time  
 anxious to His fault however, and since the of-  
 repair, fice prime

Includes the secondary — best accept  
 Both offices ; Taurello, its adept,  
 Could teach him the preparatory one,  
 And how to do what he had fancied done  
 Long previously, ere take the greater task,  
 How render first these people happy ? Ask  
 The people's friends: for there must be one  
 good,

One way to it — the Cause ! — he understood  
 The meaning now of Palma ; why the jar  
 Else, the ado, the trouble wide and far  
 Of Guelfs and Ghibellins, the Lombard hope  
 And Rome's despair ? — 'twixt Emperor and  
 Pope

The confused shifting sort of Eden tale —  
 Hardihood still recurring, still to fail —  
 That foreign interloping fiend, this free  
 And native overbrooding deity —  
 Yet a dire fascination o'er the palms  
 The Kaiser ruined, troubling even the calms

Of paradise — or, on the other hand,  
 Since he The Pontiff, as the Kaisers under-  
 appre- stand,  
 hends its One snake-like cursed of God to love  
 full extent, the ground,

Whose heavy length breaks in the noon profound  
 Some saving tree — which needs the Kaiser,  
 dressed

As the dislodging angel of that pest,  
 Yet flames that pest bedropped, flat head, full  
 fold,

With coruscating dower of dyes. "Behold  
 The secret, so to speak, and master-spring  
 O' the contest ! — which of the two Powers shall  
 bring

Men good — perchance the most good — ay, it  
 may

Be that ! — the question, which best knows the  
 way."

And hereupon Count Mainard strutted past  
 Out of San Pietro ; never seemed the last  
 Of archers, slingers : and our friend began  
 To recollect strange modes of serving man,  
 Arbalist, catapult, brake, mangel,  
 And more. "This way of theirs may, — who  
 can tell ? —

Need perfecting," said he : "let all be solved  
 At once ! Taurello 'tis, the task devolved  
 On late — confront Taurello !"

And at last  
 He did confront him. Scarce an hour had past  
 When forth Sordello came, older by years  
 Than at his entry. Unexampled fears  
 Oppressed him, and he staggered off, blind, mute  
 And deaf, like some fresh-mutilated brute,  
 Into Ferrara — not the empty town  
 That morning witnessed : he went up and down  
 Streets whence the veil had been stripped shred  
 by shred,

So that, in place of huddling with their dead  
 Indoors, to answer Salinguerra's ends,  
 Townsfolk make shift to crawl forth, sit like  
 friends

With any one. A woman gave him choice  
 Of her two daughters, the infantile voice  
 Or the dimpled knee, for half a chain, his throat  
 Was clasped with ; but an archer knew the  
 coat —

Its blue cross and eight lilies, — bade beware  
 One dogging him in concert with the pair  
 Though thrumming on the sleeve that hid his  
 knife.

Night set in early, autumn dews were rife,  
 They kindled great fires while the Leaguers'  
 mass

Began at every carroch — he must pass  
 Between the kneeling people. Presently  
 The carroch of Verona caught his eye  
 With purple trappings ; silently he bent  
 Over its fire, when voices violent  
 Began, "Affirm not whom the youth was like  
 That struck me from the porch, I did not strike  
 Again : I too have chestnut hair ; my kin  
 And would Hate Azzo and stand up for Eee-  
 fail have lin.

helped Here, minstrel, drive bad thoughts  
 some way, away ! Sing ! Take  
 My glove for guerdon !<sup>7</sup> And for that man's  
 sake

He turned: "A song of Eglamor's!" — scarce named,  
When, "Our Sordello's rather!" — all exclaimed;

"Is not Sordello famousest for rhyme?" —  
He had been happy to deny, this time, —  
Profess as heretofore the aching head  
And failing heart, — suspect that in his stead  
Some true Apollo had the charge of them,  
Was champion to reward or to condemn,  
So his intolerable risk might shift  
Or share itself; but Naddo's precious gift  
Of gifts, he owned, be certain! At the close —  
"I made that," said he to a youth who rose  
As if to hear: 't was Palma through the band  
Conducted him in silence by her hand.

Back now for Salinguerra. Tito of Trent  
Gave place to Palma and her friend; who went  
In turn at Montelungo's visit — one  
After the other were they come and gone, —  
These spokesmen for the Kaiser and the Pope,  
This incarnation of the People's hope,  
Sordello, — all the say of each was said;  
And Salinguerra sat, himself instead  
Of these to talk with, lingered musing yet.  
'T was a drear vast presence-chamber roughly  
set

In order for the morning's use; full face,  
The Kaiser's ominous sign-mark had first place,  
The crowned grim twy-necked eagle, coarsely-  
blackened

With ochre on the naked wall; nor lacked  
Romano's green and yellow either side;  
But the new token Tito brought had tried  
The Legate's patience — nay, if Palma knew  
What Salinguerra almost meant to do  
Until the sight of her restored his lip  
A certain half-smile, three months' chieftainship  
Had banished! Afterward, the Legate found  
No change in him, nor asked what badge he  
wound

And unbound carelessly. Now sat the Chief  
But Salin- Silent as when our couple left, whose  
guerra is brief  
also pre- Encounter wrought so opportune ef-  
occupied; fect

In thoughts he summoned not, nor would reject,  
Though time 't was now if ever, to pause — fix  
On any sort of ending; wiles and tricks  
Exhausted, judge! his charge, the crazy town,  
Just managed to be hindered crashing down —  
His last sound troops ranged — care observed to  
post

His best of the maimed soldiers innermost —  
So much was plain enough, but somehow struck  
Him not before. And now with this strange luck  
Of Tito's news, rewarding his address  
So well, what thought he of? — how the success  
With Friedrich's rescript there would either  
hush

Old Ecelin's scruples, bring the manly flush  
To his young son's white cheek, or, last, exempt  
Himself from telling what there was to tempt?  
No: that this minstrel was Romano's last

Resem- Servant — himself the first! Could  
bling Sor- he contrast  
dello inno- The whole! — that minstrel's thirty  
thing else. years just spent

In doing nought, their notablest event  
This morning's journey hither, as I told —  
Who yet was lean, outworn and really old,  
A stammering awkward man that scarce dared  
raise

His eye before the magisterial gaze —  
And Salinguerra with his fears and hopes  
Of sixty years, his Emperors and Popes,  
Cares and contrivances, yet, you would say,  
'T was a youth nonchalantly looked away  
Through the embrasure northward o'er the sick  
Expostulating trees — so agile, quick  
How he And graceful turned the head on the  
was made broad chest  
in body Encased in pliant steel, his constant  
and spirit, vest,

Whence split the sun off in a spray of fire  
Across the room; and, loosened of its tire  
Of steel, that head let breathe the comely brown  
Large massive locks discolored as if a crown  
Encircled them, so frayed the basnet where  
A sharp white line divided clean the hair;  
Glossy above, glossy below, it swept  
Curling and fine about a brow thus kept  
Calm, laid coat upon coat, marble and sound;  
This was the mystic mark the Tuscan found,  
Mused of, turned over books about. Square-  
faced,

No lion more; two vivid eyes, enchased  
In hollows filled with many a shade and streak  
Settling from the bold nose and bearded cheek.  
Nor might the half-smile reach them that de-  
formed

A lip supremely perfect else — unwarmed,  
Unwidened, less or more; indifferent  
Whether on trees or men his thoughts were bent,  
Thoughts rarely, after all, in trim and train  
As now a period was fulfilled again:

Of such, a series made his life, compressed  
In each, one story serving for the rest —  
And what How his life-streams rolling arrived  
had been at last  
his career At the barrier, whence, were it once  
of old, overpast,

They would emerge, a river to the end, —  
Gathered themselves up, paused, bade fate be-  
friend,

Took the leap, hung a minute at the height,  
Then fell back to oblivion infinite:  
Therefore he smiled. Beyond stretched gar-  
den-grounds

Where late the adversary, breaking bounds,  
Had gained him an occasion, That above,  
That eagle, testified he could improve  
Effectually. The Kaiser's symbol lay  
Beside his rescript, a new badge by way  
Of baldrice; while, — another thing that marred  
Alike emprise, achievement and reward, —  
Ecelin's missive was conspicuous too.

What past life did those flying thoughts pur-  
sue?

As his, few names in Mantua half so old;  
But at Ferrara, where his sires enrolled  
It latterly, the Adelardi spared  
No pains to rival them: both factions shared  
Ferrara, so that, counted out, 't would yield  
A product very like the city's shield,  
Half black and white, or Ghibellin and Guelph

As after Salinguerra styled himself  
And Este, who, till Marchesalla died,  
(Last of the Adelardi) — never tried  
His fortune there: with Marchesalla's child  
Would pass — could Blacks and Whites be reconciled,

And young Taurello wed Linguetta — wealth  
And sway to a sole grasp. Each treats by stealth  
Already: when the Guefts, the Ravenese  
Arrive, assault the Pietro quarter, seize  
Linguetta, and are gone! Men's first dismay  
Abated somewhat, hurries down, to lay  
The after indignation, Boniface,  
This Richard's father. "Learn the full disgrace  
Averted, ere you blame us Guefts, who rate  
Your Salinguerra, your sole potentate  
That might have been, 'mongst Este's valvasors —

Ay, Azzo's — who, not privy to, abhors  
Our step; but we were zealous." Azzo's then  
To do with! Straight a meeting of old men:  
"Old Salinguerra dead, his heir a boy,  
What if we change our ruler and decoy  
The Lombard Eagle of the azure sphere  
With Italy to build in, fix him here,  
Settle the city's troubles in a trice?  
For private wrong, let public good suffice!"

The original check In fine, young Salinguerra's stanch-  
to his fortunes, est friends  
amends, Talked of the townsmen making him

Gave him a goshawk, and affirmed there was  
Rare sport, one morning, over the green grass  
A mile or so. He sauntered through the plain,  
Was restless, fell to thinking, turned again  
In time for Azzo's entry with the bride;  
Count Boniface rode smirking at their side;  
"She brings him half Ferrara," whispers flew,  
"And all Ancona! If the stripling knew!"

Anon the stripling was in Sicily  
Where Heinrich ruled in right of Constance; he  
Was gracious nor his guest incapable;  
Each understood the other. So it fell,  
One Spring, when Azzo, thoroughly at ease,  
Had near forgotten by what precise degrees  
He crept at first to such a downy seat,  
The Count trudged over in a special heat  
To bid him of God's love dislodge from each  
Of Salinguerra's palaces, — a breach  
Might yawn else, not so readily to shut,  
For who was just arrived at Mantua but  
The youngster, sword on thigh and tuft on chin,  
Which he With tokens for Celano, Ecelin,  
was in the Pistore, and the like! Next news, —  
way to re- no whit  
trieve,

Do any of Ferrara's domes befit  
His wife of Heinrich's very blood: a band  
Of foreigners assemble, understand  
Garden-constructing, level and surround,  
Build up and bury in. A last news crowned  
The consternation: since his infant's birth,  
He only waits they end his wondrous girth  
Of trees that link San Pietro with Tomà,  
To visit Mantua. When the Podestà  
Ecelin, at Vicenza, called his friend  
Taurello thither, what could be their end  
But to restore the Ghibellins' late Head,  
The Kaiser helping? He with most to dread

From vengeance and reprisal, Azzo, there  
With Boniface beforehand, as aware  
Of plots in progress, gave alarm, expelled  
Both plotters: but the Guefts in triumph yelled  
Too hastily. The burning and the fight,  
And how Taurello, occupied that night  
With Ecelin, lost wife and son, I told:

When a — Not how he bore the blow, re-  
fresh ca- tained his hold,  
lamity de- Got friends safe through, left ene-  
stroyed all: mies the worst

O' the fray, and hardly seemed to care at first:  
But afterward men heard not constantly  
Of Salinguerra's House so sure to be!  
Though Azzo simply gained by the event  
A shifting of his plagues — the first, content  
To fall behind the second and estrange  
So far his nature, suffer such a change  
That in Romano sought he wife and child  
And for Romano's sake seemed reconciled  
To losing individual life, which shrunk  
As the other prospered — mortised in his trunk;  
Like a dwarf palm which wanton Arabs foil  
Of bearing its own proper wine and oil,  
By grafting into it the stranger-vine,  
Which sucks its heart out, sly and serpentine,  
Till forth one vine-palm feathers to the root,  
And red drops moisten the insipid fruit.  
Once Adelaide set on, — the subtle mate  
Of the weak soldier, urged to emulate  
The Church's valiant women deed for deed,  
And paragon her namesake, win the meed  
O' the great Matilda, — soon they overbore  
The rest of Lombardy, — not as before  
By an instinctive truculence, but patched  
The Kaiser's strategy until it matched  
The Pontiff's, sought old ends by novel means.  
"Only, why is it Salinguerra screens  
Himself behind Romano? — him we bade  
Enjoy our shine! the front, not seek the shade!"

— Asked Heinrich, somewhat of the tardiest  
To comprehend. Nor Philip acquiesced  
At once in the arrangement; reasoned, plied  
His friend with offers of another bride,  
A statelier function — fruitlessly: 't was plain  
He sank Taurello through some weakness  
into a sec- must remain  
ondary Obscure. And Otho, free to judge of  
personage, both,

— Ecelin the unready, harsh and loth,  
And this more plausible and facile wight  
With every point a-sparkle — chose the right,  
Admiring how his predecessors harped  
On the wrong man: "thus," quoth he, "wits  
are warped

By outsiders!" Carelessly, meanwhile, his life  
Suffered its many turns of peace and strife  
In many lands — you hardly could surprise  
The man; who shamed Sordello (recognize!)  
In this as much beside, that, unconcerned  
What qualities were natural or earned,  
With no ideal of graces, as they came  
He took them, singularly well the same —  
Speaking the Greek's own language, just be-  
cause

Your Greek eludes you, leave the least of flaws  
In contracts with him; while, since Arab lore  
Holds the stars' secret — take one trouble more



And master it ! 'Tis done, and now deter  
Who may the Tuscan, once Jove trined for her,  
From Friedrich's path ! — Friedrich, whose pil-  
grimage

The same man puts aside, whom he 'll engage  
To leave next year John Brienne in the lurch,  
Come to Bassano, see Saint Francis' church  
And judge of Guido the Bolognian's piece  
Which, lend Taurello credit, rivals Greece —  
Angels, with aureoles like golden quoits  
Pitched home, applauding Ecelin's exploits.  
For elegance, he strung the angelot,

With the      Made rhymes thereto ; for prowess,  
appropri-      clove he not  
ate graces      Tiso, last siege, from crest to crup-  
of such.      per ? Why

Detail you thus a varied mastery  
But to show how Taurello, on the watch  
For men, to read their hearts and thereby catch  
Their capabilities and purposes,  
Displayed himself so far as displayed these :  
While our Sordello only cared to know  
About men as a means whereby he 'd show  
Himself, and men had much or little worth  
According as they kept in or drew forth  
That self ; the other's choicest instruments  
Surmised him shallow.

Meantime, malcontents  
Dropped off, town after town grew wiser.  
"How

Change the world's face ?" asked people ; "as  
'tis now

It has been, will be ever : very fine  
Subjecting things profane to things divine,  
In talk ! This contumacy will fatigue  
The vigilance of Este and the League !  
The Ghibellins gain on us !" — as it happened.  
Old Azzo and old Boniface, entrapped  
By Ponte Alto, both in one month's space  
Slept at Verona : either left a brace  
Of sons — but, three years after, either's pair  
Lost Guglielm and Aldobrand its heir :  
Azzo remained and Richard — all the stay  
Of Este and Saint Boniface, at bay

But Ece-      As 't were. Then, either Ecelin  
lin, he set      grew old  
in front,      Or his brain altered — not o' the  
falling,      proper mould

For new appliances — his old palm-stock  
Endured no influx of strange strengths. He 'd  
rock

As in a drunkenness, or chuckle low  
As proud of the completeness of his woe,  
Then weep real tears ; — now make some mad  
onslaught

On Este, heedless of the lesson taught  
So painfully, — now cringe for peace, sue peace  
At price of past gain, bar of fresh increase  
To the fortunes of Romano. Up at last  
Rose Este, down Romano sank as fast.  
And men remarked these freaks of peace and  
war

Happened while Salinguerra was afar :  
Whence every friend brought him, all in vain,  
To use his old adherent's wits again.  
Not he ! — "who had advisers in his sons,  
Could plot himself, nor needed any one's  
Advice." 'T was Adelaide's remaining stanch

Prevented his destruction root and branch  
Forthwith ; but when she died, doom fell, for  
gay

He made alliances, gave lands away  
To whom it pleased accept them, and withdrew  
Forever from the world. Taurello, who  
Was summoned to the convent, then refused  
A word at the wicket, patience thus abused,  
Promptly threw off alike his imbecile  
Ally's yoke, and his own frank, foolish smile.  
Soon a few movements of the happier sort  
Changed matters, put himself in men's report  
As heretofore ; he had to fight, beside,

And that became him ever. So, in  
Salin-      pride  
guerra      And flushing of this kind of second  
must again      youth,  
come for-      He dealt a good-will blow. Este in  
ward,      truth

Lay prone — and men remembered, somewhat  
late,

A laughing old outrageous stifled hate  
He bore to Este — how it would outbreak  
At times spite of disguise, like an earthquake  
In sunny weather — as that noted day  
When with his hundred friends he tried to slay  
Azzo before the Kaiser's face : and how,  
On Azzo's calm refusal to allow  
A liegeman's challenge, straight he too was  
calmed :

As if his hate could bear to lie embalmed,  
Bricked up, the moody Pharaoh, and survive  
All intermediate crumbings, to arrive  
At earth's catastrophe — 't was Este's crash,  
Not Azzo's he demanded, so, no rash  
Procedure ! Este's true antagonist  
Rose out of Ecelin : all voices whist,  
All eyes were sharpened, wits predicted. He  
'T was, leaned in the embrasure absently,  
Why and Amused with his own efforts, now,  
how, is let      to trace  
out in      With his steel-sheathed forefinger  
soliloquy.      Friedrich's face

I' the dust : but as the trees waved sere, his  
smile

Deepened, and words expressed its thought  
erewhile.

"Ay, fairly housed at last, my old compeer ?  
That we should stick together, all the year  
I kept Vicenza ! — How old Boniface,  
Old Azzo caught us in its market-place,  
He by that pillar, I at this, — caught each  
In mid swing, more than fury of his speech,  
Egging the rabble on to disavow  
Allegiance to their Marquis — Bacchus, how  
They boasted ! Ecelin must turn their drudge,  
Nor, if released, will Salinguerra grudge  
Paying arrears of tribute due long since —  
Bacchus ! My man could promise then, nor  
wince,

The bones-and-muscles ! Sound of wind and  
limb,

Spoke he the set excuse I framed for him :  
And now he sits me, slaving and mute,  
Intent on chafing each starved purple foot  
Benumbed past aching with the altar slab —  
Will no vein throb there when some monk shall  
blab

Spitefully to the circle of bald scalps,  
 Ecclin, he 'Friedrich's affirmed to be our side  
 did all for, the Alps'  
 is a monk — Eh, brother Lactance, brother  
 now, Anaclet?

Sworn to abjure the world, its fume and fret,  
 God's own now? Drop the dormitory bar,  
 Enfold the scanty gray serge scapular  
 Twice o'er the cowl to muffle memories cut!  
 So! But the midnight whisper turns a shout,  
 Eyes wink, mouths open, pulses circulate  
 In the stone walls: the past, the world you hate  
 Is with you, ambush, open field — or see  
 The surging flame — we fire Vicenza — glee!  
 Follow, let Pilio and Bernardo chafe!  
 Bring up the Mantuans — through San Biagio —  
 safe!

Ah, the mad people waken? Ah, they writhe  
 And reach us? If they block the gate? No  
 tithe

Can pass — keep back, you Bassanese! The  
 edge,

Use the edge — shear, thrust, hew, melt down  
 the wedge,

Let out the black of those black upturned eyes!  
 Hell — are they sprinkling fire too? The blood  
 fries

And hisses on your brass gloves as they tear  
 Those upturned faces choking with despair.  
 Brave! Slither through the reeking gate!  
 'How now?

You six had charge of her?' And then the vow  
 Comes, and the foam spirts, hair's plucked, till  
 one shriek

(I hear it) and you fling — you cannot speak —  
 Your gold-flowered basnet to a man who haled  
 The Adelaide he dared scarce view unveiled  
 This morn, naked across the fire: how crown  
 The archer that exhausted lays you down  
 Your infant, smiling at the flame, and dies?  
 While one, while mine . . .

"Bacchus! I think there lies  
 More than one corpse there" (and he paced the  
 room)

"— Another cinder somewhere: 't was my doom  
 Beside, my doom! If Adelaide is dead,  
 I live the same, this Azzo lives instead  
 Of that to me, and we pull, any how,  
 Este into a heap: the matter's now

Just when At the true juncture slipping us so  
 the prize off.

Just when Ay, Heinrich died and Otho, please  
 somebody; you, doffed

His crown at such a juncture! Still, if holds  
 Our Friedrich's purpose, if this cham enfolds  
 The neck of . . . who but this same Ecclin  
 That must recoil when the best days begin!  
 Recoil? that's naught; if the recoiler leaves  
 His name for me to fight with, no one grieves:  
 But he must interfere, forsooth, unlock  
 His cloister to become my stumbling-block  
 Just as of old! Ay, ay, there 't is again —  
 The land's inevitable Head — explain  
 The reverences that subject us! Count  
 These Ecclins now! Not to say as fount,  
 Originating power of thought, — from twelve  
 That drop i' the trenches they joined hands to  
 delve,

Six shall surpass him, but . . . why, men must  
 twine

Somehow with something! Ecclin's a fine  
 Himself, if Clear name! 'T were simpler, doubt-  
 it were less, twine with me  
 only worth At once our cloistered friend's ca-  
 while, pacity

Was of a sort! I had to share myself  
 In fifty portions, like an o'ertasked elf  
 That's forced illume in fifty points the vast  
 Rare vapor he's environed by. At last  
 My strengths, though sorely frittered, e'en con-  
 verge

And crown . . . no, Bacchus, they have yet to  
 urge

The man be crowned!

"That aloe, an he durst,  
 Would climb! Just such a bloated sprawler  
 first

I noted in Messina's castle-court  
 The day I came, when Heinrich asked in sport  
 If I would pledge my faith to win him back  
 His right in Lombardy: 'for, once bid pack  
 Marauders,' he continued, 'in my stead  
 You rule, Taurello!' and upon this head  
 Laid the silk glove of Constance — I see her  
 Too, mantled head to foot in miniver,  
 Retrude following!

"I am absolved  
 From further toil: the empery devolved  
 On me, 't was Tito's word: I have to lay  
 For once my plan, pursue my plan my way,  
 Prompt nobody, and render an account  
 Taurello to Taurello! Nay, I mount  
 To Friedrich: he conceives the post I kept,  
 — Who did true service, able or inept,  
 Who's worthy guerdon, Ecclin or I.

Me guerdoned, counsel follows: would he vie  
 With the Pope really? Azzo, Boniface  
 Compose a right-arm Hohenstauffen's race  
 Must break ere govern Lombardy. I point  
 How easy 't were to twist, once out of joint,  
 The socket from the bone: my Azzo's stare  
 Meanwhile! for I, this idle strap to wear,  
 Shall — fret myself abundantly, what end  
 To serve? There's left me twenty years to

As it may spend  
 be — but — How better than my old way?  
 also, as it Had I one

may not be — Who labored to o'erthrow my work  
 be — a son

Hatching with Azzo superb treachery,  
 To root my pines up and then poison me,  
 Suppose — 't were worth while frustrate that!

Beside,  
 Another life's ordained me: the world's tide  
 Rolls, and what hope of parting from the press  
 Of waves, a single wave through weariness  
 Gently lifted aside, laid upon shore?  
 My life must be lived out in foam and roar,  
 No question. Fifty years the province held  
 Taurello; troubles raised, and troubles quelled.  
 He in the midst — who leaves this quaint stone  
 place,

These trees a year or two, then not a trace  
 Of him! How obtain hold, fetter men's  
 tongues

Like this poor minstrel with the foolish songs —

To which, despite our bustle, he is linked ?  
— Flowers one may tease, that never grow extinct.

Ay, that patch, surely, green as ever, where  
I set Her Moorish lentisk, by the stair,  
To overawe the aloes; and we trod  
Those flowers, how call you such? — into the sod;

A stately foreigner — a world of pain  
To make it thrive, arrest rough winds — all vain!

It would decline; these would not be destroyed:

And now, where is it? where can you avoid  
The flowers? I frighten children twenty years  
Longer! — which way, too, Ecelin appears  
To thwart me, for his son's besotted youth  
Gives promise of the proper tiger-tooth:  
They feel it at Vicenza! Fate, fate, fate,  
My fine Taurello! Go you, promulgate  
Friedrich's decree, and here 's shall aggrandize  
Young Ecelin — your Prefect's badge! a prize  
The suppo- Too precious, certainly.

sition he "How now? Compete  
most in- With my old comrade? shuffle from  
clines to; their seat

His children? Paltry dealing! Don't I know

Ecelin? now, I think, and years ago!  
What's changed — the weakness? did not I compound

For that, and undertake to keep him sound  
Despite it? Here 's Taurello hankering  
After a boy's preferment — this plaything  
To carry, Bacchus!" And he laughed.

Remark  
Why schemes wherein cold-blooded men embark

Prosper, when your enthusiastic sort  
Fail: while these last are ever stopping short —  
(So much they should — so little they can do!)  
The careless tribe see nothing to pursue  
If they desist; meantime their scheme succeeds.

Thoughts were caprices in the course of deeds  
Methodic with Taurello; so, he turned,  
Enough amused by fancies fairly earned  
Of Este's horror-struck submitted neck,  
And Richard, the cowed braggart, at his beck,  
Being con- To his own petty but immediate  
tent ed doubt  
with mere If he could pacify the League with-  
vengeance. out

Conceding Richard; just to this was brought  
That interval of vain discursive thought!  
As, shall I say, some Ethiop, past pursuit  
Of all enslavers, dips a shackled foot  
Burnt to the blood, into the drowsy black  
Enormous watercourse which guides him back  
To his own tribe again, where he is king;  
And laughs because he guesses, numbering  
The yellower poison-wattles on the pouch  
Of the first lizard wrested from its couch  
Under the slime (whose skin, the while he strips  
To cure his nostril with, and festered lips,  
And eyeballs bloodshot through the desert-  
blast)

That he has reached its boundary, at last

May breathe; — thinks o'er enchantments of  
the South

Sovereign to plague his enemies, their mouth,  
Eyes, nails, and hair; but, these enchantments  
tried

In fancy, puts them soberly aside  
For truth, projects a cool return with friends,  
The likelihood of winning mere amends  
Ere long; thinks that, takes comfort silently,  
Then, from the river's brink, his wrongs and  
he,

Hugging revenge close to their hearts, are soon  
Off-striding for the Mountains of the Moon.

Midnight: the watcher nodded on his spear,  
Since clouds dispersing left a passage clear  
For any meagre and discoloured moon  
To venture forth; and such was peering soon  
Above the harassed city — her close lanes  
Closer, not half so tapering her fanes,  
As though she shrunk into herself to keep  
What little life was saved, more safely. Heap  
By heap the watch-fires mouldered, and beside  
The blackest spoke Sordello and replied  
Palma with none to listen. "T is your cause:

What makes a Ghibellin? There  
Sordello, should be laws —  
taught what (Remember how my youth escaped!

Ghibellins I trust

are, To you for manhood, Palma; tell  
me just

As any child) — there must be laws at work  
Explaining this. Assure me, good may lurk  
Under the bad, — my multitude has part  
In your designs, their welfare is at heart  
With Salinguerra, to their interest  
Refer the deeds he dwelt on, — so divest  
Our conference of much that scared me. Why  
Affect that heartless tone to Tito? I  
Esteemed myself, yes, in my inmost mind  
This morn, a recreant to my race — mankind  
O'erlooked till now: why boast my spirit's  
force,

— Such force denied its object? why divorce  
These, then admire my spirit's flight the same  
As though it bore up, helped some half-orbed  
flame

Else quenched in the dead void, to living space?  
That orb cast off to chaos and disgrace,  
Why vaunt so much my unencumbered dance,  
Making a feat's facilities enhance  
Its marvel? But I front Taurello, one  
Of happier fate, and all I should have done,  
He does; the people's good being paramount  
With him, their progress may perhaps account  
For his abiding still; whereas you heard  
The talk with Tito — the excuse preferred  
For burning those five hostages, — and broached  
By way of blind, as you and I approached,  
I do believe."

She spoke: then he, "My thought  
Plainlier expressed! All to your profit —  
naught

Meantime of these, of conquests to achieve  
For them, of wretchedness he might relieve

While profiting your party. Azzo,  
And what too,  
Guelfs, approves Supports a cause: what cause? Do

of neither. Guelfs pursue



Their ends by means like yours, or better?"

When  
The Guelfs were proved alike, men weighed  
with men,  
And deed with deed, blaze, blood, with blood  
and blaze,  
Morn broke: "Once more, Sordello, meet its  
gaze

Proudly — the people's charge against thee fails  
In every point, while either party quails!  
These are the busy ones: be silent thou!  
Two parties take the world up, and allow  
No third, yet have one principle, subsist  
By the same injustice; whoso shall enlist  
With either, ranks with man's inveterate foes.  
So there is one less quarrel to compose:  
The Guelf, the Ghibellin may be to curse —  
I have done nothing, but both sides do worse  
Than nothing. Nay, to me, forgotten, reft  
Of insight, lapped by trees and flowers, was  
left

The notion of a service — ha? What lured  
Me here, what mighty aim was I assured  
Must move Taurello? What if there remained

A cause, intact, distinct from these,  
ordained

Have men  
a cause  
distinct  
from  
both? For me, its true discoverer?"  
Some one pressed  
Before them here, a watcher, to  
suggest

The subject for a ballad: "They must know  
The tale of the dead worthy, long ago  
Consul of Rome — that's long ago for us,  
Minstrels and bowmen, idly squabbling thus  
In the world's corner — but too late no doubt,  
For the brave time he sought to bring about.

— Not know Crescentius Nomen-  
tanius?" Then

Who was  
the famed  
Roman  
Crescen-  
tius? He cast about for terms to tell him,  
when  
Sordello disavowed it, how they  
used

Whenever their Superior introduced  
A novice to the Brotherhood — ("for I  
Was just a brown-sleeve brother, merrily  
Appointed too," quoth he, "till Innocent  
Bade me relinquish, to my small content,  
My wife or my brown sleeves") — some brother  
spoke

Ere nocturns of Crescentius, to revoke  
The edict issued, after his demise,  
Which blotted fame alike and effigies,  
All out except a floating power, a name  
Including, tending to produce the same  
Great act. Rome, dead, forgotten, lived at least  
Within that brain, though to a vulgar priest  
And a vile stranger, — two not worth a slave  
Of Rome's, Pope John, King Otho, — fortune  
gave

The rule there: so, Crescentius, haply dressed  
In white, called Roman Consul for a jest,  
Taking the people at their word, forth stepped  
As upon Brutus' heel, nor ever kept  
Rome waiting, — stood erect, and from his brain  
Gave Rome out on its ancient place again.  
Ay, bade proceed with Brutus' Rome, Kings  
styled

Themselves mere citizens of, and, beguiled

Into great thoughts thereby, would choose the  
gem

Out of a lapfull, spoil their diadem  
— The Senate's cypher was so hard to scratch!  
He flashes like a phanal, all men catch  
The flame, Rome's just accomplished! when  
returned

Otho, with John, the Consul's step had spurned,  
And Hugo Lord of Este, to redress  
The wrongs of each. Crescentius in the stress  
Of adverse fortune bent. "They crucified  
Their Consul in the Forum; and abide  
E'er since such slaves at Rome, that I — (for I  
Was once a brown-sleeve brother, merrily  
Appointed) — I had option to keep wife  
Or keep brown sleeves, and managed in the strife  
Lose both. A song of Rome!"

And Rome, indeed,  
Robed at Goito in fantastic weed,  
The Mother-City of his Mantuan days,  
Looked an established point of light whence rays  
Traversed the world; for, all the clustered  
homes

Beside of men, seemed bent on being Romes  
In their degree; the question was, how each  
Should most resemble Rome, clean out of reach.  
Nor, of the Two, did either principle

How if, in Struggle to change — but to possess  
the reinte- — Rome, still,  
gration of  
Rome, Guelf Rome or Ghibellin Rome.

Let Rome advance!  
Rome, as she struck Sordello's ignorance —  
How could he doubt one moment? Rome's the  
Cause!

Rome of the Pandects, all the world's new  
laws —

Of the Capitol, of Castle Angelo;  
New structures, that inordinately glow,  
Subdued, brought back to harmony, made ripe  
By many a relic of the archetype  
Extant for wonder; every upstart church  
That hoped to leave old temples in the lurch,  
Corrected by the Theatre forlorn  
That, — as a mundane shell, its world late  
born, —

Lay and o'ershadowed it. These hints combined,  
Be typified Rome typifies the scheme to put man-  
the tri- kind  
umph of  
mankind? Once more in full possession of their  
rights.

"Let us have Rome again! On me it lights  
To build up Rome — on me, the first and last:  
For such a future was endured the past!"  
And thus, in the gray twilight, forth he sprang  
To give his thought consistency among  
The very People — let their facts avail  
Finish the dream grown from the archer's tale.

#### BOOK THE FIFTH

Is it the same Sordello in the dusk  
As at the dawn? — merely a perished husk  
Now, that arose a power fit to build  
Up Rome again? The proud con-  
Munkind ception chilled  
triumph of  
a sudden? So soon? Ay, watch that latest  
dream of thine

— A Rome indebted to no Palatine —  
Drop arch by arch, Sordello! Art possessed  
Of thy wish now, rewarded for thy quest  
To-day among Ferrara's squalid sons?  
Are this and this and this the shining ones  
Meet for the Shining City? Sooth to say,  
Your favored tenantry pursue their way  
After a fashion! This companion slips  
On the smooth causey, t' other blinkard trips  
At his mooned sandal. "Leave to lead the  
brawls

Here i' the atria?" No, friend! He that sprawls  
On aught but a stibadium . . . what his dues  
Who puts the lustral vase to such an use?  
Oh, huddle up the day's disasters! March,  
Ye runagates, and drop thou, arch by arch,  
Rome!

Yet before they quite disband — a whim —  
Study mere shelter, now, for him, and him,  
Nay, even the worst, — just house them! Any  
cave

Suffices: throw out earth! A loophole? Brave!  
They ask to feel the sun shine, see the grass  
Grow, hear the larks sing? Dead art thou, alas,  
And I am dead! But here's our son excels  
At hurdle-weaving any Scythian, fells  
Oak and devises rafters, dreams and shapes  
His dream into a door-post, just escapes  
The mystery of hinges. Lie we both  
Perdue another age. The goodly growth  
Of brick and stone! Our building-pelt was  
rough,

But that descendant's garb suits well enough  
A portico-contriver. Speed the years —  
Why, the What's time to us? At last, a city  
work rears  
should be Itself! nay, enter — what's the grave  
one of ages, to us?

Lo, our forlorn acquaintance carry thus  
The head! Successfully sewer, forum, cirque —  
Last age, an aqueduct was counted work,  
But now they tire the artificer upon  
Blank alabaster, black obsidian,  
— Careful, Jove's face be duly fulgorant,  
And mother Venus' kiss-creased nipples pant  
Back into pristine pulpiness, ere fixed  
Above the baths. What difference betwixt  
This Rome and ours — resemblance what, be-  
tween  
That scurvy dumb-show and this pageant  
sheen —

These Romans and our rabble? Use thy wit!  
The work marched: step by step, — a workman  
fit

Took each, nor too fit, — to one task, one time, —  
No leaping o'er the petty to the prime,  
If per- When just the substituting osier lithe  
formed For brittle bulrush, sound wood for  
equally soft withe,  
and thor- To further loam-and-rougheast-work  
oughly; a stage, —

Exacts an architect, exacts an age:  
No tables of the Mauritanian tree  
For men whose maple log's their luxury!  
That way was Rome built. "Better" (say  
you) "merge

At once all workmen in the demiurge,  
All epochs in a lifetime, every task

In one!" So should the sudden city bask  
I' the day — while those we'd feast there, want  
the knack

Of keeping fresh-chalked gowns from speck and  
brack,

Distinguish not rare peacock from vile swan,  
Nor Mareotic juice from Cæcuban.

"Enough of Rome!" 'T was happy to conceive  
Rome on a sudden, nor shall fate bereave  
Me of that credit: for the rest, her spite  
Is an old story — serves my folly right  
By adding yet another to the dull  
List of abortions — things proved beautiful  
Could they be done, Sordello cannot do."

He sat upon the terrace, plucked and threw  
The powdery aloe-cusps away, saw shift  
Rome's walls, and drop arch after arch, and  
drift

Mist-like afar those pillars of all stripe,  
Mounds of all majesty. "Thou archetype,  
Last of my dreams and loveliest, depart!"

And then a low voice wound into his heart:  
"Sordello!" (low as some old Pythoness  
Conceding to a Lydian King's distress  
The cause of his long error — one mistake  
Of her past oracle) "Sordello, wake!  
God has conceded two sights to a man —

And a man One, of men's whole work, time's  
can do but completed plan,  
a man's The other, of the minute's work,  
portion, man's first

Step to the plan's completeness: what's dis-  
persed

Save hope of that supreme step which, desried  
Earliest, was meant still to remain untried  
Only to give you heart to take your own  
Step, and there stay — leaving the rest alone?  
Where is the vanity? Why count as one  
The first step, with the last step? What is gone  
Except Rome's æry magnificence,  
That last step you'd take first? — an evidence  
You were God: be man now! Let those glances  
fall!

The basis, the beginning step of all,  
Which proves you just a man — is that gone too?  
Pity to disconcert one versed as you  
In fate's ill-nature! but its full extent  
Eludes Sordello, even: the veil rent,  
Read the black writing — that collective man  
Outstrips the individual! Who began

The last of The acknowledged greatnesses? Ay,  
each series your own art  
of work- Shall serve us: put the poet's mimes  
men apart —

Close with the poet's self, and lo, a dim  
Yet too plain form divides itself from him!  
Alcamo's song enmeshes the lulled Isle,  
Woven into the echoes left erewhile  
By Nina, one soft web of song: no more  
Turning his name, then, flower-like o'er and  
o'er!

An elder poet in the younger's place;  
Nina's the strength, but Alcamo's the grace:  
Each neutralizes each then! Search your fill;  
You get no whole and perfect Poet — still  
New Ninas, Alcamos, till time's mid-night  
Shrouds all — or better say, the shutting light  
Of a forgotten yesterday. Dissect

Every ideal workman — (to reject  
In favor of your fearful ignorance  
The thousand phantasms eager to advance,  
Sums up in And point you but to those within  
himself all your reach) —  
predecessors. Were you the first who brought —  
(in modern speech)

The Multitude to be materialized?  
That loose eternal unrest — who devised  
An apparition i' the midst? The rout  
Was checked, a breathless ring was formed  
about

That sudden flower: get round at any risk  
The gold-rough pointel, silver-blazing disk  
O' the lily! Swords across it! Reign thy reign

We just And serve thy frolic service, Charle-  
see Char- magne!  
lemagne, — The very child of over-joyousness,  
Hilde- Unfeeling thence, strong therefore:  
brand, Strength by stress

Of Strength comes of that forehead confident,  
Those widened eyes expecting heart's content,  
A calm as out of just-quelled noise; nor swerves  
For doubt, the ample cheek in gracious curves  
Abutting on the upthrust nether lip:

He wills, how should he doubt then? Ages slip:  
Was it Sordello pried into the work  
So far accomplished, and discovered lurk

A company amid the other clans,  
Only distinct in priests for castellans.  
And popes for suzerains (their rule confessed

Its rule, their interest its interest,  
Living for sake of living — there an end, —  
Wrapt in itself, no energy to spend  
In making adversaries or allies), —  
Dived you into its capabilities

And dared create, out of that sect, a soul  
Should turn a multitude, already whole,  
Into its body? Speak plainer! Is 't so sure  
God's church lives by a King's investiture?  
Look to last step! A staggering — a shock —  
What's mere sand is demolished, while the rock  
Endures: a column of black fiery dust  
Blots heaven — that help was prematurely thrust  
Aside, perchance! — but air clears, naught's  
erased

Of the true outline! Thus much being firm  
based,

The other was a scaffold. See him stand  
Buttressed upon his mattock, Hildebrand  
Of the huge brain-mass welded ply o'er ply  
As in a forge; it buries either eye  
White and extinct, that stupid brow; teeth  
clenched,

The neck tight-corded, too, the chin deep-  
trenched,

As if a cloud enveloped him while fought  
Under its shade, grim prizers, thought with  
thought

At dead-lock, agonizing he, until  
The victor thought leap radiant up, and Will,  
The slave with folded arms and drooping lids  
They fought for, lean forth flame-like as it  
bids.

Call him no flower — a mandrake of the earth,  
Thwarted and dwarfed and blasted in its birth,  
Rather, — a fruit of suffering's excess,  
Thence feeling, therefore stronger: still by stress

Of Strength, work Knowledge! Full three hun-  
dred years

Have men to wear away in smiles and tears  
Between the two that nearly seemed to touch,  
In com- Observe you! quit one workman and  
posite you clutch  
work they Another, letting both their trains go  
end and by —  
name.

The actors-out of either's policy,  
Heinrich, on this hand, Otho, Barbaross,  
Carry the three Imperial crowns across,  
Aix' Iron, Milan's Silver, and Rome's Gold —  
While Alexander, Innocent uphold  
On that, each Papal key — but, link on link,  
Why is it neither chain betrays a chink?  
How coalesce the small and great? Alack,  
For one thrust forward, fifty such fall back!  
Do the popes coupled there help Gregory  
Alone? Hark — from the hermit Peter's cry  
At Claremont, down to the first serf that says  
Friedrich's no liege of his while he delays  
Getting the Pope's curse off him! The Cru-  
sade —

Or trick of breeding Strength by other aid  
Than Strength, is safe. Hark — from the wild  
harangue

Of Vimmercato, to the carroch's clang  
Yonder! The League — or trick of turning  
Strength

Against Pernicious Strength, is safe at length,  
Yet hark — from Mantuan Albert making cease  
The fierce ones, to Saint Francis preaching peace  
Yonder! God's Truce — or trick to supersede  
The very Use of Strength, is safe. Indeed  
We trench upon the future. Who is found  
To take next step, next age — trail o'er the  
ground —

Shall I say, gourd-like? — not the flower's dis-  
play

Nor the root's prowess, but the plenteous way  
O' the plant — produced by joy and sorrow,  
whence

Unfeeling and yet feeling, strongest thence?  
Knowledge by stress of merely Knowledge?  
No —

E'en were Sordello ready to forego  
His life for this, 't were overleaping work  
Some one has first to do, howe'er it irk,  
Nor stray a foot's breadth from the beaten road.  
Who means to help must still support the load  
Hildebrand lifted — 'why hast Thou,' he  
groaned,

'Imposed on me a burden, Paul had moaned,  
And Moses dropped beneath?' Much done —  
and yet

Doubtless that grandest task God ever set  
On man, left much to do: at his arm's wrench,  
Charlemagne's scaffold fell; but pillars blench  
Merely, start back again — perchance have been  
Taken for buttresses: crash every screen,  
Hammer the tenons better, and engage  
A gang about your work, for the next age  
Or two, of Knowledge, part by Strength and part  
By Knowledge! Then, indeed, perchance may  
start

Sordello on his race — would time divulge  
Such secrets! If one step's awry, one bulge  
Calls for correction by a step we thought



Got over long since, why, till that is wrought,  
No progress! And the scaffold in its turn  
Becomes, its service o'er, a thing to spurn.  
Meanwhile, if your half-dozen years of life  
In store dispose you to forego the strife,  
Who takes exception? Only bear in mind,  
Ferrara's reached, Goito's left behind:

If associ- As you then were, as half yourself,  
able you, desist!  
stand off! — The warrior-part of you may, an  
it list,

Finding real falchions difficult to poise,  
Fling them afar and taste the cream of joys  
By wielding such in fancy, — what is bard  
Of you may spurn the vehicle that marred  
Elys so much, and in free fancy glut

His sense, yet write no verses — you have but  
To please yourself for law, and once could please  
What once appeared yourself, by dreaming these  
Rather than doing these, in days gone by.

But all is changed the moment you desecry  
Mankind as half yourself, — then, fancy's trade  
Ends once and always: how may half evade  
The other half? men are found half of you.

Out of a thousand helps, just one or two  
Can be accomplished presently: but finch  
From these (as from the falchion, raised an inch,  
Elys, described a couplet) and make proof  
Of fancy, — then, while one half lolls aloof

I' the vines, completing Rome to the tip-top —  
See if, for that, your other half will stop  
Should the A tear, begin a smile! The rabble's

new sym- woes,  
pathies al- Ludicrous in their patience as they  
low you. chose

To sit about their town and quietly  
Be slaughtered, — the poor reckless soldiery,  
With their ignoble rhymes on Richard, how  
'Polit-foot,' sang they, 'was in a pitfall now,'

(hearing each other from the engine-mounts, —  
That crippled sprawling idiot who recounts  
How, lopped of limbs, he lay, stupid as stone,  
Till the pains crept from out him one by one,  
And wriggles round the archers on his head

To earn a morsel of their chestnut bread, —  
And Cino, always in the self-same place  
Weeping; beside that other wretch's case,  
Eyepits to ear, one gangrene since he plied

The engine in his coat of raw sheep's hide  
A double watch in the noon sun; and see  
Lucchino, beauty, with the favors free,  
Trim hacqueton, spruce beard and scented hair,

Campaigning it for the first time — cut there  
In two already, boy enough to crawl  
For latter opine round the southern wall,  
Tomà, where Richard's kept, because that

where  
Marfisa, the fool never saw before,  
Sickened for flowers this wearisome siege:

And Tiso's wife — men liked their pretty liege,  
Cared for her least of whims once, — Berta, wed  
A twelvemonth gone, and, now poor Tiso's dead,  
Delivering herself of his first child

On that chance heap of wet filth, reconciled  
To fifty gazers! — (Here a wind below  
Made moody music augural of woe  
From the pine barrier) — "What if, now the

scene

Draws to a close, yourself have really been  
Time having — You, plucking purples in Goito's  
been lost, moss

choose quick! Like edges of a trabea (not to cross  
Your consul-humor) or dry aloe-shafts

For fasces, at Ferrara — he, fate wafts,  
This very age, her whole inheritance

Of opportunities? Yet you advance  
Upon the last! Since talking is your trade,  
There's Salinguerra left you to persuade:

Fail! then" —

"No — no — which latest chance secure!"  
Leaped up and cried Sordello: "this made sure,

The past were yet redeemable; its work  
Was — help the Guelfs, whom I, howe'er it irk,  
Thus help!" He shook the foolish aloe-haulm

Out of his doublet, paused, pro-  
He takes his ceeded calm

first step as To the appointed presence. The  
a Guelf; large head

Turned on its socket; "And your spokesman,"  
said

The large voice, "is Elcorte's happy sprout?  
Few such" — (so finishing a speech no doubt

Addressed to Palma, silent at his side)  
"— My sober councils have diversified.

Elcorte's son! good: forward as you may,  
Our lady's minstrel with so much to say!"

The hesitating sunset floated back,  
Rosily traversed in the wonted track

The chamber, from the lattice o'er the girth  
Of pines, to the huge eagle blacked in earth

Opposite, — outlined sudden, spur to crest,  
That solid Salinguerra, and caressed

Palma's contour; 't was day looped back night's  
pall;

Sordello had a chance left spite of all.

And much he made of the convincing speech  
Meant to compensate for the past and reach

Through his youth's daybreak of unprofit, quite  
To his noon's labor, so proceed till night

Leisurely! The great argument to bind  
Taurello with the Guelf Cause, body and mind,

— Came the consummate rhetoric to that?  
Yet most Sordello's argument dropped flat

Through his accustomed fault of breaking yoke,  
Disjoining him who felt from him who spoke.

Was 't not a touching incident — so prompt  
A rendering the world its just account,

Once proved its debtor? Who'd suppose, be-  
fore

This proof, that he, Goito's god of yore,  
At duty's instance could demean himself

So memorably, dwindle to a Guelf?  
Be sure, in such delicious flattery steeped,

His inmost self at the out-portion peeped,  
Thus occupied; then stole a glance at those

Appealed to, curious if her color rose  
Or his lip moved, while he discreetly urged

The need of Lombardy becoming purged  
At soonest of her barons; the poor part

Abandoned thus, missing the blood at heart  
And spirit in brain, unseasonably off

Elsewhere! But, though his speech was worthy  
scoff,

Good-humored Salinguerra, famed for tact  
And tongue, who, careless of his phrase, ne'er

lacked

The right phrase, and harangued Honorius dumb

At his accession, — looked as all fell plumb  
To purpose and himself found interest  
In every point his new instructor pressed  
— Left playing with the rescript's white wax seal

To scrutinize Sordello head and heel.  
He means to yield assent sure? No, alas!  
All he replied was, "What, it comes to pass  
That poesy, sooner than politics,  
Makes fade young hair?" To think such speech could fix  
Taurello!

Then a flash of bitter truth:  
So fantasies could break and fritter youth  
That he had long ago lost earnestness,  
Lost will to work, lost power to  
But to will even express  
and to do are different: The need of working! Earth was  
turned a grave:

No more occasions now, though he should crave  
Just one, in right of superhuman toil,  
To do what was undone, repair such spoil,  
Alter the past — nothing would give the chance!  
Not that he was to die; he saw askance  
Protract the ignominious years beyond  
To dream in — time to hope and time despond,  
Remember and forget, be sad, rejoice  
As saved a trouble; he might, at his choice,  
One way or other, idle life out, drop

He may No few smooth verses by the way  
sleep on the — for prop,  
bed he has A thyrsus, these sad people, all  
made. the same,

Should pick up, and set store by, — far from blame,

Plant o'er his hearse, convinced his better part  
Survived him. "Rather tear men out the heart  
O' the truth!" — Sordello muttered, and renewed

His propositions for the Multitude.

But Salinguerra, who at this attack  
Had thrown great breast and ruffling corselet  
back

To hear the better, smilingly resumed  
His task; beneath, the carroch's warning  
boomed;

He must decide with Tito; courteously  
He turned then, even seeming to agree  
With his admonisher — "Assist the Pope,  
Extend Guelf domination, fill the scope  
O' the Church, thus based on All, by All, for  
All —

Change Secular to Evangelical" —  
Echoing his very sentence: all seemed lost,  
When suddenly he looked up, laughingly al-  
most,

To Palma: "This opinion of your friend's —  
For instance, would it answer Palma's ends?  
Best, were it not, turn Guelf, submit our  
Strength" —

(Here he drew out his baldric to its length)  
— "To the Pope's Knowledge — let our captive  
slip,

Wide to the walls throw ope our gates, equip  
Azzo with . . . what I hold here! Who'll  
subscribe

To a trite censure of the minstrel tribe  
Henceforward? or pronounce, as Heinrich used,  
'Spear-heads for battle, burr-heads for the  
joust!'

— When Constance, for his couplets, would  
promote

Alcamo, from a parti-colored coat,  
To holding her lord's stirrup in the wars.  
Not that I see where couplet-making jars  
With common sense: at Mantua I had borne  
This chanted, better than their most forlorn  
Of bull-baits, — that's indisputable!"

Brave!  
Whom vanity nigh slew, contempt shall save!  
All's at an end: a Troubadour suppose  
Mankind will class him with their friends or  
foes?

Scorn flings A puny uncouth ailing vassal think  
cold water The world and him bound in some  
in his face, special link?

Abrupt the visionary tether burst.  
What were rewarded here, or what amerced  
If a poor drudge, solicitous to dream  
Deservingly, got tangled by his theme  
So far as to conceit the knack or gift  
Or whatso'er it be, of verse, might lift  
The globe, a lever like the hand and head  
Of — "Men of Action," as the Jongleurs said,  
— "The Great Men," in the people's dialect?

And not a moment did this scorn affect  
Arouses him Sordello: scorn the poet? They,  
at last, to for once,  
some pur- Asking "what was," obtained a full  
pose, response.

Bid Naddo think at Mantua, he had but  
To look into his promptuary, put  
Finger on a set thought in a set speech:  
But was Sordello fitted thus for each  
Conjecture? Nowise; since within his soul,  
Perception brooded unexpressed and whole.  
A healthy spirit like a healthy frame  
Craves aliment in plenty — all the same,  
Changes, assimilates its aliment.

Perceived Sordello, on a truth intent?  
Next day no formularies more you saw  
Than figs or olives in a sated maw.  
'Tis Knowledge, whither such perceptions tend;  
They lose themselves in that, means to an end,  
The many old producing some one new,  
A last unlike the first. If lies are true,  
The Caliph's wheel-work man of brass receives  
A meal, munched millet grains and lettuce  
leaves

Together in his stomach rattle loose;  
You find them perfect next day to produce:  
But ne'er expect the man, on strength of that,  
Can roll an iron camel-collar flat  
Like Haroun's self! I tell you, what was stored  
And thus Bit by bit through Sordello's life.  
gets the ut- outpoured  
most out of That eve, was, for that age, a novel  
him. thing:

And round those three the People formed a ring.  
Of visionary judges whose award  
He recognized in full — faces that barred  
Henceforth return to the old careless life,  
In whose great presence, therefore, his first strife  
For their sake must not be ignobly fought;

All these, for once, approved of him, he thought,  
Suspended their own vengeance, chose await  
The issue of this strife to reinstate  
Them in the right of taking it — in fact  
He must be proved king ere they could exact  
Vengeance for such king's defalcation. Last,  
A reason why the phrases flowed so fast  
Was in his quite forgetting for a time  
Himself in his amazement that the rhyme  
Disguised the royalty so much : he there —  
And Salinguerra yet all unaware  
Who was the lord, who liegeman !

“ Thus I lay

On thine my spirit and compel obey  
His lord, — my liegeman, — impotent to build  
Another Rome, but hardly so unskilled  
In what such builder should have been, as brook  
One shame beyond the charge that I forsook  
His function ! Free me from that shame, I bend  
A brow before, suppose new years to spend, —  
Allow each chance, nor fruitlessly, recur —  
Measure thee with the Minstrel, then, demur  
He asserts At any crowd he claims ! That I  
the poet's must cede  
rank and Shamed now, my right to my especial  
right, need —

Confess thee fitter help the world than I  
Ordained its champion from eternity,  
Is much : but to behold thee scorn the post  
I quit in thy behalf — to hear thee boast  
What makes my own despair ! ” And while he  
rung

The changes on this theme, the roof up-sprung,  
The sad walls of the presence-chamber died  
Into the distance, or embowering vied  
With far-away Goito's vine-frontier ;  
And crowds of faces — (only keeping clear  
The rose-light in the midst, his vantage-ground  
To fight their battle from) — deep clustered  
round

Sordello, with good wishes no mere breath,  
Kind prayers for him no vapor, since, come  
death,

Come life, he was fresh-sinewed every joint,  
Each bone new-marrowed as whom gods anoint  
Though mortal to their rescue. Now let sprawl  
The snaky volumes hither ! Is Typhon all  
For Hercules to trample — good report  
From Salinguerra only to extort ?

“ So was I ” (closed he his inculcating,  
A poet must be earth's essential king)  
Basing “ So was I, royal so, and if I fail,  
these on ’T is not the royalty, ye witness  
proper quail,  
ground, But one deposed who, caring not  
exert

Its proper essence, trifled malapert  
With accidents instead — good things assigned  
As heralds of a better thing behind —  
And, worthy through display of these, put  
forth

Never the inmost all-surpassing worth  
That constitutes him king precisely since  
As yet no other spirit may evince  
Its like : the power he took most pride to test,  
Whereby all forms of life had been professed  
At pleasure, forms already on the earth,  
Was but a means to power beyond, whose birth

Should, in its novelty, be kingship's proof.  
Now, whether he came near or kept aloof  
The several forms he longed to imitate,  
Not there the kingship lay, he sees too late.  
Those forms, unalterable first as last,  
Proved him her copier, not the protoplast  
Of nature : what would come of being free,  
By action to exhibit tree for tree,  
Bird, beast, for beast and bird, or prove earth  
bore

One veritable man or woman more ?

Means to an end, such proofs are : what the  
end ?

Let essence, whatsoe'er it be, extend —  
Never contract. Already you include  
The multitude ; then let the multitude  
Include yourself ; and the result were new :  
Themselves before, the multitude turn you.  
This were to live and move and have, in them,  
Your being, and secure a diadem  
You should transmit (because no cycle yearns  
Beyond itself, but on itself returns)  
When, the full sphere in wane, the world o'er-  
laid

Long since with you, shall have in turn obeyed  
Some orb still prouder, some displayer, still  
More potent than the last, of human will,  
Recogniz- And some new king depose the old.  
ing true Of such  
dignity in Am I — whom pride of this elates  
service, too much ?

Safe, rather say, 'mid troops of peers again ;  
I, with my words, hailed brother of the train  
Deeds once sufficed : for, let the world roll back,  
Who fails, through deeds howe'er diverse, re-  
track

My purpose still, my task ? A teeming crust —  
Air, flame, earth, wave at conflict ! Then,  
needs must

Emergence some Calm embodied, these refer  
The brawl to — yellow-bearded Jupiter ?  
No ! Saturn ; some existence like a pact  
And protest against Chaos, some first fact  
I' the faint of time. My deep of life, I know,  
Is unavailing e'en to poorly show ” . . .  
For here the Chief immeasurably yawned)  
. . . “ Deeds in their due gradation till Song  
dawned —

The fullest effluence of the finest mind,  
All in degree, no way diverse in kind  
From minds about it, minds which, more or  
less,

Lofty or low, move seeking to impress  
Whether Themselves on somewhat ; but one  
succes- mind has climbed  
sively that Step after step, by just ascent sub-  
of epist, limed.

Thought is the soul of act, and, stage by stage,  
Soul is from body still to disengage  
As tending to a freedom which rejects  
Such help and incorporeally affects  
The world, producing deeds but not by deeds,  
Swaying, in others, frames itself exceeds,  
Assigning them the simpler tasks it used  
To patiently perform till Song produced  
Acts, by thoughts only, for the mind : divest  
Mind of e'en Thought, and, lo, God's unex-  
pressed



Will draws above us! All then is to win  
Save that. How much for me, then? where  
begin

My work? About me, faces! and they flock,  
The earnest faces. What shall I unlock  
By song? behold me prompt, whate'er it be,  
To minister: how much can mortals see  
Of Life? No more than so? I take the task  
And marshal you Life's elemental masque,  
Show Men, on evil or on good lay stress,  
Dramatist, This light, this shade make promi-  
or, so to nent, suppress  
call him, All ordinary hues that softening  
analyst, blend

Such natures with the level. Apprehend  
Which sinner is, which saint, if I allot  
Hell, Purgatory, Heaven, a blaze or blot,  
To those you doubt concerning! I enwomb  
Some wretched Friedrich with his red-hot tomb;  
Some dubious spirit, Lombard Agilulph  
With the black chastening river I engulf!  
Some unapproached Matilda I enshrine  
With languors of the planet of decline —  
These, fail to recognize, to arbitrate  
Between henceforth, to rightly estimate  
Thus marshalled in the masque! Myself, the  
while,

As one of you, am witness, shrink or smile  
At my own showing! Next age — what's to  
do?

The men and women stationed hitherto  
Will I unstation, good and bad, conduct  
Each nature to its farthest, or obstruct  
At soonest, in the world: light, thwarted,  
breaks

A limpid purity to rainbow flakes,  
Or shadow, massed, freezes to gloom: behold  
How such, with fit assistance to unfold,  
Or obstacles to crush them, disengage  
Their forms, love, hate, hope, fear, peace  
make, war wage,

In presence of you all! Myself, implied  
Superior now, as, by the platform's side,  
I bade them do and suffer, — would last con-  
tent

The world . . . no — that's too far! I cir-  
cumvent

A few, my masque contented, and to these  
Offer unveil the last of mysteries —  
Man's inmost life shall have yet freer play:  
Once more I cast external things away,  
And natures composite, so decompose  
That" . . . Why, he writes *Sordello*!

"How I rose,  
And how have you advanced! since evermore  
Yourselves effect what I was fain before  
Effect, what I supplied yourselves suggest,  
What I leave bare yourselves can now invest.  
How we attain to talk as brothers talk,  
In half-words, call things by half-names, no  
balk

From discontinuing old aids. To-day  
Takes in account the work of Yesterday:  
Has not the world a Past now, its adept  
Consults ere he dispense with or accept  
New aids? a single touch more may enhance,  
A touch less turned to insignificance  
Those structures' symmetry the past has strewed

The world with, once so bare. Leave the mere  
rude

Who turns Explicit details! 'tis but brother's  
in due speech  
course  
synthetist. We need, speech where an accent's  
change gives each

The other's soul — no speech to understand  
By former audience: need was then to expand,  
Expatiate — hardly were we brothers! true —  
Nor I lament my small remove from you,  
Nor reconstruct what stands already. Ends  
Accomplished turn to means: my art intends  
New structure from the ancient: as they  
changed

The spoils of every clime at Venice, ranged  
The horned and snouted Libyan god, upright  
As in his desert, by some simple bright  
Clay cinerary pitcher — Thebes as Rome,  
Athens as Byzant rifled, till their Dome  
From earth's reputed consummations razed  
A seal, the all-transmuting Triad blazed  
Above. Ah, whose that fortune? Ne'erthe-  
less

E'en he must stoop contented to express  
No tithe of what's to say — the vehicle  
Never sufficient: but his work is still  
For faces like the faces that select

This for The single service I am bound  
one day: effect, —  
now, serve That bid me cast aside such fancies,  
as Gueff! bow

Tauarello to the Gueff cause, disallow  
The Kaiser's coming — which with heart, soul,  
strength,

I labor for, this eve, who feel at length  
My past career's outrageous vanity,  
And would, as it amends, die, even die  
Now I first estimate the boon of life,  
If death might win compliance — sure, this strife  
Is right for once — the People my support."

My poor Sordello! what may we extort  
By this, I wonder? Palma's lighted eyes  
Turned to Tauarello who, long past surprise,  
Began, "You love him — what you'd say at  
large

Let me say briefly. First, your father's charge  
To me, his friend, peruse: I guessed indeed  
You were no stranger to the course decreed.

Salin- He bids me leave his children to the  
guerra, saints:

dislodged As for a certain project, he acquaints  
from his The Pope with that, and offers him.  
post, the best

Of your possessions to permit the rest  
Go peaceably — to Ecelin, a stripe  
Of soil the cursed Vicentines will gripe,  
— To Alberic, a patch the Trevisan  
Clutches already; extricate, who can,  
Treville, Villarazzi, Puissolo,  
Loria and Cartiglione! — all must go,  
And with them go my hopes. 'Tis lost, then!  
Lost

This eve, our crisis, and some pains it cost  
Procuring; thirty years — as good I'd spent  
Like our admonisher! But each his bent  
Pursues: no question, one might live absurd  
One's self this while, by deed as he by word  
Persisting to obtrude an influence where

"T is made account of, much as . . . nay, you fare

With twice the fortune, youngster! — I submit, Happy to parallel my waste of wit

With the renowned Sordello's: you decide

A course for me. Romano may abide

Romano, — Bacchus! After all, what dearth

Of Ecelins and Alberics on earth?

Say there's a prize in prospect, must disgrace

Betide competitors, unless they style

Themselves Romano? Were it worth my while

To try my own luck! But an obscure place

Suits me — there wants a youth to bustle,

stalk

And attitudinize — some fight, more talk,

Most flaunting badges — how, I might make

clear

Since Friedrich's very purposes lie here

— Here, pity they are like to lie! For me,

With station fixed unceremoniously

Long since, small use contesting; I am but

The liegeman — you are born the lieges — shut

That gentle mouth now! or resume your kin

In your sweet self; were Palma Ecelin

For me to work with! Could that neck endure

This bauble for a cumbrous garniture,

She should . . . or might one bear it for her?

Stay —

I have not been so flattered many a day

As by your pale friend — Bacchus! The least

help

Would lick the hind's fawn to a lion's whelp:

His neck is broad enough — a ready tongue

Beside — too writhled — but, the main thing,

youth —

I could . . . why, look ye!"

And the badge was thrown

In moving, opens Across Sordello's neck: "This

A door to Sordello, badge alone

Makes you Romano's Head — be-

comes superb

On your bare neck, which would, on mine, dis-

turb

The pauldron," said Taurello. A mad act,

Nor even dreamed about before — in fact,

Not when his sportive arm rose for the nonce —

But he had dallied overmuch, this once,

With power: the thing was done, and he, aware

The thing was done, proceeded to declare —

(So like a nature made to serve, excel

In serving, only feel by service well!)

— That he would make Sordello that and more.

"As good a scheme as any. What's to pore

At in my face?" he asked — "ponder instead

This piece of news; you are Romano's Head!

One cannot slacken pace so near the goal,

Suffer my Azzo to escape heart-whole

This time! For you there's Palma to

espouse —

For me, one crowning trouble ere I house

Like my compeer."

On which ensued a strange

And solemn visitation; there came change

O'er every one of them; each looked on each:

Up in the midst a truth grew, without speech.

And when the giddiness sank and the haze

Subsided, they were sitting, no amaze,

Sordello with the baldric on, his sire

Who is declared Sal-

inguerra's aspire

son, Momently; and, interpreting the

thrill

Right at its ebb, Palma was found there still

Relating somewhat Adelaide confessed

A year ago, while dying on her breast, —

Of a contrivance that Vicenza night

When Ecelin had birth. "Their convoy's flight,

Cut off a moment, coiled inside the flame

That wallowed like a dragon at his game

The toppling city through — San Biagio rocks!

And wounded lies in her delicious locks

Retrude, the frail mother, on her face,

None of her wasted, just in one embrace

Covering her child: when, as they lifted her,

Cleaving the tumult, mighty, mightier

And mightiest Taurello's cry outbroke,

Leapt like a tongue of fire that cleaves the

smoke,

Midmost to cheer his Mantuans onward —

drown

His colleague Ecelin's clamor, up and down

The disarray: failed Adelaide see then

Who was the natural chief, the man of men?

Outstripping time, her infant there burst

swathe,

Stood up with eyes haggard beyond the scathe

From wandering after his heritage

Lost once and lost for aye — and why that rage,

That deprecating glance? A new shape leant

On a familiar shape — gloatingly bent

O'er his discomfiture; 'mid wreaths it wore,

Still one outflamed the rest — her child's be-

fore

'T was Salinguerra's for his child: scorn, hate,

Rage now might startle her when all too late!

Then was the moment! — rival's foot had

Hidden spurned

hitherto Never that House to earth else!

by Adelaide's Sense returned —

policy. The act conceived, adventured and

complete,

They bore away to an obscure retreat

Mother and child — Retrude's self not slain"

(Nor even here Taurello moved) "though pain

Was fled: and what assured them most 't was

fled,

All pain, was, if they raised the pale hushed

head

'T would turn this way and that, waver awhile,

And only settle into its old smile —

(Graceful as the disquieted water-flag

Steadying itself, remarked they, in the quag

On either side their path) — when suffered look

Down on her child. They marched: no sign

once shook

The company's close litter of crossed spears

Till, as they reached Goito, a few tears

Slipped in the sunset from her long black lash,

And she was gone. So far the action ran;

No crime. They laid Retrude in the font,

Taurello's very gift, her child was wont

To sit beneath — constant as eve he came

To sit by its attendant girls the same

As one of them. For Palma, she would blend

With this magnific spirit to the end,

That ruled her first; but scarcely had she dared

To disobey the Adelaide who seared  
Her into vowing never to disclose  
A secret to her husband, which so froze  
His blood at half-recital, she contrived  
To hide from him Taurello's infant lived,  
Lest, by revealing that, himself should mar  
Romano's fortunes. And, a crime so far,  
Palma received that action: she was told  
Of Salinguerra's nature, of his cold  
Calm acquiescence in his lot! But free  
To impart the secret to Romano, she

How the Engaged to repossess Sordello of  
discovery His heritage, and hers, and that way  
moves doff

Salin- The mask, but after years, long years:  
guerra, while now,

Was not Romano's sign-mark on that brow? "

Across Taurello's heart his arms were locked:  
And when he did speak 't was as if he mocked  
The minstrel, "who had not to move," he said,  
"Nor stir — should fate defraud him of a shred  
Of his son's infancy? much less his youth!"  
(Laughingly all this) — "which to aid, in truth,  
Himself, reserved on purpose, had not grown  
Old, not too old — 't was best they kept alone  
Till now, and never idly met till now;"

— Then, in the same breath, told Sordello how  
All intimations of this eve's event  
Were lies, for Friedrich must advance to Trent,  
Thence to Verona, then to Rome, there stop,  
Tumble the Church down, institute a-top  
The Alps a Prefecture of Lombardy:  
— "That's now! — no prophesying what may  
be

Anon, with a new monarch of the clime,  
Native of Gesi, passing his youth's prime  
At Naples. Tito bids my choice decide  
On whom" . . .

"Embrace him, madman!" Palma cried,  
Who through the laugh saw sweat-drops burst  
apace,

And his lips blanching: he did not embrace  
Sordello, but he laid Sordello's hand  
On his own eyes, mouth, forehead.

Understand,  
This while Sordello was becoming flushed  
And Sor- Out of his whiteness; thoughts  
dello the rushed, fancies rushed;  
finally-de- He pressed his hand upon his head  
termined, and signed  
Both should forbear him. "Nay, the best 's be-  
hind!"

Taurello laughed — not quite with the same  
laugh:

"The truth is, thus we scatter, ay, like chaff  
These Guelfs, a despicable monk recoils  
From: nor expect a fickle Kaiser spoils  
Our triumph! — Friedrich? Think you, I in-  
tend

Friedrich shall reap the fruits of blood I spend  
And brain I waste? Think you, the people clap  
Their hands at my out-hewing this wild gap  
For any Friedrich to fill up? 'T is mine —  
That's yours: I tell you, towards some such  
design

Have I worked blindly, yes, and idly, yes,

And for another, yes — but worked no less  
With instinct at my heart; I else had swerved,  
While now — look round! My cunning has pre-  
served

Samminiato — that's a central place  
Secures us Florence, boy, — in Pisa's case,  
By land as she by sea; with Pisa ours,  
And Florence, and Pistoia, one devours  
The land at leisure! Gloriously dispersed —  
Brescia, observe, Milan, Piacenza first  
That flanked us (ah, you know not!) in the  
March;

On these we pile, as keystone of our arch,  
Romagna and Bologna, whose first span  
Covered the Trentine and the Valsugan;  
Sofia's Egna by Bolgiano's sure!" . . .  
So he proceeded: half of all this, pure  
The devil Delusion, doubtless, nor the rest too  
putting true,  
forth his But what was undone he felt sure to  
potency: do,

As ring by ring he wrung off, flung away  
The pauldron-rings to give his sword-arm play —  
Need of the sword now! That would soon ad-  
just

Aught wrong at present; to the sword intrust  
Sordello's whiteness, undersize: 't was plain  
He hardly rendered right to his own brain —  
Like a brave hound, men educate to pride  
Himself on speed or scent nor aught beside,  
As though he could not, gift by gift, match men!  
Since Sor- Palma had listened patiently: but  
dello, who when  
began by 'T was time expostulate, attempt  
rhyming, withdraw

Taurello from his child, she, without awe  
Took off his iron arms from, one by one,  
Sordello's shrinking shoulders, and, that done,  
Made him avert his visage and relieve  
Sordello (you might see his corselet heave  
The while) who, loose, rose — tried to speak,  
then sank:

They left him in the chamber. All was blank.  
And even reeling down the narrow stair  
Taurello kept up, as though unaware  
Palma was by to guide him, the old device  
— Something of Milan — "how we muster  
thrice

The Torriani's strength there; all along  
Our own Visconti cowed them" — thus the song  
Continued even while she bade him stoop,  
Thrid somehow, by some glimpse of arrow-loop,  
The turnings to the gallery below,  
Where he stopped short as Palma let him  
go.

When he had sat in silence long enough  
Splintering the stone bench, braving a rebuff  
She stopped the truncheon; only to commence  
One of Sordello's poems, a pretence  
For speaking, some poor rhyme of "Elys' hair  
And head that's sharp and perfect like a pear,  
So smooth and close are laid the few fine locks  
May, even Stained like pale honey oozed from  
from the topmost rocks  
depths of Sun-blanch'd the livelong summer"  
failure — from his worst

Performance, the Goito, as his first:  
And that at end, conceiving from the brow



And open mouth no silence would serve now,  
Went on to say the whole world loved that man  
And, for that matter, thought his face, though  
wan,  
Eclipsed the Count's—he sucking in each  
phrase

As if an angel spoke. The foolish praise  
Ended, he drew her on his mailed knees, made  
Her face a framework with his hands, a shade,  
A crown, an aureole: there must she remain  
(Her little mouth compressed with smiling pain  
As in his gloves she felt her tresses twitch)  
To get the best look at, in fittest niche  
Dispose his saint. That done, he kissed her  
brow,

—“Lauded her father for his treason now,”  
He told her, “only, how could one suspect  
The wit in him?—whose clansman, recollect,  
Was ever Salinguerra—she, the same,  
Romano and his lady—so, might claim  
To know all, as she should”—and thus begun  
Schemes with a vengeance, schemes on schemes,  
“not one

Fit to be told that foolish boy,” he said,  
“But only let Sordello Palma wed,  
—Then!”

‘T was a dim long narrow place at best:  
Yet spring a Midway sole grate showed the fiery  
to the sum- West,  
mit of suc- As shows its corpse the world’s end  
cess, some split tomb—

A gloom, a rift of fire, another gloom,  
Faced Palma—but at length Taurello set  
Her free; the grating held one ragged jet  
Of fierce gold fire: he lifted her within  
The hollow underneath—how else begin  
Fate’s second marvellous cycle, else renew  
The ages than with Palma plain in view?  
Then paced the passage, hands clenched, head  
erect,

Pursuing his discourse; a grand unchecked  
Monotony made out from his quick talk  
And the recurring noises of his walk;  
—Somewhat too much like the o’ercharged as-  
sent

Of two resolved friends in one danger blent,  
Who hearten each the other against heart;  
Boasting there’s naught to care for, when,  
apart

The boaster, all’s to care for. He, beside  
Some shape not visible, in power and pride  
Approached, out of the dark, ginglyling near,  
Nearer, passed close in the broad light, his ear  
Crimson, eyeballs suffused, temples full-  
fraught,

Just a snatch of the rapid speech you caught,  
And on he strode into the opposite dark,  
Till presently the harsh heel’s turn, a spark  
I’ the stone, and whirl of some loose embossed  
thong

That crashed against the angle aye so long  
After the last, punctual to an amount  
Of mailed great paces you could not but count,—  
Prepared you for the pacing back again.  
And by the snatches you might ascertain  
That, Friedrich’s Prefecture surmounted, left  
By this alone in Italy, they cleft  
Asunder, crushed together, at command

Of none, were free to break up Hildebrand,  
If he consent to rebuild, he and Sordello, Charle-  
magne—  
press the world. But garnished, Strength with Know-  
ledge, “if we deign

Accept that compromise and stoop to give  
Rome law, the Cæsar’s Representative.”  
Enough, that the illimitable flood  
Of triumphs after triumphs, understood  
In its faint reflux (you shall hear) sufficed  
Young Ecelin for appanage, enticed  
Him on till, these long quiet in their graves,  
He found ’t was looked for that a whole life’s  
braves

Should somehow be made good; so, weak and  
worn,

Must stagger up at Milan, one gray morn  
Of the to-come, and fight his latest fight.  
But, Salinguerra’s prophecy at height—  
Just this He voluble with a raised arm and  
decided, as stiff,  
it now may be, A blaring voice, a blazing eye, as if  
He had our very Italy to keep

Or cast away, or gather in a heap  
To garrison the better—ay, his word  
Was, “run the cucumber into a gourd,  
Drive Trent upon Apulia”—at their pitch  
Who spied the continents and islands which  
Grew mulberry-leaves and sickles, in the  
map—

(Strange that three such confessions so should  
hap

To Palma, Dante spoke with in the clear  
Amorous silence of the Swooning-sphere,—  
*Cunizza*, as he called her! Never ask  
Of Palma more! She sat, knowing her task  
Was done, the labor of it,—for, success  
Concerned not Palma, passion’s votaress)  
Triumph at height, and thus Sordello crowned—  
Above the passage suddenly a sound  
Stops speech, stops walk: back shrinks Tau-  
rello, bids

With large involuntary asking lids,  
Palma interpret. “’T is his own foot-stamp—  
Your hand! His summons! Nay, this idle  
damp

Befits not!” Out they two reeled dizzily.  
“Visconti’s strong at Milan,” resumed he,  
In the old, somewhat insignificant way—  
(Was Palma wont, years afterward, to say)  
As though the spirit’s flight, sustained thus  
far,

Dropped at that very instant. Gone they are—

Palma, Taurello; Eglamor anon,  
Ecelin,—only Naddo’s never gone!  
—Labors, this moonrise, what the Master  
meant—

“Is Squarcialupo speckled?—purulent.  
I’d say, but when was Providence put out?  
He carries somehow handily about  
His spite nor fouls himself!” Goito’s vines  
Stand like a cheat detected—stark rough  
lines,

The moon breaks through, a gray mean scale  
against

The vault where, this eve’s Maiden, thou re-  
main’st

Like some fresh martyr, eyes fixed — who can tell ?

As Heaven, now all's at end, did not so well,  
Spite of the faith and victory, to

And we have done. leave  
Its virgin quite to death in the lone eve.

While the persisting hermit-bee . . . ha ! wait  
No longer : these in compass, forward fate !

### BOOK THE SIXTH

The thought of Eglamor's least like a thought,  
At the And yet a false one, was, "Man  
close of a shrinks to naught  
day or a If matched with symbols of immens-  
life, ity ;

Must quail, forsooth, before a quiet sky  
Or sea, too little for their quietude : "  
And, truly, somewhat in Sordello's mood  
Confirmed its speciousness, while eve slow sank  
Down the near terrace to the farther bank,  
And only one spot left from out the night  
Glimmered upon the river opposite —  
A breadth of watery heaven like a bay,  
A sky-like space of water, ray for ray,  
And star for star, one richness where they  
mixed

As this and that wing of an angel, fixed,  
Tumultuary splendors folded in  
To die. Nor turned he till Ferrara's din  
(Say, the monotonous speech from a man's lip  
Who lets some first and eager purpose slip  
In a new fancy's birth ; the speech keeps on  
Though elsewhere its informing soul be gone)  
— Aroused him, surely offered succor. Fate  
Paused with this eve ; ere she precipitate  
Herself, — best put off new strange thoughts  
awhile,

That voice, those large hands, that portentous  
smile, —

What help to pierce the future as the past,  
Lay in the plaining city ?

And at last  
The main discovery and prime concern,  
All that just now imported him to learn,  
Truth's self, like yonder slow moon to com-  
plete

Heaven, rose again, and, naked at his feet,  
Lighted his old life's every shift and change,  
Past pro- Effort with counter-effort ; nor the  
cedure is range  
fittest re- Of each looked wrong except wherein  
viewed, it checked

Some other — which of these could he suspect,  
Prying into them by the sudden blaze ?  
The real way seemed made up of all the ways —  
Mood after mood of the one mind in him ;  
Tokens of the existence, bright or dim,  
Of a transcendent all-embracing sense  
Demanding only outward influence,  
A soul, in Palma's phrase, above his soul,  
Power to uplift his power, — such moon's con-  
trol

Over such sea-depths, — and their mass had  
swept

Onward from the beginning and still kept

Its course : but years and years the sky above  
Held none, and so, untasked of any love,  
His sensitiveness idled, now amorn,  
Alive now, and, to sullenness or sport  
Given wholly up, disposed itself anew  
At every passing instigation, grew  
And dwindled at caprice, in foam-showers spilt,  
Wedge-like insisting, quivered now a gilt  
Shield in the sunshine, now a blinding race  
Of whitest ripples o'er the reef — found place  
For much display ; not gathered up and, hurled  
Right from its heart, encompassing the world.  
So had Sordello been, by consequence,  
Without a function : others made pretence  
To strength not half his own, yet had some core  
Within, submitted to some moon, before  
Them still, superior still whate'er their force, —  
Were able therefore to fulfil a course,  
Nor missed life's crown, authentic attribute.  
To each who lives must be a certain fruit  
Of having lived in his degree, — a stage,  
Earlier or later in men's pilgrimage,  
To stop at ; and to this the spirits tend  
Who, still discovering beauty without end,  
Amass the scintillations, make one star  
— Something unlike them, self-sustained,  
afar, —

And meanwhile nurse the dream of being blest  
By winning it to notice and invest  
Their souls with alien glory, some one day  
As more When'er the nucleus, gathering  
apprecia- shape away,  
ble in its Round to the perfect circle — soon  
entirety, or late,

According as themselves are formed to wait ;  
Whether mere human beauty will suffice  
— The yellow hair and the luxurious eyes,  
Or human intellect seem best, or each  
Combine in some ideal form past reach  
On earth, or else some shade of these, some aim,  
Some love, hate even, take their place, the same,  
So to be served — all this they do not lose,  
Waiting for death to live, nor idly choose  
What must be Hell — a progress thus pursued  
Through all existence, still above the food  
That's offered them, still fain to reach beyond  
The widened range, in virtue of their bond  
Of sovereignty. Not that a Palma's Love,  
A Salinguerra's Hate, would equal prove  
To swaying all Sordello : but why doubt  
Strong, he Some love meet for such strength,  
needed some moon without  
external Would match his sea ? — or fear.  
strength : Good manifest,

Only the Best breaks faith ? — Ah, but the Best  
Somehow eludes us ever, still might be  
And is not ! Crave we gems ? No penury  
Of their material round us ! Pliant earth  
And plastic flame — what balks the mage his  
birth

— Jacinth in balls or lodestone by the block ?  
Flinders enrich the strand, veins swell the rock ;  
Naught more ! Seek creatures ? Life's i' the  
tempest, thought

Clothes the keen hill-top, mid-day woods are  
fraught

With fervors : human forms are well enough !  
But we had hoped, encouraged by the stuff

Profuse at nature's pleasure, men beyond  
These actual men! — and thus are over-fond  
In arguing, from Good — the Best, from force  
Divided — force combined, an ocean's course  
From this our sea whose mere intestine pants  
Might seem at times sufficient to our wants.

External power? If none be adequate,  
And he stand forth ordained (a prouder fate)  
Himself a law to his own sphere? — remove  
All incompleteness, for that law, that love?  
Nay, if all other laws be feints, — truth veiled  
Helpfully to weak vision that had failed  
To grasp aught but its special want, — for lure,  
Embodied? Stronger vision could endure  
The unbodied want: no part — the whole of  
truth!

The People were himself; nor, by the ruth  
At their condition, was he less impelled  
Even now, To alter the discrepancy beheld,  
where can Than if, from the sound whole, a  
he per- sickly part  
ceive be  
such? Subtracted were transformed, decked  
out with art.

Then palmed on him as alien woe — the Guelf  
To succor, proud that he forsook himself.

Internal All is himself; all service, therefore,  
strength rates  
must suf- Alike, nor serving one part, immo-  
fice then, lates

The rest: but all in time! "That lance of  
yours

Makes havoc soon with Malek and his Moors,  
That buckler's lined with many a giant's beard,  
Ere long, our champion, be the lance upreared,  
The buckler wielded handsomely as now!  
But view your escort, bear in mind your vow,  
Count the pale tracts of sand to pass ere that,  
And, if you hope we struggle through the flat,  
Put lance and buckler by! Next half-month  
lacks

Mere sturdy exercise of mace and axe  
To cleave this dismal brake of prickly-pear  
Which bristling holds Cydippe by the hair,  
Lames barefoot Agathon: this felled, we 'll  
try

The picturesque achievements by and by —  
Next life!"

    Ay, rally, mock, O People, urge  
Your claims! — for thus he ventured, to the  
verge,  
Push a vain mummery which perchance dis-  
trust

Of his fast-slipping resolution thrust  
Likewise: accordingly the Crowd — (as yet  
He had unconsciously contrived forget,  
I' the whole, to dwell o' the points . . . one  
might assuage

The signal horrors easier than engage  
With a dim vulgar vast unobvious grief  
Not to be fancied off, nor gained relief  
In brilliant fits, cured by a happy quirk,  
But by dim vulgar vast unobvious work  
To correspond . . . — this Crowd then, forth  
they stood.

"And now content thy stronger vision, brood  
On thy bare want; uncovered, turf by turf,  
Study the corpse-face through the taint-worms'  
seurf!"

Down sank the People's Then; up-rose their  
Now

These sad ones render service to! And how  
His sym- Piteously little must that service  
pathy prove  
with the — Had surely proved in any case!  
people, to for, move  
wit;

Each other obstacle away, let youth  
Become aware it had surprised a truth  
'T were service to impart — can truth be seized,  
Settled forthwith, and, of the captive eased,  
Its captor find fresh prey, since this alit  
So happily, no gesture luring it,  
The earnest of a flock to follow? Vain,  
Most vain! a life to spend ere this he chain  
To the poor crowd's complacency: ere the crowd  
Pronounce it captured, he describes a cloud  
Its kin of twice the plume; which he, in turn,  
If he shall live as many lives, may learn  
How to secure: not else. Then Mantua called  
Back to his mind how certain bards were  
thrall'd

— Buds blasted, but of breath more like per-  
fume

Than Naddo's staring nosegay's carrion bloom;  
Some insane rose that burnt heart out in sweets,  
A spendthrift in the spring, no summer greets;  
Some Dularete, drunk with truths and wine,  
Grown bestial, dreaming how become divine.  
Yet to surmount this obstacle, commence  
With the commencement, merits crowning!

Hence  
Must truth be casual truth, elicited  
In sparks so mean, at intervals disspread  
So rarely, that 't is like at no one time  
Of the world's story has not truth, the prime  
Of truth, the very truth which, loosed, had  
hurled

The world's course right, been really in the  
world  
— Content the while with some mean spark by  
dint

Of some chance-blow, the solitary hint  
Of buried fire, which, rip earth's breast, would  
stream  
Sky-ward!

Sordello's miserable gleam  
Was looked for at the moment: he would dash  
This badge, and all it brought, to earth, — abash  
Taurello thus, perhaps persuade him wrest  
The Kaiser from his purpose, — would attest  
His own belief, in any case. Before  
Of which, He dashes it however, think once  
try now more!  
the inher- For, were that little, truly service?  
ent force! "Ay,  
I' the end, no doubt; but meantime? Plain  
you spy

Its ultimate effect, but many flaws  
Of vision blur each intervening cause.  
Were the day's fraction clear as the life's sum  
Of service, Now as filled as teems To-come  
With evidence of good — nor too minute  
A share to vie with evil! No dispute,  
'T were fittest maintain the Guelfs in rule:  
That makes your life's work: but you have to  
school!

Your day's work on these natures circumstanced



Thus variously, which yet, as each advanced  
Or might impede the Guelf rule, must be moved  
Now, for the Then's sake, — hating what you  
loved,

Loving old hatreds! Nor if one man bore  
Brand upon temples while his fellow wore  
The aureole, would it task you to decide:  
But, portioned duly out, the future vied  
Never with the unparcelled present! Smite  
Or spare so much on warrant all so slight?  
The present's complete sympathies to break,  
Aversions bear with, for a future's sake  
So feeble? Tito ruined through one speck,  
The Legate saved by his sole lightish fleck?  
This were work, true, but work performed at  
cost

Of other work; aught gained here, elsewhere  
lost.

For a new segment spoil an orb half-done?  
Rise with the People one step, and sink — one?  
Were it but one step, less than the whole face  
Of things, your novel duty bids erase!  
Harms to abolish! What, the prophet saith,  
The minstrel singeth vainly then? Old faith,  
Old courage, only born because of harms,  
Were not, from highest to the lowest, charms?  
Flame may persist; but is not glare as stanch?  
Where the salt marshes stagnate, crystals  
branch;

Blood tides to crimson; Evil's beautified  
In every shape. Thrust Beauty then aside  
And banish Evil! Wherefore? After all,  
Is Evil a result less natural  
Than Good? For overlook the seasons' strife  
With tree and flower, — the hideous animal life,  
(Of which who seeks shall find a grinning taunt  
How much For his solution, and endure the vaunt  
of man's Of nature's angel, as a child that  
ill may be knows  
removed? Himself befooled, unable to propose  
Aught better than the fooling) — and but care  
For men, for the mere People then and there, —  
In these, could you but see that Good and Ill  
Claimed you alike! Whence rose their claim  
but still

From Ill, as fruit of Ill? What else could knit  
You theirs but Sorrow? Any free from it  
Were also free from you! Whose happiness  
Could be distinguished in this morning's press  
Of miseries? — the fool's who passed a gibe  
'On thee,' jeered he, 'so wedded to thy tribe,  
Thou carriest green and yellow tokens in  
Thy very face that thou art Ghibellin!'  
Much hold on you that fool obtained! Nay  
mount

Yet higher — and upon men's own account  
How much Must evil stay: for, what is joy? —  
of illought to heave  
to be re- Up one obstruction more, and com-  
moved? mon leave

What was peculiar, by such act destroy  
Itself; a partial death is every joy;  
The sensible escape, enfranchisement  
Of a sphere's essence: once the vexed — content,  
The cramped — at large, the growing circle —  
round,

All's to begin again — some novel bound  
To break, some new enlargement to entreat;

The sphere though larger is not more complete.  
Now for Mankind's experience: who alone  
Might style the unobstructed world his own?  
Whom palled Goito with its perfect things?  
Sordello's self: whereas for Mankind springs  
Salvation by each hindrance interposed.  
They climb; life's view is not at once disclosed  
To creatures caught up, on the summit left,  
Heaven plain above them, yet of wings bereft:  
But lower laid, as at the mountain's foot.  
So, range on range, the girdling forests shoot  
Twixt your plain prospect and the throngs who  
scale

Height after height, and pierce mists, veil by  
veil,

Heartened with each discovery; in their soul,  
The Whole they seek by Parts — but, found that  
Whole,

Could they revert, enjoy past gains? The space  
Of time you judge so meagre to embrace  
The Parts were more than plenty, once attained  
The Whole, to quite exhaust it: naught were  
gained

But leave to look — not leave to do: Beneath  
Soon sates the looker — look above, and Death  
Tempt ere a tithe of Life be tasted. Live  
First, and die soon enough, Sordello! Give  
If re- Body and spirit the first right they  
moved, at claim,  
what cost And pasture soul on a voluptuous  
to Sor- shame  
dello?

That you, a pageant-city's denizen,  
Are neither vilely lodged 'midst Lombard men —  
Can force joy out of sorrow, seem to truck  
Bright attributes away for sordid muck,  
Yet manage from that very muck educe  
Gold; then subject nor scruple, to your cruce  
The world's discardings! Though real ingots

pay  
Your pains, the clods that yielded them are  
clay

To all beside, — would clay remain, though  
quenched

Your purging-fire; who's robbed then? Had  
you wrenched

An ampler treasure forth! — As 'tis, they crave  
A share that ruins you and will not save  
Them. Why should sympathy command you  
quit

The course that makes your joy, nor will remit  
Their woe? Would all arrive at joy? Reverse

Men win The order (time instructs you) nor  
little coerce  
thereby; Each unit till, some predetermined  
he loses mode,  
all:

The total be emancipate; men's road  
Is one, men's times of travel many; thwart  
No enterprising soul's precocious start  
Before the general march! If slow or fast  
All straggle up to the same point at last.  
Why grudge your having gained, a month ago,  
The brakes at balm-shed, asphodels in blow,  
While they were landlocked? Speed their Then,  
but how

This badge would suffer you improve your  
Now!"

His time of action for, against, or with  
Our world (I labor to extract the pith

Of this his problem) grew, that even-tide,  
 Gigantic with its power of joy, beside  
 The world's eternity of impotence  
 To profit though at his whole joy's expense.  
 For he can "Make nothing of my day because  
 infinitely so brief?  
 enjoy him- Rather make more: instead of joy,  
 self, use grief  
 Before its novelty have time subside!  
 Wait not for the late savor, leave untried  
 Virtue, the creaming honey-wine, quick squeeze  
 Vice like a biting spirit from the lees  
 Of life! Together let wrath, hatred, lust,  
 All tyrannies in every shape, be thrust  
 Upon this Now, which time may reason out  
 As mischiefs, far from benefits, no doubt;  
 But long ere then Sordello will have slipped  
 Away; you teach him at Goito's crypt,  
 There's a blank issue to that fiery thrill.  
 Stirring, the few cope with the many, still:  
 So much of sand as, quiet, makes a mass  
 Unable to produce three tufts of grass,  
 Shall, troubled by the whirlwind, render void  
 The whole calm glebe's endeavor: be employed!  
 And e'en though somewhat smart the Crowd for  
 this,  
 Contribute each his pang to make your bliss,  
 'Tis but one pang — one blood-drop to the bowl  
 Which brimful tempts the sluggish asp uncowl  
 At last, stains ruddily the dull red cape,  
 And, kindling orbs gray as the unripe grape  
 Before, avails forthwith to disentrance  
 The portent, soon to lead a mystic dance  
 Among you! For, who sits alone in Rome?  
 Have those great hands indeed hewn out a home,  
 And set me there to live? Oh life, life-breath,  
 Life-blood, — ere sleep, come travail, life ere  
 death!  
 This life stream on my soul, direct, oblique,  
 But always streaming! Hindrances? They  
 pique:  
 Helps? such . . . but why repeat, my soul o'er-  
 tops  
 Each height, then every depth profoundlier  
 drops?  
 Enough that I can live, and would live! Wait  
 For some transcendent life reserved by Fate  
 To follow this? Oh, never! Fate, I trust  
 The same, my soul to; for, as who flings dust,  
 Perchance (so facile was the deed) she checked  
 The void with these materials to affect  
 My soul diversely: these consigned anew  
 To naught by death, what marvel if she threw  
 A second and superber spectacle  
 Before me? What may serve for sun, what still  
 Wander a moon above me? What else wind  
 About me like the pleasures left behind,  
 And how shall some new flesh that is not flesh  
 Cling to me? What's new laughter? Soothes  
 the fresh  
 Sleep like sleep? Fate's exhaustless for my sake  
 In brave resource: but whether bids she slake  
 My thirst at this first rivulet, or count  
 No draught worth lip save from some rocky  
 fount  
 Above i' the clouds, while here she's provident  
 Of pure loquacious pearl, the soft tree-tent  
 Guards, with its face of reate and sedge, nor fail

The silver globules and gold-sparkling groll  
 At bottom? Oh, 't were too absurd to slight  
 For the hereafter the to-day's delight!  
 Quench thirst at this, then seek next well-spring:  
 wear  
 Home-lilies ere strange lotus in my hair!  
 Here is the Crowd, whom I with freest heart  
 Offer to serve, contented for my part  
 Freed from To give life up in service, — only  
 a problem- grant  
 That I do serve; if otherwise, why  
 gation, want  
 Aught further of me? If men cannot choose  
 But set aside life, why should I refuse  
 The gift? I take it — I, for one, engage  
 Never to falter through my pilgrimage —  
 Nor end it howling that the stock or stone  
 Were enviable, truly: I, for one,  
 Will praise the world, you style mere anteroom  
 To palace — be it so! shall I assume  
 — My foot the courtly gait, my tongue the trope,  
 My mouth the smirk, before the doors fly open  
 One moment? What? with guardsmen row on  
 row,  
 Gay swarms of varletry that come and go,  
 Pages to dice with, waiting-girls unlaced  
 The packetts of, pert claimants help displace,  
 Heart-heavy suitors get a rank for, — laugh  
 At yon sleek parasite, break his own staff  
 'Cross Beetle-brows the Usher's shoulder, — why,  
 Admitted to the presence by and by,  
 Should thought of having lost these make me  
 grieve  
 Among new joys I reach, for joys I leave?  
 Cool citrine-crystals, fierce pyropus-stone,  
 Are floor-work there! But do I let alone  
 That black-eyed peasant in the vestibule  
 Once and forever? — Floor-work? No such fool!  
 Rather, were heaven to forestall earth, I'd say  
 I, is it, must be blessed? Then, my own way  
 And ac- Bless me! Give firmer arm and  
 cepting fleet foot,  
 life on its I'll thank you: but to no mad wings  
 own terms, transmute  
 These limbs of mine — our greensward was so  
 soft!  
 Nor camp I on the thunder-cloud aloft:  
 We feel the bliss distinctlier, having thus  
 Engines subservient, not mixed up with us.  
 Better move palpably through heaven: nor,  
 freed  
 Of flesh, forsooth, from space to space proceed  
 'Mid flying synods of worlds! No: in heaven's  
 marge  
 Show Titan still, recumbent o'er his targe  
 Solid with stars — the Centaur at his game,  
 Made tremulously out in hoary flame!  
 "Life! Yet the very cup whose extreme dull  
 Dregs, even, I would quaff, was dashed, at full,  
 Aside so oft; the death I fly, revealed  
 So oft a better life this life concealed,  
 And which sage, champion, martyr, through  
 Which, yet, each path  
 others Have hunted fearlessly — the horrid  
 have re- bath,  
 nounced: The crippling-irons and the fiery  
 how? chair.  
 'T was well for them; let me become aware

As they, and I relinquish life, too! Let  
That masters life disclose itself! Forget  
Vain ordinances, I have one appeal —  
I feel, am what I feel, know what I feel;  
So much is truth to me. What Is, then? Since  
One object, viewed diversely, may evince  
Beauty and ugliness — this way attract,  
That way repel, — why gloze upon the fact?  
Why must a single of the sides be right?  
What bids choose this and leave the opposite?  
Where's abstract Right for me? — in youth en-  
dued

With Right still present, still to be pursued,  
Through all the interchange of circles, rife  
Each with its proper law and mode of life,  
Each to be dwelt at ease in: where, to sway  
Absolute with the Kaiser, or obey  
Implicit with his serf of fluttering heart,  
Or, like a sudden thought of God's, to start  
Up, Brutus in the presence, then go shout  
That some should pick the unstrung jewels out —  
Each, well!"

And, as in moments when the past  
Gave partially enfranchisement, he cast  
Himself quite through mere secondary states  
Of his soul's essence, little loves and hates,  
Because Into the mid deep yearnings overlaid  
there is a By these; as who should pierce hill,  
life beyond plain, grove, glade,  
life, And on into the very nucleus probe  
That first determined there exist a globe.  
As that were easiest, half the globe dissolved,  
So seemed Sordello's closing-truth evolved  
By his flesh-half's break up; the sudden swell  
Of his expanding soul showed Ill and Well,  
Sorrow and Joy, Beauty and Ugliness,  
Virtue and Vice, the Larger and the Less,  
All qualities, in fine, recorded here,  
Might be but modes of Time and this one sphere,  
Urgent on these, but not of force to bind  
Eternity, as Time — as Matter — Mind,  
If Mind, Eternity, should choose assert  
Their attributes within a Life: thus girt  
With circumstance, next change beholds them  
cinct

Quite otherwise — with Good and Ill distinct,  
Joys, sorrows, tending to a like result —  
Contrived to render easy, difficult,  
This or the other course of . . . what new bond  
In place of flesh may stop their flight beyond  
Its new sphere, as that course does harm or good  
To its arrangements. Once this understood,  
As suddenly he felt himself alone,  
Quite out of Time and this world: all was  
known.

What made the secret of his past despair?  
— Most imminent when he seemed most aware  
Of his own self-sufficiency; made mad  
By craving to expand the power he had,  
And not new power to be expanded? — just  
This made it; Soul on Matter being thrust,  
Joy comes when so much Soul is wrecked in  
Time

On Matter, — let the Soul's attempt sublime  
Matter beyond the scheme and so prevent  
By more or less that deed's accomplishment,  
And Sorrow follows: Sorrow how avoid?  
Let the employer match the thing employed,

Fit to the finite his infinity,  
And thus proceed forever, in degree  
And with Changed but in kind the same, still  
new condi- limited  
tions of To the appointed circumstance and  
success, dead

To all beyond. A sphere is but a sphere;  
Small, Great, are merely terms we bandy here;  
Since to the spirit's absoluteness all  
Are like. Now, of the present sphere we call  
Life, are conditions; take but this among  
Many; the body was to be so long  
Youthful, no longer: but, since no control  
Tied to that body's purposes his soul,  
She chose to understand the body's trade  
More than the body's self — had fain conveyed  
Her boundless, to the body's bounded lot.  
Hence, the soul permanent, the body not, —  
Scarcely its minute for enjoying here, —  
The soul must needs instruct her weak compeer,  
Run o'er its capabilities and wring

A joy thence, she held worth experiencing:  
Which, far from half discovered even, — lo,  
The minute gone, the body's power let go  
Apportioned to that joy's acquirement! Broke  
Nor such Morning o'er earth, he yearned for  
as, in this, all it woke —  
produce From the volcano's vapor-flag, winds  
failure, hoist

Black o'er the spread of sea, — down to the moist  
Dale's silken barley-spikes sullied with rain,  
Swayed earthwards, heavily to rise again —  
The Small, a sphere as perfect as the Great  
To the soul's absoluteness. Meditate  
Too long on such a morning's cluster-chord  
And the whole music it was framed afford, —  
The chord's might half discovered, what should  
pluck

One string, his finger, was found palsy-struck.  
And then no marvel if the spirit, shown  
A saddest sight — the body lost alone  
Through her officious proffered help, deprived  
Of this and that enjoyment Fate contrived, —  
Virtue, Good, Beauty, each allowed slip hence, —  
Vain gloriously were fain, for recompense,  
To stem the ruin even yet, protract  
The body's term, supply the power it lacked  
From her infinity, compel it learn  
These qualities were only Time's concern,  
And body may, with spirit helping, barred —  
Advance the same, vanquished — obtain reward,  
Reap joy where sorrow was intended grow,  
Of Wrong make Right, and turn Ill Good below.  
And the result is, the poor body soon  
Sinks under what was meant a wondrous boon.  
Leaving its bright accomplice all aghast.

So much was plain then, proper in the past;  
To be complete for, satisfy the whole  
Series of spheres — Eternity, his soul  
Needs must exceed, prove incomplete for, each  
Single sphere — Time. But does our know-  
ledge reach

No farther? Is the cloud of hindrance broke  
But, even But by the failing of the fleshly yoke,  
here, is Its loves and hates, as now when  
failure in- death lets soar  
evitable? Sordello, self-sufficient as before,  
Though during the mere space that shall elapse



'Twixt his enthrallment in new bonds, perhaps?  
Must life be ever just escaped, which should  
Have been enjoyed? — nay, might have been  
and would,

Each purpose ordered right — the soul's no whit  
Beyond the body's purpose under it —  
Like yonder breadth of watery heaven, a bay,  
And that sky-space of water, ray for ray  
And star for star, one richness where they mixed  
As this and that wing of an angel, fixed,  
Tumultuary splendors folded in  
To die — would soul, proportioned thus, begin  
Exciting discontent, or surelier quell  
The body if, aspiring, it rebel?  
But how so order life? Still brutalize  
The soul, the sad world's way, with muffled eyes  
To all that was before, all that shall be  
After this sphere — all and each quality  
Save some sole and immutable Great-Good  
And Beauteous whither fate has loosed its hood

To follow? Never may some soul  
Or may see All  
failure — The Great Before and After, and  
here be the Small  
success  
also Now, yet be saved by this the sim-  
plest lore,

And take the single course prescribed before,  
As the king-bird with ages on his plumes  
Travels to die in his ancestral glooms?  
But where descry the Love that shall select  
That course? Here is a soul whom, to affect,  
Nature has plied with all her means, from trees  
And flowers e'en to the Multitude! — and these,  
Decides he save or no? One word to end!

Ah, my Sordello, I this once befriend  
And speak for you. Of a Power above you still  
Which, utterly incomprehensible,  
Is out of rivalry, which thus you can

Love, though unloving all conceived  
When in- by man —  
love? What need! And of — none the  
minutest duct

To that out-nature, naught that would instruct  
And so let rivalry begin to live —  
But of a Power its representative  
Who, being for authority the same,  
Communication different, should claim  
A course, the first chose but this last revealed —  
This Human clear, as that Divine concealed —  
What utter need!

What has Sordello found?  
Or can his spirit go the mighty round,  
End where poor Eglaamor begun? So, says  
Old fable, the two eagles went two ways  
About the world: where, in the midst, they met,  
Though on a shifting waste of sand, men set  
Jove's temple. Quick, what has Sordello found?

For they approach — approach — that  
Sordello foot's rebound  
knows: Palma? No, Salinguerra though in  
mail;

They mount, have reached the threshold, dash  
the veil

Aside — and you divine who sat there dead,  
Under his foot the badge: still, Palma said,  
A triumph lingering in the wide eyes.  
Wider than some spent swimmer's if he spies  
Help from above in his extreme despair,

And, head far back on shoulder thrust, turns  
there

With short quick passionate cry: as Palma  
pressed

In one great kiss, her lips upon his breast,  
It beat.

By this, the hermit-bee has stopped  
His day's toil at Goito: the new-cropped  
Dead vine-leaf answers, now 't is eve, he bit,  
Twirled so, and filed all day: the mansion's fit,  
God counselled for. As easy guess the word  
That passed betwixt them, and become the  
third

To the soft small unfrighted bee, as tax  
Him with one fault — so, no remembrance

But too racks  
late: an Of the stone maidens and the fount of  
insect stone  
knows He, creeping through the crevice,  
sooner. leaves alone.

Alas, my friend, alas Sordello, whom  
Anon they laid within that old font-tomb,  
And, yet again, alas!

And now is 't worth  
Our while bring back to mind, much less set  
forth

How Salinguerra extricates himself  
Without Sordello? Ghibellin and Guelf  
May fight their fiercest out? If Richard  
sulked

In durance or the Marquis paid his mulet,  
Who cares, Sordello gone? The upshot, sure,  
On his dis- Was peace; our chief made some  
appear- frank overture  
ance from That prospered; compliment fell  
the stage, thick and fast

On its disposer, and Taurello passed  
With foe and friend for an outstripping soul,  
Nine days at least. Then, — fairly reached the  
goal, —

He, by one effort, blotted the great hope  
Out of his mind, nor further tried to cope  
With Este, that mad evening's style, but sent  
Away the Legate and the League, content  
No blame at least the brothers had incurred,  
— Dispatched a message to the Monk, he heard  
Patiently first to last, scarce shivered at,  
Then curled his limbs up on his wolfskin mat  
And ne'er spoke more, — informed the Fer-  
rarese

He but retained their rule so long as these  
Lingered in pupilage, — and last, no mode  
Apparent else of keeping safe the road  
From Germany direct to Lombardy  
For Friedrich, — none, that is, to guarantee  
The faith and promptitude of who should next  
Obtain Sofia's dowry, — sore perplexed —  
(Sofia being youngest of the tribe

The next Of daughters, Ecelin was wont to  
aspirant bribe  
can press The envious magnates with — nor,  
forward; since he sent

Henry of Egna this fair child, had Trent  
Once failed the Kaiser's purposes — "We lost  
Egna last year, and who takes Egna's post —  
Opens the Lombard gate if Friedrich knock?"  
Himself espoused the Lady of the Rock  
In pure necessity, and, so destroyed

His slender last of chances, quite made void  
 Old prophecy, and spite of all the schemes  
 Overt and covert, youth's deeds, age's dreams,  
 Was sucked into Romano. And so hushed  
 He up this evening's work, that, when 't was  
 brushed

Somehow against by a blind chronicle  
 Which, chronicling whatever woe befell  
 Ferrara, noted this the obscure woe  
 Of "Salinguerra's sole son Giacomo  
 Deceased, fatuous and doting, ere his sire,"  
 The townfolk rubbed their eyes, could but  
 admire

Which of Sofia's five was meant.

Of earth's dead hope were tardy to collapse,  
 Obliterated not the beautiful  
 Distinctive features at a crash: but dull  
 And duller these, next year, as Guelfs withdrew  
 Each to his stronghold. Then (securely too  
 Ecelin at Campese slept; close by,  
 Who likes may see him in Solagna lie,  
 With cushioned head and gloved hand to denote  
 The cavalier he was) — then his heart smote  
 Young Ecelin at last; long since adult.  
 And, save Vicenza's business, what result  
 In blood and blaze? (So hard to intercept  
 Sordello till his plain withdrawal!) Stepped  
 Salin- Then its new lord on Lombardy. 'T  
 guerra's the nick  
 part laps- Of time when Ecelin and Alberic  
 ing to Closed with Taurello, come pre-  
 Ecelin, cisely news

That in Verona half the souls refuse  
 Allegiance to the Marquis and the Count —  
 Have cast them from a throne they bid him  
 mount,

Their Podestà, through his ancestral worth,  
 Ecelin flew there, and the town henceforth  
 Was wholly his — Taurello sinking back  
 From temporary station to a track  
 That suited. News received of this acquist,  
 Friedrich did come to Lombardy: who missed  
 Taurello then? Another year: they took  
 Vicenza, left the Marquis scarce a nook  
 For refuge, and, when hundreds two or three  
 Of Guelfs conspired to call themselves "The  
 Free,"

Opposing Alberic, — vile Bassanese, —  
 (Without Sordello!) — Ecelin at ease  
 Slaughtered them so observably, that oft  
 A little Salinguerra looked with soft  
 Blue eyes up, asked his sire the proper age  
 To get appointed his proud uncle's page.  
 More years passed, and that sire had dwindled  
 down

To a mere showy turbulent soldier, grown  
 Better through age, his parts still in repute,  
 Subtle — how else? — but hardly so astute  
 As his contemporaneous friends professed;  
 Undoubtedly a brawler: for the rest,  
 Known by each neighbor, and allowed for, let  
 Keep his incorrigible ways, nor fret  
 Men who would miss their boyhood's bugbear:  
 "trap

The ostrich, suffer our bald osprey flap  
 A battered pinion!" — was the word. In fine,  
 One flap too much and Venice's marine

Was meddled with; no overlooking that!  
 She captured him in his Ferrara, fat  
 And florid at a banquet, more by fraud  
 Than force, to speak the truth; there 's slander  
 land

Ascribed you for assisting eighty years  
 To pull his death on such a man; fate shears  
 The life-cord prompt enough whose last fine  
 thread

You fritter: so, presiding his board-head,  
 The old smile, your assurance all went well  
 With Friedrich (as if he were like to tell!)  
 In rushed (a plan contrived before) our friends,  
 Made some pretence at fighting, some amends  
 For the shame done his eighty years — (apart  
 The principle, none found it in his heart  
 To be much angry with Taurello) — gained  
 Their galleys with the prize, and what remained  
 But carry him to Venice for a show?

— Set him, as 't were, down gently — free to go  
 His gait, inspect our square, pretend observe  
 The swallows soaring their eternal curve  
 "Twixt Theodore and Mark, if citizens  
 Gathered importunately, fives and tens,  
 To point their children the Magnifico,  
 Who, with All but a monarch once in firm-land,  
 his go  
 brother, His gait among them now — "it  
 played it took, indeed,  
 out, Fully this Ecelin to supersede

That man," remarked the seniors. Singular!  
 Sordello's inability to bar  
 Rivals the stage, that evening, mainly brought  
 About by his strange disbelief that aught  
 Was ever to be done, — this thrust the Twain  
 Under Taurello's tutelage, — whom, brain  
 And heart and hand, he forthwith in one rod  
 Indissolubly bound to baffle God  
 Who loves the world — and thus allowed the  
 thin

Gray wizened dwarfish devil Ecelin,  
 And massy-muscled big-boned Alberic  
 (Mere man, alas!) to put his problem quick  
 To demonstration — prove wherever 's will  
 To do, there 's plenty to be done, or ill  
 Or good. Anointed, then, to rend and rip —  
 Kings of the gag and flesh-hook, screw and  
 whip,

They plagued the world: a touch of Hilde-  
 brand

(So far from obsolete!) made Lombards band  
 Together, cross their coats as for Christ's cause,  
 And saving Milan win the world's applause.  
 Ecelin perished: and I think grass grew  
 Never so pleasant as in Valley Rù

And went By San Zenon where Alberic in turn  
 home duly Saw his exasperated captors burn  
 to their Seven children and their mother;  
 reward, then, reigned

So far, tied on to a wild horse, was trailed  
 To death through raunce and bramble-bush. 1  
 take

God's part and testify that 'mid the brake  
 Wild o'er his castle on the pleasant knoll,  
 You hear its one tower left, a belfry, toll —  
 The earthquake spared it last year, laying flat  
 The modern church beneath, — no harm in  
 that!

Chirrup the contumacious grasshopper,  
Rustles the lizard and the cushats chirre  
Above the ravage : there, at deep of day  
A week since, heard I the old Canon say  
He saw with his own eyes a barrow burst  
And Alberic's huge skeleton unheard  
Only five years ago. He added, " June 's  
The month for carding off our first cocoons  
The silkworms fabricate " — a double news,  
Nor he nor I could tell the worthier. Choose !

And Naddo gone, all 's gone ; not Eglamor !  
Believe, I knew the face I waited for,  
A guest my spirit of the golden courts !  
Oh strange to see how, despite ill-reports,  
Disuse, some wear of years, that face retained  
Its joyous look of love ! Suns waxed and  
waned,

And still my spirit held an upward flight,  
Spiral on spiral, gyres of life and light  
More and more gorgeous -- ever that face there  
The last admitted ! crossed, too, with some care  
As perfect triumph were not sure for all,

Good will But, on a few, enduring damp must  
— ill luck, fall,  
get second — A transient struggle, haply a pain-  
prize : ful sense

Of the inferior nature's clinging — whence  
Slight starting tears easily wiped away,  
Fine jealousies soon stifled in the play  
Of irrepressible admiration — not  
Aspiring, all considered, to their lot  
Who ever, just as they prepare ascend  
Spiral on spiral, wish thee well, impend  
Thy frank delight at their exclusive track,  
That upturned fervid face and hair put back !

Is there no more to say ? He of the rhymes —  
Many a tale, of this retreat betimes,  
Was born : Sordello die at once for men ?  
The Chroniclers of Mantua tired their pen  
Telling how *Sordello Prince Visconti* saved  
Mantua, and elsewhere notably behaved —  
Who thus, by fortune ordering events,  
Passed with posterity, to all intents,  
For just the god he never could become.  
As Knight, Bard, Gallant, men were never  
dumb

In praise of him : while what he should have  
been,

Could be, and was not — the one step too mean  
For him to take, — we suffer at this day  
Because of : Ecclin had pushed away  
Its chance ere Dante could arrive and take  
What least That step Sordello spurned, for the  
one may I world's sake :

award He did much — but Sordello's chance  
Sordello ? was gone.

Thus, had Sordello dared that step alone,  
Apollo had been compassed — 't was a fit

He wished should go to him, not he to it  
— As one content to merely be supposed  
Singing or fighting elsewhere, while he dozed  
Really at home — one who was chiefly glad  
To have achieved the few real deeds he had,  
Because that way assured they were not worth  
Doing, so spared from doing them henceforth —  
A tree that covets fruitage and yet tastes  
Never itself, itself. Had he embraced  
Their cause then, men had plucked Hesperian  
fruit

And, praising that, just thrown him in to boot  
All he was anxious to appear, but scarce  
Solicitous to be. A sorry farce  
Such life is, after all ! Cannot I say  
This — that He lived for some one better thing ?  
must per- this way. —  
force con- Lo, on a heathy brown and nameless  
tent him, hill

By sparkling Asolo, in mist and chill,  
Morning just up, higher and higher runs  
A child barefoot and rosy. See ! the sun 's  
On the square castle's inner-court's low wall  
Like the chine of some extinct animal  
Half turned to earth and flowers ; and through  
the haze

(Save where some slender patches of gray  
maize

Are to be overleaped) that boy has crossed  
The whole hill-side of dew and powder-frost  
Matting the balm and mountain camomile.  
Up and up goes he, singing all the while  
Some unintelligible words to beat  
The lark, God's poet, swooning at his feet,  
So worsted is he at " the few fine locks  
Stained like pale honey oozed from topmost  
rocks

Sun-blanchd the livelong summer," — all that 's  
left

Of the Goito lay ! And thus bereft,  
Sleep and forget, Sordello ! In effect  
He sleeps, the feverish poet — I suspect  
As no prize Not utterly companionless ; but,  
at all, has friends,  
contented Wake up ! The ghost's gone, and  
me. the story ends

I'd fain hope, sweetly ; seeing, peri or ghoul,  
That spirits are conjectured fair or foul,  
Evil or good, judicious authors think,  
According as they vanish in a stink  
Or in a perfume. Friends. be frank ! ye snuff  
Civet, I warrant. Really ? Like enough !  
Merely the savor's rareness ; any nose  
May ravage with impunity a rose :  
Rifle a musk-pod and 't will ache like yours !  
I'd tell you that same pungency ensures  
An after-gust, but that were overbold.  
Who would has heard Sordello's story told.



## PIPPA PASSES

## A DRAMA

*Sordello* did not prove commercially successful, and Browning was reluctant to go on publishing his poetry at his father's expense. "One day," Mr. Gosse says, "as the poet was discussing the matter with Mr. Edward Moxon, the publisher, the latter remarked that at that time he was bringing out some editions of the old Elizabethan dramatists in a comparatively cheap form, and that if Mr. Browning would consent to print his poems as pamphlets, using this cheap type, the expense would be very inconsiderable." Browning accepted the suggestion at once and began the issue of a cheap series of pamphlets, each sixteen octavo pages in double column, printed on poor paper and sold first for a sixpence each, the price afterward being raised to a shilling and then to half a crown. The series consisted of eight numbers under the general fanciful title *Bells and Pomegranates*. Apparently the passage in Exodus xxviii. 33, "And beneath upon the hem of it [the priest's robe] thou shalt make pomegranates of blue, and of purple, and of scarlet, round about the hem thereof; and bells of gold between them round about," suggested the title, but as all sorts of speculations sprang up about its significance, Browning appended the following note to the eighth and final number of the series:—

"Here ends my first series of *Bells and Pomegranates*, and I take the opportunity of explaining, in reply to inquiries, that I only meant by that title to indicate an endeavor towards something like an alteration, or mixture, of music with discoursing, sound with sense, poetry with thought; which looks too ambitious, thus expressed, so the symbol was preferred. It is little to the purpose, that such is actually one of the most familiar of the many Rabbinical (and Patristic) acceptations of the phrase; because I confess that, letting authority alone, I suppose the bare words, in such juxtaposition, would sufficiently convey the desired meaning. 'Faith

and good works' is another fancy, for instance, and perhaps no easier to arrive at; yet Giotto placed a pomegranate fruit in the hand of Dante, and Raffaello crowned his Theology (in the *Camera della Segnatura*) with blossoms of the same; as if the Bellari and Vasari would be sure to come after, and explain that it was merely '*simbolo delle buone opere — il qual Pomegranato fu però usato nelle veste del Pontefice appresso gli Ebrei.*'

"R. B."

The first number of *Bells and Pomegranates* contained *Pippa Passes*. It was published in 1841 and was introduced by the following dedicatory preface:—

## ADVERTISEMENT

Two or three years ago I wrote a Play, about which the chief matter I much care to recollect at present is, that a Pitfull of good-natured people applauded it: ever since, I have been desirous of doing something in the same way that should better reward their attention. What follows, I mean for the first of a series of Dramatical Pieces, to come out at intervals; and I amuse myself by fancying that the cheap mode in which they appear, will for once help me to a sort of Pit-audience again. Of course such a work must go on no longer than it is liked; and to provide against a too certain and but too possible contingency, let me hasten to say now — what, if I were sure of success, I would try to say circumstantially enough at the close — that I dedicate my best intentions most admiringly to the Author of *Ion* — most affectionately to Sergeant Talfourd.

ROBERT BROWNING.

The phrases in the closing sentence were afterward used by Browning as a dedication when he discarded the advertisement in the collective editions of his poems.

## PERSONS

PIPPA.  
OTTIMA.  
SEBALD.  
Foreign Students.  
GOTTLIEB.  
SCHRAMM.

JULES.  
PHENE.  
Austrian Police.  
BLUPHOCKS.  
LUGI and his mother.  
Poor Girls.  
MONSIGNOR and his attendants.

INTRODUCTION

NEW YEAR'S DAY AT ASOLO IN THE TREVISAN

*A large mean airy chamber. A girl, PIPPA, from the silk-mills, springing out of bed.*

DAY!

Faster and more fast,  
O'er night's brim, day boils at last :  
Boils, pure gold, o'er the cloud-cup's brim  
Where spurning and suppressed it lay,  
For not a froth-flake touched the rim  
Of yonder gap in the solid gray  
Of the eastern cloud, an hour away ;  
But forth one wavelet, then another, curled,  
Till the whole sunrise, not to be suppressed,  
Rose, reddened, and its seething breast  
Flickered in bounds, grew gold, then overflowed  
the world.

Oh Day, if I squander a wavelet of thee,  
A mite of my twelve-hours' treasure,  
The least of thy gazes or glances,  
(Be they grants thou art bound to or gifts above  
measure)  
One of thy choices or one of thy chances,  
(Be they tasks God imposed thee or freaks at  
thy pleasure)  
— My Day, if I squander such labor or leisure,  
Then shame fall on Asolo, mischief on me !

Thy long blue solemn hours serenely flowing,  
Whence earth, we feel, gets steady help and  
good —

Thy fitful sunshine-minutes, coming, going,  
As if earth turned from work in gamesome  
mood —

All shall be mine ! But thou must treat me not  
As prosperous ones are treated, those who live  
At hand here, and enjoy the higher lot,  
In readiness to take what thou wilt give,  
And free to let alone what thou refusest ;  
For, Day, my holiday, if thou ill-usest  
Me, who am only Pippa, — old-year's sorrow,  
Cast off last night, will come again to-morrow :  
Whereas, if thou prove gentle, I shall borrow  
Sufficient strength of thee for new-year's sorrow.  
All other men and women that this earth  
Belongs to, who all days alike possess,  
Make general plenty cure particular dearth,  
Get more joy one way, if another, less :  
Thou art my single day, God lends to leaven  
What were all other else, with a feel of  
heaven, —

Sole light that helps me through the year, thy  
sun's !

Try now ! Take Asolo's Four Happiest Ones —  
And let thy morning rain on that superb  
Great haughty Ottima ; can rain disturb  
Her Sebald's homage ? All the while thy rain  
Beats fiercest on her shrub-house window-pane  
He will but press the closer, breathe more warm  
Against her cheek ; how should she mind the  
storm ?

And, morning past, if mid-day shed a gloom  
O'er Jules and Phene, — what care bride and  
groom ?

Save for their dear selves ? 'Tis their mar-  
riage-day ;

And while they leave church and go home their  
way,

Hand clasping hand, within each breast would be  
Sunbeams and pleasant weather spite of thee.

Then, for another trial, obscure thy eve  
With mist, — will Luigi and his mother grieve —  
The lady and her child, unmatched, forsooth,  
She in her age, as Luigi in his youth,  
For true content ? The cheerful town, warm,  
close

And safe, the sooner that thou art morose,  
Receives them. And yet once again, outbreak  
In storm at night on Monsignor, they make  
Such stir about, — whom they expect from  
Rome

To visit Asolo, his brothers' home,  
And say here masses proper to release  
A soul from pain, — what storm dares hurt his  
peace ?

Calm would he pray, with his own thoughts to  
ward

Thy thunder off, nor want the angels' guard.  
But Pippa — just one such mischance would  
spoil

Her day that lightens the next twelvemonth's  
toil

At wearisome silk-winding, coil on coil !

And here I let time slip for naught !  
Aha, you foolhardy sunbeam, caught  
With a single splash from my ever !  
You that would mock the best pursuer,  
Was my basin over-deep ?

One splash of water ruins you asleep,  
And up, up, fleet your brilliant bits  
Wheeling and counterwheeling,  
Reeling, broken beyond healing :  
Now grow together on the ceiling !

That will task your wits.  
Whoever it was quenched fire first, hoped to see  
Morsel after morsel flee

As merrily, as giddily . . .  
Meantime, what lights my sunbeam on,  
Where settles by degrees the radiant cripple ?  
Oh, is it surely blown, my martagon ?  
New-blown and ruddy as St. Agnes' nipple,  
Plump as the flesh-bunch on some Turk bird's  
poll !

Be sure if corals, branching 'neath the ripple  
Of ocean, bud there, — fairies watch unroll  
Such turban-flowers ; I say, such lamps disperse  
Thick red flame through that dusk green uni-  
verse !

I am queen of thee, floweret !

And each fleshy blossom

Preserve I not — (safer

Than leaves that embower it,

Or shells that embosom)

— From weevil and chafer ?

Laugh through my pane then ; solicit the bee ;

Gibe him, be sure ; and, in midst of thy glee,

Love thy queen, worship me !

— Worship whom else ? For am I not, this day,  
Whate'er I please ? What shall I please to-day ?  
My morn, noon, eve and night — how spend my  
day ?

To-morrow I must be Pippa who winds silk,  
The whole year round, to earn just bread and milk :

But, this one day, I have leave to go,  
And play out my fancy's fullest games ;  
I may fancy all day — and it shall be so —  
That I taste of the pleasures, am called by the names

Of the Happiest Four in our Asolo !

See ! Up the hillside yonder, through the morning,

Some one shall love me, as the world calls love :  
I am no less than Ottima, take warning !

The gardens, and the great stone house above,  
And other house for shrubs, all glass in front,  
Are mine ; where Sebald steals, as he is wont,  
To court me, while old Luca yet reposes :

And therefore, till the shrub-house door uncloses,

I . . . what now ? — give abundant cause for prate

About me — Ottima, I mean — of late.

Too bold, too confident she 'll still face down  
The spitefullest of talkers in our town.

How we talk in the little town below !

But love, love, love — there's better love, I know !

This foolish love was only day's first offer ;

I choose my next love to defy the scoffer :

For do not our Bride and Bridegroom sally

Out of Possagno church at noon ?

Their house looks over Ocreana valley :

Why should not I be the bride as soon

As Ottima ? For I saw, beside,

Arrive last night that little bride —

Saw, if you call it seeing her, one flash

Of the pale snow-pure cheek and black bright tresses,

Blacker than all except the black eyelash ;

I wonder she contrives those lids no dresses !

— So strict was she, the veil

Should cover close her pale

Pure cheeks — a bride to look at and scarce touch,

Scarce touch, remember, Jules ! For are not such

Used to be tended, flower-like, every feature,

As if one's breath would fray the lily of a creature ?

A soft and easy life these ladies lead :

Whiteness in us were wonderful indeed.

Oh, save that brow its virgin dimness,

Keep that foot its lady primness,

Let those ankles never swerve

From their exquisite reserve,

Yet have to trip along the streets like me,

All but naked to the knee !

How will she ever grant her Jules a bliss

So startling as her real first infant kiss ?

Oh, no — not envy, this !

— Not envy, sure ! — for if you gave me

Leave to take or to refuse,

In earnest, do you think I 'd choose

That sort of new love to enslave me ?

Mine should have lapped me round from the beginning ;

As little fear of losing it as winning :

Lovers grow cold, men learn to hate their wives,  
And only parents' love can last our lives.

At eve the Son and Mother, gentle pair,

Commune inside our turret : what prevents

My being Luigi ? While that mossy lair

Of lizards through the winter-time is stirred

With each to each imparting sweet intents

For this new-year, as brooding bird to bird —

(For I observe of late, the evening walk

Of Luigi and his mother, always ends

Inside our ruined turret, where they talk,

Calmer than lovers, yet more kind than friends)

— Let me be cared about, kept out of harm,

And schemed for, safe in love as with a charm ;

Let me be Luigi ! If I only knew

What was my mother's face — my father, too !

Nay, if you come to that, best love of all

Is God's ; then why not have God's love befall

Myself as, in the palace by the Dome,

Monsignor ? — who to-night will bless the home

Of his dead brother ; and God bless in turn

That heart which beats, those eyes which mildly burn

With love for all men ! I, to-night at least,

Would be that holy and beloved priest.

Now wait ! — even I already seem to share

In God's love : what does New-year's hymn declare ?

What other meaning do these verses bear ?

*All service ranks the same with God :*

*If now, as formerly he trod*

*Paradise, his presence fills*

*Our earth, each only as God wills*

*Can work — God's puppets, best and worst,*

*Are we ; there is no last nor first.*

*Say not "a small event !" Why "small" ?*

*Costs it more pain that this, ye call*

*A "great event," should come to pass,*

*Than that ? Untwine me from the mass*

*Of deeds which make up life, one deed*

*Power shall fall short in or exceed !*

And more of it, and more of it ! — oh yes —

I will pass each, and see their happiness,

And envy none — being just as great, no doubt,

Useful to men, and dear to God, as they !

A pretty thing to care about

So mightily, this single holiday !

But let the sun shine ! Wherefore repine ?

— With thee to lead me, O Day of mine,

Down the grass path gray with dew,

Under the pine-wood, blind with boughs,

Where the swallow never flew

Nor yet cicala dared carouse —

No, dared carouse ! *[She enters the street.]*

## I. MORNING

*Up the Hillside, inside the Shrub-house. LUCA's Wife,  
OTTIMA, and her Paramour, the German SEBALD.*

*Sebald. [sings.] Let the watching lids wink !  
Day's ablaze with eyes, think !  
Deep into the night, drink !*



*Ottima.* Night? Such may be your Rhine-land nights, perhaps;  
But this blood-red beam through the shutter's chink

— We call such light, the morning: let us see!  
Mind how you grope your way, though! How these tall

Naked geraniums straggle! Push the lattice  
Behind that frame! — Nay, do I bid you? —  
Sebald,

It shakes the dust down on me! Why, of course

The slide-bolt catches. Well, are you content,  
Or must I find you something else to spoil?  
Kiss and be friends, my Sebald! Is't full morning?

Oh, don't speak then!

*Seb.* Ay, thus it used to be!  
Ever your house was, I remember, shut  
Till mid-day; I observed that, as I strolled  
On mornings through the vale here; country girls

Were noisy, washing garments in the brook,  
Hinds drove the slow white oxen up the hills:  
But no, your house was mute, would ope no eye!  
And wisely: you were plotting one thing there,  
Nature, another outside. I looked up —  
Rough white wood shutters, rusty iron bars,  
Silent as death, blind in a flood of light.

Oh, I remember! — and the peasants laughed  
And said, "The old man sleeps with the young wife."

This house was his, this chair, this window — his.

*Otti.* Ah, the clear morning! I can see Saint Mark's;

That black streak is the belfry. Stop: Vicenza  
Should lie . . . there's Padua, plain enough,  
that blue!

Look o'er my shoulder, follow my finger!

*Seb.* Morning?  
It seems to me a night with a sun added.  
Where's dew, where's freshness? That bruised plant, I bruised

In getting through the lattice yestereve,  
Droops as it did. See, here 's my elbow's mark  
I' the dust o' the sill.

*Otti.* Oh, shut the lattice, pray!

*Seb.* Let me lean out. I cannot scent blood here,  
Foul as the morn may be.

There, shut the world out!  
How do you feel now, *Ottima*? There, curse  
The world and all outside! Let us throw off  
This mask: how do you bear yourself? Let's out

With all of it!

*Otti.* Best never speak of it.

*Seb.* Best speak again and yet again of it,  
Till words cease to be more than words. "His blood,"

For instance — let those two words mean, "His blood"

And nothing more. Notice, I'll say them now,  
"His blood."

*Otti.* Assuredly if I repented

The deed —

*Seb.* Repent? Who should repent, or why?

What puts that in your head? Did I once say  
That I repented?

*Otti.* No; I said the deed . . .  
*Seb.* "The deed" and "the event" — just  
now it was

"Our passion's fruit" — the devil take such  
cant!

Say, once and always, Luca was a wittol,

I am his cut-throat, you are . . .

*Otti.* Here's the wine;  
I brought it when we left the house above,  
And glasses too — wine of both sorts. Black?  
White then?

*Seb.* But am not I his cut-throat? What  
are you?

*Otti.* There trudges on his business from the  
Duomo

Benet the Capuchin, with his brown hood  
And bare feet; always in one place at church,  
Close under the stone wall by the south entry.  
I used to take him for a brown cold piece  
Of the wall's self, as out of it he rose  
To let me pass — at first, I say, I used:  
Now, so has that dumb figure fastened on me,  
I rather should account the plastered wall  
A piece of him, so chilly does it strike.

This, Sebald?

*Seb.* No, the white wine — the white wine!  
Well, *Ottima*, I promised no new year  
Should rise on us the ancient shameful way;  
Nor does it rise. Pour on! To your black  
eyes!

Do you remember last damned New Year's day?

*Otti.* You brought those foreign prints. We  
looked at them

Over the wine and fruit. I had to scheme  
To get him from the fire. Nothing but saying  
His own set wants the proof-mark, roused him  
up

To hunt them out.

*Seb.* Faith, he is not alive  
To fondle you before my face.

*Otti.* Do you

Fondle me then! Who means to take your life  
For that, my Sebald?

*Seb.* Hark you, *Ottima*!

One thing to guard against. We'll not make  
much

One of the other — that is, not make more  
Parade of warmth, childish officious coil,  
Than yesterday: as if, sweet, I supposed  
Proof upon proof were needed now, now first,  
To show I love you — yes, still love you — love  
you

In spite of Luca and what's come to him  
— Sure sign we had him ever in our thoughts,  
White sneering old reproachful face and all!  
We'll even quarrel, love, at times, as if  
We still could lose each other, were not tied  
By this: conceive you?

*Otti.* Love!

*Seb.* Not tied so sure!  
Because though I was wrought upon, have  
struck

His insolence back into him — am I

So surely yours? — therefore forever yours?

*Otti.* Love, to be wise, (one counsel pays  
another,)

Should we have — months ago, when first we loved,

For instance that May morning we two stole  
Under the green ascent of sycamores —  
If we had come upon a thing like that  
Suddenly . . .

*Seb.* "A thing" — there again — "a thing!"

*Otti.* Then, Venus' body, had we come upon  
My husband Luca Gaddi's murdered corpse  
Within there, at his couch-foot, covered close —  
Would you have pored upon it? Why persist  
In poring now upon it? For 't is here  
As much as there in the deserted house:  
You cannot rid your eyes of it. For me,  
Now he is dead I hate him worse: I hate . . .  
Dare you stay here? I would go back and hold  
His two dead hands, and say, "I hate you worse,  
Luca, than" . . .

*Seb.* Off, off — take your hands off mine,  
'T is the hot evening — off! oh, morning is it?

*Otti.* There's one thing must be done; you  
know what thing.

Come in and help to carry. We may sleep  
Anywhere in the whole wide house to-night.

*Seb.* What would come, think you, if we let  
him lie

Just as he is? Let him lie there until  
The angels take him! He is turned by this  
Off from his face beside, as you will see.

*Otti.* This dusty pane might serve for look-  
ing-glass.

Three, four — four gray hairs! Is it so you said  
A plait of hair should wave across my neck?  
No — this way.

*Seb.* Ottima, I would give your neck,  
Each splendid shoulder, both those breasts of  
yours,

That this were undone! Killing! Kill the  
world,

So Luca lives again! — ay, lives to sputter  
His fulsome dotage on you — yes, and feign  
Surprise that I return at eve to sup,  
When all the morning I was loitering here —  
Bid me dispatch my business and begone.  
I would . . .

*Otti.* See!

*Seb.* No, I'll finish. Do you think  
I fear to speak the bare truth once for all?

All we have talked of, is, at bottom, fine  
To suffer; there's a recompense in guilt;  
One must be venturesome and fortunate:

What is one young for, else? In age we'll sigh  
O'er the wild reckless wicked days flown over;  
Still, we have lived: the vice was in its place.  
But to have eaten Luca's bread, have worn  
His clothes, have felt his money swell my  
purse —

Do lovers in romances sin that way?

Why, I was starving when I used to call  
And teach you music, starving while you  
plucked me

These flowers to smell!

*Otti.* My poor lost friend!

*Seb.* He gave me  
Life, nothing less: what if he did reproach  
My perfidy, and threaten, and do more —  
Had he no right? What was to wonder at?  
He sat by us at table quietly:

Why must you lean across till our cheeks  
touched?

Could he do less than make pretence to strike?  
'T is not the crime's sake — I'd commit ten  
crimes

Greater, to have this crime wiped out, undone!  
And you — O how feel you? Feel you for me?

*Otti.* Well then, I love you better now than  
ever.

And best (look at me while I speak to you) —  
Best for the crime; nor do I grieve, in truth,  
This mask, this simulated ignorance,  
This affectation of simplicity,  
Falls off our crime; this naked crime of ours  
May not now be looked over: look it down!  
Great? let it be great; but the joys it brought,  
Pay they or no its price? Come: they or it!  
Speak not! The past, would you give up the  
past

Such as it is, pleasure and crime together?  
Give up that noon I owned my love for you?

The garden's silence: even the single bee  
Persisting in his toil, suddenly stopped,  
And where he hid you only could surmise  
By some campanula chalice set a-swing,  
Who stammered — "Yes, I love you?"

*Seb.* And I drew  
Back; put far back your face with both my hands  
Lest you should grow too full of me — your face  
So seemed athirst for my whole soul and body!

*Otti.* And when I ventured to receive you  
here,

Made you steal hither in the mornings —

*Seb.* When  
I used to look up 'neath the shrub-house here,  
Till the red fire on its glazed windows spread  
To a yellow haze?

*Otti.* Ah — my sign was, the sun  
Inflamed the sere side of yon chestnut-tree  
Nipped by the first frost.

*Seb.* You would always laugh  
At my wet boots: I had to stride through grass  
Over my ankles.

*Otti.* Then our crowning night!

*Seb.* The July night?

*Otti.* The day of it too, Sebald!  
When heaven's pillars seemed o'erbowed with  
heat,

Its black-blue canopy suffered descend  
Close on us both, to weigh down each to each,  
And smother up all life except our life.

So lay we till the storm came.

*Seb.* How it came!

*Otti.* Buried in woods we lay, you recollect;  
Swift ran the searching tempest overhead;  
And ever and anon some bright white shaft  
Burned through the pine-tree roof, here burned  
and there,

As if God's messenger through the close wood  
screen

Plunged and replunged his weapon at a venture,  
Feeling for guilty thee and me: then broke

The thunder like a whole sea overhead —

*Seb.* Yes!

*Otti.* — While I stretched myself upon you,  
hands  
To hands, my mouth to your hot mouth, and  
shook

All my locks loose, and covered you with them —

You, Sebald, the same you!

Seb. Slower, Ottima!

Otti. And as we lay —

Seb. Less vehemently! Love me!

Forgive me! Take not words, mere words, to heart!

Your breath is worse than wine. Breathe slow, speak slow!

Do not lean on me!

Otti. Sebald, as we lay,

Rising and falling only with our pants,  
Who said, "Let death come now! 'Tis right to die!"

Right to be punished! Naught completes such bliss

But woe!" Who said that?

Seb. How did we ever rise?

Was't that we slept? Why did it end?

Otti. I felt you

Taper into a point the ruffled ends

Of my loose locks 'twixt both your humid lips.

My hair is fallen now: knot it again!

Seb. I kiss you now, dear Ottima, now and now!

This way? Will you forgive me — be once more

My great queen?

Otti. Bind it thrice about my brow;

Crown me your queen, your spirit's arbitress,

Magnificent in sin. Say that!

Seb. I crown you

My great white queen, my spirit's arbitress,

Magnificent . . .

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA singing —

*The year's at the spring*

*And day's at the morn;*

*Morning's at seven;*

*The hillside's dew-pearled;*

*The lark's on the wing;*

*The snail's on the thorn;*

*God's in his heaven —*

*All's right with the world!*

[PIPPA passes.

Seb. God's in his heaven! Do you hear that? Who spoke?

You, you spoke!

Otti. Oh — that little ragged girl!

She must have rested on the step: we give them

But this one holiday the whole year round.

Did you ever see our silk-mills — their inside?

There are ten silk-mills now belong to you.

She stoops to pick my double heartsease . . .

Sh!

She does not hear: call you out louder!

Seb. Leave me!

Go, get your clothes on — dress those shoulders!

Otti. Sebald?

Seb. Wipe off that paint! I hate you.

Otti. Miserable!

Seb. My God, and she is emptied of it now!

Outright now! — how miraculously gone

All of the grace — had she not strange grace once?

Why, the blank cheek hangs listless as it likes,  
No purpose holds the features up together,  
Only the cloven brow and puckered chin  
Stay in their places: and the very hair,  
That seemed to have a sort of life in it,  
Drops, a dead web!

Otti. Speak to me — not of me!

Seb. — That round great full-orbed face,  
where not an angle

Broke the delicious indolence — all broken!

Otti. To me — not of me! Ungrateful, perjured cheat!

A coward too: but ingrate's worse than all!

Beggar — my slave — a fawning, cringing lie!

Leave me! Betray me! I can see your drift!

A lie that walks and eats and drinks!

Seb. My God!

Those morbid olive faultless shoulder-blades —  
I should have known there was no blood beneath!

Otti. You hate me then? You hate me then?

Seb. To think

She would succeed in her absurd attempt,

And fascinate by sinning, show herself

Superior — guilt from its excess superior

To innocence! That little peasant's voice

Has righted all again. Though I be lost,

I know which is the better, never fear,

Of vice or virtue, purity or lust,

Nature or trick! I see what I have done,

Entirely now! Oh I am proud to feel

Such torments — let the world take credit thence —

I, having done my deed, pay too its price!

I hate, hate — curse you! God's in his heaven!

Otti. — Me!

Me! no, no, Sebald, not yourself — kill me!

Mine is the whole crime. Do but kill me — then

Yourself — then — presently — first hear me speak!

I always meant to kill myself — wait, you!

Lean on my breast — not as a breast; don't love me

The more because you lean on me, my own

Heart's Sebald! There, there, both deaths presently!

Seb. My brain is drowned now — quite drowned: all I feel

Is . . . is, at swift-recurring intervals,

A hurry-down within me, as of waters

Loosened to smother up some ghastly pit:

There they go — whirls from a black fiery sea!

Otti. Not me — to him, O God, be merciful!

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing from the hill-side to Orcania. Foreign Students of painting and sculpture, from Venice, assembled opposite the house of JULES, a young French statuary, at Passagno.*

1st Student. Attention! My own post is beneath this window, but the pomegranate clump yonder will hide three or four of you with a little squeezing, and Schramm and his pipe must lie flat in the balcony. Four, five — who's a defaulter? We want everybody, for Jules must not be suffered to hurt his bride when the jest's found out.



2d Stud. All here! Only our poet's away — never having much meant to be present, moonstrike him! The airs of that fellow, that Giovacchino! He was in violent love with himself, and had a fair prospect of thriving in his suit, so unmolested was it, — when suddenly a woman falls in love with him, too; and out of pure jealousy he takes himself off to Trieste, immortal poem and all: whereto is this prophetic epitaph appended already, as Bluphocks assures me, — “*Here a mammoth-poem lies, Fouled to death by butterflies.*” His own fault, the simpleton! Instead of cramp couplets, each like a knife in your entrails, he should write, says Bluphocks, both classically and intelligibly. — *Æsculapius, an Epic. Catalogue of the drugs: Hebe's plaister — One strip Cools your lip. Phæbus' emulsion — One bottle Clears your throat. Mercury's bolus — One box Chres . . .*

3d Stud. Subside, my fine fellow! If the marriage was over by ten o'clock, Jules will certainly be here in a minute with his bride.

2d Stud. Good! — only, so should the poet's muse have been universally acceptable, says Bluphocks, *et canibus nostris . . .* and Delia not better known to our literary dogs than the boy Giovacchino!

1st Stud. To the point, now. Where's Gottlieb, the new-comer? Oh, — listen, Gottlieb, to what has called down this piece of friendly vengeance on Jules, of which we now assemble to witness the winding-up. We are all agreed, all in a tale, observe, when Jules shall burst out on us in a fury by and by: I am spokesman — the verses that are to undeceive Jules bear my name of Lutwyche — but each professes himself alike insultered by this strutting stone-squarer, who came along from Paris to Munich, and thence with a crowd of us to Venice and Possagno here, but proceeds in a day or two alone again — oh, alone indubitably! — to Rome and Florence. He, forsooth, take up his portion with these dissolute, brutalized, heartless bunglers! — so he was heard to call us all. Now, is Schramm brutalized, I should like to know? Am I heartless?

Gottlieb. Why, somewhat heartless; for, suppose Jules a coxcomb as much as you choose, still, for this mere coxcombry, you will have brushed off — what do folks style it? — the bloom of his life. Is it too late to alter? These love-letters now, you call his — I can't laugh at them.

4th Stud. Because you never read the sham letters of our inditing which drew forth these.

Gott. His discovery of the truth will be frightful.

4th Stud. That's the joke. But you should have joined us at the beginning: there's no doubt he loves the girl — loves a model he might hire by the hour!

Gott. See here! “He has been accustomed,” he writes, “to have Canova's women about him, in stone, and the world's women beside him, in flesh; these being as much below, as those above, his soul's aspiration: but now he is to have the reality.” There you laugh

again! I say, you wipe off the very dew of his youth.

1st Stud. Schramm! (Take the pipe out of his mouth, somebody!) Will Jules lose the bloom of his youth?

Schramm. Nothing worth keeping is ever lost in this world: look at a blossom — it drops presently, having done its service and lasted its time; but fruits succeed, and where would be the blossom's place could it continue? As well affirm that your eye is no longer in your body, because its earliest favorite, whatever it may have first loved to look on, is dead and done with — as that any affection is lost to the soul when its first object, whatever happened first to satisfy it, is superseded in due course. Keep but ever looking, whether with the body's eye or the mind's, and you will soon find something to look on! Has a man done wondering at women? — there follow men, dead and alive, to wonder at. Has he done wondering at men? — there's God to wonder at: and the faculty of wonder may be, at the same time, old and tired enough with respect to its first object, and yet young and fresh sufficiently, so far as concerns its novel one. Thus . . .

1st Stud. Put Schramm's pipe into his mouth again! There, you see! Well, this Jules . . . a wretched fribble — oh, I watched his disportings at Possagno, the other day! Canova's gallery — you know: there he marches first resolutely past great works by the dozen without vouchsafing an eye: all at once he stops full at the *Psiche-fanciulla* — cannot pass that old acquaintance without a nod of encouragement — “In your new place, beauty? Then behave yourself as well here as at Munich — I see you!” Next he posts himself deliberately before the unfinished *Pietà* for half an hour without moving, till up he starts of a sudden, and thrusts his very nose into — I say, into — the group; by which gesture you are informed that precisely the sole point he had not fully mastered in Canova's practice was a certain method of using the drill in the articulation of the knee-joint — and that, likewise, has he mastered at length! Good-by, therefore, to poor Canova — whose gallery no longer needs detain his successor Jules, the predestinated novel thinker in marble!

5th Stud. Tell him about the women: go on to the women!

1st Stud. Why, on that matter he could never be supercilious enough. How should we be other (he said) than the poor devils you see, with those debasing habits we cherish? He was not to wallow in that mire, at least: he would wait, and love only at the proper time, and meanwhile put up with the *Psiche-fanciulla*. Now, I happened to hear of a young Greek — real Greek girl at Malamocco; a true Islander, do you see, with Alciphron's “hair like sea-moss” — Schramm knows! — white and quiet as an apparition, and fourteen years old at farthest. — a daughter of Natalia, so she swears — that hag Natalia, who helps us to models at three lire an hour. We selected this girl for the heroine of our jest. So first, Jules received a scented

letter — somebody had seen his Tydeus at the Academy, and my picture was nothing to it : a profound admirer bade him persevere — would make herself known to him ere long. (Paolina, my little friend of the *Fenice*, transcribes divinely.) And in due time, the mysterious correspondent gave certain hints of her peculiar charms — the pale cheeks, the black hair — whatever, in short, had struck us in our Malamocco model : we retained her name, too — Phene, which is, by interpretation, sea-eagle. Now, think of Jules finding himself distinguished from the herd of us by such a creature ! In his very first answer he proposed marrying his monitress : and fancy us over these letters, two, three times a day, to receive and dispatch ! I concocted the main of it : relations were in the way — secrecy must be observed — in fine, would he wed her on trust, and only speak to her when they were indissolubly united ? St — st — Here they come !

6th Stud. Both of them ! Heaven's love, speak softly, speak within yourselves !

5th Stud. Look at the bridegroom ! Half his hair in storm and half in calm, — patted down over the left temple, — like a frothy cup one blows on to cool it : and the same old blouse that he murders the marble in.

2d Stud. Not a rich vest like yours, Hannibal Seratchy ! — rich, that your face may the better set it off.

6th Stud. And the bride ! Yes, sure enough, our Phene ! Should you have known her in her clothes ? How magnificently pale !

Gott. She does not also take it for earnest, I hope ?

1st Stud. Oh, Natalia's concern, that is ! We settle with Natalia.

6th Stud. She does not speak — has evidently let out no word. The only thing is, will she equally remember the rest of her lesson, and repeat correctly all those verses which are to break the secret to Jules ?

Gott. How he gazes on her ! Pity — pity !

1st Stud. They go in : now, silence ! You three, — not nearer the window, mind, than that pomegranate : just where the little girl, who a few minutes ago passed us singing, is seated !

## II. NOON

Over Orcana. The house of JULES, who crosses its threshold with PHENE : she is silent, on which JULES begins —

Do not die, Phene ! I am yours now, you are mine now ; let fate reach me how she likes, If you'll not die : so, never die ! Sit here — My work-room's single seat. I over-lean This length of hair and lustrous front ; they turn

Like an entire flower upward : eyes, lips, last Your chin — no, last your throat turns : 'tis their scent

Pulls down my face upon you. Nay, look ever This one way till I change, grow you — I could Change into you, beloved !

You by me,  
And I by you ; this is your hand in mine,

And side by side we sit : all's true. Thank God !

I have spoken : speak you !

O my life to come !

My Tydeus must be carved that's there in clay ; Yet how be carved, with you about the room ? Where must I place you ? When I think that once

This room-full of rough block-work seemed my heaven

Without you ! Shall I ever work again, Get fairly into my old ways again, Bid each conception stand while, trait by trait, My hand transfers its lineaments to stone ?

Will my mere fancies live near you, their truth —

The live truth, passing and repassing me, Sitting beside me ?

Now speak !

Only first, See, all your letters ! Was't not well contrived ?

Their hiding-place is Psyche's robe ; she keeps Your letters next her skin : which drops out foremost ?

Ah, — this that swam down like a first moon-beam

Into my world !

Again those eyes complete

Their melancholy survey, sweet and slow, Of all my room holds ; to return and rest On me, with pity, yet some wonder too : As if God bade some spirit plague a world, And this were the one moment of surprise And sorrow while she took her station, pausing O'er what she sees, finds good, and must destroy !

What gaze you at ? Those ? Books, I told you of ;

Let your first word to me rejoice them, too :

This minion, a Coluthus, writ in red, Bistre and azure by Bessarion's scribe — Read this line . . . no, shame — Homer's be the Greek

First breathed me from the lips of my Greek girl !

This Odyssey in coarse black vivid type With faded yellow blossoms 'twixt page and page,

To mark great places with due gratitude ;

" He said, and on Antinous directed A bitter shaft " . . . a flower blots out the rest ! Again upon your search ? My statues, then !

— Ah, do not mind that — better that will look When cast in bronze — an Almain Kaiser, that, Swart-green and gold, with truncheon based on hip.

This, rather, turn to ! What, unrecognized ?

I thought you would have seen that here you sit As I imagined you, — Hippolyta,

Naked upon her bright Numidian horse. Recall you this then ? " Carve in bold relief " —

So you commanded — " carve, against I come, A Greek, in Athens, as our fashion was,

Feasting, bay-filleted and thunder-free, Who rises 'neath the lifted myrtle-branch.

' Praise those who slew Hipparchus ! ' cry the

guests,

'While o'er thy head the singer's myrtle waves  
As erst above our champion: stand up, all!'"  
See, I have labored to express your thought.  
Quite round, a cluster of mere hands and arms  
(Thrust in all senses, all ways, from all sides,  
Only consenting at the branch's end  
They strain toward) serves for frame to a sole  
face,

The Praiser's, in the centre: who with eyes  
Sightless, so bend they back to light inside  
His brain where visionary forms throng up,  
Sings, minding not that palpitating arch  
Of hands and arms, nor the quick drip of wine  
From the drenched leaves o'erhead, nor crowns  
cast off,

Violet and parsley crowns to trample on —  
Sings, pausing as the patron-ghosts approve,  
Devoutly their unconquerable hymn.  
But you must say a "well" to that — say  
"well!"

Because you gaze — am I fantastic, sweet?  
Gaze like my very life's-stuff, marble — mar-  
bly

Even to the silence! Why, before I found  
The real flesh Phené, I inured myself  
To see, throughout all nature, varied stuff  
For better nature's birth by means of art:  
With me, each substance tended to one form  
Of beauty — to the human archetype.  
On every side occurred suggestive germs  
Of that — the tree, the flower — or take the  
fruit, —

Some rosy shape, continuing the peach,  
Curved beewise o'er its bough; as rosy limbs,  
Depending, nestled in the leaves; and just  
From a cleft rose-peach the whole Dryad sprang.  
But of the stuffs one can be master of,  
How I divined their capabilities!  
From the soft-rinded smoothening facile chalk  
That yields your outline to the air's embrace,  
Half-softened by a halo's pearly gloom;  
Down to the crisp imperious steel, so sure  
To cut its one confided thought clean out  
Of all the world. But marble! — 'neath my  
tools

More pliable than jelly — as it were  
Some clear primordial creature dug from depths  
In the earth's heart, where itself breeds itself,  
And whence all baser substance may be worked;  
Refine it off to air, you may, — condense it  
Down to the diamond; — is not metal there.  
When o'er the sudden speck my chisel trips?  
— Not flesh, as flake off flake I scale, approach,  
Lay bare those bluish veins of blood asleep?  
Larks flame in no strange windings where, sur-  
prised

By the swift implement sent home at once,  
Flushes and glowings radiate and hover  
About its track?

Phené? what — why is this?  
That whitening cheek, those still dilating eyes!  
Ah, you will die — I knew that you would die!

*PHENÉ begins, on his having long remained silent.*

Now the end's coming; to be sure, it must  
Have ended sometime! Tush, why need I speak  
Their foolish speech? I cannot bring to mind  
One half of it, beside; and do not care

For old Natalia now, nor any of them.

Oh, you — what are you? — if I do not try  
To say the words Natalia made me learn,  
To please your friends, — it is to keep myself  
Where your voice lifted me, by letting that  
Proceed: but can it? Even you, perhaps,  
Cannot take up, now you have once let fall,  
The music's life, and me along with that —  
No, or you would! We'll stay, then, as we are:  
Above the world.

You creature with the eyes!  
If I could look forever up to them,  
As now you let me, — I believe, all sin,  
All memory of wrong done, suffering borne,  
Would drop down, low and lower, to the earth  
Whence all that's low comes, and there touch  
and stay

— Never to overtake the rest of me,  
All that, unspotted, reaches up to you,  
Drawn by those eyes! What rises is myself,  
Not me the shame and suffering; but they sink.  
Are left, I rise above them. Keep me so,  
Above the world!

But you sink, for your eyes  
Are altering — altered! Stay — "I love you,  
love" . . .

I could prevent it if I understood:  
More of your words to me: was't in the tone  
Or the words, your power?

Or stay — I will repeat  
Their speech, if that contents you! Only change  
No more, and I shall find it presently  
Far back here, in the brain yourself filled up.  
Natalia threatened me that harm should follow  
Unless I spoke their lesson to the end,  
But harm to me, I thought she meant, not you.  
Your friends, — Natalia said they were your  
friends

And meant you well, — because, I doubted it,  
Observing (what was very strange to see)  
On every face, so different in all else,  
The same smile girls like me are used to bear,  
But never men, men cannot stoop so low;  
Yet your friends, speaking of you, used that  
smile,

That hateful smirk of boundless self-conceit  
Which seems to take possession of the world  
And make of God a tame confederate,  
Purveyor to their appetites . . . you know!  
But still Natalia said they were your friends,  
And they assented though they smiled the more.  
And all came round me, — that thin Englishman  
With light lank hair seemed leader of the rest;  
He held a paper — "What we want," said he,  
Ending some explanation to his friends —  
"Is something slow, involved and mystical,  
To hold Jules long in doubt, yet take his taste  
And lure him on until, at innermost  
Where he seeks sweetness' soul, he may find  
— this!

— As in the apple's core, the noisome fly:  
For insects on the rind are seen at once,  
And brushed aside as soon, but this is found  
Only when on the lips or loathing tongue."  
And so he read what I have got by heart:  
I'll speak it, — "Do not die, love! I am  
yours" . . .

No — is not that, or like that, part of words



Yourself began by speaking? Strange to lose  
What cost such pains to learn! Is this more  
right?

*I am a painter who cannot paint;  
In my life, a devil rather than saint;  
In my brain, as poor a creature too:  
No end to all I cannot do!  
Yet do one thing at least I can —  
Love a man or hate a man  
Supremely: thus my lore began.  
Through the Valley of Love I went,  
In the loveliest spot to abide,  
And just on the verge where I pitched my tent,  
I found Hate dwelling beside.  
(Let the Bridegroom ask what the painter meant,  
Of his Bride, of the peerless Bride!)  
And further, I traversed Hate's grove,  
In the hatefullest nook to dwell;  
But lo, where I flung myself prone, couched Love  
Where the shadow threefold fell.  
(The meaning — those black bride's-eyes above,  
Not a painter's lip should tell!)*

"And here," said he, "Jules probably will  
ask,  
'You have black eyes, Love, — you are, sure  
enough,  
My peerless bride, — then do you tell indeed  
What needs some explanation! What means  
this?'"  
— And I am to go on, without a word —

*So, I grew wise in Love and Hate,  
From simple that I was of late.  
Once, when I loved, I would enlase  
Breast, eyelids, hands, feet, form and face  
Of her I loved, in one embrace —  
As if by mere love I could love immensely!  
Once, when I hated, I would plunge  
My sword, and wipe with the first lunge  
My foe's whole life out like a sponge —  
As if by mere hate I could hate intensely!  
But now I am wiser, know better the fashion  
How passion seeks aid from its opposite pas-  
sion:*

*And if I see cause to love more, hate more  
Than ever man loved, ever hated before —  
And seek in the Valley of Love  
The nest, or the nook in Hate's Grove  
Where my soul may surely reach  
The essence, naught less, of each,  
The Hate of all Hates, the Love  
Of all Loves, in the Valley or Grove, —  
I find them the very warders  
Each of the other's borders.  
When I love most, Love is disguised  
In Hate; and when Hate is surprised  
In Love, then I hate most: ask  
How Love smiles through Hate's iron casque,  
Hate grins through Love's rose-braided mask, —  
And how, having hated thee,  
I sought long and painfully  
To reach thy heart, nor prick  
The skin but pierce to the quick —  
Ask this, my Jules, and be answered straight  
By thy bride — how the painter Lutwyche can  
hate!*

JULES *interposes.*

Lutwyche! Who else? But all of them, no  
doubt,  
Hated me: they at Venice — presently  
Their turn, however! You I shall not meet:  
If I dreamed, saying this would wake me.

Keep  
What's here, the gold — we cannot meet again,  
Consider! and the money was but meant  
For two years' travel, which is over now,  
All chance or hope or care or need of it.  
This — and what comes from selling these, my  
casts

And books and medals, except . . . let them go  
Together, so the produce keeps you safe  
Out of Natalia's clutches! If by chance  
(For all's chance here) I should survive the gang  
At Venice, root out all fifteen of them,  
We might meet somewhere, since the world is  
wide.

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA, singing —

*Give her but a least excuse to love me!  
When — where —  
How — can this arm establish her above me,  
If fortune fixed her as my lady there,  
There already, to eternally reprove me?  
(“Hist!” — said Kate the Queen;  
But “Oh!” cried the maiden, binding her  
tresses,  
“‘Tis only a page that carols unseen,  
Crumbling your hounds their messes!”)*

*Is she wronged? — To the rescue of her honor,  
My heart!  
Is she poor? — What costs it to be styled a do-  
nor?  
Merely an earth to cleave, a sea to part.  
But that fortune should have thrust all this upon  
her!  
(“Nay, list!” — bade Kate the Queen;  
And still cried the maiden, binding her tresses.  
“‘Tis only a page that carols unseen,  
Fitting your hawks their jesses!”)*

[PIPPA *passes.*

JULES *resumes.*

What name was that the little girl sang forth?  
Kate? The Cornaro, doubtless, who renounced  
The crown of Cyprus to be lady here  
At Asolo, where still her memory stays,  
And peasants sing how once a certain page  
Pined for the grace of her so far above  
His power of doing good to, “Kate the Queen —  
She never could be wronged, be poor,” he  
sighed,

“Need him to help her!”  
Yes, a bitter thing  
To see our lady above all need of us;  
Yet so we look ere we will love; not I,  
But the world looks so. If whoever loves  
Must be, in some sort, god or worshipper,  
The blessing or the blest one, queen or page,  
Why should we always choose the page's part?  
Here is a woman with utter need of me, —  
I find myself queen here, it seems!

How strange!  
Look at the woman here with the new soul.  
Like my own Psyche, — fresh upon her lips

Alit, the visionary butterfly,  
Waiting my word to enter and make bright,  
Or flutter off and leave all blank as first.  
This body had no soul before, but slept  
Or stirred, was beauteous or ungainly, free  
From taint or foul with stain, as outward  
things

Fastened their image on its passiveness :  
Now, it will wake, feel, live — or die again !  
Shall to produce form out of unshaped stuff  
Be Art — and further, to evoke a soul  
From form be nothing ? This new soul is  
mine !

Now, to kill Lutwyche, what would that do ? —  
save

A wretched dauber, men will hoot to death  
Without me, from their hooting. Oh, to hear  
God's voice plain as I heard it first, before  
They broke in with their laughter ! I heard  
them

Henceforth, not God.

To Ancona — Greece — some isle !  
I wanted silence only ; there is clay  
Everywhere. One may do what'er one likes  
In Art : the only thing is, to make sure  
That one does like it — which takes pains to  
know.

Scatter all this, my Phene — this mad dream !  
Who, what is Lutwyche, what Natalia's friends,  
What the whole world except our love — my  
own,

Own Phene ? But I told you, did I not,  
Ere night we travel for your land — some isle  
With the sea's silence on it ? Stand aside —  
I do but break these paltry models up  
To begin Art afresh. Meet Lutwyche, I —  
And save him from my statue meeting him ?  
Some unsuspected isle in the far seas !  
Like a god going through his world, there  
stands

One mountain for a moment in the dusk,  
Whole brotherhoods of cedars on its brow :  
And you are ever by me while I gaze  
— Are in my arms as now — as now — as now !  
Some unsuspected isle in the far seas !  
Some unsuspected isle in far-off seas !

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing from Orcana to the Turret. Two or three of the Austrian Police loitering with BLUPHOCKS, an English vagabond, just in view of the Turret.*

*Bluphocks.*<sup>1</sup> So, that is your Pippa, the little girl who passed us singing ? Well, your Bishop's Intendant's money shall be honestly earned : — now, don't make me that sour face because I bring the Bishop's name into the business ; we know he can have nothing to do with such horrors : we know that he is a saint and all that a bishop should be, who is a great man beside. *Oh were but every worm a maggot, Every fly a grig, Every bough a Christmas fagot, Every tune a jig !* In fact, I have abjured all religions ; but the last I inclined to was the Armenian : for I have travelled, do you see, and at Koenigsberg, Prussia Improper (so

<sup>1</sup> "He maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust."

styled because there 's a sort of bleak hungry sun there), you might remark, over a venerable house-porch, a certain Chaldee inscription ; and brief as it is, a mere glance at it used absolutely to change the mood of every bearded passenger. In they turned, one and all ; the young and lightsome, with no irreverent pause, the aged and decrepit, with a sensible alacrity : 't was the Grand Rabbi's abode, in short. Struck with curiosity, I lost no time in learning Syriac — (these are vowels, you dogs, — follow my stick's end in the mud — *Celarent, Darri, Ferio !*) and one morning presented myself, spelling-book in hand, a, b, c, — I picked it out letter by letter, and what was the purport of this miraculous posy ? Some cherished legend of the past, you'll say — "*How Moses hocus-pocussed Egypt's land with fly and locust,*" — or, "*How to Jonah sounded harshish, Get thee up and go to Tarshish,*" — or "*How the angel meeting Balaam, Straight his ass returned a salaam.*" In no wise ! "*Shackabrack — Boach — somebody or other — Isaach, Re-cei-ver, Pur-cha-ser and Ex-chan-ger of — Stolen Goods !*" So, talk to me of the religion of a bishop ! I have renounced all bishops save Bishop Beveridge ! — mean to live so — and die — *As some Greek dog-sage, dead and merry, Hellward bound in Charon's wherry, With food for both worlds, under and upper, Lupine-seed and Hecate's supper, And never an obolus . . .* (though thanks to you, or this Intendant through you, or this Bishop through his Intendant — I possess a burning pocket-full of *zwan-zigers*) . . . *To pay the Stygian Ferry !*

*1st Policeman.* There is the girl, then ; go and deserve them the moment you have pointed out to us Signor Luigi and his mother. [*To the rest.*] I have been noticing a house yonder, this long while : not a shutter unclosed since morning !

*2d Pol.* Old Luca Gaddi's, that owns the silk-mills here : he dozes by the hour, wakes up, sighs deeply, says he should like to be Prince Metternich, and then dozes again, after having bidden young Sebald, the foreigner, set his wife to playing draughts. Never molest such a household, they mean well.

*Blup.* Only, cannot you tell me something of this little Pippa, I must have to do with ? One could make something of that name. Pippa — that is, short for Felippa — rhyming to *Pamurge consults Hertrippa — Believeest thou, King Agrippa ?* Something might be done with that name.

*2d Pol.* Put into rhyme that your head and a ripe muskmelon would not be dear at half a *zwanziger* ! Leave this fooling, and look out ; the afternoon 's over or nearly so.

*3d Pol.* Where in this passport of Signor Luigi does our Principal instruct you to watch him so narrowly ? There ? What 's there beside a simple signature ? (That English fool 's busy watching.)

*2d Pol.* Flourish all round — "Put all possible obstacles in his way ;" oblong dot at the end — "Detain him till further advices reach you ;" scratch at bottom — "Send him back on pretence of some informality in the above ;"

ink-spirit on righthand side (which is the case here) — "Arrest him at once." Why and wherefore, I don't concern myself, but my instructions amount to this: if Signor Luigi leaves home to-night for Vienna — well and good, the passport deposed with us for our *visa* is really for his own use, they have misinformed the Office, and he means well; but let him stay over to-night — there has been the pretence we suspect, the accounts of his corresponding and holding intelligence with the Carbonari are correct, we arrest him at once, to-morrow comes Venice, and presently Spielberg. Bluphocks makes the signal, sure enough! That is he, entering the turret with his mother, no doubt.

### III. EVENING

*Inside the Turret on the Hill above Asolo. LUIGI and his MOTHER entering.*

*Mother.* If there blew wind, you'd hear a long sigh, easing

The utmost heaviness of music's heart.

*Luigi.* Here in the archway?

*Mother.* Oh no, no — in farther,

Where the echo is made, on the ridge.

*Luigi.* Here surely, then.

How plain the tap of my heel as I leaped up!

Hark — "Lucius Junius!" The very ghost of a voice

Whose body is caught and kept by . . . what are those?

Mere withered wallflowers, waving overhead?

They seem an elvish group with thin bleached hair

That lean out of their topmost fortress — look

And listen, mountain men, to what we say,

Hand under chin of each grave earthy face.

Up and show faces all of you! — "All of you!"

That's the king dwarf with the scarlet comb; old Franz,

Come down and meet your fate? Hark — "Meet your fate!"

*Mother.* Let him not meet it, my Luigi — do not

Go to his City! Putting crime aside,

Half of these ills of Italy are feigned:

Your Pellicos and writers for effect,

Write for effect.

*Luigi.* Hush! Say A writes, and B.

*Mother.* These A's and B's write for effect, I say.

Then, evil is in its nature loud, while good

Is silent; you hear each petty injury,

None of his virtues; he is old beside,

Quiet and kind, and densely stupid. Why

Do A and B kill not him themselves?

*Luigi.* They teach

Others to kill him — me — and, if I fail,

Others to succeed; now, if A tried and failed,

I could not teach that: mine's the lesser task.

*Mother.* They visit night by night . . .

*Mother.* — You, Luigi?

Ah, will you let me tell you what you are?

*Luigi.* Why not? Oh, the one thing you fear to hint,

You may assure yourself I say and say

Ever to myself! At times — nay, even as now

We sit — I think my mind is touched, suspect All is not sound: but is not knowing that, What constitutes one sane or otherwise? I know I am thus — so, all is right again. I laugh at myself as through the town I walk, And see men merry as if no Italy Were suffering; then I ponder — "I am rich, Young, healthy; why should this fact trouble me, More than it troubles these?" But it does trouble.

No, trouble's a bad word: for as I walk There's springing and melody and giddiness, And old quaint turns and passages of my youth, Dreams long forgotten, little in themselves, Return to me — whatever may amuse me: And earth seems in a truce with me, and heaven Accords with me, all things suspend their strife, The very cicala laughs "There goes he, and there!"

Feast him, the time is short; he is on his way For the world's sake: feast him this once, our friend!"

And in return for all this, I can trip Cheerfully up the scaffold-steps. I go This evening, mother!

*Mother.* But mistrust yourself — Mistrust the judgment you pronounce on him!

*Luigi.* Oh, there I feel — am sure that I am right!

*Mother.* Mistrust your judgment then, of the mere means

To this wild enterprise: say, you are right, — How should one in your state e'er bring to pass What would require a cool head, a cool heart, And a calm hand? You never will escape.

*Luigi.* Escape? To even wish that, would spoil all.

The dying is best part of it. Too much Have I enjoyed these fifteen years of mine,

To leave myself excuse for longer life:

Was not life pressed down, running o'er with joy,

That I might finish with it ere my fellows Who, sparerlier feasted, make a longer stay?

I was put at the board-head, helped to all

At first; I rise up happy and content.

God must be glad one loves his world so much.

I can give news of earth to all the dead

Who ask me: — last year's sunsets, and great stars

Which had a right to come first and see ebb The crimson wave that drifts the sun away — Those crescent moons with notched and burning rims

That strengthened into sharp fire, and there stood,

Impatient of the azure — and that day

In March, a double rainbow stopped the storm — May's warm slow yellow moonlit summer nights —

Gone are they, but I have them in my soul!

*Mother.* (He will not go!)

*Luigi.* You smile at me? 'Tis true, —

Voluptuousness, grotesqueness, ghastliness,

Environ my devotedness as quaintly

As round about some antique altar wreath

The rose festoons, goats' horns, and oxen's skulls.



*Mother.* See now : you reach the city, you must  
cross

His threshold — how ?

*Luigi.* Oh, that 's if we conspired !

Then would come pains in plenty, as you guess —

But guess not how the qualities most fit

For such an office, qualities I have,

Would little stead me, otherwise employed,

Yet prove of rarest merit only here.

Every one knows for what his excellence

Will serve, but no one ever will consider

For what his worst defect might serve : and yet

Have you not seen me range our coppice yonder

In search of a distorted ash ? — I find

The wry spoil branch a natural perfect bow.

Fancy the thrice-sage, thrice-precautioned man

Arriving at the palace on my errand !

No, no ! I have a handsome dress packed up —

White satin here, to set off my black hair ;

In I shall march — for you may watch your life

out

Behind thick walls, make friends there to be-

tray you ;

More than one man spoils everything. March

straight —

Only, no clumsy knife to fumble for,

Take the great gate, and walk (not saunter) on

Through guards and guards — I have re-

hearsed it all

Inside the turret here a hundred times.

Don't ask the way of whom you meet, observe !

But where they cluster thickest is the door

Of doors ; they 'll let you pass — they 'll never

blab

Each to the other, he knows not the favorite,

Whence he is bound and what 's his business

now.

Walk in — straight up to him ; you have no

knife :

Be prompt, how should he scream ? Then, out

with you !

Italy, Italy, my Italy !

You 're free, you 're free ! Oh mother, I could

dream

They got about me — Andrea from his exile,

Pier from his dungeon, Gualtier from his grave !

*Mother.* Well, you shall go. Yet seems this

patriotism

The easiest virtue for a selfish man

To acquire : he loves himself — and next, the

world —

If he must love beyond, — but naught between :

As a short-sighted man sees naught midway

His body and the sun above. But you

Are my adored Luigi, ever obedient

To my least wish, and running o'er with love :

I could not call you cruel or unkind.

Once more, your ground for killing him ! — then

go !

*Luigi.* Now do you try me, or make sport of

me ?

How first the Austrians got these provinces . . .

(If that is all, I 'll satisfy you soon)

— Never by conquest but by cunning, for

That treaty whereby . . .

*Mother.* Well ?

*Luigi.* (Sure, he 's arrived,  
The tell-tale cuckoo : spring 's his confidant,

And he lets out her April purposes !)

Or . . . better go at once to modern time.

He has . . . they have . . . in fact, I under-

stand

But can't restate the matter ; that 's my boast :

Others could reason it out to you, and prove

Things they have made me feel.

*Mother.* Why go to-night ?

Morn 's for adventure. Jupiter is now

A morning-star. I cannot hear you, Luigi !

*Luigi.* " I am the bright and morning-star,"  
saith God —

And, " to such an one I give the morning-star."

The gift of the morning-star ! Have I God's gift

Of the morning-star ?

*Mother.* Chiara will love to see

That Jupiter an evening-star next June.

*Luigi.* True, mother. Well for those who  
live through June !

Great noontides, thunder-storms, all glaring  
pumps

That triumph at the heels of June the god

Leading his revel through our leafy world.

Yes, Chiara will be here.

*Mother.* In June : remember,  
Yourself appointed that month for her coming.

*Luigi.* Was that low noise the echo ?

*Mother.* The night-wind.  
She must be grown — with her blue eyes up-

turned

As if life were one long and sweet surprise :

In June she comes.

*Luigi.* We were to see together

The Titian at Treviso. There, again !

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA, singing —

*A king lived long ago,*

*In the morning of the world,*

*When earth was nigher heaven than now ;*

*And the king's locks curled,*

*Disparting o'er a forehead full*

*As the milk-white space 'twixt horn and horn*

*Of some sacrificial bull —*

*Only calm as a babe new-born :*

*For he was got to a sleepy mood,*

*So safe from all decrepitude,*

*Age with its bane, so sure gone by,*

*(The gods so loved him while he dreamed)*

*That, having lived thus long, there seemed*

*No need the king should ever die.*

*Luigi.* No need that sort of king should  
ever die !

*Among the rocks his city was :*

*Before his palace, in the sun,*

*He sat to see his people pass,*

*And judge them every one*

*From its threshold of smooth stone,*

*They haled him many a valley-thief*

*Caught in the sheep-pens, robber-chief*

*Swarthy and shameless, beggar-cheat,*

*Spy-prowler, or rough pirate found*

*On the sea-sand left aground ;*

*And sometimes clung about his feet,*

*With bleeding lip and burning cheek,*

*A woman, bitterest wrong to speak*

*Of one with sullen thickset brows :*

*And sometimes from the prison-house*

*The angry priests a pule wretch brought,  
Who through some chink had pushed and pressed  
On knees and elbows, belly and breast,  
Worm-like into the temple, — caught  
He was by the very god,  
Who ever in the darkness strode  
Backward and forward, keeping watch  
O'er his brazen bowls, such rogues to catch !  
These, all and every one,  
The king judged, sitting in the sun.*

Luigi. That king should still judge sitting in the sun !

*His councillors, on left and right,  
Looked anxious up, — but no surprise  
Disturbed the king's old smiling eyes  
Where the very blue had turned to white.  
'T is said, a Python scared one day  
The breathless city, till he came,  
With forked tongue and eyes on flame,  
Where the old king sat to judge away ;  
But when he saw the sweepy hair  
Girt with a crown of berries rare  
Which the god will hardly give to wear  
To the maiden who singeth, dancing bare  
In the altar-smoke by the pine-torch lights,  
At his wondrous forest rites, —  
Seeing this, he did not dare  
Approach that threshold in the sun,  
Assault the old king smiling there.  
Such grace had kings when the world begun !*

[PIPPA passes.]

Luigi. And such grace have they, now that the world ends !

The Python at the city, on the throne,  
And brave men, God would crown for slaying him,  
Lurk in by-corners lest they fall his prey.  
Are crowns yet to be won in this late time,  
Which weakness makes me hesitate to reach ?  
'T is God's voice calls : how could I stay ?  
Farewell !

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing from the Turret to the Bishop's Brother's House, close to the Duomo S. Maria. Poor GIRLS sitting on the steps.*

1st Girl. There goes a swallow to Venice — the stout seafarer !

Seeing those birds fly, makes one wish for wings.  
Let us all wish ; you, wish first !

2d Girl. I ? This sunset To finish.

3d Girl. That old — somebody I know,  
Grayer and older than my grandfather,  
To give me the same treat he gave last week —  
Feeding me on his knee with fig-peckers,  
Lampreys and red Breganze-wine, and mumbling

The while some folly about how well I fare,  
Let sit and eat my supper quietly :  
Since had he not himself been late this morning  
Detained at — never mind where, — had he not . . .

" Eh, baggage, had I not ! " —

2d Girl. How she can lie !

3d Girl. Look there — by the nails !

2d Girl. What makes your fingers red ?

3d Girl. Dipping them into wine to write bad words with

On the bright table : how he laughed !

1st Girl. My turn. Spring 's come and summer 's coming. I would wear

A long loose gown, down to the feet and hands,  
With plaits here, close about the throat, all day ;  
And all night lie, the cool long nights, in bed ;  
And have new milk to drink, apples to eat,  
Deuzans and junetings, leather-coats . . . ah, I should say,

This is away in the fields — miles !

3d Girl. Say at once

You 'd be at home : she 'd always be at home !

Now comes the story of the farm among  
The cherry orchards, and how April snowed  
White blossoms on her as she ran. Why, fool  
They 've rubbed the chalk-mark out, how tall you were,

Twisted your starling's neck, broken his cage,  
Made a dung-hill of your garden !

1st Girl. They destroy

My garden since I left them ? well — perhaps  
I would have done so : so I hope they have !

A fig-tree curled out of our cottage wall ;  
They called it mine, I have forgotten why,  
It must have been there long ere I was born :

Cric — cric — I think I hear the wasps o'er-head

Pricking the papers strung to flutter there  
And keep off birds in fruit-time — coarse long papers,

And the wasps eat them, prick them through and through.

3d Girl. How her mouth twitches ! Where was I ? — before

She broke in with her wishes and long gowns  
And wasps — would I be such a fool ! — Oh, here !

This is my way : I answer every one  
Who asks me why I make so much of him —  
(If you say, " you love him " — straight " he 'll not be gulled ! ")

" He that seduced me when I was a girl  
Thus high — had eyes like yours, or hair like yours,

Brown, red, white, " — as the case may be : that pleases !

See how that beetle burnishes in the path !  
There sparkles he along the dust : and, there —  
Your journey to that maize-tuft spoiled at least !

1st Girl. When I was young, they said if you killed one

Of those sunshiny beetles, that his friend  
Up there, would shine no more that day nor next.

2d Girl. When you were young ? Nor are you young, that 's true.

How your plump arms, that were, have dropped away !

Why, I can span them. Cecco beats you still ?  
No matter, so you keep your curious hair.  
I wish they 'd find a way to dye our hair  
Your color — any lighter tint, indeed,  
Than black : the men say they are sick of black,  
Black eyes, black hair !

4th Girl. Sick of yours, like enough.

Do you pretend you ever tasted lampreys  
And ortolans ? Giovita, of the palace,

Engaged (but there's no trusting him) to slice me

Polenta with a knife that had cut up An ortolan.

2d Girl. Why, there! Is not that Pippa We are to talk to, under the window, — quick! —

Where the lights are?

1st Girl. That she? No, or she would sing, For the Intendant said . . .

3d Girl. Oh, you sing first! Then, if she listens and comes close . . . I'll tell you, —

Sing that song the young English noble made, Who took you for the purest of the pure, And meant to leave the world for you — what fun!

2d Girl. [Sings.]

*You'll love me yet! — and I can tarry*

*Your love's protracted growing:*

*June reared that bunch of flowers you carry,*  
*From seeds of April's sowing.*

*I plant a heartfull now: some seed*

*At least is sure to strike,*

*And yield — what you'll not pluck indeed,*  
*Not love, but, may be, like.*

*You'll look at least on love's remains,*

*A grave's one violet:*

*Your look? — that pays a thousand pains.*

*What's its death? You'll love me yet!*

3d Girl. [To PIPPA who approaches.] Oh, you may come closer — we shall not eat you! Why, you seem the very person that the great rich handsome Englishman has fallen so violently in love with. I'll tell you all about it.

#### IV. NIGHT

*Inside the Palace by the Duomo. MONSIGNOR, dismissing his Attendants.*

Monsignor. Thanks, friends, many thanks! I chiefly desire life now, that I may recompense every one of you. Most I know something of already. What, a repast prepared? *Benedicto benedicatur* . . . ugh, ugh! Where was I? Oh, as you were remarking, Ugo, the weather is mild, very unlike winter-weather: but I am a Sicilian, you know, and shiver in your Julys here. To be sure, when 't was full summer at Messina, as we priests used to cross in procession the great square on Assumption Day, you might see our thickest yellow tapers twist suddenly in two, each like a falling star, or sink down on themselves in a pore of wax. But go, my friends, but go! [To the Intendant.] Not you, Ugo! [The others leave the apartment.] I have long wanted to converse with you, Ugo.

Intendant. Uguccio —

Mon. . . . 'guccio Stefani, man! of Aseoli, Fermo and Fossombruno; — what I do need instructing about, are these accounts of your administration of my poor brother's affairs. Ugh! I shall never get through a third part of your accounts; take some of these dainties before we

attempt it, however. Are you bashful to that degree? For me, a crust and water suffice.

Inten. Do you choose this especial night to question me?

Mon. This night, Ugo. You have managed my late brother's affairs since the death of our elder brother: fourteen years and a month, all but three days. On the Third of December, I find him . . .

Inten. If you have so intimate an acquaintance with your brother's affairs, you will be tender of turning so far back: they will hardly bear looking into, so far back.

Mon. Ay, ay, ugh, ugh, — nothing but disappointments here below! I remark a considerable payment made to yourself on this Third of December. Talk of disappointments! There was a young fellow here, Jules, a foreign sculptor I did my utmost to advance, that the Church might be a gainer by us both: he was going on hopefully enough, and of a sudden he notifies to me some marvellous change that has happened in his notions of Art. Here's his letter, — "He never had a clearly conceived Ideal within his brain till to-day. Yet since his hand could manage a chisel, he has practised expressing other men's Ideals; and, in the very perfection he has attained to, he foresees an ultimate failure: his unconscious hand will pursue its prescribed course of old years, and will reproduce with a fatal expertness the ancient types, let the novel one appear never so palpably to his spirit. There is but one method of escape: confiding the virgin type to as chaste a hand, he will turn painter instead of sculptor, and paint, not carve, its characteristics," — strike out, I dare say, a school like Correggio: how think you, Ugo?

Inten. Is Correggio a painter?

Mon. Foolish Jules! and yet, after all, why foolish? He may — probably will — fail egregiously; but if there should arise a new painter, will it not be in some such way, by a poet now, or a musician (spirits who have conceived and perfected an Ideal through some other channel), transferring it to this, and escaping our conventional roads by pure ignorance of them; eh, Ugo? If you have no appetite, talk at least, Ugo!

Inten. Sir, I can submit no longer to this course of yours. First, you select the group of which I formed one, — next you thin it gradually, — always retaining me with your smile, — and so do you proceed till you have fairly got me alone with you between four stone walls. And now then? Let this farce, this chatter end now: what is it you want with me?

Mon. Ugo!

Inten. From the instant you arrived, I felt your smile on me as you questioned me about this and the other article in those papers — why your brother should have given me this villa, that *podere*, — and your nod at the end meant, — what?

Mon. Possibly that I wished for no loud talk here. If once you set me coughing, Ugo! —

Inten. I have your brother's hand and seal to all I possess: now ask me what for! what service I did him — ask me!



*Mon.* I would better not: I should rip up old disgraces, let out my poor brother's weaknesses. By the way, Maffeo of Forli, (which, I forgot to observe, is your true name,) was the interdict ever taken off you for robbing that church at Cesena?

*Inten.* No, nor needs be: for when I murdered your brother's friend, Pasquale, for him . . .

*Mon.* Ah, he employed you in that business, did he? Well, I must let you keep, as you say, this villa and that *podere*, for fear the world should find out my relations were of so indifferent a stamp? Maffeo, my family is the oldest in Messina, and century after century have my progenitors gone on polluting themselves with every wickedness under heaven: my own father . . . rest his soul!—I have, I know, a chapel to support that it may rest: my dear two dead brothers were,—what you know tolerably well; I, the youngest, might have rivalled them in vice, if not in wealth: but from my boyhood I came out from among them, and so am not partaker of their plagues. My glory springs from another source; or if from this, by contrast only,—for I, the bishop, am the brother of your employers, Ugo. I hope to repair some of their wrong, however; so far as my brother's ill-gotten treasure reverts to me, I can stop the consequences of his crime: and not one *soldo* shall escape me. Maffeo, the sword we quiet men spurn away, you shrewd knaves pick up and commit murders with; what opportunities the virtuous forego, the villanous seize. Because, to pleasure myself apart from other considerations, my food would be millet-cake, my dress sackcloth, and my couch straw,—am I therefore to let you, the off-scouring of the earth, seduce the poor and ignorant by appropriating a pomp these will be sure to think lessens the abominations so unaccountably and exclusively associated with it? Must I let villas and *poderi* go to you, a murderer and thief, that you may beget by means of them other murderers and thieves? No—if my cough would but allow me to speak!

*Inten.* What am I to expect? You are going to punish me?

*Mon.* Must punish you, Maffeo. I cannot afford to cast away a chance. I have whole centuries of sin to redeem, and only a month or two of life to do it in. How should I dare to say . . .

*Inten.* "Forgive us our trespasses"?

*Mon.* My friend, it is because I avow myself a very worm, sinful beyond measure, that I reject a line of conduct you would applaud perhaps. Shall I proceed, as it were, a-pardoning?—I?—who have no symptom of reason to assume that aught less than my strenuous efforts will keep myself out of mortal sin, much less keep others out. No: I do trespass, but will not double that by allowing you to trespass.

*Inten.* And suppose the villas are not your brother's to give, nor yours to take? Oh, you are hasty enough just now!

*Mon.* 1, 2—No 3!—ay, can you read the substance of a letter, No 3, I have received

from Rome? It is precisely on the ground there mentioned, of the suspicion I have that a certain child of my late elder brother, who would have succeeded to his estates, was murdered in infancy by you, Maffeo, at the instigation of my late younger brother—that the Pontiff enjoins on me not merely the bringing that Maffeo to condign punishment, but the taking all pains, as guardian of the infant's heritage for the Church, to recover it parcel by parcel, howsoever, whensoever, and wheresoever. While you are now gnawing those fingers, the police are engaged in sealing up your papers, Maffeo, and the mere raising my voice brings my people from the next room to dispose of yourself. But I want you to confess quietly, and save me raising my voice. Why, man, do I not know the old story? The heir between the succeeding heir, and this heir's ruffianly instrument, and their complot's effect, and the life of fear and bribes and ominous smiling silence? Did you throttle or stab my brother's infant? Come now!

*Inten.* So old a story, and tell it no better? When did such an instrument ever produce such an effect? Either the child smiles in his face; or, most likely, he is not fool enough to put himself in the employer's power so thoroughly: the child is always ready to produce—as you say—howsoever, wheresoever, and whensoever.

*Mon.* Liar!

*Inten.* Strike me? Ah, so might a father chastise! I shall sleep soundly to-night at least, though the gallows await me to-morrow; for what a life did I lead! Carlo of Cesena reminds me of his connivance, every time I pay his annuity; which happens commonly thrice a year. If I remonstrate, he will confess all to the good bishop—you!

*Mon.* I see through the trick, caittiff! I would you spoke truth for once. All shall be sifted, however—seven times sifted.

*Inten.* And how my absurd riches encumbered me! I dared not lay claim to above half my possessions. Let me but once unbosom myself, glorify Heaven, and die!

Sir, you are no brutal dastardly idiot like your brother I frightened to death: let us understand one another. Sir, I will make away with her for you—the girl—here close at hand; not the stupid obvious kind of killing; do not speak—know nothing of her nor of me! I see her every day—saw her this morning: of course there is to be no killing; but at Rome the courtesans perish off every three years, and I can entice her thither—have indeed begun operations already. There's a certain lusty blue-eyed florid-complexioned English knave, I and the Police employ occasionally. You assent, I perceive—no, that's not it—assent I do not say—but you will let me convert my present havings and holdings into cash, and give me time to cross the Alps? 'Tis but a little black-eyed pretty singing Felippa, gay silk-winding girl. I have kept her out of harm's way up to this present; for I always intended to make your life a plague to

you with her. 'Tis as well settled once and forever. Some women I have procured will pass Bluphocks, my handsome scoundrel, off for somebody; and once Pippa entangled!—you conceive? Through her singing? Is it a bargain?

[*From without is heard the voice of PIPPA, singing —*

*Overhead the tree-tops meet,  
Flowers and grass spring 'neath one's feet;  
There was naught above me, naught below,  
My childhood had not learned to know:  
For, what are the voices of birds  
— Ay, and of beasts, — but words, our words,  
Only so much more sweet?  
The knowledge of that with my life begun.  
But I had so near made out the sun,  
And counted your stars, the seven and one,  
Like the fingers of my hand:  
Nay, I could all but understand  
Wherefore through heaven the white moon ranges;  
And just when out of her soft fifty changes  
No unfamiliar face might overlook me —  
Suddenly God took me.*

[*PIPPA passes.*

*Mon.* [*Springing up.*] My people — one and all — all — within there! Gag this villain — tie him hand and foot! He dares . . . I know not half he dares — but remove him — quick! *Miserere mei, Domine!* Quick, I say!

*PIPPA'S Chamber again. She enters it.*

The bee with his comb,  
The mouse at her dray,  
The grub in his tomb,  
While winter away;  
But the fire-fly and hedge-shrew and lob-worm,  
I pray,

How fare they?  
Ha, ha, thanks for your counsel, my Zanze!  
"Feast upon lampreys, quaff Breganze" —  
The summer of life so easy to spend,  
And care for to-morrow so soon put away!  
But winter hastens at summer's end,  
And fire-fly, hedge-shrew, lob-worm, pray,  
How fare they?

No bidding me then to . . . what did Zanze say?  
"Pare your nails pearlwise, get your small feet shoes

More like" . . . (what said she?) — "and less like canoes!"

How pert that girl was! — would I be those pert impudent staring women! It had done me, However, surely no such mighty hurt To learn his name who passed that jest upon me:

No foreigner, that I can recollect,  
Came, as she says, a month since, to inspect  
Our silk-mills — none with blue eyes and thick rings

Of raw-silk-colored hair, at all events.  
Well, if old Luca keep his good intents,  
We shall do better, see what next year brings!  
I may buy shoes, my Zanze, not appear  
More destitute than you perhaps next year!  
Bluph . . . something! I had caught the uncouth name

But for Monsignor's people's sudden clatter  
Above us — bound to spoil such idle chatter  
As ours: it were indeed a serious matter  
If silly talk like ours should put to shame  
The pious man, the man devoid of blame,  
The . . . ah but — ah but, all the same,  
No mere mortal has a right  
To carry that exalted air;  
Best people are not angels quite:  
While — not the worst of people's doings scare  
The devil; so there 's that proud look to spare!

Which is mere counsel to myself, mind! for  
I have just been the holy Monsignor:  
And I was you too, Luigi's gentle mother,  
And you too, Luigi! — how that Luigi started  
Out of the turret — doubtlessly departed  
On some good errand or another,  
For he passed just now in a traveller's trim,  
And the sullen company that prowled  
About his path, I noticed, scowled  
As if they had lost a prey in him.  
And I was Jules the sculptor's bride,  
And I was Ottima beside,  
And now what am I? — tired of fooling.  
Day for folly, night for schooling!  
New year's day is over and spent,  
Ill or well, I must be content.

Even my lily's asleep, I vow:  
Wake up — here's a friend I've plucked you!  
Call this flower a heart's-ease now!  
Something rare, let me instruct you,  
Is this, with petals triply swollen,  
Three times spotted, thrice the pollen;  
While the leaves and parts that witness  
Old proportions and their fitness,  
Here remain unchanged, unmoved now;  
Call this pampered thing improved now!  
Suppose there's a king of the flowers  
And a girl-show held in his bowers —  
"Look ye, buds, this growth of ours,"  
Says he, "Zanze from the Brenta,  
I have made her gorge polenta  
Till both cheeks are near as bouncing  
As her . . . name there's no pronouncing!  
See this heightened color too,  
For she swilled Breganze wine  
Till her nose turned deep carmine;  
'T was but white when wild she grew.  
And only by this Zanze's eyes  
Of which we could not achieve the size,  
The magnitude of all achieved  
Otherwise, may be perceived."

Oh what a drear dark close to my poor day!  
How could that red sun drop in that black cloud?

Ah Pippa, morning's rule is moved away,  
Dispensed with, never more to be allowed!  
Day's turn is over, now arrives the night's.  
Oh lark, be day's apostle  
To mavis, merle and thrustle,  
Bid them their betters jostle  
From day and its delights!  
But at night, brother owlet, over the woods,  
Toll the world to thy chantry;  
Sing to the bats' sleek sisterhoods  
Full complines with gallantry:  
Then, owls and bats,

Cows and twats,  
Monks and nuns, in a cloister's moods,  
Adjourn to the oak-stump pantry!

[*After she has begun to undress herself.*]

Now, one thing I should like to really know:  
How near I ever might approach all these  
I only fancied being, this long day:  
— Approach, I mean, so as to touch them, so  
As to . . . in some way . . . move them — if  
you please,

Do good or evil to them some slight way.

For instance, if I wind

Silk to-morrow, my silk may bind

[*Sitting on the bedside.*]

And border Ottima's cloak's hem.

Ah me, and my important part with them.

This morning's hymn half promised when I  
rose!

True in some sense or other, I suppose.

[*As she lies down.*]

God bless me! I can pray no more to-night.

No doubt, some way or other, hymns say  
right.

*All service ranks the same with God —*

*With God, whose puppets, best and worst,*

*Are we; there is no last nor first.*

[*She sleeps.*]

## KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES

### A TRAGEDY

THIS was No. II. of *Bells and Pomegranates* and was issued in 1842, though it appears to have been written before the publication of *Pippa Passes*. The following is the advertisement prefixed to the tragedy when first published and always afterward retained.

"So far as I know, this tragedy is the first artistic consequence of what Voltaire termed 'a terrible event without consequences;' and although it professes to be historical, I have taken more pains to arrive at the history than most readers would thank me for particularizing: since acquainted, as I will hope them to be, with the chief circumstances of Victor's remarkable European career — nor quite ignorant of the sad and surprising facts I am about to reproduce (a tolerable account of which is to be found, for instance, in Abbe Roman's *Récit*, or even the fifth of Lord Orrery's Letters from Italy) — I cannot expect them to be versed, nor desirous

of becoming so, in all the detail of the memoirs, correspondence, and relations of the time. From these only may be obtained a knowledge of the fiery and audacious temper, unscrupulous selfishness, profound dissimulation, and singular fertility in resources, of Victor — the extreme and painful sensibility, prolonged immaturity of powers, earnest good purpose and vacillating will of Charles — the noble and right woman's manliness of his wife — and the ill-considered rascality and subsequent better-advised rectitude of D'Ormea. When I say, therefore, that I cannot but believe my statement (combining as it does what appears correct in Voltaire and plausible in Condorcet) more true to person and thing than any it has hitherto been my fortune to meet with, no doubt my word will be taken, and my evidence spared as readily.

R. B."

LONDON, 1842.

#### PERSONS

VICTOR AMADEUS, first King of Sardinia.

CHARLES EMANUEL, his son, Prince of Piedmont.

POLYXENA, wife of Charles.

D'ORMEA, minister.

FIRST YEAR, 1730. — KING VICTOR

#### PART I

SCENE. — *The Council Chamber of Rivoli Palace, near Turin, communicating with a Hall at the back, an Apartment to the left, and another to the right of the stage.*

TIME, 1730-31.

CHARLES, POLYXENA.

Charles. You think so? Well, I do not.

*Polyxena.*

My beloved,

All must clear up; we shall be happy yet:

This cannot last forever — oh, may change

To-day or any day!

*Cha.*

— May change? Ah yes —

May change!

*Pol.*

Endure it, then.

*Cha.*

No doubt a life  
Like this drags on, now better and now worse.

My father may . . . may take to loving me;

And he may take D'Ormea closer yet

To counsel him; — may even cast off her

— That bad Sebastian; but he also may

. . . Or no, Polyxena, my only friend,

He may not force you from me?

*Pol.*

Now, force me



From you!—me, close by you as if there gloomed

No Sebastians, no D'Ormeas on our path —  
At Rivoli or Turin, still at hand,  
Arch-counsellor, prime confidant . . . force me!

*Cha.* Because I felt as sure, as I feel sure  
We clasp hands now, of being happy once.  
Young was I, quite neglected, nor concerned  
By the world's business that engrossed so much  
My father and my brother: if I peered  
From out my privacy, — amid the crash  
And blaze of nations, domineered those two.  
'T was war, peace — France our foe, now —  
England, friend —

In love with Spain — at feud with Austria!  
Well —

I wondered, laughed a moment's laugh for pride  
In the chivalrous couple, then let drop  
My curtain — "I am out of it," I said —  
When . . .

*Pol.* You have told me, Charles.

*Cha.* Polyxena —  
When suddenly, — a warm March day, just that!

Just so much sunshine as the cottage child  
Basks in delighted, while the cottager  
Takes off his bonnet, as he ceases work,  
To catch the more of it — and it must fall  
Heavily on my brother! Had you seen  
Philip — the lion-featured! not like me!

*Pol.* I know —

*Cha.* And Philip's mouth yet fast to mine,  
His dead cheek on my cheek, his arm still round

My neck, — they bade me rise, "for I was heir  
To the Duke," they said, "the right hand of  
the Duke."

Till then he was my father, not the Duke.  
So . . . let me finish . . . the whole intricate  
World's-business their dead boy was born to, I  
Must conquer, — ay, the brilliant thing he was  
I of a sudden must be: my faults, my follies,  
— All bitter truths were told me, all at once,  
To end the sooner. What I simply styled  
Their overlooking me, had been contempt:  
How should the Duke employ himself, forsooth,  
With such an one, while lordly Philip rode  
By him their Turin through? But he was  
punished,  
And must put up with — me! 'T was sad  
enough

To learn my future portion and submit.  
And then the wear and worry, blame on blame!  
For, spring-sounds in my ears, spring-smells  
about.

How could I but grow dizzy in their pent  
Dim palace-rooms at first? My mother's look  
As they discussed my insignificance,  
She and my father, and I sitting by, —  
I bore; I knew how brave a son they missed;  
Philip had gayly run state-papers through,  
While Charles was spelling at them painfully!  
But Victor was my father spite of that.  
"Duke Victor's entire life has been," I said,  
"Innumerable efforts to one end;  
And on the point now of that end's success,  
Our Ducal turning to a Kingly crown,

Where's time to be reminded 't is his child  
He spurns?" And so I suffered — scarcely  
suffered,  
Since I had you at length!

*Pol.* To serve in place  
Of monarch, minister and mistress, Charles!

*Cha.* But, once that crown obtained, then  
was 't not like

Our lot would alter? "When he rests, takes  
breath,

Glances around, sees who there's left to love —  
Now that my mother's dead, sees I am left —  
Is it not like he'll love me at the last?"

Well, Savoy turns Sardinia; the Duke's King:  
Could I — precisely then — could you expect  
His harshness to redouble? These few months  
Have been . . . have been . . . Polyxena, do you  
And God conduct me, or I lose myself!  
What would he have? What is 't they want  
with me?

Him with this mistress and this minister,  
— You see me and you hear him; judge us  
both!

Pronounce what I should do, Polyxena!

*Pol.* Endure, endure, beloved! Say you  
not

He is your father? All's so incident  
To novel sway! Beside, our life must change:  
Or you'll acquire his kingcraft, or he'll find  
Harshness a sorry way of teaching it.  
I bear this — not that there's so much to bear.

*Cha.* You bear? Do not I know that you,  
though bound

To silence for my sake, are perishing  
Piecemeal beside me? And how otherwise  
When every creephole from the hideous Court  
Is stopped; the Minister to dog me, here —  
The Mistress posted to entrap you, there!  
And thus shall we grow old in such a life;  
Not careless, never estranged, — but old: to  
alter

Our life, there is so much to alter!

*Pol.* Come —

Is it agreed that we forego complaint  
Even at Turin, yet complain we here  
At Rivoli? 'T were wiser you announced  
Our presence to the King. What's now afoot  
I wonder? Not that any more 's to dread  
Than every day's embarrassment: but guess  
For me, why train so fast succeeded train  
On the high-road, each gayer still than each!  
I noticed your Archbishop's pursuivant,  
The sable cloak and silver cross; such pomp  
Bodes . . . what now, Charles? Can you con-  
ceive?

*Cha.* Not I.

*Pol.* A matter of some moment —

*Cha.* There's our life!

Which of the group of loiterers that stare  
From the lime-avenue, divines that I —  
About to figure presently, he thinks,  
In face of all assembled — am the one  
Who knows precisely least about it?

*Pol.* Tush!

D'Ormea's contrivance!

*Cha.* Ay, how otherwise  
Should the young Prince serve for the old King's  
foil?

— So that the simplest courtier may remark  
 'T were idle raising parties for a Prince  
 Content to linger the court's laughing-stock.  
 Something, 't is like, about that weary business  
*[Pointing to papers he has laid down, and which*  
*POLYXENA examines.*

— Not that I comprehend three words, of course,  
 After last night's study.

*Pol.* The faint heart!  
 Why, as we rode and you rehearsed just now  
 Its substance . . . (that's the folded speech I  
 mean,

Concerning the Reduction of the Fiefs)  
 — What would you have? — I fancied while  
 you spoke,

Some tones were just your father's.

*Cha.* Flattery!  
*Pol.* I fancied so: — and here lurks, sure  
 enough,

My note upon the Spanish Claims! You've  
 mastered

The fief-speech thoroughly: this other, mind,  
 Is an opinion you deliver, — stay,  
 Best read it slowly over once to me;

Read — there's bare time; you read it firmly —  
 loud

— Rather loud, looking in his face, — don't sink  
 Your eye once — ay, thus! "If Spain claims"  
 . . . begin

— Just as you look at me!

*Cha.* At you! Oh truly,  
 You have I seen, say, marshalling your troops,  
 Dismissing councils, or, through doors ajar,  
 Head sunk on hand, devoured by slow chagrins  
 — Then radiant, for a crown had all at once  
 Seemed possible again! I can behold  
 Him, whose least whisper ties my spirit fast,  
 In this sweet brow, naught could divert me from  
 Save objects like Sebastian's shameless lip,  
 Or worse, the clipped gray hair and dead white  
 face

And dwindling eye as if it ached with guile,  
*D'Ormea wears . . .*  
*(As he kisses her, enter from the King's apartment*  
*D'ORMEA.)*

I said he would divert

My kisses from your brow!

*D'Ormea.* *[Aside.]* Here! So, King Victor  
 Spoke truth for once: and who's ordained,  
 but I

To make that memorable? Both in call,  
 As he declared! Were 't better gnash the teeth,  
 Or laugh outright now?

*Cha.* *[to POL.]* What's his visit for?  
*D'O.* *[Aside.]* I question if they even speak  
 to me,

*Pol.* *[to CHA.]* Face the man! He'll sup-  
 pose you fear him else.

*[Aloud.]* The Marquis bears the King's com-  
 mand, no doubt?

*D'O.* *[Aside.]* Precisely! — If I threatened  
 him, perhaps?

Well, this at least is punishment enough!

Men used to promise punishment would come.

*Cha.* Deliver the King's message, Marquis!

*D'O.* *[Aside.]* Ah —  
 So anxious for his fate? *[Aloud.]* A word,  
 my Prince,

Before you see your father — just one word  
 Of counsel!

*Cha.* Oh, your counsel certainly!

Polyxena, the Marquis counsels us!

Well, sir? Be brief, however!

*D'O.* What? You know  
 As much as I? — preceded me, most like,  
 In knowledge! So! ('T is in his eye, beside —  
 His voice: he knows it, and his heart's on flame  
 Already!) You surmise why you, myself,  
 Del Borgo, Spava, fifty nobles more,  
 Are summoned thus?

*Cha.* Is the Prince used to know,  
 At any time, the pleasure of the King,  
 Before his minister? — Polyxena,  
 Stay here till I conclude my task: I feel  
 Your presence (smile not) through the walls,  
 and take

Fresh heart. The King's within that chamber?

*D'O.* *[Passing the table whereon a paper lies,*  
*exclaims, as he glances at it]* "Spain!"

*Pol.* *[Aside to CHA.]* Tarry awhile: what  
 ails the minister?

*D'O.* Madam, I do not often trouble you.  
 The Prince loathes, and you scorn me — let that  
 pass!

But since it touches him and you, not me,  
 Bid the Prince listen!

*Pol.* *[to CHA.]* Surely you will listen:  
 — Deceit? — Those fingers crumpling up his  
 vest?

*Cha.* Deceitful to the very fingers' ends!  
*D'O.* *[who has approached them, overlooks the*  
*other paper CHARLES continues to hold].*

My project for the Fiefs! As I supposed!  
 Sir, I must give you light upon those measures  
 — For this is mine, and that I spied of Spain,  
 Mine too!

*Cha.* Release me! Do you gloze on me  
 Who bear in the world's face (that is, the world  
 You make for me at Turin) your contempt?  
 — Your measures? — When was not a hateful  
 task

*D'Ormea's* imposition? Leave my robe!  
 What post can I bestow, what grant concede?  
 Or do you take me for the King?

*D'O.* Not I!  
 Not yet for King, — not for, as yet, thank God,  
 One who in . . . shall I say a year, a month?  
 Ay! — shall be wretcheder than e'er was slave  
 In his Sardinia, — Europe's spectacle  
 And the world's by-word! What? The Prince  
 aggrieved

That I excluded him our counsels? Here  
*[Touching the paper in CHARLES'S hand.]*

Accept a method of extorting gold  
 From Savoy's nobles, who must wring its worth  
 In silver first from tillers of the soil,  
 Whose hind's again have to contribute brass  
 To make up the amount: there's counsel, sir,  
 My counsel, one year old; and the fruit, this —  
 Savoy's become a mass of misery  
 And wrath, which one man has to meet — the  
 King:

You're not the King! Another counsel, sir!  
 Spain entertains a project (here it lies)  
 Which, guessed, makes Austria offer that same  
 King

Thus much to baffle Spain ; he promises ;  
Then comes Spain, breathless lest she be forestalled,

Her offer follows ; and he promises . . .

*Cha.* — Promises, sir, when he has just agreed  
To Austria's offer ?

*D'O.* That's a counsel, Prince !  
But past our foresight, Spain and Austria  
(choosing

To make their quarrel up between themselves  
Without the intervention of a friend)

Produce both treaties, and both promises . . .

*Cha.* How ?

*D'O.* Prince, a counsel ! And the fruit of  
that ?

Both parties covenant afresh, to fall  
Together on their friend, blot out his name,  
Abolish him from Europe. So, take note,  
Here's Austria and here's Spain to fight  
against,

And what sustains the King but Savoy here,  
A miserable people mad with wrongs ?

You're not the King !

*Cha.* Polyxena, you said

All would clear up : all does clear up to me.

*D'O.* Clear up ! 'Tis no such thing to  
envy, then ?

You see the King's state in its length and  
breadth ?

You blame me now for keeping you aloof  
From counsels and the fruit of counsels ? Wait  
Till I explain this morning's business !

*Cha.* [*Aside.*] No —  
Stoop to my father, yes, — D'Ormea, no ;  
— The King's son, not to the King's counsel-  
lor !

I will do something, but at least retain  
The credit of my deed ! [*Aloud.*] Then it is  
this

You now expressly come to tell me ?

*D'O.* This

To tell ! You apprehend me ?

*Cha.* Perfectly.

Further, D'Ormea, you have shown yourself,  
For the first time these many weeks and  
months,

Disposed to do my bidding ?

*D'O.* From the heart !  
*Cha.* Acquaint my father, first, I wait his  
pleasure :

Next . . . or, I'll tell you at a fitter time.  
Acquaint the King !

*D'O.* [*Aside.*] If I 'scape Victor yet !

First, to prevent this stroke at me : if not, —  
Then, to avenge it ! [*To CHA.*] Gracious sir,  
I go. [*Goes.*]

*Cha.* God, I forbore ! Which more offenses,  
that man

Or that man's master ? Is it come to this ?  
Have they supposed (the sharpest insult yet)  
I needed e'en his intervention ? No !

No — dull am I, conceded, — but so dull,  
Scarcely ! Their step decides me.

*Pol.*

How decides ?

*Cha.* You would be freed D'Ormea's eye  
and hers ?

— Could fly the court with me and live content ?  
So, this it is for which the knights assemble !

The whispers and the closeting of late,  
The savageness and insolence of old,  
— For this !

*Pol.* What mean you ?

*Cha.* How ? You fail to catch  
Their clever plot ? I missed it, but could you ?

These last two months of care to inculcate

How dull I am, — D'Ormea's present visit

To prove that, being dull, I might be worse

Were I a King — as wretched as now dull —

You recognize in it no winding up

Of a long plot ?

*Pol.* Why should there be a plot ?

*Cha.* The crown's secure now ; I should  
shame the crown —

An old complaint ; the point is, how to gain

My place for one more fit in Victor's eyes,

His mistress the Sebastian's child.

*Pol.*

In truth ?

*Cha.* They dare not quite dethrone Sardi-  
nia's Prince :

But they may descend on my dulness till

They sting me into even praying them

Grant leave to hide my head, resign my state,

And end the coil. Not see now ? In a word,

They'd have me tender them myself my rights

As one incapable ; — some cause for that.

Since I delayed thus long to see their drift !

I shall apprise the King he may resume

My rights this moment.

*Pol.*

Pause ! I dare not think

So ill of Victor.

*Cha.*

Think no ill of him !

*Pol.* — Nor think him, then, so shallow as to  
suffer

His purpose be divined thus easily.

And yet — you are the last of a great line ;

There's a great heritage at stake ; new days

Seemed to await this newest of the realms

Of Europe : — Charles, you must withstand  
this !

*Cha.*

Ah !

You dare not then renounce the splendid court  
For one whom all the world despises ? Speak !

*Pol.* My gentle husband, speak I will, and  
truth.

Were this as you believe, and I once sure

Your duty lay in so renouncing rule,

I could . . . could ? Oh what happiness it  
were

To live, my Charles, and die, alone with you !

*Cha.* I grieve I asked you. To the pres-  
ence, then !

By this, D'Ormea acquaints the King, no  
doubt,

He fears I am too simple for mere hints,

And that no less will serve than Victor's mouth  
Demonstrating in council what I am.

I have not breathed, I think, these many years !

*Pol.* Why, it may be ! — if he desire to wed  
That woman, call legitimate her child.

*Cha.* You see as much ? Oh, let his will  
have way !

You'll not repent confiding in me, love ?

There's many a brighter spot in Piedmont, far,  
Than Rivoli. I'll seek him : or, suppose

You hear first how I mean to speak my mind ?

Loudly and firmly both, this time, be sure !



I yet may see your Rhine-land, who can tell?  
Once away, ever then away! I breathe.

*Pol.* And I too breathe.

*Cha.* Come, my Polyxena!

## KING VICTOR

## PART II

*Enter KING VICTOR, bearing the regalia on a cushion, from his apartment. He calls loudly —*

D'Ormea! — for patience fails me, treading thus  
Among the obscure trains I have laid, — my  
knights

Safe in the hall here — in that anteroom.

My son, — D'Ormea, where? Of this, one  
touch — *[Laying down the crown.]*

This fireball to these mute black cold trains —  
then

Outbreak enough!

*[Contemplating it.]* To lose all, after all!

This, glancing o'er my house for ages — shaped,  
Brave meteor, like the crown of Cyprus now,  
Jerusalem, Spain, England, every change

The braver, — and when I have clutched a  
prize

My ancestry died wan with watching for,

To lose it! — by a slip, a fault, a trick

Learnt to advantage once and not unlearned

When past the use, — "just this once more" *(I thought)*

"Use it with Spain and Austria happily,

And then away with trick!" An oversight

I'd have repaired thrice over, any time

These fifty years, must happen now! There's  
peace

At length; and I, to make the most of peace,

Ventured my project on our people here,

As needing not their help: which Europe  
knows,

And means, cold-blooded, to dispose herself

*(Apart from plausibilities of war)*

To crush the new-made King — who ne'er till  
now

Feared her. As Duke, I lost each foot of earth  
And laughed at her: my name was left, my  
sword

Left, all was left! But she can take, she  
knows,

This crown, herself conceded . . .

That's to try,  
Kind Europe! — My career's not closed as  
yet,

This boy was ever subject to my will,

Timid and tame — the fitter! — D'Ormea, too

What if the sovereign also rid himself

Of thee, his prime of parasites? I delay!

D'Ormea!

*(As D'ORMEA enters, the King seats himself.)*

My son, the Prince — attends he?

D'O. Sir,  
He does attend. The crown prepared! — it  
seems

That you persist in your resolve.

*Victor.* Who's come?  
The chancellor and the chamberlain? My  
knights?

D'O. The whole Annunziata. If, my liege.  
Your fortune had not tottered worse than  
now . . .

*Vic.* Del Borgo has drawn up the schedules?  
mine —

My son's, too? Excellent! Only, beware

Of the least blunder, or we look but fools.

First, you read the Annulment of the Oaths;

Del Borgo follows . . . no, the Prince shall sign;

Then let Del Borgo read the Instrument:

On which, I enter.

D'O. Sir, this may be truth;

You, sir, may do as you affect — may break

Your engine, me, to pieces: try at least

If not a spring remain worth saving! Take

My counsel as I've counselled many times!

What if the Spaniard and the Austrian threat?

There's England, Holland, Venice — which ally

Select you?

*Vic.* Aha! Come, D'Ormea. — "truth"

Was on your lip a minute since. Allies?

I've broken faith with Venice, Holland, Eng-  
land

— As who knows if not you?

D'O. But why with me

Break faith — with one ally, your best, break  
faith?

*Vic.* When first I stumbled on you, Marquis  
— 't was

At Mondovi — a little lawyer's clerk . . .

D'O. Therefore your soul's ally! — who  
brought you through

Your quarrel with the Pope, at pains enough —

Who simply echoed you in these affairs —

On whom you cannot therefore visit these

Affairs' ill fortune — whom you trust to guide

You safe (yes, on my soul) through these affairs!

*Vic.* I was about to notice, had you not

Prevented me, that since that great town kept

With its chicane D'Ormea's satchel stuffed

And D'Ormea's self sufficiently reclude,

He missed a sight, — my naval armament

When I burned Toulon. How the skiff exults

Upon the galliot's wave! — rises its height,

O'ertops it even; but the great wave bursts,

And hell-deep in the horrible profound

Buries itself the galliot: shall the skiff

Think to escape the sea's black trough in turn?

Apply this: you have been my minister

— Next me, above me possibly; — sad post,

Huge care, abundant lack of peace of mind;

Who would desiderate the eminence?

You gave your soul to get it; you'd yet give

Your soul to keep it, as I mean you shall,

D'Ormea! What if the wave ebbed with me?

Whereas it cants you to another crest;

I toss you to my son; ride out your ride!

D'O. Ah, you so much despise me?

*Vic.* You, D'Ormea?

Nowise: and I'll inform you why. A king

Must in his time have many ministers,

And I've been rash enough to part with mine

When I thought proper. Of the tribe, not one  
( . . . Or wait, did Pianezze? . . . ah, just the

same!)

Not one of them, ere his remonstrance reached

The length of yours, but has assured me (com-  
monly

Standing much as you stand, — or nearer, say,  
 (The door to make his exit on his speech)  
 — I should repent of what I did. D'Ormea,  
 Be candid, you approached it when I bade you  
 Prepare the schedules! But you stopped in  
 time,

You have not so assured me: how should I  
 Despise you then?

(Enter CHARLES.)

Vic. [*Changing his tone.*] Are you instructed?  
 Do

My order, point by point! About it, sir!

D'O. You so despise me! [*Aside.*] One last  
 stay remains —

The boy's discretion there.

[*To CHA.*] For your sake, Prince,

I pleaded, wholly in your interest,

To save you from this fate!

Cha. [*Aside.*] Must I be told

The Prince was supplicated for — by him?

Vic. [*To D'O.*] Apprise Del Borgo, Spava,  
 and the rest,

Our son attends them; then return.

D'O. One word!

Cha. [*Aside.*] A moment's pause and they  
 would drive me hence,

I do believe!

D'O. [*Aside.*] Let but the boy be firm!

Vic. You disobey?

Cha. [*To D'O.*] You do not disobey

Me, at least. Did you promise that or no?

D'O. Sir, I am yours: what would you?

Yours am I!

Cha. When I have said what I shall say,  
 't is like

Your face will ne'er again disgust me. Go!

Through you, as through a breast of glass, I see.

And for your conduct, from my youth till now,

Take my contempt! You might have spared  
 me much,

Secured me somewhat, nor so harmed yourself:

That's over now. Go, ne'er to come again!

D'O. As son, the father — father, as the son!

My wits! My wits! [*Goes.*]

Vic. [*Seated.*] And you, what meant you,  
 pray,

Speaking thus to D'Ormea?

Cha. Let us not

Waste words upon D'Ormea! Those I spent

Have half unsettled what I came to say.

His presence vexes to my very soul.

Vic. One called to manage a kingdom, Charles,  
 needs heart

To bear up under worse annoyances

Than seems D'Ormea — to me, at least.

Cha. [*Aside.*] Ah, good!

He keeps me to the point! Then be it so.

[*Aloud.*] Last night, sir, brought me certain  
 papers — these —

To be reported on, — your way of late.

Is it last night's result that you demand?

Vic. For God's sake, what has night brought  
 forth? Pronounce

The . . . what's your word? — result!

Cha. Sir, that had proved

Quite worthy of your sneer, no doubt: — a few

Lame thoughts, regard for you alone could  
 wring,

Lame as they are, from brains like mine, be-  
 lieve!

As 't is, sir, I am spared both toil and sneer.

These are the papers.

Vic.

Well, sir? I suppose

You hardly burned them. Now for your result!

Cha. I never should have done great things,  
 of course,

But . . . oh my father, had you loved me more!

Vic. Loved? [*Aside.*] Has D'Ormea played  
 me false, I wonder?

[*Aloud.*] Why, Charles, a king's love is diffused  
 — yourself

May overlook, perchance, your part in it.

Our monarchy is absolutelest now

In Europe, or my trouble's thrown away.

I love, my mode, that subjects each and all

May have the power of loving, all and each,

Their mode: I doubt not, many have their sons

To trifle with, talk soft to, all day long:

I have that crown, this chair, D'Ormea, Charles!

Cha. 'T is well I am a subject then, not you.

Vic. [*Aside.*] D'Ormea has told him every-  
 thing. [*Aloud.*] Aha,

I apprehend you: when all's said, you take

Your private station to be prized beyond

My own, for instance?

Cha.

— Do and ever did

So take it: 't is the method you pursue

That grieves . . .

Vic. These words! Let me express, my  
 friend,

Your thoughts. You penetrate what I supposed

Secret. D'Ormea plies his trade betimes!

I purpose to resign my crown to you.

Cha. To me?

Vic. Now, — in that chamber.

Cha.

You resign

The crown to me?

Vic. And time enough, Charles, sure?

Confess with me, at four-and-sixty years

A crown's a load. I covet quiet once

Before I die, and summoned you for that.

Cha. 'T is I will speak: you ever hated me,

I bore it, — have insulted me, borne too —

Now you insult yourself; and I remember

What I believed you, what you really are,

And cannot bear it. What! My life has passed

Under your eye, tormented as you know, —

Your whole sagacities, one after one,

At leisure brought to play on me — to prove me

A fool, I thought and I submitted; now

You'd prove . . . what would you prove me?

Vic.

This to me?

I hardly know you!

Cha.

Know me? Oh indeed

You do not! Wait till I complain next time

Of my simplicity! — for here's a sage

Knows the world well, is not to be deceived,

And his experience and his Machiavels,

D'Ormeas, teach him — what? — that I this  
 while

Have envied him his crown! He has not smiled,

I warrant, — has not eaten, drunk, nor slept,

For I was plotting with my Princess yonder!

Who knows what we might do or might not do?

Go now, be politic, astound the world!

That sentry in the antechamber — nay,

The varlet who disposed this precious trap  
*[Pointing to the crown.]*

That was to take me — ask them if they think  
 Their own sons envy them their posts! — Know  
 me!

*Vic.* But you know me, it seems : so, learn,  
 in brief,

My pleasure. This assembly is convened . . .

*Cha.* Tell me, that woman put it in your  
 head!

You were not sole contriver of the scheme,  
 My father!

*Vic.* Now observe me, sir! I jest  
 Seldom — on these points, never. Here, I say,  
 The knights assemble to see me concede,  
 And you accept, Sardinia's crown.

*Cha.* Farewell!  
 'T were vain to hope to change this: I can end it.  
 Not that I cease from being yours, when sunk  
 Into obscurity: I'll die for you,  
 But not annoy you with my presence. Sir,  
 Farewell! Farewell!

*(Enter D'ORMEA.)*

*D'O.* *[Aside.]* Ha, sure he's changed again —  
 Means not to fall into the cunning trap!

Then, Victor, I shall yet escape you, Victor!

*Vic.* *[Suddenly placing the crown upon the  
 head of CHARLES.]* D'Ormea, your king!

*[To CHA.]* My son, obey me! Charles,

Your father, clearer-sighted than yourself,

Decides it must be so. 'Faith, this looks real!

My reasons after; reason upon reason

After: but now, obey me! Trust in me!

By this, you save Sardinia, you save me!

Why, the boy swoons! *[To D'O.]* Come this  
 side!

*D'O.* *[As CHARLES turns from him to VIC-  
 TOR.]* You persist?

*Vic.* Yes, I conceive the gesture's meaning.  
 'Faith,

He almost seems to hate you: how is that?

Be reassured, my Charles! Is 't over now?

Then, Marquis, tell the new King what remains

To do! A moment's work. Del Borgo reads

The Act of Abdication out, you sign it,

Then I sign; after that, come back to me.

*D'O.* Sir, for the last time, pause!

*Vic.* Five minutes longer

I am your sovereign, Marquis. Hesitate —

And I'll so turn those minutes to account

That . . . Ay, you recollect me! *[Aside.]*

Could I bring

My foolish mind to undergo the reading

That Act of Abdication!

*[As CHARLES motions D'ORMEA to precede him.]*

Thanks, dear Charles!

*[CHARLES and D'ORMEA retire.]*

*Vic.* A novel feature in the boy, — indeed

Just what I feared he wanted most. Quite  
 right,

This earnest tone: your truth, now for effect!

It answers every purpose: with that look,

That voice, — I hear him: "I began no  
 treaty,"

*(He speaks to Spain,)* "nor ever dreamed of  
 this

You show me; this I from my soul regret;

But if my father signed it, bid not me

Dishonor him — who gave me all, beside: "  
 And, "true," says Spain, "t were harsh to  
 visit that

Upon the Prince." Then come the nobles  
 trooping:

"I grieve at these exactions — I had cut

This hand off ere impose them; but shall I

Undo my father's deed?" — and they confer:

"Doubtless he was no party, after all;

Give the Prince time!"

Ay, give us time, but time!

Only, he must not, when the dark day comes.

Refer our friends to me and frustrate all.

We'll have no child's play, no desponding fits,

No Charles at each cross turn entreating Victor

To take his crown again. Guard against that!

*(Enter D'ORMEA.)*

Long live King Charles!

No — Charles's counsellor!

Well, is it over, Marquis? Did I jest?

*D'O.* "King Charles!" What then may  
 you be?

*Vic.* Anything!

A country gentleman that, cured of bustle,

Now beats a quick retreat toward Chambery,

Would hunt and hawk and leave you noisy folk

To drive your trade without him. I'm Count

Remont —

Count Tende — any little place's Count!

*D'O.* Then Victor, Captain against Catinat

At Staffarde, where the French beat you; and

Duke

At Turin, where you beat the French; King

late

Of Savoy, Piedmont, Montferrat, Sardinia,

— Now, "any little place's Count" —

*Vic.* Proceed!

*D'O.* Breaker of vows to God, who crowned  
 you first;

Breaker of vows to man, who kept you since;

Most profligate to me who outraged God

And man to serve you, and am made pay crimes

I was but privy to, by passing thus

To your imbecile son — who, well you know,

Must — (when the people here, and nations  
 there,

Clamor for you the main delinquent, slipped

From King to — "Count of any little place")

Must needs surrender me, all in his reach, —

I, sir, forgive you: for I see the end —

See you on your return — (you will return) —

To him you trust, a moment . . .

*Vic.* Trust him? How?

My poor man, merely a prime-minister,

Make me know where my trust errs!

*D'O.* In his fear,

His love, his — but discover for yourself

What you are weakest, trusting in!

*Vic.* Aha,

D'Ormea, not a shrewder scheme than this

In your repertory? You know old Victor —

Vain, choleric, inconstant, rash — (I've heard

Talkers who little thought the King so close) —

Felicitous now, were 't not, to provoke him

To clean forget, one minute afterward,

His solemn act, and call the nobles back

And pray them give again the very power

He has abjured — for the dear sake of what?



Vengeance on you, D'Ormea! No: such am I,  
 Count Tende or Count anything you please,  
 — Only, the same that did the things you say,  
 And, among other things you say not, used  
 Your finest fibre, meanest muscle, — you  
 I used, and now, since you will have it so,  
 Leave to your fate — mere lumber in the midst,  
 You and your works. Why, what on earth be-  
 side

Are you made for, you sort of ministers?

D'O. Not left, though, to my fate! Your  
 witless son

Has more wit than to load himself with lumber:  
 He foils you that way, and I follow you.

Vic. Stay with my son — protect the weaker  
 side!

D'O. Ay, to be tossed the people like a rag,  
 And flung by them for Spain and Austria's  
 sport,

Abolishing the record of your part

In all this perfidy!

Vic. Prevent, beside,

My own return!

D'O. That 's half prevented now!  
 'T will go hard but you find a wondrous charm  
 In exile, to discredit me. The Alps,  
 Silk-mills to watch, vines asking vigilance —  
 Hounds open for the stag, your hawk 's  
 a-wing —

Brave days that wait the Louis of the South,  
 Italy's Janus!

Vic. So, the lawyer's clerk  
 Won't tell me that I shall repent!

D'O. You give me  
 Full leave to ask if you repent?

Vic. Whene'er  
 Sufficient time 's elapsed for that, you judge!  
 [Shouts inside, "KING CHARLES!" ]

D'O. Do you repent?

Vic. [After a slight pause.] . . . I've kept  
 them waiting? Yes!  
 Come in, complete the Abdication, sir! [They  
 go out.]

(Enter POLYXENA.)

Pol. A shout! The sycophants are free of  
 Charles!

Oh, is not this like Italy? No fruit  
 Of his or my distempered fancy, this,  
 But just an ordinary fact! Beside,  
 Here they've set forms for such proceedings;  
 Victor

Imprisoned his own mother: he should know,  
 If any, how a son 's to be deprived  
 Of a son's right. Our duty 's palpable.  
 Ne'er was my husband for the wily king  
 And the unworthy subjects: be it so!  
 Come you safe out of them, my Charles! Our  
 life

Grows not the broad and dazzling life, I  
 dreamed

Might prove your lot; for strength was shut in  
 you

None gessed but I — strength which, untram-  
 melled once,

Had little shamed your vaunted ancestry —

Patience and self-devotion, fortitude,

Simplicity and utter truthfulness

— All which, they shout to lose!

So, now my work  
 Begins — to save him from regret. Save  
 Charles

Regret? — the noble nature! He 's not made  
 Like these Italians: 't is a German soul.

(CHARLES enters crowned.)

Oh, where 's the King's heir? Gone: — the  
 Crown-prince? Gone: —

Where 's Savoy? Gone! — Sardinia? Gone!

But Charles

Is left! And when my Rhine-land bowers ar-  
 rise,

If he looked almost handsome yester-twilight  
 As his gray eyes seemed widening into black  
 Because I praised him, then how will he look?  
 Farewell, you stripped and whited mulberry-  
 trees

Bound each to each by lazy ropes of vine!

Now I'll teach you my language: I'm not  
 forced

To speak Italian now, Charles?

[She sees the crown.] What is this?

Answer me — who has done this? Answer!

Cha. He!

I am King now.

Pol. Oh worst, worst, worst of all!  
 Tell me! What, Victor? He has made you  
 King?

What 's he then? What 's to follow this? You,  
 King?

Cha. Have I done wrong? Yes, for you were  
 not by!

Pol. Tell me from first to last.

Cha. Hush — a new world  
 Brightens before me; he is moved away  
 — The dark form that eclipsed it, he subsides  
 Into a shape supporting me like you,  
 And I, alone, tend upward, more and more  
 Tend upward: I am grown Sardinia's King.

Pol. Now stop: was not this Victor, Duke  
 of Savoy

At ten years old?

Cha. He was.

Pol. And the Duke spent,  
 Since then, just four-and-fifty years in toil  
 To be — what?

Cha. King.

Pol. Then why unking himself?

Cha. Those years are cause enough.

Pol. The only cause?

Cha. Some new perplexities.

Pol. Which you can solve  
 Although he cannot?

Cha. He assures me so.

Pol. And this he means shall last — how  
 long?

Cha. How long?

Think you I fear the perils I confront?

He 's praising me before the people's face —  
 My people!

Pol. Then he 's changed — grown kind, the  
 King?

Where can the trap be?

Cha. Heart and soul I pledge!

My father, could I guard the crown you gained.  
 Transmit as I received it, — all good else

Would I surrender!

Pol. Ah, it opens then

Before you, all you dreaded formerly?

You are rejoiced to be a king, my Charles?

*Cha.* So much to dare? The better, — much to dread;

The better. I'll adventure though alone.  
Triumph or die, there's Victor still to witness  
Who dies or triumphs — either way, alone!

*Pol.* Once I had found my share in triumph,  
Charles,

Or death.

*Cha.* But you are I! But you I call  
To take, Heaven's proxy, vows I tendered  
Heaven

A moment since. I will deserve the crown!

*Pol.* You will. [*Aside.*] No doubt it were a  
glorious thing

For any people, if a heart like his

Ruled over it. I would I saw the trap.

(*Enter VICTOR.*)

'Tis he must show me.

*Vic.* So, the mask falls off  
An old man's foolish love at last. Spare thanks!  
I know you, and Polyxena I know.

Here's Charles — I am his guest now — does he  
bid me

Be seated? And my light-haired blue-eyed  
child

Must not forget the old man far away

At Chambéry, who dozes while she reigns.

*Pol.* Most grateful shall we now be, talking  
least

Of gratitude — indeed of anything

That hinders what yourself must need to say

To Charles.

*Cha.* Pray speak, sir!

*Vic.* 'Faith, not much to say:  
Only what shows itself, you once i' the point  
Of sight. You're now the King: you'll com-  
prehend

Much you may oft have wondered at — the  
shifts,

Dissimulation, willness I showed.

For what's our post? Here's Savoy and here's  
Piedmont,

Here's Montferrat — a breadth here, a space  
there —

To o'er-sweep all these, what's one weapon  
worth?

I often think of how they fought in Greece

(Or Rome, which was it? You're the scholar,  
Charles!)

You made a front-thrust? But if your shield  
too

Were not adroitly planted, some shrewd knave  
Reached you behind; and him foiled, straight if  
thong

And handle of that shield were not cast loose,

And you enabled to outstrip the wind,

Fresh foes assailed you, either side; 'scape these,

And reach your place of refuge — e'en then,  
odds

If the gate opened unless breath enough

Were left in you to make its lord a speech.

Oh, you will see!

*Cha.* No: straight on shall I go,  
Truth helping; win with it or die with it.

*Vic.* 'Faith, Charles, you're not made  
Europe's fighting-man!

The barrier-guarder, if you please. You clutch  
Hold and consolidate, with envious France  
This side, with Austria that, the territory  
I held — ay, and will hold . . . which you shall  
hold

Despite the couple! But I've surely earned  
Exemption from these weary politics,  
— The privilege to prattle with my son  
And daughter here, though Europe wait the  
while.

*Pol.* Nay, sir, — at Chambéry, away forever.  
As soon you will be, 't is farewell we bid you:  
Turn these few fleeting moments to account!

'T is just as though it were a death.

*Vic.*

Indeed!

*Pol.* [*Aside.*] Is the trap there?

*Cha.* Ay, call this parting — death!

The sacredder your memory becomes.

If I misrule Sardinia, how bring back

My father?

*Vic.* I mean . . .

*Pol.* [*who watches VICTOR narrowly this  
while.*] Your father does not mean

You should be ruling for your father's sake:

It is your people must concern you wholly

Instead of him. You mean this, sir? (He drops  
My hand!)

*Cha.* That people is now part of me.

*Vic.* About the people! I took certain  
measures

Some short time since . . . Oh, I know well,  
you know

But little of my measures! These affect

The nobles; we've resumed some grants, im-  
posed

A tax or two: prepare yourself, in short,

For clamor on that score. Mark me: you yield  
No jot of aught entrusted you!

*Pol.*

No jot

You yield!

*Cha.* My father, when I took the oath,  
Although my eye might stray in search of yours,  
I heard it, understood it, promised God  
What you require. Till from this eminence  
He move me, here I keep, nor shall concede  
The meanest of my rights.

*Vic.* [*Aside.*] The boy's a fool!

— Or rather, I'm a fool: for, what's wrong  
here?

To-day the sweets of reigning: let to-morrow  
Be ready with its bitters.

(*Enter D'ORMEA.*)

There's beside

Somewhat to press upon your notice first.

*Cha.* Then why delay it for an instant, sir?  
That Spanish claim perchance? And, now you  
speak,

— This morning, my opinion was mature,  
Which, boy-like, I was bashful in producing  
To one I ne'er am like to fear in future!

My thought is formed upon that Spanish claim.

*Vic.* Betimes indeed. Not now, Charles!

You require

A host of papers on it.

*D'O.* [*Coming forward.*] Here they are.

[*To CHA.*] I, sir, was minister and much beside  
Of the late monarch; to say little, him  
I served: on you I have, to say e'en less,

No claim. This case contains those papers :  
with them

I tender you my office.

*Vic. [Hastily.]* Keep him, Charles !  
There's reason for it — many reasons : you  
Distrust him, nor are so far wrong there, — but  
He's mixed up in this matter — he'll desire  
To quit you, for occasions known to me :  
Do not accept those reasons : have him stay !

*Pol. [Aside.]* His minister thrust on us !

*Cha. [To D'O.]* Sir, believe,

In justice to myself, you do not need  
E'en this commending : howsoever might seem  
My feelings toward you, as a private man,  
They quit me in the vast and untried field  
Of action. Though I shall myself (as late  
In your own hearing I engaged to do)  
Preside o'er my Sardinia, yet your help  
Is necessary. Think the past forgotten  
And serve me now !

*D'O.* I did not offer you  
My service — would that I could serve you, sir !  
As for the Spanish matter . . .

*Vic.* But dispatch  
At least the dead, in my good daughter's phrase,  
Before the living ! Help to house me safe  
Ere with D'Ormea you set the world agape !  
Here is a paper — will you overlook  
What I propose reserving for my needs ?  
I get as far from you as possible :

Here's what I reckon my expenditure.

*Cha. [Reading.]* A miserable fifty thousand  
crowns !

*Vic.* Oh, quite enough for country gentle-  
men !

Beside, the exchequer happens . . . but find  
out

All that, yourself !

*Cha. [Still reading.]* "Count Tende" —  
what means this ?

*Vic.* Me : you were but an infant when I  
burst

Through the defile of Tende upon France.

Had only my allies kept true to me !

No matter. Tende's, then, a name I take

Just as . . .

*D'O.* — The Marchioness Sebastian takes  
The name of Spigno.

*Cha.* How, sir ?

*Vic. [To D'O.]* Fool ! All that  
Was for my own detailing. *[To CHA.]* That  
anon !

*Cha. [To D'O.]* Explain what you have  
said, sir !

*D'O.* I supposed  
The marriage of the King to her I named,  
Profoundly kept a secret these few weeks,  
Was not to be one, now he's Count.

*Pol. [Aside.]* With us  
The minister — with him the mistress !

*Cha. [To VIC.]* No —  
Tell me you have not taken her — that wo-  
man —

To live with, past recall !

*Vic.* And where's the crime . . .

*Pol. [To CHA.]* True, sir, this is a matter  
past recall

And past your cognizance. A day before,

And you had been compelled to note this —  
now

Why note it ? The King saved his House  
from shame :

What the Count did, is no concern of yours.

*Cha. [After a pause.]* The Spanish claim,  
D'Ormea !

*Vic.* Why, my son,  
I took some ill-advised . . . one's age, in fact,  
Spoils everything : though I was overreached,  
A younger brain, we'll trust, may extricate  
Sardinia readily. To-morrow, D'Ormea,  
Inform the King !

*D'O. [Without regarding VICTOR, and  
leisurely.]*

Thus stands the case with Spain :  
When first the Infant Carlos claimed his proper  
Succession to the throne of Tuscany . . .

*Vic.* I tell you, that stands over ! Let that  
rest !

There is the policy !

*Cha. [To D'O.]* Thus much I know,

And more — too much. The remedy ?

*D'O.* Of course !

No glimpse of one.

*Vic.* No remedy at all !

It makes the remedy itself — time makes it.

*D'O. [To CHA.]* But if . . .

*Vic. [Still more hastily.]* In fine, I shall  
take care of that :

And, with another project that I have . . .

*D'O. [Turning on him.]* Oh, since Count  
Tende means to take again

King Victor's crown ! —

*Pol. [Throwing herself at VICTOR's feet.]*  
E'en now retake it, sir !

Oh, speak ! We are your subjects both, once  
more !

Say it — a word effects it ! You meant not,  
Nor do mean now, to take it : but you must !

'T is in you — in your nature — and the shame's  
Not half the shame 't would grow to afterwards !

*Cha.* Polyxena !

*Pol.* A word recalls the knights —  
Say it ! — What's promising and what's the  
past ?

Say you are still King Victor !

*D'O.* Better say

The Count repents, in brief !

[VICTOR rises.]

*Cha.* With such a crime

I have not charged you, sir !

*Pol.* Charles turns from me !

## SECOND YEAR, 1731. — KING CHARLES

### PART I

Enter QUEEN POLYXENA and D'ORMEA. — *A pause.*

*Pol.* And now, sir, what have you to say ?

*D'O.* Count Tende . . .

*Pol.* Affirm not I betrayed you ; you re-  
solve

On uttering this strange intelligence

— Nay, post yourself to find me ere I reach

The capital, because you know King Charles

Tarries a day or two at Evian baths



Behind me:—but take warning,—here and thus  
*[Seating herself in the royal seat.]*  
 I listen, if I listen—not your friend.  
 Explicitly the statement, if you still  
 Persist to urge it on me, must proceed:  
 I am not made for aught else.

*D'O.* Good! Count Tende . . .  
*Pol.* I, who mistrust you, shall acquaint  
 King Charles,

Who even more mistrusts you.

*D'O.* Does he so?  
*Pol.* Why should he not?  
*D'O.* Ay, why not? Motives, seek  
 You virtuous people, motives! Say, I serve  
 God at the devil's bidding—will that do?  
 I'm proud: our people have been pacified,  
 Really I know not how—

*Pol.* By truthfulness.  
*D'O.* Exactly; that shows I had naught to  
 do

With pacifying them. Our foreign perils  
 Also exceed my means to stay: but here  
 'Tis otherwise, and my pride's piqued. Count  
 Tende

Completes a full year's absence: would you,  
 madam,  
 Have the old monarch back, his mistress back,  
 His measures back? I pray you, act upon  
 My counsel, or they will be.

*Pol.* When?  
*D'O.* Let's think.  
 Home-matters settled—Victor's coming now;  
 Let foreign matters settle—Victor's here  
 Unless I stop him; as I will, this way.

*Pol.* *[Reading the papers he presents.]* If this  
 should prove a plot 'twixt you and Victor?  
 You seek annoyances to give the pretext  
 For what you say you fear!

*D'O.* Oh, possibly!  
 I go for nothing. Only show King Charles  
 That thus Count Tende purposes return,  
 And style me his inviter, if you please!

*Pol.* Half of your tale is true; most like,  
 the Count  
 Seeks to return: but why stay you with us?  
 To aid in such emergencies.

*D'O.* Keep safe  
 Those papers: or, to serve me, leave no proof  
 I thus have counselled! When the Count re-  
 turns,  
 And the King abdicates, 't will stead me little  
 To have thus counselled.

*Pol.* The King abdicate!  
*D'O.* He's good, we knew long since—  
 wise, we discover—  
 Firm, let us hope:—but I'd have gone to work  
 With him away. Well!

*[CHARLES without.]* In the Council Chamber?  
*D'O.* All's lost!  
*Pol.* Oh, surely not King Charles! He's  
 changed—

That's not this year's care-burdened voice and  
 step:

'T is last year's step, the Prince's voice!  
*D'O.* I know.

*(Enter CHARLES—D'ORMEA retiring a little.)*  
*Cha.* Now wish me joy, Polyxena! Wish it  
 me

The old way! *[She embraces him.]*  
 There was too much cause for that!  
 But I have found myself again. What news  
 At Turin? Oh, if you but felt the load  
 I'm free of—free! I said this year would  
 end

Or it, or me—but I am free, thank God!  
*Pol.* How, Charles?

*Cha.* You do not guess? The day I found  
 Sardinia's hideous coil, at home, abroad,  
 And how my father was involved in it,—  
 Of course, I vowed to rest and smile no more  
 Until I cleared his name from obloquy.  
 We did the people right—'t was much to  
 gain

That point, redress our nobles' grievance, too—  
 But that took place here, was no crying shame:  
 All must be done abroad,—if I abroad  
 Appeased the justly-angered Powers, destroyed  
 The scandal, took down Victor's name at last  
 From a bad eminence, I then might breathe  
 And rest! No moment was to lose. Behold  
 The proud result—a Treaty, Austria, Spain  
 Agree to—

*D'O.* *[Aside.]* I shall merely stipulate  
 For an experienced headsman.

*Cha.* Not a soul  
 Is compromised: the blotted past's a blank:  
 Even D'Ormea escapes unquestioned. See!  
 It reached me from Vienna; I remained  
 At Evian to dispatch the Count his news;  
 'T is gone to Chambéry a week ago—  
 And here am I; do I deserve to feel  
 Your warm white arms around me?

*D'O.* *[Coming forward.]* He knows that?  
*Cha.* What, in Heaven's name, means this?

*D'O.* He knows that matters  
 Are settled at Vienna? Not too late!  
 Plainly, unless you post this very hour  
 Some man you trust (say, me) to Chambéry  
 And take precautions I acquaint you with,  
 Your father will return here.

*Cha.* Are you crazed,  
 D'Ormea? Here? For what? As well re-  
 turn

To take his crown!  
*D'O.* He will return for that.

*Cha.* *[To POL.]* You have not listened to  
 this man?

*Pol.* He spoke  
 About your safety—and I listened.

*[He disengages himself from her arms.]*  
*Cha.* *[To D'O.]* What

Apprised you of the Count's intentions?  
*D'O.* Me?

His heart, sir; you may not be used to read  
 Such evidence however; therefore read

*[Pointing to POLYXENA'S papers.]*  
 My evidence.

*Cha.* *[To POL.]* Oh, worthy this of you!  
 And of your speech I never have forgotten,  
 Though I professed forgetfulness; which haunts  
 me

As if I did not know how false it was;  
 Which made me toil unconsciously thus long  
 That there might be no least occasion left  
 For aught of its prediction coming true!  
 And now, when there is left no least occasion

To instigate my father to such crime —  
When I might venture to forget (I hoped)  
That speech and recognize Polyxena —  
Oh worthy, to revive, and tenfold worse,  
That plague! D'Ormea at your ear, his slan-  
ders

Still in your hand! Silent?

*Pol.* As the wronged are.

*Cha.* And you, D'Ormea, since when have  
you presumed

To spy upon my father? I conceive

What that wise paper shows, and easily.

Since when?

*D'O.* The when and where and how belong  
To me. 'Tis sad work, but I deal in such.

You oftentimes serve yourself; I'd serve you here:

Use makes me not so squeamish. In a word,

Since the first hour he went to Chambery,

Of his seven servants, five have I suborned.

*Cha.* You hate my father?

*D'O.* Oh, just as you will!

[Looking at POLYXENA.]

A minute since, I loved him — hate him, now!

What matter? — if you ponder just one thing:

Has he that treaty? — he is setting forward

Already. Are your guards here?

*Cha.*

Well for you  
They are not! [*To POL.*] Him I knew of old,  
but you —

To hear that pickthank, further his designs!

[*To D'O.*]

Guards? — were they here, I'd bid them, for  
your trouble,

Arrest you.

*D'O.* Guards you shall not want. I lived

The servant of your choice, not of your need.

You never greatly needed me till now

That you discard me. This is my arrest.

Again I tender you my charge — its duty

Would bid me press you read those documents.

Here, sir!

[*Offering his badge of Office.*]

*Cha.* [*Taking it.*] The papers also! Do you  
think

I dare not read them?

*Pol.*

Read them, sir!

*Cha.*

They prove,  
My father, still a month within the year

Since he so solemnly consigned it me,

Means to resume his crown? They shall prove

that,

Or my best dungeon . . .

*D'O.*

Even say, Chambery!

'Tis vacant, I surmise, by this.

*Cha.*

You prove  
Your words or pay their forfeit, sir. Go there!

Polyxena, one chance to rend the veil

Thickening and blackening 'twixt us two! Do  
say,

You'll see the falsehood of the charges proved!  
Do say, at least, you wish to see them proved

False charges — my heart's love of other times!

*Pol.* Ah, Charles!

*Cha.* [*To D'O.*]

Precede me, sir!

*D'O.*

And I'm at length  
A martyr for the truth! No end, they say,  
Of miracles. My conscious innocence!

[*As they go out, enter — by the middle door, at which  
he pauses — VICTOR.*]

*Vic.* Sure I heard voices? No. Well, I  
do best

To make at once for this, the heart o' the place.  
The old room! Nothing changed! So near my

seat,

D'Ormea? [*Pushing away the stool which is by  
the KING's chair.*]

I want that meeting over first,

I know not why. Tush, he, D'Ormea, slow

To hearten me, the supple knave? That burst

Of spite so eased him! He'll inform me . . .

What?

Why come I hither? All's in rough; let all

Remain rough. There's full time to draw back

— nay,

There's naught to draw back from, as yet;

whereas,

If reason should be, to arrest a course

Of error — reason good, to interpose

And save, as I have saved so many times,

Our House, admonish my son's giddy youth,

Relieve him of a weight that proves too much —

Now is the time, — or now, or never.

'Faith,

This kind of step is pitiful, not due

To Charles, this stealing back — hither, be-  
cause

He's from his capital! Oh Victor! Victor!

But thus it is. The age of crafty men

Is loathsome; youth contrives to carry off

Dissimulation; we may intersperse

Extenuating passages of strength,

Ardu, vivacity and wit — may turn

E'en guile into a voluntary grace:

But one's old age, when graces drop away

And leave guile the pure staple of our lives —

Ah, loathsome!

Not so — or why pause I? Turin

Is mine to have, were I so minded, for

The asking; all the army's mine — I've wit-  
nessed

Each private fight beneath me; all the Court's

Mine too; and, best of all, D'Ormea's still

D'Ormea and mine. There's some grace cling-  
ing yet.

Had I decided on this step, ere midnight

I'd take the crown.

No. Just this step to rise

Exhausts me. Here am I arrived: the rest

Must be done for me. Would I could sit here

And let things right themselves, the masque  
unmasque

Of the old King, crownless, gray hair and hot  
blood, —

The young King, crowned, but calm before his  
time,

They say, — the eager mistress with her  
taunts, —

And the sad earnest wife who motions me

Away — ay, there she knelt to me! E'en yet

I can return and sleep at Chambery

A dream out.

Rather shake it off at Turin.

King Victor! Say: to Turin — yes, or no?

'Tis this relentless noonday-lighted chamber.

Lighted like life but silent as the grave,

That disconcerts me. That's the change must  
strike.

No silence last year! Some one flung doors wide

(Those two great doors which scrutinize me now)  
And out I went 'mid crowds of men — men talking,

Men watching if my lip fell or brow knit,  
Men saw me safe forth, put me on my road :  
That makes the misery of this return.  
Oh had a battle done it! Had I dropped,  
Haling some battle, three entire days old,  
Hither and thither by the forehead — dropped  
In Spain, in Austria, best of all, in France —  
Spurned on its horns or underneath its hoofs,  
When the spent monster went upon its knees  
To pad and pash the prostrate wretch — I, Victor,

Sole to have stood up against France, beat down

By inches, brayed to pieces finally  
In some vast unimaginable charge,  
A flying hell of horse and foot and guns  
Over me, and all's lost, forever lost,  
There's no more Victor when the world wakes up!

Then silence, as of a raw battlefield,  
Throughout the world. Then after (as whole days

After, you catch at intervals faint noise  
Through the stiff crust of frozen blood) — there creeps

A rumor forth, so faint, no noise at all,  
That a strange old man, with face outworn for wounds,

Is stumbling from frontier town to town,  
Begging a pittance that may help him find  
His Turin out; what scorn and laughter follow  
The coin you fling into his cap! And last,  
Some bright morn, how men crowd about the midst

O' the market-place, where takes the old king breath

Ere with his crutch he strike the palace-gate  
Wide ope!

To Turin, yes or no — or no?

(*Re-enter CHARLES with papers.*)

Cha. Just as I thought! A miserable falsehood

Of hirelings discontented with their pay  
And longing for enfranchisement! A few  
Testy expressions of old age that thinks  
To keep alive its dignity o'er slaves  
By means that suit their natures!

[*Tearing them.*] Thus they shake  
My faith in Victor!

[*Turning, he discovers VICTOR.*

Vic. [*After a pause.*] Not at Evian, Charles?  
What's this? Why do you run to close the doors?

No welcome for your father?

Cha. [*Aside.*] Not his voice!  
What would I give for one imperious tone  
Of the old sort! That's gone forever.

Vic. Must  
I ask once more . . .

Cha. No — I concede it, sir!  
You are returned for . . . true, your health declines;

True, Chambery's a bleak unkindly spot;

You'd choose one fitter for your final lodge —  
Veneria, or Moncagliero — ay, that's close  
And I concede it.

Vic. I received advices  
Of the conclusion of the Spanish matter,  
Dated from Evian Baths . . .

Cha. And you forbore  
To visit me at Evian, satisfied  
The work I had to do would fully task  
The little wit I have, and that your presence  
Would only disconcert me —

Vic. Charles?

Cha. — Me, set  
Forever in a foreign course to yours,  
And . . .

Sir, this way of wile were good to catch,  
But I have not the sleight of it. The truth!  
Though I sink under it! What brings you here?

Vic. Not hope of this reception, certainly.  
From one who'd scarce assume a stranger mode  
Of speech, did I return to bring about  
Some awfullest calamity!

Cha. — You mean,  
Did you require your crown again! Oh yes,  
I should speak otherwise! But turn not that  
To jesting! Sir, the truth! Your health declines?

Is aught deficient in your equipage?  
Wisely you seek myself to make complaint,  
And foil the malice of the world which laughs  
At petty discontents; but I shall care  
That not a soul knows of this visit. Speak!

Vic. [*Aside.*] Here is the grateful much-professing son

Prepared to worship me, for whose sole sake  
I think to waive my plans of public good!  
[*Aloud.*] Nay, Charles, if I did seek to take  
once more

My crown, were so disposed to plague myself,  
What would be warrant for this bitterness?  
I gave it — grant I would resume it — well?

Cha. I should say simply — leaving out the  
why

And how — you made me swear to keep that  
crown:

And as you then intended . . .

Vic. Fool! What way  
Could I intend or not intend? As man,  
With a man's will, when I say "I intend,"  
I can intend up to a certain point,  
No farther. I intended to preserve  
The crown of Savoy and Sardinia whole:  
And if events arise demonstrating  
The way, I hoped should guard it, rather like  
To lose it . . .

Cha. Keep within your sphere and mine!  
It is God's province we usurp on, else.  
Here, blindfold through the maze of things we  
walk

By a slight clue of false, true, right and wrong;  
All else is rambling and presumption. I  
Have sworn to keep this kingdom: there's my  
truth.

Vic. Truth, boy, is here, within my breast;  
and in

Your recognition of it, truth is, too;  
And in the effect of all this tortuous dealing



With falsehood, used to carry out the truth,  
— In its success, this falsehood turns, again,  
Truth for the world! But you are right: these  
themes

Are over-subtle. I should rather say  
In such a case, frankly, — it fails, my scheme:  
I hoped to see you bring about, yourself,  
What I must bring about. Interpose  
On your behalf — with my son's good in sight —  
To hold what he is nearly letting go,  
Confirm his title, add a grace perhaps.  
There's Sicily, for instance, — granted me  
And taken back, some years since: till I give  
That island with the rest, my work's half  
done.

For his sake, therefore, as of those he rules . . .

*Cha.* Our sakes are one; and that, you could  
not say,

Because my answer would present itself  
Forthwith: — a year has wrought an age's  
change.

This people's not the people now, you once  
Could benefit; nor is my policy  
Your policy.

*Vic.* [*With an outburst.*] I know it! You undo  
All I have done — my life of toil and care!  
I left you this the absolute rule  
In Europe: do you think I sit and smile,  
Bid you throw power to the populace —  
See my Sardinia, that has kept apart,  
Join in the mad and democratic whirl  
Whereto I see all Europe haste full tide?  
England casts off her kings; France mimics  
England:

This realm I hoped was safe! Yet here I talk,  
When I can save it, not by force alone,  
But bidding plagues, which follow sons like you,  
Fasten upon my disobedient . . .

[*Recollecting himself.*] Surely  
I could say this — if minded so — my son?

*Cha.* You could not. Bitterer curses than  
your curse

Have I long since denounced upon myself  
If I misused my power. In fear of these  
I entered on those measures — will abide  
By them: so, I should say, Count Tende . . .

*Vic.* No!  
But no! But if, my Charles, your — more than  
old —

Half-foolish father urged these arguments,  
And then confessed them futile, but said plainly  
That he forgot his promise, found his strength  
Fail him, had thought at savage Chambery  
Too much of brilliant Turin, Rivoli here  
And Susa, and Veneria, and Superga —  
Pined for the pleasant places he had built  
When he was fortunate and young —

*Cha.* My father!  
*Vic.* Stay yet! — and if he said he could not  
die

Deprived of baubles he had put aside,  
He deemed, forever — of the Crown that binds  
Your brain up, whole, sound and impregnable,  
Creating kingliness — the Sceptre too,  
Those mere wind, should you wave it, back  
would beat

Invaders — and the golden Ball which throbs  
As if you grasped the palpitating heart

Indeed o' the realm, to mould as choose you  
may!

— If I must totter up and down the streets  
My sires built, where myself have introduced  
And fostered laws and letters, sciences,  
The civil and the military arts!  
Stay, Charles! I see you letting me pretend  
To live my former self once more — King Victor,  
The venturesome yet politic: they style me  
Again, the Father of the Prince: friends wink  
Good-humoredly at the delusion you  
So sedulously guard from all rough truths  
That else would break upon my dotage! —  
You —

Whom now I see preventing my old shame —  
I tell not, point by cruel point, my tale —  
For is 't not in your breast my brow is hid?  
Is not your hand extended? Say you not . . .

(*Enter D'ORMEA, leading in POLYXENA.*)

*Pol.* [*Advancing and withdrawing* CHARLES  
— to VICTOR.]

In this conjuncture even, he would say  
(Though with a moistened eye and quivering lip)  
The suppliant is my father. I must save  
A great man from himself, nor see him fling  
His well-earned fame away: there must not  
follow

Ruin so utter, a break-down of worth  
So absolute: no enemy shall learn,  
He thrust his child 'twixt danger and himself,  
And, when that child somehow stood danger  
out,

Stole back with serpent wiles to ruin Charles  
— Body, that's much, — and soul, that's more  
— and realm,

That's most of all! No enemy shall say . . .

*D'O.* Do you repent, sir?

*Vic.* [*Resuming himself.*] D'Ormea? This is  
well!

Worthily done, King Charles, craftily done!  
Judiciously you post these, to o'erhear  
The little your importunate father thrusts  
Himself on you to say! — Ah, they'll correct  
The amiable blind facility  
You show in answering his peevish suit.  
What can he need to sue for? Thanks,  
D'Ormea!

You have fulfilled your office: but for you,  
The old Count might have drawn some few  
more livres

To swell his income! Had you, lady, missed  
The moment, a permission might be granted  
To buttress up my ruinous old pile!  
But you remember properly the list  
Of wise precautions I took when I gave  
Nearly as much away — to reap the fruits  
I should have looked for!

*Cha.* Thanks, sir: degrade me,  
So you remain yourself! Adieu!

*Vic.* I'll not

Forget it for the future, nor presume  
Next time to slight such mediators! Nay —  
Had I first moved them both to intercede,  
I might secure a chamber in Moneagliè  
— Who knows?

*Cha.* Adieu!

*Vic.* You bid me this adieu

With the old spirit?

Cha. Adieu !  
 Vic. Charles — Charles !  
 Cha. Adieu !  
 [VICTOR goes.]

Cha. You were mistaken, Marquis, as you hear !

'T was for another purpose the Count came.  
 The Count desires Moncagliier. Give the order !

D'O. [Leisurely.] Your minister has lost your confidence,

Asserting late, for his own purposes,  
 Count Tende would . . .

Cha. [Flinging his badge back.] Be still the minister !

And give a loose to your insulting joy ;  
 It irks me more thus stifled than expressed :  
 Loose it !

D'O. There's none to loose, alas ! I see  
 I never am to die a martyr.

Pol. Charles !

Cha. No praise, at least, Polyxena — no praise !

## KING CHARLES

## PART II

D'ORMEA seated, folding papers he has been examining.

This at the last effects it : now, King Charles  
 Or else King Victor — that's a balance : but  
 now,

D'Ormea the arch-culprit, either turn  
 O' the scale, — that's sure enough. A point to  
 solve,

My masters, moralists, whate'er your style !  
 When you discover why I push myself  
 Into a pitfall you'd pass safely by,  
 Impart to me among the rest ! No matter.  
 Prompt are the righteous ever with their rede  
 To us the wrongful : lesson them this once !  
 For safe among the wicked are you set,  
 D'Ormea ! We lament life's brevity,  
 Yet quarter e'en the threescore years and ten,  
 Nor stick to call the quarter roundly " life."  
 D'Ormea was wicked, say, some twenty years ;  
 A tree so long was stunted ; afterward,  
 What if it grew, continued growing, till  
 No fellow of the forest equalled it ?  
 'T was a stump then ; a stump it still must be :  
 While forward saplings, at the outset checked,  
 In virtue of that first sprout keep their style  
 Amid the forest's green fraternity.  
 Thus I shoot up to surely get lopped down  
 And bound up for the burning. Now for it !

(Enter CHARLES and POLYXENA with Attendants.)

D'O. [Rises.] Sir, in the due discharge of  
 this my office —

This enforced summons of yourself from Turin,  
 And the disclosure I am bound to make  
 To-night, — there must already be, I feel,  
 So much that wounds . . .

Cha. Well, sir ?

D'O. — That I, perchance,

May utter also what, another time,  
 Would irk much, — it may prove less irksome  
 now.

Cha. What would you utter ?

D'O. That I from my soul  
 Grieve at to-night's event : for you I grieve,  
 E'en grieve for . . .

Cha. Tush, another time for talk !  
 My kingdom is in imminent danger ?

D'O. Let  
 The Count communicate with France — its  
 King,

His grandson, will have Fleury's aid for this.  
 Though for no other war.

Cha. First for the levies :  
 What forces can I muster presently ?

[D'ORMEA delivers papers which CHARLES inspects.]

Cha. Good — very good. Montorio . . .  
 how is this ?

— Equips me double the old complement  
 Of soldiers ?

D'O. Since his land has been relieved  
 From double imposts, this he manages :

But under the late monarch . . .

Cha. Peace ! I know.  
 Count Spava has omitted mentioning  
 What proxy is to head these troops of his.

D'O. Count Spava means to head his troops  
 himself.

Something to fight for now ; " Whereas," says  
 he,

" Under the sovereign's father " . . .

Cha. It would seem  
 That all my people love me.

D'O. Yes.

[To POLYXENA while CHARLES continues to inspect the  
 papers.]

A temper

Like Victor's may avail to keep a state ;  
 He terrifies men and they fall not off ;  
 Good to restrain : best, if restraint were all.  
 But, with the silent circle round him, ends  
 Such sway : our King's begins precisely there.  
 For to suggest, impel and set at work,  
 Is quite another function. Men may slight,  
 In time of peace, the King who brought them  
 peace :

In war, — his voice, his eyes, help more than  
 fear.

They love you, sir !

Cha. [To Attendants.] Bring the regalia  
 forth !

Quit the room ! And now, Marquis, answer  
 me !

Why should the King of France invade my  
 realm ?

D'O. Why ? Did I not acquaint your Ma-  
 jesty

An hour ago ?

Cha. I choose to hear again

What then I heard.

D'O. Because, sir, as I said,  
 Your father is resolved to have his crown  
 At any risk ; and, as I judge, calls in  
 The foreigner to aid him.

Cha. And your reason  
 For saying this ?

D'O. [Aside.] Ay, just his father's way !  
 [To CHA.] The Count wrote yesterday to your  
 forces' Chief,

Rhebinder — made demand of help —

Cha. To try

Rhebinder — he 's of alien blood. Aught else ?

*D'O.* Receiving a refusal,—some hours after,

The Count called on Del Borgo to deliver

The Act of Abdication : he refusing,

Or hesitating, rather —

*Cha.* What ensued ?

*D'O.* At midnight, only two hours since, at Turin,

He rode in person to the citadel

With one attendant, to Soccorso gate,

And bade the governor, San Remi, open —

Admit him.

*Cha.* For a purpose I divine.

These three were faithful, then ?

*D'O.* They told it me :

And I —

*Cha.* Most faithful —

*D'O.* Tell it you — with this

Moreover of my own : if, an hour hence,

You have not interposed, the Count will be

O' the road to France for succor.

*Cha.* Very good !

You do your duty now to me your monarch

Fully, I warrant — have, that is, your project

For saving both of us disgrace, no doubt ?

*D'O.* I give my counsel, — and the only one.

A month since, I besought you to employ

Restraints which had prevented many a pang :

But now the harsher course must be pursued.

These papers, made for the emergency,

Will pain you to subscribe : this is a list

Of those suspected merely — men to watch ;

This — of the few of the Count's very household

You must, however reluctantly, arrest ;

While here 's a method of remonstrance — sure

Not stronger than the case demands — to take

With the Count's self.

*Cha.* Deliver those three papers.

*Pol.* [*While CHARLES inspects them — to D'ORMEA.*]

Your measures are not over-harsh, sir : France

Will hardly be deterred from her intents

By these.

*D'O.* If who proposes might dispose,

I could soon satisfy you. Even these,

Hear what he 'll say at my presenting !

*Cha.* [*who has signed them.*] There !

About the warrants ! You 've my signature.

What turns you pale ? I do my duty by you

In acting boldly thus on your advice.

*D'O.* [*Reading them separately.*] Arrest the people I suspected merely ?

*Cha.* Did you suspect them ?

*D'O.* Doubtless : but — but — sir,

This Forquieri 's governor of Turin,

And Rivarol and he have influence over

Half of the capital ! Rabella, too ?

Why, sir —

*Cha.* Oh, leave the fear to me !

*D'O.* [*Still reading.*] You bid me

Incarcerate the people on this list ?

Sir —

*Cha.* But you never bade arrest those men,

So close related to my father too,

On trifling grounds ?

*D'O.*

Oh, as for that, St. George,

President of Chambery's senators,

Is hatching treason ! still —

[*More troubled.*] Sir, Count Cumiane  
Is brother to your father's wife ! What 's  
here ?

Arrest the wife herself ?

*Cha.* You seem to think

A venial crime this plot against me. Well ?

*D'O.* [*who has read the last paper.*] Where-

fore am I thus ruined ? Why not take

My life at once ? This poor formality

Is, let me say, unworthy you ! Prevent it

You, madam ! I have served you, am pre-  
pared

For all disgraces : only, let disgrace

Be plain, be proper — proper for the world !

To pass its judgment on 'twixt you and me !

Take back your warrant, I will none of it !

*Cha.* Here is a man to talk of fickleness !

He stakes his life upon my father's falsehood ;

I bid him . . .

*D'O.* Not you ! Were he trebly false,

You do not bid me . . .

*Cha.* Is 't not written there ?

I thought so : give — I 'll set it right.

*D'O.* Is it there ?

Oh yes, and plain — arrest him now — drag  
here

Your father ! And were all six times as plain,

Do you suppose I trust it ?

*Cha.* Just one word !

You bring him, taken in the act of flight,

Or else your life is forfeit.

*D'O.* Ay, to Turin

I bring him, and to-morrow ?

*Cha.* Here and now !

The whole thing is a lie, a hateful lie,

As I believed and as my father said.

I knew it from the first, but was compelled

To circumvent you ; and the great D'Ormea,

That baffled Alberoni and tricked Coscia,

The miserably sower of such discord

'Twixt sire and son, is in the toils at last.

Oh I see ! you arrive — this plan of yours,

Weak as it is, torments sufficiently

A sick old peevish man — wrings hasty speech,

An ill-considered threat from him ; that 's  
noted ;

Then out you ferret papers, his amusement

In lonely hours of lassitude — examine

The day-by-day report of your paid spies —

And back you come : all was not ripe, you find,

And, as you hope, may keep from ripening yet.

But you were in bare time ! Only, 't were best

I never saw my father — these old men

Are potent in excuses : and meanwhile,

D'Ormea 's the man I cannot do without !

*Pol.* Charles —

*Cha.* Ah, no question ! You against me too !

You 'd have me eat and drink and sleep, live,  
die,

With this lie coiled about me, choking me !

No, no, D'Ormea ! You venture life, you say,

Upon my father's perfidy : and I

Have, on the whole, no right to disregard

The chains of testimony you thus wind

About me ; though I do — do from my soul.



Discredit them: still I must authorize  
These measures, and I will. Perugia!

[Many Officers enter.] Count —  
You and Solar, with all the force you have,  
Stand at the Marquis' orders: what he bids,  
Implicitly perform! You are to bring  
A traitor here; the man that 's likest one  
At present, fronts me; you are at his beck  
For a full hour! he undertakes to show  
A fouler than himself, — but, failing that,  
Return with him, and, as my father lives,  
He dies this night! The clemency you blame  
So oft, shall be revoked — rights exercised,  
Too long abjured.

[To D'O.] Now, sir, about the work!  
To save your king and country! Take the  
warrant!

D'O. You hear the sovereign's mandate,  
Count Perugia?

Obeys me! As your diligence, expect  
Reward! All follow to Montcagliar!

[D'ORMEA goes.]

Cha. [In great anguish.] D'Ormea!  
He goes, lit up with that appalling smile!

[To POLYXENA after a pause.]  
At least you understand all this?

Pol. These means  
Of our defence — these measures of precaution?

Cha. It must be the best way: I should  
have else

Withered beneath his scorn.

Pol. What would you say?

Cha. Why, do you think I mean to keep  
the crown, Polyxena?

Pol. You then believe the story  
In spite of all — that Victor comes?

Cha. Believe it?

I know that he is coming — feel the strength  
That has upheld me leave me at his coming!

'T was mine, and now he takes his own again.  
Some kinds of strength are well enough to  
have;

But who's to have that strength? Let my  
crown go!

I meant to keep it; but I cannot — cannot!  
Only, he shall not taunt me — he, the first . . .

See if he would not be the first to taunt me  
With having left his kingdom at a word,

With letting it be conquered without stroke,  
With . . . no — no — 't is no worse than when  
he left!

I've just to bid him take it, and, that over,  
We'll fly away — fly, for I loathe this Turin,

This Rivoli, all titles loathe, all state.

We'd best go to your country — unless God  
Send I die now!

Pol. Charles, hear me!

Cha. And again  
Shall you be my Polyxena — you'll take me  
Out of this woe! Yes, do speak, and keep  
speaking!

I would not let you speak just now, for fear  
You'd counsel me against him: but talk, now,

As we two used to talk in blessed times:  
Bid me endure all his caprices; take me  
From this mad post above him!

Pol. I believe  
We are undone, but from a different cause.

All your resources, down to the least guard,  
Are at D'Ormea's beck. What if, the while,  
He act in concert with your father? We  
Indeed were lost. This lonely Rivoli —  
Where find a better place for them?

Cha. [Pacing the room.] And why

Does Victor come? To undo all that's done,  
Restore the past, prevent the future! Seat

His mistress in your seat, and place in mine  
. . . Oh, my own people, whom will you find  
there,

To ask of, to consult with, to care for,  
To hold up with your hands? Whom? One  
that's false —

False — from the head's crown to the foot's  
sole, false!

The best is, that I knew it in my heart  
From the beginning, and expected this,

And hated you, Polyxena, because  
You saw through him, though I too saw through  
him,

Saw that he meant this while he crowned me,  
while

He prayed for me, — nay, while he kissed my  
brow,

I saw —

Pol. But if your measures take effect,  
D'Ormea true to you?

Cha. Then worst of all!

I shall have loosed that callous wretch on him!  
Well may the woman taunt him with his child —

I, eating here his bread, clothed in his clothes,  
Seated upon his seat, let slip D'Ormea

To outrage him! We talk — perchance he  
tears

My father from his bed; the old hands feel  
For one who is not, but who should be there:

He finds D'Ormea! D'Ormea too finds him!  
The crowded chamber when the lights go  
out —

Closed doors — the horrid scuffle in the dark —  
The accursed prompting of the minute! My  
guards!

To horse — and after, with me — and prevent!

Pol. [Seizing his hand.] King Charles!  
Pause here upon this strip of time

Allotted you out of eternity!

Crowns are from God: you in his name hold  
yours.

Your life's no least thing, were it fit your life  
Should be abjured along with rule; but now,

Keep both! Your duty is to live and rule —  
You, who would vulgarly look fine enough  
In the world's eye, deserting your soul's  
charge, —

Ay, you would have men's praise, this Rivoli  
Would be illumined! While, as 't is, no doubt,

Something of stain will ever rest on you;  
No one will rightly know why you refused  
To abdicate; they'll talk of deeds you could  
Have done, no doubt, — nor do I much expect  
Future achievement will blot out the past,

Envelope it in haze — nor shall we two  
Live happy any more. 'T will be, I feel,  
Only in moments that the duty's seen  
As palpably as now: the months, the years  
Of painful indistinctness are to come,

While daily must we tread these palace-rooms

Pregnant with memories of the past: your eye  
May turn to mine and find no comfort there,  
Through fancies that beset me, as yourself,  
Of other courses, with far other issues,  
We might have taken this great night: such  
bear,

As I will bear! What matters happiness?  
Duty! There's man's one moment: this is  
yours!

[Putting the crown on his head, and the sceptre in his  
hand, she places him on his seat: a long pause and  
silence.]

(Enter D'ORMEA and VICTOR, with Guards.)

Vic. At last I speak; but once — that once,  
to you!

'T is you I ask, not these your varletry,  
Who's King of us?

Cha. [From his seat.] Count Tende . . .

Vic. What your spies

Assert I ponder in my soul, I say —  
Here to your face, amid your guards! I choose  
'To take again the crown whose shadow I gave —  
For still its potency surrounds the weak

White locks their felon hands have discomposed.  
Or I'll not ask who's King, but simply, who  
Withholds the crown I claim? Deliver it!  
I have no friend in the wide world: nor France  
Nor England cares for me: you see the sum  
Of what I can avail. Deliver it!

Cha. Take it, my father!

And now say in turn,

Was it done well, my father — sure not well,  
To try me thus! I might have seen much cause  
For keeping it — too easily seen cause!  
But, from that moment, e'en more woefully  
My life had pined away, than pine it will.  
Already you have much to answer for.  
My life to pine is nothing, — her sunk eyes  
Were happy once! No doubt, my people think  
I am their King still . . . but I cannot strive!  
Take it!

Vic. [One hand on the crown CHARLES offers,  
the other on his neck.] So few years give it  
quietly,

My son! It will drop from me. See you  
not?

A crown's unlike a sword to give away —  
That, let a strong hand to a weak hand give!  
But crowns should slip from palsied brows to  
heads

Young as this head: yet mine is weak enough,  
E'en weaker than I knew. I seek for phrases  
To vindicate my right. 'T is of a piece!  
All is alike gone by with me — who beat  
Once D'Orleans in his lines — his very lines!  
To have been Eugene's comrade, Louis's rival,  
And now . . .

Cha. [Putting the crown on him, to the rest.]  
The King speaks, yet none kneels, I  
think!

Vic. I am then King! As I became a King

Despite the nations, kept myself a King,  
So I die King, with Kingship dying too  
Around me! I have lasted Europe's time!  
What wants my story of completion? Where  
Must needs the damning break show? Who  
mistrusts

My children here — tell they of any break  
'Twixt my day's sunrise and its fiery fall?  
And who were by me when I died but they?  
D'Ormea there!

Cha. What means he?

Vic. Ever there!

Charles — how to save your story! Mine must  
go!

Say — say that you refused the crown to me!  
Charles, yours shall be my story! You im-  
mured

Me, say, at Rivoli. A single year  
I spend without a sight of you, then die.  
That will serve every purpose — tell that tale  
The world!

Cha. Mistrust me? Help!

Vic. Past help, past reach!

'T is in the heart — you cannot reach the heart:  
This broke mine, that I did believe, you,  
Charles,

Would have denied me and disgraced me.

Pol. Charles

Has never ceased to be your subject, sir!  
He reigned at first through setting up yourself  
As pattern: if he e'er seemed harsh to you,  
'T was from a too intense appreciation  
Of your own character: he acted you —  
Ne'er for an instant did I think it real,  
Nor look for any other than this end.  
I hold him worlds the worse on that account;  
But so it was.

Cha. [To POL.] I love you now indeed!

[To VIC.] You never knew me!

Vic. Hardly till this moment,

When I seem learning many other things  
Because the time for using them is past.  
If 't were to do again! That's idly wished.  
Truthfulness might prove policy as good  
As guile. Is this my daughter's forehead?  
Yes:

I've made it fitter now to be a queen's  
Than formerly: I've ploughed the deep lines  
there

Which keep too well a crown from slipping off.  
No matter. Guile has made me King again.

Louis — 't was in King Victor's time: — long  
since,

When Louis reigned and, also, Victor reigned.  
How the world talks already of us two!  
God of eclipse and each discolored star,  
Why do I linger then?

Ha! Where lurks he?

D'Ormea! Nearer to your King! Now stand!

[Collecting his strength, as D'ORMEA approaches.  
You lied, D'Ormea! I do not repent. [Dies

## DRAMATIC LYRICS

THE third number of *Bells and Pomegranates*, published in 1842, contained a collection of short poems under the general head of *Dramatic Lyrics*. When Browning made his first collective edition, he redistributed all his groups of poems, retaining this title and making it cover some of the poems included in the original group, but many more first published under other headings. The arrangement here given is that adopted finally by Browning. "Such Poems," he says, "as the majority in this volume (*Dramatic Lyrics*)

might also come properly enough, I suppose, under the head of *Dramatic Pieces*; being, though often Lyric in expression, always Dramatic in principle, and so many utterances of so many imaginary persons, not mine. Part of the Poems were inscribed to my dear friend, John Kenyon; I hope the whole may obtain the honor of an association with his memory."

The third of the *Cavalier Tunes* was originally entitled *My Wife Gertrude*. The three songs have been set to music by Dr. Villiers Stanford

## CAVALIER TUNES

## I. MARCHING ALONG

KENTISH Sir Byng stood for his King,  
Bidding the crop-headed Parliament swing;  
And, pressing a troop unable to stoop  
And see the rogues flourish and honest folk droop,  
Marched them along, fifty-score strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song.

God for King Charles! Pym and such carles  
To the Devil that prompts 'em their treasonous parles!  
Cavaliers, up! Lips from the cup,  
Hands from the pasty, nor bite take nor sup  
Till you 're—

CHORUS. — Marching along, fifty-score strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, singing  
this song.

Hampden to hell, and his obsequies' knell.  
Serve Hazelrig, Fiennes, and young Harry as well!

England, good cheer! Rupert is near!  
Kentish and loyalists, keep we not here.

CHO. — Marching along, fifty-score strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song?

Then, God for King Charles! Pym and his snarls  
To the Devil that pricks on such pestilent carles!

Hold by the right, you double your might;  
So, onward to Nottingham, fresh for the fight,

CHO. — March we along, fifty-score strong,  
Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song!

## II. GIVE A ROUSE

King Charles, and who 'll do him right now?  
King Charles, and who 's ripe for fight now?  
Give a rouse: here 's, in hell's despite now,  
King Charles!

Who gave me the goods that went since?  
Who raised me the house that sank once?  
Who helped me to gold I spent since?  
Who found me in wine you drank once?

CHO. — King Charles, and who 'll do him right now?

King Charles, and who 's ripe for fight now?

Give a rouse: here 's, in hell's de spite now,

King Charles!

To whom used my boy George quaff else,  
By the old fool's side that begot him?  
For whom did he cheer and laugh else,  
While Noll's damned troopers shot him?

CHO. — King Charles, and who 'll do him right now?

King Charles, and who 's ripe for fight now?

Give a rouse: here 's, in hell's de spite now,

King Charles!

## III. BOOT AND SADDLE

Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!  
Rescue my castle before the hot day  
Brightens to blue from its silvery gray.

CHO. — Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!

Ride past the suburbs, asleep as you 'd say;  
Many 's the friend there, will listen and pray  
"God's luck to gallants that strike up the lay—  
CHO. — Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!"

Forty miles off, like a roebuck at bay,  
Flouts my castle Brancepeth the Roundheads' array:

Who laughs, "Good fellows ere this, by my fay,  
CHO. — Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!"

Who? My wife Gertrude; that, honest and gay,

Laughs when you talk of surrendering, "Nay!  
I 've better counsellors; what counsel they?"

CHO. — Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!



## THE LOST LEADER

Browning was beset with questions by people asking if he referred to Wordsworth in this poem. He answered the question more than once, as an artist would : the following letter to Rev. A. B. Grosart, the editor of Wordsworth's *Prose Works*, sufficiently states his position.

" 19 Warwick-Crescent, W., Feb. 24, '75.

" DEAR MR. GROSART, — I have been asked the question you now address me with, and as duly answered it, I can't remember how many times ; there is no sort of objection to one more assurance or rather confession, on my part, that I *did* in my hasty youth presume to use the great and venerated personality of Wordsworth as a sort of painter's model ; one from which this or the other particular feature may be selected and turned to account ; had I intended more, above all, such a boldness as portraying the entire man, I should not have talked about ' handfuls of silver and bits of ribbon.' These never influenced the change of politics in the great poet, whose defection, nevertheless, accompanied as it was by a regular face-about of his special party, was to my juvenile apprehension, and even mature consideration, an event to deplore. But just as in the tapestry on my wall I can recognize figures which have *struck out* a fancy, on occasion, that though truly enough thus derived, yet would be preposterous as a copy, so, though I dare not deny the original of my little poem, I altogether refuse to have it considered as the ' very effigies' of such a moral and intellectual superiority.

" Faithfully yours,

" ROBERT BROWNING."

JUST for a handful of silver he left us,

Just for a riband to stick in his coat —

Found the one gift of which fortune bereft us,

Lost all the others she lets us devote ;

They, with the gold to give, doled him out silver,

So much was theirs who so little allowed :

How all our copper had gone for his service !

Rags — were they purple, his heart had been proud !

We that had loved him so, followed him, honored him,

Lived in his mild and magnificent eye,

Learned his great language, caught his clear accents,

Made him our pattern to live and to die !

Shakespeare was of us, Milton was of us,

Burns, Shelley, were with us, — they watch from their graves !

He alone breaks from the van and the freemen,

— He alone sinks to the rear and the slaves !

We shall march prospering, — not through his presence ;

Songs may inspirit us, — not from his lyre ;  
Deeds will be done, — while he boasts his quiescence,

Still bidding crouch whom the rest bade aspire :

Blot out his name, then, record one lost soul more,

One task more declined, one more footpath untrod,

One more devils'-triumph and sorrow for angels,

One wrong more to man, one more insult to God !

Life's night begins : let him never come back to us !

There would be doubt, hesitation and pain,  
Forced praise on our part — the glimmer of twilight,

Never glad confident morning again !

Best fight on well, for we taught him — strike gallantly,

Menace our heart ere we master his own ;  
Then let him receive the new knowledge and wait us,

Pardoned in heaven, the first by the throne !

# "HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD NEWS FROM GHENT TO AIX"

Browning wrote to an American inquirer about this poem : " There is no sort of historical foundation for the poem about ' Good News from Ghent.' I wrote it under the bulwark of a vessel, off the African coast, after I had been at sea long enough to appreciate even the fancy of a gallop on the back of a certain good horse ' York,' then in my stable at home. It was written in pencil on the fly-leaf of Bartoli's *Simboli*, I remember."

[16—]

I SPRANG to the stirrup, and Joris, and he ;  
I galloped, Dirck galloped, we galloped all three ;

" Good speed ! " cried the watch, as the gatebolts undrew ;

" Speed ! " echoed the wall to us galloping through ;

Behind shut the postern, the lights sank to rest,

And into the midnight we galloped abreast.

Not a word to each other ; we kept the great pace

Neck by neck, stride by stride, never changing our place ;

I turned in my saddle and made its girths tight,  
Then shortened each stirrup, and set the pique right,

Rebuckled the cheek-strap, chained slacker the bit,

Nor galloped less steadily Roland a whit.

'T was moonset at starting ; but while we drew  
 near  
 Lokeren, the cocks crew and twilight dawned  
 clear ;  
 At Boom, a great yellow star came out to see ;  
 At Düffeld, 't was morning as plain as could  
 be ;  
 And from Mecheln church-steeple we heard the  
 half-chime,  
 So Joris broke silence with, "Yet there is  
 time !"

At Aershot, up leaped of a sudden the sun,  
 And against him the cattle stood black every  
 one,  
 To stare through the mist at us galloping past,  
 And I saw my stout galloper Roland at last,  
 With resolute shoulders, each butting away  
 The haze, as some bluff river headland its spray :

And his low head and crest, just one sharp ear  
 bent back  
 For my voice, and the other pricked out on his  
 track ;  
 And one eye's black intelligence, — ever that  
 glance  
 O'er its white edge at me, his own master,  
 askance !  
 And the thick heavy spume-flakes which aye  
 and anon  
 His fierce lips shook upwards in galloping on.

By Hasselt, Dirck groaned ; and cried Joris,  
 "Stay spur !  
 Your Roos galloped bravely, the fault 's not in  
 her,  
 We'll remember at Aix" — for one heard the  
 quick wheeze  
 Of her chest, saw the stretched neck and stag-  
 gering knees,  
 And sunk tail, and horrible heave of the flank,  
 As down on her haunches she shuddered and  
 sank.

So, we were left galloping, Joris and I,  
 Past Looz and past Tongres, no cloud in the sky ;  
 The broad sun above laughed a pitiless laugh,  
 'Neath our feet broke the brittle bright stubble  
 like chaff ;  
 Till over by Dalhem a dome-spire sprang white,  
 And "Gallop," gasped Joris, "for Aix is in  
 sight !"

"How they'll greet us !" — and all in a moment  
 his roan  
 Rolled neck and croup over, lay dead as a stone ;  
 And there was my Roland to bear the whole  
 weight  
 Of the news which alone could save Aix from  
 her fate,  
 With his nostrils like pits full of blood to the  
 brim,  
 And with circles of red for his eye-sockets' rim.

Then I cast loose my buffcoat, each holster let  
 fall,  
 Shook off both my jack-boots, let go belt and all,

Stood up in the stirrup, leaned, patted his ear,  
 Called my Roland his pet-name, my horse with-  
 out peer ;  
 Clapped my hands, laughed and sang, any noise,  
 bad or good,  
 Till at length into Aix Roland galloped and  
 stood.

And all I remember is — friends flocking round  
 As I sat with his head 'twixt my knees on the  
 ground ;  
 And no voice but was praising this Roland of  
 mine,  
 As I poured down his throat our last measure  
 of wine,  
 Which (the burgesses voted by common consent)  
 Was no more than his due who brought good  
 news from Ghent.

## THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD-EL-KADR

As I ride, as I ride,  
 With a full heart for my guide,  
 So its tide rocks my side,  
 As I ride, as I ride,  
 That, as I were double-eyed,  
 He, in whom our Tribes confide,  
 Is desried, ways untried,  
 As I ride, as I ride.

As I ride, as I ride  
 To our Chief and his Allied,  
 Who dares chide my heart's pride  
 As I ride, as I ride ?  
 Or are witnesses denied —  
 Through the desert waste and wide  
 Do I glide unespied  
 As I ride, as I ride ?

As I ride, as I ride,  
 When an inner voice has cried,  
 The sands slide, nor abide  
 (As I ride, as I ride)  
 O'er each visioned homicide  
 That came vaunting (has he lied ?)  
 To reside — where he died,  
 As I ride, as I ride.

As I ride, as I ride,  
 Ne'er has spur my swift horse plied,  
 Yet his hide, streaked and pied,  
 As I ride, as I ride,  
 Shows where sweat has sprung and dried,  
 — Zebra-footed, ostrich-thighed —  
 How has vied stride with stride  
 As I ride, as I ride !

As I ride, as I ride,  
 Could I loose what Fate has tied,  
 Ere I pried, she should hide  
 (As I ride, as I ride)  
 All that 's meant me — satisfied  
 When the Prophet and the Bride  
 Stop veins I'd have subside  
 As I ride, as I ride !

## NATIONALITY IN DRINKS

The first two of this group, under the titles *Claret* and *Tokay*, were published in *Hood's Magazine*, June, 1844, at the request of Richard Monckton Milnes, who was editing the magazine during Hood's illness. The third, first entitled *Beer*, was called out by the description of Nelson's coat at Greenwich, given by the captain of the vessel in which Browning was sailing to Italy.

## I

MY heart sank with our Claret-flask,  
Just now, beneath the heavy sedges  
That serve this pond's black face for mask;  
And still at yonder broken edges  
O' the hole, where up the bubbles glisten,  
After my heart I look and listen.

Our laughing little flask, compelled  
Through depth to depth more bleak and  
shady;  
As when, both arms beside her held,  
Feet straightened out, some gay French lady  
Is caught up from life's light and motion,  
And dropped into death's silent ocean!

## II

— Up jumped Tokay on our table,  
Like a pygmy castle-warder,  
Dwarfish to see, but stout and able,  
Arms and accoutrements all in order;  
And fierce he looked North, then, wheeling  
South,  
Blew with his bugle a challenge to Drouth,  
Cocked his flap-hat with the tosspot-feather,  
Twisted his thumb in his red moustache,  
Jingled his huge brass spurs together,  
Tightened his waist with its Buda sash,  
And then, with an impudence naught could  
abash,  
Shrugged his hump-shoulder, to tell the be-  
holder,  
For twenty such knaves he should laugh but  
the bolder:  
And so, with his sword-hilt gallantly jutting,  
And dexter-hand on his haunch abutting,  
Went the little man, Sir Ausbruch, strutting!

## III

— Here 's to Nelson's memory!  
'T is the second time that I, at sea,  
Right off Cape Trafalgar here,  
Have drunk it deep in British Beer.  
Nelson forever — any time  
Am I his to command in prose or rhyme!  
Give me of Nelson only a touch,  
And I save it, be it little or much:  
Here 's one our Captain gives, and so  
Down at the word, by George, shall it go!  
He says that at Greenwich they point the be-  
holder  
To Nelson's coat, "still with tar on the shoulder:

For he used to lean with one shoulder digging,  
Jigging, as it were, and zig-zag-zigging  
Up against the mizzen-rigging!"

## GARDEN FANCIES

These two poems also appeared in *Hood's Magazine*, July, 1844.

## I. THE FLOWER'S NAME

HERE 's the garden she walked across,  
Arm in my arm, such a short while since:  
Hark, now I push its wicket, the moss  
Hinders the hinges and makes them wince!  
She must have reached this shrub ere she turned,  
As back with that murmur the wicket swung;  
For she laid the poor snail, my chance foot  
spurned,  
To feed and forget it the leaves among.

Down this side of the gravel-walk  
She went while her robe's edge brushed the  
box:  
And here she paused in her gracious talk  
To point me a moth on the milk-white phlox.  
Roses, ranged in valiant row,  
I will never think that she passed you by!  
She loves you, noble roses, I know;  
But yonder, see, where the rock-plants lie!

This flower she stopped at, finger on lip,  
Stooped over, in doubt, as settling its claim;  
Till she gave me, with pride to make no slip,  
Its soft meandering Spanish name:  
What a name! Was it love or praise?  
Speech half-asleep or song half-awake?  
I must learn Spanish, one of these days,  
Only for that slow sweet name's sake.

Roses, if I live and do well,  
I may bring her, one of these days,  
To fix you fast with as fine a spell,  
Fit you each with his Spanish phrase;  
But do not detain me now; for she lingers  
There, like sunshine over the ground,  
And ever I see her soft white fingers  
Searching after the bud she found.

Flower, you Spaniard, look that you grow not,  
Stay as you are and be loved forever!  
Bud, if I kiss you 't is that you blow not,  
Mind, the shut pink mouth opens never!  
For while it pouts, her fingers wrestle,  
Twinkling the audacious leaves between,  
Till round they turn and down they nestle —  
Is not the dear mark still to be seen?

Where I find her not, beauties vanish;  
Whither I follow her, beauties flee;  
Is there no method to tell her in Spanish  
June's twice June since she breathed it with  
me?  
Come, bud, show me the least of her traces,  
Treasure my lady's lightest footfall!  
— Ah, you may flout and turn up your faces —  
Roses, you are not so fair after all!



II. SIBRANDUS SCHAFNABURGENSIS

Plague take all your pedants, say I !

He who wrote what I hold in my hand,  
Centuries back was so good as to die,  
Leaving this rubbish to cumber the land ;  
This, that was a book in its time,  
Printed on paper and bound in leather,  
Last month in the white of a matin-prime,  
Just when the birds sang all together.

Into the garden I brought it to read,  
And under the arbut and laurustine  
Read it, so help me grace in my need,  
From title-page to closing line.  
Chapter on chapter did I count,  
As a curious traveller counts Stonehenge ;  
Added up the mortal amount ;  
And then proceeded to my revenge.

Yonder 's a plum-tree with a crevice  
An owl would build in, were he but sage ;  
For a lap of moss, like a fine pont-levis  
In a castle of the Middle Age,  
Joins to a lip of gum, pure amber ;  
When he 'd be private, there might he spend  
Hours alone in his lady's chamber :  
Into this crevice I dropped our friend.

Splash, went he, as under he ducked,  
— At the bottom, I knew, rain-drippings  
stagnate ;  
Next, a handful of blossoms I plucked  
To bury him with, my bookshelf's magnate ;  
Then I went in-doors, brought out a loaf,  
Half a cheese, and a bottle of Chablis ;  
Lay on the grass and forgot the oaf  
Over a jolly chapter of Rabelais.

Now, this morning, betwixt the moss  
And gum that locked our friend in limbo,  
A spider had spun his web across,  
And sat in the midst with arms akimbo :  
So, I took pity, for learning's sake,  
And, *de profundis, accentibus letis*,  
*Cantate!* quoth I, as I got a rake ;  
And up I fished his delectable treatise.

Here you have it, dry in the sun,  
With all the binding all of a blister,  
And great blue spots where the ink has run,  
And reddish streaks that wink and glisten  
O'er the page so beautifully yellow :  
Oh, well have the droppings played their  
tricks !  
Did he guess how toadstools grow, this fel-  
low ?  
Here 's one stuck in his chapter six !

How did he like it when the live creatures  
Tickled and toused and browsed him all  
over,  
And worm, slug, eft, with serious features,  
Came in, each one, for his right of trover ?  
— When the water-beetle with great blind deaf  
face  
Made of her eggs the stately deposit,

And the newt borrowed just so much of the  
preface  
As tiled in the top of his black wife's closet ?

All that life and fun and romping,  
All that frisking and twisting and coupling,  
While slowly our poor friend's leaves were  
swamping  
And clasps were cracking and covers suppling !  
As if you had carried sour John Knox  
To the play-house at Paris, Vienna or Munich,  
Fastened him into a front-row box,  
And danced off the ballet with trousers and  
tunic.

Come, old martyr ! What, torment enough is it ?  
Back to my room shall you take your sweet  
self.  
Good-bye, mother-beetle ; husband-*eft*, *sufficit!*  
See the snug niche I have made on my shelf !  
A's book shall prop you up, B's shall cover you.  
Here 's C to be grave with, or D to be gay,  
And with E on each side, and F right over you,  
Dry-rot at ease till the Judgment-day !

SOLILOQUY OF THE SPANISH  
CLOISTER

When first printed in *Bells and Pome-  
granates*, this poem was the second of a group  
of two bearing the general title *Camp and  
Cloister*, the first of the two being *Incident of  
the French Camp*.

GR-R-R — there go, my heart's abhorrence !  
Water your damned flower-pots, do !  
If hate killed men, Brother Lawrence,  
God's blood, would not mine kill you !  
What ? your myrtle-bush wants trimming ?  
Oh, that rose has prior claims —  
Needs its leaden vase filled brimming ?  
Hell dry you up with its flames !

At the meal we sit together :  
*Salve tibi!* I must hear  
Wise talk of the kind of weather,  
Sort of season, time of year :  
*Not a plenteous cork-crop : scarcely  
Dare we hope oak-galls, I doubt ;  
What 's the Latin name for "parsley" ?  
What 's the Greek name for Swine's Snout ?*

Whew ! We 'll have our platter burnished,  
Laid with care on our own shelf !  
With a fire-new spoon we 're furnished,  
And a goblet for ourself,  
Rinsed like something sacrificial  
Ere 't is fit to touch our chaps —  
Marked with L for our initial !  
(He-he ! There his lily snaps !)

*Saint*, forsooth ! While brown Dolores  
Squats outside the Convent bank  
With Sanchicha, telling stories,  
Steeping tresses in the tank,  
Blue-black, lustrous, thick like horsehairs,  
— Can't I see his dead eye glow,

Bright as 't were a Barbary corsair's?  
(That is, if he 'd let it show!)

When he finishes refection,  
Knife and fork he never lays  
Cross-wise, to my recollection,  
As do I, in Jesu's praise.  
I the Trinity illustrate,  
Drinking watered orange-pulp —  
In three sips the Arian frustrate;  
While he drains his at one gulp.

Oh, those melons! If he 's able  
We 're to have a feast! so nice!  
One goes to the Abbot's table,  
All of us get each a slice.  
How go on your flowers? None double?  
Not one fruit-sort can you spy?  
Strange! — And I, too, at such trouble  
Keep them close-nipped on the sly!

There's a great text in Galatians,  
Once you trip on it, entails  
Twenty-nine distinct damnations,  
One sure, if another fails:  
If I trip him just a-dying,  
Sure of heaven as sure can be,  
Spin him round and send him flying  
Off to hell, a Manichee?

Or, my serofulous French novel  
On gray paper with blunt type!  
Simply glance at it, you grovel  
Hand and foot in Belial's gripe:  
If I double down its pages  
At the woeful sixteenth print,  
When he gathers his greengages,  
Ope a sieve and slip it in 't?

Or, there 's Satan! — one might venture  
Pledge one's soul to him, yet leave  
Such a flaw in the indenture  
As he 'd miss till, past retrieve,  
Blasted lay that rose-acacia  
We 're so proud of! *Hy, Zy, Hine . . .*  
'St, there 's Vespers! *Plena gratiâ,*  
*Ave, Virgo!* Gr-r-r — you swine!

## THE LABORATORY

### ANCIEN RÉGIME

Published first in *Hood's Magazine*, June, 1844. In *Bells and Pomegranates* it was grouped with *The Confessional* under the title *France and Spain*.

Now that I, tying thy glass mask tightly,  
May gaze through these faint smokes curling  
whitely,  
As thou pliest thy trade in this devil's-smithy —  
Which is the poison to poison her, prithee?

He is with her, and they know that I know  
Where they are, what they do: they believe  
my tears flow

While they laugh, laugh at me, at me fled to  
the drear  
Empty church, to pray God in, for them! — I  
am here.

Grind away, moisten and mash up thy paste,  
Pound at thy powder, — I am not in haste!  
Better sit thus, and observe thy strange things,  
Than go where men wait me and dance at the  
King's.

That in the mortar — you call it a gum?  
Ah, the brave tree whence such gold ooings  
come!  
And yonder soft phial, the exquisite blue,  
Sure to taste sweetly, — is that poison too?

Had I but all of them, thee and thy treasures,  
What a wild crowd of invisible pleasures!  
To carry pure death in an earring, a casket,  
A signet, a fan-mount, a filigree basket!

Soon, at the King's, a mere lozenge to give,  
And Pauline should have just thirty minutes to  
live!  
But to light a pastile, and Elise, with her head  
And her breast and her arms and her hands,  
should drop dead!

Quick — is it finished? The color 's too grim!  
Why not soft like the phial's, enticing and  
dim?  
Let it brighten her drink, let her turn it and  
stir,  
And try it and taste, ere she fix and prefer!

What a drop! She 's not little, no minion like  
me!  
That 's why she ensnared him: this never will  
free  
The soul from those masculine eyes, — say,  
"no!"  
To that pulse's magnificent come-and-go.

For only last night, as they whispered, I brought  
My own eyes to bear on her so, that I thought  
Could I keep them one half minute fixed, she  
would fall  
Shrivelled; she fell not; yet this does it all!

Not that I bid you spare her the pain;  
Let death be felt and the proof remain:  
Brand, burn up, bite into its grace —  
He is sure to remember her dying face!

Is it done? Take my mask off! Nay, be not  
morose;  
It kills her, and this prevents seeing it close:  
'The delicate droplet, my whole fortune's fee!  
If it hurts her, beside, can it ever hurt me?

Now, take all my jewels, gorge gold to your  
fill,  
You may kiss me, old man, on my mouth if you  
will!  
But brush this dust off me, lest horror it brings  
Ere I know it — next moment I dance at the  
King's!

## THE CONFESSIONAL

## SPAIN

It is a lie — their Priests, their Pope,  
 Their Saints, their . . . all they fear or hope  
 Are lies, and lies — there! through my door  
 And ceiling, there! and walls and floor,  
 There, lies, they lie — shall still be hurled  
 Till spite of them I reach the world!

You think Priests just and holy men!  
 Before they put me in this den  
 I was a human creature too,  
 With flesh and blood like one of you,  
 A girl that laughed in beauty's pride  
 Like lilies in your world outside.

I had a lover — shame avaunt!  
 This poor wrenched body, grim and gaunt,  
 Was kissed all over till it burned,  
 By lips the truest, love e'er turned  
 His heart's own tint: one night they kissed  
 My soul out in a burning mist.

So, next day when the accustomed train  
 Of things grew round my sense again,  
 "That is a sin," I said: and slow  
 With downcast eyes to church I go,  
 And pass to the confession-chair,  
 And tell the old mild father there.

But when I falter Beltran's name,  
 "Ha!" quoth the father; "much I blame  
 The sin; yet wherefore idly grieve?  
 Despair not — strenuously retrieve!  
 Nay, I will turn this love of thine  
 To lawful love, almost divine;

"For he is young, and led astray,  
 This Beltran, and he schemes, men say,  
 To change the laws of church and state;  
 So, thine shall be an angel's fate,  
 Who, ere the thunder breaks, should roll  
 Its cloud away and save his soul.

"For, when he lies upon thy breast,  
 Thou mayest demand and be possessed  
 Of all his plans, and next day steal  
 To me, and all those plans reveal,  
 That I and every priest, to purge  
 His soul, may fast and use the scourge."

That father's beard was long and white,  
 With love and truth his brow seemed bright;  
 I went back, all on fire with joy,  
 And, that same evening, bade the boy  
 Tell me, as lovers should, heart-free,  
 Something to prove his love of me.

He told me what he would not tell  
 For hope of heaven or fear of hell;  
 And I lay listening in such pride!  
 And, soon as he had left my side,  
 Tripped to the church by morning-light  
 To save his soul in his despite.

I told the father all his schemes,  
 Who were his comrades, what their dreams;  
 "And now make haste," I said, "to pray  
 The one spot from his soul away;  
 To-night he comes, but not the same  
 Will look!" At night he never came.

Nor next night: on the after-morn,  
 I went forth with a strength new-born.  
 The church was empty; something drew  
 My steps into the street; I knew  
 It led me to the market-place:  
 Where, lo, on high, the father's face!

That horrible black scaffold dressed,  
 That stapled block . . . God sink the rest!  
 That head strapped back, that blinding vest,  
 Those knotted hands and naked breast,  
 Till near one busy hangman pressed,  
 And, on the neck these arms caressed . . .

No part in aught they hope or fear!  
 No heaven with them, no hell! — and here,  
 No earth, not so much space as pens  
 My body in their worst of dens  
 But shall bear God and man my cry,  
 Lies — lies, again — and still, they lie!

## CRISTINA

In *Bells and Pomegranates*, this poem was  
 the second of a group headed *Queen-Worship*,  
 the first being *Rudel and the Lady of Tripoli*.

SHE should never have looked at me  
 If she meant I should not love her!  
 There are plenty . . . men, you call such,  
 I suppose . . . she may discover  
 All her soul to, if she pleases,  
 And yet leave much as she found them:  
 But I'm not so, and she knew it  
 When she fixed me, glancing round them.

What? To fix me thus meant nothing?  
 But I can't tell (there's my weakness)  
 What her look said! — no vile cant, sure,  
 About "need to strew the bleakness  
 Of some lone shore with its pearl-seed,  
 That the sea feels" — no "strange yearning  
 That such souls have, most to lavish  
 Where there's chance of least returning."

Oh, we're sunk enough here. God knows!  
 But not quite so sunk that moments,  
 Sure though seldom, are denied us,  
 When the spirit's true endowments  
 Stand out plainly from its false ones,  
 And apprise it if pursuing  
 Or the right way or the wrong way,  
 To its triumph or undoing.

There are flashes struck from midnights,  
 There are fire-flames noondays kindle,  
 Whereby piled-up honors perish,  
 Whereby swollen ambitions dwindle,



While just this or that poor impulse,  
Which for once had play unstifled,  
Seems the sole work of a lifetime,  
That away the rest have trifled.

Doubt you if, in some such moment,  
As she fixed me, she felt clearly,  
Ages past the soul existed,  
Here an age 't is resting merely,  
And hence fleets again for ages,  
While the true end, sole and single,  
It stops here for is, this love-way,  
With some other soul to mingle?

Else it loses what it lived for,  
And eternally must lose it;  
Better ends may be in prospect,  
Deeper blisses (if you choose it),  
But this life's end and this love-bliss  
Have been lost here. Doubt you whether  
This she felt as, looking at me,  
Mine and her souls rushed together?

Oh, observe! Of course, next moment,  
The world's honors, in derision,  
Trampled out the light forever:  
Never fear but there 's provision  
Of the devil's to quench knowledge  
Lest we walk the earth in rapture!  
— Making those who catch God's secret  
Just so much more prize their capture!

Such am I: the secret 's mine now!  
She has lost me, I have gained her;  
Her soul 's mine: and thus, grown perfect,  
I shall pass my life's remainder.  
Life will just hold out the proving  
Both our powers, alone and blended:  
And then, come the next life quickly!  
This world's use will have been ended.

#### THE LOST MISTRESS

ALL 's over, then: does truth sound bitter  
As one at first believes?  
Hark, 't is the sparrows' good-night twitter  
About your cottage eaves!

And the leaf-buds on the vine are woolly.  
I noticed that, to-day;  
One day more bursts them open fully  
— You know the red turns gray.

To-morrow we meet the same then, dearest?  
May I take your hand in mine?  
Mere friends are we, — well, friends the merest  
Keep much that I resign:

For each glance of the eye so bright and black  
Though I keep with heart's endeavor, —  
Your voice, when you wish the snowdrops back,  
Though it stay in my soul forever! —

Yet I will but say what mere friends say,  
Or only a thought stronger;  
I will hold your hand but as long as all may,  
Or so very little longer!

#### EARTH'S IMMORTALITIES

##### FAME

SEE, as the prettiest graves will do in time,  
Our poet's wants the freshness of its prime;  
Spite of the sexton's browsing horse, the sods  
Have struggled through its binding osier rods;  
Headstone and half-sunk footstone lean awry,  
Wanting the brick-work promised by-and-by;  
How the minute gray lichens, plate o'er plate,  
Have softened down the crisp-cut name and date!

##### LOVE

So, the year 's done with!  
(*Love me forever!*)  
All March begun with,  
April's endeavor;  
May-wreaths that bound me  
June needs must sever;  
Now snows fall round me,  
Quenching June's fever —  
(*Love me forever!*)

##### MEETING AT NIGHT

This and its companion piece were published  
originally simply as *Night and Morning*.

THE gray sea and the long black land;  
And the yellow half-moon large and low;  
And the startled little waves that leap  
In fiery ringlets from their sleep,  
As I gain the cove with pushing prow,  
And quench its speed i' the slushy sand.

Then a mile of warm sea-scented beach;  
Three fields to cross till a farm appears;  
A tap at the pane, the quick sharp scratch  
And blue spurt of a lighted match,  
And a voice less loud, through its joys and  
fears,  
Than the two hearts beating each to each!

##### PARTING AT MORNING

ROUND the cape of a sudden came the sea,  
And the sun looked over the mountain's rim:  
And straight was a path of gold for him,  
And the need of a world of men for me.

##### SONG

NAY but you, who do not love her,  
Is she not pure gold, my mistress?  
Holds earth aught — speak truth — above her?  
Aught like this tress, see, and this tress,  
And this last fairest tress of all,  
So fair, see, ere I let it fall?

Because you spend your lives in praising;  
To praise, you search the wide world over:

Then why not witness, calmly gazing,  
 If earth holds aught—speak truth—above  
 her?  
 Above this tress, and this, I touch  
 But cannot praise, I love so much!

## A WOMAN'S LAST WORD

LET 's contend no more, Love,  
 Strive nor weep:  
 All be as before, Love,  
 — Only sleep!

What so wild as words are?  
 I and thou  
 In debate, as birds are,  
 Hawk on bough!

See the creature stalking  
 While we speak!  
 Hush and hide the talking,  
 Cheek on cheek!

What so false as truth is,  
 False to thee?  
 Where the serpent's tooth is  
 Shun the tree—

Where the apple reddens  
 Never pry—  
 Lest we lose our Edens,  
 Eve and I.

Be a god and hold me  
 With a charm!  
 Be a man and fold me  
 With thine arm!

Teach me, only teach, Love!  
 As I ought  
 I will speak thy speech, Love,  
 Think thy thought—

Meet, if thou require it,  
 Both demands,  
 Laying flesh and spirit  
 In thy hands.

That shall be to-morrow,  
 Not to-night:  
 I must bury sorrow  
 Out of sight:

— Must a little weep, Love,  
 (Foolish me!)  
 And so fall asleep, Love,  
 Loved by thee.

## EVELYN HOPE

BEAUTIFUL Evelyn Hope is dead!  
 Sit and watch by her side an hour.  
 That is her book-shelf, this her bed;  
 She plucked that piece of geranium-flower,  
 Beginning to die too, in the glass;  
 Little has yet been changed, I think:

The shutters are shut, no light may pass  
 Save two long rays through the hinge's chink.

Sixteen years old when she died!  
 Perhaps she had scarcely heard my name;  
 It was not her time to love; beside,  
 Her life had many a hope and aim,  
 Duties enough and little cares,  
 And now was quiet, now astir,  
 Till God's hand beckoned unawares, —  
 And the sweet white brow is all of her.

Is it too late then, Evelyn Hope?  
 What, your soul was pure and true,  
 The good stars met in your horoscope,  
 Made you of spirit, fire and dew—  
 And, just because I was thrice as old  
 And our paths in the world diverged so wide,  
 Each was naught to each, must I be told?  
 We were fellow mortals, naught beside?

No, indeed! for God above  
 Is great to grant, as mighty to make,  
 And creates the love to reward the love:  
 I claim you still, for my own love's sake!  
 Delayed it may be for more lives yet,  
 Through worlds I shall traverse, not a few:  
 Much is to learn, much to forget  
 Ere the time be come for taking you.

But the time will come, — at last it will,  
 When, Evelyn Hope, what meant (I shall say)  
 In the lower earth, in the years long still,  
 That body and soul so pure and gay?  
 Why your hair was amber, I shall divine,  
 And your mouth of your own geranium's  
 red—  
 And what you would do with me, in fine,  
 In the new life come in the old one's stead.

I have lived (I shall say) so much since then,  
 Given up myself so many times,  
 Gained me the gains of various men,  
 Ransacked the ages, spoiled the climes;  
 Yet one thing, one, in my soul's full scope,  
 Either I missed or itself missed me:  
 And I want and find you, Evelyn Hope!  
 What is the issue? let us see!

I loved you, Evelyn, all the while!  
 My heart seemed full as it could hold;  
 There was place and to spare for the frank  
 young smile,  
 And the red young mouth, and the hair's  
 young gold.  
 So, hush, — I will give you this leaf to keep:  
 See, I shut it inside the sweet cold hand!  
 There, that is our secret: go to sleep!  
 You will wake, and remember, and under-  
 stand.

## LOVE AMONG THE RUINS

WHERE the quiet-colored end of evening smiles  
 Miles and miles  
 On the solitary pastures where our sheep  
 Half-asleep

Tinkle homeward through the twilight, stray  
or stop

As they crop —

Was the site once of a city great and gay,

(So they say)

Of our country's very capital, its prince

Ages since

Held his court in, gathered councils, wielding far  
Peace or war.

Now, — the country does not even boast a tree,  
As you see,

To distinguish slopes of verdure, certain rills  
From the hills

Intersect and give a name to, (else they run  
Into one.)

Where the domed and daring palace shot its  
spires

Up like fires

O'er the hundred-gated circuit of a wall

Bounding all,

Made of marble, men might march on nor be  
pressed,

Twelve abreast.

And such plenty and perfection, see, of grass  
Never was!

Such a carpet as, this summer-time, o'erspreads  
And embeds

Every vestige of the city, guessed alone,  
Stock or stone —

Where a multitude of men breathed joy and woe  
Long ago;

Lust of glory pricked their hearts up, dread of  
shame

Struck them tame;

And that glory and that shame alike, the gold  
Bought and sold.

Now, — the single little turret that remains  
On the plains,

By the caper overrooted, by the gourd  
Overscored,

While the patching houseleek's head of blossom  
winks

Through the chinks —

Marks the basement whence a tower in ancient  
time

Sprang sublime,

And a burning ring, all round, the chariots  
traced

As they raced,

And the monarch and his minions and his  
dames

Viewed the games.

And I know, while thus the quiet-colored eve  
Smiles to leave

To their folding, all our many-tinkling fleece  
In such peace,

And the slopes and rills in undistinguished  
gray

Melt away —

That a girl with eager eyes and yellow hair  
Waits me there

In the turret whence the charioteers caught  
soul

For the goal,

When the king looked, where she looks now,  
breathless, dumb  
Till I come.

But he looked upon the city, every side,  
Far and wide,

All the mountains topped with temples, all the  
glades'

Colonnades,

All the causeys, bridges, aqueducts, — and then,  
All the men!

When I do come, she will speak not, she will  
stand,

Either hand

On my shoulder, give her eyes the first embrace  
Of my face,

Ere we rush, ere we extinguish sight and speech  
Each on each.

In one year they sent a million fighters forth

South and North,

And they built their gods a brazen pillar high

As the sky,

Yet reserved a thousand chariots in full force —  
Gold, of course.

Oh heart! oh blood that freezes, blood that  
burns!

Earth's returns

For whole centuries of folly, noise and sin!

Shut them in,

With their triumphs and their glories and the  
rest!

Love is best.

#### A LOVERS' QUARREL

OH, what a dawn of day!

How the March sun feels like May!

All is blue again

After last night's rain,

And the South dries the hawthorn-spray.

Only, my Love's a shadow!

I'd as lief that the blue were gray.

Runnels, which rilllets swell,

Must be dancing down the dell,

With a foaming head

On the beryl bed

Paven smooth as a hermit's cell;

Each with a tale to tell,

Could my Love but attend as well.

Dearest, three months ago!

When we lived blocked-up with snow, —

When the wind would edge

In and in his wedge,

In, as far as the point could go —

Not to our ingle, though,

Where we loved each the other so!

Laughs with so little cause!

We devised games out of straws,

We would try and trace

One another's face

In the ash, as an artist draws;

Free on each other's flaws,

How we chattered like two church-daws!



What 's in the "Times" ? — a scold  
 At the Emperor deep and cold ;  
     He has taken a bride  
     To his gruesome side,  
 That 's as fair as himself is bold :  
     There they sit ermine-stoled,  
 And she powders her hair with gold.

Fancy the Pampas' sheen !  
 Miles and miles of gold and green  
     Where the sunflowers blow  
     In a solid glow,  
 And — to break now and then the screen —  
     Black neck and eyeballs keen,  
 Up a wild horse leaps between !

Try, will our table turn ?  
 Lay your hands there light, and yearn  
     Till the yearning slips  
     Through the finger-tips  
 In a fire which a few discern,  
     And a very few feel burn,  
 And the rest, they may live and learn !

Then we would up and pace,  
 For a change, about the place,  
     Each with arm o'er neck :  
     'T is our quarter-deck,  
 We are seamen in woeful case,  
     Help in the ocean-space !  
 Or, if no help, we 'll embrace.

See, how she looks now, dressed  
 In a sledging-cap and vest !  
     'T is a huge fur cloak —  
     Like a reindeer's yoke  
 Falls the lappet along the breast :  
     Sleeves for her arms to rest,  
 Or to hang, as my Love likes best.

Teach me to flirt a fan  
 As the Spanish ladies can,  
     Or I tint your lip  
     With a burnt stick's tip  
 And you turn into such a man !  
     Just the two spots that span  
 Half the bill of the young male swan.

Dearest, three months ago  
 When the mesmerizer Snow  
     With his hand's first sweep  
     Put the earth to sleep :  
 'T was a time when the heart could show  
     All — how was earth to know,  
 'Neath the mute hand's to-and-fro ?

Dearest, three months ago  
 When we loved each other so,  
     Lived and loved the same  
     Till an evening came  
 When a shaft from the devil's bow  
     Pierced to our ingle-glow,  
 And the friends were friend and foe !

Not from the heart beneath —  
 'T was a bubble born of breath,  
     Neither sneer nor vaunt,  
     Nor reproach nor taunt.

See a word, how it severeth !  
     Oh, power of life and death  
 In the tongue, as the Preacher saith !

Woman, and will you cast  
 For a word, quite off at last  
     Me, your own, your You, —  
     Since, as truth is true,  
 I was You all the happy past —  
     Me do you leave aghast  
 With the memories We amassed ?

Love, if you knew the light  
 That your soul casts in my sight,  
     How I look to you  
     For the pure and true,  
 And the beauteous and the right, —  
     Bear with a moment's spite  
 When a mere mote threatens the white !

What of a hasty word ?  
 Is the fleshly heart not stirred  
     By a worm's pin-prick  
     Where its roots are quick ?  
 See the eye, by a fly's-foot blurred —  
     Ear, when a straw is heard  
 Scratch the brain's coat of curd !

Foul be the world or fair  
 More or less, how can I care ?  
     'T is the world the same  
     For my praise or blame,  
 And endurance is easy there.  
     Wrong in the one thing rare —  
 Oh, it is hard to bear !

Here 's the spring back or close,  
 When the almond-blossom blows ;  
     We shall have the word  
     In a minor third,  
 There is none but the cuckoo knows :  
     Heaps of the guelder-rose !  
 I must bear with it, I suppose.

Could but November come,  
 Were the noisy birds struck dumb  
     At the warning slash  
     Of his driver's-lash —  
 I would laugh like the valiant Thumb  
     Facing the castle glum  
 And the giant's fee-faw-fun !

Then, were the world well stripped  
 Of the gear wherein equipped  
     We can stand apart,  
     Heart dispense with heart  
 In the sun, with the flowers unripp'd, —  
     Oh, the world's hangings ripped,  
 We were both in a bare-walled crypt !

Each in the crypt would cry  
 " But one freezes here ! and why ?  
     When a heart, as chill,  
     At my own would thrill  
 Back to life, and its fires out-fly ?  
     Heart, shall we live or die ?  
 The rest, . . . settle by and by ! "

So, she 'd efface the score,  
And forgive me as before.  
It is twelve o'clock :  
I shall hear her knock  
In the worst of a storm's uproar,  
I shall pull her through the door,  
I shall have her for evermore !

# UP AT A VILLA — DOWN IN THE CITY

(AS DISTINGUISHED BY AN ITALIAN PERSON OF  
QUALITY)

HAD I but plenty of money, money enough and  
to spare,  
The house for me, no doubt, was a house in the  
city-square ;  
Ah, such a life, such a life, as one leads at the  
window there !

Something to see, by Bacchus, something to  
hear, at least !  
There, the whole day long, one's life is a perfect  
feast ;  
While up at a villa one lives, I maintain it, no  
more than a beast.

Well now, look at our villa ! stuck like the horn  
of a bull  
Just on a mountain-edge as bare as the crea-  
ture's skull,  
Save a mere shag of a bush with hardly a leaf  
to pull !  
— I scratch my own, sometimes, to see if the  
hair's turned wool.

But the city, oh the city — the square with the  
houses ! Why ?  
They are stone-faced, white as a curd, there's  
something to take the eye !  
Houses in four straight lines, not a single front  
awry ;  
You watch who crosses and gossips, who saun-  
ters, who hurries by ;  
Green blinds, as a matter of course, to draw  
when the sun gets high ;  
And the shops with fanciful signs which are  
painted properly.

What of a villa ? Though winter be over in  
March by rights,  
'Tis May perhaps ere the snow shall have with-  
ered well off the heights :  
You've the brown ploughed land before, where  
the oxen steam and wheeze,  
And the hills over-smoked behind by the faint  
gray olive-trees.

Is it better in May, I ask you ? You've sum-  
mer all at once ;  
In a day he leaps complete with a few strong  
April suns.  
'Mid the sharp short emerald wheat, scarce  
risen three fingers well,  
The wild tulip, at end of its tube, blows out its  
great red bell  
Like a thin clear bubble of blood, for the  
children to pick and sell.

Is it ever hot in the square ? There's a foun-  
tain to spout and splash !  
In the shade it sings and springs ; in the shine  
such foambows flash  
On the horses with curling fish-tails, that prance  
and paddle and pash  
Round the lady atop in her coach — fifty gazers  
do not abash,  
Though all that she wears is some weeds round  
her waist in a sort of sash.

All the year long at the villa, nothing to see  
though you linger,  
Except yon cypress that points like death's lean  
lifted forefinger.  
Some think fireflies pretty, when they mix i' the  
corn and mingle,  
Or thrid the stinking hemp till the stalks of it  
seem a-tingle.  
Late August or early September, the stunning  
cicala is shrill,  
And the bees keep their tiresome whine round  
the resinous firs on the hill.  
Enough of the seasons, — I spare you the  
months of the fever and chill.

Ere you open your eyes in the city, the blessed  
church-bells begin :  
No sooner the bells leave off than the diligence  
rattles in :  
You get the pick of the news, and it costs you  
never a pin.  
By and by there's the travelling doctor gives  
pills, lets blood, draws teeth ;  
Or the Pulcinello-trumpet breaks up the mar-  
ket beneath.  
At the post-office such a scene-picture — the  
new play, piping hot !  
And a notice how, only this morning, three  
liberal thieves were shot.  
Above it, behold the Archbishop's most fa-  
therly of rebukes,  
And beneath, with his crown and his lion, some  
little new law of the Duke's !  
Or a sonnet with flowery marge, to the Rever-  
end Don So-and-so,  
Who is Dante, Boccaccio, Petrarca, Saint Je-  
rome, and Cicero,  
" And moreover," (the sonnet goes rhyming,)  
" the skirts of Saint Paul has reached,  
Having preached us those six Lent-lectures more  
unctuous than ever he preached."  
Noon strikes, — here sweeps the procession !  
our Lady borne smiling and smart  
With a pink gauze gown all spangles, and seven  
swords stuck in her heart !  
*Bang-wang-wang* goes the drum, *tootle-te-*  
*tootle* the life ;  
No keeping one's haunches still : it's the great-  
est pleasure in life.

But bless you, it's dear — it's dear ! fowls,  
wine, at double the rate.  
They have clapped a new tax upon salt, and  
what oil pays passing the gate  
It's a horror to think of. And so, the villa for  
me, not the city !

Beggars can scarcely be choosers : but still —  
 ah, the pity, the pity !  
 Look, two and two go the priests, then the  
 monks with cows and sandals,  
 And the penitents dressed in white shirts,  
 a-holding the yellow candles ;  
 One, he carries a flag up straight, and another  
 a cross with handles,  
 And the Duke's guard brings up the rear, for  
 the better prevention of scandals :  
*Bang-whang-whang* goes the drum, *tootle-te-tootle*  
 the fife.  
 Oh, a day in the city-square, there is no such  
 pleasure in life !

## A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI'S

Published in *Men and Women* in 1855. An  
 American author, visiting Browning and his  
 wife at Casa Guidi in 1847, wrote of their occu-  
 pations : "Mrs. Browning," he said, "was still  
 too much of an invalid to walk, but she sat  
 under the great trees upon the lawn-like hill-  
 sides near the convent, or in the seats of the  
 dusky convent chapel, while Robert Browning  
 at the organ chased a fugue, or dreamed out  
 upon the twilight keys a faint throbbing *toccata*  
 of Galuppi."

Oh Galuppi, Baldassare, this is very sad to  
 find !

I can hardly misconceive you ; it would prove  
 me deaf and blind ;

But although I take your meaning, 't is with  
 such a heavy mind !

Here you come with your old music, and here 's  
 all the good it brings.

What, they lived once thus at Venice where  
 the merchants were the kings,

Where St. Mark's is, where the Doges used to  
 wed the sea with rings ?

Ay, because the sea's the street there ; and  
 't is arched by . . . what you call

. . . Shylock's bridge with houses on it, where  
 they kept the carnival :

I was never out of England — it's as if I saw it  
 all.

Did young people take their pleasure when the  
 sea was warm in May ?

Balls and masks begun at midnight, burning  
 ever to mid-day,

When they made up fresh adventures for the  
 morrow, do you say ?

Was a lady such a lady, cheeks so round and  
 lips so red, —

On her neck the small face buoyant, like a bell-  
 flower on its bed,

O'er the breast's superb abundance where a  
 man might base his head ?

Well, and it was graceful of them — they 'd  
 break talk off and afford

— She, to bite her mask's black velvet — he, to  
 finger on his sword,  
 While you sat and played Toccatas, stately at  
 the clavichord ?

What ? Those lesser thirds so plaintive, sixths  
 diminished, sigh on sigh,

Told them something ? Those suspensions,  
 those solutions — "Must we die ?"

Those commiserating sevenths — "Life might  
 last ! we can but try !"

"Were you happy ?" — "Yes." — "And are  
 you still as happy ?" — "Yes. And  
 you ?"

— "Then, more kisses !" — "Did I stop them,  
 when a million seemed so few ?"

Hark, the dominant's persistence till it must  
 be answered to !

So, an octave struck the answer. Oh, they  
 praised you, I dare say !

"Brave Galuppi ! that was music ! good alike  
 at grave and gay !

I can always leave off talking when I hear a  
 master play !"

Then they left you for their pleasure : till in  
 due time, one by one,

Some with lives that came to nothing, some  
 with deeds as well undone,

Death stepped tacitly and took them where  
 they never see the sun.

But when I sit down to reason, think to take  
 my stand nor swerve,

While I triumph o'er a secret wrung from na-  
 ture's close reserve,

In you come with your cold music till I creep  
 through every nerve.

Yes, you, like a ghostly cricket, creaking where  
 a house was burned :

"Dust and ashes, dead and done with, Venice  
 spent what Venice earned.

The soul, doubtless, is immortal — where a soul  
 can be discerned.

"Yours for instance : you know physics, some-  
 thing of geology,

Mathematics are your pastime ; souls shall rise  
 in their degree ;

Butterflies may dread extinction, — you 'll not  
 die, it cannot be !

"As for Venice and her people, merely born  
 to bloom and drop,

Here on earth they bore their fruitage, mirth  
 and folly were the crop :

What of soul was left, I wonder, when the kiss-  
 ing had to stop ?

"Dust and ashes !" So you creak it, and I  
 want the heart to scold.

Dear dead women, with such hair, too — what 's  
 become of all the gold

Used to hang and brush their bosoms ? I feel  
 chilly and grown old.



## OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE

THE morn when first it thunders in March,  
The eel in the pond gives a leap, they say :  
As I leaned and looked over the aloed arch  
Of the villa-gate this warm March day,  
No flash snapped, no dumb thunder rolled  
In the valley beneath where, white and wide  
And washed by the morning water-gold,  
Florence lay out on the mountain-side.

River and bridge and street and square  
Lay mine, as much at my beck and call,  
Through the live translucent bath of air,  
As the sights in a magic crystal ball.  
And of all I saw and of all I praised,  
The most to praise and the best to see,  
Was the startling bell-tower Giotto raised :  
But why did it more than startle me ?

Giotto, how, with that soul of yours,  
Could you play me false who loved you so ?  
Some slights if a certain heart endures  
Yet it feels, I would have your fellows know !  
I' faith, I perceive not why I should care  
To break a silence that suits them best,  
But the thing grows somewhat hard to bear  
When I find a Giotto join the rest.

On the arch where olives overhead  
Print the blue sky with twig and leaf,  
(That sharp-curved leaf which they never shed)  
'Twixt the aloes, I used to lean in chief,  
And mark through the winter afternoons,  
By a gift God grants me now and then,  
In the mild decline of those suns like moons,  
Who walked in Florence, besides her men.

They might chirp and chaffer, come and go  
For pleasure or profit, her men alive —  
My business was hardly with them, I trow,  
But with empty cells of the human hive ;  
— With the chapter-room, the cloister-porch,  
The church's apsis, aisle or nave,  
Its crypt, one fingers along with a torch,  
Its face set full for the sun to shave.

Wherever a fresco peels and drops,  
Wherever an outline weakens and wanes  
Till the latest life in the painting stops,  
Stands One whom each fainter pulse-tick  
pains :  
One, wishful each scrap should clutch the brick,  
Each tinge not wholly escape the plaster,  
— A lion who dies of an ass's kick,  
The wronged great soul of an ancient Master.

For oh, this world and the wrong it does !  
They are safe in heaven with their backs to  
it,  
The Michaels and Rafaels, you hum and buzz  
Round the works of, you of the little wit !  
Do their eyes contract to the earth's old scope,  
Now that they see God face to face,  
And have all attained to be poets, I hope ?  
'T is their holiday now, in any case.

Much they reckon of your praise and you !  
But the wronged great souls — can they be  
quit  
Of a world where their work is all to do,  
Where you style them, you of the little wit,  
Old Master This and Early the Other,  
Not dreaming that Old and New are fellows :  
A younger succeeds to an elder brother,  
Da Vincis derive in good time from Dellos.

And here where your praise might yield returns,  
And a handsome word or two give help,  
Here, after your kind, the mastiff grins  
And the puppy pack of poodles yelp.  
What, not a word for Stefano there,  
Of brow once prominent and starry,  
Called Nature's Ape, and the world's despair  
For his peerless painting ? (See Vasari.)

There stands the Master. Study, my friends,  
What a man's work comes to ! So he plans  
it,  
Performs it, perfects it, makes amends  
For the toiling and moiling, and then, *sic*  
*transit* !  
Happier the thrifty blind-folk labor,  
With upturned eye while the hand is busy,  
Not sidling a glance at the coin of their  
neighbor !  
'T is looking downward that makes one dizzy.

"If you knew their work you would deal your  
dole."  
May I take upon me to instruct you ?  
When Greek Art ran and reached the goal,  
Thus much had the world to boast in *fructu* —  
The Truth of Man, as by God first spoken,  
Which the actual generations garble,  
Was re-uttered, and Soul (which Limbs betoken)  
And Limbs (Soul informs) made new in  
marble.

So you saw yourself as you wished you were,  
As you might have been, as you cannot be ;  
Earth here, rebuked by Olympus there :  
And grew content in your poor degree  
With your little power, by those statues' god-  
head,  
And your little scope, by their eyes' full sway,  
And your little grace, by their grace embodied,  
And your little date, by their forms that stay.

You would fain be kinglier, say, than I am ?  
Even so, you will not sit like Theseus.  
You would prove a model ? The Son of Priam  
Has yet the advantage in arms' and knees'  
use.  
You're wroth — can you slay your snake like  
Apollo ?  
You're grieved — still Niobe's the grander !  
You live — there's the Racers' frieze to follow :  
You die — there's the dying Alexander.

So, testing your weakness by their strength,  
Your meagre charms by their rounded beauty,  
Measured by Art in your breadth and length,  
You learned — to submit is a mortal's duty.

— When I say “you” ’t is the common soul,  
The collective, I mean : the race of Man  
That receives life in parts to live in a whole,  
And grow here according to God’s clear plan.

Growth came when, looking your last on them  
all,

You turned your eyes inwardly one fine day  
And cried with a start — What if we so small  
Be greater and grander the while than they ?  
Are they perfect of lineament, perfect of stature ?

In both, of such lower types are we  
Precisely because of our wider nature ;  
For time, theirs — ours, for eternity.

To-day’s brief passion limits their range ;  
It seethes with the morrow for us and more.  
They are perfect — how else ? they shall never  
change :

We are faulty — why not ? we have time in  
store.

The Artificer’s hand is not arrested  
With us ; we are rough-hewn, nowise polished :

They stand for our copy, and, once invested  
With all they can teach, we shall see them  
abolished.

’T is a life-long toil till our lump be leaven —  
The better ! What’s come to perfection  
perishes.

Things learned on earth, we shall practise in  
heaven :

Works done least rapidly, Art most cherishes.  
Thyself shalt afford the example, Giotto !  
Thy one work, not to decrease or diminish.  
Done at a stroke, was just (was it not ?) “O !”  
Thy great Campanile is still to finish.

Is it true that we are now, and shall be here-  
after,

But what and where depend on life’s minute ?  
Hails heavenly cheer or infernal laughter  
Our first step out of the gulf or in it ?  
Shall Man, such step within his endeavor,  
Man’s face, have no more play and action  
Than joy which is crystallized forever,  
Or grief, an eternal petrification ?

On which I conclude, that the early painters,  
To cries of “Greek Art and what more wish  
you ?” —

Replied, “To become now self-acquainters,  
And paint man, man, whatever the issue !  
Make new hopes shine through the flesh they  
fray.

New fears aggrandize the rags and tatters :  
To bring the invisible full into play !  
Let the visible go to the dogs — what mat-  
ters ?”

Give these, I exhort you, their guerdon and  
glory

For daring so much, before they well did it.  
The first of the new, in our race’s story,  
Beats the last of the old ; ’t is no idle quiddit.  
The worthies began a revolution,

Which if on earth you intend to acknowledge,  
Why, honor them now ! (ends my allocution)  
Nor confer your degree when the folk leave  
college.

There’s a fancy some lean to and others hate —  
That, when this life is ended, begins  
New work for the soul in another state,  
Where it strives and gets weary, loses and  
wins :

Where the strong and the weak, this world’s  
congeries,  
Repeat in large what they practised in small,  
Through life after life in unlimited series ;  
Only the scale’s to be changed, that’s all.

Yet I hardly know. When a soul has seen  
By the means of Evil that Good is best,  
And, through earth and its noise, what is  
heaven’s serene, —

When our faith in the same has stood the  
test —

Why, the child grown man, you burn the rod,  
The uses of labor are surely done ;  
There remaineth a rest for the people of God :  
And I have had troubles enough, for one.

But at any rate I have loved the season  
Of Art’s spring-birth so dim and dewy ;  
My sculptor is Nicolo the Pisan,  
My painter — who but Cimabue ?  
Nor ever was man of them all indeed,  
From these to Ghiberti and Ghirlandajo,  
Could say that he missed my critic-meed.  
So, now to my special grievance — heigh-ho !

Their ghosts still stand, as I said before,  
Watching each fresco flaked and rasped,  
Blocked up, knocked out, or whitewashed o’er :  
— No getting again what the church has  
grasped !

The works on the wall must take their chance ;  
“Works never conceded to England’s thick  
clime !”

(I hope they prefer their inheritance  
Of a bucketful of Italian quick-lime.)

When they go at length, with such a shaking  
Of heads o’er the old delusion, sadly  
Each master his way through the black streets  
taking,

Where many a lost work breathes though  
badly —  
Why don’t they bethink them of who has mer-  
ited ?

Why not reveal, while their pictures dree  
Such doom, how a captive might be out-ferreted ?  
Why is it they never remember me ?

Not that I expect the great Bigordi,  
Nor Sandro to hear me, chivalric, bellicose ;  
Nor the wronged Lippino ; and not a word I  
Say of a scrap of Frà Angelico’s :

But are you too fine, Taddeo Gaddi,  
To grant me a taste of your intonaco,  
Some Jerome that seeks the heaven with a sad  
eye ?

Not a churchly saint, Lorenzo Monaco ?

Could not the ghost with the close red cap,  
My Pollajolo, the twice a craftsman,  
Save me a sample, give me the hap  
Of a muscular Christ that shows the draughts-  
man?

No Virgin by him the somewhat petty,  
Of finical touch and tempera crumbly —  
Could not Alesso Baldovinetti  
Contribute so much, I ask him humbly?

Margheritone of Arezzo,  
With the grave-clothes garb and swaddling  
barret,

(Why purse up mouth and beak in a pet so,  
You bald old saturnine poll-clawed parrot?)  
Not a poor glimmering Crucifixion,  
Where in the foreground kneels the donor?  
If such remain, as is my conviction,  
The hoarding it does you but little honor.

They pass; for them the panels may thrill,  
The tempera grow alive and tinglysh;  
Their pictures are left to the mercies still  
Of dealers and stealers, Jews and the Eng-  
lish,  
Who, seeing mere money's worth in their prize,  
Will sell it to somebody calm as Zeno  
At naked High Art, and in ecstasies  
Before some clay-cold vile Carlino!

No matter for these! But Giotto, you,  
Have you allowed, as the town-tongues babble  
it, —

Oh, never! it shall not be counted true —  
That a certain precious little tablet  
Which Buonarroti eyed like a lover —  
Was buried so long in oblivion's womb  
And, left for another than I to discover,  
Turns up at last! and to whom? — to whom?

I, that have haunted the dim San Spirito,  
(Or was it rather the Ognissanti?)  
Patient on altar-step planting a weary toe!  
Nay, I shall have it yet! *Detur amanti!*  
My Koh-i-noor — or (if that's a platitude)  
Jewel of Giamschid, the Persian Sofi's eye;  
So, in anticipative gratitude,  
What if I take up my hope and prophesy?

When the hour grows ripe, and a certain do-  
tard  
Is pitched, no parcel that needs invoicing,  
To the worse side of the Mont St. Gothard,  
We shall begin by way of rejoicing;  
None of that shooting the sky (blank cartridge),  
Nor a civic guard, all plumes and lacquer,  
Hunting Radetzky's soul like a partridge  
Over Morello with squib and cracker.

This time we'll shoot better game and bag 'em  
hot —

No mere display at the stone of Dante,  
But a kind of sober Witanagemot  
(Ex: "Casa Guidi," *quod videas ante*)  
Shall ponder, once Freedom restored to Florence,  
How Art may return that departed with her.  
Go, hated house, go each trace of the Lorraine's,  
And bring us the days of Orgagna hither!

How we shall prologuize, how we shall perorate,  
Utter fit things upon art and history,  
Feel truth at blood-heat and falsehood at zero  
rate,

Make of the want of the age no mystery;  
Contrast the fructuous and sterile eras,  
Show — monarchy ever its uncouth cub licks  
Out of the bear's shape into Chimæra's,  
While Pure Art's birth is still the republic's.

Then one shall propose in a speech (curt Tuscan,  
Expurgate and sober, with scarcely an  
"issimo,")

To end now our half-told tale of Cambuscan.  
And turn the bell-tower's *alt* to *altissimo*:  
And fine as the beak of a young beccaccia  
The Campanile, the Duomo's fit ally,  
Shall soar up in gold full fifty braccia,  
Completing Florence, as Florence Italy.

Shall I be alive that morning the scaffold  
Is broken away, and the long-pent fire,  
Like the golden hope of the world, unbaffled  
Springs from its sleep, and up goes the spire  
While "God and the People" plain for its  
motto,

Thence the new tricolor flaps at the sky?  
At least to foresee that glory of Giotto  
And Florence together, the first am I!

"DE GUSTIBUS —"

YOUR ghost will walk, you lover of trees,  
(If our loves remain)  
In an English lane,  
By a cornfield-side a-flutter with poppies.  
Hark, those two in the hazel coppice —  
A boy and a girl, if the good fates please,  
Making love, say, —  
The happier they!

Draw yourself up from the light of the moon,  
And let them pass, as they will too soon,  
With the beanflowers' boon,  
And the blackbird's tune,  
And May, and June!

What I love best in all the world  
Is a castle, precipice-encurled,  
In a gash of the wind-grieved Apennine.  
Or look for me, old fellow of mine,  
(If I get my head from out the mouth  
Of the grave, and loose my spirit's bands,  
And come again to the land of lands) —  
In a sea-side house to the farther South,  
Where the baked cicala dies of drouth,  
And one sharp tree — 't is a cypress — stands,  
By the many hundred years red-rusted,  
Rough iron-spiked, ripe fruit-o'ercrusted,  
My sentinel to guard the sands  
To the water's edge. For, what expands  
Before the house, but the great opaque  
Blue breadth of sea without a break?  
While, in the house, forever crumbles  
Some fragment of the frescoed walls,  
From blisters where a scorpion sprawls.  
A girl bare-footed brings, and tumbles  
Down on the pavement, green-flesh melons,



And says there 's news to-day — the king  
Was shot at, touched in the liver-wing,  
Goes with his Bourbon arm in a sling:  
— She hopes they have not caught the felons.  
Italy, my Italy!

Queen Mary's saying serves for me —  
(When fortune's malice  
Lost her, Calais)

Open my heart and you will see  
Graved inside of it, "Italy."  
Such lovers old are I and she:  
So it always was, so shall ever be!

## HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM ABROAD

This and the following poem were first published along with *Beer*, which bore the name *Here's to Nelson's Memory*, under the general heading *Home-Thoughts, from Abroad*. The final member of the group, *Home-Thoughts, from the Sea*, was written under the same circumstances as the poem, *How They brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix*.

OH, to be in England  
Now that April's there,  
And whoever wakes in England  
Sees, some morning, unaware,  
That the lowest boughs and the brush-wood  
sheaf  
Round the elm-tree bole are in tiny leaf,  
While the chaffinch sings on the orchard bough  
In England — now!

And after April, when May follows,  
And the whitethroat builds, and all the swallows!  
Hark, where my blossomed pear-tree in the hedge  
Leans to the field and scatters on the clover  
Blossoms and dewdrops — at the bent spray's edge —  
That's the wise thrush; he sings each song  
twice over,  
Lest you should think he never could recapture  
The first fine careless rapture!  
And though the fields look rough with hoary  
dew,  
All will be gay when noontide wakes anew  
The buttercups, the little children's dower  
— Far brighter than this gaudy melon-flower!

## HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM THE SEA

NOBLY, nobly Cape Saint Vincent to the North-  
west died away;  
Sunset ran, one glorious blood-red, reeking into  
Cadiz Bay;  
Bluish 'mid the burning water, full in face Tra-  
falgar lay;  
In the dimmest Northeast distance dawned  
Gibraltar grand and gray;  
"Here and here did England help me; how can  
I help England?" — say,

Whoso turns as I, this evening, turn to God to  
praise and pray,  
While Jove's planet rises yonder, silent over  
Africa.

## SAUL

The first nine sections of this poem were printed under the same title in No. VII. of *Bells and Pomegranates*, in 1845. The poem as enlarged was published in *Men and Women* in 1855.

## I

SAID Abner, "At last thou art come! Ere I  
tell, ere thou speak,  
Kiss my cheek, wish me well!" Then I wished  
it, and did kiss his cheek.  
And he: "Since the King, O my friend, for thy  
countenance sent,  
Neither drunken nor eaten have we; nor until  
from his tent  
Thou return with the joyful assurance the King  
liveth yet,  
Shall our lip with the honey be bright, with the  
water be wet.  
For out of the black mid-tent's silence, a space  
of three days,  
Not a sound hath escaped to thy servants, of  
prayer nor of praise,  
To betoken that Saul and the Spirit have ended  
their strife,  
And that, faint in his triumph, the monarch  
sinks back upon life.

## II

"Yet now my heart leaps, O beloved! God's  
child with his dew  
On thy gracious gold hair, and those lilies still  
living and blue  
Just broken to twine round thy harp-strings, as  
if no wild heat  
Were now raging to torture the desert!"

## III

Then I, as was meet,  
Knelt down to the God of my fathers, and rose  
on my feet,  
And ran o'er the sand burnt to powder. The  
tent was unlooped;  
I pulled up the spear that obstructed, and  
under I stooped;  
Hands and knees on the slippery grass-patch,  
all withered and gone,  
That extends to the second enclosure, I groped  
my way on  
Till I felt where the foldskirts fly open. Then  
once more I prayed,  
And opened the foldskirts and entered, and was  
not afraid  
But spoke, "Here is David, thy servant!"  
And no voice replied.  
At the first I saw naught but the blackness:  
but soon I descried  
A something more black than the blackness —  
the vast, the upright  
Main prop which sustains the pavilion: and slow  
into sight

Grew a figure against it, gigantic and blackest of all.  
Then a sunbeam, that burst through the tent-roof, showed Saul.

## IV

He stood as erect as that tent-prop, both arms stretched out wide  
On the great cross-support in the centre, that goes to each side ;  
He relaxed not a muscle, but hung there as, caught in his pangs  
And waiting his change, the king-serpent all heavily hangs,  
Far away from his kind, in the pine, till deliverance come  
With the spring-time, — so agonized Saul, drear and stark, blind and dumb.

## V

Then I tuned my harp, — took off the lilies we twine round its chords  
Lest they snap 'neath the stress of the noontide — those sunbeams like swords !  
And I first played the tune all our sheep know, as, one after one,  
So docile they come to the pen-door till folding be done.  
They are white and untorn by the bushes, for lo, they have fed  
Where the long grasses stifle the water within the stream's bed ;  
And now one after one seeks its lodging, as star follows star  
Into eve and the blue far above us, — so blue and so far !

## VI

— Then the tune for which quails on the cornland will each leave his mate  
To fly after the player ; then, what makes the crickets elate  
Till for boldness they fight one another ; and then, what has weight  
To set the quick jerboa a-musing outside his sand house —  
There are none such as he for a wonder, half bird and half mouse !  
God made all the creatures and gave them our love and our fear,  
To give sign, we and they are his children, one family here.

## VII

Then I played the help-tune of our reapers, their wine-song, when hand  
Grasps at hand, eye lights eye in good friendship, and great hearts expand  
And grow one in the sense of this world's life.  
— And then, the last song  
When the dead man is praised on his journey —  
“ Bear, bear him along,  
With his few faults shut up like dead flowerets !  
Are balm seeds not here  
To console us ? The land has none left such as he on the bier.  
Oh, would we might keep thee, my brother ! ”  
— And then, the glad chaunt

Of the marriage, — first go the young maidens, next, she whom we vaunt  
As the beauty, the pride of our dwelling. — And then, the great march  
Wherein man runs to man to assist him and buttress an arch  
Naught can break ; who shall harm them, our friends ? Then, the chorus intoned  
As the Levites go up to the altar in glory enthroned.  
But I stopped here : for here in the darkness Saul groaned.

## VIII

And I paused, held my breath in such silence, and listened apart ;  
And the tent shook, for mighty Saul shuddered : and sparkles 'gan dart  
From the jewels that woke in his turban, at once with a start,  
All its lordly male-sapphires, and rubies courageous at heart.  
So the head : but the body still moved not, still hung there erect.  
And I bent once again to my playing, pursued it unchecked,  
As I sang : —

## IX

“ Oh, our manhood's prime vigor ! No spirit feels waste,  
Not a muscle is stopped in its playing nor sinew unbraced.  
Oh, the wild joys of living ! the leaping from rock up to rock,  
The strong rending of boughs from the fir-tree, the cool silver shock  
Of the plunge in a pool's living water, the hunt of the bear,  
And the sultriness showing the lion is couched in his lair.  
And the meal, the rich dates yellowed over with gold dust divine,  
And the locust-flesh steeped in the pitcher, the full draught of wine,  
And the sleep in the dried river-channel where bulrushes tell  
That the water was wont to go warbling so softly and well.  
How good is man's life, the mere living ! how fit to employ  
All the heart and the soul and the senses forever in joy !  
Hast thou loved the white locks of thy father, whose sword thou didst guard  
When he trusted thee forth with the armies, for glorious reward ?  
Didst thou see the thin hands of thy mother, held up as men sung  
The low song of the nearly-departed, and hear her faint tongue  
Joining in while it could to the witness, ‘ Let one more attest.  
I have lived, seen God's hand through a lifetime, and all was for best ’ ?  
Then they sung through their tears in strong triumph, not much, but the rest.

And thy brothers, the help and the contest, the  
working whence grew  
Such result as, from seething grape-bundles, the  
spirit strained true :  
And the friends of thy boyhood — that boyhood  
of wonder and hope.  
Present promise and wealth of the future beyond  
the eye's scope, —  
Till lo, thou art grown to a monarch ; a people  
is thine ;  
And all gifts, which the world offers singly, on  
one head combine !  
On one head, all the beauty and strength, love  
and rage (like the throe  
That, a-work in the rock, helps its labor and  
lets the gold go)  
High ambition and deeds which surpass it, fame  
crowning them, — all  
Brought to blaze on the head of one creature —  
King Saul ! ”

## X

And lo, with that leap of my spirit, — heart,  
hand, harp and voice,  
Each lifting Saul's name out of sorrow, each  
bidding rejoice  
Saul's fame in the light it was made for — as  
when, dare I say,  
The Lord's army, in rapture of service, strains  
through its array,  
And upsoareth the cherubim-chariot — “ Saul ! ”  
cried I, and stopped,  
And waited the thing that should follow. Then  
Saul, who hung propped  
By the tent's cross-support in the centre, was  
struck by his name.  
Have ye seen when Spring's arrowy summons  
goes right to the aim,  
And some mountain, the last to withstand her,  
that held (he alone,  
While the vale laughed in freedom and flowers)  
on a broad bust of stone  
A year's snow bound about for a breastplate, —  
leaves grasp of the sheet ?  
Fold on fold all at once it crowds thunderously  
down to his feet,  
And there fronts you, stark, black, but alive  
yet, your mountain of old,  
With his rents, the successive bequeathings of  
ages untold —  
Yea, each harm got in fighting your battles,  
each furrow and scar  
Of his head thrust 'twixt you and the tempest  
— all hail, there they are !  
— Now again to be softened with verdure, again  
hold the nest  
Of the dove, tempt the goat and its young to  
the green on his crest  
For their food in the ardors of summer. One  
long shudder thrilled  
All the tent till the very air tingled, then sank  
and was stilled  
At the King's self left standing before me, re-  
leased and aware.  
What was gone, what remained ? All to tra-  
verse 'twixt hope and despair.  
Death was past, life not come : so he waited.  
Awhile his right hand

Held the brow, helped the eyes left too vacant  
forthwith to remand  
To their place what new objects should enter :  
't was Saul as before.  
I looked up and dared gaze at those eyes, nor  
was hurt any more  
Than by slow pallid sunsets in autumn, ye  
watch from the shore,  
At their sad level gaze o'er the ocean — a sun's  
slow decline  
Over hills which, resolved in stern silence, o'er-  
lap and entwine  
Base with base to knit strength more intensely :  
so, arm folded arm  
O'er the chest whose slow heavings subsided.

## XI

What spell or what charm,  
(For awhile there was trouble within me,) what  
next should I urge  
To sustain him where song had restored him ?  
— Song filled to the verge  
His cup with the wine of this life, pressing all  
that it yields  
Of mere fruitage, the strength and the beauty :  
beyond, on what fields,  
Glean a vintage more potent and perfect to  
brighten the eye  
And bring blood to the lip, and commend them  
the cup they put by ?  
He saith, “ It is good ; ” still he drinks not : he  
lets me praise life,  
Gives assent, yet would die for his own part.

## XII

Then fancies grew rife  
Which had come long ago on the pasture, when  
round me the sheep  
Fed in silence — above, the one eagle wheeled  
slow as in sleep ;  
And I lay in my hollow and mused on the world  
that might lie  
'Neath his ken, though I saw but the strip  
'twixt the hill and the sky :  
And I laughed — “ Since my days are ordained  
to be passed with my flocks,  
Let me people at least, with my fancies, the  
plains and the rocks,  
Dream the life I am never to mix with, and  
image the show  
Of mankind as they live in those fashions I  
hardly shall know !  
Schemes of life, its best rules and right uses,  
the courage that gains,  
And the prudence that keeps what men strive  
for.” And now these old trains  
Of vague thought came again ; I grew surer ;  
so, once more the string  
Of my harp made response to my spirit, as  
thus —

## XIII

“ Yea, my King,”  
I began — “ thou dost well in rejecting mere  
comforts that spring  
From the mere mortal life held in common by  
man and by brute :  
In our flesh grows the branch of this life, in our  
soul it bears fruit.



Thou hast marked the slow rise of the tree, —  
 how its stem trembled first  
 Till it passed the kid's lip, the stag's antler;  
 then safely outburst  
 The fan-branches all round; and thou mindest  
 when these too, in turn,  
 Broke a-bloom and the palm-tree seemed perfect:  
 yet more was to learn,  
 E'en the good that comes in with the palm-fruit.  
 Our dates shall we slight,  
 When their juice brings a cure for all sorrow?  
 or care for the plight  
 Of the palm's self whose slow growth produced  
 them? Not so! stem and branch  
 Shall decay, nor be known in their place, while  
 the palm-wine shall stanch  
 Every wound of man's spirit in winter. I pour  
 thee such wine.  
 Leave the flesh to the fate it was fit for! the  
 spirit be thine!  
 By the spirit, when age shall o'ercome thee,  
 thou still shalt enjoy  
 More indeed, than at first when unconscious, the  
 life of a boy.  
 Crush that life, and behold its wine running!  
 Each deed thou hast done  
 Dies, revives, goes to work in the world; until  
 e'en as the sun  
 Looking down on the earth, though clouds  
 spoil him, though tempests efface,  
 Can find nothing his own deed produced not,  
 must everywhere trace  
 The results of his past summer-prime, — so,  
 each ray of thy will,  
 Every flash of thy passion and prowess, long  
 over, shall thrill  
 Thy whole people, the countless, with ardor,  
 till they too give forth  
 A like cheer to their sons, who in turn, fill the  
 South and the North  
 With the radiance thy deed was the germ of.  
 Carouse in the past!  
 But the license of age has its limit; thou diest  
 at last:  
 As the lion when age dims his eyeball, the rose  
 at her height,  
 So with man — so his power and his beauty for-  
 ever take flight.  
 No! Again a long draught of my soul-wine!  
 Look forth o'er the years!  
 Thou hast done now with eyes for the actual;  
 begin with the seer's!  
 Is Saul dead? In the depth of the vale make  
 his tomb — bid arise  
 A gray mountain of marble heaped four-square,  
 till, built to the skies,  
 Let it mark where the great First King slum-  
 bers: whose fame would ye know?  
 Up above see the rock's naked face, where  
 the record shall go  
 In great characters cut by the scribe, — Such  
 was Saul, so he did;  
 With the sages directing the work, by the popu-  
 lace child, —  
 For not half, they'll affirm, is comprised there!  
 Which fault to amend,  
 In the grove with his kind grows the cedar,  
 whereon they shall spend

(See, in tablets 't is level before them) their  
 praise, and record  
 With the gold of the graver, Saul's story,  
 the statesman's great word  
 Side by side with the poet's sweet comment.  
 The river's a-wave  
 With smooth paper-reeds grazing each other  
 when prophet-winds rave:  
 So the pen gives unborn generations their due  
 and their part  
 In thy being! Then, first of the mighty,  
 thank God that thou art!"

## XIV

And behold while I sang . . . but O Thou who  
 didst grant me that day,  
 And before it not seldom hast granted thy help  
 to essay,  
 Carry on and complete an adventure, — my  
 shield and my sword  
 In that act where my soul was thy servant.  
 thy word was my word, —  
 Still be with me, who then at the summit of  
 human endeavor  
 And scaling the highest, man's thought could,  
 gazed hopeless as ever  
 On the new stretch of heaven above me — till,  
 mighty to save,  
 Just one lift of thy hand cleared that distance  
 — God's throne from man's grave!  
 Let me tell out my tale to its ending — my  
 voice to my heart  
 Which can scarce dare believe in what marvels  
 last night I took part,  
 As this morning I gather the fragments, alone  
 with my sheep,  
 And still fear lest the terrible glory vanish  
 like sleep!  
 For I wake in the gray dewy covert, while  
 Hebron upheaves  
 The dawn struggling with night on his shoulder,  
 and Kidron retrieves  
 Slow the damage of yesterday's sunshine.

## XV

I say then, — my song  
 While I sang thus, assuring the monarch, and  
 ever more strong  
 Made a proffer of good to console him — he  
 slowly resumed  
 His old motions and habitudes kingly. The  
 right hand replumed  
 His black locks to their wonted composure, ad-  
 justed the swathes  
 Of his turban, and see — the huge sweat that  
 his countenance bathes,  
 He wipes off with the robe; and he girds now  
 his loins as of yore,  
 And feels slow for the armlets of price, with  
 the clasp set before.  
 He is Saul, ye remember in glory, — ere error  
 had bent  
 The broad brow from the daily communion:  
 and still, though much spent  
 Be the life and the bearing that front you, the  
 same, God did choose,  
 To receive what a man may waste, desecrate  
 never quite lose.

So sank he along by the tent-prop till, stayed  
by the pile  
Of his armor and war-cloak and garments, he  
leaned there awhile,  
And sat out my singing, — one arm round the  
tent-prop, to raise  
His bent head, and the other hung slack — till  
I touched on the praise  
I foresaw from all men in all time, to the man  
patient there;  
And thus ended, the harp falling forward.  
Then first I was 'ware  
That he sat, as I say, with my head just above  
his vast knees  
Which were thrust out on each side around  
me, like oak roots which please  
To encircle a lamb when it slumbers. I looked  
up to know  
If the best I could do had brought solace: he  
spoke not, but slow  
Lifted up the hand slack at his side, till he laid  
it with care  
Soft and grave, but in mild settled will, on my  
brow: through my hair  
The large fingers were pushed, and he bent  
back my head, with kind power —  
All my face back, intent to peruse it, as men do  
a flower.  
Thus held he me there with his great eyes that  
scrutinized mine —  
And oh, all my heart how it loved him! but  
where was the sign?  
I yearned — "Could I help thee, my father,  
inventing a bliss,  
I would add, to that life of the past, both the  
future and this;  
I would give thee new life altogether, as good,  
ages hence,  
As this moment, — had love but the warrant,  
love's heart to dispense!"

## XVI

Then the truth came upon me. No harp more  
— no song more! outbroke —

## XVII

"I have gone the whole round of creation: I  
saw and I spoke:  
I, a work of God's hand for that purpose, re-  
ceived in my brain  
And pronounced on the rest of his handwork —  
returned him again  
His creation's approval or censure: I spoke as  
I saw:  
I report, as a man may of God's work — all's  
love, yet all's law.  
Now I lay down the judgeship he lent me.  
Each faculty tasked  
To perceive him, has gained an abyss, where a  
dewdrop was asked.  
Have I knowledge? confounded it shrivels at  
Wisdom laid bare.  
Have I forethought? how purblind, how blank,  
to the Infinite Care!  
Do I task any faculty highest, to image suc-  
cess?  
I but open my eyes, — and perfection, no more  
and no less,

In the kind I imagined, full-fronts me, and  
God is seen God  
In the star, in the stone, in the flesh, in the  
soul and the clod.  
And thus looking within and around me, I ever  
renew  
(With that stoop of the soul which in bending  
upraises it too)  
The submission of man's nothing-perfect to  
God's all-complete,  
As by each new obeisance in spirit, I climb to  
his feet.  
Yet with all this abounding experience, this  
deity known,  
I shall dare to discover some province, some  
gift of my own.  
There's a faculty pleasant to exercise, hard to  
hoodwink,  
I am fain to keep still in abeyance, (I laugh as  
I think)  
Lest, insisting to claim and parade in it, wot ye,  
I worst  
E'en the Giver in one gift. — Behold, I could  
love if I durst!  
But I sink the pretension as fearing a man may  
o'ertake  
God's own speed in the one way of love: I ab-  
stain for love's sake.  
— What, my soul? see thus far and no farther?  
when doors great and small,  
Nine-and-ninety flew ope at our touch, should  
the hundredth appall?  
In the least things have faith, yet distrust in  
the greatest of all?  
Do I find love so full in my nature, God's ulti-  
mate gift,  
That I doubt his own love can compete with  
it? Here, the parts shift?  
Here, the creature surpass the Creator, — the  
end, what Began?  
Would I fain in my impotent yearning do all  
for this man,  
And dare doubt he alone shall not help him,  
who yet alone can?  
Would it ever have entered my mind, the bare  
will, much less power,  
To bestow on this Saul what I sang of, the  
marvellous dower  
Of the life he was gifted and filled with? to  
make such a soul,  
Such a body, and then such an earth for inspher-  
ing the whole?  
And doth it not enter my mind (as my warm  
tears attest)  
These good things being given, to go on, and  
give one more, the best?  
Ay, to save and redeem and restore him, main-  
tain at the height  
This perfection, — succeed with life's day-  
spring, death's minute of night?  
Interpose at the difficult minute, snatch Saul  
the mistake,  
Saul the failure, the ruin he seems now, — and  
bid him awake  
From the dream, the probation, the prelude, to  
find himself set  
Clear and safe in new light and new life, — a  
new harmony yet

To be run, and continued, and ended—who knows?—or endure!  
 The man taught enough by life's dream, of the rest to make sure;  
 By the pain-throb, triumphantly winning intensified bliss,  
 And the next world's reward and repose, by the struggles in this.

## XVIII

"I believe it! 'Tis thou, God, that givest,  
 't is I who receive:  
 In the first is the last, in thy will is my power to believe.  
 All's one gift: thou canst grant it moreover, as prompt to my prayer  
 As I breathe out this breath, as I open these arms to the air.  
 From thy will stream the worlds, life and nature, thy dread Sabaoth:  
 I will?—the mere atoms despise me! Why am I not loth  
 To look that, even that in the face too? Why is it I dare  
 Think but lightly of such impuissance? What stops my despair?  
 This;—'t is not what man Does which exalts him, but what man Would do!  
 See the King—I would help him but cannot, the wishes fall through.  
 Could I wrestle to raise him from sorrow, grow poor to enrich,  
 To fill up his life, starve my own out, I would—knowing which,  
 I know that my service is perfect. Oh, speak through me now!  
 Would I suffer for him that I love? So wouldst thou—so wilt thou!  
 So shall crown thee the topmost, ineffablest, uttermost crown—  
 And thy love fill infinitude wholly, nor leave up nor down  
 One spot for the creature to stand in! It is by no breath,  
 Turn of eye, wave of hand, that salvation joins issue with death!  
 As thy Love is discovered almighty, almighty be proved  
 Thy power, that exists with and for it, of being Beloved!  
 He who did most, shall bear most; the strongest shall stand the most weak.  
 'Tis the weakness in strength, that I cry for! my flesh, that I seek  
 In the Godhead! I seek and I find it. O Saul, it shall be  
 A Face like my face that receives thee; a Man like to me,  
 Thou shalt love and be loved by, forever: a Hand like this hand  
 Shall throw open the gates of new life to thee! See the Christ stand!"

## XIX

I know not too well how I found my way home in the night.  
 There were witnesses, cohorts about me, to left and to right.

Angels, powers, the unuttered, unseen, the alive, the aware:  
 I repressed, I got through them as hardly, as strugglingly there,  
 As a runner beset by the populace famished for news—  
 Life or death. The whole earth was awakened, hell loosed with her crews;  
 And the stars of night beat with emotion, and tingled and shot  
 Out in fire the strong pain of pent knowledge: but I fainted not,  
 For the Hand still impelled me at once and supported, suppressed  
 All the tumult, and quenched it with quiet, and holy behest,  
 Till the rapture was shut in itself, and the earth sank to rest.  
 Anon at the dawn, all that trouble had withered from earth—  
 Not so much, but I saw it die out in the day's tender birth;  
 In the gathered intensity brought to the gray of the hills;  
 In the shuddering forests' held breath; in the sudden wind-thrills;  
 In the startled wild beasts that bore off, each with eye sidling still  
 Though averted with wonder and dread; in the birds stiff and chill  
 That rose heavily, as I approached them, made stupid with awe:  
 E'en the serpent that slid away silent,—he felt the new law.  
 The same stared in the white humid faces upturned by the flowers;  
 The same worked in the heart of the cedar and moved the vine-bowers:  
 And the little brooks witnessing murmured, persistent and low,  
 With their obstinate, all but hushed voices—"E'en so, it is so!"

## MY STAR

This poem has been held to refer pointedly to Mrs. Browning. An inference to this end may be drawn from the fact that it stands first in a volume of *Selections from the Poetical Works of Robert Browning*, published in 1872 and dedicated to Alfred Tennyson. "In Poetry—Il-lustrious and consummate: In Friendship—Noble and sincere." The selection was made under Browning's supervision and contains the following preface:—

"In the present selection from my poetry, there is an attempt to escape from the embarrassment of appearing to pronounce upon what myself may consider the best of it. I adopt another principle; and by simply stringing together certain pieces on the thread of an imagined personality, I present them in succession, rather as the natural development of a particu-



lar experience than because I account them the most noteworthy portion of my work. Such an attempt was made in the volume of selections from the poetry of Elizabeth Barrett Browning : to which — in outward uniformity, at least — my own would venture to become a companion.

"A few years ago, had such an opportunity presented itself, I might have been tempted to say a word in reply to the objections my poetry was used to encounter. Time has kindly coöperated with my disinclination to write the poetry and the criticism besides. The readers I am at last privileged to expect, meet me fully half-way ; and if, from the fitting stand-point, they must still 'censure me in their wisdom,' they have previously 'awakened their senses that they may the better judge.' Nor do I apprehend any more charges of being willfully obscure, unconscientiously careless, or perversely harsh. Having hitherto done my utmost in the art to which my life is a devotion, I cannot engage to increase the effort ; but I conceive that there may be helpful light, as well as reassuring warmth, in the attention and sympathy I gratefully acknowledge.

R. B."

LONDON, May 14, 1872.

ALL that I know  
Of a certain star  
Is, it can throw  
(Like the angled spar)  
Now a dart of red,  
Now a dart of blue ;  
Till my friends have said  
They would fain see, too,  
My star that dartles the red and the blue !  
Then it stops like a bird ; like a flower, hangs  
furled :  
They must solace themselves with the Saturn  
above it.  
What matter to me if their star is a world ?  
Mine has opened its soul to me ; therefore I  
love it.

BY THE FIRESIDE

The scene of the declaration in this poem is laid in a little mountain gorge adjacent to the Baths of Lucca, where the Brownings spent the summer of 1853.

How well I know what I mean to do  
When the long dark autumn evenings come ;  
And where, my soul, is thy pleasant hue ?  
With the music of all thy voices, dumb  
In life's November too !

I shall be found by the fire, suppose,  
O'er a great wise book as besemeth age,  
While the shutters flap as the cross-wind blows,  
And I turn the page, and I turn the page,  
Not verse now, only prose !

Till the young ones whisper, finger on lip,  
"There he is at it, deep in Greek :  
Now then, or never, out we slip  
To cut from the hazels by the creek  
A mainmast for our ship !"

I shall be at it indeed, my friends !  
Greek puts already on either side  
Such a branch-work forth as soon extends  
To a vista opening far and wide,  
And I pass out where it ends.

The outside-frame, like your hazel-trees —  
But the inside-archway widens fast,  
And a rarer sort succeeds to these,  
And we slope to Italy at last  
And youth, by green degrees.

I follow wherever I am led,  
Knowing so well the leader's hand :  
Oh woman-country, wooed not wed,  
Loved all the more by earth's male-lands,  
Laid to their hearts instead !

Look at the ruined chapel again  
Half-way up in the Alpine gorge !  
Is that a tower, I point you plain,  
Or is it a mill, or an iron forge  
Breaks solitude in vain ?

A turn, and we stand in the heart of things ;  
The woods are round us, heaped and dim ;  
From slab to slab how it slips and springs,  
The thread of water single and slim,  
Through the ravage some torrent brings !

Does it feed the little lake below ?  
That speck of white just on its marge  
Is Pella ; see, in the evening-glow,  
How sharp the silver spear-heads charge  
When Alp meets heaven in snow !

On our other side is the straight-up rock ;  
And a path is kept 'twixt the gorge and it  
By boulder-stones where lichens mock  
The marks on a moth, and small ferns fit  
Their teeth to the polished block.

Oh the sense of the yellow mountain-flowers,  
And thorny balls, each three in one,  
The chestnuts throw on our path in showers !  
For the drop of the woodland fruit's begun,  
These early November hours,

That crimson the creeper's leaf across  
Like a splash of blood, intense, abrupt,  
O'er a shield else gold from rim to boss,  
And lay it for show on the fairy-cupped  
Elf-neededled mat of moss,

By the rose-flesh mushrooms, undivulged  
Last evening — nay, in to-day's first dew  
Yon sudden coral nipple bulged,  
Where a freaked fawn-colored flaky crew  
Of toad-stools peep indulged.

And yonder, at foot of the fronting ridge  
That takes the turn to a range beyond,

Is the chapel reached by the one-arched bridge  
Where the water is stopped in a stagnant pond  
Danced over by the midge.

The chapel and bridge are of stone alike,  
Blackish-gray and mostly wet;  
Cut hemp-stalks steep in the narrow dyke.  
See here again, how the lichens fret  
And the roots of the ivy strike!

Poor little place, where its one priest comes  
On a festa-day, if he comes at all,  
To the dozen folk from their scattered homes,  
Gathered within that precinct small  
By the dozen ways one roams —

To drop from the charcoal-burners' huts,  
Or climb from the hemp-dressers' low shed,  
Leave the grange where the woodman stores  
his nuts,  
Or the wattled cote where the fowlers spread  
Their gear on the rock's bare juts.

It has some pretension too, this front,  
With its bit of fresco half-moon-wise  
Set over the porch, Art's early wont:  
'Tis John in the Desert, I surmise,  
But has borne the weather's brunt —

Not from the fault of the builder, though,  
For a pent-house properly projects  
Where three carved beams make a certain show,  
Dating — good thought of our architect's —  
'Five, six, nine, he lets you know.

And all day long a bird sings there,  
And a stray sheep drinks at the pond at times;  
The place is silent and aware;  
It has had its scenes, its joys and crimes,  
But that is its own affair.

My perfect wife, my Leonor,  
Oh heart, my own, oh eyes, mine too,  
Whom else could I dare look backward for,  
With whom beside should I dare pursue  
The path gray heads abhor?

For it leads to a crag's sheer edge with them;  
Youth, flowery all the way, there stops —  
Not they: age threatens and they contemn,  
Till they reach the gulf wherein youth drops,  
One inch from life's safe hem!

With me, youth led . . . I will speak now,  
No longer watch you as you sit  
Reading by fire-light, that great brow  
And the spirit-small hand propping it,  
Mutely, my heart knows how —

When, if I think but deep enough,  
You are wont to answer, prompt as rhyme;  
And you, too, find without rebuff  
Response your soul seeks many a time  
Piercing its fine flesh-stuff.

My own, confirm me! If I tread  
This path back, is it not in pride  
To think how little I dreamed it led

To an age so blest that, by its side,  
Youth seems the waste instead?

My own, see where the years conduct!  
At first, 't was something our two souls  
Should mix as mists do; each is sucked  
In each now: on, the new stream rolls,  
Whatever rocks obstruct.

Think, when our one soul understands  
The great Word which makes all things new,  
When earth breaks up and heaven expands,  
How will the change strike me and you  
In the house not made with hands?

Oh, I must feel your brain prompt mine,  
Your heart anticipate my heart,  
You must be just before, in fine,  
See and make me see, for your part,  
New depths of the divine!

But who could have expected this  
When we two drew together first  
Just for the obvious human bliss,  
To satisfy life's daily thirst  
With a thing men seldom miss?

Come back with me to the first of all,  
Let us lean and love it over again,  
Let us now forget and now recall,  
Break the rosary in a pearly rain  
And gather what we let fall!

What did I say? — that a small bird sings  
All day long, save when a brown pair  
Of hawks from the wood float with wide wings  
Strained to a bell: 'gainst noon-day glare  
You count the streaks and rings.

But at afternoon or almost eve  
'Tis better; then the silence grows  
To that degree, you half believe  
It must get rid of what it knows,  
Its bosom does so heave.

Hither we walked then, side by side,  
Arm in arm and cheek to cheek,  
And still I questioned or replied,  
While my heart, convulsed to really speak,  
Lay choking in its pride.

Silent the crumbling bridge we cross,  
And pity and praise the chapel sweet,  
And care about the fresco's loss,  
And wish for our souls a like retreat,  
And wonder at the moss.

Stoop and kneel on the settle under,  
Look through the window's grated square:  
Nothing to see! For fear of plunder,  
The cross is down and the altar bare,  
As if thieves don't fear thunder.

We stoop and look in through the grate,  
See the little porch and rustic door,  
Read duly the dead builder's date;  
Then cross the bridge that we crossed before  
Take the path again — but wait!

Oh moment, one and infinite !

The water slips o'er stock and stone ;

The West is tender, hardly bright :

How gray at once is the evening grown —  
One star, its chrysolite !

We two stood there with never a third,

But each by each, as each knew well :

The sights we saw and the sounds we heard,

The lights and the shades made up a spell  
Till the trouble grew and stirred.

Oh, the little more, and how much it is !

And the little less, and what worlds away !

How a sound shall quicken content to bliss,

Or a breath suspend the blood's best play,  
And life be a proof of this !

Had she willed it, still had stood the screen

So slight, so sure, 'twixt my love and her :

I could fix her face with a guard between,

And find her soul as when friends confer,  
Friends — lovers that might have been.

For my heart had a touch of the woodland-  
time,

Wanting to sleep now over its best,

Shake the whole tree in the summer-prime,

But bring to the last leaf no such test !

" Hold the last fast ! " runs the rhyme.

For a chance to make your little much,

To gain a lover and lose a friend,

Venture the tree and a myriad such,

When nothing you mar but the year can  
mend :

But a last leaf — fear to touch !

Yet should it unfasten itself and fall

Eddying down till it find your face

At some slight wind — best chance of all !

Be your heart henceforth its dwelling-place

You trembled to forestall !

Worth how well, those dark gray eyes,

That hair so dark and dear, how worth

That a man should strive and agonize,

And taste a veriest hell on earth

For the hope of such a prize !

You might have turned and tried a man,

Set him a space to weary and wear,

And prove which suited more your plan,

His best of hope or his worst despair,

Yet end as he began.

But you spared me this, like the heart you  
are,

And filled my empty heart at a word.

If two lives join, there is oft a scar,

They are one and one, with a shadowy third ;

One near one is too far.

A moment after, and hands unseen

Were hanging the night around us fast ;

But we knew that a bar was broken between

Life and life : we were mixed at last

In spite of the mortal screen.

The forests had done it ; there they stood ;

We caught for a moment the powers at play :  
They had mingled us so, for once and good,

Their work was done — we might go or stay,  
They relapsed to their ancient mood.

How the world is made for each of us !

How all we perceive and know in it

Tends to some moment's product thus,

When a soul declares itself — to wit,  
By its fruit, the thing it does !

Be hate that fruit or love that fruit,

It forwards the general deed of man,

And each of the Many helps to recruit

The life of the race by a general plan ;

Each living his own, to boot.

I am named and known by that moment's feat ;

There took my station and degree ;

So grew my own small life complete,

As nature obtained her best of me —

One born to love you, sweet !

And to watch you sink by the fireside now

Back again, as you mutely sit

Musing by fire-light, that great brow

And the spirit-small hand propping it,

Yonder, my heart knows how !

So, earth has gained by one man the more,

And the gain of earth must be heaven's gain  
too ;

And the whole is well worth thinking o'er

When autumn comes : which I mean to do

One day, as I said before.

#### ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND

My love, this is the bitterest, that thou —

Who art all truth, and who dost love me now

As thine eyes say, as thy voice breaks to say —

Shouldst love so truly, and couldst love me still

A whole long life through, had but love its will,

Would death that leads me from thee brook  
delay.

I have but to be by thee, and thy hand

Will never let mine go, nor heart withstand

The beating of my heart to reach its place.

When shall I look for thee and feel thee gone ?

When cry for the old comfort and find none ?

Never, I know ! Thy soul is in thy face.

Oh, I should fade — 't is willed so ! Might I  
save,

Gladly I would, whatever beauty gave

Joy to thy sense, for that was precious too.

It is not to be granted. But the soul

Whence the love comes, all ravage leaves that  
whole ;

Vainly the flesh fades ; soul makes all things  
new.

It would not be because my eye grew dim

Thou couldst not find the love there, thanks to  
Him



Who never is dishonored in the spark  
He gave us from his fire of fires, and bade  
Remember whence it sprang, nor be afraid  
While that burns on, though all the rest grow  
dark.

So, how thou wouldst be perfect, white and  
clean

Outside as inside, soul and soul's demesne

Alike, this body given to show it by!

Oh, three-parts through the worst of life's  
abyss.

What plaudits from the next world after this.

Couldst thou repeat a stroke and gain the  
sky!

And is it not the bitterer to think

That disengage our hands and thou wilt sink

Although thy love was love in very deed?

I know that nature! Pass a festive day,

Thou dost not throw its relic-flower away

Nor bid its music's loitering echo speed.

Thou let'st the stranger's glove lie where it fell;  
If old things remain old things all is well,

For thou art grateful as becomes man best:

And hadst thou only heard me play one tune,

Or viewed me from a window, not so soon

With thee would such things fade as with the  
rest.

I seem to see! We meet and part; 'tis brief;  
The book I opened keeps a folded leaf,

The very chair I sat on, breaks the rank;

That is a portrait of me on the wall —

Three lines, my face comes at so slight a call:

And for all this, one little hour to thank!

But now, because the hour through years was  
fixed,

Because our inmost beings met and mixed,

Because thou once hast loved me — wilt thou  
dare

Say to thy soul and Who may list beside,

"Therefore she is immortally my bride;

Chance cannot change my love, nor time  
impair.

"So, what if in the dusk of life that's left,

I, a tired traveller of my sun bereft,

Look from my path when, mimicking the  
same,

The fire-fly glimpses past me, come and gone?

— Where was it till the sunset? Where anon

It will be at the sunrise! What's to  
blame?"

Is it so helpful to thee? Canst thou take

The mimic up, nor, for the true thing's sake,

Put gently by such efforts at a bean?

Is the remainder of the way so long,

Thou need'st the little solace, thou the strong?

Watch out thy watch, let weak ones doze and  
dream!

Ah, but the fresher faces! "Is it true,"

Thou'lt ask, "some eyes are beautiful and  
new?"

Some hair, — how can one choose but grasp  
such wealth?

And if a man would press his lips to lips

Fresh as the wilding hedge-rose-cup there slips

The dewdrop out of, must it be by stealth?

"It cannot change the love still kept for Her,  
More than if such a picture I prefer

Passing a day with, to a room's bare side:

The painted form takes nothing she possessed,

Yet, while the Titian's Venus lies at rest,

A man looks. Once more, what is there to  
chide?"

So must I see, from where I sit and watch,

My own self sell myself, my hand attach

Its warrant to the very thefts from me —

Thy singleness of soul that made me proud,

Thy purity of heart I loved aloud,

Thy man's-truth I was bold to bid God see!

Love so, then, if thou wilt! Give all thou canst  
Away to the new faces — disentranced,

(Say it and think it) obdurate no more:

Re-issue looks and words from the old mint,

Pass them afresh, no matter whose the print

Image and superscription once they bore!

Re-coin thyself and give it them to spend, —  
It all comes to the same thing at the end,

Since mine thou wast, mine art and mine  
shalt be,

Faithful or faithless, sealing up the sum

Or lavish of my treasure, thou must come

Back to the heart's place here I keep for  
thee!

Only, why should it be with stain at all?

Why must I, 'twixt the leaves of coronal,

Put any kiss of pardon on thy brow?

Why need the other women know so much,

And talk together, "Such the look and such

The smile he used to love with, then as now!"

Might I die last and show thee! Should I find

Such hardship in the few years left behind,

If free to take and light my lamp, and go

Into thy tomb, and shut the door and sit,

Seeing thy face on those four sides of it

The better that they are so blank, I know!

Why, time was what I wanted, to turn o'er

Within my mind each look, get more and more

By heart each word, too much to learn at  
first:

And join thee all the fitter for the pause

'Neath the low doorway's lintel. That were  
cause

For lingering, though thou calledst, if I  
durst!

And yet thou art the nobler of us two:

What dare I dream of, that thou canst not do,

Outstripping my ten small steps with one  
stride?

I'll say then, here's a trial and a task —

Is it to bear? — if easy, I'll not ask:

Though love fail, I can trust on in thy pride

Pride? — when those eyes forestall the life behind  
 The death I have to go through! — when I find,  
 Now that I want thy help most, all of thee!  
 What did I fear? Thy love shall hold me fast  
 Until the little minute's sleep is past  
 And I wake saved. — And yet it will not be!

## TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA

I WONDER do you feel to-day  
 As I have felt since, hand in hand,  
 We sat down on the grass, to stray  
 In spirit better through the land,  
 This morn of Rome and May?

For me, I touched a thought, I know,  
 Has tantalized me many times,  
 (Like turns of thread the spiders throw  
 Mocking across our path) for rhymes  
 To catch at and let go.

Help me to hold it! First it left  
 The yellowing fennel, run to seed  
 There, branching from the brickwork's cleft,  
 Some old tomb's ruin: yonder weed  
 Took up the floating weft,

Where one small orange cup amassed  
 Five beetles, — blind and green they grope  
 Among the honey-meal: and last,  
 Everywhere on the grassy slope  
 I traced it. Hold it fast!

The champagne with its endless fleece  
 Of feathery grasses everywhere!  
 Silence and passion, joy and peace,  
 An everlasting wash of air —  
 Rome's ghost since her decease.

Such life here, through such lengths of hours,  
 Such miracles performed in play,  
 Such primal naked forms of flowers,  
 Such letting nature have her way  
 While heaven looks from its towers!

How say you? Let us, O my dove,  
 Let us be unashamed of soul,  
 As earth lies bare to heaven above!  
 How is it under our control  
 To love or not to love?

I would that you were all to me,  
 You that are just so much, no more.  
 Nor yours nor mine, nor slave nor free!  
 Where does the fault lie? What the core  
 O' the wound, since wound must be?

I would I could adopt your will,  
 See with your eyes, and set my heart  
 Beating by yours, and drink my fill  
 At your soul's springs, — your part my part  
 In life, for good and ill.

No. I yearn upward, touch you close,  
 Then stand away. I kiss your cheek,

Catch your soul's warmth, — I pluck the rose  
 And love it more than tongue can speak —  
 Then the good minute goes.

Already how am I so far  
 Out of that minute? Must I go  
 Still like the thistle-ball, no bar,  
 Onward, whenever light winds blow,  
 Fixed by no friendly star?

Just when I seemed about to learn!  
 Where is the thread now? Off again!  
 The old trick! Only I discern —  
 Infinite passion, and the pain  
 Of finite hearts that yearn.

## MISCONCEPTIONS

THIS is a spray the Bird clung to,  
 Making it blossom with pleasure,  
 Ere the high tree-top she sprung to,  
 Fit for her nest and her treasure.  
 Oh, what a hope beyond measure  
 Was the poor spray's, which the flying feet  
 hung to, —  
 So to be singled out, built in, and sung to!

This is a heart the Queen leant on,  
 Thrilled in a minute erratic,  
 Ere the true bosom she bent on,  
 Meet for love's regal dalmatic.  
 Oh, what a fancy ecstatic  
 Was the poor heart's, ere the wanderer went  
 on —  
 Love to be saved for it, proffered to, spent on!

## A SERENADE AT THE VILLA

THAT was I, you heard last night,  
 When there rose no moon at all,  
 Nor, to pierce the strained and tight  
 Tent of heaven, a planet small:  
 Life was dead and so was light.

Not a twinkle from the fly,  
 Not a glimmer from the worm;  
 When the crickets stopped their cry,  
 When the owls forebore a term,  
 You heard music; that was I.

Earth turned in her sleep with pain,  
 Sultrily suspired for proof:  
 In at heaven and out again,  
 Lightning! — where it broke the roof,  
 Bloodlike, some few drops of rain.

What they could my words expressed,  
 O my love, my all, my one!  
 Singing helped the verses best,  
 And when singing's best was done,  
 To my lute I left the rest.

So wore night; the East was gray,  
 White the broad-faced hemlock-flowers:  
 There would be another day;

Ere its first of heavy hours  
Found me, I had passed away.

What became of all the hopes,  
Words and song and lute as well?  
Say, this struck you — "When life gropes  
Feebly for the path where fell  
Light last on the evening slopes,

"One friend in that path shall be,  
To secure my step from wrong;  
One to count night day for me,  
Patient through the watches long,  
Serving most with none to see."

Never say — as something bodes —  
"So, the worst has yet a worse!  
When life halts 'neath double loads,  
Better the task-master's curse  
Than such music on the roads!

"When no moon succeeds the sun,  
Nor can pierce the midnight's tent  
Any star, the smallest one,  
While some drops, where lightning rent,  
Show the final storm begun —

"When the fire-fly hides its spot,  
When the garden-voices fail  
In the darkness thick and hot, —  
Shall another voice avail,  
That shape be where these are not?

"Has some plague a longer lease,  
Proffering its help uncouth?  
Can't one even die in peace?  
As one shuts one's eyes on youth,  
Is that face the last one sees?"

Oh, how dark your villa was,  
Windows fast and obdurate!  
How the garden grudged me grass  
Where I stood — the iron gate  
Ground its teeth to let me pass!

#### ONE WAY OF LOVE

ALL June I bound the rose in sheaves.  
Now, rose by rose, I strip the leaves  
And strew them where Pauline may pass.  
She will not turn aside? Alas!  
Let them lie. Suppose they die?  
The chance was they might take her eye.

How many a month I strove to suit  
These stubborn fingers to the lute!  
To-day I venture all I know.  
She will not hear my music? So!  
Break the string; fold music's wing:  
Suppose Pauline had bade me sing!

My whole life long I learned to love.  
This hour my utmost art I prove  
And speak my passion — heaven or hell?  
She will not give me heaven? 'Tis well!  
Lose who may — I still can say,  
Those who win heaven, blest are they!

#### ANOTHER WAY OF LOVE

JUNE was not over  
Though past the full,  
And the best of her roses  
Had yet to blow,  
When a man I know  
(But shall not discover,  
Since ears are dull,  
And time discloses)  
Turned him and said with a man's true air,  
Half sighing a smile in a yawn, as 't were, —  
"If I tire of your June, will she greatly care?"

Well, dear, in-doors with you!  
True! serene deadness  
Tries a man's temper.  
What's in the blossom  
June wears on her bosom?  
Can it clear scores with you?  
Sweetness and redness,  
*Eadem semper!*  
Go, let me care for it greatly or slightly!  
If June mend her bower now, your hand left  
unsightly  
By plucking the roses, — my June will do  
rightly.

And after, for pastime,  
If June be refulgent  
With flowers in completeness,  
All petals, no prickles,  
Delicious as trickles  
Of wine poured at mass-time, —  
And choose One indulgent  
To redness and sweetness:  
Or if, with experience of man and of spider,  
June use my June-lightning, the strong insect-  
rider,  
And stop the fresh film-work, — why, June will  
consider.

#### A PRETTY WOMAN

THAT fawn-skin-dappled hair of hers,  
And the blue eye  
Dear and dewy,  
And that infantine fresh air of hers!

To think men cannot take you, Sweet,  
And enfold you,  
Ay, and hold you,  
And so keep you what they make you, Sweet!

You like us for a glance, you know —  
For a word's sake  
Or a sword's sake,  
All's the same, whate'er the chance, you know.

And in turn we make you ours, we say —  
You and youth too,  
Eyes and mouth too,  
All the face composed of flowers, we say.

All's our own, to make the most of, Sweet —  
Sing and say for,



Watch and pray for,  
Keep a secret or go boast of, Sweet!

But for loving, why, you would not, Sweet,  
Though we prayed you,  
Paid you, brayed you  
In a mortar — for you could not, Sweet!

So, we leave the sweet face fondly there :  
Be its sweet  
Its sole duty!  
Let all hope of grace beyond, lie there!

And while the face lies quiet there,  
Who shall wonder  
That I ponder  
A conclusion? I will try it there.

As, — why must one, for the love foregone,  
Scout mere liking?  
Thunder-striking  
Earth, — the heaven, we looked above for, gone!

Why, with beauty, needs there money be,  
Love with liking?  
Crush the fly-king  
In his gauze, because no honey-bee?  
May not liking be so simple-sweet,  
If love grew there  
'T would undo there  
All that breaks the cheek to dimples sweet?

Is the creature too imperfect, say?  
Would you mend it  
And so end it?  
Since not all addition perfects aye!

Or is it of its kind, perhaps,  
Just perfection —  
Whence, rejection  
Of a grace not to its mind, perhaps?

Shall we burn up, tread that face at once  
Into tinder,  
And so hinder  
Sparks from kindling all the place at once?

Or else kiss away one's soul on her?  
Your love-fancies!  
— A sick man sees  
Truer, when his hot eyes roll on her!

Thus the craftsman thinks to grace the rose, —  
Plucks a mould-flower  
For his gold flower,  
Uses fine things that efface the rose:

Rosy rubies make its cup more rose,  
Precious metals  
Ape the petals, —  
Last, some old king locks it up, morose!

Then how grace a rose? I know a way!  
Leave it, rather.  
Must you gather?  
Snell, kiss, wear it — at last, throw away!

## RESPECTABILITY

DEAR, had the world in its caprice  
Deigned to proclaim "I know you both,  
Have recognized your plighted troth,  
Am sponsor for you: live in peace!" —  
How many precious months and years  
Of youth had passed, that speed so fast,  
Before we found it out at last,  
The world, and what it fears!

How much of priceless life were spent  
With men that every virtue decks,  
And women models of their sex,  
Society's true ornament, —  
Ere we dared wander, nights like this,  
Through wind and rain, and watch the Seine,  
And feel the Boulevard break again  
To warmth and light and bliss!

I know! the world proscribes not love;  
Allows my finger to caress  
Your lips' contour and downiness,  
Provided it supply a glove.  
The world's good word! — the Institute!  
Guizot receives Montalembert!  
Eh? Down the court three lampions flare:  
Put forward your best foot!

## LOVE IN A LIFE

ROOM after room,  
I hunt the house through  
We inhabit together.  
Heart, fear nothing, for, heart, thou shalt find  
her —  
Next time, herself! — not the trouble behind  
her  
Left in the curtain, the couch's perfume!  
As she brushed it, the cornice-wreath blos-  
somed anew:  
Yon looking-glass gleamed at the wave of her  
feather.

Yet the day wears,  
And door succeeds door;  
I try the fresh fortune —  
Range the wide house from the wing to the  
centre.  
Still the same chance! she goes out as I enter.  
Spend my whole day in the quest, — who cares?  
But 't is twilight, you see, — with such suites to  
explore,  
Such closets to search, such alcoves to impor-  
tune!

## LIFE IN A LOVE

ESCAPE me?  
Never —  
Beloved!  
While I am I, and you are you,  
So long as the world contains us both,  
Me the loving and you the loth,  
While the one eludes, must the other pursue.

My life is a fault at last, I fear:  
 It seems too much like a fate, indeed!  
 Though I do my best I shall scarce succeed.  
 But what if I fail of my purpose here?  
 It is but to keep the nerves at strain,  
 To dry one's eyes and laugh at a fall,  
 And baffled, get up and begin again, —  
 So the chase takes up one's life, that's all.  
 While, look but once from your farthest bound  
 At me so deep in the dust and dark,  
 No sooner the old hope goes to ground  
 Than a new one, straight to the selfsame mark,  
 I shape me —  
 Ever  
 Removed!

## IN THREE DAYS

So, I shall see her in three days  
 And just one night, but nights are short,  
 Then two long hours, and that is morn.  
 See how I come, unchanged, unworn!  
 Feel, where my life broke off from thine,  
 How fresh the splinters keep and fine, —  
 Only a touch and we combine!

Too long, this time of year, the days!  
 But nights, at least the nights are short.  
 As night shows where her one moon is,  
 A hand's-breadth of pure light and bliss,  
 So life's night gives my lady birth  
 And my eyes hold her! What is worth  
 The rest of heaven, the rest of earth?

O loaded curls, release your store  
 Of warmth and scent, as once before  
 The tingling hair did, lights and darks  
 Outbreking into fairy sparks,  
 When under curl and curl I pried  
 After the warmth and scent inside,  
 Through lights and darks how manifold —  
 The dark inspired, the light controlled!  
 As early Art embrowns the gold.

What great fear, should one say, "Three days  
 That change the world might change as well  
 Your fortune; and if joy delays,  
 Be happy that no worse befell!"  
 What small fear, if another says,  
 "Three days and one short night beside  
 May throw no shadow on your ways;  
 But years must teem with change untried,  
 With chance not easily defied,  
 With an end somewhere undescried."  
 No fear! — or if a fear be born  
 This minute, it dies out in scorn.  
 Fear? I shall see her in three days  
 And one night, now the nights are short,  
 Then just two hours, and that is morn.

## IN A YEAR

NEVER any more,  
 While I live,  
 Need I hope to see his face  
 As before.

Once his love grown chill,  
 Mine may strive:  
 Bitterly we re-embrace,  
 Single still.

Was it something said,  
 Something done,  
 Vexed him? Was it touch of hand,  
 Turn of head?  
 Strange! that very way  
 Love begun:  
 I as little understand  
 Love's decay.

When I sewed or drew,  
 I recall  
 How he looked as if I sung,  
 — Sweetly too.  
 If I spoke a word,  
 First of all  
 Up his cheek the color sprung,  
 Then he heard.

Sitting by my side,  
 At my feet,  
 So he breathed but air I breathed,  
 Satisfied!  
 I, too, at love's brim  
 Touched the sweet:  
 I would die if death bequeathed  
 Sweet to him.

"Speak, I love thee best!"  
 He exclaimed:  
 "Let thy love my own foretell!"  
 I confessed:  
 "Clasp my heart on thine  
 Now unblamed,  
 Since upon thy soul as well  
 Hangeth mine!"

Was it wrong to own,  
 Being truth?  
 Why should all the giving prove  
 His alone?  
 I had wealth and ease,  
 Beauty, youth:  
 Since my lover gave me love,  
 I gave these.

That was all I meant,  
 — To be just,  
 And the passion I had raised,  
 To content.  
 Since he chose to change  
 Gold for dust,  
 If I gave him what he praised  
 Was it strange?

Would he loved me yet,  
 On and on,  
 While I found some way undreamed  
 — Paid my debt!  
 Gave more life and more,  
 Till, all gone,  
 He should smile "She never seemed  
 Mine before.

"What, she felt the while,  
Must I think?  
Love's so different with us men!"  
He should smile:  
"Dying for my sake—  
White and pink!  
Can't we touch these bubbles then  
But they break?"

Dear, the pang is brief,  
Do thy part,  
Have thy pleasure! How perplexed  
Grows belief!  
Well, this cold clay clod  
Was man's heart:  
Crumble it, and what comes next?  
Is it God?

## WOMEN AND ROSES

Written on the suggestion of some roses sent  
Mrs. Browning. At the time of writing,  
Browning was carrying out a resolve to write a  
poem a day, a resolve which lasted a fortnight.

## I

I DREAM of a red-rose tree.  
And which of its roses three  
Is the dearest rose to me?

## II

Round and round, like a dance of snow  
In a dazzling drift, as its guardians, go  
Floating the women faded for ages,  
Sculptured in stone, on the poet's pages.  
Then follow women fresh and gay,  
Living and loving and loved to-day,  
Last, in the rear, flee the multitude of maidens,  
Beauties yet unborn. And all, to one cadence,  
They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## III

Dear rose, thy term is reached,  
Thy leaf hangs loose and bleached:  
Bees pass it unimpeached.

## IV

Stay then, stoop, since I cannot climb,  
You, great shapes of the antique time!  
How shall I fix you, fire you, freeze you,  
Break my heart at your feet to please you?  
Oh, to possess and be possessed!  
Hearts that beat 'neath each pallid breast!  
Once but of love, the poesy, the passion,  
Drink but once and die!—In vain, the same  
fashion,  
They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## V

Dear rose, thy joy's undimmed,  
Thy cup is ruby-rimmed,  
Thy cup's heart nectar-brimmed.

## VI

Deep, as drops from a statue's plinth  
The bee sucked in by the hyacinth,

So will I bury me while burning,  
Quench like him at a plunge my yearning,  
Eyes in your eyes, lips on your lips!  
Fold me fast where the cincture slips,  
Prison all my soul in eternities of pleasure,  
Girdle me for once! But no—the old measure,  
They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## VII

Dear rose without a thorn,  
Thy bud's the babe unborn:  
First streak of a new morn.

## VIII

Wings, lend wings for the cold, the clear!  
What is far conquers what is near.  
Roses will bloom nor want beholders,  
Sprung from the dust where our flesh moulders,  
What shall arrive with the cycle's change?  
A novel grace and a beauty strange.  
I will make an Eve, be the artist that began her,  
Shaped her to his mind!—Alas! in like man-  
ner  
They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## BEFORE

LET them fight it out, friend! things have gone  
too far.  
God must judge the couple: leave them as they  
are  
—Whichever one's the guiltless, to his glory,  
And whichever one the guilt's with, to my  
story!

Why, you would not bid men, sunk in such a  
slough,  
Strike no arm out further, stick and stink as  
now,  
Leaving right and wrong to settle the embroil-  
ment,  
Heaven with snaky hell, in torture and entoi-  
ment?

Who's the culprit of them? How must he  
conceive  
God—the queen he caps to, laughing in his  
sleeve,  
"Tis but decent to profess one's self beneath  
her:  
Still, one must not be too much in earnest,  
either!"

Better sin the whole sin, sure that God ob-  
serves;  
Then go live his life out! Life will try his  
nerves,  
When the sky, which noticed all, makes no dis-  
closure,  
And the earth keeps up her terrible composure.

Let him pace at pleasure, past the walls of rose,  
Pluck their fruits when grape-trees graze him  
as he goes!  
For he 'gins to guess the purpose of the garden,  
With the sly mute thing, beside there, for a  
warden.



What's the leopard-dog-thing, constant at his side,  
A leer and lie in every eye of its obsequious hide?  
When will come an end to all the mock obeisance,  
And the price appear that pays for the misfeasance?

So much for the culprit. Who's the martyred man?  
Let him bear one stroke more, for be sure he can!  
He that strove thus evil's lump with good to leaven,  
Let him give his blood at last and get his heaven!

All or nothing, stake it! Trusts he God or no?  
Thus far and no farther? farther? be it so!  
Now, enough of your chicane of prudent pauses,  
Sage provisos, sub-intents and saving-clauses!

Ah, "forgive" you bid him? While God's champion lives,  
Wrong shall be resisted: dead, why, he forgives.  
But you must not end my friend ere you begin him;  
Evil stands not crowned on earth, while breath is in him.

Once more — Will the wronger, at this last of all,  
Dare to say, "I did wrong," rising in his fall?  
No? — Let go, then! Both the fighters to their places!  
While I count three, step you back as many paces!

#### AFTER

TAKE the cloak from his face, and at first  
Let the corpse do its worst!

How he lies in his rights of a man!  
Death has done all death can.  
And, absorbed in the new life he leads,  
He recks not, he heeds  
Nor his wrong nor my vengeance; both strike  
On his senses alike,  
And are lost in the solemn and strange  
Surprise of the change.

Ha, what avails death to erase  
His offence, my disgrace?  
I would we were boys as of old  
In the field, by the fold:  
His outrage, God's patience, man's scorn  
Were so easily borne!

I stand here now, he lies in his place:  
Cover the face!

#### THE GUARDIAN-ANGEL

##### A PICTURE AT FANO

DEAR and great Angel, wouldst thou only leave  
That child, when thou hast done with him,  
for me!

Let me sit all the day here, that when eve  
Shall find performed thy special ministry,  
And time come for departure, thou, suspending,  
Thy flight, may'st see another child for tending,  
Another still, to quiet and retrieve.

Then I shall feel thee step one step, no more,  
From where thou standest now, to where I gaze,  
— And suddenly my head is covered o'er  
With those wings, white above the child who prays  
Now on that tomb — and I shall feel thee guarding  
Me, out of all the world; for me, discarding  
Yon heaven thy home, that waits and opes its door.

I would not look up thither past thy head  
Because the door opes, like that child, I know,  
For I should have thy gracious face instead,  
Thou bird of God! And wilt thou bend me low  
Like him, and lay, like his, my hands together,  
And lift them up to pray, and gently tether  
Me, as thy lamb there, with thy garment's spread?

If this was ever granted, I would rest  
My head beneath thine, while thy healing hands  
Close-covered both my eyes beside thy breast,  
Pressing the brain, which too much thought expands,  
Back to its proper size again, and smoothing  
Distortion down till every nerve had soothing,  
And all lay quiet, happy and suppressed.

How soon all worldly wrong would be repaired!  
I think how I should view the earth and skies  
And sea, when once again my brow was bared  
After thy healing, with such different eyes.  
O world, as God has made it! All is beauty:  
And knowing this, is love, and love is duty.  
What further may be sought for or declared?

Guercino drew this angel I saw teach  
(Alfred, dear friend!) — that little child to pray,  
Holding the little hands up, each to each  
Pressed gently, — with his own head turned away  
Over the earth where so much lay before him  
Of work to do, though heaven was opening o'er him,  
And he was left at Fano by the beach.

We were at Fano, and three times we went  
To sit and see him in his chapel there,  
And drink his beauty to our soul's content  
— My angel with me too: and since I care  
For dear Guercino's fame (to which in power  
And glory comes this picture for a dower,  
Fraught with a pathos so magnificent) —

And since he did not work thus earnestly  
At all times, and has else endured some  
wrong —

I took one thought his picture struck from  
me,  
And spread it out, translating it to song.  
My love is here. Where are you, dear old  
friend?  
How rolls the Wairoa at your world's far end?  
This is Ancona, yonder is the sea.

# MEMORABILIA

AH, did you once see Shelley plain,  
And did he stop and speak to you,  
And did you speak to him again?  
How strange it seems and new!

But you were living before that,  
And also you are living after;  
And the memory I started at —  
My starting moves your laughter!

I crossed a moor, with a name of its own  
And a certain use in the world no doubt,  
Yet a hand's-breadth of it shines alone  
'Mid the blank miles round about:

For there I picked up on the heather,  
And there I put inside my breast  
A moulted feather, an eagle-feather!  
Well, I forget the rest.

# POPULARITY

As the previous poem was an appreciation of  
Shelley, so this, of Keats.

STAND still, true poet that you are!  
I know you; let me try and draw you.  
Some night you'll fail us: when afar  
You rise, remember one man saw you,  
Knew you, and named a star!

My star, God's glow-worm! Why extend  
That loving hand of his which leads you,  
Yet locks you safe from end to end  
Of this dark world, unless he needs you,  
Just saves your light to spend?

His clenched hand shall unclose at last,  
I know, and let out all the beauty:  
My poet holds the future fast,  
Accepts the coming ages' duty,  
Their present for this past.

That day, the earth's feast-master's brow  
Shall clear, to God the chalice raising;  
"Others give best at first, but thou  
Forever set'st our table praising,  
Keep'st the good wine till now!"

Meantime, I'll draw you as you stand,  
With few or none to watch and wonder:  
I'll say — a fisher, on the sand  
By Tyre the old, with ocean-plunder,  
A netful, brought to land.

Who has not heard how Tyrian shells  
Enclosed the blue, that dye of dyes  
Whereof one drop worked miracles,  
And colored like Astarte's eyes  
Raw silk the merchant sells?

And each bystander of them all  
Could criticise, and quote tradition  
How depths of blue sublimed some pall  
— To get which, pricked a king's ambition:  
Worth sceptre, crown and ball.

Yet there 's the dye, in that rough mesh,  
The sea has only just o'er-whispered!  
Live whelks, each lip's beard dripping fresh,  
As if they still the water's lisp heard  
Through foam the rock-weeds thresh.

Enough to furnish Solomon  
Such hangings for his cedar-house,  
That, when gold-robed he took the throne  
In that abyss of blue, the Spouse  
Might swear his presence shone

Most like the centre-spike of gold  
Which burns deep in the bluebell's womb  
What time, with ardors manifold,  
The bee goes singing to her groom,  
Drunken and overbold.

Mere conchs! not fit for warp or woof!  
Till cunning come to pound and squeeze  
And clarify, — refine to proof  
The liquor filtered by degrees,  
While the world stands aloof.

And there 's the extract, flasked and fine,  
And priced and salable at last!  
And Hobbs, Nobbs, Stokes and Nokes combine  
To paint the future from the past,  
Put blue into their line.

Hobbs hints blue, — straight he turtle eats:  
Nobbs prints blue, — claret crowns his cup:  
Nokes outdares Stokes in azure feats, —  
Both gorge. Who fished the nurex up?  
What porridge had John Keats?

# MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE-GOTHA

Whoever Browning may have had in mind,  
there was no historical figure with this name  
and place.

HIST, but a word, fair and soft!  
Forth and be judged, Master Hugues!  
Answer the question I've put you so oft:  
What do you mean by your mountainous  
fugues?  
See, we're alone in the loft, —

I, the poor organist here,  
Hugues, the composer of note,  
Dead though, and done with, this many a year:  
Let's have a colloquy, something to quote.  
Make the world prick up its ear!

See, the church empties apace :

Fast they extinguish the lights.

Hallo there, sacristan ! Five minutes' grace !

Here 's a crank pedal wants setting to rights,  
Balks one of holding the base.

See, our huge house of the sounds,

Hushing its hundreds at once

Bids the last loiterer back to his bounds !

— O you may challenge them, not a response  
Get the church-saints on their rounds !

(Saints go their rounds, who shall doubt ?

— March, with the moon to admire,

Up nave, down chancel, turn transept about,

Supervise all betwixt pavement and spire,

Put rats and mice to the rout —

Aloys and Jurien and Just —

Order things back to their place.

Have a sharp eye lest the candlesticks rust,

Rub the church-plate, darn the sacrament-  
lace,

Clear the desk-velvet of dust.)

Here 's your book, younger folks shelve !

Played I not off-hand and runningly,

Just now, your masterpiece, hard number  
twelve ?

Here 's what should strike, could one handle  
it cunningly :

Help the axe, give it a helve !

Page after page as I played,

Every bar's rest where one wipes

Sweat from one's brow, I looked up and sur-  
veyed,

O'er my three claviers, yon forest of pipes  
Whence you still peeped in the shade.

Sure you were wishful to speak ?

You, with brow ruled like a score,

Yes, and eyes buried in pits on each cheek,

Like two great breves, as they wrote them  
of yore,

Each side that bar, your straight beak !

Sure you said — " Good, the mere notes !

Still, couldst thou take my intent,

Know what procured me our Company's  
votes —

A master were lauded and sciolists shent,  
Parted the sheep from the goats ! "

Well then, speak up, never flinch !

Quick, ere my candle 's a snuff

— Burnt, do you see ? to its uttermost inch —

I believe in you, but that 's not enough :

Give my conviction a clinch !

First you deliver your phrase

— Nothing propound, that I see,

Fit in itself for much blame or much praise —

Answered no less, where no answer needs be ;  
Off start the Two on their ways.

Straight must a Third interpose,

Volunteer needlessly help ;

In strikes a Fourth, a Fifth thrusts in his nose.

So the cry 's open, the kennel 's a-yelp,

Argument 's hot to the close.

One dissertates, he is candid ;

Two must discept, — has distinguished ;

Three helps the couple, if ever yet man did ;

Four protests ; Five makes a dart at the  
thing wished :

Back to One, goes the case bandied.

One says his say with a difference ;

More of expounding, explaining !

All now is wrangle, abuse and vociferance ;

Now there 's a truce, all 's subdued, self-re-  
straining :

Five, though, stands out all the stiffer hence.

One is incisive, corrosive ;

Two retorts, nettled, curt, crepitant ;

Three makes rejoinder, expansive, explosive ;

Four overbears them all, strident and strepi-  
tant :

Five . . . O Danaides, O Sieve !

Now, they ply axes and crowbars ;

Now, they prick pins at a tissue

Fine as a skein of the casuist Escobar's

Worked on the bone of a lie. To what issue ?

Where is our gain at the Two-bars ?

*Est fuga, volvitur rota.*

On we drift : where looms the dim port ?

One, Two, Three, Four, Five, contribute their  
quota ;

Something is gained, if one caught but the  
import —

Show it us, Hugues of Saxe-Gotha !

What with affirming, denying,

Holding, risposting, subjoining,

All's like . . . it's like . . . for an instance  
I'm trying . . .

There ! See our roof, its gilt moulding and  
groining

Under those spider-webs lying !

So your fugue broadens and thickens,

Greatens and deepens and lengthens,

Till we exclaim — " But where 's music, the  
dickens ?

Blot ye the gold, while your spider-web  
strengthens

— Blacked to the stoutest of tickens ? "

I for man's effort am zealous :

Prove me such censure unfounded !

Seems it surprising a lover grows jealous —

Hopes 't was for something, his organ-pipes  
sounded,

Tiring three boys at the bellows ?

Is it your moral of Life ?

Such a web, simple and subtle,

Weave we on earth here in impotent strife,

Backward and forward each throwing his  
shuttle,

Death ending all with a knife ?



Over our heads truth and nature —  
 Still our life's zigzags and dodges,  
 Ins and outs, weaving a new legislature —  
 God's gold just shining its last where that  
 lodges,  
 Palled beneath man's usurpature.

So we o'ershroud stars and roses.  
 Cherub and trophy and garland;  
 Nothings grow something which quietly closes  
 Heaven's earnest eye: not a glimpse of the  
 far land  
 Gets through our comments and glozes.

Ah, but traditions, inventions,  
 (Say we and make up a visage)  
 So many men with such various intentions,  
 Down the past ages, must know more than this  
 age!  
 Leave we the web its dimensions!

Who thinks Hugues wrote for the deaf,  
 Proved a mere mountain in labor?  
 Better submit; try again; what's the clef?  
 'Faith, 't is no trifle for pipe and for tabor —  
 Four flats, the minor in F.

Friend, your fugue taxes the finger:  
 Learning it once, who would lose it?  
 Yet all the while a misgiving will linger,  
 Truth's golden o'er us although we refuse  
 it —  
 Nature, through cobwebs we string her.

Hugues! I advise *meû pœnâ*  
 (Counterpoint glares like a Gorgon)  
 Bid One, Two, Three, Four, Five, clear the  
 arena!  
 Say the word, straight I unstop the full or-  
 gan,  
 Blare out the *mode Palestrina*.

While in the roof, if I'm right there,  
 . . . Lo you, the wick in the socket!  
 Hallo, you sacristan, show us a light there!  
 Down it dips, gone like a rocket.  
 What, you want, do you, to come unawares,  
 Sweeping the church up for first morning-  
 prayers,  
 And find a poor devil has ended his cares  
 At the foot of your rotten-runged rat-riddled  
 stairs?  
 Do I carry the moon in my pocket?

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

## A TRAGEDY

Originally published as No. IV. of *Bells and Pomegranates* in 1843. The manuscript was first named *Mansoor the Hierophant*.

## PERSONS

The Grand-Master's Prefect.  
 The Patriarch's Nuncio.  
 The Republic's Admiral.  
 LOYS DE DREUX, Knight-Novice.

## ACT I

*Enter stealthily KARSHOOK, RAGHIB, AYOUB, and other initiated Druses, each as he enters casting off a robe that conceals his distinctive black vest and white turban; then, as giving a loose to exultation, —*

*Karshook.* The moon is carried off in purple fire:

Day breaks at last! Break glory, with the day,  
 On Djabal's dead incarnate mystery  
 Now ready to resume its pristine shape  
 Of Hakeem, as the Khalif vanished erst  
 In what seemed death to uninstructed eyes,  
 On red Mokattam's verge — our Founder's flesh,  
 As he resumes our Founder's function!

*Raghîb.* — Death  
 Sweep to the Christian Prefect that enslaved  
 So long us sad Druse exiles o'er the sea!

*Ayoub.* — Most joy be thine, O Mother-mountain!  
 Thy brood

Initiated Druses — DJABAL, KHALIL, ANAEL, MAANI, KARSHOOK, RAGHIB, AYOUB, and others.  
 Uninitiated Druses, Prefect's Guard, Nuncio's Attendants, Admiral's Force.

TIME, 14—.

PLACE, *An Islet of the Southern Sporades, colonized by Druses of Lebanon, and garrisoned by the Knights-Hospitallers of Rhodes.*

SCENE, *A Hall in the Prefect's Palace.*

Returns to thee, no outcasts as we left,  
 But thus — but thus! Behind, our Prefect's  
 corpse;

Before, a presence like the morning — thine,  
 Absolute Djabal late, — God Hakeem now  
 That day breaks!

*Kar.* Off then, with disguise at last!  
 As from our forms this hateful garb we strip,  
 Lose every tongue its glozing accent too,  
 Discard each limb the ignoble gesture! Cry,  
 'T is the Druse Nation, warders on our Mount  
 Of the world's secret, since the birth of time,  
 — No kindred slips, no offsets from thy stock,  
 No spawn of Christians are we, Prefect, we  
 Who rise . . .

*Ay.* Who shout . . .

*Ragh.* Who seize, a first-fruits, ha —  
 Spoil of the spoiler! Brave!

[*They begin to tear down, and to dispute for, the decorations of the hall.*]

*Kar.* Hold !  
*Ay.* — Mine, I say ;  
 And mine shall it continue !

*Kar.* Just this fringe !  
 Take anything beside ! Lo, spire on spire,  
 Curl serpentwise wreathed columns to the top  
 O' the roof, and hide themselves mysteriously  
 Among the twinkling lights and darks that  
 haunt

Yon cornice ! Where the huge veil, they suspend  
 Before the Prefect's chamber of delight,  
 Floats wide, then falls again as if its slave,  
 The scented air, took heart now, and anon  
 Lost heart to buoy its breadths of gorgeous-  
 ness

Above the gloom they droop in — all the porch  
 Is jewelled o'er with frostwork character ;  
 And, see, yon eight-point cross of white flame,  
 winking  
 Hoar - silvery like some fresh - broke marble  
 stone :

Raze out the Rhodian cross there, so thou leav'st  
 me

This single fringe !

*Ay.* Ha, wouldst thou, dog-fox ? Help !  
 — Three hand-breadths of gold fringe, my son  
 was set

To twist, the night he died !

*Kar.* Nay, hear the knave !  
 And I could witness my one daughter borne,  
 A week since, to the Prefect's couch, yet fold  
 These arms, be mute, lest word of mine should  
 mar

Our Master's work, delay the Prefect here  
 A day, prevent his sailing hence for Rhodes —  
 How know I else ? — Hear me denied my right  
 By such a knave !

*Ragh.* [*Interposing.*] Each ravage for him-  
 self !

Booty enough ! On, Druses ! Be there found  
 Blood and a heap behind us ; with us, Djabal  
 Turned Hakeem ; and before us, Lebanon !  
 Yields the porch ? Spare not ! There his min-  
 ions dragged

Thy daughter, Karshook, to the Prefect's  
 couch !

Ayoob ! Thy son, to soothe the Prefect's  
 pride,

Bent o'er that task, the death-sweat on his  
 brow,

Carving the spice-tree's heart in scroll-work  
 there !

Onward in Djabal's name !

(*As the tumult is at height, enter KHALIL. A pause and  
 silence.*)

*Khalil.* Was it for this,  
 Djabal hath summoned you ? Deserve you  
 thus

A portion in to-day's event ? What, here —  
 When most behoves your feet fall soft, your  
 eyes

Sink low, your tongues lie still, — at Djabal's  
 side,

Close in his very hearing, who, perchance,  
 Assumes e'en now God Hakeem's dreaded  
 shape, —

Dispute you for these gauds ?

*Ay.* How say'st thou, Khalil ?

Doubtless our Master prompts thee ! Take the  
 fringe,

Old Karshook ! I supposed it was a day . . .

*Kha.* For pillage ?

*Kar.* Hearken, Khalil ! Never spoke  
 A boy so like a song-bird ; we avouch thee

Prettiest of all our Master's instruments  
 Except thy bright twin-sister ; thou and Anael

Challenge his prime regard ; but we may crave  
 (Such nothings as we be) a portion too

Of Djabal's favor ; in him we believed,  
 His bound ourselves, him moon by moon

obeyed,  
 Kept silence till this daybreak — so, may claim  
 Reward : who grudges me my claim ?

*Ay.* To-day  
 Is not as yesterday !

*Ragh.* Stand off !  
*Kha.* Rebel you ?

Must I, the delegate of Djabal, draw  
 His wrath on you, the day of our Return ?

*Other Druses.* Wrench from their grasp the  
 fringe ! Hounds ! must the earth

Vomit her plagues on us through thee ? — and  
 thee ?

Plague me not, Khalil, for their fault !  
*Kha.* Oh, shame !

Thus breaks to-day on you, the mystic tribe  
 Who, flying the approach of Osman, bore

Our faith, a merest spark, from Syria's ridge,  
 Its birthplace, hither ! "Let the sea divide

These hunters from their prey," you said ;  
 "and safe

In this dim islet's virgin solitude  
 Tend we our faith, the spark, till happier time

Fan it to fire ; till Hakeem rise again,  
 According to his word that, in the flesh

Which faded on Mokattam ages since,  
 He, at our extreme need, would interpose,

And, reinstating all in power and bliss,  
 Lead us himself to Lebanon once more."

Was 't not thus you departed years ago,  
 Ere I was born ?

*Druses.* 'T was even thus, years ago.  
*Kha.* And did you call — (according to old

laws  
 Which bid us, lest the sacred grow profane,  
 Assimilate ourselves in outward rites

With strangers fortune makes our lords, and  
 live

As Christian with the Christian, Jew with Jew  
 Druse only with the Druses) — did you call

Or no, to stand 'twixt you and Osman's rage,  
 (Mad to pursue e'en hither through the sea

The remnant of our tribe,) a race self vowed  
 To endless warfare with his hordes and him,

The White-cross Knights of the adjacent Isle ?  
*Kar.* And why else rend we down, wrench

up, raise out ?  
 These Knights of Rhodes we thus solicited

For help, bestowed on us a fiercer pest  
 Than aught we fled — their Prefect ; who began

His promised mere paternal governance.  
 By a prompt massacre of all our Sheikhs

Able to thwart the Order in its scheme  
 Of crushing, with our nation's memory.

Each chance of our return, and taming us  
 Bondslaves to Rhodes forever — all, he thinks

To end by this day's treason.

*Kha.* Say I not ?  
You, fitted to the Order's purposes,  
Your Sheikhs cut off, your rights, your garb  
proscribed,  
Must yet receive one degradation more ;  
The Knights at last throw off the mask —  
transfer,

As tributary now and appanage,  
This islet they are but protectors of,  
To their own ever-craving liege, the Church,  
Who licenses all crimes that pay her thus.  
You, from their Prefect, were to be consigned  
(Pursuant of I know not what vile pact)  
To the Knights' Patriarch, ardent to outvie  
His predecessor in all wickedness.  
When suddenly rose Djabal in the midst,  
Djabal, the man in semblance, but our God  
Confessed by signs and portents. Ye saw fire  
Bicker round Djabal, heard strange music fit  
Bird-like about his brow ?

*Druses.* We saw — we heard !  
Djabal is Hakeem, the incarnate Dread,  
The phantasm Khalif, King of Prodiges !

*Kha.* And as he said has not our Khalif  
done,  
And so disposed events (from land to land  
Passing invisibly) that when, this morn,  
The pact of villany complete, there comes  
This Patriarch's Nuncio with this Master's  
Prefect

Their treason to consummate, — each will face  
For a crouching handful, an uplifted nation ;  
For simulated Christians, confessed Druses ;  
And, for slaves past hope of the Mother-mountain,  
Freedmen returning there 'neath Venice' flag ;  
That Venice which, the Hospitaliers' foe,  
Grants us from Candia escort home at price  
Of our relinquished isle, Rhodes counts her  
own —

Venice, whose promised argosies should stand  
Toward harbor : is it now that you, and you,  
And you, selected from the rest to bear  
The burden of the Khalif's secret, further  
To-day's event, entitled by your wrongs,  
And witness in the Prefect's hall his fate —  
That you dare clutch these gauds ? Ay, drop  
them !

*Kar.* True,  
Most true, all this ; and yet, may one dare hint,  
Thou art the youngest of us ? — though em-  
ployed

Abundantly as Djabal's confidant,  
Transmitter of his mandates, even now.  
Much less, when'er beside him Anael graces  
The cedar throne, his queen-bride, art thou like  
To occupy its lowest step that day !  
Now, Khalil, wert thou checked as thou aspir-  
est,

Forbidden such or such an honor, — say,  
Would silence serve so amply ?

*Kha.* Karshook thinks  
I covet honors ? Well, nor idly thinks !  
Honors ? I have demanded of them all  
The greatest !

*Kar.* I supposed so.

*Kha.* Judge, yourselves !  
Turn, thus : 't is in the alcove at the back

Of yonder columned porch, whose entrance now  
The veil hides, that our Prefect holds his state,  
Receives the Nuncio, when the one, from  
Rhodes,

The other lands from Syria ; there they meet.

Now, I have sued with earnest prayers . . .

*Kar.* For what  
Shall the Bride's brother vainly sue ?

*Kha.* That mine —  
Avenge in one blow a myriad wrongs  
— Might be the hand to slay the Prefect there !  
Djabal reserves that office for himself.

[A silence.]  
Thus far, as youngest of you all, I speak  
— Scarce more enlightened than yourselves ;  
since, near

As I approach him, nearer as I trust  
Soon to approach our Master, he reveals  
Only the God's power, not the glory yet.  
Therefore I reasoned with you : now, as servant  
To Djabal, bearing his authority,  
Hear me appoint your several posts ! Till noon  
None see him save myself and Anael : once  
The deed achieved, our Khalif, casting off  
The embodied Awe's tremendous mystery,  
The weakness of the flesh disguise, resumes  
His proper glory, ne'er to fade again.

(Enter a Druse.)

*The Druse.* Our Prefect lands from Rhodes !  
— without a sign

That he suspects aught since he left our Isle ;  
Nor in his train a single guard beyond  
The few he sailed with hence : so have we  
learned

From Loys.

*Kar.* Loys ? Is not Loys gone

Forever ?

*Ay.* Loys, the Frank Knight, returned ?

*The Druse.* Loys, the boy, stood on the  
leading prow

Conspicuous in his gay attire, and leapt  
Into the surf the foremost. Since day-dawn  
I kept watch to the Northward ; take but note  
Of my poor vigilance to Djabal !

*Kha.* Peace !  
Thou, Karshook, with thy company, receive  
The Prefect as appointed : see, all keep  
The wonted show of servitude : announce  
His entry here by the accustomed peal  
Of trumpets, then await the further pleasure  
Of Djabal ! (Loys back, whom Djabal sent  
To Rhodes that we might spare the single Knight  
Worth sparing !)

(Enter a second Druse.)

*The Druse.* I espied it first ! Say, I  
First spied the Nuncio's galley from the South !  
Said'st thou a Crossed-keys' flag would flap the  
mast ?

It nears apace ! One galley and no more.  
If Djabal chance to ask who spied the flag,  
Forget not, I it was !

*Kha.* Thou, Ayoob, bring  
The Nuncio and his followers hither ! Break  
One rule prescribed, ye wither in your blood,  
Die at your fault !

(Enter a third Druse.)

*The Druse.* I shall see home, see home !  
— Shall banquet in the sombre groves again !



Hail to thee, Khalil! Venice looms afar;  
The argosies of Venice, like a cloud,  
Bear up from Candia in the distance!

*Kha.* Joy!  
Summon our people, Raghib! Bid all forth!  
Tell them the long-kept secret, old and young!  
Set free the captive, let the trampled raise  
Their faces from the dust, because at length  
The cycle is complete, God Hakeem's reign  
Begins anew! Say, Venice for our guard,  
Ere night we steer for Syria! Hear you, Druses?  
Hear you this crowning witness to the claims  
Of Djabal? Oh, I spoke of hope and fear,  
Reward and punishment, because he bade  
Who has the right: for me, what should I say  
But, mar not those imperial lineaments,  
No majesty of all that rapt regard  
Vex by the least omission! Let him rise  
Without a check from you!

*Druses.* Let Djabal rise!

(*Enter Loys. — The Druses are silent.*)

*Loys.* Who speaks of Djabal? — for I seek him, friends!

[*Aside.*] *Tu Dieu!* 'Tis as our Isle broke out in song

For joy, its Prefect-incubus drops off  
To-day, and I succeed him in his rule!

But no — they cannot dream of their good fortune!

[*Aloud.*] Peace to you, Druses! I have tidings for you,

But first for Djabal: where's your tall bewitcher,

With that small Arab thin-lipped silver-mouth?

*Kha.* [*Aside to KAR.*] Loys, in truth! Yet Djabal cannot err!

*Kar.* [*To KHA.*] And who takes charge of Loys? That's forgotten,

Despite thy wariness! Will Loys stand

And see his comrades slaughtered?

*Loys.* [*Aside.*] How they shrink  
And whisper, with those rapid faces! What?

The sight of me in their oppressors' garb  
Strikes terror to the simple tribe? God's

shame

On those that bring our Order ill repute!

But all's at end now; better days begin

For these mild mountaineers from over-sea:

The timidest shall have in me no Prefect

To cower at thus! [*Aloud.*] I asked for Djabal —

*Kar.* [*Aside.*] Better

One lured him, ere he can suspect, inside

The corridor; 't were easy to dispatch

A youngster. [*To LOYS.*] Djabal passed some minutes since

Through yonder porch, and . . .

*Kha.* [*Aside.*] Hold! What, him dispatch?

The only Christian of them all we charge

No tyranny upon? Who, — noblest Knight

Of all that learned from time to time their

trade

Of lust and cruelty among us, — heir

To Europe's pomp, a truest child of pride, —

Yet stood between the Prefect and ourselves

From the beginning? Loys, Djabal makes

Account of, and precisely sent to Rhodes

For safety? I take charge of him!

[*To LOYS.*]

Sir Loys, —

*Loys.* There, cousins! Does Sir Loys strike you dead?

*Kha.* [*Advancing.*] Djabal has intercourse with few or none

Till noontide: but, your pleasure?

*Loys.*

"Intercourse

With few or none?" — (Ah, Khalil, when you spoke

I saw not your smooth face! All health! — and health

To Anael! How fares Anael?) — "Intercourse with few or none?" Forget you, I've been

friendly

With Djabal long ere you or any Druse?

— Enough of him at Rennes, I think, beneath The Duke my father's roof! He'd tell by the

hour,

With fixed white eyes beneath his swarthy brow, Plausibler stories . . .

*Kha.*

Stories, say you? — Ah,

The quaint attire!

*Loys.*

My dress for the last time!

How sad I cannot make you understand,

This ermine, o'er a shield, betokens me

Of Bretagne, ancientest of provinces

And noblest; and, what's best and oldest there, See, Dreux', our house's blazon, which the

Nuncio

Tacks to an Hospitaller's vest to-day!

*Kha.* The Nuncio v'e await? What brings you back

From Rhodes, Sir Loys?

*Loys.*

How you island-tribe

Forget the world's awake while here you drowse!

What brings me back? What should not bring me, rather!

Our Patriarch's Nuncio visits you to-day —

Is not my year's probation out? I come

To take the knightly vows.

*Kha.*

What's that you wear?

*Loys.* This Rhodian cross? The cross your Prefect wore.

You should have seen, as I saw, the full Chapter

Rise, to a man, while they transferred this cross From that unworthy Prefect's neck to . . .

(fool —

My secret will escape me!) In a word,

My year's probation passed, a Knight ere eve

Am I; bound, like the rest, to yield my wealth

To the common stock, to live in chastity,

(We Knights espouse alone our Order's fame)

— Change this gay weed for the black white-crossed gown,

And fight to death against the Infidel

— Not, therefore, against you, you Christians with

Such partial difference only as befits

The peacefullest of tribes. But Khalil, prithee,

Is not the Isle brighter than wont to-day?

*Kha.* Ah, the new sword!

*Loys.*

See now! You handle sword

As 't were a camel-staff! Pull! That's my motto,

Annealed "Pro fide," on the blade in blue.

*Kha.* No curve in it? Surely a blade should curve.

*Loys.* Straight from the wrist! Loose — it should poise itself!

*Kha.* [*Waving with irrepressible exultation the sword.*] We are a nation, Loys, of old fame Among the mountains! Rights have we to keep

With the sword too!

[*Remembering himself.*] But I forget — you bid me

Seek Djabal?

*Loys.* What! A sword's sight scares you not?

(The People I will make of him and them!

Oh let my Prefect-sway begin at once!)

Bring Djabal — say, indeed, that come he must!

*Kha.* At noon seek Djabal in the Prefect's Chamber,

And find . . . [*Aside.*] Nay, 't is thy cursed race's token,

Frank pride, no special insolence of thine!

[*Aloud.*] Tarry, and I will do your bidding, Loys!

[*To the rest aside.*] Now, forth you! I proceed to Djabal straight.

Leave this poor boy, who knows not what he says!

Oh will it not add joy to even thy joy,

Djabal, that I report all friends were true?

[*KHALIL goes, followed by the Druses.*

*Loys.* *Tu Dieu!* How happy I shall make these Druses!

Was 't not surpassingly contrived of me To get the long list of their wrongs by heart,

Then take the first pretence for stealing off

From these poor islanders, present myself

Sudden at Rhodes before the noble Chapter,

And (as best proof of ardor in its cause

Which ere to-night will have become, too, mine)

Acquaint it with this plague-sore in its body,

This Prefect and his villainous career?

The princely Synod! All I dared request

Was his dismissal; and they graciously

Consigned his very office to myself —

Myself may cure the Isle diseased!

And well

For them, they did so! Since I never felt

How lone a lot, though brilliant, I embrace,

Till now that, past retrieval, it is mine.

To live thus, and thus die! Yet, as I leapt

On shore, so home a feeling greeted me

That I could half believe in Djabal's story,

He used to tempt my father with, at Rennes —

And me, too, since the story brought me here —

Of some Count Dreux and ancestor of ours

Who, sick of wandering from Bouillon's war,

Left his old name in Lebanon.

Long days

At least to spend in the Isle! and, my news known

An hour hence, what if Anael turn on me

The great black eyes I must forget?

Why, fool,

Recall them, then? My business is with Djabal,

Not Anael! Djabal tarries: if I seek him? —

The Isle is brighter than its wont to-day!

## ACT II

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja.* That a strong man should think himself a God!

I — Hakeem? To have wandered through the world,

Sown falsehood, and thence reaped now scorn, now faith,

For my one chant with many a change, my tale

Of outrage, and my prayer for vengeance — this Required, forsooth, no mere man's faculty,

Naught less than Hakeem's? The persuading Loys

To pass probation here: the getting access

By Loys to the Prefect; worst of all,

The gaining my tribe's confidence by fraud

That would disgrace the very Frank, — a few

Of Europe's secrets which subdue the flame,

The wave, — to ply a simple tribe with these,

Took Hakeem?

And I feel this first to-day!

Does the day break, is the hour imminent

When one deed, when my whole life's deed, my deed

Must be accomplished? Hakeem? Why the God?

Shout, rather, "Djabal, Youssof's child, thought slain

With his whole race, the Druses' Sheikhs, this Prefect

Endeavored to extirpate — saved, a child,

Returns from traversing the world, a man,

Able to take revenge, lead back the march

To Lebanon" — so shout, and who gainsays?

But now, because delusion mixed itself

Insensibly with this career, all's changed!

Have I brought Venice to afford us convoy?

"True — but my jugglings wrought that!"

Put I heart

Into our people where no heart lurked? — "Ah, What cannot an impostor do!"

Not this!

Not do this which I do! Not bid avaunt

Falsehood! Thou shalt not keep thy hold on me!

— Nor even get a hold on me! 'Tis now —

This day — hour — minute — 't is as here I stand

On the accursed threshold of the Prefect.

That I am found deceiving and deceived!

And now what do I? — hasten to the few

Deceived, ere they deceive the many — shout,

"As I professed, I did believe myself!

Say, Druses, had you seen a butchery —

If Ayoob, Karshook saw — Maani there

Must tell you how I saw my father sink;

My mother's arms twine still about my neck;

I hear my brother shriek, here's yet the scar

Of what was meant for my own death-blow —

say,

If you had woke like me, grown year by year

Out of the tumult in a far-off clime,

Would it be wondrous such delusion grew?

I walked the world, asked help at every hand;

Came help or no? Not this and this? Which

helps

When I returned with, found the Prefect here,  
The Druses here, all here but Hakeem's self,  
The Khalif of the thousand prophecies,  
Reserved for such a juncture, — could I call  
My mission aught but Hakeem's? Promised  
Hakeem

More than performs the Djabal — you absolve?  
— Me, you will never shame before the crowd  
Yet happily ignorant? — Me, both throngs sur-  
round,

The few deceived, the many unabused,  
— Who, thus surrounded, slay for you and them  
The Prefect, lead to Lebanon? No Khalif,  
But Sheikh once more! Mere Djabal — not" . . .  
(Enter KHALIL hastily.)

Kha. — God Hakeem!  
'T is told! The whole Druse nation knows thee,  
Hakeem,

As we! and mothers lift on high their babes  
Who seem aware, so glisten their great eyes,  
Thou hast not failed us; ancient brows are  
proud;

Our elders could not earlier die, it seems,  
Than at thy coming! The Druse heart is thine!  
Take it! my lord and theirs, be thou adored!

Dja. [Aside.] Adored! — but I renounce  
it utterly!

Kha. Already are they instituting choirs  
And dances to the Khalif, as of old  
'T is choricled thou bad'st them.

Dja. [Aside.] I abjure it!  
'T is not mine — not for me!

Kha. Why pour they wine  
Flavored like honey and bruised mountain-  
herbs,

Or wear those strings of sun-dried cedar-fruit?  
Oh, let me tell thee — Esaad, we supposed  
Doting, is carried forth, eager to see  
The last sun rise on the Isle: he can see now!  
The shamed Druse women never wept before:  
They can look up when we reach home, they  
say.

Smell! — sweet cane, saved in Lilith's breast  
thus long —

Sweet! — it grows wild in Lebanon. And I  
Alone do nothing for thee! 'T is my office  
Just to announce what well thou know'st — but  
thus

Thou bidst me. At this self-same moment tend  
The Prefect, Nuncio and the Admiral  
Hither by their three sea-paths: nor forget  
Who were the trusty watchers! — thou forget?  
Like me, who do forget that Anael bade . . .

Dja. [Aside.] Ay, Anael, Anael — is that  
said at last?

Louder than all, that would be said, I knew!  
What does abjuring mean, confessing mean,  
To the people? Till that woman crossed my  
path,

On went I, solely for my people's sake:  
I saw her, and I then first saw myself,  
And slackened pace: "If I should prove indeed  
Hakeem — with Anael by!"

Kha. [Aside.] Ah, he is rapt!  
Dare I at such a moment break on him  
Even to do my sister's bidding? Yes:  
The eyes are Djabal's and not Hakeem's yet,  
Though but till I have spoken this, perchance.

Dja. [Aside.] To yearn to tell her, and yet  
have no one  
Great heart's word that will tell her! I could  
gasp  
Doubtless one such word out, and die.

[Aloud.] You said  
That Anael . . .

Kha. . . . Fain would see thee, speak with  
thee,  
Before thou change, discard this Djabal's shape  
She knows, for Hakeem's shape she is to know.  
Something to say that will not from her mind!  
I know not what — "Let him but come!" she  
said.

Dja. [Half apart.] My nation — all my  
Druses — how fare they?

Those I must save, and suffer thus to save,  
Hold they their posts? Wait they their Khalif  
too?

Kha. All at the signal pant to flock around  
That banner of a brow!

Dja. [Aside.] And when they flock,  
Confess them this: and after, for reward,  
Be chased with howlings to her feet perchance!  
— Have the poor outraged Druses, deaf and  
blind,

Precede me there, forestall my story there,  
Tell it in mocks and jeers!

I lose myself!  
Who needs a Hakeem to direct him now?  
I need the veriest child — why not this child?

[Turning abruptly to KHALIL.]  
You are a Druse too, Khalil; you were nourished  
Like Anael with our mysteries: if she  
Could vow, so nourished, to love only one  
Who should avenge the Druses, whence pro-  
ceeds

Your silence? Wherefore made you no essay,  
Who thus implicitly can execute  
My bidding? What have I done, you could not?  
Who, knowing more than Anael the prostration  
Of our once lofty tribe, the daily life  
Of this detested . . .

Does he come, you say,  
This Prefect? All's in readiness?

Kha. The sword,  
The sacred robe, the Khalif's mystic tiar,  
Laid up so long, are all disposed beside  
The Prefect's chamber.

Dja. — Why did you despair?

Kha. I know our nation's state? Too surely  
know,

As thou who speak'st to prove me! Wrongs  
like ours

Should wake revenge: but when I sought the  
wronged

And spoke, — "The Prefect stabbed your son —  
arise!

Your daughter, while you starve, eats shameless  
bread

In his pavilion — then arise!" — my speech  
Fell idly: 't was, "Be silent, or worse fare!"

Endure till time's slow cycle prove complete!  
Who may'st thou be that takest on thee to  
thrust

Into this peril — art thou Hakeem?" No!

Only a mission like thy mission renders  
All these obedient at a breath, subdues



Their private passions, brings their wills to one!

*Dja.* You think so?

*Kha.* Even now — when they have witnessed Thy miracles — had I not threatened all With Hakeem's vengeance, they would mar the work,

And couch ere this, each with his special prize, Safe in his dwelling, leaving our main hope To perish. Feet! When these have kissed thy

At Lebanon, the past purged off, the present Clear, — for the future, even Hakeem's mission May end, and I perchance, or any youth, Shall rule them thus renewed. — I tutor thee!

*Dja.* And wisely. (He is Anael's brother, pure

As Anael's self.) Go say, I come to her. Haste! I will follow you. [KHALIL goes.

Oh, not confess

To these, the blinded multitude — confess, Before at least the fortune of my deed Half authorize its means! Only to her Let me confess my fault, who in my path Curled up like incense from a Mage-king's tomb

When he would have the wayfarer descend Through the earth's rift and bear hid treasure forth!

How should child's-carelessness prove man-hood's crime

Till now that I, whose lone youth hurried past, Letting each joy 'scape for the Druses' sake, At length recover in one Druse all joy?

Were her brow brighter, her eyes richer, still Would I confess! On the gulf's verge I pause. How could I slay the Prefect, thus and thus? Anael, be mine to guard me, not destroy! [Goes.

(Enter ANAEL, and MAANI who is assisting to array her in the ancient dress of the Druses.)

*Anael.* Those saffron vestures of the tabret-girls!

Comes Djabal, think you?

*Maani.* Doubtless Djabal comes.

*An.* Dost thou snow-swathe thee kinglier, Lebanon,

Than in my dreams? — Nay, all the tresses off My forehead! Look I lovely so? He says That I am lovely.

*Maa.* Lovely: nay, that hangs Awry.

*An.* You tell me how a khandjar hangs? The sharp side, thus, along the heart, see, marks

The maiden of our class. Are you content For Djabal as for me?

*Maa.* Content, my child.

*An.* Oh mother, tell me more of him! He comes

Even now — tell more, fill up my soul with him! *Maa.* And did I not . . . yes, surely . . . tell you all?

*An.* What will be changed in Djabal when the Change

Arrives? Which feature? Not his eyes!

*Maa.* 'Tis writ Our Hakeem's eyes rolled fire and clove the dark

Superbly.

*An.* Not his eyes! His voice perhaps? Yet that's no change; for a grave current lived — Grandly beneath the surface ever lived, That, scattering, broke as in live silver spray While . . . ah, the bliss . . . he would dis-course to me

In that enforced still fashion, word on word! 'Tis the old current which must swell through that,

For what least tone, Maani, could I lose?

'Tis surely not his voice will change!

— If Hakeem

Only stood by! If Djabal, somehow, passed Out of the radiance as from out a robe;

Possessed, but was not it! He lived with you?

Well — and that morning Djabal saw me first And heard me vow never to wed but one Who saved my People — on that day . . . proceed!

*Maa.* Once more, then: from the time of his return

In secret, changed so since he left the Isle That I, who screened our Emir's last of sons, This Djabal, from the Prefect's massacre — Who bade him ne'er forget the child he was, — Who dreamed so long the youth he might become —

I knew not in the man that child; the man Who spoke alone of hope to save our tribe, How he had gone from land to land to save Our tribe — allies were sure, nor foes to dread; And much he mused, days, nights, alone he mused:

But never till that day when, pale and worn As by a persevering woe, he cried "Is there not one Druse left me?" — and I showed

The way to Khalil's and your hiding-place From the abhorred eye of the Prefect here, So that he saw you, heard you speak — till then, Never did he announce — (how the moon seemed To ope and shut, the while, above us both!) — His mission was the mission promised us; The cycle had revolved; all things renewing, He was lost Hakeem clothed in flesh to lead His children home anon, now veiled to work Great purposes: the Druses now would change!

*An.* And they have changed! And obstacles did sink,

And furtherances rose! And round his form Played fire, and music beat her angel wings! My people, let me more rejoice, oh more For you than for myself! Did I but watch Afar the pageant, feel our Khalif pass, One of the throng, how proud were I — though ne'er

Singled by Djabal's glance! But to be chosen His own from all, the most his own of all, To be exalted with him, side by side, Lead the exulting Druses, meet . . . ah, how Worthily meet the maidens who await Ever beneath the cedars — how deserve This honor, in their eyes? So bright are they Who saffron-vested sound the tabret there, The girls who throng there in my dream! One hour

And all is over: how shall I do aught

That may deserve next hour's exalting? —  
How? — [Suddenly to MAANI.]

Mother, I am not worthy him! I read it  
Still in his eyes! He stands as if to tell me  
I am not, yet forbears. Why else revert  
To one theme ever? — how mere human gifts  
Suffice him in myself — whose worship fades,  
Whose awe goes ever off at his approach,  
As now, who when he comes . . .

(DJABAL enters.)

Oh why is it

I cannot kneel to you?

Dja. Rather, 'tis I  
Should kneel to you, my Anael!

An. Even so!  
For never seem you — shall I speak the truth? —  
Never a God to me! 'Tis the Man's hand,  
Eye, voice! Oh, do you veil these to our people,  
Or but to me? To them, I think, to them!  
And brightness is their veil, shadow — my truth!  
You mean that I should never kneel to you  
— So, thus I kneel!

Dja. [Preventing her.] No — no!

[Feeling the khandjar as he raises her.

Ha, have you chosen . . .

An. The khandjar with our ancient garb.

But, Djabal,

Change not, be not exalted yet! Give time  
That I may plan more, perfect more! My blood  
Beats, beats!

[Aside.] Oh, must I then — since Loys leaves  
us

Never to come again, renew in me  
These doubts so near effaced already — must  
I needs confess them now to Djabal? — own  
That when I saw that stranger, heard his voice,  
My faith fell, and the woeful thought flashed  
first

That each effect of Djabal's presence, taken  
For proof of more than human attributes  
In him, by me whose heart at his approach  
Beat fast, whose brain while he was by swam  
round,

Whose soul at his departure died away,  
— That every such effect might have been  
wrought

In other frames, though not in mine, by Loys  
Or any merely mortal presence? Doubt  
Is fading fast: shall I reveal it now?

How shall I meet the rapture presently,  
With doubt unexpiated, undisclosed?

Dja. [Aside.] Avow the truth? I cannot!  
In what words

Avow that all she loved in me was false?

— Which yet has served that flower-like love of  
hers

To climb by, like the clinging gourd, and clasp  
With its divinest wealth of leaf and bloom.  
Could I take down the prop-work, in itself  
So vile, yet interlaced and overlaid  
With painted cups and fruitage — might these  
still

Bask in the sun, unconscious their own strength  
Of matted stalk and tendril had replaced  
The old support thus silently withdrawn!  
But no; the beauteous fabric crushes too.  
'Tis not for my sake but for Anael's sake  
I leave her soul this Hakeem where it leans.

Oh could I vanish from her, quit the Isle!  
And yet — a thought comes: here my work is  
done

At every point; the Druses must return —  
Have convoy to their birth-place back, whoe'er  
The leader be, myself or any Druse —  
Venice is pledged to that: 'tis for myself,  
For my own vengeance in the Prefect's death,  
I stay now, not for them: to slay or spare  
The Prefect, whom imports it save myself?  
He cannot bar their passage from the Isle;  
What would his death be but my own reward?  
Then, mine I will forego. It is foregone!  
Let him escape with all my House's blood!  
Ere he can reach land, Djabal disappears,  
And Hakeem, Anael loved, shall, fresh as first,  
Live in her memory, keeping her sublime  
Above the world. She cannot touch that world  
By ever knowing what I truly am,  
Since Loys, — of mankind the only one  
Able to link my present with my past,  
My life in Europe with my Island life,  
Thence, able to unmask me, — I've disposed  
Safely at last at Rhodes, and . . .

(Enter KHALIL.)

Kha. Loys greets thee!  
Dja. Loys? To drag me back? It cannot  
be!

An. [Aside.] Loys! Ah, doubt may not be  
stified so!

Kha. Can I have erred that thou so gazest?  
Yes,

I told thee not in the glad press of tidings  
Of higher import, Loys is returned  
Before the Prefect, with, if possible,  
Twice the light-heartedness of old. As though  
On some inauguration he expects,  
To-day, the world's fate hung!

Dja. — And asks for me?

Kha. Thou knowest all things. Thee in  
chief he greets,

But every Druse of us is to be happy  
At his arrival, he declares: were Loys  
Thou, Master, he could have no wider soul  
To take us in with. How I love that Loys!

Dja. [Aside.] Shame winds me with her  
tether round and round!

An. [Aside.] Loys? I take the trial! it  
is meet,

The little I can do, be done; that faith,  
All I can offer, want no perfecting  
Which my own act may compass. Ay, this  
way

All may go well, nor that ignoble doubt  
Be chased by other aid than mine. Advance  
Close to my fear, weigh Loys with my Lord.  
The mortal with the more than mortal gifts!

Dja. [Aside.] Before, there were so few  
deceived! and now

There's doubtless not one least Druse in the  
Isle

But, having learned my superhuman claims,  
And calling me his Khalif-God, will clash  
The whole truth out from Loys at first word!  
While Loys, for his part, will hold me up,  
With a Frank's unimaginable scorn  
Of such imposture, to my people's eyes!  
Could I but keep him longer yet awhile

From them, amuse him here until I plan  
How he and I at once may leave the Isle!  
Khalil I cannot part with from my side—  
My only help in this emergency:  
There's Anael!

An. Please you?

Dja. Anael—none but she!

[To ANAEL.] I pass some minutes in the chamber there,

Ere I see Loys: you shall speak with him  
Until I join you. Khalil follows me.

An. [Aside.] As I divined: he bids me save myself,

Offers me a probation—I accept!

Let me see Loys!

Loys. [Without.] Djabal!

An. [Aside.] 'Tis his voice.

The smooth Frank trifler with our people's wrongs,

The self-complacent boy-inquirer, loud

On this and that inflicted tyranny,

—Aught serving to parade an ignorance

Of how wrong feels, inflicted! Let me close

With what I viewed at distance: let myself

Probe this delusion to the core!

Dja. He comes.

Khalil, along with me! while Anael waits

Till I return once more—and but once more!

### ACT III

ANAEL and LOYS.

An. Here leave me! Here I wait another.

'Twas

For no mad protestation of a love

Like this you say possesses you, I came.

Loys. Love? how protest a love I dare not feel?

Mad words may doubtless have escaped me: you

Are here—I only feel you here!

An. No more!

Loys. But once again, whom could you love? I dare,

Alas, say nothing of myself, who am

A Knight now, for when Knighthood we embrace,

Love we abjure: so, speak on safely: speak,

Lest I speak, and betray my faith! And yet

To say your breathing passes through me, changes

My blood to spirit, and my spirit to you,

As Heaven the sacrificer's wine to it—

This is not to protest my love! You said

You could love one . . .

An. One only! We are bent

To earth—who raises up my tribe, I love;

The Prefect bows us—who removes him; we

Have ancient rights—who gives them back to us,

I love. Forbear me! Let my hand go!

Loys. Him

You could love only? Where is Djabal?

Stay!

[Aside.] Yet wherefore stay? Who does this but myself?

Had I apprised her that I come to do

Just this, what more could she acknowledge?

No,

She sees into my heart's core! What is it  
Feeds either cheek with red, as June some  
rose?

Why turns she from me? Ah fool, over-fond

To dream I could call up . . .

. . . What never dream

Yet feigned! 'Tis love! Oh Anael, speak to me!

Djabal—

An. Seek Djabal by the Prefect's chamber  
At noon! [She paces the room.]

Loys. [Aside.] And am I not the Prefect now?

Is it my fate to be the only one

Able to win her love, the only one

Unable to accept her love? The past

Breaks up beneath my footing: came I here

This morn as to a slave, to set her free

And take her thanks, and then spend day by day

Content beside her in the Isle? What works

This knowledge in me now? Her eye has broken

The faint disguise away: for Anael's sake

I left the Isle, for her espoused the cause

Of the Druses, all for her I thought, till now,

To live without!

—As I must live! To-day

Ordains me Knight, forbids me . . . never shall

Forbid me to profess myself, heart, arm,

Thy soldier!

An. Djabal you demanded, comes!

Loys. [Aside.] What wouldst thou, Loys? see him? Naught beside

Is wanting: I have felt his voice a spell

From first to last. He brought me here, made known

The Druses to me, drove me hence to seek

Redress for them; and shall I meet him now,

When naught is wanting but a word of his,

To—what?—induce me to spurn hope, faith, pride,

Honor away,—to cast my lot among

His tribe, become a proverb in men's mouths,

Breaking my high pact of companionship

With those who graciously bestowed on me

The very opportunities I turn

Against them! Let me not see Djabal now!

An. The Prefect also comes!

Loys. [Aside.] Him let me see,

Not Djabal! Him, degraded at a word,

To soothe me,—to attest belief in me—

And after, Djabal! Yes, ere I return

To her, the Nuncio's vow shall have destroyed

This heart's rebellion, and coerced this will  
Forever.

Anael, not before the vows

Irrevocably fix me . . .

Let me fly!

The Prefect, or I lose myself forever! [Goes.]

An. Yes, I am calm now; just one way remains—

One, to attest my faith in him: for, see,

I were quite lost else: Loys, Djabal, stand

On either side—two men! I balance looks

And words, give Djabal a man's preference,



No more. In Djabal, Hakeem is absorbed !  
And for a love like this, the God who saves  
My race, selects me for his bride ? One way ! —

(Enter DJABAL.)

Dja. [To himself.] No moment is to waste  
then ; 't is resolved.

If Khalil may be trusted to lead back  
My Druses, and if Loys can be lured  
Out of the Isle — if I procure his silence,  
Or promise never to return at least, —  
All's over. Even now my bark awaits :  
I reach the next wild islet and the next,  
And lose myself beneath the sun forever.  
And now, to Anael !

An. Djabal, I am thine !

Dja. Mine ? Djabal's ? — As if Hakeem  
had not been ?

An. Not Djabal's ? Say first, do you read  
my thought ?

Why need I speak, if you can read my thought ?

Dja. I do not, I have said a thousand times.

An. (My secret's safe, I shall surprise him  
yet !)

Djabal, I knew your secret from the first :  
Djabal, when first I saw you . . . (by our porch  
You leant, and pressed the tinkling veil away,  
And one fringe fell behind your neck — I  
see !)

. . . I knew you were not human, for I said  
" This dim secluded house where the sea beats  
Is heaven to me — my people's huts are hell  
To them ; this august form will follow me,  
Mix with the waves his voice will, — I have  
him ;

And they, the Prefect ! Oh, my happiness  
Rounds to the full whether I choose or no !  
His eyes met mine, he was about to speak,  
His hand grew damp — surely he meant to  
say

He let me love him : in that moment's bliss  
I shall forget my people pine for home —  
They pass and they repass with pallid eyes !"  
I vowed at once a certain vow ; this vow —  
Not to embrace you till my tribe was saved.  
Embrace me !

Dja. [Apart.] And she loved me ! Naught  
remained

But that ! Nay, Anael, is the Prefect dead ?

An. Ah, you reproach me ! True, his death  
crowns all,

I know — or should know : and I would do  
much,

Believe ! but, death ! Oh, you, who have  
known death,

Would never doom the Prefect, were death  
fearful

As we report !

Death ! — a fire curls within us  
From the foot's palm, and fills up to the brain,  
Up, out, then shatters the whole bubble-shell  
Of flesh, perchance !

Death ! — witness, I would die,  
Whate'er death be, would venture now to die  
For Khalil, for Maani — what for thee ?  
Nay, but embrace me, Djabal, in assurance  
My vow will not be broken, for I must  
Do something to attest my faith in you,  
Be worthy you !

Dja. [Avoiding her.] I come for that — to  
say

Such an occasion is at hand : 't is like  
I leave you — that we part, my Anael, — part  
Forever !

An. We part ? Just so ! I have suc-  
cumbed, —

I am, he thinks, unworthy — and naught less  
Will serve than such approval of my faith.  
Then, we part not ! Remains there no way  
short

Of that ? Oh, not that !

Death ! — yet a hurt bird  
Died in my hands ; its eyes filmed — " Nay, it  
sleeps,"

I said, " will wake to-morrow well." 't was  
dead.

Dja. I stand here and time fleets. Anael  
— I come

To bid a last farewell to you : perhaps  
We never meet again. But, ere the Prefect  
Arrive . . .

(Enter KHALIL, breathlessly.)

Kha. He's here ! The Prefect ! Twenty  
guards,

No more — no sign he dreams of danger. All  
Awaits thee only. Ayooob, Karshook, keep  
Their posts — wait but the deed's accomplish-  
ment

To join us with thy Druses to a man.  
Still holds his course the Nuncio — near and  
near

The fleet from Candia steering.

Dja. [Aside.] All is lost !

— Or won ?

Kha. And I have laid the sacred robe,  
The sword, the head-tiar, at the porch — the  
place

Commanded. Thou wilt hear the Prefect's  
trumpet.

Dja. Then I keep Anael, — him then, past  
recall,

I slay — 't is forced on me ! As I began  
I must conclude — so be it !

Kha. For the rest,

Save Loys, our foe's solitary sword,  
All is so safe that . . . I will ne'er entreat  
Thy post again of thee : though danger none,  
There must be glory only meet for thee  
In slaying the Prefect !

An. [Aside.] And 't is now that Djabal  
Would leave me ! — in the glory meet for him !

Dja. As glory, I would yield the deed to  
you

Or any Druse ; what peril there may be,  
I keep. [Aside.] All things conspire to hound  
me on !

Not now, my soul, draw back, at least ! Not  
now !

The course is plain, howe'er obscure all else.

Once offer this tremendous sacrifice,

Prevent what else will be irreparable,

Secure these transcendental helps, regain

The Cedars — then let all dark clear itself !

I slay him !

Kha. Anael, and no part for us !

[To DJA.] Hast thou possessed her with . . .

Dja. [To AN.] Whom speak you to ?

What is it you behold there? Nay, this smile  
Turns stranger. Shudder you? The man  
must die,  
As thousands of our race have died through  
him.

One blow, and I discharge his weary soul  
From the flesh that pollutes it! Let him fill  
Straight some new expiatory form, of earth  
Or sea, the reptile or some airy thing:  
What is there in his death?

*An.* My brother said,  
Is there no part in it for us?

*Dja.* For Khalil, —  
The trumpet will announce the Nuncio's entry;  
Here, I shall find the Prefect hastening  
In the Pavilion to receive him — here  
I slay the Prefect; meanwhile Ayoob leads  
The Nuncio with his guards within: once these  
Secured in the outer hall, bid Ayoob bar  
Entry or egress till I give the sign

Which waits the landing of the argosies  
You will announce to me: this double sign  
That justice is performed and help arrived,  
When Ayoob shall receive, but not before,  
Let him throw ope the palace doors, admit  
The Druses to behold their tyrant, ere  
We leave forever this detested spot.

Go, Khalil, hurry all! No pause, no pause!  
Whirl on the dream, secure to wake anon!

*Kha.* What sign? and who the bearer?

*Dja.* Who shall show  
My ring, admit to Ayoob. How she stands!  
Have I not . . . I must have some task for her,  
Anael, not that way! 'T is the Prefect's  
chamber!

Anael, keep you the ring — give you the sign!  
(It holds her safe amid the stir.) You will  
Be faithful?

*An.* [Taking the ring.] I would fain be wor-  
thy. Hark! [Trumpet without.]

*Kha.* He comes!

*Dja.* And I too come.

*An.* One word, but one!

Say, shall you be exalted at the deed?

Then? On the instant?

*Dja.* I exalted? What?

He, there — we, thus — our wrongs revenged,  
our tribe

Set free? Oh, then shall I, assure yourself,

Shall you, shall each of us, be in his death  
Exalted!

*Kha.* He is here!

*Dja.* Away — away! [They go.  
(Enter the PREFECT with GUARDS, and LOYS.)

*The Prefect.* [To Guards.] Back, I say, to  
the galley every guard!

That's my sole care now; see each bench re-  
tains

Its complement of rowers; I embark

O' the instant, since this Knight will have it  
so.

Alas me! Could you have the heart, my Loys!  
[To a Guard who whispers.] Oh, bring the holy

Nuncio here forthwith! [The Guards go.]

Loys, a rueful sight, confess, to see

The gray discarded Prefect leave his post,

With tears i' the eye! So, you are Prefect  
now?

You depose me — you succeed me? Ha, ha!

*Loys.* And dare you laugh, whom laughter  
less becomes

Than yesterday's forced meekness we be-  
held . . .

*Pref.* — When you so eloquently pleaded,  
Loys,

For my dismissal from the post? Ah, meek  
With cause enough, consult the Nuncio else!  
And wish him the like meekness: for so stanch  
A servant of the church can scarce have bought  
His share in the Isle, and paid for it, hard  
pieces!

You've my successor to condole with, Nuncio!  
I shall be safe by then i' the galley, Loys!

*Loys.* You make as you would tell me you  
rejoice

To leave your scene of . . .

*Pref.* Trade in the dear Druses?  
Blood and sweat traffic? Spare what yesterday  
We heard enough of! Drove I in the Isle  
A profitable game? Learn wit, my son,  
Which you'll need shortly! Did it never  
bred

Suspicion in you, all was not pure profit,

When I, the insatiate . . . and so forth — was  
bent

On having a partaker in my rule?

Why did I yield this Nuncio half the gain,

If not that I might also shift — what on him?

Half of the peril, Loys!

*Loys.*

*Pref.*

Hark you!  
I'd love you if you'd let me — this for reason,  
You save my life at price of . . . well, say risk

At least, of yours. I came a long time since  
To the Isle; our Hospitaliers bade me tame  
These savage wizards, and reward myself —

*Loys.* The Knights who so repudiate your  
crime?

*Pref.* Loys, the Knights! we doubtless un-  
derstood

Each other; as for trusting to reward

From any friend beside myself . . . no, no!

I clutched mine on the spot, when it was sweet,

And I had taste for it. I felt these wizards

Alive — was sure they were not on me, only

When I was on them: but with age comes  
caution:

And stinging pleasures please less and sting  
more.

Year by year, fear by fear! The girls were  
brighter

Than ever ('faith, there's yet one Anael' left,

I set my heart upon — Oh, prithee, let

That brave new sword lie still!) — These joys  
looked brighter,

But siltener the town, too, as I passed.

With this alcove's delicious memories

Began to mingle visions of gaunt fathers,

Quick-eyed sons, fugitives from the mine, the  
oar,

Stealing to catch me. Brief, when I began

To quake with fear — (I think I hear the Chap-  
ter

Solicited to let me leave, now all

Worth staying for was gained and gone!) — I  
say,

Just when, for the remainder of my life,  
All methods of escape seemed lost — that then  
Up should a young hot-headed Loys spring,  
Talk very long and loud, — in fine, compel  
The Knights to break their whole arrangement,  
have me

Home for pure shame — from this safehold of  
mine

Where but ten thousand Druses seek my life,  
To my wild place of banishment, San Gines  
By Murcia, where my three fat manors lying,  
Purchased by gains here and the Nuncio's gold,  
Are all I have to guard me, — that such fortune  
Should fall to me, I hardly could expect.  
Therefore I say, I'd love you.

*Loys.* Can it be?

I play into your hands then? Oh no, no!  
The Venerable Chapter, the Great Order  
Sunk o' the sudden into fiends of the pit?  
But I will back — will yet unveil you!

*Pref.* Me?  
To whom? — perhaps Sir Galeas, who in Chapter  
Shook his white head thrice — and some dozen  
times

My hand next morning shook, for value paid!  
To that Italian saint, Sir Cosimo? —  
Indignant at my wringing year by year  
A thousand bezants from the coral divers,  
As you recounted; felt the saint aggrieved  
Well might he — I allowed for his half-share  
Merely one hundred! To Sir . . .

*Loys.* See! you dare  
Inculcate the whole Order; yet should I,  
A youth, a sole voice, have the power to change  
Their evil way, had they been firm in it?  
Answer me!

*Pref.* Oh, the son of Bretagne's Duke,  
And that son's wealth, the father's influence,  
too,

And the young arm, we'll even say, my Loys,  
— The fear of losing or diverting these  
Into another channel, by gainsaying  
A novice too abruptly, could not influence  
The Order! You might join, for aught they  
cared,

Their red-cross rivals of the Temple! Well,  
I thank you for my part, at all events.  
Stay here till they withdraw you! You'll in-  
habit

My palace — sleep, perchance, in the alcove  
Whither I go to meet our holy friend.  
Good! and now disbelieve me if you can, —  
This is the first time for long years I enter  
Thus [*lifts the arras*] without feeling just as if  
I lifted

The lid up of my tomb.

*Loys.* They share his crime!  
God's punishment will overtake you yet.

*Pref.* Thank you it does not! Pardon this  
last flash:

I bear a sober visage presently  
With the disinterested Nuncio here —  
His purchase-money safe at Murcia, too!  
Let me repeat — for the first time, no draught  
Coming as from a sepulchre salutes me.

When we next meet, this folly may have passed.  
We'll hope. Ha, ha! [*Goes through the arras.*]

*Loys.* Assure me but . . . he's gone!

He could not lie. Then what have I escaped.  
I, who had so nigh given up happiness  
Forever, to be linked with him and them!  
Oh, opportunist of discoveries! I  
Their Knight? I utterly renounce them all!  
Hark! What, he meets by this the Nuncio!

Yes,  
The same hyæna groan-like laughter! Quick —  
To Djabal! I am one of them at last,  
These simple-hearted Druses — Anael's tribe!  
Djabal! She's mine at last. Djabal, I say!

[*Goes.*]

## ACT IV

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja.* Let me but slay the Prefect. The end  
now!

To-morrow will be time enough to pry  
Into the means I took: suffice, they served,  
Ignoble as they were, to hurl revenge  
True to its object. [*Seeing the robe, etc. disposed.*]

Mine should never so  
Have hurried to accomplishment! Thee,  
Djabal,

Far other mood befitted! Calm the Robe  
Should clothe this doom's awarder!

[*Taking the robe.*] Shall I dare  
Assume my nation's Robe? I am at least  
A Druse again, chill Europe's policy  
Drops from me: I dare take the Robe. Why  
not

The Tiar? I rule the Druses, and what more  
Betokens it than rule? — yet — yet —

[*Lays down the tior.*]  
He comes!

[*Taking the sword.*]  
If the Sword serve, let the Tiar lie! So, feet  
Clogged with the blood of twenty years can  
fall

Thus lightly! Round me, all ye ghosts! He'll  
lift . . .

Which arm to push the arras wide? — or both?  
Stab from the neck down to the heart — there  
stay!

Near he comes — nearer — the next footstep!  
Now!

[*As he dashes aside the arras, ANAEL is discovered.*]  
Ha! Anael! Nay, my Anael, can it be?

Heard you the trumpet? I must slay him  
here,

And here you ruin all. Why speak you not?  
Anael, the Prefect comes! [*ANAEL screams.*]

So slow to feel  
'Tis not a sight for you to look upon?

A moment's work — but such work! Till you  
go,

I must be idle — idle, I risk all!  
[*Pointing to her hair.*]

Those locks are well, and you are beauteous  
thus,

But with the dagger 't is, I have to do!  
*An.* With mine!

*Dja.* Blood — Anael?  
*An.* Djabal, 't is thy deed!

It must be! I had hoped to claim it mine —  
Be worthy thee — but I must needs confess



'T was not I, but thyself . . . not I have . . .  
Djabal!

Speak to me!

Dja. Oh my punishment!

An. Speak to me  
While I can speak! touch me, despite the blood!  
When the command passed from thy soul to  
mine,

I went, fire leading me, muttering of thee,  
And the approaching exaltation, — "make  
One sacrifice!" I said, — and he sat there.  
Bade me approach; and, as I did approach,  
Thy fire with music burst into my brain.

'T was but a moment's work, thou saidst — per-  
chance

It may have been so! Well, it is thy deed!

Dja. It is my deed!

An. His blood all this! — this! and . . .  
And more! Sustain me, Djabal! Wait not —  
now

Let flash thy glory! Change thyself and me!  
It must be! Ere the Druses flock to us!  
At least confirm me! Djabal, blood gushed  
forth —

He was our tyrant — but I looked he 'd fall  
Prone as asleep — why else is death called sleep?  
Sleep? He bent o'er his breast! 'T is sin, I

know, —  
Punish me, Djabal, but wilt thou let him?  
Be it thou that punishest, not he — who creeps  
On his red breast — is here! 'T is the small  
groan

Of a child — no worse! Bestow the new life,  
then!

Too swift it cannot be, too strange, surpassing!  
[Following him up as he retreats.]

Now! Change us both! Change me and  
change thou!

Dja. [Sinks on his knees.] Thus!  
Behold my change! You have done nobly.  
I! —

An. Can Hakeem kneel?  
Dja. No Hakeem, and scarce Djabal!  
I have dealt falsely, and this woe is come.

No — hear me ere scorn blast me! Once and  
ever,

The deed is mine! Oh think upon the past!  
An. [To herself.] Did I strike once, or twice,  
or many times?

Dja. I came to lead my tribe where, bathed  
in glooms,

Doth Bahumid the Renovator sleep:  
Anael, I saw my tribe: I said, "Without  
A miracle this cannot be" — I said  
"Be there a miracle!" — for I saw you!

An. His head lies south the portal!  
Dja. — Weighed with this

The general good, how could I choose my  
own?

What matter was my purity of soul?  
Little by little I engaged myself —  
Heaven would accept me for its instrument,  
I hoped: I said Heaven had accepted me!

An. Is it this blood breeds dreams in me?  
— Who said

You were not Hakeem? And your miracles —  
The fire that plays innocuous round your form?

[Again changing her whole manner.]

Ah, thou wouldst try me — thou art Hakeem  
still!

Dja. Woe — woe! As if the Druses of the  
Mount

(Scarce Arabs, even there, but here, in the Isle.  
Beneath their former selves) should comprehend  
The subtle lore of Europe! A few secrets  
That would not easily affect the meanest  
Of the crowd there, could wholly subjugate  
The best of our poor tribe. Again that eye?

An. [After a pause springs to his neck.] Djabal,  
in this there can be no deceit!

Why, Djabal, were you human only, — think,  
Maani is but human, Khalil human,  
Loys is human even — did their words  
Haunt me, their looks pursue me? Shame on  
you

So to have tried me! Rather, shame on me  
So to need trying! Could I, with the Prefect  
And the blood, there — could I see only you?  
— Hang by your neck over this gulf of blood?  
Speak, I am saved! Speak, Djabal! Am I  
saved?

[As DJABAL slowly unclaspes her arms, and puts her  
silently from him.]

Hakeem would save me! Thou art Djabal!  
Crouch!

Bow to the dust, thou basest of our kind!  
The pile of thee, I reared up to the cloud —  
Full, midway, of our fathers' trophied tombs,  
Based on the living rock, devoured not by  
The unstable desert's jaws of sand, — falls  
prone!

Fire, music, quenched: and now thou liest there  
A ruin, obscene creatures would moan through!  
— Let us come, Djabal!

Dja. Whither come?  
An. At once —

Lest so it grow intolerable. Come!  
Will I not share it with thee? Best at once!  
So, feel less pain! Let them deride, — thy tribe  
Now trusting in thee, — Loys shall deride!  
Come to them, hand in hand, with me!

Dja. Where come?  
An. Where? — to the Druses thou hast  
wronged! Confess,

Now that the end is gained — (I love thee now —)  
That thou hast so deceived them — (perchance  
love thee

Better than ever!) Come, receive their doom  
Of infamy! Oh, best of all I love thee!  
Shame with the man, no triumph with the God,  
Be mine! Come!

Dja. Never! More shame yet? and why?  
Why? You have called this deed mine — it is  
mine!

And with it I accept its circumstance.  
How can I longer strive with fate? The past  
Is past: my false life shall henceforth show  
true.

Hear me! The argosies touch land by this;  
They bear us to fresh scenes and happier skies  
What if we reign together? — if we keep  
Our secret for the Druses' good? — by means  
Of even their superstition, plant in them  
New life? I learn from Europe: all who seek  
Man's good must awe man, by such means as  
these.

We two will be divine to them — we are!  
All great works in this world spring from the  
ruins

Of greater projects — ever, on our earth,  
Babels men block out, Babylons they build.  
I wrest the weapon from your hand! I claim  
The deed! Retire! You have my ring — you bar  
All access to the Nuncio till the forces  
From Venice land!

An. Thou wilt feign Hakeem then?

Dja. [*Putting the Tiara of Hakeem on his head.*] And from this moment that I dare ope wide

Eyes that till now refused to see, begins  
My true dominion: for I know myself,  
And what am I to personate. No word?

[ANAEI goes.

'Tis come on me at last! His blood on her —  
What memories will follow that! Her eye,  
Her fierce distorted lip and ploughed black  
brow!

Ah, fool! Has Europe then so poorly tamed  
The Syrian blood from out thee? Thou, presume

To work in this foul earth by means not foul?  
Scheme, as for heaven, — but, on the earth, be  
glad

If a least ray like heaven's be left thee!

Thus

I shall be calm — in readiness — no way  
Surprised.

[A noise without.

This should be Khalil and my Druses.  
Venice is come then! Thus I grasp thee, sword!  
Druses, 'tis Hakeem saves you! In! Behold  
Your Prefect!

[*Enter LOYS. DJABAL hides the khandjar in his robe.*]

Loys. Oh, well found, Djabal! — but no time  
for words.

You know who waits there?

[*Pointing to the alcove.*

Well! — and that 't is there  
He meets the Nuncio? Well? Now, a surprise —  
He there —

Dja. I know —

Loys. — is now no mortal's lord,

Is absolutely powerless — call him, dead —  
He is no longer Prefect — you are Prefect!  
Oh, shrink not! I do nothing in the dark,  
Nothing unworthy Breton blood, believe!  
I understood at once your urgency  
That I should leave this isle for Rhodes; I felt  
What you were loath to speak — your need of  
help.

I have fulfilled the task, that earnestness  
Imposed on me: have, face to face, confronted  
The Prefect in full Chapter, charged on him  
The enormities of his long rule; he stood  
Mute, offered no defence, no crime denied.  
On which, I spoke of you, and of your tribe,  
Your faith so like our own, and all you urged  
Of old to me — I spoke, too, of your goodness,  
Your patience — brief, I hold henceforth the  
Isle

In charge, am nominally lord, — but you,  
You are associated in my rule —  
Are the true Prefect! Ay, such faith had they  
In my assurance of your loyalty  
[*For who insults an imbecile old man?*]

That we assume the Prefecture this hour!  
You gaze at me? Hear greater wonders yet —  
I cast down all the fabric I have built!  
These Knights, I was prepared to worship . . .  
but

Of that another time; what's now to say,  
Is — I shall never be a Knight! Oh, Djabal,  
Here first I throw all prejudice aside,  
And call you brother! I am Druse like you:  
My wealth, my friends, my power, are wholly  
yours,

Your people's, which is now my people: for  
There is a maiden of your tribe, I love —  
She loves me — Khalil's sister —

Dja. Aneel?

Loys. Start you?

Seems what I say, unknighly? Thus it chanced:  
When first I came, a novice, to the isle . . .  
[*Enter one of the NUNCIO'S GUARDS from the alcove.*]

Guard. Oh horrible! Sir Loys! Here is Loys!  
And here — [Others enter from the alcove.

[*Pointing to DJABAL.*] Secure him, bind him —  
this is he! [They surround DJABAL.

Loys. Madmen — what is 't you do? Stand  
from my friend,  
And tell me!

Guard. Thou canst have no part in this —  
Surely no part! But slay him not! The Nuncio  
Commanded, slay him not!

Loys. Speak, or . . .

Guard. The Prefect  
Lies murdered there by him thou dost embrace.

Loys. By Djabal? Miserable fools! How  
Djabal?

[A Guard lifts DJABAL'S robe; DJABAL flings down the  
khandjar.

Loys. [After a pause.] Thou hast received  
some insult worse than all,  
Some outrage not to be endured —

[To the Guards.] Stand back!  
He is my friend — more than my friend! Thou  
hast

Slain him upon that provocation!

Guard. No!

No provocation! 'T is a long devised  
Conspiracy: the whole tribe is involved.  
He is their Khalif — 't is on that pretence —  
Their mighty Khalif who died long ago,  
And now comes back to life and light again!  
All is just now revealed, I know not how,  
By one of his confederates — who, struck  
With horror at this murder, first apprised  
The Nuncio. As 't was said, we find this Djabal  
Here where we take him.

Dja. [Aside.] Who broke faith with me?

Loys. [To DJABAL.] Hear'st thou? Speak!  
Till thou speak I keep off these.

Or die with thee. Deny this story! Thou  
A Khalif, an impostor? Thou, my friend,  
Whose tale was of an inoffensive tribe,  
With . . . but thou know'st — on that tale's  
truth I pledged

My faith before the Chapter: what art thou?

Dja. Loys, I am as thou hast heard. All's  
true!

No more concealment! As these tell thee, all  
Was long since planned. Our Druses are enough  
To crush this handful: the Venetians land

Even now in our behalf. Loys, we part !  
Thou, serving much, wouldst fain have served  
me more ;

It might not be. I thank thee. As thou hear-  
est,

We are a separated tribe : farewell !

*Loys.* Oh, where will truth be found now ?  
Canst thou so

Belie the Druses ? Do they share thy crime ?  
Those thou professest of our Breton stock,  
Are partners with thee ? Why, I saw but  
now

Khalil, my friend — he spoke with me — no  
word

Of this ! and Anael — whom I love, and who  
Loves me — she spoke no word of this !

*Dja.* Poor boy !  
Anael, who loves thee ? Khalil, fast thy friend ?  
We, offsets from a wandering Count of Dreux ?  
No : older than the oldest, princelier  
Than Europe's princeliest race, our tribe :  
enough

For thine, that on our simple faith we found  
A monarchy to shame your monarchies  
At their own trick and secret of success.  
The child of this our tribe shall laugh upon  
The palace-step of him whose life ere night  
Is forfeit, as that child shall know, and yet  
Shall laugh there ! What, we Druses wait for-  
sooth

The kind interposition of a boy  
— Can only save ourselves if thou concede ?  
— Khalil admire thee ? He is my right hand,  
My delegate ! — Anael accept thy love ?  
She is my bride !

*Loys.* Thy bride ? She one of them ?  
*Dja.* My bride !

*Loys.* And she retains her glorious eyes !  
She, with those eyes, has shared this miscreant's  
guilt !

Ah — who but she directed me to find  
Djabal within the Prefect's chamber ? Khalil  
Bade me seek Djabal there, too ! All is truth !  
What spoke the Prefect worse of them than  
this ?

Did the Church ill to institute long since  
Perpetual warfare with such serpentry ?  
And I — have I desired to shift my part,  
Evade my share in her design ? 'Tis well !

*Dja.* Loys, I wronged thee — but unwittingly :  
I never thought there was in thee a virtue  
That could attach itself to what thou deem-  
est

A race below thine own. I wronged thee, Loys,  
But that is over : all is over now,  
Save the protection I ensure against

My people's anger. By their Khalif's side,  
Thou art secure and may'st depart : so, come !  
*Loys.* Thy side ? I take protection at thy  
hand ?

(Enter other Guards.)

*Guards.* Fly with him ! Fly, Sir Loys ! 'Tis  
too true !

And only by his side thou may'st escape !  
The whole tribe is in full revolt : they flock  
About the palace — will be here — on thee —  
And there are twenty of us, we the Guards  
O' the Nuncio, to withstand them ! Even we

Had stayed to meet our death in ignorance,  
But that one Druse, a single faithful Druse,  
Made known the horror to the Nuncio. Fly !  
The Nuncio stands aghast. At least let us  
Escape thy wrath, O Hakeem ! We are naught  
In thy tribe's persecution ! [To Loys.] Keep  
by him !

They hail him Hakeem, their dead Prince re-  
turned :

He is their God, they shout, and at his beck  
Are life and death !

[Loys, springing at the khandjar DJABAL had thrown  
down, seizes him by the throat.

Thus by his side am I !

Thus I resume my knighthood and its war-  
fare,

Thus end thee, miscreant, in thy pride of place !  
Thus art thou caught. Without, thy dupes may  
cluster.

Friends aid thee, foes avoid thee, — thou art  
Hakeem,

How say they ? — God art thou ! but also here  
Is the least, youngest, meanest the Church  
calls

Her servant, and his single arm avails  
To aid her as she lists. I rise, and thou  
Art crushed ! Hordes of thy Druses flock with-  
out :

Here thou hast me, who represent the Cross,  
Honor and Faith, 'gainst Hell, Mahound and  
thee.

Die ! [DJABAL remains calm.] Implore my  
mercy, Hakeem, that my scorn  
May help me ! Nay, I cannot ply thy trade ;  
I am no Druse, no stabber : and thine eye,  
Thy form, are too much as they were — my  
friend

Had such ! Speak ! Beg for mercy at my foot !  
[DJABAL still silent.

Heaven could not ask so much of me — not,  
sure,

So much ! I cannot kill him so !

[After a pause.] Thou art  
Strong in thy cause, then — dost outbrave us,  
then.

Heardst thou that one of thine accomplices,  
Thy very people, has accused thee ? Meet  
His charge ! Thou hast not even slain the Pre-  
fect

As thy own vile creed warrants. Meet that  
Druse !

Come with me and disprove him — be thou tried  
By him, nor seek appeal ! Promise me this,  
Or I will do God's office ! What, shalt thou  
Boast of assassins at thy beck, yet truth  
Want even an executioner ? Consent,  
Or I will strike — look in my face — I will !

*Dja.* Give me again my khandjar, if thou  
darest ! [Loys gives it.

Let but one Druse accuse me, and I plunge  
This home. A Druse betray me ? Let us go !  
[Aside.] Who has betrayed me ?

[Shouts without,

Hearst thou ? I hear

No plainer than long years ago I heard  
That shout — but in no dream now ! They re-  
turn !

Wilt thou be leader with me, Loys ? Well !



## ACT V

*The uninitiated Druses, filling the hall tumultuously, and speaking together.*

Here flock we, obeying the summons. Lo, Hakeem hath appeared, and the Prefect is dead, and we return to Lebanon! My manufacture of goats' fleece must, I doubt, soon fall away there. Come, old Nasif — link thine arm in mine — we fight, if needs be. Come, what is a great fight-word? — "Lebanon?" (My daughter — my daughter!) — But is Khalil to have the office of Hamza? — Nay, rather, if he be wise, the monopoly of heima and cloves. Where is Hakeem? — The only prophet I ever saw, prophesied at Cairo once, in my youth: a little black Copht, dressed all in black too, with a great stripe of yellow cloth flapping down behind him like the back-fin of a water-serpent. Is this he? Biamrallah! Biamreh! HAKEEM!

*(Enter the NUNCIO, with Guards.)*

Nuncio. *[To his Attendants.]* Hold both, the sorcerer and this accomplice

Ye talk of, that accuseth him! And tell

Sir Loys he is mine, the Church's hope:

Bid him approve himself our Knight indeed!

Lo, this black disemboгуing of the Isle!

*[To the Druses.]* Ah, children, what a sight for these old eyes

That kept themselves alive this voyage through

To smile their very last on you! I came

To gather one and all you wandering sheep

Into my fold, as though a father came . . .

As though, in coming, a father should . . .

*[To his Guards.]* (Ten, twelve — Twelve guards of you, and not an outlet?

None?

The wizards stop each avenue? Keep close!)

*[To the Druses.]* As if one came to a son's house,

I say,

So did I come — no guard with me — to find . . .

Alas — alas!

A Druse. Who is the old man?

Another. Oh, ye are to shout!  
Children, he styles you.

Druses. Ay, the Prefect's slain!

Glory to the Khalif, our Father!

Nuncio. Even so!

I find (ye prompt aright) your father slain!

While most he plotted for your good, that father

(Alas, how kind, ye never knew) — lies slain!

*[Aside.]* (And hell's worm gnaw the glozing knave — with me,

For being duped by his cajoleries!

Are these the Christians? These the docile crew

My bezants went to make me Bishop o'er?)

*[To his Attendants, who whisper.]* What say ye does this wizard style himself?

Hakeem? Biamrallah? The third Fatemite?

What is this jargon? He — the insane Khalif,

Dead near three hundred years ago, come back in flesh and blood again?

Druses. He mutters! Hear ye?

He is blaspheming Hakeem. The old man

Is our dead Prefect's friend. Tear him!

Nuncio.

Ye dare not!

I stand here with my five-and-seventy years, The Patriarch's power behind me, God's above! Those years have witnessed sin enough; ere now Misguided men arose against their lords, And found excuse; but ye, to be enslaved By sorceries, cheats — alas! the same tricks, tried

On my poor children in this nook o' the earth, Could triumph, that have been successively Exploded, laughed to scorn, all nations through: "Romaioi, Ioudaioi te kai proselutoi, Cretes and Arabians," — you are duped the last.

Said I, refrain from tearing me? I pray ye Tear me! Shall I return to tell the Patriarch That so much love was wasted — every gift Rejected, from his benison I brought, Down to the galley-full of bezants, sunk An hour since at the harbor's mouth, by that . . . That . . . never will I speak his hated name! *[To his Servants.]* What was the name his fellow slip-fetter

Called their arch-wizard by? *[They whisper.]*

Oh, Djabal was't?

Druses. But how a sorcerer? false wherein?

Nuncio. *(Ay, Djabal!)*

How false? Ye know not, Djabal has confessed . . .

Nay, that by tokens found on him we learn . . .

What I sailed hither solely to divulge —

How by his spells the demons were allured

To seize you: not that these be aught save lies

And mere illusions. Is this clear? I say,

By measures such as these, he would have led you

Into a monstrous ruin: follow ye?

Say, shall ye perish for his sake, my sons?

Druses. Hark ye!

Nuncio. — Be of one privilege amerced?

No! Infinite the Patriarch's mercies are!

No! With the Patriarch's license, still I bid

Tear him to pieces who misled you! Haste!

Druses. The old man's beard shakes, and his eyes are white fire! After all, I know nothing of Djabal beyond what Karshook says; he knows but what Khalil says, who knows just what Djabal says himself. Now, the little Copht Prophet, I saw at Cairo in my youth, began by promising each bystander three full measures of wheat . . .

*(Enter KHALIL and the initiated Druses.)*

Kha. Venice and her deliverance are at hand: Their fleet stands through the harbor! Hath he slain

The Prefect yet? Is Djabal's change come yet?

Nuncio. *[To Attendants.]* What's this of Venice? Who's this boy?

*[Attendants whisper.]* One Khalil?

Djabal's accomplice, Loys called, but now,

The only Druse, save Djabal's self, to fear?

*[To the Druses.]* I cannot hear ye with these aged ears;

Is it so? Ye would have my troops assist?

Doth he abet him in his sorceries?

Down with the cheat, guards, as my children bid!

*[They spring at KHALIL; as he beats them back,*

Stay! No more bloodshed! Spare deluded youth!

Whom seek'st thou? (I will teach him) — whom, my child?

Thou know'st not what these know, what these declare.

I am an old man, as thou seest — have done With life; and what should move me but the truth?

Art thou the only fond one of thy tribe?

'T is I interpret for thy tribe!

*Kha.* Oh, this Is the expected Nuncio! Druses, hear — Endure ye this? Unworthy to partake The glory Hakeem gains you! While I speak, The ships touch land: who makes for Lebanon? They plant the winged lion in these halls!

*Nuncio.* [*Aside.*] If it be true! Venice? Oh, never true!

Yet Venice would so gladly thwart our Knights, So fain get footing here, stand close by Rhodes! Oh, to be duped this way!

*Kha.* Ere he appear And lead you gloriously, repent, I say!

*Nuncio.* [*Aside.*] Nor any way to stretch the arch-wizard stark

Ere the Venetians come? Cut off the head, The trunk were easily stilled. [*To the Druses.*] He? Bring him forth!

Since so you needs will have it, I assent! You'd judge him, say you, on the spot? — confound

The sorcerer in his very circle? Where 's Our short black-bearded fallow friend who swore He 'd earn the Patriarch's guerdon by one stab? Bring Djabal forth at once!

*Druses.* Ay, bring him forth! The Patriarch drives a trade in oil and silk, And we're the Patriarch's children — true men, we!

Where is the glory? Show us all the glory!

*Kha.* You dare not so insult him! What, not see . . .

(I tell thee, Nuncio, these are uninstructed, Untrusted — they know nothing of our Khalif!) — Not see that if he lets a doubt arise

'T is but to give yourselves the chance of seeming

To have some influence in your own return!

That all may say ye would have trusted him

Without the all-convincing glory — ay, And did! Embrace the occasion, friends! For, think —

What wonder when his change takes place? But now

For your sakes, he should not reveal himself.

No — could I ask and have, I would not ask

The change yet!

(*Enter DJABAL and LOYS.*)

Spite of all, reveal thyself!

I had said, pardon them for me — for Anael —

For our sakes pardon these besotted men —

Ay, for thine own — they hurt not thee! Yet

now One thought swells in me and keeps down all else,

This Nuncio couples shame with thee, has called Imposture thy whole course, all bitter things

Has said: he is but an old fretful man!

Hakeem — nay, I must call thee Hakeem now — Reveal thyself! See! Where is Anael? See!

*Loys.* [*To DJA.*] Here are thy people! Keep thy word to me!

*Dja.* Who of my people hath accused me? *Nuncio.* So!

So this is Djabal, Hakeem, and what not?

A fit deed, Loys, for thy first Knight's day!

May it be augury of thy after-life!

Ever prove truncheon of the Church as now That, Nuncio of the Patriarch, having charge Of the Isle here, I claim thee [*turning to DJA.*] as these bid me,

Forfeit for murder done thy lawful prince, Thou conjure that peep'st and mutterest!

Why should I hold thee from their hands? (Spells, children?)

But hear how I dispose of all his spells! Thou art a prophet? — wouldst entice thy tribe

From me? — thou workest miracles? (Attend! Let him but move me with his spells!) I, Nuncio . . .

*Dja.* . . . Which how thou camest to be, I say not now,

Though I have also been at Stamboul, Luke! Ply thee with spells, forsooth! What need of spells?

If Venice, in her Admiral's person, stoop To ratify thy compact with her foe, The Hospitaliers, for this Isle — withdraw

Her warrant of the deed which reinstates My people in their freedom, tricked away By him I slew, — refuse to convoy us

To Lebanon and keep the Isle we leave — Then will be time to try what spells can do!

Dost thou dispute the Republic's power? *Nuncio.* Lo ye!

He tempts me too, the wily exorcist! No! The renowned Republic was and is

The Patriarch's friend: 't is not for courting Venice

That I — that these implore thy blood of me! Lo ye, the subtle miscreant! Ha, so subtle?

Ye Druses, hear him! Will ye be deceived? How he evades me! Where 's the miracle

He works? I bid him to the proof — fish up Your galley full of bezants that he sank!

That were a miracle! One miracle! Enough of trifling, for it chafes my years.

I am the Nuncio, Druses! I stand forth To save you from the good Republic's rage

When she shall find her fleet was summoned here To aid the mummeries of a knave like this!

[*As the Druses hesitate, his Attendants whisper.* Ah, well suggested! Why, we hold the while

One who, his close confederate till now, Confesses Djabal at the last a cheat,

And every miracle a cheat! Who throws me His head? I make three offers, once I offer, —

And twice . . . *Dja.* Let who moves perish at my foot!

*Kha.* Thanks, Hakeem, thanks! Oh, Anael, Maani,

Why tarry they? *Druses.* [*To each other.*] He can! He can!

Live fire —

[*To the NUNCIO.*] I say he can, old man!  
Thou know'st him not.  
Live fire like that thou seest now in his eyes,  
Plays fawning round him. See! The change  
begins!

All the brow lightens as he lifts his arm!  
Look not at me! It was not I!

*Dja.* What Druse  
Accused me, as he saith? I bid each bone  
Crumble within that Druse! None, Loys, none  
Of my own people, as thou said'st, have raised  
A voice against me.

*Nuncio.* [*Aside.*] Venice to come! Death!

*Dja.* [*Continuing.*] Confess and go unscathed,  
however false!

Seest thou my Druses, Luke? I would submit  
To thy pure malice did one Druse confess!

How said I, Loys?

*Nuncio.* [*To his Attendants who whisper.*] Ah,  
ye counsel so?

[*Aloud.*] Bring in the witness, then, who, first  
of all,

Disclosed the treason! Now I have thee,  
wizard!

Ye hear that? If one speaks, he bids you tear  
him

Joint after joint: well then, one does speak!  
One,

Befooled by Djabal, even as yourselves,  
But who hath voluntarily proposed

To expiate, by confessing thus, the fault  
Of having trusted him.

[*They bring in a veiled Druse.*

*Loys.* Now, Djabal, now!

*Nuncio.* Friend, Djabal fronts thee! Make  
a ring, sons. Speak!

Expose this Djabal—what he was, and how;  
The wiles he used, the aims he cherished; all,

Explicitly as late 't was spoken to these  
My servants: I absolve and pardon thee.

*Loys.* Thou hast the dagger ready, Djabal?

*Dja.* Speak,

Recreant!

*Druses.* Stand back, fool! farther! Sud-  
denly

You shall see some huge serpent glide from  
under

The empty vest, or down will thunder crash!

Back, Khalil!

*Kha.* I go back? Thus go I back!

[*To AN.*] Unveil! Nay, thou shalt face the  
Khalil! Thus!

[*He tears away ANAEL's veil; DJABAL folds his arms  
and bows his head; the Druses fall back; LOYS  
springs from the side of DJABAL and the NUNCIO.*

*Loys.* Then she was true—she only of them  
all!

True to her eyes—may keep those glorious  
eyes,

And now be mine, once again mine! Oh,  
Anael!

Dared I think thee a partner in his crime—

That blood could soil that hand? nay, 'tis  
mine—Anael,

—Not mine?—Who offer thee before all these  
My heart, my sword, my name—so thou wilt  
say

That Djabal, who affirms thou art his bride,

Lies—say but that he lies!

*Dja.* Thou, Anael?

*Loys.* Nay, Djabal, nay, one chance for me  
—the last!

Thou hast had every other; thou hast spoken  
Days, nights, what falsehood listed thee—let  
me

Speak first now; I will speak now!

*Nuncio.* Loys, pause!

Thou art the Duke's son, Bretagne's choicest  
stock,

Loys of Dreux, God's sepulchre's first sword:  
This wilt thou spit on, this degrade, this tram-  
ple

To earth?

*Loys.* [*To AN.*] Who had foreseen that one  
day, Loys

Would stake these gifts against some other good  
In the whole world? I give them thee! I  
would

My strong will might bestow real shape on them,  
That I might see, with my own eyes, thy foot

Tread on their very neck! 'Tis not by gifts  
I put aside this Djabal: we will stand—

We do stand, see, two men! Djabal, stand  
forth!

Who's worth her, I or thou? I—who for  
Anael

Uprightly, purely kept my way, the long  
True way—left thee each by-path, boldly lived

Without the lies and blood,—or thou, or thou?  
Me! love me, Anael! Leave the blood and  
him!

[*To DJA.*] Now speak—now, quick on this  
that I have said,—

Thou with the blood, speak if thou art a man!

*Dja.* [*To AN.*] And was it thou betrayedst  
me? 'Tis well!

I have deserved this of thee, and submit.  
Nor 'tis much evil thou inflict: life

Ends here. The cedars shall not wave for us:  
For there was crime, and must be punishment.

See fate! By thee I was seduced, by thee  
I perish: yet do I—can I repent?

I with my Arab instinct, thwarted ever  
By my Frank policy,—and with, in turn,

My Frank brain, thwarted by my Arab heart—  
While these remained in equipoise, I lived

—Nothing; had either been predominant,  
As a Frank schemer or an Arab mystic,

I had been something;—now, each has de-  
stroyed

The other—and behold, from out their crash,  
A third and better nature rises up—

My mere man's-nature! And I yield to it:  
I love thee, I who did not love before!

*An.* Djabal!

*Dja.* It seemed love, but it was not love:  
How could I love while thou adoredst me?

Now thou despisest, art above me so  
Inmeasurably! Thou, no other, doomest

My death now; this my steel shall execute  
Thy judgment; I shall feel thy hand in it!

Oh, luxury to worship, to submit,  
Transcended, doomed to death by thee!

*An.* My Djabal!

*Dja.* Dost hesitate? I force thee then!  
Approach,



Druses ! for I am out of reach of fate ;  
No further evil waits me. Speak the doom !  
Hear, Druses, and hear, Nuncio, and hear,  
Loys !

An. HAKEEM ! *[She falls dead.  
[The Druses scream, grovelling before him.*

Druses. Ah, Hakeem ! — not on me thy  
wrath !

Biamrallah, pardon ! never doubted I !

Ha, dog, how sayest thou ?

*[They surround and seize the NUNCIO and his Guards.  
Loys flings himself upon the body of ANAEL, on  
which DJABAL continues to gaze as stupefied.*

Nuncio, Caitiffs ! Have ye eyes ?  
Whips, racks should teach you ! What, his  
fools ? his dupes ?

Leave me ! unhand me !

Kha. *[Approaching DJABAL timidly.]* Save  
her for my sake !

She was already thine ; she would have shared  
To-day thine exaltation : think, this day  
Her hair was plaited thus because of thee !

Yes, feel the soft bright hair — feel !

Nuncio. *[Struggling with those who have seized  
him.]* What, because

His leman dies for him ? You think it hard  
To die ? Oh, would you were at Rhodes, and  
choice

Of deaths should suit you !

Kha. *[Bending over ANAEL'S body.]* Just  
restore her life !

So little does it ! there — the eyelids tremble !  
'T was not my breath that made them : and the  
lips

Move of themselves. I could restore her life !  
Hakeem, we have forgotten — have presumed  
On our free converse : we are better taught.

See, I kiss — how I kiss thy garment's hem  
For her ! She kisses it — Oh, take her deed  
In mine ! Thou dost believe now, Anael ? —

See,  
She smiles ! Were her lips open o'er the teeth  
'Thus, when I spoke first ? She believes in  
thee !

Go not without her to the cedars, lord !  
Or leave us both — I cannot go alone !  
I have obeyed thee, if I dare so speak :

Hath Hakeem thus forgot all Djabal knew ?  
Thou feelst then my tears fall hot and fast  
Upon thy hand, and yet thou speakest not ?

Ere the Venetian trumpet sound — ere thou  
Exalt thyself, O Hakeem ! save thou her !

Nuncio. And the accursed Republic will  
arrive

And find me in their toils — dead, very like,  
Under their feet !

What way — not one way yet  
To foil them ? None ? *[Observing DJABAL'S  
face.]* What ails the Khalif ? Ah,

That ghastly face ! A way to foil them yet !  
*[To the Druses.]* Look to your Khalif, Druses !  
Is that face

God Hakeem's ? Where is triumph, — where  
is . . . what

Said he of exaltation — hath he promised  
So much to-day ? Why then, exalt thyself !  
Cast off that husk, thy form, set free thy soul

In splendor ! Now, bear witness ! here I  
stand —

I challenge him exalt himself, and I  
Become, for that, a Druse like all of you !

The Druses. Exalt thyself ! Exalt thyself,  
O Hakeem !

Dja. *[Advances.]* I can confess now all  
from first to last.

There is no longer shame for me. I am . . .

*[Here the Venetian trumpet sounds : the Druses shout,  
DJABAL'S eye catches the expression of those about  
him, and, as the old dream comes back, he is again  
confident and inspired.]*

— Am I not Hakeem ? And ye would have  
crawled

But yesterday within these impure courts  
Where now ye stand erect ! Not grand enough ?

— What more could be conceded to such beasts  
As all of you, so sunk and base as you,  
Than a mere man ? A man among such beasts

Was miracle enough : yet him you doubt,  
Him you forsake, him fain would you destroy —  
With the Venetians at your gate, the Nuncio

Thus — (see the baffled hypocrite ! ) and, best,  
The Prefect there !

Druses. No, Hakeem, ever thine !

Nuncio. He lies — and twice he lies — and  
thrice he lies !

Exalt thyself, Mahound ! Exalt thyself !

Dja. Druses ! we shall henceforth be far  
away —

Out of mere mortal ken — above the cedars —  
But we shall see ye go, hear ye return,  
Repeopling the old solitudes, — through thee,

My Khalif ! Thou art full of me : I fill  
Thee full — my hands thus fill thee ! Yester-  
eve,

— Nay, but this morn, I deemed thee igno-  
rant

Of all to do, requiring word of mine  
To teach it : now, thou hast all gifts in one,  
With truth and purity go other gifts,

All gifts come clustering to that. Go, lead  
My people home whate'er betide !

*[Turning to the Druses.]* Ye take  
This Khalif for my delegate ? To him  
Bow as to me ? He leads to Lebanon —

Ye follow ?

Druses. We follow ! Now exalt thyself !

Dja. *[Raises Loys.]* Then to thee, Loys !  
How I wronged thee, Loys !

Yet, wronged, no less thou shalt have full re-  
venge,

Fit for thy noble self, revenge — and thus.  
Thou, loaded with such wrongs, the princely  
soul,

The first sword of Christ's sepulchre — thou  
shalt

Guard Khalil and my Druses home again !  
Justice, no less, God's justice and no more,  
For those I leave ! — to seeking this, devote

Some few days out of thy Knight's brilliant  
life :

And, this obtained them, leave their Lebanon,  
My Druses' blessing in thine ears — (they shall  
Bless thee with blessing sure to have its way)

— One cedar-blossom in thy dual cap,  
One thought of Anael in thy heart, — perchance,

One thought of him who thus, to bid thee speed,

His last word to the living speaks! This done,  
Resume thy course, and, first amidst the first  
In Europe, take my heart along with thee!  
Go boldly, go serenely, go augustly —  
What shall withstand thee then?

[*He bends over ANAEL.*] And last to thee!  
Ah, did I dream I was to have, this day,  
Exalted thee? A vain dream: hast thou not  
Won greater exaltation? What remains  
But press to thee, exalt myself to thee?

Thus I exalt myself, set free my soul!

[*He stabs himself. As he falls, supported by KHALIL and LOYS, the VENETIANS enter; the ADMIRAL advances.*

*Admiral.* God and St. Mark for Venice!  
Plant the Lion!

[*At the clash of the planted standard, the DRUSES shout, and move tumultuously forward, LOYS drawing his sword.*

*Dja.* [*Leading them a few steps between KHALIL and LOYS.*] On to the Mountain!  
At the Mountain, Druses! [*Dies.*

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

### A TRAGEDY

THIS play was written in 1843 at the request of Macready, and very rapidly, in four or five days. A misunderstanding with Macready, fully related in Mrs. Orr's *Life and Letters of Robert Browning*, I. 168-184, and in Mr. Gosse's *Personalia*, led to a breach between the two friends.

The play was received with great applause,

#### PERSONS

MILDRED TRESHAM.  
GUENDOLEN TRESHAM.  
PHOROLD, Earl Tresham.  
AUSTIN TRESHAM.  
HENRY, Earl Mertoun.  
GERARD, and other Retainers of Lord Tresham.

Time, 17—

#### ACT I

SCENE I. *The interior of a lodge in LORD TRESHAM'S park. Many Retainers crowded at the window, supposed to command a view of the entrance to his mansion. GERARD, the Warrener, his back to a table on which are flagons, etc.*

1st Retainer. Ay, do! push, friends, and then you'll push down me!

— What for? Does any hear a runner's foot  
Or a steed's trample or a coach-wheel's cry?  
Is the Earl come or his least poursuivant?  
But there's no breeding in a man of you  
Save Gerard yonder: here's a half-place yet,  
Old Gerard!

*Gerard.* Save your courtesies, my friend.  
Here is my place.

2d Ret. Now, Gerard, out with it!  
What makes you sullen, this of all the days  
I' the year? To-day that young rich bountiful  
Handsome Earl Mertoun, whom alone they  
match

With our Lord Tresham through the country-  
side,

Is coming here in utmost bravery

but circumstances prevented it from being kept on the boards. It has, however, been reproduced both in England and in America, near the close of Browning's life and after his death. Helen Faucit, afterward Lady Martin, took the part of Mildred. The play was printed shortly after it first appeared, as No. V. of *Bells and Pomegranates*.

To ask our master's sister's hand?

*Ger.* What then? What then?  
2d Ret. What then? Why, you, she speaks  
to, if she meets

Your worship, smiles on as you hold apart  
The boughs to let her through her forest walks,  
You, always favorite for your no-deserts,  
You've heard, these three days, how Earl Mer-  
toun sues

To lay his heart and house and broad lands too  
At Lady Mildred's feet: and while we squeeze  
Ourselves into a mousehole lest we miss  
One congee of the least page in his train,  
You sit o' one side — "there's the Earl," say  
I —

"What then?" say you!

3d Ret. I'll wager he has let  
Both swans he tamed for Lady Mildred swim  
Over the falls and gain the river!

*Ger.* Ralph,

Is not to-morrow my inspecting-day  
For you and for your hawks?

4th Ret. Let Gerard be!  
He's coarse-grained, like his carved black  
cross-bow stock.

Ha, look now, while we squabble with him,  
look!

Well done, now — is not this beginning, now,  
To purpose?

1st Ret. Our retainers look as fine —  
That's comfort. Lord, how Richard holds  
himself

With his white staff! Will not a knave behind  
Prick him upright?

4th Ret. He's only bowing, fool!  
 The Earl's man bent us lower by this much.  
 1st Ret. That's comfort. Here's a very cavalcade!  
 3d Ret. I don't see wherefore Richard, and his troop  
 Of silk and silver varlets there, should find  
 Their perfumed selves so indispensable  
 On high days, holidays! Would it so disgrace  
 Our family, if I, for instance, stood —  
 In my right hand a cast of Swedish hawks,  
 A leash of greyhounds in my left? —  
 Ger. — With Hugh  
 The logman for supporter, in his right  
 The bill-hook, in his left the brushwood-shears!  
 3d Ret. Out on you, crab! What next,  
 what next? The Earl!  
 1st Ret. Oh Walter, groom, our horses, do  
 they match  
 The Earl's? Alas, that first pair of the six —  
 They paw the ground — Ah, Walter! and that  
 brute  
 Just on his haunches by the wheel!  
 6th Ret. Ay — Ay!  
 You, Philip, are a special hand, I hear,  
 At soups and sauces: what's a horse to you?  
 D'ye mark that beast they've slid into the  
 midst  
 So cunningly? — then, Philip, mark this fur-  
 ther;  
 No leg has he to stand on!  
 1st Ret. No? That's comfort.  
 2d Ret. Peace, Cook! The Earl descends.  
 — Well, Gerard, see  
 The Earl at least! Come, there's a proper  
 man,  
 I hope! Why, Ralph, no falcon, Pole or  
 Swede,  
 Has got a starrier eye.  
 3d Ret. His eyes are blue —  
 But leave my hawks alone!  
 4th Ret. So young, and yet  
 So tall and shapely!  
 5th Ret. Here's Lord Tresham's self!  
 There now — there's what a nobleman should  
 be!  
 He's older, graver, loftier, he's more like  
 A House's head!  
 2d Ret. But you'd not have a boy  
 — And what's the Earl beside? — possess too  
 soon  
 That stateliness?  
 1st Ret. Our master takes his hand —  
 Richard and his white staff are on the move —  
 Back fall our people — (tsh!) — there's Timo-  
 thy  
 Sure to get tangled in his ribbon-ties,  
 And Peter's cursed rosette's a-coming off!)  
 — At last I see our lord's back and his friend's;  
 And the whole beautiful bright company  
 Close round them: in they go! [*Jumping down  
 from the window-bench, and making for the  
 table and its jugs.*] Good health, long life  
 Great joy to our Lord Tresham and his House!  
 6th Ret. My father drove his father first to  
 court,  
 After his marriage-day — ay, did he!  
 2d Ret. God bless

Lord Tresham, Lady Mildred, and the Earl!  
 Here, Gerard, reach your beaker!  
 Ger. Drink, my boys!  
 Don't mind me — all's not right about me —  
 drink!  
 2d Ret. [*Aside.*] He's vexed, now, that he  
 let the show escape!  
 [To GER.] Remember that the Earl returns  
 this way.  
 Ger. That way?  
 2d Ret. Just so.  
 Ger. Then my way's here. [*Goes.*  
 2d Ret. Old Gerard  
 Will die soon — mind, I said it! He was used  
 To care about the pitifullest thing  
 That touched the House's honor, not an eye  
 But his could see wherein: and on a cause  
 Of scarce a quarter this importance, Gerard  
 Fairly had fretted flesh and bone away  
 In cares that this was right, nor that was  
 wrong,  
 Such point decorous, and such square by rule —  
 He knew such niceties, no herald more:  
 And now — you see his humor: die he will!  
 2d Ret. God help him! Who's for the  
 great servants'-hall  
 To hear what's going on inside? They'd fol-  
 low  
 Lord Tresham into the saloon.  
 3d Ret. I! — I! —  
 4th Ret. I! —  
 Leave Frank alone for catching, at the door,  
 Some hint of how the parley goes inside!  
 Prosperity to the great House once more!  
 Here's the last drop!  
 1st Ret. Have at you! Boys, hurrah!

## SCENE II. A saloon in the Mansion.

Enter LORD TRESHAM, LORD MERTOUN, AUSTIN, and  
 GUENDOLEN.  
 Tresham. I welcome you, Lord Mertoun, yet  
 once more,  
 To this ancestral roof of mine. Your name  
 — Noble among the noblest in itself,  
 Yet taking in your person, fame avers,  
 New price and lustre, — (as that gem you wear,  
 Transmitted from a hundred knightly breasts,  
 Fresh chased and set and fixed by its last lord,  
 Seems to rekindle at the core) — your name  
 Would win you welcome!  
 Mertoun. Thanks!  
 Tresh. — But add to that,  
 The worthiness and grace and dignity  
 Of your proposal for uniting both  
 Our Houses even closer than respect  
 Unites them now — add these, and you must  
 grant  
 One favor more, nor that the least, — to think  
 The welcome I should give; — 't is given! My  
 lord,  
 My only brother, Austin — he's the king's.  
 Our cousin, Lady Guendolen — betrothed  
 To Austin: all are yours.  
 Mer. I thank you — less  
 For the expressed commendings of your seal.  
 And only that, authenticates — forbids  
 My putting from me . . . to my heart I take



Your praise . . . but praise less claims my gratitude.

Than the indulgent insight it implies  
Of what must needs be uppermost with one  
Who comes, like me, with the bare leave to ask,

In weighed and measured unimpassioned words,  
A gift, which, if as calmly 't is denied,  
He must withdraw, content upon his cheek,  
Despair within his soul. That I dare ask  
Firmly, near boldly, near with confidence  
That gift, I have to thank you. Yes, Lord  
Tresham,

I love your sister — as you'd have one love  
That lady . . . oh more, more I love her!  
Wealth,

Rank, all the world thinks me, they're yours,  
you know,

To hold or part with, at your choice — but grant  
My true self, me without a rood of land,  
A piece of gold, a name of yesterday,  
Grant me that lady, and you . . . Death or  
life?

*Guendolen.* [*Apart to Aus.*] Why, this is  
loving, Austin!

*Austin.* He's so young!

*Guen.* Young? Old enough, I think, to half  
surmise

He never had obtained an entrance here,

Were all this fear and trembling needed.  
*Aus.* Hush!

He reddens.

*Guen.* Mark him, Austin; that's true love!  
Ours must begin again.

*Tresh.* We'll sit, my lord.

Ever with best desert goes diffidence.

I may speak plainly nor be misconceived.

That I am wholly satisfied with you

On this occasion, when a falcon's eye  
Were dull compared with mine to search out  
faults,

Is somewhat. Mildred's hand is hers to give  
Or to refuse.

*Mer.* But you, you grant my suit?  
I have your word if hers?

*Tresh.* My best of words  
If hers encourage you. I trust it will.

Have you seen Lady Mildred, by the way?

*Mer.* I . . . I . . . our two demesnes, re-  
member, touch;

I have been used to wander carelessly

After my stricken game: the heron roused

Deep in my woods, has trailed its broken wing

Through thickets and glades a mile in yours, —  
or else

Some eyass ill-reclaimed has taken flight

And lured me after her from tree to tree,

I marked not whither. I have come upon

The lady's wondrous beauty unaware,

And — and then . . . I have seen her.

*Guen.* [*Aside to Aus.*] Note that mode  
Of faltering out that, when a lady passed,

He, having eyes, did see her! You had said —

"On such a day I scanned her, head to foot;

Observed a red, where red should not have  
been,

Outside her elbow; but was pleased enough

Upon the whole." Let such irreverent talk

Be lessoned for the future!

*Tresh.* What's to say

May be said briefly. She has never known

A mother's care; I stand for father too.

Her beauty is not strange to you, it seems —

You cannot know the good and tender heart,

Its girl's trust and its woman's constancy.

How pure yet passionate, how calm yet kind,

How grave yet joyous, how reserved yet free

As light where friends are — how imbued with  
lore

The world most prizes, yet the simplest, yet  
The . . . one might know I talked of Mildred  
— thus

We brothers talk!

*Mer.* I thank you.

*Tresh.* In a word,  
Control's not for this lady; but her wish

To please me outstrips in its subtlety

My power of being pleased: herself creates

The want she means to satisfy. My heart

Prefers your suit to her as 't were its own.

Can I say more?

*Mer.* No more — thanks, thanks — no more!

*Tresh.* This matter then discussed . . .

*Mer.* — We'll waste no breath  
On aught less precious. I'm beneath the roof

Which holds her: while I thought of that, my  
speech

To you would wander — as it must not do,

Since as you favor me I stand or fall.

I pray you suffer that I take my leave!

*Tresh.* With less regret 't is suffered, that  
again

We meet, I hope, so shortly.

*Mer.* We? again? —

Ah yes, forgive me — when shall . . . you will  
crown

Your goodness by forthwith apprising me

When . . . if . . . the lady will appoint a day

For me to wait on you — and her.

*Tresh.* So soon

As I am made acquainted with her thoughts

On your proposal — howso'er they lean —

A messenger shall bring you the result.

*Mer.* You cannot bind me more to you, my  
lord.

Farewell till we renew . . . I trust, renew

A converse ne'er to disunite again.

*Tresh.* So may it prove!

*Mer.* You, lady, you, sir, take

My humble salutation!

*Guen. and Aus.* Thanks!

*Tresh.* Within there!

(*Servants enter. TRESHAM conducts MERTOUN to the  
door. Meantime AUSTIN remarks*)

Well,

Here I have an advantage of the Earl,

Confess now! I'd not think that all was safe

Because my lady's brother stood my friend!

Why, he makes sure of her — "do you say,  
yes —

She'll not say, no," — what comes it to beside?

I should have prayed the brother, "speak this  
speech,

For Heaven's sake urge this on her — put in  
this —

Forget not, as you'd save me, t' other thing. —

Then set down what she says, and how she looks,  
And if she smiles, and " (in an under breath)  
"Only let her accept me, and do you  
And all the world refuse me, if you dare!"

*Guen.* That way you'd take, friend Austin?  
What a shame

I was your cousin, tamely from the first  
Your bride, and all this fervor's run to waste!  
Do you know you speak sensibly to-day?  
The Earl's a fool.

*Aus.* Here's Thorold. Tell him so!

*Tresh.* [Returning.] Now, voices, voices! 'St!  
The lady's first!

How seems he? — seems he not . . . come,  
faith give fraud

The mercy-stroke whenever they engage!  
Down with fraud, up with faith! How seems  
the Earl?

A name! a blazon! if you knew their worth,  
As you will never! come — the Earl?

*Guen.* He's young.

*Tresh.* What's she? an infant save in heart  
and brain.

Young! Mildred is fourteen, remark! And  
you . . .

Austin, how old is she?

*Guen.* There's tact for you!

I meant that being young was good excuse

If one should tax him . . .

*Tresh.* Well?

*Guen.* — With lacking wit.

*Tresh.* He lacked wit? Where might he  
lack wit, so please you?

*Guen.* In standing straighter than the stew-  
ard's rod

And making you the tiresomest harangue,

Instead of slipping over to my side

And softly whispering in my ear, "Sweet lady,

Your cousin there will do me detriment

He little dreams of: he's absorbed, I see,

In my old name and fame — be sure he'll leave

My Mildred, when his best account of me

Is ended, in full confidence I wear

My grandsire's periwig down either cheek,

I'm lost unless your gentleness vouchsafes" . . .

*Tresh.* . . . "To give a best of best accounts,  
yourself,

Of me and my demerits." You are right!

He should have said what now I say for him.

You golden creature, will you help us all?

Here's Austin means to vouch for much, but you

— You are . . . what Austin only knows!

Come up,

All three of us: she's in the library

No doubt, for the day's wearing fast. Precede!

*Guen.* Austin, how we must —!

*Tresh.* Must what? Must speak truth,

Malignant tongue! Detect one fault in him!

I challenge you!

*Guen.* Witchcraft's a fault in him,

For you're bewitched.

*Tresh.* What's urgent we obtain

Is, that she soon receive him — say, to-morrow —  
Next day at furthest.

*Guen.* Ne'er instruct me!

*Tresh.* Come!

— He's out of your good graces, since forsooth,  
He stood not as he'd carry us by storm

With his perfections! You're for the com-  
posed

Manly assured becoming confidence!

— Get her to say, "To-morrow," and I'll give  
you . . .

I'll give you black Urganda, to be spoiled

With petting and snail-paces. Will you?  
Come!

SCENE III. MILDRED'S Chamber. A painted window  
overlooks the Park. MILDRED and GUENDOLEN.

*Guen.* Now, Mildred, spare those pains. I  
have not left

Our talkers in the library, and climbed

The wearisome ascent to this your bower

In company with you, — I have not dared . . .

Nay, worked such prodigies as sparing you

Lord Mertoun's pedigree before the flood,

Which Thorold seemed in very act to tell

— Or bringing Austin to pluck up that most

Firm-rooted heresy — your suitor's eyes,

He would maintain, were gray instead of blue —

I think I brought him to contrition! — Well,

I have not done such things, (all to deserve

A minute's quiet cousins' talk with you,)

To be dismissed so coolly!

*Mildred.*

Guendolen!

What have I done? what could suggest . . .

*Guen.*

There, there!

Do I not comprehend you'd be alone

To throw those testimonies in a heap,

Thorold's enlargings, Austin's brevities,

With that poor silly heartless Guendolen's

Ill-timed misplaced attempted smartnesses —

And sift their sense out? now, I come to spare  
you

Nearly a whole night's labor. Ask and have!

Demand, be answered! Lack I ears and eyes?

Am I perplexed which side of the rock-table

The Conqueror dined on when he landed first,

Lord Mertoun's ancestor was bidden take —

The bow-hand or the arrow-hand's great meed?

Mildred, the Earl has soft blue eyes!

*Mil.*

My brother —

Did he . . . you said that he received him well?

*Guen.* If I said only "well" I said not much.

Oh, stay — which brother?

*Mil.*

Thorold! who — who else?

*Guen.* Thorold (a secret) is too proud by  
half, —

Nay, hear me out — with us he's even gentler

Than we are with our birds. Of this great  
House

The least retainer that e'er caught his glance

Would die for him, real dying — no mere talk:

And in the world, the court, if men would cite

The perfect spirit of honor, Thorold's name

Rises of its clear nature to their lips.

But he should take men's homage, trust in it,

And care no more about what drew it down.

He has desert, and that, acknowledgment;

Is he content?

*Mil.*

You wrong him, Guendolen.

*Guen.* He's proud, confess; so proud with  
brooding o'er

The light of his interminable line.

An ancestry with men all paladins,

And women all . . .

*Mil.* Dear Guendolen, 't is late !  
When yonder purple pane the climbing moon  
Pierces, I know 't is midnight.

*Guen.* Well, that Thorold  
Should rise up from such musings, and receive  
One come audaciously to graft himself  
Into this peerless stock, yet find no flaw,  
No slightest spot in such an one . . .

*Mil.* Who finds  
A spot in Mertoun ?

*Guen.* Not your brother ; therefore,  
Not the whole world.

*Mil.* I am weary, Guendolen.  
Bear with me !

*Guen.* I am foolish.  
*Mil.* Oh no, kind !

But I would rest.  
*Guen.* Good night and rest to you !

I said how gracefully his mantle lay  
Beneath the rings of his light hair ?

*Mil.* Brown hair.  
*Guen.* Brown ? why, it is brown : how could  
you know that ?

*Mil.* How ? did not you — Oh, Austin 't was  
declared

His hair was light, not brown — my head ! —  
and look,

The moon-beam purpling the dark chamber !  
Sweet,

Good night !  
*Guen.* Forgive me — sleep the soundlier for  
me ! *[Going, she turns suddenly.]*

*Mildred !*  
Perdition ! all 's discovered ! Thorold finds  
— That the Earl's greatest of all grandmothers  
Was grander daughter still — to that fair dame  
Whose garter slipped down at the famous dance !

*[Goes.]*  
*Mil.* Is she — can she be really gone at last ?  
My heart ! I shall not reach the window.

Needs  
Must I have sinned much, so to suffer !

*She lifts the small lamp which is suspended before the  
Virgin's image in the window, and places it by the  
purple pane.*

*There !*  
*[She returns to the seat in front.]*

Mildred and Mertoun ! Mildred, with consent  
Of all the world and Thorold, Mertoun's bride !  
Too late ! 'T is sweet to think of, sweeter  
still

To hope for, that this blessed end soothes up  
The course of the beginning ; but I know  
It comes too late : 't will sweetest be of all  
To dream my soul away and die upon.

*[A noise without.]*  
The voice ! Oh why, why glided sin the snake  
Into the paradise Heaven meant us both ?

*[The window opens softly. A low voice sings.]*

There's a woman like a dew-drop, she's so purer  
than the purest ;

And her noble heart's the noblest, yes, and her  
sure faith's the surest :

And her eyes are dark and humid, like the depth  
on depth of lustre

Hid i' the harebell, while her tresses, sunnier than  
the wild-grape cluster,

Gush in golden-tinted plenty down her neck's rose-  
misted marble ;  
Then her voice's music . . . call it the well's bub-  
bling, the bird's warble !

*[A figure wrapped in a mantle appears at the window.]*

And this woman says, " My days were sunless  
and my nights were moonless,

Parched the pleasant April herbage, and the  
lark's heart's outbreak tuneless,

If you loved me not ! " And I who — (ah, for  
words of flame !) adore her,

Who am mad to lay my spirit prostrate palpably  
before her —

*[He enters, approaches her seat, and bends over her.]*

I may enter at her portal soon, as now her lattice  
takes me,

And by noontide as by midnight make her mine.  
as hers she makes me !

*[The EARL throws off his slouched hat and long cloak.]*  
My very heart sings, so I sing, Beloved !

*Mil.* Sit, Henry — do not take my hand !  
*Mer.* 'T is mine.

The meeting that appalled us both so much  
Is ended.

*Mil.* What begins now ?  
*Mer.* Happiness

Such as the world contains not.  
*Mil.* That is it.

Our happiness would, as you say, exceed  
The whole world's best of blisses : we — do we

Deserve that ? Utter to your soul, what mine  
Long since, Beloved, has grown used to hear,

Like a death-knell, so much regarded once,  
And so familiar now ; this will not be !

*Mer.* Oh, Mildred, have I met your brother's  
face ?

Compelled myself — if not to speak untruth,  
Yet to disguise, to shun, to put aside

The truth, as — what had e'er prevailed on me  
Save you, to venture ? Have I gained at last

Your brother, the one scarer of your dreams,  
And waking thoughts' sole apprehension too ?

Does a new life, like a young sunrise, break  
On the strange unrest of our night, confused

With rain and stormy flaw — and will you see  
No dripping blossoms, no fire-tinted drops

On each live spray, no vapor steaming up,  
And no expressless glory in the East ?

When I am by you, to be ever by you,  
When I have won you and may worship you.

Oh, Mildred, can you say " this will not be " ?  
*Mil.* Sin has surprised us, so will punishment.

*Mer.* No — me alone, who sinned alone !  
*Mil.* The night

You likened our past life to — was it storm  
Throughout to you then, Henry ?

*Mer.* Of your life  
I spoke — what am I, what my life, to waste

A thought about when you are by me ? — you  
It was, I said my folly called the storm

And pulled the night upon. 'T was day with  
me —

Perpetual dawn with me.  
*Mil.* Come what come will.

You have been happy : take my hand !



*Mer.* [After a pause.] How good  
Your brother is! I figured him a cold —  
Shall I say, haughty man?

*Mil.* They told me all.  
I know all.

*Mer.* It will soon be over.  
*Mil.* Over?  
Oh, what is over? what must I live through  
And say, " 't is over " ? Is our meeting over?  
Have I received in presence of them all  
The partner of my guilty love — with brow  
Trying to seem a maiden's brow — with lips  
Which make believe that when they strive to  
form

Replies to you and tremble as they strive,  
It is the nearest ever they approached  
A stranger's . . . Henry, yours that stranger's  
. . . lip —

With cheek that looks a virgin's, and that is . . .  
Ah God, some prodigy of thine will stop  
This planned piece of deliberate wickedness  
In its birth even! some fierce leprous spot  
Will mar the brow's dissimulating! I  
Shall murmur no smooth speeches got by heart,  
But, frenzied, pour forth all our woe's story,  
The love, the shame, and the despair — with  
them

Round me aghast as round some cursed fount  
That should spirt water, and spouts blood. I'll  
not  
. . . Henry, you do not wish that I should  
draw

This vengeance down? I'll not affect a grace  
That's gone from me — gone once, and gone  
forever!

*Mer.* Mildred, my honor is your own. I'll  
share

Disgrace I cannot suffer by myself.  
A word informs your brother I retract  
This morning's offer; time will yet bring forth  
Some better way of saving both of us.

*Mil.* I'll meet their faces, Henry!  
*Mer.* When? to-morrow!  
Get done with it!

*Mil.* Oh, Henry, not to-morrow!  
Next day! I never shall prepare my words  
And looks and gestures sooner. — How you  
must  
Despise me!

*Mer.* Mildred, break it if you choose,  
A heart the love of you uplifted — still  
Uplifts, through this protracted agony,  
To heaven! but, Mildred, answer me, — first  
pace

The chamber with me — once again — now, say  
Calmly the part, the . . . what it is of me  
You see contempt (for you did say contempt)  
— Contempt for you in! I would pluck it off  
And cast it from me! — but no — no, you'll not  
Repeat that? — will you, Mildred, repeat that?

*Mil.* Dear Henry!

*Mer.* I was scarce a boy — e'en now  
What am I more? And you were infantine  
When first I met you; why, your hair fell loose  
On either side! My fool's-cheek reddens now  
Only in the recalling how it burned  
That morn to see the shape of many a dream  
— You know we boys are prodigal of charms

To her we dream of — I had heard of one,  
Had dreamed of her, and I was close to her.  
Might speak to her, might live and die her own,  
Who knew? I spoke. Oh, Mildred, feel you  
not

That now, while I remember every glance  
Of yours, each word of yours, with power to test  
And weigh them in the diamond scales of pride,  
Resolved the treasure of a first and last  
Heart's love shall have been bartered at its  
worth,

— That now I think upon your purity  
And utter ignorance of guilt — your own  
Or other's guilt — the girlish undisguised  
Delight at a strange novel prize — (I talk  
A silly language, but interpret, you!)  
If I, with fancy at its full, and reason  
Scarce in its germ, enjoined you secrecy,  
If you had pity on my passion, pity  
On my protested sickness of the soul  
To sit beside you, hear you breathe, and watch  
Your eyelids and the eyes beneath — if you  
Accorded gifts and knew not they were gifts —  
If I grew mad at last with enterprise  
And must behold my beauty in her bower  
Or perish — (I was ignorant of even  
My own desires — what then were you?) if sor-  
row —

Sin — if the end came — must I now renounce  
My reason, blind myself to light, say truth  
Is false and lie to God and my own soul?  
Contempt were all of this!

*Mil.* Do you believe . . .  
Or, Henry, I'll not wrong you — you believe  
That I was ignorant. I scarce grieve o'er  
The past! We'll love on; you will love me  
still!

*Mer.* Oh, to love less what one has injured!  
Dove,

Whose pinion I have rashly hurt, my breast —  
Shall my heart's warmth not nurse thee into  
strength?

Flower I have crushed, shall I not care for  
thee?

Bloom o'er my crest, my fight-mark and device!  
Mildred, I love you and you love me!

*Mil.* Go!  
Be that your last word. I shall sleep to-night.

*Mer.* This is not our last meeting?  
*Mil.* One night more.

*Mer.* And then — think, then!

*Mil.* Then, no sweet courtship-days,  
No dawning consciousness of love for us,  
No strange and palpitating births of sense  
From words and looks, no innocent fears and  
hopes,

Reserves and confidences: morning's over!

*Mer.* How else should love's perfected noon-  
tide follow?

All the dawn promised shall the day perform.

*Mil.* So may it be! but —

You are cautious, Love?  
Are sure that unobserved you scaled the walls?  
*Mer.* Oh, trust me! Then our final meet-  
ing's fixed

To-morrow night?

*Mil.* Farewell! Stay, Henry . . . where-  
fore?

His foot is on the yew-tree bough : the turf  
Receives him : now the moonlight as he runs  
Embraces him — but he must go — is gone.  
Ah, once again he turns — thanks, thanks, my  
Love!

He's gone. Oh, I'll believe him every word !  
I was so young, I loved him so, I had  
No mother, God forgot me, and I fell.  
There may be pardon yet : all's doubt beyond.  
Surely the bitterness of death is past !

## ACT II

SCENE. *The Library.*

*Enter LORD TRESHAM, hastily.*

*Tresh.* This way ! In, Gerard, quick !

*[As GERARD enters, TRESHAM secures the door.*

Now speak ! or, wait —

I'll bid you speak directly. *[Seats himself.*

Now repeat  
Firmly and circumstantially the tale  
You just now told me ; it eludes me ; either  
I did not listen, or the half is gone  
Away from me. How long have you lived  
here ?

Here in my house, your father kept our woods  
Before you ?

*Ger.* — As his father did, my lord.  
I have been eating, sixty years almost,  
Your bread.

*Tresh.* Yes, yes. You ever were of all  
The servant in my father's house, I know,  
The trusted one. You'll speak the truth.

*Ger.* I'll speak  
God's truth. Night after night . . .

*Tresh.* Since when ?  
*Ger.* At least

A month — each midnight has some man access  
To Lady Mildred's chamber.

*Tresh.* Tush, "access" —  
No wide words like "access" to me !

*Ger.* He runs  
Along the woodside, crosses to the south,  
Takes the left tree that ends the avenue . . .

*Tresh.* The last great yew-tree ?

*Ger.* You might stand upon  
The main boughs like a platform. Then  
he . . .

*Tresh.* Quick !

*Ger.* Climbs up, and, where they lessen at  
the top,

— I cannot see distinctly, but he throws,  
I think — for this I do not vouch — a line  
That reaches to the lady's casement —

*Tresh.* — Which  
He enters not ! Gerard, some wretched fool  
Dares pry into my sister's privacy !  
When such are young, it seems a precious thing  
To have approached, — to merely have ap-  
proached,

Got sight of, the abode of her they set  
Their frantic thoughts upon ! He does not  
enter ?

*Gerard ?*

*Ger.* There is a lamp that's full i' the midst,  
Under a red square in the painted glass

Of Lady Mildred's . . .

*Tresh.* Leave that name out ! Well ?  
That lamp ?

*Ger.* — Is moved at midnight higher up  
To one pane — a small dark-blue pane : he waits  
For that among the boughs : at sight of that,  
I see him, plain as I see you, my lord,  
Open the lady's casement, enter there . . .

*Tresh.* — And stay ?

*Ger.* An hour, two hours.

*Tresh.* And this you saw  
Once ? — twice ? — quick !

*Ger.* Twenty times.

*Tresh.* And what brings you  
Under the yew-trees ?

*Ger.* The first night I left  
My range so far, to track the stranger stag  
That broke the pale, I saw the man.

*Tresh.* Yet sent  
No cross-bow shaft through the marauder ?

*Ger.* But  
He came, my lord, the first time he was seen,  
In a great moonlight, light as any day,  
From Lady Mildred's chamber.

*Tresh.* *[After a pause.]* You have no cause  
— Who could have cause to do my sister wrong ?  
*Ger.* Oh, my lord, only once — let me this  
once

Speak what is on my mind ! Since first I noted  
All this, I've groaned as if a fiery net  
Plucked me this way and that — fire if I turned  
To her, fire if I turned to you, and fire  
If down I flung myself and strove to die.  
The lady could not have been seven years old  
When I was trusted to conduct her safe  
Through the deer-herd to stroke the snow-white  
fawn

I brought to eat bread from her tiny hand  
Within a month. She ever had a smile  
To greet me with — she . . . if it could undo  
What's done, to lop each limb from off this  
trunk . . .

All that is foolish talk, not fit for you —  
I mean, I could not speak and bring her hurt  
For Heaven's compelling. But when I was  
fixed

To hold my peace, each morsel of your food  
Eaten beneath your roof, my birth-place too,  
Choked me. I wish I had grown mad in doubts  
What it behoved me do. This morn it seemed  
Either I must confess to you, or die :  
Now it is done, I seem the vilest worm  
That crawls, to have betrayed my lady !

*Tresh.* No —  
No, Gerard !

*Ger.* Let me go !

*Tresh.* A man, you say :  
What man ? Young ? Not a vulgar hind ?  
What dress ?

*Ger.* A slouched hat and a large dark foreign  
cloak

Wraps his whole form ; even his face is hid ;  
But I should judge him young : no hind, be  
sure !

*Tresh.* Why ?

*Ger.* He is ever armed : his sword projects  
Beneath the cloak.

*Tresh.* Gerard, — I will not say

No word, no breath of this!

*Ger.* Thanks, thanks, my lord! [*Goes.*]

*TRESHAM paces the room. After a pause,*  
Oh, thought 's absurd! — as with some monstrous fact

Which, when ill thoughts beset us, seems to give

Merciful God that made the sun and stars,  
The waters and the green delights of earth,  
The lie! I apprehend the monstrous fact —  
Yet know the maker of all worlds is good,  
And yield my reason up inadequate  
To reconcile what yet I do behold —  
Blasting my sense! There 's cheerful day outside:

This is my library, and this the chair  
My father used to sit in carelessly  
After his soldier-fashion, while I stood  
Between his knees to question him : and here  
Gerard our gray retainer, — as he says,  
Fed with our food, from sire to son, an age —  
Has told a story — I am to believe!  
That Mildred . . . oh, no, no! both tales are true,

Her pure cheek's story and the forester's!  
Would she, or could she, err — much less, confound

All guilts of treachery, of craft, of . . . Heaven  
Keep me within its hand! — I will sit here  
Until thought settle and I see my course.  
Avert, O God, only this woe from me!

[*As he sinks his head between his arms on the table,*  
*GUENDOLEN's voice is heard at the door.*

Lord Tresham! [*She knocks.*] Is Lord Tresham there?

[*TRESHAM, hastily turning, pulls down the first book above him and opens it.*

*Tresh.* Come in! [*She enters.*  
*Ha.* Guendolen! — good morning.

*Guen.* Nothing more?  
*Tresh.* What should I say more?

*Guen.* Pleasant question! more?  
This more. Did I besiege poor Mildred's brain  
Last night till close on morning with "the Earl,"  
"The Earl" — whose worth did I asseverate  
Till I am very fain to hope that . . . Thorold,  
What is all this? You are not well!

*Tresh.* Who, I?  
You laugh at me.

*Guen.* Has what I'm fain to hope,  
Arrived then? Does that huge tome show some blot

In the Earl's 'scutcheon come no longer back  
Than Arthur's time?

*Tresh.* When left you Mildred's chamber?  
*Guen.* Oh, late enough, I told you! The main thing

To ask is, how I left her chamber, — sure,  
Content yourself, she'll grant this paragon  
Of Earls no such ungacious . . .

*Tresh.* Send her here!

*Guen.* Thorold?

*Tresh.* I mean — acquaint her, Guendolen,  
— But mildly!

*Guen.* Mildly?

*Tresh.* Ah, you guessed aright!  
I am not well : there is no hiding it.  
But tell her I would see her at her leisure —

That is, at once! here in the library!  
The passage in that old Italian book  
We hunted for so long is found, say, found —  
And if I let it slip again . . . you see,  
That she must come — and instantly!

*Guen.* I'll die  
Piecemeal, record that, if there have not gloomed

Some blot i' the 'scutcheon!

*Tresh.* Go! or, Guendolen,  
Be you at call, — with Austin, if you choose, —  
In the adjoining gallery! There, go:

[*GUENDOLEN goes.*]

Another lesson to me! You might bid  
A child disguise his heart's sore, and conduct  
Some sly investigation point by point  
With a smooth brow, as well as bid me catch  
The inquisitorial cleverness some praise!  
If you had told me yesterday, "There's one  
You needs must circumvent and practise with,  
Entrap by policies, if you would worm  
The truth out: and that one is — Mildred!"

There,  
There — reasoning is thrown away on it!  
Prove she's unchaste . . . why, you may after prove

That she 's a poisoner, traitress, what you will!  
Where I can comprehend naught, naught 's to say,

Or do, or think! Force on me but the first  
Abomination, — then outpour all plagues,  
And I shall ne'er make count of them!

[*Enter MILDRED.*]

*Mil.* What book  
Is it I wanted, Thorold? Guendolen  
Thought you were pale; you are not pale.

That book?  
That 's Latin surely.

*Tresh.* Mildred, here 's a line,  
(Don't lean on me: I'll English it for you)  
"Love conquers all things." What love conquers them?

What love should you esteem — best love?

*Mil.* True love.  
*Tresh.* I mean, and should have said, whose love is best

Of all that love or that profess to love?  
*Mil.* The list 's so long: there 's father's, mother's, husband's . . .

*Tresh.* Mildred, I do believe a brother's love  
For a sole sister must exceed them all.

For see now, only see! there 's no alloy  
Of earth that creeps into the perfect'st gold

Of other loves — no gratitude to claim;  
You never gave her life, not even aught

That keeps life — never tended her, instructed,  
Enriched her — so, your love can claim no right

O'er her save pure love's claim: that 's what I call

Freedom from earthliness. You'll never hope  
To be such friends, for instance, she and you,

As when you hunted cowslips in the woods  
Or played together in the meadow hay.

Oh yes — with age, respect comes, and your worth

Is felt, there 's growing sympathy of tastes,  
There 's ripened friendship, there 's confirmed esteem:



— Much head these make against the new-comer!

The startling apparition, the strange youth — Whom one half-hour's conversing with, or, say, Mere gazing at, shall change (beyond all change This Ovid ever sang about) your soul

. . . Her soul, that is, — the sister's soul! With her

'T was winter yesterday; now, all is warmth, The green leaf's springing and the turtle's voice, "Arise and come away!" Come whither? — far

Enough from the esteem, respect, and all The brother's somewhat insignificant Array of rights! All which he knows before, Has calculated on so long ago! I think such love, (apart from yours and mine,) Contented with its little term of life, Intending to retire betimes, aware How soon the background must be place for it, — I think, am sure, a brother's love exceeds All the world's love in its unworldliness.

*Mil.* What is this for?

*Tresh.* This, Mildred, is it for! Or, no, I cannot go to it so soon! That's one of many points my haste left out — Each day, each hour throws forth its silk-slight fin

Between the being tied to you by birth, And you, until those slender threads compose A web that shrouds her daily life of hopes And fears and fancies, all her life, from yours: So close you live and yet so far apart! And must I rend this web, tear up, break down The sweet and palpitating mystery That makes her sacred? You — for you I mean, Shall I speak, shall I not speak?

*Mil.* Speak!

*Tresh.* I will, Is there a story men could — any man Could tell of you, you would conceal from me? I'll never think there's falsehood on that lip. Say "There is no such story men could tell," And I'll believe you, though I disbelieve The world — the world of better men than I, And women such as I suppose you. Speak! [After a pause.] Not speak? Explain then!

Clear it up then! Move Some of the miserable weight away That presses lower than the grave! Not speak? Some of the dead weight, Mildred! Ah, if I Could bring myself to plainly make their charge Against you! Must I, Mildred? Silent still? [After a pause.] Is there a gallant that has night by night

Admittance to your chamber?

[After a pause.] Then, his name! Till now, I only had a thought for you: But now, — his name!

*Mil.* Thorold, do you devise Fit expiation for my guilt, if fit There be! 'T is naught to say that I'll endure And bless you, — that my spirit yearns to purge Her stains off in the fierce renewing fire: But do not plunge me into other guilt! Oh, guilt enough! I cannot tell his name.

*Tresh.* Then judge yourself! How should I act? Pronounce!

*Mil.* Oh, Thorold, you must never tempt me thus!

To die here in this chamber by that sword Would seem like punishment: so should I glide, Like an arch-cheat, into extremest bliss! 'T were easily arranged for me: but you — What would become of you?

*Tresh.* And what will now Become of me? I'll hide your shame and mine From every eye; the dead must heave their hearts

Under the marble of our chapel-floor; They cannot rise and blast you. You may wed Your paramour above our mother's tomb; Our mother cannot move from 'neath your foot. We too will somehow wear this one day out: But with to-morrow hastens here — the Earl! The youth without suspicion face can come From heaven, and heart from . . . whence proceed such hearts?

I have dispatched last night at your command A missive bidding him present himself To-morrow — here — thus much is said; the rest

Is understood as if 't were written down — "His suit finds favor in your eyes." Now dictate

This morning's letter that shall countermand Last night's — do dictate that!

*Mil.* But, Thorold — if I will receive him as I said?

*Tresh.* The Earl?

*Mil.* I will receive him.

*Tresh.* [Starting up.] Ho there! Guendolen! (GUENDOLEN AND AUSTIN enter.)

And, Austin, you are welcome, too! Look there!

The woman there!

*Aus. and Guen.* How? Mildred?

*Tresh.* Mildred once! Now the receiver night by night, when sleep Blesses the inmates of her father's house, — I say, the soft sly wanton that receives Her guilt's accomplice 'neath this roof which holds

You, Guendolen, you, Austin, and has held A thousand Treshams — never one like her! No lighter of the signal-lamp her quick Foul breath near quenches in hot eagerness To mix with breath as foul! no loosener O' the lattice, practised in the stealthy tread, The low voice and the noiseless come-and-go! Not one composer of the bacchant's mien Into — what you thought Mildred's, in a word! Know her!

*Guen.* Oh, Mildred, look to me, at least! Thorold — she's dead, I'd say, but that she stands

Rigid as stone and whiter!

*Tresh.* You have heard . . . *Guen.* Too much! You must proceed no further.

*Mil.* Yes — Proceed! All's truth. Go from me!

*Tresh.* All is truth. She tells you! Well, you know, or ought to know, All this I would forgive in her. I'd con

Each precept the harsh world enjoins, I 'd take  
Our ancestors' stern verdicts one by one,  
I 'd bind myself before them to exact  
The prescribed vengeance — and one word of  
hers,

The sight of her, the bare least memory  
Of Mildred, my one sister, my heart's pride  
Above all prides, my all in all so long,  
Would scatter every trace of my resolve.  
What were it silently to waste away  
And see her waste away from this day forth,  
Two scathed things with leisure to repent,  
And grow acquainted with the grave, and die  
Tired out if not at peace, and be forgotten?  
It were not so impossible to bear.  
But this — that, fresh from last night's pledge  
renewed

Of love with the successful gallant there,  
She calmly bids me help her to entice,  
Inveigle an unconscious trusting youth  
Who thinks her all that 's chaste and good and  
pure,

— Invites me to betray him . . . who so fit  
As honor's self to cover shame's arch-deed?  
— That she 'll receive Lord Mertoun — (her own  
phrase) —

This, who could bear? Why, you have heard  
of thieves,  
Stabbers, the earth's disgrace, who yet have  
laughed,

“Talk not to me of torture — I 'll betray  
No comrade I 've pledged faith to!” — you  
have heard

Of wretched women — all but Mildreds — tied  
By wild illicit ties to losels vile  
You 'd tempt them to forsake; and they 'll  
reply

“Gold, friends, repute, I left for him, I find  
In him, why should I leave him then for gold,  
Repute or friends?” — and you have felt your  
heart

Respond to such poor outcasts of the world  
As to so many friends; bad as you please,  
You 've felt they were God's men and women  
still,

So, not to be disowned by you. But she  
That stands there, calmly gives her lover up  
As means to wed the Earl that she may hide  
Their intercourse the surelier: and, for this,  
I curse her to her face before you all.

Shame hunt her from the earth! Then Heaven  
do right  
To both! It hears me now — shall judge her  
then!

[As MILDRED faints and falls, TRESHAM rushes out.

Aus. Stay, Tresham, we 'll accompany you!

Guen. We?

What, and leave Mildred? We? Why,  
where 's my place

But by her side, and where yours but by mine?  
Mildred — one word! Only look at me, then!

Aus. No, Guendolen! I echo Thorold's  
voice.

She is unworthy to behold . . .

Guen. Us two?

If you spoke on reflection, and if I  
Approved your speech — if you (to put the thing  
At lowest) you the soldier, bound to make

The king's cause yours and fight for it, and  
throw

Regard to others of its right or wrong,  
— If with a death-white woman you can help,  
Let alone sister, let alone a Mildred,  
You left her — or if I, her cousin, friend  
This morning, playfellow but yesterday,  
Who said, or thought at least a thousand times,  
“I 'd serve you if I could,” should now face  
round

And say, “Ah, that 's to only signify  
I 'd serve you while you 're fit to serve yourself  
So long as fifty eyes await the turn  
Of yours to forestall its yet half-formed wish,  
I 'll proffer my assistance you 'll not need —  
When every tongue is praising you, I 'll join  
The praisers' chorus — when you 're hemmed  
about

With lives between you and detraction — lives  
To be laid down if a rude voice, rash eye,  
Rough hand should violate the sacred ring  
Their worship throws about you, — then indeed,  
Who 'll stand up for you stout as I?” If so  
We said, and so we did, — not Mildred there  
Would be unworthy to behold us both,  
But we should be unworthy, both of us,  
To be beheld by — by — your meanest dog,  
Which, if that sword were broken in your  
face

Before a crowd, that badge torn off your breast,  
And you cast out with hooting and contempt,  
— Would push his way through all the hooters,  
gain

Your side, go off with you and all your shame  
To the next ditch you choose to die in! Austin,  
Do you love me? Here 's Austin, Mildred, —  
here 's

Your brother says he does not believe half —  
No, nor half that — of all he heard! He says,  
Look up and take his hand!

Aus.

Look up and take

My hand, dear Mildred!

Mil.

I — I was so young!

Beside, I loved him, Thorold — and I had  
No mother; God forgot me: so, I fell.

Guen. Mildred!

Mil.

Require no further! Did I dream  
That I could palliate what is done? All 's true.  
Now, punish me! A woman takes my hand!  
Let go my hand! You do not know, I see.

I thought that Thorold told you.

Guen.

What is this?

Where start you to?

Mil.

Oh, Austin, loosen me!

You heard the whole of it — your eyes were  
worse,

In their surprise, than Thorold's! Oh, unless  
You stay to execute his sentence, loose

My hand! Has Thorold gone, and are you here?  
Guen. Here, Mildred, we two friends of yours  
will wait

Your bidding; be you silent, sleep or muse!  
Only, when you shall want your bidding done,  
How can we do it if we are not by?

Here 's Austin waiting patiently your will!

One spirit to command, and one to love  
And to believe in it and do its best,  
Poor as that is, to help it — why, the world

Has been won many a time, its length and breadth,

By just such a beginning!

*Mil.* I believe  
If once I threw my arms about your neck  
And sunk my head upon your breast, that I  
Should weep again.

*Guen.* Let go her hand now, Austin!  
Wait for me. Pace the gallery and think  
On the world's seemings and realities,  
Until I call you. [*AUSTIN goes.*]

*Mil.* No — I cannot weep.  
No more tears from this brain — no sleep — no  
tears!

O Guendolen, I love you!

*Guen.* Yes: and "love"  
Is a short word that says so very much!  
It says that you confide in me.

*Mil.* Confide!  
*Guen.* Your lover's name, then! I've so  
much to learn,  
Ere I can work in your behalf!

*Mil.* My friend,  
You know I cannot tell his name.

*Guen.* At least

He is your lover? and you love him too?  
*Mil.* Ah, do you ask me that? — but I am  
fallen

So low!

*Guen.* You love him still, then?  
*Mil.* My sole prop

Against the guilt that crushes me! I say,  
Each night ere I lie down, "I was so young —  
I had no mother, and I loved him so!"  
And then God seems indulgent, and I dare  
Trust him my soul in sleep.

*Guen.* How could you let us  
E'en talk to you about Lord Mertoun then?

*Mil.* There is a cloud around me.  
*Guen.* But you said  
You would receive his suit in spite of this?

*Mil.* I say there is a cloud . . .  
*Guen.* No cloud to me!  
Lord Mertoun and your lover are the same!

*Mil.* What maddest fancy . . .  
*Guen.* [*Calling aloud.*] Austin! (spare your  
pains —

When I have got a truth, that truth I keep) —

*Mil.* By all you love, sweet Guendolen, for-  
bear!

Have I confided in you . . .  
*Guen.* Just for this!

Austin! — Oh, not to guess it at the first!  
But I did guess it — that is, I divined,  
Felt by an instinct how it was: why else  
Should I pronounce you free from all that heap  
Of sins which had been irredeemable?

I felt they were not yours — what other way  
Than this, not yours? The secret's wholly  
mine!

*Mil.* If you would see me die before his face . . .  
*Guen.* I'd hold my peace! And if the Earl  
returns

To-night?

*Mil.* Ah Heaven, he's lost!

*Guen.* I thought so. Austin!  
(*Enter AUSTIN.*)

Oh, where have you been hiding?

*Aus.* Thorold's gone,  
I know not how, across the meadow-land.  
I watched him till I lost him in the skirts  
O' the beech-wood.

*Guen.* Gone? All thwarts us.

*Mil.* Thorold too?

*Guen.* I have thought. First lead this Mil-  
dred to her room.

Go on the other side; and then we'll seek  
Your brother: and I'll tell you, by the way,  
The greatest comfort in the world. You said  
There was a clue to all. Remember, Sweet,  
He said there was a clue! I hold it. Come!

### ACT III

SCENE I. *The end of the Yew-tree Avenue under MIL-  
DRED's window. A light seen through a central red  
pane.*

*Enter TRESHAM through the trees.*

*Tresh.* Again here! But I cannot lose my-  
self.

The heath — the orchard — I have traversed  
glades

And dells and bosky paths which used to lead  
Into green wild-wood depths, bewildering  
My boy's adventurous step. And now they tend  
Hither or soon or late; the blackest shade  
Breaks up, the thronged trunks of the trees ope  
wide,

And the dim turret I have fled from, fronts  
Again my step; the very river put  
Its arm about me and conducted me  
To this detested spot. Why then, I'll shun  
Their will no longer: do your will with me!

Oh, bitter! To have reared a towering scheme  
Of happiness, and to behold it razed,  
Were nothing; all men hope, and see their hopes  
Frustrate, and grieve awhile, and hope anew.

But I . . . to hope that from a line like ours  
No horrid prodigy like this would spring,  
Were just as though I hoped that from these old  
Confederates against the sovereign day,

Children of older and yet older sires,  
Whose living coral berries dropped, as now  
On me, on many a baron's surcoat once,  
On many a beauty's wimple — would proceed

No poison-tree, to thrust, from hell its root,  
Hither and thither its strange snaky arms.

Why came I here? What must I do? [*A bell  
strikes.*] A bell?

Midnight! and 'tis at midnight . . . Ah, I catch  
— Woods, river, plains, I catch your meaning  
now.

And I obey you! Hist! This tree will serve.  
[*He retires behind one of the trees. After a pause,  
enter MERTOUN cloaked as before.*]

*Mer.* Not time! Beat out thy last voluptuous  
beat

Of hope and fear, my heart! I thought the  
clock

I' the chapel struck as I was pushing through  
The ferns. And so I shall no more see rise  
My love-star! Oh, no matter for the past!  
So much the more delicious task to watch  
Mildred revive: to pluck out, thorn by thorn.  
All traces of the rough forbidden path



My rash love lured her to! Each day must see  
Some fear of hers effaced, some hope renewed:  
Then there will be surprises, unforeseen  
Delights in store. I'll not regret the past.

[The light is placed above in the purple pane.

And see, my signal rises, Mildred's star!  
I never saw it lovelier than now  
It rises for the last time. If it sets,  
'T is that the reassuring sun may dawn.

[As he prepares to ascend the last tree of the avenue,  
TRESHAM arrests his arm.

Unhand me — peasant, by your grasp! Here's  
gold.

'T was a mad freak of mine. I said I'd pluck  
A branch from the white-blossomed shrub be-  
neath

The casement there. Take this, and hold your  
peace.

Tresh. Into the moonlight yonder, come with  
me!

Out of the shadow.

Mer. I am armed, fool!

Tresh. Yes,

Or no? You'll come into the light, or no?

My hand is on your throat — refuse! —

Mer. That voice!

Where have I heard . . . no — that was mild  
and slow.

I'll come with you. [They advance.

Tresh. You're armed: that's well. Declare  
Your name: who are you?

Mer. (Tresham! — she is lost!)

Tresh. Oh, silent? Do you know, you bear  
yourself

Exactly as, in curious dreams I've had  
How felons, this wild earth is full of, look

When they're detected, still your kind has  
looked!

The bravo holds an assured countenance,  
The thief is voluble and plausible,

But silently the slave of lust has crouched  
When I have fancied it before a man.

Your name!

Mer. I do conjure Lord Tresham — ay,  
Kissing his foot, if so I might prevail —

That he for his own sake forbear to ask  
My name! As heaven's above, his future weal

Or woe depends upon my silence! Vain!

I read your white inexorable face.

Know me, Lord Tresham!

[He throws off his disguises.

Tresh. Mertoun!

[After a pause.] Draw now!

Mer. Hear me

But speak first!

Tresh. Not one least word on your life!

Be sure that I will strangle in your throat

The least word that informs me how you live

And yet seem what you seem! No doubt 't was  
you

Taught Mildred still to keep that face and sin.

We should join hands in frantic sympathy

If you once taught me the unteachable,

Explained how you can live so, and so lie.

With God's help I retain, despite my sense,

The old belief — a life like yours is still

Impossible. Now draw!

Mer. Not for my sake,

Do I entreat a hearing — for your sake,  
And most, for her sake!

Tresh. Ha ha, what should I  
Know of your ways? A miscreant like yourself,

How must one rouse his ire? A blow? — that's  
pride

No doubt, to him! One spurns him, does one  
not?

Or sets the foot upon his mouth, or spits  
Into his face! Come! Which, or all of these?

Mer. 'Twixt him and me and Mildred.  
Heaven be judge!

Can I avoid this? Have your will, my lord!  
[He draws and, after a few passes, falls.

Tresh. You are not hurt?

Mer. You'll hear me now!

Tresh. But rise!

Mer. Ah, Tresham, say I not "you'll hear  
me now!"

And what procures a man the right to speak  
In his defence before his fellow man,

But — I suppose — the thought that presently  
He may have leave to speak before his God

His whole defence?

Tresh. Not hurt? It cannot be!

You made no effort to resist me. Where

Did my sword reach you? Why not have re-  
turned

My thrusts? Hurt where?

Mer. My lord —

Tresh. How young he is!

Mer. Lord Tresham, I am very young, and  
yet

I have entangled other lives with mine.

Do let me speak, and do believe my speech!

That when I die before you presently, —

Tresh. Can you stay here till I return with  
help?

Mer. Oh, stay by me! When I was less  
than boy

I did you grievous wrong and knew it not —

Upon my honor, knew it not! Once known,

I could not find what seemed a better way

To right you than I took: my life — you feel

How less than nothing were the giving you

The life you've taken! But I thought my way

The better — only for your sake and hers:

And as you have decided otherwise,

Would I had an infinity of lives

To offer you! Now say — instruct me — think!

Can you, from the brief minutes I have left,

Eke out my reparation? Oh think — think!

For I must wring a partial — dare I say,

Forgiveness from you, ere I die?

Tresh. I do

Forgive you.

Mer. Wait and ponder that great word!

Because, if you forgive me, I shall hope

To speak to you of — Mildred!

Tresh. Mertoun, haste

And anger have undone us. 'T is not you

Should tell me for a novelty you're young,

Thoughtless, unable to recall the past.

Be but your pardon ample as my own!

Mer. Ah, Tresham, that a sword-stroke and  
a drop

Of blood or two, should bring all this about!

Why, 't was my very fear of you, my love

Of you — (what passion like a boy's for one  
Like you?) — that ruined me! I dream'd of  
you —

You, all accomplished, courted everywhere,  
The scholar and the gentleman. I burned  
To knit myself to you : but I was young,  
And your surpassing reputation kept me  
So far aloof! Oh, wherefore all that love?  
With less of love, my glorious yesterday  
Of praise and gentlest words and kindest looks,  
Had taken place perchance six months ago.  
Even now, how happy we had been! And yet  
I know the thought of this escaped you,  
Tresham!

Let me look up into your face; I feel  
'Tis changed above me: yet my eyes are glazed.  
Where? where?

[As he endeavors to raise himself his eye catches the  
lamp.

Ah, Mildred! What will Mildred do?  
Tresham, her life is bound up in the life  
That's bleeding fast away! I'll live — must  
live,

There, if you'll only turn me I shall live  
And save her! Tresham — oh, had you but  
heard!

Had you but heard! What right was yours to  
set

The thoughtless foot upon her life and mine,  
And then say, as we perish, "Had I thought,  
All had gone otherwise?" We've sinned and  
die:

Never you sin, Lord Tresham! for you'll die,  
And God will judge you.

Tresh. Yes, be satisfied!  
That process is begun.

Mer. And she sits there  
Waiting for me! Now, say you this to her —  
You, not another — say, I saw him die  
As he breathed this, "I love her" — you don't  
know  
What those three small words mean! Say, lov-  
ing her

Lowers me down the bloody slope to death  
With memories . . . I speak to her, not you,  
Who had no pity, will have no remorse,  
Perchance intend her . . . Die along with me,  
Dear Mildred! 't is so easy, and you'll 'scape  
So much unkindness! Can I lie at rest,  
With rude speech spoken to you, ruder deeds  
Done to you? — heartless men shall have my  
heart.

And I tied down with grave-clothes and the  
worm,

Aware, perhaps, of every blow — oh God! —  
Upon those lips — yet of no power to tear  
The felon stripe by stripe! Die, Mildred!  
Leave

Their honorable world to them! For God  
We're good enough, though the world casts us  
out.

[A whistle is heard.

Tresh. Ho, Gerard!  
(Enter GERARD, AUSTIN and GUENDOLEN, with lights.)  
No one speak! You see what's done.  
I cannot bear another voice.

Mer. There's light —  
Light all about me, and I move to it.  
Tresham, did I not tell you — did you not

Just promise to deliver words of mine  
To Mildred?

Tresh. I will bear those words to her.

Mer. Now?

Tresh. Now. Lift you the body, and leave  
me

The head.

[As they have half raised MERTOUN, he turns suddenly.

Mer. I knew they turned me: turn me not  
from her!

There! stay you! there! [Dies

Guen. [After a pause.] Austin, remain you  
here

With Thorold until Gerard comes with help:

Then lead him to his chamber. I must go  
To Mildred.

Tresh. Guendolen, I hear each word  
You utter. Did you hear him bid me give  
His message? Did you hear my promise? I,  
And only I, see Mildred.

Guen. She will die.

Tresh. Oh no, she will not die! I dare not  
hope  
She'll die. What ground have you to think  
she'll die?

Why, Austin's with you!

Aus. Had we but arrived  
Before you fought!

Tresh. There was no fight at all.  
He let me slaughter him — the boy! I'll trust  
The body there to you and Gerard — thus!  
Now bear him on before me.

Aus. Whither bear him?

Tresh. Oh, to my chamber! When we meet  
there next,  
We shall be friends.

[They bear out the body of MERTOUN.

Will she die, Guendolen?

Guen. Where are you taking me?  
Tresh. He fell just here.  
Now answer me. Shall you in your whole life  
— You who have naught to do with Mertoun's  
fate,

Now you have seen his breast upon the turf,  
Shall you e'er walk this way if you can help?  
When you and Austin wander arm-in-arm  
Through our ancestral grounds, will not a shade  
Be ever on the meadow and the waste —  
Another kind of shade than when the night  
Shuts the woodside with all its whispers up?  
But will you ever so forget his breast  
As carelessly to cross this bloody turf  
Under the black yew avenue? That's well!  
You turn your head: and I then? —

Guen. What is done  
Is done. My care is for the living. Thorold,  
Bear up against this burden: more remains  
To set the neck to!

Tresh. Dear and ancient trees  
My fathers planted, and I loved so well!  
What have I done that, like some fabled crime  
Of yore, lets loose a Fury leading thus  
Her miserable dance amidst you all?  
Oh, never more for me shall winds intone  
With all your tops a vast antiphony,  
Demanding and responding in God's praise!  
Hers ye are now, not mine! Farewell — fare-  
well!

## SCENE II. MILDRED'S Chamber. MILDRED alone.

*Mil.* He comes not! I have heard of those who seemed

Resourceless in prosperity, — you thought  
Sorrow might slay them when she listed; yet  
Did they so gather up their diffused strength  
At her first menace, that they bade her strike,  
And stood and laughed her subtlest skill to  
scorn.

Oh, 't is not so with me! The first woe fell,  
And the rest fall upon it, not on me:  
Else should I bear that Henry comes not? —  
fails

Just this first night out of so many nights?  
Loving is done with. Were he sitting now,  
As so few hours since, on that seat, we'd love  
No more — contrive no thousand happy ways  
To hide love from the loveless, any more.  
I think I might have urged some little point  
In my defence, to Thorold; he was breathless  
For the least hint of a defence: but no,  
The first shame over, all that would might fall.  
No Henry! Yet I merely sit and think  
The morrow's deed o'er and o'er. I must have  
crept

Out of myself. A Mildred that has lost  
Her lover — oh, I dare not look upon  
Such woe! I crouch away from it! 'T is she,  
Mildred, will break her heart, not I! The  
world

Forsakes me: only Henry's left me — left?  
When I have lost him, for he does not come,  
And I sit stupidly . . . Oh Heaven, break up  
This worse than anguish, this mad apathy,  
By any means or any messenger!

*Tresh.* [*Without.*] Mildred!

*Mil.* Come in! Heaven hears me!

[*Enter TRESHAM.*] You? alone?

Oh, no more cursing!

*Tresh.* Mildred, I must sit.

There — you sit!

*Mil.* Say it, Thorold — do not look  
The curse! deliver all you come to say!  
What must become of me? Oh, speak that  
thought

Which makes your brow and cheeks so pale!

*Tresh.* My thought?

*Mil.* All of it!

*Tresh.* How we waded — years ago —  
After those water-lilies, till the plash,  
I know not how, surprised us; and you dared  
Neither advance nor turn back: so, we stood  
Laughing and crying until Gerard came —  
Once safe upon the turf, the loudest too,  
For once more reaching the relinquished prize!  
How idle thoughts are, some men's, dying  
men's!

Mildred, —

*Mil.* You call me kinder by my name  
Than even yesterday: what is in that?

*Tresh.* It weighs so much upon my mind  
that I

This morning took an office not my own!  
I might . . . of course, I must be glad or  
grieved,

Content or not, at every little thing

That touches you. I may with a wrung heart

Even reprove you, Mildred; I did more:  
Will you forgive me?

*Mil.* Thorold? do you mock?  
Or no . . . and yet you bid me . . . say that  
word!

*Tresh.* Forgive me, Mildred! — are you silent,  
Sweet?

*Mil.* [*Starting up.*] Why does not Henry  
Mertoun come to-night?

Are you, too, silent?

[*Dashing his mantle aside, and pointing to his scabbard, which is empty.*

Ah, this speaks for you!

You've murdered Henry Mertoun! Now proceed!

What is it I must pardon? This and all?

Well, I do pardon you — I think I do.

Thorold, how very wretched you must be!

*Tresh.* He bade me tell you . . .

*Mil.* What I do forbid

Your utterance of! So much that you may tell  
And will not — how you murdered him . . .  
but, no!

You'll tell me that he loved me, never more  
Than bleeding out his life there: must I say  
"Indeed," to that? Enough! I pardon you.

*Tresh.* You cannot, Mildred! for the harsh  
words, yes:

Of this last deed Another's judge: whose doom  
I wait in doubt, despondency and fear.

*Mil.* Oh, true! There's naught for me to  
pardon! True!

You loose my soul of all its cares at once.

Death makes me sure of him forever! You

Tell me his last words? He shall tell me them,  
And take my answer — not in words, but reading

Himself the heart I had to read him late,

Which death . . .

*Tresh.* Death? You are dying too? Well  
said

Of Guendolen! I dared not hope you'd die:

But she was sure of it.

*Mil.*

Tell Guendolen

I loved her, and tell Austin . . .

*Tresh.*

Him you loved:

And me?

*Mil.* Ah, Thorold! Was't not rashly done  
To quench that blood, on fire with youth and  
hope

And love of me — whom you loved too, and yet  
Suffered to sit here waiting his approach  
While you were slaying him? Oh, doubtlessly  
You let him speak his poor confused boy's-  
speech

— Do his poor utmost to disarm your wrath

And respite me! — you let him try to give

The story of our love and ignorance,

And the brief madness and the long despair —

You let him plead all this, because your code

Of honor bids you hear before you strike:

But at the end, as he looked up for life

Into your eyes — you struck him down!

*Tresh.*

No! No!

Had I but heard him — had I let him speak

Half the truth — less — had I looked long on  
him

I had desisted! Why, as he lay there,



The moon on his flushed cheek, I gathered all  
The story ere he told it : I saw through  
The troubled surface of his crime and yours  
A depth of purity immovable ;  
Had I but glanced, where all seemed turbidest  
Had gleamed some inlet to the calm beneath ;  
I would not glance : my punishment 's at hand.  
There, Mildred, is the truth ! and you — say  
on —

You curse me ?

*Mil.* As I dare approach that Heaven  
Which has not bade a living thing despair,  
Which needs no code to keep its grace from  
stain,

But bids the vilest worm that turns on it  
Desist and be forgiven, — I — forgive not,  
But bless you, Thorold, from my soul of souls !

[*Falls on his neck.*]

There ! Do not think too much upon the past !  
The cloud that 's broke was all the same a cloud  
While it stood up between my friend and you ;  
You hurt him 'neath its shadow : but is that  
So past retrieve ? I have his heart, you know ;  
I may dispose of it : I give it you !

It loves you as mine loves ! Confirm me,  
Henry !

[*Dies.*]

*Tresh.* I wish thee joy, Beloved ! I am glad  
In thy full gladness !

*Guen.* [*Without.*] Mildred ! Tresham !

[*Entering with AUSTIN.*] Thorold,  
I could desist no longer. Ah, she swoons !

That 's well.

*Tresh.* Oh, better far than that !

*Guen.* She 's dead !

Let me unlock her arms !

*Tresh.* She threw them thus  
About my neck, and blessed me, and then died :  
You 'll let them stay now, Guendolen !

*Aus.* Leave her

And look to him ! What ails you, Thorold ?

*Guen.* White  
As she, and whiter ! Austin ! quick — this  
side !

*Aus.* A froth is oozing through his clenched  
teeth ;

Both lips, where they 're not bitten through,  
are black :

Speak, dearest Thorold !

*Tresh.* Something does weigh down  
My neck beside her weight : thanks : I should  
fall

But for you, Austin, I believe ! — there, there,  
'T will pass away soon ! — ah, — I had for-  
gotten :

I am dying.

*Guen.* Thorold — Thorold — why was this ?

*Tresh.* I said, just as I drank the poison off,

The earth would be no longer earth to me,

The life out of all life was gone from me.

There are blind ways provided, the foredone

Heart-weary player in this pageant-world

Drops out by, letting the main masque defile

By the conspicuous portal : I am through —  
Just through !

*Guen.* Don't leave him, Austin ! Death is  
close.

*Tresh.* Already Mildred's face is peacefuller.

I see you, Austin — feel you : here 's my hand,

Put yours in it — you, Guendolen, yours too !

You 're lord and lady now — you 're Treshams ;  
name

And fame are yours : you hold our 'scutcheon  
up.

Austin, no blot on it ! You see how blood  
Must wash one blot away : the first blot came

And the first blood came. To the vain world's  
eye

All 's gules again : no care to the vain world,

From whence the red was drawn !

*Aus.* No blot shall come !

*Tresh.* I said that : yet it did come. Should  
it come.

Vengeance is God's, not man's. Remember me !  
[*Dies.*]

*Guen.* [*Letting fall the pulseless arm.*] Ah,  
Thorold, we can but — remember you !

## COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

### A PLAY

" Ivy and violet, what do ye here  
With blossom and shoot in the warm spring-weather,  
Hiding the arms of Monchenci and Vere ? "

HANMER.

NO ONE LOVES AND HONORS BARRY CORNWALL MORE THAN DOES  
ROBERT BROWNING ;  
WHO, HAVING NOTHING BETTER THAN THIS PLAY  
TO GIVE HIM IN PROOF OF IT, MUST SAY SO.

BROWNING was stimulated by the enthusiastic  
reception of *A Blot in the 'Scutcheon* to write  
another play for the stage, but for some reason  
it was not performed for ten years or so. It

was printed in 1844 as No. VI. of *Belis and  
Pomegranates*. Mr. Gosse in his *Personalia*  
says : —

" I have before me at the present moment a

copy of the first edition, marked for acting by the author, who has written: 'I made the alterations in this copy to suit some—I forget what—projected stage representation; not that of Miss Faucit, which was carried into effect long afterward.' The stage directions are numerous and minute, showing the science which the dramatist had gained since he first essayed to put his creations on the boards.

PERSONS

COLOMBE OF RAVESTEIN, *Duchess of Juliers and Cleves*.  
SABYNE, ADOLF, her Attendants.  
GUIBERT, GAUCELME, MAUFROY, CLUGNET, Courtiers.  
VALENCE, *Advocate of Cleves*.  
PRINCE BERTHOLD, *Claimant of the Duchy*.  
MELCHIOR, his Confidant.

PLACE, *The Palace at Juliers*.

TIME, 16—.

ACT I

*Morning. SCENE. A corridor leading to the Audience-chamber.*

GAUCELME, CLUGNET, MAUFROY and other Courtiers, round GUIBERT who is silently reading a paper: as he drops it at the end—

Guibert. That this should be her birthday;  
and the day

We all invested her, twelve months ago,  
As the late Duke's true heiress and our liege;  
And that this also must become the day . . .  
Oh, miserable lady!

1st Courtier. Ay, indeed?

2d Court. Well, Guibert?

3d Court. But your news, my friend, your news!

The sooner, friend, one learns Prince Berthold's pleasure,

The better for us all: how writes the Prince?  
Give me! I'll read it for the common good.

Gui. In time, sir,—but till time comes, pardon me!  
Our old Duke just disclosed his child's retreat,

Declared her true succession to his rule,  
And died: this birthday was the day, last year,  
We convoyed her from Castle Ravestein—  
That sleeps out trustfully its extreme age  
On the Meuse's quiet bank, where she lived queen

Over the water-buds,—to Juliers' court  
With joy and bustle. Here again we stand;  
Sir Gaucelme's buckle's constant to his cap:  
To-day's much such another sunny day!

Gaucelme. Come, Guibert, this outgrows a jest, I think!

You're hardly such a novice as to need  
The lesson, you pretend.

Gui. What lesson, sir?

That everybody, if he'd thrive at court,  
Should, first and last of all, look to himself?

Why, no: and therefore with your good example,

Some of the suggestions are characteristic enough. For instance: 'Unless a very good Valence is found, this extremely fine speech, [in Act IV. where Valence describes Berthold to Colombe], perhaps the jewel of the play, is to be left out.' In the present editions the verses run otherwise."

The play has recently [1895] been rearranged in three acts and brought again on the stage.

(—Ho, Master Adolf!)—to myself I'll look.

(Enter ADOLF.)

Gui. The Prince's letter; why, of all men else,

Comes it to me?

Adolf. By virtue of your place,  
Sir Guibert! 'T was the Prince's express charge,

His envoy told us, that the missive there  
Should only reach our lady by the hand  
Of whosoever held your place.

Gui. Enough!

[ADOLF retires.

Then, gentles, who 'll accept a certain poor  
Indifferently honorable place,

My friends, I make no doubt, have gnashed  
their teeth

At leisure minutes these half-dozen years,

To find me never in the mood to quit?  
Who asks may have it, with my blessing, and—  
This to present our lady. Who 'll accept?

You,—you,—you? There it lies, and may,  
for me!

Maufroy. [A youth, picking up the paper, reads aloud.] "Prince Berthold, proved by  
titles following

Undoubted Lord of Juliers, comes this day  
To claim his own, with license from the Pope,  
The Emperor, the Kings of Spain and  
France" . . .

Gau. Sufficient "titles following," I judge!  
Don't read another! Well,—"to claim his  
own?"

Mau. —And take possession of the Duchy  
held  
Since twelve months, to the true heir's prejudice,

By" . . . Colombe, Juliers' mistress, so she  
thinks,

And Ravestein's mere lady, as we find!  
Who wants the place and paper? Guibert's  
right.

I hope to climb a little in the world,—  
I'd push my fortunes,—but, no more than  
he,

Could tell her on this happy day of days,  
That, save the nosegay in her hand, perhaps,  
There's nothing left to call her own. Sir  
Clugnet,

You famish for promotion; what say you?

Clugnet. [An old man.] To give this letter  
were a sort, I take it,

Of service: services ask recompense:

What kind of corner may be Ravestein?

Gui. The castle? Oh, you'd share her  
fortunes? Good!

Three walls stand upright, full as good as four,  
With no such bad remainder of a roof.

*Clug.* Oh, — but the town?

*Gai.* Five houses, fifteen huts;  
A church whereto was once a spire, 't is judged;  
And half a dyke, except in time of thaw.

*Clug.* Still there 's some revenue?

*Gai.* Else Heaven forfend!

You hang a beacon out, should fogs increase;  
So, when the Autumn floats of pine-wood steer  
Safe 'mid the white confusion, thanks to you,  
Their grateful raftsmen fling a guilder in;  
— That 's if he mean to pass your way next  
time.

*Clug.* If not?

*Gai.* Hang guilders, then! he blesses you.

*Clug.* What man do you suppose me? Keep  
your paper!

And, let me say, it shows no handsome spirit  
To dally with misfortune: keep your place!

*Gau.* Some one must tell her.

*Gai.* Some one may: you may!

*Gau.* Sir Guibert, 't is no trifle turns me sick  
Of court-hypocrisy at years like mine,  
But this goes near it. Where 's there news at  
all?

Who 'll have the face, for instance, to affirm  
He never heard, e'en while we crowned the  
girl,

That Juliers' tenure was by Salic law;  
That one, confessed her father's cousin's child,  
And, she away, indisputable heir,  
Against our choice protesting and the Duke's,  
Claimed Juliers? — nor, as he preferred his  
claim,

That first this, then another potentate,  
Inclined to its allowance? — I or you,  
Or any one except the lady's self?  
Oh, it had been the direst cruelty  
To break the business to her! Things might  
change:

At all events, we'd see next masque at end,  
Next mummery over first: and so the edge  
Was taken off sharp tidings as they came,  
Till here 's the Prince upon us, and there 's  
she

— Wreathing her hair, a song between her lips,  
With just the faintest notion possible  
That some such claimant earns a livelihood  
About the world, by feigning grievances —  
Few pay the story of, but grudge its price,  
And fewer listen to, a second time.

Your method proves a failure; now try mine!  
And, since this must be carried . . .

*Gai.* [Snatching the paper from him.] By  
your leave!

Your zeal transports you! 'T will not serve  
the Prince

So much as you expect, this course you 'd take.  
If she leaves quietly her palace, — well;  
But if she died upon its threshold, — no:  
He'd have the trouble of removing her.  
Come, gentles, we're all — what the devil  
knows!

You, Gancelme, won't lose character, beside —  
You broke your father's heart superiorly  
To gather his succession — never blush!  
You're from my province, and, be comforted,

They tell of it with wonder to this day.

You can afford to let your talent sleep.

We'll take the very worst supposed, as true:  
There, the old Duke knew, when he hid his  
child

Among the river-flowers at Ravestein,  
With whom the right lay! Call the Prince our  
Duke!

There, she 's no Duchess, she 's no anything  
More than a young maid with the bluest eyes:  
And now, sirs, we'll not break this young  
maid's heart

Coolly as Gancelme could and would! No  
haste!

His talent 's full-blown, ours but in the bud:

We'll not advance to his perfection yet —

Will we, Sir Maufroy? See, I've retired Mau-  
froy

Forever as a courtier!

*Gau.* Here 's a coil!

And, count us, will you? Count its residue,  
This boasted convoy, this day last year's crowd!  
A birthday, too, a gratulation day!  
I'm dumb: bid that keep silence!

*Mau. and others.* Eh, Sir Guibert?  
He's right: that does say something: that 's  
bare truth.

Ten — twelve, I make: a perilous dropping off!

*Gai.* Pooh — is it audience hour? The ves-  
tibule

Swarms too, I wager, with the common sort

That want our privilege of entry here.

*Gau.* Adolf! [Re-enter ADOLF.] Who 's  
outside?

*Gai.* Oh, your looks suffice!

Nobody waiting?

*Mau.* [Looking through the door-folds.] Scarce  
our number!

*Gai.* 'Sdeath!

Nothing to beg for, to complain about?

It can't be! All news spreads, but not so fast  
As thus to frighten all the world!

*Gau.* The world  
Lives out of doors, sir — not with you and me  
By presence-chamber porches, state-room stairs,  
Wherever warmth 's perpetual: outside 's free  
To every wind from every compass-point  
And who may get nipped needs be weather-  
wise.

The Prince comes and the lady's People go;  
The snow-geese settles down, the swallows  
flee —

Why should they wait for winter-time? 'T is  
instinct:

Don't you feel somewhat chilly?

*Gai.* That 's their craft?  
And last year's crowders-round and criers-forth  
That strewed the garlands, overarched the  
roads,

Lighted the bonfires, sang the loyal songs!  
Well 't is my comfort, you could never call me  
The People's Friend! The People keep their  
word —

I keep my place: don't doubt I'll entertain  
The People when the Prince comes, and the  
People

Are talked of! Then, their speeches — no one  
tongue



Found respite, not a pen had holiday  
— For they wrote, too, as well as spoke, these  
knaves!

Now see : we tax and tithe them, pill and poll,  
They wince and fret enough, but pay they must  
— We manage that, — so, pay with a good grace  
They might as well, it costs so little more.  
But when we've done with taxes, meet folk  
next

Outside the toll-booth and the rating-place,  
In public — there they have us if they will,  
We're at their mercy after that, you see!  
For one tax not ten devils could extort —  
Over and above necessity, a grace;  
This prompt disbosoming of love, to wit —  
Their vine-leaf wrappage of our tribute penny,  
And crowning attestation, all works well.  
Yet this precisely do they thrust on us!  
These cappings quick, these crook-and-cringings  
low,

Hand to the heart, and forehead to the knee,  
With grin that shuts the eyes and opes the  
mouth —

So tender they their love; and, tender made,  
Go home to curse us, the first do it we ask.  
As if their souls were any longer theirs!  
As if they had not given ample warrant  
To who should clap a collar on their neck,  
Rings in their nose, a goad to either flank,  
And take them for the brute they boast them-  
selves!

Stay — there's a bustle at the outer door —  
And somebody entreating . . . that's my name!  
Adolf, — I heard my name!

Adolf. 'T was probably  
The suitor.

Gui. Oh, there is one?

Adolf. With a suit

He'd fain enforce in person.

Gui. The good heart  
— And the great fool! Just ope the mid-door's  
fold!

Is that a lappet of his cloak, I see?

Adolf. If it bear plenteous sign of travel  
. . . ay,

The very cloak my comrades tore!

Gui. Why tore?

Adolf. He seeks the Duchess' presence in  
that trim:

Since daybreak, was he posted hereabouts  
Lest he should miss the moment.

Gui. Where's he now?

Adolf. Gone for a minute possibly, not more:  
They have ado enough to thrust him back.

Gui. Ay — but my name, I caught?

Adolf. Oh, sir — he said  
— What was it? — You had known him for-  
merly,

And, he believed, would help him did you  
guess

He waited now; you promised him as much:  
The old plea! 'Faith, he's back, — renews the  
charge!

[Speaking at the door.] So long as the man  
parleys, peace outside —

Nor be too ready with your halberts, there!

Gau. My horse bespattered, as he blocked  
the path

A thin sour man, not unlike somebody.

Adolf. He holds a paper in his breast,  
whereon

He glances when his cheeks flush and his brow  
At each repulse —

Gau. I noticed he'd a brow.

Adolf. So glancing, he grows calmer, leans  
awhile

Over the balustrade, adjusts his dress,  
And presently turns round, quiet again,  
With some new pretext for admittance. —  
Back!

[To GUIBERT.] — Sir, he has seen you! Now  
cross halberts! Ha —

Pascal is prostrate — there lies Fabian too!

No passage! Whither would the madman  
press?

Close the doors quick on me!

Gui. Too late! He's here.

(Enter, hastily and with discomposed dress, VALENCE.)

Valence. Sir Guibert, will you help me? —  
Me, that come

Charged by your townsmen, all who starve at  
Cleves,

To represent their heights and depths of woe  
Before our Duchess and obtain relief!

Such errands barricade such doors, it seems:

But not a common hindrance drives me back

On all the sad yet hopeful faces, lit

With hope for the first time, which sent me  
forth.

Cleves, speak for me! Cleves' men and wo-  
men, speak!

Who followed me — your strongest — many a  
mile

That I might go the fresher from their ranks,

— Who sit — your weakest — by the city gates,

To take me fuller of what news I bring

As I return — for I must needs return!

— Can I? 'T were hard, no listener for their  
wrongs,

To turn them back upon the old despair —

Harder, Sir Guibert, than imploring thus —

So, I do — any way you please — implore!

If you . . . but how should you remember  
Cleves?

Yet they of Cleves remember you so well!

Ay, comment on each trait of you they keep,

Your words and deeds caught up at second  
hand, —

Proud, I believe, at bottom of their hearts,

O' the very levity and recklessness

Which only prove that you forget their wrongs,

Cleves, the grand town, whose men and women

starve,

Is Cleves forgotten? Then, remember me!

You promised me that you would help me once

For other purpose: will you keep your word?

Gui. And who may you be, friend?

Val. Valence of Cleves.

Gui. Valence of . . . not the advocate of  
Cleves,

I owed my whole estate to, three years back?

Ay, well may you keep silence! Why, my  
lords,

You've heard, I'm sure, how, Pentecost three  
years,

I was so nearly ousted of my land

By some knave's-pretext — (eh? when you refused me  
Your ugly daughter, Clugnet!) — and you've heard

How I recovered it by miracle  
— (When I refused her!) Here's the very friend,  
— Valence of Cleves, all parties have to thank!

Nay, Valence, this procedure's vile in you!  
I'm no more grateful than a courtier should,  
But politic am I — I bear a brain,  
Can cast about a little, might require  
Your services a second time. I tried  
To tempt you with advancement here to court  
— "No!" — well, for curiosity at least  
To view our life here — "No!" — our Duchess,  
then, —

A pretty woman's worth some pains to see,  
Nor is she spoiled, I take it, if a crown  
Complete the forehead pale and tresses  
pure . . .

Val. Our city trusted me its miseries,  
And I am come.

Gai. So much for taste! But "come," —  
So may you be, for anything I know,  
To beg the Pope's cross, or Sir Clugnet's  
daughter.

And with an equal chance you get all three!  
If it was ever worth your while to come,  
Was not the proper way worth finding too?

Val. Straight to the palace-portal, sir, I  
came —

Gai. — And said? —

Val. — That I had brought the miseries  
Of a whole city to relieve.

Gai. — Which saying  
Won your admittance? You saw me, indeed,  
And here, no doubt, you stand: as certainly,  
My intervention, I shall not dispute,  
Procures you audience; which, if I procure, —  
That paper's closely written — by Saint Paul,  
Here flock the Wrongs, follow the Remedies,  
Chapter and verse, One, Two, A, B and C!  
Perhaps you'd enter, make a reverence,  
And launch these "miseries" from first to  
last?

Val. How should they let me pause or turn  
aside?

Gai. [To VALENCE.] My worthy sir, one  
question! You've come straight  
From Cleves, you tell us: heard you any talk  
At Cleves about our lady?

Val. Much.

Gai. And what?  
Val. Her wish was to redress all wrongs she  
knew.

Gai. That, you believed?

Val. You see me, sir!

Gai. — Nor stopped  
Upon the road from Cleves to Juliers here,  
For any — rumors you might find afloat?

Val. I had my townsmen's wrongs to busy  
me,

Gai. This is the lady's birthday, do you  
know?

— Her day of pleasure?

Val. — That the great, I know,

For pleasure born, should still be on the watch  
To exclude pleasure when a duty offers:

Even as, for duty born, the lowly too

May ever snatch a pleasure if in reach:

Both will have plenty of their birthright, sir!

Gai. [Aside to GUIBERT.] Sir Guibert,  
here's your man! No scruples now —

You'll never find his like! Time presses hard,  
I've seen your drift and Adolf's too, this while,

But you can't keep the hour of audience back  
Much longer, and at noon the Prince arrives.

[Pointing to VALENCE.] Entrust him with it —  
fool no chance away!

Gai. Him?

Gai. — With the missive! What's the man  
to her?

Gai. No bad thought! — Yet, 'tis yours,  
who ever played

The tempting serpent: else 't were no bad  
thought!

I should — and do — mistrust it for your sake,

Or else . . .

(Enter an Official who communicates with ADOLF.)

Adolf. The Duchess will receive the court!

Gai. Give us a moment, Adolf! Valence,  
friend,

I'll help you. We of the service, you're to  
mark,

Have special entry, while the herd . . . the folk  
Outside, get access through our help alone;

— Well, it is so, was so, and I suppose

So ever will be: your natural lot is, therefore,

To wait your turn and opportunity,

And probably miss both. Now, I engage

To set you, here and in a minute's space,

Before the lady, with full leave to plead

Chapter and verse, and A, and B, and C,

To heart's content.

Val. I grieve that I must ask, —

This being, yourself admit, the custom here, —

To what the price of such a favor mounts?

Gai. Just so! You're not without a courtier's  
tact.

Little at court, as your quick instinct prompts,

Do such as we without a recompense.

Val. Yours is?

Gai. A trifle: here's a document

'T is some one's duty to present her Grace —

I say, not mine — these say, not theirs — such  
points

Have weight at court. Will you relieve us all

And take it? Just say, "I am bidden lay

This paper at the Duchess' feet!"

Val. No more?

I thank you, sir!

Adolf. Her Grace receives the court!

Gai. [Aside.] Now, *sursum corda*, quoth  
the mass-priest! Do —

Whoever's my kind saint, do let alone

These pushings to and fro, and pullings back;

Peaceably let me hang o' the devil's arm

The downward path, if you can't pluck me off

Completely! Let me live quite his, or yours!

[The Courtiers begin to range themselves, and move  
toward the door.

After me, Valence! So, our famous Cleves

Lacks bread? Yet don't we gallants buy their  
lace?

And dear enough — it beggars me, I know,  
To keep my very gloves fringed properly.  
This, Valence, is our Great State Hall you cross ;  
You gray urn's veritable marcasite,  
The Pope's gift : and those salvers testify  
The Emperor. Presently you 'll set your foot  
... But you don't speak, friend Valence !

*Val.* I shall speak.  
*Gau.* [*Aside to GUIBERT.*] Guibert — it were  
no ungraceful thing  
If you and I, at first, seemed horror-struck  
With the bad news. Look here, what you shall  
do !

Suppose you, first, clap hand to sword and cry  
"Yield strangers our allegiance ? First I 'll  
perish

Beside your Grace !" — and so give me the cue  
To ...

*Gul.* — Clap your hand to note-book and jot  
down

That to regale the Prince with ? I conceive.  
[*To VALENCE.*] Do, Valence, speak, or I shall  
half suspect

You 're plotting to supplant us, me the first,  
I 'the lady's favor ! Is 't the grand harangue  
You mean to make, that thus engrosses you ?  
— Which of her virtues you 'll apostrophize ?  
Or is 't the fashion you aspire to start,  
Of that close-curl'd, not unbecoming hair ?  
Or what else ponder you ?

*Val.* My townsmen's wrongs.

## ACT II

*Noon. SCENE. The Presence-chamber.*

*The DUCHESS and SABYNE.*

*Duchess.* Announce that I am ready for the  
court !

*Sabyné.* 'T is scarcely audience-hour, I think ;  
your Grace

May best consult your own relief, no doubt,  
And shun the crowd : but few can have arrived.

*Duch.* Let those not yet arrived, then, keep  
away !

'T was me, this day last year at Ravestein,  
You hurried. It has been full time, beside,  
This half-hour. Do you hesitate ?

*Sab.* Forgive me !

*Duch.* Stay, Sabyné ; let me hasten to make  
sure

Of one true thanker : here with you begins  
My audience, claim you first its privilege !

It is my birth's event they celebrate :  
You need not wish me more such happy days,

But — ask some favor ! Have you none to ask ?  
Has Adolf none, then ? this was far from least

Of much I waited for impatiently,  
Assure yourself ! It seemed so natural

Your gift, beside this bunch of river-bells,  
Should be the power and leave of doing good

To you, and greater pleasure to myself.  
You ask my leave to-day to marry Adolf ?

The rest is my concern.

*Sab.* Your Grace is ever  
Our lady of dear Ravestein, — but, for  
Adolf ...

*Duch.* "But" ? You have not, sure, changed  
in your regard  
And purpose towards him ?

*Sab.* We change ?

*Duch.* Well then ? Well ?

*Sab.* How could we two be happy, and, most  
like,

Leave Juliers, when — when ... but 't is  
audience-time !

*Duch.* "When, if you left me, I were left  
indeed !" —

Would you subjoin that ? Bid the court  
approach !

— Why should we play thus with each other,  
Sabyne ?

Do I not know, if courtiers prove remiss,  
If friends detain me, and get blame for it,  
There is a cause ? Of last year's fervid throng  
Scarce one half comes now.

*Sab.* [*Aside.*] One half ? No, alas !

*Duch.* So can the mere suspicion of a cloud  
Over my fortunes, strike each loyal heart.

They 've heard of this Prince Berthold ; and,  
forsooth,

Some foolish arrogant pretence he makes,  
May grow more foolish and more arrogant,

They please to apprehend ! I thank their love.  
Admit them !

*Sab.* [*Aside.*] How much has she really  
learned ?

*Duch.* Surely, whoever's absent, Tristan  
waits ?

— Or at least Romuald, whom my father raised  
From nothing — come, he's faithful to me,  
come !

(Sabyne, I should but be the prouder — yes,  
The fitter to comport myself aright)

Not Romuald ? Xavier — what said he to that ?  
For Xavier hates a parasite, I know !

[*SABYNE goes out.*]

*Duch.* Well, sunshine's everywhere, and  
summer too.

Next year 't is the old place again, perhaps —  
The water-breeze again, the birds again.

— It cannot be ! It is too late to be !  
What part had I, or choice in all of it ?

Hither they brought me ; I had not to think  
Nor care, concern myself with doing good

Or ill, my task was just — to live, — to live,  
And, answering ends there was no need explain,

To render Juliers happy — so they said.  
All could not have been falsehood : some was  
love,

And wonder and obedience. I did all  
They looked for : why then cease to do it now ?

Yet this is to be calmly set aside,  
And — ere next birthday's dawn, for aught I  
know,

Things change, a claimant may arrive, and  
I ...

It cannot nor it shall not be ! His right ?  
Well then, he has the right, and I have not,

— But who bade all of you surround my life  
And close its growth up with your ducal crown

Which, plucked off rudely, leaves me perishing ?  
I could have been like one of you, — loved, hoped,

Feared, lived and died like one of you — but  
you



Would take that life away and give me this,  
And I will keep this! I will face you! Come!  
(Enter the Courtiers and VALENCE.)

The Courtiers. Many such happy mornings  
to your Grace!

Duch. [*Aside, as they pay their devoir.*] The  
same words, the same faces, — the same  
love!

I have been overfearful. These are few;  
But these, at least, stand firmly: these are  
mine.

As many come as may; and if no more,  
'Tis that these few suffice — they do suffice!  
What succor may not next year bring me?

Plainly,

I feared too soon. [*To the Courtiers.*] I thank  
you, sirs: all thanks!

Val. [*Aside, as the DUCHESS passes from one  
group to another, conversing.*] 'Tis she —  
the vision this day last year brought,

When, for a golden moment at our Cleves,  
She tarried in her progress hither. Cleves  
Chose me to speak its welcome, and I spoke  
— Not that she could have noted the recluse  
— Ungainly, old before his time — who gazed.  
Well, Heaven's gifts are not wasted, and that  
gaze

Kept, and shall keep me to the end, her own!  
She was above it — but so would not sink  
My gaze to earth! The People caught it, hers —  
Thenceforward, mine; but thus entirely mine,  
Who shall affirm, had she not raised my soul  
Ere she retired and left me — them? She  
turns —

There's all her wondrous face at once! The  
ground

Reels and . . .  
[*Suddenly occupying himself with his paper.*]

These wrongs of theirs I have to plead!

Duch. [*To the Courtiers.*] Nay, compliment  
enough! and kindness' self

Should pause before it wish me more such years.  
'Twas fortunate that thus, ere youth escaped,  
I tasted life's pure pleasure — one such, pure,  
Is worth a thousand, mixed — and youth's for  
pleasure:

Mine is received; let my age pay for it.

Gau. So, pay, and pleasure paid for, thinks  
your Grace,

Should never go together?

Gui. How, Sir Gaucelme?

Hurry one's feast down unenjoyingly

At the snatched breathing-intervals of work?

As good you saved it till the dull day's-end

When, stiff and sleepy, appetite is gone.

Eat first, then work upon the strength of food!

Duch. True: you enable me to risk my  
future,

By giving me a past beyond recall.

I lived, a girl, one happy leisure year:

Let me endeavor to be the Duchess now!

And so, — what news, Sir Guibert, spoke you  
of?

[*As they advance a little, and GUIBERT speaks —*

— That gentleman?

Val. [*Aside.*] I feel her eyes on me.

Gui. [*TO VALENCE.*] The Duchess, sir,  
inclines to hear your suit.

Advance! He is from Cleves.

Val. [*Coming forward.*] [*Aside.*] Their  
wrongs — their wrongs!

Duch. And you, sir, are from Cleves? How  
fresh in mind,

The hour or two I passed at queenly Cleves!

She entertained me bravely, but the best

Of her good pageant seemed its standers-by

With insuppressive joy on every face!

What says my ancient famous happy Cleves?

Val. Take the truth, lady — you are made  
for truth!

So think my friends: nor do they less deserve

The having you to take it, you shall think,

When you know all — nay, when you only know

How, on that day you recollect at Cleves,

When the poor acquiescing multitude

Who thrust themselves with all their woes apart

Into unnoticed corners, that the few,

Their means sufficed to muster trappings for,

Might fill the foreground, occupy your sight

With joyous faces fit to bear away

And boast of as a sample of all Cleves

— How, when to daylight these crept out once  
more,

Clutching, unconscious, each his empty rags

Whence the scant coin, which had not half  
bought bread,

That morn he shook forth, counted piece by  
piece,

And, well-advisedly, on perfumes spent them

To burn, or flowers to strew, before your path

— How, when the golden flood of music and bliss

Ebb'd, as their moon retreated, and again

Left the sharp black-point rocks of misery bare

— Then I, their friend, had only to suggest

"Saw she the horror as she saw the pomp!"

And as one man they cried, "He speaks the  
truth:

Show her the horror! Take from our own  
mouths

Our wrongs and show them, she will see them  
too!"

This they cried, lady! I have brought the  
wrongs.

Duch. Wrongs? Cleves has wrongs — ap-  
parent now and thus?

I thank you! In that paper? Give it me!

Val. (There, Cleves!) In this! (What did  
I promise, Cleves?)

Our weavers, clothiers, spinners are reduced

Since . . . Oh, I crave your pardon! I forget

I buy the privilege of this approach,

And promptly would discharge my debt. I lay

This paper humbly at the Duchess' feet.

[*Presenting GUIBERT's paper.*

Gui. Stay! for the present . . .

Duch. Stay, sir? I take aught

That teaches me their wrongs with greater pride

Than this your ducal circlet. Thank you, sir!

[*The DUCHESS reads hastily; then, turning to the Courtiers —*

What have I done to you? Your deed or mine

Was it, this crowning me? I gave myself

No more a title to your homage, no,

Than church-flowers, born this season, wrote

the words

In the saint's-book that sanctified them first.

For such a flower, you plucked me ; well, you  
erred —  
Well, 'twas a weed ; remove the eye-sore  
quick !

But should you not remember it has lain  
Steeped in the candles' glory, palely shrined,  
Nearer God's Mother than most earthly things ?  
— That if 't be faded 'tis with prayer's sole  
breath —

That the one day it boasted was God's day ?  
Still, I do thank you ! Had you used respect,  
Here might I dwindle to my last white leaf,  
Here lose life's latest freshness, which even yet  
May yield some wandering insect rest and food :  
So, fling me forth, and — all is best for all !

[After a pause.] Prince Berthold, who art  
Juliers' Duke it seems —  
The King's choice, and the Emperor's, and the  
Pope's —

Be mine, too ! Take this People ! Tell not me  
Of rescripts, precedents, authorities,  
— But take them, from a heart that yearns to  
give !

Find out their love, — I could not ; find their  
fear, —

I would not ; find their like, — I never shall,  
Among the flowers ! [Taking off her coronet.

Colombe of Ravestein  
Thanks God she is no longer Duchess here !

Val. [Advancing to GUIBERT.] Sir Guibert,  
knight, they call you — this of mine  
Is the first step I ever set at court.

You dared make me your instrument, I find ;  
For that, so sure as you and I are men,  
We reckon to the utmost presently :

But as you are a courtier and I none,  
Your knowledge may instruct me. I, already,  
Have too far outraged, by my ignorance  
Of courtier-ways, this lady, to proceed  
A second step and risk addressing her :

— I am degraded — you let me address !  
Out of her presence, all is plain enough  
What I shall do — but in her presence, too,  
Surely there 's something proper to be done.

[To the others.] You, gentles, tell me if I guess  
aright —

May I not strike this man to earth ?  
The Courtiers. [As GUIBERT springs forward,  
withholding him.] Let go !

— The clothiers' spokesman, Guibert ? Grace a  
churl ?

Duch. [To VALENCE.] Oh, be acquainted  
with your party, sir !

He 's of the old-st lineage Juliers boasts ;  
A lion crests him for a cognizance ;  
"Scorning to waver" — that 's his 'scutcheon's  
word ;

His office with the new Duke — probably  
The same in honor as with me ; or more,  
By so much as this gallant turn deserves.  
He 's now, I dare say, of a thousand times  
The rank and influence that remain with her  
Whose part you take ! So, lest for taking it  
You suffer . . .

Val. I may strike him then to earth ?  
Gui. [Falling on his knee.] Great and dear  
lady, pardon me ! Hear once !

Believe me and be merciful — be just !

I could not bring myself to give that paper  
Without a keener pang than I dared meet  
— And so felt Clugnet here, and Manfroy here  
— No one dared meet it. Protestation's cheap, —  
But, if to die for you did any good,  
[To GAUCELME.] Would not I die, sir ? Say  
your worst of me !

But it does no good, that 's the mournful truth.  
And since the hint of a resistance, even,  
Would just precipitate, on you the first,  
A speedier ruin — I shall not deny,  
Saying myself indubitable pain,

I thought to give you pleasure (who might say ?)  
By showing that your only subject found  
To carry the sad notice was the man

Precisely ignorant of its contents ;  
A nameless, mere provincial advocate ;

One whom 't was like you never saw before,  
Never would see again. All has gone wrong :  
But I meant right, God knows, and you, I trust !

Duch. A nameless advocate, this gentleman ?  
— (I pardon you, Sir Guibert !)

Gui. [Rising, to VALENCE.] Sir, and you ?

Val. — Rejoice that you are lightened of a  
load.

Now, you have only me to reckon with.

Duch. One I have never seen, much less  
obliged ?

Val. Dare I speak, lady ?

Duch. Dare you ! Heard you not

I rule no longer ?

Val. Lady, if your rule

Were based alone on such a ground as these

Could furnish you, — abjure it ! They have

hidden

A source of true dominion from your sight.

Duch. You hear them — no such source is  
left . . .

Val. Hear Cleves !

Whose haggard craftsmen rose to starve this  
day,

Starve now, and will lie down at night to starve,

Sure of a like to-morrow — but as sure

Of a most unlike morrow-after-that,

Since end things must, end howsoever things

may.

What curbs the brute-force instinct in its hour ?

What makes — instead of rising, all as sure,

And teaching fingers, so expert to wield

Their tool, the broadsword's play or carbine's

trick,

— What makes that there 's an easier help, they

think,

For you, whose name so few of them can spell,

Whose face scarce one in every hundred saw, —

You simply have to understand their wrongs,

And wrongs will vanish — so, still trades are

plied,

And swords lie rusting, and myself stand here ?

There is a vision in the heart of each

Of justice, mercy, wisdom, tenderness

To wrong and pain, and knowledge of its cure :

And these embodied in a woman's form

That best transmits them, pure as first received,

From God above her, to mankind below.

Will you derive your rule from such a ground,

Or rather hold it by the suffrage, say,

Of this man — this — and this ?

*Duch.* [After a pause.] You come from Cleves : How many are at Cleves of such a mind ?

*Val.* [From his paper.] "We, all the manufacturers of Cleves —"

*Duch.* Or stay, sir — lest I seem too covetous —

Are you my subject ? such as you describe, Am I to you, though to no other man ?

*Val.* [From his paper.] — "Valence, ordained your Advocate at Cleves" —

*Duch.* [Replacing the coronet.] Then I remain Cleves' Duchess ! Take you note, While Cleves but yields one subject of this stamp,

I stand her lady till she waves me off ! For her sake, all the Prince claims I withhold : Laugh at each menace ; and, his power defying,

Return his missive with its due contempt !

[Casting it away.]

*Gui.* [Picking it up.] — Which to the Prince I will deliver, lady, (Note it down, Gaucehne) — with your message too !

*Duch.* I think the office is a subject's, sir ! — Either . . . how style you him ? — my special guarder

The Marshal's — for who knows but violence May follow the delivery ? — Or, perhaps, My Chancellor's — for law may be to urge On its receipt ! — Or, even my Chamberlain's — For I may violate established form !

[To VALENCE.] Sir, — for the half-hour till this service ends,

Will you become all these to me ?

*Val.* [Falling on his knee.] My liege !

*Duch.* Give me !

[The Courtiers present their badges of office.]

[Putting them by.] Whatever was their virtue once,

They need new consecration. [Raising VALENCE.] Are you mine ?

I will be Duchess yet ! [She retires.]

*The Courtiers.* Our Duchess yet !

A glorious lady ! Worthy love and dread !

I'll stand by her, — and I, whate'er betide !

*Gui.* [To VALENCE.] Well done, well done, sir ! I care not who knows,

You have done nobly and I envy you —

Though I am but unfairly used, I think :

For when one gets a place like this I hold,

One gets too the remark that its mere wages,

The pay and the preferment, make our prize.

Talk about zeal and faith apart from these,

We're laughed at — much would zeal and faith subsist

Without these also ! Yet, let these be stopped,

Our wages discontinue, — then, indeed,

Our zeal and faith, (we hear on every side,)

Are not released — having been pledged away

I wonder, for what zeal and faith in turn ?

Hard money purchased me my place ! No, no —

I'm right, sir — but your wrong is better still,

If I had time and skill to argue it.

Therefore, I say, I'll serve you, how you please —

If you like, — fight you, as you seem to wish — (The kinder of me that, in sober truth, I never dreamed I did you any harm) . . .

*Gau.* — Or, kinder still, you'll introduce, no doubt,

His merits to the Prince who's just at hand, And let no hint drop he's made Chancellor And Chamberlain and Heaven knows what beside !

*Clug.* [To VALENCE.] You stare, young sir, and threaten ! Let me say,

That at your age, when first I came to court, I was not much above a gentleman ;

While now . . .

*Val.* — You are Head-Lackey ? With your office

I have not yet been graced, sir !

*Other Courtiers.* [To Clugnet.] Let him talk !

Fidelity, disinterestedness,

Excuse so much ! Men claim my worship ever

Who stanchly and steadfastly . . .

(Enter ADOLF.)

The Prince arrives.

*Courtiers.* Ha ? How ?

*Adolf.* He leaves his guard a stage behind At Aix, and enters almost by himself.

*1st Court.* The Prince ! This foolish business puts all out.

*2d Court.* Let Gaucehne speak first !

*3d Court.* Better I began

About the state of Juliers : should one say

All's prosperous and inviting him ?

*4th Court.* — Or rather,

All's prostrate and imploring him ?

*5th Court.* That's best.

Where's the Cleves' paper, by the way ?

*4th Court.* [To VALENCE.] Sir — sir —

If you'll but lend that paper — trust it me,

I'll warrant . . .

*5th Court.* Softly, sir — the Marshal's duty !

*Clug.* Has not the Chamberlain a hearing first

By virtue of his patent ?

*Gau.* Patents ? — Duties ?

All that, my masters, must begin again !

One word composes the whole controversy :

We're simply now — the Prince's !

*The Others.* Ay — the Prince's !

(Enter SABYNE.)

*Sab.* Adolf ! Bid . . . Oh, no time for ceremony !

Where's whom our lady calls her only subject ?

She needs him. Who is here the Duchess's ?

*Val.* [Starting from his reverie.] Most gratefully I follow to her feet.

### ACT III

Afternoon. SCENE. The Vestibule.

Enter PRINCE BERTHOLD and MELCHIOR.

*Berthold.* A thriving little burgh this Juliers looks.

[Half-apart.] Keep Juliers, and as good you kept Cologne :

Better try Aix, though ! —

*Melchior.* Please 't your Highness speak ?



*Berth.* [As before.] Aix, Cologne, Frankfort,  
— Milan; — Rome! —

*Mel.* The Grave.

More weary seems your Highness, I remark,  
Than sundry conquerors whose path I've  
watched

Through fire and blood to any prize they gain.  
I could well wish you, for your proper sake,  
Had met some shade of opposition here  
— Found a blunt seneschal refuse unlock,  
Or a scared usher lead your steps astray.  
You must not look for next achievement's palm  
So easily: this will hurt your conquering.

*Berth.* My next? Ay, as you say, my next  
and next!

Well, I am tired, that's truth, and moody too,  
This quiet entrance-morning: listen why!  
Our little burgh, now, Juliens — 't is indeed  
One link, however insignificant,  
Of the great chain by which I reach my hope,  
— A link I must secure; but otherwise,  
You'd wonder I esteem it worth my grasp.  
Just see what life is, with its shifts and turns!  
It happens now — this very nook — to be  
A place that once . . . not a long while since,  
neither —

When I lived an ambiguous hanger-on  
Of foreign courts, and bore my claims about,  
Discarded by one kinsman, and the other  
A poor priest merely, — then, I say, this place  
Shone my ambition's object; to be Duke —  
Seemed then, what to be Emperor seems now.  
My rights were far from judged as plain and  
sure

In those days as of late, I promise you:  
And 't was my day-dream, Lady Colombe here  
Might e'en compound the matter, pity me,  
Be struck, say, with my chivalry and grace  
(I was a boy!) — bestow her hand at length,  
And make me Duke, in her right if not mine.  
Here am I, Duke confessed, at Juliens now.  
Hearken: if ever I be Emperor,  
Remind me what I felt and said to-day!

*Mel.* All this consoles a bookish man like  
me.

— And so will weariness cling to you. Wrong,  
Wrong! Had you sought the lady's court your-  
self, —

Faced the redoubtables composing it,  
Flattered this, threatened that man, bribed the  
other, —

Pleaded by writ and word and deed, your  
cause, —

Conquered a footing inch by painful inch, —  
And, after long years' struggle, pounced at last  
On her for prize, — the right life had been lived,  
And justice done to divers faculties

Shut in that brow. Yourself were visible  
As you stood victor, then; whom now — (your  
pardon!)

I am forced narrowly to search and see,  
So are you hid by helps — this Pope, your  
uncle —

Your cousin, the other King! You are a mind, —  
They, body: too much of mere legs-and-arms  
Obstructs the mind so! Match these with their  
like:

Match mind with mind!

*Berth.* And where's your mind to match?  
They show me legs-and-arms to cope withal!  
I'd subjugate this city — where's its mind?

[The Courtiers enter slowly.]

*Mel.* Got out of sight when you came troops  
and all!

And in its stead, here greets you flesh-and-blood:  
A snug economy of both, this first!

[As CLUGNET bows obsequiously.]

Well done, gout, all considered! — I may go?

*Berth.* Help me receive them!

*Mel.* Oh, they just will say

What yesterday at Aix their fellows said, —  
At Treves, the day before! Sir Prince, my  
friend,

Why do you let your life slip thus? — Meantime,  
I have my little Juliens to achieve —

The understanding this tough Platonist,

Your holy uncle disinterred, Amelius:

Lend me a company of horse and foot,

To help me through his tractate — gain my  
Duchy!

*Berth.* And Empire, after that is gained, will  
be — ?

*Mel.* To help me through your uncle's com-  
ment, Prince! [Goes.]

*Berth.* Ah? Well: he o'er-refines — the schol-  
ar's fault!

How do I let my life slip? Say, this life,  
I lead now, differs from the common life

Of other men in mere degree, not kind,

Of joys and griefs, — still there is such degree

Mere largeness in a life is something, sure, —

Enough to care about and struggle for,

In this world: for this world, the size of things;

The sort of things, for that to come, no doubt.

A great is better than a little aim:

And when I wooed Priscilla's rosy mouth

And failed so, under that gray convent-wall,

Was I more happy than I should be now

[By this time, the Courtiers are ranged before him.]

If failing of my Empire? Not a whit.

— Here comes the mind, it once had tasked me  
sore

To baffle, but for my advantages!

All's best as 't is: these scholars talk and talk.

[Seats himself.]

*The Courtiers.* Welcome our Prince to Juliens!

— to his heritage!

Our dutifullest service proffer we!

*Clug.* I, please your Highness, having exer-  
cised

The function of Grand Chamberlain at court,

With much acceptance, as men testify . . .

*Berth.* I cannot greatly thank you, gentle-  
men!

The Pope declares my claim to the Duchy  
founded

On strictest justice — you concede it, therefore,  
I do not wonder: and the kings my friends

Protest they mean to see such claim enforced, —  
You easily may offer to assist.

But there's a slight discretionary power

To serve me in the matter, you've had long,

Though late you use it. This is well to say —

But could you not have said it months ago?

I'm not denied my own Duke's truncheon,  
true —

'Tis flung me—I stoop down, and from the ground

Pick it, with all you placid standers-by:  
And now I have it, gems and mire at once,  
Grace go with it to my soiled hands, you say!

*Gui.* (By Paul, the advocate our doughty friend  
Cuts the best figure!)

*Gau.* If our ignorance

May have offended, sure our loyalty . . .

*Berth.* Loyalty? Yours? Oh—of yourselves you speak!

I mean the Duchess all this time, I hope!  
And since I have been forced repeat my claims  
As if they never had been urged before,  
As I began, so must I end, it seems.

The formal answer to the grave demand!

What says the lady?

*Courtiers.* [One to another.] 1st Court. Marshal!  
2d Court. Orator!

*Gui.* A variation of our mistress's way!

Wipe off his boots' dust, Clugnet!—that, he waits!

1st Court. Your place!

2d Court. Just now it was your own!

*Gui.* The devil's!

*Berth.* [To GUIBERT.] Come forward, friend—  
—you with the paper, there!

Is Juliers the first city I've obtained?

By this time, I may boast proficiency

In each decorum of the circumstance.

Give it me as she gave it—the petition,

Demand, you style it! What's required, in brief?

What title's reservation, appanage's

Allowance? I heard all at Treves, last week.

*Gau.* [To GUIBERT.] "Give it him as she gave it!"

*Gui.* And why not?

[To BERTHOLD.] The lady crushed your summons thus together,

And bade me, with the very greatest scorn

So fair a frame could hold, inform you . . .

*Courtiers.* Stop—  
Idiot!

*Gui.*—Inform you she denied your claim,  
Defied yourself! (I tread upon his heel,  
The blustering advocate!)

*Berth.* By heaven and earth!

Dare you jest, sir?

*Gui.* Did they at Treves, last week?

*Berth.* [Starting up.] Why then, I look much bolder than I knew,

And you prove better actors than I thought:

Since, as I live, I took you as you entered

For just so many dearest friends of mine,

Fled from the sinking to the rising power

—The sneaking'st crew, in short, I e'er despised!

Whereas, I am alone here for the moment,

With every soldier left behind at Aix!

Silence? That means the worst? I thought as much!

What follows next?

*Courtiers.* Gracious Prince—he raves!

*Gui.* He asked the truth and why not get the truth?

*Berth.* Am I a prisoner? Speak, will somebody?

—But why stand paltering with imbeciles?

Let me see her, or . . .

*Gui.* Her, without her leave, Shall no one see: she's Duchess yet!

*Courtiers.* [Footsteps without, as they are disputing.] Good chance!

She's here—the Lady Colombe's self!

*Berth.* 'Tis well!

[Aside.] Array a handful thus against my world?

Not ill done, truly! Were not this a mind To match one's mind with? Colombe! Let us wait!

I failed so, under that gray convent wall!

She comes.

*Gui.* The Duchess! Strangers, range yourselves!

[As the DUCHESS enters in conversation with VALENCE, BERTHOLD and the Courtiers fall back a little.]

*Duch.* Presagefully it beats, presagefully, My heart: the right is Berthold's and not mine.

*Val.* Grant that he has the right, dare I mistrust

Your power to acquiesce so patiently

As you believe, in such a dream-like change

Of fortune—change abrupt, profound, complete?

*Duch.* Ah, the first bitterness is over now!

Bitter I may have felt it to confront

The truth, and ascertain those natures' value

I had so counted on; that was a pang:

But I did bear it, and the worst is over.

Let the Prince take them!

*Val.* And take Juliers too?

—Your people without crosses, wands and chains—

Only with hearts?

*Duch.* There I feel guilty, sir!

I cannot give up what I never had:

For I ruled these, not them—these stood between.

Shall I confess, sir? I have heard by stealth Of Berthold from the first; more news and more:

Closer and closer swam the thunder cloud, But I was safely housed with these, I knew.

At times when to the casement I would turn, At a bird's passage or a flower-trail's play,

I caught the storm's red glimpses on its edge— Yet I was sure some one of all these friends

Would interpose: I followed the bird's flight Or plucked the flower—some one would interpose!

*Val.* Not one thought on the People—and Cleves there!

*Duch.* Now, sadly conscious my real sway was missed,

Its shadow goes without so much regret: Else could I not again thus calmly bid you,

Answer Prince Berthold!

*Val.* Then you acquiesce?

*Duch.* Remember over whom it was I ruled!

*Gui.* [Stepping forward.] Prince Berthold, yonder, craves an audience, lady!

*Duch.* [To VALENCE.] I only have to turn, and I shall face

Prince Berthold! Oh, my very heart is sick!  
It is the daughter of a line of Dukes  
This scornful insolent adventurer  
Will bid depart from my dead father's halls!  
I shall not answer him — dispute with him —  
But, as he bids, depart! Prevent it, sir!  
Sir — but a mere day's respite! Urge for me  
— What I shall call to mind I should have

urged  
When time's gone by — 't will all be mine, you  
urge!

A day — an hour — that I myself may lay  
My rule down! 'Tis too sudden — must not be!  
The world's to hear of it! Once done — for-  
ever!

How will it read, sir? How be sung about?  
Prevent it!

Berth. [*Approaching.*] Your frank indignation,  
lady,

Cannot escape me. Overbold I seem;  
But somewhat should be pardoned my surprise  
At this reception, — this defiance, rather.  
And if, for their and your sake, I rejoice  
Your virtues could inspire a trusty few  
To make such gallant stand in your behalf,  
I cannot but be sorry, for my own,  
Your friends should force me to retrace my  
steps:

Since I no longer am permitted speak  
After the pleasant peaceful course prescribed  
No less by courtesy than relationship —  
Which I remember, if you once forgot.  
But never must attack pass unrepelled.  
Suffer that, through you, I demand of these,  
Who controverts my claim to Juliers?

Duch. — Me

You say, you do not speak to —  
Berth. Of your subjects  
I ask, then: whom do you accredit? Where  
Stand those should answer?

Val. [*Advancing.*] The lady is alone.  
Berth. Alone, and thus? So weak and yet  
so bold?

Val. I said she was alone —

Berth. And weak, I said.  
Val. When is man strong until he feels  
alone?

It was some lonely strength at first, be sure,  
Created organs, such as those you seek,  
By which to give its varied purpose shape:  
And, naming the selected ministrants,  
Took sword, and shield, and sceptre, — each, a  
man!

That strength performed its work and passed  
its way:

You see our lady: there, the old shapes stand!  
— A Marshal, Chamberlain, and Chancellor —  
"Be helped their way, into their death put life  
And find advantage!" — so you counsel us.  
But let strength feel alone, seek help itself, —  
And, as the inland-hatched sea-creature hunts  
The sea's breast out, — as, littered 'mid the  
waves

The desert-brute makes for the desert's joy,  
So turns our lady to her true resource,  
Passing o'er hollow fictions, worn-out types,  
— And I am first her instinct fastens on.  
And prompt I say, as clear as heart can speak,

The People will not have you; nor shall have!  
It is not merely I shall go bring Cleves  
And fight you to the last, — though that does  
much,

And men and children, — ay, and women too,  
Fighting for home, are rather to be feared  
Than mercenaries fighting for their pay —  
But, say you beat us, since such things have  
been,

And, where this Juliers laughed, you set your  
foot

Upon a steaming bloody plash — what then?  
Stand you the more our lord that there you  
stand?

Lord it o'er troops whose force you concentrate,  
A pillared flame whereto all ardors tend —  
Lord it 'mid priests whose schemes you amplify,  
A cloud of smoke 'neath which all shadows  
brood —

But never, in this gentle spot of earth,  
Can you become our Colombe, our play-queen,  
For whom, to furnish lilies for her hair,  
We 'd pour our veins forth to enrich the soil!  
— Our conqueror? Yes! — Our despot? Yes!  
— Our Duke?

Know yourself, know us!

Berth. [*Who has been in thought.*] Know your  
lady, also!

[*Very deferentially.*] — To whom I needs must  
exculpate myself

For having made a rash demand, at least.

Wherefore to you, sir, who appear to be

Her chief adviser, I submit my claims,

[*Giving papers.*]

But, this step taken, take no further step,  
Until the Duchess shall pronounce their worth.  
Here be our meeting-place; at night, its time:  
Till when I humbly take the lady's leave!

[*He withdraws. As the DUCHESS turns to VALENCE, the Courtiers interchange glances and come forward a little.*]

1st Court. So, this was their device!

2d Court. No bad device!

3d Court. You'd say they love each other,  
Guibert's friend

From Cleves, and she, the Duchess!

4th Court. — And moreover,

That all Prince Berthold comes for, is to help  
Their loves!

5th Court. Pray, Guibert, what is next to do?

Gui. [*Advancing.*] I laid my office at the  
Duchess' foot —

Others. And I — and I — and I!

Duch. I took them, sirs.

Gui. [*Apart to VALENCE.*] And now, sir, I  
am simple knight again —

Guibert, of the great ancient house, as yet  
That never bore affront; whate'er your birth, —  
As things stand now, I recognize yourself  
(If you'll accept experience of some date)  
As like to be the leading man o' the time,  
Therefore as much above me now, as I  
Seemed above you this morning. Then, I of-  
fered

To fight you: will you be as generous

And now fight me?

Val. Ask when my life is mine!

Gui. ('Tis hers now!)



*Clug.* [*Apart to VALENCE, as GUIBERT turns from him.*] You, sir, have insulted me grossly, — will grant me, too, the selfsame favor You 've granted him, just now, I make no question?

*Val.* I promise you, as him, sir.

*Clug.* Do you so? Handsomely said! I hold you to it, sir. You'll get me reinstated in my office As you will Guibert!

*Duch.* I would be alone!  
[*They begin to retire slowly: as VALENCE is about to follow —*

Alone, sir — only with my heart: you stay!

*Gau.* You hear that? Ah, light breaks upon me! Cleves —

It was at Cleves some man harangued us all — With great effect, — so those who listened said, My thoughts being busy elsewhere: was this he? Guibert, — your strange, disinterested man! Your uncorrupted, if uncourtly friend!

The modest worth you mean to patronize!

He cares about no Duchesses, not he!

His sole concern is with the wrongs of Cleves!

What, Guibert? What, it breaks on you at last?

*Gui.* Would this hall's floor were a mine's roof! I'd back

And in her very face . . .

*Gau.* Apply the match That fired the train, — and where would you be, pray?

*Gui.* With him!

*Gau.* Stand, rather, safe outside with me! The mine's charged: shall I furnish you the match

And place you properly? To the antechamber!

*Gui.* Can you?

*Gau.* Try me! Your friend's in fortune!

*Gui.* Quick —

To the antechamber! He is pale with bliss!

*Gau.* No wonder! Mark her eyes!

*Gui.* To the antechamber!

[*The Courtiers retire.*

*Duch.* Sir, could you know all you have done for me

You were content! You spoke, and I am saved.

*Val.* Be not too sanguine, lady! Ere you dream,

That transient flush of generosity

Fades off, perchance! The man, beside, is gone, —

Him we might bend; but see, the papers here —

Inalterably his requirement stays,

And cold hard words have we to deal with now.

In that large eye there seemed a latent pride,

To self-denial not incompetent,

But very like to hold itself dispensed

From such a grace: however, let us hope!

He is a noble spirit in noble form.

I wish he less had bent that brow to smile

As with the fancy how he could subject

Himself upon occasion to — himself!

From rudeness, violence, you rest secure;

But do not think your Duchy rescued yet!

*Duch.* You, who have opened a new world to me,

Will never take the faded language up

Of that I leave? My Duchy — keeping it, Or losing it — is that my sole world now?

*Val.* Ill have I spoken if you thence despise Juliers; although the lowest, on true grounds. Be worth more than the highest rule, on false: Aspire to rule, on the true grounds!

*Duch.* Nay, hear —

False, I will never — rash, I would not be!

This is indeed my birthday — soul and body,

Its hours have done on me the work of years.

You hold the requisition: ponder it!

If I have right, my duty's plain: if he —

Say so, nor ever change a tone of voice!

At night you meet the Prince; meet me at eve!

Till when, farewell! This discomposes you?

Believe in your own nature, and its force

Of renovating mine! I take my stand

Only as under me the earth is firm:

So, prove the first step stable, all will prove.

That first, I choose — [*Laying her hand on his*]

— the next to take, choose you!

[*She withdraws.*

*Val.* [*After a pause.*] What drew down this on me? — on me, dead once,

She thus bids live, — since all I hitherto

Thought dead in me, youth's ardors and emprise.

Burst into life before her, as she bids

Who needs them. Whither will this reach, where end?

Her hand's print burns on mine . . . Yet she's above —

So very far above me! All's too plain:

I served her when the others sank away,

And she rewards me as such souls reward! —

The changed voice, the suffusion of the cheek,

The eye's acceptance, the expressive hand,

— Reward, that's little, in her generous thought,

Though all to me . . .

I cannot so disclaim

Heaven's gift, nor call it other than it is!

She loves me!

[*Looking at the Prince's papers.*] — Which love, these, perchance, forbid.

Can I decide against myself — pronounce

She is the Duchess and no mate for me?

— Cleves, help me! Teach me, — every haggard face, —

To sorrow and endure! I will do right

Whatever be the issue. Help me, Cleves!

#### ACT IV

*Evening. SCENE. An Antechamber.*

*Enter the Courtiers.*

*Mau.* Now, then, that we may speak — how spring this mine?

*Gau.* Is Guibert ready for its match? He cools!

Not so friend Valence with the Duchess there!

"Stay, Valence! Are not you my better self?"

And her cheek mantled —

*Gui.* Well, she loves him, sir.

And more, — since you will have it I grow cool, —

She's right : he's worth it.

*Gau.* For his deeds to-day ?

Say so !

*Gui.* What should I say beside ?

*Gau.* Not this —

For friendship's sake leave this for me to say —

That we're the dupes of an egregious cheat !

This plain unpractised suitor, who found way

To the Duchess through the merest die's turn-

up,

A year ago had seen her and been seen,

Loved and been loved.

*Gui.* Impossible !

*Gau.* — Nor say,

How sly and exquisite a trick, moreover,

Was this which — taking not their stand on

facts

Boldly, for that had been endurable,

But worming on their way by craft, they

choose

Resort to, rather, — and which you and we,

Sheep-like, assist them in the playing-off !

The Duchess thus parades him as preferred,

Not on the honest ground of preference,

Seeing first, liking more, and there an end —

But as we all had started equally,

And at the close of a fair race he proved

The only valiant, sage and loyal man.

Herself, too, with the pretty fits and starts, —

The careless, winning, candid ignorance

Of what the Prince might challenge or forego —

She had a hero in reserve ! What risk

Ran she ? This deferential easy Prince

Who brings his claims for her to ratify

— He's just her puppet for the nonce ! You'll

see, —

Valence pronounces, as is equitable,

Against him : off goes the confederate :

As equitably, Valence takes her hand !

*The Chancellor.* You run too fast : her

hand, no subject takes.

Do not our archives hold her father's will ?

That will provides against such accident,

And gives next heir, Prince Berthold, the re-

version

Of Juliers, which she forfeits, wedding so.

*Gau.* I know that, well as you, — but does

the Prince ?

Knows Berthold, think you, that this plan, he

helps,

For Valence's ennoblement, — would end,

If crowned with the success which seems its due,

In making him the very thing he plays,

The actual Duke of Juliers ? All agree

That Colombe's title waived or set aside,

He is next heir.

*The Chan.* Incontrovertibly.

*Gau.* Guibert, your match, now, to the

train !

*Gui.* Enough !

I'm with you : selfishness is best again.

I thought of turning honest — what a dream

Let's wake now !

*Gau.* Selfish, friend, you never were :

'T was but a series of revenges taken

On your unselfishness for prospering ill.

But now that you're grown wiser, what's our

course ?

*Gui.* — Wait, I suppose, till Valence weds our lady,

And then, if we must needs revenge ourselves, Apprise the Prince.

*Gau.* — The Prince, ere then dismissed

With thanks for playing his mock part so well ?

Tell the Prince now, sir ! Ay, this very night,

Ere he accepts his dolo and goes his way,

Explain how such a marriage makes him Duke,

Then trust his gratitude for the surprise !

*Gui.* — Our lady wedding Valence all the same

As if the penalty were undisclosed ?

Good ! If she loves, she'll not disown her love,

Throw Valence up. I wonder you see that.

*Gau.* The shame of it — the suddenness and shame !

Within her, the inclining heart — without,

A terrible array of witnesses —

And Valence by, to keep her to her word,

With Berthold's indignation or disgust !

We'll try it ! — Not that we can venture much.

Her confidence we've lost forever : Berthold's

Is all to gain.

*Gui.* To-night, then, venture we !

Yet — if lost confidence might be renewed ?

*Gau.* Never in noble natures ! With the base ones, —

Twist off the crab's claw, wait a smarting-while,

And something grows and grows and gets to be

A mimic of the lost joint, just so like

As keeps in mind it never, never will

Replace its predecessor ! Crabs do that :

But lop the lion's foot — and . . .

*Gui.* To the Prince !

*Gau.* [*Aside.*] And come what will to the

lion's foot, I pay you,

My cat's paw, as I long have yearned to pay !

[*Aloud.*] Footsteps ! Himself ! 'T is Valence

breaks on us,

Exulting that their scheme succeeds. We'll

hence —

And perfect ours ! Consult the archives,

first —

Then, fortified with knowledge, seek the Hall !

*Chug.* [*TO GAUCELME as they retire.*] You

have not smiled so since your father died !

(*As they retire, enter VALENCE with papers.*)

*Val.* So must it be ! I have examined these

With scarce a palpitating heart — so calm,

Keeping her image almost wholly off,

Setting upon myself determined watch,

Repelling to the uttermost his claims :

And the result is — all men would pronounce,

And not I, only, the result to be —

Berthold is heir ; she has no shade of right

To the distinction which divided us,

But, suffered to rule first, I know not why,

Her rule connived at by those Kings and Popes,

To serve some devil's-purpose, — now 't is

gained,

Whatever it was, the rule expires as well.

— Valence, this rapture . . . selfish can it be ?

Eject it from your heart, her home ! — It stays !

Ah, the brave world that opens on us both !

— Do my poor townsmen so esteem it ?

Cleves, —

I need not your pale faces ! This, reward  
For service done to you ? Too horrible !  
I never served you : 't was myself I served —  
Nay, served not — rather saved from punish-  
ment

Which, had I failed you then, would plague me  
now !

My life continues yours, and your life, mine.  
But if, to take God's gift, I swerve no step —  
Clevés ! If I breathe no prayer for it — if she,

[Footsteps without.]

Colombe, that comes now, freely gives herself —  
Will Clevés require, that, turning thus to her,  
I . . .

(Enter PRINCE BERTHOLD.)

Pardon, sir ! I did not look for you  
Till night, i' the Hall ; nor have as yet declared  
My judgment to the lady.

Berth. So I hoped.

Val. And yet I scarcely know why that  
should check

The frank disclosure of it first to you —  
What her right seems, and what, in conse-  
quence,

She will decide on.

Berth. That I need not ask.

Val. You need not : I have proved the  
lady's mind :

And, justice being to do, dare act for her.

Berth. Doubtless she has a very noble mind.

Val. Oh, never fear but she'll in each con-  
juncture

Bear herself bravely ! She no whit depends  
On circumstance ; as she adorns a throne,  
She had adorned . . .

Berth. A cottage — in what book  
Have I read that, of every queen that lived ?  
A throne ! You have not been instructed, sure,  
To forestall my request ?

Val. 'T is granted, sir !

My heart instructs me. I have scrutinized  
Your claims . . .

Berth. Ah — claims, you mean, at first pre-  
ferred ?

I come, before the hour appointed me.  
To pray you let those claims at present rest,  
In favor of a new and stronger one.

Val. You shall not need a stronger : on the  
part

O' the lady, all you offer I accept,  
Since one clear right suffices : yours is clear.  
Propose !

Berth. I offer her my hand.

Val. Your hand ?

Berth. A Duke's, yourself say ; and, at no  
far time,

Something here whispers me — an Emperor's.  
The lady's mind is noble : which induced  
This seizure of occasion : ere my claims  
Were — settled, let us amicably say !

Val. Your hand !

Berth. (He will fall down and kiss it next !)  
Sir, this astonishment's too flattering,  
Nor must you hold your mistress' worth so  
cheap.

Enhance it, rather, — urge that blood is blood —  
The daughter of the Burgraves, Landgraves,  
Markgraves,

Remains their daughter ! I shall scarce gain-  
say.

Elsewhere, or here, the lady needs must rule :  
Like the imperial crown's great chrysoprase,  
They talk of — somewhat out of keeping there,  
And yet no jewel for a meaner cap.

Val. You wed the Duchess ?

Berth. Cry you mercy, friend !

Will the match also influence fortunes here ?

A natural solicitude enough.

Be certain, no bad chance it proves for you !

However high you take your present stand,

There's prospect of a higher still remove —

For Juliers will not be my resting-place,

And, when I have to choose a substitute

To rule the little burgh, I'll think of you

Who need not give your mates a character.

And yet I doubt your fitness to supplant

The gray smooth Chamberlain : he'd hesitate

A doubt his lady could demean herself

So low as to accept me. Courage, sir !

I like your method better : feeling's play

Is franker much, and flatters me beside.

Val. I am to say, you love her ?

Berth.

Say that too !

Love has no great concernment, thinks the

world,

With a Duke's marriage. How go precedents

In Juliers' story — how use Juliers' Dukes ?

I see you have them here in goodly row ;

You must be Luitpold — ay, a stalwart sire !

Say, I have been arrested suddenly

In my ambition's course, its rocky course,

By this sweet flower : I fain would gather it

And then proceed : so say and speedily

— (Nor stand there like Duke Luitpold's brazen

self !)

Enough, sir : you possess my mind, I think.

This is my claim, the others being withdrawn,

And to this be it that, i' the Hall to-night,

Your lady's answer comes : till when, farewell !

[He retires.]

Val. [After a pause.] The heavens and

earth stay as they were ; my heart

Beats as it beat : the truth remains the truth.

What falls away, then, if not faith in her ?

Was it my faith, that she could estimate

Love's value, and, such faith still guiding me,

Dare I now test her ? Or grew faith so strong

Solely because no power of test was mine ?

(Enter the DUCHESS.)

Duch. My fate, sir ! Ah, you turn away.

All's over.

But you are sorry for me ? Be not so !

What I might have become, and never was,

Regret with me ! What I have merely been,

Rejoice I am no longer ! What I seem

Beginning now, in my new state, to be,

Hope that I am ! — for, once my rights proved

void,

This heavy roof seems easy to exchange

For the blue sky outside — my lot henceforth.

Val. And what a lot is Berthold's !

Duch.

How of him ?

Val. He gathers earth's whole good into his

arms ;

Standing, as man now, stately, strong and wise,

Marching to fortune, not surprised by her.



One great aim, like a guiding-star, above —  
Which tasks strength, wisdom, stateliness, to lift  
His manhood to the height that takes the prize;  
A prize not near — lest overlooking earth  
He rashly spring to seize it — nor remote,  
So that he rest upon his path content:  
But day by day, while shimmering orbs shine,  
And the faint circlet prophesies the orb,  
He sees so much as, just evolving these,  
The stateliness, the wisdom and the strength,  
To due completion, will suffice this life,  
And lead him at his grandest to the grave.  
After this star, out of a night he springs;  
A beggar's cradle for the throne of thrones  
He quits; so, mounting, feels each step he

mounts,  
Nor, as from each to each exultingly  
He passes, overleaps one grade of joy.  
This, for his own good: — with the world, each

gift  
Of God and man, — reality, tradition,  
Fancy and fact — so well environ him,  
That as a mystic panoply they serve —  
Of force, untenanted, to awe mankind,  
And work his purpose out with half the world,  
While he, their master, dexterously slipt  
From such encumbrance, is meantime em-

ployed  
With his own prowess on the other half.  
Thus shall he prosper, every day's success  
Adding, to what is he, a solid strength —  
An airy might to what encircles him,  
Till at the last, so life's routine lends help,  
That as the Emperor only breathes and moves,  
His shadow shall be watched, his step or stalk  
Become a comfort or a portent, how  
He trails his ermine take significance, —  
Till even his power shall cease to be most

power,  
And men shall dread his weakness more, nor  
dare  
Peril their earth its bravest, first and best,  
Its typified invincibility.

Thus shall he go on, threatening, till he ends —  
The man of men, the spirit of all flesh,  
The fiery centre of an earthly world!

*Duch.* Some such a fortune I had dreamed  
should rise

Out of my own — that is, above my power  
Seemed other, greater potencies to stretch —

*Val.* For you?  
*Duch.* It was not I moved there, I think:  
But one I could, — though constantly beside,  
And aye approaching, — still keep distant from,  
And so adore. 'Twas a man moved there.

*Val.* Who?  
*Duch.* I felt the spirit, never saw the face.

*Val.* See it! 'Tis Berthold's! He enables  
you

To realize your vision.

*Duch.* Berthold?

*Val.* Duke —  
Emperor to be: he proffers you his hand.

*Duch.* Generous and princely!

*Val.* He is all of this.

*Duch.* Thanks, Berthold, for my father's  
sake. No hand

Degrades me!

*Val.* You accept the proffered hand?  
*Duch.* That he should love me!

*Val.* "Loved" I did not say.  
Had that been — love might so incline the

Prince  
To the world's good, the world that's at his

foot, —  
I do not know, this moment, I should dare

Desire that you refused the world — and  
Cleves —

The sacrifice he asks.  
*Duch.* Not love me, sir?

*Val.* He scarce affirmed it.

*Duch.* May not deeds affirm?

*Val.* What does he? . . . Yes, yes, very  
much he does!

All the shame saved, he thinks, and sorrow  
saved —

Immitigable sorrow, so he thinks, —  
Sorrow that's deeper than we dream, per-

chance!  
*Duch.* Is not this love?

*Val.* So very much he does!  
For look, you can descend now gracefully:

All doubts are banished, that the world might  
have,

Or worst, the doubts yourself, in after-time,  
May call up of your heart's sincereness now.

To such, reply, "I could have kept my rule —  
Increased it to the utmost of my dreams —

Yet I abjured it." This, he does for you:  
It is munificently much.

*Duch.* Still "much!"

But why is it not love, sir? Answer me!  
*Val.* Because not one of Berthold's words

and looks  
Had gone with love's presentment of a flower

To the beloved: because bold confidence,  
Open superiority, free pride —

Love owns not, yet were all that Berthold  
owned:

Because where reason, even, finds no flaw,  
Unerringly a lover's instinct may.

*Duch.* You reason, then, and doubt?

*Val.* I love, and know.

*Duch.* You love? How strange! I never  
cast a thought

On that! Just see our selfishness! You seemed  
So much my own . . . I had no ground — and

yet,  
I never dreamed another might divide

My power with you, much less exceed it.

*Val.* Lady,  
I am yours wholly.

*Duch.* Oh, no, no, not mine!

'T is not the same now, never more can be.

— Your first love, doubtless. Well, what's  
gone from me?

What have I lost in you?

*Val.* My heart replies —  
No loss there! So, to Berthold back again:

This offer of his hand, he bids me make —

Its obvious magnitude is well to weigh

*Duch.* She's . . . yes, she must be very fair  
for you!

*Val.* I am a simple advocate of Cleves.

*Duch.* You! With the heart and brain that  
so helped me,

I fancied them exclusively my own,  
Yet find are subject to a stronger sway!  
She must be . . . tell me, is she very fair?

*Val.* Most fair, beyond conception or belief.

*Duch.* Black eyes? — no matter! Colombe,  
the world leads

Its life without you, whom your friends pro-  
fessed

The only woman — see how true they spoke!  
One lived this while, who never saw your face,  
Nor heard your voice — unless . . . Is she  
from Cleves?

*Val.* Cleves knows her well.

*Duch.* Ah — just a fancy, now!

When you poured forth the wrongs of Cleves, —  
I said,

— Thought, that is, afterward . . .

*Val.* You thought of me?

*Duch.* Of whom else? Only such great  
cause, I thought,

For such effect: see what true love can do!

Cleves is his love. I almost fear to ask

. . . And will not. This is idling: to our  
work!

Admit before the Prince, without reserve,

My claims misgrounded; then may follow  
better

. . . When you poured out Cleves' wrongs im-  
petuously,

Was she in your mind?

*Val.* All done was done for her

— To humble me!

*Duch.* She will be proud at least.

*Val.* She?

*Duch.* When you tell her.

*Val.* That will never be.

*Duch.* How — are there sweeter things you  
hope to tell?

No, sir! You counselled me, — I counsel you

In the one point I — any woman — can.

Your worth, the first thing; let her own come  
next —

Say what you did through her, and she through  
you —

The praises of her beauty afterward!

Will you?

*Val.* I dare not.

*Duch.* Dare not?

*Val.* She I love

Suspects not such a love in me.

*Duch.* You jest.

*Val.* The lady is above me and away.

Not only the brave form, and the bright mind,

And the great heart, combine to press me low —

But all the world calls rank divides us.

*Duch.* Rank!

Now grant me patience! Here's a man de-  
clares

Oracularly in another's case —

Sees the true value and the false, for them —

Nay, bids them see it, and they straight do see.

You called my court's love worthless — so it  
turned:

I threw away as dross my heap of wealth,

And here you stickle for a piece or two!

First — has she seen you?

*Val.* Yes.

*Duch.* She loves you, then.

*Val.* One flash of hope burst; then succeeded  
night:

And all's at darkest now. Impossible!

*Duch.* We'll try: you are — so to speak —  
my subject yet?

*Val.* As ever — to the death.

*Duch.*

*Val.* I must.

*Duch.* Approach her, and . . . no! first of  
all

Get more assurance. "My instructress," say,

"Was great, descended from a line of kings,

And even fair" — (wait why I say this folly) —

"She said, of all men, none for eloquence,

Courage, and" (what cast even these to shade)

"The heart they sprung from, — none deserved  
like him

Who saved her at her need: if she said this,

What should not one I love, say?"

*Val.* Heaven — this hope —

Oh, lady, you are filling me with fire!

*Duch.* Say this! — nor think I bid you cast  
aside

One touch of all the awe and reverence;

Nay, make her proud for once to heart's con-  
tent

That all this wealth of heart and soul's her  
own!

Think you are all of this, — and, thinking it,

. . . (Obey!)

*Val.* I cannot choose.

*Duch.* Then, kneel to her!

[VALENCE sinks on his knee.]

I dream!

*Val.* Have mercy! Yours, unto the death, —

I have obeyed. Despise, and let me die!

*Duch.* Alas, sir, is it to be ever thus?

Even with you as with the world? I know

This morning's service was no vulgar deed

Whose motive, once it dares avow itself,

Explains all done and infinitely more,

So, takes the shelter of a nobler cause.

Your service named its true source, — loyalty!

The rest's unsaid again. The Duchess bids you,

Rise, sir! The Prince's words were in debate.

*Val.* [Rising.] Rise? Truth, as ever, lady,  
comes from you!

I should rise — I who spoke for Cleves, can  
speak

For Man — yet tremble now, who stood firm  
then.

I laughed — for 't was past tears — that Cleves  
should starve

With all hearts beating loud the infamy,

And no tongue daring trust as much to air:

Yet here, where all hearts speak, shall I be  
mute?

Oh, lady, for your own sake look on me!

On all I am, and have, and do — heart, brain,

Body and soul, — this Valence and his gifts!

I was proud once: I saw you, and they sank,

So that each, magnified a thousand times,

Were nothing to you — but such nothingness,

Would a crown gild it, or a sceptre prop,

A treasure speed, a laurel-wreath enhance?

What is my own desert? But should your love

Have . . . there's no language helps here . . .  
singled me, —

Then — oh, that wild word "then!" — be just to love,

In generosity its attribute!

Love, since you pleased to love! All's cleared — a stage

For trial of the question kept so long:

Judge you — Is love or vanity the best?

You, solve it for the world's sake — you, speak first

What all will shout one day — you, vindicate

Our earth and be its angel! All is said.

Lady, I offer nothing — I am yours:

But, for the cause' sake, look on me and him, And speak!

*Duch.* I have received the Prince's message:

Say, I prepare my answer!

*Val.* Take me, Cleves!

[*He withdraws.*]

*Duch.* Mournful — that nothing's what it calls itself!

Devotion, zeal, faith, loyalty — mere love!

And, love in question, what may Berthold's be?

I did ill to mistrust the world so soon:

Already was this Berthold at my side.

The valley-level has its hawks, no doubt:

May not the rock-top have its eagles, too?

Yet Valence . . . let me see his rival then!

## ACT V

*Night. SCENE. The Hall.*

*Enter BERTHOLD and MELCHIOR.*

*Mel.* And here you wait the matter's issue?

*Berth.* Here.

*Mel.* I don't regret I shut Amelius, then.

But tell me, on this grand disclosure, — how

Behaved our spokesman with the forehead?

*Berth.* Oh,

Turned out no better than the foreheadless —

Was dazzled not so very soon, that's all!

For my part, this is scarce the hasty showy

Chivalrous measure you give me credit of.

Perhaps I had a fancy, — but 't is gone.

— Let her commence the unfriended innocent

And carry wrongs about from court to court?

No, truly! The least shake of fortune's sand,

— My uncle-Pope chokes in a coughing fit,

King-cousin takes a fancy to blue eyes, —

And wondrously her claims would brighten up;

Forth comes a new gloss on the ancient law,

O'er-looked provisos, o'er-past premises,

Follow in plenty. No: 't is the safe step.

The hour beneath the convent-wall is lost:

Juliers and she, once mine, are ever mine.

*Mel.* Which is to say, you, losing heart already,

Elope the adventure.

*Berth.* Not so — or, if so —

Why not confess at once that I advise

None of our kingly craft and guile just now

To lay, one moment, down their privilege

With the notion they can any time at pleasure

Retake it: that may turn out hazardous.

We seem, in Europe, pretty well at end

O' the night, with our great masque: those favored few

Who keep the chamber's top, and honor's chance

Of the early evening, may retain their place

And figure as they list till out of breath.

But it is growing late: and I observe

A dim grim kind of tipstaves at the doorway

Not only bar new-comers entering now,

But caution those who left, for any cause,

And would return, that morning draws too near;

The ball must die off, shut itself up. We —

I think, may dance lights out and sunshine in,

And sleep off headache on our frippery:

But friend the other, who cunningly stole out,

And, after breathing the fresh air outside,

Means to re-enter with a new costume,

Will be advised go back to bed, I fear.

I stick to privilege, on second thoughts.

*Mel.* Yes — you evade the adventure: and, beside,

Give yourself out for colder than you are.

King Philip, only, notes the lady's eyes?

Don't they come in for somewhat of the motive

With you too?

*Berth.* Yes — no: I am past that now.

Gone 't is: I cannot shut my soul to fact.

Of course, I might by forethought and contrivance

Reason myself into a rapture. Gone:

And something better come instead, no doubt.

*Mel.* So be it! Yet, all the same, proceed my way,

Though to your ends; so shall you prosper best!

The lady — to be won for selfish ends —

Will be won easier my unselfish . . . call it,

Romantic way.

*Berth.* Won easier?

*Mel.* Will not she?

*Berth.* There I profess humility until bound:

Ill cannot speed — not I — the Emperor.

*Mel.* And I should think the Emperor best waived.

From your description of her mood and way,

You could look, if it pleased you, into hearts;

But are too indolent and fond of watching

Your own — you know that, for you study it.

*Berth.* Had you but seen the orator her friend,

So bold and voluble an hour before,

Abashed to earth at aspect of the change!

Make her an Empress? Ah, that changed the case!

Oh, I read hearts! 'T is for my own behoof,

I court her with my true worth: wait the event!

I learned my final lesson on that head

When years ago, — my first and last essay —

Before the priest my uncle could by help

Of his superior raise me from the dirt —

Priscilla left me for a Brabant lord

Whose cheek was like the topaz on his thumb.

I am past illusion on that score.

*Mel.* Here comes

The lady —

*Berth.* — And there you go. But do not!

Give me

Another chance to please you! Hear me plead!



*Mel.* You 'll keep, then, to the lover, to the man?

(Enter the DUCHESS — followed by ADOLF and SABYNE, and, after an interval, by the Courtiers.)

*Berth.* Good auspice to our meeting!

*Duch.* May it prove!

— And you, sir, will be Emperor one day?

*Berth.* (Ay, that 's the point!) I may be Emperor.

*Duch.* 'T is not for my sake only, I am proud

Of this you offer: I am prouder far

That from the highest state should duly spring

The highest, since most generous, of deeds.

*Berth.* (Generous — still that!) You under-rate yourself.

You are, what I, to be complete, must gain —

Find now, and may not find, another time.

While I career on all the world for stage,

There needs at home my representative.

*Duch.* — Such, rather, would some warrior-woman be —

One dowered with lands and gold, or rich in friends —

One like yourself.

*Berth.* Lady, I am myself,

And have all these: I want what 's not myself,

Nor has all these. Why give one hand two swords?

Here 's one already: be a friend's next gift

A silk glove, if you will — I have a sword.

*Duch.* You love me, then?

*Berth.* Your lineage I revere,

Honor your virtue, in your truth believe,

Do homage to your intellect, and bow

Before your peerless beauty.

*Duch.* But, for love —

*Berth.* A further love I do not understand.

Our best course is to say these hideous truths,

And see them, once said, grow endurable:

Like waters shuddering from their central bed,

Black with the midnight bowels of the earth,

That, once up-spouted by an earthquake's throe,

A portent and a terror — soon subside,

Freshen apace, take gold and rainbow hues

In sunshine, sleep in shadow, and at last

Grow common to the earth as hills or trees —

Accepted by all things they came to scare.

*Duch.* You cannot love, then?

*Berth.* — Charlemagne, perhaps!

Are you not over-curious in love-love?

*Duch.* I have become so, very recently.

It seems, then, I shall best deserve esteem

Respect, and all your candor promises,

By putting on a calculating mood —

Asking the terms of my becoming yours?

*Berth.* Let me not do myself injustice, neither.

Because I will not condescend to fictions

That promise what my soul can ne'er acquit,

It does not follow that my guarded phrase

May not include far more of what you seek,

Than wide profession of less scrupulous men.

You will be Empress, once for all: with me

The Pope disputes supremacy — you stand,

And none gainsays, the earth's first woman.

*Duch.* That —

Or simple Lady of Ravestein again?

*Berth.* The matter 's not in my arbitrament:

Now I have made my claims — which I regret —  
Cede one, cede all.

*Duch.* This claim then, you enforce?

*Berth.* The world looks on.

*Duch.* And when must I decide?

*Berth.* When, lady? Have I said thus  
much so promptly

For nothing? — Poured out, with such pains  
at once

What I might also have suffered to ooze forth

Droplet by droplet in a lifetime long —

For aught less than as prompt an answer.  
too?

All 's fairly told now: who can teach you more?

*Duch.* I do not see him.

*Berth.*

I shall ne'er deceive.

This offer should be made befittingly

Did time allow the better setting forth

The good of it, with what is not so good,

Advantage, and disparagement as well:

But as it is, the sum of both must serve.

I am already weary of this place;

My thoughts are next stage on to Rome.

Decide!

The Empire — or, — not even Juliers now!

Hail to the Empress — farewell to the Duchess!

[The Courtiers, who have been drawing nearer and nearer, interpose.

*Gau.* — "Farewell," Prince? when we break  
in at our risk —

*Clug.* Almost upon court-license trespassing —

*Gau.* — To point out how your claims are  
valid yet!

You know not, by the Duke her father's will.

The lady, if she weds beneath her rank,

Forfeits her Duchy in the next heir's favor —

So 't is expressly stipulate. And if

It can be shown 't is her intent to wed

A subject, then yourself, next heir, by right

Succeed to Juliers.

*Berth.* What insanity? —

*Gui.* Sir, there 's one Valence, the pale fiery  
man

You saw and heard this morning — thought, no  
doubt,

Was of considerable standing here:

I put it to your penetration, Prince,

If aught save love, the truest love for her

Could make him serve the lady as he did!

He 's simply a poor advocate of Cleves

— Creeps here with difficulty, finds a place

With danger, gets in by a miracle,

And for the first time meets the lady's face —

So runs the story: is that credible?

For, first — no sooner in, than he 's apprised

Fortunes have changed; you are all-powerful  
here,

The lady as powerless: he stands fast by her!

*Duch.* [Aside.] And do such deeds spring  
up from love alone?

*Gui.* But here occurs the question, does the  
lady

Love him again? I say, how else can she?

Can she forget how he stood singly forth

In her defence, dared outrage all of us,

Insult yourself — for what, save love 's reward?

*Duch.* [Aside.] And is love then the sole  
reward of love?

*Gui.* But, love him as she may and must — you ask,  
Means she to wed him? “Yes,” both natures answer!

Both, in their pride, point out the sole result;  
Naught less would he accept nor she propose.  
For each conjecture was she great enough  
— Will be, for this.

*Clug.* Though, now that this is known,  
Policy, doubtless, urges she deny . . .

*Duch.* — What, sir, and wherefore? — since I am not sure

That all is any other than you say!  
You take this Valence, hold him close to me,  
Him with his actions: can I choose but look?  
I am not sure, love trulier shows itself  
Than in this man, you hate and would degrade,  
Yet, with your worst abatement, show me thus.  
Nor am I — (thus made look within myself,  
Ere I had dared) — now that the look is dared —  
Sure that I do not love him!

*Gui.* Hear you, Prince?

*Berth.* And what, sirs, please you, may this prattle mean

Unless to prove with what alacrity  
You give your lady's secrets to the world?  
How much indebted, for discovering  
That quality, you make me, will be found  
When there's a keeper for my own to seek.

*Courtiers.* “Our lady?”

*Berth.* — She assuredly remains.

*Duch.* Ah, Prince — and you too can be generous?

You could renounce your power, if this were so,  
And let me, as these phrase it, wed my love  
Yet keep my Duchy? You perhaps exceed  
Him, even, in disinterestedness!

*Berth.* How, lady, should all this affect my purpose?

Your will and choice are still as ever, free.  
Say, you have known a worthier than myself  
In mind and heart, of happier form and face —  
(Others must have their birthright: I have gifts,  
To balance theirs, not blot them out of sight.  
Against a hundred alien qualities,  
I lay the prize I offer. I am nothing:  
Wed you the Empire?

*Duch.* And my heart away?

*Berth.* When have I made pretension to your heart?

I give none. I shall keep your honor safe;  
With mine I trust you, as the sculptor trusts  
Yon marble woman with the marble rose,  
Loose on her hand, she never will let fall,  
In graceful, slight, silent security.  
You will be proud of my world-wide career,  
And I content in you the fair and good.  
What were the use of planting a few seeds  
The thankless climate never would mature —  
Affections all repelled by circumstance?  
Enough: to these no credit I attach. —  
To what you own, find nothing to object.  
Write simply on my requisition's face  
What shall content my friends — that you admit,

As Colombe of Ravestein, the claims therein,  
Or never need admit them, as my wife —  
And either way, all 's ended!

*Duch.* Let all end!

*Berth.* The requisition!

*Gui.* — Valence holds, of course!

*Berth.* Desire his presence! [*ADOLF goes out.*]

*Courtiers.* [*To each other.*] Out it all comes yet;

He 'll have his word against the bargain yet;  
He 's not the man to tamely acquiesce.

One passionate appeal — upbraiding even,  
May turn the tide again. Despair not yet!

[*They retire a little.*]

*Berth.* [*To MELCHIOR.*] The Empire has its old success, my friend!

*Mel.* You've had your way: before the spokesman speaks

Let me, but this once, work a problem out,  
And ever more be dumb! The Empire wins?  
To better purpose have I read my books!

[*Enter VALENCE.*]

*Mel.* [*To the Courtiers.*] Apart, my masters!  
[*To VALENCE.*] Sir, one word with you!

I am a poor dependant of the Prince's —  
Pitched on to speak, as of slight consequence.

You are no higher, I find: in other words,  
We two, as probably the wisest here,  
Need not hold diplomatic talk like fools.  
Suppose I speak, divesting the plain fact  
Of all their tortuous phrases, fit for them?  
Do you reply so, and what trouble saved!

The Prince, then — an embroiled strange heap  
of news

This moment reaches him — if true or false,  
All dignity forbids he should inquire  
In person, or by worthier deputy;  
Yet somehow must inquire, lest slander come:  
And so, 't is I am pitched on. You have heard  
His offer to your lady?

*Val.* Yes.

*Mel.* — Conceive

Her joy thereat?

*Val.* I cannot.

*Mel.* No one can.

All draws to a conclusion, therefore.

*Val.* [*Aside.*] So!

No after-judgment — no first thought revised —  
Her first and last decision! — me, she leaves,  
Takes him; a simple heart is flung aside,  
The ermine o'er a heartless breast embraced.  
Oh Heaven, this mockery has been played too oft!

Once, to surprise the angels — twice, that fiends.  
Recording, might be proud they chose not so —  
Thrice, many thousand times, to teach the world  
All men should pause, misdoubt their strength,  
since men

Can have such chance yet fail so signally

— But ever, ever this farewell to Heaven,

Welcome to earth — this taking death for life —  
This spurning love and kneeling to the world —  
Oh Heaven, it is too often and too old!

*Mel.* Well, on this point, what but an absurd rumor

Arises — these, its source — its subject, you!  
Your faith and loyalty misconstruing,  
They say, your service claims the lady's hand!  
Of course, nor Prince nor lady can respond:  
Yet something must be said: for, were it true  
You made such claim, the Prince would . . .

*Val.* Well, sir, — would?  
*Mel.* — Not only probably withdraw his suit,  
 But, very like, the lady might be forced  
 Accept your own. Oh, there are reasons why!  
 But you'll excuse at present all save one, —  
 I think so. What we want is, your own witness,  
 For, or against — her good, or yours: decide!

*Val.* [*Aside.*] Be it her good if she accounts  
 it so!  
 [*After a contest.*] For what am I but hers, to  
 choose as she?

Who knows how far, beside, the light from her  
 May reach, and dwell with, what she looks  
 upon?

*Mel.* [*To the Prince.*] Now to him, you!

*Berth.* [*To VALENCE.*] My friend acquaints  
 you, sir,  
 The noise runs . . .

*Val.* — Prince, how fortunate are you,  
 Wedding her as you will, in spite of noise,  
 To show belief in love! Let her but love you,  
 All else you disregard! What else can be?  
 You know how love is incompatible  
 With falsehood — purifies, assimilates  
 All other passions to itself.

*Mel.* Ay, sir:  
 But softly! Where, in the object we select,  
 Such love is, perchance, wanting?

*Val.* Then indeed,  
 What is it you can take?

*Mel.* Nay, ask the world!  
 Youth, beauty, virtue, an illustrious name,  
 An influence o'er mankind.

*Val.* When man perceives . . .  
 — Ah, I can only speak as for myself!

*Duch.* Speak for yourself!

*Val.* May I? — no, I have spoken,  
 And time's gone by. Had I seen such an one,  
 As I loved her — weighing thoroughly that  
 word —

So should my task be to evolve her love:  
 If for myself! — if for another — well.

*Berth.* Heroic truly! And your sole re-  
 ward, —

The secret pride in yielding up love's right?

*Val.* Who thought upon reward? And yet  
 how much

Comes after — oh, what amplest recompense!  
 Is the knowledge of her, naught? the memory,  
 naught?

— Lady, should such an one have looked on  
 you,

Ne'er wrong yourself so far as quote the world  
 And say, love can go unrequited here!

You will have blessed him to his whole life's  
 end —

Low passions hindered, baser cares kept back,  
 All goodness cherished where you dwelt — and  
 dwell.

What would he have? He holds you — you,  
 both form

And mind, in his, — where self-love makes such  
 room

For love of you, he would not serve you now

The vulgar way, — repulse your enemies,

Win you new realms, or best, to save the old

Die blissfully — that's past so long ago!

He wishes you no need, thought, care of him —

Your good, by any means, himself unseen,  
 Away, forgotten! — He gives that life's task  
 up,

As it were . . . but this charge which I re-  
 turn —

[*Offers the requisition, which she takes.*]

Wishing your good.

*Duch.* [*Having subscribed it.*] And oppor-  
 tunely, sir —

Since at a birthday's close, like this of mine,  
 Good wishes gentle deeds reciprocate.  
 Most on a wedding-day, as mine is too,  
 Should gifts be thought of: yours comes first  
 by right.

Ask of me!

*Berth.* He shall have whate'er he asks,  
 For your sake and his own.

*Val.* [*Aside.*] If I should ask —  
 The withered bunch of flowers she wears — per-  
 haps,

One last touch of her hand, I never more  
 Shall see!

[*After a pause, presenting his paper to the Prince.*  
*Cleves'* Prince, redress the wrongs of Cleves!

*Berth.* I will, sir!

*Duch.* [*As VALENCE prepares to retire.*] —

Nay, do out your duty, first!

You bore this paper; I have registered  
 My answer to it: read it and have done!

[*VALENCE reads it.*]

I take him — give up Juliers and the world.  
 This is my Birthday.

*Mel.* Berthold, my one hero  
 Of the world she gives up, one friend worth my  
 books,

Sole man I think it pays the pains to watch, —  
 Speak, for I know you through your Popes and  
 Kings!

*Berth.* [*After a pause.*] Lady, well rewarded!  
 Sir, as well deserved!

I could not imitate — I hardly envy —  
 I do admire you. All is for the best.  
 Too costly a flower were this, I see it now,  
 To pluck and set upon my barren helm  
 To wither — any garish plume will do.  
 I'll not insult you and refuse your Duchy —  
 You can so well afford to yield it me,  
 And I were left, without it, sadly lorn.  
 As it is — for me — if that will flatter you,  
 A somewhat wearier life seems to remain  
 Than I thought possible where . . . 'faith, their  
 life

Begins already! They're too occupied  
 To listen: and few words content me best.

[*Abruptly to the Courtiers.*] I am your Duke,  
 though! Who obey me here?

*Duch.* Adolf and Sabyne follow us —  
*Gui.* [*Starting from the Courtiers.*] — And I?

Do I not follow them, if I may n't you?

Shall not I get some little duties up  
 At Ravestein and emulate the rest?

God save you, Gaucelme! 'Tis my Birthday,

too!  
*Berth.* You happy handful that remain with  
 me

. . . That is, with Dietrich the black Barna-  
 bite

I shall leave over you — will earn your wages



Or Dietrich has forgot to ply his trade !  
 Meantime, — go copy me the precedents  
 Of every installation, proper styles  
 And pedigrees of all your Juliers' Dukes —  
 While I prepare to plod on my old way,

And somewhat wearily, I must confess !  
*Duch.* [ *With a light joyous laugh as she turns from them.* ] Come, Valence, to our friends,  
 God's earth . . .  
*Val.* [ *As she falls into his arms.* ] — And thee !

## DRAMATIC ROMANCES

THE seventh number of *Bells and Pomegranates* was entitled *Dramatic Romances and Lyrics*. In the redistribution of his shorter poems when he collected his writings, Browning having already a group of *Dramatic Lyrics* made a second of *Dramatic Romances*, taking the occasion to make a little nicer discrimination. Thus some of the poems originally included un-

der the combined title were distributed among the *Lyrics*, and some at first grouped under *Lyrics* were transferred to this division of *Romances*. The first poem in the group was originally contained in *Dramatic Lyrics* along with *Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister* under the general title of *Camp and Cloister*, this poem representing the camp.

### INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH CAMP

YOU know, we French stormed Ratisbon :  
 A mile or so away,  
 On a little mound, Napoleon  
 Stood on our storming-day ;  
 With neck out-thrust, you fancy how,  
 Legs wide, arms locked behind,  
 As if to balance the prone brow  
 Oppressive with its mind.

Just as perhaps he mused " My plans  
 That soar, to earth may fall,  
 Let once my army-leader Lannes  
 Waver at yonder wall, " —  
 Out 'twixt the battery-smokes there flew  
 A rider, bound on bound  
 Full-galloping ; nor bridle drew  
 Until he reached the mound.

Then off there flung in smiling joy,  
 And held himself erect  
 By just his horse's mane, a boy :  
 You hardly could suspect —  
 (So tight he kept his lips compressed,  
 Scarce any blood came through)  
 You looked twice ere you saw his breast  
 Was all but shot in two.

" Well, " cried he, " Emperor, by God's grace  
 We've got you Ratisbon !  
 The Marshal's in the market-place,  
 And you'll be there anon  
 To see your flag-bird flap his vans  
 Where I, to heart's desire,  
 Perched him ! " The chief's eye flashed ; his  
 plans  
 Soared up again like fire.

The chief's eye flashed ; but presently  
 Softened itself, as sheathes  
 A film the mother-eagle's eye  
 When her bruised eaglet breathes ;

" You're wounded ! " " Nay, " the soldier's  
 pride  
 Touched to the quick, he said :  
 " I'm killed, Sir ! " And his chief beside,  
 Smiling the boy fell dead.

### THE PATRIOT

#### AN OLD STORY

Mr. Browning has denied that this poem refers to Arnold of Brescia. It is imaginative, not historical in its dramatic action. It was possibly to relieve the poem of its apparent distinct reference to history that he removed the name of Brescia, which was used in the poem in its first form.

It was roses, roses, all the way,  
 With myrtle mixed in my path like mad :  
 The house-roofs seemed to heave and sway,  
 The church-spires flamed, such flags they had,  
 A year ago on this very day.

The air broke into a mist with bells,  
 The old walls rocked with the crowd and  
 cries.  
 Had I said, " Good folk, mere noise repels —  
 But give me your sun from yonder skies ! " —  
 They had answered, " And afterward, what  
 else ? "

Alack, it was I who leaped at the sun  
 To give it my loving friends to keep !  
 Naught man could do, have I left undone :  
 And you see my harvest, what I reap  
 This very day, now a year is run.

There's nobody on the house-tops now —  
 Just a palsied few at the windows set ;  
 For the best of the sight is, all allow,

At the Shambles' Gate — or, better yet,  
By the very scaffold's foot, I trow.

I go in the rain, and, more than needs,

A rope cuts both my wrists behind;  
And I think, by the feel, my forehead bleeds,

For they fling, whoever has a mind,  
Stones at me for my year's misdeeds.

Thus I entered, and thus I go!

In triumphs, people have dropped down dead.

"Paid by the world, what dost thou owe

Me?" — God might question; now instead,

'Tis God shall repay: I am safer so.

### MY LAST DUCHESS

FERRARA

In *Dramatic Lyrics* this was entitled *Italy*, and  
grouped with *Count Gismond* under the head  
*Italy and France*.

THAT's my last Duchess painted on the wall,  
Looking as if she were alive. I call  
That piece a wonder, now: Frà Pandolf's hands  
Worked busily a day, and there she stands.

Will't please you sit and look at her? I said

"Frà Pandolf" by design, for never read

Strangers like you that pictured countenance,

The depth and passion of its earnest glance,

But to myself they turned (since none puts by

The curtain I have drawn for you, but I)

And seemed as they would ask me, if they  
durst,

How such a glance came there; so, not the first

Are you to turn and ask thus. Sir, 't was not

Her husband's presence only, called that spot

Of joy into the Duchess' cheek: perhaps

Frà Pandolf chanced to say, "Her mantle laps

Over my lady's wrist too much," or "Paint

Must never hope to reproduce the faint

Half-flush that dies along her throat:" such  
stuff

Was courtesy, she thought, and cause enough

For calling up that spot of joy. She had

A heart — how shall I say? — too soon made  
glad,

Too easily impressed: she liked whate'er

She looked on, and her looks went everywhere.

Sir, 't was all one! My favor at her breast,

The dropping of the daylight in the West,

The bough of cherries some officious fool

Broke in the orchard for her, the white mule

She rode with round the terrace — all and each

Would draw from her alike the approving  
speech,

Or blush, at least. She thanked men, — good!  
but thanked

Somehow — I know not how — as if she ranked

My gift of a nine-hundred-years-old name

With anybody's gift. Who'd stoop to blame

This sort of trifling? Even had you skill

In speech — (which I have not) — to make your  
will

Quite clear to such an one, and say, "Just this  
Or that in you disgusts me; here you miss,

Or there exceed the mark" — and if she let

Herself be lessened so, nor plainly set

Her wits to yours, forsooth, and made excuse,

— E'en then would be some stooping; and I  
choose

Never to stoop. Oh sir, she smiled, no doubt,

Whene'er I passed her; but who passed without

Much the same smile? This grew; I gave  
commands;

Then all smiles stopped together. There she  
stands

As if alive. Will't please you rise? We'll  
meet

The company below, then. I repeat,

The Count your master's known munificence

Is ample warrant that no just pretence

Of mine for dowry will be disallowed;

Though his fair daughter's self, as I avowed

At starting, is my object. Nay, we'll go

Together down, sir. Notice Neptune, though,

Taming a sea-horse, thought a rarity,

Which Claus of Innsbruck cast in bronze for  
me!

### COUNT GISMOND

AIX IN PROVENCE

CHRIST GOD who savest man, save most

Of men Count Gismond who saved me!

Count Ganthier, when he chose his post,

Chose time and place and company

To suit it; when he struck at length

My honor, 't was with all his strength.

And doubtlessly ere he could draw

All points to one, he must have schemed!

That miserable morning saw

Few half so happy as I seemed,

While being dressed in queen's array

To give our tourney prize away.

I thought they loved me, did me grace

To please themselves; 't was all their deed

God makes, or fair or foul, our face;

If showing mine so caused to bleed

My cousins' hearts, they should have dropped

A word, and straight the play had stopped.

They, too, soauteous! Each a queen

By virtue of her brow and breast;

Not needing to be crowned, I mean,

As I do. E'en when I was dressed,

Had either of them spoke, instead

Of glancing sideways with still head!

But no: they let me laugh, and sing

My birthday song quite through, adjust

The last rose in my garland, fling

A last look on the mirror, trust

My arms to each an arm of theirs,

And so descend the castle-stairs —

And come out on the morning-troop

Of merry friends who kissed my cheek,

And called me queen, and made me stoop

Under the canopy — (a streak

That pierced it, of the outside sun,  
Powdered with gold its gloom's soft dun) —

And they could let me take my state

And foolish throne amid applause

Of all come there to celebrate

My queen's-day — Oh I think the cause

Of much was, they forgot no crowd

Makes up for parents in their shroud !

How'er that be, all eyes were bent

Upon me, when my cousins cast

Theirs down ; 't was time I should present

The victor's crown, but . . . there, 't will last

No long time . . . the old mist again

Blinds me as then it did. How vain !

See ! Gismond 's at the gate, in talk

With his two boys : I can proceed.

Well, at that moment, who should stalk

Forth boldly — to my face, indeed —

But Gauthier, and he thundered, "Stay !"

And all stayed. "Bring no crowns, I say !

"Bring torches ! Wind the penance-sheet

About her ! Let her shun the chaste,

Or lay herself before their feet !

Shall she whose body I embraced

A night long, queen it in the day ?

For honor's sake no crowns, I say !"

I ? What I answered ? As I live,

I never fancied such a thing

As answer possible to give.

What says the body when they spring

Some monstrous torture-engine's whole

Strength on it ? No more says the soul.

Till out strode Gismond ; then I knew

That I was saved. I never met

His face before, but, at first view,

I felt quite sure that God had set

Himself to Satan ; who would spend

A minute's mistrust on the end ?

He strode to Gauthier, in his throat

Gave him the lie, then struck his mouth

With one back-handed blow that wrote

In blood men's verdict there. North, South,

East, West, I looked. The lie was dead,

And damned, and truth stood up instead.

This glads me most, that I enjoyed

The heart of the joy, with my content

In watching Gismond unalloyed

By any doubt of the event :

God took that on him — I was bid

Watch Gismond for my part : I did.

Did I not watch him while he let

His armor just brace his greaves,

Rivet his hauberk, on the fret

The while ! His foot . . . my memory leaves

No least stamp out, nor how anon

He pulled his ringing gauntlets on.

And e'en before the trumpet's sound

Was finished, prone lay the false knight,

Prone as his lie, upon the ground :

Gismond flew at him, used no sleight

O' the sword, but open-breasted drove,

Cleaving till out the truth he clove.

Which done, he dragged him to my feet

And said, "Here die, but end thy breath

In full confession, lest thou fleet

From my first, to God's second death !

Say, hast thou lied ?" And, "I have lied

To God and her," he said, and died.

Then Gismond, kneeling to me, asked

— What safe my heart holds, though no word

Could I repeat now, if I tasked

My powers forever, to a third

Dear even as you are. Pass the rest

Until I sank upon his breast.

Over my head his arm he flung

Against the world ; and scarce I felt

His sword (that dripped by me and swung)

A little shifted in its belt :

For he began to say the while

How South our home lay many a mile.

So 'mid the shouting multitude

We two walked forth to never more

Return. My cousins have pursued

Their life, untroubled as before

I vexed them. Gauthier's dwelling-place

God lighten ! May his soul find grace !

Our elder boy has got the clear

Great brow ; though when his brother's black

Full eye shows scorn, it . . . Gismond here ?

And have you brought my tercel back ?

I just was telling Adela

How many birds it struck since May.

## THE BOY AND THE ANGEL

First published in *Hood's Magazine*, August,

1844. It was rewritten, with five new coup-

lets, and was published in 1845, in *Dramatic*

*Romances and Lyrics*, or No. VII. of *Bells and*

*Pomegranates*. When it appeared in the *Poetical*

*Works* of 1868, a fresh verse was added.

In 1844 the poem ended as follows : —

"Go back and praise again

The early way, while I remain.

"Be again the boy all curl'd ;

I will finish with the world."

Theocrite grew old at home,

Gabriel dwelt in Peter's dome.

MORNING, evening, noon and night,

"Praise God !" sang Theocrite.

Then to his poor trade he turned,

Whereby the daily meal was earned.

Hard he labored, long and well ;

O'er his work the boy's curls fell.



But ever, at each period,  
He stopped and sang, "Praise God!"

Then back again his curls he threw,  
And cheerful turned to work anew.

Said Blaise, the listening monk, "Well done;  
I doubt not thou art heard, my son:

"As well as if thy voice to-day  
Were praising God, the Pope's great way.

"This Easter Day, the Pope at Rome  
Praises God from Peter's dome."

Said Theocrite, "Would God that I  
Might praise him that great way, and die!"

Night passed, day shone,  
And Theocrite was gone.

With God a day endures alway,  
A thousand years are but a day.

God said in heaven, "Nor day nor night  
Now brings the voice of my delight."

Then Gabriel, like a rainbow's birth,  
Spread his wings and sank to earth;

Entered, in flesh, the empty cell,  
Lived there, and played the craftsman well;

And morning, evening, noon and night,  
Praised God in place of Theocrite.

And from a boy, to youth he grew:  
The man put off the stripling's hue:

The man matured and fell away  
Into the season of decay:

And ever o'er the trade he bent,  
And ever lived on earth content.

(He did God's will; to him, all one  
If on the earth or in the sun.)

God said, "A praise is in mine ear;  
There is no doubt in it, no fear:

"So sing old worlds, and so  
New worlds that from my footstool go.

"Clearer loves sound other ways:  
I miss my little human praise."

Then forth sprang Gabriel's wings, off fell  
The flesh disguise, remained the cell.

'T was Easter Day: he flew to Rome,  
And paused above Saint Peter's dome.

In the thing-room close by  
The great outer gallery,

With his holy vestments dight,  
Stood the new Pope, Theocrite:

And all his past career  
Came back upon him clear,

Since when, a boy, he plied his trade,  
Till on his life the sickness weighed;

And in his cell, when death drew near,  
An angel in a dream brought cheer:

And rising from the sickness drear,  
He grew a priest, and now stood here.

To the East with praise he turned,  
And on his sight the angel burned.

"I bore thee from thy craftsman's cell,  
And set thee here; I did not well.

"Vainly I left my angel-sphere,  
Vain was thy dream of many a year.

"Thy voice's praise seemed weak; it  
dropped—  
Creation's chorus stopped!

"Go back and praise again  
The early way, while I remain.

"With that weak voice of our disdain,  
Take up creation's pausing strain.

"Back to the cell and poor employ:  
Resume the craftsman and the boy!"

Theocrite grew old at home;  
A new Pope dwelt in Peter's dome.

One vanished as the other died:  
They sought God side by side.

#### INSTANS TYRANNUS

##### I

Of the million or two, more or less,  
I rule and possess,  
One man, for some cause undefined,  
Was least to my mind.

##### II

I struck him, he grovelled of course—  
For, what was his force?  
I pinned him to earth with my weight  
And persistence of hate:  
And he lay, would not moan, would not curse,  
As his lot might be worse.

##### III

"Were the object less mean, would he stand  
At the swing of my hand!  
For obscurity helps him and blots  
The hole where he squats."  
So, I set my five wits on the stretch  
To inveigle the wretch.  
All in vain! Gold and jewels I threw,  
Still he couched there perdue;  
I tempted his blood and his flesh,  
Hid in roses my mesh.

Choicest eates and the flagon's best spilth :  
Still he kept to his filth.

## IV

Had he kith now or kin, were access  
To his heart, did I press :  
Just a son or a mother to seize !  
No such booty as these.  
Were it simply a friend to pursue  
'Mid my million or two,  
Who could pay me in person or pelf  
What he owes me himself !  
No : I could not but smile through my chafe :  
For the fellow lay safe  
As his mates do, the midge and the nit,  
— Through minuteness, to wit.

## V

Then a humor more great took its place  
At the thought of his face,  
The droop, the low cares of the mouth,  
The trouble uncouth  
'Twixt the brows, all that air one is fain  
To put out of its pain.  
And, "no !" I admonished myself,  
"Is one mocked by an elf,  
Is one baffled by toad or by rat ?  
The gravamen 's in that !  
How the lion, who crouches to suit  
His back to my foot,  
Would admire that I stand in debate !  
But the small turns the great  
If it vexes you, — that is the thing !  
Toad or rat vex the king ?  
Though I waste half my realm to unearth  
Toad or rat, 't is well worth !"

## VI

So, I soberly laid my last plan  
To extinguish the man.  
Round his creep-hole, with never a break,  
Ran my fires for his sake ;  
Over-head, did my thunder combine  
With my underground mine :  
Till I looked from my labor content  
To enjoy the event.

## VII

When sudden . . . how think ye, the end ?  
Did I say "without friend" ?  
Say rather, from marge to blue marge  
The whole sky grew his target  
With the sun's self for visible boss,  
While an Arm ran across  
Which the earth heaved beneath like a breast  
Where the wretch was safe prest !  
Do you see ? Just my vengeance complete,  
The man sprang to his feet,  
Stood erect, caught at God's skirts, and prayed !  
— So, I was afraid !

## MESMERISM

ALL I believed is true !  
I am able yet  
All I want, to get

By a method as strange as new :  
Dare I trust the same to you ?

If at night, when doors are shut,  
And the wood-worm picks,  
And the death-watch ticks,  
And the bar has a flag of smut,  
And a cat 's in the water-butt —

And the socket floats and flares,  
And the house-beams groan,  
And a foot unknown  
Is surmised on the garret-stairs,  
And the locks slip unawares —

And the spider, to serve his ends,  
By a sudden thread,  
Arms and legs outspread,  
On the table's midst descends,  
Comes to find, God knows what friends ! —

If since eve drew in, I say,  
I have sat and brought  
(So to speak) my thought  
To bear on the woman away,  
Till I felt my hair turn gray —

Till I seemed to have and hold,  
In the vacancy  
'Twixt the wall and me,  
From the hair-plait's chestnut-gold  
To the foot in its muslin fold —

Have and hold, then and there,  
Her, from head to foot,  
Breathing and mute,  
Passive and yet aware,  
In the grasp of my steady stare —

Hold and have, there and then,  
All her body and soul  
That completes my whole,  
All that women add to men,  
In the clutch of my steady ken —

Having and holding, till  
I imprint her fast  
On the void at last  
As the sun does whom he will  
By the calotypist's skill —

Then, — if my heart's strength serve,  
And through all and each  
Of the veils I reach  
To her soul and never swerve,  
Knitting an iron nerve —

Command her soul to advance  
And inform the shape  
Which has made escape  
And before my countenance  
Answers me glance for glance —

I, still with a gesture fit  
Of my hands that best  
Do my soul's behest,  
Pointing the power from it,  
While myself do steadfast sit —

Steadfast and still the same  
 On my object bent,  
 While the hands give vent  
 To my ardor and my aim  
 And break into very flame —

Then I reach, I must believe,  
 Not her soul in vain,  
 For to me again  
 It reaches, and past retrieve  
 Is wound in the toils I weave ;

And must follow as I require,  
 As befits a thrall,  
 Bringing flesh and all,  
 Essence and earth-attire,  
 To the source of the tractile fire :

Till the house called hers, not mine,  
 With a growing weight  
 Seems to suffocate  
 If she break not its leaden line  
 And escape from its close confine.

Out of doors into the night !  
 On to the maze  
 Of the wild wood-ways,  
 Not turning to left nor right  
 From the pathway, blind with sight —

Making through rain and wind  
 O'er the broken shrubs,  
 'Twixt the stems and stubs,  
 With a still, composed, strong mind,  
 Nor a care for the world behind —

Swifter and still more swift,  
 As the crowding peace  
 Doth to joy increase  
 In the wide blind eyes uplift  
 Through the darkness and the drift !

While I — to the shape, I too  
 Feel my soul dilate  
 Nor a whit abate,  
 And relax not a gesture due,  
 As I see my belief come true.

For, there ! have I drawn or no  
 Life to that lip ?  
 Do my fingers dip  
 In a flame which again they throw  
 On the cheek that breaks aglow ?

Ha ! was the hair so first ?  
 What, unfilleted,  
 Made alive, and spread  
 Through the void with a rich outburst,  
 Chestnut gold-interspersed ?

Like the doors of a casket-shrine,  
 See, on either side,  
 Her two arms divide  
 Till the heart betwixt makes sign,  
 Take me, for I am thine !

“ Now — now ” — the door is heard !  
 Hark, the stairs ! and near —

Nearer — and here —  
 “ Now ! ” and at call the third  
 She enters without a word.

On doth she march and on  
 To the fancied shape ;  
 It is, past escape,  
 Herself, now : the dream is done  
 And the shadow and she are one.

First I will pray. Do Thou  
 That ownest the soul,  
 Yet wilt grant control  
 To another, nor disallow  
 For a time, restrain me now !

I admonish me while I may,  
 Not to squander guilt,  
 Since require Thou wilt  
 At my hand its price one day !  
 What the price is, who can say ?

### THE GLOVE

(PETER RONSARD *loquitur*.)

“ HEIGHO,” yawned one day King Francis,  
 “ Distance all value enhances !  
 When a man's busy, why, leisure  
 Strikes him as wonderful pleasure :  
 'Faith, and at leisure once is he ?  
 Straightway he wants to be busy.  
 Here we've got peace ; and aghast I'm  
 Caught thinking war the true pastime.  
 Is there a reason in metre ?  
 Give us your speech, master Peter ! ”  
 I who, if mortal dare say so,  
 Ne'er am at loss with my Naso,  
 “Sire,” I replied, “ joys prove cloudlets :  
 Men are the merest Ixions ” —  
 Here the King whistled aloud, “ Let's  
 — Heigho — go look at our lions ! ”  
 Such are the sorrowful chances  
 If you talk fine to King Francis.

And so, to the courtyard proceeding  
 Our company, Francis was leading,  
 Increased by new followers tenfold  
 Before he arrived at the penfold ;  
 Lords, ladies, like clouds which bedizen  
 At sunset the western horizon.  
 And Sir De Lorge pressed 'mid the foremost  
 With the dame he professed to adore most.  
 Oh, what a face ! One by fits eyed  
 Her, and the horrible pitside ;  
 For the penfold surrounded a hollow  
 Which led where the eye scarce dared follow,  
 And shelved to the chamber secluded  
 Where Bluebeard, the great lion, brooded.  
 The King hailed his keeper, an Arab  
 As glossy and black as a scarab,  
 And bade him make sport and at once stir  
 Up and out of his den the old monster.  
 They opened a hole in the wire-work  
 Across it, and dropped there a firework,  
 And fled : one's heart's beating redoubled ;  
 A pause, while the pit's mouth was troubled,  
 The blackness and silence so utter.



By the firework's slow sparkling and sputter ;  
Then earth in a sudden contortion  
Gave out to our gaze her abortion.  
Such a brute ! Were I friend Clement Marot  
(Whose experience of nature 's but narrow,  
And whose faculties move in no small mist  
When he versifies David the Psalmist)  
I should study that brute to describe you  
*Illum Juda Leonem de Tribu.*

One's whole blood grew curdling and creepy  
To see the black mane, vast and heapy,  
The tail in the air stiff and straining,  
The wide eyes, nor waxing nor waning,  
As over the barrier which bounded  
His platform, and us who surrounded  
The barrier, they reached and they rested  
On space that might stand him in best stead :  
For who knew, he thought, what the amazement,  
The eruption of clatter and blaze meant,  
And if, in this minute of wonder,  
No outlet, 'mid lightning and thunder,  
Lay broad, and, his shackles all shivered,  
The lion at last was delivered ?  
Ay, that was the open sky o'erhead !  
And you saw by the flash on his forehead,  
By the hope in those eyes wide and steady,  
He was leagues in the desert already,  
Driving the flocks up the mountain,  
Or catlike couched hard by the fountain  
To waylay the date-gathering negress :  
So guarded he entrance or egress.  
"How he stands !" quoth the King : "we may  
well swear,

(No novice, we've won our spurs elsewhere  
And so can afford the confession.)  
We exercise wholesome discretion  
In keeping aloof from his threshold,  
Once hold you, those jaws want no fresh hold,  
Their first would too pleasantly purloin  
The visitor's brisket or surloin :  
But who 's he would prove so fool-hardy ?  
Not the best man of Marignan, pardie !"

The sentence no sooner was uttered,  
Than over the rails a glove fluttered,  
Fell close to the lion, and rested :  
The dame 't was, who flung it and jested  
With life so, De Lorge had been wooing  
For months past ; he sat there pursuing  
His suit, weighing out with nonchalance  
Fine speeches like gold from a balance.

Sound the trumpet, no true knight 's a tarrier !  
De Lorge made one leap at the barrier,  
Walked straight to the glove, — while the lion  
Ne'er moved, kept his far-reaching eye on  
The palm-tree-edged desert-spring's sapphire,  
And the musky oiled skin of the Kaffir, —  
Picked it up, and as calmly retreated,  
Leaped back where the lady was seated,  
And full in the face of its owner  
Flung the glove.

"Your heart's queen, you dethrone her ?  
So should I !" — cried the King — " 't was mere  
vanity,  
Not love, set that task to humanity !"

Lords and ladies alike turned with loathing  
From such a proved wolf in sheep's clothing.

Not so, I ; for I caught an expression  
In her brow's undisturbed self-possession  
Amid the Court's scoffing and merriment, —  
As if from no pleasing experiment  
She rose, yet of pain not much heedful  
So long as the process was needful, —  
As if she had tried in a crucible,  
To what "speeches like gold" were reducible,  
And, finding the finest prove copper,  
Felt the smoke in her face was but proper ;  
To know what she had *not* to trust to,  
Was worth all the ashes and dust too.  
She went out 'mid hooting and laughter ;  
Clement Marot stayed ; I followed after,  
And asked, as a grace, what it all meant ?  
If she wished not the rash deed's recallment ?  
"For I" — so I spoke — "am a poet :  
Human nature, — behoooves that I know it !"

She told me, "Too long had I heard  
Of the deed proved alone by the word :  
For my love — what De Lorge would not dare !  
With my scorn — what De Lorge could com-  
pare !

And the endless descriptions of death  
He would brave when my lip formed a breath,  
I must reckon as braved, or, of course,  
Doubt his word — and moreover, perforce,  
For such gifts as no lady could spurn,  
Must offer my love in return.  
When I looked on your lion, it brought  
All the dangers at once to my thought,  
Encountered by all sorts of men,  
Before he was lodged in his den, —  
From the poor slave whose club or bare hands  
Dug the trap, set the snare on the sands,  
With no King and no Court to applaud,  
By no shame, should he shrink, overawed,  
Yet to capture the creature made shift,  
That his rude boys might laugh at the gift,  
— To the page who last leaped o'er the fence  
Of the pit, on no greater pretence  
Than to get back the bonnet he dropped,  
Lest his pay for a week should be stopped.  
So, wiser I judged it to make  
One trial what 'death for my sake'  
Really meant, while the power was yet mine,  
Than to wait until time should define  
Such a phrase not so simply as I,  
Who took it to mean just 'to die.'  
The blow a glove gives is but weak :  
Does the mark yet discolor my cheek ?  
But when the heart suffers a blow,  
Will the pain pass so soon, do you know ?"

I looked, as away she was sweeping,  
And saw a youth eagerly keeping  
As close as he dared to the doorway.  
No doubt that a noble should more weigh  
His life than befits a plebeian ;  
And yet, had our brute been Nemean —  
(I judge by a certain calm fervor  
The youth stepped with, forward to serve her)  
— He'd have scarce thought you did him the  
worst turn

If you whispered, "Friend, what you'd get,  
first earn!"

And when, shortly after, she carried  
Her shame from the Court, and they married,  
To that marriage some happiness, maugre  
The voice of the Court, I dared augur.

For De Lorge, he made women with men vie,  
Those in wonder and praise, these in envy;  
And in short stood so plain a head taller  
That he wooed and won . . . how do you call  
her?

The beauty, that rose in the sequel  
To the King's love, who loved her a week well.  
And 't was noticed he never would honor  
De Lorge (who looked daggers upon her)  
With the easy commission of stretching  
His legs in the service, and fetching  
His wife, from her chamber, those straying  
Sad gloves she was always mislaying,  
While the King took the closet to chat in, —  
But of course this adventure came pat in.  
And never the King told the story,  
How bringing a glove brought such glory,  
But the wife smiled — "His nerves are grown  
firmer:

Mine he brings now and utters no murmur."

*Venienti occurrere morbo!*

With which moral I drop my theorbos.

#### TIME'S REVENGES

I've a Friend, over the sea;  
I like him, but he loves me.  
It all grew out of the books I write;  
They find such favor in his sight  
That he slaughters you with savage looks  
Because you don't admire my books.  
He does himself though, — and if some vein  
Were to snap to-night in this heavy brain,  
To-morrow month, if I lived to try,  
Round should I just turn quietly,  
Or out of the bedclothes stretch my hand  
Till I found him, come from his foreign land  
To be my nurse in this poor place,  
And make my broth and wash my face  
And light my fire and, all the while,  
Bear with his old good-humored smile  
That I told him "Better have kept away  
Than come and kill me, night and day,  
With, worse than fever throbs and shoots,  
The creaking of his clumsy boots."  
I am as sure that this he would do,  
As that Saint Paul's is striking two.  
And I think I rather . . . woe is me!

— Yes, rather should see him than not see,  
If lifting a hand could seat him there  
Before me in the empty chair  
To-night, when my head aches indeed,  
And I can neither think nor read,  
Nor make these purple fingers hold  
The pen; this garret's freezing cold!

And I've a Lady — there he wakes,  
The laughing fiend and prince of snakes

Within me, at her name, to pray  
Fate send some creature in the way  
Of my love for her, to be down-torn,  
Upthrust and outward-borne,  
So I might prove myself that sea  
Of passion which I needs must be!  
Call my thoughts false and my fancies quaint  
And my style infirm and its figures faint,  
All the critics say, and more blame yet,  
And not one angry word you get.  
But, please you, wonder I would put  
My cheek beneath that lady's foot  
Rather than trample under mine  
The laurels of the Florentine,  
And you shall see how the devil spends  
A fire God gave for other ends!  
I tell you, I stride up and down  
This garret, crowned with love's best crown,  
And feasted with love's perfect feast,  
To think I kill for her, at least,  
Body and soul and peace and fame,  
Alike youth's end and manhood's aim,  
— So is my spirit, as flesh with sin,  
Filled full, eaten out and in  
With the face of her, the eyes of her,  
The lips, the little chin, the stir  
Of shadow round her mouth; and she  
— I'll tell you — calmly would decree  
That I should roast at a slow fire,  
If that would compass her desire  
And make her one whom they invite  
To the famous ball to-morrow night.

There may be heaven; there must be hell;  
Meantime, there is our earth here — well!

#### THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND

Both this poem and the following were written after Browning's visit to Italy in 1844. A originally published they were entitled *Italy, in England and England in Italy*. The dramatic incident in the former poem was not a rescript of a particular historic incident.

THAT second time they hunted me  
From hill to plain, from shore to sea,  
And Austria, hounding far and wide  
Her blood-hounds through the country-side,  
Breathed hot and instant on my trace, —  
I made six days a hiding-place  
Of that dry green old aqueduct  
Where I and Charles, when boys, have plucked  
The fire-flies from the roof above,  
Bright creeping through the moss they love:  
— How long it seems since Charles was lost!  
Six days the soldiers crossed and crossed  
The country in my very sight;  
And when that peril ceased at night,  
The sky broke out in red dismay  
With signal fires; well, there I lay  
Close covered o'er in my recess,  
Up to the neck in ferns and cress,  
Thinking on Metternich our friend,  
And Charles's miserable end,  
And much beside, two days; the third,

Hunger o'ercame me when I heard  
 The peasants from the village go  
 To work among the maize ; you know,  
 With us in Lombardy, they bring  
 Provisions packed on mules, a string  
 With little bells that cheer their task,  
 And casks, and boughs on every cask  
 To keep the sun's heat from the wine ;  
 These I let pass in jingling line,  
 And, close on them, dear noisy crew,  
 The peasants from the village, too ;  
 For at the very rear would troop  
 Their wives and sisters in a group  
 To help, I knew. When these had passed,  
 I threw my glove to strike the last,  
 Taking the chance : she did not start,  
 Much less cry out, but stooped apart,  
 One instant rapidly glanced round,  
 And saw me beckon from the ground ;  
 A wild bush grows and hides my crypt ;  
 She picked my glove up while she stripped  
 A branch off, then rejoined the rest  
 With that ; my glove lay in her breast.  
 Then I drew breath : they disappeared :  
 It was for Italy I feared.

An hour, and she returned alone  
 Exactly where my glove was thrown.  
 Meanwhile came many thoughts ; on me  
 Rested the hopes of Italy ;  
 I had devised a certain tale  
 Which, when 't was told her, could not fail  
 Persuade a peasant of its truth ;  
 I meant to call a freak of youth  
 This hiding, and give hopes of pay,  
 And no temptation to betray.  
 But when I saw that woman's face,  
 Its calm simplicity of grace,  
 Our Italy's own attitude  
 In which she walked thus far, and stood,  
 Planting each naked foot so firm,  
 To crush the snake and spare the worm —  
 At first sight of her eyes, I said,  
 " I am that man upon whose head  
 They fix the price, because I hate  
 The Austrians over us : the State  
 Will give you gold — oh, gold so much ! —  
 If you betray me to their clutch,  
 And be your death, for aught I know,  
 If once they find you saved their foe.  
 Now, you must bring me food and drink,  
 And also paper, pen and ink,  
 And carry safe what I shall write  
 To Padua, which you 'll reach at night  
 Before the duomo shuts ; go in,  
 And wait till Tenebræ begin ;  
 Walk to the third confessional,  
 Between the pillar and the wall,  
 And kneeling whisper, *Whence comes peace ?*  
 Say it a second time, then cease ;  
 And if the voice inside returns,  
 From Christ and Freedom ; what concerns  
 The cause of Peace ? — for answer, slip  
 My letter where you placed your lip ;  
 Then come back happy we have done  
 Our mother service — I, the son,  
 As you the daughter of our land ! "

Three mornings more, she took her stand  
 In the same place, with the same eyes :  
 I was no surer of sunrise  
 Than of her coming. We conferred  
 Of her own prospects, and I heard  
 She had a lover — stout and tall,  
 She said — then let her eyelids fall,  
 " He could do much " — as if some doubt  
 Entered her heart, — then, passing out,  
 " She could not speak for others, who  
 Had other thoughts ; herself she knew : "  
 And so she brought me drink and food.  
 After four days, the scouts pursued  
 Another path ; at last arrived  
 The help my Paduan friends contrived  
 To furnish me : she brought the news.  
 For the first time I could not choose  
 But kiss her hand, and lay my own  
 Upon her head — " This faith was shown  
 To Italy, our mother ; she  
 Uses my hand and blesses thee."  
 She followed down to the sea-shore ;  
 I left and never saw her more.

How very long since I have thought  
 Concerning — much less wished for — aught  
 Beside the good of Italy,  
 For which I live and mean to die !  
 I never was in love ; and since  
 Charles proved false, what shall now convince  
 My inmost heart I have a friend ?  
 However, if I pleased to spend  
 Real wishes on myself — say, three —  
 I know at least what one should be.  
 I would grasp Mettemnich until  
 I felt his red wet throat distil  
 In blood through these two hands. And next,  
 — Nor much for that am I perplexed —  
 Charles, perjured traitor, for his part,  
 Should die slow of a broken heart  
 Under his new employers. Last  
 — Ah, there, what should I wish ? For fast  
 Do I grow old and out of strength.  
 If I resolved to seek at length  
 My father's house again, how scared  
 They all would look, and unprepared !  
 My brothers live in Austria's pay  
 — Disowned me long ago, men say ;  
 And all my early mates who used  
 To praise me so — perhaps induced  
 More than one early step of mine —  
 Are turning wise : while some opine  
 " Freedom grows license," some suspect  
 " Haste breeds delay," and recollect  
 They always said, such premature  
 Beginnings never could endure !  
 So, with a sullen " All's for best,"  
 The land seems settling to its rest.  
 I think then, I should wish to stand  
 This evening in that dear, lost land,  
 Over the sea the thousand miles,  
 And know if yet that woman smiles  
 With the calm smile ; some little farm  
 She lives in there, no doubt : what harm  
 If I sat on the door-side bench,  
 And, while her spindle made a trench  
 Fantastically in the dust,  
 Inquired of all her fortunes — just



Her children's ages and their names,  
And what may be the husband's aims  
For each of them. I'd talk this out,  
And sit there, for an hour about,  
Then kiss her hand once more, and lay  
Mine on her head, and go my way.

So much for idle wishing — how  
It steals the time! To business now.

# THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY

PIANO DI SORRENTO

FORTÙ, Fortù, my beloved one,  
Sit here by my side,  
On my knees put up both little feet!  
I was sure, if I tried,  
I could make you laugh spite of Scirocco.  
Now, open your eyes,  
Let me keep you amused till he vanish  
In black from the skies,  
With telling my memories over  
As you tell your beads;  
All the Plain saw me gather, I garland  
— The flowers or the weeds.  
Time for rain! for your long hot dry Autumn  
Had net-worked with brown  
The white skin of each grape on the bunches,  
Marked like a quail's crown,  
Those creatures you make such account of,  
Whose heads, — speckled white  
Over brown like a great spider's back,  
As I told you last night, —  
Your mother bites off for her supper.  
Red-ripe as could be,  
Pomegranates were chapping and splitting  
In halves on the tree:  
And betwixt the loose walls of great flintstone,  
Or in the thick dust  
On the path, or straight out of the rock-side,  
Wherever could thrust  
Some burnt sprig of bold hardy rock-flower  
Its yellow face up,  
For the prize were great butterflies fighting,  
Some five for one cup.  
So, I guessed, ere I got up this morning,  
What change was in store,  
By the quick rustle-down of the quail-nets  
Which woke me before  
I could open my shutter, made fast  
With a bough and a stone,  
And look through the twisted dead vine-twigs,  
Sole lattice that's known.  
Quick and sharp rang the rings down the net-  
poles,  
While, busy beneath,  
Your priest and his brother tugged at them,  
The rain in their teeth.  
And out upon all the flat house-roofs  
Where split figs lay drying,  
The girls took the frails under cover:  
Nor use seemed in trying  
To get out the boats and go fishing,  
For, under the cliff,  
Fierce the black water frothed o'er the blind-  
rock,  
No seeing our skiff

Arrive about noon from Amalfi,  
— Our fisher arrive,  
And pitch down his basket before us,  
All trembling alive  
With pink and gray jellies, your sea-fruit;  
You touch the strange lumps,  
And mouths gape there, eyes open, all manner  
Of horns and of humps,  
Which only the fisher looks grave at,  
While round him like imps  
Cling screaming the children as naked  
And brown as his shrimps;  
Himself too as bare to the middle  
— You see round his neck  
The string and its brass coin suspended,  
That saves him from wreck.  
But to-day not a boat reached Salerno,  
So back, to a man,  
Came our friends, with whose help in the vine-  
yards  
Grape-harvest began.  
In the vat, halfway up in our house-side,  
Like blood the juice spins,  
While your brother all bare-legged is dancing  
Till breathless he grins  
Dead-beaten in effort on effort  
To keep the grapes under,  
Since still when he seems all but master,  
In pours the fresh plunder  
From girls who keep coming and going  
With basket on shoulder,  
And eyes shut against the rain's driving;  
Your girls that are older, —  
For under the hedges of aloe,  
And where, on its bed  
Of the orchard's black mould, the love-apple  
Lies pulpy and red,  
All the young ones are kneeling and filling  
Their laps with the snails  
Tempted out by this first rainy weather, —  
Your best of regales,  
As to-night will be proved to my sorrow,  
When, supping in state,  
We shall feast our grape-gleaners (two dozen,  
Three over one plate)  
With lasagne so tempting to swallow  
In slippery ropes,  
And gourds fried in great purple slices,  
That color of popes.  
Meantime, see the grape bunch they've brought  
you:  
The rain-water slips  
O'er the heavy blue bloom on each globe  
Which the wasp to your lips  
Still follows with fretful persistence:  
Nay, taste, while awake,  
This half of a curd-white smooth che se-ball  
That peels, flake by flake,  
Like an onion, each smoother and whiter;  
Next, sip this weak wine  
From the thin green glass flask, with its stop-  
per,  
A leaf of the vine;  
And end with the prickly-pear's red flesh  
That leaves through its juice  
The stony black seeds on your pearl-teeth.  
Scirocco is loose!  
Hark, the quick, whistling pelt of the olives

Which, thick in one's track,  
Tempt the stranger to pick up and bite them,  
Though not yet half black !  
How the old twisted olive trunks shudder,  
The medlars let fall  
Their hard fruit, and the brittle great fig-  
trees  
Snap off, figs and all,  
For here comes the whole of the tempest !  
No refuge, but creep  
Back again to my side and my shoulder,  
And listen or sleep.

Oh, how will your country show next week,  
When all the vine-boughs  
Have been stripped of their foliage to pasture  
The mules and the cows ?  
Last eve, I rode over the mountains ;  
Your brother, my guide,  
Soon left me, to feast on the myrtles  
That offered, each side,  
Their fruit-balls, black, glossy and luscious, —  
Or strip from the sorbs  
A treasure, or, rosy and wondrous,  
Those hairy gold orbs !  
But my mule picked his sure sober path out,  
Just stopping to neigh  
When he recognized down in the valley  
His mates on their way  
With the faggots and barrels of water ;  
And soon we emerged  
From the plain, where the woods could scarce  
follow ;  
And still as we urged  
Our way, the woods wondered, and left us,  
As up still we trudged,  
Though the wild path grew wilder each instant,  
And place was e'en grudged  
'Mid the rock-chasms and piles of loose stones  
Like the loose broken teeth  
Of some monster which climbed there to die  
From the ocean beneath —  
Place was grudged to the silver-gray fume-weed  
That clung to the path,  
And dark rosemary ever a-dying  
That, 'spite the wind's wrath,  
So loves the salt rock's face to seaward,  
And lentisks as stanch  
To the stone where they root and bear berries,  
And . . . what shows a branch  
Coral-colored, transparent, with circlets  
Of pale seagreen leaves ;  
Over all trod my mule with the caution  
Of gleaners o'er sheaves,  
Still, foot after foot like a lady,  
Till, round after round,  
He climbed to the top of Calvano,  
And God's own profound  
Was above me, and round me the mountains,  
And under, the sea,  
And within me my heart to bear witness  
What was and shall be.  
Oh, heaven and the terrible crystal !  
No rampart excludes  
Your eye from the life to be lived  
In the blue solitudes.  
Oh, those mountains, their infinite movement !  
Still moving with you ;

For, ever some new head and breast of them  
Thrusts into view  
To observe the intruder ; you see it  
If quickly you turn  
And, before they escape you, surprise them.  
They grudge you should learn  
How the soft plains they look on, lean over  
And love (they pretend)  
— Cower beneath them, the flat sea-pine  
crouches,  
The wild fruit-trees bend,  
E'en the myrtle-leaves curl, shrink and shut :  
All is silent and grave :  
'T is a sensual and timorous beauty,  
How fair ! but a slave.  
So, I turned to the sea ; and there slumbered  
As greenly as ever  
Those isles of the siren, your Galli ;  
No ages can sever  
The Three, nor enable their sister  
To join them, — halfway  
On the voyage, she looked at Ulysses —  
No farther to-day,  
Though the small one, just launched in the wave  
Watches breast-high and steady  
From under the rock, her bold sister  
Swum halfway already.  
Forth, shall we sail there together  
And see from the sides  
Quite new rocks show their faces, new haunts  
Where the siren abides ?  
Shall we sail round and round them, close over  
The rocks, though unseen,  
That ruffle the gray glassy water  
To glorious green ?  
Then scramble from splinter to splinter,  
Reach land and explore,  
On the largest, the strange square black turret  
With never a door,  
Just a loop to admit the quick lizards ;  
Then, stand there and hear  
The birds' quiet singing, that tells us  
What life is, so clear ?  
— The secret they sang to Ulysses  
When, ages ago,  
He heard and he knew this life's secret  
I hear and I know.

Ah, see ! The sun breaks o'er Calvano ;  
He strikes the great gloom  
And flutters it o'er the mount's summit  
In airy gold fume.  
All is over. Look out, see the gypsy,  
Our tinker and smith,  
Has arrived, set up bellows and forge,  
And down-squatted forthwith  
To his hammering, under the wall there ;  
One eye keeps aloof  
The urchins that itch to be putting  
His jews'-harps to proof,  
While the other, through locks of curled wire,  
Is watching how sleek  
Shines the hog, come to share in the windfall  
— Chew abbot's own cheek !  
All is over. Wake up and come out now,  
And down let us go,  
And see the fine things got in order  
At church for the show

Of the Sacrament, set forth this evening ;  
 To-morrow 's the Feast  
 Of the Rosary's Virgin, by no means  
 Of Virgins the least,  
 As you 'll hear in the off-hand discourse  
 Which (all nature, no art)  
 The Dominican brother, these three weeks,  
 Was getting by heart.  
 Not a pillar nor post but is dizen'd  
 With red and blue papers ;  
 All the roof waves with ribbons, each altar  
 Ablaze with long tapers ;  
 But the great masterpiece is the scaffold  
 Rigged glorious to hold  
 All the fiddlers and fifers and drummers  
 And trumpeters bold,  
 Not afraid of Bellini nor Auber,  
 Who, when the priest's hoarse,  
 Will strike us up something that's brisk  
 For the feast's second course.  
 And then will the flaxen-wigged Image  
 Be carried in pomp  
 Through the plain, while in gallant proces-  
 sion  
 The priests mean to stomp.  
 All round the glad church lie old bottles  
 With gunpowder stopped,  
 Which will be, when the Image re-enters,  
 Religiously popped ;  
 And at night from the crest of Calvano  
 Great bonfires will hang,  
 On the plain will the trumpets join chorus,  
 And more proppers bang.  
 At all events, come — to the garden  
 As far as the wall ;  
 See me tap with a hoe on the plaster  
 Till out there shall fall  
 A scorpion with wide angry nippers !

— "Such trifles !" you say ?  
 Forth, in my England at home,  
 Men meet gravely to-day  
 And debate, if abolishing Corn-laws  
 Be righteous and wise  
 — If 't were proper, Scirocco should vanish  
 In black from the skies !

#### IN A GONDOLA

In a letter to Miss Haworth, Browning writes,  
 "I am getting to love painting as I did once.  
 . . . I chanced to call on Forster the other day,  
 and he pressed me into committing verse on the  
 instant, not the minute, in Maclise's behalf, who  
 has wrought a divine Venetian work, it seems,  
 for the British Institution. Forster described  
 it well — but I could do nothing better than  
 this wooden ware — (all the 'properties,' as  
 we say, were given and the problem was how  
 to catalogue them in rhyme and unreason.)"  
 Thereupon followed the first stanza of the  
 following poem ; but after seeing the picture he  
 was moved to go on and carry the poem through  
 to a real end.

*He sings.*

I SEND my heart up to thee, all my heart  
 In this my singing.  
 For the stars help me, and the sea bears part ;  
 The very night is clinging  
 Closer to Venice' streets to leave one space  
 Above me, whence thy face  
 May light my joyous heart to thee its dwelling-  
 place.

*She speaks.*

Say after me, and try to say  
 My very words, as if each word  
 Came from you of your own accord,  
 In your own voice, in your own way :  
 "This woman's heart and soul and brain  
 Are mine as much as this gold chain  
 She bids me wear ; which " (say again)  
 "A precious to make by cherishing  
 A precious thing, or choose to fling  
 Over the boat-side, ring by ring."  
 And yet once more say . . . no word more !  
 Since words are only words. Give o'er !

Unless you call me, all the same,  
 Familiarly by my pet name,  
 Which if the Three should hear you call,  
 And me reply to, would proclaim  
 At once our secret to them all.  
 Ask of me, too, command me, blame —  
 Do, break down the partition-wall  
 'Twixt us, the daylight world beholds  
 Curtained in dusk and splendid folds !  
 What's left but — all of me to take ?  
 I am the Three's : prevent them, slake  
 Your thirst ! 'T is said, the Arab sage,  
 In practising with gems, can loose  
 Their subtle spirit in his cruce  
 And leave but ashes : so, sweet mage,  
 Leave them my ashes when thy use  
 Sucks out my soul, thy heritage !

*He sings.*

Past we glide, and past, and past !  
 What's that poor Agnese doing  
 Where they make the shutters fast ?  
 Gray Zanobi's just a-wooing  
 To his couch the purchased bride :  
 Past we glide !

Past we glide, and past, and past !  
 Why 's the Pucci Palace flaring  
 Like a beacon to the blast ?  
 Guests by hundreds, not one caring  
 If the dear host's neck were wried :  
 Past we glide !

*She sings.*

The moth's kiss, first !  
 Kiss me as if you made believe  
 You were not sure, this eve,  
 How my face, your flower, had purs'd  
 Its petals up ; so, here and there  
 You brush it, till I grow aware  
 Who wants me, and wide ope I burst.

The bee's kiss, now !  
 Kiss me as if you entered gay



My heart at some noonday,  
A bud that dares not disallow  
The claim, so all is rendered up,  
And passively its shattered cup  
Over your head to sleep I bow.

*He sings.*

What are we two?  
I am a Jew,  
And carry thee, farther than friends can pursue,  
To a feast of our tribe;  
Where they need thee to bribe  
The devil that blasts them unless he imbibe  
Thy . . . Scatter the vision forever! And  
now,  
As of old, I am I, thou art thou!

Say again, what we are?  
The sprite of a star,  
I lure thee above where the destinies bar  
My plumes their full play  
Till a ruddier ray  
Than my pale one announce there is withering  
away  
Some . . . Scatter the vision forever! And  
now,  
As of old, I am I, thou art thou!

*He muses.*

Oh, which were best, to roam or rest?  
The land's lap or the water's breast?  
To sleep on yellow millet-sheaves,  
Or swim in lucid shallows just  
Eluding water-lily leaves,  
An inch from Death's black fingers, thrust  
To lock you, whom release he must;  
Which life were best on Summer eves?

*He speaks, musing.*

Lie back; could thought of mine improve you?  
From this shoulder let there spring  
A wing; from this, another wing;  
Wings, not legs and feet, shall move you!  
Snow-white must they spring, to blend  
With your flesh, but I intend  
They shall deepen to the end,  
Broader, into burning gold,  
Till both wings crescent-wise enfold  
Your perfect self, from 'neath your feet  
To o'er your head, where, lo, they meet  
As if a million sword-blades hurled  
Defiance from you to the world!

Rescue me thou, the only real!  
And scare away this mad ideal  
That came, nor motions to depart!  
Thanks! Now, stay ever as thou art!

*Still he muses.*

What if the Three should catch at last  
Thy serenader? While there's cast  
Paul's cloak about my head, and fast  
Gian pinions me, Himself has past  
His stylet through my back; I reel;  
And . . . is it thou I feel?

They trail me, these three godless knaves,  
Past every church that saints and saves,

Nor stop till, where the cold sea raves  
By Lido's wet accursed graves,  
They scoop mine, roll me to its brink,  
And . . . on thy breast I sink!

*She replies, musing.*

Dip your arm o'er the boat-side, elbow-deep,  
As I do: thus: were death so unlike sleep,  
Caught this way? Death's to fear from flame  
or steel,  
Or poison doubtless; but from water—feel!

Go find the bottom! Would you stay me?  
There!

Now pluck a great blade of that ribbon-grass  
To plait in where the foolish jewel was,  
I flung away: since you have praised my hair,  
'T is proper to be choice in what I wear.

*He speaks.*

Row home? must we row home? Too surely  
Know I where its front's demurely  
Over the Giudecca piled;  
Window just with window mating,  
Door on door exactly waiting,  
All's the set face of a child:  
But behind it, where's a trace  
Of the staidness and reserve,  
And formal lines without a curve,  
In the same child's playing-face?  
No two windows look one way  
O'er the small sea-water thread  
Below them. Ah, the autumn day  
I, passing, saw you overhead!  
First, out a cloud of curtain blew,  
Then a sweet cry, and last came you—  
To catch your lory that must needs  
Escape just then, of all times then,  
To peck a tall plant's fleecy seeds,  
And make me happiest of men.  
I scarce could breathe to see you reach  
So far back o'er the balcony  
To catch him ere he climbed too high  
Above you in the Smyrna peach,  
That quick the round smooth cord of gold,  
This coiled hair on your head, unrolled,  
Fell down you like a gorgeous snake  
The Roman girls were wont, of old,  
When Rome there was, for coolness' sake  
To let lie curling o'er their bosoms.  
Dear lory, may his beak retain  
Ever its delicate rose stain  
As if the wounded lotus-blossoms  
Had marked their thief to know again!

Stay longer yet, for others' sake  
Than mine! What should your chamber do?  
— With all its rarities that ache  
In silence while day lasts, but wake  
At night-time and their life renew,  
Suspended just to pleasure you  
Who brought against their will together  
These objects, and, while day lasts, weave  
Around them such a magic tether  
That dumb they look: your harp, believe,  
With all the sensitive tight strings  
Which dare not speak, now to itself  
Breathes slumberously, as if some elf

Went in and out the chords, his wings  
 Make murmur wheresoe'er they graze,  
 As an angel may, between the maze  
 Of midnight palace-pillars, on  
 And on, to sow God's plagues, have gone  
 Through guilty glorious Babylon.  
 And while such murmurs flow, the nymph  
 Bends o'er the harp-top from her shell  
 As the dry limpet for the lymph  
 Come with a tune he knows so well.  
 And how your statues' hearts must swell !  
 And how your pictures must descend  
 To see each other, friend with friend !  
 Oh, could you take them by surprise,  
 You 'd find Schidone's eager Duke  
 Doing the quaintest courtesies  
 To that prim saint by Haste-thee-Luke !  
 And, deeper into her rock den,  
 Bold Castelfranco's Magdalen  
 You 'd find retreated from the ken  
 Of that robbed counsel-keeping Ser —  
 As if the Tizian thinks of her,  
 And is not, rather, gravely bent  
 On seeing for himself what toys  
 Are these, his progeny invent.  
 What litter now the board employs  
 Whereon he signed a document  
 That got him murdered ! Each enjoys  
 Its night so well, you cannot break  
 The sport up, so, indeed must make  
 More stay with me, for others' sake.

*She speaks.*

To-morrow, if a harp-string, say,  
 Is used to tie the jasmine back  
 That overfloods my room with sweets,  
 Contrive your Zorzi somehow meets  
 My Zanze ! If the ribbon's black,  
 The Three are watching : keep away !

Your gondola — let Zorzi wreathe  
 A mesh of water-weeds about  
 Its prow, as if he unaware  
 Had struck some quay or bridge-foot stair !  
 That I may throw a paper out  
 As you and he go underneath.

There's Zanze's vigilant taper ; safe are we,  
 Only one minute more to-night with me ?  
 Resume your past self of a month ago !  
 Be you the bashful gallant, I will be  
 The lady with the colder breast than snow.  
 Now bow you, as becomes, nor touch my hand  
 More than I touch yours when I step to land,  
 And say, " All thanks, Siora ! " —

Heart to heart

And lips to lips ! Yet once more, ere we part,  
 Clasp me and make me thine, as mine thou art !

*He is surprised, and stabbed.*

It was ordained to be so, sweet ! — and best  
 Comes now, beneath thine eyes, upon thy  
 breast.

Still kiss me ! Care not for the cowards ! Care  
 Only to put aside thy beauteous hair  
 My blood will hurt ! The Three, I do not scorn  
 To death, because they never lived : but I  
 Have lived indeed, and so — (yet one more  
 kiss) — can die !

## WARING

An account of Alfred Domett, Browning's  
 early friend, who was the occasion of this poem,  
 will be found in the notes.

### I

### I

WHAT 's become of Waring  
 Since he gave us all the slip,  
 Chose land-travel or seafaring,  
 Boots and chest or staff and scrip,  
 Rather than pace up and down  
 Any longer London town ?

### II

Who 'd have guessed it from his lip  
 Or his brow's accustomed bearing,  
 On the night he thus took ship  
 Or started landward ? — little caring  
 For us, it seems, who supped together  
 (Friends of his too, I remember)  
 And walked home through the merry weather,  
 The snowiest in all December.  
 I left his arm that night myself  
 For what 's-his-name's, the new prose-poet  
 Who wrote the book there, on the shelf —  
 How, forsooth, was I to know it  
 If Waring meant to glide away  
 Like a ghost at break of day ?  
 Never looked he half so gay !

### III

He was prouder than the devil :  
 How he must have cursed our revel !  
 Ay and many other meetings,  
 Indoor visits, outdoor greetings,  
 As up and down he paced this London,  
 With no work done, but great works undone,  
 Where scarce twenty knew his name.  
 Why not, then, have earlier spoken,  
 Written, bustled ? Who 's to blame  
 If your silence kept unbroken ?  
 " True, but there were sundry jottings,  
 Stray-leaves, fragments, blurs and blottings,  
 Certain first steps were achieved  
 Already which " — (is that your meaning ?)  
 " Had well borne out who'er believed  
 In more to come ! " But who goes glean-  
 ing Hedgeside chance-blades, while full-sheaved  
 Stand cornfields by him ? Pride, o'erweening  
 Pride alone, puts forth such claims  
 O'er the day's distinguished names.

### IV

Meantime, how much I loved him,  
 I find out now I've lost him,  
 I who cared not if I moved him,  
 Who could so carelessly accost him,  
 Henceforth never shall get free  
 Of his ghostly company.  
 His eyes that just a little wink  
 As deep I go into the merit  
 Of this and that distinguished spirit —  
 His cheeks' raised color, soon to sink,

As long I dwell on some stupendous  
And tremendous (Heaven defend us!)  
Monstr'-inform'-ingens-horrend-ous  
Demoniaco-seraphic  
Penman's latest piece of graphic.  
Nay, my very wrist grows warm  
With his dragging weight of arm.  
E'en so, swimmingly appears,  
Through one's after-supper musings,  
Some lost lady of old years  
With her beauteous vain endeavor  
And goodness unrepaid as ever;  
The face, accustomed to refusings,  
We, puppies that we were . . . Oh never  
Surely, nice of conscience, scrupled  
Being aught like false, forsooth, to?  
Telling aught but honest truth to?  
What a sin, had we centupled  
Its possessor's grace and sweetness!  
No! she heard in its completeness  
Truth, for truth's a weighty matter,  
And truth, at issue, we can't flatter!  
Well, 't is done with; she's exempt  
From damning us through such a sally;  
And so she glides, as down a valley,  
Taking up with her contempt,  
Past our reach; and in, the flowers  
Shut her unregarded hours.

V

Oh, could I have him back once more,  
This Waring, but one half-day more!  
Back, with the quiet face of yore,  
So hungry for acknowledgment  
Like mine! I'd fool him to his bent.  
Feed, should not he, to heart's content?  
I'd say, "to only have conceived,  
Planned your great works, apart from progress,  
Surpasses little works achieved!"  
I'd lie so, I should be believed.  
I'd make such havoc of the claims  
Of the day's distinguished names  
To feast him with, as feasts an ogress  
Her feverish sharp-toothed gold-crowned child!  
Or as one feasts a creature rarely  
Captured here, unreconciled  
To capture; and completely gives  
Its pettish humors license, barely  
Requiring that it lives.

VI

Ichabod, Ichabod,  
The glory is departed!  
Travels Waring East away?  
Who, of knowledge, by hearsay,  
Reports a man upstarted  
Somewhere as a god,  
Hordes grown European-hearted,  
Millions of the wild made tame  
On a sudden at his fame?  
In Vishnu-land what Avatar?  
Or who in Moscow, toward the Czar,  
With the demurest of footfalls  
Over the Kremlin's pavement bright  
With serpentine and syenite,  
Steps, with five other Generals  
That simultaneously take snuff,  
For each to have pretext enough

And kerchiefwise unfold his sash  
Which, softness' self, is yet the staff  
To hold fast where a steel chain snaps,  
And leave the grand white neck no gash?  
Waring in Moscow, to those rough  
Cold northern natures born perhaps,  
Like the lambwhite maiden dear  
From the circle of mute kings  
Unable to repress the tear,  
Each as his sceptre down he flings,  
To Dian's fane at Taurica,  
Where now a captive priestess, she alway  
Mingles her tender grave Hellenic speech  
With theirs, tuned to the hailstone-beaten beach  
As pours some pigeon, from the myrrhy lands  
Rapt by the whirlblast to fierce Scythian  
strands

Where breed the swallows, her melodious cry  
Amid their barbarous twitter!  
In Russia? Never! Spain were fitter!  
Ay, most likely 't is in Spain  
That we and Waring meet again  
Now, while he turns down that cool narrow lane  
Into the blackness, out of grave Madrid  
All fire and shine, abrupt as when there's slid  
Its stiff gold blazing pall  
From some black coffin-lid.  
Or, best of all,  
I love to think

The leaving us was just a feint;  
Back here to London did he slink,  
And now works on without a wink  
Of sleep, and we are on the brink  
Of something great in fresco-paint:  
Some garret's ceiling, walls and floor,  
Up and down and o'er and o'er  
He splashes, as none splashed before  
Since great Caldara Polidore.  
Or Music means this land of ours  
Some favor yet, to pity won  
By Purcell from his Rosy Bowers, —  
"Give me my so-long promised son,  
Let Waring end what I begun!"  
Then down he creeps and out he steals  
Only when the night conceals  
His face; in Kent 't is cherry-time,  
Or hops are picking: or at prime  
Of March he wanders as, too happy,  
Years ago when he was young,  
Some mild eve when woods grew sappy  
And the early moths had sprung  
To life from many a trembling sheath  
Woven the warm boughs beneath;  
While small birds said to themselves  
What should soon be actual song,  
And young gnats, by tens and twelves,  
Made as if they were the throng  
That crowd around and carry aloft  
The sound they have nursed, so sweet and pure,  
Out of a myriad noises soft,  
Into a tone that can endure  
Amid the noise of a July noon  
When all God's creatures crave their boon,  
All at once and all in tune,  
And get it, happy as Waring then,  
Having first within his ken  
What a man might do with men:  
And far too glad, in the even-glow.



To mix with the world he meant to take  
 Into his hand, he told you, so —  
 And out of it his world to make,  
 To contract and to expand  
 As he shut or oped his hand.  
 O Waring, what 's to really be ?  
 A clear stage and a crowd to see !  
 Some Garrick, say, out shall not he  
 The heart of Hamlet's mystery pluck ?  
 Or, where most unclean beasts are rife,  
 Some Junius — am I right ? — shall tuck  
 His sleeve, and forth with flaying-knife !  
 Some Chatterton shall have the luck  
 Of calling Rowley into life !  
 Some one shall somehow run a-muck  
 With this old world for want of strife  
 Sound asleep. Contrive, contrive  
 To rouse us, Waring ! Who 's alive ?  
 Our men scarce seem in earnest now.  
 Distinguished names ! — but 't is, somehow,  
 As if they played at being names  
 Still more distinguished, like the games  
 Of children. Turn our sport to earnest  
 With a visage of the sternest !  
 Bring the real times back, confessed  
 Still better than our very best !

## II

## I

"When I last saw Waring . . ."  
 (How all turned to him who spoke !  
 You saw Waring ? Truth or joke ?  
 In land-travel or sea-faring ?)

## II

"We were sailing by Triest  
 Where a day or two we harbored :  
 A sunset was in the West,  
 When, looking over the vessel's side,  
 One of our company espied  
 A sudden speck to larboard.  
 And as a sea-duck flies and swims  
 At once, so came the light craft up,  
 With its sole lateen sail that trims  
 And turns (the water round its rims  
 Dancing, as round a sinking cup)  
 And by us like a fish it curled,  
 And drew itself up close beside,  
 Its great sail on the instant furled,  
 And o'er its thwarts a shrill voice cried,  
 (A neck as bronzed as a Lascar's)  
 'Buy wine of us, you English brig ?  
 Or fruit, tobacco and cigars ?  
 A pilot for you to Triest ?  
 Without one, look you ne'er so big,  
 They 'll never let you up the bay !  
 We natives should know best.'  
 I turned, and 'just those fellows' way,  
 Our captain said, 'The 'long-shore thieves  
 Are laughing at us in their sleeves.'

## III

"In truth, the boy leaned laughing back ;  
 And one, half-hidden by his side  
 Under the furled sail, soon I spied,  
 With great grass hat and kerchief black,

Who looked up with his kingly throat  
 Said somewhat, while the other shook  
 His hair back from his eyes to look  
 Their longest at us ; then the boat,  
 I know not how, turned sharply round,  
 Laying her whole side on the sea  
 As a leaping fish does ; from the lee  
 Into the weather, cut somehow  
 Her sparkling path beneath our bow  
 And so went off, as with a bound,  
 Into the rosy and golden half  
 O' the sky, to overtake the sun  
 And reach the shore, like the sea-calf  
 Its singing cave ; yet I caught one  
 Glance ere away the boat quite passed,  
 And neither time nor toil could mar  
 Those features : so I saw the last  
 Of Waring ! " — You ? Oh, never star  
 Was lost here but it rose afar !  
 Look East, where whole new thousands are !  
 In Vishnu-land what Avatar ?

## THE TWINS

"Give" and "It-shall-be-given-unto-you"

Originally published in 1854, in connection  
 with a poem by Mrs. Browning, *A Plea for the  
 Ragged Schools of London*, in a volume issued  
 for a bazaar to benefit the "Refuge for Young  
 Destitute Girls."

GRAND rough old Martin Luther  
 Bloomed fables — flowers on furze,  
 The better the uncouth :  
 Do roses stick like burrs ?

A beggar asked an alms  
 One day at an abbey-door,  
 Said Luther ; but, seized with qualms,  
 The Abbot replied, "We 're poor !

"Poor, who had plenty once,  
 When gifts fell thick as rain :  
 But they give us naught, for the nonce,  
 And how should we give again ?"

Then the beggar, "See your sins !  
 Of old, unless I err,  
 Ye had brothers for inmates, twins,  
 Date and Dabitur.

"While Date was in good case  
 Dabitur flourished too :  
 For Dabitur's lenten face  
 No wonder if Date rue.

"Would ye retrieve the one ?  
 Try and make plump the other !  
 When Date's penance is done,  
 Dabitur helps his brother.

"Only, beware relapse !"  
 The Abbot hung his head.  
 This beggar might be perhaps  
 An angel, Luther said.

## A LIGHT WOMAN

So far as our story approaches the end,  
Which do you pity the most of us three? —  
My friend, or the mistress of my friend  
With her wanton eyes, or me?

My friend was already too good to lose,  
And seemed in the way of improvement  
yet,  
When she crossed his path with her hunting-  
noose,  
And over him drew her net.

When I saw him tangled in her toils,  
A shame, said I, if she adds just him  
To her nine-and-ninety other spoils,  
The hundredth for a whim!

And before my friend be wholly hers,  
How easy to prove to him, I said,  
An eagle's the game her pride prefers,  
Though she snaps at a wren instead!

So, I gave her eyes my own eyes to take,  
My hand sought hers as in earnest need,  
And round she turned for my noble sake,  
And gave me herself indeed.

The eagle am I, with my fame in the world,  
The wren is he, with his maiden face.  
— You look away and your lip is curled?  
Patience, a moment's space!

For see, my friend goes shaking and white;  
He eyes me as the basilisk:  
I have turned, it appears, his day to night,  
Eclipsing his sun's disk.

And I did it, he thinks, as a very thief:  
"Though I love her — that, he compre-  
hends —  
One should master one's passions, (love, in chief)  
And be loyal to one's friends!"

And she, — she lies in my hand as tame  
As a pear late basking over a wall;  
Just a touch to try and off it came;  
'Tis mine, — can I let it fall?

With no mind to eat it, that's the worst!  
Were it thrown in the road, would the case  
assist?

'T was quenching a dozen blue-flies' thirst  
When I gave its stalk a twist.

And I, — what I seem to my friend, you see:  
What I soon shall seem to his love, you  
guess:  
What I seem to myself, do you ask of me?  
No hero, I confess.

'T is an awkward thing to play with souls,  
And matter enough to save one's own:  
Yet think of my friend, and the burning coals  
He played with for bits of stone!

One likes to show the truth for the truth;  
That the woman was light is very true:  
But suppose she says, — Never mind that  
youth!  
What wrong have I done to you?

Well, anyhow, here the story stays,  
So far at least as I understand;  
And, Robert Browning, you writer of plays,  
Here's a subject made to your hand!

## THE LAST RIDE TOGETHER

I SAID — Then, dearest, since 'tis so,  
Since now at length my fate I know,  
Since nothing all my love avails,  
Since all, my life seemed meant for, fails,  
Since this was written and needs must be —  
My whole heart rises up to bless  
Your name in pride and thankfulness!  
Take back the hope you gave, — I claim  
Only a memory of the same,  
— And this beside, if you will not blame,  
Your leave for one more last ride with me.

My mistress bent that brow of hers;  
Those deep dark eyes where pride demurs  
When pity would be softening through,  
Fixed me a breathing-while or two  
With life or death in the balance: right!  
The blood replenished me again;  
My last thought was at least not vain:  
I and my mistress, side by side  
Shall be together, breathe and ride,  
So, one day more am I deified.  
Who knows but the world may end to-night?

Hush! if you saw some western cloud  
All billowy-bosomed, over-bowed  
By many benedictions — sun's  
And moon's and evening-star's at once —  
And so, you, looking and loving best,  
Conscious grew, your passion drew  
Cloud, sunset, moonrise, star-shine too,  
Down on you, near and yet more near,  
Till flesh must fade for heaven was here! —  
Thus leant she and lingered — joy and fear!  
Thus lay she a moment on my breast.

Then we began to ride. My soul  
Smoothed itself out, a long-cramped scroll  
Freshening and fluttering in the wind.  
Past hopes already lay behind.

What need to strive with a life awry?  
Had I said that, had I done this,  
So might I gain, so might I miss.  
Might she have loved me? just as well  
She might have hated, who can tell!  
Where had I been now if the worst befell?  
And here we are riding, she and I.

Fail I alone, in words and deeds?  
Why, all men strive, and who succeeds?  
We rode; it seemed my spirit flew,  
Saw other regions, cities new,  
As the world rushed by on either side.

I thought, — All labor, yet no less  
 Bear up beneath their unsuccess.  
 Look at the end of work, contrast  
 The petty done, the undone vast,  
 This present of theirs with the hopeful past !  
 I hoped she would love me ; here we ride.

What hand and brain went ever paired ?  
 What heart alike conceived and dared ?  
 What act proved all its thought had been ?  
 What will but felt the fleshly screen ?  
 We ride and I see her bosom heave.  
 There 's many a crown for who can reach.  
 Ten lines, a statesman's life in each !  
 The flag stuck on a heap of bones,  
 A soldier's doing ! what atones ?  
 They scratch his name on the Abbey-stones.  
 My riding is better, by their leave.

What does it all mean, poet ? Well,  
 Your brains beat into rhythm, you tell  
 What we felt only ; you expressed  
 You hold things beautiful the best,  
 And place them in rhyme so, side by side.  
 'Tis something, nay 't is much : but then,  
 Have you yourself what 's best for men ?  
 Are you — poor, sick, old ere your time —  
 Nearer one whit your own sublime  
 Than we who never have turned a rhyme ?  
 Sing, riding 's a joy ! For me, I ride.

And you, great sculptor — so, you gave  
 A score of years to Art, her slave,  
 And that 's your Venus, whence we turn  
 To yonder girl that fords the burn !  
 You acquiesce, and shall I repine ?  
 What, man of music, you grown gray  
 With notes and nothing else to say,  
 Is this your sole praise from a friend,  
 " Greatly his opera's strains intend,  
 But in music we know how fashions end ! "  
 I gave my youth ; but we ride, in fine.

Who knows what 's fit for us ? Had fate  
 Proposed bliss here should sublimate  
 My being — had I signed the bond —  
 Still one must lead some life beyond,  
 Have a bliss to die with, dim-described.  
 This foot once planted on the goal,  
 This glory-garland round my soul,  
 Could I desecr such ? Try and test !  
 I sink back shuddering from the quest.  
 Earth being so good, would heaven seem best ?  
 Now, heaven and she are beyond this ride.

And yet — she has not spoke so long !  
 What if heaven be that, fair and strong  
 At life's best, with our eyes upturned  
 Whither life's flower is first discerned,  
 We, fixed so, ever should so abide ?  
 What if we still ride on, we two,  
 With life forever old yet new,  
 Changed not in kind but in degree,  
 The instant made eternity, —  
 And heaven just prove that I and she  
 Ride, ride together, forever ride ?

## THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN

### A CHILD'S STORY

(Written for, and inscribed to, W. M. the Younger)

Macready's eldest son when a child was confined to the house by illness, and Browning wrote this *jeu d'esprit* to amuse the child and give him a subject for illustrative drawings.

#### I

HAMELIN Town 's in Brunswick,  
 By famous Hanover city ;  
 The river Weser, deep and wide,  
 Washes its wall on the southern side ;  
 A pleasanter spot you never spied ;  
 But, when begins my ditty,  
 Almost five hundred years ago,  
 To see the townsfolk suffer so  
 From vermin, was a pity.

#### II

Rats !  
 They fought the dogs and killed the cats,  
 And bit the babies in the cradles,  
 And ate the cheeses out of the vats,  
 And licked the soup from the cooks' own  
 ladles,  
 Split open the kegs of salted sprats,  
 Made nests inside men's Sunday hats,  
 And even spoiled the women's chatts  
 By drowning their speaking  
 With shrieking and squeaking  
 In fifty different sharps and flats.

#### III

At last the people in a body  
 To the Town Hall came flocking :  
 " 'T is clear," cried they, " our Mayor 's a  
 noddy ;  
 And as for our Corporation — shocking  
 To think we buy gowns lined with ermine  
 For dolts that can't or won't determine  
 What 's best to rid us of our vermin !  
 You hope, because you 're old and obese,  
 To find in the furry civic robe ease ?  
 Rouse up, sirs ! Give your brains a racking  
 To find the remedy we 're lacking,  
 Or, sure as fate, we 'll send you packing ! "  
 At this the Mayor and Corporation  
 Quaked with a mighty consternation.

#### IV

An hour they sat in council ;  
 At length the Mayor broke silence :  
 " For a guilder I 'd my ermine gown sell,  
 I wish I were a mile hence !  
 It 's easy to bid one rack one's brain —  
 I 'm sure my poor head aches again,  
 I 've scratched it so, and all in vain.  
 Oh for a trap, a trap, a trap ! "  
 Just as he said this, what should hap  
 At the chamber-door but a gentle tap ?  
 " Bless us," cried the Mayor, " what 's that ? "  
 (With the Corporation as he sat,



Looking little though wondrous fat ;  
Nor brighter was his eye, nor moister  
Than a too-long-opened oyster,  
Save when at noon his paunch grew mutinous  
For a plate of turtle green and glutinous)  
" Only a scraping of shoes on the mat ?  
Anything like the sound of a rat  
Makes my heart go pit-a-pat ! "

V

" Come in ! " — the Mayor cried, looking bigger :

And in did come the strangest figure !  
His queer long coat from heel to head  
Was half of yellow and half of red,  
And he himself was tall and thin,  
With sharp blue eyes, each like a pin,  
And light loose hair, yet swarthy skin,  
No tuft on cheek nor beard on chin,  
But lips where smiles went out and in ;  
There was no guessing his kith and kin :  
And nobody could enough admire  
The tall man and his quaint attire.  
Quoth one : " It 's as my great-grandsire,  
Starting up at the Trump of Doom 's tone,  
Had walked this way from his painted tomb-  
stone ! "

VI

He advanced to the council-table :  
And, " Please your honors," said he, " I 'm  
able,

By means of a secret charm, to draw  
All creatures living beneath the sun,  
That creep or swim or fly or run,  
After me so as you never saw !  
And I chiefly use my charm  
On creatures that do people harm,  
The mole and toad and newt and viper ;  
And people call me the Pied Piper."  
And here they noticed round his neck  
A scarf of red and yellow stripe,  
To match with his coat of the self-same cheque ;  
And at the scarf 's end hung a pipe ;  
And his fingers, they noticed, were ever stray-  
ing

As if impatient to be playing  
Upon this pipe, as low it dangled  
Over his vesture so old-fangled.)  
" Yet," said he, " poor piper as I am,  
In Tartary I freed the Cham,  
Last June, from his huge swarms of gnats ;  
I eased in Asia the Nizam  
Of a monstrous brood of vampire-bats ;  
And as for what your brain bewilders,  
If I can rid your town of rats  
Will you give me a thousand guilders ? "  
" One ? fifty thousand ! " — was the exclama-  
tion

Of the astonished Mayor and Corporation.

VII

Into the street the Piper stept,  
Smiling first a little smile,  
As if he knew what magic slept  
In his quiet pipe the while ;  
Then, like a musical adept,  
To blow the pipe his lips he wrinkled,

And green and blue his sharp eyes twinkled,  
Like a candle-flame where salt is sprinkled ;  
And ere three shrill notes the pipe uttered,  
You heard as if an army muttered ;  
And the muttering grew to a grumbling ;  
And the grumbling grew to a mighty rumbling ;  
And out of the houses the rats came tumbling.  
Great rats, small rats, lean rats, brawny rats,  
Brown rats, black rats, gray rats, tawny rats,  
Grave old plodders, gay young friskers,

Fathers, mothers, uncles, cousins,  
Cocking tails and pricking whiskers,

Families by tens and dozens,  
Brothers, sisters, husbands, wives —  
Followed the Piper for their lives.  
From street to street he piped advancing,  
And step for step they followed dancing,  
Until they came to the river Weser,  
Wherein all plunged and perished !  
— Save one who, stout as Julius Cæsar,  
Swam across and lived to carry  
(As he, the manuscript he cherished)  
To Rat-land home his commentary :  
Which was, " At the first shrill notes of the  
pipe,

I heard a sound as of scraping tripe,  
And putting apples, wondrous ripe,  
Into a cider-press 's gripe :  
And a moving away of pickle-tub-boards,  
And a leaving ajar of conserve-cupboards,  
And a drawing the corks of train-oil-flasks,  
And a breaking the hoops of butter-casks :  
And it seemed as if a voice  
(Sweeter far than by harp or by psaltery  
Is breathed) called out, ' Oh rats, rejoice !  
The world is grown to one vast dysaltory !  
So munch on, crunch on, take your muncheon,  
Breakfast, supper, dinner, luncheon ! '  
And just as a bulky sugar-puncheon,  
All ready staved, like a great sun shone  
Glorious scarce an inch before me,  
Just as methought it said, ' Come, bore me ! '  
— I found the Weser rolling o'er me."

VIII

You should have heard the Hamelin people  
Ringing the bells till they rocked the steeple.  
" Go," cried the Mayor, " and get long poles,  
Poke out the nests and block up the holes !  
Consult with carpenters and builders,  
And leave in our town not even a trace  
Of the rats ! " — when suddenly, up the face  
Of the Piper perked in the market-place,  
With a, " First, if you please, my thousand  
guilders ! "

IX

A thousand guilders ! The Mayor looked blue ;  
So did the Corporation too.  
For council dinners made rare havoc  
With Claret, Moselle, Vin-de-Grave, Hock ;  
And half the money would replenish  
Their cellar 's biggest butt with Rhenish.  
To pay this sum to a wandering fellow  
With a gypsy coat of red and yellow !  
" Beside," quoth the Mayor with a knowing  
wink,  
" Our business was done at the river 's brink ;

We saw with our eyes the vermin sink,  
And what's dead can't come to life, I think.  
So, friend, we're not the folks to shrink  
From the duty of giving you something for  
drink,

And a matter of money to put in your poke;  
But as for the guilders, what we spoke  
Of them, as you very well know, was in joke.  
Beside, our losses have made us thrifty.  
A thousand guilders! Come, take fifty!"

## X

The Piper's face fell, and he cried,  
"No trifling! I can't wait, beside!  
I've promised to visit by dinner time  
Bagdat, and accept the prime  
Of the Head-Cook's pottage, all he's rich in,  
For having left, in the Caliph's kitchen,  
Of a nest of scorpions no survivor:  
With him I proved no bargain-driver,  
With you, don't think I'll bate a stiver!  
And folks who put me in a passion  
May find me pipe after another fashion."

## XI

"How?" cried the Mayor, "d'ye think I brook  
Being worse treated than a Cook?  
Insulted by a lazy ribald  
With idle pipe and vesture piebald?  
You threaten us, fellow? Do your worst,  
Blow your pipe there till you burst!"

## XII

Once more he stepped into the street,  
And to his lips again  
Laid his long pipe of smooth straight cane;  
And ere he blew three notes (such sweet  
Soft notes as yet musician's cunning  
Never gave the enraptured air)  
There was a rustling that seemed like a bustling  
Of merry crowds justling at pitching and hust-  
ling;  
Small feet were pattering, wooden shoes clat-  
tering,  
Little hands clapping and little tongues chat-  
tering,  
And, like fowls in a farm-yard when barley is  
scattering,  
Out came the children running.  
All the little boys and girls,  
With rosy cheeks and flaxen curls,  
And sparkling eyes and teeth like pearls,  
Tripping and skipping, ran merrily after  
The wonderful music with shouting and laugh-  
ter.

## XIII

The Mayor was dumb, and the Council stood  
As if they were changed into blocks of wood,  
Unable to move a step, or cry  
To the children merrily skipping by,  
— Could only follow with the eye  
That joyous crowd at the Piper's back.  
But how the Mayor was on the rack,  
And the wretched Council's bosoms beat,  
As the Piper turned from the High Street  
To where the Weser rolled its waters  
Right in the way of their sons and daughters!  
However, he turned from South to West,

And to Koppelberg Hill his steps addressed,  
And after him the children pressed;  
Great was the joy in every breast.  
"He never can cross that mighty top!  
He's forced to let the piping drop,  
And we shall see our children stop!"  
When, lo, as they reached the mountain-side,  
A wondrous portal opened wide.  
As if a cavern was suddenly hollowed;  
And the Piper advanced and the children fol-  
lowed,

And when all were in to the very last,  
The door in the mountain-side shut fast.  
Did I say, all? No! One was lame,  
And could not dance the whole of the way;  
And in after years, if you would blame  
His sadness, he was used to say, —  
"It's dull in our town since my playmates left!  
I can't forget that I'm bereft  
Of all the pleasant sights they see,  
Which the Piper also promised me.  
For he led us, he said, to a joyous land,  
Joining the town and just at hand,  
Where waters gushed and fruit-trees grew  
And flowers put forth a fairer hue,  
And everything was strange and new;  
The sparrows were brighter than peacocks here,  
And their dogs outran our fallow deer,  
And honey-bees had lost their stings,  
And horses were born with eagles' wings:  
And just as I became assured  
My lame foot would be speedily cured,  
The music stopped and I stood still,  
And found myself outside the hill,  
Left alone against my will,  
To go now limping as before,  
And never hear of that country more!"

## XIV

Alas, alas for Hamelin!  
There came into many a burgher's pate  
A text which says that heaven's gate  
Opens to the rich at as easy rate  
As the needle's eye takes a camel in!  
The Mayor sent East, West, North and South,  
To offer the Piper, by word of mouth,  
Wherever it was men's lot to find him,  
Silver and gold to his heart's content,  
If he'd only return the way he went,  
And bring the children behind him.  
But when they saw 'twas a lost endeavor,  
And Piper and dancers were gone forever,  
They made a decree that lawyers never  
Should think their records dated duly  
If, after the day of the month and year,  
These words did not as well appear,  
"And so long after what happened here  
On the Twenty-second of July,  
Thirteen hundred and seventy six:"  
And the better in memory to fix  
The place of the children's last retreat,  
They called it, the Pied Piper's Street —  
Where any one playing on pipe or tabor  
Was sure for the future to lose his labor.  
Nor suffered they hostelry or tavern  
To shock with mirth a street so solemn;  
But opposite the place of the cavern  
They wrote the story on a column,

And on the great church-window painted  
 The same, to make the world acquainted  
 How their children were stolen away,  
 And there it stands to this very day.  
 And I must not omit to say  
 That in Transylvania there's a tribe  
 Of alien people who ascribe  
 The outlandish ways and dress  
 On which their neighbors lay such stress,  
 To their fathers and mothers having risen  
 Out of some subterraneous prison  
 Into which they were trepanned  
 Long time ago in a mighty band  
 Out of Hamelin town in Brunswick land,  
 But how or why, they don't understand.

## XV

So, Willy, let me and you be wipers  
 Of scores out with all men — especially pipers !  
 And, whether they pipe us free from rats or  
     from mice,  
 If we've promised them aught, let us keep our  
 promise !

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

The first nine sections of this poem were  
 printed in *Hood's Magazine* for April, 1845.

The poem took its rise from a line — "Following the Queen of the Gypsies, O!" the burden of a song which the poet, when a boy, heard a woman singing on a Guy Fawkes' Day. As Browning was writing it, he was interrupted by the arrival of a friend on some important business, which drove all thoughts of the Duchess, and the scheme of her story, out of the poet's head. But some months after the publication of the first part, when he was staying at Bettisfield Park, in Shropshire, a guest, speaking of early winter, said, "The deer had already to break the ice in the pond." On this a fancy struck the poet, and, returning home, he worked it up into the conclusion of the poem as it now stands.

## I

You're my friend :  
 I was the man the Duke spoke to ;  
 I helped the Duchess to cast off his yoke, too ;  
 So, here's the tale from beginning to end,  
 My friend !

## II

Ours is a great wild country :  
 If you climb to our castle's top,  
 I don't see where your eye can stop ;  
 For when you've passed the cornfield country,  
 Where vineyards leave off, flocks are packed,  
 And sheep-range leads to cattle-tract,  
 And cattle-tract to open-chase,  
 And open-chase to the very base  
 Of the mountain where, at a funeral pace,  
 Round about, solemn and slow,  
 One by one, row after row,

Up and up the pine-trees go,  
 So, like black priests up, and so  
 Down the other side again  
 To another greater, wilder country,  
 That's one vast red drear burnt-up plain,  
 Branched through and through with many a  
     vein

Whence iron's dug, and copper's dealt ;  
 Look right, look left, look straight before, —  
 Beneath they mine, above they smelt,  
 Copper-ore and iron-ore,  
 And forge and furnace mould and melt,  
 And so on, more and ever more,  
 Till at the last, for a bounding belt,  
 Comes the salt sand hoar of the great sea-shore,  
 — And the whole is our Duke's country.

## III

I was born the day this present Duke was —  
 (And O, says the song, ere I was old !)  
 In the castle where the other Duke was —  
 (When I was happy and young, not old !)  
 I in the kennel, he in the bower :  
 We are of like age to an hour.  
 My father was huntsman in that day ;  
 Who has not heard my father say  
 That, when a boar was brought to bay,  
 Three times, four times out of five,  
 With his huntspear he'd contrive  
 To get the killing-place transfixed,  
 And pin him true, both eyes betwixt ?  
 And that's why the old Duke would rather  
 He lost a salt-pit than my father,  
 And loved to have him ever in call ;  
 That's why my father stood in the hall  
 When the old Duke brought his infant out  
 To show the people, and while they passed  
 The wondrous bantling round about,  
 Was first to start at the outside blast  
 As the Kaiser's courier blew his horn,  
 Just a month after the babe was born.  
 "And," quoth the Kaiser's courier, "since  
 The Duke has got an heir, our Prince  
 Needs the Duke's self at his side :"  
 The Duke looked down and seemed to wince,  
 But he thought of wars o'er the world wide,  
 Castles a-fire, men on their march,  
 The toppling tower, the crashing arch ;  
 And up he looked, and awhile he eyed  
 The row of crests and shields and banners  
 Of all achievements after all manners,  
 And "ay," said the Duke with a surly pride.  
 The more was his comfort when he died  
 At next year's end, in a velvet suit,  
 With a gilt glove on his hand, his foot  
 In a silken shoe for a leather boot,  
 Petticoated like a herald,  
 In a chamber next to an ante-room,  
 Where he breathed the breath of page and  
     groom,  
 What he called stink, and they, perfume :  
 — They should have set him on red Berold  
 Mad with pride, like fire to manage !  
 They should have got his cheek fresh tannage  
 Such a day as to-day in the merry sunshine !  
 Had they stuck on his fist a rough-foot merlin !  
 (Hark, the wind's on the heath at its game !  
 Oh for a noble falcon-lanner



To flap each broad wing like a banner,  
And turn in the wind, and dance like flame !  
Had they broached a white-beer cask from  
Berlin

— Or if you incline to prescribe mere wine  
Put to his lips, when they saw him pine,  
A cup of our own Moldavia fine,  
Cotnar for instance, green as May sorrel  
And rosy with sweet, — we shall not quarrel.

## IV

So, at home, the sick tall yellow Duchess  
Was left with the infant in her clutches,  
She being the daughter of God knows who :  
And now was the time to revisit her tribe.  
Abroad and afar they went, the two,  
And let our people rail and gibe  
At the empty hall and extinguished fire,  
As loud as we liked, but ever in vain,  
Till after long years we had our desire,  
And back came the Duke and his mother again.

## V

And he came back the pertest little ape  
That ever affronted human shape ;  
Full of his travel, struck at himself.  
You 'd say, he despised our bluff old ways ?  
— Not he ! For in Paris they told the elf  
Our rough North land was the Land of Lays,  
The one good thing left in evil days ;  
Since the Mid-Age was the Heroic Time,  
And only in wild nooks like ours  
Could you taste of it yet as in its prime,  
And see true castles, with proper towers,  
Young-hearted women, old-minded men,  
And manners now as manners were then.  
So, all that the old Dukes had been, without  
knowing it,

This Duke would fain know he was, without  
being it ;

'T was not for the joy's self, but the joy of his  
showing it.

Nor for the pride's self, but the pride of our  
seeing it.

He revived all usages thoroughly worn-out,  
The souls of them fumed-forth, the hearts of  
them torn-out :

And chief in the chase his neck he perilled,  
On a lathy horse, all legs and length,  
With blood for bone, all speed, no strength ;  
— They should have set him on red Berold  
With the red eye slow consuming in fire,  
And the thin stiff ear like an abbey spire !

## VI

Well, such as he was, he must marry, we heard :  
And out of a convent, at the word,  
Came the lady, in time of spring.

— Oh, old thoughts they cling, they cling !

That day, I know, with a dozen oaths  
I clad myself in thick hunting-clothes

Fit for the chase of urochs or buffle

In winter-time when you need to muffle.

But the Duke had a mind we should cut a  
figure,

And so we saw the lady arrive :

My friend, I have seen a white crane bigger !

She was the smallest lady alive,

Made in a piece of nature's madness,  
Too small, almost, for the life and gladness  
That over-filled her, as some hive  
Out of the bears' reach on the high trees  
Is crowded with its safe merry bees :  
In truth, she was not hard to please !  
Up she looked, down she looked, round at the  
mead,

Straight at the castle, that's best indeed

To look at from outside the walls :

As for us, styled the "serfs and thralls,"

She as much thanked me as if she had said it,  
(With her eyes, do you understand ?)

Because I patted her horse while I led it ;

And Max, who rode on her other hand,

Said, no bird flew past but she inquired

What its true name was, nor ever seemed  
tired —

If that was an eagle she saw hover,

And the green and gray bird on the field was  
the plover.

When suddenly appeared the Duke :

And as down she sprung, the small foot pointed

On to my hand, — as with a rebuke,

And as if his backbone were not jointed,

The Duke stepped rather aside than forward,

And welcomed her with his grandest smile ;

And, mind you, his mother all the while

Chilled in the rear, like a wind to Nor'ward ;

And up, like a weary yawn, with its pulleys

Went, in a shriek, the rusty portecullis ;

And, like a glad sky the north-wind sullies,

The lady's face stopped its play,

As if her first hair had grown gray ;

For such things must begin some one day.

## VII

In a day or two she was well again ;

As who should say, "You labor in vain !

This is all a jest against God, who meant

I should ever be, as I am, content

And glad in his sight ; therefore, glad I will  
be."

So, smiling as at first went she.

## VIII

She was active, stirring, all fire —

Could not rest, could not tire —

To a stone she might have given life !

(I myself loved once, in my day)

— For a shepherd's, miner's, huntsman's wife,

(I had a wife, I know what I say)

Never in all the world such an one !

And here was plenty to be done,

And she that could do it, great or small,

She was to do nothing at all.

There was already this man in his post,

This in his station, and that in his office,

And the Duke's plan admitted a wife, at most,

To meet his eye, with the other trophies,

Now outside the hall, now in it,

To sit thus, stand thus, see and be seen,

At the proper place in the proper minute,

And die away the life between.

And it was amusing enough, each infraction

Of rule — (but for after-sadness that came)

To hear the consummate self-satisfaction

With which the young Duke and the old dame

Would let her advise, and criticise,  
And, being a fool, instruct the wise,  
And, child-like, parcel out praise or blame :  
They bore it all in complacent guise,  
As though an artificer, after contriving  
A wheel-work image as if it were living,  
Should find with delight it could motion to  
strike him !

So found the Duke, and his mother like him :  
The lady hardly got a rebuff —  
That had not been contemptuous enough,  
With his cursed smirk, as he nodded applause,  
And kept off the old mother-cat's claws.

## IX

So, the little lady grew silent and thin,

Paling and ever paling,  
As the way is with a hid chagrin ;

And the Duke perceived that she was ailing,  
And said in his heart, "'T is done to spite me,  
But I shall find in my power to right me !"  
Don't swear, friend ! The old one, many a  
year,

Is in hell, and the Duke's self . . . you shall  
hear.

## X

Well, early in autumn, at first winter-warning,  
When the stag had to break with his foot, of a  
morning,

A drinking-hole out of the fresh tender ice  
That covered the pond till the sun, in a trice,  
Loosening it, let out a ripple of gold,  
And another and another, and faster and faster,  
Till, dimpling to blindness, the wide water  
rolled :

Then it so chanced that the Duke our master  
Asked himself what were the pleasures in  
season,

And found, since the calendar bade him be  
hearty,

He should do the Middle Age no treason  
In resolving on a hunting-party.

Always provided, old books showed the way of  
it !

What meant old poets by their strictures ?  
And when old poets had said their say of it,  
How taught old painters in their pictures ?  
We must revert to the proper channels,  
Workings in tapestry, paintings on panels,  
And gather up woodcraft's authentic tradi-  
tions :

Here was food for our various ambitions,  
As on each case, exactly stated —  
To encourage your dog, now, the properest  
chirrup,

Or best prayer to Saint Hubert on mounting  
your stirrup —

We of the household took thought and de-  
bated.

Blessed was he whose back ached with the jerkin  
His sire was wont to do forest-work in ;

Blesseder he who nobly sunk "ohs"  
And "ahs" while he tugged on his grandsire's  
trunk-hose ;

What signified hats if they had no rims on,  
Each slouching before and behind like the scal-  
lop,

And able to serve at sea for a shallop,  
Loaded with lacquer and looped with crimson ?  
So that the deer now, to make a short rhyme  
on 't,

What with our Venerers, Prickers and Verder-  
ers,

Might hope for real hunters at length and not  
murderers.

And oh the Duke's tailor, he had a hot time  
on 't !

## XI

Now you must know that when the first dizzi-  
ness

Of flap-hats and buff-coats and jack-boots sub-  
sided,

The Duke put this question, "The Duke's  
part provided,

Had not the Duchess some share in the busi-  
ness ?"

For out of the mouth of two or three witnesses  
Did he establish all fit-or-unfitnesses :

And, after much laying of heads together,  
Somebody's cap got a notable feather

By the announcement with proper unction  
That he had discovered the lady's function ;

Since ancient authors gave this tenet,  
"When horns wind a mort and the deer is at  
siege,

Let the dame of the castle prick forth on her  
jennet.

And, with water to wash the hands of her liege  
In a clean ewer with a fair towelling,

Let her preside at the disembowelling."

Now, my friend, if you had so little religion  
As to catch a hawk, some falcon-lanner,

And thrust her broad wings like a banner  
Into a coop for a vulgar pigeon ;

And if day by day and week by week  
You cut her claws, and sealed her eyes,

And clipped her wings, and tied her beak,  
Would it cause you any great surprise

If, when you decided to give her an airing,  
You found she needed a little preparing ?

— I say, should you be such a curmudgeon,  
If she clung to the perch, as to take it in dud-  
geon ?

Yet when the Duke to his lady signified,  
Just a day before, as he judged most dignified,

In what a pleasure she was to participate, —  
And, instead of leaping wide in flashes,

Her eyes just lifted their long lashes,  
As if pressed by fatigue even he could not dissi-  
pate,

And duly acknowledged the Duke's fore-  
thought,

But spoke of her health, if her health were  
worth aught,

Of the weight by day and the watch by night,  
And much wrong now that used to be right,

So, thanking him, declined the hunting, —  
Was conduct ever more affronting ?

With all the ceremony settled —  
With the towel ready, and the sewer

Polishing up his oldest ewer,  
And the jennet pitched upon, a piebald,

Black-barred, cream-coated and pink eye-  
balled, —

No wonder if the Duke was nettled !  
 And when she persisted nevertheless, —  
 Well, I suppose here 's the time to confess  
 That there ran half round our lady's chamber  
 A balcony none of the hardest to clamber ;  
 And that Jacynth the tire-woman, ready in  
 waiting,  
 Stayed in call outside, what need of relating ?  
 And since Jacynth was like a June rose, why, a  
 fervent  
 Adorer of Jacynth of course was your servant ;  
 And if she had the habit to peep through the  
 casement,  
 How could I keep at any vast distance ?  
 And so, as I say, on the lady's persistence,  
 The Duke, dumb-stricken with amazement,  
 Stood for a while in a sultry smother,  
 And then, with a smile that partook of the awful,  
 Turned her over to his yellow mother  
 To learn what was held decorous and lawful ;  
 And the mother smelt blood with a cat-like  
 instinct,  
 As her cheek quick whitened through all its  
 quince-tinct.  
 Oh, but the lady heard the whole truth at once !  
 What meant she ? — Who was she ? — Her  
 duty and station,  
 The wisdom of age and the folly of youth, at  
 once,  
 Its decent regard and its fitting relation —  
 In brief, my friend, set all the devils in hell  
 free  
 And turn them out to carouse in a belfry  
 And treat the priests to a fifty-part canon,  
 And then you may guess how that tongue of  
 hers ran on !  
 Well, somehow or other it ended at last  
 And, licking her whiskers, out she passed ;  
 And after her, — making (he hoped) a face  
 Like Emperor Nero or Sultan Saladin,  
 Stalked the Duke's self with the austere grace  
 Of ancient hero or modern paladin,  
 From door to staircase — oh such a solemn  
 Unbending of the vertebral column !

## XII

However, at sunrise our company mustered ;  
 And here was the huntsman bidding unken-  
 nel,  
 And there 'neath his bonnet the prickier blus-  
 tered,  
 With feather dank as a bough of wet fennel ;  
 For the court-yard walls were filled with fog  
 You might have cut as an axe chops a log —  
 Like so much wool for color and bulkiness ;  
 And out rode the Duke in a perfect sulkiness,  
 Since, before breakfast, a man feels but queasily,  
 And a sinking at the lower abdomen  
 Begins the day with indifferent omen.  
 And lo, as he looked around uneasily,  
 The sun ploughed the fog up and drove it asun-  
 der  
 This way and that from the valley under ;  
 And, looking through the court-yard arch,  
 Down in the valley, what should meet him  
 But a troop of Gypsies on their march ?  
 No doubt with the annual gifts to greet him.

## XIII

Now, in your land, Gypsies reach you, only  
 After reaching all lands beside ;  
 North they go, South they go, trooping or  
 lonely,  
 And still, as they travel far and wide,  
 Catch they and keep now a trace here, a trace  
 there,  
 That puts you in mind of a place here, a place  
 there.  
 But with us, I believe they rise out of the  
 ground,  
 And nowhere else, I take it, are found  
 With the earth-tint yet so freshly embrowned :  
 Born, no doubt, like insects which breed on  
 The very fruit they are meant to feed on.  
 For the earth — not a use to which they don't  
 turn it,  
 The ore that grows in the mountain's womb,  
 Or the sand in the pits like a honeycomb,  
 They sift and soften it, bake it and burn it —  
 Whether they weld you, for instance, a snaffle  
 With side-bars never a brute can baffle ;  
 Or a lock that's a puzzle of wards within wards ;  
 Or, if your colt's forefoot inclines to curve in-  
 wards,  
 Horseshoes they hammer which turn on a swivel  
 And won't allow the hoof to shrivel.  
 Then they cast bells like the shell of the winkle  
 That keep a stout heart in the ram with their  
 tinkle ;  
 But the sand — they pinch and pound it like  
 otters ;  
 Commend me to Gypsy glass-makers and pot-  
 ters !  
 Glasses they'll blow you, crystal-clear,  
 Where just a faint cloud of rose shall appear,  
 As if in pure water you dropped and let die  
 A bruised black-blooded mulberry ;  
 And that other sort, their crowning pride,  
 With long white threads distinct inside,  
 Like the lake-flower's fibrous roots which dangle  
 Loose such a length and never tangle,  
 Where the bold sword-lily cuts the clear waters,  
 And the cup-lily couches with all the white  
 daughters :  
 Such are the works they put their hand to,  
 The uses they turn and twist iron and sand to,  
 And these made the troop, which our Duke saw  
 sally  
 Toward his castle from out of the valley,  
 Men and women, like new-hatched spiders,  
 Come out with the morning to greet our riders.  
 And up they wound till they reached the ditch,  
 Whereat all stopped save one, a witch  
 That I knew, as she hobbled from the group,  
 By her gait directly and her stoop,  
 I, whom Jacynth was used to importune  
 To let that same witch tell us our fortune,  
 The oldest Gypsy then above ground ;  
 And, sure as the autumn season came round,  
 She paid us a visit for profit or pastime,  
 And every time, as she swore, for the last time  
 And presently she was seen to sidle  
 Up to the Duke till she touched 'his bridle,  
 So that the horse of a sudden reared up  
 As under its nose the old witch peered up



With her worn-out eyes, or rather eye-holes  
Of no use now but to gather brine,  
And began a kind of level whine  
Such as they use to sing to their viols  
When their ditties they go grinding  
Up and down with nobody minding:  
And then, as of old, at the end of the humming  
Her usual presents were forthcoming  
— A dog-whistle blowing the fiercest of trebles,  
(Just a sea-shore stone holding a dozen fine pebbles.)

Or a porcelain mouthpiece to screw on a pipe-  
end, —  
And so she awaited her annual stipend.  
But this time, the Duke would scarcely vouch-  
safe

A word in reply; and in vain she felt  
With twitching fingers at her belt  
For the purse of sleek pine-marten pelt,  
Ready to put what he gave in her pouch safe, —  
Till, either to quicken his apprehension,  
Or possibly with an after-intention,  
She was come, she said, to pay her duty  
To the new Duchess, the youthful beauty.  
No sooner had she named his lady,  
Than a shine lit up the face so shady,  
And its smirk returned with a novel meaning —  
For it struck him, the babe just wanted wean-  
ing;

If one gave her a taste of what life was and  
sorrow,

She, foolish to-day, would be wiser to-morrow;  
And who so fit a teacher of trouble  
As this sordid crone bent well-nigh double?  
So, glancing at her wolf-skin vesture,  
(If such it was, for they grow so hirsute  
That their own fleece serves for natural fur-  
suit)

He was contrasting, 't was plain from his ges-  
ture,

The life of the lady so flower-like and delicate  
With the loathsome squalor of this helicat.  
I, in brief, was the man the Duke beckoned  
From out of the throng, and while I drew near  
He told the crone — as I since have reckoned  
By the way he bent and spoke into her ear  
With circumspection and mystery —

The main of the lady's history,  
Her frowardness and ingratitude:  
And for all the crone's submissive attitude  
I could see round her mouth the loose plaits  
tightening,

And her brow with assenting intelligence  
brightening,

As though she engaged with hearty goodwill  
Whatever he now might enjoin to fulfil,  
And promised the lady a thorough frightening.  
And so, just giving her a glimpse  
Of a purse, with the air of a man who imps  
The wing of the hawk that shall fetch the hern-  
shaw,

He bade me take the Gypsy mother  
And set her telling some story or other  
Of hill or dale, oak-wood or fernshaw,  
To while away a weary hour  
For the lady left alone in her bower,  
Whose mind and body craved exertion  
And yet shrank from all better diversion.

## XIV

Then clapping heel to his horse, the mere  
curveter,

Out rode the Duke, and after his hollo  
Horses and hounds swept, huntsman and servi-  
tor,

And back I turned and bade the crone follow.  
And what makes me confident what's to be  
told you

Had all along been of this crone's devising,  
Is, that, on looking round sharply, behold you,  
There was a novelty quick as surprising:  
For first, she had shot up a full head in stature,  
And her step kept pace with mine nor faltered,  
As if age had foregone its usurpature,  
And the ignoble mien was wholly altered,  
And the face looked quite of another nature,  
And the change reached too, whatever the  
change meant,

Her shaggy wolf-skin cloak's arrangement:  
For where its tatters hung loose like sedges,  
Gold coins were glittering on the edges,  
Like the band-roll strung with tomons  
Which proves the veil a Persian woman's:  
And under her brow, like a snail's horns newly  
Come out as after the rain he paces,  
Two unmistakable eye-points duly  
Live and aware looked out of their places.

So, we went and found Jacynth at the entry  
Of the lady's chamber standing sentry;  
I told the command and produced my com-  
panion,

And Jacynth rejoiced to admit any one,  
For since last night, by the same token,  
Not a single word had the lady spoken:  
They went in both to the presence together,  
While I in the balcony watched the weather.

## xv

And now, what took place at the very first of all,

I cannot tell, as I never could learn it:  
Jacynth constantly wished a curse to fall  
On that little head of hers and burn it,  
If she knew how she came to drop so soundly  
Asleep of a sudden and there continue  
The whole time sleeping as profoundly  
As one of the boars my father would pin you  
'Twixt the eyes where life holds garrison,  
— Jacynth forgive me the comparison!

But where I begin my own narration  
Is a little after I took my station  
To breathe the fresh air from the balcony,  
And, having in those days a falcon eye,  
To follow the hunt through the open country,  
From where the bushes thinlier crested  
The hillocks, to a plain where 's not one tree.  
When, in a moment, my ear was arrested  
By — was it singing, or was it saying,  
Or a strange musical instrument playing  
In the chamber? — and to be certain  
I pushed the lattice, pulled the curtain,  
And there lay Jacynth asleep,  
Yet as if a watch she tried to keep,  
In a rosy sleep along the floor  
With her head against the door;  
While in the midst, on the seat of state,  
Was a queen — the Gypsy woman late.

With head and face downbent  
 On the lady's head and face intent :  
 For, coiled at her feet like a child at ease,  
 The lady sat between her knees,  
 And o'er them the lady's clasped hands met,  
 And on those hands her chin was set,  
 And her upturned face met the face of the crone  
 Wherein the eyes had grown and grown  
 As if she could double and quadruple  
 At pleasure the play of either pupil  
 — Very like, by her hands' slow fanning,  
 As up and down like a gor-crow's flappers  
 They moved to measure, or bell clappers.  
 I said, "Is it blessing, is it banning,  
 Do they applaud you or burlesque you —  
 Those hands and fingers with no flesh on?"  
 But, just as I thought to spring in to the rescue,  
 At once I was stopped by the lady's expression :  
 For it was life her eyes were drinking  
 From the crone's wide pair above unwinking,  
 — Life's pure fire received without shrinking,  
 Into the heart and breast whose heaving  
 Told you no single drop they were leaving,  
 — Life, that filling her, passed redundant  
 Into her very hair, back swerving  
 Over each shoulder, loose and abundant,  
 As her head thrown back showed the white  
 throat curving ;  
 And the very tresses shared in the pleasure,  
 Moving to the mystic measure,  
 Bounding as the bosom bounded.  
 I stopped short, more and more confounded,  
 As still her cheeks burned and eyes glistened,  
 As she listened and she listened :  
 When all at once a hand detained me,  
 The selfsame contagion gained me,  
 And I kept time to the wondrous chime,  
 Making out words and prose and rhyme,  
 Till it seemed that the music furred  
 Its wings like a task fulfilled, and dropped  
 From under the words it first had propped,  
 And left them midway in the world :  
 Word took word as hand takes hand,  
 I could hear at last, and understand,  
 And when I held the unbroken thread,  
 The Gypsy said : —

"And so at last we find my tribe.  
 And so I set thee in the midst,  
 And to one and all of them describe  
 What thou saidst and what thou didst,  
 Our long and terrible journey through,  
 And all thou art ready to say and do  
 In the trials that remain :  
 I trace them the vein and the other vein  
 That meet on thy brow and part again,  
 Making our rapid mystic mark ;  
 And I bid my people prove and probe  
 Each eye's profound and glorious globe  
 Till they detect the kindred spark  
 In those depths so dear and dark,  
 Like the spots that snap and burst and flee,  
 Circling over the midnight sea.  
 And on that round young cheek of thine  
 I make them recognize the tinge,  
 As when of the costly scarlet wine  
 They drip so much as will impinge  
 And spread in a thinnest scale afloat

One thick gold drop from the olive's coat  
 Over a silver plate whose sheen  
 Still through the mixture shall be seen.  
 For so I prove thee, to one and all,  
 Fit, when my people ope their breast,  
 To see the sign, and hear the call,  
 And take the vow, and stand the test  
 Which adds one more child to the rest —  
 When the breast is bare and the arms are wide,  
 And the world is left outside.  
 For there is probation to decree,  
 And many and long must the trials be  
 Thou shalt victoriously endure,  
 If that brow is true and those eyes are sure ;  
 Like a jewel-finder's fierce assay  
 Of the prize he dug from its mountain tomb —  
 Let once the vindicating ray  
 Leap out amid the anxious gloom,  
 And steel and fire have done their part  
 And the prize falls on its finder's heart ;  
 So, trial after trial past,  
 Wilt thou fall at the very last  
 Breathless, half in trance  
 With the thrill of the great deliverance,  
 Into our arms forevermore ;  
 And thou shalt know, those arms once curled  
 About thee, what we knew before,  
 How love is the only good in the world.  
 Henceforth be loved as heart can love,  
 Or brain devise, or hand approve !  
 Stand up, look below,  
 It is our life at thy feet we throw  
 To step with into light and joy ;  
 Not a power of life but we employ  
 To satisfy thy nature's want ;  
 Art thou the tree that props the plant,  
 Or the climbing plant that seeks the tree —  
 Canst thou help us, must we help thee ?  
 If any two creatures grew into one,  
 They would do more than the world has done ;  
 Though each apart were never so weak,  
 Ye vainly through the world should seek  
 For the knowledge and the might  
 Which in such union grew their right :  
 So, to approach at least that end,  
 And blend, — as much as may be, blend  
 Thee with us or us with thee, —  
 As climbing plant or propping tree,  
 Shall some one deck thee, over and down,  
 Up and about, with blossoms and leaves ?  
 Fix his heart's fruit for thy garland-crown,  
 Cling with his soul as the gourd-vine cleaves,  
 Die on thy boughs and disappear  
 While not a leaf of thine is ere ?  
 Or is the other fate in store,  
 And art thou fitted to adore,  
 To give thy wondrous self away,  
 And take a stronger nature's sway ?  
 I foresee and could foretell  
 Thy future portion, sure and well :  
 But those passionate eyes speak true, speak  
 true,  
 Let them say what thou shalt do !  
 Only be sure thy daily life,  
 In its peace or in its strife,  
 Never shall be unobserved ;  
 We pursue thy whole career,  
 And hope for it, or doubt, or fear, —

Lo, hast thou kept thy path or swerved,  
 We are beside thee in all thy ways,  
 With our blame, with our praise,  
 Our shame to feel, our pride to show,  
 Glad, angry — but indifferent, no!  
 Whether it be thy lot to go,  
 For the good of us all, where the haters meet  
 In the crowded city's horrible street;  
 Or thou step alone through the morass  
 Where never sound yet was  
 Save the dry quick clap of the stork's bill,  
 For the air is still, and the water still,  
 When the blue breast of the dipping coot  
 Dives under, and all is mute.  
 So, at the last shall come old age,  
 Decrepit as befits that stage;  
 How else wouldst thou retire apart  
 With the hoarded memories of thy heart,  
 And gather all to the very least  
 Of the fragments of life's earlier feast,  
 Let fall through eagerness to find  
 The crowning dainties yet behind?  
 Ponder on the entire past  
 Laid together thus at last,  
 When the twilight helps to fuse  
 The first fresh with the faded hues,  
 And the outline of the whole,  
 As round eve's shades their framework roll,  
 Grandly fronts for once thy soul.  
 And then as, 'mid the dark, a gleam  
 Of yet another morning breaks,  
 And like the hand which ends a dream,  
 Death, with the might of his sunbeam,  
 Touches the flesh and the soul awakes,  
 Then " —

Ay, then indeed something would happen!  
 But what? For here her voice changed like a  
 bird's;  
 There grew more of the music and less of the  
 words;  
 Had Jacynth only been by me to clap pen  
 To paper and put you down every syllable  
 With those clever clerkly fingers,  
 All I've forgotten as well as what lingers  
 In this old brain of mine that's but ill able  
 To give you even this poor version  
 Of the speech I spoil, as it were, with stammer-  
 ing

— More fault of those who had the hammering  
 Of prosody into me and syntax,  
 And did it, not with hobnails but tints!  
 But to return from this excursion, —  
 Just, do you mark, when the song was sweetest,  
 The peace most deep and the charm completest,  
 There came, shall I say, a snap —  
 And the charm vanished!  
 And my sense returned, so strangely banished,  
 And, starting as from a nap,  
 I knew the crone was bewitching my lady,  
 With Jacynth asleep; and but one spring made I  
 Down from the casement, round to the portal,  
 Another minute and I had entered, —  
 When the door opened, and more than mortal  
 Stood, with a face where to my mind centred  
 All beauties I ever saw or shall see,  
 The Duchess: I stopped as if struck by palsy.  
 She was so different, happy and beautiful,  
 I felt at once that all was best,

And that I had nothing to do, for the rest,  
 But wait her commands, obey and be dutiful.  
 Not that, in fact, there was any commanding;  
 I saw the glory of her eye,  
 And the brow's height and the breast's expand-  
 ing,

And I was hers to live or to die.  
 As for finding what she wanted,  
 You know God Almighty granted  
 Such little signs should serve wild creatures  
 To tell one another all their desires,  
 So that each knows what his friend requires,  
 And does its bidding without teachers.  
 I preceded her; the crone  
 Followed silent and alone;  
 I spoke to her, but she merely jabbered  
 In the old style; both her eyes had slunk  
 Back to their pits; her stature shrunk;  
 In short, the soul in its body sunk  
 Like a blade sent home to its scabbard.  
 We descended, I preceding;  
 Crossed the court with nobody heeding;  
 All the world was at the chase,  
 The court-yard like a desert-place,  
 The stable emptied of its small fry;  
 I saddled myself the very palfrey  
 I remember patting while it carried her,  
 The day she arrived and the Duke married her.  
 And, do you know, though it's easy deceiving  
 One's self in such matters, I can't help believing  
 The lady had not forgotten it either,  
 And knew the poor devil so much beneath her  
 Would have been only too glad for her service  
 To dance on hot ploughshares like a Turk der-  
 vise,

But, unable to pay proper duty where owing it.  
 Was reduced to that pitiful method of showing  
 it:

For though the moment I began setting  
 His saddle on my own nag of Berold's begetting,  
 (Not that I meant to be obtrusive)  
 She stopped me, while his rug was shifting,  
 By a single rapid finger's lifting,  
 And, with a gesture kind but conclusive,  
 And a little shake of the head, refused me, —  
 I say, although she never used me,  
 Yet when she was mounted, the Gypsy behind  
 her,

And I ventured to remind her,  
 I suppose with a voice of less steadiness  
 Than usual, for my feeling exceeded me,  
 — Something to the effect that I was in readiness  
 Whenever God should please she needed me, —  
 Then, do you know, her face looked down on me  
 With a look that placed a crown on me,  
 And she felt in her bosom, — mark, her bosom —  
 And, as a flower-tree drops its blossom,  
 Dropped me . . . ah, had it been a purse  
 Of silver, my friend, or gold that's worse,  
 Why, you see, as soon as I found myself  
 So understood, — that a true heart so may gain  
 Such a reward, — I should have gone home  
 again,

Kissed Jacynth, and soberly drowned myself!  
 It was a little plait of hair  
 Such as friends in a convent make  
 To wear, each for the other's sake, —  
 This, see, which at my breast I wear,



Ever did (rather to Jacynth's grudgment),  
And ever shall, till the Day of Judgment.  
And then, — and then, — to cut short, — this is  
idle,  
These are feelings it is not good to foster, —  
I pushed the gate wide, she shook the bridle,  
And the palfrey bounded, — and so we lost her.

## XVI

When the liquor's out why clink the cannikin?  
I did think to describe you the panic in  
The redoubtable breast of our master the man-  
nikin,  
And what was the pitch of his mother's yellow-  
ness,  
How she turned as a shark to snap the spare-  
rib  
Clean off, sailors say, from a pearl-diving Carib,  
When she heard, what she called the flight of  
the feloness

— But it seems such child's play,  
What they said and did with the lady away!  
And to dance on, when we've lost the music,  
Always made me — and no doubt makes you —  
sick.

Nay, to my mind, the world's face looked so  
stern

As that sweet form disappeared through the  
postern,

She that kept it in constant good-humor,  
It ought to have stopped; there seemed nothing  
to do more.

But the world thought otherwise and went on,  
And my head's one that its spite was spent on:  
Thirty years are fled since that morning,  
And with them all my head's adorning.  
Nor did the old Duchess die outright,  
As you expect, of suppressed spite,  
The natural end of every adder

Not suffered to empty its poison-bladder:  
But she and her son agreed, I take it,  
That no one should touch on the story to wake  
it,

For the wound in the Duke's pride rankled fiery,  
So, they made no search and small inquiry —  
And when fresh Gypsies have paid us a visit,  
I've

Noticed the couple were never inquisitive,  
But told them they're folks the Duke don't  
want here,

And bade them make haste and cross the fron-  
tier.

Brief, the Duchess was gone and the Duke was  
glad of it,

And the old one was in the young one's stead,  
And took, in her place, the household's head,  
And a blessed time the household had of it!  
And were I not, as a man may say, cautious  
How I trench, more than needs, on the nauseous,  
I could favor you with sundry touches  
Of the paint-smutches with which the Duchess  
Heightened the mellowness of her cheek's yel-  
lowness

(To get on faster) until at last her  
Cheek grew to be one master-plaster  
Of mucus and fucus from mere use of ceruse:  
In short, she grew from scalp to udder  
Just the object to make you shudder.

## XVII

You're my friend —  
What a thing friendship is, world without end!  
How it gives the heart and soul a stir-up  
As if somebody broached you a glorious runlet,  
And poured out, all lovely, sparklingly, sunlit,  
Our green Moldavia, the streaky syrup,  
Cotnar as old as the time of the Druids —  
Friendship may match with that monarch of  
fluids;

Each supple a dry brain, fills you its ins-and-  
outs,

Gives your life's hour-glass a shake when the  
thin sand doubts

Whether to run on or stop short, and guarantees  
Age is not all made of stark sloth and arrant  
ease.

I have seen my little lady once more,  
Jacynth, the Gypsy, Berold, and the rest of it,  
For to me spoke the Duke, as I told you before;  
I always wanted to make a clean breast of it:  
And now it is made — why, my heart's blood,  
that went trickle,

Trickle, but anon, in such muddy dribblets,  
Is pumped up brisk now, through the main ven-  
tricle,

And genially floats me about the giblets.

I'll tell you what I intend to do:

I must see this fellow his sad life through —  
He is our Duke, after all,

And I, as he says, but a serf and thrall.

My father was born here, and I inherit

His fame, a chain he bound his son with;

Could I pay in a lump I should prefer it,

But there's no mine to blow up and get done  
with:

So, I must stay till the end of the chapter,

For, as to our middle-age-manners-adapter,

Be it a thing to be glad on or sorry on,

Some day or other, his head in a morion

And breast in a hauberk, his heels he'll kick up,

Slain by an onslaught fierce of hiccup.

And then, when red doth the sword of our  
Duke rust,

And its leathern sheath lie o'ergrown with a  
blue crust,

Then I shall scrape together my earnings;

For, you see, in the churchyard Jacynth reposes,

And our children all went the way of the roses:

It's a long lane that knows no turnings.

One needs but little tackle to travel in;

So, just one stout cloak shall I indue:

And for a staff, what beats the javelin

With which his boars my father pinned you?

And then, for a purpose you shall hear presently,

Taking some Cotnar, a tight plump skinful,

I shall go journeying, who but I, pleasantly!

Sorrow is vain and despondency sinful.

What's a man's age? He must hurry more,  
that's all;

Cram in a day, what his youth took a year to  
hold:

When we mind labor, then only, we're too old —

What age had Methusalem when he begat Saul?

And at last, as its haven some buffeted ship sees,

(Come all the way from the north-parts with  
sperm oil)

I hope to get safely out of the turmoil  
 And arrive one day at the land of the Gypsies,  
 And find my lady, or hear the last news of her  
 From some old thief and son of Lucifer,  
 His forehead chapleted green with wreathy hop,  
 Sunburned all over like an Æthiop.  
 And when my Cotnar begins to operate  
 And the tongue of the rogue to run at a proper  
     rate,  
 And our wine-skin, tight once, shows each flac-  
     cid dent,  
 I shall drop in with — as if by accident —  
 “You never knew, then, how it all ended,  
 What fortune good or bad attended  
 The little lady your Queen befriended?”  
 — And when that’s told me, what’s remaining?  
 This world’s too hard for my explaining.  
 The same wise judge of matters equine  
 Who still preferred some slim four-year-old  
 To the big-boned stock of mighty Berold,  
 And, for strong Cotnar, drank French weak  
     wine,  
 He also must be such a lady’s scorner!  
 Smooth Jacob still robs homely Esau:  
 Now up, now down, the world’s one see-saw.  
 — So, I shall find out some snug corner  
 Under a hedge, like Orson the wood-knight,  
 Turn myself round and bid the world good-  
     night;  
 And sleep a sound sleep till the trumpet’s blow-  
     ing  
 Wakes me (unless priests cheat us laymen)  
 To a world where will be no further throwing  
 Pearls before swine that can’t value them.  
 Amen!

## A GRAMMARIAN'S FUNERAL

SHORTLY AFTER THE REVIVAL OF LEARNING  
 IN EUROPE

LET us begin and carry up this corpse,  
     Singing together.  
 Leave we the common crofts, the vulgar  
     thorpes  
     Each in its tether  
 Sleeping safe on the bosom of the plain,  
     Cared-for till cock-crow:  
 Look out if yonder he not day again  
     Rimming the rock-row!  
 That’s the appropriate country; there, man’s  
     thought,  
     Rarer, intenser,  
 Self-gathered for an outbreak, as it ought,  
     Chafes in the censor.  
 Leave we the unlettered plain its herd and crop;  
     Seek we sepulture  
 On a tall mountain, citied to the top,  
     Crowded with culture!  
 All the peaks soar, but one the rest excels;  
     Clouds overcome it;  
 No! yonder sparkle is the citadel’s  
     Circling its summit.  
 Thither our path lies; wind we up the heights;  
     Wait ye the warning?  
 Our low life was the level’s and the night’s;  
     He’s for the morning.

Step to a tune, square chests, erect each head,  
     ‘Ware the beholders!  
 This is our master, famous, calm and dead,  
     Borne on our shoulders.

Sleep, crop and herd! sleep, darkling thorpe  
     and croft,  
     Safe from the weather!  
 He, whom we convoy to his grave aloft,  
     Singing together,  
 He was a man born with thy face and throat,  
     Lyric Apollo!  
 Long he lived nameless: how should Spring  
     take note  
     Winter would follow?  
 Till lo, the little touch, and youth was gone!  
     Cramped and diminished,  
 Moaned he, “New measures, other feet anon!  
     My dance is finished?”  
 No, that’s the world’s way: (keep the moun-  
     tain-side,  
     Make for the city!)  
 He knew the signal, and stepped on with pride  
     Over men’s pity;  
 Left play for work, and grappled with the  
     world  
     Bent on escaping:  
 “What’s in the scroll,” quoth he, “thou  
     keapest furred?  
     Show me their shaping,  
 Theirs who most studied man, the bard and  
     sage, —  
     Give!” — So, he gowned him,  
 Straight got by heart that book to its last page:  
     Learned, we found him.  
 Yea, but we found him bald too, eyes like lead,  
     Accents uncertain:  
 “Time to taste life,” another would have said,  
     “Up with the curtain!”  
 This man said rather, “Actual life comes next?  
     Patience a moment!  
 Grant I have mastered learning’s crabbed text,  
     Still there’s the comment.  
 Let me know all! Prate not of most or least,  
     Painful or easy!  
 Even to the crumbs I’d fain eat up the feast.  
     Ay, nor feel queasy.”  
 Oh, such a life as he resolved to live,  
     When he had learned it,  
 When he had gathered all books had to give!  
     Sooner, he spurned it.  
 Image the whole, then execute the parts —  
     Fancy the fabric  
 Quite, ere you build, ere steel strike fire from  
     quartz,  
     Ere mortar dab brick!

(Here’s the town-gate reached: there’s the  
     market-place  
     Gaping before us.)  
 Yea, this in him was the peculiar grace  
     (Hearten our chorus!)  
 That before living he’d learn how to live —  
     No end to learning:  
 Earn the means first — God surely will contrive  
     Use for our earning.  
 Others mistrust and say, “But time escapes:  
     Live now or never!”

He said, "What 's time? Leave Now for dogs  
and apes!

Man has Forever."

Back to his book then: deeper drooped his head:  
*Calculus* racked him:

Lead en before, his eyes grew dross of lead:

*Tussis* attacked him.

"Now, master, take a little rest!" — not he!  
(Caution redoubled,

Step two abreast, the way winds narrowly!)

Not a whit troubled,

Back to his studies, fresher than at first,  
Fierce as a dragon

He (soul-hydroptic with a sacred thirst)

Sucked at the flagon.

Oh, if we draw a circle premature,

Heedless of far gain,

Greedy for quick returns of profit, sure

Bad is our bargain!

Was it not great? did not he throw on God,  
(He loves the burthen) —

God's task to make the heavenly period

Perfect the earthen?

Did not he magnify the mind, show clear

Just what it all meant?

He would not discount life, as fools do here,  
Paid by instalment.

He ventured neck or nothing — heaven's success  
Found, or earth's failure:

"Wilt thou trust death or not?" He answered  
"Yes!

Hence with life's pale lure!"

That low man seeks a little thing to do,  
Sees it and does it:

This high man, with a great thing to pursue,  
Dies ere he knows it.

That low man goes on adding one to one,  
His hundred 's soon hit:

This high man, aiming at a million,  
Misses an unit.

That, has the world here — should he need the  
next,

Let the world mind him!

This, throws himself on God, and unperplexed  
Seeking shall find him.

So, with the throttling hands of death at strife,  
Ground he at grammar;

Still, through the rattle, parts of speech were  
rife:

While he could stammer

He settled *Hoti's* business — let it be! —  
Properly based *Oun* —

Gave us the doctrine of the enclitic *De*,  
Dead from the waist down.

Well, here 's the platform, here 's the proper  
place:

Hail to your purlieus,

All ye highfliers of the feathered race,  
Swallows and curlews!

Here 's the top-peak; the multitude below  
Live, for they can, there:

This man decided not to Live but Know —  
Bury this man there?

Here — here 's his place, where meteors shoot,  
clouds form,

Lightnings are loosened,

Stars come and go! Let joy break with the  
storm,

Peace let the dew send!

Lofty designs must close in like effects:

Loftily lying,

Leave him — still loftier than the world suspects,  
Living and dying.

## THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY

### A MIDDLE-AGE INTERLUDE

*Rosa Mundi; seu, fulcite me Floribus. A Conceit of  
Master Gysbrecht, Canon-Regular of Saint Yodocus-  
by-the-Bar, Ypres City. Cantuque, Virgilius. And  
hath often been sung at Hock-tide and Festivals.  
Gavisus eram, Jessides.*

(It would seem to be a glimpse from the  
burning of Jacques du Bourg-Molay, at Paris,  
A. D. 1314; as distorted by the refraction from  
Flemish brain to brain, during the course of a  
couple of centuries. R. B.)

### PREADMONISHETH THE ABBOT DEODAET

THE Lord, we look to once for all,

Is the Lord we should look at, all at once:

He knows not to vary, saith Saint Paul,

Nor the shadow of turning, for the nonce.

See him no other than as he is!

Give both the infinitudes their due —

Infinite mercy, but, I wis,

As infinite a justice too. [*Organ: plagal-cadence.*

As infinite a justice too.

### ONE SINGETH

John, Master of the Temple of God,

Falling to sin the Unknown Sin,

What he bought of Emperor Aldabrod,

He sold it to Sultan Saladin:

Till, caught by Pope Clement, a-buzzing there,

Hornet-prince of the mad wasps' hive,

And clipt of his wings in Paris square,

They bring him now to be burned alive.

[*And wanteth there grace of lute or clavicithern, ye  
shall say to confirm him who singeth —*

We bring John now to be burned alive.

In the midst is a goodly gallows built;

'Twixt fork and fork, a stake is stuck;

But first they set divers tumbrils a-tilt,

Make a trench all round with the city muck;

Inside they pile log upon log, good store;

Fagots not few, blocks great and small,

Reach a man's mid-thigh, no less, no more, —

For they mean he should roast in the sight of  
all.

CHO. — We mean he should roast in the sight  
of all.

Good sappy bavins that kindle forthwith;

Billets that blaze substantial and slow;

Pine-stump split deftly, dry as pith;

Larch-heart that chars to a chalk-white glow:

Then up they hoist me John in a chafe,



Sling him fast like a hog to scorch,  
Spit in his face, then leap back safe,  
Sing "Laudes" and bid clap-to the torch.  
CHO. — *Laus Deo* — who bids clap-to the torch.

John of the Temple, whose fame so bragged,  
Is burning alive in Paris square!  
How can he curse, if his mouth is gagged?  
Or wriggle his neck, with a collar there?  
Or heave his chest, which a band goes round?  
Or threat with his fist, since his arms are  
spliced?  
Or kick with his feet, now his legs are bound?  
— Thinks John, I will call upon Jesus Christ.  
[*Here one crosseth himself.*]

Jesus Christ — John had bought and sold,  
Jesus Christ — John had eaten and drunk;  
To him, the Flesh meant silver and gold.  
(*Salva reverentia.*)  
Now it was, "Saviour, bountiful lamb,  
I have roasted thee Turks, though men roast  
me!  
See thy servant, the plight wherein I am!  
Art thou a saviour? Save thou me!"  
CHO. — 'Tis John the mocker cries, "Save thou  
me!"

Who maketh God's menace an idle word?  
— Saith, it no more means what it proclaims,  
Than a damsel's threat to her wanton bird? —  
For she too prattles of ugly names.  
— Saith, he knoweth but one thing, — what he  
knows?  
That God is good and the rest is breath;  
Why else is the same styled Sharon's rose?  
Once a rose, ever a rose, he saith.  
CHO. — Oh, John shall yet find a rose, he saith!

Alack, there be roses and roses, John!  
Some, honeyed of taste like your leman's  
tongue:  
Some, bitter; for why? (roast gayly on!)  
Their tree struck root in devil's dung.  
When Paul once reasoned of righteousness  
And of temperance and of judgment to come,  
Good Felix trembled, he could no less:  
John, snickering, crook'd his wicked thumb.  
CHO. — What cometh to John of the wicked  
thumb?

Ha ha, John plucketh now at his rose  
To rid himself of a sorrow at heart!  
Lo, — petal on petal, fierce rays unclose;  
Anther on anther, sharp spikes outstart;  
And with blood for dew, the bosom boils;  
And a gust of sulphur is all its smell;  
And lo, he is horribly in the toils  
Of a coal-black giant flower of hell!  
CHO. — What maketh heaven, That maketh hell.

So, as John called now, through the fire amain,  
On the Name, he had cursed with, all his  
life —  
To the Person, he bought and sold again —  
For the Face, with his daily buffets rife —  
Feature by feature It took its place:  
And his voice, like a mad dog's choking bark,

At the steady whole of the Judge's face —  
Died. Forth John's soul flared into the dark.

SUBJOINETH THE ABBOT DEODAET  
God help all poor souls lost in the dark!

# HOLY-CROSS DAY

ON WHICH THE JEWS WERE FORCED TO ATTEND  
AN ANNUAL CHRISTIAN SERMON IN ROME

The passage from a mock-historic Diary which  
follows is by Browning himself.

"Now was come about Holy-Cross Day, and  
now must my lord preach his first sermon to the  
Jews: as it was of old cared for in the merciful  
bowels of the Church, that, so to speak, a crumb  
at least from her conspicuous table here in  
Rome should be, though but once yearly, cast  
to the famishing dogs, under-trampled and be-  
spitten-upon beneath the feet of the guests.  
And a moving sight in truth, this, of so many  
of the besotted blind restif and ready-to-perish  
Hebrews! now maternally brought — nay, (for  
He saith, 'Compel them to come in') haled, as  
it were, by the head and hair, and against their  
obstinate hearts, to partake of the heavenly  
grace. What awakening, what striving with  
tears, what working of a yeasty conscience!  
Nor was my lord wanting to himself on so apt  
an occasion; witness the abundance of conver-  
sions which did incontinently reward him:  
though not to my lord be altogether the glory."  
— *Diary by the Bishop's Secretary*, 1600.

What the Jews really said, on thus being  
driven to church, was rather to this effect: —

FEE, faw, fum! bubble and squeak!  
Blessedest Thursday's the fat of the week.  
Rumble and tumble, sleek and rough,  
Stinking and savory, smug and gruff,  
Take the church-road, for the bell's due chime  
Gives us the summons — 't is sermon-time!

Boh, here's Barnabas! Job, that's you?  
Up stumps Solomon — bustling too?  
Shame, man! greedy beyond your years  
To handse the bishop's shaving-shears?  
Fair play's a jewel! Leave friends in the  
lurch?

Stand on a line ere you start for the church!

Higgledy piggledy, packed we lie,  
Rats in a hamper, swine in a sty,  
Wasps in a bottle, frogs in a sieve,  
Worms in a carcass, fleas in a sleeve.  
Hist! square shoulders, settle your thumbs  
And buzz for the bishop — here he comes.

Bow, wow, wow — a bone for the dog!  
I liken his Grace to an acorned hog.

What, a boy at his side, with the bloom of a  
lass,  
To help and handle my lord's hour-glass !  
Didst ever behold so lithe a chine ?  
His cheek hath laps like a fresh-singed swine.

Aaron's asleep — shove hip to haunch,  
Or somebody deal him a dig in the paunch !  
Look at the purse with the tassel and knob,  
And the gown with the angel and thingum-  
bob !

What's he at, quotha ? reading his text !  
Now you've his curtsey — and what comes  
next ?

See to our converts — you doomed black dozen —  
No stealing away — nor cog nor cozen !  
You five, that were thieves, deserve it fairly ;  
You seven, that were beggars, will live less  
sparely ;  
You took your turn and dipped in the hat,  
Got fortune — and fortune gets you ; mind that !

Give your first groan — compunction's at work ;  
And soft ! from a Jew you mount to a Turk.  
Lo, Micah, — the selfsame beard on chin  
He was four times already converted in !  
Here's a knife, clip quick — it's a sign of  
grace —  
Or he ruins us all with his hanging-face.

Whom now is the bishop a-leering at ?  
I know a point where his text falls pat.  
I'll tell him to-morrow, a word just now  
Went to my heart and made me vow  
I meddle no more with the worst of trades —  
Let somebody else pay his serenades.

Groan all together now, whee — hee — hee !  
It's a-work, it's a-work, ah, woe is me !  
It began, when a herd of us, picked and placed,  
Were spurred through the Corso, stripped to  
the waist ;  
Jew brutes, with sweat and blood well spent  
To usher in worthily Christian Lent.

It grew, when the hangman entered our bounds,  
Yelled, pricked us out to his church like  
hounds :  
It got to a pitch, when the hand indeed  
Which gutted my purse would throttle my  
creed :  
And it overflows, when, to even the odd,  
Men I helped to their sins help me to their  
God.

But now, while the scapegoats leave our flock,  
And the rest sit silent and count the clock,  
Since forced to muse the appointed time  
On these precious facts and truths sublime, —  
Let us fitly employ it, under our breath,  
In saying Ben Ezra's Song of Death.

For Rabbi Ben Ezra, the night he died,  
Called sons and sons' sons to his side,  
And spoke, " This world has been harsh and  
strange ;  
Something is wrong : there needeth a change.

But what, or where ? at the last or first ?  
In one point only we sinned, at worst.

" The Lord will have mercy on Jacob yet.  
And again in his border see Israel set.  
When Judah beholds Jerusalem,  
The stranger-seed shall be joined to them :  
To Jacob's House shall the Gentiles cleave.  
So the Prophet saith and his sons believe.

" Ay, the children of the chosen race  
Shall carry and bring them to their place :  
In the land of the Lord shall lead the same,  
Bondsmen and handmaids. Who shall blame,  
When the slaves enslave, the oppressed ones o'er  
The oppressor triumph forevermore ?

" God spoke, and gave us the word to keep :  
Bade never fold the hands nor sleep  
'Mid a faithless world, — at watch and ward,  
Till Christ at the end relieve our guard.  
By his servant Moses the watch was set :  
Though near upon cock-crow, we keep it yet.

" Thou ! if thou wast he, who at mid-watch  
came,  
By the starlight, naming a dubious name !  
And if, too heavy with sleep — too rash  
With fear — O thou, if that martyr gash  
Fell on thee coming to take thine own,  
And we gave the Cross, when we owed the  
Throne —

" Thou art the Judge. We are bruised thus.  
But, the Judgment over, join sides with us !  
Thine too is the cause ! and not more thine  
Thar ours, is the work of these dogs and swine,  
Whose life laughs through and spits at their  
creed,  
Who maintain thee in word, and defy thee in  
deed !

" We withstood Christ then ? Be mindful how  
At least we withstand Barabbas now !  
Was our outrage sore ? But the worst we  
spared,  
To have called these — Christians, had we  
dared !  
Let defiance to them pay mistrust of thee,  
And Rome make amends for Calvary !

" By the torture, prolonged from age to age,  
By the infamy, Israel's heritage,  
By the Ghetto's plague, by the garb's disgrace,  
By the badge of shame, by the felon's place,  
By the branding-tool, the bloody whip,  
And the summons to Christian fellowship, —

" We boast our proof that at least the Jew  
Would wrest Christ's name from the Devil's  
crew.  
Thy face took never so deep a shade  
But we fought them in it, God our aid !  
A trophy to bear, as we march, thy band,  
South, East, and on to the Pleasant Land ! " 1

1 Pope Gregory XVI. abolished this bad business of  
the Sermon. — R. B.

## PROTUS

AMONG these latter busts we count by scores,  
Half-emperors and quarter-emperors.  
Each with his bay-leaf fillet, loose-thonged  
vest,

Loric and low-browed Gorgon on the breast, —  
One loves a baby face, with violets there,  
Violets instead of laurel in the hair,  
As those were all the little locks could bear.

Now read here. "Protus ends a period  
Of empery beginning with a god;  
Born in the porphyry chamber at Byzant,  
Queens by his cradle, proud and ministrant:  
And if he quickened breath there, 't would like  
fire

Pantingly through the dim vast realm transpire.  
A fame that he was missing spread afar:  
The world, from its four corners, rose in war,  
Till he was borne out on a balcony  
To pacify the world when it should see.  
The captains ranged before him, one, his hand  
Made baby points at, gained the chief command.  
And day by day more beautiful he grew  
In shape, all said, in feature and in hue,  
While young Greek sculptors, gazing on the  
child,

Became with old Greek sculpture reconciled.  
Already sages labored to condense  
In easy tomes a life's experience:  
And artists took grave counsel to impart  
In one breath and one hand-sweep, all their  
art —

To make his graces prompt as blossoming  
Of plentifully-watered palms in spring:  
Since well befits it, whoso mounts the throne,  
For beauty, knowledge, strength, should stand  
alone.  
And mortals love the letters of his name."

— Stop! Have you turned two pages? Still  
the same  
New reign, same date. The scribe goes on to  
say

How that same year, on such a month and day,  
"John the Pannonian, groundedly believed  
A blacksmith's bastard, whose hard hand re-  
prieved

The Empire from its fate the year before, —  
Came, had a mind to take the crown, and wore  
The same for six years (during which the Huns  
Kept off their fingers from us), till his sons  
Put something in his liquor" — and so forth.  
Then a new reign. Stay — "Take at its just  
worth"

(Subjoins an annotator) "what I give  
As hearsay. Some think, John let Protus live  
And slip away. 'T is said, he reached man's age  
At some blind northern court; made, first a  
page,

Then tutor to the children; last, of use  
About the hunting-stables. I deduce  
He wrote the little tract 'On worming dogs,'  
Whereof the name in sundry catalogues  
Is extant yet. A Protus of the race  
Is rumored to have died a monk in Thrace, —

And if the same, he reached senility."  
Here's John the Smith's rough-hammered  
head. Great eye,  
Gross jaw and gripped lips do what granite can  
To give you the crown-grasper. What a man!

## THE STATUE AND THE BUST

This poem was published first in 1855 as an independent issue. A correspondent of an American paper once asked the following questions respecting this poem: —

"1. When, how, and where did it happen? Browning's divine vagueness lets one gather only that the lady's husband was a Riccardi. 2. Who was the lady? who the duke? 3. The magnificent house wherein Florence lodges her préfet is known to all Florentine ball-goers as the Palazzo Riccardi. It was bought by the Riccardi from the Medici in 1659. From none of its windows did the lady gaze at her more than royal lover. From what window, then, if from any? Are the statue and the bust still in their original positions?"

The letter fell into the hands of Mr. Thomas J. Wise, who sent it to Mr. Browning, and received the following answer.

Jan. 8, 1887.

"DEAR MR. WISE, — I have seldom met with such a strange inability to understand what seems the plainest matter possible: 'ball-goers' are probably not history-readers, but any guide-book would confirm what is sufficiently stated in the poem. I will append a note or two, however. 1. 'This story the townsmen tell;' 'when, how, and where,' constitutes the subject of the poem. 2. The lady was the wife of Riccardi; and the duke, Ferdinand, just as the poem says. 3. As it was built by, and inhabited by, the Medici till sold, long after, to the Riccardi, it was not from the duke's palace, but a window in that of the Riccardi, that the lady gazed at her lover riding by. The statue is still in its place, looking at the window under which 'now is the empty shrine.' Can anything be clearer? My 'vagueness' leaves what to be 'gathered' when all these things are put down in black and white? Oh, 'ball-goers'!"

THERE's a palace in Florence, the world knows  
well,  
And a statue watches it from the square,  
And this story of both do our townsmen tell.

Agès ago, a lady there,  
At the farthest window facing the East  
Asked, "Who rides by with the royal air?"



The bridesmaids' prattle around her ceased ;  
She leaned forth, one on either hand ;  
They saw how the blush of the bride increased —

They felt by its beats her heart expand —  
As one at each ear and both in a breath  
Whispered, "The Great-Duke Ferdinand."

That selfsame instant, underneath,  
The Duke rode past in his idle way,  
Empty and fine like a swordless sheath.

Gay he rode, with a friend as gay,  
Till he threw his head back — "Who is she ?"  
— "A bride the Riccardi brings home to-day."

Hair in heaps lay heavily  
Over a pale brow spirit-pure —  
Carved like the heart of the coal-black tree,

Crisped like a war-steed's encolure —  
And vainly sought to dissemble her eyes  
Of the blackest black our eyes endure,

And lo, a blade for a knight's emprise  
Filled the fine empty sheath of a man, —  
The Duke grew straightway brave and wise.

He looked at her, as a lover can ;  
She looked at him, as one who awakes :  
The past was a sleep, and her life began.

Now, love so ordered for both their sakes,  
A feast was held that selfsame night  
In the pile which the mighty shadow makes.

(For Via Larga is three-parts light,  
But the palace overshadows one,  
Because of a crime, which may God requite !

To Florence and God the wrong was done,  
Through the first republic's murder there  
By Cosimo and his cursed son.)

The Duke (with the statue's face in the square)  
Turned in the midst of his multitude  
At the bright approach of the bridal pair.

Face to face the lovers stood  
A single minute and no more,  
While the bridegroom bent as a man subdued —

Bowed till his bonnet brushed the floor —  
For the Duke on the lady a kiss conferred,  
As the courtly custom was of yore.

In a minute can lovers exchange a word ?  
In a word did pass, which I do not think,  
Only one out of a thousand heard.

That was the bridegroom. At day's brink  
He and his bride were alone at last  
In a bed chamber by a taper's blink.

Calmly he said that her lot was cast,  
That the door she had passed was shut on  
her  
Till the final catafalk repassed.

The world meanwhile, its noise and stir,  
Through a certain window facing the East  
She could watch like a convent's chronicler.

Since passing the door might lead to a feast,  
And a feast might lead to so much beside,  
He, of many evils, chose the least.

"Freely I choose too," said the bride —  
"Your window and its world suffice,"  
Replied the tongue, while the heart replied —

"If I spend the night with that devil twice,  
May his window serve as my loop of hell  
Whence a damned soul looks on paradise !

"I fly to the Duke who loves me well,  
Sit by his side and laugh at sorrow  
Ere I count another ave-bell.

"'T is only the coat of a page to borrow,  
And tie my hair in a horse-boy's trim.  
And I save my soul — but not to-morrow" —

(She checked herself and her eye grew dim)  
"My father tarries to bless my state :  
I must keep it one day more for him.

"Is one day more so long to wait ?  
Moreover the Duke rides past, I know ;  
We shall see each other, sure as fate."

She turned on her side and slept. Just so !  
So we resolve on a thing and sleep :  
So did the lady, ages ago.

That night the Duke said, "Dear or cheap  
As the cost of this cup of bliss may prove  
To body or soul, I will drain it deep."

And on the morrow, bold with love,  
He beckoned the bridegroom (close on call,  
As his duty bade, by the Duke's alcove)

And smiled "'T was a very funeral,  
Your lady will think, this feast of ours, —  
A shame to efface, whate'er befall !

"What if we break from the Arno bowers,  
And try if Petraja, cool and green,  
Cure last night's fault with this morning's  
flowers ?"

The bridegroom, not a thought to be seen  
On his steady brow and quiet mouth,  
Said, "Too much favor for me so mean !

"But, alas ! my lady leaves the South ;  
Each wind that comes from the Apennine  
Is a menace to her tender youth :

"Nor a way exists, the wise opine,  
If she quits her palace twice this year,  
To avert the flower of life's decline."

Quoth the Duke, "A sage and a kindly fear.  
Moreover Petraja is cold this spring ;  
Be our feast to-night as usual here !"

And then to himself — "Which night shall bring  
Thy bride to her lover's embraces, fool —  
Or I am the fool, and thou art the king !

"Yet my passion must wait a night, nor cool —  
For to-night the Envoy arrives from France  
Whose heart I unlook with thyself, my tool.

"I need thee still and might miss perchance.  
To-day is not wholly lost, beside,  
With its hope of my lady's countenance :

"For I ride — what should I do but ride ?  
And passing her palace, if I list,  
May glance at its window — well betide ! "

So said, so done : nor the lady missed  
One ray that broke from the ardent brow,  
Nor a curl of the lips where the spirit kissed.

Be sure that each renewed the vow,  
No morrow's sun should arise and set  
And leave them then as it left them now.

But next day passed, and next day yet,  
With still fresh cause to wait one day more  
Ere each leaped over the parapet.

And still, as love's brief morning wore,  
With a gentle start, half smile, half sigh,  
They found love not as it seemed before.

They thought it would work infallibly,  
But nay in despite of heaven and earth :  
The rose would blow when the storm passed  
by.

Meantime they could profit in winter's dearth  
Nor ray of fruits that supplant the rose :  
The world and its ways have a certain worth :

And to press a point while these oppose  
Were simple policy ; better wait :  
We lose no friends and we gain no foes.

Meantime, worse fates than a lover's fate,  
Who daily may ride and pass and look  
Where his lady watches behind the grate !

And she — she watched the square like a  
book  
Holding one picture and only one,  
Which daily to find she undertook :

When the picture was reached the book was  
done,  
And she turned from the picture at night to  
scheme  
Of tearing it out for herself next sun.

So weeks grew months, years ; gleam by gleam  
The glory dropped from their youth and love,  
And both perceived they had dreamed a dream ;

Which hovered as dreams do, still above :  
But who can take a dream for a truth ?  
Oh, hide our eyes from the next remove !

One day as the lady saw her youth  
Depart, and the silver thread that streaked  
Her hair, and, worn by the serpent's tooth,

The brow so puckered, the chin so peaked, —  
And wondered who the woman was,  
Hollow-eyed and haggard-cheeked,

Fronting her silent in the glass —  
"Summon here," she suddenly said,  
"Before the rest of my old self pass,

"Him, the Carver, a hand to aid,  
Who fashions the clay no love will change,  
And fixes a beauty never to fade.

"Let Robbia's craft so apt and strange  
Arrest the remains of young and fair,  
And rivet them while the seasons range.

"Make me a face on the window there,  
Waiting as ever, mute the while,  
My love to pass below in the square !

"And let me think that it may beguile  
Dreary days which the dead must spend  
Down in their darkness under the aisle,

"To say, 'What matters it at the end ?  
I did no more while my heart was warm  
Than does that image, my pale-faced friend.'

"Where is the use of the lip's red charm,  
The heaven of hair, the pride of the brow,  
And the blood that blues the inside arm —

"Unless we turn, as the soul knows how,  
The earthly gift to an end divine ?  
A lady of clay is as good, I trow."

But long ere Robbia's cornice, fine,  
With flowers and fruits which leaves enlase,  
Was set where now is the empty shrine —

(And, leaning out of a bright blue space,  
As a ghost might lean from a chink of sky,  
The passionate pale lady's face —

Eying ever, with earnest eye  
And quick-turned neck at its breathless stretch,  
Some one who ever is passing by —)

The Duke had sighed like the simplest wretch  
In Florence, "Youth — my dream escapes !  
Will its record stay ?" And he bade them fetch

Some subtle moulder of brazen shapes —  
"Can the soul, the will, die out of a man  
Ere his body find the grave that gapes ?

"John of Douay shall effect my plan,  
Set me on horseback here aloft,  
Alive, as the crafty sculptor can,

"In the very square I have crossed so oft :  
That men may admire, when future suns  
Shall touch the eyes to a purpose soft,

"While the mouth and the brow stay brave in  
bronze —  
Admire and say, 'When he was alive  
How he would take his pleasure once !'

"And it shall go hard but I contrive  
To listen the while, and laugh in my tomb  
At idleness which aspires to strive."

So! While these wait the trump of doom,  
How do their spirits pass, I wonder,  
Nights and days in the narrow row?

Still, I suppose, they sit and ponder  
What a gift life was, ages ago,  
Six steps out of the chapel yonder.

Only they see not God, I know,  
Nor all that chivalry of his,  
The soldier-saints who, row on row,

Burn upward each to his point of bliss —  
Since, the end of life being manifest,  
He had burned his way through the world to  
this.

I hear you reproach, "But delay was best,  
For their end was a crime." — Oh, a crime will  
do  
As well, I reply, to serve for a test,

As a virtue golden through and through,  
Sufficient to vindicate itself  
And prove its worth at a moment's view!

Must a game be played for the sake of pelf?  
Where a button goes, 't were an epigram  
To offer the stamp of the very Guelph.

The true has no value beyond the sham:  
As well the counter as coin, I submit,  
When your table's a hat, and your prize, a  
dram.

Stake your counter as boldly every whit,  
Venture as warily, use the same skill,  
Do your best, whether winning or losing it,

If you choose to play! — is my principle.  
Let a man contend to the uttermost  
For his life's set prize, be it what it will!

The counter our lovers staked was lost  
As surely as if it were lawful coin:  
And the sin I impute to each frustrate ghost

Is — the unlit lamp and the ungirt loin,  
Though the end in sight was a vice, I say.  
You of the virtue (we issue join)  
How strive you? *De te, fabula!*

#### PORPHYRIA'S LOVER

First printed in Mr. Fox's *Monthly Repository*  
in 1836, under the signature Z. When issued in

*Bells and Pomegranates* it was grouped with  
*Johannes Agricola in Meditation* as No. II. of  
*Madhouse Cells*. The poem has an interest as  
the earliest, apparently, of Browning's mono-  
logues.

THE rain set early in to-night,  
The sullen wind was soon awake,  
It tore the elm-tops down for spite,  
And did its worst to vex the lake:  
I listened with heart fit to break.  
When glided in Porphyria; straight  
She shut the cold out and the storm,  
And kneeled and made the cheerless grate  
Blaze up, and all the cottage warm;  
Which done, she rose, and from her form  
Withdrew the dripping cloak and shawl,  
And laid her soiled gloves by, untied  
Her hat and let the damp hair fall,  
And, last, she sat down by my side  
And called me. When no voice replied,  
She put my arm about her waist,  
And made her smooth white shoulder bare  
And all her yellow hair displaced,  
And, stooping, made my cheek lie there,  
And spread, o'er all, her yellow hair,  
Murmuring how she loved me — she  
Too weak, for all her heart's endeavor,  
To set its struggling passion free  
From pride, and vainer ties dis sever,  
And give herself to me forever.  
But passion sometimes would prevail,  
Nor could to-night's gay feast restrain  
A sudden thought of one so pale  
For love of her, and all in vain:  
So, she was come through wind and rain.  
Be sure I looked up at her eyes  
Happy and proud; at last I knew  
Porphyria worshipped me; surprise  
Made my heart swell, and still it grew  
While I debated what to do.  
That moment she was mine, mine, fair,  
Perfectly pure and good: I found  
A thing to do, and all her hair  
In one long yellow string I wound  
Three times her little throat around,  
And strangled her. No pain felt she;  
I am quite sure she felt no pain.  
As a shut bud that holds a bee,  
I warily oped her lids: again  
Laughed the blue eyes without a stain.  
And I untightened next the tress  
About her neck; her cheek once more  
Blushed bright beneath my burning kiss:  
I propped her head up as before,  
Only, this time my shoulder bore  
Her head, which droops upon it still:  
The smiling rosy little head,  
So glad it has its utmost will,  
That all it scorned at once is fled,  
And I, its love, am gained instead!  
Porphyria's love: she guessed not how  
Her darling one wish would be heard.  
And thus we sit together now,  
And all night long we have not stirred,  
And yet God has not said a word!



"CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER CAME"

See Edgar's song in *Lear*.

My first thought was, he lied in every word,  
That hoary cripple, with malicious eye  
Askance to watch the working of his lie  
On mine, and mouth scarce able to afford  
Suppression of the glee, that pursed and scored  
Its edge, at one more victim gained thereby.

What else should he be set for, with his staff?  
What, save to waylay with his lies, ensnare  
All travellers who might find him posted  
there,  
And ask the road? I guessed what skull-like  
laugh  
Would break, what crutch 'gin write my epitaph  
For pastime in the dusty thoroughfare,

If at his counsel I should turn aside  
Into that ominous tract which, all agree,  
Hides the Dark Tower. Yet acquiescingly  
I did turn as he pointed: neither pride  
Nor hope rekindling at the end deserved,  
So much as gladness that some end might be.

For, what with my whole world-wide wander-  
ing,  
What with my search drawn out through  
years, my hope  
Dwindled into a ghost not fit to cope  
With that obstreperous joy success would  
bring, —  
I hardly tried now to rebuke the spring  
My heart made, finding failure in its scope.

As when a sick man very near to death  
Seems dead indeed, and feels begin and end  
The tears, and takes the farewell of each  
friend,  
And hears one bid the other go, draw breath  
Freelier outside, ("since all is o'er," he saith,  
"And the blow fallen no grieving can  
amend;")

While some discuss if near the other graves  
Be room enough for this, and when a day  
Suits best for carrying the corpse away,  
With care about the banners, scarves and  
staves:  
And still the man hears all, and only craves  
He may not shame such tender love and stay.

Thus, I had so long suffered in this quest,  
Heard failure prophesied so oft, been writ  
So many times among "The Band" — to wit,  
The knights who to the Dark Tower's search  
addressed

Their steps — that just to fail as they, seemed  
best,

And all the doubt was now — should I be fit?

So, quiet as despair, I turned from him,  
That hateful cripple, out of his highway  
Into the path he pointed. All the day

Had been a dreary one at best, and dim  
Was settling to its close, yet shot one grim  
Red leer to see the plain catch its estray.

For mark! no sooner was I fairly found  
Pledged to the plain, after a pace or two,  
Than, pausing to throw backward a last view  
O'er the safe road, 't was gone; gray plain all  
round:

Nothing but plain to the horizon's bound.  
I might go on; naught else remained to do.

So, on I went. I think I never saw  
Such starved ignoble nature; nothing throve:  
For flowers — as well expect a cedar grove!  
But cockle, spurge, according to their law  
Might propagate their kind, with none to awe,  
You'd think: a burr had been a treasure  
trove.

No! penury, inertness and grimace,  
In some strange sort, were the land's portion.  
"See  
Or shut your eyes," said Nature peevishly,  
"It nothing skills: I cannot help my case:  
'T is the Last Judgment's fire must cure this  
place,  
Calcine its clods and set my prisoners free."

If there pushed any ragged thistle-stalk  
Above its mates, the head was chopped; the  
bents  
Were jealous else. What made those holes  
and rents  
In the dock's harsh swarth leaves, bruised as to  
balk  
All hope of greenness? 't is a brute must walk  
Pashing their life out, with a brute's intents.

As for the grass, it grew as scant as hair  
In leprosy; thin dry blades pricked the mud  
Which underneath looked kneaded up with  
blood.  
One stiff blind horse, his every bone a-stare,  
Stood stupefied, however he came there:  
Thrust out past service from the devil's stud!

Alive? he might be dead for aught I know,  
With that red gaunt and colloped neck  
a-strain,  
And shut eyes underneath the rusty mane;  
Seldom went such grotesqueness with such woe;  
I never saw a brute I hated so;  
He must be wicked to deserve such pain.

I shut my eyes and turned them on my heart.  
As a man calls for wine before he fights,  
I asked one draught of earlier, happier sights,  
Ere fitly I could hope to play my part.  
Think first, fight afterwards — the soldier's art:  
One taste of the old time sets all to rights.

Not it! I fancied Cuthbert's reddening face  
Beneath its garniture of curly gold,  
Dear fellow, till I almost felt him fold  
An arm in mine to fix me to the place,  
That way he used. Alas, one night's disgrace!  
Out went my heart's new fire and left it cold.

Giles then, the soul of honor — there he stands  
 Frank as ten years ago when knighted first.  
 What honest man should dare (he said) he  
 durst.

Good — but the scene shifts — faugh! what  
 hanging hands

Pin to his breast a parchment? His own bands  
 Read it. Poor traitor, spit upon and curst!

Better this present than a past like that;  
 Back therefore to my darkening path again!  
 No sound, no sight as far as eye could strain.  
 Will the night send a howlet or a bat?  
 I asked: when something on the dismal flat  
 Came to arrest my thoughts and change their  
 train.

A sudden little river crossed my path  
 As unexpected as a serpent comes.  
 No sluggish tide congenial to the glooms;  
 This, as it frothed by, might have been a bath  
 For the fiend's glowing hoof — to see the wrath  
 Of its black eddy bespate with flakes and  
 spumes.

So petty yet so spiteful! All along,  
 Low scrubby alders kneeled down over it;  
 Drenched willows flung them headlong in a  
 fit

Of mute despair, a suicidal throng:  
 The river which had done them all the wrong,  
 Whate'er that was, rolled by, deterred no  
 whit.

Which, while I forded, — good saints, how I  
 feared  
 To set my foot upon a dead man's cheek,  
 Each step, or feel the spear I thrust to seek  
 For hollows, tangled in his hair or beard!  
 — It may have been a water-rat I speared,  
 But, ugh! it sounded like a baby's shriek.

Glad was I when I reached the other bank.  
 Now for a better country. Vain presage!  
 Who were the strugglers, what war did they  
 wage,

Whose savage trample thus could pad the dank  
 Soil to a plash? Toads in a poisoned tank,  
 Or wild cats in a red-hot iron cage —

The fight must so have seemed in that fell  
 cirque.  
 What penned them there, with all the plain  
 to choose?

No footprint leading to that horrid mews,  
 None out of it. Mad brewage set to work  
 Their brains, no doubt, like galley-slaves the  
 Turk

Pits for his pastime, Christians against Jews.

And more than that — a furlong on — why,  
 there!

What had use was that engine for, that wheel,  
 Or brake, not wheel — that harrow fit to reel  
 Men's bodies out like silk? with all the air  
 Of Tophet's tool, on earth left unaware,  
 Or brought to sharpen its rusty teeth of steel.

Then came a bit of stubbed ground, once a  
 wood,

Next a marsh, it would seem, and now mere  
 earth

Desperate and done with: (so a fool finds  
 mirth,

Makes a thing and then mars it, till his mood  
 Changes and off he goes!) within a rood —

Bog, clay and rubble, sand and stark black  
 dearth.

Now blotches rankling, colored gay and grim,  
 Now patches where some leanness of the  
 soil's

Broke into moss or substances like boils;  
 Then came some palsied oak, a cleft in him  
 Like a distorted mouth that splits its rim  
 Gaping at death, and dies while it recoils.

And just as far as ever from the end!  
 Naught in the distance but the evening,  
 naught

To point my footstep further! At the  
 thought,

A great black bird, Apollyon's bosom-friend,  
 Sailed past, nor beat his wide wing dragon-  
 penned

That brushed my cap — perchance the guide  
 I sought.

For, looking up, aware I somehow grew,  
 'Spite of the dusk, the plain had given place  
 All round to mountains — with such name to  
 grace

Mere ugly heights and heaps now stolen in  
 view.

How thus they had surprised me, — solve it,  
 you!

How to get from them was no clearer case.

Yet half I seemed to recognize some trick  
 Of mischief happened to me, God knows  
 when —

In a bad dream perhaps. Here ended, then,  
 Progress this way. When, in the very nick  
 Of giving up, one time more, came a click  
 As when a trap shuts — you're inside the  
 den!

Burningly it came on me all at once.

This was the place! those two hills on the  
 right,

Crouched like two bulls locked horn in horn  
 in fight;

While to the left, a tall scalped mountain . . .  
 Dunce,

Dotard, a-doing at the very nonce,  
 After a life spent training for the sight!

What in the midst lay but the Tower itself?  
 The round squat turret, blind as the fool's  
 heart,

Built of brown stone, without a counterpart  
 In the whole world. The tempest's mocking  
 elf

Points to the shipman thus the unseen shelf  
 He strikes on, only when the timbers start.

Not see? because of night perhaps? — why, day  
 Came back again for that! before it left,  
 The dying sunset kindled through a cleft:  
 The hills, like giants at a hunting, lay,  
 Chin upon hand, to see the game at bay, —  
 "Now stab and end the creature—to the  
 heft!"

Not hear? when noise was everywhere! it tolled  
 Increasing like a bell. Names in my ears,  
 Of all the lost adventurers my peers, —  
 How such a one was strong, and such was bold,

And such was fortunate, yet each of old  
 Lost, lost! one moment knelled the woe of  
 years.

There they stood, ranged along the hillsides,  
 met

To view the last of me, a living frame  
 For one more picture! in a sheet of flame  
 I saw them and I knew them all. And yet  
 Dauntless the slug-horn to my lips I set,  
 And blew. "*Childe Roland to the Dark  
 Tower came.*"

## A SOUL'S TRAGEDY

ACT FIRST, BEING WHAT WAS CALLED THE POETRY OF CHIAPPINO'S LIFE;  
 AND ACT SECOND, ITS PROSE

THIS drama was first printed with *Luria* as  
 the concluding number of *Bells and Pomegranates* in April, 1846.

## PERSONS

LUITOLFO and EULALIA, betrothed lovers.  
 CHIAPPINO, their friend.  
 OGNIEN, the Pope's Legate.  
 Citizens of Faenza.

TIME, 15—. PLACE, FAENZA.

## ACT I

*Inside LUITOLFO'S house. CHIAPPINO, EULALIA.*

*Eulalia.* What is it keeps Luitolfo? Night's  
 fast falling.

And 't was scarce sunset . . . had the ave-bell  
 Sounded before he sought the Provost's house?  
 I think not: all he had to say would take  
 Few minutes, such a very few, to say!  
 How do you think, Chiappino? If our lord  
 The Provost were less friendly to your friend  
 Than everybody here professes him,  
 I should begin to tremble — should not you?  
 Why are you silent when so many times  
 I turn and speak to you?

*Chiappino.* That's good!

*Eu.* You laugh!

*Ch.* Yes, I had fancied nothing that bears  
 price

In the whole world was left to call my own;  
 And, maybe, felt a little pride thereat.  
 Up to a single man's or woman's love,  
 Down to the right in my own flesh and blood.  
 There's nothing mine, I fancied, — till you  
 spoke:

— Counting, you see, as "nothing" the permis-  
 sion

To study this peculiar lot of mine  
 In silence: well, go silence with the rest  
 Of the world's good! What can I say, shall  
 serve?

*Eu.* This, — lest you, even more than needs,  
 embitter

Our clouting: say your wrongs have cast, for  
 once,

A cloud across your spirit!

*Ch.*

How a cloud?

*Eu.* No man nor woman loves you, did you  
 say?

*Ch.* My God, were 't not for thee!

*Eu.*

Ay, God remains,

Even did men forsake you.

*Ch.*

Oh, not so!

Were 't not for God, I mean, what hope of  
 truth —

Speaking truth, hearing truth, would stay with  
 man?

I, now — the homeless friendless penniless  
 Proscribed and exiled wretch who speak to

you, —

Ought to speak truth, yet could not, for my  
 death,

(The thing that tempts me most) help speaking  
 lies

About your friendship and Luitolfo's courage  
 And all our townsfolk's equanimity —

Through sheer incompetence to rid myself

Of the old miserable lying trick

Caught from the liars I have lived with, — God,

Did I not turn to thee! It is thy prompting

I dare to be ashamed of, and thy counsel

Would die along my coward lip, I know.

But I do turn to thee. This craven tongue,

These features which refuse the soul its way,

Reclaim thou! Give me truth — truth, power  
 to speak

— And after be sole present to approve

The spoken truth! Or, stay, that spoken truth,  
 Who knows but you, too, may approve?

*Eu.*

Ah, well —

Keep silence then, Chiappino!

*Ch.*

You would hear, —

You shall now, — why the thing we please to  
 style

My gratitude to you and all your friends



For service done me, is just gratitude  
 So much as yours was service : no whit more.  
 I was born here, so was Luitolfo ; both  
 At one time, much with the same circumstance  
 Of rank and wealth ; and both, up to this night  
 Of parting company, have side by side  
 Still fared, he in the sunshine — I, the shadow.  
 " Why ? " asks the world. " Because," replies  
 the world

To its complacent self. " these playfellows,  
 Who took at church the holy-water drop  
 Each from the other's finger, and so forth, —  
 Were of two moods : Luitolfo was the proper  
 Friend-making, everywhere friend-finding soul,  
 Fit for the sunshine, so, it followed him.  
 A happy-tempered bringer of the best  
 Out of the worst ; who bears with what 's past  
 cure,

And puts so good a face on 't — wisely passive  
 Where action 's fruitless, while he remedies  
 In silence what the foolish rail against ;  
 A man to smooth such natures as parade  
 Of opposition must exasperate ;  
 No general gauntlet-gatherer for the weak  
 Against the strong, yet over-scrupulous  
 At lucky junctures ; one who won't forego  
 The after-battle work of binding wounds,  
 Because, forsooth he 'd have to bring himself  
 To side with wound-inflictors for their leave ! "  
 — Why do you gaze, nor help me to repeat  
 What comes so glibly from the common mouth,  
 About Luitolfo and his so-styled friend ?

*Eu.* Because, that friend's sense is obscured . . .

*Ch.* I thought  
 You would be readier with the other half  
 Of the world's story, my half ! Yet, 't is true.  
 For all the world does say it. Say your worst !  
 True, I thank God, I ever said " you sin,"  
 When a man did sin : if I could not say it,  
 I glared it at him ; if I could not glare it,  
 I prayed against him ; then my part seemed over.  
 God's may begin yet : so it will, I trust.

*Eu.* If the world outraged you, did we ?

*Ch.* What 's " me " ?  
 That you use well or ill ? It 's man, in me,  
 All your successes are an outrage to,  
 You all, whom sunshine follows, as you say !  
 Here 's our Faenza birthplace ; they send here  
 A provost from Ravenna : how he rules,  
 You can at times be eloquent about.  
 " Then, end his rule ! " — " Ah yes, one stroke  
 does that !

But patience under wrong works slow and sure.  
 Must violence still bring peace forth ? He,  
 beside,

Returns so blandly one's obeisance ! ah —  
 Some latent virtue may be lingering yet,  
 Some human sympathy which, once excite,  
 And all the lump were leavened quietly :  
 So, no more talk of striking, for this time ! "  
 But I, as one of those he rules, won't bear  
 These pretty takings-up and layings-down  
 Our cause, just as you think occasion suits.  
 Enough of earnest, is there ? You 'll play, will  
 you ?

Diversify your tactics, give submission,  
 Obsequiousness and flattery a turn,

While we die in our misery patient deaths ?  
 We all are outraged then, and I the first :  
 I, for mankind, resent each shrug and smirk,  
 Each beck and bend, each . . . all you do and  
 are,

I hate !

*Eu.* We share a common censure, then.

'T is well you have not poor Luitolfo's part  
 Nor mine to point out in the wide offence.

*Ch.* Oh, shall I let you so escape me, lady ?  
 Come, on your own ground, lady, — from your-  
 self,

(Leaving the people's wrong, which most is  
 mine)

What have I got to be so grateful for ?

These three last fines, no doubt, one on the  
 other

Paid by Luitolfo ?

*Eu.* Shame, Chiappino !

*Ch.* Shame

Fall presently on who deserves it most !

— Which is to see. He paid my fines — my  
 friend,

Your prosperous smooth lover presently,  
 Then, scarce your wooer, — soon, your hus-  
 band : well —

I loved you.

*Eu.* Hold !

*Ch.* You knew it, years ago.

When my voice faltered and my eye grew dim  
 Because you gave me your silk mask to hold —  
 My voice that greatens when there's need to  
 curse

The people's Provost to their heart's content,  
 — My eye, the Provost, who bears all men's  
 eyes,

Banishes now because he cannot bear, —

You knew . . . but you do your parts — my  
 part, I :

So be it ! You flourish, I decay : all 's well.

*Eu.* I hear this for the first time.

*Ch.* The fault 's there ?  
 Then my days spoke not, and my nights of fire  
 Were voiceless ? Then the very heart may  
 burst.

Yet all prove naught, because no mincing  
 speech

Tells leisurely that thus it is and thus ?

Eulalia, truce with toying for this once !

A banished fool, who troubles you to-night

For the last time — why, what 's to fear from  
 me ?

You knew I loved you !

*Eu.* Not so, on my faith !

You were my now-affianced lover's friend —

Came in, went out with him, could speak as he.

All praise your ready parts and pregnant wit ;

See how your words come from you in a crowd !

Luitolfo's first to place you o'er himself

In all that challenges respect and love :

Yet you were silent then, who blame me now

I say all this by fascination, sure :

I, all but wed to one I love, yet listen !

It must be, you are wronged, and that the  
 wrongs

Luitolfo pities . . .

*Ch.* — You too pity ? Do !

But hear first what my wrongs are ; so began

This talk and so shall end this talk. I say,  
Was 't not enough that I must strive (I saw)  
To grow so far familiar with your charms  
As next contrive some way to win them — which  
To do, an age seemed far too brief — for, see!  
We all aspire to heaven; and there lies heaven  
Above us: go there! Dare we go? no, surely!  
How dare we go without a reverent pause,  
A growing less unfit for heaven? Just so,  
I dared not speak: the greater fool, it seems!  
Was 't not enough to struggle with such folly,  
But I must have, beside, the very man  
Whose slight free loose and incapacious soul  
Gave his tongue scope to say whate'er he would  
— Must have him load me with his benefits  
— For fortune's fiercest stroke?

*Eu.* Justice to him  
That's now entreating, at his risk perhaps,  
Justice for you! Did he once call those acts  
Of simple friendship — bounties, benefits?

*Ch.* No: the straight course had been to call  
them thus.

Then, I had flung them back, and kept myself  
Unhindered, free as he to win the prize  
We both sought. But "the gold was dross,"  
he said:

"He loved me, and I loved him not: why  
spurn

A trifle out of superfluity?  
He had forgotten he had done as much."  
So had not I! Henceforth, try as I could  
To take him at his word, there stood by you  
My benefactor; who might speak and laugh  
And urge his nothings, even banter me  
Before you — but my tongue was tied. A  
dream!

Let's wake: your husband . . . how you shake  
at that!

Good — my revenge!

*Eu.* Why should I shake? What forced  
Or forces me to be Luitolfo's bride?

*Ch.* There's my revenge, that nothing  
forces you.

No gratitude, no liking of the eye  
Nor longing of the heart, but the poor bond  
Of habit — here so many times he came,  
So much he spoke, — all these compose the tie  
That pulls you from me. Well, he paid my  
fines,

Nor missed a cloak from wardrobe, dish from  
table;

He spoke a good word to the Provost here,  
Held me up when my fortunes fell away,  
— It had not looked so well to let me drop, —  
Men take pains to preserve a tree-stump, even,  
Whose boughs they played beneath — much  
more a friend.

But one grows tired of seeing, after the first,  
Pains spent upon impracticable stuff  
Like me. I could not change: you know the  
rest:

I've spoke my mind too fully out, by chance,  
This morning to our Provost; so, ere night  
I leave the city on pain of death. And now  
On my account there's gallant intercession  
Goes forward — that's so graceful! — and anon  
He'll noisily come back; "the intercession  
Was made and fails; all's over for us both;

"Tis vain contending; I would better go."  
And I do go — and straight to you he turns  
Light of a load; and ease of that permits  
His visage to repair the natural bland  
Economy, sore broken late to suit  
My discontent. Thus, all are pleased — you,  
with him,

He with himself, and all of you with me  
— "Who," say the citizens, "had done far  
better

In letting people sleep upon their woes,  
If not possessed with talent to relieve them  
When once awake; — but then I had," they'll  
say,

"Doubtless some unknown compensating pride  
In what I did; and as I seem content  
With ruining myself, why, so should they be."  
And so they are, and so be with his prize  
The devil, when he gets them speedily!

Why does not your Luitolfo come? I long  
To don this cloak and take the Lugo path.  
It seems you never loved me, then?

*Eu.*

Chiappino!

*Ch.* Never?

*Eu.* Never.

*Ch.* That's sad. Say what I might,  
There was no help from being sure this while  
You loved me. Love like mine must have  
return,

I thought: no river starts but to some sea.  
And had you loved me, I could soon devise  
Some specious reason why you stifled love,  
Some fancied self-denial on your part,  
Which made you choose Luitolfo; so, except-  
ing

From the wide condemnation of all here,  
One woman. Well, the other dream may  
break!

If I knew any heart, as mine loved you,  
Loved me, though in the vilest breast 't were  
lodged.

I should, I think, be forced to love again:

Else there's no right nor reason in the world.

*Eu.* "If you knew," say you, — but I did  
not know.

That's where you're blind, Chiappino! — a  
disease

Which if I may remove, I'll not repent  
The listening to. You cannot, will not, see  
How, place you but in every circumstance  
Of us, you are just now indignant at,  
You'd be as we.

*Ch.* I should be? . . . that; again!  
I, to my friend, my country and my love,  
Be as Luitolfo and these Faentines?

*Eu.* As we.

*Ch.* Now, I'll say something to remember.  
I trust in nature for the stable laws  
Of beauty and utility. — Spring shall plant,  
And Autumn garner to the end of time:  
I trust in God — the right shall be the right  
And other than the wrong, while he endures:  
I trust in my own soul, that can perceive  
The outward and the inward, nature's good  
And God's: so, seeing these men and myself,  
Having a right to speak, thus do I speak.  
I'll not curse — God bears with them, well  
may I —

But I — protest against their claiming me.  
I simply say, if that's allowable,  
I would not (broadly) do as they have done.  
— God curse this townful of born slaves, bred  
slaves,  
Branded into the blood and bone, slaves!  
Curse

Whoever loves, above his liberty,  
House, land or life! and . . .

[*A knocking without.*  
— bless my hero-friend,

Luitolfo!

*Eu.* How he knocks!

*Ch.* The peril, lady!  
"Chiappino, I have run a risk — a risk!  
For when I prayed the Provost (he's my friend)  
To grant you a week's respite of the sentence  
That confiscates your goods, exiles yourself,  
He shrugged his shoulder — I say, shrugged it!

Yes,  
And fright of that drove all else from my head.  
Here's a good purse of *scudi*: off with you,  
Lest of that shrug come what God only knows!  
The *scudi* — friend, they're trash — no thanks,  
I beg!

Take the north gate, — for San Vitale's suburb,  
Whose double taxes you appealed against,  
In discomposure at your ill-success  
Is apt to stone you: there, there — only go!  
Beside, Eulalia here looks sleepily.  
Shake . . . oh, you hurt me, so you squeeze  
my wrist!"

— Is it not thus you'll speak, adventurous  
friend?

[*As he opens the door, LUITOLFO rushes in, his garments disordered.*

*Eu.* Luitolfo! Blood?

*Luitolfo.* There's more — and more of it!  
Eulalia — take the garment! No — you, friend!  
You take it and the blood from me — you dare!

*Eu.* Oh, who has hurt you? where's the  
wound?

*Ch.* "Who," say you?  
The man with many a touch of virtue yet!  
The Provost's friend has proved too frank of  
speech,

And this comes of it. Miserable hound!  
This comes of temporizing, as I said!  
Here's fruit of your smooth speeches and soft  
looks!

Now see my way! As God lives, I go straight  
To the palace and do justice, once for all!

*Luit.* What says he?

*Ch.* I'll do justice on him,

*Luit.* Him?

*Ch.* The Provost.

*Luit.* I've just killed him.

*Eu.* Oh, my God!

*Luit.* My friend, they're on my trace;  
they'll have me — now!

They're round him, busy with him: soon  
they'll find

He's past their help, and then they'll be on  
me!

Chiappino, save Eulalia! I forget . . .

Were you not bound for . . .

*Ch.*

*Luit.*

Lugo?

Ah — yes — yes!

That was the point I prayed of him to change.  
Well, go — be happy! Is Eulalia safe?  
They're on me!

*Ch.* 'T is through me they reach you, then!  
Friend, seem the man you are! Lock arms —  
that's right!

Now tell me what you've done; explain how  
you,

That still professed forbearance, still preached  
peace,

Could bring yourself . . .  
*Luit.* What was peace for, Chiappino?

I tried peace: did that promise, when peace  
failed,

Strife should not follow? All my peaceful  
days

Were just the prelude to a day like this.

I cried "You call me 'friend': save my true  
friend!

Save him, or lose me!"

*Ch.* But you never said  
You meant to tell the Provost thus and thus.

*Luit.* Why should I say it? What else did  
I mean?

*Ch.* Well? He persisted?

*Luit.* — "Would so order it  
You should not trouble him too soon again."

I saw a meaning in his eye and lip;  
I poured my heart's store of indignant words  
Out on him: then — I know not! He retorted,  
And I . . . some staff lay there to hand — I

think  
He bade his servants thrust me out — I

struck . . .

Ah, they come! Fly you, save yourselves, you  
two!

The dead back-weight of the beheading axe!  
The glowing trip-hook, thumbscrews and the  
gadge!

*Eu.* They do come! Torches in the Place!  
Farewell,

Chiappino! You can work no good to us —  
Much to yourself; believe not, all the world  
Must needs be cursed henceforth!

*Ch.* And you?

*Eu.* I stay.

*Ch.* Ha, ha! Now, listen! I am master  
here!

This was my coarse disguise; this paper shows  
My path of flight and place of refuge — see —

Lugo, Argenta, past San Nicolo,  
Ferrara, then to Venice and all's safe!

Put on the cloak! His people have to fetch  
A compass round about. There's time enough  
Ere they can reach us, so you straightway make  
For Lugo . . . nay, he hears not! On with  
it —

The cloak, Luitolfo, do you hear me? See —  
He obeys he knows not how. Then, if I must —  
Answer me! Do you know the Lugo gate?

*Eu.* The northwest gate, over the bridge?

*Luit.* I know.

*Ch.* Well, there — you are not frightened?  
all my route

Is traced in that: at Venice you escape  
Their power. Eulalia, I am master here!

[*Shouts from without. He pushes out LUITOLFO, who  
complies mechanically.*



In time! Nay, help me with him—so! He's gone.

*Eu.* What have you done? On you, perchance, all know

The Provost's hater, will men's vengeance fall As our accomplice.

*Ch.* Mere accomplice? See!  
[*Putting on LUITOLFO'S vest.*]

Now, lady, am I true to my profession,

Or one of these?

*Eu.* You take Luitolfo's place?

*Ch.* Die for him.

*Eu.* Well done!

[*Shouts increase.*]

*Ch.* How the people tarry!

I can't be silent; I must speak: or sing—

How natural to sing now!

*Eu.* Hush and pray!

We are to die; but even I perceive

'T is not a very hard thing so to die.

My cousin of the pale-blue tearful eyes,

Poor Cesca, suffers more from one day's life

With the stern husband; Tisbe's heart goes forth

Each evening after that wild son of hers,  
To track his thoughtless footstep through the streets:

How easy for them both to die like this!

I am not sure that I could live as they.

*Ch.* Here they come, crowds! they pass the gate? Yes!—No!—

One torch is in the courtyard. Here flock all.

*Eu.* At least Luitolfo has escaped. What cries!

*Ch.* If they would drag one to the market-place,

One might speak there!

*Eu.* List, list!

*Ch.* They mount the steps.

[*Enter the Populace.*]

*Ch.* I killed the Provost!

*The Populace.* [*Speaking together.*] 'T was Chiappino, friends!

Our savior! The best man at last as first!

He who first made us feel what chains we wore,

He also strikes the blow that shatters them,

He at last saves us—our best citizen!

—Oh, have you only courage to speak now?

My eldest son was christened a year since

"Cino" to keep Chiappino's name in mind—

Cino, for shortness merely, you observe!

The city's in our hands. The guards are fled.

Do you, the cause of all, come down—come up—

Come out to counsel us, our chief, our king,

Whate'er rewards you! Choose your own reward!

The peril over, its reward begins!

Come and harangue us in the market-place!

*Eu.* Chiappino?

*Ch.* Yes—I understand your eyes!

You think I should have promptly disowned

This deed with its strange unforeseen success,

In favor of Luitolfo. But the peril,

So far from ended, hardly seems begun.

To-morrow, rather, when a calm succeeds,

We easily shall make him full amends:

And meantime—if we save them as they pray,

And justify the deed by its effects?

*Eu.* You would, for worlds, you had denied at once.

*Ch.* I know my own intention, be assured!

All's well. Precede us, fellow-citizens!

## ACT II

*The Market-place. LUITOLFO in disguise mingling with the Populace assembled opposite the Provost's Palace.*

*1st Bystander.* [*To LUIT.*] You, a friend of Luitolfo's? Then, your friend is vanished,—in all probability killed on the night that his patron the tyrannical Provost was loyally suppressed here, exactly a month ago, by our illustrious fellow-citizen, thrice-noble savior, and new Provost that is like to be, this very morning,—Chiappino!

*Luit.* He the new Provost?

*2d By.* Up those steps will he go, and beneath yonder pillar stand, while Ogniben, the Pope's Legate from Ravenna, reads the new dignitary's title to the people, according to established custom: for which reason, there is the assemblage you inquire about.

*Luit.* Chiappino—the late Provost's successor? Impossible! But tell me of that presently. What I would know first of all is, wherefore Luitolfo must so necessarily have been killed on that memorable night?

*3d By.* You were Luitolfo's friend? So was I. Never, if you will credit me, did there exist so poor-spirited a milk-sop. He, with all the opportunities in the world, furnished by daily converse with our oppressor, would not stir a finger to help us: and, when Chiappino rose in solitary majesty and . . . how does one go on saying? . . . dealt the godlike blow,—this Luitolfo, not unreasonably fearing the indignation of an aroused and liberated people, fled precipitately. He may have got trodden to death in the press at the southeast gate, when the Provost's guards fled through it to Ravenna, with their wounded master,—if he did not rather hang himself under some hedge.

*Luit.* Or why not simply have lain perdue in some quiet corner,—such as San Cassiano, where his estate was,—receiving daily intelligence from some sure friend, meanwhile, as to the turn matters were taking here—how, for instance, the Provost was not dead, after all, only wounded—or, as to-day's news would seem to prove, how Chiappino was not Brutus the Elder, after all, only the new Provost—and thus Luitolfo be enabled to watch a favorable opportunity for returning? Might it not have been so?

*3d By.* Why, he may have taken that care of himself, certainly, for he came of a cautious stock. I'll tell you how his uncle, just such another gingerly treader on tiptoes with finger on lip,—how he met his death in the great plague-year: *dico vobis!* Hearing that the seventeenth house in a certain street was infected, he calculates to pass it in safety by taking plentiful breath, say, when he shall arrive at the eleventh house; then scouring by,

holding that breath, till he be got so far on the other side as number twenty-three, and thus elude the danger. — And so did he begin; but, as he arrived at thirteen, we will say, — thinking to improve on his precaution by putting up a little prayer to Saint Nepomucene of Prague, this exhausted so much of his lungs' reserve, that at sixteen it was clean spent, — consequently at the fatal seventeen he inhaled with a vigor and persistence enough to suck you any latent venom out of the heart of a stone — Ha, ha!

*Luit.* [*Aside.*] (If I had not lent that man the money he wanted last spring, I should fear this bitterness was attributable to me.) Luitolfo is dead then, one may conclude?

*3d By.* Why, he had a house here, and a woman to whom he was affianced; and as they both pass naturally to the new Provost, his friend and heir . . .

*Luit.* Ah, I suspected you of imposing on me with your pleasantry! I know Chiappino better.

*1st By.* (Our friend has the bile! After all, I do not dislike finding somebody vary a little this general gape of admiration at Chiappino's glorious qualities.) Pray, how much may you know of what has taken place in Faenza since that memorable night?

*Luit.* It is most to the purpose, that I know Chiappino to have been by profession a hater of that very office of Provost, you now charge him with proposing to accept.

*1st By.* Sir, I'll tell you. That night was indeed memorable. Up we rose, a mass of us, men, women, children; out fled the guards with the body of the tyrant; we were to defy the world: but, next gray morning, "What will Rome say?" began everybody. You know we are governed by Ravenna, which is governed by Rome. And quietly into the town, by the Ravenna road, comes on muleback a portly personage, Ogniben by name, with the quality of Pontifical Legate; trots briskly through the streets humming a "*Cur fremuere gentes*," and makes directly for the Provost's Palace — there it faces you. "One Messer Chiappino is your leader? I have known three-and-twenty leaders of revolts!" (laughing gently to himself) — "Give me the help of your arm from my mule to yonder steps under the pillar — So! And now, my revolvers and good friends, what do you want? The guards burst into Ravenna last night bearing your wounded Provost; and, having had a little talk with him, I take on myself to come and try appease the disorderliness, before Rome, hearing of it, resort to another method: 't is I come, and not another, from a certain love I confess to, of composing differences. So, do you understand, you are about to experience this unheard-of tyranny from me, that there shall be no heading nor hanging, nor confiscation nor exile: I insist on your simply pleasing yourselves. And now, pray, what does please you? To live without any government at all? Or having decided for one, to see its minister murdered by the first of your body that chooses to find himself

wronged, or disposed for reverting to first principles and a justice anterior to all institutions, — and so will you carry matters, that the rest of the world must at length unite and put down such a den of wild beasts? As for vengeance on what has just taken place, — once for all, the wounded man assures me he cannot conjecture who struck him; and this so earnestly, that one may be sure he knows perfectly well what intimate acquaintance could find admission to speak with him late last evening. I come not for vengeance therefore, but from pure curiosity to hear what you will do next." And thus he ran on, on, easily and volubly, till he seemed to arrive quite naturally at the praise of law, order, and paternal government by somebody from rather a distance. All our citizens were in the snare, and about to be friends with so congenial an adviser; but that Chiappino suddenly stood forth, spoke out indignantly, and set things right again.

*Luit.* Do you see? I recognize him there!

*3d By.* Ay, but, mark you, at the end of Chiappino's longest period in praise of a pure republic, — "And by whom do I desire such a government should be administered, perhaps, but by one like yourself?" returns the Legate: thereupon speaking for a quarter of an hour together, on the natural and only legitimate government by the best and wisest. And it should seem there was soon discovered to be no such vast discrepancy at bottom between this and Chiappino's theory, place but each in its proper light. "Oh, are you there?" quoth Chiappino: "Ay, in that, I agree," returns Chiappino: and so on.

*Luit.* But did Chiappino cede at once to this?

*1st By.* Why, not altogether at once. For instance, he said that the difference between him and all his fellows was, that they seemed all wishing to be kings in one or another way, — "whereas what right," asked he, "has any man to wish to be superior to another?" — whereat, "Ah, sir," answers the Legate, "this is the death of me, so often as I expect something is really going to be revealed to us by you clearer-seers, deeper-thinkers — this — that your right-hand (to speak by a figure) should be found taking up the weapon it displayed so ostentatiously, not to destroy any dragon in our path, as was prophesied, but simply to cut off its own fellow left-hand: yourself set about attacking yourself. For see now! Here are you who, I make sure, glory exceedingly in knowing the noble nature of the soul, its divine impulses, and so forth; and with such a knowledge you stand, as it were, armed to encounter the natural doubts and fears as to that same inherent nobility, which are apt to waylay us, the weaker ones, in the road of life. And when we look eagerly to see them fall before you, lo, round you wheel, only the left-hand gets the blow; one proof of the soul's nobility destroys simply another proof, quite as good, of the same, for you are found delivering an opinion like this! Why, what is this perpetual yearning to exceed, to subdue, to be better than, and

a king over, one's fellows, — all that you so disclaim, — but the very tendency yourself are most proud of, and under another form, would oppose to it, — only in a lower stage of manifestation? You don't want to be vulgarly superior to your fellows after their poor fashion — to have me hold solemnly up your gown's tail, or hand you an express of the last importance from the Pope, with all these bystanders noticing how unconcerned you look the while; but neither does our gaping friend, the burgher yonder, want the other kind of kingship, that consists in understanding better than his fellows this and similar points of human nature, nor to roll under his tongue this sweeter morsel still, — the feeling that, through immense philosophy, he does *not* feel, he rather thinks, above you and me!" And so chatting, they glided off arm-in-arm.

*Luit.* And the result is . . .

*1st By.* Why that, a month having gone by, the indomitable Chiappino, marrying as he will Luitolfo's love — at all events succeeding to Luitolfo's wealth — becomes the first inhabitant of Faenza, and a proper aspirant to the Provostship; which we assemble here to see conferred on him this morning. The Legate's Guard to clear the way! He will follow presently.

*Luit.* [*Withdrawing a little.*] I understand the drift of Eulalia's communications less than ever. Yet she surely said, in so many words, that Chiappino was in urgent danger: wherefore, disregarding her injunction to continue in my retreat and await the result of — what she called, some experiment yet in process — I hastened here without her leave or knowledge: how could I else? But if this they say be true — if it were for such a purpose, she and Chiappino kept me away . . . Oh, no, no! I must confront him and her before I believe this of them. And at the word, see!

(*Enter CHIAPPINO and EULALIA.*)

*Eu.* We part here, then? The change in your principles would seem to be complete.

*Ch.* Now, why refuse to see that in my present course I change no principles, only re-adapt them and more adroitly? I had despaired of what you may call the material instrumentality of life; of ever being able to rightly operate on mankind through such a deranged machinery as the existing modes of government: but now, if I suddenly discover how to inform these perverted institutions with fresh purpose, bring the functionary limbs once more into immediate communication with, and subjection to, the soul I am about to bestow on them — do you see? Why should one desire to invent, as long as it remains possible to renew and transform? When all further hope of the old organization shall be extinct, then, I grant you, it may be time to try and create another.

*Eu.* And there being discoverable some hope yet in the hitherto much-abused old system of absolute government by a Provost here, you mean to take your time about endeavoring to realize those visions of a perfect State we once heard of?

*Ch.* Say, I would fain realize my conception

of a palace, for instance, and that there is, abstractedly, but a single way of erecting one perfectly. Here, in the market-place is my allotted building-ground; here I stand without a stone to lay, or a laborer to help me, — stand, too, during a short day of life, close on which the night comes. On the other hand, circumstances suddenly offer me (turn and see it!) the old Provost's house to experiment upon — ruinous, if you please, wrongly constructed at the beginning, and ready to tumble now. But materials abound, a crowd of workmen offer their services; here exists yet a Hall of Audience of originally noble proportions, there a Guest-chamber of symmetrical design enough: and I may restore, enlarge, abolish or unite these to heart's content. Ought I not make the best of such an opportunity, rather than continue to gaze disconsolately with folded arms on the flat pavement here, while the sun goes slowly down, never to rise again? Since you cannot understand this nor me, it is better we should part as you desire.

*Eu.* So, the love breaks away too!

*Ch.* No, rather my soul's capacity for love widens — needs more than one object to content it, — and, being better instructed, will not persist in seeing all the component parts of love in what is only a single part, — nor in finding that so many and so various loves are all united in the love of a woman, — manifold uses in one instrument, as the savage has his sword, staff, sceptre and idol, all in one club-stick. Love is a very compound thing. The intellectual part of my love I shall give to men, the mighty dead or the illustrious living; and determine to call a mere sensual instinct by as few fine names as possible. What do I lose?

*Eu.* Nay, I only think, what do I lose? and, one more word — which shall complete my instruction — does friendship go too? What of Luitolfo, the author of your present prosperity?

*Ch.* How the author?

*Eu.* That blow now called yours . . .

*Ch.* Struck without principle or purpose, as by a blind natural operation: yet to which all my thought and life directly and advisedly tended. I would have struck it, and could not: he would have done his utmost to avoid striking it, yet did so. I dispute his right to that deed of mine — a final action with him, from the first effect of which he fled away, — a mere first step with me, on which I base a whole mighty superstructure of good to follow. Could he get good from it?

*Eu.* So we profess, so we perform!

(*Enter OGNIEN. EULALIA stands apart.*)

*Ogniben.* I have seen three-and-twenty leaders of revolts. By your leave, sir! Perform? What does the lady say of performing?

*Ch.* Only the trite saying, that we must not trust profession, only performance.

*Ogni.* She'll not say that, sir, when she knows you longer; you'll instruct her better. Ever judge of men by their professions! For though the bright moment of promising is but a moment and cannot be prolonged, yet, if sincere in its moment's extravagant goodness, why,



trust it and know the man by it, I say — not by his performance; which is half the world's work, interfere as the world needs must, with its accidents and circumstances: the profession was purely the man's own. I judge people by what they might be, — not are, nor will be.

*Ch.* But have there not been found, too, performing natures, not merely promising?

*Ogni.* Plenty. Little Bindo of our town, for instance, promised his friend, great ugly Masaccio, once, "I will repay you!" — for a favor done him. So, when his father came to die, and Bindo succeeded to the inheritance, he sends straightway for Masaccio and shares all with him — gives him half the land, half the money, half the kegs of wine in the cellar. "Good," say you: and it is good. But had little Bindo found himself possessor of all this wealth some five years before — on the happy night when Masaccio procured him that interview in the garden with his pretty cousin Lisa — instead of being the beggar he then was, — I am bound to believe that in the warm moment of promise he would have given away all the wine-kegs and all the money and all the land, and only reserved to himself some hut on a hill-top hard by, whence he might spend his life in looking and seeing his friend enjoy himself: he meant fully that much, but the world interfered. — To our business! Did I understand you just now within-doors? You are not going to marry your old friend's love, after all?

*Ch.* I must have a woman that can sympathize with, and appreciate me, I told you.

*Ogni.* Oh, I remember! You, the greater nature, needs must have a lesser one (— avowedly lesser — contest with you on that score would never do) — such a nature must comprehend you, as the phrase is, accompany and testify of your greatness from point to point onward. Why, that were being not merely as great as yourself, but greater considerably! Meantime, might not the more bounded nature as reasonably count on your appreciation of it, rather? — on your keeping close by it, so far as you both go together, and then going on by yourself as far as you please? Thus God serves us.

*Ch.* And yet a woman that could understand the whole of me, to whom I could reveal alike the strength and the weakness —

*Ogni.* Ah, my friend, wish for nothing so foolish! Worship your love, give her the best of you to see; be to her like the western lands (they bring us such strange news of) to the Spanish Court; send her only your lumps of gold, fans of feathers, your spirit-like birds, and fruits and gems! So shall you, what is unseen of you, be supposed altogether a paradise by her, — as these western lands by Spain: though I warrant there is filth, red baboons, ugly reptiles and squalor enough, which they bring Spain as few samples of as possible. Do you want your mistress to respect your body generally? Offer her your mouth to kiss: don't strip off your boot and put your foot to her lips! You understand my humor by this time? I help men to carry out their own prin-

ciples: if they please to say two and two make five, I assent, so they will but go on and say, four and four make ten.

*Ch.* But these are my private affairs; what I desire you to occupy yourself about, is my public appearance presently: for when the people hear that I am appointed Provost, though you and I may thoroughly discern — and easily, too — the right principle at bottom of such a movement, and how my republicanism remains thoroughly unaltered, only takes a form of expression hitherto commonly judged (and heretofore by myself) incompatible with its existence, — when thus I reconcile myself to an old form of government instead of proposing a new one —

*Ogni.* Why, you must deal with people broadly. Begin at a distance from this matter and say, — New truths, old truths! sirs, there is nothing new possible to be revealed to us in the moral world; we know all we shall ever know: and it is for simply reminding us, by their various respective expedients, how we do know this and the other matter, that men get called prophets, poets and the like. A philosopher's life is spent in discovering that, of the half-dozen truths he knew when a child, such an one is a lie, as the world states it in set terms; and then, after a weary lapse of years, and plenty of hard thinking, it becomes a truth again after all, as he happens to newly consider it and view it in a different relation with the others: and so he re-states it, to the confusion of somebody else in good time. As for adding to the original stock of truths, — impossible! Thus, you see the expression of them is the grand business: — you have got a truth in your head about the right way of governing people, and you took a mode of expressing it which now you confess to be imperfect. But what then? There is truth in falsehood, falsehood in truth. No man ever told one great truth, that I know, without the help of a good dozen of lies at least, generally unconscious ones. And as when a child comes in breathlessly and relates a strange story, you try to conjecture from the very falsities in it what the reality was, — do not conclude that he saw nothing in the sky, because he assuredly did not see a flying horse there as he says, — so, through the contradictory expression, do you see, men should look painfully for, and trust to arrive eventually at, what you call the true principle at bottom. Ah, what an answer is there! to what will it not prove applicable? — "Contradictions? Of course there were," say you!

*Ch.* Still, the world at large may call it inconsistency, and what shall I urge in reply?

*Ogni.* Why, look you, when they tax you with tergiversation or duplicity, you may answer — you begin to perceive that, when all's done and said, both great parties in the State, the advocates of change in the present system of things, and the opponents of it, patriot and anti-patriot, are found working together for the common good; and that in the midst of their efforts for and against its progress, the world somehow or other still advances: to which result they contribute in equal proportions.

those who spend their life in pushing it onward, as those who give theirs to the business of pulling it back. Now, if you found the world stand still between the opposite forces, and were glad, I should conceive you: but it steadily advances, you rejoice to see! By the side of such a rejoicer, the man who only winks as he keeps cunning and quiet, and says, "Let yonder hot-headed fellow fight out my battle! I, for one, shall win in the end by the blows he gives, and which I ought to be giving," — even he seems graceful in his avowal, when one considers that he might say, "I shall win quite as much by the blows our antagonist gives him, blows from which he saves me — I thank the antagonist equally!" Moreover, you may enlarge on the loss of the edge of party-animosity with age and experience . . .

*Ch.* And naturally time must wear off such asperities: the bitterest adversaries get to discover certain points of similarity between each other, common sympathies — do they not?

*Ogni.* Ay, had the young David but sat first to dine on his cheeses with the Philistine, he had soon discovered an abundance of such common sympathies. He of Gath, it is recorded, was born of a father and mother, had brothers and sisters like another man, — they, no more than the sons of Jesse, were used to eat each other. But, for the sake of one broad antipathy that had existed from the beginning, David slung the stone, cut off the giant's head, made a spoil of it, and after ate his cheeses alone, with the better appetite, for all I can learn. My friend, as you, with a quickened eyesight, go on discovering much good on the worse side, remember that the same process should proportionably magnify and demonstrate to you the much more good on the better side! And when I profess no sympathy for the Goliaths of our time, and you object that a large nature should sympathize with every form of intelligence, and see the good in it, however limited, — I answer, "So I do; but preserve the proportions of my sympathy, however finelier or wider I may extend its action." I desire to be able, with a quickened eyesight, to descry beauty in corruption where others see foulness only; but I hope I shall also continue to see a redoubled beauty in the higher forms of matter, where already everybody sees no foulness at all. I must retain, too, my old power of selection, and choice of appropriation, to apply to such new gifts; else they only dazzle instead of enlightening me. God has his archangels and consorts with them: though he made too, and intimately sees what is good in, the worm. Observe, I speak only as you profess to think and so ought to speak: I do justice to your own principles, that is all.

*Ch.* But you very well know that the two parties do, on occasion, assume each other's characteristics. What more disgusting, for instance, than to see how promptly the newly emancipated slave will adopt, in his own favor, the very measures of precaution, which pressed soreliest on himself as institutions of the tyranny he has just escaped from? Do the classes, hitherto without opinion, get leave to express it? there follows a

confederacy immediately, from which — exercise your individual right and dissent, and woe be to you!

*Ogni.* And a journey over the sea to you! That is the generous way. Cry — "Emancipated slaves, the first excess, and off I go!" The first time a poor devil, who has been hasted steadily his whole life long, finds himself let alone and able to legislate, so, begins pettishly, while he rubs his soles, "Woe be to whoever brings anything in the shape of a stick this way!" — you, rather than give up the very innocent pleasure of carrying one to switch flies with, — you go away, to everybody's sorrow. Yet you were quite reconciled to staying at home while the governors used to pass, every now and then, some such edict as, "Let no man indulge in owning a stick which is not thick enough to chastise our slaves, if need require!" Well, there are pre-ordained hierarchies among us, and a profane vulgar subjected to a different law altogether; yet I am rather sorry you should see it so clearly: for, do you know what is to — all but save you at the Day of Judgment, all you men of genius? It is this: that, while you generally began by pulling down God, and went on to the end of your life in one effort at setting up your own genius in his place, — still, the last, bitterest concession wrung with the utmost unwillingness from the experience of the very loftiest of you, was invariably — would one think it? — that the rest of mankind, down to the lowest of the mass, stood not, nor ever could stand, just on a level and equality with yourselves. That will be a point in the favor of all such, I hope and believe.

*Ch.* Why, men of genius are usually charged, I think, with doing just the reverse; and at once acknowledging the natural inequality of mankind, by themselves participating in the universal craving after, and deference to, the civil distinctions which represent it. You wonder they pay such undue respect to titles and badges of superior rank.

*Ogni.* Not I (always on your own ground and showing, be it noted!) Who doubts that, with a weapon to brandish, a man is the more formidable? Titles and badges are exercised as such a weapon, to which you and I look up wistfully. We could pin lions with it moreover, while in its present owner's hands it hardly prods rats. Nay, better than a mere weapon of easy mastery and obvious use, it is a mysterious divining-rod that may serve us in undreamed-of ways. Beauty, strength, intellect — men often have none of these, and yet conceive pretty accurately what kind of advantages they would bestow on the possessor. We know at least what it is we make up our mind to forego, and so can apply the fittest substitute in our power. Wanting beauty, we cultivate good-humor; missing wit, we get riches: but the mystic unimaginable operation of that gold collar and string of Latin names which suddenly turned poor stupid little peevish Cecco of our town into natural lord of the best of us — a Duke, he is now — there indeed is a virtue to be revered!



*Ch.* Ay, by the vulgar: not by Messere Stiatto the poet, who pays more assiduous court to him than anybody.

*Ogni.* What else should Stiatto pay court to? He has talent, not honor and riches: men naturally covet what they have not.

*Ch.* No; or Cecco would covet talent, which he has not, whereas he covets more riches, of which he has plenty, already.

*Ogni.* Because a purse added to a purse makes the holder twice as rich: but just such another talent as Stiatto's, added to what he now possesses, what would that profit him? Give the talent a purse indeed, to do something with! But lo, how we keep the good people waiting! I only desired to do justice to the noble sentiments which animate you, and which you are too modest to duly enforce. Come, to our main business: shall we ascend the steps? I am going to propose you for Provost to the people; they know your antecedents, and will accept you with a joyful unanimity: whereon I confirm their choice. Rouse up! Are you nerving yourself to an effort? Beware the disaster of Messere Stiatto we were talking of! who, determining to keep an equal mind and constant face on whatever might be the fortune of his last new poem with our townsmen, heard too plainly "hiss, hiss, hiss," increase every moment. Till at last the man fell senseless: not perceiving that the portentous sounds had all the while been issuing from between his own nobly clenched teeth, and nostrils narrowed by resolve.

*Ch.* Do you begin to throw off the mask? — to jest with me, having got me effectually into your trap?

*Ogni.* Where is the trap, my friend? You hear what I engage to do, for my part: you, for yours, have only to fulfil your promise made just now within doors, of professing unlimited obedience to Rome's authority in my person. And I shall authorize no more than the simple re-establishment of the Provostship and the conferment of its privileges upon yourself: the only novel stipulation being a birth of the peculiar circumstances of the time.

*Ch.* And that stipulation?

*Ogni.* Just the obvious one — that in the event of the discovery of the actual assailant of the late Provost . . .

*Ch.* Ha!

*Ogni.* Why, he shall suffer the proper penalty, of course; what did you expect?

*Ch.* Who heard of this?

*Ogni.* Rather, who needed to hear of this?

*Ch.* Can it be, the popular rumor never reached you . . .

*Ogni.* Many more such rumors reach me, friend, than I choose to receive: those which wait longest have best chance. Has the present one sufficiently waited? Now is its time for entry with effect. See the good people crowding about yonder palace-steps — which we may not have to ascend, after all! My good friends! (nay, two or three of you will answer every purpose) — who was it fell upon and proved nearly the death of your late Provost? His successor desires to hear, that his day of inau-

guration may be graced by the act of prompt, bare justice we all anticipate. Who dealt the blow that night, does anybody know?

*Luit.* [Coming forward]. I!

*All.* Luitolfo!

*Luit.* I avow the deed, justify and approve it, and stand forth now, to relieve my friend of an unearned responsibility. Having taken thought, I am grown stronger: I shall shrink from nothing that awaits me. Nay, Chiappino — we are friends still: I dare say there is some proof of your superior nature in this starting aside, strange as it seemed at first. So, they tell me, my horse is of the right stock, because a shadow in the path frightens him into a frenzy, makes him dash my brains out. I understand only the dull mule's way of standing stockishly, plodding soberly, suffering on occasion a blow or two with due patience.

*Eu.* I was determined to justify my choice, Chiappino; to let Luitolfo's nature vindicate itself. Henceforth we are undivided, whatever be our fortune.

*Ogni.* Now, in these last ten minutes of silence, what have I been doing, deem you? Putting the finishing stroke to a homily of mine, I have long taken thought to perfect, on the text, "Let whoso thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall." To your house, Luitolfo! Still silent, my patriotic friend? Well, that is a good sign however. And you will go aside for a time? That is better still. I understand: it would be easy for you to die of remorse here on the spot and shock us all, but you mean to live and grow worthy of coming back to us one day. There, I will tell everybody; and you only do right to believe you must get better as you get older. All men do so: they are worst in childhood, improve in manhood, and get ready in old age for another world. Youth, with its beauty and grace, would seem bestowed on us for some such reason as to make us partly endurable till we have time for really becoming so of ourselves, without their aid; when they leave us. The sweetest child we all smile on for his pleasant want of the whole world to break up, or suck in his mouth, seeing no other good in it — would be rudely handled by that world's inhabitants, if he retained those angelic infantine desires when he had grown six feet high, black and bearded. But, little by little, he sees fit to forego claim after claim on the world, puts up with a less and less share of its good as his proper portion; and when the octogenarian asks barely a sup of gruel and a fire of dry sticks, and thanks you as for his full allowance and right in the common good of life, — hoping nobody may murder him, — he who began by asking and expecting the whole of us to bow down in worship to him, — why, I say he is advanced, far onward, very far, nearly out of sight like our friend Chiappino yonder. And now — (ay, good-by to you!) He turns round the northwest gate: going to Lugo again? Good-by!) — And now give thanks to God, the keys of the Provost's palace to me, and yourselves to profitable meditation at home! I have known Four-and-twenty leaders of revolts.



# LURIA

## A TRAGEDY

I DEDICATE THIS LAST ATTEMPT FOR THE PRESENT AT DRAMATIC POETRY  
TO A GREAT DRAMATIC POET;

"WISHING WHAT I WRITE MAY BE READ BY HIS LIGHT:"

IF A PHRASE ORIGINALLY ADDRESSED, BY NOT THE LEAST WORTHY OF HIS CONTEMPORARIES,  
TO SHAKESPEARE,

MAY BE APPLIED HERE, BY ONE WHOSE SOLE PRIVILEGE IS IN A GRATEFUL ADMIRATION,  
TO WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR

LONDON, 1846.

### PERSONS

LURIA, a Moor, Commander of the Florentine Forces.  
HUSAIN, a Moor, his friend.  
PUCCIO, the old Florentine Commander, now LURIA'S  
Chief Officer.  
BRACCIO, Commissary of the Republic of Florence.  
JACOPO (LAPO), his Secretary.  
TIBURZIO, Commander of the Pisans.  
DOMIZIA, a noble Florentine Lady.

TIME, 14—.

SCENE. LURIA'S Camp between Florence and Pisa.

### ACT I

#### MORNING

BRACCIO, as dictating to his Secretary; PUCCIO standing  
by.

Braccio. [To PUCCIO.] Then, you join battle in  
an hour?

Puccio. Not I;

Luria, the captain.

Brac. [To the Sec.] "In an hour, the battle."

[To PUC.] Sir, let your eye run o'er this loose  
digest,

And see if very much of your report  
Have slipped away through my civilian phrase.  
Does this instruct the Signory aright  
How army stands with army?

Puc. [Taking the paper.] All seems here:

— That Luria, seizing with our city's force  
The several points of vantage, hill and plain,  
Shuts Pisa safe from help on every side,  
And, baffling the Lucchese arrived too late,  
Must, in the battle he delivers now,  
Beat her best troops and first of chiefs.

Brac. So sure?

Tiburzio's a consummate captain too!

Puc. Luria holds Pisa's fortune in his hand.

Brac. [To the Sec.] "The Signory hold Pisa  
in their hand."

Your own proved soldiiership's our warrant, sir:  
So, while my secretary ends his task,  
Have out two horsemen, by the open roads,  
To post with it to Florence!

Puc. [Returning the paper.] All seems here;

Unless . . . Ser Braccio, 't is my last report!  
Since Pisa's outbreak, and my overthrow,  
And Luria's hastening at the city's call

To save her, as he only could, no doubt;  
Till now that she is saved or sure to be, —  
Whatever you tell Florence, I tell you:  
Each day's note you, her Commissary, make  
Of Luria's movements, I myself supply.  
No youngster am I longer, to my cost;  
Therefore while Florence gloried in her choice  
And vaunted Luria, whom but Luria, still,  
As if zeal, courage, prudence, conduct, faith,  
Had never met in any man before,  
I saw no pressing need to swell the cry.  
But now, this last report and I have done:  
So, ere to-night comes with its roar of praise,  
'T were not amiss if some one old i' the trade  
Subscribed with, "True, for once rash counsel's  
best.

This Moor of the bad faith and doubtful race,  
This boy to whose untried sagacity,  
Raw valor, Florence trusts without reserve  
The charge to save her, — justifies her choice;  
In no point has this stranger failed his friends.  
Now praise!" I say this, and it is not here.

Brac. [To the Sec.] Write, "Puccio, super-  
seded in the charge,

By Luria, bears full witness to his worth,  
And no reward our Signory can give  
Their champion but he'll back it cheerfully."  
Aught more? Five minutes hence, both mes-  
sengers! [Puccio goes.]

Brac. [After a pause, and while he slowly tears  
the paper into shreds.] I think . . . (pray  
God, I hold in fit contempt

This warfare's noble art and ordering,  
And, — once the brace of prizes fairly matched,  
Poleaxe with poleaxe, knife with knife as  
good, —

Spit properly at what men term their skill! —)  
Yet here I think our fighter has the odds.

With Pisa's strength diminished thus and thus,  
Such points of vantage in our hands and such,  
Luca still off the stage, too, — all's assured:  
Luria must win this battle. Write the Court,  
That Luria's trial end and sentence pass!

Secretary. Patron, —

Brac. Ay, Lapo?

Sec. If you trip, I fall;

'T is in self-interest I speak —

Brac. Nay, nay,  
You overshoot the mark, my Lapo! Nay!  
When did I say pure love's impossible?

I make you daily write those red cheeks thin,  
Load your young brow with what concerns it  
least,

And, when we visit Florence, let you pace  
The Piazza by my side as if we talked,  
Where all your old acquaintances may see :  
You 'd die for me, I should not be surprised.  
Now then !

*Sec.* Sir, look about and love yourself !  
Step after step, the Signory and you  
Tread gay till this tremendous point 's to pass ;  
Which pass not, pass not, ere you ask your-  
self, —

Bears the brain steadily such draughts of fire,  
Or too delicious may not prove the pride  
Of this long secret trial you dared plan,  
Dare execute, you solitary here,  
With the gray-headed toothless fools at home,  
Who think themselves your lords, such slaves  
are they ?

If they pronounce this sentence as you bid,  
Declare the treason, claim its penalty, —  
And sudden out of all the blaze of life,  
On the best minute of his brightest day,  
From that adoring army at his back,  
Through Florence' joyous crowds before his  
face,

Into the dark you beckon Luria . . .

*Brac.* Then —  
Why, Lapo, when the fighting-people vaunt,  
We of the other craft and mystery,  
May we not smile demure, the danger past ?

*Sec.* Sir, no, no, no, — the danger, and your  
spirit  
At watch and ward ? Where 's danger on your  
part,

With that thin flitting instantaneous steel  
'Gainst the blind bull-front of a brute-force  
world ?

If Luria, that 's to perish sure as fate,  
Should have been really guiltless after all ?

*Brac.* Ah, you have thought that ?

*Sec.* Here I sit, your scribe,  
And in and out goes Luria, days and nights ;  
This Puccio comes ; the Moor his other friend,  
Husain ; they talk — that 's all feigned easily ;  
He speaks (I would not listen if I could),  
Reads, orders, counsels : — but he rests some-  
times, —

I see him stand and eat, sleep stretched an  
hour

On the lynx-skins yonder ; hold his bared black  
arms

Into the sun from the tent-opening ; laugh  
When his horse drops the forage from his teeth  
And neighs to hear him hum his Moorish songs.  
That man believes in Florence, as the saint  
Tied to the wheel believes in God.

*Brac.* How strange !  
You too have thought that !

*Sec.* Do but you think too,  
And all is saved ! I only have to write,  
"The man seemed false awhile, proves true at  
last ;

Bury it" — so I write the Signory —

"Bury this trial in your breast forever,  
Blot it from things or done or dreamed about !  
So Luria shall receive his meed to-day

With no suspicion what reverse was near, —  
As if no meteoric finger hushed  
The doom-word just on the destroyer's lip,  
Motioned him off, and let life's sunfall straight."'  
*Brac.* [Looks to the wall of the tent.] Did he  
draw that ?

*Sec.* With charcoal, when the watch  
Made the report at midnight ; Lady Domizia  
Spoke of the unfinished Duomo, you remember ;  
That is his fancy how a Moorish front  
Might join to, and complete, the body, — a  
sketch, —

And again where the cloak hangs, yonder in the  
shadow

*Brac.* He loves that woman.

*Sec.* She is sent the spy  
Of Florence, — spies on you as you on him :  
Florence, if only for Domizia's sake,  
Is surely safe. What shall I write ?

*Brac.* I see —  
A Moorish front, nor of such ill design !  
Lapo, there 's one thing plain and positive ;  
Man seeks his own good at the whole world's  
cost.

What ? If to lead our troops, stand forth our  
chiefs,

And hold our fate, and see us at their beck,  
Yet render up the charge when peace return,  
Have ever proved too much for Florentines,  
Even for the best and bravest of ourselves —  
If in the struggle when the soldier's sword  
Should sink its point before the statish pen,  
And the calm head replace the violent hand,  
Virtue on virtue still have fallen away  
Before ambition with unvarying fate,  
Till Florence' self at last in bitterness  
Be forced to own such falls the natural end,  
And, sparing further to expose her sons  
To a vain strife and profitless disgrace,  
Declare, "The foreigner, one not my child,  
Shall henceforth lead my troops, reach heigh-  
by height

The glory, then descend into the shame ;  
So shall rebellion be less guilt in him,  
And punishment the easier task for me :"  
— If on the best of us such brand she set,  
Can I suppose an utter alien here,  
This Luria, our inevitable foe,  
Confessed a mercenary and a Moor,  
Born free from many ties that bind the rest  
Of common faith in Heaven or hope on earth,  
No past with us, no future, — such a spirit  
Shall hold the path from which our stanchest  
broke,

Stand firm where every famed precursor fell ?  
My Lapo, I will frankly say, these proofs  
So duly noted of the man's intent,  
Are for the doting fools at home, not me.  
The charges here, they may be true or false :  
— What is set down ? Errors and oversights,  
A dallying interchange of courtesies  
With Pisa's General, — all that, hour by hour,  
Puccio's pale discontent has furnished us,  
Of petulant speeches, inconsiderate acts,  
Now overhazard, overcaution now ;  
Even that he loves this lady who believes  
She outwits Florence, and whom Florence  
posted

By my procurement here, to spy on me,  
Lest I one minute lose her from my sight —  
She who remembering her whole House's fall,  
That nest of traitors strangled in the birth,  
Now labors to make Luria (poor device  
As plain) the instrument of her revenge!  
— That she is ever at his ear to prompt  
Inordinate conceptions of his worth,  
Exorbitant belief in worth's reward,  
And after, when sure disappointment follows,  
Proportionable rage at such a wrong —  
Why, all these reasons, while I urge them  
most,

Weigh with me less than least; as nothing  
weigh.

Upon that broad man's-heart of his, I go:  
On what I know must be, yet while I live  
Shall never be, because I live and know.  
Brute-force shall not rule Florence! Intellect  
May rule her, bad or good as chance supplies:  
But intellect it shall be, pure if bad,  
And intellect's tradition so kept up!  
Till the good come — 't was intellect that ruled,  
Not brute-force bringing from the battlefield  
The attributes of wisdom, foresight's graces  
We lent it there to lure its grossness on;  
All which it took for earnest and kept safe  
To show against us in our market-place,  
Just as the plumes and tags and swordsman's-  
gear

(Fetched from the camp where, at their foolish  
best,

When all was done they frightened nobody)  
Perk in our faces in the street, forsooth,  
With our own warrant and allowance. No!  
The whole procedure's overcharged, — its end  
In too strict keeping with the bad first step.  
To conquer Pisa was sheer inspiration?

Well then, to perish for a single fault,  
Let that be simple justice! There, my Lapo!  
A Moorish front ill suits our Duomo's body:  
Blot it out — and bid Luria's sentence come!

(LURIA, who, with DOMIZIA, has entered unobserved at  
the close of the last phrase, now advances.)

Luria. And Luria, Luria, what of Luria  
now?

Brac. Ah, you so close, sir? Lady Domizia  
too?

I said it needs must be a busy moment  
For one like you; that you were now i' the  
thick

Of your duties, doubtless, while we idlers sat . . .

Lur. No — in that paper, — it was in that  
paper

What you were saying!

Brac. Oh — my day's despatch!  
I censure you to Florence: will you see?

Lur. See your despatch, your last, for the  
first time?

Well, if I should, now? For in truth, Domizia,  
He would be forced to set about another,  
In his sly cool way, the true Florentine,  
To mention that important circumstance.  
So, while he wrote I should gain time, such  
time!

Do not send this!

Brac. And wherefore?

Lur. These Lucchese

Are not arrived — they never will arrive!  
And I must fight to-day, arrived or not,  
And I shall beat Tiburzio, that is sure:  
And then will be arriving his Lucchese,  
But slowly, oh so slowly, just in time  
To look upon my battle from the hills,  
Like a late moon, of use to nobody!  
And I must break my battle up, send forth,  
Surround on this side, hold in check on that.  
Then comes to-morrow, we negotiate,  
You make me send for fresh instructions home,  
— Incompleteness, incompleteness!

Brac. Ah, we scribes!

Why, I had registered that very point,  
The non-appearance of our foes' ally,  
As a most happy fortune; both at once  
Were formidable: singly faced, each falls.

Lur. So, no great battle for my Florentines!  
No crowning deed, decisive and complete,  
For all of them, the simple as the wise,  
Old, young, alike, that do not understand  
Our wearisome pedantic art of war,  
By which we prove retreat may be success,  
Delay — best speed, — half loss, at times, —  
whole gain:

They want results: as if it were their fault!  
And you, with warmest wish to be my friend,  
Will not be able now to simply say  
"Your servant has performed his task —  
enough!"

You ordered, he has executed: good!  
Now walk the streets in holiday attire,  
Congratulate your friends, till noon strikes  
fierce,

Then form bright groups beneath the Duomo's  
shade!"

No, you will have to argue and explain,  
Persuade them, all is not so ill in the end,  
Tease, tire them out! Arrive, arrive, Lucchese!

Domizia. Well, you will triumph for the past  
enough,

Whatever be the present chance; no service  
Falls to the ground with Florence: she awaits  
Her savior, will receive him fittingly.

Lur. Ah, Braccio, you know Florence! Will  
she, think you,

Receive one . . . what means "fittingly re-  
ceive"?

— Receive compatriots, doubtless — I am none:  
And yet Domizia promises so much!

Brac. Kind women still give men a woman's  
prize.

I know not o'er which gate most boughs will  
arch,

Nor if the Square will wave red flags or blue.  
I should have judged, the fullest of rewards  
Our state gave Luria, when she made him chief  
Of her whole force, in her best captain's place.

Lur. That, my reward? Florence on my  
account

Relieved Ser Puccio? — mark you, my reward!  
And Puccio's having all the fight's true joy —  
Goes here and there, gets close, may fight, him-  
self,

While I must order, stand aloof, o'ersee.  
That was my calling, there was my true place!  
I should have felt, in some one over me,  
Florence impersonate, my visible head,



As I am over Puccio, — taking life  
Directly from her eye! They give me you:  
But do you cross me, set me half to work?  
I enjoy nothing — though I will, for once!  
Decide, shall we join battle? may I wait?

*Brac.* Let us compound the matter; wait  
till noon:

Then, no arrival, —  
*Lur.* Ah, noon comes too fast!

I wonder, do you guess why I delay  
Involuntarily the final blow

As long as possible? Peace follows it!

Florence at peace, and the calm studious heads

Come out again, the penetrating eyes;

As if a spell broke, all's resumed, each art

You boast, more vivid that it slept awhile.

'Gainst the glad heaven, o'er the white palace-  
front

The interrupted scaffold climbs anew;

The walls are peopled by the painter's brush;

The statue to its niche ascends to dwell.

The present noise and trouble have retired

And left the eternal past to rule once more;

You speak its speech and read its records plain,

Greece lives with you, each Roman breathes  
your friend:

But Luria — where will then be Luria's place?

*Dom.* Highest in honor, for that past's own  
sake,

Of which his actions, sealing up the sum

By saving all that went before from wreck,

Will range as part, with which be worshipped too.

*Lur.* Then I may walk and watch you in  
your streets,

Lead the smooth life my rough life helps no  
more,

So different, so new, so beautiful —

Nor fear that you will tire to see parade

The club that slew the lion, now that crooks

And shepherd-pipes come into use again?

For very lone and silent seems my East

In its drear vastness: still it spreads, and still

No Braccios, no Domizias anywhere —

Not ever more! Well, well, to-day is ours!

*Dom.* [To *Brac.*] Should he not have been  
one of us?

*Lur.* Oh, no!

Not one of you, and so escape the thrill

Of coming into you, of changing thus, —

Feeling a soul grow on me that restricts

The boundless unrest of the savage heart!

The sea heaves up, hangs loaded o'er the land,

Breaks there and buries its tumultuous  
strength;

Horror, and silence, and a pause awhile:

Lo, inland glides the gulf-stream, miles away,

In rapture of assent, subdued and still,

'Neath those strange banks, those unimagined  
skies.

Well, 't is not sure the quiet lasts forever!

Your placid heads still find rough hands new  
work;

Some minute's chance — there comes the need  
of mine:

And, all resolved on, I too hear at last.

Oh, you must find some use for me, Ser Braccio!

You hold my strength; 't were best dispose of  
it:

What you created, see that you find food for —  
I shall be dangerous else!

*Brac.* How dangerous, sir?

*Lur.* There are so many ways, Domizia  
warns me,

And one with half the power that I possess,  
— Grows very formidable! Do you doubt?

Why, first, who holds the army . . .

*Dom.* While we talk,

Morn wears; we keep you from your proper  
place,

The field.

*Lur.* Nay, to the field I move no more;

My part is done, and Puccio's may begin:

I cannot trench upon his province longer

With any face. — You think yourselves so safe?

Why, see — in concert with Tiburzio, now —  
One could . . .

*Dom.* A trumpet!

*Lur.* My Lucchese at last!  
Arrived, as sure as Florence stands! Your  
leave! [*Springs out.*]

*Dom.* How plainly is true greatness charac-  
tered

By such unconscious sport as Luria's here,

Strength sharing least the secret of itself!

Be it with head that schemes or hand that acts,

Such save the world which none but they could  
save,

Yet think whate'er they did, that world could  
do.

*Brac.* Yes: and how worthy note, that these  
same great ones

In hand or head, with such unconsciousness

And all its due entailed humility,

Should never shrink, so far as I perceive,

From taking up whatever tool there be

Effects the whole world's safety or mishap,

Into their mild hands as a thing of course!

The statist finds it natural to lead

The mob who might as easily lead him —

The captain marshals troops born skilled in  
war —

Statist and captain verily believe!

While we poor scribes . . . you catch me think-  
ing now,

That I shall in this very letter write

What none of you are able! To it, Lapo!

[DOMIZIA goes.]

This last worst all-affected childish fit

Of Luria's, this be-praised unconsciousness,

Convinces me; the past was no child's play:

It was a man beat Pisa, — not a child.

All's mere dissimulation — to remove

The fear, he best knows we should entertain.

The utmost danger was at hand. Is 't written?

Now make a duplicate, lest this should fail,

And speak your fullest on the other side.

*Sec.* I noticed he was busily repairing

My half-effacement of his Duomo sketch,

And, while he spoke of Florence, turned to it,

As the Mage Negro king to Christ the babe.

I judge his childishness the mere relapse

To boyhood of a man who has worked lately,

And presently will work, so, meantime, plays:

Whence, more than ever I believe in him.

*Brac.* [After a pause.] The sword! At best,  
the soldier, as he says,

In Florence—the black face, the barbarous name,  
For Italy to boast her show of the age,  
Her man of men!—To Florence with each letter!

## ACT II

## NOON

*Dom.* Well, Florence, shall I reach thee,  
pierce thy heart  
Through all its safeguards? Hate is said to help—

Quicken the eye, invigorate the arm;  
And this my hate, made up of many hates,  
Might stand in scorn of visible instrument,  
And will thee dead: yet do I trust it not.  
Nor man's devices nor Heaven's memory  
Of wickedness forgot on earth so soon,  
But thy own nature, —hell and thee I trust,  
To keep thee constant in that wickedness,  
Where my revenge may meet thee. Turn aside  
A single step, for gratitude or shame, —  
Grace but this Luria, — this wild mass of rage  
I have prepared to launch against thee now, —  
With other payment than thy noblest found, —  
Give his desert for once its due reward, —  
And past thee would my sure destruction roll.  
But thou, who mad'st our House thy sacrifice,  
Cannot be thou wilt except this Moor  
From the accustomed fate of zeal and truth:  
Thou wilt deny his looked-for recompense,  
And then — I reach thee. Old and trained, my sire

Could bow down on his quiet broken heart,  
Die awe-struck and submissive, when at last  
The strange blow came for the expected wreath;  
And Porzio passed in blind bewilderment  
To exile, never to return, — they say,  
Perplexed in his frank simple honest soul,  
As if some natural law had changed, — how else

Could Florence, on plain fact pronouncing thus,  
Judge Porzio's actions worthy such reward?  
But Berto, with the ever-passionate pulse,  
— Oh that long night, its dreadful hour on hour,  
In which no way of getting his fair fame  
From their inexplicable charges free,  
Was found, save pouring forth the impatient blood

To show its color whether false or no!  
My brothers never had a friend like me  
Close in their need to watch the time, then speak,  
— Burst with a wakening laughter on their dream,  
Cry, "Florence was all falseness, so, false here!"

And show them what a simple task remained —  
To leave dreams, rise, and punish in God's name  
The city wedded to the wickedness.  
None stood by them as I by Luria stand.  
So, when the stranger cheated of his due  
Turns on thee as his rapid nature bids,  
Then, Florence, think, a hireling at thy throat  
For the first outrage, think who bore thy last,  
Yet mutely in forlorn obedience died!

He comes — his friend — black faces in the camp  
Where moved those peerless brows and eyes of old.

(*Enter LURIA and HUSAIN.*)

Well, and the movement — is it as you hope?  
'T is Luca?

*Lur.* Ah, the Pisan trumpet merely!  
Tiburzio's envoy, I must needs receive.

*Dom.* Whom I withdraw before; though if I lingered

You could not wonder, for my time fleets fast.  
The overtaking night brings such reward!  
And where will then be room for me? Yet, praised,

Remember who was first to promise praise,  
And envy those who also can perform! [*Goes.*]

*Lur.* This trumpet from the Pisans? —

*Husain.* In the camp;  
A very noble presence — Braccio's visage  
On Puccio's body — calm and fixed and good;  
A man I seem as I had seen before:

Most like, it was some statue had the face.

*Lur.* Admit him! This will prove the last delay.

*Hus.* Ay, friend, go on, and die thou going on!

Thou heard'st what the grave woman said but now:

To-night rewards thee. That is well to hear;  
But stop not therefore: hear it, and go on!

*Lur.* Oh, their reward and triumph and the rest

They round me in the ears with, all day long?  
All that, I never take for earnest, friend!  
Well would it suit us, — their triumphal arch  
Or storied pillar, — thee and me, the Moors!  
But gratitude in those Italian eyes —  
That, we shall get?

*Hus.* It is too cold an air.  
Our sun rose out of yonder mound of mist:  
Where is he now? So, I trust none of them.

*Lur.* Truly?

*Hus.* I doubt and fear. There stands a wall  
'Twixt our expansive and explosive race  
And those absorbing, concentrating men.  
They use thee.

*Lur.* And I feel it, Husain! yes,  
And care not — yes, an alien force like mine  
Is only called to play its part outside  
Their different nature; where its sole use seems  
To fight with and keep off an adverse force,  
As alien, — which repelled, mine too withdraws:  
Inside, they know not what to do with me.  
Thus I have told them laughingly and oft,  
But long since am prepared to learn the worst.

*Hus.* What is the worst?

*Lur.* I will forestall them, Husain.  
Will speak the destiny they dare not speak —  
Banish myself before they find the heart.  
I will be first to say, "The work rewards!  
I know, for all your praise, my use is over,  
So may it prove! — meanwhile 't is best I go,  
Go carry safe my memories of you all  
To other scenes of action, newer lands," —  
Thus leaving them confirmed in their belief  
They would not easily have tired of me.  
You think this hard to say?

*Hus.* Say or not say,  
So thou but go, so they but let thee go!  
This hating people, that hate each the other,  
And in one blandness to us Moors unite —  
Locked each to each like slippery snakes, I say,  
Which still in all their tangles, hissing tongue  
And threatening tail, ne'er do each other harm;  
While any creature of a better blood,  
They seem to fight for, while they circle safe  
And never touch it, — pines without a wound,  
Withers away beside their eyes and breath.  
See thou, if Puccio come not safely out  
Of Braccio's grasp, this Braccio sworn his foe,  
As Braccio safely from Domizia's toils  
Who hates him most! But thou, the friend of  
all,  
... Come out of them!

*Lur.* The Pisan trumpet now!  
*Hus.* Breathe free — it is an enemy, no  
friend! [*Goes.*]

*Lur.* He keeps his instincts, no new culture  
mars

Their perfect use in him; just so the brutes  
Rest not, are anxious without visible cause,  
When change is in the elements at work,  
Which man's trained senses fail to apprehend.  
But here, — he takes the distant chariot-wheel  
For thunder, festal flame for lightning's flash,  
The finer traits of cultivated life  
For treachery and malevolence: I see!

(*Enter TIBURZIO.*)

*Lur.* Quick, sir, your message! I but wait  
your message  
To sound the charge. You bring no overture  
For truce? — I would not, for your General's  
sake,

You spoke of truce: a time to fight is come,  
And, whatso'er the fight's event, he keeps  
His honest soldier's-name to beat me with,  
Or leaves me all himself to beat, I trust!

*Tiburzio.* I am Tiburzio.

*Lur.* You? 'Tis — yes . . . Tiburzio!  
You were the last to keep the ford i' the valley  
From Puccio, when I threw in succors there!  
Why, I was on the heights — through the defile  
Ten minutes after, when the prey was lost!  
You wore an open skull-cap with a twist  
Of water-reeds — the plume being hewn away;  
While I drove down my battle from the heights,  
I saw with my own eyes!

*Tib.* And you are Luria  
Who sent my cohort, that laid down its arms  
In error of the battle-signal's sense,  
Back safely to me at the critical time —  
One of a hundred deeds. I know you! There-  
fore

To none but you could I . . .

*Lur.* No truce, Tiburzio!

*Tib.* Luria, you know the peril imminent  
On Pisa, — that you have us in the toils,  
Us her last safeguard, all that intercept  
The rage of her implacablest of foes  
From Pisa: if we fall to-day, she falls.  
Though Lucea will arrive, yet, 't is too late.  
You have so plainly here the best of it,  
That you must feel, brave soldier as you are,  
How dangerous we grow in this extreme,  
How truly formidable by despair.

Still, probabilities should have their weight:  
The extreme chance is ours, but, that chance  
failing,

You win this battle. Wherefore say I this?  
To be well apprehended when I add,  
This danger absolutely comes from you.  
Were you, who threaten thus, a Florentine . . .

*Lur.* Sir, I am nearer Florence than her sons.  
I can, and have perhaps obliged the State,  
Nor paid a mere son's duty.

*Tib.* Even so.  
Were you the son of Florence, yet endued  
With all your present nobleness of soul,  
No question, what I must communicate  
Would not detach you from her.

*Lur.* Me, detach?

*Tib.* Time urges. You will ruin presently  
Pisa, you never knew, for Florence's sake  
You think you know. I have from time to  
time

Made prize of certain secret missives sent  
From Braccio here, the Commissary, home:  
And knowing Florence otherwise, I piece  
The entire chain out, from these its scattered  
links.

Your trial occupies the Signory;  
They sit in judgment on your conduct now.  
When men at home inquire into the acts  
Which in the field e'en foes appreciate . . .  
Brief, they are Florentines! You, saving  
them,

Seek but the sure destruction saviors find.

*Lur.* Tiburzio!

*Tib.* All the wonder is of course.

I am not here to teach you, nor direct,  
Only to loyally apprise — scarce that.  
This is the latest letter, sealed and safe,  
As it left here an hour ago. One way  
Of two thought free to Florence, I command.  
The duplicate is on its road; but this, —  
Read it, and then I shall have more to say.

*Lur.* Florence!

*Tib.* Now, were yourself a Florentine,  
This letter, let it hold the worst it can,  
Would be no reason you should fall away.  
The mother city is the mother still,  
And recognition of the children's service  
Her own affair; reward — there's no reward!  
But you are bound by quite another tie.  
Nor nature shows, nor reason, why at first  
A foreigner, born friend to all alike,  
Should give himself to any special State  
More than another, stand by Florence's side  
Rather than Pisa; 't is as fair a city  
You war against, as that you fight for — famed  
As well as she in story, graced no less  
With noble heads and patriotic hearts:  
Nor to a stranger's eye would either cause,  
Stripped of the cumulative loves and hates  
Which take importance from familiar view,  
Stand as the right and sole to be upheld.  
Therefore, should the preponderating gift  
Of love and trust, Florence was first to throw,  
Which made you hers, not Pisa's, void the  
scale, —

Old ties dissolving, things resume their place.  
And all begins again. Break seal and read!  
At least let Pisa offer for you now!



And I, as a good Pisan, shall rejoice,  
Though for myself I lose, in gaining you,  
This last fight and its opportunity;  
The chance it brings of saving Pisa yet,  
Or in the turn of battle dying so  
That shame should want its extreme bitterness.

*Lur.* Tiburzio, you that fight for Pisa now  
As I for Florence . . . say my chance were  
yours!

You read this letter, and you find . . . no, no!  
Too mad!

*Tib.* I read the letter, find they purpose  
When I have crushed their foe, to crush me:  
well?

*Lur.* You, being their captain, what is it you  
do?

*Tib.* Why, as it is, all cities are alike;  
As Florence pays you, Pisa will pay me.  
I shall be as belied, whate'er the event,  
As you, or more: my weak head, they will say  
Prompted this last expedient, my faint heart  
Entailed on them indelible disgrace,  
Both which defects ask proper punishment.  
Another tenure of obedience, mine!

You are no son of Pisa's: break and read!

*Lur.* And act on what I read? What act  
were fit?

If the firm-fixed foundation of my faith  
In Florence, who to me stands for mankind,  
— If that break up and, disimprisoning  
From the abyss . . . Ah friend, it cannot be!  
You may be very sage, yet — all the world  
Having to fail, or your sagacity,  
You do not wish to find yourself alone!  
What would the world be worth? Whose love  
be sure?

The world remains: you are deceived!

*Tib.* Your hand!  
I lead the vanguard. — If you fall, beside,  
The better: I am left to speak! For me,  
This was my duty, nor would I rejoice  
If I could help, it misses its effect;  
And after all you will look gallantly  
Found dead here with that letter in your breast.

*Lur.* Tiburzio — I would see these people  
once

And test them ere I answer finally!  
At your arrival let the trumpet sound:  
If mine return not then the wonted cry  
It means that I believe — am Pisa's!

*Tib.* Well!  
*[Goes.]*  
*Lur.* My hand will have it he speaks true!  
My blood

Beats close to this Tiburzio as a friend.  
If he had steeped into my watch-tent, night  
And the wild desert full of foes around,  
I should have broke the bread and given the  
salt

Secure, and, when my hour of watch was done,  
Taken my turn to sleep between his knees  
Safe in the untroubled brow and honest cheek.  
Oh world, where all things pass and naught  
abides,

Oh life, the long mutation — is it so?

Is it with life as with the body's change?

— Where, e'en though better follow, good must  
pass,

Nor manhood's strength can mate with boy-  
hood's grace,

Nor age's wisdom, in its turn, find strength,  
But silently the first gift dies away,  
And though the new stays, never both at once.  
Life's time of savage instinct o'er with me,  
It fades and dies away, past trusting more,  
As if to punish the ingratitude

With which I turned to grow in these new  
lights,

And learned to look with European eyes.

Yet it is better, this cold certain way,  
Where Braccio's brow tells nothing, Puccio's  
mouth,

Domizia's eyes reject the searcher: yes!

For on their calm sagacity I lean,

Their sense of right, deliberate choice of good,  
Sure, as they know my deeds, they deal with  
me.

Yes, that is better — that is best of all!

Such faith stays when mere wild belief would  
go.

Yes — when the desert creature's heart, at fault  
Amid the scattering tempest's pillared sands,  
Betrays its step into the pathless drift —  
The calm instructed eye of man holds fast  
By the sole bearing of the visible star,  
Sure that when slow the whirling wreck subside,  
The boundaries, lost now, shall be found  
again, —

The palm-trees and the pyramid over all.

Yes: I trust Florence: Pisa is deceived.

*(Enter BRACCIO, PUCCIO, and DOMIZIA.)*

*Brac.* Noon's at an end: no Lucca? You  
must fight.

*Lur.* Do you remember ever, gentle friends,  
I am no Florentine?

*Dom.* It is yourself

Who still are forcing us, importunately,

To bear in mind what else we should forget.

*Lur.* For loss! — for what I lose in being  
none!

No shrewd man, such as you yourselves respect,  
But would remind you of the stranger's loss  
In natural friends and advocates at home,  
Hereditary loves, even rivalships

With precedent for honor and reward.

Still, there's a gain, too! If you take it so,

The stranger's lot has special gain as well.

Do you forget there was my own far East

I might have given away myself to, once,

As now to Florence, and for such a gift,

Stood there like a descended deity?

There, worship waits us: what is it waits here?

*[Shows the letter.]*

See! Chance has put into my hand the means  
Of knowing what I earn, before I work.

Should I fight better, should I fight the worse,  
With payment palpably before me? See!

Here lies my whole reward! Best learn it now  
Or keep it for the end's entire delight?

*Brac.* If you serve Florence as the vulgar  
serve,

For swordman's-pay alone, — break seal and  
read!

In that case, you will find your full desert.

*Lur.* Give me one last happy moment,  
friends!

You need me now, and all the graciousness  
This letter can contain will hardly balance  
The after-feeling that you need no more.  
This moment . . . oh, the East has use with  
you!

Its sword still flashes — is not flung aside  
With the past praise, in a dark corner yet!  
How say you? 'T is not so with Florentines —  
Captains of yours: for them, the ended war  
Is but a first step to the peace begun:  
He who did well in war, just earns the right  
To begin doing well in peace, you know:  
And certain my precursors, — would not such  
Look to themselves in such a chance as mine,  
Secure the ground they trod upon, perhaps?  
For I have heard, by fits, or seemed to hear,  
Of strange mishap, mistake, ingratitude,  
Treachery even. Say that one of you  
Surmised this letter carried what might turn  
To harm hereafter, cause him prejudice:  
What would he do?

*Dom.* [*Hastily.*] Thank God and take re-  
venge!

Hurl her own force against the city straight!  
And, even at the moment when the foe  
Sounded defiance . . .

(*TIBURZIO'S trumpet sounds in the distance.*)

*Lur.* Ah, you Florentines!  
So would you do? Wisely for you, no doubt!  
My simple Moorish instinct bids me clench  
The obligation you relieve me from,  
Still deeper! [*To Puc.*] Sound our answer, I  
should say,  
And thus: — [*Tearing the paper.*] — The battle!  
That solves every doubt.

### ACT III

#### AFTERNOON

*Puccio, as making a report to JACOPO.*

*Puc.* And here, your captain must report  
the rest;

For, as I say, the main engagement over  
And Luria's special part in it performed,  
How could a subaltern like me expect  
Leisure or leave to occupy the field  
And glean what dropped from his wide harvest-  
ing?

I thought, when Lucca at the battle's end  
Came up, just as the Pisan centre broke,  
That Luria would detach me and prevent  
The flying Pisans seeking what they found,  
Friends in the rear, a point to rally by.  
But no, more honorable proved my post!  
I had the august captive to escort  
Safe to our camp; some other could pursue,  
Fight, and be famous; gentler chance was  
mine —

Tiburzio's wounded spirit must be soothed!  
He's in the tent there.

*Jacopo.* Is the substance down?  
I write — "The vanguard beaten and both  
wings

In full retreat, Tiburzio prisoner" —

And now, — "That they fell back and formed  
again

On Lucca's coming." Why then, after all,  
'T is half a victory, no conclusive one?

*Puc.* Two operations where a sole had  
served.

*Jac.* And Luria's fault was —?

*Puc.* Oh, for fault — not much!  
He led the attack, a thought impetuously,  
— There's commonly more prudence; now, he  
seemed

To hurry measures, otherwise well judged.  
By over-concentrating strength at first  
Against the enemy's van both wings escaped:  
That's repairable, yet it is a fault.

(*Enter BRACCIO.*)

*Jac.* As good as a full victory to Florence,  
With the advantage of a fault beside —  
What is it, Puccio? — that by pressing forward  
With too impetuous . . .

*Brac.* The report anon!  
Thanks, sir — you have elsewhere a charge. I  
know. [*Puccio goes.*]

There's nothing done but I would do again;  
Yet, Lapo, it may be the past proves nothing,  
And Luria has kept faithful to the close.

*Jac.* I was for waiting.

*Brac.* Yes: so was not I.  
He could not choose but tear that letter — true!  
Still, certain of his tones, I mind, and looks: —  
You saw, too, with a fresher soul than I.  
So, Porzio seemed an injured man, they say!  
Well, I have gone upon the broad, sure ground.

(*Enter LURIA, PUCCIO, and DOMIZIA.*)

*Lur.* [*To Puc.*] Say, at his pleasure I will  
see Tiburzio!

All's at his pleasure.

*Dom.* [*To Lur.*] Were I not forewarned  
You would reject, as you do constantly,  
Praise, — I might tell you how you have de-  
served

Of Florence by this last and crowning feat:  
But words offend.

*Lur.* Nay, you may praise me now.  
I want instruction every hour, I find,  
On points where once I saw least need of it;  
And praise, I have been used to slight per-  
haps,

Seems scarce so easily dispensed with now.  
After a battle, half one's strength is gone;  
The glorious passion in us once appeased,  
Our reason's calm cold dreadful voice begins.  
All justice, power and beauty scarce appear  
Monopolized by Florence, as of late,  
To me, the stranger: you, no doubt, may  
know

Why Pisa needs must bear her rival's yoke.

And peradventure I grow nearer you,  
For I, too, want to know and be assured.

When a cause ceases to reward itself,  
Its friend seeks fresh sustainments; praise is  
one,

And here stand you — you, lady, praise me  
well.

But yours — (your pardon) — is unlearned  
praise.

To the motive, the endeavor, the heart's self,  
Your quick sense looks: you crown and call  
aright

The soul o' the purpose, ere 't is shaped as act,

Takes flesh i' the world, and clothes itself a king.

But when the act comes, stands for what 't is worth.

— Here 's Puccio, the skilled soldier, he 's my judge!

Was all well, Puccio?

*Puc.* All was . . . must be well: If we beat Lucca presently, as doubtless . . .

— No, there 's no doubt, we must — all was well done.

*Lur.* In truth? Still you are of the trade, my Puccio!

You have the fellow-craftsman's sympathy.

There 's none cares, like a fellow of the craft,

For the all unestimated sum of pains:

That go to a success the world can see:

They praise then, but the best they never know

— While you know! So, if envy mix with it,

Hate even, still the bottom-praise of all,

Whatever be the dregs, that drop 's pure gold!

— For nothing 's like it; nothing else records

Those daily, nightly drippings in the dark

Of the heart's blood, the world lets drop away

Forever — so, pure gold that praise must be!

And I have yours, my soldier! yet the best

Is still to come. There 's one looks on apart

Whom all refers to, failure or success;

What's done might be our best, our utmost work,

And yet inadequate to serve his need.

Here 's Braccio now, for Florence — here 's our service —

Well done for us, seems it well done for him?

His chosen engine, tasked to its full strength

Answers the end? Should he have chosen higher?

Do we help Florence, now our best is wrought?

*Brac.* This battle, with the foregone services, saves Florence.

*Lur.* Why then, all is very well!

Here am I in the middle of my friends,

Who know me and who love me, one and all.

And yet . . . 't is like . . . this instant while I speak

Is like the turning-moment of a dream

When . . . Ah, you are not foreigners like me!

Well then, one always dreams of friends at home;

And always comes, I say, the turning-point

When something changes in the friendly eyes

That love and look on you . . . so slight, so slight . . .

And yet it tells you they are dead and gone,

Or changed and enemies, for all their words,

And all is mockery and a maddening show.

You now, so kind here, all you Florentines,

What is it in your eyes . . . those lips, those brows . . .

Nobody spoke it, yet I know it well!

Come now — this battle saves you, all 's at end,

Your use of me is o'er, for good, for ill, —

Come now, what's done against me, while I speak,

In Florence? Come! I feel it in my blood,

My eyes, my hair, a voice is in my ears

That spite of all this smiling and soft speech

You are betraying me! What is it you do?

Have it your way, and think my use is over — Think you are saved and may throw off the mask —

Have it my way, and think more work remains Which I could do, — so, show you fear me not!

Or prudent be, or daring, as you choose,

But tell me — tell what I refused to know

At noon, lest heart should fail me! Well?

That letter?

My fate is sealed at Florence! What is it?

*Brac.* Sir, I shall not deny what you divine.

It is no novelty for innocence

To be suspected, but a privilege:

The after certain compensation comes.

Charges, I say not whether false or true,

Have been preferred against you some time since,

Which Florence was bound, plainly, to receive,

And which are therefore undergoing now

The due investigation. That is all.

I doubt not but your innocence will prove

Apparent and illustrious, as to me,

To them this evening, when the trial ends.

*Lur.* My trial?

*Dom.* Florence, Florence to the end, My whole heart thanks thee!

*Puc.* [To BRAC.] What is "trial," sir?

It was not for a trial, — surely, no —

I furnished you those notes from time to time?

I held myself aggrieved — I am a man —

And I might speak, — ay, and speak mere truth, too,

And yet not mean at bottom of my heart

What should assist a — trial, do you say?

You should have told me!

*Dom.*

Nay, go on, go on! His sentence! Do they sentence him? What is it?

The block — wheel?

*Brac.* Sentence there is none as yet,

Nor shall I give my own opinion now

Of what it should be, or is like to be.

When it is passed, applaud or disapprove!

Up to that point, what is there to impugn?

*Lur.* They are right, then, to try me?

*Brac.* I assert,

Maintain and justify the absolute right

Of Florence to do all she can have done

In this procedure, — standing on her guard,

Receiving even services like yours

With utmost fit suspicious wariness.

In other matters, keep the mummy up!

Take all the experiences of all the world,

Each knowledge that broke through a heart to life,

Each reasoning which, to reach, burnt out a brain,

— In other cases, know these, warrant these,

And then dispense with these — 't is very well!

Let friend trust friend, and love demand love's like,

And gratitude be claimed for benefits, —

There's grace in that, — and when the fresh heart breaks,

The new brain proves a ruin, what of them?

Where is the matter of one moth the more

Singed in the candle, at a summer's end?



But Florence is no simple John or James  
To have his toy, his fancy, his conceit  
That he's the one excepted man by fate,  
And, when fate shows him he's mistaken  
there,  
Die with all good men's praise, and yield his  
place

To Paul and George intent to try their chance !  
Florence exists because these pass away.  
She's a contrivance to supply a type  
Of man, which men's deficiencies refuse ;  
She binds so many, that she grows out of  
them —  
Stands steady o'er their numbers, though they  
change

And pass away — there's always what upholds,  
Always enough to fashion the great show.  
As see, you hanging city, in the sun,  
Of shapely cloud substantially the same !  
A thousand vapors rise and sink again,  
Are interfused, and live their life and die, —  
Yet ever hangs the steady show i' the air,  
Under the sun's straight influence: that is  
well,

That is worth heaven should hold, and God  
should bless !

And so is Florence, — the unseen sun above,  
Which draws and holds suspended all of us,  
Binds transient vapors into a single cloud  
Differing from each and better than they all.  
And shall she dare to stake this permanence  
On any one man's faith? Man's heart is weak,  
And its temptations many: let her prove  
Each servant to the very uttermost  
Before she grant him her reward, I say !

*Dom.* And as for hearts she chances to mis-  
take,

Wronged hearts, not destined to receive re-  
ward,

Though they deserve it, did she only know,  
— What should she do for these ?

*Brac.* What does she not ?  
Say, that she gives them but herself to serve !  
Here's Luria — what had profited his strength,  
When half an hour of sober fancying  
Had shown him step by step the uselessness  
Of strength exerted for strength's proper sake ?  
But the truth is, she did create that strength,  
Draw to the end the corresponding means.  
The world is wide — are we the only men ?  
Oh, for the time, the social purpose' sake,  
Use words agreed on, bandy epithets,  
Call any man the sole great wise and good !  
But shall we therefore, standing by ourselves,  
Insult our souls and God with the same speech ?  
There, swarm the ignoble thousands under  
him :

What marks us from the hundreds and the  
tens ?

Florence took up, turned all one way the soul  
Of Luria with its fires, and here he glows !  
She takes me out of all the world as him,  
Fixing my coldness till like ice it checks  
The fire ! So, Braccio, Luria, which is best ?

*Lur.* Ah, brave me ? And is this indeed the  
way

To gain your good word and sincere esteem ?  
Am I the baited animal that must turn

And fight his baiters to deserve their praise ?  
Obedience is mistake then ? Be it so !  
Do you indeed remember I stand here  
The captain of the conquering army, — mine —  
With all your tokens, praise and promise, ready  
To show for what their names meant when you  
gave,

Not what you style them now you take away ?  
If I call in my troops to arbitrate,  
And dash the first enthusiastic thrill  
Of victory with this you menace now —  
Commend to the instinctive popular sense,  
My story first, your comment afterward, —  
Will they take, think you, part with you or me ?  
If I say — I, the laborer they saw work,  
Ending my work, ask pay, and find my lords  
Have all this while provided silently  
Against the day of pay and proving faith,  
By what you call my sentence that's to come —  
Will friends advise I wait complacently ?  
If I meet Florence half-way at their head,  
What will you do, my mild antagonist ?

*Brac.* I will rise up like fire, proud and  
triumphant

That Florence knew you thoroughly and by  
me,

And so was saved. "See, Italy." I'll say,  
"The crown of our precautions! Here's a  
man

Was far advanced, just touched on the belief  
Less subtle cities had accorded long ;  
But we were wiser: at the end comes this !"  
And from that minute, where is Luria ? Lost !  
The very stones of Florence cry against  
The all-exacting, naught-enduring fool,  
Who thus resents her first probation, flouts  
As if he, only, shone and cast no shade,  
He, only, walked the earth with privilege  
Against suspicion, free where angels fear :  
He, for the first inquisitive mother's-word,  
Must turn, and stand on his defence, forsooth !  
Reward ? You will not be worth punishment !

*Lur.* And Florence knew me thus ! Thus I  
have lived, —

And thus you, with the clear fine intellect,  
Braccio, the cold acute instructed mind,  
Out of the stir, so calm and unconfused,  
Reported me — how could you otherwise !  
Ay ? — and what dropped from you, just now,  
moreover ?

Your information, Puccio ? — Did your skill,  
Your understanding sympathy approve  
Such a report of me ? Was this the end ?  
Or is even this the end ? Can I stop here ?  
You, lady, with the woman's stand apart,  
The heart to see with, past man's brain and  
eyes,

. . . I cannot fathom why you should destroy  
The unoffending one, you call your friend —  
Still, lessoned by the good examples here  
Of friendship, 't is but natural I ask —  
Had you a further aim, in aught you urged,  
Than your friend's profit — in all those in-  
stances

Of perfidy, all Florence wrought of wrong —  
All I remember now for the first time ?

*Dom.* I am a daughter of the Traversari,  
Sister of Porzio and of Berto both,

So, have foreseen all that has come to pass.  
I knew the Florence that could doubt their  
faith,  
Must needs mistrust a stranger's — dealing  
them

Punishment, would deny him his reward.  
And I believed, the shame they bore and died,  
He would not bear, but live and fight against —  
Seeing he was of other stuff than they.

*Lur.* Hear them! All these against one  
foreigner!

And all this while, where is, in the whole world,  
To his good faith a single witness?

*Tib.* [*Who has entered unseen during the pre-  
ceding dialogue.*] Here!

Thus I bear witness, not in word but deed.

I live for Pisa; she's not lost to-day

By many chances — much prevents from that!

Her army has been beaten, I am here,

But Lucca comes at last, one happy chance!

I rather would see Pisa three times lost

Than saved by any traitor, even by you;

The example of a traitor's happy fortune

Would bring more evil in the end than good; —

Pisa rejects the traitor, craves yourself!

I, in her name, resign forthwith to you

My charge, — the highest office, sword and

shield!

You shall not, by my counsel, turn on Flo-  
rence

Your army, give her calumny that ground —

Nor bring one soldier: be you all we gain!

And all she'll lose, — a head to deck some  
bridge,

And save the cost o' the crown should deck the  
head.

Leave her to perish in her perfidy,

Plague-stricken and stripped naked to all eyes,

A proverb and a by-word in all mouths!

Go you to Pisa! Florence is my place —

Leave me to tell her of the rectitude,

I, from the first, told Pisa, knowing it.

To Pisa!

*Dom.* Ah my Braccio, are you caught?

*Brac.* Puccio, good soldier and good citi-  
zen,

Whom I have ever kept beneath my eye,

Ready as fit, to serve in this event

Florence, who clear foretold it from the first —

Through me, she gives you the command and  
charge

She takes, through me, from him who held it  
late!

A painful trial, very sore, was yours:

All that could draw out, marshal in array

The selfish passions 'gainst the public good —

Slights, scorn, neglects, were heaped on you to  
bear:

And ever you did bear and bow the head!

It had been sorry trial, to precede

Your feet, hold up the promise of reward

For luring gleam; your footsteps kept the  
track

Through dark and doubt: take all the light at  
once!

Trial is over, consummation shines;

Well have you served, as well henceforth com-  
mand!

*Puc.* No, no . . . I dare not! I am grate-  
ful, glad;

But Luria — you shall understand he's  
wronged:

And he's my captain — this is not the way

We soldiers climb to fortune: think again!

The sentence is not even passed, beside!

I dare not: where's the soldier could?

*Lur.* Now, Florence —

Is it to be? You will know all the strength

O' the savage — to your neck the proof must  
go?

You will prove the brute nature? Ah, I see!

The savage plainly is impassable —

He keeps his calm way through insulting words,

Sarcastic looks, sharp gestures — one of which

Would stop you, fatal to your finer sense,

But if he stolidly advance, march mute

Without a mark upon his callous hide,

Through the mere brushwood you grow angry  
with,

And leave the tatters of your flesh upon,

— You have to learn that when the true bar  
comes,

The murk mid-forest, the grand obstacle,

Which when you reach, you give the labor up,

Nor dash on, but lie down composed before,

— He goes against it, like the brute he is:

It falls before him, or he dies in his course.

I kept my course through past ingratitude:

I saw — it does seem, now, as if I saw,

Could not but see, those insults as they fell,

— Ay, let them glance from off me, very like,

Laughing, perhaps, to think the quality

You grew so bold on, while you so despised

The Moor's dull mute inapprehensive mood,

Was saving you: I bore and kept my course.

Now real wrong fronts me: see if I succumb!

Florence withstands me? I will punish her.

At night my sentence will arrive, you say.

Till then I cannot, if I would, rebel

— Unauthorized to lay my office down,

Retaining my full power to will and do:

After — it is to see, Tiburzio, thanks!

Go; you are free: join Lucca! I suspend

All further operations till to-night.

Thank you, and for the silence most of all!

[*To Brac.*] Let my complacent bland accuser  
go

Carry his self-approving head and heart

Safe through the army which would trample  
him

Dead in a moment at my word or sign!

Go, sir, to Florence; tell friends what I say —

That while I wait my sentence, theirs waits  
them!

[*To Dom.*] You, lady, — you have black  
Italian eyes!

I would be generous if I might: oh, yes —

For I remember how so oft you seemed

Inclined at heart to break the barrier down

Which Florence finds God built between us  
both.

Alas, for generosity! this hour

Asks retribution: bear it as you may,

I must — the Moor — the savage, — pardon you!

Puccio, my trusty soldier, see them forth!

## ACT IV

## EVENING

*Enter PUCCIO and JACOPO.*

*Puc.* What Luria will do? Ah, 't is yours, fair sir,  
Your and your subtle-witted master's part,  
To tell me that; I tell you what he can.

*Jac.* Friend, you mistake my station: I observe  
The game, watch how my betters play, no more.

*Puc.* But mankind are not pieces — there's your fault!  
You cannot push them, and, the first move made,

Lean back and study what the next shall be,  
In confidence that, when 't is fixed upon,  
You find just where you left them, blacks and whites:

Men go on moving when your hand's away.  
You build, I notice, firm on Luria's faith  
This whole time, — firmlier than I choose to build,

Who never doubted it — of old, that is —  
With Luria in his ordinary mind.

But now, oppression makes the wise man mad:  
How do I know he will not turn and stand  
And hold his own against you, as he may?

Suppose he but withdraw to Pisa — well, —  
Then, even if all happen to your wish,  
Which is a chance . . .

*Jac.* Nay — 't was an oversight,  
Not waiting till the proper warrant came:  
You could not take what was not ours to give.  
But when at night the sentence really comes,  
Our city authorizes past dispute  
Luria's removal and transfers the charge,  
You will perceive your duty and accept?

*Puc.* Accept what? muster-rolls of soldiers' names?

An army upon paper? I want men,  
The hearts as well as hands — and where's a heart

But beats with Luria, in the multitude  
I come from walking through by Luria's side?  
You gave them Luria, set him thus to grow,  
Head-like, upon their trunk: one heart feeds both,

They feel him there, live twice, and well know why.

— For they do know, if you are ignorant,  
Who kept his own place and respected theirs,  
Managed their sweat, yet never spared his blood.  
All was your act: another might have served —  
There's peradventure no such dearth of heads —  
But you chose Luria: so, they grew one flesh,  
And now, for nothing they can understand,  
Luria removed, off is to roll the head;  
The body's mine — much I shall do with it!

*Jac.* That's at the worst.

*Puc.* No — at the best, it is!  
Best, do you hear? I saw them by his side.  
Only we two with Luria in the camp  
Are left that keep the secret? You think that?  
Hear what I know: from rear to van, no heart

But felt the quiet patient hero there  
Was wronged, nor in the moveless ranks an eye  
But glancing told its fellow the whole story  
Of that convicted silent knot of spies  
Who passed through them to Florence; they might pass —

No breast but gladder beat when free of such!  
Our troops will catch up Luria, close him round,  
Bear him to Florence as their natural lord,  
Partake his fortune, live or die with him.

*Jac.* And by mistake catch up along with him

Puccio, no doubt, compelled in self despire  
To still continue second in command!

*Puc.* No, sir, no second nor so fortunate!  
Your tricks succeed with me too well for that!  
I am as you have made me, live and die  
To serve your end — a mere trained fighting-hack,

With words, you laugh at while they leave your mouth,

For my life's rule and ordinance of God!  
I have to do my duty, keep my faith,  
And earn my praise, and guard against my blame,

As I was trained. I shall accept your charge,  
And fight against one better than myself.

Spite of my heart's conviction of his worth —  
That, you may count on! — just as hitherto  
I have gone on, persuaded I was wronged,  
Slighted, insulted, terms we learn by rote, —

All because Luria superseded me —  
Because the better nature, fresh-inspired,  
Mounted above me to its proper place!

What mattered all the kindly graciousness,  
The cordial brother's-bearing? This was clear —

I, once the captain, now was subaltern,  
And so must keep complaining like a fool!  
Go, take the curse of a lost soul, I say!

You neither play your puppets to the end,  
Nor treat the real man, — for his realness' sake  
Thrust rudely in their place, — with such regard

As might console them for their altered rank.  
Me, the mere steady soldier, you depose  
For Luria, and here's all your pet deserves!

Of what account, then, is your laughing-stock?  
One word for all: whatever Luria does,

— If backed by his indignant troops he turn,  
Revenge himself, and Florence go to ground, —  
Or, for a signal everlasting shame,

He pardon you, simply seek better friends,  
Side with the Pisans and Luchese for change

— And if I, pledged to ingrates past belief,  
Dare fight against a man such fools call false,

Who, inasmuch as he was true, fights me, —  
Whichever way he win, he wins for worth,

For every soldier, for all true and good!  
Sir, chinceling the rest, omit not this!

*(As they go, enter LURIA and HUSAIN.)*

*Hus.* Saw'st thou? — For they are gone!  
The world lies bare

Before thee, to be tasted, felt and seen  
Like what it is, now Florence goes away!  
Thou livest now, with men art man again!  
Those Florentines were all to thee of old;  
But Braccio, but Domizia, gone is each,



There lie beneath thee thine own multitudes !  
Saw'st thou ?

*Lur.* I saw.

*Hus.* Then, hold thy course, my king !  
The years return. Let thy heart have its way :  
Ah, they would play with thee as with all else,  
Turn thee to use, and fashion thee anew,  
Find out God's fault in thee as in the rest ?  
Oh watch, oh listen only to these fiends  
Once at their occupation ! Ere we know,  
The free great heaven is shut, their stifling pall  
Drops till it frets the very tingling hair,  
So weighs it on our head. — and, for the earth,  
Our common earth is tethered up and down,  
Over and across — “here shalt thou move,”  
they cry !

*Lur.* Ay, Husain ?

*Hus.* So have they spoiled all beside !  
So stands a man girt round with Florentines,  
Priests, graybeards, Braccios, women, boys and  
spies,

All in one tale, all singing the same song,  
How thou must house, and live at bed and  
board,

Take pledge and give it, go their every way,  
Breathe to their measure, make thy blood beat  
time

With theirs — or, all is nothing — thou art  
lost —

A savage, how shouldst thou perceive as they ?  
Feel glad to stand 'neath God's close naked  
hand !

Look up to it ! Why, down they pull thy neck,  
Lest it crush thee, who feel'st it and wouldst  
kiss,

Without their priests that needs must glove it  
first,

Least peradventure flesh offend thy lip.

Love woman ! Why, a very beast thou art !

Thou must . . .

*Lur.* Peace, Husain !

*Hus.* Ay, but, spoiling all,  
For all, else true things, substituting false,  
That they should dare spoil, of all instincts,  
thine !

Should dare to take thee with thine instincts up,  
Thy battle-ardors, like a ball of fire,  
And class them and allow them place and play  
So far, no farther — unabashed the while !

Thou with the soul that never can take rest —  
Thou born to do, undo, and do again,  
And never to be still, — wouldst thou make war ?  
Oh, that is commendable, just and right !

“Come over,” say they, “have the honor due  
In living out thy nature ! Fight thy best :

It is to be for Florence, not thyself !

For thee, it were a horror and a plague ;

For us, when war is made for Florence, see,  
How all is changed : the fire that fed on earth  
Now towers to heaven !” —

*Lur.* And what sealed up so long  
My Husain's mouth ?

*Hus.* Oh friend, oh lord — for me,  
What am I ? — I was silent at thy side,  
Who am a part of thee. It is thy hand,  
Thy foot that glows when in the heart fresh  
blood

Boils up, thou heart of me ! Now, live again,

Again love as thou likest, hate as free !

Turn to no Braccios nor Donizias now,

To ask, before thy very limbs dare move,

If Florence's welfare be concerned thereby !

*Lur.* So clear what Florence must expect of  
me ?

*Hus.* Both armies against Florence ! Take  
revenge !

Wide, deep — to live upon, in feeling now, —

And, after live, in memory, year by year —

And, with the dear conviction, die at last !

She lies now at thy pleasure : pleasure have !

Their vaunted intellect that gilds our sense,

And blends with life, to show it better by,

— How think'st thou ? — I have turned that  
light on them !

They called our thirst of war a transient thing ;

“The battle-element must pass away

From life,” they said, “and leave a tranquil  
world.”

— Master, I took their light and turned it full

On that dull turgid vein they said would burst

And pass away ; and as I looked on life,

Still everywhere I tracked this, though it hid

And shifted, lay so silent as it thought,

Changed shape and hue yet ever was the same.

Why, 't was all fighting, all their nobler life !

All work was fighting, every harm — defeat,

And every joy obtained — a victory !

Be not their dupe !

— Their dupe ? That hour is past !

Here stand'st thou in the glory and the calm :

All is determined. Silence for me now !

[HUSAIN goes.]

*Lur.* Have I heard all ?

*Dom.* [Advancing from the background.] No,  
Luria, I remain !

Not from the motives these have urged on thee,

Ignoble, insufficient, incomplete,

And pregnant each with sure seeds of decay,

As failing of sustainment from thyself.

— Neither from low revenge, nor selfishness,

Nor savage lust of power, nor one, nor all,

Shalt thou abolish Florence ! I proclaim

The angel in thee, and reject the sprites

Which ineffectual crowd about his strength,

And mingle with his work and claim a share !

Inconsciously to the augustest end

Thou hast arisen : second not in rank

So much as time, to him who first ordained

That Florence, thou art to destroy, should be.

Yet him a star, too, guided, who broke first

The pride of lonely power, the life apart,

And made the eminences, each to each,

Lean o'er the level world and let it lie

Safe from the thunder henceforth 'neath their  
tops ;

So the few famous men of old combined,

And let the multitude rise underneath,

And reach them and unite — so Florence grew :

Braccio speaks true, it was well worth the price.

But when the sheltered many grew in pride

And grudged the station of the elected ones.

Who, greater than their kind, are truly great

Only in voluntary servitude —

Time was for thee to rise, and thou art here.

Such plague possessed this Florence : who can  
tell

The mighty girth and greatness at the heart  
 Of those so perfect pillars of the grove  
 She pulled down in her envy? Who as I,  
 The light weak parasite born but to twine  
 Round each of them and, measuring them, live?  
 My light love keeps the matchless circle safe,  
 My slender life proves what has passed away.  
 I lived when they departed; lived to cling  
 To thee, the mighty stranger; thou wouldst rise  
 And burst the thralldom, and avenge, I knew.  
 I have done nothing; all was thy strong hold.  
 But a bird's weight can break the infant tree  
 Which after holds an aery in its arms,  
 And 't was my care that naught should warp  
     thy spire  
 From rising to the height; the roof is reached  
 O' the forest, break through, see extend the  
     sky!

Go on to Florence, Luria! 'Tis man's cause!  
 Fail thou, and thine own fall were least to  
     dread:

Thou keepest Florence in her evil way,  
 Encouragest her sin so much the more—  
 And while the ignoble past is justified,  
 Thou all the surelier warp'st the future growth,  
 The chiefs to come, the Lurias yet unborn,  
 That, greater than thyself, are reached o'er thee  
 Who giv'st the vantage-ground their foes re-  
     quire,  
 As o'er my prostrate House thyself wast  
     reached!

Man calls thee, God requites thee! All is said,  
 The mission of my House fulfilled at last:  
 And the mere woman, speaking for herself,  
 Reserves speech—it is now no woman's time.

[DOMIZIA goes.]

*Lur.* Thus at the last must figure Luria,  
     then!

Doing the various work of all his friends,  
 And answering every purpose save his own.  
 No doubt, 't is well for them to wish; but him—  
 After the exploit what were left? Perchance  
 A little pride upon the swarthy brow,  
 At having brought successfully to bear  
 'Gainst Florence' self her own especial arms,—  
 Her craftiness, impelled by fiercer strength  
 From Moorish blood than feeds the northern wit.  
 But after!—once the easy vengeance willed,  
 Beautiful Florence at a word laid low  
 —(Not in her domes and towers and palaces,  
 Not even in a dream, that outrage!)—low,  
 As shamed in her own eyes henceforth forever,  
 Low, for the rival cities round to laugh,  
 Conquered and pardoned by a hieling Moor!  
 —For him, who did the irreparable wrong,  
 What would be left, his life's illusion fled,—  
 What hope or trust in the forlorn wide world?  
 How strange that Florence should mistake me  
     so!

Whence grew this? What withdrew her faith  
     from me?

Some cause! These fretful-blooded children  
     talk

Against their mother,—they are wronged, they  
     say—

Notable wrongs her smile makes up again!  
 So, taking fire at each supposed offence,  
 They may speak rashly, suffer for their speech:

But what could it have been in word or deed  
 Thus injured me? Some one word spoken  
     more

Out of my heart, and all had changed perhaps.  
 My fault, it must have been,—for, what gain  
     they?

Why risk the danger? See, what I could do!  
 And my fault, wherefore visit upon them,  
 My Florentines? The notable revenge  
 I meditated! To stay passively,  
 Attend their summons, be as they dispose!  
 Why, if my very soldiers keep the rank,  
 And if my chieftains acquiesce, what then?  
 I ruin Florence, teach her friends mistrust,  
 Confirm her enemies in harsh belief,  
 And when she finds one day, as find she must,  
 The strange mistake, and how my heart was  
     hers,

Shall it console me, that my Florentines  
 Walk with a sadder step, in graver guise,  
 Who took me with such frankness, praised me  
     so,

At the glad outset? Had they loved me less,  
 They had less feared what seemed a change in  
     me.

And after all, who did the harm? Not they!  
 How could they interpose with those old fools.  
 I' the council? Suffer for those old fools'  
     sake—

They, who made pictures of me, sang the songs  
 About my battles? Ah, we Moors get blind  
 Out of our proper world, where we can see!  
 The sun that guides is closer to us! There—  
 There, my own orb! He sinks from out the  
     sky!

Why, there! a whole day has he blessed the  
     land,

My land, our Florence all about the hills,  
 The fields and gardens, vineyards, olive-  
     grounds,

All have been blest—and yet we Florentines,  
 With souls intent upon our battle here,  
 Found that he rose too soon, or set too late,  
 Gave us no vantage, or gave Pisa much—  
 Therefore we wronged him! Does he turn in  
     ire

To burn the earth that cannot understand?  
 Or drop out quietly, and leave the sky,  
 His task once ended? Night wipes blame  
     away.

Another morning from my East shall spring  
 And find all eyes at leisure, all disposed  
 To watch and understand its work, no doubt.  
 So, praise the new sun, the successor praise,  
 Praise the new Luria and forget the old!

[Taking a phial from his breast.]

—Strange! This is all I brought from my own  
     land

To help me: Europe would supply the rest,  
 All needs beside, all other helps save one!  
 I thought of adverse fortune, battle lost,  
 The natural upbraiding of the loser,  
 And then this quiet remedy to seek  
 At end of the disastrous day. [He drinks.]

'T is sought!  
 This was my happy triumph-morning: Florence  
 Is saved: I drink this, and ere night,—die!  
     Strange!

## ACT V

## NIGHT

LURIA and PUCCIO

*Lur.* I thought to do this, not to talk this:  
well,

Such were my projects for the city's good,  
To help her in attack or by defence.  
Time, here as elsewhere, soon or late may take  
Our foresight by surprise through chance and  
change;

But not a little we provide against  
— If you see clear on every point.

*Puc.* Most clear.

*Lur.* Then all is said — not much, if you  
count words,

Yet to an understanding ear enough;  
And all that my brief stay permits, beside.  
Nor must you blame me, as I sought to teach  
My elder in command, or threw a doubt  
Upon the very skill, it comforts me  
To know I leave, — your steady soldiiership  
Which never failed me: yet, because it seemed  
A stranger's eye might haply note defect  
That skill, through use and custom, over-  
looks —

I have gone into the old cares once more,  
As if I had to come and save again  
Florence — that May — that morning! 'T is  
night now.

Well — I broke off with? . . .

*Puc.* Of the past campaign  
You spoke — of measures to be kept in mind  
For future use.

*Lur.* True, so . . . but, time — no time!  
As well end here: remember this, and me!  
Farewell now!

*Puc.* Dare I speak?

*Lur.* South o' the river —  
How is the second stream called . . . no, — the  
third?

*Puc.* Pesa.

*Lur.* And a stone's-cast from the fording-  
place,

To the east, — the little mount's name?

*Puc.* Lupo.

*Lur.* Ay!

Ay — there the tower, and all that side is safe!  
With San Romano, west of Evola,  
San Miniato, Scala, Empoli,  
Five towers in all, — forget not!

*Puc.* Fear not me!

*Lur.* — Nor to memorialize the Council now,  
I the easy hour, on those battalions' claim,  
Who forced a pass by Staggia on the hills,  
And kept the Siense at check!

*Puc.* One word —

Sir, I must speak! That you submit yourself  
To Florence' bidding, howsoe'er it prove,  
And give up the command to me — is much,  
Too much, perhaps: but what you tell me now,  
Even will affect the other course you choose —  
Poor as it may be, perils even that!

Refuge you seek at Pisa: yet these plans  
All militate for Florence, all conclude  
Your formidable work to make her queen

O' the country, — which her rivals rose against  
When you began it, — which to interrupt,  
Pisa would buy you off at any price!  
You cannot mean to sue for Pisa's help,  
With this made perfect and on record?

*Lur.*

I —

At Pisa, and for refuge, do you say?

*Puc.* Where are you going, then? You  
must decide

On leaving us, a silent fugitive,

Alone, at night — you, stealing through our  
lines,

Who were this morning's Luria, — you escape

To painfully begin the world once more,

With such a past, as it had never been!

Where are you going?

*Lur.*

Not so far, my Puccio,

But that I hope to hear, enjoy and praise

(If you mind praise from your old captain yet)

Each happy blow you strike for Florence!

*Puc.*

Ay,

But ere you gain your shelter, what may come?  
For see — though nothing's surely known as  
yet,

Still — truth must out — I apprehend the worst.

If mere suspicion stood for certainty

Before, there's nothing can arrest the step

Of Florence: toward your ruin, once on foot.

Forgive her fifty times, it matters not!

And having disbelieved your innocence,

How can she trust your magnanimity?

You may do harm to her — why then, you will!

And Florence is sagacious in pursuit.

Have you a friend to count on?

*Lur.*

One sure friend.

*Puc.* Potent?

*Lur.* All-potent.

*Puc.*

And he is apprised?

*Lur.* He waits me.

*Puc.*

So! — Then I, put in your place,

Making my profit of all done by you,

Calling your labors mine, reaping their fruit,

To this, the State's gift, now add yours be-  
side —

That I may take as my peculiar store

These your instructions to work Florence good.

And if, by putting some few happily

In practice, I should both advantage her

And draw down honor on myself, — what then?

*Lur.* Do it, my Puccio! I shall know and  
praise!

*Puc.* Though so, men say, "mark what we  
gain by change

— A Puccio for a Luria!"

*Lur.*

Even so!

*Puc.* Then, not for fifty hundred Florences

Would I accept one office save my own,

Fill any other than my rightful post

Here at your feet, my captain and my lord!

That such a cloud should break, such trouble  
be,

Ere a man settle, soul and body, down

Into his true place and take rest forever!

Here were my wise eyes fixed on your right  
hand,

And so the bad thoughts came and the worse  
words,

And all went wrong and painfully enough, —



No wonder, — till, the right spot stumbled on,  
All the jar stops, and there is peace at once!  
I am yours now, — a tool your right hand  
wields!

God's love, that I should live, the man I am,  
On orders, warrants, patents and the like,  
As if there were no glowing eye i' the world  
To glance straight inspiration to my brain,  
No glorious heart to give mine twice the beats!  
For, see — my doubt, where is it? — fear? 't is  
flown!

And Florence and her anger are a tale  
To scare a child! Why, half-a-dozen words  
Will tell her, spoken as I now can speak,  
Her error, my past folly — and all's right,  
And you are Luria, our great chief again!  
Or at the worst — which worst were best of  
all —

To exile or to death I follow you!

*Lur.* Thanks, Puccio! Let me use the  
privilege

You grant me: if I still command you, — stay!  
Remain here, my vicegerent, it shall be,  
And not successor: let me, as of old,  
Still serve the State, my spirit prompting  
yours —

Still triumph, one for both. There! Leave  
me now!

You cannot disobey my first command?  
Remember what I spoke of Jacopo,  
And what you promised to concert with him!  
Send him to speak with me — nay, no farewell!  
You shall be by me when the sentence comes.

[PUCCIO goes.]

So, there's one Florentine returns again!  
Out of the genial morning company.  
One face is left to take into the night.

[Enter JACOPO.]

*Jac.* I wait for your command, sir.

*Lur.* What, so soon?

I thank your ready presence and fair word.  
I used to notice you in early days  
As of the other species, so to speak,  
Those watchers of the lives of us who act —  
That weigh our motives, scrutinize our thoughts.  
So, I propound this to your faculty  
As you would tell me, were a town to take  
. . . That is, of old. I am departing hence  
Under these imputations; that is naught —  
I leave no friend on whom they may rebound,  
Hardly a name behind me in the land,  
Being a stranger: all the more behooves  
That I regard how altered were the case  
With natives of the country, Florentines  
On whom the like mischance should fall: the  
roots

O' the tree survive the ruin of the trunk —  
No root of mine will throb, you understand.  
But I had predecessors, Florentines,  
Accused as I am now, and punished so —  
The Traversari: you know more than I  
How stigmatized they are and lost in shame.  
Now Puccio, who succeeds me in command,  
Both served them and succeeded, in due time;  
He knows the way, holds proper documents,  
And has the power to lay the simple truth  
Before an active spirit, as I count yours:  
And also there's Tiburzio, my new friend,

Will, at a word, confirm such evidence,  
He being the great chivalric soul we know.  
I put it to your tact, sir — were 't not well,  
— A grace, though but for contrast's sake, no  
more, —

If you who witness, and have borne a share  
Involuntarily in my mischance,  
Should, of your proper motion, set your skill  
To indicate — that is, investigate  
The right or wrong of what mischance befell  
Those famous citizens, your countrymen?  
Nay, you shall promise nothing: but reflect,  
And if your sense of justice prompt you —  
good!

*Jac.* And if, the trial past, their fame stand  
clear

To all men's eyes, as yours, my lord, to mine —  
Their ghosts may sleep in quiet satisfied!  
For me, a straw thrown up into the air,  
My testimony goes for a straw's worth.  
I used to hold by the instructed brain,  
And move with Braccio as my master-wind;  
The heart leads surer: I must move with  
you —

As greatest now, who ever were the best.  
So, let the last and humblest of your servants  
Accept your charge, as Braccio's heretofore,  
And tender homage by obeying you!

[JACOPO goes.]

*Lur.* Another! — Luria goes not poorly forth.  
If we could wait! The only fault's with time;  
All men become good creatures: but so slow!

[Enter DOMIZIA.]

*Lur.* Ah, you once more?

*Dom.* Domizia, whom you knew.  
Performed her task, and died with it. 'T is I,  
Another woman, you have never known.  
Let the past sleep now!

*Lur.* I have done with it.

*Dom.* How inexhaustibly the spirit grows!  
One object, she seemed erewhile born to reach  
With her whole energies and die content, —  
So like a wall at the world's edge it stood,  
With naught beyond to live for, — is that  
reached? —

Already are new undreamed energies  
Outgrowing under, and extending farther  
To a new object; there's another world.  
See! I have told the purpose of my life;  
'T is gained: you are decided, well or ill —  
You march on Florence, or submit to her —  
My work is done with you, your brow declares.  
But — leave you? — More of you seems yet to  
reach:

I stay for what I just begin to see.

*Lur.* So that you turn not to the past!

*Dom.* You trace  
Nothing but ill in it — my selfish impulse,  
Which sought its end and disregarded yours?

*Lur.* Speak not against your nature: best,  
each keep

His own — you, yours — most, now that I keep  
mine,

— At least, fall by it, having too weakly stood.  
God's finger marks distinctions, all so fine,  
We would confound: the lesser has its use.  
Which, when it apes the greater, is foregone.  
I, born a Moor, lived half a Florentine:

But, punished properly, can end, a Moor.  
Beside, there's something makes me understand  
Your nature : I have seen it.

*Dom.* Aught like mine ?

*Lur.* In my own East . . . if you would stoop and help

My barbarous illustration ! It sounds ill ;  
Yet there's no wrong at bottom : rather, praise.

*Dom.* Well ?

*Lur.* We have creatures there, which if you saw

The first time, you would doubtless marvel at  
For their surpassing beauty, craft and strength.  
And though it were a lively moment's shock  
When you first found the purpose of forked  
tongues

That seem innocuous in their lambent play,  
Yet, once made know such grace requires such  
guard,

Your reason soon would acquiesce, I think,  
In wisdom which made all things for the best —  
So, take them, good with ill, contentedly,  
The prominent beauty with the latent sting.  
I am glad to have seen you wondrous Flor-  
entines :

Yet . . .

*Dom.* I am here to listen.

*Lur.* My own East !

How nearer God we were ! He glows above  
With scarce an intervention, presses close  
And palpatingly, his soul o'er ours :  
We feel him, nor by painful reason know !  
The everlasting minute of creation

Is felt there ; now it is, as it was then ;  
All changes at his instantaneous will,  
Not by the operation of a law  
Whose maker is elsewhere at other work.  
His hand is still engaged upon his world —

Man's praise can forward it, man's prayer  
suspend,

For is not God all-mighty ? To recast  
The world, erase old things and make them new,  
What costs it Him ? So, man breathes nobly  
there.

And inasmuch as feeling, the East's gift,  
Is quick and transient — comes, and lo, is  
gone —

While Northern thought is slow and durable,  
Surely a mission was reserved for me,  
Who, born with a perception of the power  
And use of the North's thought for us of the  
East,

Should have remained, turned knowledge to  
account,

Giving thought's character and permanence  
To the too transitory feeling there —

Writing God's message plain in mortal words.  
Instead of which, I leave my fated field

For this where such a task is needed least,  
Where all are born consummate in the art  
I just perceive a chance of making mine, —  
And then, deserting thus my early post,

I wonder that the men I come among  
Mistake me ! There, how all had understood,  
Still brought fresh stuff for me to stamp and  
keep,

Fresh instinct to translate them into law !

Me, who . . .

*Dom.* Who here the greater task achieve,  
More needful even : who have brought fresh  
stuff

For us to mould, interpret and prove right, —  
New feeling fresh from God, which, could we  
know

O' the instant, where had been our need of it ?  
— Whose life re-teaches us what life should  
be,

What faith is, loyalty and simpleness,  
All, once revealed but taught us so long since  
That, having mere tradition of the fact, —  
Truth copied falteringly from copies faint,  
The early traits all dropped away, — we said  
On sight of faith like yours, "So looks not  
faith

We understand, described and praised before."'  
But still, the feat was dared ; and though at  
first

It suffered from our haste, yet trace by trace  
Old memories reappear, old truth returns,  
Our slow thought does its work, and all's re-  
known.

Oh noble Luria ! What you have decreed  
I see not, but no animal revenge,  
No brute-like punishment of bad by worse —  
It cannot be, the gross and vulgar way  
Traced for me by convention and mistake,  
Has gained that calm approving eye and brow !  
Spare Florence, after all ! Let Luria trust  
To his own soul, he whom I trust with mine !

*Lur.* In time !

*Dom.* How, Luria ?

*Lur.* It is midnight now,  
And they arrive from Florence with my fate.

*Dom.* I hear no step.

*Lur.* I feel one, as you say.

(Enter HUSAIN.)

*Hus.* The man returned from Florence !

*Lur.* As I knew.

*Hus.* He seeks thee.

*Lur.* And I only wait for him.

Aught else ?

*Hus.* A movement of the Lucchese troops  
Southward —

*Lur.* Toward Florence ? Have out in-  
stantly . . .

Ah, old use clings ! Puccio must care hence-  
forth.

In — quick — 't is nearly midnight ! Bid him  
come !

(Enter TIBURZIO, BRACCIO, and PUCCIO.)

*Lur.* Tiburzio ? — not at Pisa ?

*Tib.*

I return  
From Florence : I serve Pisa, and must think  
By such procedure I have served her best.  
A people is but the attempt of many  
To rise to the completer life of one ;  
And those who live as models for the mass  
Are singly of more value than they all.  
Such man are you, and such a time is this,  
That your sole fate concerns a nation more  
Than much apparent welfare : that to prove  
Your rectitude, and duly crown the same,  
Imports us far beyond to-day's event.

A battle's loss or gain : man's mass re-  
mains, —

Keep but God's model safe, new men will rise

To take its mould, and other days to prove  
 How great a good was Luria's glory. True —  
 I might go try my fortune as you urged,  
 And, joining Lucca, helped by your disgrace,  
 Repair our harm — so were to-day's work done ;  
 But where leave Luria for our sons to see ?  
 No, I look farther. I have testified  
 (Declaring my submission to your arms)  
 Her full success to Florence, making clear  
 Your probity, as none else could : I spoke,  
 And out it shone !

*Lur.* Ah — until Braccio spoke !

*Brac.* Till Braccio told in just a word the whole —

His lapse to error, his return to knowledge :  
 Which told . . . Nay, Luria, I should droop  
 the head,  
 I whom shame rests with ! Yet I dare look  
 up,

Sure of your pardon now I sue for it,  
 Knowing you wholly. Let the midnight end !  
 'Tis morn approaches ! Still you answer  
 not ?

Sunshine succeeds the shadow passed away ;  
 Our faces, which phantasmal grew and false,  
 Are all that felt it : they change round you  
 turn

Truly themselves now in its vanishing.

Speak, Luria ! Here begins your true career :

Look up, advance ! All now is possible,  
 Fact's grandeur, no false dreaming ! Dare and  
 do !

And every prophecy shall be fulfilled

Save one — (nay, now your word must come at  
 last)

— That you would punish Florence !

*Hus.* [*Pointing to LURIA'S dead body.*] That  
 is done.

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

FLORENCE, 1850

### CHRISTMAS-EVE

I

OUT of the little chapel I burst  
 Into the fresh night-air again.  
 Five minutes full, I waited first  
 In the doorway, to escape the rain  
 That drove in gusts down the common's centre  
 At the edge of which the chapel stands,  
 Before I plucked up heart to enter.  
 Heaven knows how many sorts of hands  
 Reached past me, groping for the latch  
 Of the inner door that hung on catch  
 More obstinate the more they fumbled,  
 Till, giving way at last with a scold  
 Of the crazy hinge, in squeezed or tumbled  
 One sheep more to the rest in fold,  
 And left me irresolute, standing sentry  
 In the sheepfold's lath-and-plaster entry,  
 Six feet long by three feet wide,  
 Partitioned off from the vast inside —  
 I blocked up half of it at least.  
 No remedy ; the rain kept driving.  
 They eyed me much as some wild beast,  
 That congregation, still arriving,  
 Some of them by the main road, white  
 A long way past me into the night,  
 Skirting the common, then diverging ;  
 Not a few suddenly emerging  
 From the common's self through the paling-  
 gaps,  
 — They house in the gravel-pits perhaps,  
 Where the road stops short with its safeguard  
 border  
 Of lamps, as tired of such disorder ; —  
 But the most turned in yet more abruptly  
 From a certain squalid knot of alleys,  
 Where the town's bad blood once slept cor-  
 ruptly,

Which now the little chapel rallies  
 And leads into day again, — its priestliness  
 Lending itself to hide their beastliness  
 So cleverly (thanks in part to the mason),  
 And putting so cheery a whitewashed face on  
 Those neophytes too much in lack of it,  
 That, where you cross the common as I did,  
 And meet the party thus presided,  
 " Mount Zion " with Love-lane at the back of  
 it,  
 They front you as little disconcerted  
 As, bound for the hills, her fate averted,  
 And her wicked people made to mind him,  
 Lot might have marched with Gomorrah behind  
 him.

II

Well, from the road, the lanes or the common.  
 In came the flock : the fat weary woman,  
 Panting and bewildered, down-clapping  
 Her umbrella with a mighty report,  
 Grounded it by me, wry and flapping,  
 A wreck of whalebones ; then, with a snort,  
 Like a startled horse, at the interloper  
 (Who humbly knew himself improper,  
 But could not shrink up small enough)  
 — Round to the door, and in, — the gruff  
 Hinge's invariable scold  
 Making my very blood run cold.  
 Prompt in the wake of her, up-pattered  
 On broken clogs, the many-tattered  
 Little old-faced peaking sister-turned-mother  
 Of the sickly babe she tried to smother  
 Somehow up, with its spotted face,  
 From the cold, on her breast, the one warm  
 place ;  
 She too must stop, wring the poor ends dry  
 Of a draggled shawl, and add thereby  
 Her tribute to the door-mat, sopping  
 Already from my own clothes' dropping,



Which yet she seemed to grudge I should stand on:

Then, stooping down to take off her pattens,  
She bore them defiantly, in each hand one,  
Planted together before her breast  
And its babe, as good as a lance in rest,  
Close on her heels, the dingy satins  
Of a female something past me flitted,  
With lips as much too white, as a streak  
Lay far too red on each hollow cheek;  
And it seemed the very door-hinge pitied

All that was left of a woman once,  
Holding at least its tongue for the nonce.  
Then a tall yellow man, like the Penitent Thief,  
With his jaw bound up in a handkerchief,  
And eyelids screwed together tight,  
Led himself in by some inner light.  
And, except from him, from each that entered,  
I got the same interrogation—

“What, you the alien, you have ventured  
To take with us, the elect, your station?  
A carer for none of it, a Gallio!”—  
Thus, plain as print, I read the glance  
At a common prey, in each countenance  
As of huntsman giving his hounds the tallyho.  
And, when the door’s cry drowned their wonder,

The draught, it always sent in shutting,  
Made the flame of the single tallow candle  
In the cracked square lantern I stood under,  
Shoot its blue lip at me, rebutting  
As it were, the luckless cause of scandal:

I verily fancied the zealous light  
(In the chapel’s secret, too!) for spite  
Would shudder itself clean off the wick,  
With the airs of a Saint John’s Candlestick.  
There was no standing it much longer.

“Good folks,” thought I, as resolve grew stronger,

“This way you perform the Grand-Inquisitor  
When the weather sends you a chance visitor?  
You are the men, and wisdom shall die with you,  
And none of the old Seven Churches vie with you!

But still, despite the pretty perfection  
To which you carry your trick of exclusiveness,  
And, taking God’s word under wise protection,

Correct its tendency to diffusiveness,  
And bid one reach it over hot ploughshares,—  
Still, as I say, though you’ve found salvation,  
If I should choose to cry, as now, ‘Shares!’—  
See if the best of you bars me my ration!

I prefer, if you please, for my expounder  
Of the laws of the feast, the feast’s own Founder;

Mine’s the same right with your poorest and sickliest,

Supposing I don the marriage vestiment:  
So, shut your mouth and open your Testament,  
And carve me my portion at your quickest!”  
Accordingly, as a shoemaker’s lad  
With wizened face in want of soap,  
And wet apron wound round his waist like a rope,

(After stopping outside, for his cough was bad,

To get the fit over, poor gentle creature,  
And so avoid disturbing the preacher)  
—Passed in, I sent my elbow spikewise  
At the shutting door, and entered likewise,  
Received the hinge’s accustomed greeting,  
And crossed the threshold’s magic pentacle,  
And found myself in full conventicle,  
—To wit, in Zion Chapel Meeting,  
On the Christmas-Eve of ‘Forty-nine,  
Which, calling its flock to their special clover,  
Found all assembled and one sheep over,  
Whose lot, as the weather pleased, was mine.

## III

I very soon had enough of it.  
The hot smell and the human noises,  
And my neighbor’s coat, the greasy cuff of it,  
Were a pebble-stone that a child’s hand poises,  
Compared with the pig-of-lead-like pressure  
Of the preaching man’s immense stupidity,  
As he poured his doctrine forth, full measure,  
To meet his audience’s avidity.  
You needed not the wit of the Sibyl  
To guess the cause of it all, in a twinkling:  
No sooner our friend had got an inkling  
Of treasure hid in the Holy Bible,  
(Whene’er ’t was the thought first struck him,  
How death, at unawares, might duck him  
Deeper than the grave, and quench  
The gin-shop’s light in hell’s grim drench)  
Than he handled it so, in fine irreverence,  
As to hug the book of books to pieces:  
And, a patchwork of chapters and texts in severance,

Not improved by the private dog’s-ears and creases,  
Having clothed his own soul with, he’d fain  
see equipt yours,—

So tossed you again your Holy Scriptures,  
And you picked them up, in a sense, no doubt:  
Nay, had but a single face of my neighbors  
Appeared to suspect that the preacher’s labors

Were help which the world could be saved without,

’T is odds but I might have borne in quiet  
A qualm or two at my spiritual diet,  
Or (who can tell?) perchance even mustered  
Somewhat to urge in behalf of the sermon:  
But the flock sat on, divinely flustered,  
Sniffing, methought, its dew of Hermon  
With such content in every snuffle,  
As the devil inside us loves to ruffle.  
My old fat woman purred with pleasure,  
And thumb round thumb went twirling faster,  
While she, to his periods keeping measure,  
Maternally devoured the pastor.

The man with the handkerchief untied it.  
Showed us a horrible wen inside it,  
Gave his eyelids yet another screwing,  
And rocked himself as the woman was doing.  
The shoemaker’s lad, discreetly choking,  
Kept down his cough. ’T was too provoking!  
My gorge rose at the nonsense and stuff of it;  
So, saying like Eve when she plucked the apple,  
“I wanted a taste, and now there’s enough of it.”

I flung out of the little chapel.

## IV

There was a lull in the rain, a lull  
 In the wind too; the moon was risen,  
 And would have shone out pure and full,  
 But for the ramparted cloud-prison,  
 Block on block built up in the West,  
 For what purpose the wind knows best,  
 Who changes his mind continually.  
 And the empty other half of the sky  
 Seemed in its silence as if it knew  
 What, any moment, might look through  
 A chance gap in that fortress massy: —  
 Through its fissures you got hints  
 Of the flying moon, by the shifting tints,  
 Now, a dull lion-color, now, brassy  
 Burning to yellow, and whitest yellow,  
 Like furnace-smoke just ere flames bellow,  
 All a-simmer with intense strain  
 To let her through, — then blank again,  
 At the hope of her appearance failing.  
 Just by the chapel a break in the railing  
 Shows a narrow path directly across;  
 'T is ever dry walking there, on the moss —  
 Besides, you go gently all the way up-hill.  
 I stooped under and soon felt better;  
 My head grew lighter, my limbs more supple,  
 As I walked on, glad to have slipt the fetter.  
 My mind was full of the scene I had left,  
 That placid flock, that pastor vociferant,  
 -- How this outside was pure and different!  
 The sermon, now — what a mingled weft  
 Of good and ill! Were either less,  
 Its fellow had colored the whole distinctly;  
 But alas for the excellent earnestness,  
 And the truths, quite true if stated succinctly,  
 But as surely false, in their quaint presentment,  
 However to pastor and flock's contentment!  
 Say rather, such truths looked false to your  
 eyes,  
 With his provings and parallels twisted and  
 twined,  
 Till how could you know them, grown double  
 their size  
 In the natural fog of the good man's mind,  
 Like yonder spots of our roadside lamps,  
 Haloed about with the common's damps?  
 Truth remains true, the fault's in the prover;  
 The zeal was good, and the aspiration;  
 And yet, and yet, yet, fifty times over,  
 Pharaoh received no demonstration,  
 By his Baker's dream of Baskets Three,  
 Of the doctrine of the Trinity, —  
 Although, as our preacher thus embellished it,  
 Apparently his hearers relished it  
 With so unfeigned a gust — who knows if  
 They did not prefer our friend to Joseph?  
 But so it is everywhere, one way with all of  
 them!  
 These people have really felt, no doubt,  
 A something, the motion they style the Call of  
 them;  
 And this is their method of bringing about,  
 By a mechanism of words and tones,  
 (So many texts in so many groans)  
 A sort of reviving and reproducing,  
 More or less perfectly, (who can tell?)  
 The mood itself, which strengthens by using;

And how that happens, I understand well.  
 A tune was born in my head last week,  
 Out of the thump-thump and shriek-shriek  
 Of the train, as I came by it, up from Manches-  
 ter;  
 And when, next week, I take it back again,  
 My head will sing to the engine's clack again.  
 While it only makes my neighbor's haunches  
 stir,  
 — Finding no dormant musical sprout  
 In him, as in me, to be jolted out.  
 'T is the taught already that profits by teach-  
 ing;  
 He gets no more from the railway's preaching  
 Than, from this preacher who does the rail's  
 office, I:  
 Whom therefore the flock cast a jealous eye on,  
 Still, why paint over their door "Mount Zion,"  
 To which all flesh shall come, saith the pro-  
 phecy?

## V

But therefore be harsh on a single case?  
 After how many modes, this Christmas-Eve,  
 Does the self-same weary thing take place?  
 The same endeavor to make you believe,  
 And with much the same effect, no more:  
 Each method abundantly convincing,  
 As I say, to those convinced before,  
 But scarce to be swallowed without wincing  
 By the not-as-yet-convinced. For me,  
 I have my own church equally:  
 And in this church my faith sprang first!  
 (I said, as I reached the rising ground,  
 And the wind began again, with a burst  
 Of rain in my face, and a glad rebound  
 From the heart beneath, as if, God speeding me,  
 I entered his church-door, nature leading me)  
 — In youth I looked to these very skies,  
 And probing their immensities,  
 I found God there, his visible power;  
 Yet felt in my heart, amid all its sense  
 Of the power, an equal evidence  
 That his love, there too, was the nobler dower.  
 For the loving worm within its clod  
 Were diviner than a loveless god  
 Amid his worlds, I will dare to say.  
 You know what I mean: God's all, man's  
 naught:  
 But also, God, whose pleasure brought  
 Man into being, stands away  
 As it were a handbreadth off, to give  
 Room for the newly-made to live,  
 And look at him from a place apart,  
 And use his gifts of brain and heart,  
 Given, indeed, but to keep forever.  
 Who speaks of man, then, must not sever  
 Man's very elements from man,  
 Saying, "But all is God's" — whose plan  
 Was to create man and then leave him  
 Able, his own word saith, to grieve him,  
 But able to glorify him too,  
 As a mere machine could never do,  
 That prayed or praised, all unaware  
 Of its fitness for aught but praise and prayer.  
 Made perfect as a thing of course.  
 Man, therefore, stands on his own stock  
 Of love and power as a pin-point rock:

And, looking to God who ordained divorce  
 Of the rock from his boundless continent,  
 Sees, in his power made evident,  
 Only excess by a million-fold  
 O'er the power God gave man in the mould.  
 For, note: man's hand, first formed to carry  
 A few pounds' weight, when taught to marry  
 Its strength with an engine's, lifts a mountain,  
 — Advancing in power by one degree;  
 And why count steps through eternity?  
 But love is the ever-springing fountain:  
 Man may enlarge or narrow his bed  
 For the water's play, but the water-head —  
 How can he multiply or reduce it?  
 As easy create it, as cause it to cease;  
 He may profit by it, or abuse it,  
 But 'tis not a thing to bear increase  
 As power does: be love less or more  
 In the heart of man, he keeps it shut  
 Or opens it wide, as he pleases, but  
 Love's sum remains what it was before.  
 So, gazing up, in my youth, at love  
 As seen through power, ever above  
 All modes which make it manifest,  
 My soul brought all to a single test —  
 That he, the Eternal First and Last,  
 Who, in his power, had so surpassed  
 All man conceives of what is might, —  
 Whose wisdom, too, showed infinite,  
 — Would prove as infinitely good;  
 Would never, (my soul understood,)  
 With power to work all love desires,  
 Bestow e'en less than man requires;  
 That he who endlessly was teaching,  
 Above my spirit's utmost reaching,  
 What love can do in the leaf or stone,  
 (So that to master this alone,  
 This done in the stone or leaf for me,  
 I must go on learning endlessly)  
 Would never need that I, in turn,  
 Should point him out defect unheeded,  
 And show that God had yet to learn  
 What the meanest human creature needed,  
 — Not life, to wit, for a few short years,  
 Tracking his way through doubts and fears,  
 While the stupid earth on which I stay  
 Suffers no change, but passive adds  
 Its myriad years to myriads,  
 Though I, he gave it to, decay,  
 Seeing death come and choose about me,  
 And my dearest ones depart without me.  
 No: love which, on earth, amid all the shows  
 of it,  
 Has ever been seen the sole good of life in it,  
 The love, ever growing there, spite of the strife  
 in it,  
 Shall arise, made perfect, from death's repose  
 of it.  
 And I shall behold thee, face to face,  
 O God, and in thy light retrace  
 How in all I loved here, still wast thou!  
 Whom pressing to, then, as I fain would now,  
 I shall find as able to satiate  
 The love, thy gift, as my spirit's wonder  
 Thou art able to quicken and sublimiate,  
 With this sky of thine, that I now walk under  
 And glory in thee for, as I gaze  
 Thus, thus! Oh, let men keep their ways

Of seeking thee in a narrow shrine —  
 Be this my way! And this is mine!

## VI

For lo, what think you? suddenly  
 The rain and the wind ceased, and the sky  
 Received at once the full fruition  
 Of the moon's consummate apparition.  
 The black cloud-barricade was riven,  
 Ruined beneath her feet, and driven  
 Deep in the West; while, bare and breathless,  
 North and South and East lay ready  
 For a glorious thing that, dauntless, deathless,  
 Sprang across them and stood steady.  
 'T was a moon-rainbow, vast and perfect,  
 From heaven to heaven extending, perfect  
 As the mother-moon's self, full in face.  
 It rose, distinctly at the base  
 With its seven proper colors chorded,  
 Which still, in the rising, were compressed.  
 Until at last they coalesced,  
 And supreme the spectral creature lorded  
 In a triumph of whitest white, —  
 Above which intervened the night.  
 But above night too, like only the next,  
 The second of a wondrous sequence,  
 Reaching in rare and rarer frequency,  
 Till the heaven of heavens were circumflexed,  
 Another rainbow rose, a mightier,  
 Fainter, flushier and flightier, —  
 Rapture dying along its verge.  
 Oh, whose foot shall I see emerge,  
 Whose, from the straining topmost dark,  
 On to the keystone of that arc?

## VII

This sight was shown me, there and then, —  
 Me, one out of a world of men,  
 Singled forth, as the chance might hap  
 To another if, in a thunderclap  
 Where I heard noise and you saw flame,  
 Some one man knew God called his name.  
 For me, I think I said, "Appear!  
 Good were it to be ever here.  
 If thou wilt, let me build to thee  
 Service-tabernacles three,  
 Where, forever in thy presence,  
 In ecstatic acquiescence,  
 Far alike from thriftless learning  
 And ignorance's undiscerning,  
 I may worship and remain!"  
 Thus at the show above me, gazing  
 With upturned eyes, I felt my brain  
 Glutted with the glory, blazing  
 Throughout its whole mass, over and under,  
 Until at length it burst asunder  
 And out of it bodily there streamed,  
 The too-much glory, as it seemed,  
 Passing from out me to the ground,  
 Then palely serpentine round  
 Into the dark with mazy error.

## VIII

All at once I looked up with terror.  
 He was there.  
 He himself with his human air,  
 On the narrow pathway, just before.  
 I saw the back of him, no more —



He had left the chapel, then, as I.  
 I forgot all about the sky.  
 No face : only the sight  
 Of a sweepy garment, vast and white,  
 With a hem that I could recognize.  
 I felt terror, no surprise ;  
 My mind filled with the cataract  
 At one bound of the mighty fact.  
 " I remember, he did say  
 Doubtless that, to this world's end,  
 Where two or three should meet and pray,  
 He would be in the midst, their friend ;  
 Certainly he was there with them ! "  
 And my pulses leaped for joy  
 Of the golden thought without alloy,  
 That I saw his very vesture's hem.  
 Then rushed the blood back, cold and clear,  
 With a fresh enhancing shiver of fear ;  
 And I hastened, cried out while I pressed  
 To the salvation of the vest,  
 " But not so, Lord ! It cannot be  
 That thou, indeed, art leaving me —  
 Me, that have despised thy friends !  
 Did my heart make no amends ?  
 Thou art the love of God — above  
 His power, didst hear me place his love,  
 And that was leaving the world for thee.  
 Therefore thou must not turn from me  
 As I had chosen the other part !  
 Folly and pride o'ercame my heart.  
 Our best is bad, nor bears thy test ;  
 Still, it should be our very best.  
 I thought it best that thou, the spirit,  
 Be worshipped in spirit and in truth,  
 And in beauty, as even we require it —  
 Not in the forms burlesque, uncouth,  
 I left but now, as scarcely fitted  
 For thee : I knew not what I pitied.  
 But, all I felt there, right or wrong,  
 What is it to thee, who curest sinning ?  
 Am I not weak as thou art strong ?  
 I have looked to thee from the beginning,  
 Straight up to thee through all the world  
 Which, like an idle scroll, lay furled  
 To nothingness on either side :  
 And since the time thou wast descried,  
 Spite of the weak heart, so have I  
 Lived ever, and so fain would die,  
 Living and dying, thee before !  
 But if thou leavest me " —

IX

Less or more,

I suppose that I spoke thus.  
 When, — have mercy, Lord, on us !  
 The whole face turned upon me full.  
 And I spread myself beneath it,  
 As when the bleacher spreads, to seethe it  
 In the cleansing sun, his wool, —  
 Steeps in the flood of noontide whiteness  
 Some defiled, discolored web —  
 So lay I, saturate with brightness,  
 And when the flood appeared to ebb,  
 Lo, I was walking, light and swift,  
 With my senses settling fast and steady,  
 But my body caught up in the whirl and drift  
 Of the vesture's amplitude, still eddying  
 On, just before me, still to be followed,

As it carried me after with its motion :  
 What shall I say ? — as a path were hollowed  
 And a man went weltering through the ocean,  
 Sucked along in the flying wake  
 Of the luminous water-snake.  
 Darkness and cold were cloven, as through  
 I passed, upborne yet walking too.  
 And I turned to myself at intervals, —  
 " So he said, so it befalls.  
 God who registers the cup  
 Of mere cold water, for his sake  
 To a disciple rendered up,  
 Disdains not his own thirst to slake  
 At the poorest love was ever offered :  
 And because my heart I proffered,  
 With true love trembling at the brim,  
 He suffers me to follow him  
 Forever, my own way, — dispensed  
 From seeking to be influenced  
 By all the less immediate ways  
 That earth, in worships manifold,  
 Adopts to reach, by prayer and praise,  
 The garment's hem, which, lo, I hold ! "

X

And so we crossed the world and stopped.  
 For where am I, in city or plain,  
 Since I am 'ware of the world again ?  
 And what is this that rises propped  
 With pillars of prodigious girth ?  
 Is it really on the earth,  
 This miraculous Dome of God ?  
 Has the angel's measuring-rod  
 Which numbered cubits, gem from gem,  
 'Twixt the gates of the New Jerusalem,  
 Meted it out, — and what he meted,  
 Have the sons of men completed ?  
 — Binding, ever as he bade,  
 Columns in the colonnade  
 With arms wide open to embrace  
 The entry of the human race  
 To the breast of . . . what is it, yon building,  
 Ablaze in front, all paint and gilding,  
 With marble for brick, and stones of price  
 For garniture of the edifice ?  
 Now I see ; it is no dream ;  
 It stands there and it does not seem :  
 Forever, in pictures, thus it looks,  
 And thus I have read of it in books  
 Often in England, leagues away,  
 And wondered how these fountains play,  
 Growing up eternally  
 Each to a musical water-tree,  
 Whose blossoms drop, a glittering boon,  
 Before my eyes, in the light of the moon,  
 To the granite lavers underneath.  
 Liar and dreamer in your teeth !  
 I, the sinner that speak to you,  
 Was in Rome this night, and stood, and knew  
 Both this and more. For see, for see,  
 The dark is rent, mine eye is free  
 To pierce the crust of the outer wall,  
 And I view inside, and all there, all,  
 As the swarming hollow of a hive,  
 The whole Basilica alive !  
 Men in the chancel, body and nave,  
 Men on the pillars' architrave,  
 Men on the statues, men on the tombs

With popes and kings in their porphyry  
wombs,

All famishing in expectation  
Of the main altar's consummation.  
For see, for see, the rapturous moment  
Approaches, and earth's best endowment  
Blends with heaven's; the taper-fires  
Pant up, the winding brazen spires  
Heave loftier yet the baldachin;  
The incense-gasplings, long kept in,  
Suspire in clouds; the organ blatant  
Holds his breath and grovels latent,  
As if God's hushing finger grazed him,  
(Like Behemoth when he praised him)  
At the silver bell's shrill tinkling,  
Quick cold drops of terror sprinkling  
On the sudden pavement strewed  
With faces of the multitude.  
Earth breaks up, time drops away,  
In flows heaven, with its new day  
Of endless life, when He who trod,  
Very man and very God,  
This earth in weakness, shame and pain,  
Dying the death whose signs remain  
Up yonder on the accursed tree, —  
Shall come again, no more to be  
Of captivity the thrall,  
But the one God, All in all,  
King of kings, Lord of lords,  
As His servant John received the words,  
"I died, and live forevermore!"

## XI

Yet I was left outside the door.  
"Why sit I here on the threshold-stone,  
Left till He return, alone  
Save for the garment's extreme fold  
Abandoned still to bless my hold?"  
My reason, to my doubt, replied,  
As if a book were opened wide,  
And at a certain page I traced  
Every record undefaced,  
Added by successive years, —  
The harvestings of truth's stray ears  
Singly gleaned, and in one sheaf  
Bound together for belief.  
Yes, I said — that he will go  
And sit with these in turn, I know.  
Their faith's heart beats, though her head  
swims  
Too giddily to guide her limbs,  
Disabled by their palsy-stroke  
From propping mine. Though Rome's gross  
yoke  
Drops off, no more to be endured,  
Her teaching is not so obscured  
By errors and perversities,  
That no truth shines athwart the lies:  
And he, whose eye detects a spark  
Even where, to man's, the whole seems dark,  
May well see flame where each beholder  
Acknowledges the embers smoulder.  
But I, a mere man, fear to quit  
The clue God gave me as most fit  
To guide my footsteps through life's maze,  
Because himself discerns all ways  
Open to reach him: I, a man  
Able to mark where faith began

To swerve aside, till from its summit  
Judgment drops her damning plummet,  
Pronouncing such a fatal space  
Departed from the founder's base:  
He will not bid me enter too,  
But rather sit, as now I do,  
Awaiting his return outside.  
— 'T was thus my reason straight replied  
And joyously I turned, and pressed  
The garment's skirt upon my breast,  
Until, afresh its light suffusing me,  
My heart cried — "What has been abusing  
me

That I should wait here lonely and coldly,  
Instead of rising, entering boldly,  
Baring truth's face, and letting drift  
Her veils of lies as they choose to shift?  
Do these men praise him? I will raise  
My voice up to their point of praise!  
I see the error; but above  
The scope of error, see the love. —  
Oh, love of those first Christian days!  
— Fanned so soon into a blaze,  
From the spark preserved by the trampled sect,  
That the antique sovereign Intellect  
Which then sat ruling in the world,  
Like a change in dreams, was hurled  
From the throne he reigned upon:  
You looked up and he was gone.  
Gone, his glory of the pen!  
— Love, with Greece and Rome in ken,  
Bade her scribes abhor the trick  
Of poetry and rhetoric,  
And exult with hearts set free,  
In blessed imbecility  
Scrawled, perchance, on some torn sheet  
Leaving Sallust incomplete.  
Gone, his pride of sculptor, painter!  
— Love, while able to acquaint her  
While the thousand statues yet  
Fresh from chisel, pictures wet  
From brush, she saw on every side,  
Chose rather with an infant's pride  
To frame those portents which impart  
Such unction to true Christian Art.  
Gone, music too! The air was stirred  
By happy wings: Terpander's bird  
(That, when the cold came, fled away)  
Would tarry not the wintry day, —  
As more-enduring sculpture must,  
Till filthy saints rebuked the gust  
With which they chanced to get a sight  
Of some dear naked Aphrodite  
They glanced a thought above the toes of,  
By breaking zealously her nose off.  
Love, surely, from that music's lingering,  
Might have filched her organ-fingering,  
Nor chosen rather to set prayers  
To hog-grunts, praises to horse-neighings.  
Love was the startling thing, the new:  
Love was the all-sufficient too;  
And seeing that, you see the rest:  
As a babe can find its mother's breast  
As well in darkness as in light,  
Love shut our eyes, and all seemed right.  
True, the world's eyes are open now:  
— Less need for me to disallow  
Some few that keep Love's zone unbuckled,

Peevish as ever to be suckled,  
 Lulled by the same old baby-prattle  
 With intermixture of the rattle,  
 When she would have them creep, stand steady  
 Upon their feet, or walk already,  
 Not to speak of trying to climb.  
 I will be wise another time,  
 And not desire a wall between us,  
 When next I see a church-roof cover  
 So many species of one genus,  
 All with foreheads bearing *lover*  
 Written above the earnest eyes of them ;  
 All with breasts that beat for beauty,  
 Whether sublimed, to the surprise of them,  
 In noble daring, steadfast duty,  
 The heroic in passion, or in action, —  
 Or, lowered for sense's satisfaction,  
 To the mere outside of human creatures,  
 Mere perfect form and faultless features.  
 What? with all Rome here, whence to levy  
 Such contributions to their appetite,  
 With women and men in a gorgeous bevy,  
 They take, as it were, a padlock, clap it tight  
 On their southern eyes, restrained from feed-  
 ing  
 On the glories of their ancient reading,  
 On the beauties of their modern singing,  
 On the wonders of the builder's bringing,  
 On the majesties of Art around them, —  
 And, all these loves, late struggling incessant,  
 When faith has at last united and bound them,  
 They offer up to God for a present?  
 Why, I will, on the whole, be rather proud of  
 it, —  
 And, only taking the act in reference  
 To the other recipients who might have allowed  
 it,  
 I will rejoice that God had the preference."

## XII

So I summed up my new resolves:  
 Too much love there can never be.  
 And where the intellect devolves  
 Its function on love exclusively,  
 I, a man who possesses both,  
 Will accept the provision, nothing loth,  
 — Will feast my love, then depart elsewhere,  
 That my intellect may find its share.  
 And ponder, O soul, the while thou departest,  
 And see thou applaud the great heart of the  
 artist,  
 Who, examining the capabilities  
 Of the block of marble he has to fashion  
 Into a type of thought or passion, —  
 Not always, using obvious facilities,  
 Shapes it, as any artist can,  
 Into a perfect symmetrical man,  
 Complete from head to foot of the life-size,  
 Such as old Adam stood in his wife's eyes, —  
 But, now and then, bravely aspires to consum-  
 mate  
 A Colossus by no means so easy to come at,  
 And uses the whole of his block for the bust,  
 Leaving the mind of the public to finish it,  
 Since cut it ruefully short he must:  
 On the face alone he expends his devotion,  
 He rather would war than resolve to diminish  
 it,

— Saying, "Applaud me for this grand notion  
 Of what a face may be! As for completing it  
 In breast and body and limbs, do that, you!"  
 All hail! I fancy how, happily meeting it,  
 A trunk and legs would perfect the statue,  
 Could man carve so as to answer volition,  
 And how much nobler than petty cavils,  
 Were a hope to find, in my spirit-travels,  
 Some artist of another ambition,  
 Who having a block to carve, no bigger,  
 Has spent his power on the opposite quest,  
 And believed to begin at the feet was best —  
 For so may I see, ere I die, the whole figure!

## XIII

No sooner said than out in the night!  
 My heart beat lighter and more light:  
 And still, as before, I was walking swift,  
 With my senses settling fast and steadying,  
 But my body caught up in the whirl and drift  
 Of the vesture's amplitude, still eddying  
 On, just before me, still to be followed,  
 As it carried me after with its motion:  
 What shall I say? — as a path were hollowed,  
 And a man went weltering through the ocean,  
 Sucked along in the flying wake  
 Of the luminous water-snake.

## XIV

Alone! I am left alone once more —  
 (Save for the garment's extreme fold  
 Abandoned still to bless my hold)  
 Alone, beside the entrance-door  
 Of a sort of temple — perhaps a college,  
 — Like nothing I ever saw before  
 At home in England, to my knowledge.  
 The tall old quaint irregular town!  
 It may be . . . though which, I can't affirm  
 . . . any

Of the famous middle-age towns of Germany;  
 And this flight of stairs where I sit down,  
 Is it Halle, Weimar, Cassel, Frankfurt,  
 Or Göttingen, I have to thank for 't?  
 It may be Göttingen, — most likely.  
 Through the open door I catch obliquely  
 Glimpses of a lecture-hall;  
 And not a bad assembly neither.  
 Ranged decent and symmetrical  
 On benches, waiting what 's to see there;  
 Which, holding still by the vesture's hem,  
 I also resolve to see with them,  
 Cautious this time how I suffer to slip  
 The chance of joining in fellowship  
 With any that call themselves his friends;  
 As these folks do, I have a notion.  
 But hush — a buzzing and emotion!  
 All settle themselves, the while ascends  
 By the creaking rail to the lecture-desk,  
 Step by step, deliberate  
 Because of his cranium's over-freight,  
 Three parts sublime to one grotesque,  
 If I have proved an accurate guesser,  
 The hawk-nosed, high-cherkboned Professor.  
 I felt at once as if there ran  
 A shoot of love from my heart to the man —  
 That sallow virgin-minded studious  
 Martyr to mild enthusiasm,  
 As he uttered a kind of cough-preludious



That woke my sympathetic spasm,  
 (Beside some spitting that made me sorry)  
 And stood, surveying his auditory  
 With a wan pure look, wellnigh celestial, —  
 Those blue eyes had survived so much !  
 While, under the foot they could not smutch,  
 Lay all the fleshly and the bestial.  
 Over he bowed, and arranged his notes,  
 Till the auditory's clearing of throats  
 Was done with, died into a silence ;  
 And, when each glance was upward sent,  
 Each bearded mouth composed intent,  
 And a pin might be heard drop half a mile  
 hence. —

He pushed back higher his spectacles,  
 Let the eyes stream out like lamps from cells,  
 And giving his head of hair — a hake  
 Of undressed tow, for color and quantity —  
 One rapid and impatient shake,  
 (As our own young England adjusts a jaunty tie  
 When about to impart, on mature digestion,  
 Some thrilling view of the surplice-question)  
 — The Professor's grave voice, sweet though  
 hoarse,  
 Broke into his Christmas-Eve discourse.

## XV

And he began it by observing  
 How reason dictated that men  
 Should rectify the natural swerving,  
 By a reversion, now and then,  
 To the well-heads of knowledge, few  
 And far away, whence rolling grew  
 The life-stream wide whereat we drink,  
 Commingled, as we needs must think,  
 With waters alien to the source ;  
 To do which, aimed this eve's discourse ;  
 Since, where could be a fitter time  
 For tracing backward to its prime,  
 This Christianity, this lake,  
 This reservoir, whereat we slake,  
 From one or other bank, our thirst ?  
 So, he proposed inquiring first  
 Into the various sources whence  
 This Myth of Christ is derivable ;  
 Demanding from the evidence,  
 (Since plainly no such life was livable)  
 How these phenomena should class ?  
 Whether 't were best opine Christ was,  
 Or never was at all, or whether  
 He was and was not, both together —  
 It matters little for the name,  
 So the idea be left the same.  
 Only, for practical purpose' sake,  
 'T was obviously as well to take  
 The popular story, — understanding  
 How the ineptitude of the time,  
 And the penman's prejudice, expanding  
 Fact into fable fit for the clime,  
 Had, by slow and sure degrees, translated it  
 Into this myth, this Individuum, —  
 Which when reason had strained and abated it  
 Of foreign matter, left, for residuum,  
 A Man ! — a right true man, however,  
 Whose work was worthy a man's endeavor :  
 Work, that gave warrant almost sufficient  
 To his disciples, for rather believing  
 He was just omnipotent and omniscient,

As it gives to us, for as frankly receiving  
 His word, their tradition, — which, though it  
 meant

Something entirely different  
 From all that those who only heard it,  
 In their simplicity thought and averred it,  
 Had yet a meaning quite as respectable :  
 For, among other doctrines delectable,  
 Was he not surely the first to insist on  
 The natural sovereignty of our race ? —  
 Here the lecturer came to a pausing-place.  
 And while his cough, like a droughty piston,  
 Tried to dislodge the husk that grew to him,  
 I seized the occasion of bidding adieu to him,  
 The vesture still within my hand.

## XVI

I could interpret its command.  
 This time he would not bid me enter  
 The exhausted air-bell of the Critic.  
 Truth's atmosphere may grow mephitic  
 When Papist struggles with Dissenter,  
 Impregnating its pristine clarity,  
 — One, by his daily fare's vulgarity,  
 Its gust of broken meat and garlic ;  
 — One, by his soul's too-much presuming  
 To turn the frankincense's fuming  
 And vapors of the candle starlike  
 Into the cloud her wings she buoys on.  
 Each, that thus sets the pure air seething,  
 May poison it for healthy breathing —  
 But the Critic leaves no air to poison ;  
 Pumps out with ruthless ingenuity  
 Atom by atom, and leaves you — *vacuity*.  
 Thus much of Christ does he reject ?  
 And what retain ? His intellect ?  
 What is it I must reverence duly ?  
 Poor intellect for worship, truly,  
 Which tells me simply what was told  
 (If mere morality, bereft  
 Of the God in Christ, be all that's left)  
 Elsewhere by voices manifold ;  
 With this advantage, that the stater  
 Made nowise the important stumble  
 Of adding, he, the sage and humble,  
 Was also one with the Creator.  
 You urge Christ's followers' simplicity :  
 But how does shifting blame evade it ?  
 Have wisdom's words no more felicity ?  
 The stumbling-block, his speech — who laid it ?  
 How comes it that for one found able  
 To sift the truth of it from fable,  
 Millions believe it to the letter ?  
 Christ's goodness, then — does that fare better ?  
 Strange goodness, which upon the score  
 Of being goodness, the mere due  
 Of man to fellow-man, much more  
 To God — should take another view  
 Of its possessor's privilege.  
 And bid him rule his race ! You pledge  
 Your fealty to such rule ? What, all —  
 From heavenly John and Attic Paul,  
 And that brave weather-battered Peter,  
 Whose stout faith only stood completer  
 For buffets, sinning to be pardoned,  
 As, more his hands hauled nets, they hard-  
 ened, —  
 All, down to you, the man of men,

Professing here at Göttingen,  
 Compose Christ's flock ! They, you and I,  
 Are sheep of a good man ! And why ?  
 The goodness, — how did he acquire it ?  
 Was it self-gained, did God inspire it ?  
 Choose which ; then tell me, on what ground  
 Should its possessor dare propound  
 His claim to rise o'er us an inch ?  
 Were goodness all some man's invention,  
 Who arbitrarily made mention  
 What we should follow, and whence flinch, —  
 What qualities might take the style  
 Of right and wrong, — and had such guessing  
 Met with as general acquiescing  
 As graced the alphabet erewhile,  
 When A got leave an Ox to be,  
 No Camel (quoth the Jews) like G, —  
 For thus inventing thing and title  
 Worship were that man's fit requital.  
 But if the common conscience must  
 Be ultimately judge, adjust  
 Its apt name to each quality  
 Already known, — I would decree  
 Worship for such mere demonstration  
 And simple work of nomenclature,  
 Only the day I praised, not nature,  
 But Harvey, for the circulation.  
 I would praise such a Christ, with pride  
 And joy, that he, as none beside,  
 Had taught us how to keep the mind  
 God gave him, as God gave his kind,  
 Freer than they from fleshly taint :  
 I would call such a Christ our Saint,  
 As I declare our Poet, him  
 Whose insight makes all others dim :  
 A thousand poets pried at life,  
 And only one amid the strife  
 Rose to be Shakespeare : each shall take  
 His crown, I'd say, for the world's sake —  
 Though some objected — " Had we seen  
 The heart and head of each, what screen  
 Was broken there to give them light,  
 While in ourselves it shuts the sight,  
 We should no more admire, perchance,  
 That these found truth out at a glance,  
 Than marvel how the bat discerns  
 Some pitch-dark cavern's fifty turns,  
 Led by a finer tact, a gift  
 He boasts, which other birds must shift  
 Without, and grope as best they can." —  
 No, freely I would praise the man, —  
 Nor one whit more, if he contended  
 That gift of his from God descended.  
 Ah friend, what gift of man's does not ?  
 No nearer something, by a jot,  
 Rise an infinity of nothings  
 Than one : take Euclid for your teacher :  
 Distinguish kinds : do crownings, clothings,  
 Make that creator which was creature ?  
 Multiply gifts upon man's head,  
 And what, when all's done, shall be said  
 But — the more gifted he, I ween !  
 That one's made Christ, this other, Pilate,  
 And this might be all that has been, —  
 So what is there to frown or smile at ?  
 What is left for us, save, in growth  
 Of soul, to rise up, far past both,  
 From the gift looking to the giver,

And from the cistern to the river,  
 And from the finite to infinity,  
 And from man's dust to God's divinity ?

## XVII

Take all in a word : the truth in God's breast  
 Lies trace for trace upon ours impressed :  
 Though he is so bright and we so dim,  
 We are made in his image to witness him :  
 And were no eye in us to tell,  
 Instructed by no inner sense,  
 The light of heaven from the dark of hell,  
 That light would want its evidence, —  
 Though justice, good and truth were still  
 Divine, if, by some demon's will,  
 Hatred and wrong had been proclaimed  
 Law through the worlds, and right misnamed.  
 No mere exposition of morality  
 Made or in part or in totality,  
 Should win you to give it worship, therefore :  
 And, if no better proof you will care for,  
 — Whom do you count the worst man upon  
 earth ?  
 Be sure, he knows, in his conscience, more  
 Of what right is, than arrives at birth  
 In the best man's acts that we bow before :  
 This last knows better — true, but my fact is,  
 'Tis one thing to know, and another to practice.  
 And thence I conclude that the real God-func-  
 tion

Is to furnish a motive and injunction  
 For practising what we know already.  
 And such an injunction and such a motive  
 As the God in Christ, do you waive, and

"heady,  
 High-minded," hang your tablet-votive  
 Outside the fane on a finger-post ?  
 Morality to the uttermost,  
 Supreme in Christ as we all confess,  
 Why need we prove would avail no jot  
 To make him God, if God he were not ?  
 What is the point where himself lays stress ?  
 Does the precept run " Believe in good,  
 In justice, truth, now understood  
 For the first time " ? — or, " Believe in me,  
 Who lived and died, yet essentially  
 Am Lord of Life " ? Whoever can take  
 The same to his heart and for mere love's sake  
 Conceive of the love, — that man obtains  
 A new truth ; no conviction gains  
 Of an old one only, made intense  
 By a fresh appeal to his faded sense.

## XVIII

Can it be that he stays inside ?  
 Is the vesture left me to commune with ?  
 Could my soul find aught to sing in tune with  
 Even at this lecture, if she tried ?  
 Oh, let me at lowest sympathize  
 With the lurking drop of blood that lies  
 In the desiccated brain's white roots  
 Without throb for Christ's attributes,  
 As the lecturer makes his special boast !  
 If love's dead there, it has left a ghost.  
 Admire we, how from heart to brain  
 (Though to say so strike the doctors dumb)  
 One instinct rises and falls again,  
 Restoring the equilibrium.

And how when the Critic had done his best,  
 And the pearl of price, at reason's test,  
 Lay dust and ashes levigable  
 On the Professor's lecture-table, —  
 When we looked for the inference and monition  
 That our faith, reduced to such condition,  
 Be swept forthwith to its natural dust-hole, —  
 He bids us, when we least expect it,  
 Take back our faith, — if it be not just whole,  
 Yet a pearl indeed, as his tests affect it,  
 Which fact pays damage done rewardingly,  
 So, prize we our dust and ashes accordingly !  
 "Go home and venerate the myth  
 I thus have experimented with —  
 This man, continue to adore him  
 Rather than all who went before him,  
 And all who ever followed after !" —  
 Surely for this I may praise you, my brother !  
 Will you take the praise in tears or laughter ?  
 That 's one point gained : can I compass another ?  
 Unlearned love was safe from spurning —  
 Can't we respect your loveless learning ?  
 Let us at least give learning honor !  
 What laurels had we showered upon her,  
 Girding her loins up to perturb  
 Our theory of the Middle Verb ;  
 Or Turk-like brandishing a scimitar  
 O'er anapaests in comic-trimeter ;  
 Or curing the halt and maimed " Iketides,"  
 While we lounged on at our indebted ease :  
 Instead of which, a tricky demon  
 Sets her at Titus or Philemon !  
 When ignorance wags his ears of leather  
 And hates God's word, 't is altogether ;  
 Nor leaves he his congenial thistles  
 To go and browse on Paul's Epistles.  
 — And you, the audience, who might ravage  
 The world wide, enviably savage,  
 Nor heed the cry of the retriever,  
 More than Herr Heine (before his fever), —  
 I do not tell a lie so arrant  
 As say my passion's wings are furled up,  
 And, without plainest heavenly warrant,  
 I were ready and glad to give the world up —  
 But still, when you rub brow meticulous,  
 And ponder the profit of turning holy  
 If not for God's, for your own sake solely,  
 — God forbid I should find you ridiculous !  
 Deduce from this lecture all that eases you,  
 Nay, call yourselves, if the calling pleases you,  
 "Christians," — abhor the deist's pravity, —  
 Go on, you shall no more move my gravity  
 Than, when I see boys ride a-cockhorse,  
 I find it in my heart to embarrass them  
 By hinting that their stick 's a mock horse,  
 And they really carry what they say carries  
 them.

## XIX

So sat I talking with my mind.  
 I did not long to leave the door  
 And find a new church, as before,  
 But rather was quiet and inclined  
 To prolong and enjoy the gentle resting  
 From further tracking and trying and testing.  
 "This tolerance is a genial mood !"  
 (Said I, and a little pause ensued.)  
 "One trims the bark 'twixt shoal and shelf,

And sees, each side, the good effects of it,  
 A value for religion's self,  
 A carelessness about the sects of it.  
 Let me enjoy my own conviction,  
 Not watch my neighbor's faith with fretfulness,  
 Still spying there some dereliction  
 Of truth, perversity, forgetfulness !  
 Better a mild indifferentism,  
 Teaching that both our faiths (though duller  
 His shine through a dull spirit's prism)  
 Originally had one color !  
 Better pursue a pilgrimage  
 Through ancient and through modern times  
 To many peoples, various climes,  
 Where I may see saint, savage, sage  
 Fuse their respective creeds in one  
 Before the general Father's throne !"

## XX

— 'T was the horrible storm began afresh !  
 The black night caught me in his mesh,  
 Whirled me up, and flung me prone.  
 I was left on the college-step alone.  
 I looked, and far there, ever fleeting  
 Far, far away, the receding gesture,  
 And looming of the lessening vesture ! —  
 Swept forward from my stupid hand,  
 While I watched my foolish heart expand  
 In the lazy glow of benevolence,  
 O'er the various modes of man's belief.  
 I sprang up with fear's vehemence.  
 Needs must there be one way, our chief  
 Best way of worship : let me strive  
 To find it, and when found, contrive  
 My fellows also take their share !  
 This constitutes my earthly care :  
 God's is above it and distinct,  
 For I, a man, with men am linked  
 And not a brute with brutes ; no gain  
 That I experience, must remain  
 Unshared : but should my best endeavor  
 To share it, fail — subsisteth ever  
 God's care above, and I exult  
 That God, by God's own ways occult,  
 May — doth, I will believe — bring back  
 All wanderers to a single track.  
 Meantime, I can but testify  
 God's care for me — no more, can I —  
 It is but for myself I know ;  
 The world rolls witnessing around me  
 Only to leave me as it found me ;  
 Men cry there, but my ear is slow :  
 Their races flourish or decay  
 — What boots it ; while yon lucid way  
 Loaded with stars divides the vault ?  
 But soon my soul repairs its fault  
 When, sharpening sense's hebetude,  
 She turns on my own life ! So viewed,  
 No mere mote's-breadth but teems immense  
 With witnessings of providence :  
 And woe to me if when I look  
 Upon that record, the sole book  
 Unsealed to me, I take no heed  
 Of any warning that I read !  
 Have I been sure, this Christmas-Eve,  
 God's own hand did the rainbow weave,  
 Whereby the truth from heaven slid  
 Into my soul ? — I cannot bid



The world admit he stooped to heal  
 My soul, as if in a thunder-peal  
 Where one heard noise, and one saw flame,  
 I only knew he named my name :  
 But what is the world to me, for sorrow  
 Or joy in its censure, when to-morrow  
 It drops the remark, with just-turned head,  
 Then, on again, "That man is dead" ?  
 Yes, but for me — my name called, — drawn  
 As a conscript's lot from the lap's black yawn,  
 He has dipt into on a battle-dawn :  
 Bid out of life by a nod, a glance, —  
 Stumbling, mute-mazed, at nature's chance, —  
 With a rapid finger circled round,  
 Fixed to the first poor inch of ground  
 To fight from, where his foot was found ;  
 Whose ear but a minute since lay free  
 To the wide camp's buzz and gossipry —  
 Summoned, a solitary man,  
 To end his life where his life began,  
 From the safe glad rear, to the dreadful van !  
 Soul of mine, hadst thou caught and held  
 By the hem of the vesture ! —

## XXI

And I caught  
 At the flying robe, and unrepelled  
 Was lapped again in its folds full-fraight  
 With warmth and wonder and delight,  
 God's mercy being infinite.  
 For scarce had the words escaped my tongue,  
 When, at a passionate bound, I sprung  
 Out of the wondering world of rain,  
 Into the little chapel again.

## XXII

How else was I found there, bolt upright  
 On my bench, as if I had never left it ?  
 — Never flung out on the common at night,  
 Nor met the storm and wedge-like cleft it,  
 Seen the raree-show of Peter's successor,  
 Or the laboratory of the Professor !  
 For the Vision, that was true, I wist,  
 True as that heaven and earth exist.  
 There sat my friend, the yellow and tall,  
 With his neck and its wen in the selfsame place ;  
 Yet my nearest neighbor's cheek showed gall.  
 She had slid away a contemptuous space :  
 And the old fat woman, late so placable,  
 Eyed me with symptoms, hardly mistakable,  
 Of her milk of kindness turning rancid.  
 In short, a spectator might have fancied  
 That I had nodded, betrayed by slumber,  
 Yet kept my seat, a warning ghastly,  
 Through the heads of the sermon, nine in number,  
 And woke up now at the tenth and lastly.  
 But again, could such disgrace have happened ?  
 Each friend at my elbow had surely nudged it ;  
 And, as for the sermon, where did my nap end ?  
 Unless I heard it, could I have judged it ?  
 Could I report as I do at the close,  
 First, the preacher speaks through his nose :  
 Second, his gesture is too emphatic :  
 Thirdly, to waive what 's pedagogic,  
 The subject-matter itself lacks logic :  
 Fourthly, the English is ungrammatic.  
 Great news ! the preacher is found no Pascal,

Whom, if I pleased, I might to the task call  
 Of making square to a finite eye  
 The circle of infinity,  
 And find so all-but-just-succeeding !  
 Great news ! the sermon proves no reading  
 Where bee-like in the flowers I bury me,  
 Like Taylor's, the immortal Jeremy !  
 And now that I know the very worst of him,  
 What was it I thought to obtain at first of him ?  
 Ha ! Is God mocked, as he asks ?  
 Shall I take on me to change his tasks,  
 And dare, dispatched to a river-head  
 For a simple draught of the element,  
 Neglect the thing for which he sent,  
 And return with another thing instead ? —  
 Saying, "Because the water found  
 Welling up from underground,  
 Is mingled with the taints of earth,  
 While thou, I know, dost laugh at dearth,  
 And couldst, at wink or word, convulse  
 The world with the leap of a river-pulse, —  
 Therefore I turned from the oozeings muddy,  
 And bring thee a chalice I found, instead :  
 See the brave veins in the breccia ruddy !  
 One would suppose that the marble bled,  
 What matters the water ? A hope I have  
 nursed :

The waterless cup will quench my thirst."  
 — Better have knelt at the poorest stream  
 That trickles in pain from the straitest rift !  
 For the less or the more is all God's gift,  
 Who blocks up or breaks wide the granite-seam.  
 And here, is there water or not, to drink ?  
 I then, in ignorance and weakness,  
 Taking God's help, have attained to think  
 My heart does best to receive in meekness  
 That mode of worship, as most to his mind,  
 Where earthly aids being cast behind,  
 His All in All appears serene  
 With the thinnest human veil between,  
 Letting the mystic lamps, the seven,  
 The many motions of his spirit,  
 Pass, as they list, to earth from heaven.  
 For the preacher's merit or demerit,  
 It were to be wished the flaws were fewer  
 In the earthen vessel, holding treasure  
 Which lies as safe in a golden ewer ;  
 But the main thing is, does it hold good measure ?

Heaven soon sets right all other matters ! —  
 Ask, else, these ruins of humanity,  
 This flesh worn out to rags and tatters,  
 This soul at struggle with insanity,  
 Who thence take comfort — can I doubt ? —  
 Which an empire gained, were a loss without.  
 May it be mine ! And let us hope  
 That no worse blessing befall the Pope,  
 Turned sick at last of to-day's buffoonery,  
 Of posturings and petticoatings,  
 Beside his Bourbon bully's gloatings  
 In the bloody orgies of drunk poltroonery !  
 Nor may the Professor forego its peace  
 At Göttingen presently, when, in the dusk  
 Of his life, if his cough, as I fear, should increase,  
 Prophesied of by that horrible husk —  
 When thicker and thicker the darkness fills  
 The world through his misty spectacles,

And he gropes for something more substantial  
Than a fable, myth or personification, —  
May Christ do for him what no mere man shall,  
And stand confessed as the God of salvation!  
Meantime, in the still recurring fear  
Lest myself, at unawares, be found,  
While attacking the choice of my neighbors  
round,

With none of my own made — I choose here!  
The giving out of the hymn reclaims me;  
I have done: and if any blames me,  
Thinking that merely to touch in brevity  
The topics I dwell on, were unlawful, —  
Or worse, that I trench, with undue levity,  
On the bounds of the holy and the awful, —  
I praise the heart, and pity the head of him,  
And refer myself to *THEE*, instead of him,  
Who head and heart alike discernest,  
Looking below light speech we utter,  
When frothy spume and frequent sputter  
Prove that the soul's depths boil in earnest!  
May truth shine out, stand ever before us!  
I put up pencil and join chorus  
To *Hepzibah Tune*, without further apology,  
The last five verses of the third section  
Of the seventeenth hymn of *Whitefield's Col-*  
*lection*,  
To conclude with the doxology.

## EASTER-DAY

## I

How very hard it is to be  
A Christian! Hard for you and me,  
— Not the mere task of making real  
That duty up to its ideal,  
Effecting thus, complete and whole,  
A purpose of the human soul —  
For that is always hard to do;  
But hard, I mean, for me and you  
To realize it, more or less,  
With even the moderate success  
Which commonly repays our strife  
To carry out the aims of life.  
“This aim is greater,” you will say,  
“And so more arduous every way.”  
— But the importance of their fruits  
Still proves to man, in all pursuits,  
Proportional encouragement.  
“Then, what if it be God's intent  
That labor to this one result  
Should seem unduly difficult?”  
Ah, that's a question in the dark —  
And the sole thing that I remark  
Upon the difficulty, this:  
We do not see it where it is,  
At the beginning of the race:  
As we proceed, it shifts its place,  
And where we looked for crowns to fall,  
We find the tug's to come, — that's all.

## II

At first you say, “The whole, or chief  
Of difficulties, is belief.  
Could I believe once thoroughly,  
The rest were simple. What? Am I  
An idiot, do you think, — a beast?

Prove to me, only that the least  
Command of God is God's indeed,  
And what injunction shall I need  
To pay obedience? Death so nigh,  
When time must end, eternity  
Begin, — and cannot I compute,  
Weigh loss and gain together, suit  
My actions to the balance drawn,  
And give my body to be sawn  
Asunder, hacked in pieces, tied  
To horses, stoned, burned, crucified,  
Like any martyr of the list?  
How gladly! — if I make acquit,  
Through the brief minute's fierce annoy,  
Of God's eternity of joy.”

## III

— And certainly you name the point  
Whereon all turns: for could you joint  
This flexile finite life once tight  
Into the fixed and infinite,  
You, safe inside, would spurn what's out,  
With carelessness enough, no doubt —  
Would spurn mere life: but when time brings  
To their next stage your reasonings,  
Your eyes, late wide, begin to wink  
Nor see the path so well, I think.

## IV

You say, “Faith may be, one agrees,  
A touchstone for God's purposes,  
Even as ourselves conceive of them.  
Could he acquit us or condemn  
For holding what no hand can loose,  
Rejecting when we can't but choose?  
As well award the victor's wreath  
To whosoever should take breath  
Duly each minute while he lived —  
Grant heaven, because a man contrived  
To see its sunlight every day.  
He walked forth on the public way.  
You must mix some uncertainty  
With faith, if you would have faith be.  
Why, what but faith, do we abhor  
And idolize each other for —  
Faith in our evil or our good,  
Which is or is not understood  
Aright by those we love or those  
We hate, thence called our friends or foes?  
Your mistress saw your spirit's grace,  
When, turning from the ugly face,  
I found belief in it too hard;  
And she and I have our reward,  
— Yet here a doubt peeps: well for us  
Weak beings, to go using thus  
A touchstone for our little ends,  
Trying with faith the foes and friends;  
— But God, bethink you! I would fain  
Conceive of the Creator's reign  
As based upon exacter laws  
Than creatures build by with applause.  
In all God's acts — (as Plato cries  
He doth) — he should geometrize.  
Whence, I desiderate” . . .

## V

I see!  
You would grow as a natural tree,

Stand as a rock, soar up like fire.  
 The world 's so perfect and entire,  
 Quite above faith, so right and fit !  
 Go there, walk up and down in it !  
 No. The creation travails, groans —  
 Contrive your music from its moans,  
 Without or let or hindrance, friend !  
 That 's an old story, and its end  
 As old — you come back (be sincere)  
 With every question you put here  
 (Here where there once was, and is still,  
 We think, a living oracle,  
 Whose answers you stand carping at)  
 This time flung back unanswered flat, —  
 Beside, perhaps, as many more  
 As those that drove you out before,  
 Now added, where was little need.  
 Questions impossible, indeed,  
 To us who sat still, all and each  
 Persuaded that our earth had speech,  
 Of God's, writ down, no matter if  
 In cursive type or hieroglyph, —  
 Which one fact freed us from the yoke  
 Of guessing why He never spoke.  
 You come back in no better plight  
 Than when you left us, — am I right ?

## VI

So, the old process, I conclude,  
 Goes on, the reasoning 's pursued  
 Further. You own, " 'Tis well averred,  
 A scientific faith 's absurd,  
 — Frustrates the very end 't was meant  
 To serve. So, I would rest content  
 With a mere probability,  
 But, probable ; the chance must lie  
 Clear on one side, — lie all in rough,  
 So long as there be just enough  
 To pin my faith to, though it hap  
 Only at points : from gap to gap  
 One hangs up a huge curtain so,  
 Grandly, nor seeks to have it go  
 Foldless and flat along the wall.  
 What care I if some interval  
 Of life less plainly may depend  
 On God ? I 'd hang there to the end ;  
 And thus I should not find it hard  
 To be a Christian and debarred  
 From trailing on the earth, till furled  
 Away by death. — Renounce the world !  
 Were that a mighty hardship ? Plan  
 A pleasant life, and straight some man  
 Beside you, with, if he thought fit,  
 Abundant means to compass it,  
 Shall turn deliberate aside  
 To try and live as, if you tried  
 You clearly might, yet most despise.  
 One friend of mine wears out his eyes,  
 Slighting the stupid joys of sense,  
 In patient hope that, ten years hence,  
 ' Somewhat completer,' he may say,  
 ' My list of *coleoptera* !'  
 While just the other who most laughs  
 At him, above all epitaphs  
 Aspires to have his tomb describe  
 Himself as sole among the tribe  
 Of snuffbox-fanciers, who possessed  
 A Grignon with the Regent's crest.

So that, subduing, as you want,  
 Whatever stands predominant  
 Among my earthly appetites  
 For tastes and smells and sounds and sights,  
 I shall be doing that alone.  
 To gain a palm-branch and a throne,  
 Which fifty people undertake  
 To do, and gladly, for the sake  
 Of giving a Semitic guess,  
 Or playing pawns at blindfold chess."

## VII

Good : and the next thing is, — look round  
 For evidence enough ! 'Tis found,  
 No doubt : as is your sort of mind,  
 So is your sort of search : you 'll find  
 What you desire, and that 's to be  
 A Christian. What says history ?  
 How comforting a point it were  
 To find some mummy-scrap declare  
 There lived a Moses ! Better still,  
 Prove Jonah's whale translatable  
 Into some quicksand of the seas,  
 Isle, cavern, rock, or what you please,  
 That faith might flap her wings and crow  
 From such an eminence ! Or, no —  
 The human heart 's best ; you prefer  
 Making that prove the minister  
 To truth ; you probe its wants and needs.  
 And hopes and fears, then try what creeds  
 Meet these most aptly, — resolute  
 That faith plucks such substantial fruit  
 Wherever these two correspond,  
 She little needs to look beyond  
 And puzzle out who Orpheus was,  
 Or Dionysius Zagrias.  
 You 'll find sufficient, as I say,  
 To satisfy you either way ;  
 You wanted to believe ; your pains  
 Are crowned — you do : and what remains ?  
 " Renounce the world ! " — Ah, were it done  
 By merely cutting one by one  
 Your limbs off, with your wise head last,  
 How easy were it ! — how soon past,  
 If once in the believing mood !  
 " Such is man's usual gratitude,  
 Such thanks to God do we return,  
 For not exacting that we spurn  
 A single gift of life, forego  
 One real gain, — only taste them so  
 With gravity and temperance,  
 That those mild virtues may enhance  
 Such pleasures, rather than abstract —  
 Last spice of which, will be the fact  
 Of love discerned in every gift ;  
 While, when the scene of life shall shift,  
 And the gay heart be taught to ache,  
 As sorrows and privations take  
 The place of joy, — the thing that seems  
 Mere misery, under human schemes,  
 Becomes, regarded by the light  
 Of love, as very near or quite  
 As good a gift as joy before.  
 So plain is it that, all the more  
 A dispensation 's merciful,  
 More pettishly we try and eull  
 Briers, thistles, from our private plot,  
 To mar God's ground where thorns are not ! "



## VIII

Do you say this, or I? — Oh, you!  
 Then, what, my friend? — (thus I pursue  
 Our parley) — you indeed opine  
 That the Eternal and Divine  
 Did, eighteen centuries ago,  
 In very truth . . . Enough! you know  
 The all-stupendous tale, — that Birth,  
 That Life, that Death! And all, the earth  
 Shuddered at, — all, the heavens grew black  
 Rather than see; all, nature's rack  
 And throe at dissolution's brink  
 Attested, — all took place, you think,  
 Only to give our joys a zest,  
 And prove our sorrows for the best?  
 We differ, then! Were I, still pale  
 And heartstruck at the dreadful tale,  
 Waiting to hear God's voice declare  
 What horror followed for my share,  
 As implicated in the deed,  
 Apart from other sins, — concede  
 That if He blacked out in a blot  
 My brief life's pleasantness, 't were not  
 So very disproportionate!  
 Or there might be another fate —  
 I certainly could understand  
 (If fancies were the thing in hand)  
 How God might save, at that day's price,  
 The impure in their impurities,  
 Give license formal and complete  
 To choose the fair and pick the sweet.  
 But there be certain words, broad, plain,  
 Uttered again and yet again,  
 Hard to mistake or overgloss —  
 Announcing this world's gain for loss,  
 And bidding us reject the same:  
 The whole world lieth (they proclaim)  
 In wickedness, — come out of it!  
 Turn a deaf ear, if you think fit,  
 But I who thrill through every nerve  
 At thought of what deaf ears deserve —  
 How do you counsel in the case?

## IX

"I'd take, by all means, in your place,  
 The safe side, since it so appears:  
 Deny myself, a few brief years,  
 The natural pleasure, leave the fruit  
 Or cut the plant up by the root.  
 Remember what a martyr said  
 On the rude tablet overhead!  
 'I was born sickly, poor and mean,  
 A slave: no misery could screen  
 The holders of the pearl of price  
 From Caesar's envy; therefore twice  
 I fought with beasts, and three times saw  
 My children suffer by his law;  
 At last my own release was earned:  
 I was some time in being burned,  
 But at the close a Hand came through  
 The fire above my head, and drew  
 My soul to Christ, whom now I see.  
 Sergius, a brother, writes for me  
 This testimony on the wall —  
 For me, I have forgot it all.'  
 You say right; this were not so hard!  
 And since one nowise is debarred

From this, why not escape some sins  
 By such a method?"

## X

Then begins  
 To the old point revulsion new —  
 (For 't is just this I bring you to) —  
 If after all we should mistake,  
 And so renounce life for the sake  
 Of death and nothing else? You hear  
 Each friend we jeered at, send the jeer  
 Back to ourselves with good effect —  
 "There were my beetles to collect!  
 My box — a trifle, I confess,  
 But here I hold it, ne'ertheless!"  
 Poor idiots, (let us pluck up heart  
 And answer) we, the better part  
 Have chosen, though 't were only hope, —  
 Nor envy moles like you that grope  
 Amid your veritable muck,  
 More than the grasshoppers would truck,  
 For yours, their passionate life away,  
 That spends itself in leaps all day  
 To reach the sun, you want the eyes  
 To see, as they the wings to rise  
 And match the noble hearts of them!  
 Thus the contemner we contemn, —  
 And, when doubt strikes us, thus we ward  
 Its stroke off, caught upon our guard,  
 — Not struck enough to overturn  
 Our faith, but shake it — make us learn  
 What I began with, and, I wis,  
 End, having proved, — how hard it is  
 To be a Christian!

## XI

"Proved, or not,  
 Howe'er you wis, small thanks, I wot,  
 You get of mine, for taking pains  
 To make it hard to me. Who gains  
 By that, I wonder? Here I live  
 In trusting ease; and here you drive  
 At causing me to lose what most  
 Yourself would mourn for had you lost!"

## XII

But, do you see, my friend, that thus  
 You leave Saint Paul for Æschylus?  
 — Who made his Titan's arch-device  
 The giving men *blind hopes* to spice  
 The meal of life with, else devoured  
 In bitter haste, while lo, death loured  
 Before them at the platter's edge!  
 If faith should be, as I allege,  
 Quite other than a condiment  
 To heighten flavors with, or meant  
 (Like that brave curry of his Grace)  
 To take at need the victuals' place?  
 If, having dined, you would digest  
 Besides, and turning to your rest  
 Should find instead . . .

## XIII

Now, you shall see  
 And judge if a mere foppery  
 Pricks on my speaking! I resolve  
 To utter — yes, it shall devolve  
 On you to hear as solemn, strange  
 And dread a thing as in the range

Of facts, — or fancies, if God will —  
 E'er happened to our kind ! I still  
 Stand in the cloud and, while it wraps  
 My face, ought not to speak perhaps ;  
 Seeing that if I carry through  
 My purpose, if my words in you  
 Find a live actual listener,  
 My story, reason must aver  
 False after all — the happy chance !  
 While, if each human countenance  
 I meet in London day by day,  
 Be what I fear, — my warnings fray  
 No one, and no one they convert,  
 And no one helps me to assert  
 How hard it is to really be  
 A Christian, and in vacancy  
 I pour this story !

## XIV

## I commence

By trying to inform you, whence  
 It comes that every Easter-night  
 As now, I sit up, watch, till light,  
 Upon those chimney-stacks and roofs,  
 Give, through my window-pane, gray proofs  
 That Easter-Day is breaking slow.  
 On such a night, three years ago,  
 It chanced that I had cause to cross  
 The common, where the chapel was,  
 Our friend spoke of, the other day —  
 You've not forgotten, I dare say.  
 I fell to musing of the time  
 So close, the blessed matin-prime  
 All hearts leap up at, in some guise —  
 One could not well do otherwise.  
 Insensibly my thoughts were bent  
 Toward the main point ; I overwent  
 Much the same ground of reasoning  
 As you and I just now. One thing  
 Remained, however — one that tasked  
 My soul to answer ; and I asked,  
 Fairly and frankly, what might be  
 That History, that Faith, to me  
 — Me there — not me in some domain  
 Built up and peopled by my brain,  
 Weighing its merits as one weighs  
 Mere theories for blame or praise,  
 — The kingcraft of the Lucumons,  
 Or Fourier's scheme, its pros and cons, —  
 But my faith there, or none at all.  
 "How were my case, now, did I fall  
 Dead here, this minute — should I lie  
 Faithful or faithless ?" Note that I  
 Inclined thus ever ! — little prone  
 For instance, when I lay alone  
 In childhood, to go calm to sleep  
 And leave a closet where might keep  
 His watch perdue some murderer  
 Waiting till twelve o'clock to stir,  
 As good authentic legends tell :  
 "He might : but how improbable !  
 How little likely to deserve  
 The pains and trial to the nerve  
 Of thrusting head into the dark !" —  
 Urged my old nurse, and bade me mark  
 Beside, that, should the dreadful scout  
 Really lie hid there, and leap out  
 At first turn of the rusty key,

Mine were small gain that she could see,  
 Killed not in bed but on the floor,  
 And losing one night's sleep the more.  
 I tell you, I would always burst  
 The door ope, know my fate at first.  
 This time, indeed, the closet penned  
 No such assassin : but a friend  
 Rather, peeped out to guard me, fit  
 For counsel, Common Sense, to wit,  
 Who said a good deal that might pass, —  
 Heartening, impartial too, it was,  
 Judge else : "For, soberly now, — who  
 Should be a Christian if not you ?"  
 (Hear how he smoothed me down.) "One takes  
 A whole life, sees what course it makes  
 Mainly, and not by fits and starts —  
 In spite of stoppage which imparts  
 Fresh value to the general speed.  
 A life, with none, would fly indeed :  
 Your progressing is slower — right !  
 We deal with progress and not flight.  
 Through baffling senses passionate,  
 Fancies as restless, — with a freight  
 Of knowledge cumbersome enough  
 To sink your ship when waves grow rough,  
 Though meant for ballast in the hold, —  
 I find, 'mid dangers manifold,  
 The good bark answers to the helm  
 Where faith sits, easier to o'erwhelm  
 Than some stout peasant's heavenly guide,  
 Whose hard head could not, if it tried,  
 Conceive a doubt, nor understand  
 How senses hornier than his hand  
 Should 'tice the Christian off his guard.  
 More happy ! But shall we award  
 Less honor to the hull which, dogged  
 By storms, a mere wreck, waterlogged,  
 Masts by the board, her bulwarks gone  
 And stanchions going, yet bears on, —  
 Than to mere lifeboats, built to save,  
 And triumph o'er the breaking wave ?  
 Make perfect your good ship as these,  
 And what were her performances !"  
 I added — "Would the ship reach home !  
 I wish indeed 'God's kingdom come' —  
 The day when I shall see appear  
 His bidding, as my duty, clear  
 From doubt ! And it shall dawn, that day,  
 Some future season ; Easter may  
 Prove, not impossibly, the time —  
 Yes, that were striking — fates would chime  
 So aptly ! Easter-morn, to bring  
 The Judgment ! — deeper in the spring  
 Than now, however, when there's snow  
 Capping the hills ; for earth must show  
 All signs of meaning to pursue  
 Her tasks as she was wont to do  
 — The skylark, taken by surprise  
 As we ourselves, shall recognize  
 Sudden the end. For suddenly  
 It comes ; the dreadfulness must be  
 In that ; all warrants the belief —  
 'At night it cometh like a thief.'  
 I fancy why the trumpet blows ;  
 — Plainly, to wake one. From repose  
 We shall start up, at last awake  
 From life, that insane dream we take  
 For waking now, because it seems.

XV

XVI

XVII

XVIII

I looked up; all seemed as before;  
Of that cloud-Tophet overhead  
No trace was left: I saw instead  
The common round me, and the sky  
Above, stretched drear and empty  
Of life. 'T was the last watch of night,  
Except what brings the morning quite;  
When the armed angel, conscience-clear,  
His task nigh done, leans o'er his spear  
And gazes on the earth he guards,  
Safe one night more through all its wards.



Till God relieve him at his post.  
 "A dream — a waking dream at most!"  
 (I spoke out quick, that I might shake  
 The horrid nightmare off, and wake.)  
 "The world gone, yet the world is here?"  
 Are not all things as they appear?  
 Is Judgment past for me alone?  
 — And where had place the great white  
   throne?  
 The rising of the quick and dead?  
 Where stood they, small and great? Who  
   read  
 The sentence from the opened book?"  
 So, by degrees, the blood forsook  
 My heart, and let it beat afresh;  
 I knew I should break through the mesh  
 Of horror, and breathe presently:  
 When, lo, again, the voice by me!

## XIX

I saw . . . O brother, 'mid far sands  
 The palm-tree-cinctured city stands,  
 Bright-white beneath, as heaven, bright-blue,  
 Leans o'er it, while the years pursue  
 Their course, unable to abate  
 Its paradisaal laugh at fate!  
 One morn, — the Arab staggers blind  
 O'er a new tract of death, calcined  
 To ashes, silence, nothingness, —  
 And strives, with dizzy wits, to guess  
 Whence fell the blow. What if, 'twixt skies  
 And prostrate earth, he should surprise  
 The imaged vapor, head to foot,  
 Surveying, motionless and mute,  
 Its work, ere, in a whirlwind rapt  
 It vanish up again? — So hapt  
 My chance. He stood there. Like the smoke  
 Pillared o'er Sodom, when day broke, —  
 I saw him. One magnific pall  
 Mantled in massive fold and fall  
 His head, and coiled in snaky swatches  
 About his feet: night's black, that bathes  
 All else, broke, grizzled with despair,  
 Against the soul of blackness there.  
 A gesture told the mood within —  
 That wrapped right hand which bared the chin,  
 That intense meditation fixed  
 On his procedure, — pity mixed  
 With the fulfilment of decree.  
 Motionless, thus, he spoke to me,  
 Who fell before his feet, a mass,  
 No man now.

## XX

"All is come to pass.  
 Such shows are over for each soul  
 They had respect to. In the roll  
 Of Judgment which convinced mankind  
 Of sin, stood many, bold and blind,  
 Terror must burn the truth into:  
 Their fate for them! — thou hadst to do  
 With absolute omnipotence,  
 Able its judgments to dispense  
 To the whole race, as every one  
 Were its sole object. Judgment done,  
 God is, thou art, — the rest is hurled  
 To nothingness for thee. This world,  
 This finite life, thou hast preferred,  
   1 disbelief of God's plain word,

To heaven and to infinity.  
 Here the probation was for thee,  
 To show thy soul the earthly mixed  
 With heavenly, it must choose betwixt.  
 The earthly joys lay palpable, —  
 A taint, in each, distinct as well;  
 The heavenly fitted, faint and rare,  
 Above them, but as truly were  
 Taintless, so, in their nature, best.  
 Thy choice was earth: thou didst attest  
 'T was fitter spirit should subserve  
 The flesh, than flesh refine to nerve  
 Beneath the spirit's play. Advance  
 No claim to their inheritance  
 Who chose the spirit's fugitive  
 Brief gleams, and yearned, ' This were to live  
 Indeed, if rays, completely pure  
 From flesh that dulls them, could endure, —  
 Not shoot in meteor-light athwart  
 Our earth, to show how cold and swart  
 It lies beneath their fire, but stand  
 As stars do, destined to expand,  
 Prove veritable worlds, our home!  
 Thou saidst, — 'Let spirit star the dome  
 Of sky, that flesh may miss no peak,  
 No nook of earth, — I shall not seek  
 Its service further!' Thou art shut  
 Out of the heaven of spirit; glut  
 Thy sense upon the world: 't is thine  
 Forever — take it!"

## XXI

"How? Is mine,  
 The world?" (I cried, while my soul broke  
 Out in a transport.) "Hast thou spoke  
 Plainly in that? Earth's exquisite  
 Treasures of wonder and delight  
 For me?"

## XXII

The austere voice returned, —  
 "So soon made happy? Hadst thou learned  
 What God accounteth happiness,  
 Thou wouldst not find it hard to guess  
 What hell may be his punishment  
 For those who doubt if God invent  
 Better than they. Let such men rest  
 Content with what they judged the best.  
 Let the unjust usurp at will:  
 The filthy shall be filthy still:  
 Miser, there waits the gold for thee!  
 Hater, indulge thine enmity!  
 And thou, whose heaven self-ordained  
 Was, to enjoy earth unrestrained,  
 Do it! Take all the ancient show!  
 The woods shall wave, the rivers flow,  
 And men apparently pursue  
 Their works, as they were wont to do,  
 While living in probation yet.  
 I promise not thou shalt forget  
 The past, now gone to its account;  
 But leave thee with the old amount  
 Of faculties, nor less nor more,  
 Unvisited, as heretofore,  
 By God's free spirit, that makes an end,  
 So, once more, take thy world! Expend  
 Eternity upon its shows  
 Flung thee as freely as one rose  
 Out of a summer's opulence,

Over the Eden-barrier whence  
Thou art excluded. Knock in vain!"

## XXIII

I sat up. All was still again.  
I breathed free; to my heart, back fled  
The warmth. "But, all the world!" — I said.  
I stooped and picked a leaf of fern,  
And recollected I might learn  
From books, how many myriad sorts  
Of fern exist, to trust reports.  
Each as distinct and beautiful  
As this, the very first I cull.  
Think, from the first leaf to the last!  
Conceive, then, earth's resources! Vast  
Exhaustless beauty, endless change  
Of wonder! And this foot shall range  
Alps, Andes, — and this eye devour  
The bee-bird and the aloe-flower?

## XXIV

Then the voice: "Welcome so to rate  
The arras-folds that variegated  
The earth, God's antechamber, well!  
The wise, who waited there, could tell  
By these, what royalties in store  
Lay one step past the entrance-door.  
For whom, was reckoned, not too much,  
This life's munificence? For such  
As thou, — a race, whereof scarce one  
Was able, in a million,  
To feel that any marvel lay  
In objects round his feet all day;  
Scarce one, in many millions more,  
Willing, if able, to explore  
The secreter, minuter charm!  
— Brave souls, a fern-leaf could disarm  
Of power to cope with God's intent, —  
Or scared if the south firmament  
With north-fire did its wings ruffled!  
All partial beauty was a pledge  
Of beauty in its plenitude:  
But since the pledge sufficed thy mood,  
Retain it! plenitude be theirs  
Who looked above!"

## XXV

Though sharp despairs  
Shot through me, I held up, bore on.  
"What matter though my trust were gone  
From natural things? Henceforth my part  
Be less with nature than with art!  
For art supplants, gives mainly worth  
To nature; 'tis man stamps the earth —  
And I will seek his impress, seek  
The statuary of the Greek,  
Italy's painting — there my choice  
Shall fix!"

## XXVI

"Obtain it!" said the voice,  
"The one form with its single act,  
Which sculptors labored to abstract,  
The one face, painters tried to draw,  
With its one look, from throngs they saw.  
And that perfection in their soul,  
These only hinted at? The whole,  
They were but parts of? What each laid

His claim to glory on? — afraid  
His fellow-men should give him rank  
By mere tentatives which he shrank  
Smitten at heart from, all the more,  
That gazers pressed in to adore!  
'Shall I be judged by only these?'  
If such his soul's capacities,  
Even while he trod the earth, — think, now,  
What pomp in Buonarroti's brow,  
With its new palace-brain where dwells  
Superb the soul, unvexed by cells  
That crumbled with the transient clay!  
What visions will his right hand's sway  
Still turn to forms, as still they burst  
Upon him? How will he quench thirst,  
Titanically infantine,  
Laid at the breast of the Divine?  
Does it confound thee, — this first page  
Emblazoning man's heritage? —  
Can this alone absorb thy sight,  
As pages were not infinite, —  
Like the omnipotence which tasks  
Itself to furnish all that asks  
The soul it means to satiate?  
What was the world, the starry state  
Of the broad skies, — what, all displays  
Of power and beauty intermixed,  
Which now thy soul is chained betwixt, —  
What else than needful furniture  
For life's first stage? God's work, be sure,  
No more spreads wasted, than falls scant!  
He filled, did not exceed, man's want  
Of beauty in this life. But through  
Life pierce, — and what has earth to do,  
Its utmost beauty's appanage,  
With the requirement of next stage?  
Did God pronounce earth 'very good'?  
Needs must it be, while understood  
For man's preparatory state;  
Naught here to heighten nor abate;  
Transfer the same completeness here,  
To serve a new state's use, — and drear  
Deficiency gapes every side!  
The good, tried once, were bad, retried.  
See the enwrapping rocky niche,  
Sufficient for the sleep in which  
The lizard breathes for ages safe:  
Split the mould — and as light would chafe  
The creature's new world-widened sense,  
Dazzled to death at evidence  
Of all the sounds and sights that broke  
Innumerable at the chisel's stroke, —  
So, in God's eye, the earth's first stuff  
Was, neither more nor less, enough  
To house man's soul, man's need fulfil.  
Man reckoned it immeasurable?  
So thinks the lizard of his vault!  
Could God be taken in default,  
Short of contrivances, by you, —  
Or reached, ere ready to pursue  
His progress through eternity?  
That chambered rock, the lizard's world,  
Your easy mallet's blow has hurled  
To nothingness forever: so,  
Has God abolished at a blow  
This world, wherein his saints were pent, —  
Who, though found grateful and content,  
With the provision there, as thou,

Yet knew he would not disallow  
 Their spirit's hunger, felt as well, —  
 Unsated, — not unsatable,  
 As paradise gives proof. Deride  
 Their choice now, thou who sit'st outside ! ”

## XXVII

I cried in anguish : “ Mind, the mind,  
 So miserably cast behind,  
 To gain what had been wisely lost !  
 Oh, let me strive to make the most  
 Of the poor stunted soul, I nipped  
 Of budding wings, else now equipped  
 For voyage from summer isle to isle !  
 And though she needs must reconcile  
 Ambition to the life on ground,  
 Still, I can profit by late found  
 But precious knowledge. Mind is best —  
 I will seize mind, forego the rest,  
 And try how far my tethered strength  
 May crawl in this poor breadth and length.  
 Let me, since I can fly no more,  
 At least spin dervish-like about  
 (Till giddy rapture almost doubt  
 I fly) through circling sciences,  
 Philosophies and histories !  
 Should the whirl slacken there, then verse,  
 Fining to music, shall asperse  
 Fresh and fresh fire-dew, till I strain  
 Intoxicate, half-break my chain !  
 Not joyless, though more favored feet  
 Stand calm, where I want wings to beat  
 The floor. At least earth's bond is broke ! ”

## XXVIII

Then (sickening even while I spoke) :  
 “ Let me alone ! No answer, pray,  
 To this ! I know what thou wilt say !  
 All still is earth's, — to know, as much  
 As feel its truths, which if we touch  
 With sense, or apprehend in soul,  
 What matter ? I have reached the goal —  
 ‘ Where to does knowledge serve ! ’ will burn  
 My eyes, too sure, at every turn !  
 I cannot look back now, nor stake  
 Bliss on the race, for running's sake.  
 The goal's a ruin like the rest ! ”  
 “ And so much worse thy latter quest, ”  
 (Added the voice, ) “ that even on earth —  
 Whenever, in man's soul, had birth  
 Those intuitions, grasps of guess,  
 Which pull the more into the less,  
 Making the finite comprehend  
 Infinity, — the bard would spend  
 Such praise alone, upon his craft,  
 As, when wind-lyres obey the waft,  
 Goes to the craftsman who arranged  
 The seven strings, changed them and re-  
 changed —  
 Knowing it was the South that harped.  
 He felt his song, in singing, warped ;  
 Distinguished his and God's part : whence  
 A world of spirit as of sense  
 Was plain to him, yet not too plain,  
 Which he could traverse, not remain  
 A guest in : — else were permanent  
 Heaven on the earth its gleams were meant  
 To sting with hunger for full light, —

Made visible in verse, despite  
 The veiling weakness, — truth by means  
 Of fable, showing while it screens, —  
 Since highest truth, man e'er supplied,  
 Was ever fable on outside.  
 Such gleams made bright the earth an age ;  
 Now the whole sun's his heritage !  
 Take up thy world, it is allowed,  
 Thou who hast entered in the cloud ! ”

## XXIX

Then I — “ Behold, my spirit bleeds,  
 Catches no more at broken reeds, —  
 But lilies flower those reeds above :  
 I let the world go, and take love !  
 Love survives in me, albeit those  
 I love be henceforth masks and shows,  
 Not living men and women : still  
 I mind how love repaired all ill,  
 Cured wrong, soothed grief, made earth amend  
 With parents, brothers, children, friends !  
 Some semblance of a woman yet  
 With eyes to help me to forget,  
 Shall look on me ; and I will match  
 Departed love with love, attach  
 Old memories to new dreams, nor scorn  
 The poorest of the grains of corn  
 I save from shipwreck on this isle,  
 Trusting its barrenness may smile  
 With happy foodful green one day,  
 More precious for the pains. I pray, —  
 Leave to love, only ! ”

## XXX

At the word,  
 The form, I looked to have been stirred  
 With pity and approval, rose  
 O'er me, as when the headsman throws  
 Axe over shoulder to make end —  
 I fell prone, letting him expend  
 His wrath, while thus the inflicting voice  
 Smote me. “ Is this thy final choice ?  
 Love is the best ? ’T is somewhat late !  
 And all thou dost enumerate  
 Of power and beauty in the world,  
 The mightiness of love was curled  
 Inextricably round about.  
 Love lay within it and without,  
 To clasp thee, — but in vain ! Thy soul  
 Still shrunk from him who made the whole,  
 Still set deliberate aside  
 His love ! — Now take love ! Well betide  
 Thy tardy conscience ! Haste to take  
 The show of love for the name's sake,  
 Remembering every moment who,  
 Beside creating thee unto  
 These ends, and these for thee, was said  
 To undergo death in thy stead  
 In flesh like thine : so ran the tale.  
 What doubt in thee could countervail  
 Belief in it ? Upon the ground  
 ‘ That in the story had been found  
 Too much love ! How could God love so ? ’  
 He who in all his works below  
 Adapted to the needs of man,  
 Made love the basis of the plan, —  
 Did love, as was demonstrated :  
 While man, who was so fit instead



To hate, as every day gave proof, —  
Man thought man, for his kind's behoof,  
Both could and did invent that scheme  
Of perfect love: 't would well beseem  
Cain's nature thou wast wont to praise,  
Not tally with God's usual ways!"

XXXI

And I cowered deprecatingly —  
"Thou Love of God! Or let me die,  
Or grant what shall seem heaven almost!  
Let me not know that all is lost,  
Though lost it be — leave me not tied  
To this despair, this corpse-like bride!  
Let that old life seem mine — no more —  
With limitation as before,  
With darkness, hunger, toil, distress:  
Be all the earth a wilderness!  
Only let me go on, go on,  
Still hoping ever and anon  
To reach one eve the Better Land!"

XXXII

Then did the form expand, expand —  
I knew him through the dread disguise  
As the whole God within his eyes  
Embraced me.

XXXIII

When I lived again,  
The day was breaking, — the gray plain  
I rose from, silvered thick with dew,

Was this a vision? False or true?  
Since then, three varied years are spent,  
And commonly my mind is bent  
To think it was a dream — be sure  
A mere dream and distemperature —  
The last day's watching: then the night, —  
The shock of that strange Northern Light  
Set my head swimming, bred in me  
A dream. And so I live, you see,  
Go through the world, try, prove, reject,  
Prefer, still struggling to effect  
My warfare; happy that I can  
Be crossed and thwarted as a man,  
Not left in God's contempt apart,  
With ghastly smooth life, dead at heart,  
Tame in earth's paddock as her prize,  
Thank God, she still each method tries  
To catch me, who may yet escape,  
She knows, — the fiend in angel's shape!  
Thank God, no paradise stands barred  
To entry, and I find it hard  
To be a Christian, as I said!  
Still every now and then my head  
Raised glad, sinks mournful — all grows drear  
Spite of the sunshine, while I fear  
And think, "How dreadful to be grudging  
No ease henceforth, as one that's judged,  
Condemned to earth forever, shut  
From heaven!"  
But Easter-Day breaks! But  
Christ rises! Mercy every way  
Is infinite, — and who can say?

## MEN AND WOMEN

LONDON AND FLORENCE, 184- 185-

IN making his final distribution of poems  
Browning gave the above title and dates to the  
thirteen poems which follow, but the title was  
originally given by him to two volumes pub-

lished in 1855. The other poems are dispersed  
among the several groups already named, with  
the exception of *In a Balcony*, which appeared  
by itself.

"TRANSCENDENTALISM: A POEM IN  
TWELVE BOOKS"

STOP playing, poet! May a brother speak?  
'Tis you speak, that's your error. Song's our  
art:  
Whereas you please to speak these naked  
thoughts  
Instead of draping them in sights and sounds.  
— True thoughts, good thoughts, thoughts fit  
to treasure up!  
But why such long prolusion and display,  
Such turning and adjustment of the harp,  
And taking it upon your breast, at length,  
Only to speak dry words across its strings?  
Stark-naked thought is in request enough:  
Speak prose and hollo it till Europe hears!

The six-foot Swiss tube, braced about with  
bark,  
Which helps the hunter's voice from Alp to  
Alp —  
Exchange our harp for that, — who hinders  
you?

But here's your fault; grown men want  
thought, you think;  
Thought's what they mean by verse, and seek  
in verse:  
Boys seek for images and melody,  
Men must have reason — so, you aim at men.  
Quite otherwise! Objects throng our youth,  
't is true;  
We see and hear and do not wonder much:  
If you could tell us what they mean, indeed!

As German Boehme never cared for plants  
Until it happened, a-walking in the fields,  
He noticed all at once that plants could speak.  
Nay, turned with loosened tongue to talk with  
him.

That day the daisy had an eye indeed —  
Colloquied with the crowslip on such themes !  
We find them extant yet in Jacob's prose.  
But by the time youth slips a stage or two  
While reading prose in that tough book he  
wrote

(Collating and emendating the same  
And settling on the sense most to our mind),  
We shut the clasps and find life's summer past.  
Then, who helps more, pray, to repair our  
loss —

Another Boehme with a tougher book  
And subtler meanings of what roses say, —  
Or some stout Mage like him of Halberstadt,  
John, who made things Boehme wrote thoughts  
about ?

He with a "look you!" vents a brace of  
rhymes,

And in three breaks the sudden rose herself,  
Over us, under, round us every side,  
Nay, in and out the tables and the chairs  
And musty volumes, Boehme's book and all, —  
Buries us with a glory, young once more,  
Pouring heaven into this shut house of life.

So come, the harp back to your heart again !  
You are a poem, though your poem's naught.  
The best of all you showed before, believe,  
Was your own boy-face o'er the finer chords  
Bent, following the cherub at the top  
That points to God with his paired half-moon  
wings.

#### HOW IT STRIKES A CONTEMPORARY

I ONLY knew one poet in my life :  
And this, or something like it, was his way.

You saw go up and down Valladolid,  
A man of mark, to know next time you saw.  
His very serviceable suit of black  
Was courtly once and conscientious still,  
And many might have worn it, though none  
did :

The cloak, that somewhat shone and showed  
the threads,

Had purpose, and the ruff, significance.  
He walked and tapped the pavement with his  
cane,

Scenting the world, looking it full in face,  
An old dog, bald and blindish, at his heels.  
They turned up, now, the alley by the church,  
That leads nowhere ; now, they breathed  
themselves

On the main promenade just at the wrong time :  
You 'd come upon his scrutinizing hat,  
Making a peaked shade blacker than itself  
Against the single window spared some house  
Intact yet with its mouldered Moorish work, —  
Or else surprise the ferrel of his stick  
Trying the mortar's temper 'tween the chinks  
Of some new shop a-building, French and fine.

He stood and watched the cobbler at his trade,  
The man who slices lemons into drink,  
The coffee-roaster's brazier, and the boys  
That volunteer to help him turn its winch.  
He glanced o'er books on stalls with half an  
eye,

And fly-leaf ballads on the vender's string,  
And broad-edge bold-print posters by the wall.  
He took such cognizance of men and things,  
If any beat a horse, you felt he saw ;  
If any cursed a woman, he took note ;  
Yet stared at nobody, — you stared at him,  
And found, less to your pleasure than surprise,  
He seemed to know you and expect as much.  
So, next time that a neighbor's tongue was  
loosed,

It marked the shameful and notorious fact,  
We had among us, not so much a spy,  
As a recording chief-inquisitor,  
The town's true master if the town but knew !  
We merely kept a governor for form,  
While this man walked about and took account  
Of all thought, said and acted, then went home,  
And wrote it fully to our Lord the King  
Who has an itch to know things, he knows why,  
And reads them in his bedroom of a night.  
Oh, you might smile ! there wanted not a touch,  
A tang of . . . well, it was not wholly ease  
As back into your mind the man's look came.  
Stricken in years a little, — such a brow  
His eyes had to live under ! — clear as flint  
On either side the formidable nose  
Curved, cut and colored like an eagle's claw.  
Had he to do with A's surprising fate ?  
When altogether old B disappeared  
And young C got his mistress, — was 't our  
friend,

His letter to the King, that did it all ?  
What paid the bloodless man for so much  
pains ?

Our Lord the King has favorites manifold,  
And shifts his ministry some once a month ;  
Our city gets new governors at whiles, —  
But never word or sign, that I could hear,  
Notified to this man about the streets  
The King's approval of those letters conned  
The last thing duly at the dead of night.  
Did the man love his office ? Frowned our  
Lord,  
Exhorting when none heard — "Beseech me  
not !

Too far above my people, — beneath me !  
I set the watch, — how should the people know ?  
Forget them, keep me all the more in mind !"  
Was some such understanding 'twixt the two ?

I found no truth in one report at least —  
That if you tracked him to his home, down  
lanes

Beyond the Jewry, and as clean to pace,  
You found he ate his supper in a room  
Blazing with lights, four Titians on the wall,  
And twenty naked girls to change his plate !  
Poor man, he lived another kind of life  
In that new stuccoed third house by the bridge,  
Fresh-painted, rather smart than otherwise !  
The whole street might o'erlook him as he sat  
Leg crossing leg, one foot on the dog's back,

Playing a decent cribbage with his maid  
 (Jacynth, you're sure her name was) o'er the  
 cheese  
 And fruit, three red halves of starved winter-  
 pears,  
 Or treat of radishes in April. Nine,  
 Ten, struck the church clock, straight to bed  
 went he.

My father, like the man of sense he was,  
 Would point him out to me a dozen times ;  
 " 'St — 'St," he 'd whisper, " the Corregidor ! "   
 I had been used to think that personage  
 Was one with lacquered breeches, lustrous belt,  
 And feathers like a forest in his hat,  
 Who blew a trumpet and proclaimed the news,  
 Announced the bull-fights, gave each church  
 its turn,  
 And memorized the miracle in vogue !  
 He had a great observance from us boys ;  
 We were in error ; that was not the man.

I 'd like now, yet had haply been afraid,  
 To have just looked, when this man came to  
 die,

And seen who lined the clean gay garret-sides  
 And stood about the neat low truckle-bed,  
 With the heavenly manner of relieving guard.  
 Here had been, mark, the general-in-chief,  
 Through a whole campaign of the world's life  
 and death,

Doing the King's work all the dim day long,  
 In his old coat and up to knees in mud,  
 Smoked like a herring, dining on a crust, —  
 And, now the day was won, relieved at once !  
 No further show or need for that old coat,  
 You are sure, for one thing ! Bless us, all the  
 while

How sprucely we are dressed out, you and I !  
 A second, and the angels alter that.

Well, I could never write a verse, — could you ?  
 Let 's to the Prado and make the most of time.

## ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES

Upon the first proof of this poem Browning  
 wrote: " I had better say perhaps that the  
 above is nearly all retained of a tragedy I com-  
 posed much against my endeavor, while in bed  
 with a fever two years ago — it went farther  
 into the story of Hippolytus and Aricia ; but  
 when I got well, putting only thus much down  
 at once, I soon forgot the remainder." The  
 notes contain an interesting defence by Brown-  
 ing of the form of his Greek names.

I AM a goddess of the ambrosial courts,  
 And save by Here, Queen of Pride, surpassed  
 By none whose temples whiten this the world.  
 Through heaven I roll my lucid moon along ;  
 I shied in hell o'er my pale people peace ;  
 On earth I, caring for the creatures, guard  
 Each pregnant yellow wolf and fox-bitch sleek,  
 And every feathered mother's callow brood,  
 And all that love green haunts and loneliness.

Of men, the chaste adore me, hanging crowns  
 Of poppies red to blackness, bell and stem,  
 Upon my image at Athenai here ;  
 And this dead Youth, Aesclepios bends above,  
 Was dearest to me. He, my buskined step  
 To follow through the wild-wood leafy ways,  
 And chase the panting stag, or swift with darts  
 Stop the swift ounce, or lay the leopard low,  
 Neglected homage to another god :  
 Whence Aphrodite, by no midnight smoke  
 Of tapers lulled, in jealousy dispatched  
 A noisome lust that, as the gadbee stings,  
 Possessed his stepdame Phaidra for himself  
 The son of Theseus her great absent spouse.  
 Hippolotos exclaiming in his rage  
 Against the fury of the Queen, she judged  
 Life insupportable ; and, pricked at heart  
 An Amazonian stranger's race should dare  
 To scorn her, perished by the murderous cord :  
 Yet, ere she perished, blasted in a scroll  
 The fame of him her swerving made not  
 swerve.

And Theseus, read, returning, and believed,  
 And exiled, in the blindness of his wrath,  
 The man without a crime who, last as first,  
 Loyal, divulged not to his sire the truth.  
 Now Theseus from Poseidon had obtained  
 That of his wishes should be granted three,  
 And one he imprecated straight — " Alive  
 May ne'er Hippolotos reach other lands ! "   
 Poseidon heard, ai ai ! And scarce the prince  
 Had stepped into the fixed boots of the car  
 That gave the feet a stay against the strength  
 Of the Henetian horses, and around  
 His body flung the rein, and urged their speed  
 Along the rocks and shingles of the shore,  
 When from the gaping wave a monster flung  
 His obscene body in the coursers' path.  
 These, mad with terror, as the sea-bull sprawled  
 Wallowing about their feet, lost care of him  
 That reared them ; and the master-chariot-pole  
 Snapping beneath their plunges like a reed,  
 Hippolotos, whose feet were trammelled fast,  
 Was yet dragged forward by the circling rein  
 Which either hand directed ; nor they quenched  
 The frenzy of their flight before each trace,  
 Wheel-spoke and splinter of the woeful car,  
 Each boulder-stone, sharp stub and spiny shell,  
 Huge fish-bone wrecked and wreathed amid the  
 sands

On that detested beach, was bright with blood  
 And morsels of his flesh : then fell the steeds  
 Head-foremost, crashing in their moonèd fronts,  
 Shivering with sweat, each white eye horror-  
 fixed.

His people, who had witnessed all afar,  
 Bore back the ruins of Hippolotos.  
 But when his sire, too swoln with pride, rejoiced  
 (Indomitable as a man foredoomed)  
 That vast Poseidon had fulfilled his prayer,  
 I, in a flood of glory visible,  
 Stood o'er my dying votary and, deed  
 By deed, revealed, as all took place, the truth.  
 Then Theseus lay the woefullest of men,  
 And worthily ; but ere the death-veils hid  
 His face, the murdered prince full pardon  
 breathed

To his rash sire. Whereat Athenai wails.



So I, who ne'er forsake my votaries,  
 Lest in the cross-way none the honey-cake  
 Should tender, nor pour out the dog's hot life ;  
 Lest at my fane the priests disconsolate  
 Should dress my image with some faded poor  
 Few crowns, made favors of, nor dare object  
 Such slackness to my worshippers who turn  
 Elsewhere the trusting heart and loaded hand,  
 As they had climbed Olumpos to report  
 Of Artemis and nowhere found her throne —  
 I interposed : and, this eventful night, —  
 (While round the funeral pyre the populace  
 Stood with fierce light on their black robes  
 which bound

Each sobbing head, while yet their hair they  
 clipped

O'er the dead body of their withered prince,  
 And, in his palace, Theseus prostrated  
 On the cold hearth, his brow cold as the slab  
 'Twas bruised on, groaned away the heavy  
 grief —

As the pyre fell, and down the cross logs crashed  
 Sending a crowd of sparkles through the night,  
 And the gay fire, elate with mastery,  
 Towered like a serpent o'er the clotted jars  
 Of wine, dissolving oils and frankincense,  
 And splendid gums like gold, — my potency  
 Conveyed the perished man to my retreat  
 In the thrice-venerable forest here.  
 And this white-bearded sage who squeezes now  
 The berried plant, is Phoibos' son of fame,  
 Asclepius, whom my radiant brother taught  
 The doctrine of each herb and flower and root,  
 To know their secret : st virtue and express  
 The saving soul of all : who so has soothed  
 With lavers the torn brow and murdered cheeks,  
 Composed the hair and brought its gloss again,  
 And called the red bloom to the pale skin back,  
 And laid the strips and jagged ends of flesh  
 Even once more, and slacked the sinew's knot  
 Of every tortured limb — that now he lies  
 As if mere sleep possessed him underneath  
 These interwoven oaks and pines. Oh cheer,  
 Divine presenter of the healing rod,  
 Thy snake, with ardent throat and lulling eye,  
 Twines his lithe spires around ! I say, much  
 cheer !

Proceed thou with thy wisest pharmacies !  
 And ye, white crowd of woodland sister-nymphs,  
 Ply, as the sage directs, these buds and leaves  
 That strew the turf around the twain ! While I  
 Await, in fitting silence, the event.

#### AN EPISTLE

CONTAINING THE STRANGE MEDICAL EXPERI-  
 ENCE OF KARSHISH, THE ARAB PHYSICIAN

KARSHISH, the picker-up of learning's crumbs,  
 The not-incurious in God's handiwork  
 (This man's-flesh he hath admirably made,  
 Blown like a bubble, kneaded like a paste,  
 To coop up and keep down on earth a space  
 That puff of vapor from his mouth, man's soul)  
 — To Abib, all-sagacious in our art,  
 Breeder in me of what poor skill I boast,  
 Like me inquisitive how pricks and cracks

Befall the flesh through too much stress and  
 strain,

Whereby the wily vapor fain would slip  
 Back and rejoin its source before the term, —  
 And aptest in contrivance (under God)  
 To baffle it by deftly stopping such : —  
 The vagrant Scholar to his Sage at home  
 Sends greeting (health and knowledge, fame  
 with peace)

Three samples of true snake-stone — rarer still,  
 One of the other sort, the melon-shaped,  
 (But fitter, pounded fine, for charms than drugs)  
 And writeth now the twenty-second time.

My journeyings were brought to Jericho :  
 Thus I resume. Who studious in our art  
 Shall count a little labor unpaid ?  
 I have shed sweat enough, left flesh and bone  
 On many a flinty furlong of this land.  
 Also, the country-side is all on fire  
 With rumors of a marching hitherward :  
 Some say Vespasian cometh, some, his son.  
 A black lynx snarled and pricked a tufted ear ;  
 Lust of my blood inflamed his yellow balls :  
 I cried and threw my staff and he was gone.  
 Twice have the robbers stripped and beaten me,  
 And once a town declared me for a spy ;  
 But at the end, I reach Jerusalem,  
 Since this poor covert where I pass the night,  
 This Bethany, lies scarce the distance thence  
 A man with plague-sores at the third degree  
 Runs till he drops down dead. Thou laughest  
 here !

'Sooth, it elates me, thus reposed and safe,  
 To void the stuffing of my travel-scrip  
 And share with thee whatever Jewry yields.  
 A viscid choler is observable  
 In tertians, I was nearly bold to say ;  
 And falling-sickness hath a happier cure  
 Than our school wots of : there's a spider  
 here

Weaves no web, watches on the ledge of tombs,  
 Sprinkled with mottles on an ash-gray back ;  
 Take five and drop them . . . but who knows  
 his mind,

The Syrian runagate I trust this to ?  
 His service payeth me a sublimate  
 Blown up his nose to help the ailing eye.  
 Best wait : I reach Jerusalem at morn,  
 There set in order my experiences,  
 Gather what most deserves, and give thee  
 all —

Or I might add, Judæa's gum-tragacanth  
 Scales off in purer flakes, shines clearer-grained,  
 Cracks 'twixt the pestle and the porphyry,  
 In fine exceeds our produce. Scalp-disease  
 Confounds me, crossing so with leprosy —  
 Thou hadst admired one sort I gained at  
 Zoar —

But zeal outruns discretion. Here I end.

Yet stay : my Syrian blinketh gratefully,  
 Protesteth his devotion is my price —  
 Suppose I write what harms not, though he  
 steal ?

I half resolve to tell thee, yet I blush,  
 What set me off a-writing first of all.  
 An itch I had, a sting to write, a tang !

For, be it this town's barrenness — or else  
The Man had something in the look of him —  
His case has struck me far more than 't is  
worth.

So, pardon if — (lest presently I lose  
In the great press of novelty at hand  
The care and pains this somehow stole from  
me)

I bid thee take the thing while fresh in mind,  
Almost in sight — for, wilt thou have the truth?  
The very man is gone from me but now,  
Whose ailment is the subject of discourse.  
Thus then, and let thy better wit help all!

'T is but a case of mania — subinduced  
By epilepsy, at the turning-point  
Of trance prolonged unduly some three days:  
When, by the exhibition of some drug  
Or spell, exorcization, stroke of art  
Unknown to me and which 't were well to  
know,

The evil thing out-breaking all at once  
Left the man whole and sound of body indeed, —  
But, flinging (so to speak) life's gates too wide,  
Making a clear house of it too suddenly,  
The first conceit that entered might inscribe  
Whatever it was minded on the wall  
So plainly at that vantage, as it were,  
(First come, first served) that nothing subse-  
quent

Attaineth to erase those fancy-scrawls  
The just-returned and new-established soul  
Hath gotten now so thoroughly by heart  
That henceforth she will read or these or none.  
And first — the man's own firm conviction rests  
That he was dead (in fact they buried him)  
— That he was dead and then restored to life  
By a Nazarene physician of his tribe:  
— 'Sayeth, the same bade "Rise," and he did  
rise.

"Such cases are diurnal," thou wilt cry.  
Not so this figment! — not, that such a fume,  
Instead of giving way to time and health,  
Should eat itself into the life of life,  
As saffron tingeth flesh, blood, bones and all!  
For see, how he takes up the after-life.

The man — it is one Lazarus a Jew,  
Sanguine, proportioned, fifty years of age,  
The body's habit wholly laudable,  
As much, indeed, beyond the common health  
As he were made and put aside to show.  
Think, could we penetrate by any drug  
And bathe the wearied soul and worried flesh,  
And bring it clear and fair, by three days'  
sleep!

Whence has the man the balm that brightens  
all?

This grown man eyes the world now like a  
child.

Some elders of his tribe, I should premise,  
Led in their friend, obedient as a sheep,  
To bear my inquisition. While they spoke,  
Now sharply, now with sorrow, — told the  
case, —

He listened not except I spoke to him,  
But folded his two hands and let them talk,  
Watching the flies that buzzed: and yet no  
fool.

And that 's a sample how his years must go.  
Look, if a beggar, in fixed middle-life,  
Should find a treasure, — can he use the same  
With straitened habits and with tastes starved  
small,

And take at once to his impoverished brain  
The sudden element that changes things,  
That sets the undreamed-of rapture at his hand  
And puts the cheap old joy in the scorned dust?  
Is he not such an one as moves to mirth —  
Warily parsimonious, when no need,  
Wasteful as drunkenness at undue times?  
All prudent counsel as to what befits  
The golden mean, is lost on such an one:  
The man's fantastic will is the man's law.  
So here — we call the treasure knowledge, say,  
Increased beyond the fleshly faculty —  
Heaven opened to a soul while yet on earth,  
Earth forced on a soul's use while seeing hea-  
ven:

The man is witless of the size, the sum,  
The value in proportion of all things,  
Or whether it be little or be much.  
Discourse to him of prodigious armaments  
Assembled to besiege his city now,  
And of the passing of a mule with gourds —  
'T is one! Then take it on the other side,  
Speak of some trifling fact, — he will gaze rapt  
With stupor at its very littleness,  
(Far as I see) as if in that indeed  
He caught prodigious import, whole results;  
And so will turn to us the bystanders  
In ever the same stupor (note this point)  
That we too see not with his opened eyes.  
Wonder and doubt come wrongly into play,  
Preposterously, at cross purposes.  
Should his child sicken unto death, — why, look  
For scarce abatement of his cheerfulness,  
Or pretermission of the daily craft!  
While a word, gesture, glance from that same  
child

At play or in the school or laid asleep  
Will startle him to an agony of fear,  
Exasperation, just as like. Demand  
The reason why — "'t is but a word," object —  
"A gesture" — he regards thee as our lord  
Who lived there in the pyramid alone,  
Looked at us (dost thou mind?) when, being  
young,

We both would unadvisedly recite  
Some charm's beginning, from that book of his,  
Able to bid the sun throb wide and burst  
All into stars, as suns grown old are wont.  
Thou and the child have each a veil alike  
Thrown o'er your heads, from under which ye  
both

Stretch your blind hands and trifle with a  
match

Over a mine of Greek fire, did ye know!  
He holds on firmly to some thread of life —  
(It is the life to lead forcedly)  
Which runs across some vast distracting orb  
Of glory on either side that meagre thread,  
Which, conscious of, he must not enter yet —  
The spiritual life around the earthly life:  
The law of that is known to him as this,  
His heart and brain move there, his feet stay  
here.

So is the man perplex with impulses  
Sudden to start off crosswise, not straight on,  
Proclaiming what is right and wrong across,  
And not along, this black thread through the  
blaze —  
"It should be" balked by "here it cannot  
be."

And off the man's soul springs into his face  
As if he saw again and heard again  
His sage that bade him "Rise" and he did  
rise.

Something, a word, a tick o' the blood within  
Admonishes: then back he sinks at once  
To ashes, who was very fire before,  
In sedulous recurrence to his trade  
Whereby he earneth him the daily bread;  
And studiously the humbler for that pride,  
Professedly the faultier that he knows  
God's secret, while he holds the thread of life.  
Indeed the especial marking of the man  
Is prone submission to the heavenly will —  
Seeing it, what it is, and why it is.

'Sayeth, he will wait patient to the last  
For that same death which must restore his  
being

To equilibrium, body loosening soul  
Divorced even now by premature full growth:  
He will live, nay, it pleaseth him to live  
So long as God please, and just how God please.  
He even seeketh not to please God more  
(Which meaneth, otherwise) than as God please.  
Hence, I perceive not he affects to preach  
The doctrine of his sect whate'er it be,  
Make proselytes as madmen thirst to do:  
How can he give his neighbor the real ground,  
His own conviction? Ardent as he is —  
Call his great truth a lie, why, still the old  
"Be it as God please" reassureth him.  
I probed the sore as thy disciple should:  
"How, beast," said I, "this stolid carelessness  
Sufficeth thee, when Rome is on her march  
To stamp out like a little spark thy town,  
Thy tribe, thy crazy tale and thee at once?"  
He merely looked with his large eyes on me.  
The man is apathetic, you deduce?  
Contrariwise, he loves both old and young,  
Able and weak, affects the very brutes  
And birds — how say I? flowers of the field —  
As a wise workman recognizes tools  
In a master's workshop, loving what they  
make.

Thus is the man as harmless as a lamb:  
Only impatient, let him do his best,  
At ignorance and carelessness and sin —  
And indignation which is promptly curbed:  
As when in certain travel I have feigned  
To be an ignoramus in our art  
According to some preconceived design,  
And happened to hear the land's practitioners,  
Steeped in conceit sublimed by ignorance,  
Prattle fantastically on disease,  
Its cause and cure — and I must hold my peace!

Thou wilt object — Why have I not ere this  
Sought out the sage himself, the Nazarene  
Who wrought this cure, inquiring at the  
source,  
Conferring with the frankness that befits?

Alas! it grieveth me, the learned leech  
Perished in a tumult many years ago,  
Accused — our learning's fate — of wizardry,  
Rebellion, to the setting up a rule  
And creed prodigious as described to me.  
His death, which happened when the earth-  
quake fell

(Prefiguring, as soon appeared, the loss  
To occult learning in our lord the sage  
Who lived there in the pyramid alone)  
Was wrought by the mad people — that's their  
wont!

On vain recourse, as I conjecture it,  
To his tried virtue, for miraculous help —  
How could he stop the earthquake? That's  
their way!

The other imputations must be lies:  
But take one, though I loathe to give it thee,  
In mere respect for any good man's fame.  
(And after all, our patient Lazarus  
Is stark mad; should we count on what he  
says?)

Perhaps not: though in writing to a leech  
'T is well to keep back nothing of a case.)  
This man so cured regards the curer, then,  
As — God forgive me! who but God himself,  
Creator and sustainer of the world,  
That came and dwelt in flesh on it awhile!  
— 'Sayeth that such an one was born and lived,  
Taught, healed the sick, broke bread at his  
own house,  
Then died, with Lazarus by, for aught I know,  
And yet was . . . what I said nor choose re-  
peat,

And must have so avouched himself, in fact,  
In hearing of this very Lazarus  
Who saith — but why all this of what he saith?  
Why write of trivial matters, things of price  
Calling at every moment for remark?  
I noticed on the margin of a pool  
Blue-flowering borage, the Aleppo sort,  
Aboundeth, very nitrous. It is strange!

Thy pardon for this long and tedious case,  
Which, now that I review it, needs must seem  
Unduly dwelt on, prolixly set forth!  
Nor I myself discern in what is writ  
Good cause for the peculiar interest  
And awe indeed this man has touched me with.  
Perhaps the journey's end, the weariness  
Had wrought upon me first. I met him thus:  
I crossed a ridge of short sharp broken hills  
Like an old lion's cheek teeth. Out there came  
A moon made like a face with certain spots  
Multiform, manifold, and menacing:  
Then a wind rose behind me. So we met  
In this old sleepy town at unware,  
The man and I. I send thee what is writ.  
Regard it as a chance, a matter risked  
To this ambiguous Syrian — he may lose,  
Or steal, or give it thee with equal good.  
Jerusalem's repose shall make amends  
For time this letter wastes, thy time and mine;  
Till when, once more thy pardon and fare-  
well!

The very God! think, Abib; dost thou think?  
So. the All-Great, were the All-Loving too —



So, through the thunder comes a human voice  
 Saying, "O heart I made, a heart beats here!  
 Face, my hands fashioned, see it in myself!  
 Thou hast no power nor mayst conceive of  
 mine,  
 But love I gave thee, with myself to love,  
 And thou must love me who have died for  
 thee!"  
 The madman saith He said so: it is strange.

## JOHANNES AGRICOLA IN MEDITATION

First published with the signature Z in *The Monthly Repository* in 1836. A quotation from a *Dictionary of all Religions* followed the title on the first publication, but is here transferred to the notes.

THERE 's heaven above, and night by night  
 I look right through its gorgeous roof;  
 No suns and moons though e'er so bright  
 Avail to stop me; splendour-proof  
 I keep the broods of stars aloof:  
 For I intend to get to God,  
 For 't is to God I speed so fast,  
 For in God's breast, my own abode,  
 Those shoals of dazzling glory, passed,  
 I lay my spirit down at last.  
 I lie where I have always lain,  
 God smiles as he has always smiled;  
 Ere suns and moons could wax and wane,  
 Ere stars were thundergirt, or piled  
 The heavens, God thought on me his child;  
 Ordained a life for me, arrayed  
 Its circumstances every one  
 To the minutest; ay, God said  
 This head this hand should rest upon  
 Thus, ere he fashioned star or sun.  
 And having thus created me,  
 Thus rooted me, he bade me grow,  
 Guiltless forever, like a tree  
 That buds and blooms, nor seeks to know  
 The law by which it prospers so:  
 But sure that thought and word and deed  
 All go to swell his love for me,  
 Me, made because that love had need  
 Of something irreversibly  
 Pledged solely its content to be.  
 Yes, yes, a tree which must ascend,  
 No poison-gourd foredoomed to stoop!  
 I have God's warrant, could I blend  
 All hideous sins, as in a cup,  
 To drink the mingled venoms up;  
 Secure my nature will convert  
 The draught to blossoming gladness fast:  
 While sweet dews turn to the gourd's hurt,  
 And bloat, and while they bloat it, blast,  
 As from the first its lot was cast.  
 For as I lie, smiled on, full-fed  
 By unexhausted power to bless,  
 I gaze below on hell's fierce bed,  
 And those its waves of flame oppress,  
 Swarming in ghastly wretchedness;  
 Whose life on earth aspired to be  
 One altar-smoke, so pure! — to win  
 If not love like God's love for me,

At least to keep his anger in;  
 And all their striving turned to sin.  
 Priest, doctor, hermit, monk grown white  
 With prayer, the broken-hearted nun,  
 The martyr, the wan acolyte,  
 The incense-swinging child, — undone  
 Before God fashioned star or sun!  
 God, whom I praise; how could I praise,  
 If such as I might understand,  
 Make out and reckon on his ways,  
 And bargain for his love, and stand,  
 Paying a price, at his right hand?

## PICTOR IGNOTUS

FLORENCE, 15—

I COULD have painted pictures like that youth's  
 Ye praise so. How my soul springs up! No  
 bar  
 Stayed me — ah, thought which saddens while  
 it soothes!  
 — Never did fate forbid me, star by star,  
 To outburst on your night with all my gift  
 Of fires from God: nor would my flesh have  
 shrunk  
 From seconding my soul, with eyes uplift  
 And wide to heaven, or, straight like thun-  
 der, sunk  
 To the centre, of an instant; or around  
 Turned calmly and inquisitive, to scan  
 The license and the limit, space and bound,  
 Allowed to truth made visible in man.  
 And, like that youth ye praise so, all I saw,  
 Over the canvas could my hand have flung,  
 Each face obedient to its passion's law,  
 Each passion clear proclaimed without a  
 tongue;  
 Whether Hope rose at once in all the blood,  
 A-tiptoe for the blessing of embrace,  
 Or Rapture drooped the eyes, as when her brood  
 Pull down the nesting dove's heart to its  
 place;  
 Or Confidence lit swift the forehead up,  
 And locked the mouth fast, like a castle  
 braved, —  
 O human faces, hath it spilt, my cup?  
 What did ye give me that I have not saved?  
 Nor will I say I have not dreamed (how well!)  
 Of going — I, in each new picture, — forth,  
 As, making new hearts beat and bosoms swell,  
 To Pope or Kaiser, East, West, South, or  
 North,  
 Bound for the calmly satisfied great State,  
 Or glad aspiring little burgh, it went,  
 Flowers cast upon the car which bore the  
 freight,  
 Through old streets named afresh from the  
 event,  
 Till it reached home, where learned age should  
 greet  
 My face, and youth, the star not yet distinct  
 Above his hair, lie learning at my feet! —  
 Oh, thus to live, I and my picture, linked  
 With love about, and praise, till life should  
 end,  
 And then not go to heaven, but linger here,

Here on my earth, earth's every man my friend, —

The thought grew frightful, 't was so wildly dear!

But a voice changed it. Glimpses of such sights

Have scared me, like the revels through a door

Of some strange house of idols at its rites!

This world seemed not the world it was before:

Mixed with my loving trusting ones, there trooped

. . . Who summoned those cold faces that begun

To press on me and judge me? Though I stooped

Shrinking, as from the soldiery a nun,

They drew me forth, and spite of me . . . enough!

These buy and sell our pictures, take and give,

Count them for garniture and household-stuff, And where they live needs must our pictures live

And see their faces, listen to their prate,

Partakers of their daily pettiness,

Discussed of, — "This I love, or this I hate, This likes me more, and this affects me less!"

Wherefore I chose my portion. If at whiles

My heart sinks, as monotonous I paint These endless cloisters and eternal aisles

With the same series, Virgin, Babe and Saint,

With the same cold calm beautiful regard, —

At least no merchant traffics in my heart;

The sanctuary's gloom at least shall ward Vain tongues from where my pictures stand apart:

Only prayer breaks the silence of the shrine

While, blackening in the daily candle-smoke,

They moulder on the damp wall's travertine, 'Mid echoes the light footstep never woke.

So, die my pictures! surely, gently die!

O youth, men praise so, — holds their praise its worth?

Blown harshly, keeps the trumpet's golden cry? Tastes sweet the water with such specks of earth?

#### FRA LIPPO LIPPI

I AM poor brother Lippo, by your leave!

You need not clap your torches to my face.

Zooks, what's to blame? you think you see a monk!

What, 't is past midnight, and you go the rounds,

And here you catch me at an alley's end

Where sportive ladies leave their doors ajar?

The Carmine's my cloister: hunt it up,

Do, — harry out, if you must show your zeal,

Whatever rat, there, haps on his wrong hole,

And nip each softling of a wee white mouse,

Weke, weke, that's crept to keep him company!

Aha, you know your betters! Then, you'll take

Your hand away that's fiddling on my throat, And please to know me likewise. Who am I?

Why, one, sir, who is lodging with a friend Three streets off — he's a certain . . . how d'ye call?

Master — a . . . Cosimo of the Medici, I' the house that caps the corner. Boh! you were best!

Remember and tell me, the day you're hanged, How you affected such a gullet's-gripe!

But you, sir, it concerns you that your knaves Pick up a manner nor discredit you:

Zooks, are we pilchards, that they sweep the streets

And count fair prize what comes into their net? He's Judas to a tittle, that man is!

Just such a face! Why, sir, you make amends. Lord, I'm not angry! Bid your handdogs go

Drink out this quarter-florin to the health Of the munificent House that harbors me

(And many more beside, lads! more beside!) And all's come square again. I'd like his face —

His, elbowing on his comrade in the door With the pike and lantern, — for the slave that holds

John Baptist's head a-dangle by the hair With one hand ("Look you, now," as who should say)

And his weapon in the other, yet unwiped! It's not your chance to have a bit of chalk,

A wood-coal or the like? or you should see! Yes, I'm the painter, since you style me so.

What, brother Lippo's doings, up and down, You know them and they take you? like enough!

I saw the proper twinkle in your eye — 'Tell you, I liked your looks at very first.

Let's sit and set things straight now, hip to haunch.

Here's spring come, and the nights one makes up bands

To roam the town and sing out carnival, And I've been three weeks shut within my mew,

A-painting for the great man, saints and saints And saints again. I could not paint all night —

Onf! I leaned out of window for fresh air. There came a hurry of feet and little feet,

A sweep of lute-strings, laughs, and whiffs of song, —

*Flower o' the broom,*

*Take away love, and our earth is a tomb!*

*Flower o' the quince,*

*I let Lisa go, and what good in life since?*

*Flower o' the thyme — and so on. Round they went.*

Scarce had they turned the corner when a titter Like the skipping of rabbits by moonlight, —

three slim shapes, And a face that looked up . . . zooks, sir,

flesh and blood, That's all I'm made of! Into shreds it went,

Curtain and counterpane and coverlet, All the bed-furniture — a dozen knots,

There was a ladder! Down I let myself, Hands and feet, scrambling somehow, and so

dropped,

And after them. I came up with the fun  
Hard by Saint Laurence, hail fellow, well  
met, —

*Flower o' the rose,*  
*If I've been merry, what matter who knows?*  
And so as I was stealing back again  
To get to bed and have a bit of sleep  
Ere I rise up to-morrow and go work  
On Jerome knocking at his poor old breast  
With his great round stone to subdue the flesh,  
You snap me of the sudden. Ah, I see!  
Though your eye twinkles still, you shake your  
head —

Mine 's shaved — a monk, you say — the sting 's  
in that!

If Master Cosimo announced himself,  
Mum 's the word naturally; but a monk!  
Come, what am I a beast for? tell us, now!  
I was a baby when my mother died  
And father died and left me in the street.  
I starved there, God knows how, a year or two  
On fig-skins, melon-parings, rinds and shucks,  
Refuse and rubbish. One fine frosty day,  
My stomach being empty as your hat,  
The wind doubled me up and down I went.  
Old Aunt Lapaccia trussed me with one hand,  
(Its fellow was a stinger as I knew)  
And so along the wall, over the bridge,  
By the straight cut to the convent. Six words  
there,

While I stood munching my first bread that  
month:

"So, boy, you're minded," quoth the good fat  
father,

Wiping his own mouth, 't was refection-time, —  
'To quit this very miserable world?

Will you renounce? . . . "the mouthful of  
bread?" thought I;

By no means! Brief, they made a monk of  
me;

I did renounce the world, its pride and greed,  
Palace, farm, villa, shop, and banking-house,  
Trash, such as these poor devils of Medici  
Have given their hearts to — all at eight years  
old.

Well, sir, I found in time, you may be sure,  
'T was not for nothing — the good bellyful,  
The warm serge and the rope that goes all  
round,

And day-long blessed idleness beside!  
"Let's see what the urchin's fit for" — that  
came next.

Not overmuch their way, I must confess.  
Such a to-do! They tried me with their books;

Lord, they'd have taught me Latin in pure  
waste!

*Flower o' the clove,*  
*All the Latin I construe is "amo," I love!*  
But, mind you, when a boy starves in the streets  
Eight years together, as my fortune was,  
Watching folk's faces to know who will fling  
The bit of half-stripped grape-bunch he desires,  
And who will curse or kick him for his pains, —  
Which gentleman processional and fine,  
Holding a candle to the Sacrament,  
Will wink and let him lift a plate and catch  
The droppings of the wax to sell again,  
Or holla for the Eight and have him whipped, —

How say I? — nay, which dog bites, which lets  
drop

His bone from the heap of offal in the street, —  
Why, soul and sense of him grow sharp alike,  
He learns the look of things, and none the less  
For admonition from the hunger-pinch.

I had a store of such remarks, be sure,  
Which, after I found leisure, turned to use.  
I drew men's faces on my copy-books,  
Scrawled them within the antiphony's marge,  
Joined legs and arms to the long music-notes,  
Found eyes and nose and chin for A's and B's,  
And made a string of pictures of the world  
Betwixt the ins and outs of verb and noun,  
On the wall, the bench, the door. The monks  
looked black.

"Nay," quoth the Prior, "turn him out, d' ye  
say?"

In no wise. Lose a crow and catch a lark.  
What if at last we get our man of parts,  
We Carmelites, like those Camaldolese  
And Preaching Friars, to do our church up fine  
And put the front on it that ought to be!  
And hereupon he bade me daub away.  
Thank you! my head being crammed, the walls  
a blank,

Never was such prompt disembodying.  
First, every sort of monk, the black and white,  
I drew them, fat and lean; then, folk at church,  
From good old gossips waiting to confess  
Their cribs of barrel-droppings, candle-ends, —  
To the breathless fellow at the altar-foot,  
Fresh from his murder, safe and sitting there  
With the little children round him in a row  
Of admiration, half for his beard and half  
For that white anger of his victim's son  
Shaking a fist at him with one fierce arm,  
Signing himself with the other because of Christ  
(Whose sad face on the cross sees only this  
After the passion of a thousand years)  
Till some poor girl, her apron o'er her head,  
(Which the intense eyes looked through) came  
at eve

On tiptoe, said a word, dropped in a loaf,  
Her pair of earrings and a bunch of flowers  
(The brute took growling), prayed, and so was  
gone.

I painted all, then cried "'T is ask and have;  
Choose, for more's ready!" — laid the ladder  
flat,

And showed my covered bit of cloister-wall.  
The monks closed in a circle and praised loud  
Till checked, taught what to see and not to see,  
Being simple bodies, — "That's the very man!  
Look at the boy who stoops to pat the dog!  
That woman's like the Prior's niece who comes  
To care about his asthma: it's the life!"  
But there my triumph's straw-fire flared and  
funked;

Their betters took their turn to see and say:  
The Prior and the learned pulled a face  
And stopped all that in no time. "How?  
what's here?"

Quite from the mark of painting, bless us all!  
Faces, arms, legs, and bodies like the true  
As much as pea and pea! it's devil's-game!  
Your business is not to catch men with show,  
With homage to the perishable clay,



But lift them over it, ignore it all,  
Make them forget there's such a thing as flesh.  
Your business is to paint the souls of men—  
Man's soul, and it's a fire, smoke . . . no, it's  
not . . .

It's vapor done up like a new-born babe—  
(In that shape when you die it leaves your  
mouth)

It's . . . well, what matters talking, it's the  
soul!

Give us no more of body than shows soul!  
Here's Giotto, with his Saint a-praising God,  
That sets us praising, — why not stop with him?  
Why put all thoughts of praise out of our head  
With wonder at lines, colors, and what not?  
Paint the soul, never mind the legs and arms!  
Rub all out, try at it a second time.  
Oh, that white smallish female with the breasts.  
She's just my niece . . . Herodias, I would  
say, —

Who went and danced and got men's heads cut  
off!

Have it all out!" Now, is this sense, I ask?  
A fine way to paint soul, by painting body  
So ill, the eye can't stop there, must go further  
And can't fare worse! Thus, yellow does for  
white

When what you put for yellow's simply black,  
And any sort of meaning looks intense  
When all beside itself means and looks naught.  
Why can't a painter lift each foot in turn,  
Left foot and right foot, go a double step,  
Make his flesh liker and his soul more like,  
Both in their order? Take the prettiest face,  
The Prior's niece . . . patron-saint—is it so  
pretty

You can't discover if it means hope, fear,  
Sorrow or joy? won't beauty go with these?  
Suppose I've made her eyes all right and blue,  
Can't I take breath and try to add life's flash,  
And then add soul and heighten them three-  
fold?

Or say there's beauty with no soul at all—  
(I never saw it—put the case the same—)  
If you get simple beauty and naught else,  
You get about the best thing God invents:  
That's somewhat: and you'll find the soul you  
have missed,

Within yourself, when you return him thanks.  
"Rub all out!" Well, well, there's my life,  
in short,

And so the thing has gone on ever since.  
I'm grown a man no doubt, I've broken  
bounds:

You should not take a fellow eight years old  
And make him swear to never kiss the girls.  
I'm my own master, paint now as I please—  
Having a friend, you see, in the Corner-house!  
Lord, it's fast holding by the rings in front—  
Those great rings serve more purposes than just  
To plant a flag in, or tie up a horse!

And yet the old schooling sticks, the old grave  
eyes

Are peeping o'er my shoulder as I work,  
The heads shake still—"It's art's decline, my  
son!

You're not of the true painters, great and old;  
Brother Angelico's the man, you'll find;

Brother Lorenzo stands his single peer:  
Fag on at flesh, you'll never make the third!"  
*Flower o' the pine,*  
*You keep your mistr . . . manners, and I'll*  
*stick to mine!*

I'm not the third, then: bless us, they must  
know!

Don't you think they're the likeliest to know,  
They with their Latin? So, I swallow my  
rage,

Clench my teeth, suck my lips in tight, and  
paint

To please them—sometimes do and sometimes  
don't;

For, doing most, there's pretty sure to come  
A turn, some warm eve finds me at my saints—  
A laugh, a cry, the business of the world—  
(*Flower o' the peach,*

*Death for us all, and his own life for each!*)  
And my whole soul revolves, the cup runs over,  
The world and life's too big to pass for a dream,  
And I do these wild things in sheer despite,  
And play the fooleries you catch me at,  
In pure rage! The old mill-horse, out at grass  
After hard years, throws up his stiff heels so,  
Although the miller does not preach to him  
The only good of grass is to make chaff.  
What would men have? Do they like grass or  
no—

May they or may n't they? all I want's the  
thing

Settled forever one way. As it is,  
You tell too many lies and hurt yourself:  
You don't like what you only like too much,  
You do like what, if given you at your word,  
You find abundantly detestable.  
For me, I think I speak as I was taught;  
I always see the garden and God there  
A-making man's wife: and, my lesson learned,  
The value and significance of flesh,  
I can't unlearn ten minutes afterwards.

You understand me: I'm a beast, I know.  
But see, now—why, I see as certainly  
As that the morning-star's about to shine,  
What will hap some day. We've a youngster  
here

Comes to our convent, studies what I do,  
Slouches and stares and lets no atom drop:  
His name is Guidi—he'll not mind the  
monks—

They call him Hulking Tom, he lets them  
talk—

He picks my practice up—he'll paint apace,  
I hope so—though I never live so long,  
I know what's sure to follow. You be judge!  
You speak no Latin more than I, belike;  
However, you're my man, you've seen the  
world

—The beauty and the wonder and the power,  
The shapes of things, their colors, lights and  
shades,

Changes, surprises,—and God made it all!  
—For what? Do you feel thankful, ay or  
no,

For this fair town's face, yonder river's line,  
The mountain round it and the sky above,  
Much more the figures of man, woman, child,

These are the frame to? What's it all about?  
To be passed over, despised? or dwelt upon,  
Wondered at? oh, this last of course! — you  
say.

But why not do as well as say, — paint these  
Just as they are, careless what comes of it?  
God's works — paint any one, and count it crime  
To let a truth slip. Don't object, "His works  
Are here already; nature is complete:  
Suppose you reproduce her — (which you can't)  
There's no advantage! you must beat her,  
then."

For, don't you mark? we're made so that we  
love

First when we see them painted, things we  
have passed

Perhaps a hundred times nor cared to see;  
And so they are better, painted — better to us,  
Which is the same thing. Art was given for  
that;

God uses us to help each other so,  
Lending our minds out. Have you noticed,  
now,

Your cullion's hanging face? A bit of chalk,  
And trust me but you should, though! How  
much more,

If I drew higher things with the same truth!  
That were to take the Prior's pulpit-place,  
Interpret God to all of you! Oh, oh,  
It makes me mad to see what men shall do  
And we in our graves! This world's no blot  
for us,

Nor blank; it means intensely, and means  
good:

To find its meaning is my meat and drink.  
"Ay, but you don't so instigate to prayer!"  
Strikes in the Prior: "when your meaning's  
plain

It does not say to folk — remember matins,  
Or, mind you fast next Friday!" Why, for  
this

What need of art at all? A skull and bones,  
Two bits of stick nailed crosswise, or, what's  
best,

A bell to chime the hour with, does as well.  
I painted a Saint Laurence six months since  
At Prato, splashed the fresco in fine style:  
"How looks my painting, now the scaffold's  
down?"

I ask a brother: "Hugely," he returns —  
"Already not one phiz of your three slaves  
Who turn the Deacon off his toasted side,  
But 's scratched and prodded to our heart's con-  
tent,

The pious people have so eased their own  
With coming to say prayers there in a rage:  
We get on fast to see the bricks beneath.  
Expect another job this time next year,  
For pity and religion grow i' the crowd —  
Your painting serves its purpose!" Hang the  
fools!

— That is — you'll not mistake an idle word  
Spoke in a huff by a poor monk, God wot,  
Tasting the air this spicy night which turns  
The unaccustomed head like Chianti wine!  
Oh, the church knows! don't misreport me,  
now!

It's natural a poor monk out of bounds  
Should have his apt word to excuse himself:  
And hearken how I plot to make amends.  
I have bethought me: I shall paint a piece  
... There's for you! Give me six months,  
then go, see

Something in Sant' Ambrogio's! Bless the  
nuns!

They want a cast o' my office. I shall paint  
God in the midst, Madonna and her babe,  
Ringed by a bowery, flowery angel-brood,  
Lilies and vestments and white faces, sweet  
As puff on puff of grated orris-root  
When ladies crowd to Church at midsummer.  
And then i' the front, of course a saint or  
two —

Saint John, because he saves the Florentines,  
Saint Ambrose, who puts down in black and  
white

The convent's friends and gives them a long  
day,

And Job, I must have him there past mis-  
take,

The man of Uz (and Us without the z,  
Painters who need his patience). Well, all  
these

Secured at their devotion, up shall come  
Out of a corner when you least expect,  
As one by a dark stair into a great light,  
Music and talking, who but Lippo! I! —  
Mazed, motionless, and moonstruck — I'm the  
man!

Back I shrink — what is this I see and hear?  
I, caught up with my monk's-things by mis-  
take,

My old serge gown and rope that goes all round,  
I, in this presence, this pure company!  
Where's a hole, where's a corner for escape?  
Then steps a sweet angelic slip of a thing  
Forward, puts out a soft palm — "Not so  
fast!"

— Addresses the celestial presence, "nay —  
He made you and devised you, after all,  
Though he's none of you! Could Saint John  
there draw —

His camel-hair make up a painting-brush?  
We come to brother Lippo for all that,  
*Iste perfecit opus!*" So, all smile —

I shuffle sideways with my blushing face  
Under the cover of a hundred wings  
Thrown like a spread of kirtles when you're  
gay

And play hot cockles, all the doors being shut,  
Till, wholly unexpected, in there pops

The hothead husband! Thus I scuttle off  
To some safe bench behind, not letting go  
The palm of her, the little lily thing

That spoke the good word for me in the nick,  
Like the Prior's niece . . . Saint Lucy, I would  
say.

And so all's saved for me, and for the church  
A pretty picture gained. Go, six months hence!  
Your hand, sir, and good-by: no lights, no  
lights!

The street's hushed, and I know my own way  
back,

Don't fear me! There's the gray beginning.  
Zooks!

## ANDREA DEL SARTO

CALLED "THE FAULTLESS PAINTER"

BUT do not let us quarrel any more,  
No, my Lucrezia; bear with me for once:  
Sit down and all shall happen as you wish.  
You turn your face, but does it bring your  
heart?

I'll work then for your friend's friend, never  
fear,

Treat his own subject after his own way,  
Fix his own time, accept too his own price,  
And shut the money into this small hand  
When next it takes mine. Will it? tenderly?  
Oh, I'll content him, — but to-morrow, Love!  
I often am much wearier than you think,  
This evening more than usual, and it seems  
As if — forgive now — should you let me sit  
Here by the window with your hand in mine  
And look a half-hour forth on Fiesole,  
Both of one mind, as married people use,  
Quietly, quietly the evening through,  
I might get up to-morrow to my work  
Cheerful and fresh as ever. Let us try.  
To-morrow, how you shall be glad for this!  
Your soft hand is a woman of itself,  
And mine the man's bared breast she curls in-  
side.

Don't count the time lost, neither; you must  
serve

For each of the five pictures we require:  
It saves a model. So! keep looking so —  
My serpentine beauty, rounds on rounds!  
— How could you ever prick those perfect ears,  
Even to put the pearl there! oh, so sweet —  
My face, my moon, my everybody's moon,  
Which everybody looks on and calls his,  
And, I suppose, is looked on by in turn,  
While she looks — no one's: very dear, no less.  
You smile? why, there's my picture ready  
made,

There's what we painters call our harmony!  
A common grayness silvers everything, —  
All in a twilight, you and I alike  
— You, at the point of your first pride in me  
(That's gone you know), — but I, at every  
point;

My youth, my hope, my art, being all toned  
down

To yonder sober pleasant Fiesole.  
There's the bell clinking from the chapel-top;  
That length of convent-wall across the way  
Holds the trees safer, huddled more inside;  
The last monk leaves the garden; days de-  
crease,

And autumn grows, autumn in everything.  
Eh? the whole seems to fall into a shape  
As if I saw alike my work and self  
And all that I was born to be and do,  
A twilight-piece. Love, we are in God's hand.  
How strange now looks the life he makes us  
lead;

So free we seem, so fettered fast we are!  
I feel he laid the fetter: let it lie!  
This chamber for example — turn your head —  
All that's behind us! You don't understand

Nor care to understand about my art,  
But you can hear at least when people speak:  
And that cartoon, the second from the door  
— It is the thing, Love! so such thing should  
be —

Behold Madonna! — I am bold to say.  
I can do with my pencil what I know,  
What I see, what at bottom of my heart  
I wish for, if I ever wish so deep —  
Do easily, too — when I say, perfectly,  
I do not boast, perhaps: yourself are judge,  
Who listened to the Legate's talk last week,  
And just as much they used to say in France.  
At any rate 't is easy, all of it!  
No sketches first, no studies, that's long past:  
I do what many dream of all their lives,  
— Dream? strive to do, and agonize to do,  
And fail in doing. I could count twenty such  
On twice your fingers, and not leave this town,  
Who strive — you don't know how the others  
strive

To paint a little thing like that you smeared  
Carelessly passing with your robes afloat, —  
Yet do much less, so much less, Someone says,  
(I know his name, no matter) — so much less!  
Well, less is more, Lucrezia: I am judged.  
There burns a truer light of God in them,  
In their vexed beating stuffed and stopped-up  
brain,

Heart, or whate'er else, than goes on to prompt  
This low-pulsed forthright craftsman's hand of  
mine.

Their works drop groundward, but themselves,  
I know,

Reach many a time a heaven that's shut to me,  
Enter and take their place there sure enough.  
Though they come back and cannot tell the  
world.

My works are nearer heaven, but I sit here.  
The sudden blood of these men! at a word —  
Praise them, it boils, or blame them, it boils  
too.

I, painting from myself and to myself,  
Know what I do, am unmoved by men's blame  
Or their praise either. Somebody remarks  
Morello's outline there is wrongly traced,  
His hue mistaken; what of that? or else,  
Rightly traced and well ordered; what of that?  
Speak as they please, what does the mountain  
care?

Ah, but a man's reach should exceed his grasp,  
Or what's a heaven for? All is silver-gray  
Placid and perfect with my art: the worse!  
I know both what I want and what might gain,  
And yet how profitless to know, to sigh  
"Had I been two, another and myself,  
Our head would have o'erlooked the world!"

No doubt.  
Yonder's a work now, of that famous youth  
The Urbinate who died five years ago.  
(T is copied, George Vasari sent it.)  
Well, I can fancy how he did it all,  
Pouring his soul, with kings and popes to see,  
Reaching, that heaven might so replenish him.  
Above and through his art — for it gives way;  
That arm is wrongly put — and there again —  
A fault to pardon in the drawing's lines,  
Its body, so to speak: its soul is right,



He means right — that, a child may understand.  
Still, what an arm ! and I could alter it :  
But all the play, the insight and the stretch —  
Out of me, out of me ! And wherefore out ?  
Had you enjoined them on me, given me soul,  
We might have risen to Rafael, I and you !  
Nay, Love, you did give all I asked, I think —  
More than I merit, yes, by many times.  
But had you — oh, with the same perfect brow,  
And perfect eyes, and more than perfect mouth,  
And the low voice my soul hears, as a bird  
The fowler's pipe, and follows to the snare —  
Had you, with these the same, but brought a  
mind !

Some women do so. Had the mouth there urged  
" God and the glory ! never care for gain.  
The present by the future, what is that ?  
Live for fame, side by side with Agnolo !  
Rafael is waiting : up to God, all three ! "  
I might have done it for you. So it seems :  
Perhaps not. All is as God overrules.  
Beside, incentives come from the soul's self ;  
The rest avail not. Why do I need you ?  
What wife had Rafael, or has Agnolo ?  
In this world, who can do a thing, will not ;  
And who would do it, cannot, I perceive :  
Yet the will 's somewhat — somewhat, too, the  
power —

And thus we half-men struggle. At the end,  
God, I conclude, compensates, punishes.  
'T is safer for me, if the award be strict,  
That I am something underrated here,  
Poor this long while, despised, to speak the  
truth.

I dared not, do you know, leave home all day,  
For fear of chancing on the Paris lords.  
The best is when they pass and look aside ;  
But they speak sometimes ; I must bear it all.  
Well may they speak ! That Francis, that first  
time,

And that long festal year at Fontainebleau !  
I surely then could sometimes leave the ground,  
Put on the glory, Rafael's daily wear,  
In that humane great monarch's golden look, —  
One finger in his beard or twisted curl  
Over his mouth's good mark that made the  
smile,

One arm about my shoulder, round my neck,  
The jingle of his gold chain in my ear,  
I painting proudly with his breath on me,  
All his court round him, seeing with his eyes,  
Such frank French eyes, and such a fire of souls  
Profuse, my hand kept plying by those  
hearts, —

And, best of all, this, this, this face beyond,  
This in the background, waiting on my work,  
To crown the issue with a last reward !  
A good time, was it not, my kingly days ?  
And had you not grown restless . . . but I  
know —

'T is done and past ; 't was right, my instinct  
said ;

Too live the life grew, golden and not gray,  
And I 'm the weak-eyed bat no sun should  
tempt

Out of the grange whose four walls make his  
world.

How could it end in any other way ?

You called me, and I came home to your heart.  
The triumph was — to reach and stay there ;  
since

I reached it ere the triumph, what is lost ?  
Let my hands frame your face in your hair's  
gold,

You beautiful Lucrezia that are mine !  
" Rafael did this, Andrea painted that ;  
The Roman's is the better when you pray.  
But still the other's Virgin was his wife " —  
Men will excuse me. I am glad to judge  
Both pictures in your presence ; clearer grows  
My better fortune, I resolve to think.  
For, do you know, Lucrezia, as God lives,  
Said one day Agnolo, his very self,  
To Rafael . . . I have known it all these  
years . . .

(When the young man was flaming out his  
thoughts

Upon a palace-wall for Rome to see,  
Too lifted up in heart because of it)  
" Friend, there 's a certain sorry little scrub  
Goes up and down our Florence, none cares how,  
Who, were he set to plan and execute  
As you are, pricked on by your popes and kings,  
Would bring the sweat into that brow of yours ! "  
To Rafael's ! — And indeed the arm is wrong.  
I hardly dare . . . yet, only you to see,  
Give the chalk here — quick, thus the line  
should go !

Ay, but the soul ! he 's Rafael ! rub it out !  
Still, all I care for, if he spoke the truth,  
(What he ? why, who but Michel Agnolo ?  
Do you forget already words like those ? )  
If really there was such a chance, so lost, —  
Is, whether you 're — not grateful — but more  
pleased.

Well, let me think so. And you smile indeed !  
This hour has been an hour ! Another smile ?  
If you would sit thus by me every night  
I should work better, do you comprehend ?  
I mean that I should earn more, give you more.  
See, it is settled dusk now ; there 's a star ;  
Morello 's gone, the watch-lights show the wall,  
The cue-owls speak the name we call them by.  
Come from the window, love, — come in, at last,  
Inside the melancholy little house  
We built to be so gay with. God is just.

King Francis may forgive me : oft at nights  
When I look up from painting, eyes tired out,  
The walls become illumined, brick from brick  
Distinct, instead of mortar, fierce bright gold,  
That gold of his I did cement them with !  
Let us but love each other. Must you go ?  
That Cousin here again ? he waits outside ?  
Must see you — you, and not with me ? Those  
loans ?

More gaming debts to pay ? you smiled for that ?  
Well, let smiles buy me ! have you more to  
spend ?

While hand and eye and something of a heart  
Are left me, work 's my ware, and what 's it  
worth ?

I 'll pay my fancy. Only let me sit  
The gray remainder of the evening out,  
Idle, you call it, and muse perfectly  
How I could paint, were I but back in France,  
One picture, just one more — the Virgin's face,

Not yours this time ! I want you at my side  
To hear them — that is, Michel Agnolo —  
Judge all I do and tell you of its worth.  
Will you ? To-morrow, satisfy your friend.  
I take the subjects for his corridor,  
Finish the portrait out of hand — there, there,  
And throw him in another thing or two  
If he demurs ; the whole should prove enough  
To pay for this same Cousin's freak. Beside,  
What's better and what's all I care about,  
Get you the thirteen scudi for the ruff !  
Love, does that please you ? Ah, but what does  
he,

The Cousin ! what does he to please you more ?

I am grown peaceful as old age to-night.  
I regret little, I would change still less.  
Since there my past life lies, why alter it ?  
The very wrong to Francis ! — it is true  
I took his coin, was tempted and complied,  
And built this house and sinned, and all is said.  
My father and my mother died of want.  
Well, had I riches of my own ? you see  
How one gets rich ! Let each one bear his lot.  
They were born poor, lived poor, and poor they  
died :

And I have labored somewhat in my time  
And not been paid profusely. Some good son  
Paint my two hundred pictures — let him try !  
No doubt, there's something strikes a balance.

Yes,

You loved me quite enough, it seems to-night.  
This must suffice me here. What would one  
have ?

In heaven, perhaps, new chances, one more  
chance —

Four great walls in the New Jerusalem,  
Meted on each side by the angel's reed,  
For Leonard, Rafael, Agnolo and me  
To cover — the three first without a wife,  
While I have mine ! So — still they overcome  
Because there's still Lucrezia, — as I choose.

Again the Cousin's whistle ! Go, my Love.

#### THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB AT SAINT PRAXED'S CHURCH

ROME, 15—

This poem was first published in *Hood's Magazine*, March, 1845, with the title *The Tomb at Saint Praxed's* (Rome, 15—).

VANITY, saith the preacher, vanity !  
Draw round my bed : is Anselm keeping back ?  
Nephews — sons mine . . . ah God, I know not !

Well —

She, men would have to be your mother once,  
Old Gandolf envied me, so fair she was !  
What's done is done, and she is dead beside,  
Dead long ago, and I am Bishop since,  
And as she died so must we die ourselves,  
And thence ye may perceive the world's a dream.  
Life, how and what is it ? As here I lie  
In this state-chamber, dying by degrees,

Hours and long hours in the dead night, I ask  
" Do I live, am I dead ? " Peace, peace seems  
all.

Saint Praxed's ever was the church for peace ;  
And so, about this tomb of mine. I fought  
With tooth and nail to save my niche, ye know :  
— Old Gandolf cozened me, despite my care ;  
Shrewd was that snatch from out the corner  
South

He graced his carrion with, God curse the same !  
Yet still my niche is not so cramped but thence  
One sees the pulpit o' the epistle-side,  
And somewhat of the choir, those silent seats,  
And up into the airy dome where live  
The angels, and a sunbeam's sure to lurk :  
And I shall fill my slab of basalt there,  
And 'neath my tabernacle take my rest,  
With those nine columns round me, two and two,  
The odd one at my feet where Anselm stands :  
Peach-blossom marble all, the rare, the ripe  
As fresh-poured red wine of a mighty pulse.  
— Old Gandolf with his paltry onion-stone,  
Put me where I may look at him ! True peach,  
Rosy and flawless : how I earned the prize !  
Draw close : that conflagration of my church  
— What then ? So much was saved if aught  
were missed !

My sons, ye would not be my death ? Go dig  
The white-grape vineyard where the oil-press  
stood,

Drop water gently till the surface sink,  
And if ye find . . . Ah God, I know not, I ! . . .  
Bedded in store of rotten fig-leaves soft,  
And corded up in a tight olive-frail,  
Some lump, ah God, of *lapis lazuli*,  
Big as a Jew's head cut off at the nape,  
Blue as a vein o'er the Madonna's breast . . .  
Sons, all have I bequeathed you, villas, all,  
That brave Frascati villa with its bath,  
So, let the blue lump poise between my knees,  
Like God the Father's globe on both his hands  
Ye worship in the Jesu Church so gay,  
For Gandolf shall not choose but see and burst !  
Swift as a weaver's shuttle fleet our years :  
Man goeth to the grave, and where is he ?  
Did I say basalt for my slab, sons ? Black —  
'T was ever antique-black I meant ! How else  
Shall ye contrast my frieze to come beneath ?  
The bas-relief in bronze ye promised me,  
Those Pans and Nymphs ye wot of, and per-  
chance

Some tripod, thyrsus, with a vase or so,  
The Saviour at his sermon on the mount,  
Saint Praxed in a glory, and one Pan  
Ready to twitch the Nymph's last garment off,  
And Moses with the tables . . . but I know  
Ye mark me not ! What do they whisper thee,  
Child of my bowels, Anselm ? Ah, ye hope  
To revel down my villas while I gasp  
Bricked o'er with beggar's mouldy travertine  
Which Gandolf from his tomb-top chuckles at !  
Nay, boys, ye love me — all of jasper, then !  
'T is jasper ye stand pledged to, lest I grieve  
My bath must needs be left behind, alas !  
One block, pure green as a pistachio-nut,  
There's plenty jasper somewhere in the world —  
And have I not Saint Praxed's ear to pray  
Horses for ye, and brown Greek manuscripts,

And mistresses with great smooth marbly limbs ?  
 — That's if ye carve my epitaph aright,  
 Choice Latin, picked phrase, Tully's every word,  
 No gaudy ware like Gandolf's second line —  
 Tully, my masters ? Ulpian serves his need !  
 And then how I shall lie through centuries,  
 And hear the blessed mutter of the mass,  
 And see God made and eaten all day long,  
 And feel the steady candle-flame, and taste  
 Good strong thick stupefying incense-smoke !  
 For as I lie here, hours of the dead night,  
 Dying in state and by such slow degrees,  
 I fold my arms as if they clasped a crook,  
 And stretch my feet forth straight as stone can  
 point,

And let the bedclothes, for a morteloth, drop  
 Into great laps and folds of sculptor's-work :  
 And as yon tapers dwindle, and strange thoughts  
 Grow, with a certain humming in my ears,  
 About the life before I lived this life,  
 And this life too, popes, cardinals and priests,  
 Saint Praxed at his sermon on the mount,  
 Your tall pale mother with her talking eyes,  
 And new-found agate urns as fresh as day,  
 And marble's language, Latin pure, discreet,  
 — Aha, ELUCESCERAT quoth our friend ?  
 No Tully, said I, Ulpian at the best !  
 Evil and brief hath been my pilgrimage.  
 All *lapis*, all, sons ! Else I give the Pope  
 My villas ! Will ye ever eat my heart ?  
 Ever your eyes were as a lizard's quick,  
 They glitter like your mother's for my soul,  
 Or ye would heighten my impoverished frieze,  
 Piece out its starved design, and fill my vase  
 With grapes, and add a visor and a Term,  
 And to the tripod ye would tie a lynx  
 That in his struggle throws the thyrsus down,  
 To comfort me on my entablature  
 Whereon I am to lie till I must ask  
 "Do I live, am I dead ?" There, leave me,  
 there !

For ye have stabbed me with ingratitude  
 To death — ye wish it — God, ye wish it !  
 Stone —

Gritstone, a-erumble ! Clammy squares which  
 sweat  
 As if the corpse they keep were oozing  
 through —

And no more *lapis* to delight the world !  
 Well, go ! I bless ye. Fewer tapers there,  
 But in a row : and, going, turn your backs —  
 — Ay, like departing altar-ministrants,  
 And leave me in my church, the church for  
 peace,

That I may watch at leisure if he leers —  
 Old Gandolf — at me, from his onion-stone,  
 As still he envied me, so fair she was !

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

No more wine ? then we'll push back chairs  
 and talk.

A final glass for me, though : cool, i' faith !  
 We ought to have our Abbey back, you see.  
 It's different, preaching in basilicas,  
 And doing duty in some masterpiece  
 Like this of brother Pugin's, bless his heart !

I doubt if they're half baked, those chalk  
 rosettes,  
 Ciphers and stucco-twiddlings everywhere ;  
 It's just like breathing in a lime-kiln : eh ?  
 These hot long ceremonies of our church  
 Cost us a little — oh, they pay the price,  
 You take me — amply pay it ! Now, we'll talk.

So, you despise me, Mr. Gigadibs.  
 No deprecation, — nay, I beg you, sir !  
 Beside 't is our engagement : don't you know,  
 I promised, if you'd watch a dinner out,  
 We'd see truth dawn together ? — truth that  
 peeps

Over the glasses' edge when dinner's done,  
 And body gets its sop and holds its noise  
 And leaves soul free a little. Now's the time :  
 Truth's break of day ! You do despise me then.  
 And if I say, "despise me," — never fear !  
 I know you do not in a certain sense —  
 Not in my arm-chair, for example : here,  
 I well imagine you respect my place  
 (*Status, entourage, worldly circumstance*)  
 Quite to its value — very much indeed :  
 — Are up to the protesting eyes of you  
 In pride at being seated here for once —  
 You'll turn it to such capital account !

When somebody, through years and years to  
 come,  
 Hints of the bishop, — names me — that's  
 enough :

"Blougram ? I knew him" — (into it you  
 slide)

"Dined with him once, a Corpus Christi Day,  
 All alone, we two ; he's a clever man :  
 And after dinner, — why, the wine you  
 know, —

Oh, there was wine, and good ! — what with the  
 wine . . .

'Faith, we began upon all sorts of talk !  
 He's no bad fellow, Blougram ; he had seen  
 Something of mine he relished, some review :  
 He's quite above their humbug in his heart,  
 Half-said as much, indeed — the thing's his  
 trade.

I warrant, Blougram's skeptical at times :  
 How otherwise ? I liked him, I confess !"

*Che che*, my dear sir, as we say at Rome,  
 Don't you protest now ! It's fair give and  
 take ;

You have had your turn and spoken your home-  
 truths :

The hand's mine now, and here you follow suit.

Thus much conceded, still the first fact  
 stays —

You do despise me ; your ideal of life  
 Is not the bishop's ; you would not be I.  
 You would like better to be Goethe, now,  
 Or Buonaparte, or, bless me, lower still,  
 Count D'Orsay, — so you did what you pre-  
 ferred,

Spoke as you thought, and, as you cannot help,  
 Believed or disbelieved, no matter what,  
 So long as on that point, whate'er it was,  
 You loosed your mind, were whole and sole  
 yourself.

— That, my ideal never can include,



Upon that element of truth and worth  
Never be based ! for say they make me Pope —  
(They can't — suppose it for our argument !)  
Why, there I'm at my tether's end, I've  
reached

My height, and not a height which pleases you :  
An unbelieving Pope won't do, you say.  
It's like those eerie stories nurses tell,  
Of how some actor on a stage played Death,  
With pasteboard crown, sham orb and tinselled  
dart,

And called himself the monarch of the world ;  
Then, going in the tire-room afterward,  
Because the play was done, to shift himself,  
Got touched upon the sleeve familiarly,  
The moment he had shut the closet door,  
By Death himself. Thus God might touch a  
Pope

At unawares, ask what his baubles mean,  
And whose part he presumed to play just now.  
Best be yourself, imperial, plain and true !

So, drawing comfortable breath again,  
You weigh and find, whatever more or less  
I boast of my ideal realized  
Is nothing in the balance when opposed  
To your ideal, your grand simple life,  
Of which you will not realize one jot.  
I am much, you are nothing ; you would be all,  
I would be merely much : you beat me there.

No, friend, you do not beat me : hearken why !  
The common problem, yours, mine, every one's,  
Is — not to fancy what were fair in life  
Provided it could be, — but, finding first  
What may be, then find how to make it fair  
Up to our means : a very different thing !  
No abstract intellectual plan of life  
Quite irrespective of life's plainest laws,  
But one, a man, who is man and nothing more,  
May lead within a world which (by your leave)  
Is Rome or London, not Fool's-paradise.  
Embellish Rome, idealize away,  
Make paradise of London if you can,  
You're welcome, nay, you're wise.

A simile !

We mortals cross the ocean of this world  
Each in his average cabin of a life ;  
The best's not big, the worst yields elbow-  
room.  
Now for our six months' voyage — how pre-  
pare ?

You come on shipboard with a landsman's list  
Of things he calls convenient : so they are !  
An India screen is pretty furniture,  
A piano-forte is a fine resource,  
All Balzac's novels occupy one shelf,  
The new edition fifty volumes long ;  
And little Greek books, with the funny type  
They get up well at Leipsic, fill the next :  
Go on ! slabbed marble, what a bath it makes !  
And Parma's pride, the Jerome, let us add !  
'T were pleasant could Correggio's fleeting glow  
Hang full in face of one where'er one roams,  
Since he more than the others brings with him  
Italy's self, — the marvellous Modenese ! —  
Yet was not on your list before, perhaps.

— Alas, friend, here's the agent . . . is't the  
name ?

The captain, or whoever's master here —

You see him screw his face up ; what's his  
cry

Ere you set foot on shipboard ? "Six feet  
square !"

If you won't understand what six feet mean,  
Compute and purchase stores accordingly —  
And if, in pique because he overhauls  
Your Jerome, piano, bath, you come on board  
Bare — why, you cut a figure at the first  
While sympathetic landsmen see you off ;  
Not afterward, when long ere half seas over,  
You peep up from your utterly naked boards  
Into some snug and well-appointed berth,  
Like mine for instance (try the cooler jug —  
Put back the other, but don't jog the ice !)  
And mortified you mutter, "Well and good ;  
He sits enjoying his sea-furniture ;  
'T is stout and proper, and there's store of it :  
Though I've the better notion, all agree,  
Of fitting rooms up. Hang the carpenter,  
Neat ship-shape fixings and contrivances —  
I would have brought my Jerome, frame and  
all !"

And meantime you bring nothing : never  
mind —

You've proved your artist-nature : what you  
don't

You might bring, so despise me, as I say.

Now come, let's backward to the starting-  
place.

See my way : we're two college friends, sup-  
pose.

Prepare together for our voyage, then ;  
Each note and check the other in his work, —  
Here's mine, a bishop's outfit ; criticise !  
What's wrong ? why won't you be a bishop  
too ?

Why first, you don't believe, you don't and  
can't,

(Not stately, that is, and fixedly

And absolutely and exclusively)

In any revelation called divine.

No dogmas nail your faith ; and what remains

But say so, like the honest man you are ?

First, therefore, overhaul theology !

Nay, I too, not a fool, you please to think,

Must find believing every whit as hard :

And if I do not frankly say as much,

The ugly consequence is clear enough.

Now wait, my friend : well, I do not believe —

If you'll accept no faith that is not fixed,

Absolute and exclusive, as you say.

You're wrong — I mean to prove it in due  
time.

Meanwhile, I know where difficulties lie

I could not, cannot solve, nor ever shall,

So give up hope accordingly to solve —

(To you, and over the wine). Our dogmas then

With both of us, though in unlike degree,

Missing full credence — overboard with them !

I mean to meet you on your own premise :

Good, there go mine in company with yours !

And now what are we? unbelievers both,  
Calm and complete, determinately fixed  
To-day, to-morrow, and forever, pray?  
You 'll guarantee me that? Not so, I think!  
In no wise! all we 've gained is, that belief,  
As unbelief before, shakes us by fits.  
Confounds us like its predecessor. Where 's  
The gain? how can we guard our unbelief,  
Make it bear fruit to us? — the problem here.  
Just when we are safest, there 's a sunset-touch,  
A fancy from a flower-bell, some one's death,  
A chorus-ending from Euripides, —  
And that 's enough for fifty hopes and fears  
As old and new at once as nature's self,  
To rap and knock and enter in our soul,  
Take hands and dance there, a fantastic ring,  
Round the ancient idol, on his base again, —  
The grand Perhaps! We look on helplessly.  
There the old misgivings, crooked questions  
are —

This good God, — what he could do, if he would,  
Would, if he could — then must have done long  
since:

If so, when, where and how? some way must  
be, —

Once feel about, and soon or late you hit  
Some sense, in which it might be, after all.  
Why not, "The Way, the Truth, the Life?"

— That way

Over the mountain, which who stands upon  
Is apt to doubt if it be meant for a road;  
While, if he views it from the waste itself,  
Up goes the line there, plain from base to brow,  
Not vague, mistakable! what 's a break or two  
Seen from the unbroken desert either side?  
And then (to bring in fresh philosophy)  
What if the breaks themselves should prove at  
last

The most consummate of contrivances  
To train a man's eye, teach him what is faith?  
And so we stumble at truth's very test!  
All we have gained then by our unbelief  
Is a life of doubt diversified by faith,  
For one of faith diversified by doubt:  
We called the chess-board white, — we call it  
black.

"Well," you rejoin, "the end 's no worse, at  
least;

We 've reason for both colors on the board:  
Why not confess then, where I drop the faith  
And you the doubt, that I 'm as right as you?"

Because, friend, in the next place, this being  
so,

And both things even, — faith and unbelief  
Left to a man's choice, — we 'll proceed a step,  
Returning to our image, which I like.

A man's choice, yes — but a cabin-passen-  
ger's —

The man made for the special life o' the  
world —

Do you forget him? I remember though!  
Consult our ship's conditions and you find  
One and but one choice suitable to all;  
The choice, that you unluckily prefer,

Turning things topsy-turvy — they or it  
Going to the ground. Belief or unbelief  
Bears upon life, determines its whole course,  
Begins at its beginning. See the world  
Such as it is, — you made it not, nor I;  
I mean to take it as it is, — and you,  
Not so you 'll take it, — though you get naught  
else.

I know the special kind of life I like,  
What suits the most my idiosyncrasy,  
Brings out the best of me and bears me fruit  
In power, peace, pleasantness and length of  
days.

I find that positive belief does this  
For me, and unbelief, no whit of this.  
— For you, it does, however? — that, we 'll try!  
'Tis clear, I cannot lead my life, at least,  
Induce the world to let me peaceably,  
Without declaring at the outset, "Friends,  
I absolutely and peremptorily  
Believe!" — I say, faith is my waking life:  
One sleeps, indeed, and dreams at intervals,  
We know, but waking 's the main point with  
us,

And my provision 's for life's waking part.  
Accordingly, I use heart, head and hand  
All day, I build, scheme, study, and make  
friends;

And when night overtakes me, down I lie,  
Sleep, dream a little, and get done with it,  
The sooner the better, to begin afresh.  
What 's midnight doubt before the day'spring's  
faith?

You, the philosopher, that disbelieve,  
That recognize the night, give dreams their  
weight —

To be consistent you should keep your bed,  
Abstain from healthy acts that prove you man,  
For fear you drowse perhaps at unawares!  
And certainly at night you 'll sleep and dream,  
Live through the day and bustle as you please.  
And so you live to sleep as I to wake,  
To unbelieve as I to still believe?  
Well, and the common sense o' the world calls  
you

Bed-ridden, — and its good things come to me.  
Its estimation, which is half the fight,  
That 's the first-cabin comfort I secure:  
The next . . . but you perceive with half an  
eye!

Come, come, it 's best believing, if we may;  
You can't but own that!

Next, concede again,

If once we choose belief, on all accounts  
We can't be too decisive in our faith,  
Conclusive and exclusive in its terms,  
To suit the world which gives us the good  
things.

In every man's career are certain points  
Whereon he dares not be indifferent;  
The world detects him clearly, if he dare,  
As baffled at the game, and losing life.  
He may care little or he may care much  
For riches, honor, pleasure, work, repose.  
Since various theories of life and life's  
Success are extant which might easily  
Comport with either estimate of these;

And whoso chooses wealth or poverty,  
 Labor or quiet, is not judged a fool  
 Because his fellow would choose otherwise :  
 We let him choose upon his own account  
 So long as he 's consistent with his choice,  
 But certain points, left wholly to himself,  
 When once a man has arbitrated on,  
 We say he must succeed there or go hang.  
 Thus, he should wed the woman he loves most  
 Or needs most, whatso'er the love or need —  
 For he can't wed twice. Then, he must avouch,  
 Or follow, at the least, sufficiently,  
 The form of faith his conscience holds the best,  
 Whate'er the process of conviction was :  
 For nothing can compensate his mistake  
 On such a point, the man himself being judge :  
 He cannot wed twice, nor twice lose his soul.

Well now, there 's one great form of Christian  
 faith

I happened to be born in — which to teach  
 Was given me as I grew up, on all hands,  
 As best and readiest means of living by ;  
 The same on examination being proved  
 The most pronounced moreover, fixed, precise  
 And absolute form of faith in the whole world —  
 Accordingly, most potent of all forms  
 For working on the world. Observe, my  
 friend !

Such as you know me, I am free to say,  
 In these hard latter days which hamper one,  
 Myself — by no immoderate exercise  
 Of intellect and learning, but the tact  
 To let external forces work for me,  
 — Bid the street's stones be bread and they are  
 bread ;

Bid Peter's creed, or rather, Hildebrand's,  
 Exalt me o'er my fellows in the world  
 And make my life an ease and joy and pride ;  
 It does so, — which for me 's a great point  
 gained,

Who have a soul and body that exact  
 A comfortable care in many ways.  
 There 's power in me and will to dominate  
 Which I must exercise, they hurt me else :  
 In many ways I need mankind's respect,  
 Obedience, and the love that 's born of fear :  
 While at the same time, there 's a taste I have,  
 A toy of soul, a titillating thing,  
 Refuses to digest these dainties crude.

The naked life is gross till clothed upon :  
 I must take what men offer, with a grace  
 As though I would not, could I help it, take !  
 An uniform I wear though over-rich —  
 Something imposed on me, no choice of mine ;  
 No fancy-dress worn for pure fancy's sake  
 And despicable therefore ! now folk kneel  
 And kiss my hand — of course the Church's  
 hand.

Thus I am made, thus life is best for me,  
 And thus that it should be I have procured ;  
 And thus it could not be another way,  
 I venture to imagine.

You 'll reply,  
 So far my choice, no doubt, is a success ;  
 But were I made of better elements,  
 With nobler instincts, purer tastes, like you,

I hardly would account the thing success  
 Though it did all for me I say.

But, friend,  
 We speak of what is ; not of what might be,  
 And how 't were better if 't were otherwise.  
 I am the man you see here plain enough :  
 Grant I 'm a beast, why, beasts must lead  
 beasts' lives !

Suppose I own at once to tail and claws ;  
 The tailless man exceeds me : but being tailed  
 I 'll lash out lion fashion, and leave apes  
 To dock their stump and dress their haunches  
 up.

My business is not to remake myself,  
 But make the absolute best of what God made.  
 Or — our first simile — though you prove me  
 doomed

To a viler berth still, to the steerage-hole,  
 The sheep-pen or the pig-sty, I should strive  
 To make what use of each were possible ;  
 And as this cabin gets upholstery,  
 That hutch should rustle with sufficient straw.

But, friend, I don't acknowledge quite so fast  
 I fail of all your manhood's lofty tastes  
 Enumerated so complacently,  
 On the mere ground that you forsooth can find  
 In this particular life I choose to lead  
 No fit provision for them. Can you not ?  
 Say you, my fault is I address myself  
 To grosser estimators than should judge ?  
 And that 's no way of holding up the soul,  
 Which, nobler, needs men's praise perhaps, yet  
 knows

One wise man's verdict outweighs all the  
 fools' —  
 Would like the two, but, forced to choose,  
 takes that.

I pine among my million imbeciles  
 (You think) aware some dozen men of sense  
 Eye me and know me, whether I believe  
 In the last winking Virgin, as I vow,  
 And am a fool, or disbelieve in her  
 And am a knave, — approve in neither case,  
 Withhold their voices though I look their way :  
 Like Verdi when, at his worst opera's end  
 (The thing they gave at Florence, — what 's its  
 name ?)

While the mad houseful's plaudits near out-  
 bang  
 His orchestra of salt-box, tongs, and bones,  
 He looks through all the roaring and the  
 wreaths  
 Where sits Rossini patient in his stall.

Nay, friend, I meet you with an answer  
 here —

That even your prime men who appraise their  
 kind

Are men still, catch a wheel within a wheel,  
 See more in a truth than the truth's simple self,  
 Confuse themselves. You see lads walk the  
 street

Sixty the minute ; what 's to note in that ?  
 You see one lad o'erstride a chimney-stack ;  
 Him you must watch — he 's sure to fall, yet  
 stands !



Our interest 's on the dangerous edge of things.  
The honest thief, the tender murderer,  
The superstitious atheist, demirep  
That loves and saves her soul in new French  
books —

We watch while these in equilibrium keep  
The giddy line midway : one step aside,  
They're classed and done with. I, then, keep  
the line

Before your sages, — just the men to shrink  
From the gross weights, coarse scales and  
labels broad

You offer their refinement. Fool or knave?  
Why needs a bishop be a fool or knave  
When there 's a thousand diamond weights  
between?

So, I enlist them. Your picked twelve, you 'll  
find,

Profess themselves indignant, scandalized  
At thus being held unable to explain  
How a superior man who disbelieves  
May not believe as well: that 's Schelling's  
way!

It 's through my coming in the tail of time,  
Nicking the minute with a happy tact.  
Had I been born three hundred years ago  
They'd say, "What 's strange?" Blougram of  
course believes; "

And, seventy years since, "disbelieves of  
course."

But now, "He may believe; and yet, and yet  
How can he?" All eyes turn with interest.  
Whereas, step off the line on either side —  
You, for example, clever to a fault,  
The rough and ready man who write apace,  
Read somewhat seldomer, think perhaps even  
less —

You disbelieve! Who wonders and who cares?  
Lord So-and-So — his coat bedropped with  
wax,

All Peter's chains about his waist, his back  
Brave with the needlework of Noddledom —  
Believes! Again, who wonders and who cares?  
But I, the man of sense and learning too,  
The able to think yet act, the this, the that,  
I, to believe at this late time of day!  
Enough; you see, I need not fear contempt.

— Except it 's yours! Admire me as these  
may,  
You don't. But whom at least do you admire?  
Present your own perfection, your ideal,  
Your pattern man for a minute — oh, make  
haste!

Is it Napoleon you would have us grow?  
Concede the means; allow his head and hand,  
(A large concession, clever as you are)  
Good! In our common primal element  
Of unbelief (we can't believe, you know —  
We're still at that admission, recollect!)  
Where do you find — apart from, towering o'er  
The secondary temporary aims  
Which satisfy the gross taste you despise —  
Where do you find his star? — his crazy trust  
God knows through what or in what? it 's alive  
And shines and leads him, and that 's all we  
want.

Have we aught in our sober night shall point

Such ends as his were, and direct the means  
Of working out our purpose straight as his,  
Nor bring a moment's trouble on success  
With after-care to justify the same?

— Be a Napoleon, and yet disbelieve —  
Why, the man 's mad, friend, take his light  
away!

What 's the vague good o' the world, for which  
you dare

With comfort to yourself blow millions up?  
We neither of us see it! we do see  
The blown-up millions — spatter of their brains  
And writhing of their bowels and so forth,  
In that bewildering entanglement  
Of horrible eventualities

Past calculation to the end of time!  
Can I mistake for some clear word of God  
(Which were my ample warrant for it all)  
His puff of hazy instinct, idle talk,  
"The State, that 's I," quack-nonsense about  
crowns,

And (when one beats the man to his last hold)  
A vague idea of setting things to rights,  
Policing people efficaciously,  
More to their profit, most of all to his own;  
The whole to end that dismallest of ends  
By an Austrian marriage, cant to us the Church,  
And resurrection of the old régime?

Would I, who hope to live a dozen years,  
Fight Austerlitz for reasons such and such?  
No: for, concede me but the merest chance  
Doubt may be wrong — there 's judgment, life  
to come!

With just that chance, I dare not. Doubt  
proves right?

This present life is all? — you offer me  
Its dozen noisy years, without a chance  
That wedding an archduchess, wearing lace,  
And getting called by divers new-coined names,  
Will drive off ugly thoughts and let me dine,  
Sleep, read and chat in quiet as I like!  
Therefore I will not.

Take another case;

Fit up the cabin yet another way.  
What say you to the poets? shall we write  
Hamlet, Othello — make the world our own,  
Without a risk to run of either sort?  
I can't! — to put the strongest reason first.  
"But try," you urge, "the trying shall suffice;  
The aim, if reached or not, makes great the  
life:  
Try to be Shakespeare, leave the rest to fate!"  
Spare my self-knowledge — there 's no fooling  
me!

If I prefer remaining my poor self,  
I say so not in self-dispraise but praise.  
If I 'm a Shakespeare, let the well alone;  
Why should I try to be what now I am?  
If I 'm no Shakespeare, as too probable, —  
His power and consciousness and self-delight  
And all we want in common, shall I find —  
Trying forever? while on points of taste  
Wherewith, to speak it humbly, he and I  
Are dowered alike — I 'll ask you, I or he,  
Which in our two lives realizes most?  
Much, he imagined — somewhat, I possess.  
He had the imagination; stick to that!

Let him say, "In the face of my soul's works  
Your world is worthless and I touch it not  
Lest I should wrong them" — I'll withdraw  
my plea.

But does he say so? look upon his life!  
Himself, who only can, gives judgment there.  
He leaves his towers and gorgeous palaces  
To build the trimmest house in Stratford town;  
Saves money, spends it, owns the worth of  
things,

Giulio Romano's pictures, Dowland's lute;  
Enjoys a show, respects the puppets, too,  
And none more, had he seen its entry once,  
Than "Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal."  
Why then should I who play that personage,  
The very Pandulph Shakespeare's fancy made,  
Be told that had the poet chanced to start  
From where I stand now (some degree like  
mine

Being just the goal he ran his race to reach)  
He would have run the whole race back, for-  
sooth,

And left being Pandulph, to begin write plays?  
Ah, the earth's best can be but the earth's best!  
Did Shakespeare live, he could but sit at home  
And get himself in dreams the Vatican,  
Greek busts, Venetian paintings, Roman walls,  
And English books, none equal to his own,  
Which I read, bound in gold (he never did).  
— Terni's fall, Naples' bay, and Gothard's  
top —

Eh, friend? I could not fancy one of these;  
But, as I pour this claret, there they are:  
I've gained them — crossed Saint Gothard last  
July

With ten mules to the carriage and a bed  
Slung inside; is my hap the worse for that?  
We want the same things, Shakespeare and my-  
self,

And what I want, I have: he, gifted more,  
Could fancy he too had them when he liked,  
But not so thoroughly that, if fate allowed,  
He would not have them also in my sense.  
We play one game; I send the ball aloft  
No less adroitly that of fifty strokes  
Scarce five go o'er the wall so wide and high  
Which sends them back to me: I wish and get.  
He struck balls higher and with better skill,  
But at a poor fence level with his head,  
And hit — his Stratford house, a coat of arms,  
Successful dealings in his grain and wool, —  
While I receive heaven's incense in my nose  
And style myself the cousin of Queen Bess.  
Ask him, if this life's all, who wins the game?

Believe — and our whole argument breaks up.  
Enthusiasm's the best thing, I repeat;  
Only, we can't command it: fire and life  
Are all, dead matter's nothing, we agree:  
And be it a mad dream or God's very breath,  
The fact's the same, — belief's fire, once in us,  
Makes of all else mere stuff to show itself:  
We penetrate our life with such a glow  
As fire lends wood and iron — this turns steel,  
That burns to ash — all's one, fire proves its  
power

For good or ill, since men call flare success.  
But paint a fire, it will not therefore burn.

Light one in me, I'll find it food enough!  
Why, to be Luther — that's a life to lead,  
Incomparably better than my own.  
He comes, reclaims God's earth for God, he  
says,

Sets up God's rule again by simple means,  
Reopens a shut book, and all is done.  
He flared out in the flaring of mankind;  
Such Luther's luck was: how shall such be  
mine?

If he succeeded, nothing's left to do:  
And if he did not altogether — well,  
Strauss is the next advance. All Strauss  
should be

I might be also. But to what result?  
He looks upon no future: Luther did.  
What can I gain on the denying side?  
Ice makes no conflagration. State the facts,  
Read the text right, emancipate the world —  
The emancipated world enjoys itself  
With scarce a thank-you: Blougram told it first  
It could not owe a farthing, — not to him  
More than Saint Paul! 't would press its pay.  
you think?

Then add there's still that plaguy hundredth  
chance

Strauss may be wrong. And so a risk is run —  
For what gain? not for Luther's, who secured  
A real heaven in his heart throughout his life,  
Supposing death a little altered things.

"Ay, but since really you lack faith," you  
cry,

"You run the same risk really on all sides,  
In cool indifference as bold unbelief.  
As well be Strauss as swing 'twixt Paul and  
him.

It's not worth having, such imperfect faith,  
No more available to do faith's work  
Than unbelief like mine. Whole faith, or  
none!"

Softly, my friend! I must dispute that  
point.

Once own the use of faith, I'll find you faith.  
We're back on Christian ground. You call for  
faith:

I show you doubt, to prove that faith exists.  
The more of doubt, the stronger faith, I say,  
If faith o'ercomes doubt. How I know it does?  
By life and man's free will, God gave for that!  
To mould life as we choose it, shows our  
choice:

That's our one act, the previous work's his  
own.

You criticise the soul? It reared this tree —  
This broad life and whatever fruit it bears!  
What matter though I doubt at every pore,  
Head-doubts, heart-doubts, doubts at my fin-  
gers' ends,

Doubts in the trivial work of every day,  
Doubts at the very bases of my soul  
In the grand moments when she probes her-  
self —

If finally I have a life to show,  
The thing I did, brought out in evidence  
Against the thing done to me underground  
By hell and all its brood, for aught I know?

I say, whence sprang this? shows it faith or doubt?

All 's doubt in me; where 's break of faith in this?

It is the idea, the feeling and the love, God means mankind should strive for and show forth

Whatever be the process to that end, — And not historic knowledge, logic sound, And metaphysical acumen, sure!

"What think ye of Christ," friend? when all 's done and said,

Like you this Christianity or not?

It may be false, but will you wish it true?

Has it your vote to be so if it can?

Trust you an instinct silenced long ago

That will break silence and enjoin you love

What mortified philosophy is hoarse,

And all in vain, with bidding you despise?

If you desire faith — then you 've faith enough:

What else seeks God — nay, what else seek ourselves?

You form a notion of me, we 'll suppose,

On hearsay; it 's a favorable one:

"But still," (you add), "there was no such good man,

Because of contradiction in the facts.

One proves, for instance, he was born in Rome, This Blougram; yet throughout the tales of him

I see he figures as an Englishman."

Well, the two things are reconcilable.

But would I rather you discovered that,

Subjoining — "Still, what matter though they be?

Blougram concerns me naught, born here or there."

Pure faith indeed — you know not what you ask!

Naked belief in God the Omnipotent,

Omniscient, Omnipresent, sears too much

The sense of conscious creatures to be borne.

It were the seeing him, no flesh shall dare.

Some think, Creation 's meant to show him forth:

I say it 's meant to hide him all it can,

And that 's what all the blessed evil 's for.

Its use in Time is to environ us,

Our breath, our drop of dew, with shield enough

Against that sight till we can bear its stress.

Under a vertical sun, the exposed brain

And lidless eye and disemprisoned heart

Less certainly would wither up at once

Than mind, confronted with the truth of him.

But time and earth case-harden us to live;

The feeblest sense is trusted most; the child

Feels God a moment, ichors o'er the place,

Plays on and grows to be a man like us.

With me, faith means perpetual unbelief

Kept quiet like the snake 'neath Michael's foot

Who stands calm just because he feels it writhe.

Or, if that 's too ambitious, — here 's my box — I need the excitation of a pinch

Threatening the torpor of the inside-nose

Nigh on the imminent sneeze that never comes.

'Leave it in peace,' advise the simple folk:

Make it aware of peace by itching-fits, Say I — let doubt occasion still more faith!

You 'll say, once all believed, man, woman, child,

In that dear middle-age these noodles praise.

How you 'd exult if I could put you back

Six hundred years, blot out cosmogony,

Geology, ethnology, what not,

(Greek endings, each the little passing-bell

That signifies some faith 's about to die),

And set you square with Genesis again, —

When such a traveller told you his last news,

He saw the ark a-top of Ararat

But did not climb there since 't was getting dusk

And robber-bands infest the mountain's foot!

How should you feel, I ask, in such an age,

How act? As other people felt and did;

With soul more blank than this decanter's knob,

Believe — and yet lie, kill, rob, fornicate,

Full in belief's face, like the beast you 'd be!

No, when the fight begins within himself,

A man 's worth something. God stoops o'er his head,

Satan looks up between his feet — both tug —

He 's left, himself, i' the middle: the soul wakes

And grows. Prolong that battle through his life!

Never leave growing till the life to come!

Here, we 've got callous to the Virgin's winks

That used to puzzle people wholesomely:

Men have outgrown the shame of being fools.

What are the laws of nature, not to bend

If the Church bid them? — brother Newman asks.

Up with the Immaculate Conception, then —

On to the rack with faith! — is my advice.

Will not that hurry us upon our knees,

Knocking our breasts, "It can't be — yet it shall!

Who am I, the worm, to argue with my Pope? Low things confound the high things!" and so forth.

That 's better than acquitting God with grace

As some folk do. He 's tried — no case is proved,

Philosophy is lenient — he may go!

You 'll say, the old system 's not so obsolete

But men believe still: ay, but who and where?

King Bomba's lazzaroni foster yet

The sacred flame, so Antonelli writes;

But even of these, what ragamuffin-saint

Believes God watches him continually,

As he believes in fire that it will burn,

Or rain that it will drench him? Break fire's law,

Sin against rain, although the penalty

Be just a singe or soaking? "No," he smiles;

"Those laws are laws that can enforce themselves."

The sum of all is — yes, my doubt is great, My faith 's still greater, then my faith 's enough.



I have read much, thought much, experienced much,

Yet would die rather than avow my fear  
The Naples' liquefaction may be false,  
When set to happen by the palace-clock  
According to the clouds or dinner-time.  
I hear you recommend, I might at least  
Eliminate, declassify my faith  
Since I adopt it; keeping what I must  
And leaving what I can — such points as this.  
I won't — that is, I can't throw one away.  
Supposing there's no truth in what I hold  
About the need of trial to man's faith,  
Still, when you bid me purify the same,  
To such a process I discern no end.  
Clearing off one excrescence to see two,  
There's ever a next in size, now grown as big,  
That meets the knife: I cut and cut again!  
First cut the Liquefaction, what comes last  
But Fichte's clever cut at God himself?  
Experimentalize on sacred things!  
I trust nor hand nor eye nor heart nor brain  
To stop betimes: they all get drunk alike.  
The first step, I am master not to take.

You'd find the cutting-process to your taste  
As much as leaving growths of lies unpruned,  
Nor see more danger in it, — you retort.  
Your taste's worth mine; but my taste proves  
more wise

When we consider that the steadfast hold  
On the extreme end of the chain of faith  
Gives all the advantage, makes the difference  
With the rough purblind mass we seek to rule:  
We are their lords, or they are free of us,  
Just as we tighten or relax our hold.  
So, other matters equal, we'll revert  
To the first problem — which, if solved my way  
And thrown into the balance, turns the scale —  
How we may lead a comfortable life,  
How suit our luggage to the cabin's size.

Of course you are remarking all this time  
How narrowly and grossly I view life,  
Respect the creature-comforts, care to rule  
The masses, and regard complacently  
"The cabin," in our old phrase. Well, I do.  
I act for, talk for, live for this world now,  
As this world prizes action, life and talk:  
No prejudice to what next world may prove,  
Whose new laws and requirements, my best  
pledge

To observe then, is that I observe these now,  
Shall do hereafter what I do meanwhile.  
Let us concede (gratuitously though)  
Next life relieves the soul of body, yields  
Pure spiritual enjoyment: well, my friend,  
Why lose this life if the meantime, since its use  
May be to make the next life more intense?

Do you know, I have often had a dream  
(Work it up in your next month's article)  
Of man's poor spirit in its progress, still  
Losing true life forever and a day  
Through ever trying to be and ever being —  
In the evolution of successive spheres —  
Before its actual sphere and place of life,  
Halfway into the next, which having reached,

It shoots with corresponding foolery  
Halfway into the next still, on and off!  
As when a traveller, bound from North to  
South,

Scouts fur in Russia: what's its use in France?  
In France spurns flannel: where's its need in  
Spain?

In Spain drops cloth, too cumbrous for Algiers!  
Linen goes next, and last the skin itself,  
A superfluity at Timbuctoo.

When, through his journey, was the fool at  
ease?

I'm at ease now, friend; worldly in this world,  
I take and like its way of life; I think  
My brothers, who administer the means,  
Live better for my comfort — that's good too;  
And God, if he pronounce upon such life,  
Approves my service, which is better still.  
If he keep silence, — why, for you or me  
Or that brute beast pulled-up in to-day's  
"Times."

What odds is 't, save to ourselves, what life we  
lead?

You meet me at this issue: you declare, —  
All special-pleading done with — truth is truth,  
And justifies itself by undreamed ways.  
You don't fear but it's better, if we doubt,  
To say so, act up to our truth perceived  
However feebly. Do then, — act away!  
'T is there I'm on the watch for you. How  
one acts

Is, both of us agree, our chief concern:  
And how you'll act is what I fain would see  
If, like the candid person you appear,  
You dare to make the most of your life's  
scheme

As I of mine, live up to its full law  
Since there's no higher law that counterchecks.  
Put natural religion to the test  
You've just demolished the revealed with —  
quick,

Down to the root of all that checks your will,  
All prohibition to lie, kill and thieve,  
Or even to be an atheistic priest!  
Suppose a pricking to incontinence —  
Philosophers deduce you chastity  
Or shame, from just the fact that at the first  
Whoso embraced a woman in the field,  
Threw club down and forewent his brains be-  
side,

So, stood a ready victim in the reach  
Of any brother savage, club in hand;  
Hence saw the use of going out of sight  
In wood or cave to prosecute his loves:  
I read this in a French book t'other day.  
Does law so analyzed coerce you much?  
Oh, men spin clouds of fuzz where matters end,  
But you who reach where the first thread be-  
gins,

You'll soon cut that! — which means you can,  
but won't,

Through certain instincts, blind, unreasoned-  
out,

You dare not set aside, you can't tell why,  
But there they are, and so you let them rule.  
Then, friend, you seem as much a slave as I,  
A liar, conscious coward and hypocrite,

Without the good the slave expects to get,  
 In case he has a master after all!  
 You own your instincts? why, what else do I,  
 Who want, am made for, and must have a God  
 Ere I can be aught, do aught? — no mere name  
 Want, but the true thing with what proves its  
     truth,  
 To wit, a relation from that thing to me,  
 Touching from head to foot — which touch I  
     feel,  
 And with it take the rest, this life of ours!  
 I live my life here; yours you dare not live.

— Not as I state it, who (you please subjoin)  
 Disfigure such a life and call it names,  
 While, to your mind, remains another way  
 For simple men: knowledge and power have  
     rights,  
 But ignorance and weakness have rights too.  
 There needs no crucial effort to find truth  
 If here or there or anywhere about:  
 We ought to turn each side, try hard and see,  
 And if we can't, be glad we've earned at least  
 The right, by one laborious proof the more,  
 To graze in peace earth's pleasant pasturage.  
 Men are not angels, neither are they brutes:  
 Something we may see, all we cannot see.  
 What need of lying? I say, I see all,  
 And swear to each detail the most minute  
 In what I think a Pan's face — you, mere cloud:  
 I swear I hear him speak and see him wink,  
 For fear, if once I drop the emphasis,  
 Mankind may doubt there's any cloud at all.  
 You take the simple life — ready to see,  
 Willing to see (for no cloud's worth a face) —  
 And leaving quiet what no strength can move,  
 And which, who bids you move? who has the  
     right?  
 I bid you; but you are God's sheep, not mine:  
 "*Pastor est tui Dominus.*" You find  
 In this the pleasant pasture of our life  
 Much you may eat without the least offence,  
 Much you don't eat because your maw objects,  
 Much you would eat but that your fellow-flock  
 Open great eyes at you and even butt,  
 And thereupon you like your mates so well  
 You cannot please yourself, offending them;  
 Though when they seem exorbitantly sheep,  
 You weigh your pleasure with their butts and  
     bleats  
 And strike the balance. Sometimes certain  
     fears  
 Restrain you, real checks since you find them  
     so;  
 Sometimes you please yourself and nothing  
     checks:  
 And thus you graze through life with not one  
     lie,  
 And like it best.

But do you, in truth's name?  
 If so, you beat — which means you are not I —  
 Who needs must make earth mine and feed my  
     fill  
 Not simply unbutted at, unbickered with,  
 But motioned to the velvet of the sward  
 By those obsequious wethers' very selves.  
 Look at me, sir; my age is double yours:

At yours, I knew beforehand, so enjoyed,  
 What now I should be — as, permit the word,  
 I pretty well imagine your whole range  
 And stretch of tether twenty years to come.  
 We both have minds and bodies much alike:  
 In truth's name, don't you want my bishoprie,  
 My daily bread, my influence, and my state?  
 You're young. I'm old; you must be old one  
     day;  
 Will you find then, as I do hour by hour,  
 Women their lovers kneel to, who cut curls  
 From your fat lap-dog's ear to grace a brooch —  
 Dukes, who petition just to kiss your ring —  
 With much beside you know or may conceive?  
 Suppose we die to-night: well, here am I,  
 Such were my gains, life bore this fruit to  
     me,  
 While writing all the same my articles  
 On music, poetry, the fictile vase  
 Found at Albano, chess, Anacreon's Greek.  
 But you — the highest honor in your life,  
 The thing you'll crown yourself with, all your  
     days,  
 Is — dining here and drinking this last glass  
 I pour you out in sign of amity  
 Before we part forever. Of your power  
 And social influence, worldly worth in short,  
 Judge what's my estimation by the fact,  
 I do not condescend to enjoin, beseech,  
 Hint secrecy on one of all these words!  
 You're shrewd and know that should you pub-  
     lish one  
 The world would brand the lie — my enemies  
     first,  
 Who'd sneer — "the bishop's an arch-hypo-  
     crite  
 And knave perhaps, but not so frank a fool."  
 Whereas I should not dare for both my ears  
 Breathe one such syllable, smile one such smile,  
 Before the chaplain who reflects myself —  
 My shade's so much more potent than your  
     flesh.  
 What's your reward, self-abnegating friend?  
 Stood you confessed of those exceptional  
 And privileged great natures that dwarf mine —  
 A zealot with a mad ideal in reach,  
 A poet just about to print his ode,  
 A statesman with a scheme to stop this war,  
 An artist whose religion is his art —  
 I should have nothing to object: such men  
 Carry the fire, all things grow warm to them,  
 Their druggot's worth my purple, they beat  
     me,  
 But you, — you're just as little those as I —  
 You, Gigadibs, who, thirty years of age,  
 Write stately for Blackwood's Magazine,  
 Believe you see two points in Hamlet's soul  
 Unseized by the Germans yet — which view  
     you'll print —  
 Meantime the best you have to show being still  
 That lively lightsome article we took  
 Almost for the true Dickens, — what's its  
     name?  
 "The Slum and Cellar, or Whitechapel life  
 Limned after dark!" it made me laugh, I know,  
 And pleased a month, and brought you in ten  
     pounds.  
 — Success I recognize and compliment,

And therefore give you, if you choose, three words

(The card and pencil-scratch is quite enough)  
Which whether here, in Dublin or New York,  
Will get you, prompt as at my eyebrow's wink,  
Such terms as never you aspired to get  
In all our own reviews and some not ours.  
Go write your lively sketches! be the first  
"Blougram, or The Eccentric Confidence" —  
Or better simply say, "The Outward-bound."  
Why, men as soon would throw it in my teeth  
As copy and quote the infamy chalked broad  
About me on the church-door opposite.  
You will not wait for that experience though,  
I fancy, howsoever you decide,  
To discontinue — not detesting, not  
Defaming, but at least — despising me!

Over his wine so smiled and talked his hour  
Sylvester Blougram, styled in *partibus*  
*Episcopus, nec non* — (the deuce knows what  
It's changed to by our novel hierarchy)  
With Gigadibs the literary man,  
Who played with spoons, explored his plate's  
design,  
And ranged the olive-stones about its edge,  
While the great bishop rolled him out a mind  
Long crumpled, till creased consciousness lay  
smooth.

For Blougram, he believed, say, half he spoke.  
The other portion, as he shaped it thus  
For argumentary purposes,  
He felt his foe was foolish to dispute.  
Some arbitrary accidental thoughts  
That crossed his mind, amusing because new,  
He chose to represent as fixtures there,  
Invariable convictions (such they seemed  
Beside his interlocutor's loose cards  
Flung daily down, and not the same way twice),  
While certain hell-deep instincts, man's weak  
tongue

Is never bold to utter in their truth  
Because styled hell-deep ('t is an old mistake  
To place hell at the bottom of the earth),  
He ignored these, — not having in readiness  
Their nomenclature and philosophy:  
He said true things, but called them by wrong  
names.

"On the whole," he thought, "I justify myself  
On every point where cavillers like this  
Oppugn my life: he tries one kind of fence,  
I close, he's worsted, that's enough for him.  
He's on the ground: if ground should break  
away

I take my stand on, there's a firmer yet  
Beneath it, both of us may sink and reach.  
His ground was over mine and broke the first:  
So, let him sit with me this many a year!"

He did not sit five minutes. Just a week  
Sufficed his sudden healthy vehemence.  
Something had struck him in the "Outward-  
bound"

Another way than Blougram's purpose was:  
And having bought, not cabin-furniture

But settler's-implements (enough for three)  
And started for Australia — there, I hope,  
By this time he has tested his first plough,  
And studied his last chapter of Saint John.

### CLEON

"As certain also of your own poets have said" —

CLEON the poet (from the sprinkled isles,  
Lily on lily, that o'erlace the sea,  
And laugh their pride when the light wave lisps  
"Greece") —  
To Protus in his Tyranny: much health!

They give thy letter to me, even now:  
I read and seem as if I heard thee speak.  
The master of thy galley still unlades  
Gift after gift; they block my court at last  
And pile themselves along its portico  
Royal with sunset, like a thought of thee:  
And one white she-slave from the group dis-  
persed  
Of black and white slaves (like the chequer-  
work  
Pavement, at once my nation's work and gift,  
Now covered with this settle-down of doves),  
One lyric woman, in her crocus vest  
Woven of sea-wools, with her two white hands  
Commends to me the strainer and the cup  
Thy lip hath bettered ere it blesses mine.

Well-counselled, king, in thy munificence!  
For so shall men remark, in such an act  
Of love for him whose song gives life its joy,  
Thy recognition of the use of life;  
Nor call thy spirit barely adequate  
To help on life in straight ways, broad enough  
For vulgar souls, by ruling and the rest.  
Thou, in the daily building of thy tower, —  
Whether in fierce and sudden spasms of toil,  
Or through dim lulls of unapparent growth,  
Or when the general work 'mid good acclaim  
Climbed with the eye to cheer the architect, —  
Didst ne'er engage in work for mere work's  
sake —

Hadst ever in thy heart the luring hope  
Of some eventual rest a-top of it,  
Whence, all the tumult of the building hushed,  
Thou first of men mightst look out to the East:  
The vulgar saw thy tower, thou sawest the  
sun.

For this, I promise on thy festival  
To pour libation, looking o'er the sea,  
Making this slave narrate thy fortunes, speak  
Thy great words, and describe thy royal face —  
Wishing thee wholly where Zeus lives the most,  
Within the eventual element of calm.

Thy letter's first requirement meets me here.  
It is as thou hast heard: in one short life  
I, Cleon, have effected all those things  
Thou wonderingly dost enumerate.  
That epics on thy hundred plates of gold  
Is mine, — and also mine the little chant,  
So sure to rise from every fishing-bark  
When, lights at prow, the seamen haul their net



The image of the sun-god on the phare,  
Men turn from the sun's self to see, is mine ;  
The Pœcile, o'er-storied its whole length,  
As thou didst hear, with painting, is mine too.  
I know the true proportions of a man  
And woman also, not observed before ;  
And I have written three books on the soul,  
Proving absurd all written hitherto,  
And putting us to ignorance again.  
For music, — why, I have combined the moods,  
Inventing one. In brief, all arts are mine ;  
Thus much the people know and recognize,  
Throughout our seventeen islands. Marvel not.  
We of these latter days, with greater mind  
Than our forerunners, since more composite,  
Look not so great, beside their simple way,  
To a judge who only sees one way at once,  
One mind-point and no other at a time, —  
Compares the small part of a man of us  
With some whole man of the heroic age,  
Great in his way — not ours, nor meant for ours.  
And ours is greater, had we skill to know :  
For, what we call this life of men on earth,  
This sequence of the soul's achievements here  
Being, as I find much reason to conceive,  
Intended to be viewed eventually  
As a great whole, not analyzed to parts,  
But each part having reference to all, —  
How shall a certain part, pronounced complete,  
Endure effacement by another part ?  
Was the thing done ? — then, what's to do  
again ?

See, in the chequered pavement opposite,  
Suppose the artist made a perfect rhomb,  
And next a lozenge, then a trapezoid —  
He did not overlay them, superimpose  
The new upon the old and blot it out,  
But laid them on a level in his work,  
Making at last a picture ; there it lies.  
So, first the perfect separate forms were made,  
The portions of mankind ; and after, so,  
Occurred the combination of the same.  
For where had been a progress, otherwise ?  
Mankind, made up of all the single men, —  
In such a synthesis the labor ends.  
Now mark me ! those divine men of old time  
Have reached, thou sayest well, each at one  
point

The outside verge that rounds our faculty ;  
And where they reached, who can do more than  
reach ?

It takes but little water just to touch  
At some one point the inside of a sphere,  
And, as we turn the sphere, touch all the rest  
In due succession : but the finer air  
Which not so palpably nor obviously,  
Though no less universally, can touch  
The whole circumference of that emptied sphere,  
Fills it more fully than the water did ;  
Holds thrice the weight of water in itself  
Resolved into a subtler element.  
And yet the vulgar call the sphere first full  
Up to the visible height — and after, void ;  
Not knowing air's more hidden properties.  
And thus our soul, misknown, cries out to Zeus  
To vindicate his purpose in our life :  
Why stay we on the earth unless to grow ?  
Long since, I imagined, wrote the fiction out,

That he or other god descended here  
And, once for all, showed simultaneously  
What, in its nature, never can be shown,  
Piecemeal or in succession ; — showed, I say,  
The worth both absolute and relative  
Of all his children from the birth of time,  
His instruments for all appointed work.  
I now go on to image, — might we hear  
The judgment which should give the due to  
each,

Show where the labor lay and where the ease,  
And prove Zeus' self, the latent everywhere !  
This is a dream ; — but no dream, let us hope,  
That years and days, the summers and the  
springs,

Follow each other with unwaning powers.  
The grapes which dye thy wine are richer far,  
Through culture, than the wild wealth of the  
rock ;

The suave plum than the savage-tasted drupe ;  
The pastured honey-bee drops choicer sweet ;  
The flowers turn double, and the leaves turn  
flowers ;

That young and tender crescent-moon, thy  
slave,

Sleeping above her robe as buoyed by clouds,  
Refines upon the women of my youth.

What, and the soul alone deteriorates ?

I have not chanted verse like Homer, no —  
Nor swept string like Terpander, no — nor  
carved

And painted men like Phidias and his friend :

I am not great as they are, point by point.

But I have entered into sympathy

With these four, running these into one soul,

Who, separate, ignored each other's art.

Say, is it nothing that I know them all ?

The wild flower was the larger ; I have dashed

Rose-blood upon its petals, pricked its cup's

Honey with wine, and driven its seed to fruit,

And show a better flower if not so large :

I stand myself. Refer this to the gods

Whose gift alone it is ! which, shall I dare

(All pride apart) upon the absurd pretext

That such a gift by chance lay in my hand,

Discourse of lightly or depreciate ?

It might have fallen to another's hand : what  
then ?

I pass too surely : let at least truth stay !

And next, of what thou followest on to ask.

This being with me as I declare, O king,

My works, in all these varicolored kinds,

So done by me, accepted so by men —

Thou askest, if (my soul thus in men's hearts)

I must not be accounted to attain

The very crown and proper end of life ?

Inquiring thence how, now life closeth up,

I face death with success in my right hand :

Whether I fear death less than dost thyself

The fortunate of men ? "For" (writest thou)

"Thou leavest much behind, while I leave  
naught.

Thy life stays in the poems men shall sing,

The pictures men shall study ; while my life,

Complete and whole now in its power and joy,

Dies altogether with my brain and arm,

Is lost indeed ; since, what survives myself ?

The brazen statue to o'erlook my grave,  
Set on the promontory which I named.  
And that — some supple courtier of my heir  
Shall use its robed and sceptred arm, perhaps,  
To fix the rope to, which best drags it down.  
I go then: triumph thou, who dost not go!"

Nay, thou art worthy of hearing my whole mind.

Is this apparent, when thou turn'st to muse  
Upon the scheme of earth and man in chief,  
That admiration grows as knowledge grows?  
That imperfection means perfection hid,  
Reserved in part, to grace the after-time?  
If, in the morning of philosophy,  
Ere aught had been recorded, nay perceived,  
Thou, with the light now in thee, couldst have  
looked

On all earth's tenantry, from worm to bird,  
Ere man, her last, appeared upon the stage —  
Thou wouldst have seen them perfect, and deduced

The perfectness of others yet unseen.  
Conceding which, — had Zeus then questioned thee,

"Shall I go on a step, improve on this,  
Do more for visible creatures than is done?"  
Thou wouldst have answered, "Ay, by making each

Grow conscious in himself — by that alone.  
All's perfect else: the shell sucks fast the rock,  
The fish strikes through the sea, the snake both swims

And slides, forth range the beasts, the birds  
take flight,

Till life's mechanics can no further go —

And all this joy in natural life is put

Like fire from off thy finger into each,

So exquisitely perfect is the same.

But 't is pure fire, and they mere matter are;

It has them, not they it: and so I choose

For man, thy last premeditated work

(If I might add a glory to the scheme),

That a third thing should stand apart from both,

A quality arise within his soul,

Which, intro-active, made to supervise

And feel the force it has, may view itself,

And so be happy." Man might live at first

The animal life: but is there nothing more?

In due time, let him critically learn

How he lives; and, the more he gets to know

Of his own life's adaptabilities,

The more joy-giving will his life become.

Thus man, who hath this quality, is best.

But thou, king, hadst more reasonably said:

"Let progress end at once, — man make no step

Beyond the natural man, the better beast,

Using his senses, not the sense of sense."

In man there's failure, only since he left

The lower and unconscious forms of life.

We called it an advance, the rendering plain

Man's spirit might grow conscious of man's life,

And, by new lore so added to the old,

Take each step higher over the brute's head.

This grew the only life, the pleasure-house,

Watch-tower and treasure-fortress of the soul,

Which whole surrounding flats of natural life  
Seemed only fit to yield subsistence to;

A tower that crowns a country. But alas,

The soul now climbs it just to perish there!

For thence we have discovered ('t is no dream —

We know this, which we had not else perceived)

That there's a world of capability

For joy, spread round about us, meant for us,

Inviting us; and still the soul craves all,

And still the flesh replies, "Take no jot more

Than ere thou clombst the tower to look abroad!

Nay, so much less as that fatigue has brought

Deduction to it." We struggle, fain to enlarge

Our bounded physical recipiency,

Increase our power, supply fresh oil to life,

Repair the waste of age and sickness: no,

It skills not! life's inadequate to joy.

As the soul sees joy, tempting life to take.

They praise a fountain in my garden here

Wherein a Naiad sends the water-bow

Thin from her tube; she smiles to see it rise.

What if I told her, it is just a thread

From that great river which the hills shut up,

And mock her with my leave to take the same?

The artificer has given her one small tube

Past power to widen or exchange — what boots

To know she might spout oceans if she could?

She cannot lift beyond her first thin thread:

And so a man can use but a man's joy

While he sees God's. Is it for Zeus to boast,

"See, man, how happy I live, and despair —

That I may be still happier — for thy use!"

If this were so, we could not thank our lord,

As hearts beat on to doing; 't is not so —

Malice it is not. Is it carelessness?

Still, no. If care — where is the sign? I ask,

And get no answer, and agree in sum,

O king, with thy profound discouragement,

Who seest the wider but to sigh the more.

Most progress is most failure: thou sayest well.

The last point now: — thou dost except a case —

Holding joy not impossible to one

With artist-gifts — to such a man as I

Who leave behind me living works indeed;

For, such a poem, such a painting lives.

What? dost thou verily trip upon a word,

Confound the accurate view of what joy is

(Caught somewhat clearer by my eyes than  
thine)

With feeling joy? confound the knowing how

And showing how to live (my faculty)

With actually living? — Otherwise

Where is the artist's vantage o'er the king?

Because in my great epos I display

How divers men young, strong, fair, wise, can  
act —

Is this as though I acted? if I paint,

Carve the young Phæbus, am I therefore young?

Methinks I'm older than I bowed myself

The many years of pain that taught me art!

Indeed, to know is something, and to prove

How all this beauty might be enjoyed, is more:

But, knowing naught, to enjoy is something  
too.

Yon rower, with the moulded muscles there,

Lowering the sail, is nearer it than I.

I can write love-odes: thy fair slave 's an ode.  
I get to sing of love, when grown too gray  
For being beloved: she turns to that young  
man,

The muscles all a-ripple on his back.  
I know the joy of kingship: well, thou art king!

"But," sayest thou — (and I marvel, I repeat,  
To find thee trip on such a mere word) "what  
Thou writest, paintest, stays; that does not  
die:

Sappho survives, because we sing her songs,  
And Æschylus, because we read his plays!"  
Why, if they live still, let them come and take  
Thy slave in my despite, drink from thy cup,  
Speak in my place. Thou diest while I  
survive?

Say rather that my fate is deadlier still,  
In this, that every day my sense of joy  
Grows more acute, my soul (intensified  
By power and insight) more enlarged, more  
keen;

While every day my hairs fall more and more,  
My hand shakes, and the heavy years increase —  
The horror quickening still from year to year,  
The consummation coming past escape,  
When I shall know most, and yet least en-  
joy —

When all my works wherein I prove my worth,  
Being present still to mock me in men's mouths,  
Alive still, in the praise of such as thou,  
I, I the feeling, thinking, acting man,  
The man who loved his life so over-much,  
Sleep in my urn. It is so horrible,  
I dare at times imagine to my need  
Some future state revealed to us by Zeus,  
Unlimited in capability

For joy, as this is in desire for joy,  
— To seek which, the joy-hunger forces us:  
That, stung by straitness of our life, made strait  
On purpose to make prized the life at large —  
Freed by the throbbing impulse we call death,  
We burst there as the worm into the fly,  
Who, while a worm still, wants his wings. But  
no!

Zeus has not yet revealed it; and alas,  
He must have done so, were it possible!

Live long and happy, and in that thought  
die:

Glad for what was! Farewell. And for the  
rest,

I cannot tell thy messenger aright  
Where to deliver what he bears of thine  
To one called Paulus; we have heard his fame  
Indeed, if Christ be not one with him —  
I know not, nor am troubled much to know.  
Thou canst not think a mere barbarian Jew,  
As Paulus proves to be, one circumcised,  
Hath access to a secret shut from us?  
Thou wrongest our philosophy, O king,  
In stooping to inquire of such an one,  
As if his answer could impose at all!

He writeth, doth he? well, and he may write.  
Oh, the Jew findeth scholars! certain slaves  
Who touched on this same isle, preached him  
and Christ;

And (as I gathered from a bystander)  
Their doctrine could be held by no sane man.

## RUDEL TO THE LADY OF TRIPOLI

Originally published in *Bells and Pomegranates* as the first of two poems, *Cristina* being the other, under the title *Queen Worship*.

### I

I KNOW a Mount, the gracious Sun perceives  
First, when he visits, last, too, when he leaves  
The world; and, vainly favored, it repays  
The day-long glory of his steadfast gaze  
By no change of its large calm front of snow.  
And underneath the Mount, a Flower I know,  
He cannot have perceived, that changes ever  
At his approach; and, in the lost endeavor  
To live his life, has parted, one by one,  
With all a flower's true graces, for the grace  
Of being but a foolish mimic sun,  
With ray-like florets round a disk-like face.  
Men nobly call by many a name the Mount  
As over many a land of theirs its large  
Calm front of snow like a triumphal target  
Is reared, and still with old names, fresh names  
vie,

Each to its proper praise and own account:  
Men call the Flower the Sunflower, sportively.

### II

Oh, Angel of the East, one, one gold look  
Across the waters to this twilight nook,  
— The far sad waters, Angel, to this nook!

### III

Dear Pilgrim, art thou for the East indeed?  
Go! — saying ever as thou dost proceed,  
That I, French Rudel, choose for my device  
A sunflower outspread like a sacrifice  
Before its idol. See! These inexpert  
And hurried fingers could not fail to hurt  
The woven picture; 't is a woman's skill  
Indeed; but nothing baffled me, so, ill  
Or well, the work is finished. Say, men feed  
On songs I sing, and therefore bask the bees  
On my flower's breast as on a platform broad:  
But, as the flower's concern is not for these  
But solely for the sun, so men applaud  
In vain this Rudel, he not looking here  
But to the East — the East! Go, say this,  
Pilgrim dear!

## ONE WORD MORE

TO E. B. B.

London, September, 1855

Originally appended to the collection of Poems  
called *Men and Women*, the greater portion of  
which has now been, more correctly, distributed  
under the other titles of this edition. R. B.

### I

THERE they are, my fifty men and women  
Naming me the fifty poems finished!  
Take them, Love, the book and me together:  
Where the heart lies, let the brain lie also.



## II

Rafael made a century of sonnets,  
Made and wrote them in a certain volume  
Hinted with the silver-pointed pencil  
Else he only used to draw Madonnas :  
These, the world might view—but one, the  
volume.  
Who that one, you ask ? Your heart instructs  
you.

Did she live and love it all her lifetime ?  
Did she drop, his lady of the sonnets,  
Die, and let it drop beside her pillow  
Where it lay in place of Rafael's glory,  
Rafael's cheek so duteous and so loving —  
Cheek, the world was wont to hail a painter's,  
Rafael's cheek, her love had turned a poet's ?

## III

You and I would rather read that volume,  
(Taken to his beating bosom by it)  
Lean and list the bosom-beats of Rafael,  
Would we not ? than wonder at Madonnas —  
Her, San Sisto names, and Her, Foligno,  
Her, that visits Florence in a vision,  
Her, that's left with lilies in the Louvre —  
Seen by us and all the world in circle.

## IV

You and I will never read that volume.  
Guido Reni, like his own eye's apple  
Guarded long the treasure-book and loved it.  
Guido Reni dying, all Bologna  
Cried, and the world cried too, " Ours, the  
treasure !"  
Suddenly, as rare things will, it vanished.

## V

Dante once prepared to paint an angel :  
Whom to please ? You whisper " Beatrice."  
While he mused and traced it and retraced it,  
(Peradventure with a pen corroded  
Still by drops of that hot ink he dipped for,  
When, his left-hand i' the hair o' the wicked,  
Back he held the brow and pricked its stigma,  
Bit into the live man's flesh for parchment,  
Loosed him, laughed to see the writing rankle,  
Let the wretch go festering through Florence) —  
Dante, who loved well because he hated,  
Hated wickedness that hinders loving,  
Dante standing, studying his angel, —  
In there broke the folk of his Inferno.  
Says he — " Certain people of importance"  
(Such he gave his daily dreadful line to)  
" Entered and would seize, forsooth, the poet."  
Says the poet — " Then I stopped my paint-  
ing."

## VI

You and I would rather see that angel,  
Painted by the tenderness of Dante,  
Would we not ? — than read a fresh Inferno.

## VII

You and I will never see that picture.  
While he mused on love and Beatrice,  
While he softened o'er his outlined angel,  
In they broke, those " people of importance ;"  
We and Bice bear the loss forever.

## VIII

What of Rafael's sonnets, Dante's picture ?  
This : no artist lives and loves, that longs not  
Once, and only once, and for one only,  
(Ah, the prize !) to find his love a language  
Fit and fair and simple and sufficient —  
Using nature that's an art to others,  
Not, this one time, art that's turned his na-  
ture.

Ay, of all the artists living, loving,  
None but would forego his proper dowry, —  
Does he paint ? he fain would write a poem, —  
Does he write ? he fain would paint a picture,  
Put to proof art alien to the artist's,  
Once, and only once, and for one only,  
So to be the man and leave the artist,  
Gain the man's joy, miss the artist's sorrow.

## IX

Wherefore ? Heaven's gift takes earth's abate-  
ment !

He who smites the rock and spreads the water,  
Bidding drink and live a crowd beneath him,  
Even he, the minute makes immortal,  
Proves, perchance, but mortal in the minute,  
Desecrates, belike, the deed in doing.  
While he smites, how can he but remember,  
So he smote before, in such a peril,  
When they stood and mocked — " Shall smiting  
help us ?"

When they drank and sneered — " A stroke is  
easy !"

When they wiped their mouths and went their  
journey,

Throwing him for thanks — " But drought was  
pleasant."

Thus old memories mar the actual triumph ;  
Thus the doing savors of disrelish ;  
Thus achievement lacks a gracious somewhat ;  
O'er-importuned brows becloud the mandate,  
Carelessness or consciousness — the gesture.  
For he bears an ancient wrong about him,  
Sees and knows again those phalanxed faces,  
Hears, yet one time more, the 'customed pre-  
lude —

" How shouldst thou, of all men, smite, and  
save us ?"

Guesses what is like to prove the sequel —  
" Egypt's flesh-pots — nay, the drought was  
better."

## X

Oh, the crowd must have emphatic warrant !  
Theirs, the Sinai-forehead's cloven brilliance,  
Right-arm's rod-sweep, tongue's imperial fiat.  
Never dares the man put off the prophet.

## XI

Did he love one face from out the thousands,  
(Were she Jethro's daughter, white and wifely,  
Were she but the Æthiopian bondslave.)  
He would envy you dumb patient camel,  
Keeping a reserve of scanty water  
Meant to save his own life in the desert ;  
Ready in the desert to deliver  
(Kneeling down to let his breast be opened)  
Hoard and life together for his mistress.

## XII

I shall never, in the years remaining,  
Paint you pictures, no, nor carve you statues,  
Make you music that should all-express me;  
So it seems: I stand on my attainment.  
This of verse alone, one life allows me;  
Verse and nothing else have I to give you.  
Other heights in other lives, God willing:  
All the gifts from all the heights, your own,  
Love!

## XIII

Yet a semblance of resource avails us —  
Shade so finely touched, love's sense must seize  
it.  
Take these lines, look lovingly and nearly,  
Lines I write the first time and the last time.  
He who works in fresco, steals a hair-brush,  
Curbs the liberal hand, subservient proudly,  
Cranps his spirit, crowds its all in little,  
Makes a strange art of an art familiar,  
Fills his lady's missal-marge with flowerets.  
He who blows through bronze, may breathe  
through silver,  
Fitly serenade a slumbrous princess.  
He who writes, may write for once as I do.

## XIV

Love, you saw me gather men and women,  
Live or dead or fashioned by my fancy,  
Enter each and all, and use their service,  
Speak from every mouth, — the speech, a poem.  
Hardly shall I tell my joys and sorrows,  
Hopes and fears, belief and disbelieving:  
I am mine and yours — the rest be all men's,  
Karshish, Cleon, Norbert, and the fifty.  
Let me speak this once in my true person,  
Not as Lippo, Roland, or Andrea,  
Though the fruit of speech be just this sentence:  
Pray you, look on these my men and women,  
Take and keep my fifty poems finished;  
Where my heart lies, let my brain lie also!  
Poor the speech; be how I speak, for all things.

## XV

Not but that you know me! Lo, the moon's  
self!  
Here in London, yonder late in Florence,  
Still we find her face, the thrice-transfigured.  
Curving on a sky imbrued with color,  
Drifted over Fiesole by twilight,  
Came she, our new crescent of a hair's-breadth.  
Full she flared it, lamping Samminiato,  
Rounder 'twixt the cypresses and rounder,  
Perfect till the nightingales applauded.  
Now, a piece of her old self, impoverished,  
Hard to greet, she traverses the house-roofs,  
Hurries with unhandsome thrift of silver,  
Goes dispiritedly, glad to finish.

## XVI

What, there's nothing in the moon note-  
worthy?  
Nay: for if that moon could love a mortal,

Use, to charm him (so to fit a fancy),  
All her magic ('t is the old sweet mythos),  
She would turn a new side to her mortal,  
Side unseen of herdsman, huntsman, steers-  
man —

Blank to Zoroaster on his terrace,  
Blind to Galileo on his turret,  
Dumb to Homer, dumb to Keats — him, even!  
Think, the wonder of the moonstruck mor-  
tal —

When she turns round, comes again in heaven,  
Opens out anew for worse or better!  
Proves she like some portent of an iceberg  
Swimming full upon the ship it founders,  
Hungry with huge teeth of splintered crys-  
tals?

Proves she as the paved work of a sapphire  
Seen by Moses when he climbed the moun-  
tain?

Moses, Aaron, Nadab and Abihu  
Climbed and saw the very God, the Highest,  
Stand upon the paved work of a sapphire.  
Like the bodied heaven in his clearness  
Shone the stone, the sapphire of that paved  
work,

When they ate and drank and saw God also!

## XVII

What were seen? None knows, none ever shall  
know.

Only this is sure — the sight were other,  
Not the moon's same side, born late in Flor-  
ence,

Dying now impoverished here in London.  
God be thanked, the meanest of his creatures  
Boasts two soul-sides, one to face the world  
with,

One to show a woman when he loves her!

## XVIII

This I say of me, but think of you, Love!  
This to you — yourself my moon of poets!  
Ah, but that's the world's side, there's the  
wonder,

Thus they see you, praise you, think they know  
you!

There, in turn I stand with them and praise  
you —

Out of my own self, I dare to phrase it.  
But the best is when I glide from out them,  
Cross a step or two of dubious twilight,  
Come out on the other side, the novel  
Silent silver lights and darks undreamed of,  
Where I hush and bless myself with silence.

## XIX

Oh, their Rafael of the dear Madonnas,  
Oh, their Dante of the dread Inferno,  
Wrote one song — and in my brain I sing it,  
Drew one angel — borne, see, on my bosom!  
R. B.

## IN A BALCONY

WRITTEN in 1853, partly at Bagni di Lucca, partly at Rome. It was included in the

original series of *Men and Women* and there divided into three parts.

## PERSONS

NORBERT.

CONSTANCE.

THE QUEEN.

CONSTANCE and NORBERT.

Norbert. Now!

Constance. Not now!

Nor. Give me them again, those hands: Put them upon my forehead, how it throbs! Press them before my eyes, the fire comes through!

You cruellest, you dearest in the world, Let me! The Queen must grant whate'er I ask—

How can I gain you and not ask the Queen? There she stays waiting for me, here stand you; Some time or other this was to be asked; Now is the one time—what I ask, I gain: Let me ask now, Love!

Con. Do, and ruin us!

Nor. Let it be now, Love! All my soul breaks forth.

How I do love you! Give my love its way! A man can have but one life and one death, One heaven, one hell. Let me fulfil my fate—Grant me my heaven now! Let me know you mine,

Prove you mine, write my name upon your brow,

Hold you and have you, and then die away, If God please, with completion in my soul!

Con. I am not yours then? How content this man!

I am not his— who change into himself, Have passed into his heart and beat its beats, Who give my hands to him, my eyes, my hair, Give all that was of me away to him— So well, that now, my spirit turned his own, Takes part with him against the woman here, Bids him not stumble at so mere a straw As caring that the world be cognizant How he loves her and how she worships him. You have this woman, not as yet that world. Go on, I bid, nor stop to care for me By saving what I cease to care about, The courtly name and pride of circumstance— The name you'll pick up and be cumbered with Just for the poor parade's sake, nothing more; Just that the world may slip from under you— Just that the world may cry, "So much for him—

The man predestined to the heap of crowns:

There goes his chance of winning one, at least!"

Nor. The world!

Con. You love it! Love me quite as well, And see if I shall pray for this in vain!

Why must you ponder what it knows or thinks?

Nor. You pray for— what, in vain?

Con. Oh my heart's heart,

How I do love you, Norbert! That is right: But listen, or I take my hands away! You say, "let it be now:" you would go now And tell the Queen, perhaps six steps from us, You love me—so you do, thank God!

Nor. Thank God!

Con. Yes, Norbert,— but you fain would tell your love,

And, what succeeds the telling, ask of her My hand. Now take this rose and look at it, Listening to me. You are the minister, The Queen's first favorite, nor without a cause. To-night completes your wonderful year's-work (This palace-feast is held to celebrate) Made memorable by her life's success, The junction of two crowns, on her sole head, Her house had only dreamed of anciently: That this mere dream is grown a stable truth, To-night's feast makes authentic. Whose the praise?

Whose genius, patience, energy, achieved What turned the many heads and broke the hearts?

You are the fate, your minute's in the heaven. Next comes the Queen's turn. "Name your own reward!"

With leave to clench the past, chain the to-come,

Put out an arm and touch and take the sun And fix it ever full-faced on your earth, Possess yourself supremely of her life,— You choose the single thing she will not grant; Nay, very declaration of which choice Will turn the scale and neutralize your work: At best she will forgive you, if she can. You think I'll let you choose— her cousin's hand?

Nor. Wait. First, do you retain your old belief

The Queen is generous,— nay, is just?

Con. There, there!

So men make women love them, while they know

No more of women's hearts than . . . look you here,

You that are just and generous beside. Make it your own case! For example now, I'll say—I let you kiss me, hold my hands— Why? do you know why? I'll instruct you, then—

The kiss, because you have a name at court; This hand and this, that you may shut in each A jewel, if you please to pick up such.

That's horrible? Apply it to the Queen— Suppose I am the Queen to whom you speak.

"I was a nameless man; you needed me: Why did I proffer you my aid? there stood A certain pretty cousin at your side.

Why did I make such common cause with you? Access to her had not been easy else.



You give my labor here abundant praise ?  
 'Faith, labor, which she overlooked, grew  
 play.

How shall your gratitude discharge itself ?  
 Give me her hand ! "

*Nor.* And still I urge the same.  
 Is the Queen just ? just — generous or no !

*Con.* Yes, just. You love a rose : no harm  
 in that :

But was it for the rose's sake or mine  
 You put it in your bosom ? mine, you said —  
 Then, mine you still must say or else be false.  
 You told the Queen you served her for herself ;  
 If so, to serve her was to serve yourself,  
 She thinks, for all your unbelieving face !  
 I know her. In the hall, six steps from us,  
 One sees the twenty pictures : there 's a life  
 Better than life, and yet no life at all.  
 Conceive her born in such a magic dome,  
 Pictures all round her ! why, she sees the world,  
 Can recognize its given things and facts,  
 The fight of giants or the feast of gods,  
 Sages in senate, beauties at the bath.  
 Chases and battles, the whole earth's display,  
 Landscape and sea-piece, down to flowers and  
 fruit —

And who shall question that she knows them all,  
 In better semblance than the things outside ?  
 Yet bring into the silent gallery  
 Some live thing to contrast in breath and blood,  
 Some lion, with the painted lion there —  
 You think she 'll understand composedly ?  
 — Say, " that 's his fellow in the hunting-piece  
 Yonder, I 've turned to praise a hundred  
 times ? "

Not so. Her knowledge of our actual earth,  
 Its hopes and fears, concerns and sympathies,  
 Must be too far, too mediate, too unreal.  
 The real exists for us outside, not her :  
 How should it, with that life in these four  
 walls,

That father and that mother, first to last  
 No father and no mother — friends, a heap,  
 Lovers, no lack — a husband in due time,  
 And every one of them alike a lie !  
 Things painted by a Rubens out of naught  
 Into what kindness, friendship, love should be ;  
 All better, all more grandiose than the life,  
 Only no life ; mere cloth and surface-paint,  
 You feel, while you admire. How should she  
 feel ?

Yet now that she has stood thus fifty years  
 The sole spectator in that gallery,  
 You think to bring this warm real struggling  
 love

In to her of a sudden, and suppose  
 She 'll keep her state untroubled ? Here 's the  
 truth —

She 'll apprehend truth's value at a glance,  
 Prefer it to the pictured loyalty ?  
 You only have to say, " So men are made,  
 For this they act ; the thing has many names,  
 But this the right one : and now, Queen, be  
 just ! "

Your life slips back ; you lose her at the word :  
 You do not even for amends gain me.  
 He will not understand ! oh, Norbert, Norbert,  
 Do you not understand ?

*Nor.* The Queen 's the Queen,

I am myself — no picture, but alive  
 In every nerve and every muscle, here  
 At the palace-window o'er the people's street,  
 As she in the gallery where the pictures glow :  
 The good of life is precious to us both.  
 She cannot love ; what do I want with rule ?  
 When first I saw your face a year ago  
 I knew my life's good, my soul heard one  
 voice —

" The woman yonder, there 's no use of life  
 But just to obtain her ! heap earth's woes in one  
 And bear them — make a pile of all earth's  
 joys

And spurn them, as they help or help not this ;  
 Only, obtain her ! " How was it to be ?  
 I found you were the cousin of the Queen ;  
 I must then serve the Queen to get to you.  
 No other way. Suppose there had been one,  
 And I, by saying prayers to some white star  
 With promise of my body and my soul,  
 Might gain you, — should I pray the star or no ?  
 Instead, there was the Queen to serve ! I  
 served,

Helped, did what other servants failed to do.  
 Neither she sought nor I declared my end.  
 Her good is hers, my recompense be mine, —  
 I therefore name you as that recompense.  
 She dreamed that such a thing could never be ?  
 Let her wake now. She thinks there was  
 more cause

In love of power, high fame, pure loyalty ?  
 Perhaps she fancies men wear out their lives  
 Chasing such shades. Then, I 've a fancy too ;  
 I worked because I want you with my soul :  
 I therefore ask your hand. Let it be now !

*Con.* Had I not loved you from the very  
 first,

Were I not yours, could we not steal out thus  
 So wickedly, so wildly, and so well,  
 You might become impatient. What's con-  
 ceived

Of us without here, by the folk within ?  
 Where are you now ? immersed in cares of  
 state —

Where am I now ? intent on festal robes —  
 We two, embracing under death's spread hand !  
 What was this thought for, what that scruple  
 of yours

Which broke the council up ? — to bring about  
 One minute's meeting in the corridor !  
 And then the sudden sleights, strange seeceries,  
 Complots inscrutable, deep telegraphs,  
 Long-planned chance-meetings, hazards of a  
 look,

" Does she know ? does she not know ? saved  
 or lost ? "

A year of this compression's ecstasy  
 All goes for nothing ! you would give this up  
 For the old way, the open way, the world's,  
 His way who beats, and his who sells his wife !  
 What tempts you ? — their notorious happiness  
 Makes you ashamed of ours ? The best you 'll  
 gain

Will be — the Queen grants all that you require,  
 Concedes the cousin, rids herself of you  
 And me at once, and gives us ample leave  
 To live like our five hundred happy friends.

The world will show us with officious hand  
Our chamber-entry, and stand sentinel  
Where we so oft have stolen across its traps !  
Get the world's warrant, ring the falcons' feet,  
And make it duty to be bold and swift,  
Which long ago was nature. Have it so !  
We never hawked by rights till flung from  
fist ?

Oh, the man's thought ! no woman's such a  
fool.

*Nor.* Yes, the man's thought and my  
thought, which is more —  
One made to love you, let the world take note !  
Have I done worthy work ? be love's the  
praise,

Though hampered by restrictions, barred  
against

By set forms, blinded by forced secrecies !  
Set free my love, and see what love can do  
Shown in my life — what work will spring  
from that !

The world is used to have its business done  
On other grounds, find great effects produced  
For power's sake, fame's sake, motives in men's  
mouth.

So, good : but let my low ground shame their  
high !

Truth is the strong thing. Let man's life be  
true !

And love's the truth of mine. Time prove the  
rest !

I choose to wear you stamped all over me,  
Your name upon my forehead and my breast,  
You, from the sword's blade to the ribbon's edge,  
That men may see, all over, you in me —  
That pale loves may die out of their pretence  
In face of mine, shames thrown on love fall  
off.

Permit this, Constance ! Love has been so  
long

Subdued in me, eating me through and through,  
That now 't is all of me and must have way.  
Think of my work, that chaos of intrigues,  
Those hopes and fears, surprises and delays,  
That long endeavor, earnest, patient, slow,  
Trembling at last to its assured result :  
Then think of this revulsion ! I resume  
Life after death, (it is no less than life,  
After such long unlovely laboring days.)

And liberate to beauty life's great need  
O' the beautiful, which, while it prompted work,  
Suppressed itself erewhile. This eve's the  
time,

This eve intense with yon first trembling star  
We seem to pant and reach ; scarce aught be-  
tween

The earth that rises and the heaven that bends ;  
All nature self-abandoned, every tree  
Flung as it will, pursuing its own thoughts  
And fixed so, every flower and every weed,  
No pride, no shame, no victory, no defeat ;  
All under God, each measured by itself.  
These statues round us stand abrupt, distinct,  
The strong in strength, the weak in weakness  
fixed,

The Muse forever wedded to her lyre,  
Nymph to her fawn, and Silence to her rose :  
See God's approval on his universe !

Let us do so — aspire to live as these  
In harmony with truth, ourselves being true !  
Take the first way, and let the second come !  
My first is to possess myself of you ;  
The music sets the march-step — forward, then !  
And there's the Queen, I go to claim you of,  
The world to witness, wonder and applaud.  
Our flower of life breaks open. No delay !

*Con.* And so shall we be ruined, both of us.  
Norbert, I know her to the skin and bone :  
You do not know her, were not born to it,  
To feel what she can see or cannot see.  
Love, she is generous, — ay, despite your  
smile,

Generous as you are : for, in that thin frame  
Pain-twisted, punctured through and through  
with cares,

There lived a lavish soul until it starved,  
Debarred of healthy food. Look to the soul —  
Pity that, stoop to that, ere you begin  
(The true man's - way) on justice and your  
rights,

Exactions and acquittance of the past !  
Begin so — see what justice she will deal !  
We women hate a debt as men a gift.  
Suppose her some poor keeper of a school  
Whose business is to sit through summer  
months

And dote out children leave to go and play,  
Herself superior to such lightness — she  
In the arm-chair's state and pædagogic pomp —  
To the life, the laughter, sun and youth out-  
side :

We wonder such a face looks black on us ?  
I do not bid you wake her tenderness,  
(That were vain truly — none is left to wake,)  
But, let her think her justice is engaged  
To take the shape of tenderness, and mark  
If she 'll not coldly pay its warmest debt !  
Does she love me, I ask you ? not a whit :  
Yet, thinking that her justice was engaged  
To help a kinswoman, she took me up —  
Did more on that bare ground than other loves  
Would do on greater argument. For me,  
I have no equivalent of such cold kind  
To pay her with, but love alone to give  
If I give anything. I give her love :  
I feel I ought to help her, and I will.

So, for her sake, as yours, I tell you twice  
That women hate a debt as men a gift.  
If I were you, I could obtain this grace —  
Could lay the whole I did to love's account,  
Nor yet be very false as courtiers go —  
Declaring my success was recompense ;  
It would be so, in fact : what were it else ?

And then, once loose her generosity, —  
Oh, how I see it ! then, were I but you  
To turn it, let it seem to move itself,  
And make it offer what I really take,  
Accepting just, in the poor cousin's hand,  
Her value as the next thing to the Queen's —  
Since none love Queens directly, none dare that,  
And a thing's shadow or a name's mere echo  
Suffices those who miss the name and thing !

You pick up just a ribbon she has worn,  
To keep in proof how near her breath you  
came.

Say, I'm so near I seem a piece of her —

Ask for me that way — (oh, you understand,) You'd find the same gift yielded with a grace, Which, if you make the least show to ex-  
tort . . .

— You'll see! and when you have ruined both of us,

Dissertate on the Queen's ingratitude!

Nor. Then, if I turn it that way, you consent?

'T is not my way; I have more hope in truth: Still, if you won't have truth — why, this indeed,

Were scarcely false, as I'd express the sense. Will you remain here?

Con. O best heart of mine, How I have loved you! then, you take my way? Are mine as you have been her minister, Work out my thought, give it effect for me, Paint plain my poor conceit and make it serve? I owe that withered woman everything — Life, fortune, you, remember! Take my part —

Help me to pay her! Stand upon your rights? You, with my rose, my hands, my heart on you?

Your rights are mine — you have no rights but mine.

Nor. Remain here. How you know me!

Con. Ah, but still —  
[He breaks from her; she remains. Dance-music from within.]

(Enter the QUEEN.)

Queen. Constance? She is here as he said. Speak quick!

Is it so? Is it true or false? One word!

Con. True.

Queen. Mercifullest Mother, thanks to thee!

Con. Madam?

Queen. I love you, Constance, from my soul.

Now say once more, with any words you will,

'T is true, all true, as true as that I speak.

Con. Why should you doubt it?

Queen. Ah, why doubt? why doubt?

Dear, make me see it! Do you see it so?

None see themselves; another sees them best.

You say "why doubt it?" — you see him and me.

It is because the Mother has such grace That if we had but faith — wherein we fail — Whate'er we yearn for would be granted us; Yet still we let our whims prescribe despair, Our fancies thwart and cramp our will and power,

And while accepting life, abjure its use.

Constance, I had abjured the hope of love

And being loved, as truly as you palm

The hope of seeing Egypt from that plot.

Con. Heaven!

Queen. But it was so, Constance, it was so!

Men say — or do men say it? fancies say —

"Stop here, your life is set, you are grown old.

Too late — no love for you, too late for love — Leave love to girls. Be queen: let Constance love!"

One takes the hint — half meets it like a child, Ashamed at any feelings that oppose.

"Oh love, true, never think of love again!

I am a queen: I rule, not love, forsooth."

So it goes on; so a face grows like this, Hair like this hair, poor arms as lean as these, Till, — nay, it does not end so, I thank God!

Con. I cannot understand —

Queen. The happier you!

Constance, I know not how it is with men:

For women (I am a woman now like you)

There is no good of life but love — but love!

What else looks good, is some shade flung from love;

Love gilds it, gives it worth. Be warned by me,

Never you cheat yourself one instant! Love,

Give love, ask only love, and leave the rest!

O Constance, how I love you!

Con.

I love you.

Queen. I do believe that all is come through you.

I took you to my heart to keep it warm

When the last chance of love seemed dead in me;

I thought your fresh youth warmed my withered heart.

Oh, I am very old now, am I not?

Not so! it is true and it shall be true!

Con. Tell it me: let me judge if true or false.

Queen. Ah, but I fear you! you will look at me

And say, "she's old, she's grown unlovely quite

Who ne'er wasauteous: men want beauty still."

Well, so I feared — the curse! so I felt sure!

Con. Be calm. And now you feel not sure, you say?

Queen. Constance, he came, — the coming was not strange —

Do not I stand and see men come and go?

I turned a half-look from my pedestal

Where I grow marble — "one young man the more!

He will love some one; that is naught to me;

What would he with my marble stateliness?"

Yet this seemed somewhat worse than heretofore;

The man more gracious, youthful, like a god,

And I still older, with less flesh to change —

We two those dear extremes that long to touch.

It seemed still harder when he first began

To labor at those state-affairs, absorbed

The old way for the old end — interest.

Oh, to live with a thousand beating hearts

Around you, swift eyes, serviceable hands.

Professing they've no care but for your cause,

Thought but to help you, love but for yourself, —

And you the marble statue all the time

They praise and point at as preferred to life,

Yet leave for the first breathing woman's smile,

First dancer's, gypsy's, or street baladine's!

Why, how I have ground my teeth to hear men's speech

Stified for fear it should alarm my ear,

Their gait subdued lest step should startle me,

Their eyes declined, such quondam to respect,

Their hands alert, such treasure to preserve,



While not a man of them broke rank and spoke,  
Wrote me a vulgar letter all of love,  
Or caught my hand and pressed it like a hand !  
There have been moments, if the sentinel  
Lowering his halbert to salute the queen,  
Had flung it brutally and elapsed my knees,  
I would have stooped and kissed him with my  
soul.

*Con.* Who could have comprehended ?

*Queen.* Ay, who — who ?  
Why, no one, Constance, but this one who did.  
Not they, not you, not I. Even now perhaps  
It comes too late — would you but tell the truth.

*Con.* I wait to tell it.

*Queen.* Well, you see, he came,  
Outfaced the others, did a work this year  
Exceeds in value all was ever done,  
You know — it is not I who say it — all  
Say it. And so (a second pang and worse)  
I grew aware not only of what he did,  
But why so wondrously. Oh, never work  
Like his was done for work's ignoble sake —  
Souls need a finer aim to light and lure !  
I felt, I saw, he loved — loved somebody.  
And Constance, my dear Constance, do you  
know,

I did believe this while 't was you he loved.

*Con.* Me, madam ?

*Queen.* It did seem to me, your face  
Met him where'er he looked : and whom but  
you

Was such a man to love ? It seemed to me,  
You saw he loved you, and approved his love,  
And both of you were in intelligence.  
You could not loiter in that garden, step  
Into this balcony, but I straight was stung  
And forced to understand. It seemed so true,  
So right, so beautiful, so like you both,  
That all this work should have been done by  
him

Not for the vulgar hope of recompense,  
But that at last — suppose, some night like  
this —

Borne on to claim his due reward of me,  
He might say, "Give her hand and pay me  
so."

And I (O Constance, you shall love me now !)

I thought, surmounting all the bitterness,

—"And he shall have it. I will make her  
blest,

My flower of youth, my woman's self that was,  
My happiest woman's self that might have been!  
These two shall have their joy and leave me  
here."

Yes — yes !

*Con.* Thanks !

*Queen.* And the word was on my lips  
When he burst in upon me. I looked to hear  
A mere calm statement of his just desire  
For payment of his labor. When — O heaven,  
How can I tell you ? lightning on my eyes  
And thunder in my ears proved that first word  
Which told 't was love of me, of me, did all —  
He loved me — from the first step to the last,  
Loved me !

*Con.* You hardly saw, scarce heard him  
speak  
Of love : what if you should mistake ?

*Queen.*

No, no —

No mistake ! Ha, there shall be no mistake !  
He had not dared to hint the love he felt —  
You were my reflex — (how I understood !)  
He said you were the ribbon I had worn,  
He kissed my hand, he looked into my eyes,  
And love, love came at end of every phrase.  
Love is begun ; this much is come to pass :  
The rest is easy. Constance, I am yours !  
I will learn, I will place my life on you,  
Teach me but how to keep what I have won !  
Am I so old ? This hair was early gray ;  
But joy ere now has brought hair brown again,  
And joy will bring the cheek's red back, I feel.  
I could sing once too ; that was in my youth.  
Still, when men paint me, they declare me . . .

yes,

Beautiful — for the last French painter did !  
I know they flatter somewhat ; you are frank —  
I trust you. How I loved you from the  
first !

Some queens would hardly seek a cousin out  
And set her by their side to take the eye :  
I must have felt that good would come from  
you.

I am not generous — like him — like you !

But he is not your lover after all :

It was not you he looked at. Saw you him ?  
You have not been mistaking words or looks ?  
He said you were the reflex of myself.  
And yet he is not such a paragon

To you, to younger women who may choose  
Among a thousand Norberts. Speak the  
truth !

You know you never named his name to me :

You know, I cannot give him up — ah God,

Not up now, even to you !

*Con.*

Then calm yourself.

*Queen.* See, I am old — look here, you happy  
girl !

I will not play the fool, deceive — ah, whom ?  
'T is all gone : put your cheek beside my cheek  
And what a contrast does the moon behold !  
But then I set my life upon one chance,  
The last chance and the best — am I not left,  
My soul, myself ? All women love great men  
If young or old ; it is in all the tales :  
Young beauties love old poets who can love —  
Why should not he, the poems in my soul,  
The passionate faith, the pride of sacrifice,  
Life-long, death-long ? I throw them at his  
feet.

Who cares to see the fountain's very shape,  
Whether it be a Triton's or a Nymph's  
That pours the foam, makes rainbows all  
around ?

You could not praise indeed the empty conch ;  
But I'll pour floods of love and hide myself.  
How I will love him ! Cannot men love love ?  
Who was a queen and loved a poet once  
Humpbacked, a dwarf ? ah, women can do  
that !

Well, but men too ; at least, they tell you so.  
They love so many women in their youth,  
And even in age they all love whom they please ;  
And yet the best of them confide to friends  
That 't is not beauty makes the lasting love —  
They spend a day with such and tire the next :

They like soul,— well then, they like phantasy,  
Novelty even. Let us confess the truth,  
Horrible though it be, that prejudice,  
Prescription . . . curses! they will love a queen.  
They will, they do: and will not, does not — he?

*Con.* How can he? You are wedded: 'tis  
a name

We know, but still a bond. Your rank remains,  
His rank remains. How can he, nobly souled  
As you believe and I incline to think,  
Aspire to be your favorite, shame and all?

*Queen.* Hear her! There, there now — could  
she love like me?

What did I say of smooth-cheeked youth and  
grace?

See all it does or could do! so youth loves!

Oh, tell him, Constance, you could never do

What I will — you, it was not born in! I

Will drive these difficulties far and fast

As yonder mists curdling before the moon.

I'll use my light too, gloriously retrieve

My youth from its enforced calamity,

Dissolve that hateful marriage, and be his,

His own in the eyes alike of God and man.

*Con.* You will do — dare do . . . pause on  
what you say!

*Queen.* Hear her! I thank you, sweet, for  
that surprise.

You have the fair face: for the soul, see mine!

I have the strong soul: let me teach you, here.

I think I have borne enough and long enough,

And patiently enough, the world remarks,

To have my own way now, unblamed by all.

It does so happen (I rejoice for it)

This most unhopèd-for issue cuts the knot.

There's not a better way of settling claims

Than this; God sends the accident express:

And were it for my subjects' good, no more,

'T were best thus ordered. I am thankful now,

Mute, passive, acquiescent. I receive,

And bless God simply, or should almost fear

To walk so smoothly to my ends at last.

Why, how I baffle obstacles, spurn fate!

How strong I am! Could Norbert see me now!

*Con.* Let me consider. It is all too strange.

*Queen.* You, Constance, learn of me; do you,  
like me!

You are young, beautiful: my own, best girl,

You will have many lovers, and love one —

Light hair, not hair like Norbert's, to suit  
yours,

Taller than he is, since yourself are tall.

Love him, like me! Give all away to him;

Think never of yourself; throw by your pride,

Hope, fear, — your own good as you saw it once,

And love him simply for his very self.

Remember, I (and what am I to you?)

Would give up all for one, leave throne, lose life,

Do all but just unlove him! He loves me.

*Con.* He shall.

*Queen.* You, step inside my inmost heart!

Give me your own heart: let us have one heart!

I'll come to you for counsel; "this he says,

This he does; what should this amount to,  
pray?

Beseech you, change it into current coin!

Is that worth kisses? Shall I please him  
there?"

And then we'll speak in turn of you — what  
else?

Your love, according to your beauty's worth,

For you shall have some noble love, all gold:

Whom choose you? we will get him at your  
choice.

— Constance, I leave you. Just a minute since,  
I felt as I must die or be alone

Breathing my soul into an ear like yours:

Now, I would face the world with my new life,

Wear my new crown. I'll walk around the  
rooms,

And then come back and tell you how it feels.

How soon a smile of God can change the world!

How we are made for happiness — how work

Grows play, adversity a winning fight!

True, I have lost so many years: what then?

Many remain: God has been very good.

You, stay here! 'T is as different from dreams,

From the mind's cold calm estimate of bliss,

As these stone statues from the flesh and  
blood.

The comfort thou hast caused mankind, God's  
moon!

[*She goes out, leaving CONSTANCE. Dance-music from  
within.*]

(NORBERT enters.)

*Nor.* Well? we have but one minute and one  
word!

*Con.* I am yours, Norbert!

*Nor.* Yes, mine.

*Con.* Not till now!

You were mine. Now I give myself to you.

*Nor.* Constance?

*Con.* Your own! I know the thriftier way  
Of giving — haply, 't is the wiser way.

Meaning to give a treasure, I might dole

Coin after coin out (each, as that were all,

With a new largess still at each despair)

And force you keep in sight the deed, preserve

Exhaustless till the end my part and yours,

My giving and your taking; both our joys

Dying together. Is it the wiser way?

I choose the simpler; I give all at once.

Know what you have to trust to, trade upon!

Use it, abuse it, — anything but think

Hereafter, "Had I known she loved me so,

And what my means, I might have thriven with  
it."

This is your means. I give you all myself.

*Nor.* I take you and thank God.

*Con.* Look on through years! We cannot kiss, a second day like this;

Else were this earth no earth.

*Nor.* With this day's heat

We shall go on through years of cold.

*Con.* So, best!

— I try to see those years — I think I see.

You walk quick and new warmth comes; you  
look back

And lay all to the first glow — not sit down

Forever brooding on a day like this

While seeing embers whiten and love die.

Yes, love lives best in its effect; and mine,

Full in its own life, yearns to live in yours.

*Nor.* Just so. I take and know you all at  
once.

Your soul is disengaged so easily,

Your face is there, I know you ; give me time,  
Let me be proud and think you shall know me.  
My soul is slower : in a life I roll

The minute out whereto you condense yours —  
The whole slow circle round you I must move,  
To be just you. I look to a long life  
To decompose this minute, prove its worth.

'T is the sparks' long succession one by one  
Shall show you, in the end, what fire was  
crammed

In that mere stone you struck : how could you  
know,

If it lay ever unproved in your sight,  
As now my heart lies ? your own warmth would  
hide

Its coldness, were it cold.

*Con.* But how prove, how ?

*Nor.* Prove in my life, you ask ?

*Con.* Quick, Norbert — how ?

*Nor.* That's easy told. I count life just a  
stuff

To try the soul's strength on, educe the man.  
Who keeps one end in view makes all things  
serve

As with the body — he who hurls a lance  
Or heaps up stone on stone, shows strength  
alike :

So must I seize and task all means to prove  
And show this soul of mine, you crown as yours,  
And justify us both.

*Con.* Could you write books,

Paint pictures ! One sits down in poverty  
And writes or paints, with pity for the rich.

*Nor.* And loves one's painting and one's  
writing, then.

And not one's mistress ! All is best, believe,  
And we best as no other than we are.  
We live, and they experiment on life —  
Those poets, painters, all who stand aloof  
To overlook the farther. Let us be  
The thing they look at ! I might take your  
face

And write of it and paint it — to what end ?  
For whom ? what pale dictatress in the air  
Feeds, smiling sadly, her fine ghost-like form  
With earth's real blood and breath, the beaute-  
ous life

She makes despised forever ? You are mine,  
Made for me, not for others in the world,  
Nor yet for that which I should call my art.  
The cold calm power to see how fair you look.  
I come to you ; I leave you not, to write  
Or paint. You are, I am : let Rubens there  
Paint us !

*Con.* So, best !

*Nor.* I understand your soul,  
You live, and rightly sympathize with life,  
With action, power, success. This way is  
straight ;

And time were short beside, to let me change  
The craft my childhood learnt : my craft  
shall serve.

Men set me here to subjugate, enclose,  
Manure their barren lives, and force thence  
fruit

First for themselves, and afterward for me  
In the due tithe ; the task of some one soul,  
Through ways of work appointed by the world.

I am not bid create — men see no star  
Transfiguring my brow to warrant that —  
But find and bind and bring to bear their wills.  
So I began : to-night sees how I end.

What if it see, too, power's first outbreak here  
Amid the warmth, surprise and sympathy,  
And instincts of the heart that teach the head ?  
What if the people have discerned at length  
The dawn of the next nature, novel brain  
Whose will they venture in the place of theirs,  
Whose work, they trust, shall find them as  
novel ways

To untried heights which yet he only sees ?  
I felt it when you kissed me. See this Queen,  
This people — in our phrase this mass of  
men —

See how the mass lies passive to my hand  
Now that my hand is plastic, with you by  
To make the muscles iron ! Oh, an end  
Shall crown this issue as this crowns the first !  
My will be on the people ! then, the strain,  
The grappling of the potter with his clay,  
The long uncertain struggle, — the success  
And consummation of the spirit-work,  
Some vase shape to the curl of the god's lip,  
While rounded fair for human sense to see  
The Graces in a dance men recognize  
With turbulent applause and laughs of heart !  
So triumph ever shall renew itself ;  
Ever shall end in efforts higher yet,  
Ever begin . . .

*Con.* I ever helping ?

*Nor.* Thus !

(As he embraces her, the QUEEN enters.)

*Con.* Hist, madam ! So have I performed  
my part.

You see your gratitude's true decency,  
Norbert ? A little slow in seeing it !  
Begin, to end the sooner ! What's a kiss ?

*Nor.* Constance ?

*Con.* Why, must I teach it you again ?  
You want a witness to your dullness, sir ?  
What was I saying these ten minutes long ?  
Then I repeat — when some young handsome  
man

Like you has acted out a part like yours,  
Is pleased to fall in love with one beyond,  
So very far beyond him, as he says —  
So hopelessly in love that but to speak  
Would prove him mad, — he thinks judiciously,  
And makes some insignificant good soul,  
Like me, his friend, adviser, confidant,  
And very stalking-horse to cover him  
In following after what he dares not face —  
When his end's gained — (sir, do you under-  
stand ?)

When she, he dares not face, has loved him  
first.

— May I not say so, madam ? — tops his hope,  
And overpasses so his wildest dream,  
With glad consent of all, and most of her  
The confidant who brought the same about —  
Why, in the moment when such joy explodes,  
I do hold that the merest gentleman  
Will not start rudely from the stalking-horse,  
Dismiss it with a " There, enough of you !"  
Forget it, show his back unmanly ;  
But like a liberal heart will rather turn



And say, "A tingling time of hope was ours;  
Betwixt the fears and falterings, we two lived  
A chanceful time in waiting for the prize:  
The confidant, the Constance, served not ill.  
And though I shall forget her in good time,  
Her use being answered now, as reason bids,  
Nay as herself bids from her heart of hearts,—  
Still, she has rights, the first thanks go to her,  
The first good praise goes to the prosperous  
tool.

And the first — which is the last — rewarding  
kiss."

*Nor.* Constance, it is a dream — ah, see,  
you smile!

*Con.* So, now his part being properly per-  
formed,

Madam, I turn to you and finish mine

As duly; I do justice in my turn.

Yes, madam, he has loved you — long and  
well;

He could not hope to tell you so — 't was I  
Who served to prove your soul accessible,  
I led his thoughts on, drew them to their place  
When they had wandered else into despair,  
And kept love constant toward its natural aim.  
Enough, my part is played; you stoop half-way  
And meet us royally and spare our fears:  
'T is like yourself. He thanks you, so do I.  
Take him — with my full heart! my work is  
praised

By what comes of it. Be you happy, both!  
Yourself — the only one on earth who can —  
Do all for him, much more than a mere heart  
Which though warm is not useful in its warmth  
As the silk vesture of a queen! fold that  
Around him gently, tenderly. For him —  
For him, — he knows his own part!

*Nor.* Have you done?  
I take the jest at last. Should I speak now?  
Was yours the wager, Constance, foolish child,  
Or did you but accept it? Well — at least  
You lose by it.

*Con.* Nay, madam, 't is your turn!  
Restrain him still from speech a little more,  
And make him happier as more confident!  
Pity him, madam, he is timid yet!  
Mark, Norbert! Do not shrink now! Here I  
yield

My whole right in you to the Queen, observe!  
With her go put in practice the great schemes  
You teem with, follow the career else closed —  
Be all you cannot be except by her!  
Behold her! — Madam, say for pity's sake  
Anything — frankly say you love him! Else  
He'll not believe it: there's more earnest in  
His fear than you conceive: I know the man!

*Nor.* I know the woman somewhat, and  
confess

I thought she had jested better: she begins  
To overcharge her part. I gravely wait  
Your pleasure, madam: where is my reward?

*Queen.* Norbert, this wild girl (whom I  
recognize

Scarcely more than you do, in her fancy-fit,  
Eccentric speech and variable mirth.  
Not very wise perhaps and somewhat bold.  
Yet suitable, the whole night's work being  
strange)

— May still be right: I may do well to speak  
And make authentic what appears a dream  
To even myself. For, what she says is true:  
Yes, Norbert — what you spoke just now of love,  
Devotion, stirred no novel sense in me,  
But justified a warmth felt long before.  
Yes, from the first — I loved you, I shall say:  
Strange! but I do grow stronger, now 't is said.  
Your courage helps mine: you did well to speak  
To-night, the night that crowns your twelve-  
months' toil:

But still I had not waited to discern  
Your heart so long, believe me! From the first  
The source of so much zeal was almost plain,  
In absence even of your own words just now  
Which hazarded the truth. 'T is very strange,  
But takes a happy ending — in your love  
Which mine meets: be it so! as you choose me,  
So I choose you.

*Nor.* And worthily you choose.  
I will not be unworthy your esteem,  
No, madam. I do love you; I will meet  
Your nature, now I know it. This was well.  
I see, — you dare and you are justified:  
But none had ventured such experiment,  
Less versed than you in nobleness of heart,  
Less confident of finding such in me.  
I joy that thus you test me ere you grant  
The dearest, richest, beauteouset and best  
Of women to my arms: 't is like yourself.  
So — back again into my part's set words —  
Devotion to the uttermost is yours,  
But no, you cannot, madam, even you,  
Create in me the love our Constance does.  
Or — something truer to the tragic phrase —  
Not yon magnolia-bell superb with scent  
Invites a certain insect — that 's myself —  
But the small eye-flower nearer to the ground.  
I take this lady.

*Con.* Stay — not hers, the trap —  
Stay, Norbert — that mistake were worst of all!  
He is too cunning, madam! It was I,  
I, Norbert, who . . .

*Nor.* You, was it, Constance? Then,  
But for the grace of this divinest hour  
Which gives me you, I might not pardon here!  
I am the Queen's; she only knows my brain:  
She may experiment upon my heart  
And I instruct her too by the result.  
But you, Sweet, you who know me, who so long  
Have told my heartbeats over, held my life  
In those white hands of yours, — it is not well!

*Con.* Tush! I have said it, did I not say it  
all?

The life, for her — the heartbeats, for her sake!  
*Nor.* Enough! my cheek grows red, I think.  
Your test?

There's not the meanest woman in the world,  
Not she I least could love in all the world,  
Whom, did she love me, had love proved itself,  
I dare insult as you insult me now.  
Constance, I could say, if it must be said,  
"Take back the soul you offer, I keep mine!"  
But — "Take the soul still quivering on your  
hand,

The soul so offered, which I cannot use,  
And, please you, give it to some playful friend,  
For — what 's the trifle he requites me with?"

I tempt a woman, to amuse a man,  
That two may mock her heart if it succumb ?  
No : fearing God and standing 'neath his  
heaven,

I would not dare insult a woman so,  
Were she the meanest woman in the world,  
And he, I feared to please, ten emperors !

Con. Norbert !

Nor. I love once as I live but once.  
What case is this to think or talk about ?  
I love you. Would it mend the case at all  
If such a step as this killed love in me ?  
Your part were done : account to God for it !  
But mine — could murdered love get up again,  
And kneel to whom you please to designate,  
And make you mirth ? It is too horrible.

You did not know this, Constance ? now you  
know  
That body and soul have each one life, but  
one ;

And here's my love, here, living, at your feet.

Con. See the Queen ! Norbert — this one  
more last word —

If thus you have taken jest for earnest — thus  
Loved me in earnest . . .

Nor. Ah, no jest holds here !  
Where is the laughter in which jests break up,  
And what this horror that grows palpable ?  
Madam — why grasp you thus the balcony ?  
Have I done ill ? Have I not spoken truth ?  
How could I other ? Was it not your test,  
To try me, what my love for Constance meant ?  
Madam, your royal soul itself approves,  
The first, that I should choose thus ! so one takes  
A beggar, — asks him, what would buy his  
child ?

And then approves the expected laugh of scorn  
Returned as something noble from the rags.  
Speak, Constance, I'm the beggar ! Ha,  
what 's this ?

You two glare each at each like panthers now.  
Constance, the world fades ; only you stand  
there !

You did not, in to-night's wild whirl of things,  
Sell me — your soul of souls, for any price ?  
No — no — 't is easy to believe in you !  
Was it your love's mad trial to o'ertop  
Mine by this vain self-sacrifice ? well, still —  
Though I might curse, I love you. I am love  
And cannot change : love's self is at your feet !

[The Queen goes out.]

Con. Feel my heart ; let it die against your  
own !

Nor. Against my own. Explain not ; let this  
be !

This is life's height.

Con. Yours, yours, yours !

Nor. You and I —

Why care by what meanders we are here  
I' the centre of the labyrinth ? Men have died  
Trying to find this place, which we have found.

Con. Found, found !

Nor. Sweet, never fear what she can do !  
We are past harm now.

Con.

I thought of men — as if you were a man.  
Tempting him with a crown !

Nor.

This must end here :

It is too perfect.

Con.

There 's the music stopped.  
What measured heavy tread ? It is one blaze  
About me and within me.

Nor.

Oh, some death  
Will run its sudden finger round this spark  
And sever us from the rest !

Con.

And so do well.

Now the doors open,

Nor.

'T is the guard comes.

Con.

Kiss !

## BEN KARSHOOK'S WISDOM

The eighth line of the fourteenth section of  
*One Word More* reads,

"Karshish, Cleon, Norbert and the fifty."

Originally it read,

"Karshook, Cleon, Norbert and the fifty."

The reference apparently was to the poem written in April, 1854, and printed in *The Keepsake*, an annual edited by Miss Power, a niece of Lady Blessington, in whom Dickens also took an interest. It may have been Browning's intention to include this poem in *Men and Women*, but he never did place it there, and finally dropped Karshook and substituted Karshish, who narrates his medical experience.

## I

"WOULD a man 'scape the rod ?"

Rabbi Ben Karshook saith,

"See that he turn to God

The day before his death."

"Ay, could a man inquire

When it shall come !" I say.

The Rabbi's eye shoots fire —

"Then let him turn to-day !"

## II

Quoth a young Sadducee :

"Reader of many rolls,

Is it so certain we

Have, as they tell us, souls ?"

"Son, there is no reply !"

The Rabbi bit his beard :

"Certain, a soul have I —

We may have none," he sneered.

Thus Karshook, the Hiram's-Hammer,  
The Right-hand Temple-column,  
Taught babes in grace their grammar,  
And struck the simple, solemn.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

THE volume bearing the title *Dramatis Personæ* was published in 1864 and the contents remained unchanged in subsequent editions except that two short poems were added in the edition of 1868. The first poem was however

originally entitled *James Lee*. The first six stanzas of the sixth section of the poem were first printed in 1836 in Mr. Fox's *The Monthly Repository*, and bore the title merely *Lines*, with the signature Z.

## JAMES LEE'S WIFE

## I

## JAMES LEE'S WIFE SPEAKS AT THE WINDOW

AH, Love, but a day  
And the world has changed!  
The sun's away,  
And the bird estranged;  
The wind has dropped,  
And the sky's deranged:  
Summer has stopped.

Look in my eyes!  
Wilt thou change too?  
Should I fear surprise?  
Shall I find aught new  
In the old and dear,  
In the good and true,  
With the changing year?

Thou art a man,  
But I am thy love.  
For the lake, its swan;  
For the dell its dove;  
And for thee — (oh, haste!)  
Me, to bend above,  
Me, to hold embraced.

## II

## BY THE FIRESIDE

Is all our fire of shipwreck wood,  
Oak and pine?  
Oh, for the ills half-understood,  
The dim dead woe  
Long ago  
Befallen this bitter coast of France!  
Well, poor sailors took their chance;  
I take mine.

A ruddy shaft our fire must shoot  
O'er the sea:  
Do sailors eye the casement — mute  
Drenched and stark,  
From their bark —  
And envy, gnash their teeth for hate  
O' the warm safe house and happy freight  
— Thee and me?

God help you, sailors, at your need!  
Spare the curse!  
For some ships, safe in port indeed,

Rot and rust,  
Run to dust,  
All through worms i' the wood, which crept,  
Gnawed our hearts out while we slept:  
That is worse.

Who lived here before us two?  
Old-world pairs.  
Did a woman ever — would I knew! —  
Watch the man  
With whom began  
Love's voyage full-sail, — (now gnash your teeth!)  
When planks start, open hell beneath  
Unawares?

## III

## IN THE DOORWAY

The swallow has set her six young on the rail,  
And looks seaward:  
The water's in stripes like a snake, olive-pale  
To the leeward, —  
On the weather-side, black, spotted white with  
the wind.  
"Good fortune departs, and disaster's be-  
hind," —  
Hark, the wind with its wants and its infinite  
wail!

Our fig-tree, that leaned for the saltness, has  
furled  
Her five fingers,  
Each leaf like a hand opened wide to the world  
Where there lingers  
No glint of the gold, Summer sent for her sake:  
How the vines writhe in rows, each impaled on  
its stake!  
My heart shrivels up and my spirit shrinks  
curled.

Yet here are we two; we have love, house  
enough,  
With the field there,  
This house of four rooms, that field red and  
rough,  
Though it yield there,  
For the rabbit that robs, scarce a blade or a  
bent;  
If a magpie alight now, it seems an event;  
And they both will be gone at November's re-  
buff.

But why must cold spread? but wherefore bring  
change  
To the spirit,



God meant should mate his with an infinite  
range,  
And inherit  
His power to put life in the darkness and cold ?  
Oh, live and love worthily, bear and be bold !  
Whom Summer made friends of, let Winter  
estrangle !

## IV

## ALONG THE BEACH

I will be quiet and talk with you,  
And reason why you are wrong.  
You wanted my love — is that much true ?  
And so I did love, so I do :  
What has come of it all along ?

I took you — how could I otherwise ?  
For a world to me, and more ;  
For all, love greatens and glorifies  
Till God 's aglow, to the loving eyes,  
In what was mere earth before.

Yes, earth — yes, mere ignoble earth !  
Now do I mis-state, mistake ?  
Do I wrong your weakness and call it worth ?  
Expect all harvest, dread no dearth,  
Seal my sense up for your sake ?

Oh, Love, Love, no, Love ! not so, indeed !  
You were just weak earth, I knew :  
With much in you waste, with many a weed,  
And plenty of passions run to seed,  
But a little good grain too.

And such as you were, I took you for mine :  
Did not you find me yours,  
To watch the olive and wait the vine,  
And wonder when rivers of oil and wine  
Would flow, as the Book assures ?

Well, and if none of these good things came,  
What did the failure prove ?  
The man was my whole world, all the same,  
With his flowers to praise or his weeds to blame,  
And, either or both, to love.

Yet this turns now to a fault — there ! there !  
That I do love, watch too long,  
And wait too well, and weary and wear ;  
And 'tis all an old story, and my despair  
Fit subject for some new song :

"How the light, light love, he has wings to fly  
At suspicion of a bond :  
My wisdom has bidden your pleasure good-by,  
Which will turn up next in a laughing eye,  
And why should you look beyond ?"

## V

## ON THE CLIFF

I leaned on the turf,  
I looked at a rock  
Left dry by the surf :

For the turf, to call it grass were to mock :  
Dead to the roots, so deep was done  
The work of the summer sun.

And the rock lay flat  
As an anvil's face ;  
No iron like that !  
Baked dry ; of a weed, of a shell, no trace :  
Sunshine outside, but ice at the core,  
Death's altar by the lone shore.

On the turf, sprang gay  
With his films of blue,  
No cricket, I'll say,  
But a warhorse, barded and chanfroned too,  
The gift of a quixote-mage to his knight,  
Real fairy, with wings all right.

On the rock, they scorch  
Like a drop of fire  
From a brandished torch,  
Fall two red fans of a butterfly :  
No turf, no rock : in their ugly stead,  
See, wonderful blue and red !

Is it not so  
With the minds of men ?  
The level and low,  
The burnt and bare, in themselves ; but then  
With such a blue and red grace, not theirs, —  
Love settling unawares !

## VI

## READING A BOOK, UNDER THE CLIFF

"Still ailing, Wind ? Wilt be appeased or  
no ?

Which needs the other's office, thou or I ?  
Dost want to be disburdened of a woe,  
And can, in truth, my voice untie  
Its links, and let it go ?

"Art thou a dumb, wronged thing that would  
be righted,

Entrusting thus thy cause to me ? Forbear !  
No tongue can mend such pleadings ; faith, re-  
quited

With falsehood, — love, at last aware  
Of scorn, — hopes, early blighted, —

"We have them ; but I know not any tone  
So fit as thine to falter forth a sorrow :  
Dost think men would go mad without a moan,  
If they knew any way to borrow  
A pathos like thy own ?

"Which sigh wouldst mock, of all the sighs ?  
The one

So long escaping from lips starved and blue,  
That lasts while on her pallet-bed the nun  
Stretches her length ; her foot comes through  
The straw she shivers on ;

"You had not thought she was so tall : and  
spent,  
Her shrunk lids open, her lean fingers shut

Close, close, their sharp and livid nails indent  
The clammy palm; then all is mute:  
That way, the spirit went.

"Or wouldst thou rather that I understand  
Thy will to help me? — like the dog I found  
Once, pacing sad this solitary strand,  
Who would not take my food, poor hound,  
But whined and licked my hand."

All this, and more, comes from some young  
man's pride

Of power to see, — in failure and mistake,  
Relinquishment, disgrace, on every side, —  
Merely examples for his sake,  
Helps to his path untried:

Instances he must — simply recognize?

Oh, more than so! — must, with a learner's  
zeal,

Make doubly prominent, twice emphasize,  
By added touches that reveal  
The god in babe's disguise.

Oh, he knows what defeat means, and the  
rest!

Himself the undefeated that shall be:  
Failure, disgrace, he flings them you to test, —  
His triumph, in eternity  
Too plainly manifest!

Whence, judge if he learn forthwith what the  
wind

Means in its moaning — by the happy prompt  
Instinctive way of youth, I mean; for kind  
Calm years, exacting their account  
Of pain, mature the mind:

And some midsummer morning, at the lull

Just about daybreak, as he looks across  
A sparkling foreign country, wonderful  
To the sea's edge for gloom and gloss,  
Next minute must annul, —

Then, when the wind begins among the vines,  
So low, so low, what shall it say but this?  
"Here is the change beginning, here the lines  
Circumscribe beauty, set to bliss  
The limit time assigns."

Nothing can be as it has been before;

Better, so call it, only not the same.  
To draw one beauty into our hearts' core,  
And keep it changeless! such our claim;  
So answered, — Nevermore!

Simple? Why this is the old woe o' the world;  
Tune, to whose rise and fall we live and  
die.

Rise with it, then! Rejoice that man is hurled  
From change to change unceasingly,  
His soul's wings never furled!

That's a new question; still replies the fact,  
Nothing endures: the wind moans, saying  
so;

We moan in acquiescence: there's life's pact.  
Perhaps probation — do I know?  
God does: endure his act!

Only, for man, how bitter not to grave  
On his soul's hands' palms one fair good wise  
thing

Just as he grasped it! For himself, death's  
wave;

While time first washes — ah, the sting! —  
O'er all he'd sink to save.

## VII

## AMONG THE ROCKS

Oh, good gigantic smile o' the brown old earth,  
This autumn morning! How he sets his  
bones

To bask i' the sun, and thrusts out knees and  
feet

For the ripple to run over in its mirth;

Listening the while, where on the heap of  
stones

The white breast of the sea-lark twitters sweet.

That is the doctrine, simple, ancient, true;

Such is life's trial, as old earth smiles and  
knows.

If you loved only what were worth your love,  
Love were clear gain, and wholly well for  
you:

Make the low nature better by your throes!  
Give earth yourself, go up for gain above!

## VIII

## BESIDE THE DRAWING-BOARD

## I

"As like as a Hand to another Hand!"

Whoever said that foolish thing,  
Could not have studied to understand

The councils of God in fashioning,  
Out of the infinite love of his heart,  
This Hand, whose beauty I praise, apart  
From the world of wonder left to praise,  
If I tried to learn the other ways

Of love in its skill, or love in its power.

"As like as a Hand to another Hand:"

Who said that, never took his stand,

Found and followed, like me, an hour,  
The beauty in this, — how free, how fine  
To fear, almost, — of the limit-line!

As I looked at this, and learned and drew,  
Drew and learned, and looked again,

While fast the happy minutes flew,  
Its beauty mounted into my brain.

And a fancy seized me; I was fain

To efface my work, begin anew,

Kiss what before I only drew;

Ay, laying the red chalk 'twixt my lips,

With soul to help if the mere lips failed.

I kissed all right where the drawing ailed,

Kissed fast the grace that somehow slips

Still from one's soulless finger-tips.

## II

'Tis a clay cast, the perfect thing.

From Hand live once, dead long ago :

Princess-like it wears the ring

To fancy's eye, by which we know

That here at length a master found

His match, a proud lone soul its mate,

As soaring genius sank to ground,

And pencil could not emulate

The beauty in this, — how free, how fine

To fear almost ! — of the limit-line.

Long ago the god, like me

The worm, learned, each in our degree :

Looked and loved, learned and drew,

Drew and learned and loved again,

While fast the happy minutes flew,

Till beauty mounted into his brain

And on the finger which outvied

His art he placed the ring that's there,

Still by fancy's eye desiered,

In token of a marriage rare :

For him on earth, his art's despair,

For him in heaven, his soul's fit bride.

## III

Little girl with the poor coarse hand

I turned from to a cold clay cast —

I have my lesson, understand

The worth of flesh and blood at last !

Nothing but beauty in a Hand ?

Because he could not change the hue,

Mend the lines and make them true

To this which met his soul's demand, —

Would Da Vinci turn from you ?

I hear him laugh my woes to scorn —

"The fool forsooth is all forlorn

Because the beauty, she thinks best,

Lived long ago or was never born, —

Because no beauty bears the test

In this rough peasant Hand ! Confessed

'Art is null and study void !'

So sayest thou ? So said not I,

Who threw the faulty pencil by,

And years instead of hours employed,

Learning the veritable use

Of flesh and bone and nerve beneath

Lines and hue of the outer sheath,

If haply I might reproduce

One motive of the powers profuse,

Flesh and bone and nerve that make

The poorest coarsest human hand

An object worthy to be scanned

A whole life long for their sole sake.

Shall earth and the cramped moment-space

Yield the heavenly crowning grace ?

Now the parts and then the whole !

Who art thou, with stinted soul

And stunted body, thus to cry,

'I love, — shall that be life's strait dole ?

I must live beloved or die !'

This peasant hand that spins the wool

And bakes the bread, why lives it on,

Poor and coarse with beauty gone, —

What use survives the beauty ? " Fool !

Go, little girl with the poor coarse hand !

I have my lesson, shall understand.

## IX

## ON DECK

There is nothing to remember in me,

Nothing I ever said with a grace,

Nothing I did that you care to see,

Nothing I was that deserves a place

In your mind, now I leave you, set you free.

Conceded ! In turn, concede to me,

Such things have been as a mutual flame.

Your soul's locked fast ; but, love for a key,

You might let it loose, till I grew the same

In your eyes, as in mine you stand : strange

plea !

For then, then, what would it matter to me

That I was the harsh, ill-favored one ?

We both should be like as pea and pea ;

It was ever so since the world begun :

So, let me proceed with my reverie.

How strange it were if you had all me,

As I have all you in my heart and brain,

You, whose least word brought gloom or glee,

Who never lifted the hand in vain —

Will hold mine yet, from over the sea !

Strange, if a face, when you thought of me,

Rose like your own face present now,

With eyes as dear in their due degree,

Much such a mouth, and as bright a brow,

Till you saw yourself, while you cried "T is

She !"

Well, you may, you must, set down to me

Love that was life, life that was love ;

A tenure of breath at your lips' decree,

A passion to stand as your thoughts approve,

A rapture to fall where your foot might be.

But did one touch of such love for me

Come in a word or a look of yours,

Whose words and looks will, circling, flee

Round me and round while life endures, —

Could I fancy "As I feel, thus feels He ;"

Why, fade you might to a thing like me,

And your hair grow these coarse hanks of

hair,

Your skin, this bark of a gnarled tree, —

You might turn myself ! — should I know or

care,

When I should be dead of joy, James Lee ?

## GOLD HAIR

## A STORY OF PORNIC

This poem was issued by itself as well as included later in *Dramatis Personæ*, and simultaneously with its appearance in England it was printed in *The Atlantic Monthly*. It was written in Normandy, and in a letter printed in



Mrs. Orr's *Life*, II. 395, there is an account of the destruction of the church referred to in the poem.

Oh, the beautiful girl, too white,  
Who lived at Pornic, down by the sea,  
Just where the sea and the Loire unite!  
And a boasted name in Brittany  
She bore, which I will not write.

Too white, for the flower of life is red:  
Her flesh was the soft seraphic screen  
Of a soul that is meant (her parents said)  
To just see earth, and hardly be seen,  
And blossom in heaven instead.

Yet earth saw one thing, one how fair!  
One grace that grew to its full on earth:  
Smiles might be sparse on her cheek so spare,  
And her waist want half a girdle's girth,  
But she had her great gold hair.

Hair, such a wonder of flix and floss,  
Freshness and fragrance — floods of it, too!  
Gold, did I say? Nay, gold's mere dress:  
Here, Life smiled, "Think what I meant to  
do!"  
And Love sighed, "Fancy my loss!"

So, when she died, it was scarce more strange  
Than that, when delicate evening dies,  
And you follow its spent sun's pallid range,  
There's a shoot of color startles the skies  
With sudden, violent change, —

That, while the breath was nearly to seek,  
As they put the little cross to her lips,  
She changed; a spot came out on her cheek,  
A spark from her eye in mid-eclipse,  
And she broke forth, "I must speak!"

"Not my hair!" made the girl her moan —  
"All the rest is gone or to go;  
But the last, last grace, my all, my own,  
Let it stay in the grave, that the ghosts may  
know!  
Leave my poor gold hair alone!"

The passion thus vented, dead lay she;  
Her parents sobbed their worst on that;  
All friends joined in, nor observed degree:  
For indeed the hair was to wonder at,  
As it spread — not flowing free,

But curled around her brow, like a crown,  
And coiled beside her cheeks, like a cap,  
And calmed about her neck — ay, down  
To her breast, pressed flat, without a gap  
I' the gold, it reached her gown.

All kissed that face, like a silver wedge  
Mid the yellow wealth, nor disturbed its hair:  
E'en the priest allowed death's privilege,  
As he planted the crucifix with care  
On her breast, 'twixt edge and edge.

And thus was she buried, inviolate  
Of body and soul, in the very space

By the altar; keeping saintly state  
In Pornic church, for her pride of race,  
Pure life and piteous fate.

And in after-time would your fresh tear fall,  
Though your mouth might twitch with a du-  
bious smile,  
As they told you of gold, both robe and pall,  
How she prayed them leave it alone awhile,  
So it never was touched at all.

Years flew; this legend grew at last  
The life of the lady; all she had done,  
All been, in the memories fading fast  
Of lover and friend, was summed in one  
Sentence survivors passed:

To wit, she was meant for heaven, not earth;  
Had turned an angel before the time:  
Yet, since she was mortal, in such dearth  
Of frailty, all you could count a crime  
Was — she knew her gold hair's worth.

At little pleasant Pornic church,  
It chanced, the pavement wanted repair,  
Was taken to pieces: left in the lurch,  
A certain sacred space lay bare,  
And the boys began research.

'T was the space where our sires would lay a  
saint,  
A benefactor, — a bishop, suppose,  
A baron with armor-adornments quaint,  
Dame with chased ring and jewelled rose,  
Things sanctity saves from taint;

So we come to find them in after-days  
When the corpse is presumed to have done  
with gauds  
Of use to the living, in many ways:  
For the boys get pelf, and the town ap-  
plauds,  
And the church deserves the praise.

They grubbed with a will: and at length — O  
cor  
*Humanum, pectora cæca*, and the rest! —  
They found — no gaud they were prying for,  
No ring, no rose, but — who would have  
guessed? —  
A double Louis-d'or!

Here was a case for the priest: he heard,  
Marked, inwardly digested, laid  
Finger on nose, smiled, "There's a bird  
Chirps in my ear:" then, "Bring a spade,  
Dig deeper!" — he gave the word.

And lo, when they came to the coffin-lid,  
Or rotten planks which composed it once,  
Why, there lay the girl's skull wedged amid  
A mint of money, it served for the nonce  
To hold in its hair-heaps hid!

Hid there? Why? Could the girl be wont  
(She the stainless soul) to treasure up

Money, earth's trash and heaven's affront?  
Had a spider found out the communion-cup,  
Was a toad in the christening-font?

Truth is truth: too true it was.  
Gold! She hoarded and hugged it first,  
Longed for it, leaned o'er it, loved it — alas —  
Till the humor grew to a head and burst,  
And she cried, at the final pass, —

“Talk not of God, my heart is stone!  
Nor lover nor friend — be gold for both!  
Gold I lack; and, my all, my own,  
It shall hide in my hair. I scarce die loth  
If they let my hair alone!”

Louis-d'or, some six times five,  
And duly double, every piece.  
Now, do you see? With the priest to thrive,  
With parents preventing her soul's release  
By kisses that kept alive, —

With heaven's gold gates about to ope,  
With friends' praise, gold-like, lingering still,  
An instinct had bidden the girl's hand grope  
For gold, the true sort — “Gold in heaven, if  
you will;  
But I keep earth's too, I hope.”

Enough! The priest took the grave's grim  
yield:

The parents, they eyed that price of sin  
As if *thirty pieces* lay revealed  
On the place to *bury strangers in*,  
The hideous Potter's Field.

But the priest bethought him: “‘Milk that's  
spilt’  
— You know the adage! Watch and pray!  
Saints tumble to earth with so slight a tilt!  
It would build a new altar; that, we may!”  
And the altar therewith was built.

Why I deliver this horrible verse?  
As the text of a sermon, which now I preach:  
Evil or good may be better or worse  
In the human heart, but the mixture of each  
Is a marvel and a curse.

The candid incline to surmise of late  
That the Christian faith proves false, I find;  
For our Essays-and-Reviews' debate  
Begins to tell on the public mind,  
And Colenso's words have weight:

I still, to suppose it true, for my part,  
See reasons and reasons; this, to begin:  
‘Tis the faith that launched point-blank her dart  
At the head of a lie — taught Original Sin,  
The Corruption of Man's Heart.

#### THE WORST OF IT

WOULD it were I had been false, not you!  
I that am nothing, not you that are all:  
I, never the worse for a touch or two  
On my speckled hide; not you, the pride

Of the day, my swan, that a first flock's fall  
On her wonder of white must unswan, undo!

I had dipped in life's struggle and, out again,  
Bore specks of it here, there, easy to see,  
When I found my swan and the cure was plain;  
The dull turned bright as I caught your white  
On my bosom: you saved me — saved in vain  
If you ruined yourself, and all through me!

Yes, all through the speckled beast that I am,  
Who taught you to stoop; you gave me your-  
self,  
And bound your soul by the vows that damn:  
Since on better thought you break, as you  
ought,  
Vows — words, no angel set down, some elf  
Mistook, — for an oath, an epigram!

Yes, might I judge you, here were my heart,  
And a hundred its like, to treat as you  
pleased!  
I choose to be yours, for my proper part,  
Yours, leave or take, or mar me or make;  
If I acquiesce, why should you be teased  
With the conscience-prick and the memory-  
smart?

But what will God say? Oh, my sweet,  
Think, and be sorry you did this thing!  
Though earth were unworthy to feel your feet,  
There's a heaven above may deserve your  
love:  
Should you forfeit heaven for a snapt gold ring  
And a promise broke, were it just or meet?

And I to have tempted you! I, who tried  
Your soul, no doubt, till it sank! Unwise,  
I loved, and was lowly, loved and aspired,  
Loved, grieving or glad, till I made you mad,  
And you meant to have hated and despised —  
Whereas, you deceived me nor inquired!

She, ruined? How? No heaven for her?  
Crowns to give, and none for the brow  
That looked like marble and smelt like myrrh?  
Shall the robe be worn, and the palm-branch  
borne,  
And she go graceless, she graced now  
Beyond all saints, as themselves aver?

Hardly! That must be understood!  
The earth is your place of penance, then;  
And what will it prove? I desire your good.  
But, plot as I may, I can find no way  
How a blow should fall, such as falls on men.  
Nor prove too much for your womanhood.

It will come, I suspect, at the end of life,  
When you walk alone, and review the past;  
And I, who so long shall have done with strife,  
And journeyed my stage and earned my wage  
And retired as was right, — I am called at  
last

When the devil stabs you, to lend the knife.

He stabs for the minute of trivial wrong,  
Nor the other hours are able to save,

The happy, that lasted my whole life long :  
 For a promise broke, not for first words spoke,  
 The true, the only, that turn my grave  
 To a blaze of joy and a crash of song.

Witness beforehand ! Off I trip  
 On a safe path gay through the flowers you  
 flung :  
 My very name made great by your lip,  
 And my heart aglow with the good I know  
 Of a perfect year when we both were young,  
 And I tasted the angels' fellowship.

And witness, moreover . . . Ah, but wait !  
 I spy the loop whence an arrow shoots !  
 It may be for yourself, when you meditate,  
 That you grieve — for slain ruth, murdered  
 truth :  
 " Though falsehood escape in the end, what  
 boots ?  
 How truth would have triumphed ! " — you  
 sigh too late.

Ay, who would have triumphed like you, I  
 say !  
 Well, it is lost now ; well, you must bear,  
 Abide and grow fit for a better day :  
 You should hardly grudge, could I be your  
 judge !  
 But hush ! For you, can be no despair :  
 There 's amends : 't is a secret : hope and pray !

For I was true at least — oh, true enough !  
 And, Dear, truth is not as good as it seems !  
 Commend me to conscience ! Idle stuff !  
 Much help is in mine, as I mope and pine,  
 And skulk through day, and scowl in my dreams  
 At my swan's obtaining the crow's rebuff.

Men tell me of truth now — " False ! " I cry :  
 Of beauty — " A mask, friend ! Look be-  
 neath ! "  
 We take our own method, the devil and I,  
 With pleasant and fair and wise and rare :  
 And the best we wish to what lives, is — death ;  
 Which even in wishing, perhaps we lie !

Far better commit a fault and have done —  
 As you, Dear ! — forever ; and choose the  
 pure,  
 And look where the healing waters run,  
 And strive and strain to be good again,  
 And a place in the other world ensure,  
 All glass and gold, with God for its sun.

Misery ! What shall I say or do ?  
 I cannot advise, or, at least, persuade :  
 Most like, you are glad you deceived me —  
 rue  
 No whit of the wrong : you endured too long,  
 Have done no evil and want no aid,  
 Will live the old life out and chance the  
 new.

And your sentence is written all the same,  
 And I can do nothing, — pray, perhaps :  
 But somehow the world pursues its game, —  
 If I pray, if I curse, — for better or worse :

And my faith is torn to a thousand seraps,  
 And my heart feels ice while my words  
 breathe flame.

Dear, I look from my hiding-place.  
 Are you still so fair ? Have you still the eyes ?  
 Be happy ! Add but the other grace,  
 Begood ! Why want what the angels vaunt ?  
 I knew you once : but in Paradise,  
 If we meet, I will pass nor turn my face.

## DÏS ALITER VISUM ;

OR, LE BYRON DE NOS JOURS

STOP, let me have the truth of that !  
 Is that all true ? I say, the day  
 Ten years ago when both of us  
 Met on a morning, friends — as thus  
 We meet this evening, friends or what ? —

Did you — because I took your arm  
 And sillily smiled, " A mass of brass  
 That sea looks, blazing underneath ! "  
 While up the cliff-road edged with heath,  
 We took the turns nor came to harm —

Did you consider, " Now makes twice  
 That I have seen her, walked and talked  
 With this poor pretty thoughtful thing,  
 Whose worth I weigh : she tries to sing ;  
 Draws, hopes in time the eye grows nice ;

" Reads verse and thinks she understands ;  
 Loves all, at any rate, that 's great,  
 Good, beautiful ; but much as we  
 Down at the bath-house love the sea,  
 Who breathe its salt and bruise its sands :

" While . . . do but follow the fishing-gull  
 That flaps and floats from wave to cave !  
 There 's the sea-lover, fair my friend !  
 What then ? Be patient, mark and mend !  
 Had you the making of your skull ? "

And did you, when we faced the church  
 With spire and sad slate roof, aloof  
 From human fellowship so far,  
 Where a few graveyard crosses are,  
 And garlands for the swallows' perch, —

Did you determine, as we stepped  
 O'er the lone stone fence, " Let me get  
 Her for myself, and what 's the earth  
 With all its art, verse, music, worth —  
 Compared with love, found, gained, and kept ?

" Schumann 's our music-maker now ;  
 Has his march-movement youth and mouth ?  
 Ingres 's the modern man that paints ;  
 Which will lean on me, of his saints ?  
 Heine for songs ; for kisses, how ? "

And did you, when we entered, reached  
 The votive frigate, soft aloft  
 Riding on air this hundred years,  
 Safe-smiling at old hopes and fears, —  
 Did you draw profit while she preached ?



Resolving, "Fools we wise men grow !

Yes, I could easily blurt out curt  
Some question that might find reply  
As prompt in her stopped lips, dropped eye,  
And rush of red to cheek and brow :

"Thus were a match made, sure and fast,  
'Mid the blue weed-flowers round the mound  
Where, issuing, we shall stand and stay  
For one more look at baths and bay,  
Sands, sea-gulls, and the old church last —

"A match 'twixt me, bent, wigged and lamed,  
Famous, however, for verse and worse,  
Sure of the Fortieth spare Arm-chair  
When gout and glory seat me there,  
So, one whose love-freaks pass unblamed, —

"And this young beauty, round and sound  
As a mountain-apple, youth and truth  
With loves and doves, at all events  
With money in the Three per Cents ;  
Whose choice of me would seem profound : —

"She might take me as I take her.  
Perfect the hour would pass, alas !  
Climb high, love high, what matter ? Still,  
Feet, feelings, must descend the hill :  
An hour's perfection can't recur.

"Then follows Paris and full time  
For both to reason : 'Thus with us !'  
She 'll sigh, 'Thus girls give body and soul  
At first word, think they gain the goal,  
When 't is the starting-place they climb !

"My friend makes verse and gets renown ;  
Have they all fifty years, his peers ?  
He knows the world, firm, quiet and gay ;  
Boys will become as much one day :  
They're fools ; he cheats, with beard less  
brown.

"For boys say, *Love me or I die !*  
He did not say, *The truth is, youth*  
*I want, who am old and know too much ;*  
*I'd catch youth : lend me sight and touch !*  
*Drop heart's blood where life's wheels grate dry !*

"While I should make rejoinder" — (then  
It was no doubt, you ceased that least  
Light pressure of my arm in yours) —  
"I can conceive of cheaper cures  
For a yawning-fit o'er books and men.

"What ? All I am, was, and might be,  
All, books taught, art brought, life's whole  
strife,  
Painful results since precious, just  
Were fitly exchanged, in wise disgust,  
For two cheeks freshened by youth and sea ?

"All for a nosegay ! — what came first ;  
With fields on flower, untried each side ;  
I rally, need my books and men,  
And find a nosegay : ' drop it, then,  
No match yet made for best or worst !"

That ended me. You judged the porch  
We left by, Norman ; took our look  
At sea and sky ; wondered so few  
Find out the place for air and view ;  
Remarked the sun began to scorch ;

Descended, soon regained the baths,  
And then, good-by ! Years ten since then :  
Ten years ! We meet : you tell me, now,  
By a window-seat for that cliff-brow,  
On carpet-stripes for those sand-paths.

Now I may speak : you fool, for all  
Your lore ! WHO made things plain in vain ?  
What was the sea for ? What, the gray  
Sad church, that solitary day,  
Crosses and graves and swallows' call ?

Was there naught better than to enjoy ?  
No feat which, done, would make time break,  
And let us pent-up creatures through  
Into eternity, our due ?  
No forcing earth teach heaven's employ ?

No wise beginning, here and now,  
What cannot grow complete (earth's feat)  
And heaven must finish, there and then ?  
No tasting earth's true food for men,  
Its sweet in sad, its sad in sweet ?

No grasping at love, gaining a share  
O' the sole spark from God's life at strife  
With death, so, sure of range above  
The limits here ? For us and love,  
Failure ; but, when God fails, despair.

This you call wisdom ? Thus you add  
Good unto good again, in vain ?  
You loved, with body worn and weak ;  
I loved, with faculties to seek :  
Were both loves worthless since ill-clad ?

Let the mere star-fish in his vault  
Crawl in a wash of weed, indeed,  
Rose-jacynth to the finger-tips :  
He, whole in body and soul, outstrips  
Man, found with either in default.

But what's whole can increase no more,  
Is dwarfed and dies, since here's its sphere.  
The devil laughed at you in his sleeve !  
You know not ? That I well believe ;  
Or you had saved two souls : nay, four.

For Stephanie sprained last night her wrist,  
Ankle or something. "Pooh," cry you ?  
At any rate she danced, all say,  
Vilely ; her vogue has had its day.  
Here comes my husband from his whist.

#### TOO LATE

HERE was I with my arm and heart  
And brain, all yours for a word, a want  
Put into a look — just a look, your part, —  
While mine, to repay it . . . vainest vaunt,

Were the woman, that's dead, alive to hear,  
Had her lover, that's lost, love's proof to  
show!

But I cannot show it; you cannot speak  
From the churchyard neither, miles removed,  
Though I feel by a pulse within my cheek,  
Which stabs and stops, that the woman I  
loved  
Needs help in her grave and finds none near,  
Wants warmth from the heart which sends it  
— so!

Did I speak once angrily, all the drear days  
You lived, you woman I loved so well,  
Who married the other? Blame or praise,  
Where was the use then? Time would tell,  
And the end declare what man for you,  
What woman for me, was the choice of God.  
But, Edith dead! no doubting more!  
I used to sit and look at my life  
As it rippled and ran till, right before,  
A great stone stopped it: oh, the strife  
Of waves at the stone some devil threw  
In my life's midcurrent, thwarting God!

But either I thought, "They may churn and  
chide

Awhile, my waves which came for their joy  
And found this horrible stone full-tide:  
Yet I see just a thread escape, deploy  
Through the evening-country, silent and safe,  
And it suffers no more till it finds the sea."  
Or else I would think, "Perhaps some night  
When new things happen, a meteor-ball  
May slip through the sky in a line of light,  
And earth breathe hard, and landmarks fall,  
And my waves no longer champ nor chafe,  
Since a stone will have rolled from its place:  
let be!"

But, dead! All's done with: wait who may,  
Watch and wear and wonder who will.  
Oh, my whole life that ends to-day!  
Oh, my soul's sentence, sounding still,  
"The woman is dead that was none of his;  
And the man that was none of hers may go!"  
There's only the past left: worry that!  
Wreak, like a bull, on the empty coat,  
Rage, its late wearer is laughing at!  
Tear the collar to rags, having missed his  
throat;  
Strike stupidly on — "This, this and this,  
Where I would that a bosom received the  
blow!"

I ought to have done more: once my speech,  
And once your answer, and there, the end,  
And Edith was henceforth out of reach!  
Why, men do more to deserve a friend,  
Be rid of a foe, get rich, grow wise,  
Nor, folding their arms, stare fate in the face.  
Why, better even have burst like a thief  
And borne you away to a rock for us two,  
In a moment's horror, bright, bloody and brief,  
Then changed to myself again — "I slew  
Myself in that moment; a ruffian lies  
Somewhere: your slave, see, born in his  
place!"

What did the other do? You be judge!  
Look at us, Edith! Here are we both!  
Give him his six whole years: I grudge  
None of the life with you, nay, loathe  
Myself that I grudged his start in advance  
Of me who could overtake and pass.  
But, as if he loved you! No, not he,  
Nor any one else in the world, 't is plain:  
Who ever heard that another, free  
As I, young, prosperous, sound and sane,  
Poured life out, proffered it — "Half a glance  
Of those eyes of yours and I drop the glass!"

Handsome, were you? 'T is more than they  
held,

More than they said; I was 'ware and  
watched:

I was the scapegrace, this rat belled  
The cat, this fool got his whiskers scratched:  
The others? No head that was turned, no heart  
Broken, my lady, assure yourself!  
Each soon made his mind up; so and so  
Married a dancer, such and such  
Stole his friend's wife, stagnated slow,  
Or maundered, unable to do as much,  
And muttered of peace where he had no part:  
While, hid in the closet, laid on the shelf, —

On the whole, you were let alone, I think!  
So, you looked to the other, who acquiesced;  
My rival, the proud man, — prize your pink  
Of poets! A poet he was! I've guessed:  
He rhymed you his rubbish nobody read,  
Loved you and doted you — did not I laugh!  
There was a prize! But we both were tried.  
Oh, heart of mine, marked broad with her  
mark,  
Tekel, found wanting, set aside,  
Scorned! See, I bleed these tears in the dark  
Till comfort come and the last be bled:  
He? He is tagging your epitaph.

If it would only come over again!  
— Time to be patient with me, and probe  
This heart till you punctured the proper vein,  
Just to learn what blood is: twitch the robe  
From that blank lay-figure your fancy draped,  
Prick the leathern heart till the — verses  
spirt!

And late it was easy; late, you walked  
Where a friend might meet you; Edith's  
name  
Arose to one's lip if one laughed or talked;  
If I heard good news, you heard the same;  
When I woke, I knew that your breath escaped;  
I could bide my time, keep alive, alert.

And alive I shall keep and long, you will see!  
I knew a man, was kicked like a dog  
From gutter to cesspool; what cared he  
So long as he picked from the filth his prog?  
He saw youth, beauty and genius die,  
And jollily lived to his hundredth year.  
But I will live otherwise: none of such life!  
At once I begin as I mean to end.  
Go on with the world, get gold in its strife,  
Give your spouse the slip and betray your  
friend!

There are two who decline, a woman and I,  
And enjoy our death in the darkness here.

I liked that way you had with your curls  
Wound to a ball in a net behind :  
Your cheek was chaste as a Quaker-girl's,  
And your mouth — there was never, to my  
mind,  
Such a funny mouth, for it would not shut ;  
And the dented chin too — what a chin !  
There were certain ways when you spoke, some  
words

That you know you never could pronounce :  
You were thin, however ; like a bird's  
Your hand seemed — some would say, the  
pounce

Of a scaly-footed hawk — all but !  
The world was right when it called you thin.

But I turn my back on the world : I take  
Your hand, and kneel, and lay to my lips.  
Bid me live, Edith ! Let me slake  
Thirst at your presence ! Fear no slips :  
'Tis your slave shall pay, while his soul en-  
dures,

Full due, love's whole debt, *summum jus*.  
My queen shall have high observance, planned  
Courtship made perfect, no least line  
Crossed without warrant. There you stand,  
Warm too, and white too : would this wine  
Had washed all over that body of yours.  
Ere I drank it, and you down with it, thus !

#### ABT VOGLER

(AFTER HE HAS BEEN EXTEMPORIZING UPON  
THE MUSICAL INSTRUMENT OF HIS INVENTION)

Would that the structure brave, the manifold  
music I build,

Bidding my organ obey, calling its keys to  
their work,

Claiming each slave of the sound, at a touch, as  
when Solomon willed

Armies of angels that soar, legions of demons  
that lurk,

Man, brute, reptile, fly, — alien of end and of  
aim,

Adverse, each from the other heaven-high,  
hell-deep removed, —

Should rush into sight at once as he named the  
ineffable Name,

And pile him a palace straight, to pleasure  
the princess he loved !

Would it might tarry like his, the beautiful  
building of mine,

This which my keys in a crowd pressed and  
importuned to raise !

Ah, one and all, how they helped, would dispart  
now and now combine,

Zealous to hasten the work, heighten their  
master his praise !

And one would bury his brow with a blind  
plunge down to hell,

Burrow awhile and build, broad on the roots  
of things,

Then up again swim into sight, having based  
me my palace well,  
Founded it, fearless of flame, flat on the  
nether springs.

And another would mount and march, like the  
excellent minion he was,

Ay, another and yet another, one crowd but  
with many a crest,

Raising my rampired walls of gold as transpar-  
ent as glass,

Eager to do and die, yield each his place to  
the rest :

For higher still and higher (as a runner tips  
with fire,

When a great illumination surprises a festal  
night —

Outlined round and round Rome's dome from  
space to spire)

Up, the pinnaced glory reached, and the  
pride of my soul was in sight.

In sight ? Not half ! for it seemed, it was  
certain, to match man's birth,

Nature in turn conceived, obeying an impulse  
as I ;

And the emulous heaven yearned down, made  
effort to reach the earth,

As the earth had done her best, in my passion,  
to scale the sky :

Novel splendors burst forth, grew familiar and  
dwelt with mine,

Not a point nor peak but found and fixed its  
wandering star ;

Meteor-moons, balls of blaze : and they did not  
pale nor pine,

For earth had attained to heaven, there was  
no more near nor far.

Nay more ; for there wanted not who walked  
in the glare and glow,

Presences plain in the place ; or, fresh from  
the Protoplast,

Furnished for ages to come, when a kindlier  
wind should blow,

Lured now to begin and live, in a house to  
their liking at last ;

Or else the wonderful Dead who have passed  
through the body and gone,

But were back once more to breathe in an old  
world worth their new :

What never had been, was now ; what was, as  
it shall be anon ;

And what is, — shall I say, matched both ? for  
I was made perfect too.

All through my keys that gave their sounds to  
a wish of my soul,

All through my soul that praised as its wish  
flowed visibly forth,

All through music and me ! For think, had I  
painted the whole,

Why, there it had stood, to see, nor the pro-  
cess so wonder-worth :

Had I written the same, made verse — still,  
effect proceeds from cause,

Ye know why the forms are fair, ye hear how  
the tale is told ;



It is all triumphant art, but art in obedience to laws,

Painter and poet are proud in the artist-list enrolled:—

But here is the finger of God, a flash of the will that can,

Exister behind all laws, that made them and, lo, they are!

And I know not if, save in this, such gift be allowed to man,

That out of three sounds he frame, not a fourth sound, but a star.

Consider it well: each tone of our scale in itself is naught:

It is everywhere in the world—loud, soft, and all is said:

Give it to me to use! I mix it with two in my thought:

And there! Ye have heard and seen: consider and bow the head!

Well, it is gone at last, the palace of music I reared;

Gone! and the good tears start, the praises that come too slow;

For one is assured at first, one scarce can say that he feared,

That he even gave it a thought, the gone thing was to go.

Never to be again! But many more of the kind

As good, nay, better perchance: is this your comfort to me?

To me, who must be saved because I cling with my mind

To the same, same self, same love, same God: ay, what was, shall be.

Therefore to whom turn I but to thee, the ineffable Name?

Builder and maker, thou, of houses not made with hands!

What, have fear of change from thee who art ever the same?

Doubt that thy power can fill the heart that thy power expands?

There shall never be one lost good! What was, shall live as before;

The evil is null, is naught, is silence implying sound;

What was good shall be good, with, for evil, so much good more;

On the earth the broken arcs; in the heaven a perfect round.

All we have willed or hoped or dreamed of good shall exist;

Not its semblance, but itself; no beauty, nor good, nor power

Whose voice has gone forth, but each survives for the melodist

When eternity affirms the conception of an hour.

The high that proved too high, the heroic for earth too hard,

The passion that left the ground to lose itself in the sky,

Are music sent up to God by the lover and the bard;

Enough that he heard it once: we shall hear it by and by.

And what is our failure here but a triumph's evidence

For the fulness of the days? Have we withered or agonized?

Why else was the pause prolonged but that singing might issue thence?

Why rushed the discords in, but that harmony should be prized?

Sorrow is hard to bear, and doubt is slow to clear,

Each sufferer says his say, his scheme of the weal and woe:

But God has a few of us whom he whispers in the ear;

The rest may reason and welcome: 't is we musicians know.

Well, it is earth with me; silence resumes her reign:

I will be patient and proud, and soberly acquiesce.

Give me the keys. I feel for the common chord again,

Sliding by semitones till I sink to the minor, —yes,

And I blunt it into a ninth, and I stand on alien ground,

Surveying awhile the heights I rolled from into the deep;

Which, hark, I have dared and done, for my resting-place is found,

The C Major of this life: so, now I will try to sleep.

RABBI BEN EZRA

Grow old along with me!

The best is yet to be,

The last of life, for which the first was made:

Our times are in his hand

Who saith, "A whole I planned,

Youth shows but half; trust God: see all, nor be afraid!"

Not that, amassing flowers,

Youth sighed, "Which rose make ours,

Which lily leave and then as best recall?"

Not that, admiring stars,

It yearned, "Nor Jove, nor Mars;

Mine be some figured flame which blends, transcends them all!"

Not for such hopes and fears

Annulling youth's brief years,

Do I remonstrate: folly wide the mark!

Rather I prize the doubt

Low kinds exist without,

Finished and finite clods, untroubled by a spark.

Poor vaunt of life indeed,

Were man but formed to feed

On joy, to solely seek and find and feast;

Such feasting ended, then  
As sure an end to men ;  
Irks care the crop full bird ? Frets doubt the  
maw-crammed beast ?

Rejoice we are allied  
To that which doth provide  
And not partake, effect and not receive !  
A spark disturbs our clod ;  
Nearer we hold of God  
Who gives, than of his tribes that take, I must  
believe.

Then, welcome each rebuff  
That turns earth's smoothness rough,  
Each sting that bids nor sit nor stand but go !  
Be our joys three-parts pain !  
Strive, and hold cheap the strain ;  
Learn, nor account the pang ; dare, never  
grudge the throe !

For thence, — a paradox  
Which comforts while it mocks, —  
Shall life succeed in that it seems to fail :  
What I aspired to be,  
And was not, comforts me :  
A brute I might have been, but would not sink  
i' the scale.

What is he but a brute  
Whose flesh has soul to suit,  
Whose spirit works lest arms and legs want  
play ?  
To man, propose this test —  
Thy body at its best,  
How far can that project thy soul on its lone  
way ?

Yet gifts should prove their use :  
I own the Past profuse  
Of power each side, perfection every turn :  
Eyes, ears took in their dole,  
Brain treasured up the whole ;  
Should not the heart beat once " How good to  
live and learn " ?

Not once beat " Praise be thine !  
I see the whole design,  
I, who saw power, see now Love perfect  
too :

Perfect I call thy plan :  
Thanks that I was a man !  
Maker, remake, complete, — I trust what thou  
shalt do ! "

For pleasant is this flesh ;  
Our soul, in its rose-mesh  
Pulled ever to the earth, still yearns for rest :  
Would we some prize might hold  
To match those manifold  
Possessions of the brute, — gain most, as we  
did best !

Let us not always say,  
" Spite of this flesh to-day  
I strove, made head, gained ground upon the  
whole ! "  
As the bird wings and sings,

Let us cry, " All good things  
Are ours, nor soul helps flesh more, now, than  
flesh helps soul ! "

Therefore I summon age  
To grant youth's heritage,  
Life's struggle having so far reached its term :  
Thence shall I pass, approved  
A man, for aye removed  
From the developed brute ; a God though in  
the germ.

And I shall thereupon  
Take rest, ere I be gone  
Once more on my adventure brave and new :  
Fearless and unperplexed,  
When I wage battle next,  
What weapons to select, what armor to indue.

Youth ended, I shall try  
My gain or loss thereby ;  
Leave the fire ashes, what survives is gold :  
And I shall weigh the same,  
Give life its praise or blame :  
Young, all lay in dispute ; I shall know, being  
old.

For note, when evening shuts,  
A certain moment cuts  
The deed off, calls the glory from the gray :  
A whisper from the west  
Shoots — " Add this to the rest,  
Take it and try its worth : here dies another  
day. "

So, still within this life,  
Though lifted o'er its strife,  
Let me discern, compare, pronounce at last,  
" This rage was right i' the main,  
That acquiescence vain :  
The Future I may face now I have proved the  
Past. "

For more is not reserved  
To man, with soul just nerved  
To act to-morrow what he learns to-day :  
Here, work enough to watch  
The Master work, and catch  
Hints of the proper craft, tricks of the tool's true  
play.

As it was better, youth  
Should strive, through acts uncouth,  
Toward making, than repose on aught found  
made :  
So, better, age, exempt  
From strife, should know, than tempt  
Further. Thou waitedst age : wait death nor  
be afraid !

Enough now, if the Right  
And Good and Infinite  
Be named here, as thou callest thy hand  
thine own,  
With knowledge absolute,  
Subject to no dispute  
From fools that crowded youth, nor let thee  
feel alone.

Be there, for once and all,  
Severed great minds from small,  
Announced to each his station in the Past !  
Was I, the world arraigned,  
Were they, my soul disdained,  
Right ? Let age speak the truth and give us  
peace at last !

Now, who shall arbitrate ?  
Ten men love what I hate,  
Shun what I follow, slight what I receive ;  
Ten, who in ears and eyes  
Match me : we all surmise,  
They this thing, and I that : whom shall my  
soul believe ?

Not on the vulgar mass  
Called "work," must sentence pass,  
Things done, that took the eye and had the  
price ;  
O'er which, from level stand,  
The low world laid its hand,  
Found straightway to its mind, could value in  
a trice :

But all, the world's coarse thumb  
And finger failed to plumb,  
So passed in making up the main account ;  
All instincts immature,  
All purposes unsure,  
That weighed not as his work, yet swelled the  
man's amount :

Thoughts hardly to be packed  
Into a narrow act,  
Fancies that broke through language and  
escaped ;  
All I could never be,  
All, men ignored in me,  
This, I was worth to God, whose wheel the  
pitcher shaped.

Ay, note that Potter's wheel,  
That metaphor ! and feel  
Why time spins fast, why passive lies our  
clay, —  
Thou, to whom fools propound,  
When the wine makes its round,  
"Since life fleets, all is change ; the Past gone,  
seize to-day !"

Fool ! All that is, at all,  
Lasts ever, past recall ;  
Earth changes, but thy soul and God stand  
sure :  
What entered into thee,  
That was, is, and shall be :  
Time's wheel runs back or stops : Potter and  
clay endure.

He fixed thee 'mid this dance  
Of plastic circumstance,  
This Present, thou, forsooth, would fain ar-  
rest :  
Machinery just meant  
To give thy soul its bent,  
Try thee and turn thee forth, sufficiently im-  
pressed.

What though the earlier grooves,  
Which ran the laughing loves  
Around thy base, no longer pause and press ?  
What though, about thy rim,  
Skull-things in order grim  
Grow out, in graver mood, obey the sterner  
stress ?

Look not thou down but up !  
To uses of a cup,  
The festal board, lamp's flash and trumpet's  
peal,  
The new wine's foaming flow,  
The Master's lips aglow !  
Thou, heaven's consummate cup, what needst  
thou with earth's wheel ?

But I need, now as then,  
Thee, God, who moulded men ;  
And since, not even while the whirl was worst,  
Did I — to the wheel of life  
With shapes and colors rife,  
Bound dizzily — mistake my end, to slake thy  
thirst :

So, take and use thy work :  
Amend what flaws may lurk,  
What strain o' the stuff, what warpings past the  
aim !  
My times be in thy hand !  
Perfect the cup as planned !  
Let age approve of youth, and death complete  
the same !

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

[SUPPOSED of Pamphylax the Antiochene :  
It is a parchment, of my rolls the fifth,  
Hath three skins glued together, is all Greek,  
And goeth from *Epsilon* down to *Mu* :  
Lies second in the surnamed Chosen Chest,  
Stained and conserved with juice of terebith,  
Covered with cloth of hair, and lettered *Xi*,  
From Xanthus, my wife's uncle now at peace :  
*Mu* and *Epsilon* stand for my own name.  
I may not write it, but I make a cross  
To show I wait His coming, with the rest,  
And leave off here : beginneth Pamphylax.]

I said, "If one should wet his lips with wine,  
And slip the broadest plantain-leaf we find,  
Or else the lappet of a linen robe,  
Into the water-vessel, lay it right,  
And cool his forehead just above the eyes.  
The while a brother, kneeling either side,  
Should chafe each hand and try to make it  
warm, —  
He is not so far gone but he might speak."

This did not happen in the outer cave,  
Nor in the secret chamber of the rock,  
Where, sixty days since the decree was out,  
We had him, bedded on a camel-skin,  
And waited for his dying all the while ;  
But in the midmost grotto : since noon's light  
Reached there a little, and we would not lose  
The last of what might happen on his face.



I at the head, and Xanthus at the feet,  
 With Valens and the Boy, had lifted him,  
 And brought him from the chamber in the  
 depths,  
 And laid him in the light where we might see :  
 For certain smiles began about his mouth,  
 And his lids moved, presageful of the end.

Beyond, and halfway up the mouth o' the cave,  
 The Bactrian convert, having his desire,  
 Kept watch, and made pretence to graze a goat  
 That gave us milk, on rags of various herb,  
 Plantain and quitch, the rocks' shade keeps  
 alive :

So that if any thief or soldier passed,  
 (Because the persecution was aware,)   
 Yielding the goat up promptly with his life,  
 Such man might pass on, joyful at a prize,  
 Nor care to pry into the cool o' the cave.  
 Outside was all noon and the burning blue.

"Here is wine," answered Xanthus, — dropped  
 a drop ;

I stooped and placed the lap of cloth aright,  
 Then chafed his right hand, and the Boy his left :  
 But Valens had bethought him, and produced  
 And broke a ball of nard, and made perfume.  
 Only, he did — not so much wake, as — turn  
 And smile a little, as a sleeper does  
 If any dear one call him, touch his face —  
 And smiles and loves, but will not be disturbed.

Then Xanthus said a prayer, but still he slept :  
 It is the Xanthus that escaped to Rome,  
 Was burned, and could not write the chronicle.

Then the Boy sprang up from his knees, and  
 ran,

Stung by the splendor of a sudden thought,  
 And fetched the seventh plate of graven lead  
 Out of the secret chamber, found a place,  
 Pressing with finger on the deeper dints,  
 And spoke, as 't were his mouth proclaiming  
 first,

"I am the Resurrection and the Life."

Whereat he opened his eyes wide at once,  
 And sat up of himself, and looked at us ;  
 And thenceforth nobody pronounced a word :  
 Only, outside, the Bactrian cried his cry  
 Like the lone desert-bird that wears the ruff,  
 As signal we were safe, from time to time.

First he said, "If a friend declared to me,  
 This my son Valens, this my other son,  
 Were James and Peter, — nay, declared as well  
 This lad was very John, — I could believe !  
 — Could, for a moment, doubtlessly believe :  
 So is myself withdrawn into my depths,  
 The soul retreated from the perished brain  
 Whence it was wont to feel and use the world  
 Through these dull members, done with long  
 ago.

Yet I myself remain ; I feel myself :  
 And there is nothing lost. Let be, awhile !"

[This is the doctrine he was wont to teach,  
 How divers persons witness in each man,

Three souls which make up one soul : first, to  
 wit,

A soul of each and all the bodily parts,  
 Seated therein, which works, and is what Does,  
 And has the use of earth, and ends the man  
 Downward : but, tending upward for advice,  
 Grows into, and again is grown into  
 By the next soul, which, seated in the brain,  
 Useth the first with its collected use,  
 And feeleth, thinketh, willeth, — is what  
 Knows :

Which, duly tending upward in its turn,  
 Grows into, and again is grown into  
 By the last soul, that uses both the first,  
 Subsisting whether they assist or no,  
 And, constituting man's self, is what Is —  
 And leans upon the former, makes it play,  
 As that played off the first : and, tending up,  
 Holds, is upheld by, God, and ends the man  
 Upward in that dread point of intercourse,  
 Nor needs a place, for it returns to Him.  
 What Does, what Knows, what Is ; three souls,  
 one man.

I give the glossa as Theotypas.]

And then, "A stick, once fire from end to  
 end ;

Now, ashes save the tip that holds a spark !  
 Yet, blow the spark, it runs back, spreads it-  
 self

A little where the fire was : thus I urge  
 The soul that served me, till it task once more  
 What ashes of my brain have kept their shape,  
 And these make effort on the last o' the flesh,  
 Trying to taste again the truth of things" —  
 (He smiled) — "their very superficial truth ;  
 As that ye are my sons, that it is long  
 Since James and Peter had release by death,  
 And I am only he, your brother John,  
 Who saw and heard, and could remember all.  
 Remember all ! It is not much to say.  
 What if the truth broke on me from above  
 As once and oftentimes ? Such might hap again :  
 Doubtlessly He might stand in presence here,  
 With head wool-white, eyes flame, and feet like  
 brass,

The sword and the seven stars, as I have seen —  
 I who now shudder only and surmise  
 'How did your brother bear that sight and  
 live ?'

"If I live yet, it is for good, more love  
 Through me to men : be naught but ashes here  
 That keep awhile my semblance, who was  
 John, —

Still, when they scatter, there is left on earth  
 No one alive who knew (consider this !)  
 — Saw with his eyes and handled with his  
 hands

That which was from the first, the Word of  
 Life.

How will it be when none more saith 'I saw' ?

"Such ever was love's way : to rise, it stoops.  
 Since I, whom Christ's mouth taught, was bid  
 den teach,

I went, for many years, about the world,  
 Saying 'It was so ; so I heard and saw,'

Speaking as the case asked : and men believed.  
 Afterward came the message to myself  
 In Patmos isle ; I was not bidden teach,  
 But simply listen, take a book and write,  
 Nor set down other than the given word,  
 With nothing left to my arbitrament  
 To choose or change : I wrote, and men be-  
 lieved.

Then, for my time grew brief, no message  
 more,

No call to write again, I found a way,  
 And, reasoning from my knowledge, merely  
 taught

Men should, for love's sake, in love's strength  
 believe ;

Or I would pen a letter to a friend  
 And urge the same as friend, nor less nor  
 more :

Friends said I reasoned rightly, and believed.  
 But at the last, why, I seemed left alive  
 Like a sea-jelly weak on Patmos strand,  
 To tell dry sea-beach gazers how I fared  
 When there was mid-sea, and the mighty  
 things ;

Left to repeat, ' I saw, I heard, I knew, '  
 And go all over the old ground again,  
 With Antichrist already in the world,  
 And many Antichrists, who answered prompt,  
 ' Am I not Jasper as thyself art John ?  
 Nay, young, whereas through age thou mayest  
 forget :

Wherefore, explain, or how shall we believe ? '  
 I never thought to call down fire on such,  
 Or, as in wonderful and early days,  
 Pick up the scorpion, tread the serpent dumb ;  
 But patient stated much of the Lord's life  
 Forgotten or misdelivered, and let it work :  
 Since much that at the first, in deed and word,  
 Lay simply and sufficiently exposed,  
 Had grown (or else my soul was grown to  
 match,

Fed through such years, familiar with such  
 light,

Guarded and guided still to see and speak)  
 Of new significance and fresh result ;  
 What first were guessed as points, I now knew  
 stars,

And named them in the Gospel I have writ.  
 For men said, ' It is getting long ago :  
 Where is the promise of his coming ? ' — asked  
 These young ones in their strength, as loth to  
 wait,

Of me who, when their sires were born, was old.  
 I, for I loved them, answered, joyfully,  
 Since I was there, and helpful in my age ;  
 And, in the main, I think such men believed.  
 Finally, thus endeavoring, I fell sick,  
 Ye brought me here, and I supposed the end,  
 And went to sleep with one thought that, at  
 least,

Though the whole earth should lie in wicked-  
 ness.

We had the truth, might leave the rest to God.  
 Yet now I wake in such decrepitude  
 As I had slidden down and fallen afar,  
 Past even the presence of my former self,  
 Grasping the while for stay at facts which snap,  
 Till I am found away from my own world,

Feeling for foothold through a blank profound,  
 Along with unborn people in strange lands,  
 Who say — I hear said or conceive they say —  
 ' Was John at all, and did he say he saw ?  
 Assure us, ere we ask what he might see ! '

" And how shall I assure them ? Can they  
 share

— They, who have flesh, a veil of youth and  
 strength

About each spirit, that needs must bide its time,  
 Living and learning still as years assist  
 Which wear the thickness thin, and let man  
 see —

With me who hardly am withheld at all,  
 But shudderingly, scarce a shred between,  
 Lie bare to the universal prick of light ?  
 Is it for nothing we grow old and weak,  
 We whom God loves ? When pain ends, gain  
 ends too.

To me, that story — ay, that Life and Death  
 Of which I wrote ' it was ' — to me, it is ;  
 — Is, here and now : I apprehend naught else.  
 Is not God now i' the world his power first  
 made ?

Is not his love at issue still with sin,  
 Visibly when a wrong is done on earth ?  
 Love, wrong, and pain, what see I else around ?  
 Yea, and the Resurrection and Uprise  
 To the right hand of the throne — what is it  
 beside,

When such truth, breaking bounds, o'erfloods  
 my soul,

And, as I saw the sin and death, even so  
 See I the need yet transiency of both,  
 The good and glory consummated thence ?  
 I saw the power ; I see the Love, once weak,  
 Resume the Power : and in this word ' I see, '  
 Lo, there is recognized the Spirit of both  
 That moving o'er the spirit of man, unblinds  
 His eye and bids him look. These are, I see ;  
 But ye, the children, his beloved ones too,  
 Ye need, — as I should use an optic glass  
 I wondered at erewhile, somewhere i' the world,  
 It had been given a crafty smith to make ;  
 A tube, he turned on objects brought too close,  
 Lying confusedly insubordinate

For the unassisted eye to master once :  
 Look through his tube, at distance now they lay,  
 Become succinct, distinct, so small, so clear !  
 Just thus, ye needs must apprehend what truth  
 I see, reduced to plain historic fact,  
 Diminished into clearness, proved a point  
 And far away : ye would withdraw your sense  
 From out eternity, strain it upon time,  
 Then stand before that fact, that Life and  
 Death,

Stay there at gaze, till it dispart, dispread,  
 As though a star should open out, all sides,  
 Grow the world on you, as it is my world.

" For life, with all it yields of joy and woe,  
 And hope and fear, — believe the aged  
 friend, —

Is just our chance o' the prize of learning love,  
 How love might be, hath been indeed, and is ;  
 And that we hold thenceforth to the uttermost  
 Such prize despite the envy of the world,

And, having gained truth, keep truth: that is all.

But see the double way wherein we are led,  
How the soul learns diversely from the flesh!  
With flesh, that hath so little time to stay,  
And yields mere basement for the soul's em-  
prise,

Expect prompt teaching. Helpful was the light,  
And warmth was cherishing and food was  
choice

To every man's flesh, thousand years ago,  
As now to yours and mine; the body sprang  
At once to the height, and stayed: but the  
soul, — no!

Since sages who, this noontide, meditate  
In Rome or Athens, may desery some point  
Of the eternal power, hid yestereve;  
And, as thereby the power's whole mass ex-  
tends,

So much extends the æther floating o'er  
The love that tops the might, the Christ in God.  
Then, as new lessons shall be learned in these  
Till earth's work stop and useless time run out,  
So duly, daily, needs provision be  
For keeping the soul's prowess possible,  
Building new barriers as the old decay,  
Saving us from evasion of life's proof,  
Putting the question ever, 'Does God love,  
And will ye hold that truth against the world?'  
Ye know there needs no second proof with good  
Gained for our flesh from any earthly source:  
We might go freezing, ages, — give us fire,  
Thereafter we judge fire at its full worth,  
And guard it safe through every chance, ye  
know!

That fable of Prometheus and his theft,  
How mortals gained Jove's fiery flower, grows  
old

(I have been used to hear the pagans own)  
And out of mind; but fire, howe'er its birth,  
Here is it, precious to the sophist now  
Who laughs the myth of Æschylus to scorn,  
As precious to those satyrs of his play,  
Who touched it in gay wonder at the thing.  
While were it so with the soul, — this gift of  
truth

Once grasped, were this our soul's gain safe, and  
sure

To prosper as the body's gain is wont, —  
Why, man's probation would conclude, his  
earth

Crumble; for he both reasons and decides,  
Weighs first, then chooses: will he give up fire  
For gold or purple once he knows its worth?  
Could he give Christ up were his worth as  
plain?

Therefore, I say, to test man, the proofs shift,  
Nor may he grasp that fact like other fact,  
And straightway in his life acknowledge it,  
As, say, the indubitable bliss of fire.

Sigh ye, 'It had been easier once than now'?

To give you answer I am left alive;  
Look at me who was present from the first!  
Ye know what things I saw; then came a test,  
My first, befitting me who so had seen:

'Forsake the Christ thou sawest transfigured,  
him

Who trod the sea and brought the dead to life?

What should wring this from thee! — ye laugh  
and ask.

What wrung it? Even a torchlight and a  
noise,

The sudden Roman faces, violent hands,  
And fear of what the Jews might do! Just that,  
And it is written, 'I forsook and fled:'  
There was my trial, and it ended thus.

Ay, but my soul had gained its truth, could  
grow:

Another year or two, — what little child,  
What tender woman that had seen no least  
Of all my sights, but barely heard them told,  
Who did not clasp the cross with a light laugh,  
Or wrap the burning robe round, thanking God?  
Well, was truth safe forever, then? Not so.  
Already had begun the silent work  
Whereby truth, deadened of its absolute blaze,  
Might need love's eye to pierce the o'erstretched  
doubt.

Teachers were busy, whispering 'All is true  
As the aged ones report: but youth can reach  
Where age gropes dimly, weak with stir and  
strain,

And the full doctrine slumbers till to-day.'  
Thus, what the Roman's lowered spear was  
found,

A bar to me who touched and handled truth,  
Now proved the glozing of some new shrewd  
tongue,

This Ebion, this Cerinthus or their mates,  
Till imminent was the outcry 'Save our  
Christ!'

Whereon I stated much of the Lord's life  
Forgotten or misdelivered, and let it work.  
Such work done, as it will be, what comes  
next?

What do I hear say, or conceive men say,  
'Was John at all, and did he say he saw?'  
Assure us, ere we ask what he might see!'

"Is this indeed a burden for late days,  
And may I help to bear it with you all,  
Using my weakness which becomes your  
strength?"

For if a babe were born inside this grot,  
Grew to a boy here, heard us praise the sun,  
Yet had but yon sole glimmer in light's place, —  
One loving him and wishful he should learn,  
Would much rejoice himself was blinded first  
Month by month here, so made to understand  
How eyes, born darkling, apprehend amiss:  
I think I could explain to such a child  
There was more glow outside than gleams he  
caught,

Ay, nor need urge 'I saw it, so believe!'

It is a heavy burden you shall bear  
In latter days, new lands, or old grown strange,  
Left without me, which must be very soon.  
What is the doubt, my brothers? Quick with  
it!

I see you stand conversing, each new face,  
Either in fields, of yellow summer eves,  
On islets yet unnamed amid the sea;  
Or pace for shelter 'neath a portico  
Out of the crowd in some enormous town  
Where now the larks sing in a solitude;  
Or muse upon blank heaps of stone and sand



Idly conjectured to be Ephesus :  
And no one asks his fellow any more  
'Where is the promise of his coming?' but  
'Was he revealed in any of his lives,  
As Power, as Love, as Influencing Soul?'

"Quick, for time presses, tell the whole mind  
out,

And let us ask and answer and be saved !  
My book speaks on, because it cannot pass ;  
One listens quietly, nor scoffs but pleads,  
'Here is a tale of things done ages since ;  
What truth was ever told the second day ?  
Wonders, that would prove doctrine, go for  
naught.

Remains the doctrine, love ; well, we must love,  
And what we love most, power and love in one,  
Let us acknowledge on the record here,  
Accepting these in Christ : must Christ then be ?  
Has he been ? Did not we ourselves make him ?  
Our mind receives but what it holds, no more.  
First of the love, then ; we acknowledge  
Christ —

A proof we comprehend his love, a proof  
We had such love already in ourselves,  
Knew first what else we should not recognize.  
'Tis mere projection from man's inmost mind,  
And, what he loves, thus falls reflected back,  
Becomes accounted somewhat out of him ;  
He throws it up in air, it drops down earth's,  
With shape, name, story added, man's old way.  
How prove you Christ came otherwise at least ?  
Next try the power : he made and rules the  
world :

Certes there is a world once made, now ruled,  
Unless things have been ever as we see.  
Our sires declared a charioteer's yoked steeds  
Brought the sun up the east and down the west,  
Which only of itself now rises, sets,  
As if a hand impelled it and a will, —  
Thus they long thought, they who had will and  
hands :

But the new question's whisper is distinct,  
Wherefore must all force needs be like our-  
selves ?

We have the hands, the will ; what made and  
drives

The sun is force, is law, is named, not known,  
While will and love we do know ; marks of  
these,

Eye-witnesses attest, so books declare —  
As that, to punish or reward our race,  
The sun at undue times arose or set  
Or else stood still : what do not men affirm ?  
But earth requires as urgently reward  
Or punishment to-day as years ago,  
And none expects the sun will interpose :  
Therefore it was mere passion and mistake,  
Or erring zeal for right, which changed the  
truth.

Go back, far, farther, to the birth of things ;  
Ever the will, the intelligence, the love,  
Man's ! — which he gives, supposing he but  
finds,

As late he gave head, body, hands and feet,  
To help these in what forms he called his gods.  
First, Jove's brow, Juno's eyes were swept  
away,

But Jove's wrath, Juno's pride continued long ;  
As last, will, power, and love discarded these,  
So law in turn discards power, love, and will.  
What proveth God is otherwise at least ?  
All else, projection from the mind of man !'

"Nay, do not give me wine, for I am strong,  
But place my gospel where I put my hands.

"I say that man was made to grow, not stop ;  
That help, he needed once, and needs no more,  
Having grown but an inch by, is withdrawn :  
For he hath new needs, and new helps to these.  
This imports solely, man should mount on each  
New height in view ; the help whereby he  
mounts,

The ladder-rung his foot has left, may fall,  
Since all things suffer change save God the  
Truth.

Man apprehends him newly at each stage  
Whereat earth's ladder drops, its service done ;  
And nothing shall prove twice what once was  
proved.

You stick a garden-plot with ordered twigs  
To show inside lie germs of herbs unborn,  
And check the careless step would spoil their  
birth ;

But when herbs wave, the guardian twigs may  
go,

Since should ye doubt of virtues, question kinds,  
It is no longer for old twigs ye look,  
Which proved once underneath lay store of  
seed,

But to the herb's self, by what light ye boast,  
For what fruit's signs are. This book's fruit is  
plain,

Nor miracles need prove it any more.  
Doth the fruit show ? Then miracles bade  
'ware

At first of root and stem, saved both till now  
From trampling ox, rough boar and wanton  
goat.

What ? Was man made a wheelwork to wind  
up,

And be discharged, and straight wound up  
anew ?

No ! — grown, his growth lasts ; taught, he  
ne'er forgets :

May learn a thousand things, not twice the  
same.

"This might be pagan teaching : now hear  
mine.

"I say, that as the babe, you feed awhile,  
Becomes a boy and fit to feed himself,  
So, minds at first must be spoon-fed with truth :  
When they can eat, babe's nurture is with-  
drawn.

I fed the babe whether it would or no :  
I bid the boy or feed himself or starve.  
I cried once, 'That ye may believe in Christ,  
Behold this blind man shall receive his sight !'  
I cry now, 'Urgest thou, for I am shrewd  
And smile at stories how John's word could  
cure —

Repeat that miracle and take my faith ?'  
I say, that miracle was duly wrought

When, save for it, no faith was possible.  
Whether a change were wrought i' the shows  
o' the world,  
Whether the change came from our minds  
which see

Of shows o' the world so much as and no more  
Than God wills for his purpose, — (what do I  
See now, suppose you, there where you see rock  
Round us ?) — I know not ; such was the effect,  
So faith grew, making void more miracles  
Because too much : they would compel, not  
help.

I say, the acknowledgment of God in Christ  
Accepted by thy reason, solves for thee  
All questions in the earth and out of it,  
And has so far advanced thee to be wise.  
Wouldst thou unprove this to re-prove the  
proved ?

In life's mere minute, with power to use that  
proof,  
Leave knowledge and revert to how it sprung ?  
Thou hast it ; use it and forthwith, or die !

" For I say, this is death and the sole death,  
When a man's loss comes to him from his  
gain,

Darkness from light, from knowledge ignorance,  
And lack of love from love made manifest ;  
A lamp's death when, replete with oil, it  
chokes ;

A stomach's when, surcharged with food, it  
starves.

With ignorance was surety of a cure.  
When man, appalled at nature, questioned first,  
' What if there lurk a might behind this might ?'  
He needed satisfaction God could give,  
And did give, as ye have the written word :  
But when he finds might still redouble might,  
Yet asks, ' Since all is might, what use of will ?'  
— Will, the one source of might, — he being  
man

With a man's will and a man's might, to teach  
In little how the two combine in large, —  
That man has turned round on himself and  
stands,  
Which in the course of nature is, to die.

" And when man questioned, ' What if there  
be love

Behind the will and might, as real as they ?' —  
He needed satisfaction God could give,  
And did give, as ye have the written word :  
But when, beholding that love everywhere,  
He reasons, ' Since such love is everywhere,  
And since ourselves can love and would be loved,  
We ourselves make the love, and Christ was  
not.' —

How shall ye help this man who knows him-  
self,

That he must love and would be loved again,  
Yet, owning his own love that proveth Christ,  
Rejecteth Christ through very need of him ?  
The lamp o'erswims with oil, the stomach flags  
Loaded with nurture, and that man's soul dies.

" If he rejoin, ' But this was all the while  
A trick ; the fault was, first of all, in thee,  
Thy story of the places, names and dates,

Where, when and how the ultimate truth had  
rise,

— Thy prior truth, at last discovered none,  
Whence now the second suffers detriment.  
What good of giving knowledge if, because  
O' the manner of the gift, its profit fail ?  
And why refuse what modicum of help  
Had stopped the after-doubt, impossible  
I' the face of truth — truth absolute, uniform ?  
Why must I hit of this and miss of that,  
Distinguish just as I be weak or strong,  
And not ask of thee and have answer prompt,  
Was this once, was it not once ? — then and  
now

And evermore, plain truth from man to man.  
Is John's procedure just the heathen bard's ?  
Put question of his famous play again  
How for the ephemerals' sake, Jove's fire was  
flicked,

And carried in a cane and brought to earth :  
*The fact is in the fable, cry the wise,  
Mortals obtained the boon, so much is fact,  
Though fire be spirit and produced on earth.*  
As with the Titan's, so now with thy tale :  
Why breed in us perplexity, mistake,  
Nor tell the whole truth in the proper words ?'

" I answer, Have ye yet to argue out  
The very primal thesis, plainest law,  
— Man is not God but hath God's end to serve,  
A master to obey, a course to take,  
Somewhat to cast off, somewhat to become ?  
Grant this, then man must pass from old to  
new,

From vain to real, from mistake to fact,  
From what once seemed good, to what now  
proves best.

How could man have progression otherwise ?  
Before the point was mooted ' What is God ?'  
No savage man inquired ' What am myself ?'  
Much less replied, ' First, last, and best of  
things.'

Man takes that title now if he believes  
Might can exist with neither will nor love,  
In God's case — what he names now Nature's  
Law —

While in himself he recognizes love  
No less than might and will : and rightly takes.  
Since if man prove the sole existent thing  
Where these combine, whatever their degree,  
However weak the might or will or love,  
So they be found there, put in evidence, —  
He is as surely higher in the scale  
Than any might with neither love nor will,  
As life, apparent in the poorest midge,  
(When the faint dust-speck flits, ye guess its  
wing.)

Is marvellous beyond dead Atlas' self —  
Given to the nobler nidge for resting-place !  
Thus, man proves best and highest — God, in  
fine,

And thus the victory leads but to defeat,  
The gain to loss, best rise to the worst fall,  
His life becomes impossible, which is death.

" But if, appealing thence, he cower, avouch  
He is mere man, and in humility  
Neither may know God nor mistake himself.

I point to the immediate consequence  
And say, by such confession straight he falls  
Into man's place, a thing nor God nor beast,  
Made to know that he can know and not more :  
Lower than God who knows all and can all,  
Higher than beasts which know and can so far  
As each beast's limit, perfect to an end,  
Nor conscious that they know, nor craving  
more ;

While man knows partly but conceives beside,  
Creeps ever on from fancies to the fact,  
And in this striving, this converting air  
Into a solid he may grasp and use,  
Finds progress, man's distinctive mark alone,  
Not God's, and not the beasts' : God is, they  
are,

Man partly is and wholly hopes to be.  
Such progress could no more attend his soul  
Were all it struggles after found at first  
And guesses changed to knowledge absolute,  
Than motion wait his body, were all else  
Than it the solid earth on every side,  
Where now through space he moves from rest  
to rest.

Man, therefore, thus conditioned, must expect  
He could not, what he knows now, know at  
first ;

What he considers that he knows to-day,  
Come but to-morrow, he will find misknown ;  
Getting increase of knowledge, since he learns  
Because he lives, which is to be a man,  
Set to instruct himself by his past self :  
First, like the brute, obliged by facts to learn,  
Next, as man may, obliged by his own mind,  
Bent, habit, nature, knowledge turned to law.  
God's gift was that man should conceive of  
truth

And yearn to gain it, catching at mistake,  
As midway help till he reach fact indeed.  
The statuary ere he mould a shape  
Boasts a like gift, the shape's idea, and next  
The aspiration to produce the same ;  
So, taking clay, he calls his shape thereout,  
Cries ever ' Now I have the thing I see : '  
Yet all the while goes changing what was  
wrought,

From falsehood like the truth, to truth itself.  
How were it had he cried, ' I see no face,  
No breast, no feet i' the ineffectual clay ' ?  
Rather commend him that he clapped his hands,  
And laughed ' It is my shape and lives again ! '  
Enjoyed the falsehood, touched it on to truth,  
Until yourselves applaud the flesh indeed  
In what is still flesh-imitating clay.  
Right in you, right in him, such way be man's !  
God only makes the live shape at a jet.  
Will ye renounce this pact of creatureship ?  
The pattern on the Mount subsists no more,  
Seemed awhile, then returned to nothingness ;  
But copies, Moses strove to make thereby,  
Serve still and are replaced as time requires :  
By these, make newest vessels, reach the type !  
If ye demur, this judgment on your head,  
Never to reach the ultimate, angels' law,  
Indulging every instinct of the soul  
There where law, life, joy, impulse are one  
thing !

" Such is the burden of the latest time.  
I have survived to hear it with my ears,  
Answer it with my lips : does this suffice ?  
For if there be a further woe than such,  
Wherein my brothers struggling need a hand,  
So long as any pulse is left in mine,  
May I be absent even longer yet,  
Plucking the blind ones back from the abyss,  
' Though I should tarry a new hundred years ! "

But he was dead : 't was about noon, the day  
Somewhat declining : we five buried him  
That eve, and then, dividing, went five ways,  
And I, disguised, returned to Ephesus.

By this, the cave's mouth must be filled with  
sand.

Valens is lost, I know not of his trace ;  
The Bactrian was but a wild childish man,  
And could not write nor speak, but only loved :  
So, lest the memory of this go quite,  
Seeing that I to-morrow fight the beasts,  
I tell the same to Phœbas, whom believe !  
For many look again to find that face,  
Beloved John's to whom I ministered,  
Somewhere in life about the world ; they err :  
Either mistaking what was darkly spoke  
At ending of his book, as he relates,  
Or misconceiving somewhat of this speech  
Scattered from mouth to mouth, as I suppose.  
Believe ye will not see him any more  
About the world with his divine regard !  
For all was as I say, and now the man  
Lies as he lay once, breast to breast with God.

[Cerinthus read and mused ; one added this :

" If Christ, as thou affirmest, be of men  
Mere man, the first and best but nothing  
more, —  
Account him, for reward of what he was,  
Now and forever, wretchedest of all.  
For see ; himself conceived of life as love,  
Conceived of love as what must enter in,  
Fill up, make one with his each soul he loved :  
Thus much for man's joy, all men's joy for him.  
Well, he is gone, thou sayest, to fit reward.  
But by this time are many souls set free,  
And very many still retained alive :  
Nay, should his coming be delayed awhile,  
Say, ten years longer (twelve years, some com-  
pute).  
See if, for every finger of thy hands,  
There be not found, that day the world shall  
end,  
Hundreds of souls, each holding by Christ's  
word  
That he will grow incorporate with all,  
With me as Pamphylax, with him as John,  
Groom for each bride ! Can a mere man do  
this ?  
Yet Christ saith, this he lived and died to do.  
Call Christ, then, the illimitable God,  
Or lost ! "

But 't was Cerinthus that is lost.]



## CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS ;

OR, NATURAL THEOLOGY IN THE ISLAND

"Thou thoughtest that I was altogether such an one as thyself."

[WILL sprawl, now that the heat of day is best, Flat on his belly in the pit's much mire, With elbows wide, fists clenched to prop his chin.

And, while he kicks both feet in the cool slush, And feels about his spine small eft-things course, Run in and out each arm, and make him laugh : And while above his head a pompion-plant, Coating the cave-top as a brow its eye, Creeps down to touch and tickle hair and beard, And now a flower drops with a bee inside, And now a fruit to snap at, catch and crunch, — He looks out o'er yon sea which sunbeams cross And recross till they weave a spider-web, (Meshes of fire, some great fish breaks at times,) And talks to his own self, howe'er he please, Touching that other, whom his dam called God. Because to talk about Him, vexes — ha, Could He but know ! and time to vex is now, When talk is safer than in winter-time. Moreover Prosper and Miranda sleep In confidence he drudges at their task, And it is good to cheat the pair, and gibe, Letting the rank tongue blossom into speech.]

Setebos, Setebos, and Setebos !

'Thinketh, He dwelleth i' the cold o' the moon.

'Thinketh He made it, with the sun to match, But not the stars ; the stars came otherwise ; Only made clouds, winds, meteors, such as that : Also this isle, what lives and grows thereon, And snaky sea which rounds and ends the same.

'Thinketh, it came of being ill at ease : He hated that He cannot change His cold, Nor cure its ache. 'Hath spied an icy fish That longed to 'scape the rock-stream where she lived,

And thaw herself within the lukewarm brine O' the lazy sea her stream thrusts far amid, A crystal spike 'twixt two warm walls of wave ; Only, she ever sickened, found repulse At the other kind of water, not her life, (Green-dense and dim-delicious, bred o' the sun.) Flounced back from bliss she was not born to breathe,

And in her old bounds buried her despair, Hating and loving warmth alike : so He.

'Thinketh, He made thereat the sun, this isle, Trees and the fowls here, beast and creeping thing.

Yon otter, sleek-wet, black, lithe as a leech ; Yon auk, one fire-eye in a ball of foam, That floats and feeds ; a certain badger brown He hath watched hunt with that slant white-wedge eye

By moonlight ; and the pie with the long tongue That pricks deep into oakwarts for a worm, And says a plain word when she finds her prize,

But will not eat the ants ; the ants themselves That build a wall of seeds and settled stalks About their hole — He made all these and more, Made all we see, and us, in spite : how else ? He could not, Himself, make a second self To be His mate ; as well have made Himself : He would not make what He mislikes or slights. An eyesore to Him, or not worth His pains : But did, in envy, listlessness or sport, Make what Himself would fain, in a manner, be —

Weaker in most points, stronger in a few, Worthy, and yet mere playthings all the while, Things He admires and mocks too, — that is it. Because, so brave, so better though they be, It nothing skills if He begin to plague. Look now, I melt a gourd-fruit into mash, Add honeycomb and pods, I have perceived, Which bite like finches when they bill and kiss, —

Then, when froth rises bladdery, drink up all, Quick, quick, till maggots scamper through my brain ;

Last, throw me on my back i' the seeded thyme, And wanton, wishing I were born a bird. Put case, unable to be what I wish, I yet could make a live bird out of clay : Would not I take clay, pinch my Caliban Able to fly ? — for, there, see, he hath wings, And great comb like the hoopoe's to admire, And there, a sting to do his foes offence, There, and I will that he begin to live, Fly to yon rock-top, nip me off the horns Of grigs high up that make the merry din, Saucy through their veined wings, and mind me not.

In which feat, if his leg snapped, brittle clay, And he lay stupid-like, — why, I should laugh ; And if he, spying me, should fall to weep, Beseech me to be good, repair his wrong, Bid his poor leg smart less or grow again, — Well, as the chance were, this might take or else

Not take my fancy : I might hear his cry, And give the manikin three sound legs for one, Or pluck the other off, leave him like an egg, And lessoned he was mine and merely clay. Were this no pleasure, lying in the thyme, Drinking the mash, with brain become alive, Making and marring clay at will ? So He.

'Thinketh, such shows nor right nor wrong in Him,

Nor kind, nor cruel : He is strong and Lord. 'Am strong myself compared to yonder crabs That march now from the mountain to the sea ;

'Let twenty pass, and stone the twenty-first, Loving not, hating not, just choosing so. 'Say, the first straggler that boasts purple spots Shall join the file, one pincer twisted off ; 'Say, this bruised fellow shall receive a worm, And two worms he whose nippers end in red ; As it likes me each time, I do : so He.

Well then, 'supposeth He is good i' the main. Pleasable if His mind and ways were guessed, But rougher than His handiwork, be sure !

Oh, He hath made things worthier than Himself,  
 And envieth that, so helped, such things do more  
 Than He who made them! What consoles but this?  
 That they, unless through Him, do naught at all,  
 And must submit: what other use in things?  
 'Hath cut a pipe of pithless elder-joint  
 That, blown through, gives exact the scream o' the jay  
 When from her wing you twitch the feathers blue:  
 Sound this, and little birds that hate the jay  
 Flock within stone's throw, glad their foe is hurt:  
 Put case such pipe could prattle and boast forsooth,  
 "I catch the birds, I am the crafty thing,  
 I make the cry my maker cannot make  
 With his great round mouth; he must blow through mine!"  
 Would not I smash it with my foot? So He.

But wherefore rough, why cold and ill at ease?  
 Aha, that is a question! Ask, for that,  
 What knows, — the something over Setebos  
 That made Him, or He, may be, found and fought,  
 Worsted, drove off and did to nothing, perchance.

There may be something quiet o'er His head,  
 Out of His reach, that feels nor joy nor grief,  
 Since both derive from weakness in some way.  
 I joy because the quails come; would not joy  
 Could I bring quails here when I have a mind:  
 This Quiet, all it hath a mind to, doth.  
 'Esteemeth stars the outposts of its couch,  
 But never spends much thought nor care that way.

It may look up, work up, — the worse for those  
 It works on! 'Careth but for Setebos  
 The many-handed as a cuttle-fish,  
 Who, making Himself feared through what He does,

Looks up, first, and perceives he cannot soar  
 To what is quiet and hath happy life;  
 Next looks down here, and out of very spite  
 Makes this a bauble-world to ape yon real,  
 These good things to match those as hips do grapes.

'Tis solace making baubles, ay, and sport.  
 Himself peeped late, eyed Prosper at his books  
 Careless and lofty, lord now of the isle:  
 Vexed, 'stitched a book of broad leaves, arrow-shaped,

Wrote thereon, he knows what, prodigious words;

Has peeled a wand and called it by a name;  
 Weareth at whiles for an enchanter's robe  
 The eyed skin of a supple oncelot;  
 And hath an ounce sleeker than youngling mole,  
 A four-legged serpent he makes cower and couch,

Now snarl, now hold its breath and mind his eye,  
 And saith she is Miranda and my wife:

'Keeps for his Ariel a tall pouch-bill crane  
 He bids go wade for fish and straight disgorge;  
 Also a sea-beast, lumpish, which he snared,  
 Blinded the eyes of, and brought somewhat tame,

And split its toe-webs, and now pens the drudge  
 In a hole o' the rock and calls him Caliban;  
 A bitter heart that bides its time and bites.  
 'Plays thus at being Prosper in a way,  
 Taketh his mirth with make-believes: so He.

His dam held that the Quiet made all things  
 Which Setebos vexed only: 'holds not so.  
 Who made them weak, meant weakness He might vex.

Had He meant other, while His hand was in,  
 Why not make horny eyes no thorn could prick,  
 Or plate my scalp with bone against the snow,  
 Or overscale my flesh 'neath joint and joint,  
 Like an orc's armor? Ay, — so spoil His sport!  
 He is the One now: only He doth all.

'Saith, He may like, perchance, what profits Him.

Ay, himself loves what does him good; but why?

'Gets good no otherwise. This blinded beast  
 Loves whoso places flesh-meat on his nose,  
 But, had he eyes, would want no help, but hate  
 Or love, just as it liked him: He hath eyes.

Also it pleaseth Setebos to work,  
 Use all His hands, and exercise much craft,  
 By no means for the love of what is worked.  
 'Tasteth, himself, no finer good i' the world  
 When all goes right, in this safe summer-time,  
 And he wants little, hungers, aches not much,  
 Than trying what to do with wit and strength.

'Falls to make something: 'piled yon pile of turfs,

And squared and stuck there squares of soft white chalk,

And, with a fish-tooth, scratched a moon on each,

And set up endwise certain spikes of tree,  
 And crowned the whole with a sloth's skull a-top,

Found dead i' the woods, too hard for one to kill.

No use at all i' the work, for work's sole sake;  
 'Shall some day knock it down again: so He.

'Saith He is terrible: watch His feats in proof!  
 One hurricane will spoil six good months' hope.

He hath a spite against me, that I know,  
 Just as He favors Prosper, who knows why?

So it is, all the same, as well I find.  
 'Wove wattles half the winter, fenced them firm

With stone and stake to stop she-tortoises  
 Crawling to lay their eggs here: well, one wave,

Feeling the foot of Him upon its neck,  
 Gaped as a snake does, lolled out its large tongue,

And licked the whole labor flat: so much for spite.

'Saw a ball flame down late (yonder it lies)  
 Where, half an hour before, I slept i' the shade:

Often they scatter sparkles: there is force!

'Dug up a newt He may have envied once  
And turned to stone, shut up inside a stone.  
Please Him and hinder this? — What Prosper  
does?

Aha, if He would tell me how! Not He!  
There is the sport: discover how or die!  
All need not die, for of the things o' the isle  
Some flee afar, some dive, some run up trees;  
Those at His mercy, — why, they please Him  
most

When . . . when . . . well, never try the same  
way twice!

Repeat what act has pleased, He may grow  
wroth.

You must not know His ways, and play Him off,  
Sure of the issue. 'Doth the like himself:

'Spareth a squirrel that it nothing fears  
But steals the nut from underneath my thumb,  
And when I threat, bites stoutly in defence:

'Spareth an urchin that contrariwise,  
Curls up into a ball, pretending death

For fright at my approach: the two ways please.  
But what would move my choler more than this,

That either creature counted on its life  
To-morrow and next day and all days to come,

Saying, forsooth, in the inmost of its heart,  
"Because he did so yesterday with me,

And otherwise with such another brute,  
So must he do henceforth and always." — Ay?

Would teach the reasoning couple what "must"  
means!

'Doth as he likes, or wherefore Lord? So He.

'Conceiveth all things will continue thus,  
And we shall have to live in fear of Him  
So long as He lives, keeps His strength: no  
change,

If He have done His best, make no new world  
To please Him more, so leave off watching  
this, —

If He surprise not even the Quiet's self  
Some strange day, — or, suppose, grow into it  
As grubs grow butterflies: else, here we are,  
And there is He, and nowhere help at all.

'Believeth with the life, the pain shall stop.  
His dam held different, that after death  
He both plagued enemies and feasted friends:  
Idly! He doth His worst in this our life,  
Giving just respite lest we die through pain,  
Saving last pain for worst, — with which, an  
end.

Meanwhile, the best way to escape His ire  
Is, not to seem too happy. 'Sees, himself,  
Yonder two flies, with purple films and pink,  
Bask on the pompion-bell above: kills both.  
'Sees two black painful beetles roll their ball  
On head and tail as if to save their lives:  
Moves them the stick away they strive to clear.

Even so, 'would have Him misconceive, suppose  
This Caliban strives hard and ails no less,  
And always, above all else, envies Him;  
Wherefore he mainly dances on dark nights,  
Moans in the sun, gets under holes to laugh,  
And never speaks his mind save housed as now:  
Outside, 'groans, curses. If He caught me here,

O'erheard this speech, and asked "What  
chucklest at?"

'Would, to appease Him, cut a finger off,  
Or of my three kid yearlings burn the best,  
Or let the toothsome apples rot on tree,  
Or push my tame beast for the ore to taste:  
While myself lit a fire, and made a song  
And sung it, "*What I hate, be consecrate  
To celebrate Thee and Thy state, no mate  
For Thee; what see for envy in poor me?*"  
Hoping the while, since evils sometimes mend,  
Warts rub away and sores are cured with slime,  
That some strange day, will either the Quiet  
catch

And conquer Setebos, or likelier He  
Decrepit may doze, doze, as good as die.

[What, what? A curtain o'er the world at  
once!

Crickets stop hissing; not a bird — or, yes,  
There sends His raven that has told Him all!  
It was fool's play, this prattling! Ha! The  
wind

Shoulders the pillared dust, death's house o'  
the move,

And fast invading fires begin! White blaze —  
A tree's head snaps — and there, there, there,  
there, there,

His thunder follows! Fool to gibe at Him!  
Lo! 'Lieth flat and loveth Setebos!

'Maketh his teeth meet through his upper lip,  
Will let those quails fly, will not eat this month  
One little mess of whelks, so he may 'scape!]

## CONFESSIONS

WHAT is he buzzing in my ears?

"Now that I come to die,  
Do I view the world as a vale of tears?"  
Ah, reverend sir, not I!

What I viewed there once, what I view again  
Where the physic bottles stand  
On the table's edge, — is a suburb lane,  
With a wall to my bedside hand.

That lane sloped, much as the bottles do,  
From a house you could descry  
O'er the garden-wall: is the curtain blue  
Or green to a healthy eye?

To mine, it serves for the old June weather  
Blue above lane and wall;  
And that farthest bottle labelled "Ether"  
Is the house o'ertopping all.

At a terrace, somewhere near the stopper,  
There watched for me, one June,  
A girl: I know, sir, it 's improper,  
My poor mind 's out of tune.

Only, there was a way . . . you crept  
Close by the side, to dodge  
Eyes in the house, two eyes except:  
They styled their house "The Lodge."



What right had a lonnger up their lane ?  
 But, by creeping very close,  
 With the good wall's help, — their eyes might  
 strain  
 And stretch themselves to Oes,

Yet never catch her and me together,  
 As she left the attic, there,  
 By the rim of the bottle labelled "Ether,"  
 And stole from stair to stair,

And stood by the rose-wreathed gate. Alas,  
 We loved, sir — used to meet :  
 How sad and bad and mad it was —  
 But then, how it was sweet !

## MAY AND DEATH

Among Browning's companions in boyhood  
 were three Silverthornes, cousins on his mo-  
 ther's side. The name of Charles in the poem  
 stands for the more familiar Jim, and it was in  
 remembrance of him, the eldest and most tal-  
 ented of the three, that this poem was written.  
 First published in *The Keepsake*, 1857.

I WISH that when you died last May,  
 Charles, there had died along with you  
 Three parts of spring's delightful things ;  
 Ay, and, for me, the fourth part too.

A foolish thought, and worse, perhaps !  
 There must be many a pair of friends  
 Who, arm in arm, deserve the warm  
 Moon-births and the long evening-ends.

So, for their sake, be May still May !  
 Let their new time, as mine of old,  
 Do all it did for me : I bid  
 Sweet sights and sounds throng manifold.

Only, one little sight, one plant,  
 Woods have in May, that starts up green  
 Save a sole streak which, so to speak,  
 Is spring's blood, spilt its leaves between, —

That, they might spare ; a certain wood  
 Might miss the plant ; their loss were small :  
 But I, — whene'er the leaf grows there,  
 Its drop comes from my heart, that's all.

## DEAF AND DUMB

A GROUP BY WOOLNER

ONLY the prism's obstruction shows aright  
 The secret of a sunbeam, breaks its light  
 Into the jewelled bow from blankest white ;  
 So may a glory from defect arise :  
 Only by Deafness may the vexed Love weak  
 Its insuppressible sense on brow and cheek,  
 Only by Dumbness adequately speak  
 As favored mouth could never, through the  
 eyes.

## PROSPICE

Written in the autumn following Mrs. Brown-  
 ing's death. The closing lines intensify the asso-  
 ciation.

FEAR death ? — to feel the fog in my throat,  
 The mist in my face,  
 When the snows begin, and the blasts denote  
 I am nearing the place,  
 The power of the night, the press of the storm,  
 The post of the foe ;  
 Where he stands, the Arch Fear in a visible  
 form,

Yet the strong man must go :  
 For the journey is done and the summit at-  
 tained,

And the barriers fall,  
 Though a battle's to fight ere the guerdon be  
 gained,

The reward of it all.  
 I was ever a fighter, so — one fight more,  
 The best and the last !

I would hate that death bandaged my eyes, and  
 forbore,

And bade me creep past.  
 No ! let me taste the whole of it, fare like my  
 peers

The heroes of old,  
 Bear the brunt, in a minute pay glad life's  
 arrears

Of pain, darkness and cold.  
 For sudden the worst turns the best to the  
 brave,

The black minute's at end,  
 And the elements' rage, the fiend-voices that  
 rave,

Shall dwindle, shall blend,  
 Shall change, shall become first a peace out of  
 pain,

Then a light, then thy breast,  
 O thou soul of my soul ! I shall clasp thee  
 again,

And with God be the rest !

## EURYDICE TO ORPHEUS

A PICTURE BY LEIGHTON

First published, without metrical divisions, in  
 the *Royal Academy Catalogue*, 1864.

BUT give them me, the mouth, the eyes, the  
 brow !

Let them once more absorb me ! One look  
 now

Will lap me round forever, not to pass  
 Out of its light, though darkness lie beyond :  
 Hold me but safe again within the bond

Of one immortal look ! All woe that was,  
 Forgotten, and all terror that may be,  
 Defied, — no past is mine, no future : look at  
 me !

## YOUTH AND ART

It once might have been, once only :

We lodged in a street together,  
You, a sparrow on the housetop lonely,  
I, a lone she-bird of his feather.

Your trade was with sticks and clay,  
You thumbed, cheested, patted and polished,  
Then laughed "They will see some day  
Smith made, and Gibson demolished."

My business was song, song, song ;  
I chirped, cheeped, trilled and twittered,  
" Kate Brown 's on the boards ere long,  
And Grisi's existence embittered ! "

I earned no more by a warble  
Than you by a sketch in plaster ;  
You wanted a piece of marble,  
I needed a music-master.

We studied hard in our styles,  
Chipped each at a crust like Hindoos,  
For air, looked out on the tiles,  
For fun, watched each other's windows.

You lounged, like a boy of the South,  
Cap and blouse — nay, a bit of beard too ;  
Or you got it, rubbing your mouth  
With fingers the clay adhered to.

And I — soon managed to find  
Weak points in the flower-fence facing,  
Was forced to put up a blind  
And be safe in my corset-lacing.

No harm ! It was not my fault  
If you never turned your eye's tail up  
As I shook upon E in *alt.*,  
Or ran the chromatic scale up :

For spring bade the sparrows pair,  
And the boys and girls gave guesses,  
And stalls in our street looked rare  
With bulrush and watercresses.

Why did not you pinch a flower  
In a pellet of clay and fling it ?  
Why did not I put a power  
Of thanks in a look, or sing it ?

I did look, sharp as a lynx,  
(And yet the memory rankles,)  
When models arrived, some minx  
Tripped up-stairs, she and her ankles.

But I think I gave you as good !  
" That foreign fellow, — who can know  
How she pays, in a playful mood,  
For his tuning her that piano ? "

Could you say so, and never say,  
" Suppose we join hands and fortunes,  
And I fetch her from over the way,  
Her, piano, and long tunes and short tunes " ?

No, no : you would not be rash,  
Nor I rasher and something over :  
You 've to settle yet Gibson's hash,  
And Grisi yet lives in clover.

But you meet the Prince at the Board,  
I 'm queen myself at *bals-paré*,  
I 've married a rich old lord,  
And you 're dubbed knight and an R. A.

Each life unfulfilled, you see ;  
It hangs still, patchy and scrappy :  
We have not sighed deep, laughed free,  
Starved, feasted, despaired, — been happy

And nobody calls you a dunce,  
And people suppose me clever :  
This could but have happened once,  
And we missed it, lost it forever.

## A FACE

If one could have that little head of hers  
Painted upon a background of pale gold,  
Such as the Tuscan's early art prefers !  
No shade encroaching on the matchless mould  
Of those two lips, which should be opening soft  
In the pure profile ; not as when she laughs,  
For that spoils all : but rather as if aloft  
Yon hyacinth, she loves so, leaned its staff's  
Burden of honey-colored buds to kiss  
And capture 'twixt the lips apart for this.  
Then her lithe neck, three fingers might sur-  
round,

How it should waver on the pale gold ground  
Up to the fruit-shaped, perfect chin it lifts !  
I know, Correggio loves to mass, in rifts  
Of heaven, his angel faces, orb on orb  
Breaking its outline, burning shades absorb :  
But these are only massed there, I should think,  
Waiting to see some wonder momentarily  
Grow out, stand full, fade slow against the sky  
(That 's the pale ground you 'd see this sweet  
face by),

All heaven, meanwhile, condensed into one eye  
Which fears to lose the wonder, should it wink.

## A LIKENESS

SOME people hang portraits up  
In a room where they dine or sup :  
And the wife clinks tea-things under,  
And her cousin, he stirs his cup,  
Asks, " Who was the lady, I wonder ? "  
" 'T is a daub John bought at a sale,"  
Quoth the wife, — looks black as thunder.  
" What a shade beneath her nose !  
Snuff-taking, I suppose," —  
Adds the cousin, while John's corns ail.

Or else, there 's no wife in the case,  
But the portrait 's queen of the place,  
Alone 'mid the other spoils  
Of youth, — masks, gloves and foils,  
And pipe-sticks, rose, cherry-tree, jasmine,  
And the long whip, the tandem-lasher.

And the cast from a fist ("not, alas! mine,  
But my master's, the Tipton Slasher"),  
And the cards where pistol-balls mark ace,  
And a satin shoe uses for cigar-case,  
And the chamois-horns ("shot in the Chab-  
lais"),

And prints — Rarey drumming on Cruiser,  
And Sayers, our champion, the bruiser,  
And the little edition of Rabelais:  
Where a friend, with both hands in his pockets,  
May saunter up close to examine it,  
And remark a good deal of Jane Lamb in it,  
"But the eyes are half out of their sockets;  
That hair's not so bad, where the gloss is,  
But they've made the girl's nose a proboscis:  
Jane Lamb, that we danced with at Vichy!  
What, is not she Jane? Then, who is she?"

All that I own is a print,  
An etching, a mezzotint;  
"T is a study, a fancy, a fiction,  
Yet a fact (take my conviction)  
Because it has more than a hint  
Of a certain face, I never  
Saw elsewhere touch or trace of  
In women I've seen the face of:  
Just an etching, and, so far, clever.

I keep my prints, an imbroglio,  
Fifty in one portfolio.  
When somebody tries my claret,  
We turn round chairs to the fire,  
Chirp over days in a garret,  
Chuckle o'er increase of salary,  
Taste the good fruits of our leisure,  
Talk about pencil and lyre,  
And the National Portrait Gallery:  
Then I exhibit my treasure.  
After we've turned over twenty,  
And the debt of wonder my crony owes  
Is paid to my Marc Antonios,  
He stops me — "*Festina lente!*  
What's that sweet thing there, the etching?"  
How my waistcoat-strings want stretching,  
How my cheeks grow red as tomatoes,  
How my heart leaps! But hearts, after leaps,  
ache.

"By the by, you must take, for a keepsake,  
That other, you praised, of Volpato's."  
The fool! would he try a flight further and  
say —  
He never saw, never before to-day,  
What was able to take his breath away,  
A face to lose youth for, to occupy age  
With the dream of, meet death with, — why,  
I'll not engage  
But that, half in a rapture and half in a rage,  
I should toss him the thing's self — "T is only  
a duplicate,  
A thing of no value! Take it, I supplicate!"

## MR. SLUDGE, "THE MEDIUM"

Mr. D. D. Home, an American spiritualist,  
attracted much attention in the circle in which  
Mr. and Mrs. Browning lived in Florence.

Now, don't, sir! Don't expose me! Just this  
once!

This was the first and only time, I'll swear, —  
Look at me, — see, I kneel, — the only time,  
I swear, I ever cheated, — yes, by the soul  
Of Her who hears — (your sainted mother, sir!)  
All, except this last accident, was truth —  
This little kind of slip! — and even this,  
It was your own wine, sir, the good champagne,  
(I took it for Catawba, you're so kind,) —  
Which put the folly in my head!

"Get up?"

You still inflict on me that terrible face?  
You show no mercy? — Not for Her dear sake,  
The sainted spirit's, whose soft breath even  
now  
Blows on my cheek — (don't you feel something,  
sir?)  
You'll tell?

Go tell, then! Who the devil cares  
What such a rowdy chooses to

Aie — aie — aie!

Please, sir! your thumbs are through my wind-  
pipe, sir!  
Ch—ch!

Well, sir, I hope you've done it now!  
Oh Lord! I little thought, sir, yesterday,  
When your departed mother spoke those words  
Of peace through me, and moved you, sir, so  
much,  
You gave me — (very kind it was of you)  
These shirt-studs — (better take them back  
again,  
Please, sir) — yes, little did I think so soon  
A trifle of trick, all through a glass too much  
Of his own champagne, would change my best  
of friends  
Into an angry gentleman!

Though, 't was wrong.

I don't contest the point; your anger's just:  
Whatever put such folly in my head,  
I know 't was wicked of me. There's a thick  
Dusk undeveloped spirit (I've observed)  
Owes me a grudge — a negro's, I should say,  
Or else an Irish emigrant's; yourself  
Explained the case so well last Sunday, sir,  
When we had summoned Franklin to clear up  
A point about those shares i' the telegraph:  
Ay, and he swore . . . or might it be Tom  
Paine? . . .

Thumping the table close by where I crouched,  
He'd do me soon a mischief: that's come  
true!

Why, now your face clears! I was sure it  
would!

Then, this one time . . . don't take your hand  
away,

Through yours I surely kiss your mother's  
hand . . .

You'll promise to forgive me? — or, at least,  
Tell nobody of this? Consider, sir!  
What harm can mercy do? Would but the  
shade

Of the venerable dead — one just vouchsafe



A rap or tip! What bit of paper 's here?  
 Suppose we take a pencil, let her write,  
 Make the least sign, she urges on her child  
 Forgiveness? There now! Eh? Oh! 'Twas  
 your foot,  
 And not a natural creak, sir?

Answer, then!

Once, twice, thrice . . . see, I'm waiting to  
 say "thrice!"

All to no use? No sort of hope for me?  
 It's all to post to Greeley's newspaper?

What? If I told you all about the tricks?  
 Upon my soul! — the whole truth, and naught  
 else.

And how there 's been some falsehood — for  
 your part,

Will you engage to pay my passage out,  
 And hold your tongue until I'm safe on board?  
 England 's the place, not Boston — no offence!  
 I see what makes you hesitate: don't fear!  
 I mean to change my trade and cheat no more,  
 Yes, this time really it's upon my soul!  
 Be my salvation! — under Heaven, of course.  
 I'll tell some queer things. Sixty V's must do.  
 A trifle, though, to start with! We'll refer  
 The question to this table?

How you're changed!

Then split the difference; thirty more, we'll say.  
 Ay, but you leave my presents! Else I'll  
 swear

'Twas all through those: you wanted yours  
 again,

So, picked a quarrel with me, to get them  
 back!

Tread on a worm, it turns, sir! If I turn,  
 Your fault! 'Tis you 'll have forced me!  
 Who 's obliged

To give up life yet try no self-defence?  
 At all events, I'll run the risk. Eh?

Done!

May I sit, sir? This dear old table, now!

Please, sir, a parting eggnog and cigar!

I've been so happy with you! Nice stuffed  
 chairs,

And sympathetic sideboards; what an end  
 To all the instructive evenings! (It's alight.)  
 Well, nothing lasts, as Bacon came and said.  
 Here goes, — but keep your temper, or I'll  
 scream!

Fol-lol-the-rido-liddle-iddle-ol!

You see, sir, it's your own fault more than  
 mine;

It's all your fault, you curious gentlefolk!

You're prigs, — excuse me, — like to look so  
 spry,

So clever, while you cling by half a claw

To the perch whereon you puff yourselves at  
 roost,

Such piece of self-conceit as serves for perch

Because you chose it, so it must be safe.

Oh, otherwise you're sharp enough! You spy  
 Who slips, who slides, who holds by help of  
 wing,

Wanting real foothold, — who can't keep up  
 right

On the other perch, your neighbor chose, not  
 you:

There 's no outwitting you respecting him!

For instance, men love money — that, you  
 know —

And what men do to gain it: well, suppose  
 A poor lad, say a help's son in your house,  
 Listening at keyholes, hears the company  
 Talk grand of dollars, V-notes, and so forth,  
 How hard they are to get, how good to hold,  
 How much they buy, — if, suddenly, in pops  
 he —

"I've got a V-note!" — what do you say to  
 him?

What's your first word which follows your last  
 kick?

"Where did you steal it, rascal?" That 's be-  
 cause

He finds you, fain would fool you, off your  
 perch,

Not on the special piece of nonsense, sir.

Elected your parade-ground: let him try  
 Lies to the end of the list, — "He picked it  
 up,

His cousin died and left it him by will,  
 The President flung it to him, riding by,  
 An actress trucked it for a curl of his hair,  
 He dreamed of luck and found his shoe en-  
 riched,

He dug up clay, and out of clay made gold" —  
 How would you treat such possibilities!

Would not you, prompt, investigate the case  
 With cowhide? "Lies, lies, lies," you'd shout:  
 and why?

Which of the stories might not prove mere  
 truth?

This last, perhaps, that clay was turned to  
 coin!

Let 's see, now, give him me to speak for him!  
 How many of your rare philosophers,  
 In plaguy books I've had to dip into,  
 Believed gold could be made thus, saw it  
 made,

And made it? Oh, with such philosophers  
 You're on your best behavior! While the  
 lad —

With him, in a trice, you settle likelihoods,  
 Nor doubt a moment how he got his prize:  
 In his case, you hear, judge and execute,  
 All in a breath: so would most men of sense.

But let the same lad hear you talk as grand  
 At the same keyhole, you and company,  
 Of signs and wonders, the invisible world;  
 How wisdom scouts our vulgar unbelief  
 More than our vulgarest credulity;  
 How good men have desired to see a ghost,  
 What Johnson used to say, what Wesley did,  
 Mother Goose thought, and fiddle-diddle-  
 dee: —

If he break in with, "Sir, I saw a ghost!"  
 Ah, the ways change! He finds you perched  
 and prim;

It's a conceit of yours that ghosts may be:  
 There's no talk now of cowhide. "Tell it out!  
 Don't fear us! Take your time and recollect!

Sit down first: try a glass of wine, my boy!  
And, David, (is not that your Christian name?)  
Of all things, should this happen twice—it  
may —  
Be sure, while fresh in mind, you let us  
know!"

Does the boy blunder, blurt out this, blab that,  
Break down in the other, as beginners will?  
All's candor, all's considerateness—"No  
haste!"

Pause and collect yourself! We understand!  
That's the bad memory, or the natural shock,  
Or the unexplained *phenomena*!"

Egad,  
The boy takes heart of grace; finds, never  
fear,

The readiest way to ope your own heart wide,  
Show — what I call your peacock-perch, pet  
post  
To strut, and spread the tail, and squawk  
upon!

"Just as you thought, much as you might  
expect!"

There be more things in heaven and earth,  
Horatio," . . .

And so on. Shall not David take the hint,  
Grow bolder, stroke you down at quickened  
rate?

If he ruffle a feather, it's "Gently, patiently!  
Manifestations are so weak at first!  
Doubting, moreover, kills them, cuts all short,  
Cures with a vengeance!"

There, sir, that's your style!  
You and your boy — such pains bestowed on  
him,

Or any headpiece of the average worth,  
To teach, say, Greek, would perfect him apace,  
Make him a Person ("Porson?" thank you,  
sir!)

Much more, proficient in the art of lies.  
You never leave the lesson! Fire alight,  
Catch you permitting it to die! You've  
friends;

There's no withholding knowledge, — least from  
those

Apt to look elsewhere for their souls' supply:  
Why should not you parade your lawful prize?

Who finds a picture, digs a medal up,  
Hits on a first edition, — he henceforth

Gives it his name, grows notable: how much  
more,

Who ferrets out a "medium"? "David's  
yours,

You highly-favored man? Then, pity souls  
Less privileged! Allow us share your luck!"

So, David holds the circle, rules the roost,  
Narrates the vision, peeps in the glass ball,  
Sets-to the spirit-writing, hears the raps,  
As the case may be.

Now mark! To be precise —  
Though I say, "lies" all these, at this first  
stage,

'Tis just for science' sake: I call such grubs  
By the name of what they'll turn to, dragon-  
flies.

Strictly it's what good people style untruth;  
But yet, so far, not quite the full-grown thing:  
It's fancying, fable-making, nonsense-work —  
What never meant to be so very bad —  
The knack of story-telling, brightening up  
Each dull old bit of fact that drops its shine.  
One does see somewhat when one shuts one's  
eyes,

If only spots and streaks; tables do tip  
In the oddest way of themselves: and pens,  
good Lord,

Who knows if you drive them or they drive  
you?

'Tis but a foot in the water and out again;  
Not that duck-under which decides your dive.  
Note this, for it's important: listen why.

I'll prove, you push on David till he dives  
And ends the shivering. Here's your circle,  
now:

Two-thirds of them, with heads like you their  
host,

Turn up their eyes, and cry, as you expect,  
"Lord, who'd have thought it!" But there's  
always one

Looks wise, compassionately smiles, submits,  
"Of your veracity no kind of doubt,  
But — do you feel so certain of that boy's?

Really, I wonder! I confess myself  
More chary of my faith!" That's galling,  
sir!

What, he the investigator, he the sage,  
When all's done? Then, you just have shut  
your eyes,

Opened your mouth, and gulped down David  
whole.

You! Terrible were such catastrophe!  
So, evidence is redoubled, doubled again,  
And doubled besides; once more, "He heard,  
we heard,

You and they heard, your mother and your  
wife,

Your children and the stranger in your gates:  
Did they or did they not?" So much for  
him,

The black sheep, guest without the wedding-  
garb,

The doubting Thomas! Now's your turn to  
crow:

"He's kind to think you such a fool: Sludge  
cheats?

Leave you alone to take precautions!"

Straight

The rest join chorus. Thomas stands abashed,  
Sips silent some such beverage as this,

Considers if it be harder, shutting eyes  
And gulping David in good fellowship,  
Than going elsewhere, getting, in exchange,

With no egg-nog to lubricate the food,  
Some just as tough a morsel. Over the way,  
Holds Captain Sparks his court: is it better  
there?

Have not you hunting-stories, scalping scenes,  
And Mexican War exploits to swallow plump  
If you'd be free o' the stove-side, rocking-  
chair,

And trio of affable daughters?

Doubt succumbs !

Victory ! All your circle's yours again !  
 Out of the clubbing of submissive wits,  
 David's performance rounds, each chink gets  
 patched,  
 Every protrusion of a point's filed fine,  
 All's fit to set a-rolling round the world,  
 And then return to David finally,  
 Lies seven feet thick about his first half-inch.  
 Here's a choice birth o' the supernatural,  
 Poor David's pledged to ! You've employed  
 no tool  
 That law exclaims at, save the devil's own,  
 Yet screwed him into henceforth gulling you  
 To the top o' your bent, — all out of one half-  
 lie !

You hold, if there's one half or a hundredth  
 part

Of a lie, that's his fault, — his be the penalty !  
 I dare say ! You'd prove firmer in his place ?  
 You'd find the courage, — that first flurry  
 over,

That mild bit of romancing-work at end, —  
 To interpose with " It gets serious, this ;  
 Must stop here. Sir, I saw no ghost at all.  
 Inform your friends I made . . . well, fools  
 of them,

And found you ready made. I've lived in  
 clover

These three weeks : take it out in kicks of  
 me ! "

I doubt it. Ask your conscience ! Let me  
 know,

Twelve months hence, with how few embellish-  
 ments

You've told almighty Boston of this passage  
 Of arms between us, your first taste o' the foil  
 From Sludge who could not fence, sir ! Sludge,  
 your boy !

I lied, sir, — there ! I got up from my gorge  
 On offal in the gutter, and preferred  
 Your canvas-backs : I took their carver's size,  
 Measured his modicum of intelligence,  
 Ticked him on the cockles of his heart  
 With a raven feather, and next week found  
 myself

Sweet and clean, dining daintily, dizen'd  
 smart,

Set on a stool buttressed by ladies' knees,  
 Every soft smiler calling me her pet,  
 Encouraging my story to uncoil  
 And creep out from its hole, inch after inch,  
 " How last night, I no sooner snug in bed,  
 Tucked up, just as they left me, — than came  
 raps !

While a light whisk'd " . . . " Shaped some-  
 what like a star ? "

" Well, like some sort of stars, ma'am. " — " So  
 we thought !

And any voice ? Not yet ? Try hard, next  
 time,

If you can't hear a voice ; we think you may ;  
 At least, the Pennsylvanian ' mediums ' did. "  
 Oh, next time come the voice ! " Just as we  
 hoped ! "

Are not the hoppers proud now, pleased, profuse  
 O' the natural acknowledgment ?

Of course !

So, off we push, illy-oh-yo, trim the boat,  
 On we sweep with a cataract ahead,  
 We're midway to the Horse-shoe : stop, who  
 can.

The dance of bubbles gay about our prow !  
 Experiences become worth waiting for,  
 Spirits now speak up, tell their inmost mind,  
 And compliment the " medium " properly,  
 Concern themselves about his Sunday coat,  
 See rings on his hand with pleasure. Ask  
 yourself

How you'd receive a course of treats like these !  
 Why, take the quietest hack and stall him up,  
 Cram him with corn a month, then out with  
 him

Among his mates on a bright April morn,  
 With the turf to tread ; see if you find or no  
 A caper in him, if he bucks or bolts !  
 Much more a youth whose fancies sprout as  
 rank

As toadstool-clump from melon-bed. 'T is  
 soon,

" Sirrah, you spirit, come, go, fetch and carry,  
 Read, write, rap, rub-a-dub, and hang your-  
 self ! "

I'm spared all further trouble ; all's arranged ;  
 Your circle does my business ; I may rave  
 Like an epileptic dervish in the books,  
 Foam, fling myself flat, rend my clothes to  
 shreds ;

No matter : lovers, friends and countrymen  
 Will lay down spiritual laws, read wrong things  
 right

By the rule o' reverse. If Francis Verulam  
 Styles himself Bacon, spells the name beside  
 With a y and a k, says he drew breath in York,  
 Gave up the ghost in Wales when Cromwell  
 reigned,

(As, sir, we somewhat fear he was apt to say,  
 Before I found the useful book that knows) —  
 Why, what harm's done ? The circle smiles  
 apace,

" It was not Bacon, after all, you see !  
 We understand ; the trick's but natural :  
 Such spirits' individuality  
 Is hard to put in evidence : they incline  
 To gibe and jeer, these undeveloped sorts.  
 You see, their world's much like a jail broke  
 loose,

While this of ours remains shut, bolted, barred,  
 With a single window to it. Sludge, our friend,  
 Serves as this window, whether thin or thick,  
 Or stained or stainless ; he's the medium-pane  
 Through which, to see us and be seen, they  
 peep :

They crowd each other, hustle for a chance,  
 Tread on their neighbor's kibes, play tricks  
 enough !

Does Bacon, tired of waiting, swerve aside ?  
 Up in his place jumps Barnum — " I'm your  
 man,

I'll answer you for Bacon ! " Try once more ! "

Or else it's — " What's a ' medium ' ? He's  
 a means,

Good, bad, indifferent, still the only means  
 Spirits can speak by ; he may misconceive.



Stutter and stammer, — he's their Sludge and drudge,  
Take him or leave him; they must hold their peace,

Or else, put up with having knowledge strained  
To half-expression through his ignorance.

Suppose, the spirit Beethoven wants to shed  
New music he's brimful of; why, he turns  
The handle of this organ, grinds with Sludge,  
And what he poured in at the mouth o' the mill

As a Thirty-third Sonata, (fancy now!)  
Comes from the hopper as bran-new Sludge,  
naught else,

The Shakers' Hymn in G, with a natural F,  
Or the 'Stars and Stripes' set to consecutive fourths."

Sir, where's the scrape you did not help me through,

You that are wise? And for the fools, the folk

Who came to see, — the guests, (observe that word!)

Pray do you find guests criticise your wine,  
Your furniture, your grammar, or your nose?  
Then, why your "medium"? What's the difference?

Prove your madeira red-ink and gamboge, —  
Your Sludge a cheat — then, somebody's a goose

For vaunting both as genuine. "Guests!"  
Don't fear!

They'll make a wry face, nor too much of that,

And leave you in your glory.

"No, sometimes  
They doubt and say as much!" Ay, doubt they do!

And what's the consequence? "Of course they doubt" —

(You triumph) — "that explains the hitch at once!"

Doubt posed our 'medium,' puddled his pure mind;

He gave them back their rubbish: pitch chaff in,

Could flour come out o' the honest mill?" So, prompt

Applaud the faithful: cases flock in point,  
"How, when a mocker willed a 'medium' once

Should name a spirit James whose name was George,

'James,' cried the 'medium,' — 't'was the test of truth!"

In short, a hit proves much, a miss proves more.  
Does this convince? The better: does it fail?

Time for the double-shotted broadside, then —  
The grand means, last resource. Look black

and big!

"You style us idiots, therefore — why stop short?

Accomplices in rascality: this we hear  
In our own house, from our invited guest

Found brave enough to outrage a poor boy  
Exposed by our good faith! Have you been

heard?

Now, then, hear us; one man's not quite worth twelve.

You see a cheat? Here's some twelve see an ass:

Excuse me if I calculate: good day!"

Out slinks the skeptic, all the laughs explode,  
Sludge waves his hat in triumph!

Or — he don't.  
There's something in real truth (explain who can!)

One casts a wistful eye at, like the horse  
Who mopes beneath stuffed hay-racks and won't munch

Because he spies a corn-bag: hang that truth,  
It spoils all dainties proffered in its place!

I've felt at times when, cockered, cosseted  
And coddled by the aforesaid company,

Bidden enjoy their bullying, — never fear,  
But o'er their shoulders spit at the flying man, —

I've felt a child; only, a fractious child  
That, dandled soft by nurse, aunt, grandmother,

Who keep him from the kennel, sun and wind,  
Good fun and wholesome mud, — enjoined be

sweet,  
And comely and superior, — eyes askance

The ragged sons o' the gutter at their game,  
Fain would be down with them i' the thick o'

the filth,  
Making dirt-pies, laughing free, speaking plain,

And calling granny the gray old cat she is.  
I've felt a spite, I say, at you, at them,

Huggings and humbug — gnashed my teeth to mark

A decent dog pass! It's too bad, I say,  
Ruining a soul so!

But what's "so," what's fixed,  
Where may one stop? Nowhere! The cheating's nursed

Out of the lying, softly and surely spun  
To just your length, sir! I'd stop soon enough:

But you're for progress. "All old, nothing new?"

Only the usual talking through the mouth,  
Or writing by the hand? I own, I thought

This would develop, grow demonstrable,  
Make doubt absurd, give figures we might see,

Flowers we might touch. There's no one doubts you, Sludge!

You dream the dreams, you see the spiritual sights,

The speeches come in your head, beyond dispute.

Still, for the skeptics' sake, to stop all mouths,  
We want some outward manifestation! — well,

The Pennsylvanians gained such; why not Sludge?

He may improve with time!"

Ay, that he may!  
He sees his lot: there's no avoiding fate.

'Tis a trifle at first. "Eh, David? Did you hear?"

You joggled the table, your foot caused the squeak,

This time you're . . . joking, are you not, my boy?"

"N-n-no!"—and I'm done for, bought and sold henceforth

The old good easy jog-trot way, the . . . eh?  
The . . . not so very false, as falsehood goes,  
The spinning out and drawing fine, you know, —  
Really mere novel-writing of a sort,  
Acting, or improvising, make-believe,  
Surely not downright cheaterly, — anyhow,  
'Tis done with and my lot cast; Cheat's my name:

The fatal dash of brandy in your tea  
Has settled what you'll have the souchong's smack:

The fatal gives way to the dram-bottle.

Then, it's so cruel easy! Oh, those tricks  
That can't be tricks, those feats by sleight of hand,

Clearly no common conjurer's! — no, indeed!  
A conjurer? Choose me any craft i' the world  
A man puts hand to; and with six months' pains,

I'll play you twenty tricks miraculous  
To people untaught the trade: have you seen glass blown.

Pipes pierced? Why, just this biscuit that I chip,

Did you ever watch a baker toss one flat  
To the oven? Try and do it! Take my word,  
Practice but half as much, while limbs are lithe,

To turn, shove, tilt a table, crack your joints,  
Manage your feet, dispose your hands aright,  
Work wires that twitch the curtains, play the glove

At end o' your slipper, — then put out the lights  
And . . . there, there, all you want you'll get,  
I hope!

I found it slip, easy as an old shoe.

Now, lights on table again! I've done my part,  
You take my place while I give thanks and rest.

"Well, Judge Humgruffin, what's your verdict, sir?"

You, hardest head in the United States, —  
Did you detect a cheat here? Wait! Let's see!

Just an experiment first, for candor's sake!  
I'll try and cheat you, Judge! the table tilts:  
Is it I that move it? Write! I'll press your hand:

Cry when I push, or guide your pencil, Judge!"  
Sludge still triumphant! "That a rap, indeed?  
That, the real writing? Very like a whale!

Then, if, sir, you — a most distinguished man,  
And, were the Judge not here, I'd say, . . .  
no matter!

Well, sir, if you fail, you can't take us in, —  
There's little fear that Sludge will!"

Won't he, ma'am?

But what if our distinguished host, like Sludge,  
Bade God bear witness that he played no trick,  
While you believed that what produced the raps  
Was just a certain child who died, you know,  
And whose last breath you thought your lips had felt?

Eh? That's a capital point, ma'am: Sludge begins

At your entreaty with your dearest dead,  
The little voice set lipping once again,  
The tiny hand made feel for yours once more.  
The poor lost image brought back, plain as dreams,

Which image, if a word had chanced recall,  
The customary cloud would cross your eyes,  
Your heart return the old tick, pay its pang!  
A right mood for investigation, this!  
One's at one's ease with Saul and Jonathan,  
Pompey and Cæsar: but one's own lost child . . .

I wonder, when you heard the first elod drop  
From the spadeful at the grave-side, felt you free  
To investigate who twitched your funeral scarf  
Or brushed your flounces? Then, it came of course,

You should be stunned and stupid; then (how else?)

Your breath stopped with your blood, your brain struck work.

But now, such causes fail of such effects,  
All's changed, — the little voice begins afresh,  
Yet you, calm, consequent, can test and try  
And touch the truth. "Tests? Did n't the creature tell

Its nurse's name, and say it lived six years,  
And rode a rocking-horse? Enough of tests!  
Sludge never could learn that!"

He could not, eh?

You compliment him. "Could not?" Speak for yourself!

I'd like to know the man I ever saw  
Once, — never mind where, how, why, when, —  
once saw,

Of whom I do not keep some matter in mind  
He'd swear I "could not" know, sagacious soul!

What? Do you live in this world's blow of blacks,

Palaver, gossipry, a single hour  
Nor find one smut has settled on your nose,  
Of a smut's worth, no more, no less? — one fact  
Out of the drift of facts, whereby you learn  
What some one was, somewhere, somewhen,  
somehow?

You don't tell folk — "See what has stuck to me!

Judge Humgruffin, our most distinguished man,  
Your uncle was a tailor, and your wife  
Thought to have married Miggs, missed him,  
hit you!" —

Do you, sir, though you see him twice a-week?  
"No," you reply, "what use retailing it?

Why should I?" But, you see, one day you should,

Because one day there's much use, — when this fact

Brings you the Judge upon both gouty knees  
Before the supernatural; proves that Sludge  
Knows, as you say, a thing he "could not" know:

Will not Sludge thenceforth keep an outstretched face.

The way the wind drives?

"Could not!" Look you now,  
I'll tell you a story! There's a whiskered  
chap,

A foreigner, that teaches music here  
And gets his bread, — knowing no better way:  
He says, the fellow who informed of him  
And made him fly his country and fall West,  
Was a hunchback cobbler, sat, stitched soles  
and sang,

In some outlandish place, the city Rome,  
In a cellar by their Broadway, all day long;  
Never asked questions, stopped to listen or look,  
Nor lifted nose from lapstone; let the world  
Roll round his three-legged stool, and news run  
in

The ears he hardly seemed to keep pricked up.  
Well, that man went on Sundays, touched his  
pay,

And took his praise from government, you see;  
For something like two dollars every week,  
He'd engage tell you some one little thing  
Of some one man, which led to many more,  
(Because one truth leads right to the world's  
end.)

And make you that man's master — when he  
dined

And on what dish, where walked to keep his  
health

And to what street. His trade was, throwing  
thus

His sense out, like an ant-eater's long tongue,  
Soft, innocent, warm, moist, impassible,  
And when 't was crusted o'er with creatures —  
slick,

Their juice enriched his palate. "Could not  
Sludge!"

I'll go yet a step further, and maintain,  
Once the imposture plunged its proper depth  
O' the rotten of your natures, all of you, —  
(If one's not mad nor drunk, and hardly then)  
It's impossible to cheat — that's, be found out!  
Go tell your brotherhood this first slip of mine,  
All to-day's tale, how you detected Sludge,  
Behaved unpleasantly, till he was fain confess,  
And so has come to grief! You'll find, I think,  
Why Sludge still snaps his fingers in your face.  
There now, you've told them! What's their  
prompt reply?

"Sir, did that youth confess he had cheated  
me,

I'd disbelieve him. He may cheat at times;  
That's in the 'medium'-nature, thus they're  
made,

Vain and vindictive, cowards, prone to scratch.  
And so all cats are; still, a cat's the beast  
You coax the strange electric sparks from out,  
By rubbing back its fur; not so a dog.  
Nor lion, nor lamb: 't is the cat's nature, sir!  
Why not the dog's? Ask God, who made them  
beasts!

D'y e think the sound, the nicely-balanced man  
(Like me" — aside) — "like you yourself," —  
(aloud)

"— He's stuff to make a 'medium'? Bless  
your soul,

'T is these hysteric, hybrid half-and-halves,  
Equivocal, worthless vermin yield the fire!

We take such as we find them, 'ware their  
tricks,  
Wanting their service. Sir, Sludge took in  
you —

How, I can't say, not being there to watch:  
He was tried, was tempted by your easiness, —  
He did not take in me!"

Thank you for Sludge!  
I'm to be grateful to such patrons, eh,  
When what you hear's my best word? 'T is a  
challenge.

"Snap at all strangers, half-tamed prairie-dog,  
So you cower duly at your keeper's beck!  
Cat, show what claws were made for, muffling  
them

Only to me! Cheat others if you can,  
Me, if you dare!" And, my wise sir, I dared —  
Did cheat you first, made you cheat others next,  
And had the help o' your vaunted manliness  
To bully the incredulous. You used me?  
Have not I used you, taken full revenge,  
Persuaded folk they knew not their own name,  
And straight they'd own the error! Who was  
the fool

When, to an awe-struck wide-eyed open-mouthed  
Circle of sages, Sludge would introduce  
Milton composing baby-rhymes, and Locke  
Reasoning in gibberish, Homer writing Greek  
In naughts and crosses, Asaph setting psalms  
To crotchet and quaver? I've made a spirit  
squeak

In sham voice for a minute, then outbroke  
Bold in my own, defying the imbeciles —  
Have copied some ghost's pothooks, half a page,  
Then ended with my own scrawl undisguised.

"All right! The ghost was merely using  
Sludge,

Suited itself from his imperfect stock!"

Don't talk of gratitude to me! For what?

For being treated as a showman's ape,  
Encouraged to be wicked and make sport,  
Fret or sulk, grin or whimper, any mood  
So long as the ape be in it and no man —  
Because a nut pays every mood alike.

Curse your superior, superintending sort,  
Who, since you hate smoke, send up boys that  
climb

To cure your chimney, bid a "medium" lie  
To sweep your truth down! Curse your women  
too,

Your insolent wives and daughters, that fire up  
Or faint away if a male hand squeeze theirs,  
Yet, to encourage Sludge, may play with Sludge  
As only a "medium," only the kind of thing  
They must humor, fondle . . . oh, to miscon-  
ceive

Were too preposterous! But I've paid them  
out!

They've had their wish — called for the naked  
truth,

And in she tripped, sat down and bade them  
stare:

They had to blush a little and forgive!

"The fact is, children talk so; in next world  
All our conventions are reversed, — perhaps  
Made light of: something like old prints, my  
dear!



The Judge has one, he brought from Italy,  
A metropolis in the background, — o'er a bridge,  
A team of trotting roadsters, — cheerful groups  
Of wayside travellers, peasants at their work,  
And, full in front, quite unconcerned, why not?  
Three nymphs conversing with a cavalier,  
And never a rag among them: 'fine,' folk cry —  
And heavenly manners seem not much unlike!  
Let Sludge go on; we'll fancy it's in print!"  
If such as came for wool, sir, went home shorn,  
Where is the wrong I did them? 'T was their  
choice;

They tried the adventure, ran the risk, tossed  
up

And lost, as some one's sure to do in games;  
They fancied I was made to lose, — smoked  
glass

Useful to spy the sun through, spare their eyes:  
And had I proved a red-hot iron plate  
They thought to pierce, and, for their pains,  
grew blind,

Whose were the fault but theirs? While, as  
things go,

Their loss amounts to gain, the more's the  
shame!

They've had their peep into the spirit-world,  
And all this world may know it! They've fed  
fat

Their self-conceit which else had starved: what  
chance

Save this, of cackling o'er a golden egg  
And compassing distinction from the flock,  
Friends of a feather? Well, they paid for it,  
And not prodigiously; the price o' the play,  
Not counting certain pleasant interludes,  
Was scarce a vulgar play's worth. When you  
buy

The actor's talent, do you dare propose  
For his soul beside? Whereas, my soul you  
buy!

Sludge acts Macbeth, obliged to be Macbeth,  
Or you'll not hear his first word! Just go  
through

That slight formality, swear himself's the  
Thane,

And thenceforth he may strut and fret his hour,  
Spout, spawl, or spin his target, no one cares!  
Why had n't I leave to play tricks, Sludge as  
Sludge?

Enough of it all! I've wiped out scores with  
you —

Vented your fustian, let myself be streaked  
Like tom-fool with your ochre and carmine,  
Worn patchwork your respectable fingers sewed  
To metamorphose somebody, — yes, I've earned  
My wages, swallowed down my bread of shame.  
And shake the crumbs off — where but in your  
face?

As for religion — why, I served it, sir!  
I'll stick to that! With my *phenomena*  
I laid the atheist sprawling on his back,  
Propped up Saint Paul, or, at least, Sweden-  
borg!

In fact, it's just the proper way to balk  
These troublesome fellows — liars, one and all,  
Are not these skeptics? Well, to baffle them,  
No use in being squeamish: lie yourself!

Erect your buttress just as wide o' the line,  
Your side, as they build up the wall on theirs;  
Where both meet, midway in a point, is truth,  
High overhead: so, take your room, pile bricks,  
Lie! Oh, there's titillation in all shame!  
What snow may lose in white, snow gains in  
rose!

Miss Stokes turns — Rahab, — nor a bad ex-  
change!

Glory be on her, for the good she wrought,  
Breeding belief anew 'neath ribs of death,  
Browbeating now the unabashed before,  
Ridding us of their whole life's gathered straws  
By a live coal from the altar! Why, of old,  
Great men spent years and years in writing  
books

To prove we've souls, and hardly proved it  
then:

Miss Stokes with her live coal, for you and me!  
Surely, to this good issue, all was fair —

Not only fondling Sludge, but, even suppose  
He let escape some spice of knavery, — well,  
In wisely being blind to it! Don't you praise  
Nelson for setting spy-glass to blind eye  
And saying . . . what was it — that he could  
not see

The signal he was bothered with? Ay, indeed!

I'll go beyond: there's a real love of a lie,  
Liars find ready-made for lies they make,  
As hand for glove, or tongue for sugar-plum.  
At best, 't is never pure and full belief;  
Those furthest in the quagmire, — don't suppose  
They strayed there with no warning, got no  
chance

Of a filth-speck in their face, which they  
clenched teeth,

Bent brow against! Be sure they had their  
doubts,

And fears, and fairest challenges to try  
The floor o' the seeming solid sand! But no!  
Their faith was pledged, acquaintance too ap-  
prised,

All but the last step ventured, kerchiefs waved,  
And Sludge called "pet!" 't was easier march-  
ing on

To the promised land; join those who, Thurs-  
day next,

Meant to meet Shakespeare; better follow  
Sludge —

Prudent, oh sure! — on the alert, how else?  
But making for the mid-bog, all the same!  
To hear your outeries, one would think I caught  
Miss Stokes by the scruff o' the neck, and  
pitched her flat,

Foolish-face-foremost! Hear these simpletons,  
That's all I beg, before my work's begun,  
Before I've touched them with my finger-tip!  
Thus they await me (do but listen, now!  
It's reasoning, this is, — I can't imitate  
The baby voice, though), — "In so many tales  
Must be some truth, truth though a pin-point big.  
Yet, some: a single man's deceived, perhaps —  
Hardly, a thousand: to suppose one cheat  
Can gull all these, were more miraculous far  
Than aught we should confess a miracle," —  
And so on. Then the Judge sums up — (it's  
rare)

Bids you respect the authorities that leap  
To the judgment-seat at once, — why don't you  
note

The limpid nature, the unblemished life,  
The spotless honor, indisputable sense  
Of the first upstart with his story? What —  
Outrage a boy on whom you ne'er till now  
Set eyes, because he finds raps trouble him?

Fools, these are: ay, and how of their opposites  
Who never did, at bottom of their hearts,  
Believe for a moment? — Men emasculate,  
Blank of belief, who played, as emmuchs use,  
With superstition safely, — cold of blood,  
Who saw what made for them i' the mystery,  
Took their occasion, and supported Sludge  
— As proselytes? No, thank you, far too  
shrewd!

— But promisers of fair play, encouragers  
O' the claimant; who in candor needs must  
hoist

Sludge upon Mars' Hill, get speech out of Sludge  
To carry off, criticise, and cant about!  
Did n't Athens treat Saint Paul so? — at any  
rate,

It's "a new thing" philosophy fumbles at.  
Then there's the other picker-out of pearl  
From dungheaps, — ay, your literary man,  
Who draws on his kid gloves to deal with Sludge  
Daintily and discreetly, — shakes a dust  
O' the doctrine, flavors thence, he well knows  
how,

The narrative or the novel, — half-believes,  
All for the book's sake, and the public's stare,  
And the cash that's God's sole solid in this  
world!

Look at him! Try to be too bold, too gross  
For the master! Not you! He's the man for  
muck;

Shovel it forth, full-splash, he'll smooth your  
brown

Into artistic richness, never fear!  
Find him the crude stuff; when you recognize  
Your lie again, you'll doff your hat to it,  
Dressed out for company! "For company,"  
I say, since there's the relish of success:  
Let all pay due respect, call the lie truth,  
Save the soft silent smirking gentleman  
Who ushered in the stranger: you must sigh  
"How melancholy, he, the only one,  
Fails to perceive the bearing of the truth  
Himself gave birth to!" — There's the tri-  
umph's smack!

That man would choose to see the whole world  
roll

I' the slime o' the slough, so he might touch the  
tip

Of his brush with what I call the best of  
browns —

Tint ghost-tales, spirit-stories, past the power  
Of the outworn umber and bistre!

Yet I think

There's a more hateful form of foolery —  
The social sage's, Solomon of saloons  
And philosophic diner-out, the fribble  
Who wants a doctrine for a chopping-block  
To try the edge of his faculty upon,

Prove how much common sense he'll hack and  
hew

I' the critical moment 'twixt the soup and fish!  
These were my patrons: these, and the like of  
them

Who, rising in my soul now, sickened it, —  
These I have injured! Gratitude to these?  
The gratitude, forsooth, of a prostitute  
To the greenhorn and the bully — friends of  
hers,

From the wag that wants the queer jokes for  
his club,

To the snuffbox-decorator, honest man,  
Who just was at his wits' end where to find  
So genial a Pasiphae! All and each  
Pay, compliment, protect from the police:  
And how she hates them for their pains, like  
me!

So much for my remorse at thanklessness  
Toward a deserving public!

But, for God?

Ay, that's a question! Well, sir, since you  
press —

(How you do tease the whole thing out of me!  
I don't mean you, you know, when I say  
"them":)

Hate you, indeed! But that Miss Stokes, that  
Judge!

Enough, enough — with sugar: thank you, sir!  
Now for it, then! Will you believe me, though?  
You've heard what I confess; I don't unsay  
A single word: I cheated when I could,  
Rapped with my toe-joints, set sham hands at  
work,

Wrote down names weak in sympathetic ink,  
Rubbed odic lights with ends of phosphor-match,  
And all the rest; believe that: believe this,  
By the same token, though it seem to set  
The crooked straight again, unsay the said,  
Stick up what I've knocked down; I can't help  
that

It's truth! I somehow vomit truth to-day.  
This trade of mine — I don't know, can't be  
sure

But there was something in it, tricks and all!  
Really, I want to light up my own mind.  
They were tricks, — true, but what I mean to  
add

Is also true. First, — don't it strike you, sir?  
Go back to the beginning, — the first fact  
We're taught is, there's a world beside this  
world,

With spirits, not mankind, for tenantry;  
That much within that world once sojourned  
here,

That all upon this world will visit there,  
And therefore that we, bodily here below,  
Must have exactly such an interest

In learning what may be the ways o' the world  
Above us, as the disembodied folk  
Have (by all analogic likelihood)

In watching how things go in the old home  
With us, their sons, successors, and what not.  
Oh, yes, with added powers probably,  
Fit for the novel state, — old loves grown pure,  
Old interests understood aright, — they watch!  
Eyes to see, ears to hear, and hands to help,

Proportionate to advancement : they 're ahead,  
That 's all — do what we do, but noblier done —  
Use plate, whereas we eat our meals off delf,  
(To use a figure.)

Concede that, and I ask

Next what may be the mode of intercourse  
Between us men here, and those once-men  
there ?

First comes the Bible's speech ; then, history  
With the supernatural element, — you know —  
All that we sucked in with our mothers' milk,  
Grew up with, got inside of us at last,  
Till it 's found bone of bone and flesh of flesh.  
See now, we start with the miraculous,  
And know it used to be, at all events :  
What 's the first step we take, and can't but  
take,

In arguing from the known to the obscure ?

Why this : "What was before, may be to-day.  
Since Samuel's ghost appeared to Saul, — of  
course

My brother's spirit may appear to me."

Go tell your teacher that ! What 's his reply ?

What brings a shade of doubt for the first time  
O'er his brow late so luminous with faith ?

"Such things have been," says he, "and there 's  
no doubt

Such things may be : but I advise mistrust  
Of eyes, ears, stomach, and, more than all, your  
brain,

Unless it be of your great-grandmother,

Whenever they propose a ghost to you !"

The end is, there 's a composition struck ;

'T is settled, we 've some way of intercourse

Just as in Saul's time ; only, different :

How, when and where, precisely, — find it out !

I want to know, then, what 's so natural

As that a person born into this world

And seized on by such teaching, should begin

With firm expectancy and a frank look-out

For his own allotment, his especial share

I' the secret, — his particular ghost, in fine ?

I mean, a person born to look that way,

Since natures differ : take the painter-sort,

One man lives fifty years in ignorance

Whether grass be green or red, — "No kind of  
eye

For color," say you ; while another picks

And puts away even pebbles, when a child,

Because of bluish spots and pinky veins —

"Give him forthwith a paint-box !" Just the  
same

Was I born . . . "medium," you won't let me  
say, —

Well, seer of the supernatural

Everywhen, everyhow, and everywhere, —

Will that do ?

I and all such boys of course

Started with the same stock of Bible-truth ;

Only, — what in the rest you style their sense,

Instinct, blind reasoning but imperative,

This, betimes, taught them the old world had  
one law

And ours another : "New world, new laws,"  
cried they :

"None but old laws, seen everywhere at work,"

Cried I, and by their help explained my life  
The Jews' way, still a working way to me.  
Ghosts made the noises, fairies waved the lights,  
Or Santa Claus slid down on New Year's Eve  
And stuffed with cakes the stocking at my bed,  
Changed the worn shoes, rubbed clean the  
fingered slates

O' the sum that came to grief the day before.

This could not last long : soon enough I found  
Who had worked wonders thus, and to what  
end :

But did I find all easy, like my mates ?

Henceforth no supernatural any more ?

Not a whit : what projects the billiard-balls ?

"A cue," you answer. "Yes, a cue," said I ;

"But what hand, off the cushion, moved the  
cue ?

What unseen agency, outside the world,

Prompted its puppets to do this and that,

Put cakes and shoes and slates into their mind,

These mothers and aunts, nay even school-  
masters ?"

Thus high I sprang, and there have settled since.

Just so I reason, in sober earnest still,

About the greater godsend, what you call

The serious gains and losses of my life.

What do I know or care about your world

Which either is or seems to be ? This snap

O' my fingers, sir ! My care is for myself ;

Myself am whole and sole reality

Inside a raree-show and a market-mob

Gathered about it : that 's the use of things.

'T is easy saying they serve vast purposes,

Advantage their grand selves : be it true or  
false,

Each thing may have two uses. What 's a star ?

A world, or a world's sun : does n't it serve

As taper also, timepiece, weather-glass,

And almanac ? Are stars not set for signs

When we should shear our sheep, sow corn,  
prune trees ?

The Bible says so.

Well, I add one use

To all the acknowledged uses, and declare

If I spy Charles's Wain at twelve to-night,

It warns me, "Go, nor lose another day,

And have your hair cut, Sludge !" You  
laugh : and why ?

Were such a sign too hard for God to give ?

No : but Sludge seems too little for such grace :

Thank you, sir ! So you think, so does not  
Sludge !

When you and good men gape at Providence,

Go into history and bid us mark

Not merely powder-plots prevented, crowns

Kept on kings' heads by miracle enough,

But private mercies — oh, you 've told me, sir,

Of such interpositions ! How yourself

Once, missing on a memorable day

Your handkerchief — just setting out, you  
know, —

You must return to fetch it, lost the train,

And saved your precious self from what be-  
fell

The thirty-three whom Providence forgot.

You tell, and ask me what I think of this ?



Well, sir, I think then, since you needs must know,  
What matter had you and Boston city to boot  
Sailed skyward, like burnt onion-peelings?  
Much

To you, no doubt: for me — undoubtedly  
The cutting of my hair concerns me more,  
Because, however sad the truth may seem,  
Sludge is of all-importance to himself.  
You set apart that day in every year  
For special thanksgiving, were a heathen else:  
Well, I who cannot boast the like escape,  
Suppose I said, "I don't thank Providence  
For my part, owing it no gratitude"?  
"Nay, but you owe as much," — you'd tutor me,  
"You, every man alive, for blessings gained  
In every hour o' the day, could you but know!  
I saw my crowning mercy: all have such,  
Could they but see!" Well, sir, why don't  
they see?

"Because they won't look, — or perhaps, they  
can't."

Then, sir, suppose I can, and will, and do  
Look, microscopically as is right,  
Into each hour with its infinitude  
Of influences at work to profit Sludge?  
For that's the case: I've sharpened up my  
sight

To spy a providence in the fire's going out,  
The kettle's boiling, the dime's sticking fast  
Despite the hole i' the pocket. Call such facts  
Fancies, too petty a work for Providence,  
And those same thanks which you exact from  
me

Prove too prodigious payment: thanks for  
what,

If nothing guards and guides us little men?  
No, no, sir! You must put away your pride,  
Resolve to let Sludge into partnership!  
I live by signs and omens: looked at the roof  
Where the pigeons settle — "If the further  
bird,

The white, takes wing first, I'll confess when  
thrashed;

Not, if the blue does," — so I said to myself  
Last week, lest you should take me by sur-  
prise:

Off flapped the white, — and I'm confessing,  
sir!

Perhaps 't is Providence's whim and way  
With only me, i' the world: how can you tell?  
"Because unlikely!" Was it likelier, now,  
That this our one out of all worlds beside,  
The what-d'-you-call-'em millions, should be  
just

Precisely chosen to make Adam for,  
And the rest o' the tale? Yet the tale's true,  
you know:

Such undeserving clod was graced so once;  
Why not graced likewise undeserving Sludge?  
Are we merit-mongers, flaunt we filthy rags?  
All you can bring against my privilege  
Is, that another way was taken with you, —  
Which I don't question. It's pure grace, my  
luck:

I'm broken to the way of nods and winks,  
And need no formal summoning. You've a  
help;

Holloa his name or whistle, clap your hands,  
Stamp with your foot or pull the bell: all's  
one,

He understands you want him, here he comes.  
Just so, I come at the knocking: you, sir, wait  
The tongue o' the bell, nor stir before you  
catch

Reason's clear tingle, nature's clapper brisk,  
Or that traditional peal was wont to cheer  
Your mother's face turned heavenward: short  
of these

There's no authentic intimation, eh?  
Well, when you hear, you'll answer them,  
start up

And stride into the presence, top of toe,  
And there find Sludge beforehand, Sludge that  
sprang

At noise o' the knuckle on the partition-wall!  
I think myself the more religious man.  
Religion's all or nothing; it's no mere smile  
O' contentment, sigh of aspiration, sir —  
No quality o' the finelier-tempered clay  
Like its whiteness or its lightness; rather, stuff  
O' the very stuff, life of life, and self of self.  
I tell you, men won't notice; when they do,  
They'll understand. I notice nothing else:

I'm eyes, ears, mouth of me, one gaze and  
gape,

Nothing eludes me, everything's a hint,  
Handle and help. It's all absurd, and yet  
There's something in it all, I know: how  
much?

No answer! What does that prove? Man's  
still man,

Still meant for a poor blundering piece of work  
When all's done; but, if somewhat's done, like  
this,

Or not done, is the case the same? Suppose  
I blunder in my guess at the true sense  
O' the knuckle-summons, nine times out of  
ten, —

What if the tenth guess happen to be right?  
If the tenth shovel-load of powdered quartz  
Yield me the nugget? I gather, crush, sift all,  
Pass o'er the failure, pounce on the success.  
To give you a notion, now — (let who wins,  
laugh!)

When first I see a man, what do I first?  
Why, count the letters which make up his  
name,

And as their number chances, even or odd,  
Arrive at my conclusion, trim my course:  
Hiram H. Horsefall is your honored name,  
And have n't I found a patron, sir, in you?

"Shall I cheat this stranger?" I take apple-  
pips,

Stick one in either *canthus* of my eye,  
And if the left drops first — (your left, sir,  
stuck)

I'm warned, I let the trick alone this time.  
You, sir, who smile, superior to such trash,  
You judge of character by other rules:  
Don't your rules sometimes fail you? Pray,  
what rule

Have you judged Sludge by hitherto?

Oh, be sure,  
You, everybody blunders, just as I,

In simpler things than these by far ! For see :  
 I knew two farmers, — one, a wiseacre  
 Who studied seasons, rummaged almanacs,  
 Quoted the dew-point, registered the frost,  
 And then declared, for outcome of his pains,  
 Next summer must be dampish : 't was a  
 drought.

His neighbor prophesied such drought would  
 fall,

Saved hay and corn, made cent. per cent.  
 thereby,

And proved a sage indeed : how came his lore ?  
 Because one brindled heifer, late in March,  
 Stiffened her tail of evenings, and somehow  
 He got into his head that drought was meant !  
 I don't expect all men can do as much :

Such kissing goes by favor. You must take  
 A certain turn of mind for this, — a twist  
 I' the flesh, as well. Be lazily alive,  
 Open-mouthed, like my friend the ant-eater,  
 Letting all nature's loosely-guarded motes  
 Settle and, slick, be swallowed ! Think your-  
 self

The one i' the world, the one for whom the  
 world

Was made, expect it tickling at your mouth !  
 Then will the swarm of busy buzzing flies,  
 Clouds of coincidence, break egg-shell, thrive,  
 Breed, multiply, and bring you food enough.

I can't pretend to mind your smiling, sir !  
 Oh, what you mean is this ! Such intimate way,  
 Close converse, frank exchange of offices,  
 Strict sympathy of the immeasurably great  
 With the infinitely small, betokened here  
 By a course of signs and omens, raps and  
 sparks, —

How does it suit the dread traditional text  
 O' the "Great and Terrible Name" ? Shall  
 the Heaven of Heavens  
 Stoop to such child's play ?

Please, sir, go with me

A moment, and I'll try to answer you.  
 The "*Magnum et terribile*" (is that right ?)  
 Well, folk began with this in the early day ;  
 And all the acts they recognized in proof  
 Were thunders, lightnings, earthquakes, whirl-  
 winds, dealt

Indisputably on men whose death they caused,  
 There, and there only, folk saw Providence  
 At work, — and seeing it, 't was right enough  
 All heads should tremble, hands wring hands  
 amain,

And knees knock hard together at the breath  
 O' the Name's first letter ; why, the Jews, I'm  
 told,

Won't write it down, no, to this very hour,  
 Nor speak aloud : you know best if 't be so.  
 Each ague-fit of fear at end, they crept  
 (Because somehow people once born must live)  
 Out of the sound, sight, swing and sway o' the  
 Name,

Into a corner, the dark rest of the world,  
 And safe space where as yet no fear had  
 reached ;

'T was there they looked about them, breathed  
 again,

And felt indeed at home, as we might say.  
 The current o' common things, the daily life,  
 This had their due contempt ; no Name pur-  
 sued

Man from the mountain-top where fires abide,  
 To his particular mouse-hole at its foot  
 Where he ate, drank, digested, lived in short :  
 Such was man's vulgar business, far too small  
 To be worth thunder : "small," folk kept on,  
 "small,"

With much complacency in those great days !  
 A mote of sand, you know, a blade of grass —  
 What was so despicable as mere grass,  
 Except perhaps the life o' the worm or fly  
 Which fed there ? These were "small" and  
 men were great.

Well, sir, the old way's altered somewhat  
 since,

And the world wears another aspect now :  
 Somebody turns our spyglass round, or else  
 Puts a new lens in it : grass, worm, fly grow  
 big :

We find great things are made of little things,  
 And little things go lessening till at last  
 Comes God behind them. Talk of mountains  
 now ?

We talk of mould that heaps the mountain,  
 mites

That throng the mould, and God that makes  
 the mites.

The Name comes close behind a stomach-cyst,  
 The simplest of creations, just a sac  
 That's mouth, heart, legs and belly at once,  
 yet lives

And feels, and could do neither, we conclude,  
 If simplified still further one degree :  
 The small becomes the dreadful and immense !  
 Lightning, forsooth ? No word more upon  
 that !

A tin-foil bottle, a strip of greasy silk,  
 With a bit of wire and knob of brass, and  
 there's

Your dollar's-worth of lightning ! But the  
 cyst —

The life of the least of the little things ?

No, no !

Preachers and teachers try another tack,  
 Come near the truth this time : they put aside  
 Thunder and lightning. "That's mistake,"  
 they cry ;

"Thunderbolts fall for neither fright nor sport,  
 But do appreciable good, like tides,  
 Changes o' the wind, and other natural facts —  
 'Good' meaning good to man, his body or soul.  
 Mediate, immediate, all things minister  
 To man, — that's settled : be our future text  
 'We are His children !'" So, they now ha-  
 rangue

About the intention, the contrivance, all  
 That keeps up an incessant play of love, —  
 See the Bridgewater book.

Amen to it !

Well, sir, I put this question : I'm a child ?  
 I lose no time, but take you at your word :  
 How shall I act a child's part properly ?  
 Your sainted mother, sir, — used you to live

With such a thought as this a-worrying you ?  
 "She has it in her power to throttle me,  
 Or stab or poison: she may turn me out,  
 Or lock me in, — nor stop at this to-day,  
 But cut me off to-morrow from the estate  
 I look for" — (long may you enjoy it, sir!)  
 "In brief, she may unchild the child I am."  
 You never had such crotchets? Nor have I!  
 Who, frank confessing childship from the first,  
 Cannot both fear and take my ease at once,  
 So, don't fear, — know what might be, well  
 enough,

But know too, child-like, that it will not be,  
 At least in my case, mine, the son and heir  
 O' the kingdom, as yourself proclaim my style.  
 But do you fancy I stop short at this?  
 Wonder if suit and service, son and heir  
 Needs must expect, I dare pretend to find?  
 If, looking for signs proper to such an one,  
 I straight perceive them irresistible?  
 Concede that homage is a son's plain right,  
 And, never mind the nods and raps and winks,  
 'Tis the pure obvious supernatural  
 Steps forward, does its duty: why, of course!  
 I have presentiments; my dreams come true:  
 I fancy a friend stands whistling all in white  
 Blithe as a boblink, and he's dead I learn.  
 I take dislike to a dog my favorite long,  
 And sell him; he goes mad next week and  
 snaps.

I guess that stranger will turn up to-day  
 I have not seen these three years; there's his  
 knock.

I wager "sixty peaches on that tree!" —  
 That I pick up a dollar in my walk,  
 That your wife's brother's cousin's name was  
 George —

And win on all points. Oh, you wince at  
 this?

You'd fain distinguish between gift and gift,  
 Washington's oracle and Sludge's itch  
 O' the elbow when at whist he ought to trump?  
 With Sludge it's too absurd? *Fine, draw the  
 line*

*Somewhere, but, sir, your somewhere is not mine!*

Bless us, I'm turning poet! It's time to end.  
 How you have drawn me out, sir! All I ask  
 Is — am I heir or not heir? If I'm he,  
 Then, sir, remember, that same personage  
 (To judge by what we read i' the newspaper)  
 Requires, beside one nobleman in gold  
 To carry up and down his coronet,  
 Another servant, probably a duke,  
 To hold egg-nog in readiness: why want  
 Attendance, sir, when helps in his father's  
 house  
 Abound, I'd like to know?

Enough of talk!  
 My fault is that I tell too plain a truth.  
 Why, which of those who say they disbelieve,  
 Your clever people, but has dreamed his  
 dream,  
 Caught his coincidence, stumbled on his fact  
 He can't explain, (he'll tell you smilingly,  
 Which he's too much of a philosopher  
 To count as supernatural, indeed.

So calls a puzzle and problem, proud of it:  
 Bidding you still be on your guard, you know,  
 Because one fact don't make a system stand,  
 Nor prove this an occasional escape  
 Of spirit beneath the matter: that's the way!  
 Just so wild Indians picked up, piece by piece,  
 The fact in California, the fine gold  
 That underlay the gravel — hoarded these,  
 But never made a system stand, nor dug!  
 So wise men hold out in each hollowed palm  
 A handful of experience, sparkling fact  
 They can't explain; and since their rest of life  
 Is all explainable, what proof in this?  
 Whereas I take the fact, the grain of gold,  
 And fling away the dirty rest of life,  
 And add this grain to the grain each fool has  
 found

O' the million other such philosophers, —  
 Till I see gold, all gold and only gold,  
 Truth questionless though unexplainable,  
 And the miraculous proved the commonplace!  
 The other fools believed in mud, no doubt —  
 Failed to know gold they saw: was that so  
 strange?

Are all men born to play Bach's fiddle-fugues,  
 "Time" with the foil in carte, jump their own  
 height,

Cut the mutton with the broadsword, skate a  
 five,

Make the red hazard with the cue, clip nails  
 While swimming, in five minutes row a mile,  
 Pull themselves three feet up with the left arm,  
 Do sums of fifty figures in their head,  
 And so on, by the scores of instances?

The Sludge with luck, who sees the spiritual  
 facts,

His fellows strive and fail to see, may rank  
 With these, and share the advantage.

Ay, but share  
 The drawback! Think it over by yourself;  
 I have not heart, sir, and the fire's gone gray.  
 Defect somewhere compensates for success,  
 Every one knows that. Oh, we're equals, sir!  
 The big-legged fellow has a little arm  
 And a less brain, though big legs win the race:  
 Do you suppose I 'scape the common lot?  
 Say, I was born with flesh so sensitive,  
 Soul so alert, that, practice helping both,  
 I guess what's going on outside the veil.  
 Just as a prisoned crane feels pairing-time  
 In the islands where his kind are, so must fall  
 To capering by himself some shiny night,  
 As if your back-yard were a plot of spice —  
 Thus am I 'ware o' the spirit-world: while  
 you,

Blind as a beetle that way, — for amends,  
 Why, you can double fist and floor me, sir!  
 Ride that hot hardmouthed horrid horse of  
 yours,

Laugh while it lightens, play with the great  
 dog,

Speak your mind though it vex some friend to  
 hear,

Never brag, never bluster, never blush, —  
 In short, you've pluck, when I'm a coward —  
 there!

I know it, I can't help it, — folly or no,



I'm paralyzed, my hand 's no more a hand,  
Nor my head a head, in danger: you can smile  
And change the pipe in your cheek. Your gift 's  
not mine.

Would you swap for mine? No! but you'd  
add my gift

To yours: I dare say! I too sigh at times,  
Wish I were stouter, could tell truth nor flinch,  
Kept cool when threatened, did not mind so  
much

Being dressed gayly, making strangers stare,  
Eating nice things; when I'd amuse myself,  
I shut my eyes and fancy in my brain,  
I'm — now the President, now Jenny Lind,  
Now Emerson, now the Benicia Boy —

With all the civilized world a-wondering  
And worshipping. I know it's folly and worse;  
I feel such tricks sap, honeycomb the soul,  
But I can't cure myself, — despond, despair,  
And then, hey, presto, there's a turn o' the  
wheel,

Under comes uppermost, fate makes full  
amends;

Sludge knows and sees and hears a hundred  
things

You all are blind to, — I've my taste of truth,  
Likewise my touch of falsehood, — vice no  
doubt,

But you've your vices also: I'm content.

What, sir? You won't shake hands? "Because  
I cheat!"

"You've found me out in cheating!" That's  
enough

To make an apostle swear! Why, when I  
cheat,

*Mean to cheat, do cheat, and am caught in the  
act,*

*Are you, or rather, am I sure o' the fact?*  
(There's verse again, but I'm inspired some-  
how.)

Well then I'm not sure! I may be, perhaps,  
Free as a babe from cheating: how it began,  
My gift, — no matter; what 't is got to be  
In the end now, that's the question; answer  
that!

Had I seen, perhaps, what hand was holding  
mine,

Leading me whither, I had died of fright:

So, I was made believe I led myself.

If I should lay a six-inch plank from roof

To roof, you would not cross the street, one step,  
Even at your mother's summons: but, being  
shrewd,

If I paste paper on each side the plank  
And swear 't is solid pavement, why, you'll  
cross

Humming a tune the while, in ignorance  
Beacon Street stretches a hundred feet below:  
I walked thus, took the paper-cheat for stone.

Some impulse made me set a thing o' the move  
Which, started once, ran really by itself;

Beer flows thus, suck the siphon; toss the kite,  
It takes the wind and floats of its own force.

Don't let truth's lump rot stagnant for the lack  
Of a timely helpful lie to leaven it!

Put a chalk-egg beneath the clucking hen,  
She'll lay a real one, laudably deceived.

Daily for weeks to come. I've told my lie,  
And seen truth follow, marvels none of mine;  
All was not cheating, sir, I'm positive!  
I don't know if I move your hand sometimes  
When the spontaneous writing spreads so far,  
If my knee lifts the table all that height,  
Why the inkstand don't fall off the desk a-ilt,  
Why the accordion plays a prettier waltz  
Than I can pick out on the pianoforte,  
Why I speak so much more than I intend,  
Describe so many things I never saw.  
I tell you, sir, in one sense, I believe  
Nothing at all, — that everybody can,  
Will, and does cheat: but in another sense  
I'm ready to believe my very self —  
That every cheat 's inspired, and every lie  
Quick with a germ of truth.

You ask perhaps

Why I should condescend to trick at all  
If I know a way without it? This is why!  
There's a strange secret sweet self-sacrifice  
In any desecration of one's soul  
To a worthy end, — is n't it Herodotus  
(I wish I could read Latin!) who describes  
The single gift o' the land's virginity,  
Demanded in those old Egyptian rites,  
(I've but a hazy notion — help me, sir!)  
For one purpose in the world, one day in a life,  
One hour in a day — thereafter, purity,  
And a veil thrown o'er the past forevermore!  
Well now, they understood a many things  
Down by Nile city, or wherever it was!  
I've always vowed, after the minute's lie,  
And the end's gain, — truth should be mine  
henceforth.

This goes to the root o' the matter, sir, — this  
plain

Plump fact: accept it and unlock with it  
The wards of many a puzzle!

Or, finally,

Why should I set so fine a gloss on things?  
What need I care? I cheat in self-defence.  
And there's my answer to a world of cheats!  
Cheat? To be sure, sir! What's the world  
worth else?

Who takes it as he finds, and thanks his stars?  
Don't it want trimming, turning, furbishing up  
And polishing over? Your so-styled great  
men,

Do they accept one truth as truth is found,  
Or try their skill at tinkering? What's your  
world?

Here are you born, who are, I'll say at once,  
Of the luckiest kind, whether in head and  
heart,

Body and soul, or all that helps them both.  
Well, now, look back: what faculty of yours  
Came to its full, had ample justice done

By growing when rain fell, biding its time,  
Solidifying growth when earth was dead,

Spiring up, broadening wide, in seasons due?  
Never! You shot up and frost nipped you off.

Settled to sleep when sunshine bade you sprout;  
One faculty thwarted its fellow: at the end,

All you boast is, "I had proved a topping tree  
In other climes," — yet this was the right clime

Had you foreknown the seasons. Young,  
 you 've force  
 Wasted like well-streams: old, — oh, then in-  
 deed,  
 Behold a labyrinth of hydraulic pipes  
 Through which you 'd play off wondrous water-  
 work;  
 Only, no water 's left to feed their play.  
 Young, — you 've a hope, an aim, a love: it 's  
 tossed  
 And crossed and lost: you struggle on, some  
 spark  
 Shut in your heart against the puffs around,  
 Through cold and pain; these in due time sub-  
 side,  
 Now then for age's triumph, the hoarded light  
 You mean to loose on the altered face of  
 things, —  
 Up with it on the tripod! It 's extinct.  
 Spend your life's remnant asking, which was  
 best,  
 Light smothered up that never peeped forth  
 once,  
 Or the cold cresset with full leave to shine?  
 Well, accept this too, — seek the fruit of it  
 Not in enjoyment, proved a dream on earth,  
 But knowledge, useful for a second chance,  
 Another life, — you 've lost this world — you 've  
 gained  
 Its knowledge for the next. — What knowledge,  
 sir,  
 Except that you know nothing? Nay, you  
 doubt  
 Whether 't were better have made you man or  
 brute,  
 If aught be true, if good and evil clash.  
 No foul, no fair, no inside, no outside,  
 There 's your world!

Give it me! I slap it brisk  
 With harlequin's pasteboard sceptre: what 's it  
 now?  
 Changed like a rock-flat, rough with rusty  
 weed,  
 At first wash-over o' the returning wave!  
 All the dry dead impracticable stuff  
 Starts into life and light again; this world  
 Pervaded by the influx from the next.  
 I cheat, and what 's the happy consequence?  
 You find full justice straightway dealt you out,  
 Each want supplied, each ignorance set at ease,  
 Each folly fooled. No life-long labor now  
 As the price of worse than nothing! No mere  
 film  
 Holding you chained in iron, as it seems,  
 Against the outstretch of your very arms  
 And legs! the sunshine moralists forbid!  
 What would you have? Just speak and, there,  
 you see!  
 You 're supplemented, made a whole at last,  
 Bacon advises, Shakespeare writes you songs,  
 And Mary Queen of Scots embraces you.  
 Thus it goes on, not quite like life perhaps,  
 But so near, that the very difference piques,  
 Shows that e'en better than this best will be —  
 This passing entertainment in a hut  
 Whose bare walls take your taste since, one  
 stage more,

And you arrive at the palace: all half real,  
 And you, to suit it, less than real beside,  
 In a dream, lethargic kind of death in life,  
 That helps the interchange of natures, flesh  
 Transfused by souls, and such souls! Oh, 't is  
 choice!  
 And if at whiles the bubble, blown too thin,  
 Seem nigh on bursting, — if you nearly see  
 The real world through the false, — what *do*  
 you see?  
 Is the old so ruined? You find you 're in a flock  
 O' the youthful, earnest, passionate — genius,  
 beauty,  
 Rank and wealth also, if you care for these:  
 And all depose their natural rights, hail you  
 (That 's me, sir) as their mate and yoke-fellow,  
 Participate in Sludgehood — nay, grow mine,  
 I veritably possess them — banish doubt,  
 And reticence and modesty alike!  
 Why, here 's the Golden Age, old Paradise  
 Or new Utopia! Here 's true life indeed,  
 And the world well won now, mine for the first  
 time!

And all this might be, may be, and with good  
 help  
 Of a little lying shall be: so, Sludge lies!  
 Why, he 's at worst your poet who sings how  
 Greeks  
 That never were, in Troy which never was,  
 Did this or the other impossible great thing!  
 He 's Lowell — it 's a world (you smile applause)  
 Of his own invention — wondrous Longfellow,  
 Surprising Hawthorne! Sludge does more than  
 they,  
 And acts the books they write: the more his  
 praise!

But why do I mount to poets? Take plain  
 prose —  
 Dealers in common sense, set these at work,  
 What can they do without their helpful lies?  
 Each states the law and fact and face o' the  
 thing  
 Just as he 'd have them, finds what he thinks  
 fit,  
 Is blind to what missuits him, just records  
 What makes his case out, quite ignores the rest.  
 It 's a History of the World, the Lizard Age,  
 The Early Indians, the Old Country War,  
 Jerome Napoleon, whatsoever you please,  
 All as the author wants it. Such a scribe  
 You pay and praise for putting life in stones,  
 Fire into fog, making the past your world.  
 There 's plenty of "How did you contrive to  
 grasp  
 The thread which led you through this laby-  
 rinth?  
 How build such solid fabric out of air?  
 How on so slight foundation found this tale,  
 Biography, narrative?" or, in other words,  
 "How many lies did it require to make  
 The portly truth you here present us with?"  
 "Oh," quoth the penman, purring at your  
 praise,  
 " 'T is fancy all; no particle of fact:  
 I was poor and threadbare when I wrote that  
 book

'Bliss in the Golden City.' I, at Thebes?  
 We writers paint out of our heads, you see!'  
 "— Ah, the more wonderful the gift in you,  
 The more creativeness and godlike craft!"  
 But I, do I present you with my piece,  
 It's "What, Sludge? When my sainted mother spoke

The verses Lady Jane Grey last composed  
 About the rosy bower in the seventh heaven  
 Where she and Queen Elizabeth keep house, —  
 You made the raps? 'Twas your invention that?

Cur, slave, and devil!" — eight fingers and two thumbs

Stuck in my throat!

Well, if the marks seem gone,  
 'Tis because stiffish cocktail, taken in time,  
 Is better for a bruise than arnica.

There, sir! I bear no malice: 'tis n't in me.  
 I know I acted wrongly: still, I've tried  
 What I could say in my excuse, — to show  
 The devil's not all devil . . . I don't pretend  
 He's angel, much less such a gentleman  
 As you, sir! And I've lost you, lost myself,  
 Lost all-l-l-l . . .

No — are you in earnest, sir?

Oh, yours, sir, is an angel's part! I know  
 What prejudice prompts, and what's the common course

Men take to soothe their ruffled self-conceit:  
 Only you rise superior to it all!

No, sir, it don't hurt much; it's speaking long

That makes me choke a little: the marks will go!

What? Twenty V-notes more, and outfit too,  
 And not a word to Greeley? One — one kiss  
 O' the hand that saves me! You'll not let me speak,

I well know, and I've lost the right, too true!  
 But I must say, sir, if She hears (she does)

Your sainted . . . Well, sir, — be it so! That's, I think,

My bedroom candle. Good-night! Bl-l-less you, sir!

R-r-r, you brute-beast and blackguard! Cowardly scamp!

I only wish I dared burn down the house  
 And spoil your sniggering! Oh, what, you're the man?

You're satisfied at last? You've found out Sludge?

We'll see that presently: my turn, sir, next!  
 I too can tell my story: brute, — do you hear? —

You throttled your sainted mother, that old hag,

In just such a fit of passion: no, it was . . .  
 To get this house of hers, and many a note  
 Like these . . . I'll pocket them, however . . . five,

Ten, fifteen . . . ay, you gave her throat the twist,

Or else you poisoned her! Confound the cuss!  
 Where was my head? I ought to have prophesied

He'll die in a year and join her: that's the way.

I don't know where my head is: what had I done?

How did it all go? I said he poisoned her,  
 And hoped he'd have grace given him to repent,  
 Whereon he picked this quarrel, bullied me  
 And called me cheat: I thrashed him, — who could help?

He howled for mercy, prayed me on his knees  
 To cut and run and save him from disgrace:

I do so, and once off, he slanders me.

An end of him! Begin elsewhere anew!

Boston's a hole, the herring-pond is wide,  
 V-notes are something, liberty still more.

Beside, is he the only fool in the world?

#### APPARENT FAILURE

"We shall soon lose a celebrated building."

*Paris Newspaper*

No, for I'll save it! Seven years since,

I passed through Paris, stopped a day  
 To see the baptism of your Prince;

Saw, made my bow, and went my way:  
 Walking the heat and headache off,

I took the Seine-side, you surmise,  
 Thought of the Congress, Gortschakoff,

Cavour's appeal and Buol's replies,  
 So sauntered till — what met my eyes?

Only the Doric little Morgue!

The dead-house where you show your drowned:

Petrarch's Vauluse makes proud the Sorgue,

Your Morgue has made the Seine renowned.

One pays one's debt in such a case;

I plucked up heart and entered, — stalked,  
 Keeping a tolerable face

Compared with some whose cheeks were chalked:

Let them: No Briton's to be balked!

First came the silent gazers; next,

A screen of glass, we're thankful for;

Last, the sight's self, the sermon's text,

The three men who did most abhor

Their life in Paris yesterday,

So killed themselves: and now, enthroned

Each on his copper couch, they lay

Fronting me, waiting to be owned.

I thought, and think, their sin's atoned.

Poor men, God made, and all for that!

The reverence struck me; o'er each head

Religiously was hung its hat,

Each coat dripped by the owner's bed,

Sacred from touch: each had his berth,

His bounds, his proper place of rest,

Who last night tenanted on earth

Some arch, where twelve such slept abreast, —

Unless the plain asphalt seemed best.



How did it happen, my poor boy ?  
 You wanted to be Buonaparte  
 And have the Tuileries for toy,  
 And could not, so it broke your heart ?  
 You, old one by his side, I judge,  
 Were, red as blood, a socialist,  
 A leveller ! Does the Empire grudge  
 You 've gained what no Republic missed ?  
 Be quiet, and unclench your fist !

And this — why, he was red in vain,  
 Or black, — poor fellow that is blue !  
 What fancy was it, turned your brain ?  
 Oh, women were the prize for you !  
 Money gets women, cards and dice  
 Get money, and ill-luck gets just  
 The copper couch and one clear nice  
 Cool squirt of water o'er your bust,  
 The right thing to extinguish lust !

It 's wiser being good than bad ;  
 It 's safer being meek than fierce :  
 It 's fitter being sane than mad.  
 My own hope is, a sun will pierce  
 The thickest cloud earth ever stretched ;  
 That, after Last, returns the First,  
 Though a wide compass round be fetched ;  
 That what began best, can't end worst,  
 Nor what God blessed once, prove accurst.

## EPILOGUE

FIRST SPEAKER, *as David*

On the first of the Feast of Feasts,  
 The Dedication Day,  
 When the Levites joined the Priests  
 At the Altar in robed array,  
 Gave signal to sound and say, —

When the thousands, rear and van,  
 Swarming with one accord,  
 Became as a single man  
 (Look, gesture, thought and word)  
 In praising and thanking the Lord, —

When the singers lift up their voice,  
 And the trumpets made endeavor,  
 Sounding, " In God rejoice !"  
 Saying, " In Him rejoice  
 Whose mercy endureth forever !" —

Then the Temple filled with a cloud,  
 Even the House of the Lord ;  
 Porch bent and pillar bowed :  
 For the presence of the Lord,  
 In the glory of his cloud,  
 Had filled the House of the Lord.

SECOND SPEAKER, *as Renan*

Gone now ! All gone across the dark so far,  
 Sharpening fast, shuddering ever, shutting  
 still,  
 Dwindling into the distance, dies that star  
 Which came, stood, opened once ! We gazed  
 our fill

With upturned faces on as real a Face  
 That, stooping from grave music and mild  
 fire,  
 Took in our homage, made a visible place  
 Through many a depth of glory, gyre on  
 gyre,  
 For the dim human tribute. Was this true ?  
 Could man indeed avail, mere praise of his,  
 To help by rapture God's own rapture too,  
 Thrill with a heart's red tinge that pure pale  
 bliss ?  
 Why did it end ? Who failed to beat the  
 breast,  
 And shriek, and throw the arms protesting  
 wide,  
 When a first shadow showed the star addressed  
 Itself to motion, and on either side  
 The rims contracted as the rays retired ;  
 The music, like a fountain's sickening pulse,  
 Subsided on itself ; awhile transpired  
 Some vestige of a Face no pangs convulse,  
 No prayers retard ; then even this was gone,  
 Lost in the night at last. We, lone and  
 left

Silent through centuries, ever and anon  
 Venture to probe again the vault bereft  
 Of all now save the lesser lights, a mist  
 Of multitudinous points, yet suns, men say —  
 And this leaps ruby, this lurks amethyst,  
 But where may hide what came and loved  
 our clay ?

How shall the sage detect in yon expanse  
 The star which chose to stoop and stay for us ?  
 Unroll the records ! Hailed ye such advance  
 Indeed, and did your hope vanish thus ?  
 Watchers of twilight, is the worst averred ?  
 We shall not look up, know ourselves are  
 seen,

Speak, and be sure that we again are heard,  
 Acting or suffering, have the disk's serene  
 Reflect our life, absorb an earthly flame,  
 Nor doubt that, were mankind inert and  
 numb,

Its core had never crimsoned all the same,  
 Nor, missing ours, its music fallen dumb ?  
 Oh, dread succession to a dizzy post,  
 Sad sway of sceptre whose mere touch ap-  
 palls,  
 Ghastly dethronement, cursed by those the  
 most

On whose repugnant brow the crown next falls !

THIRD SPEAKER

Witless alike of will and way divine,  
 How heaven's high with earth's low should  
 intertwine !  
 Friends, I have seen through your eyes : now  
 use mine !

Take the least man of all mankind, as I ;  
 Look at his head and heart, find how and  
 why  
 He differs from his fellows utterly :

Then, like me, watch when nature by degrees  
 Grows alive round him, as in Arctic seas  
 (They said of old) the instinctive water flees

Toward some elected point of central rock,  
As though, for its sake only, roamed the  
flock  
Of waves about the waste : awhile they mock

With radiance caught for the occasion, — hues  
Of blackest hell now, now such reds and blues  
As only heaven could fitly interfuse, —

The mimic monarch of the whirlpool, king  
O' the current for a minute : then they wring  
Up by the roots and oversweep the thing,

And hasten off, to play again elsewhere  
The same part, choose another peak as bare,  
They find and flatter, feast and finish there.

When you see what I tell you, — nature dance  
About each man of us, retire, advance,  
As though the pageant's end were to enhance

His worth, and — once the life, his product,  
gained —  
Roll away elsewhere, keep the strife sustained,  
And show thus real, a thing the North but  
feigned —

When you acknowledge that one world could do  
All the diverse work, old yet ever new,  
Divide us, each from other, me from you, —

Why, where 's the need of Temple, when the  
walls  
O' the world are that ? What use of swells and  
falls  
From Levites' choir, Priests' cries, and trumpet-  
calls ?

That one Face, far from vanish, rather grows,  
Or decomposes but to recompose,  
Become my universe that feels and knows !

## THE RING AND THE BOOK

THIS, the most long sustained of Browning's writings, was published originally in four volumes, successively in November, December, 1868, January, February, 1869. Mrs. Orr has given so circumstantial an account of the inception of the work, that the main facts are here reproduced from her *Hand-Book*.

"Mr. Browning was strolling one day through a square in Florence, the Piazza San Lorenzo, which is a standing market for old clothes, old furniture, and old curiosities of every kind, when a parchment-covered book attracted his eye, from amidst the artistic or nondescript rubbish of one of the stalls. It was the record of a murder which had taken place in Rome, and bore inside it an inscription [in Latin] which Mr. Browning transcribes [on p. 415].

"The book proved, on examination, to contain the whole history of the case, as carried on in writing, after the fashion of those days :

### I

#### THE RING AND THE BOOK

Do you see this Ring ?

'T is Rome-work, made to match  
(By Castellani's imitative craft)  
Etrurian circlets found, some happy morn,  
After a dropping April ; found alive  
Spark-like 'mid unearthed slope-side figtree-  
roots

That roof old tombs at Chiusi : soft, you see,  
Yet crisp as jewel-cutting. There's one trick,  
(Craftsmen instruct me) one approved device  
And but one, fits such slivers of pure gold

pleadings and counter-pleadings, the depositions of defendants and witnesses ; manuscript letters announcing the execution of the murderer, and the 'instrument of the Definitive Sentence' which established the perfect innocence of the murdered wife : these various documents having been collected and bound together by some person interested in the trial, possibly the very Cencini, friend of the Franceschini family, to whom the manuscript letters are addressed. Mr. Browning bought the whole for the value of eightpence, and it became the raw material of what appeared four years later as *The Ring and the Book*."

In another place Mrs. Orr states that the subject was conceived about four years before the poet took it actually in hand, and that, before he wrote it himself, he offered the theme for prose treatment to Miss Ogle, the author of *A Lost Love*.

As this was, — such mere oozings from the mine,  
Virgin as oval tawny pendent tear  
At beehive-edge when ripened combs o'erflow, —  
To bear the file's tooth and the hammer's tap :  
Since hammer needs must widen out the round,  
And file emboss it fine with lily-flowers,  
Ere the stuff grow a ring-thing right to wear.  
That trick is, the artificer melts up wax  
With honey, so to speak ; he mingles gold  
With gold's alloy, and, duly tempering both,  
Effects a manageable mass, then works :  
But his work ended, once the thing a ring,  
Oh, there 's repristination ! Just a spirt  
O' the proper fiery acid o'er its face,  
And forth the alloy unfastened flies in fume ;

While, self-sufficient now, the shape remains,  
The rondure brave, the lilled loveliness,  
Gold as it was, is, shall be evermore :  
Prime nature with an added artistry —  
No earat lost, and you have gained a ring.  
What of it ? 'T is a figure, a symbol, say ;  
A thing's sign : now for the thing signified.

Do you see this square old yellow Book, I  
toss

I' the air, and catch again, and twirl about  
By the crumpled vellum covers, — pure crude  
fact

Secreted from man's life when hearts beat hard,  
And brains, high-blooded, ticked two centuries  
since ?

Examine it yourselves ! I found this book,  
Gave a *lira* for it, eightpence English just,  
(Mark the predestination !) when a Hand,  
Always above my shoulder, pushed me once,  
One day still fierce 'mid many a day struck  
calm,

Across a Square in Florence, crammed with  
booths,

Buzzing and blaze, noontide and market-time,  
Toward Baccio's marble, — ay, the basement-  
ledge

O' the pedestal where sits and menaces  
John of the Black Bands with the upright spear,  
'Twixt palace and church, — Riccardi where  
they lived,

His race, and San Lorenzo where they lie.  
This book, — precisely on that palace-step  
Which, meant for lounging knaves o' the Me-  
dici,

Now serves re-venders to display their ware, —  
'Mongst odds and ends of ravage, picture-frames  
White through the worn gilt, mirror-sconces  
chipped,

Bronze angel-heads once knobs attached to  
chests

(Handled when ancient dames chose forth bro-  
cade),

Modern chalk drawings, studies from the nude,  
Samples of stone, jet, breccia, porphyry

Polished and rough, sundry amazing busts  
In baked earth (broken, Providence be praised !)

A wreck of tapestry, proudly-purposed web  
When reds and blues were indeed red and blue,

Now offered as a mat to save bare feet  
(Since carpets constitute a cruel cost)

Treading the chill scagliola bedward ; then  
A pile of brown-etched prints, two *crazie* each,

Stopped by a conch a-top from fluttering forth  
— Sowing the Square with works of one and  
the same

Master, the imaginative Sienese  
Great in the scenic backgrounds — (name and  
fame

None of you know, nor does he fare the worse :)  
From these . . . Oh, with a Lionard going cheap

If it should prove, as promised, that Joconde  
Whereof a copy contents the Louvre ! — these

I picked this book from. Five compeers in  
flank

Stood left and right of it as tempting more —  
A dogs-eared Spicilegium, the fond tale

O' the Frail One of the Flower, by young Du-  
mas,

Vulgarized Horace for the use of schools,  
The Life, Death, Miracles of Saint Somebody,  
Saint Somebody Else, his Miracles, Death and  
Life, —

With this, one glance at the lettered back of  
which,

And "Stall I" cried I : a *lira* made it mine.

Here it is, this I toss and take again ;

Small-quarto size, part print, part manuscript :  
A book in shape but, really, pure crude fact

Secreted from man's life when hearts beat  
hard,

And brains, high-blooded, ticked two centuries  
since.

Give it me back ! The thing's restorative  
I' the touch and sight.

That memorable day,  
(June was the month, Lorenzo named the  
Square),

I leaned a little and overlooked my prize  
By the low railing round the fountain-source

Close to the statue, where a step descends :  
While clinked the cans of copper, as stooped  
and rose

Thick-ankled girls who brimmed them, and  
made place

For marketmen glad to pitch basket down,  
Dip a broad melon-leaf that holds the wet,

And whisk their faded fresh. And on I read  
Presently, though my path grew perilous

Between the outspread straw-work, piles of  
plait

Soon to be flapping, each o'er two black eyes  
And swathe of Tuscan hair, on festas fine :

Through fire-irons, tribes of tongs, shovels in  
sheaves,

Skeleton bedsteads, wardrobe-drawers agape,  
Rows of tall slim brass lamps with dangling  
gear, —

And worse, east clothes a-sweetening in the  
sun :

None of them took my eye from off my prize.  
Still read I on, from written title-page

To written index, on, through street and street.  
At the Strozzi, at the Pillar, at the Bridge ;

Till, by the time I stood at home again  
In Casa Guidi by Felice Church,

Under the doorway where the black begins  
With the first stone-slab of the staircase cold,

I had mastered the contents, knew the whole  
truth

Gathered together, bound up in this book,  
Print three-fifths, written supplement the rest.

"*Romana Homicidiorum*" — nay,  
Better translate — "A Roman murder-case :

Position of the entire criminal cause  
Of Guido Franceschini, nobleman,

With certain Four the cutthroats in his pay,  
Tried, all five, and found guilty and put to  
death

By heading or hanging as befitted ranks,  
At Rome on February Twenty Two,

Since our salvation Sixteen Ninety Eight :



Wherein it is disputed if, and when,  
Husbands may kill adulterous wives, yet 'scape  
The customary forfeit."

Word for word,

So ran the title-page: murder, or else  
Legitimate punishment of the other crime,  
Accounted punishment by mistake, — just that  
And no more, in a Latin cramp enough  
When the law had her eloquence to launch,  
But interfilleted with Italian streaks  
When testimony stooped to mother-tongue, —  
That, was this old square yellow book about.

Now, as the ingot, ere the ring was forged,  
Lay gold, (beseech you, hold that figure fast!)  
So, in this book lay absolutely truth,  
Fanciless fact, the documents indeed,  
Primary lawyer-pleadings for, against,  
The aforesaid Five; real summed-up circum-  
stance

Adduced in proof of these on either side,  
Put forth and printed, as the practice was,  
At Rome, in the Apostolic Chamber's type,  
And so submitted to the eye of the Court  
Presided over by His Reverence  
Rome's Governor and Criminal Judge, — the  
trial

Itself, to all intents, being then as now  
Here in the book and nowise out of it;  
Seeing, there properly was no judgment-bar,  
No bringing of accuser and accused,  
And whoso judged both parties, face to face  
Before some court, as we conceive of courts.  
There was a Hall of Justice; that came last:  
For Justice had a chamber by the hall  
Where she took evidence first, summed up the  
same,

Then sent accuser and accused alike,  
In person of the advocate of each,  
To weigh its worth, thereby arrange, array  
The battle. 'Twas the so-styled Fise began,  
Pleaded (and since he only spoke in print  
The printed voice of him lives now as then)  
The public Prosecutor — "Murder's proved;  
With five . . . what we call qualities of bad,  
Worse, worst, and yet worse still, and still  
worse yet;

Crest over crest crowning the cockatrice,  
That beggar hell's regalia to enrich  
Count Guido Franceschini: punish him!"  
Thus was the paper put before the court  
In the next stage, (no noisy work at all.)  
To study at ease. In due time like reply  
Came from the so-styled Patron of the Poor,  
Official mouthpiece of the five accused  
Too poor to fee a better, — Guido's luck  
Or else his fellows' — which, I hardly know, —  
An outbreak as of wonder at the world,  
A fury-fit of outraged innocence,  
A passion of betrayed simplicity:

"Punish Count Guido? For what crime, what  
hint

O' the color of a crime, inform us first!  
Reward him rather! Recognize, we say,  
In the deed done, a righteous judgment dealt!  
All conscience and all courage, — there's our  
Count

Charactered in a word; and, what's more  
strange,

He had companionship in privilege,  
Found four courageous conscientious friends:  
Absolve, applaud all five, as props of law,  
Sustainers of society! — perchance  
A trifle over-hasty with the hand  
To hold her tottering ark, had tumbled else;  
But that's a splendid fault whereat we wink.  
Wishing your cold correctness sparkled so!"  
Thus paper second followed paper first,  
Thus did the two join issue — nay, the four,  
Each pleader having an adjunct. "True, he  
killed

— So to speak — in a certain sort — his wife,  
But laudably, since thus it happened!" quoth  
one:

Whereat, more witness and the case postponed.  
"Thus it happened not, since thus he did the  
deed,

And proved himself thereby portentousest  
Of cutthroats and a prodigy of crime,  
As the woman that he slaughtered was a  
saint,

Martyr and miracle!" quoth the other to  
match:

Again, more witness, and the case postponed.  
"A miracle, ay — of lust and impudence;  
Hear my new reasons!" interposed the first:  
"— Coupled with more of mine!" pursued his  
peer.

"Beside, the precedents, the authorities!"  
From both at once a cry with an echo, that!  
That was a firebrand at each fox's tail  
Unleashed in a cornfield: soon spread flare  
enough,

As hurtled thither and there heaped them-  
selves

From earth's four corners, all authority  
And precedent for putting wives to death,  
Or letting wives live, sinful as they seem.  
How legislated, now, in this respect,  
Solon and his Athenians? Quote the code  
Of Romulus and Rome! Justinian speak!  
Nor modern Baldo, Bartolo be dumb!  
The Roman voice was potent, plentiful;  
*Cornelia de Sicariis* hurried to help  
*Pompeia de Parricidiis*; *Julia de*  
Something-or-other jostled *Lex* this-and-that;  
King Solomon confirmed Apostle Paul:  
That nice decision of Dolabella, eh?  
That pregnant instance of Theodoric, oh!  
Down to that choice example *Ælian* gives  
(An instance I find much insisted on)  
Of the elephant who, brute-beast though he  
were,

Yet understood and punished on the spot  
His master's naughty spouse and faithless  
friend;

A true tale which has edified each child,  
Much more shall flourish favored by our court!  
Pages of proof this way, and that way proof,  
And always — once again the case postponed.

Thus wrangled, brangled, jangled they a  
month,

— Only on paper, pleadings all in print,  
Nor ever was, except if the brains of men

More noise by word of mouth than you hear  
 now —  
 Till the court cut all short with "Judged, your  
 cause.  
 Receive our sentence! Praise God! We pro-  
 nounce  
 Count Guido devilish and damnable:  
 His wife Pompilia in thought, word and deed,  
 Was perfect pure, he murdered her for that:  
 As for the Four who helped the One, all Five —  
 Why, let employer and hirelings share alike  
 In guilt and guilt's reward, the death their  
 due!"

So was the trial at end, do you suppose?  
 "Guilty you find him, death you doom him to?  
 Ay, were not Guido, more than needs, a priest,  
 Priest and to spare!" — this was a shot re-  
 served;

I learn this from epistles which begin  
 Here where the print ends, — see the pen and  
 ink

Of the advocate, the ready at a pinch! —  
 "My client boasts the clerly privilege,  
 Has taken minor orders many enough,  
 Shows still sufficient chrism upon his pate  
 To neutralize a blood-stain: *presbyter*,  
*Primæ tonsuræ*, *subdiaconus*,  
*Sacerdos*, so he slips from underneath  
 Your power, the temporal, slides inside the  
 robe

Of mother Church: to her we make appeal  
 By the Pope, the Church's head!"

A parlous plea,

Put in with noticeable effect, it seems;  
 "Since straight," — resumes the zealous orator,  
 Making a friend acquainted with the facts, —  
 "Once the word 'clericality' let fall,  
 Procedure stopped and freer breath was drawn  
 By all considerate and responsible Rome."  
 Quality took the decent part, of course;  
 Held by the husband, who was noble too:  
 Or, for the matter of that, a churl would side  
 With too-refined susceptibility,  
 And honor which, tender in the extreme,  
 Stung to the quick, must roughly right itself  
 At all risks, not sit still and whine for law  
 As a Jew would, if you squeezed him to the  
 wall,

Brisk-trotting through the Ghetto. Nay, it  
 seems,

Even the Emperor's Envoy had his say  
 To say on the subject; might not see, un-  
 moved,

Civility menaced throughout Christendom  
 By too harsh measure dealt her champion here.  
 Lastly, what made all safe, the Pope was kind,  
 From his youth up, reluctant to take life,  
 If mercy might be just and yet show grace;  
 Much more unlikely then, in extreme age,  
 To take a life the general sense bade spare.  
 'T was plain that Guido would go scatheless yet.

But human promise, oh, how short of shine!  
 How topple down the piles of hope we rear!  
 How history proves . . . nay, read Herodotus!  
 Suddenly starting from a nap, as it were,

A dog-sleep with one shut, one open orb,  
 Cried the Pope's great self, — Innocent by  
 name

And nature too, and eighty-six years old,  
 Antonio Pignatelli of Naples, Pope  
 Who had trod many lands, known many deeds,  
 Probed many hearts, beginning with his own,  
 And now was far in readiness for God, —

'T was he who first bade leave those souls in  
 peace,

Those Jansenists, re-nicknamed Molinists,  
 ('Gainst whom the cry went, like a frowsy tune,  
 Tickling men's ears — the sect for a quarter of  
 an hour

I' the teeth of the world which, clown-like,  
 loves to chew

Be it but a straw 'twixt work and whistling-  
 while,

Taste some vituperation, bite away,  
 Whether at marjoram-sprig or garlic-clove,  
 Aught it may sport with, spoil, and then spit  
 forth.)

"Leave them alone," bade he, "those Moli-  
 nists!"

Who may have other light than we perceive,  
 Or why is it the whole world hates them thus?"  
 Also he peeled off that last scandal-rag  
 Of Nepotism; and so observed the poor  
 That men would merrily say, "Halt, deaf and  
 blind,

Who feed on fat things, leave the master's self  
 To gather up the fragments of his feast,  
 These be the nephews of Pope Innocent! —  
 His own meal costs but five carlines a day,  
 Poor-priest's allowance, for he claims no more."  
 — He cried of a sudden, this great good old  
 Pope,

When they appealed in last resort to him,  
 "I have mastered the whole matter: I nothing  
 doubt.

Though Guido stood forth priest from head to  
 heel,

Instead of, as alleged, a piece of one, —  
 And further, were he, from the tonsured scalp  
 To the sandaled sole of him, my son and  
 Christ's,

Instead of touching us by finger-tip  
 As you assert, and pressing up so close  
 Only to set a blood-smutch on our robe, —  
 I and Christ would renounce all right in him.  
 Am I not Pope, and presently to die,  
 And busied how to render my account,  
 And shall I wait a day ere I decide  
 On doing or not doing justice here?  
 Cut off his head to-morrow by this time,  
 Hang up his four mates, two on either hand,  
 And end one business more!"

So said, so done —

Rather so writ, for the old Pope bade this,  
 I find, with his particular chirograph,  
 His own no such infirm hand, Friday night;  
 And next day, February Twenty Two,  
 Since our salvation Sixteen Ninety Eight,  
 — Not at the proper head-and-hanging-place  
 On bridge-foot close by Castle Angelo,  
 Where custom somewhat staled the spectacle,  
 ('T was not so well i' the way of Rome, beside,

The noble Rome, the Rome of Guido's rank)  
But at the city's newer gayer end, —  
The cavalcading promenading place  
Beside the gate and opposite the church  
Under the Pincian gardens green with Spring,  
'Neath the obelisk 'twixt the fountains in the  
Square,

Did Guido and his fellows find their fate,  
All Rome for witness, and — my writer adds —  
Remonstrant in its universal grief,  
Since Guido had the suffrage of all Rome.

This is the bookful; thus far take the truth,  
The untempered gold, the fact untampered  
with,

The mere ring-metal ere the ring be made!  
And what has hitherto come of it? Who pre-  
serves

The memory of this Guido, and his wife  
Pompilia, more than Ademollo's name,  
The etcher of those prints, two *crazie* each,  
Saved by a stone from snowing broad the  
Square

With scenic backgrounds? Was this truth of  
force?

Able to take its own part as truth should,  
Sufficient, self-sustaining? Why, if so —  
Yonder 's a fire, into it goes my book,  
As who shall say me nay, and what the loss?  
You know the tale already: I may ask,  
Rather than think to tell you, more thereof, —  
Ask you not merely who were he and she,  
Husband and wife, what manner of mankind,  
But how you hold concerning this and that  
Other yet-unnamed actor in the piece.  
The young frank handsome courtly Canon, now,  
The priest, declared the lover of the wife,  
He who, no question, did elope with her,  
For certain brings the tragedy about,  
Giuseppe Caponsacchi: — his strange course  
I' the matter, was it right or wrong or both?  
Then the old couple, slaughtered with the wife  
By the husband as accomplices in crime,  
Those Comparini, Pietro and his spouse, —  
What say you to the right or wrong of that,  
When, at a known name whispered through the  
door

Of a lone villa on a Christmas night,  
It opened that the joyous hearts inside  
Might welcome as it were an angel-guest  
Come in Christ's name to knock and enter, sup  
And satisfy the loving ones he saved;  
And so did welcome devils and their death?  
I have been silent on that circumstance  
Although the couple passed for close of kin  
To wife and husband, were by some accounts  
Pompilia's very parents: you know best.  
Also that infant the great joy was for,  
That Gaetano, the wife's two-weeks' babe,  
The husband's first-born child, his son and heir,  
Whose birth and being turned his night to  
day —

Why must the father kill the mother thus  
Because she bore his son and saved himself?

Well, British Public, ye who like me not,  
(God love you!) and will have your proper  
laugh

At the dark question, laugh it! I laugh first.  
Truth must prevail, the proverb vows; and  
truth

— Here is it all i' the book at last, as first  
There it was all i' the heads and hearts of  
Rome

Gentle and simple, never to fall nor fade  
Nor be forgotten. Yet, a little while,  
The passage of a century or so,  
Decads thrice five, and here's time paid his  
tax,

Oblivion gone home with her harvesting,  
And all left smooth again as scythe could  
shave.

Far from beginning with you London folk,  
I took my book to Rome first, tried truth's  
power

On likely people. "Have you met such  
names?

Is a tradition extant of such facts?

Your law-courts stand, your records frown  
a-row:

What if I rove and rummage?" — "Why,  
you'll waste

Your pains and end as wise as you began!"  
Every one snickered: "names and facts thus  
old

Are newer much than Europe news we find  
Down in to-day's *Diario*. Records, quotha?  
Why, the French burned them, what else do  
the French?

The rap-and-rending nation! And it tells  
Against the Church, no doubt, — another gird  
At the Temporality, your Trial, of course?"  
— "Quite otherwise this time," submitted I;  
"Clean for the Church and dead against the  
world,

The flesh and the devil, does it tell for once."  
— "The rarer and the happier! All the same,  
Content you with your treasure of a book,  
And waive what's wanting! Take a friend's  
advice!

It's not the custom of the country. Mend  
Your ways indeed and we may stretch a point:  
Go get you manned by Manning and new-  
manned

By Newman and, mayhap, wise-manned to boot  
By Wiseman, and we'll see or else we won't!  
Thanks meantime for the story, long and strong  
A pretty piece of narrative enough,  
Which scarce ought so to drop out, one would  
think,

From the more curious annals of our kind.  
Do you tell the story, now, in off-hand style,  
Straight from the book? Or simply here and  
there,

(The while you vault it through the loose and  
large)

Hang to a hint? Or is there book at all,  
And don't you deal in poetry, make-believe,  
And the white lies it sounds like?"

Yes and no!  
From the book, yes; thence bit by bit I dug  
The lingot truth, that memorable day,  
Assayed and knew my piecemeal gain was  
gold,—

Yes; but from something else surpassing that,



Something of mine which, mixed up with the  
mass,  
Made it bear hammer and be firm to file.  
Fancy with fact is just one fact the more ;  
To wit, that fancy has informed, transpierced,  
Thrilled and so thrown fast the facts else free,  
As right through ring and ring runs the djereed  
And binds the loose, one bar without a break.  
I fused my live soul and that inert stuff,  
Before attempting smithcraft, on the night  
After the day when — truth thus grasped and  
gained —  
The book was shut and done with and laid by  
On the cream-colored massive agate, broad  
'Neath the twin cherubs in the tarnished frame  
O' the mirror, tall thence to the ceiling-top.  
And from the reading, and that slab I leant  
My elbow on, the while I read and read,  
I turned, to free myself and find the world,  
And stepped out on the narrow terrace, built  
Over the street and opposite the church,  
And paced its lozenge-brickwork sprinkled cool ;  
Because Felice-church-side stretched, aglow  
Through each square window fringed for fes-  
tival,  
Whence came the clear voice of the cloistered  
ones  
Chanting a chant made for midsummer nights —  
I know not what particular praise of God,  
It always came and went with June. Beneath  
I' the street, quick shown by openings of the  
sky  
When flame fell silently from cloud to cloud,  
Richer than that gold snow Jove rained on  
Rhodes,  
The townsmen walked by twos and threes, and  
talked,  
Drinking the blackness in default of air —  
A busy human sense beneath my feet :  
While in and out the terrace-plants, and round  
One branch of tall datura, waxed and waned  
The lamp-fly lured there, wanting the white  
flower.  
Over the roof o' the lighted church I looked  
A bowshot to the street's end, north away  
Out of the Roman gate to the Roman road  
By the river, till I felt the Apennine.  
And there would lie Arezzo, the man's town,  
The woman's trap and cage and torture-place,  
Also the stage where the priest played his part,  
A spectacle for angels, — ay, indeed,  
There lay Arezzo ! Farther then I fared,  
Feeling my way on through the hot and dense,  
Romeward, until I found the wayside inn  
By Castelnovo's few mean hut-like homes  
Huddled together on the hill-foot bleak,  
Bare, broken only by that tree or two  
Against the sudden bloody splendor poured  
Cursewise in day's departure by the sun  
O'er the low house-roof of that squalid inn  
Where they three, for the first time and the  
last,  
Husband and wife and priest, met face to face.  
Whence I went on again, the end was near,  
Step by step, missing none and marking all,  
Till Rome itself, the ghastly goal, I reached.  
Why, all the while, — how could it otherwise ? —  
The life in me abolished the death of things,

Deep calling unto deep : as then and there  
Acted itself over again once more  
The tragic piece. I saw with my own eyes  
In Florence as I trod the terrace, breathed  
The beauty and the fearfulness of night,  
How it had run, this round from Rome to  
Rome —  
Because, you are to know, they lived at Rome,  
Pompilia's parents, as they thought themselves,  
Two poor ignoble hearts who did their best  
Part God's way, part the other way than God's,  
To somehow make a shift and scramble through  
The world's mud, careless if it splashed and  
spoiled,  
Provided they might so hold high, keep clean  
Their child's soul, one soul white enough for  
three,  
And lift it to whatever star should stoop,  
What possible sphere of purer life than theirs  
Should come in aid of whiteness hard to save.  
I saw the star stoop, that they strained to touch,  
And did touch and depose their treasure on,  
As Guido Franceschini took away  
Pompilia to be his forevermore,  
While they sang " Now let us depart in peace,  
Having beheld thy glory, Guido's wife ! "  
I saw the star supposed, but fog o' the fen,  
Gilded star-fashion by a glint from hell ;  
Having been heaved up, haled on its gross way,  
By hands unguessed before, invisible help  
From a dark brotherhood, and specially  
Two obscure goblin creatures, fox-faced this,  
Cat-clawed the other, called his next of kin  
By Guido the main monster, — cloaked and  
caped,  
Making as they were priests, to mock God  
more, —  
Abate Paul, Canon Girolamo.  
These who had rolled the starlike pest to Rome  
And stationed it to suck up and absorb  
The sweetness of Pompilia, rolled again  
That bloated bubble, with her soul inside,  
Back to Arezzo and a palace there —  
Or say, a fissure in the honest earth  
Whence long ago had curled the vapor first,  
Blown big by nether fires to appall day :  
It touched home, broke, and blasted far and  
wide.  
I saw the cheated couple find the cheat  
And guess what foul rite they were captured  
for, —  
Too fain to follow over hill and dale  
That child of theirs caught up thus in the cloud  
And carried by the Prince o' the Power of the  
Air  
Whither he would, to wilderness or sea.  
I saw them, in the potency of fear,  
Break somehow through the satyr-family  
(For a gray mother with a monkey-mien,  
Mopping and mowing, was apparent too,  
As, confident of capture, all took hands  
And danced about the captives in a ring)  
— Saw them break through, breathe safe, at  
Rome again,  
Saved by the selfish instinct, losing so  
Their loved one left with haters. These I saw  
In recrudescency of baffled hate,  
Prepare to wring the uttermost revenge

From body and soul thus left them : all was  
 sure,  
 Fire laid and caldron set, the obscene ring  
 traced,  
 The victim stripped and prostrate : what of  
 God ?  
 The cleaving of a cloud, a cry, a crash,  
 Quenched lay their caldron, cowered i' the dust  
 the crew,  
 As, in a glory of armor like Saint George,  
 Out again sprang the young good beauteous  
 priest  
 Bearing away the lady in his arms,  
 Saved for a splendid minute and no more.  
 For, whom i' the path did that priest come  
 upon,  
 He and the poor lost lady borne so brave,  
 — Checking the song of praise in me, had else  
 Swelled to the full for God's will done on earth —  
 Whom but a dusk misfeatured messenger,  
 No other than the angel of this life,  
 Whose care is lest men see too much at once.  
 He made the sign, such God-glimpse must  
 suffice,  
 Nor prejudice the Prince o' the Power of the  
 Air,  
 Whose ministration piles us overhead  
 What we call, first, earth's roof and, last,  
 heaven's floor,  
 Now grate o' the trap, then outlet of the cage :  
 So took the lady, left the priest alone,  
 And once more canopied the world with black.  
 But through the blackness I saw Rome again,  
 And where a solitary villa stood  
 In a lone garden-quarter : it was eve,  
 The second of the year, and oh so cold !  
 Ever and anon there flittered through the air  
 A snow-flake, and a scanty couch of snow  
 Crusted the grass-walk and the garden-mould.  
 All was grave, silent, sinister, — when, ha ?  
 Glimmeringly did a pack of were-wolves pad  
 The snow, those flames were Guido's eyes in  
 front,  
 And all five found and footed it, the track,  
 To where a threshold-streak of warmth and  
 light  
 Betrayed the villa-door with life inside,  
 While an inch outside were those blood-bright  
 eyes,  
 And black lips wrinkling o'er the flash of teeth,  
 And tongues that lolled — O God that madest  
 man !  
 They parleyed in their language. Then one  
 whined —  
 That was the policy and master-stroke —  
 Deep in his throat whispered what seemed a  
 name —  
 "Open to Caponsacchi !" Guido cried :  
 "Gabriel !" cried Lucifer at Eden-gate.  
 Wide as a heart, opened the door at once,  
 Showing the joyous couple, and their child  
 The two-weeks' mother, to the wolves, the  
 wolves  
 To them. Close eyes ! And when the corpses  
 lay  
 Stark-stretched, and those the wolves, their  
 wolf-work done,  
 Were safe-embosomed by the night again,

I knew a necessary change in things ;  
 As when the worst watch of the night gives  
 way,  
 And there comes duly, to take cognizance,  
 The scrutinizing eye-point of some star —  
 And who despairs of a new daybreak now ?  
 Lo, the first ray protruded on those five !  
 It reached them, and each felon writhed trans-  
 fixed.  
 A while they palpitated on the spear  
 Motionless over Tophet : stand or fall ?  
 "I say, the spear should fall — should stand, I  
 say !"  
 Cried the world come to judgment, granting  
 grace  
 Or dealing doom according to world's wont,  
 Those world's-bystanders grouped on Rome's  
 cross-road  
 At prick and summons of the primal curse  
 Which bids man love as well as make a lie.  
 There prattled they, discoursed the right and  
 wrong,  
 Turned wrong to right, proved wolves sheep and  
 sheep wolves,  
 So that you scarce distinguished fell from  
 fleece ;  
 Till out spoke a great guardian of the fold,  
 Stood up, put forth his hand that held the  
 crook,  
 And motioned that the arrested point decline :  
 Horribly off, the wriggling dead-weight reeled,  
 Rushed to the bottom and lay ruined there.  
 Though still at the pit's mouth, despite the  
 smoke  
 O' the burning, tarriers turned again to talk  
 And trim the balance, and detect at least  
 A touch of wolf in what showed whitest sheep,  
 A cross of sheep redeeming the whole wolf, —  
 Vex truth a little longer : — less and less,  
 Because years came and went, and more and  
 more  
 Brought new lies with them to be loved in turn.  
 Till all at once the memory of the thing, —  
 The fact that, wolves or sheep, such creatures  
 were, —  
 Which hitherto, however men supposed,  
 Had somehow plain and pillar-like prevailed  
 I' the midst of them, indisputably fact,  
 Granite, time's tooth should grate against, not  
 graze, —  
 Why, this proved sandstone, friable, fast to fly  
 And give its grain away at wish o' the wind.  
 Ever and ever more diminutive,  
 Base gone, shaft lost, only entablature,  
 Dwindled into no bigger than a book,  
 Lay of the column ; and that little, left  
 By the roadside 'mid the ordure, shards and  
 weeds.  
 Until I haply, wandering that lone way,  
 Kicked it up, turned it over, and recognized,  
 For all the crumblement, this abacus,  
 This square old yellow book, — could calculate  
 By this the lost proportions of the style.  
 This was it from, my fancy with those facts,  
 I used to tell the tale, turned gay to grave,  
 But lacked a listener seldom ; such alloy,  
 Such substance of me interfused the gold

Which, wrought into a shapely ring therewith,  
Hammered and filed, fingered and favored, last  
Lay ready for the renovating wash  
O' the water, "How much of the tale was  
true?"

I disappeared; the book grew all in all;  
The lawyers' pleadings swelled back to their  
size, —

Doubled in two, the crease upon them yet,  
For more commodity of carriage, see! —  
And these are letters, veritable sheets  
That brought post-haste the news to Florence,  
writ

At Rome the day Count Guido died, we find,  
To stay the craving of a client there,  
Who bound the same and so produced my book,  
Lovers of dead truth, did ye fare the worse?  
Lovers of live truth, found ye false my tale?

Well, now; there's nothing in nor out o' the  
world

Good except truth: yet this, the something else,  
What's this then, which proves good yet seems  
untrue?

This that I mixed with truth, motions of mine  
That quickened, made the inertness malleola-  
ble

O' the gold was not mine, — what's your name  
for this?

Are means to the end, themselves in part the  
end?

Is fiction which makes fact alive, fact too?  
The somehow may be thishow.

I find first

Writ down for very A B C of fact,  
"In the beginning God made heaven and  
earth;"

From which, no matter with what lisp, I spell  
And speak you out a consequence — that man,  
Man, — as befits the made, the inferior thing, —  
Purposed, since made, to grow, not make in  
turn,

Yet forced to try and make, else fail to grow, —  
Formed to rise, reach at, if not grasp and gain  
The good beyond him, — which attempt is  
growth, —

Repeats God's process in man's due degree,  
Attaining man's proportionate result, —

Creates, no, but resuscitates, perhaps.

Inalienable, the arch-prerogative

Which turns thought, act — conceives, expresses  
too!

No less, man, bounded, yearning to be free,

May so project his surplusage of soul

In search of body, so add self to self

By owning what lay ownerless before, —

So find, so fill full, so appropriate forms —

That, although nothing which had never life

Shall get life from him, be, not having been,

Yet, something dead may get to live again,

Something with too much life or not enough,

Which, either way imperfect, ended once:

An end whereat man's impulse intervenes,

Makes new beginning, starts the dead alive,

Completes the incomplete and saves the thing.

Man's breath were vain to light a virgin  
wick, —

Half-burned-out, all but quite-quenched wicks  
o' the lamp

Stationed for temple-service on this earth,

These indeed let him breathe on and relume!

For such man's feat is, in the due degree,

— Mimic creation, galvanism for life,

But still a glory portioned in the scale.

Why did the mage say — feeling as we are wont

For truth, and stopping midway short of truth,

And resting on a lie — "I raise a ghost"?

"Because," he taught adepts, "man makes  
not man.

Yet by a special gift, an art of arts,

More insight and more oversight and much more

Will to use both of these than boast my mates,

I can detach from me, commission forth

Half of my soul; which in its pilgrimage

O'er old unwandered waste ways of the world,

May chance upon some fragment of a whole,

Rag of flesh, scrap of bone in dim disuse,

Smoking flax that fed fire once: prompt therein

I enter, spark-like, put old powers to play,

Push lines out to the limit, lead forth last

(By a moonrise through a ruin of a crypt)

What shall be mistily seen, murmuringly heard,

Mistakenly felt: then write my name with  
Faust's!"

Oh, Faust, why Faust? Was not Elisha  
once? —

Who bade them lay his staff on a corpse-face.

There was no voice, no hearing: he went in

Therefore, and shut the door upon them twain,

And prayed unto the Lord: and he went up

And lay upon the corpse, dead on the couch,

And put his mouth upon its mouth, his eyes

Upon its eyes, his hands upon its hands,

And stretched him on the flesh; the flesh waxed  
warm:

And he returned, walked to and fro the house,

And went up, stretched him on the flesh again,

And the eyes opened. 'T is a credible feat

With the right man and way.

Enough of me!

The Book! I turn its medicinal leaves

In London now till, as in Florence erst,

A spirit laughs and leaps through every limb,

And lights my eye, and lifts me by the hair,

Letting me have my will again with these

— How title I the dead alive once more?

Count Guido Franceschini the Aretine,

Descended of an ancient house, though poor,

A beak-nosed bushy-bearded black-haired lord,

Lean, pallid, low of stature yet robust,

Fifty years old, — having four years ago

Married Pompilia Comparini, young,

Good, beautiful, at Rome, where she was born,

And brought her to Arezzo, where they lived

Unhappy lives, whatever curse the cause, —

This husband, taking four accomplices,

Followed this wife to Rome, where she was fled

From their Arezzo to find peace again,

In convoy, eight months earlier, of a priest,

Aretine also, of still nobler birth,

Giuseppe Caponsacchi, — caught her there

Quiet in a villa on a Christmas night,

With only Pietro and Violante by,



Both her putative parents ; killed the three,  
Aged they, seventy each, and she, seventeen,  
And, two weeks since, the mother of his babe  
First-born and heir to what the style was  
worth

O' the Guido who determined, dared and did  
This deed just as he purposed point by point.  
Then, bent upon escape, but hotly pressed,  
And captured with his co-mates that same  
night,

He, brought to trial, stood on this defence —  
Injury to his honor caused the act ;  
And since his wife was false, (as manifest  
By flight from home in such companionship.)  
Death, punishment deserved of the false wife  
And faithless parents who abetted her  
I' the flight aforesaid, wronged nor God nor  
man.

"Nor false she, nor yet faithless they," replied  
The accuser ; "cloaked and masked this  
murder glooms ;

True was Pompilia, loyal too the pair ;  
Out of the man's own heart a monster curled,  
Which — crime coiled with connivancy at  
crime —

His victim's breast, he tells you, hatched and  
reared ;

Uncoil we and stretch stark the worm of hell !"  
A month the trial swayed this way and that.  
Ere judgment settled down on Guido's guilt ;  
Then was the Pope, that good Twelfth Innocent,  
Appealed to : who well weighed what went be-  
fore,

Affirmed the guilt and gave the guilty doom.

Let this old woe step on the stage again !  
Act itself o'er anew for men to judge,  
Not by the very sense and sight indeed —  
(Which take at best imperfect cognizance,  
Since, how heart moves brain, and how both  
move hand,

What mortal ever in entirety saw ?)  
— No dose of purer truth than man digests,  
But truth with falsehood, milk that feeds him  
now,  
Not strong meat he may get to bear some  
day —

To wit, by voices we call evidence,  
Uproar in the echo, live fact deadened down,  
Talked over, bruited abroad, whispered away,  
Yet helping us to all we seem to hear :  
For how else know we save by worth of word ?

Here are the voices presently shall sound  
In due succession. First, the world's outcry  
Around the rush and ripple of any fact  
Fallen stonewise, plumb on the smooth face of  
things ;

The world's guess, as it crowds the bank o' the  
pool,

At what were figure and substance, by their  
splash :

Then, by vibrations in the general mind,  
At depth of deed already out of reach.  
This threefold murder of the day before, —  
Say, Half-Rome's feel after the vanished  
truth ;

Honest enough, as the way is : all the same,

Harboring in the centre of its sense  
A hidden germ of failure, shy but sure,  
To neutralize that honesty and leave  
That feel for truth at fault, as the way is too.  
Some prepossession such as starts amiss,  
By but a hair's breadth at the shoulder-blade,  
The arm o' the feeler, dip he ne'er so bold ;  
So leads arm waveringly, lets fall wide  
O' the mark its finger, sent to find and fix  
Truth at the bottom, that deceptive speck.  
With this Half-Rome, — the source of swerving,  
call

Over-belief in Guido's right and wrong  
Rather than in Pompilia's wrong and right :  
Who shall say how, who shall say why ? 'Tis  
there —

The instinctive theorizing whence a fact  
Looks to the eye as the eye likes the look.  
Gossip in a public place, a sample-speech.  
Some worthy, with his previous hint to find  
A husband's side the safer, and no whit  
Aware he is not Æacus the while, —  
How such an one supposes and states fact  
To whosoever of a multitude  
Will listen, and perhaps prolong thereby  
The not-unpleasant flutter at the breast,  
Born of a certain spectacle shut in  
By the church Lorenzo opposite. So, they  
lounge

Midway the mouth o' the street, on Corso side,  
'Twixt palace Fiano and palace Ruspoli,  
Linger and listen ; keeping clear o' the crowd,  
Yet wishful one could lend that crowd one's  
eyes,

(So universal is its plague of squint)  
And make hearts beat our time that flutter  
false :

— All for the truth's sake, mere truth, nothing  
else !

How Half-Rome found for Guido much ex-  
cuse.

Next, from Rome's other half, the opposite  
feel

For truth with a like swerve, like unsuccess, —  
Or if success, by no skill but more luck,  
This time, through siding rather with the wife  
Because a fancy-fit inclined that way,  
Than with the husband. One wears drab, one  
pink ;

Who wears pink, ask him "Which shall win  
the race,

Of coupled runners like as egg and egg ?"  
"— Why, if I must choose, he with the pink  
scarf."

Doubtless for some such reason choice fell here.  
A piece of public talk to correspond  
At the next stage of the story ; just a day  
Let pass and new day brings the proper change.  
Another sample-speech i' the market-place  
O' the Barberini by the Capucins ;  
Where the old Triton, at his fountain-sport,  
Bernini's creature plated to the paps,  
Puffs up steel sleet which breaks to diamond  
dust,

A spray of sparkles snorted from his conch,  
High over the caritellas, out o' the way  
O' the motley merchandising multitude.

Our murder has been done three days ago,  
The frost is over and gone, the south wind  
laughs,

And, to the very tiles of each red roof  
A-smoke i' the sunshine, Rome lies gold and  
glad :

So, listen how, to the other half of Rome,  
Pompilia seemed a saint and martyr both !

Then, yet another day let come and go,  
With pause prelude still of novelty,  
Hear a fresh speaker ! — neither this nor that  
Half-Rome aforesaid ; something bred of both :  
One and one breed the inevitable three.

Such is the personage harangues you next ;  
The elaborated product, *tertium quid* :  
Rome's first commotion in subsidence gives  
The curd o' the cream, flower o' the wheat, as  
it were,

And finer sense o' the city. Is this plain ?  
You get a reasoned statement of the case,  
Eventual verdict of the curious few  
Who care to sift a business to the bran  
Nor coarsely bolt it like the simpler sort.  
Here, after ignorance, instruction speaks ;  
Here, clarity of candor, history's soul,  
The critical mind, in short : no gossip-guess.  
What the superior social section thinks,  
In person of some man of quality  
Who — breathing musk from lace-work and  
brocade,

His solitaire amid the flow of frill,  
Powdered peruke on nose, and bag at back,  
And cane dependent from the ruffled wrist —  
Harangues in silvery and selectest phrase  
'Neath waxlight in a glorified saloon  
Where mirrors multiply the girandole :  
Courting the approbation of no mob,  
But Eminence This and All-Illustrious That  
Who take snuff softly, range in well-bred ring,  
Card-table-quitters for observance' sake,  
Around the argument, the rational word —  
Still, spite its weight and worth, a sample-  
speech.

How Quality dissertated on the case.

So much for Rome and rumor ; smoke comes  
first :

Once let smoke rise untroubled, we deservy  
Clearlier what tongues of flame may spire and  
spit

To eye and ear, each with appropriate tinge  
According to its food, or pure or foul.  
The actors, no mere rumors of the act,  
Intervene. First you hear Count Guido's voice,  
In a small chamber that adjoins the court,  
Where Governor and Judges, summoned thence,  
Tommati, Venturini and the rest,  
Find the accused ripe for declaring truth.  
Soft-cushioned sits he ; yet shifts seat, shirks  
touch,

As, with a twitchy brow and wincing lip  
And cheek that changes to all kinds of white,  
He proffers his defence, in tones subdued  
Near to mock-mildness now, so mournful seems  
The obtuse sense truth fails to satisfy ;  
Now, moved, from pathos at the wrong endured,  
To passion ; for the natural man is roused

At fools who first do wrong, then pour the blame  
Of their wrong-doing, Satan-like, on Job.  
Also his tongue at times is hard to curb ;  
Incisive, high satiric bites the phrase,  
Rough-raw, yet somehow claiming privilege  
— It is so hard for shrewdness to admit  
Folly means no harm when she calls black  
white !

— Eruption momentary at the most,  
Modified forthwith by a fall o' the fire,  
Sage acquiescence ; for the world's the world,  
And, what it errs in, Judges rectify :  
He feels he has a fist, then folds his arms  
Crosswise and makes his mind up to be meek.  
And never once does he detach his eye  
From those ranged there to slay him or to save.  
But does his best man's-service for himself,  
Despite, — what twitches brow and makes lip  
wince, —

His limbs' late taste of what was called the  
Cord,

Or Vigil-torture more facetiously.  
Even so ; they were wont to tease the truth  
Out of loth witness (toying, trifling time)  
By torture : 't was a trick, a vice of the age,  
Here, there and everywhere, what would you  
have ?

Religion used to tell Humanity  
She gave him warrant or denied him course,  
And since the course was much to his own mind,  
Of pinching flesh and pulling bone from bone  
To unhusk truth a-hiding in its hulls,  
Nor whisper of a warning stopped the way,  
He, in their joint behalf, the burly slave,  
Bestirred him, mauled and maimed all recusants,  
While, prim in place, Religion overlooked ;  
And so had done till doomsday, never a sign  
Nor sound of interference from her mouth,  
But that at last the burly slave wiped brow,  
Let eye give notice as if soul were there,  
Muttered " 'T is a vile trick, foolish more than  
vile,

Should have been counted sin ; I make it so :

At any rate no more of it for me —

Nay, for I break the torture-engine thus ! "

Then did Religion start up, stare amain,  
Look round for help and see none, smile and  
say

" What, broken is the rack ? Well done of  
thee !

Did I forget to abrogate its use ?

Be the mistake in common with us both !

— One more fault our blind age shall answer for,  
Down in my book denounced though it must be  
Somewhere. Henceforth find truth by milder  
means ! "

Ah but, Religion, did we wait for thee  
To ope the book, that serves to sit upon,  
And pick such place out, we should wait indeed !  
That is all history : and what is not now,  
Was then, defendants found it to their cost.  
How Guido, after being tortured, spoke.

Also hear Caponsacchi who comes next,  
Man and priest — could you comprehend the  
coil ! —

In days when that was rife which now is rare.  
How, mingling each its multifarious wires,

Now heaven, now earth, now heaven and earth  
at once,  
Had plucked at and perplexed their puppet  
here,

Played off the young frank personable priest ;  
Sworn fast and tansured plain heaven's celibate,  
And yet earth's clear-accepted servitor,  
A courtly spiritual Cupid, squire of dames  
By law of love and mandate of the mode.  
The Church's own, or why parade her seal,  
Wherefore that chrism and consecrative work ?  
Yet verily the world's, or why go badged  
A prince of sonneteers and lutanists,  
Show color of each vanity in vogue

Borne with decorum due on blameless breast ?  
All that is changed now, as he tells the court  
How he had played the part excepted at ;  
Tells it, moreover, now the second time :

Since, for his cause of scandal, his own share  
I' the flight from home and husband of the wife,  
He has been censured, punished in a sort  
By relegation, — exile, we should say,  
To a short distance for a little time, —

Whence he is summoned on a sudden now,  
Informed that she, he thought to save, is lost,  
And, in a breath, bidden re-tell his tale,  
Since the first telling somehow missed effect,  
And then advise in the matter. There stands he,

While the same grim black-panelled chamber  
blinks  
As though rubbed shiny with the sins of Rome  
Told the same oak for ages — wave-washed wall  
Against which sets a sea of wickedness.

There, where you yesterday heard Guido speak,  
Speaks Caponsacchi ; and there face him too  
Tommati, Venturini and the rest

Who, eight months earlier, scarce repressed the  
smile,  
Forewent the wink ; waived recognition so  
Of peccadillos incident to youth,  
Especially youth high-born ; for youth means  
love,

Vows can't change nature, priests are only men,  
And love likes stratagem and subterfuge :  
Which age, that once was youth, should recog-  
nize,

May blame, but needs not press too hard upon.  
Here sit the old Judges then, but with no grace  
Of reverend carriage, magisterial port.  
For why ? The accused of eight months since,  
— the same

Who cut the conscious figure of a fool,  
Changed countenance, dropped bashful gaze to  
ground,

While hesitating for an answer then, —  
Now is grown judge himself, terrifies now  
This, now the other culprit called a judge,  
Whose turn it is to stammer and look strange,  
As he speaks rapidly, angrily, speech that  
smites :

And they keep silence, bear blow after blow,  
Because the seeming-solitary man,  
Speaking for God, may have an audience too,  
Invisible, no discreet judge provokes.  
How the priest Caponsacchi said his say.

Then a soul sighs its lowest and its last  
After the loud ones, — so much breath remains

Unused by the four-days'-dying ; for she lived  
Thus long, miraculously long, 't was thought,  
Just that Pompilia might defend herself.

How, while the hireling and the alien stoop,  
Comfort, yet question, — since the time is brief,  
And folk, allowably inquisitive,

Encircle the low pallet where she lies  
In the good house that helps the poor to die, —  
Pompilia tells the story of her life.

For friend and lover, — leech and man of law  
Do service ; busy helpful ministrants  
As varied in their calling as their mind,  
Temper and age : and yet from all of these,

About the white bed under the arched roof,  
Is somehow, as it were, evolved a one, —  
Small separate sympathies combined and large,  
Nothings that were, grown something very

much :

As if the bystanders gave each his straw,  
All he had, though a trifle in itself,  
Which, plaited all together, made a Cross  
Fit to die looking on and praying with,

Just as well as if ivory or gold.  
So, to the common kindness she speaks,  
There being scarce more privacy at the last  
For mind than body : but she is used to bear,  
And only unused to the brotherly look.

How she endeavored to explain her life.

Then, since a Trial ensued, a touch o' the same  
To sober us, flustered with frothy talk,  
And teach our common sense its helplessness.

For why deal simply with divining-rod,  
Scrape where we fancy secret sources flow,  
And ignore law, the recognized machine,  
Elaborate display of pipe and wheel

Framed to unchoke, pump up and pour apace  
Truth till a flowery foam shall wash the world ?  
The patent truth-extracting process, — ha ?  
Let us make that grave mystery turn one wheel,  
Give you a single grind of law at least !

One orator, of two on either side,  
Shall teach us the puissance of the tongue  
— That is, o' the pen which simulated tongue  
On paper and saved all except the sound  
Which never was. Law's speech beside law's

thought ?

That were too stunning, too immense an odds :  
That point of vantage law lets nobly pass.  
One lawyer shall admit us to behold

The manner of the making out a case,  
First fashion of a speech ; the chick in egg,  
The masterpiece law's bosom incubates.

How Don Giacinto of the Arcangeli,  
Called Procurator of the Poor at Rome,  
Now advocate for Guido and his mates, —  
The jolly learned man of middle age,  
Cheek and jowl all in laps with fat and law,  
Mirthful as mighty, yet, as great hearts use,  
Despite the name and fame that tempt our flesh,  
Constant to that devotion of the hearth,  
Still captive in those dear domestic ties ! —  
How he, — having a cause to triumph with,  
All kind of interests to keep intact,  
More than one efficacious personage  
To tranquillize, conciliate and secure,  
And above all, public anxiety  
To quiet, show its Guido in good hands, —



Also, as if such burdens were too light,  
A certain family-feast to claim his care,  
The birthday-banquet for the only son —  
Paternity at smiling strife with law —  
How he brings both to buckle in one bond ;  
And, thick at throat, with waterish under-eye,  
Turns to his task and settles in his seat  
And puts his utmost means in practice now :  
Wheezes out law-phrase, whiffles Latin forth,  
And, just as though roast lamb would never  
be,

Makes logic levigate the big crime small :  
Rubs palm on palm, rakes foot with itchy foot,  
Conceives and inchoates the argument,  
Sprinkling each flower appropriate to the time,  
— Ovidian quip or Ciceronian crank,  
A-bubble in the larynx while he laughs,  
As he had fritters deep down frying there.  
How he turns, twists, and tries the oily thing  
Shall be — first speech for Guido 'gainst the  
Fisc.

Then with a skip as it were from heel to head,  
Leaving yourselves fill up the middle bulk  
O' the Trial, reconstruct its shape august,  
From such exordium clap we to the close ;  
Give you, if we dare wing to such a height,  
The absolute glory in some full-grown speech  
On the other side, some finished butterfly,  
Some breathing diamond-flake with leaf-gold  
fans,

That takes the air, no trace of worm it was,  
Or cabbage-bed it had production from.  
Giovambattista o' the Bottini, Fisc,  
Pompilia's patron by the chance of the hour,  
To-morrow her persecutor, — composite, he,  
As becomes who must meet such various calls —  
Odds of age joined in him with ends of youth.

A man of ready smile and facile tear,  
Improvised hopes, despairs at nod and beck,  
And language — ah, the gift of eloquence !  
Language that goes, goes, easy as a glove,  
O'er good and evil, smoothenes both to one.  
Rashness helps caution with him, fires the straw,  
In free enthusiastic careless fit,

On the first proper pinnacle of rock  
Which offers, as reward for all that zeal,  
To lure some bark to founders and bring gain :  
While calm sits Caution, rapt with heavenward  
eye,

A true confessor's gaze, amid the glare  
Beaconing to the breaker, death and hell.  
" Well done, thou good and faithful ! " she ap-  
proves :

" Hadst thou let slip a fagot to the beach,  
The crew might surely spy thy precipice  
And save their boat ; the simple and the slow  
Might so, forsooth, forestall the wrecker's fee !  
Let the next crew be wise and hail in time ! "  
Just so compounded is the outside man.  
Blue juvenile pure eye and pippin cheek,  
And brow all prematurely soiled and seamed  
With sudden age, bright devastated hair.  
Ah, but you miss the very tones o' the voice,  
The serannell pipe that screams in heights of  
head,

As, in his modest studio, all alone,  
The tall wight stands a-tiptoe, strives and  
strains,

Both eyes shut, like the cockerel that would  
crow,

Tries to his own self amorously o'er  
What never will be uttered else than so —  
Since to the four walls, Forum and Mars' Hill,  
Speaks out the poesy which, penned, turns  
prose.

Clavecinist debarred his instrument,  
He yet thrums — shirking neither turn nor trill,  
With desperate finger on dumb table-edge —  
The sovereign rondo, shall conclude his *Suite*,  
Charm an imaginary audience there,  
From old Corelli to young Haendel, both  
I' the flesh at Rome, ere he perforce go print  
The cold black score, mere music for the  
mind —

The last speech against Guido and his gang,  
With special end to prove Pompilia pure.  
How the Fisc vindicates Pompilia's fame.

Then comes the all but end, the ultimate  
Judgment save yours. Pope Innocent the  
Twelfth,

Simple, sagacious, mild yet resolute,  
With prudence, probity and — what beside  
From the other world he feels impress at times,  
Having attained to fourscore years and six, —  
How, when the court found Guido and the rest  
Guilty, but law supplied a subterfuge  
And passed the final sentence to the Pope,  
He, bringing his intelligence to bear  
This last time on what ball behoves him drop  
In the urn, or white or black, does drop a black,  
Send five souls more to just precede his own,  
Stand him in stead and witness, if need were,  
How he is wont to do God's work on earth.

The manner of his sitting out the dim  
Droop of a sombre February day  
In the plain closet where he does such work,  
With, from all Peter's treasury, one stool,  
One table and one lathen crucifix.  
There sits the Pope, his thoughts for company ;  
Grave but not sad, — nay, something like a  
cheer

Leaves the lips free to be benevolent,  
Which, all day long, did duty firm and fast.  
A cherishing there is of foot and knee,  
A chafing loose-skinned large-veined hand with  
hand, —

What steward but knows when stewardship  
earns its wage,

May levy praise, anticipate the lord ?  
He reads, notes, lays the papers down at last,  
Muses, then takes a turn about the room ;  
Unclasp a huge tome in an antique guise,  
Primitive print and tongue half obsolete,  
That stands him in diurnal stead ; opes page,  
Finds place where falls the passage to be coned  
According to an order long in use :  
And, as he comes upon the evening's chance,  
Starts somewhat, solemnizes straight his smile,  
Then reads aloud that portion first to last,  
And at the end lets flow his own thoughts forth  
Likewise aloud, for respite and relief,  
Till by the dreary relics of the west  
Wan through the half-moon window, all his  
light,

He bows the head while the lips move in prayer,

Writes some three brief lines, signs and seals  
the same,

Tinkles a hand-bell, bids the obsequious Sir  
Who puts foot presently o' the closet-sill  
He watched outside of, bear as superscribed  
That mandate to the Governor forthwith :  
Then heaves abroad his cares in one good sigh,  
Traverses corridor with no arm's help,  
And so to sup as a clear conscience should.  
The manner of the judgment of the Pope.

Then must speak Guido yet a second time,  
Satan's old saw being apt here — skin for skin,  
All a man hath that will he give for life.  
While life was graspable and gainable,  
And bird-like buzzed her wings round Guido's  
brow,

Not much truth stiffened out the web of words  
He wove to catch her : when away she flew  
And death came, death's breath rivelled up the  
lies,

Left bare the metal thread, the fibre fine  
Of truth, i' the spinning : the true words shone  
last.

How Guido, to another purpose quite,  
Speaks and despairs, the last night of his life,  
In that New Prison by Castle Angelo  
At the bridge-foot : the same man, another  
voice.

On a stone bench in a close fetid cell,  
Where the hot vapor of an agony,  
Struck into drops on the cold wall, runs down —  
Horrible worms made out of sweat and tears —  
There crouch, wellnigh to the knees in dungeon-  
straw,

Lit by the sole lamp suffered for their sake,  
Two awe-struck figures, this a Cardinal,  
That an Abate, both of old styled friends  
O' the thing part man, part monster in the midst,  
So changed is Franceschini's gentle blood.

The tiger-cat screams now, that whined before,  
That tried and tried and trod so gingerly,  
Till in its silkiness the trap-teeth joined ;  
Then you know how the bristling fury foams.

They listen, this wrapped in his folds of red,  
While his feet fumble for the filth below ;  
The other, as beseems a stouter heart,  
Working his best with beads and cross to ban  
The enemy that comes in like a flood

Spite of the standard set up, verily  
And in no trope at all, against him there :  
For at the prison-gate, just a few steps  
Outside, already, in the doubtful dawn,  
Thither, from this side and from that, slow  
sweep

And settle down in silence solidly,  
Crow-wise, the frightful Brotherhood of Death.  
Black-hatted and black-hooded huddle they,  
Black rosaries a-dangling from each waist ;  
So take they their grim station at the door,  
Toreheslit, skull-and-crossbones-bannerspread,  
And that gigantic Christ with open arms,  
Grounded. Nor lacks there aught but that the  
group

Break forth, intone the lamentable psalm,  
" Out of the deeps, Lord, have I cried to  
thee ! " —

When inside, from the true profound, a sign

Shall bear intelligence that the foe is foiled,  
Count Guido Franceschini has confessed,  
And is absolved and reconciled with God.  
Then they, intoning, may begin their march,  
Make by the longest way for the People's  
Square,

Carry the criminal to his crime's award :  
A mob to cleave, a scaffolding to reach,  
Two gallows and Mannaia crowning all.  
How Guido made defence a second time.

Finally, even as thus by step and step  
I led you from the level of to-day  
Up to the summit of so long ago,  
Here, whence I point you the wide prospect  
round —

Let me, by like steps, slope you back to smooth,  
Land you on mother-earth, no whit the worse,  
To feed o' the fat o' the furrow : free to dwell,  
Taste our time's better things profusely spread  
For all who love the level, corn and wine,  
Much cattle and the many-folded fleece.  
Shall not my friends go feast again on sward,  
Though cognizant of country in the clouds  
Higher than wistful eagle's horny eye  
Ever unclosed for, 'mid ancestral crags,  
When morning broke and Spring was back once  
more,

And he died, heaven, save by his heart, un-  
reached ?

Yet heaven my fancy lifts to, ladder-like, —  
As Jack reached, holpen of his beanstalk-  
rungs !

A novel country : I might make it mine  
By chosing which one aspect of the year  
Suited mood best, and putting solely that  
On panel somewhere in the House of Fame,  
Landscaping what I saved, not what I saw :  
— Might fix you, whether frost in goblin-time  
Startled the moon with his abrupt bright laugh,  
Or, August's hair afloat in filmy fire,  
She fell, arms wide, face foremost on the world,  
Swooned there and so singed out the strength  
of things.

Thus were abolished Spring and Autumn both,  
The land dwarfed to one likeness of the land,  
Life cramped corpse-fashion. Rather learn  
and love

Each facet-flash of the revolving year ! —  
Red, green and blue that whirl into a white,  
The variance now, the eventual unity,  
Which make the miracle. See it for your-  
selves,

This man's act, changeable because alive !  
Action now shrouds, nor shows the informing  
thought ;

Man, like a glass ball with a spark a-top,  
Out of the magic fire that lurks inside,  
Shows one tint at a time to take the eye :  
Which, let a finger touch the silent sleep,  
Shifted a hair's-breadth shoots you dark for  
bright,

Suffuses bright with dark, and baffles so  
Your sentence absolute for shine or shade.  
Once set such orbs, — white styled, black stig-  
matized, —

A-rolling, see them once on the other side

Your good men and your bad men every one,  
From Guido Franceschini to Guy Faux,  
Oft would you rub your eyes and change your  
names.

Such, British Public, ye who like me not,  
(God love you!) — whom I yet have labored for,  
Perchance more careful whoso runs may read,  
Than erst when all, it seemed, could read who  
ran, —  
Perchance more careless whoso reads may  
praise  
Than late when he who praised and read and  
wrote

Was apt to find himself the selfsame me, —  
Such labor had such issue, so I wrought  
This arc, by furtherance of such alloy,  
And so, by one spirt, take away its trace  
Till, justifiably golden, rounds my ring.

A ring without a posy, and that ring mine ?

O lyric Love, half angel and half bird,  
And all a wonder and a wild desire, —  
Boldest of hearts that ever braved the sun,  
Took sanctuary within the holier blue,  
And sang a kindred soul out to his face, —  
Yet human at the red-ripe of the heart —  
When the first summons from the darkling  
earth

Reached thee amid thy chambers, blanched  
their blue,  
And bared them of the glory — to drop down,  
To toil for man, to suffer or to die, —  
This is the same voice: can thy soul know  
change ?

Hail then, and hearken from the realms of help !  
Never may I commence my song, my due  
To God who best taught song by gift of thee,  
Except with bent head and beseeching hand —  
That still, despite the distance and the dark,  
What was, again may be; some interchange  
Of grace, some splendor once thy very thought,  
Some benediction anciently thy smile:  
— Never conclude, but raising hand and head  
Thither where eyes, that cannot reach, yet  
yearn

For all hope, all sustainment, all reward,  
Their utmost up and on, — so blessing back  
In those thy realms of help, that heaven thy  
home,  
Some whiteness which, I judge, thy face makes  
proud,  
Some wanness where, I think, thy foot may  
fall !

II

HALF-ROME

What, you, Sir, come too? (Just the man I'd  
meet.)  
Be ruled by me and have a care o' the crowd:  
This way, when fresh folk go and get their  
gaze:  
I'll tell you like a book and save your shins.  
Fie, what a roaring day we've had! Whose  
fault?

Lorenzo in Lucina, — here's a church  
To hold a crowd at need, accommodate  
All comers from the Corso! If this crush  
Make not its priests ashamed of what they  
show  
For temple-room, don't prick them to draw  
purse  
And down with bricks and mortar, eke us out  
The beggarly transept with its bit of apse  
Into a decent space for Christian ease,  
Why, to-day's lucky pearl is cast to swine.  
Listen and estimate the luck they've had!  
(The right man, and I hold him.)

Sir, do you see,  
They laid both bodies in the church, this morn  
The first thing, on the chancel two steps up,  
Behind the little marble balustrade;  
Disposed them, Pietro the old murdered fool  
To the right of the altar, and his wretched wife  
On the other side. In trying to count stabs,  
People supposed Violante showed the most,  
Till somebody explained us that mistake;  
His wounds had been dealt out indifferent  
where,

But she took all her stabbings in the face,  
Since punished thus solely for honor's sake,  
*Honoris causâ*, that's the proper term.  
A delicacy there is, our gallants hold,  
When you avenge your honor and only then,  
That you disfigure the subject, fray the face,  
Not just take life and end, in clownish guise.  
It was Violante gave the first offence,  
Got therefore the conspicuous punishment:  
While Pietro, who helped merely, his mere  
death

Answered the purpose, so his face went free.  
We fancied even, free as you please, that face  
Showed itself still intolerably wronged;  
Was wrinkled over with resentment yet,  
Nor calm at all, as murdered faces use,  
Once the worst ended: an indignant air  
O' the head there was — 't is said the body  
turned

Round and away, rolled from Violante's side  
Where they had laid it loving-husband-like.  
If so, if corpses can be sensitive,  
Why did not he roll right down altar-step,  
Roll on through nave, roll fairly out of church,  
Deprive Lorenzo of the spectacle,  
Pay back thus the succession of affronts  
Whereto this church had served as theatre?  
For see: at that same altar where he lies,  
To that same inch of step, was brought the babe  
For blessing after baptism, and there styled  
Pompilia, and a string of names beside,  
By his bad wife, some seventeen years ago,  
Who purchased her simply to palm on him,  
Flatter his dotage and defraud the heirs.  
Wait awhile! Also to this very step  
Did this Violante, twelve years afterward,  
Bring, the mock-mother, that child-cheat full-  
grown,

Pompilia, in pursuance of her plot,  
And there brave God and man a second time  
By linking a new victim to the lie.  
There, having made a match unknown to him,  
She, still unknown to Pietro, tied the knot



Which nothing cuts except this kind of knife ;  
 Yes, made her daughter, as the girl was held,  
 Marry a man, and honest man beside,  
 And man of birth to boot, — clandestinely  
 Because of this, because of that, because  
 O' the devil's will to work his worst for  
 once, —

Confident she could top her part at need  
 And, when her husband must be told in turn,  
 Ply the wife's trade, play off the sex's trick  
 And, alternating worry with quiet qualms,  
 Bravado with submissiveness, prettily fool  
 Her Pietro into patience: so it proved.  
 Ay, 'tis four years since man and wife they

grew,  
 This Guido Franceschini and this same  
 Pompilia, foolishly thought, falsely declared  
 A Comparin and the couple's child:  
 Just at this altar where, beneath the piece  
 Of Master Guido Reni, Christ on cross,  
 Second to naught observable in Rome,  
 That couple lie now, murdered yestereve.  
 Even the blind can see a providence here.

From dawn till now that it is growing dusk,  
 A multitude has flocked and filled the church,  
 Coming and going, coming back again,  
 Till to count crazed one. Rome was at the  
 show.

People climbed up the columns, fought for  
 spikes

O' the chapel-rail to perch themselves upon,  
 Jumped over and so broke the wooden work  
 Painted like porphyry to deceive the eye ;  
 Serve the priests right! The organ-loft was  
 crammed,

Women were fainting, no few fights ensued,  
 In short, it was a show repaid your pains:  
 For, though their room was scant undoubtedly,  
 Yet they did manage matters, to be just,  
 A little at this Lorenzo. Body o' me!  
 I saw a body exposed once . . . never mind!  
 Enough that here the bodies had their due.  
 No stinging in wax, a row all round,  
 And one big taper at each head and foot.

So, people pushed their way, and took their turn,  
 Saw, threw their eyes up, crossed themselves,  
 gave place

To pressure from behind, since all the world  
 Knew the old pair, could talk the tragedy  
 Over from first to last: Pompilia too,  
 Those who had known her — what 't was  
 worth to them!

Guido's acquaintance was in less request;  
 The Count had lounged somewhat too long in  
 Rome,

Made himself cheap; with him were hand and  
 glove

Barbers and blear-eyed, as the ancient sings.  
 Also he is alive and like to be:  
 Had he considerably died, — aha!

I jostled Luca Cini on his staff,  
 Mute in the midst, the whole man one amaze,  
 Staring amain and crossing brow and breast.  
 "How now?" asked I. "Tis seventy years,"

quoth he,  
 "Since I first saw, holding my father's hand,

Bodies set forth: a many have I seen,  
 Yet all was poor to this I live and see.  
 Here the world's wickedness seals up the sum:  
 What with Molinos' doctrine and this deed,  
 Antichrist surely comes and doomsday's near.  
 May I depart in peace, I have seen my see."  
 "Depart then," I advised, "nor block the road  
 For youngsters still behindhand with such  
 sights!"

"Why no," rejoins the venerable sire,  
 "I know it's horrid, hideous past belief,  
 Burdensome far beyond what eye can bear;  
 But they do promise, when Pompilia dies  
 I' the course o' the day, — and she can't outlive  
 night, —

They'll bring her body also to expose  
 Beside the parents, one, two, three abreast;  
 That were indeed a sight which, might I see,  
 I trust I should not last to see the like!"  
 Whereat I bade the senior spare his shanks,  
 Since doctors give her till to-night to live,  
 And tell us how the butchery happened. "Ah,  
 But you can't know!" sighs he, "I'll not de-  
 spair:

Beside I'm useful at explaining things —  
 As, how the dagger laid there at the feet,  
 Caused the peculiar cuts; I mind its make,  
 Triangular i' the blade, a Genoese,  
 Armed with those little hook-teeth on the edge  
 To open in the flesh nor shut again:  
 I like to teach a novice: I shall stay!"  
 And stay he did, and stay be sure he will.

A personage came by the private door  
 At noon to have his look: I name no names:  
 Well then, His Eminence the Cardinal,  
 Whose servitor in honorable sort  
 Guido was once, the same who made the  
 match,  
 (Will you have the truth?) whereof we see  
 effect.

No sooner whisper ran he was arrived  
 Than up pops Curate Carlo, a brisk lad,  
 Who never lets a good occasion slip,  
 And volunteers improving the event.  
 We looked he'd give the history's self some  
 help,

Treat us to how the wife's confession went  
 (This morning she confessed her crime, we  
 know)

And, maybe, throw in something of the  
 Priest —

If he's not ordered back, punished anew,  
 The gallant, Caponsacchi, Lucifer  
 I' the garden where Pompilia, Eve-like, lured  
 Her Adam Guido to his fault and fall.

Think you we got a sprig of speech akin  
 To this from Carlo, with the Cardinal there?  
 Too wary he was, too widely awake, I trow.  
 He did the murder in a dozen words;  
 Then said that all such outrages crop forth  
 I' the course of nature, when Molinos' tares  
 Are sown for wheat, flourish and choke the  
 Church:

So slid on to the abominable sect  
 And the philosophic sin — we've heard all that,  
 And the Cardinal too, (who book-made on the  
 same)

But, for the murder, left it where he found.  
Oh but he's quick, the Curate, minds his game!  
And, after all, we have the main o' the fact :  
Case could not well be simpler, — mapped, as it were,

We follow the murder's maze from source to sea,

By the red line, past mistake : one sees indeed  
Not only how all was and must have been,  
But cannot other than be to the end of time.  
Turn out here by the Ruspoli ! Do you hold  
Guido was so prodigiously to blame ?  
A certain cousin of yours has told you so ?  
Exactly ! Here 's a friend shall set you right,  
Let him but have the handsel of your ear.

These wretched Comparini were once gay  
And galliard, of the modest middle class :  
Born in this quarter seventy years ago,  
And married young, they lived the accustomed life,

Citizens as they were of good repute :  
And, childless, naturally took their ease  
And only their two selves to care about  
And use the wealth for : wealthy is the word,  
Since Pietro was possessed of house and land —  
And specially one house, when good days smiled,

In Via Vittoria, the aspectable street  
Where he lived mainly ; but another house  
Of less pretension did he buy betimes,  
The villa, meant for jaunts and jollity,  
I' the Pauline district, to be private there —  
Just what puts murder in an enemy's head.  
Moreover, — here 's the worm i' the core, the germ

O' the rottenness and ruin which arrived, —  
He owned some usufruct, had moneys' use  
Lifelong, but to determine with his life  
In heirs' default : so, Pietro craved an heir,  
(The story always old and always new)  
Shut his fool's-eyes fast on the visible good  
And wealth for certain, opened them owl-wide  
On fortune's sole piece of forgetfulness,  
The child that should have been and would not be.

Hence, seventeen years ago, conceive his glee  
When first Violante, 'twixt a smile and blush,  
With touch of agitation proper too,  
Announced that, spite of her unpromising age,  
The miracle would in time be manifest.  
An heir's birth was to happen : and it did.  
Somehow or other, — how, all in good time !  
By a trick, a sleight of hand you are to hear, —  
A child was born, Pompilia, for his joy,  
Playing at once and prop, a fairy-gift,  
A saints' grace or, say, grant of the good  
God, —

A fiddle-pin's end ! What imbeciles are we !  
Look now : if some one could have prophesied,  
" For love of you, for liking to your wife,  
I undertake to crush a snake I spy  
Settling itself i' the soft of both your breasts.  
Give me yon babe to strangle painlessly !  
She 'll soar to the safe : you 'll have your cry-  
ing out,

Then sleep, then wake, then sleep, then end  
your days

In peace and plenty, mixed with mild regret,  
Thirty years hence when Christmas takes old  
folk " —

How had old Pietro sprung up, crossed himself,  
And kicked the conjurer ! Whereas you and I,  
Being wise with after-wit, had clapped our  
hands ;

Nay, added, in the old fool's interest,  
" Strangle the black-eyed babe, so far so good,  
But on condition you relieve the man  
O' the wife and throttle him Violante too —  
She is the mischief ! " —

We had hit the mark.

She, whose trick brought the babe into the  
world,

She it was, when the babe was grown a girl,  
Judged a new trick should reinforce the old,  
Send vigor to the lie now somewhat spent  
By twelve years' service ; lest Eve's rule de-  
cline

Over this Adam of hers, whose cabbage-plot  
Throve dubiously since turned fools'-paradise,  
Spite of a nightingale on every stump.  
Pietro's estate was dwindling day by day,  
While he, rapt far above such mundane care,  
Crawled all-fours with his baby pick-a-back,  
Sat at serene cats'-cradle with his child,  
Or took the measured tallness, top to toe,  
Of what was grown a great girl twelve years  
old :

Till sudden at the door a tap discreet,  
A visitor's premonitory cough,  
And poverty had reached him in her rounds.

This came when he was past the working-time,  
Had learned to dandle and forgot to dig,  
And who must but Violante cast about,  
Contrive and task that head of hers again ?  
She who had caught one fish could make that  
catch

A bigger still, in angler's policy :  
So, with an angler's mercy for the bait,  
Her minnow was set wriggling on its barb  
And tossed to mid-stream ; which means, this  
grown girl

With the great eyes and bounty of black hair  
And first crisp youth that tempts a jaded taste,  
Was whisked i' the way of a certain man, who  
snapped.

Count Guido Franceschini the Aretine  
Was head of an old noble house enough,  
Not over-rich, you can't have everything,  
But such a man as riches rub against,  
Readily stick to, — one with a right to them  
Born in the blood : 't was in his very brow  
Always to knit itself against the world.  
Beforehand so, when that world stinted due  
Service and suit : the world ducks and defers.  
As such folks do, he had come up to Rome  
To better his fortune, and, since many years,  
Was friend and follower of a cardinal ;  
Waiting the rather thus on providence,  
That a shrewd younger poorer brother yet,  
The Abate Paolo, a regular priest,

Had long since tried his powers and found he swam

With the deftest on the Galilean pool :  
But then he was a web-foot, free o' the wave,  
And no ambiguous dab-chick hatched to strut,  
Humbled by any fond attempt to swim  
When fiercer fowl usurped his dunghill-top —  
A whole priest, Paolo, no mere piece of one,  
Like Guido tacked thus to the Church's tail !  
Guido moreover, as the head o' the house,  
Claiming the main prize, not the lesser luck,  
The centre lily, no mere chickweed fringe.

He waited and learned waiting, thirty years ;  
Got promise, missed performance — what would you have ?

No petty post rewards a nobleman  
For spending youth in splendid lackey-work,  
And there 's concurrence for each rarer prize ;  
When that falls, rougher hand and readier foot  
Push aside Guido spite of his black looks.  
The end was, Guido, when the warning showed,  
The first white hair i' the glass, gave up the game,

Determined on returning to his town,  
Making the best of bad incurable,  
Patching the old palace up and lingering there  
The customary life out with his kin,  
Where honor helps to spice the scanty bread.

Just as he trimmed his lamp and girt his loins  
To go his journey and be wise at home,  
In the right mood of disappointed worth,  
Who but Violante sudden spied her prey  
(Where was I with that angler-simile ?)

And threw her bait, Pompilia, where he sulked —

A gleam i' the gloom !

What if he gained thus much,  
Wrung out this sweet drop from the bitter Past,

Bore off this rose-bud from the prickly brake  
To justify such torn clothes and scratched hands,

And, after all, brought something back from Rome ?

Would not a wife serve at Arezzo well  
To light the dark house, lend a look of youth  
To the mother's face grown meagre, left alone  
And famished with the emptiness of hope,  
Old Donna Beatrice ? Wife you want  
Would you play family-representative,  
Carry you elder-brotherly, high and right  
O'er what may prove the natural petulance  
Of the third brother, younger, greedier still,  
Girolamo, also a fledgeling priest,  
Beginning life in turn with callow beak  
Agape for luck, no luck had stopped and stilled.

Such were the pinks and grays about the bait  
Persuaded Guido gulf down hook and all.

What constituted him so choice a catch,  
You question ? Past his prime and poor beside !  
Ask that of any she who knows the trade.  
Why first, here was a nobleman with friends,  
A palace one might run to and be safe

When presently the threatened fate should fall,  
A big-browed master to block doorway up,  
Parley with people bent on pushing by,  
And praying the mild Pietro quick clear scores :

Is birth a privilege and power or no ?  
Also — but judge of the result desired,  
By the price paid and manner of the sale.  
The Count was made woo, win and wed at once :

Asked, and was haled for answer, lest the heat  
Should cool, to San Lorenzo, one blind eve,  
And had Pompilia put into his arms  
O' the sly there, by a hasty candle-blink,  
With sanction of some priest-confederate  
Properly paid to make short work and sure.

So did old Pietro's daughter change her style  
For Guido Franceschini's lady-wife  
Ere Guido knew it well ; and why this haste  
And scramble and indecent secrecy ?  
" Lest Pietro, all the while in ignorance,  
Should get to learn, gainsay and break the match :

His peevishness had promptly put aside  
Such honor and refused the proffered boon,  
Pleased to become authoritative once.  
She remedied the wilful man's mistake — "  
Did our discreet Violante. Rather say,  
Thus did she lest the object of her game,  
Guido the gulled one, give him but a chance,  
A moment's respite, time for thinking twice,  
Might count the cost before he sold himself,  
And try the clink of coin they paid him with,

But coin paid, bargain struck and business done,

Once the clandestine marriage over thus,  
All parties made perforce the best o' the fact ;  
Pietro could play vast indignation off,  
Be ignorant and astounded, dupe, poor soul,  
Please you, of daughter, wife and son-in-law,  
While Guido found himself in flagrant fault,  
Must e'en do suit and service, soothe, subdue  
A father not unreasonably chafed,  
Bring him to terms by paying son's devoir.  
Pleasant initiation !

The end, this :  
Guido's broad back was saddled to bear all —  
Pietro, Violante, and Pompilia too, —  
Three lots cast confidently in one lap,  
Three dead-weights with one arm to lift the three

Out of their limbo up to life again.  
The Roman household was to strike fresh root  
In a new soil, graced with a novel name,  
Gilt with an alien glory, Aretine  
Henceforth and never Roman any more,  
By treaty and engagement ; thus it ran :  
Pompilia's dowry for Pompilia's self  
As a thing of course, — she paid her own expense ;

No loss nor gain there : but the couple, you see,  
They, for their part, turned over first of all  
Their fortune in its rags and rottenness  
To Guido, fusion and confusion, he  
And his with them and theirs, — whatever rag



With coin residuary fell on floor  
When Brother Paolo's energetic shake  
Should do the relics justice: since 't was  
thought,

Once vulnerable Pietro out of reach,  
That, left at Rome as representative,  
The Abate, backed by a potent patron here,  
And otherwise with purple flushing him,  
Might play a good game with the creditor,  
Make up a moiety which, great or small,  
Should go to the common stock — if anything,  
Guido's, so far repayment of the cost  
About to be, — and if, as looked more like,  
Nothing, — why, all the nobler cost were his  
Who guaranteed, for better or for worse,  
To Pietro and Violante, house and home,  
Kith and kin, with the pick of company  
And life o' the fat o' the land while life should  
last.

How say you to the bargain at first blush?  
Why did a middle-aged not-silly man  
Show himself thus besotted all at once?  
Quoth Solomon, one black eye does it all.

They went to Arezzo, — Pietro and his spouse,  
With just the dusk o' the day of life to spend,  
Eager to use the twilight, taste a treat,  
Enjoy for once with neither stay nor stint  
The luxury of lord-and-lady-ship,  
And realize the stuff and nonsense long  
A-simmer in their noddles; vent the fume  
Born there and bred, the citizen's conceit  
How fares nobility while crossing earth,  
What rampart or invisible body-guard  
Keeps off the taint of common life from such.  
They had not fed for nothing on the tales  
Of grantees who give banquets worthy Jove,  
Spending gold as if Plutus paid a whim,  
Served with obeisances as when . . . what God?  
I'm at the end of my tether; 't is enough  
You understand what they came primed to see:  
While Guido who should minister the sight,  
Stay all this qualmish greediness of soul  
With apples and with flagons — for his part,  
Was set on life diverse as pole from pole:  
Lust of the flesh, lust of the eye, — what else  
Was he just now awake from, sick and sage,  
After the very debauch they would begin? —  
Suppose such stuff and nonsense really were.  
That bubble, they were bent on blowing big,  
He had blown already till he burst his cheeks,  
And hence found soapuds bitter to the tongue.  
He hoped now to walk softly all his days  
In soberness of spirit, if haply so,  
Pinching and paring he might furnish forth  
A frugal board, bare sustenance, no more,  
Till times, that could not well grow worse,  
should mend.

Thus minded then, two parties mean to meet  
And make each other happy. The first week,  
And fancy strikes fact and explodes in full.  
"This," shrieked the Comparini, "this the  
Count.

The palace, the signorial privilege,  
The pomp and pageantry were promised us?  
For this have we exchanged our liberty,  
Our competence, our darling of a child?

To house as spectres in a sepulchre  
Under this black stone heap, the street's dis-  
grace,

Grimmest as that is of the gruesome town,  
And here pick garbage on a pewter plate,  
Or cough at verjuice dripped from earthen-  
ware?

Oh Via Vittoria, oh the other place  
I' the Pauline, did we give you up for this?  
Where's the foregone housekeeping good and  
gay,

The neighborliness, the companionship,  
The treat and feast when holidays came round,  
The daily feast that seemed no treat at all,  
Called common by the uncommon fools we  
were!

Even the sun that used to shine at Rome,  
Where is it? Robbed and starved and frozen  
too,

We will have justice, justice if there be!"  
Did not they shout, did not the town resound!  
Guido's old lady-mother Beatrice,  
Who since her husband, Count Tommaso's  
death,

Had held sole sway i' the house, — the doited  
crone

Slow to acknowledge, curtsy and abdicate, —  
Was recognized of true novelcr type,  
Dragon and devil. His brother Girolamo  
Came next in order: priest was he? The  
worse!

No way of winning him to leave his mumps  
And help the laugh against old ancestry  
And formal habits long since out of date,  
Letting his youth be patterned on the mode  
Approved of where Violante laid down law.  
Or did he brighten up by way of change,  
Dispose himself for affability?

The malapert, too complaisant by half  
To the alarmed young novice of a bride!  
Let him go buzz, betake himself elsewhere,  
Nor singe his fly-wings in the candle-flame!

Four months' probation of this purgatory,  
Dog-snap and cat-claw, curse and counterblast,  
The devil's self were sick of his own din;  
And Pietro, after trumpeting huge wrongs  
At church and market-place, pillar and post,  
Square's corner, street's end, now the palace-  
step

And now the wine-house bench — while, on her  
side,

Violante up and down was voluble  
In whatsoever pair of ears would perk  
From goody, gossip, cater-cousin and sib,  
Curious to peep at the inside of things  
And catch in the act pretentious poverty  
At its wits' end to keep appearance up,  
Make both ends meet, — nothing the vulgar  
loves

Like what this couple pitched them right and  
left.

Then, their worst done that way, both struck  
tent, marched

— Renounced their share o' the bargain, flung  
what dues

Guido was bound to pay, in Guido's face,  
Left their hearts'-darling, treasure of the twain

And so forth, the poor inexperienced bride,  
To her own devices, bade Arezzo rot,  
Cursed life signorial, and sought Rome once  
more.

I see the comment ready on your lip,  
"The better fortune, Guido's — free at least  
By this defection of the foolish pair,  
He could begin make profit in some sort  
Of the young bride and the new quietness,  
Lead his own life now, henceforth breathe un-  
plagued."

Could he? You know the sex like Guido's  
self.

Learn the Violante-nature!

Once in Rome,

By way of helping Guido lead such life,  
Her first act to inaugurate return  
Was, she got pricked in conscience: Jubilee  
Gave her the hint. Our Pope, as kind as just,  
Attained his eighty years, announced a boon  
Should make us bless the fact, held Jubilee —  
Short shrift, prompt pardon for the light  
offence,

And no rough dealing with the regular crime  
So this occasion were not suffered slip —  
Otherwise, sins commuted as before,  
Without the least abatement in the price.

Now, who had thought it? All this while, it  
seems,

Our sage Violante had a sin of a sort  
She must compound for now or not at all.  
Now be the ready riddance! She confessed  
Pompilia was a fable, not a fact:  
She never bore a child in her whole life.  
Had this child been a changeling, that were  
grace

In some degree, exchange is hardly theft;  
You take your stand on truth ere leap your  
lie:

Here was all lie, no touch of truth at all,  
All the lie hers — not even Pietro guessed  
He was as childless still as twelve years since.  
The babe had been a find i' the filth-heap, Sir,  
Catch from the kennel! There was found at  
Rome,

Down in the deepest of our social dregs,  
A woman who professed the wanton's trade  
Under the requisite thin coverture,  
*Communis meretrix* and washer-wife:  
The creature thus conditioned found by chance  
Motherhood like a jewel in the muck,  
And straightway either trafficked with her  
prize

Or listened to the tempter and let be, —  
Made pact abolishing her place and part  
In womankind, beast-fellowship indeed.  
She sold this babe eight months before its birth  
To our Violante, Pietro's honest spouse,  
Well-famed and widely-instanced as that crown  
To the husband, virtue in a woman's shape.  
She it was, bought, paid for, passed off the  
thing

As very flesh and blood and child of her  
Despite the flagrant fifty years, — and why?  
Partly to please old Pietro, fill his cup  
With wine at the late hour when lees are left,

And send him from life's feast rejoicingly, —  
Partly to cheat the rightful heirs, agape,  
Each uncle's cousin's brother's son of him,  
For that same principal of the usufruct  
It vexed him he must die and leave behind.

Such was the sin had come to be confessed.  
Which of the tales, the first or last, was true?  
Did she so sin once, or, confessing now,  
Sin for the first time? Either way you will.  
One sees a reason for the cheat: one sees  
A reason for a cheat in owning cheat  
Where no cheat had been. What of the revenge?  
What prompted the contrition all at once,  
Made the avowal easy, the shame slight?  
Why, prove they but Pompilia not their child,  
No child, no dowry! this, supposed their child,  
Had claimed what this, shown alien to their  
blood,

Claimed nowise: Guido's claim was through his  
wife,

Null then and void with hers. The biter bit,  
Do you see! For such repayment of the past,  
One might conceive the penitential pair  
Ready to bring their case before the courts,  
Publish their infamy to all the world  
And, arm in arm, go chuckling thence content.

Is this your view? 'T was Guido's anyhow,  
And colorable: he came forward then,  
Protested in his very bride's behalf  
Against this lie and all it led to, least  
Of all the loss o' the dowry; no! From her  
And him alike he would expunge the blot,  
Erase the brand of such a bestial birth,  
Participate in no hideous heritage  
Gathered from the gutter to be garnered up  
And glorified in a palace. Peter and Paul!  
But that who likes may look upon the pair  
Exposed in yonder church, and show his skill  
By saying which is eye and which is mouth  
Through those stabs thick and threefold, — but  
for that —

A strong word on the liars and their lie  
Might crave expression and obtain it, Sir!  
— Though prematurely, since there's more to  
come,

More that will shake your confidence in things  
Your cousin tells you, — may I be so bold?

This makes the first act of the farce, — anon  
The sombre element comes stealing in  
Till all is black or blood-red in the piece.  
Guido, thus made a laughing-stock abroad,  
A proverb for the market-place at home,  
Left alone with Pompilia now, this graft  
So reputable on his ancient stock,  
This plague-seed set to fester his sound flesh,  
What does the Count? Revenge him on his  
wife?

Unfasten at all risks to rid himself  
The noisome lazar-badge, fall foul of fate,  
And, careless whether the poor rag was ware  
O' the part it played, or helped unwittingly,  
Bid it go burn and leave his frayed flesh free?  
Plainly, did Guido open both doors wide,  
Spurn thence the cur-cast creature and clear  
scores

As man might, tempted in extreme like this ?  
 No, birth and breeding, and compassion too  
 Saved her such scandal. She was young, he  
 thought,  
 Not privy to the treason, punished most  
 I' the proclamation of it ; why make her  
 A party to the crime she suffered by ?  
 Then the black eyes were now her very own,  
 Not any more Violante's : let her live,  
 Lose in a new air, under a new sun,  
 The taint of the imputed parentage  
 Truly or falsely, take no more the touch  
 Of Pietro and his partner anyhow !  
 All might go well yet.

So she thought, herself,  
 It seems, since what was her first act and deed  
 When news came how these kindly ones at  
 Rome  
 Had stripped her naked to amuse the world  
 With spots here, spots there and spots every-  
 where ?

— For I should tell you that they noised abroad  
 Not merely the main scandal of her birth,  
 But slanders written, printed, published wide,  
 Pamphlets which set forth all the pleasantry  
 Of how the promised glory was a dream,  
 The power a bubble, and the wealth — why,  
 dust.

There was a picture, painted to the life,  
 Of those rare doings, that superlative  
 Initiation in magnificence  
 Conferred on a poor Roman family  
 By favor of Arezzo and her first  
 And famousest, the Franceschini there.  
 You had the Countship holding head aloft  
 Bravely although bespattered, shifts and straits  
 In keeping out o' the way o' the wheels o' the  
 world,

The comic of those home-contrivances  
 When the old lady-mother's wit was taxed  
 To find six clamorous mouths in food more  
 real  
 Than fruit plucked off the cobwebbed family-  
 tree,

Or acorns shed from its gilt mouldered frame —  
 Cold glories served up with stale fame for sauce.  
 What, I ask, — when the drunkenness of hate  
 Hiccaped return for hospitality,  
 Befooled the table they had feasted on,  
 Or say, — God knows I'll not prejudice the  
 case, —

Grievances thus distorted, magnified,  
 Colored by quarrel into calumny, —  
 What side did our Pompilia first espouse ?  
 Her first deliberate measure was, she wrote,  
 Pricked by some loyal impulse, straight to  
 Rome

And her husband's brother the Abate there,  
 Who, having managed to effect the match,  
 Might take men's censure for its ill success.  
 She made a clean breast also in her turn,  
 And qualified the couple properly,  
 Since whose departure, hell, she said, was  
 heaven,

And the house, late distracted by their peals,  
 Quiet as Carmel where the lilies live.  
 Herself had oftentimes complained : but why ?

All her complaints had been their prompting,  
 tales  
 Trumped up, devices to this very end.  
 Their game had been to thwart her husband's  
 love

And cross his will, malign his words and ways,  
 To reach this issue, furnish this pretence  
 For impudent withdrawal from their bond, —  
 Theft, indeed murder, since they meant no less  
 Whose last injunction to her simple self  
 Had been — what parents' — precept do you  
 think ?

That she should follow after with all speed,  
 Fly from her husband's house clandestinely,  
 Join them at Rome again, but first of all  
 Pick up a fresh companion in her flight,  
 So putting youth and beauty to fit use, —  
 Some gay dare-devil cloak-and-rapier spark  
 Capable of adventure, — helped by whom  
 She, some fine eve when lutes were in the air,  
 Having put poison in the posset-cup,  
 Laid hands on money, jewels and the like,  
 And, to conceal the thing with more effect,  
 By way of parting benediction too,  
 Fired the house, — one would finish famously  
 I' the tumult, slip out, scurry off and away  
 And turn up merrily at home once more.  
 Fact this, and not a dream o' the devil, Sir !  
 And more than this, a fact none dare dispute,  
 Word for word, such a letter did she write,  
 And such the Abate read, nor simply read  
 But gave all Rome to ruminate upon,  
 In answer to such charges as, I say,  
 The couple sought to be beforehand with.

The cause thus carried to the courts at Rome,  
 Guido away, the Abate had no choice  
 But stand forth, take his absent brother's part,  
 Defend the honor of himself beside.  
 He made what head he might against the pair,  
 Maintained Pompilia's birth legitimate  
 And all her rights intact — hers, Guido's now :  
 And so far by his policy turned their flank,  
 (The enemy being beforehand in the place)  
 That, — though the courts allowed the cheat for  
 fact,

Suffered Violante to parade her shame,  
 Publish her infamy to heart's content,  
 And let the tale o' the feigned birth pass for  
 proved, —

Yet they stopped there, refused to intervene  
 And dispossess the innocents, befooled  
 By gifts o' the guilty, at guilt's new caprice.  
 They would not take away the dowry now  
 Wrongfully given at first, nor bar at all  
 Succession to the aforesaid usufruct,  
 Established on a fraud, nor play the game  
 Of Pietro's child and now not Pietro's child  
 As it might suit the gamester's purpose. Thus  
 Was justice ever ridiculed in Rome :  
 Such be the double verdicts favored here  
 Which send away both parties to a suit  
 Nor puffed up nor cast down, — for each a  
 crumb

Of right, for neither of them the whole loaf.  
 Whence, on the Comparini's part, appeal —  
 Counter-appeal on Guido's, — that's the game :  
 And so the matter stands, even to this hour,



Banded as balls are in a tennis-court,  
And so might stand, unless some heart broke  
first,  
Till doomsday.

Leave it thus, and now revert  
To the old Arezzo whence we moved to Rome.  
We've had enough o' the parents, false or true,  
Now for a touch o' the daughter's quality.  
The start 's fair henceforth, every obstacle  
Out of the young wife's footpath, she 's alone,  
Left to walk warily now : how does she walk ?  
Why, once a dwelling's threshold marked and  
crossed

In rubric by the enemy on his rounds  
As eligible, as fit place of prey,  
Baffle him henceforth, keep him out who can !  
Stop up the door at the first hint of hoof,  
Presently at the window taps a horn,  
And Satan 's by your fireside, never fear !  
Pompilia, left alone now, found herself ;  
Found herself young too, sprightly, fair enough,  
Matched with a husband old beyond his age  
(Though that was something like four times  
her own)

Because of cares past, present and to come :  
Found too the house dull and its inmates dead,  
So, looked outside for light and life.

And love  
Did in a trice turn up with life and light, —  
The man with the aureole, sympathy made  
flesh,

The all-consoling Caponsacchi, Sir !  
A priest — what else should the consoler be ?  
With goodly shoulder-blade and proper leg,  
A portly make and a symmetric shape,  
And curls that clustered to the tonsure quite.  
This was a bishop in the bud, and now  
A canon full-blown so far : priest, and priest  
Nowise exorbitantly overworked,  
The courtly Christian, not so much Saint Paul  
As a saint of Cæsar's household : there posed he  
Sending his god-glance after his shot shaft,  
Apollos turned Apollo, while the snake  
Pompilia writhed transfixed through all her  
spires.

He, not a visitor at Guido's house,  
Scarce an acquaintance, but in prime request  
With the magnates of Arezzo, was seen here,  
Heard there, felt everywhere in Guido's path  
If Guido's wife's path be her husband's too.  
Now he threw comfits at the theatre  
Into her lap, — what harm in Carnival ?  
Now he pressed close till his foot touched her  
gown,  
His hand brushed hers, — how help on prom-  
enade ?

And, ever on weighty business, found his steps  
Incline to a certain haunt of doubtful fame  
Which fronted Guido's palace by mere chance ;  
While — how do accidents sometimes com-  
bine ! —

Pompilia chose to cloister up her charms  
Just in a chamber that o'erlooked the street,  
Sat there to pray, or peep thence at mankind.

This passage of arms and wits amused the town.  
At last the husband lifted eyebrow, — bent

On day-book and the study how to wring  
Half the due vintage from the worn-out vines  
At the villa, tease a quarter the old rent  
From the farmstead, tenants swore would  
tumble soon, —

Pricked up his ear a-singing day and night  
With "ruin, ruin ;" — and so surprised at  
last —

Why, what else but a titter ? Up he jumps.  
Back to mind come those scratchings at the  
grange,

Prints of the paw about the outhouse ; rife  
In his head at once again are word and wink,  
Mum here and *budget* there, the smell o' the fox,  
The musk o' the gallant. " Friends, there 's  
falseness here ! "

The proper help of friends in such a strait  
Is waggery, the world over. Laugh him free  
O' the regular jealous-fit that 's incident  
To all old husbands that wed brisk young wives,  
And he 'll go duly docile all his days.

" Somebody counts your wife, Count ? Where  
and when ?

How and why ? Mere horn-madness : have a  
care !

Your lady loves her own room, sticks to it.  
Locks herself in for hours, you say yourself.  
And — what, it 's Caponsacchi means you  
harm ?

The Canon ? We caress him, he 's the world's,  
A man of such acceptance, — never dream,  
Though he were fifty times the fox you fear,  
He 'd risk his brush for your particular chick,  
When the wide town 's his hen-roost ! Fie o'  
the fool ! "

So they dispensed their comfort of a kind,  
Guido at last cried, " Something is in the air,  
Under the earth, some plot against my peace.  
The trouble of eclipse hangs overhead ;  
How it should come of that officious orb  
Your Canon in my system, you must say :  
I say — that from the pressure of this spring  
Began the chime and interchange of bells,  
Ever one whisper, and one whisper more,  
And just one whisper for the silvery last,  
Till all at once a-row the bronze-throats burst  
Into a larum both significant  
And sinister : stop it I must and will.  
Let Caponsacchi take his hand away  
From the wire ! — disport himself in other paths  
Than lead precisely to my palace-gate, —  
Look where he likes except one window's way  
Where, cheek on hand, and elbow set on sill,  
Happens to lean and say her litanies  
Every day and all day long, just my wife —  
Or wife and Caponsacchi may fare the worse ! "

Admire the man's simplicity. " I 'll do this,  
I 'll not have that, I 'll punish and prevent ! " —  
'T is easy saying. But to a fray, you see,  
Two parties go. The badger shows his teeth :  
The fox nor lies down sheep-like nor dares fight.  
Oh, the wife knew the appropriate warfare well  
The way to put suspicion to the blush !  
At first hint of remonstrance, up and out  
I' the face of the world, you found her : she  
could speak,

State her case, — Franceschini was a name,  
 Guido had his full share of foes and friends: —  
 Why should not she call these to arbitrate?  
 She bade the Governor do governance,  
 Cried out on the Archbishop, — why, there  
 now,  
 Take him for sample! Three successive times  
 Had he to reconduct her by main force  
 From where she took her station opposite  
 His shut door, — on the public steps thereto,  
 Wringing her hands, when he came out to see,  
 And shrieking all her wrongs forth at his foot, —  
 Back to the husband and the house she fled:  
 Judge if that husband warmed him in the face  
 Of friends or frowned on foes as heretofore!  
 Judge if he missed the natural grin of folk,  
 Or lacked the customary compliment  
 Of cap and bells, the luckless husband's fit!

So it went on and on till — who was right?  
 One merry April morning, Guido woke  
 After the cuckoo, so late, near noonday,  
 With an inordinate yawning of the jaws,  
 Ears plugged, eyes gummed together, palate,  
 tongue  
 And teeth one mud-paste made of poppy-milk;  
 And found his wife down, his seritoire the  
 worse

For a rummage, — jewelry that was, was not,  
 Some money there had made itself wings too, —  
 The door lay wide and yet the servants slept  
 Sound as the dead, or dozed, which does as well.  
 In short, Pompilia, she who, candid soul,  
 Had not so much as spoken all her life  
 To the Canon, nay, so much as peeped at him  
 Between her fingers while she prayed in  
 church, —

This lamb-like innocent of fifteen years  
 (Such she was grown to by this time of day)  
 Had simply put an opiate in the drink  
 Of the whole household overnight, and then  
 Got up and gone about her work secure,  
 Laid hand on this waif and the other stray,  
 Spoiled the Philistine and marched out of doors  
 In company of the Canon, who, Lord's love,  
 What with his daily duty at the church,  
 Nightly devoir where ladies congregate,  
 Had something else to mind, assure yourself,  
 Beside Pompilia, paragon though she be,  
 Or notice if her nose were sharp or blunt!  
 Well, anyhow, albeit impossible,  
 Both of them were together jollily  
 Jaunting it Rome-ward, half-way there by this,  
 While Guido was left go and get undrugged,  
 Gather his wits up, groaningly give thanks  
 When neighbors crowded round him to condole.  
 "Ah," quoth a gossip, "well I mind me now,  
 The Count did always say he thought he felt  
 He feared as if this very chance might fall!  
 And when a man of fifty finds his corns  
 Ache and his joints throb, and foresees a storm,  
 Though neighbors laugh and say the sky is  
 clear,

Let us henceforth believe him weatherwise!"  
 Then was the story told, I'll cut you short:  
 All neighbors knew: no mystery in the world.  
 The lovers left at nightfall — overnight  
 Had Caponsacchi come to carry off

Pompilia, — not alone, a friend of his,  
 One Guillichini, the more conversant  
 With Guido's housekeeping that he was just  
 A cousin of Guido's and might play a prank —  
 (Have not you too a cousin that's a wag?)  
 — Lord and a Canon also, — what would you  
 have?

Such are the red-clothed milk-swollen poppy-  
 heads  
 That stand and stiffen 'mid the wheat o' the  
 Church! —

This worthy came to aid, abet his best.  
 And so the house was ransacked, booty bagged,  
 The lady led downstairs and out of doors  
 Guided and guarded till, the city passed,  
 A carriage lay convenient at the gate.  
 Good-by to the friendly Canon; the loving one  
 Could peradventure do the rest himself.  
 In jumps Pompilia, after her the priest,  
 "Whip, driver! Money makes the mare to go,  
 And we've a bagful. Take the Roman road!"  
 So said the neighbors. This was eight hours  
 since.

Guido heard all, swore the befitting oaths,  
 Shook off the relics of his poison-drench,  
 Got horse, was fairly started in pursuit  
 With never a friend to follow, found the track  
 Fast enough, 't was the straight Perugia way,  
 Trod soon upon their very heels, too late  
 By a minute only at Camoscia, reached  
 Chiusi, Foligno, ever the fugitives  
 Just ahead, just out as he galloped in,  
 Getting the good news ever fresh and fresh,  
 Till, lo, at the last stage of all, last post  
 Before Rome, — as we say, in sight of Rome  
 And safety (there's impunity at Rome  
 For priests you know) at — what's the little  
 place? —

What some call Castelnovo, some just call  
 The Osteria, because o' the post-house inn, —  
 There, at the journey's all but end, it seems,  
 Triumph deceived them and undid them both,  
 Secure they might foretaste felicity  
 Nor fear surprisal: so, they were surprised.  
 There did they halt at early evening, there  
 Did Guido overtake them: 't was daybreak;  
 He came in time enough, not time too much,  
 Since in the courtyard stood the Canon's self  
 Urging the drowsy stable-grooms to haste  
 Harness the horses, have the journey end,  
 The trifling four-hours' running, so reach  
 Rome.

And the other runaway, the wife? Upstairs,  
 Still on the couch where she had spent the  
 night,

One couch in one room, and one room for both  
 So gained they six hours, so were lost there-  
 by.

Sir, what's the sequel? Lover and beloved  
 Fall on their knees? No impudence serves  
 here?

They beat their breasts and beg for easy death,  
 Confess this, that and the other? — anyhow  
 Confess there wanted not some likelihood  
 To the supposition so preposterous,  
 That, O Pompilia, thy sequestered eyes

Had noticed, straying o'er the prayer-book's edge,

More of the Canon than that black his coat,  
Buckled his shoes were, broad his hat of brim :

And that, O Canon, thy religious care  
Had breathed too soft a *benedicite*

To banish trouble from a lady's breast  
So lonely and so lovely, nor so lean !

This you expect ? Indeed, then, much you err.  
Not to such ordinary end as this

Had Caponsacchi flung the cassock far,  
Doffed the priest, donned the perfect cavalier.

The die was cast : over shoes over boots :

And just as she, I presently shall show,  
Pompilia, soon looked Helen to the life,

Recurrent upstairs in her pink and white,  
So, in the inn-yard, bold as 't were Troy-town,

There strutted Paris in correct costume,  
Cloak, cap and feather, no appointment

missed,

Even to a wicked-looking sword at side,

He seemed to find and feel familiar at.

Nor wanted words as ready and as big

As the part he played, the bold abashless one.

" I interposed to save your wife from death,  
Yourself from shame, the true and only shame :

Ask your own conscience else ! — or, failing  
that,

What I have done I answer, anywhere,

Here, if you will ; you see I have a sword :

Or, since I have a tonsure as you taunt,

At Rome, by all means, — priests to try a  
priest.

Only, speak where your wife's voice can reply ! "

And then he fingered at the sword again.

So, Guido called, in aid and witness both,

The Public Force. The Commissary came,

Officers also ; they secured the priest ;

Then, for his more confusion, mounted up

With him, a guard on either side, the stair  
To the bedroom where still slept or feigned a

sleep

His paramour and Guido's wife : in burst

The company and bade her wake and rise.

Her defence ? This. She woke, saw, sprang  
upright

I' the midst and stood as terrible as truth,

Sprang to her husband's side, caught at the  
sword

That hung there useless, — since they held each  
hand

O' the lover, had disarmed him properly, —

And in a moment off flew the bright thing

Full in the face of Guido : but for help

O' the guards, who held her back and pinioned  
her

With pains enough, she had finished you my  
tale

With a flourish of red all round it, pinked her  
man

Prettily ; but she fought them one to six.

They stopped that, — but her tongue continued  
free :

She spat forth such invective at her spouse,  
O'erfrothed him with such foam of murderer,

Thief, pandar — that the popular tide soon  
turned,

The favor of the very *shirri*, straight  
Ebbd from the husband, set towards his wife ;  
People cried " Hands off, pay a priest re-  
spect ! "

And " persecuting fiend " and " martyred  
saint "

Began to lead a measure from lip to lip.

But facts are facts and flinch not ; stubborn  
things,

And the question " Prithee, friend, how comes  
my purse

I' the poke of you ? " — admits of no reply.

Here was a priest found out in masquerade,  
A wife caught playing truant if no more ;

While the Count, mortified in mien enough,

And, nose to face, an added palm in length,

Was plain writ " husband " every piece of him ;  
Capture once made, release could hardly be.

Beside, the prisoners both made appeal,

" Take us to Rome ! "

Taken to Rome they were ;

The husband trooping after, piteously,

Tail between legs, no talk of triumph now —

No honor set firm on its feet once more

On two dead bodies of the guilty, — nay,

No dubious salve to honor's broken pate

From chance that, after all, the hurt might  
seem

A skin-deep matter, scratch that leaves no  
scar :

For Guido's first search, — ferreting, poor soul,

Here, there and everywhere in the vile place

Abandoned to him when their backs were  
turned,

Found — furnishing a last and best regale —

All the love-letters bandied 'twixt the pair

Since the first timid trembling into life

O' the love-star till its stand at fiery full.

Mad prose, mad verse, fears, hopes, triumph,  
despair,

Avowal, disclaimer, plans, dates, names, — was  
naught

Wanting to prove, if proof consoles at all,

That this had been but the fifth act o' the piece

Whereof the due proemium, months ago,

These playwrights had put forth, and ever  
since

Matured the middle, added 'neath his nose.

He might go cross himself : the case was  
clear.

Therefore to Rome with the clear case ; there  
plead

Each party its best, and leave law do each  
right,

Let law shine forth and show, as God in heaven,

Vice prostrate, virtue pedestalled at last,

The triumph of truth ! What else shall glad  
our gaze

When once authority has knit the brow

And set the brain behind it to decide

Between the wolf and sheep turned litigants ?

" This is indeed a business," law shook head :

" A husband charges hard things on a wife,

The wife as hard o' the husband : whose fault  
here ?



A wife that flies her husband's house, does  
wrong :

The male friend's interference looks amiss,  
Lends a suspicion : but suppose the wife,  
On the other hand, be jeopardized at home —  
Nay, that she simply hold, ill-groundedly,  
An apprehension she is jeopardized. —  
And further, if the friend partake the fear,  
And, in a commendable charity  
Which trusteth all, trust her that she mis-  
trusts, —

What do they but obey law — natural law ?  
Pretence may this be and a cloak for sin,  
And circumstances that concur i' the close  
Hint as much, loudly — yet scarce loud enough  
To drown the answer 'strange may yet be  
true' :

Innocence often looks like guiltiness.  
The accused declare that in thought, word and  
deed,

Innocent were they both from first to last  
As male-babe haply laid by female-babe  
At church on edge of the baptismal font  
Together for a minute, perfect-pure.  
Difficult to believe, yet possible,  
As witness Joseph, the friend's patron-saint.  
The night at the inn — there charity nigh  
chokes

Ere swallow what they both asseverate ;  
Though down the gullet faith may feel it go,  
When mindful of what flight fatigued the  
flesh

Out of its faculty and fleshliness,  
Subdued it to the soul, as saints assure :  
So long a flight necessitates a fall  
On the first bed, though in a lion's den,  
And the first pillow, though the lion's back :  
Difficult to believe, yet possible.  
Last come the letters' bundled beastliness —  
Authority repugns give glance to — nay,  
Turns head, and almost lets her whip-lash fall ;  
Yet here a voice cries 'Respite !' from the  
clouds —

The accused, both in a tale, protest, disclaim,  
Abominate the horror : 'Not my hand'  
Asserts the friend — 'Nor mine' chimes in the  
wife,

'Seeing I have no hand, nor write at all.'  
Illiterate — for she goes on to ask,  
What if the friend did pen now verse now  
prose,

Commend it to her notice now and then ?  
'T was pearls to swine : she read no more than  
wrote,

And kept no more than read, for as they fell  
She ever brushed the burr-like things away.  
Or, better, burned them, quenched the fire in  
smoke.

As for this fardel, filth and foolishness,  
She sees it now the first time : burn it too !  
While for his part the friend vows ignorance  
Alike of what bears his name and bears hers :  
'T is forgery, a felon's masterpiece,  
And, as 'tis said the fox still finds the stench,  
Home-manufacture and the husband's work.  
Though he confesses, the ingenuous friend,  
That certain missives, letters of a sort,  
Flighty and feeble, which assigned themselves

To the wife, no less have fallen, far too oft,  
In his path : wherefrom he understood just  
this —

That were they verily the lady's own,  
Why, she who penned them, since he never saw  
Save for one minute the mere face of her,  
Since never had there been the interchange  
Of word with word between them all their life,  
Why, she must be the fondest of the frail,  
And fit, she for the 'apage' he flung,  
Her letters for the flame they went to feed !  
But, now he sees her face and hears her speech,  
Much he repents him if, in fancy-freak  
For a moment the minutest measurable,  
He coupled her with the first flimsy word  
O' the self-spun fabric some mean spider-soul  
Furnished forth : stop his films and stamp on  
him !

Never was such a tangled knottiness,  
But thus authority cuts the Gordian through,  
And mark how her decision suits the need !  
Here's troublesomeness, scandal on both sides,  
Plenty of fault to find, no absolute crime :  
Let each side own its fault and make amends !  
What does a priest in cavalier's attire  
Consorting publicly with vagrant wives  
In quarters close as the confessional,  
Though innocent of harm ? 'T is harm enough :  
Let him pay it, — say, be relegate a good  
Three years, to spend in some place not too far  
Nor yet too near, midway 'twixt near and far,  
Rome and Arezzo, — Civita we choose,  
Where he may lounge away time, live at large,  
Find out the proper function of a priest,  
Nowise an exile, — that were punishment, —  
But one our love thus keeps out of harm's way  
Not more from the husband's anger than, may-  
hap,

His own . . . say, indiscretion, waywardness,  
And wanderings when Easter eves grow warm.  
For the wife, — well, our best step to take with  
her,

On her own showing, were to shift her root  
From the old cold shade and unhappy soil  
Into a generous ground that fronts the south :  
Where, since her callow soul, a-shiver late,  
Craved simply warmth and called mere pass-  
ers-by

To the rescue, she should have her fill of shine.  
Do house and husband hinder and not help ?  
Why then, forget both and stay here at peace,  
Come into our community, enroll  
Herself along with those good Convertites,  
Those sinners saved, those Magdalens re-made,  
Accept their ministration, well bestow  
Her body and patiently possess her soul,  
Until we see what better can be done.  
Last for the husband : if his tale prove true,  
Well is he rid of two domestic plagues —  
Both wife that ailed, do whatsoever he would,  
And friend of hers that undertook the cure.  
See, what a double load we lift from breast !  
Off he may go, return, resume old life,  
Laugh at the priest here and Pompilia there  
In limbo each and punished for their pains,  
And grateful tell the inquiring neighborhood —  
In Rome, no wrong but has its remedy."  
The case was closed. Now, am I fair or no

In what I utter? Do I state the facts,  
Having forechosen a side? I promised you!

The Canon Caponsacchi, then, was sent  
To change his garb, re-trim his tonsure, tie  
The clerkly silk round, every plait correct,  
Make the impressive entry on his place  
Of relegation, thrill his Cività,  
As Ovid, a like sufferer in the cause,  
Planted a primrose-patch by Pontus : where, —  
What with much culture of the sonnet-stave  
And converse with the aborigines,  
Soft savagery of eyes unused to roll,  
And hearts that all awry went pit-a-pat  
And wanted setting right in charity, —  
What were a couple of years to while away?  
Pompilia, as enjoined, betook herself  
To the aforesaid Convertites, soft sisterhood  
In Via Lungara, where the light ones live.  
Spin, pray, then sing like linnets o'er the flax.  
"Anywhere, anyhow, out of my husband's  
house

Is heaven," cried she, — was therefore suited so.  
But for Count Guido Franceschini, he —  
The injured man thus righted — found no hea-  
ven

I' the house when he returned there, I engage,  
Was welcomed by the city turned upside down  
In a chorus of inquiry. "What, back — you?  
And no wife? Left her with the Penitents?  
Ah, being young and pretty, 't were a shame  
To have her whipped in public : leave the job  
To the priests who understand! Such priests  
as yours —

(Pontifex Maximus whipped Vestals once)  
Our madcap Caponsacchi : think of him!  
So, he fired up, showed fight and skill of fence?  
Ay, you drew also, but you did not fight!  
The wiser, 't is a word and a blow with him,  
True Caponsacchi, of old Head-i'-the-Sack  
That fought at Fiesole ere Florence was :  
He had done enough, to firk you were too much.  
And did the little lady menace you,  
Make at your breast with your own harmless  
sword?

The spitfire! Well, thank God you're safe and  
sound,

Have kept the sixth commandment whether or  
no

The lady broke the seventh : I only wish  
I were as saint-like, could contain me so.  
I, the poor sinner, fear I should have left  
Sir Priest no nose-tip to turn up at me!"  
You, Sir, who listen but interpose no word,  
Ask yourself, had you borne a baiting thus?  
Was it enough to make a wise man mad?  
Oh, but I'll have your verdict at the end!

Well, not enough, it seems : such mere hurt  
falls,

Frets awhile, aches long, then grows less and  
less,

And so gets done with. Such was not the  
scheme

O' the pleasant Comparini : on Guido's wound  
Ever in due succession, drop by drop,  
Came slow distilment from the alenbic here  
Set on to simmer by Canidian hate,

Corrosives keeping the man's misery raw.  
First fire-drop, — when he thought to make the  
best

O' the bad, to wring from out the sentence  
passed,

Poor, pitiful, absurd although it were,  
Yet what might eke him out result enough  
And make it worth while to have had the right  
And not the wrong i' the matter judged at  
Rome.

Inadequate her punishment, no less  
Punished in some slight sort his wife had been,  
Then, punished for adultery, what else?  
On such admitted crime he thought to seize,  
And institute procedure in the courts  
Which cut corruption of this kind from man,  
Cast loose a wife proved loose and castaway :  
He claimed in due form a divorce at least.

This claim was met now by a counterclaim :  
Pompilia sought divorce from bed and board  
Of Guido, whose outrageous cruelty,  
Whose mother's malice and whose brother's hate  
Were just the white o' the charge, such dread-  
ful depths

Blackened its centre, — hints of worse than  
hate,

Love from that brother, by that Guido's guile.  
That mother's prompting. Such reply was  
made,

So was the engine loaded, wound up, sprung  
On Guido, who received bolt full in breast ;  
But no less bore up, giddily perhaps.  
He had the Abate Paolo still in Rome,  
Brother and friend and fighter on his side :  
They rallied in a measure, met the foe  
Manlike, joined battle in the public courts,  
As if to shame supine law from her sloth :  
And waiting her award, let beat the while  
Arezzo's banter, Rome's buffoonery,  
On this ear and on that ear, deaf alike,  
Safe from worse outrage. Let a scorpion nip,  
And never mind till he contorts his tail!  
But there was sting i' the creature ; thus it  
struck.

Guido had thought in his simplicity —  
That lying declaration of remorse,  
That story of the child which was no child  
And motherhood no motherhood at all,  
— That even this sin might have its sort of good  
Inasmuch as no question more could be, —  
Call it false, call the story true, — no claim  
Of further parentage pretended now :  
The parents had abjured all right, at least,  
I' the woman owned his wife : to plead right  
still

Were to declare the abjuration false :  
He was relieved from any fear henceforth  
Their hands might touch, their breath defile  
again

Pompilia with his name upon her yet.  
Well, no : the next news was, Pompilia's health  
Demanded change after full three long weeks  
Spent in devotion with the Sisterhood, —  
Which rendered sojourn — so the court opined —  
Too irksome, since the convent's walls were high  
And windows narrow, nor was air enough  
Nor light enough, but all looked prison-like,

The last thing which had come in the court's head.

Propose a new expedient therefore, — this !  
She had demanded — had obtained indeed,  
By intervention of her pitying friends  
Or perhaps lovers — (beauty in distress,  
Beauty whose tale is the town-talk beside,  
Never lacks friendship's arm about her neck) —

Obtained remission of the penalty,  
Permitted transfer to some private place  
Where better air, more light, new food might soothe —

Incarcerated (call it, all the same)  
At some sure friend's house she must keep inside,

Be found in at requirement fast enough, —  
*Domus pro carcere*, in Roman style.

You keep the house i' the main, as most men do,

And all good women: but free otherwise,  
Should friends arrive, to lodge them and what not ?

And such a *domum*, such a dwelling-place,  
Having all Rome to choose from, where chose she ?

What house obtained Pompilia's preference ?  
Why, just the Comparini's — just, do you mark,  
Theirs who renounced all part and lot in her  
So long as Guido could be robbed thereby,  
And only fell back on relationship  
And found their daughter safe and sound again  
When that might surelier stab him: yes, the pair

Who, as I told you, first had baited hook  
With this poor gilded fly Pompilia-thing,  
Then caught the fish, pulled Guido to the shore

And gutted him, — now found a further use  
For the bait, would trail the gauze wings yet again

I' the way of what new swimmer passed their stand.

They took Pompilia to their hiding-place —  
Not in the heart of Rome as formerly,  
Under observance, subject to control —  
But out o' the way, — or in the way, who knows ?

That blind mute villa lurking by the gate  
At Via Paulina, not so hard to miss  
By the honest eye, easy enough to find  
In twilight by marauders: where perchance  
Some muffled Caponsacchi might repair,  
Employ odd moments when he too tried change,  
Found that a friend's abode was pleasanter  
Than relegation, penance and the rest.

Come, here's the last drop does its worst to wound,

Here's Guido poisoned to the bone, you say,  
Your boasted still's full strain and strength: not so !

One master-squeeze from screw shall bring to birth

The hoard i' the heart o' the toad, hell's quintessence.

He learned the true convenience of the change,  
And why a convent lacks the cheerful hearts

And helpful hands which female straits require,

When, in the blind mute villa by the gate,  
Pompilia — what ? sang, danced, saw company ?

— Gave birth, Sir, to a child, his son and heir,  
Or Guido's heir and Caponsacchi's son.

I want your word now: what do you say to this ?

What would say little Arezzo and great Rome,  
And what did God say and the devil say,  
One at each ear o' the man, the husband, now  
The father ? Why, the overburdened mind  
Broke down, what was a brain became a blaze.  
In fury of the moment — (that first news  
Fell on the Count among his vines, it seems,  
Doing his farm-work,) — why, he summoned

steward,  
Called in the first four hard hands and stout hearts

From field and furrow, poured forth his appeal,  
Not to Rome's law and gospel any more,  
But this clown with a mother or a wife,  
That clodpole with a sister or a son :  
And, whereas law and gospel held their peace,  
What wonder if the sticks and stones cried out ?

All five soon somehow found themselves at Rome,

At the villa door: there was the warmth and light —

The sense of life so just an inch inside —  
Some angel must have whispered "One more chance !"

He gave it: bade the others stand aside:  
Knocked at the door, — "Who is it knocks ?" cried one.

"I will make," surely Guido's angel urged,  
"One final essay, last experiment,  
Speak the word, name the name from out all names,

Which, if, — as doubtless strong illusions are,  
And strange disguisings whereby truth seems false,

And, since I am but man. I dare not do  
God's work until assured I see with God, —  
If I should bring my lips to breathe that name  
And they be innocent, — nay, by one mere touch

Of innocence redeemed from utter guilt, —  
That name will bar the door and bid fate pass.  
I will not say 'It is a messenger,  
A neighbor, even a belated man,  
Much less your husband's friend, your husband's self: '

At such appeal the door is bound to ope.  
But I will say " — here's rhetoric and to spare !  
Why, Sir, the stumbling-block is cursed and kicked,

Block though it be; the name that brought offence

Will bring offence: the burnt child dreads the fire

Although that fire feed on some taper-wick  
Which never left the altar nor singed a fly :  
And had a harmless man tripped you by chance,



How would you wait him, stand or step aside,  
When next you heard he rolled your way?  
Enough.

"Giuseppe Caponsacchi!" Guido cried;  
And open flew the door: enough again.  
Vengeance, you know, burst, like a mountain-  
wave

That holds a monster in it, over the house,  
And wiped its filthy four walls free at last  
With a wash of hell-fire, — father, mother,  
wife,

Killed them all, bathed his name clean in their  
blood,

And, reeking so, was caught, his friends and he,  
Haled hither and imprisoned yesternight  
O' the day all this was.

Now, Sir, tale is told,  
Of how the old couple come to lie in state  
Though hacked to pieces, — never, the expert  
say,

So thorough a study of stabbing — while the  
wife

(Viper-like, very difficult to slay)

Writhes still through every ring of her, poor  
wretch,

At the Hospital hard by — survives, we'll  
hope,

To somewhat purify her putrid soul  
By full confession, make so much amends  
While time lasts; since at day's end die she  
must.

For Caponsacchi, — why, they'll have him  
here,

As hero of the adventure, who so fit

To figure in the coming Carnival?

'T will make the fortune of whate'er saloon  
Hears him recount, with helpful cheek, and eye  
Hotly indignant now, now dewy-dimmed,

The incidents of flight, pursuit, surprise,  
Capture, with hints of kisses all between —

While Guido, wholly unromantic spouse,

No longer fit to laugh at since the blood

Gave the broad farce an all too brutal air,

Why, he and those four luckless friends of his

May tumble in the straw this bitter day —

Laid by the heels i' the New Prison, I hear.

To bide their trial, since trial, and for the life,  
Follows if but for form's sake: yes, indeed!

But with a certain issue: no dispute,

"Try him," bids law: formalities oblige:

But as to the issue, — look me in the face! —

If the law thinks to find them guilty, Sir,

Master or men — touch one hair of the five,

Then I say in the name of all that's left

Of honor in Rome, civility i' the world

Whereof Rome boasts herself the central  
source, —

There's an end to all hope of justice more.

Astræa's gone indeed, let hope go too!

Who is it dares impugn the natural law,

Deny God's word "the faithless wife shall  
die"?

What, are we blind? How can we fail to  
learn

This crowd of miseries make the man a mark,

Accumulate on one devoted head

For our example? — yours and mine who read  
Its lesson thus — "Henceforward let none dare  
Stand, like a natural in the public way,

Letting the very urchins twitch his beard

And tweak his nose, to earn a nickname so,

Be styled male-Grissel or else modern Job!"

Had Guido, in the twinkling of an eye,

Summed up the reckoning, promptly paid him  
self,

That morning when he came up with the pair

At the wayside inn, — exacted his just debt

By aid of what first mattock, pitchfork, axe

Came to hand in the helpful stable-yard,

And with that axe, if providence so pleased,

Cloven each head, by some Rolando-stroke,

In one clean cut from crown to clavicle,

— Slain the priest-gallant, the wife-paramour,

Sticking, for all defence, in each skull's cleft

The rhyme and reason of the stroke thus dealt,

To wit, those letters and last evidence

Of shame, each package in its proper place, —

Bidding, who pitied, undistend the skulls. —

I say, the world had praised the man. But no!

That were too plain, too straight, too simply  
just!

He hesitates, calls law forsooth to help.

And law, distasteful to who calls in law

When honor is beforehand and would serve,

What wonder if law hesitate in turn,

Plead her disuse to calls o' the kind, reply

(Smiling a little), "'T is yourself assess

The worth of what's lost, sum of damage done

What you touched with so light a finger-tip,

You whose concern it was to grasp the thing,

Why must law gird herself and grapple with?

Law, alien to the actor whose warm blood

Asks heat from law whose veins run lukewarm  
milk, —

What you dealt lightly with, shall law make out  
Heinous forsooth?"

Sir, what's the good of law  
In a case o' the kind? None, as she all but says.

Call in law when a neighbor breaks your fence,

Cribs from your field, tampers with rent or  
lease,

Touches the purse or pocket, — but woos your  
wife?

No: take the old way trod when men were  
men!

Guido preferred the new path, — for his pains,  
Stuck in a quagmire, floundered worse and  
worse

Until he managed somehow scramble back

Into the safe sure rutted road once more,

Revenge his own wrong like a gentleman.

Once back 'mid the familiar prints, no doubt

He made too rash amends for his first fault.

Vaulted too loftily over what barred him late,

And lit i' the mire again, — the common  
chance,

The natural over-energy: the deed

Maladroit yields three deaths instead of one,

And one life left: for where's the Canon's  
corpse?

All which is the worse for Guido, but, be  
frank —

The better for you and me and all the world,

Husbands of wives, especially in Rome.  
The thing is put right, in the old place. — ay,  
The rod hangs on its nail behind the door,  
Fresh from the brine : a matter I commend  
To the notice, during Carnival that 's near,  
Of a certain what 's-his-name and jackanapes  
Somewhat too civil of eves with lute and song  
About a house here, where I keep a wife.  
(You, being his cousin, may go tell him so.)

## III

## THE OTHER HALF-ROME

Another day that finds her living yet,  
Little Pompilia, with the patient brow  
And lamentable smile on those poor lips,  
And, under the white hospital-array,  
A flower-like body, to frighten at a bruise  
You'd think, yet now, stabbed through and  
through again.

Alive i' the ruins. 'T is a miracle.  
It seems that, when her husband struck her  
first,

She prayed Madonna just that she might live  
So long as to confess and be absolved ;  
And whether it was that, all her sad life long  
Never before successful in a prayer,  
This prayer rose with authority too dread, —  
Or whether, because earth was hell to her,  
By compensation, when the blackness broke  
She got one glimpse of quiet and the cool blue,  
To show her for a moment such things were, —  
Or else, — as the Augustinian Brother thinks,  
The friar who took confession from her lip, —  
When a probationary soul that moved  
From nobleness to nobleness, as she,  
Over the rough way of the world, succumbs,  
Bloodies its last thorn with unflinching foot,  
The angels love to do their work betimes,  
Stanch some wounds here nor leave so much  
for God.

Who knows ? However it be, confessed, ab-  
solved,

She lies, with overplus of life beside  
To speak and right herself from first to last,  
Right the friend also, lamb-pure, lion-brave,  
Care for the boy's concerns, to save the son  
From the sire, her two-weeks' infant orphaned  
thus,

And — with best smile of all reserved for him —  
Pardon that sire and husband from the heart.  
A miracle, so tell your Molinists !

There she lies in the long white lazar-house.  
Rome has besieged, these two days, never  
doubt,

Saint Anna's where she waits her death, to  
hear  
Though but the chink o' the bell, turn o' the  
hinge

When the reluctant wicket opes at last,  
Lets in, on now this and now that pretence,  
Too many by half, — complain the men of  
art, —

For a patient in such plight. The lawyers first  
Paid the due visit — justice must be done ;

They took her witness, why the murder was.  
Then the priests followed properly, — a soul  
To shrive ; 't was Brother Celestine's own  
right,

The same who noises thus her gifts abroad.  
But many more, who found they were old  
friends,

Pushed in to have their stare and take their talk  
And go forth boasting of it and to boast.

Old Monna Baldi chatters like a jay,  
Swears — but that, prematurely trundled out  
Just as she felt the benefit begin,  
The miracle was snapped up by somebody, —  
Her palsied limb 'gan prick and promise life  
At touch o' the bedclothes merely, — how much  
more

Had she but brushed the body as she tried !  
Cavalier Carlo — well, there 's some excuse  
For him — Maratta who paints Virgins so —  
He too must fee the porter and slip by  
With pencil cut and paper squared, and straight  
There was he figuring away at face :

"A lovelier face is not in Rome," cried he,  
"Shaped like a peacock's egg, the pure as  
pearl,

That hatches you anon a snow-white chick."  
Then, oh that pair of eyes, that pendent hair,  
Black this and black the other ! Mighty fine —  
But nobody cared ask to paint the same,

Nor grew a poet over hair and eyes  
Four little years ago, when, ask and have,  
The woman who wakes all this rapture leaned  
Flower-like from out her window long enough,  
As much uncomplimented as uneroped  
By comers and goers in Via Vittoria : eh ?

'T is just a flower's fate : past parterre we trip,  
Till peradventure some one plucks our  
sleeve —

"Yon blossom at the brier's end, that 's the  
rose

Two jealous people fought for yesterday  
And killed each other : see, there 's undis-  
turbed

A pretty pool at the root, of rival red !"  
Then cry we, "Ah, the perfect paragon !"  
Then crave we, "Just one keepsake-leaf for  
us !"

Truth lies between : there 's anyhow a child  
Of seventeen years, whether a flower or weed,  
Ruined : who did it shall account to Christ —  
Having no pity on the harmless life  
And gentle face and girlish form he found,  
And thus flings back. Go practise if you  
please

With men and women : leave a child alone  
For Christ's particular love's sake ! — so I say.

Somebody at the bedside said much more,  
Took on him to explain the secret cause  
O' the crime : quoth he, "Such crimes are very  
rife,

Explode nor make us wonder nowadays,  
Seeing that Antichrist disseminates  
That doctrine of the Philosophie Sin :  
Molinists' sect will soon make earth too hot !"  
"Nay," groaned the Augustinian, "what 's  
there new ?

Crime will not fail to flare up from men's hearts

While hearts are men's and so born criminal ;  
Which one fact, always old yet ever new,  
Accounts for so much crime that, for my part,  
Molinos may go whistle to the wind  
That waits outside a certain church, you know ! "

Though really it does seem as if she here,  
Pompilia, living so and dying thus,  
Has had undue experience how much crime  
A heart can hatch. Why was she made to learn

— Not you, not I, not even Molinos' self —  
What Guido Franceschini's heart could hold ?  
Thus saintship is effected probably ;  
No sparing saints the process ! — which the more  
Tends to the reconciling us, no saints,  
To sinnership, immunity and all.

For see now : Pietro and Violante's life  
Till seventeen years ago, all Rome might note  
And quote for happy — see the signs distinct  
Of happiness as we yon Triton's trump.  
What could they be but happy ? — balanced so,  
Nor low i' the social scale nor yet too high,  
Nor poor nor richer than comports with ease,  
Nor bright and envied, nor obscure and scorned,

Nor so young that their pleasures fell too thick,  
Nor old past catching pleasure when it fell,  
Nothing above, below the just degree,  
All at the mean where joy's components mix.  
So again, in the couple's very souls  
You saw the adequate half with half to match,  
Each having and each lacking somewhat, both  
Making a whole that had all and lacked naught.

The round and sound, in whose composure just  
The acquiescent and recipient side  
Was Pietro's, and the stirring striving one  
Violante's : both in union gave the due  
Quietude, enterprise, craving and content,  
Which go to bodily health and peace of mind.  
But as 't is said a body, rightly mixed,  
Each element in equipoise, would last  
Too long and live forever, — accordingly  
Holds a germ — sand-grain weight too much i'  
the scale —

Ordained to get predominance one day  
And so bring all to ruin and release, —  
Not otherwise a fatal germ lurked here :  
" With mortals much must go, but something stays ;

Nothing will stay of our so happy selves."  
Out of the very ripeness of life's core  
A worm was bred — " Our life shall leave no fruit."

Enough of bliss, they thought, could bliss bear seed,

Yield its like, propagate a bliss in turn  
And keep the kind up ; not supplant themselves  
But put in evidence, record they were,  
Show them, when done with, i' the shape of a child.

" 'T is in a ring, man and wife grow complete,  
One flesh : God says so : let him do his work ! "

Now, one reminder of this gnawing want,  
One special prick o' the maggot at the core,  
Always befell when, as the day came round,  
A certain yearly sum, — our Pietro being,  
As the long name runs, an usufructuary, —  
Dropped in the common bag as interest  
Of money, his till death, not afterward,  
Failing an heir : an heir would take and take.  
A child of theirs be wealthy in their place  
To nobody's hurt — the stranger else seized all.  
Prosperity rolled river-like and stopped,  
Making their mill go ; but when wheel wore out,  
The wave would find a space and sweep on free  
And, half-a-mile off, grind some neighbor's corn.

Adam-like, Pietro sighed and said no more :  
Eve saw the apple was fair and good to taste,  
So, plucked it, having asked the snake advice.  
She told her husband God was merciful,  
And his and her prayer granted at the last :  
Let the old mill-stone moulder, — wheel un-  
worn,

Quartz from the quarry, shot into the stream  
Adroitly, as before should go bring grist —  
Their house continued to them by an heir,  
Their vacant heart replenished with a child.  
We have her own confession at full length  
Made in the first remorse : 't was Jubilee  
Pealed in the ear o' the conscience and it woke.  
She found she had offended God no doubt,  
So much was plain from what had happened since,

Misfortune on misfortune ; but she harmed  
No one i' the world, so far as she could see.  
The act had gladdened Pietro to the height.  
Her spouse whom God himself must gladden so  
Or not at all : thus much seems probable  
From the implicit faith, or rather say  
Stupid credulity of the foolish man  
Who swallowed such a tale nor strained a whit  
Even at his wife's far-over-fifty years  
Matching his sixty-and-under. Him she  
blessed ;

And as for doing any detriment  
To the veritable heir, — why, tell her first  
Who was he ? Which of all the hands held up  
I' the crowd, one day would gather round their  
gate

Did she so wrong by intercepting thus  
The ducat, spendthrift fortune thought to fling  
For a scramble just to make the mob break  
shins ?

She kept it, saved them kicks and cuffs thereby.  
While at the least one good work had she  
wrought,

Good, clearly and incontestably ! Her cheat —  
What was it to its subject, the child's self,  
But charity and religion ? See the girl !  
A body most like — a soul too probably —  
Doomed to death, such a double death as waits  
The illicit offspring of a common trull,  
Sure to resent and forthwith rid herself  
Of a mere interruption to sin's trade,  
In the efficacious way old Tiber knows.  
Was not so much proved by the ready sale  
O' the child, glad transfer of this irksome  
chance ?



Well then, she had caught up this castaway :  
This fragile egg, some careless wild bird  
dropped,  
She had picked from where it waited the foot-  
fall,  
And put in her own breast till forth broke finch  
Able to sing God praise on mornings now.  
What so excessive harm was done? — she  
asked.

To which demand the dreadful answer comes —  
For that same deed, now at Lorenzo's church,  
Both agents, conscious and unconscious, lie ;  
While she, the deed was done to benefit,  
Lies also, the most lamentable of things,  
Yonder where curious people count her breaths,  
Calculate how long yet the little life  
Unspilt may serve their turn nor spoil the show,  
Give them their story, then the church its  
group.

Well, having gained Pompilia, the girl grew  
In the midst of Pietro here, Violante there,  
Each, like a semicircle with stretched arms,  
Joining the other round her preciousness —  
Two walls that go about a garden-plot  
Where a chance sliver, branchlet split from bole  
Of some tongue-leaved eye-figured Eden tree,  
Filched by two exiles and borne far away,  
Patiently glorifies their solitude, —  
Year by year mounting, grade by grade sur-  
mount

The builded brick-work, yet is compassed still,  
Still hidden happily and shielded safe, —  
Else why should miracle have graced the  
ground?

But on the twelfth sun that brought April  
there

What meant that laugh? The coping-stone  
was reached ;

Nay, above towered a light tuft of bloom  
To be toyed with by butterfly or bee,  
Done good to or else harm to from outside :  
Pompilia's root, stalk and a branch or two  
Home enclosed still, the rest would be the  
world's.

All which was taught our couple though ob-  
tuse,

Since walls have ears, when one day brought a  
priest,

Smooth-mannered soft-speeched sleek-cheeked  
visitor,

The notable Abate Paolo — known  
As younger brother of a Tuscan house  
Whereof the actual representative,  
Count Guido, had employed his youth and age  
In culture of Rome's most productive plant —  
A cardinal : but years pass and change comes,  
In token of which, here was our Paolo brought  
To broach a weighty business. Might he speak?  
Yes — to Violante somehow caught alone  
While Pietro took his after-dinner doze,  
And the young maiden, busily as befits,  
Minded her broider-frame three chambers off.

So — giving now his great flap-hat a gloss  
With flat of the hand between-whiles, soothing  
now

The silk from out its creases o'er the calf,  
Setting the stocking clerical again,  
But never disengaging, once engaged,  
The thin clear gray hold of his eyes on her —  
He dissertated on that Tuscan house,  
Those Franceschini, — very old they were —  
Not rich however — oh, not rich, at least,  
As people look to be who, low i' the scale  
One way, have reason, rising all they can  
By favor of the money-bag ! 't is fair —  
Do all gifts go together? But don't suppose  
That being not so rich means all so poor!  
Say rather, well enough — i' the way, indeed,  
Ha, ha, to fortune better than the best :  
Since if his brother's patron-friend kept faith,  
Put into promised play the Cardinalate,  
Their house might wear the red cloth that keeps  
warm,

Would but the Count have patience — there's  
the point!

For he was slipping into years apace,  
And years make men restless — they needs  
must spy

Some certainty, some sort of end assured,  
Some sparkle, though from topmost beacon-tip,  
That warrants life a harbor through the haze.  
In short, call him fantastic as you choose,  
Guido was home-sick, yearned for the old sights  
And usual faces, — fain would settle himself  
And have the patron's bounty when it fell  
Irrigate far rather than deluge near,  
Go fertilize Arezzo, not flood Rome.

Sooth to say, 't was the wiser wish : the Count  
Proved wanting in ambition, — let us avouch,  
Since truth is best, — in callousness of heart,  
And winced at pin-pricks whereby honors hang  
A ribbon o'er each puncture : his — no soul  
Ecclesiastic (here the hat was brushed),  
Humble but self-sustaining, calm and cold,  
Having, as one who puts his hand to the plough  
Renounced the over-vivid family-feel —  
Poor brother Guido! All too plain, he pined  
Amid Rome's pomp and glare for dinginess  
And that dilapidated palace-shell

Vast as a quarry and, very like, as bare —  
Since to this comes old grandeur nowadays —  
Or that absurd wild villa in the waste  
O' the hillside, breezy though, for who likes air,  
Vittiano, nor unpleasant with its vines,  
Outside the city and the summer heats.  
And now his harping on this one tense chord  
The villa and the palace, palace this  
And villa the other, all day and all night  
Creaked like the implacable cicala's cry  
And made one's ear-drum ache : naught else  
would serve

But that, to light his mother's visage up  
With second youth, hope, gayety again,  
He must find straightway, woo and haply win  
And bear away triumphant back, some wife.  
Well now, the man was rational in his way :  
He, the Abate, — ought he to interpose?  
Unless by straining still his tutelage  
(Priesthood leaps over elder-brothership)  
Across this difficulty : then let go,  
Leave the poor fellow in peace! Would that  
be wrong?

There was no making Guido great, it seems,

Spite of himself: then happy be his dole!  
Indeed, the Abate's little interest  
Was somewhat nearly touched i' the case, they  
saw:

Since if his simple kinsman so were bent,  
Began his rounds in Rome to catch a wife,  
Full soon would such unworldliness surprise  
The rare bird, sprinkle salt on phoenix' tail,  
And so secure the nest a sparrow-hawk.  
No lack of mothers here in Rome, — no dread  
Of daughters lured as larks by looking-glass!  
The first name-pecking credit-scratching fowl  
Would drop her unfledged cuckoo in our nest  
To gather grayness there, give voice at length  
And shame the brood . . . but it was long ago  
When crusades were, and we sent eagles forth!  
No, that at least the Abate could forestall.  
He read the thought within his brother's word,  
Knew what he purposed better than himself.  
We want no name and fame — having our own:  
No worldly aggrandizement — such we fly:  
But if some wonder of a woman's-heart  
Were yet untainted on this grimy earth,  
Tender and true — tradition tells of such —  
Prepared to pant in time and tune with ours —  
If some good girl (a girl, since she must take  
The new bent, live new life, adopt new modes)  
Not wealthy (Guido for his rank was poor)  
But with whatever dowry came to hand, —  
There were the lady-love predestinate!  
And somehow the Abate's guardian eye —  
Scintillant, rutilant, fraternal fire, —  
Roving round every way had seized the prize  
— The instinct of us, we, the spirituality!  
Come, cards on table: was it true or false  
That here — here in this very tenement —  
Yea, Via Vittoria did a marvel hide,  
Lily of a maiden, white with intact leaf  
Guessed through the sheath that saved it from  
the sun?  
A daughter with the mother's hands still clasped  
Over her head for fillet virginal,  
A wife worth Guido's house and hand and  
heart?  
He came to see; had spoken, he could no less —  
(A final cherish of the stockinged calf)  
If harm were, — well, the matter was off his  
mind.

Then with the great air did he kiss, devout,  
Violante's hand, and rise up his whole height  
(A certain purple gleam about the black)  
And go forth grandly, — as if the Pope came  
next.

And so Violante rubbed her eyes awhile,  
Got up too, walked to wake her Pietro soon  
And pour into his ear the mighty news  
How somebody had somehow somewhere seen  
Their treetop-tuft of bloom above the wall,  
And came now to apprise them the tree's self  
Was no such crab-sort as should go feed swine,  
But veritable gold, the Hesperian ball  
Ordained for Hercules to haste and pluck,  
And bear and give the Gods to banquet with —  
Hercules standing ready at the door.  
Whereon did Pietro rub his eyes in turn,  
Look very wise, a little woeeful too,  
Then, periwig on head, and cane in hand,

Sally forth dignifiedly into the Square  
Of Spain across Babbuino the six steps,  
Toward the Boat-fountain where our idlers  
louge, —

Ask, for form's sake, who Hercules might be,  
And have congratulation from the world.

Heartily laughed the world in his fool's-face  
And told him Hercules was just the heir  
To the stubble once a cornfield, and brick-heap  
Where used to be a dwelling-place now burned.  
Guido and Franceschini; a Count, — ay:  
But a cross i' the poke to bless the Countship?  
No!

All gone except sloth, pride, rapacity,  
Humors of the imposthume incident  
To rich blood that runs thin, — nursed to a  
head

By the rankly-salted soil — a cardinal's court  
Where, parasite and picker-up of crumbs,  
He had hung on long, and now, let go, said  
some,

Shaken off, said others, — but in any case  
Tired of the trade and something worse for  
wear,

Was wanting to change town for country quick,  
Go home again: let Pietro help him home!  
The brother, Abate Paolo, shrewder mouse,  
Had pricked for comfortable quarters, inched  
Into the core of Rome, and fattened so;  
But Guido, over-burly for rat's hole  
Suited to clerical slimmness, starved outside,  
Must shift for himself: and so the shift was  
this!

What, was the snug retreat of Pietro tracked,  
The little provision for his old age snuffed?  
"Oh, make your girl a lady, an you list,  
But have more mercy on our wit than vaunt  
Your bargain as we burgesses who brag!  
Why, Goodman Dullard, if a friend must speak,  
Would the Count, think you, stoop to you and  
yours

Were there the value of one penny-piece  
To rattle 'twixt his palms — or likelier laugh,  
Bid your Pompilia help you black his shoe?"

Home again, shaking off the puzzled pate,  
Went Pietro to announce a change indeed,  
Yet point Violante where some solace lay  
Of a rueful sort, — the taper, quenched so soon,  
Had ended merely in a snuff, not stink —  
Congratulate there was one hope the less,  
Not misery the more: and so an end.

The marriage thus impossible, the rest  
Followed: our spokesman, Paolo, heard his  
fate,

Resignedly Count Guido bore the blow:  
Violante wiped away the transient tear,  
Renounced the playing Danae to gold dreams,  
Praised much her Pietro's prompt sagacious-  
ness,

Found neighbors' envy natural, lightly laughed  
At gossips' malice, fairly wrapped herself  
In her integrity three folds about,  
And, letting pass a little day or two,  
Threw, even over that integrity,  
Another wrappage, namely one thick veil

That hid her, matron-wise, from head to foot,  
And, by the hand holding a girl veiled too,  
Stood, one dim end of a December day,  
In Saint Lorenzo on the altar-step —  
Just where she lies now and that girl will lie —  
Only with fifty candles' company  
Now, in the place of the poor winking one  
Which saw — doors shut and sacristan made  
sure —

A priest — perhaps Abate Paolo — wed  
Guido clandestinely, irrevocably  
To his Pompilia aged thirteen years  
And five months, — witness the church register, —

Pompilia, (thus become Count Guido's wife  
Clandestinely, irrevocably his,) —  
Who all the while had borne, from first to last,  
As brisk a part i' the bargain, as yon lamb,  
Brought forth from basket and set out for  
sale,

Bears while they chaffer, wary market-man  
And voluble housewife, o'er it, — each in turn  
Patting the curly calm unconscious head,  
With the shambles ready round the corner  
there,

When the talk's talked out and a bargain  
struck,

Transfer complete, why, Pietro was appraised.  
Violante sobbed the sobs and prayed the  
prayers,

And said the serpent tempted so she fell,  
Till Pietro had to clear his brow apace  
And make the best of matters: wrath at first, —  
How else? pacification presently,  
Why not? — could flesh withstand the impur-  
pled one,

The very Cardinal, Paolo's patron-friend?  
Who, justifiably surnamed "a hinge,"  
Knew where the mollifying oil should drop  
To cure the creak o' the valve, — considerate  
For frailty, patient in a naughty world.  
He even volunteered to supervise  
The rough draught of those marriage-articles  
Signed in a hurry by Pietro, since revoked:  
Trust 's politic, suspicion does the harm,  
There is but one way to browbeat this world,  
Dumb-founder doubt, and repay scorn in  
kind, —

To go on trusting, namely, till faith move  
Mountains.

And faith here made the mountains move.  
Why, friends whose zeal cried "Caution ere  
too late!" —

Bade "Pause ere jump, with both feet joined,  
on slough!" —

Counselled "If rashness then, now temper-  
ance!" —

Heard for their pains that Pietro had closed  
eyes,

Jumped and was in the middle of the mire,  
Money and all, just what should sink a man.

By the mere marriage, Guido gained forthwith  
Dowry, his wife's right; no rescinding there:

But Pietro, why must he needs ratify  
One gift Violante gave, pay down one doit  
Promised in first fool's-flurry? Grasped the bag

Lest the son's service flag, — is reason and  
rhyme,

Above all when the son's a son-in-law.  
Words to the wind! The parents cast their  
lot

Into the lap o' the daughter: and the son  
Now with a right to lie there, took what fell,  
Pietro's whole having and holding, house and  
field,

Goods, chattels and effects, his worldly worth  
Present and in perspective, all renounced  
In favor of Guido. As for the usufruct —  
The interest now, the principal anon,

Would Guido please to wait, at Pietro's death:  
Till when, he must support the couple's charge,  
Bear with them, housemates, pensionaries,  
pawned

To an alien for fulfilment of their pact.  
Guido should at discretion deal them orts,  
Bread-bounty in Arezzo the strange place, —  
They who had lived deliciously and rolled  
Rome's choicest comfit 'neath the tongue before.  
Into this quag, "jump" bade the Cardinal!  
And neck-deep in a minute there flounced they.

But they touched bottom at Arezzo: there —  
Four months' experience of how craft and  
greed,

Quickened by penury and pretentious hate  
Of plain truth, brutify and bestialize, —  
Four months' taste of apportioned insolence,  
Cruelty graduated, dose by dose  
Of ruffianism dealt out at bed and board,  
And lo, the work was done, success clapped  
hands,

The starved, stripped, beaten brace of stupid  
dupes

Broke at last in their desperation loose,  
Fled away for their lives, and lucky so:  
Found their account in casting coat afar  
And bearing off a shred of skin at least:  
Left Guido lord o' the prey, as the lion is,  
And, careless what came after, carried their  
wrongs

To Rome, — I nothing doubt, with such remorse  
As folly feels, since pain can make it wise,  
But crime, past wisdom, which is innocence,  
Needs not be plagued with till a later day.

Pietro went back to beg from door to door,  
In hope that memory not quite extinct  
Of cheery days and festive nights would move  
Friends and acquaintance — after the natural  
laugh,

And tributary "Just as we foretold —"  
To show some bowels, give the dregs o' the cup,  
Scraps of the trencher, to their host that was,  
Or let him share the mat with the mastiff, he  
Who lived large and kept open house so long.  
Not so Violante: ever ahead i' the march,  
Quick at the by-road and the cut-across,  
She went first to the best adviser, God —  
Whose finger unmistakably was felt  
In all this retribution of the past.

Here was the prize of sin, luck of a lie!  
But here too was what Holy Year would help,  
Bound to rid sinners of sin vulgar, sin  
Abnormal, sin prodigious, up to sin



Impossible and supposed for Jubilee' sake :

To lift the leadenest of lies, let soar  
The soul unhampered by a feather-weight.  
"I will," said she, "go burn out this bad hole  
That breeds the scorpion, balk the plague at  
least

Of hope to further plague by progeny :  
I will confess my fault, be punished, yes,  
But pardoned too : Saint Peter pays for all."

So, with the crowd she mixed, made for the  
dome,

Through the great door new-broken for the  
nonce

Marched, muffled more than ever matron-wise,  
Up the left nave to the formidable throne,  
Fell into file with this the poisoner  
And that the parricide, and reached in turn  
The poor repugnant Penitentiary  
Set at this gully-hole o' the world's discharge  
To help the frightfullest of filth have vent,  
And then knelt down and whispered in his ear  
How she had bought Pompilia, palmed the  
babe

On Pietro, passed the girl off as their child  
To Guido, and defrauded of his due  
This one and that one, — more than she could  
name,

Until her solid piece of wickedness  
Happened to split and spread woe far and wide :  
Contritely now she brought the case for cure.

Replied the throne — "Ere God forgive the  
guilt,

Make man some restitution ! Do your part !  
The owners of your husband's heritage,  
Barred thence by this pretended birth and  
heir, —

Tell them, the bar came so, is broken so,  
Theirs be the due reversion as before !  
Your husband who, no partner in the guilt,  
Suffers the penalty, led blindfold thus  
By love of what he thought his flesh and blood  
To alienate his all in her behalf, —

Tell him too such contract is null and void !  
Last, he who personates your son-in-law,  
Who with sealed eyes and stopped ears, tame  
and mute,

Took at your hand that bastard of a whore  
You called your daughter and he calls his  
wife, —

Tell him, and bear the anger which is just !  
Then, penance so performed, may pardon be !"

Who could gainsay this just and right award ?  
Nobody in the world : but, out o' the world,  
Who knows ? — might timid intervention be  
From any makeshift of an angel-guide,  
Substitute for celestial guardianship,  
Pretending to take care of the girl's self :

"Woman, confessing crime is healthy work,  
And telling truth relieves a liar like you,  
But how of my quite unconsidered charge ?  
No thought if, while this good befalls yourself,  
Aught in the way of harm may find out her ?"  
No least thought, I assure you : truth being  
truth,

Tell it and shame the devil !

Said and done :

Home went Violante, and disbosomed all :  
And Pietro who, six months before, had borne  
Word after word of such a piece of news  
Like so much cold steel inched through his  
breast-blade,

Now at its entry gave a leap for joy,  
As who — what did I say of one in a quag ? —  
Should catch a hand from heaven and spring  
thereby

Out of the mud, on ten toes stand once more.  
"What ? All that used to be, may be again ?

My money mine again, my house, my land,  
My chairs and tables, all mine evermore ?  
What the girl's dowry never was the girl's,  
And, unpaid yet, is never now to pay ?  
Then the girl's self, my pale Pompilia child  
That used to be my own with her great eyes —  
He who drove us forth, why should he keep her  
When proved as very a pauper as himself ?

Will she come back, with nothing changed at  
all,

And laugh, 'But how you dreamed uneasily !  
I saw the great drops stand here on your  
brow —

Did I do wrong to wake you with a kiss ?'  
No, indeed, darling ! No, for wide awake  
I see another outburst of surprise :

The lout-lord, bully-beggar, braggart-sneak,  
Who, not content with cutting purse, crops  
ear —

Assuredly it shall be salve to mine  
When this great news red-letters him, the  
rogue !

Ay, let him taste the teeth o' the trap, this fox,  
Give us our lamb back, golden fleece and all,  
Let her creep in and warm our breasts again !  
Why care for the past ? — we three are our old  
selves,

And know now what the outside world is  
worth."

And so, he carried ease before the courts ;  
And there Violante, blushing to the bone,  
Made public declaration of her fault,  
Renounced her motherhood, and prayed the law  
To interpose, frustrate of its effect  
Her folly, and redress the injury done.

Whereof was the disastrous consequence,  
That though indisputably clear the case  
(For thirteen years are not so large a lapse,  
And still six witnesses survived in Rome  
To prove the truth o' the tale) — yet, patent  
wrong

Seemed Guido's ; the first cheat had chanced  
on him :

Here was the pity that, deciding right,  
Those who began the wrong would gain the  
prize.

Guido pronounced the story one long lie  
Lied to do robbery and take revenge :  
Or say it were no lie at all but truth,  
Then, it both robbed the right heirs and shamed  
him

Without revenge to humanize the deed :  
What had he done when first they shamed him  
thus ?

But that were too fantastic : losels they,

And leasing this world's-wonder of a lie,  
They lied to blot him though it brand them-  
selves.

So answered Guido through the Abate's mouth.  
Wherefore the court, its customary way,  
Inclined to the middle course the sage affect.  
They held the child to be a changeling, — good :  
But, lest the husband got no good thereby,  
They willed the dowry, though not hers at all,  
Should yet be his, if not by right then grace —  
Part-payment for the plain injustice done.  
As for that other contract, Pietro's work,  
Renunciation of his own estate,  
That must be cancelled — give him back his  
gifts,

He was no party to the cheat at least !  
So ran the judgment : — whence a prompt ap-  
peal

On both sides, seeing right is absolute.  
Cried Pietro, "Is the child no child of mine ?  
Why give her a child's dowry ?" — "Have I  
right

To the dowry, why not to the rest as well ?"  
Cried Guido, or cried Paolo in his name :  
Till law said, "Reinvestigate the case !"  
And so the matter pends, to this same day.

Hence new disaster — here no outlet seemed :  
Whatever the fortune of the battlefield,  
No path whereby the fatal man might march  
Victorious, wreath on head and spoils in hand,  
And back turned full upon the baffled foe, —  
Nor cranny whence, desperate and disgraced,  
Stripped to the skin, he might be fain to crawl  
Worm-like, and so away with his defeat  
To other fortune and a novel prey.

No, he was pinned to the place there, left alone  
With his immense hate and, the solitary  
Subject to satisfy that hate, his wife.

"Cast her off ? Turn her naked out of doors ?  
Easily said ! But still the action pends,  
Still dowry, principal and interest,

Pietro's possessions, all I bargained for, —  
Any good day, be but my friends alert,  
May give them me if she continue mine.  
Yet, keep her ? Keep the puppet of my foes —  
Her voice that lips me back their curse — her  
eye

They lend their leer of triumph to — her lip  
I touch and taste their very filth upon ?"

In short, he also took the middle course  
Rome taught him — did at last exogitate  
How he might keep the good and leave the  
bad

Twined in revenge, yet extricable, — nay  
Make the very hate's eruption, very rush  
Of the unpent sluice of cruelty relieve  
His heart first, then go fertilize his field.  
What if the girl-wife, tortured with due care,  
Should take, as though spontaneously, the road  
It were impolitic to thrust her on ?  
If, goaded, she broke out in full revolt,  
Followed her parents i' the face o' the world,  
Branded as runaway, not castaway,  
Self-sentenced and self-punished in the act ?  
So should the loathed form and detested face

Launch themselves into hell and there be lost  
While he looked o'er the brink with folded  
arms ;

So should the heaped-up shames go shuddering  
back

O' the head o' the heapers, Pietro and his wife,  
And bury in the breakage three at once :  
While Guido, left free, no one right renounced,  
Gain present, gain prospective, all the gain,  
None of the wife except her rights absorbed,  
Should ask law what it was law paused about —  
If law were dubious still whose word to take,  
The husband's — dignified and derelict,  
Or the wife's — the . . . what I tell you. It  
should be.

Guido's first step was to take pen, indite  
A letter to the Abate, — not his own,  
His wife's, — she should re-write, sign, seal and  
send.

She liberally told the household-news,  
Rejoiced her vile progenitors were gone,  
Revealed their malice — how they even laid  
A last injunction on her, when they fled,  
That she should forthwith find a paramour,  
Complot with him to gather spoil enough,  
Then burn the house down, — taking previous  
care

To poison all its inmates overnight, —  
And so companioned, so provisioned too,  
Follow to Rome and there join fortunes gay.

This letter, traced in pencil-characters,  
Guido as easily got retraced in ink  
By his wife's pen, guided from end to end,  
As if it had been just so much Chinese.  
For why ? That wife could broider, sing per-  
haps,

Pray certainly, but no more read than write  
This letter, "which yet write she must," he  
said,

"Being half courtesy and compliment,  
Half sisterliness : take the thing on trust !"  
She had as readily retraced the words  
Of her own death-warrant, — in some sort  
't was so.

This letter the Abate in due course  
Communicated to such curious souls  
In Rome as needs must pry into the cause  
Of quarrel, why the Comparini fled  
The Franceschini, whence the grievance grew,  
What the hubbub meant : "Nay, — see the  
wife's own word.

Authentic answer ! Tell detractors too  
There's a plan formed, a programme figured  
here

— Pray God no after-practice put to proof,  
This letter cast no light upon, one day !"

So much for what should work in Rome : back  
now

To Arezzo, follow up the project there,  
Forward the next step with as bold a foot,  
And plague Pompilia to the height, you see !  
Accordingly did Guido set himself  
To worry up and down, across, around,  
The woman, hemmed in by her household-  
bars,

Chase her about the coop of daily life,

Having first stopped each outlet thence save one  
Which, like bird with a ferret in her haunt,  
She needs must seize as sole way of escape  
Though there was tied and twittering a decoy  
To seem as if it tempted, — just the plume  
O' the popinjay, not a real respite there  
From tooth and claw of something in the  
dark, —  
Giuseppe Caponsacchi.

Now begins

The tenebrific passage of the tale:  
How hold a light, display the cavern's gorge?  
How, in this phase of the affair, show truth?  
Here is the dying wife who smiles and says,  
"So it was, — so it was not, — how it was,  
I never knew nor ever care to know —"  
Till they all weep, physician, man of law,  
Even that poor old bit of battered brass  
Beaten out of all shape by the world's sins,  
Common utensil of the lazar-house —  
Confessor Celestino groans, "'T is truth,  
All truth and only truth: there's something  
here,

Some presence in the room beside us all,  
Something that every lie expires before:  
No question she was pure from first to last."  
So far is well and helps us to believe:  
But beyond, she the helpless, simple-sweet  
Or silly-sooth, unskilled to break one blow  
At her good fame by putting finger forth, —  
How can she render service to the truth?  
The bird says, "So I fluttered where a springe  
Caught me: the springe did not contrive itself,  
That I know: who contrived it, God forgive!"  
But we, who hear no voice and have dry eyes,  
Must ask, — we cannot else, absolving her, —  
How of the part played by that same decoy  
I' the catching, caging? Was himself caught  
first?

We deal here with no innocent at least,  
No witless victim, — he's a man of the age  
And priest beside, — persuade the mocking  
world

Mere charity boiled over in this sort!  
He whose own safety too, — (the Pope's ap-  
prised —

Good-natured with the secular offence,  
The Pope looks grave on priesthood in a  
scrape) —

Our priest's own safety therefore, maybe life,  
Hangs on the issue! You will find it hard.  
Guido is here to meet you with fixed foot,  
Stiff like a statue — "Leave what went before!  
My wife fled i' the company of a priest,  
Spent two days and two nights alone with him:  
Leave what came after!" He stands hard to  
throw,

Moreover priests are merely flesh and blood;  
When we get weakness, and no guilt beside,  
'T is no such great ill-fortune: finding gray,  
We gladly call that white which might be  
black,

Too used to the double-dye. So, if the priest,  
Moved by Pompilia's youth and beauty, gave  
Way to the natural weakness . . . Anyhow,  
Here be facts, character; what they spell  
Determine, and thence pick what sense you  
may!

There was a certain young bold handsome priest  
Popular in the city, far and wide  
Famed, since Arezzo's but a little place,  
As the best of good companions, gay and grave  
At the decent minute; settled in his stall,  
Or sidling, lute on lap, by lady's couch,  
Ever the courtly Canon: see in him  
A proper star to climb and culminate,  
Have its due handbreadth of the heaven at  
Rome,

Though meanwhile pausing on Arezzo's edge,  
As modest candle does 'mid mountain fog,  
To rub off redness and rusticity  
Ere it sweep chastened, gain the silver-sphere!  
Whether through Guido's absence or what else,  
This Caponsacchi, favorite of the town,  
Was yet no friend of his nor free o' the house,  
Though both moved in the regular magnates'  
march:

Each must observe the other's tread and halt  
At church, saloon, theatre, house of play.  
Who could help noticing the husband's slouch,  
The black of his brow — or miss the news that  
buzzed

Of how the little solitary wife  
Wept and looked out of window all day long?  
What need of minute search into such springs  
As start men, set o' the move? — machinery  
Old as earth, obvious as the noonday sun.  
Why, take men as they come, — an instance  
now, —

Of all those who have simply gone to see  
Pompilia on her deathbed since four days,  
Half at the least are, call it how you please,  
In love with her — I don't except the priests  
Nor even the old confessor whose eyes run  
Over at what he styles his sister's voice  
Who died so early and weaned him from the  
world.

Well, had they viewed her ere the paleness  
pushed

The last o' the red o' the rose away, while yet  
Some hand, adventurous 'twixt the wind and  
her,

Might let shy life run back and raise the flower  
Rich with reward up to the guardian's face, —  
Would they have kept that hand employed all  
day

At fumbling on with prayer-book pages? No!  
Men are men: why then need I say one word  
More than that our mere man the Canon here  
Saw, pitied, loved Pompilia?

This is why;

This startling why: that Caponsacchi's self —  
Whom foes and friends alike avouch, for good  
Or ill, a man of truth whate'er betide,  
Intrepid altogether, reckless too  
How his own fame and fortune, tossed to the  
winds,

Suffer by any turn the adventure take,  
Nay, more — not thrusting, like a badge to hide,  
'Twixt shirt and skin a joy which shown is  
shame —

But flirting flag-like i' the face o' the world  
This tell-tale kerchief, this conspicuous love  
For the lady, — oh, called innocent love, I  
know!



Only, such scarlet fiery innocence  
As most folk would try muffle up in shade, —  
— 'Tis strange then that this else abashless  
mouth

Should yet maintain, for truth's sake which is  
God's,

That it was not he made the first advance,  
That, even ere word had passed between the  
two,

Pompilia penned him letters, passionate prayers,  
If not love, then so simulating love  
That he, no novice to the taste of thyme,  
Turned from such over-luscious honey-clot  
At end o' the flower, and would not lend his lip  
Till . . . but the tale here frankly outsoars  
faith :

There must be falsehood somewhere. For her  
part,

Pompilia quietly constantly avers  
She never penned a letter in her life  
Nor to the Canon nor any other man,  
Being incompetent to write and read :  
Nor had she ever uttered word to him, nor he  
To her till that same evening when they met,  
She on her window-terrace, he beneath  
I' the public street, as was their fateful chance,  
And she adjured him in the name of God  
To find out, bring to pass where, when and how  
Escape with him to Rome might be contrived.  
Means were found, plan laid, time fixed, she  
avers,

And heart assured to heart in loyalty,  
All at an impulse ! All extemporized  
As in romance-books ! Is that credible ?  
Well, yes : as she avers this with calm mouth  
Dying, I do think "Credible !" you 'd cry —  
Did not the priest's voice come to break the  
spell.

They questioned him apart, as the custom is,  
When first the matter made a noise at Rome,  
And he, calm, constant then as she is now,  
For truth's sake did assert and reassert  
Those letters called him to her and he came,  
— Which damns the story credible otherwise.  
Why should this man — mad to devote himself,  
Careless what comes of his own fame, the first —  
Be studious thus to publish and declare  
Just what the lightest nature loves to hide,  
So screening lady from the byword's laugh  
"First spoke the lady, last the cavalier !"  
— I say, — why should the man tell truth just  
now

When graceful lying meets such ready shrift ?  
Or is there a first moment for a priest  
As for a woman, when invaded shame  
Must have its first and last excuse to show ?  
Do both contrive love's entry in the mind  
Shall look, i' the manner of it, a surprise,  
That after, once the flag o' the fort hauled  
down,

Effrontery may sink drawbridge, open gate,  
Welcome and entertain the conqueror ?  
Or what do you say to a touch of the devil's  
worst ?

Can it be that the husband, he who wrote  
The letter to his brother I told you of,  
I' the name of her it meant to criminate, —  
What if he wrote those letters to the priest ?

Further the priest says, when it first befell,  
This folly o' the letters, that he checked the  
flow,

Put them back lightly each with its reply.  
Here again vexes new discrepancy :  
There never reached her eye a word from him ;  
He did write but she could not read — could  
just

Burn the offence to wifehood, womanhood,  
So did burn : never bade him come to her,  
Yet when it proved he must come, let him come,  
And when he did come though uncalled, — why,  
spoke

Prompt by an inspiration : thus it chanced,  
Will you go somewhat back to understand ?

When first, pursuant to his plan, there sprang,  
Like an uncaged beast, Guido's cruelty  
On soul and body of his wife, she cried  
To those whom law appoints resource for such,  
The secular guardian, — that 's the Governor,  
And the Archbishop, — that 's the spiritual  
guide,

And prayed them take the claws from out her  
flesh.

Now, this is ever the ill consequence  
Of being noble, poor and difficult,  
Ungainly, yet too great to disregard, —  
This — that born peers and friends hereditary, —  
Though disinclined to help from their own store  
The opprobrious wight, put penny in his poke  
From private purse or leave the door ajar  
When he goes wistful by at dinner-time, —  
Yet, if his needs conduct him where they sit  
Smugly in office, judge this, bishop that,  
Dispensers of the shine and shade o' the place —  
And if, friend's door shut and friend's purse  
undrawn,

Still potentates may find the office-seat  
Do as good service at no cost — give help  
By-the-bye, pay up traditional dues at once  
Just through a feather-weight too much i' the  
scale,

Or finger-tip forgot at the balance-tongue, —  
Why, only churls refuse, or Molinists.  
Thus when, in the first roughness of surprise  
At Guido's wolf-face whence the sheepskin fell,  
The frightened couple, all bewilderment,  
Rushed to the Governor, — who else rights  
wrong ?

Told him their tale of wrong and craved re-  
dress —

Why, then the Governor woke up to the fact  
That Guido was a friend of old, poor Count ! —  
So, promptly paid his tribute, promised the pair  
Wholesome chastisement should soon cure their  
qualms

Next time they came, wept, prated and told  
lies :

So stopped all prating, sent them dumb to Rome.  
Well, now it was Pompilia's turn to try :  
The troubles pressing on her, as I said,  
Three times she rushed, maddened by misery,  
To the other mighty man, sobbed out her prayer  
At footstool of the Archbishop — fast the friend  
Of her husband also ! Oh, good friends of yore !  
So, the Archbishop, not to be outdone  
By the Governor, break custom more than he,

Thrice bade the foolish woman stop her tongue,  
 Unloosed her hands from harassing his gout,  
 Coached her and carried her to the Count again,  
 — His old friend should be master in his house,  
 Rule his wife and correct her faults at need !  
 Well, driven from post to pillar in this wise,  
 She, as a last resource, betook herself  
 To one, should be no family-friend at least,  
 A simple friar o' the city ; confessed to him,  
 Then told how fierce temptation of release  
 By self-dealt death was busy with her soul,  
 And urged that he put this in words, write plain  
 For one who could not write, set down her prayer  
 That Pietro and Violante, parent-like  
 If somehow not her parents, should for love  
 Come save her, pluck from out the flame the  
 brand

Themselves had thoughtlessly thrust in so deep  
 To send gay-colored sparkles up and cheer  
 Their seat at the chimney-corner. The good  
 friar

Promised as much at the moment ; but, alack,  
 Night brings discretion : he was no one's  
 friend,

Yet presently found he could not turn about  
 Nor take a step i' the case and fail to tread  
 On some one's toe who either was a friend,  
 Or a friend's friend, or friend's friend thrice-  
 removed,

And woe to friar by whom offences come !  
 So, the course being plain, — with a general  
 sigh

At matrimony the profound mistake, —  
 He threw reluctantly the business up,  
 Having his other penitents to mind.

If then, all outlets thus secured save one,  
 At last she took to the open, stood and stared  
 With her wan face to see where God might  
 wait —

And there found Caponsacchi wait as well  
 For the precious something at perdition's edge,  
 He only was predestinate to save, —  
 And if they recognized in a critical flash  
 From the zenith, each the other, her need of  
 him,

His need of . . . say, a woman to perish for,  
 The regular wif o' the world, yet break no  
 vow,

Do no harm save to himself, — if this were  
 thus ?

How do you say ? It were improbable ;  
 So is the legend of my patron-saint.

Anyhow, whether, as Guido states the case,  
 Pompilia — like a starving wretch i' the street  
 Who stops and rifles the first passenger  
 In the great right of an excessive wrong —  
 Did somehow call this stranger and he came, —  
 Or whether the strange sudden interview  
 Blazed as when star and star must needs go  
 close

Till each hurts each and there is loss in  
 heaven —

Whatever way in this strange world it was, —  
 Pompilia and Caponsacchi met, in fine,  
 She at her window, he i' the street beneath,  
 And understood each other at first look.

All was determined and performed at once.  
 And on a certain April evening, late  
 I' the month, this girl of sixteen, bride and  
 wife

Three years and over, — she who hitherto  
 Had never taken twenty steps in Rome  
 Beyond the church, pinned to her mother's  
 gown,

Nor, in Arezzo, knew her way through street  
 Except what led to the Archbishop's door, —  
 Such an one rose up in the dark, laid hand  
 On what came first, clothes and a trinket or  
 two,

Belongings of her own in the old day, —  
 Stole from the side o' the sleeping spouse —  
 who knows ?

Sleeping perhaps, silent for certain, — slid  
 Ghost-like from great dark room to great dark  
 room,

In through the tapestries and out again  
 And onward, unembarrassed as a fate,  
 Descended staircase, gained last door of all,  
 Sent it wide open at first push of palm,  
 And there stood, first time, last and only time,  
 At liberty, alone in the open street, —  
 Unquestioned, unmolested found herself  
 At the city gate, by Caponsacchi's side,  
 Hope there, joy there, life and all good again,  
 The carriage there, the convoy there, light  
 there

Broadening ever into blaze at Rome  
 And breaking small what long miles lay be-  
 tween ;

Up she sprang, in he followed, they were safe.

The husband quotes this for incredible,  
 All of the story from first word to last :  
 Sees the priest's hand throughout upholding  
 hers,

Traces his foot to the alcove, that night,  
 Whither and whence blindfold he knew the  
 way,

Proficient in all craft and stealthiness ;  
 And cites for proof a servant, eye that watched  
 And ear that opened to purse secrets up,  
 A woman-spy, — suborned to give and take  
 Letters and tokens, do the work of shame  
 The more adroitly that herself, who helped  
 Communion thus between a tainted pair,  
 Had long since been a leper thick in spot,  
 A common trull o' the town : she witnessed  
 all,

Helped many meetings, partings, took her wage  
 And then told Guido the whole matter. Lies !  
 The woman's life confutes her word, — her  
 word

Confutes itself : " Thus, thus and thus I lied,"  
 " And thus, no question, still you lie," we say.

" Ay, but at last, e'en have it how you will,  
 Whatever the means, whatever the way, ex-  
 plodes

The consummation " — the accusers shriek :  
 " Here is the wife avowedly found in flight,  
 And the companion of her flight, a priest ;  
 She flies her husband, he the church his  
 spouse :

What is this ? "

Wife and priest alike reply,

"This is the simple thing it claims to be,  
A course we took for life and honor's sake,  
Very strange, very justifiable."  
She says, "God put it in my head to fly,  
As when the martin migrates: autumn claps  
Her hands, cries 'Winter's coming, will be  
here,

Off with you ere the white teeth overtake!  
Flee!' So I fled: this friend was the warm  
day,

The south wind and whatever favors flight;  
I took the favor, had the help, how else?  
And so we did fly rapidly all night,  
All day, all night — a longer night — again,  
And then another day, longest of days,  
And all the while, whether we fled or stopped,  
I scarce know how or why, one thought filled  
both,

'Fly and arrive!' So long as I found strength  
I talked with my companion, told him much,  
Knowing that he knew more, knew me, knew  
God

And God's disposal of me, — but the sense  
O' the blessed flight absorbed me in the main,  
And speech became mere talking through a  
sleep,

Till at the end of that last longest night  
In a red daybreak, when we reached an inn  
And my companion whispered 'Next stage —  
Rome!'

Sudden the weak flesh fell like piled-up cards,  
All the frail fabric at a finger's touch,  
And prostrate the poor soul too, and I said,  
'But though Count Guido were a furlong off,  
Just on me, I must stop and rest awhile!'  
Then something like a huge white wave o' the  
sea

Broke o'er my brain and buried me in sleep  
Blessedly, till it ebbed and left me loose,  
And where was I found but on a strange bed  
In a strange room like hell, roaring with noise,  
Ruddy with flame, and filled with men, in front  
Who but the man you call my husband? ay —  
Count Guido once more between heaven and  
me,

For there my heaven stood, my salvation, yes —  
That Caponsacchi all my heaven of help,  
Helpless himself, held prisoner in the hands  
Of men who looked up in my husband's face  
To take the fate thence he should signify,  
Just as the way was at Arezzo. Then,  
Not for my sake but his who had helped me —  
I sprang up, reached him with one bound, and  
seized

The sword o' the felon, trembling at his side,  
Fit creature of a coward, unsheathed the thing  
And would have pinned him through the  
poison-bag

To the wall and left him there to palpitate,  
As you serve scorpions, but men interposed —  
Disarmed me, gave his life to him again  
That he might take mine and the other lives;  
And he has done so. I submit myself!"

The priest says — oh, and in the main result  
The facts asseverate, he truly says,  
As to the very act and deed of him,

However you mistrust the mind o' the man —  
The flight was just for flight's sake, no pretext  
For aught except to set Pompilia free.  
He says, "I cite the husband's self's worst  
charge

In proof of my best word for both of us.  
Be it conceded that so many times  
We took our pleasure in his palace: then,  
What need to fly at all? — or flying no less,  
What need to outrage the lips sick and white  
Of a woman, and bring ruin down beside,  
By halting when Rome lay one stage beyond?"  
So does he vindicate Pompilia's fame,  
Confirm her story in all points but one —  
This; that, so fleeing and so breathing forth  
Her last strength in the prayer to halt a while,  
She makes confusion of the reddening white  
Which was the sunset when her strength gave  
way,

And the next sunrise and its whitening red  
Which she revived in when her husband came:  
She mixes both times, morn and eve, in one,  
Having lived through a blank of night 'twixt  
each

Though dead-asleep, unaware as a corpse,  
She on the bed above; her friend below  
Watched in the doorway of the inn the while,  
Stood i' the red o' the morn, that she mistakes,  
In act to rouse and quicken the tardy crew  
And hurry out the horses, have the stage  
Over, the last league, reach Rome and be safe:  
When up came Guido.

Guido's tale begins —  
How he and his whole household, drunk to  
death

By some enchanted potion, poppied drugs  
Plied by the wife, lay powerless in gross sleep  
And left the spoilers unimpeded way,  
Could not shake off their poison and pursue.  
Till noontide, then made shift to get on horse  
And did pursue: which means he took his  
time,

Pressed on no more than lingered after, step  
By step, just making sure o' the fugitives,  
Till at the nick of time, he saw his chance,  
Seized it, came up with and surprised the pair.  
How he must needs have gnawn lip an' gnashed  
teeth,

Taking successively at tower and town,  
Village and roadside, still the same report:  
"Yes, such a pair arrived an hour ago,  
Sat in the carriage just where you stand,  
While we got horses ready, & turned deaf ear  
To all entreaty they would even alight;  
Counted the minutes and resumed their  
course."

Would they indeed escape, arrive at Rome,  
Leave no least loop-hole to let murder through,  
But foil him of his captured infamy,  
Prize of guilt proved and perfect? So it  
seemed:

Till, oh the happy chance, at last stage, Rome  
But two short hours off, Castelnovo reached,  
The guardian angel gave reluctant place,  
Satan stepped forward with alacrity,  
Pompilia's flesh and blood succumbed, perforce  
A halt was, and her husband had his will.  
Perdue he couched, counted out hour by hour



Till he should spy in the east a signal-streak —  
Night had been, morrow was, triumph would  
be.

Do you see the plan deliciously complete?  
The rush upon the unsuspecting sleep,  
The easy execution, the outcry  
Over the deed, "Take notice all the world!  
These two dead bodies, locked still in embrace, —

The man is Caponsacchi and a priest,  
The woman is my wife: they fled me late,  
Thus have I found and you behold them thus,  
And may judge me: do you approve or no?"

Success did seem not so improbable,  
But that already Satan's laugh was heard,  
His black back turned on Guido — left i' the  
lurch

Or rather, balked of suit and service now,  
Left to improve on both by one deed more,  
Burn up the better at no distant day,  
Body and soul one holocaust to hell.  
Anyhow, of this natural consequence  
Did just the last link of the long chain snap:  
For an eruption was o' the priest, alive  
And alert, calm, resolute and formidable,  
Not the least look of fear in that broad brow —  
One not to be disposed of by surprise,  
And armed moreover — who had guessed as  
much?

Yes, there stood he in secular costume  
Complete from head to heel, with sword at  
side,

He seemed to know the trick of perfectly.  
There was no prompt suppression of the man  
As he said calmly, "I have saved your wife  
From death; there was no other way but this;  
Of what do I defraud you except death?  
Charge any wrong beyond, I answer it."  
Guido, the valorous, had met his match.  
Was forced to demand help instead of flight,  
Bid the authorities o' the place lend aid  
And make the best of a broken matter so.  
They soon obeyed the summons — I suppose.  
Apprised and ready, or not far to seek —  
Laid hands on Caponsacchi, found in fault,  
A priest ~~not~~ flagrantly accoutred thus, —  
Then, to wake good Count Guido's further  
charge

Proceeded, prisoner made lead the way,  
In a crowd, upstairs to the chamber-door,  
Where wax-white, dead asleep, deep beyond  
dream,

As the priest laid her, lay Pompilia yet.

And as he mounted step and step with the  
crowd

How I see Guido taking heart again!  
He knew his wife so well and the way of her —  
How at the outbreak she would shroud her  
shame

In hell's heart, would it mercifully yawn —  
How, failing that, her forehead to his foot,  
She would crouch silent till the great doom  
fell,

Leave him triumphant with the crowd to see  
Guilt motionless or writhing like a worm!  
No! Second misadventure, this worn turned,

I told you: would have slain him on the spot  
With his own weapon, but they seized her  
hands:

Leaving her tongue free, as it tolled the knell  
Of Guido's hope so lively late. The past  
Took quite another shape now. She who  
shrieked,

"At least and forever I am mine and God's,  
Thanks to his liberating angel Death —  
Never again degraded to be yours  
The ignoble noble, the unmanly man,  
The beast below the beast in brutishness!" —  
This was the froward child, "the restif lamb  
Used to be cherished in his breast," he  
groaned —

"Eat from his hand and drink from out his  
cup,

The while his fingers pushed their loving way  
Through curl on curl of that soft coat —  
alas.

And she all silverly baaed gratitude  
While meditating mischief!" — and so forth.  
He must invent another story now!

The ins and outs o' the rooms were searched:  
he found

Or showed for found the abominable prize —  
Love-letters from his wife who cannot write,  
Love-letters in reply o' the priest — thank  
God! —

Who can write and confront his character  
With this, and prove the false thing forged  
throughout:

Spitting whereat, he needs must spatter whom  
But Guido's self? — that forged and falsified  
One letter called Pompilia's, past dispute:  
Then why not these to make sure still more  
sure?

So was the case concluded then and there:  
Guido preferred his charges in due form,  
Called on the law to adjudicate, consigned  
The accused ones to the Prefect of the place.  
(Oh mouse-birth of that mountain-like re-  
venge!)

And so to his own place betook himself  
After the spring that failed, — the wildcat's  
way.

The captured parties were conveyed to Rome;  
Investigation followed here i' the court —  
Soon to review the fruit of its own work,  
From then to now being eight months and no  
more.

Guido kept out of sight and safe at home:  
The Abate, brother Paolo, helped most  
At words when deeds were out of question,  
pushed

Nearest the purple, best played deputy,  
So, pleaded, Guido's representative  
At the court shall soon try Guido's self, —  
what's more,

The court that also took — I told you, Sir —  
That statement of that couple, how a cheat  
Had been i' the birth of the babe, no child of  
theirs.

That was the prelude; this, the play's first  
act:

Whereof we wait what comes, crown, close of  
all.

Well, the result was something of a shade  
On the parties thus accused, — how otherwise?  
Shade, but with shine as unmistakable.  
Each had a prompt defence: Pompilia first —  
"Earth was made hell to me who did no harm :  
I only could emerge one way from hell  
By catching at the one hand held me, so  
I caught at it and thereby stepped to heaven :  
If that be wrong, do with me what you will !"  
Then Caponsacchi with a grave grand sweep  
O' the arm as though his soul warned baseness  
off —

"If as a man, then much more as a priest  
I hold me bound to help weak innocence :  
If so my worldly reputation burst,  
Being the bubble it is, why, burst it may :  
Blame I can bear though not blameworthiness.  
But use your sense first, see if the miscreant  
proved,

The man who tortured thus the woman, thus  
Have not both laid the trap and fixed the lure  
Over the pit should bury body and soul !  
His facts are lies : his letters are the fact —  
An infiltration flavored with himself !  
As for the fancies — whether . . . what is it  
you say ?

The lady loves me, whether I love her  
In the forbidden sense of your surmise, —  
If, with the midday blaze of truth above,  
The unblinded eye of God awake, aware,  
You needs must pry about and trace the birth  
Of each stray beam of light may traverse night,  
To the night's sun that 's Lucifer himself,  
Do so, at other time, in other place,  
Not now nor here ! Enough that first to last  
I never touched her lip nor she my hand,  
Nor either of us thought a thought, much less  
Spoke a word which the Virgin might not  
hear.

Be such your question, thus I answer it."

Then the court had to make its mind up, spoke.  
"It is a thorny question, yea, a tale  
Hard to believe, but not impossible :  
Who can be absolute for either side ?  
A middle course is happily open yet.  
Here has a blot surprised the social blank, —  
Whether through favor, feebleness or fault,  
No matter, leprosy has touched our robe  
And we unclean must needs be purified.  
Here is a wife makes holiday from home,  
A priest caught playing truant to his church,  
In masquerade moreover : both allege  
Enough excuse to stop our lifted scourge  
Which else would heavily fall. On the other  
hand,

Here is a husband, ay and man of mark,  
Who comes complaining here, demands redress  
As if he were the pattern of desert —  
The while those plaguy allegations frown,  
Forbid we grant him the redress he seeks.  
To all men be our moderation known !  
Rewarding none while compensating each,  
Hurling all round though harming nobody,  
Husband, wife, priest, scot-free not one shall  
'scape,

Yet priest, wife, husband, boast the unbroken  
head

From application of our excellent oil :  
So that, whatever be the fact, in fine,  
We make no miss of justice in a sort.  
First, let the husband stomach as he may,  
His wife shall neither be returned him, no —  
Nor branded, whipped and caged, but just con-  
signed

To a convent and the quietude she craves ;  
So is he rid of his domestic plague :  
What better thing can happen to a man ?  
Next, let the priest retire — unshent, unshamed,  
Unpunished as for perpetrating crime,  
But relegated (not imprisoned, Sirs !)  
Sent for three years to clarify his youth  
At Civita, a rest by the way to Rome :  
There let his life skim off its last of lees  
Nor keep this dubious color. Judged the  
cause :

All parties may retire, content, we hope."  
That 's Rome's way, the traditional road of law ;  
Whither it leads is what remains to tell.

The priest went to his relegation-place,  
The wife to her convent, brother Paolo  
To the arms of brother Guido with the news  
And this beside — his charge was counter-  
charged ;

The Comparini, his old brace of hates,  
Were breathed and vigilant and venomous  
now —

Had shot a second bolt where the first stuck,  
And followed up the pending dowry-suit  
By a procedure should release the wife  
From so much of the marriage-bond as barred  
Escape when Guido turned the screw too much  
On his wife's flesh and blood, as husband may.  
No more defence, she turned and made attack,  
Claimed now divorce from bed and board, in  
short :

Pleaded such subtle strokes of cruelty,  
Such slow sure siege laid to her body and soul,  
As, proved, — and proofs seemed coming thick  
and fast, —

Would gain both freedom and the dowry back  
Even should the first suit leave them in his  
grasp :

So urged the Comparini for the wife.  
Guido had gained not one of the good things  
He grasped at by his creditable plan !  
O' the flight and following and the rest : the suit  
That smouldered late was fanned, & fury new,  
This adjunct came to help with fiercer fire,  
While he had got himself a quite new plague —  
Found the world's face an universal grin  
At this last best of the Hundred Merry Tales  
Of how a young and spritely clerk devised  
To carry off a spouse that moped too much,  
And cured her of the vapors in a trice :  
And how the husband, playing Vulcan's part,  
Told by the Sun, started in hot pursuit  
To catch the lovers, and came halting up,  
Cast his net, and then called the Gods to see  
The convicts in their rosy impudence —  
Whereat said Mercury, "Would that I were  
Mars !"

Oh it was rare, and naughty all the same !  
Brief, the wife's courage and cunning, — the  
priest's show

Of chivalry and adroitness, — last not least,  
The husband — how he ne'er showed teeth at  
all,

Whose bark had promised biting; but just  
sneaked

Back to his kennel, tail 'twixt legs, as 't  
were, —

All this was hard to gulp down and digest.

So pays the devil his liegeman, brass for gold.

But this was at Arezzo: here in Rome

Brave Paolo bore up against it all —

Battled it out, nor wanting to himself

Nor Guido nor the House whose weight he bore

Pillar-like, by no force of arm but brain.

He knew his Rome, what wheels to set to  
work;

Plied influential folk, pressed to the ear

Of the efficacious purple, pushed his way

To the old Pope's self, — past decency indeed, —

Praying him take the matter in his hands

Out of the regular court's incompetence.

But times are changed and nephews out of date

And favoritism unfashionable: the Pope

Said, "Render Caesar what is Caesar's due!"

As for the Comparini's counter-plea,

He met that by a counter-plea again,

Made Guido claim divorce — with help so far

By the trial's issue: for, why punishment

However slight unless for guiltiness

However slender? — and a molehill serves

Much as a mountain of offence this way.

So was he gathering strength on every side

And growing more and more to menace — when

All of a terrible moment came the blow

That beat down Paolo's fence, ended the play

O' the foil and brought Mannaia on the stage.

Five months had passed now since Pompilia's  
flight,

Months spent in peace among the Convert  
nuns:

This, — being, as it seemed, for Guido's sake

Solely, what pride might call imprisonment

And quote as something gained, to friends at  
home, —

This naturally was at Guido's charge:

Grud if he might, but penitential fare,

Prayers, preachings, who but he defrayed the  
cost?

So, Paolo dropped, as proxy, do it by do it

Like heart's blood, till — what's here? What  
notice comes?

The convent's self makes application bland

That, since Pompilia's health is fast o' the  
wane,

She may have leave to go combine her cure

Of soul with cure of body, mend her mind

Together with her thin arms and sunk eyes

That want fresh air outside the convent-wall,

Say in a friendly house, — and which so fit

As a certain villa in the Pauline way,

That happens to hold Pietro and his wife.

The natural guardians? "Oh, and shift the  
care

You shift the cost, too; Pietro pays in turn,

And lightens Guido of a load! And then,

Villa or convent, two names for one thing,

Always the sojourn means imprisonment,

*Domus pro carcere* — nowise we relax,  
Nothing abate: how answers Paolo?"

You,  
What would you answer? All so smooth and  
fair,

Even Paul's astuteness sniffed no harm i' the  
world.

He authorized the transfer, saw it made

And, two months after, reaped the fruit of the  
same,

Having to sit down, rack his brain and find

What phrase should serve him best to notify

Our Guido that by happy providence

A son and heir, a babe was born to him

I' the villa, — go tell sympathizing friends!

Yes, such had been Pompilia's privilege:

She, when she fled, was one month gone with  
child,

Known to herself or unknown, either way

Availing to explain (say men of art)

The strange and passionate precipitance

Of maiden startled into motherhood

Which changes body and soul by nature's law.

So when the she-dove breeds, strange yearnings  
come

For the unknown shelter by undreamed-of  
shores,

And there is born a blood-pulse in her heart

To fight if needs be, though with flap of wing,

For the wool-flock or the fur-tuft, though a  
hawk

Contest the prize, — wherefore, she knows not  
yet.

Anyhow, thus to Guido came the news.

"I shall have quitted Rome ere you arrive

To take the one step left," — wrote Paolo.

Then did the winch o' the winepress of all hate,

Vanity, disappointment, grudge and greed,

Take the last turn that screws out pure revenge

With a bright bubble at the brim beside —

By an heir's birth he was assured at once

O' the main prize, all the money in dispute:

Pompilia's dowry might revert to her

Or stay with him as law's caprice should  
point, —

But now — now — what was Pietro's shall be  
hers.

What was hers shall remain her own, — if hers,  
Why then, — oh, not her husband's, but — her  
heir's!

That heir being his too, all grew his at last

By that road or by that road, since they join.

Before, why, push he Pietro out o' the world, —

The current of the money stopped, you see,

Pompilia being proved no Pietro's child:

Or let it be Pompilia's life he quenched,

Again the current of the money stopped, —

Guido debarred his rights as husband soon,

So the new process threatened; — now, the  
chance,

Now, the resplendent minute! Clear the earth,

Cleanse the house, let the three but disappear,

A child remains, depositary of all,

That Guido may enjoy his own again,

Repair all losses by a master-stroke,

Wipe out the past, all done all left undone,

Swell the good present to best evermore,

Die into new life, which let blood baptize!



So, i' the blue of a sudden sulphur-blaze,  
Both why there was one step to take at Rome,  
And why he should not meet with Paolo there,  
He saw — the ins and outs to the heart of hell —  
And took the straight line thither swift and sure.

He rushed to Vittiano, found four sons o' the soil,

Brutes of his breeding, with one spark i' the clod

That served for a soul, the looking up to him  
Or aught called Franceschini as life, death,  
Heaven, hell, — lord paramount, assembled these,

Harangued, equipped, instructed, pressed each clod

With his will's imprint; then took horse, plied spur,

And so arrived, all five of them, at Rome  
On Christmas-Eve, and forthwith found themselves

Installed i' the vacancy and solitude  
Left them by Paolo, the considerate man  
Who, good as his word, had disappeared at once  
As if to leave the stage free. A whole week  
Did Guido spend in study of his part,  
Then played it fearless of a failure. One,  
Struck the year's clock whereof the hours are days,

And off was rung o' the little wheels the chime  
"Good will on earth and peace to man:" but, two,

Proceeded the same bell, and, evening come,  
The dreadful five felt finger-wise their way  
Across the town by blind cuts and black turns  
To the little lone suburban villa; knocked —  
"Who may be outside?" called a well-known voice.

"A friend of Caponsacchi's bringing friends  
A letter."

That's a test, the excusers say:

Ay, and a test conclusive, I return.

What? Had that name brought touch of guilt or taste

Of fear with it, aught to dash the present joy  
With memory of the sorrow just at end, —  
She, happy in her parents' arms at length,  
With the new blessing of the two-weeks' babe, —

How had that name's announcement moved the wife?

Or, as the other slanders circulate,  
Were Caponsacchi no rare visitant  
On nights and days whither safe harbor lured,  
What bait had been i' the name to ope the door?

The promise of a letter? Stealthy guests  
Have secret watchwords, private entrances:  
The man's own self might have been found inside

And all the scheme made frustrate by a word.  
No: but since Guido knew, none knew so well,  
The man had never since returned to Rome  
Nor seen the wife's face more than villa's front,  
So, could not be at hand to warn or save, —  
For that, he took this sure way to the end.

"Come in," bade poor Violante cheerfully,

Drawing the door-bolt: that death was the first,  
Stabbed through and through. Pietro, close on her heels,

Set up a cry — "Let me confess myself!  
Grant but confession!" Cold steel was the grant.

Then came Pompilia's turn.

Then they escaped.

The noise o' the slaughter roused the neighborhood.

They had forgotten just the one thing more  
Which saves i' the circumstance, the ticket, to wit,

Which puts post-horses at a traveller's use:  
So, all on foot, desperate through the dark  
Reeled they like drunkards along open road,  
Accomplished a prodigious twenty miles  
Homeward, and gained Baccano very near,  
Stumbled at last, deaf, dumb, blind through the feat.

Into a grange and, one dead heap, slept there  
Till the pursuers hard upon their trace  
Reached them and took them, red from head to heel,

And brought them to the prison where they lie.  
The couple were laid i' the church two days ago,  
And the wife lives yet by miracle.

All is told.

You hardly need ask what Count Guido says.  
Since something he must say. "I own the deed —"

(He cannot choose, — but —) "I declare the same

Just and inevitable, — since no way else  
Was left me, but by this of taking life,  
To save my honor which is more than life.  
I exercised a husband's rights." To which  
The answer is as prompt — "There was no fault  
In any one o' the three to punish thus:  
Neither i' the wife, who kept all faith to you,  
Nor in the parents, whom yourself first duped,  
Robbed and maltreated, then turned out of doors.

You wronged and they endured wrong; yours the fault.

Next, had endurance overpassed the mark  
And turned resentment needing remedy, —

Nay, put the absurd impossible case, for once —  
You were all blameless of the blame alleged  
And they blameworthy where you fix all blame,  
Still, why this violation of the law?

Yourself elected law should take its course,  
Avenge wrong, or show vengeance not your right;

Why, only when the balance in law's hand  
Trembles against you and inclines the way  
O' the other party, do you make a protest,  
Renounce arbitrament, flying to court,  
And crying 'Honor's hurt' the sword must cure'?

Aha, and so i' the middle of each suit  
Trying i' the courts, — and you had three in play

With an appeal to the Pope's self beside, —  
What, you may chop and change and right your wrongs,

Leaving the law to lag as she thinks fit?"

That were too temptingly commodious, Count !  
One would have still a remedy in reserve  
Should reach the safest oldest sinner, you see !  
One's honor forsooth ? Does that take hurt  
alone

From the extreme outrage ? I who have no  
wife,

Being yet sensitive in my degree  
As Guido, — must discover hurt elsewhere  
Which, half compounded for in days gone by,  
May profitably break out now afresh.  
Need cure from my own expeditious hands.  
The lie that was, as it were, imputed me  
When you objected to my contract's clause, —  
The theft as good as, one may say, alleged,  
When you, co-heir in a will, excepted, Sir,  
To my administration of effects,  
— Aha, do you think law disposed of these ?  
My honor's touched and shall deal death  
around !

Count, that were too commodious, I repeat !  
If any law be imperative on us all,  
Of all are you the enemy : out with you  
From the common light and air and life of man !

## IV

## TERTIUM QUID

True, Excellency — as his Highness says,  
Though she's not dead yet, she's as good as  
stretched

Symmetrical beside the other two ;  
Though he's not judged yet, he's the same as  
judged,

So do the facts abound and superabound :  
And nothing hinders that we lift the case  
Out of the shade into the shine, allow  
Qualified persons to pronounce at last,  
Nay, edge in an authoritative word  
Between this rabble's-brabble of dolts and fools  
Who make up reasonless unreasoning Rome.  
"Now for the Trial !" they roar : "the Trial  
to test

The truth, weigh husband and weigh wife alike  
I' the scales of law, make one scale kick the  
beam !"

Now's a machine from which, to please the  
mob,

Truth the divinity must needs descend  
And dear things at the play's fifth act — aha !  
Hammer into their noddles who was who  
And what was what. I tell the simpletons,  
"Could law be competent to such a feat  
'T were done already : what begins next week  
Is end o' the Trial, last link of a chain  
Whereof the knot was forged three years ago  
When law added herself to set wrong right,  
And proved so since in taking the first step  
That ever some new grievance, — tort, retort,  
On one or the other side, — o'ertook i' the  
game,

Retarded sentence, till this deed of death  
Is thrown in, as it were, last bale to boat  
Crammed to the edge with cargo — or passen-  
gers ?

'Trecentos inseris : ohe, jam satis est !

*Huc appelle !* — passengers, the word must be."  
Long since, the boat was loaded to my eyes.  
To hear the rabble and brabble, you'd call the  
case

Fused and confused past human finding out.  
One calls the square round, t' other the round  
square —

And pardonably in that first surprise  
O' the blood that fell and splashed the dia-  
gram :

But now we've used our eyes to the violent  
hue

Can't we look through the crimson and trace  
lines ?

It makes a man despair of history,  
Eusebius and the established fact — fig's end !  
Oh, give the fools their Trial, rattle away  
With the leash of lawyers, two on either side —  
One barks, one bites, — Masters Arcangeli  
And Spreti, — that's the husband's ultimate  
hope

Against the Fise and the other kind of Fise,  
Bound to do barking for the wife : bow — wow !  
Why, Excellency, we and his Highness here  
Would settle the matter as sufficiently  
As ever will Advocate This and Fiscal That  
And Judge the Other, with even — a word and  
a wink —

We well know who for ultimate arbiter.  
Let us beware o' the basset-table — lest  
We jog the elbow of Her Eminence,  
Jostle his cards, — he'll rap you out a . . . st !  
By the window-seat ! And here's the Marquis  
too !

Indulge me but a moment : if I fail  
— Favored with such an audience, under-  
stand ! —

To set things right, why, class me with the  
mob

As understander of the mind of man !

The mob, — now, that's just how the error  
comes !

Bethink you that you have to deal with *plebs*,  
The commonalty ; this is an episode  
In burgess-life, — why seek to aggrandize,  
Idealize, denaturalize the class ?  
People talk just as if they had to do  
With a noble pair that . . . Excellency, your  
ear !

Stoop to me, Highness, — listen and look your-  
selves !

This Pietro, this Violante, live their life  
At Rome in the easy way that's far from worst  
Even for their betters, — themselves love them-  
selves,

Spend their own oil in feeding their own lamp  
That their own faces may grow bright thereby.  
They get to fifty and over : how's the lamp ?  
Full to the depth o' the wick, — moneys so  
much ;

And also with a remnant, — so much more  
Of moneys, — which there's no consuming now.  
But, when the wick shall moulder out some day,  
Failing fresh twist of tow to use up dregs,  
Will lie a prize for the passer-by, — to wit,  
Any one that can prove himself the heir,

Seeing, the couple are wanting in a child:  
 Meantime their wick swims in the safe broad  
 bowl  
 O' the middle rank,—not raised a beacon's  
 height  
 For wind to ravage, nor dropped till lamp  
 graze ground  
 Like cresset, mudlarks poke now here now  
 there,  
 Going their rounds to probe the ruts i' the road  
 Or fish the luck o' the puddle. Pietro's soul  
 Was satisfied when crony smirked, "No wine  
 Like Pietro's, and he drinks it every day!"  
 His wife's heart swelled her bodice, joyed its  
 fill  
 When neighbors turned heads wistfully at  
 church,  
 Sighed at the load of lace that came to pray.  
 Well, having got through fifty years of flare,  
 They burn out so, indulge so their dear selves,  
 That Pietro finds himself in debt at last,  
 As he were any lordling of us all:  
 And, now that dark begins to creep on day,  
 Creditors grow uneasy, talk aside,  
 Take counsel, then importune all at once.  
 For if the good fat rosy careless man,  
 Who has not laid a ducat by, decease—  
 Let the lamp fall, no heir at hand to catch—  
 Why, being childless, there's a spilth i' the  
 street  
 O' the remnant, there's a scramble for the  
 dregs  
 By the stranger: so, they grant him no long  
 day  
 But come in a body, clamor to be paid.  
 What's his resource? He asks and straight  
 obtains  
 The customary largess, dole dealt out  
 To, what we call our "poor dear shamefaced  
 ones,"  
 In secret once a month to spare the shame  
 O' the slothful and the spendthrift,—pauper-  
 saints  
 The Pope puts meat i' the mouth of, ravens  
 they.  
 And providence he—just what the mob ad-  
 mires!  
 That is, instead of putting a prompt foot  
 On selfish worthless human slugs whose slime  
 Has failed to lubricate their path in life,  
 Why, the Pope picks the first ripe fruit that  
 falls  
 And gracious puts it in the vermin's way.  
 Pietro could never save a dollar? Straight  
 He must be subsidized at our expense:  
 And for his wife—the harmless household  
 sheep  
 One ought not to see harassed in her age—  
 Judge, by the way she bore adversity,  
 O' the patient nature you ask pity for!  
 How long, now, would the roughest market-  
 man,  
 Handling the creatures huddled to the knife,  
 Harass a mutton ere she made a mouth  
 Or menaced biting? Yet the poor sheep here,  
 Violante, the old innocent burgess-wife,  
 In her first difficulty showed great teeth

Fit to crunch up and swallow a good round  
 crime.  
 She meditates the tenure of the Trust,  
*Fidei commissum* is the lawyer phrase,  
 These funds that only want an heir to take—  
 Goes o'er the gamut o' the creditor's cry  
 By semitones from whine to snarl high up  
 And growl down low, one scale in sundry  
 keys,—  
 Pauses with a little compunction for the face  
 Of Pietro frustrate of its ancient cheer,—  
 Never a bottle now for friend at need,—  
 Comes to a stop on her own frittered lace  
 And neighborly condolences thereat,  
 Then makes her mind up, sees the thing to do:  
 And so, deliberate, snaps house-book clasp,  
 Posts off to vespers, missal beneath arm,  
 Passes the proper San Lorenzo by,  
 Dives down a little lane to the left, is lost  
 In a labyrinth of dwellings best unnamed,  
 Selects a certain blind one, black at base,  
 Blinking at top,—the sign of we know  
 what,—  
 One candle in a casement set to wink  
 Streetward, do service to no shrine inside,—  
 Mounts thither by the filthy flight of stairs,  
 Holding the cord by the wall, to the tip-top,  
 Gropes for the door i' the dark, ajar of course,  
 Raps, opens, enters in: up starts a thing  
 Naked as needs be—"What, you rogue, 't is  
 you?"  
 Back,—how can I have taken a farthing yet?  
 Mercy on me, poor sinner that I am!  
 Here's . . . why, I took you for Madonna's self  
 With all that sudden swirl of silk i' the place!  
 What may your pleasure be, my bonny  
 dame?"  
 Your Excellency supplies aught left obscure?  
 One of those women that abound in Rome,  
 Whose needs oblige them eke out one poor trade  
 By another vile one: her ostensible work  
 Was washing clothes, out in the open air  
 At the cistern by Citorio; her true trade—  
 Whispering to idlers, when they stopped and  
 praised  
 The ankles she let liberally shine  
 In kneeling at the slab by the fountain-side,  
 That there was plenty more to criticise  
 At home, that eve, i' the house where candle  
 blinked  
 Decorously above, and all was done  
 I' the holy fear of God and cheap beside,  
 Violante, now, had seen this woman wash,  
 Noticed and envied her propitious shape,  
 Tracked her home to her house-top, noted too,  
 And now was come to tempt her and propose  
 A bargain far more shameful than the first  
 Which trafficked her virginity away  
 For a melon and three pauls at twelve years  
 old.  
 Five minutes' talk with this poor child of Eve,  
 Struck was the bargain, business at an end—  
 "Then, six months hence, that person whom  
 you trust,  
 Comes, fetches whatsoever babe it be;  
 I keep the price and secret, you the babe,  
 Paying beside for mass to make all straight:  
 Meantime, I pouch the earnest-money-piece."



Down-stairs again goes fumbling by the rope  
 Violante, triumphing in a flourish of fire  
 From her own brain, self-lit by such success, —  
 Gains church in time for the *Magnificat*,  
 And gives forth "My reproof is taken away,  
 And blessed shall mankind proclaim me now,"  
 So that the officiating priest turns round  
 To see who proffers the obstreperous praise:  
 Then home to Pietro, the enraptured-much  
 But puzzled-more when told the wondrous  
 news —

How orisons and works of charity,  
 (Beside that pair of pinners and a coif,  
 Birthday surprise last Wednesday was five  
 weeks)

Had borne fruit in the autumn of his life, —  
 They, or the Orvieto in a double dose.  
 Anyhow, she must keep house next six months,  
 Lie on the settle, avoid the three-legged stool,  
 And, chiefly, not be crossed in wish or whim,  
 And the result was like to be an heir.

Accordingly, when time was come about,  
 He found himself the sire indeed of this  
 Francesca Vittoria Pompilia and the rest  
 O' the names whereby he sealed her his, next  
 day.

A crime complete in its way is here, I hope?  
 Lies to God, lies to man, every way lies  
 To nature and civility and the mode:  
 Flat robbery of the proper heirs thus foiled  
 O' the due succession, — and, what followed  
 thence,

Robbery of God, through the confessor's ear  
 Debarred the most noteworthy incident  
 When all else done and undone twelvemonth  
 through

Was put in evidence at Easter-time.  
 All other peccadillos! — but this one  
 To the priest who comes next day to dine with  
 us?

'T were inexpedient; decency forbade.

Is so far clear? You know Violante now,  
 Compute her capability of crime  
 By this authentic instance? Black hard cold  
 Crime like a stone you kick up with your foot  
 I' the middle of a field?

I thought as much.

But now, a question. — how long does it lie,  
 The bad and barren bit of stuff you kick,  
 Before encroached on and encompassed round  
 With minute moss, weed, wild-flower — made  
 alive

By worm, and fly, and foot of the free bird?  
 Your Highness, — healthy minds let bygones  
 be.

Leave old crimes to grow young and virtuous-  
 like

I' the sun and air; so time treats ugly deeds:  
 They take the natural blessing of all change.  
 There was the joy o' the husband silly-sooth,  
 The softening of the wife's old wicked heart,  
 Virtues to right and left, profusely paid  
 If so they might compensate the saved sin.  
 And then the sudden existence, dewy-dear,  
 O' the rose above the dunghheap, the pure child

As good as new created, since withdrawn  
 From the horror of the pre-appointed lot  
 With the unknown father and the mother  
 known

Too well, — some fourteen years of squalid  
 youth,

And then libertinage, disease, the grave —  
 Hell in life here, hereafter life in hell:  
 Look at that horror and this soft repose!  
 Why, moralist, the sin has saved a soul!  
 Then, even the palpable grievance to the  
 heirs —

'Faith, this was no frank setting hand to throat  
 And robbing a man, but . . . Excellency, by  
 your leave,

How did you get that marvel of a gem,  
 The sapphire with the Graces grand and Greek?  
 The story is, stooping to pick a stone  
 From the pathway through a vineyard — no-  
 man's-land —

To pelt a sparrow with, you chanced on this:  
 Why now, do those five clowns o' the family  
 O' the vinedresser digest their porridge worse  
 That not one keeps it in his goatskin pouch  
 To do flint's-service with the tinder-box?  
 Don't cheat me, don't cheat you, don't cheat a  
 friend!

But are you so hard on who jostles just  
 A stranger with no natural sort of claim  
 To the havings and the holdings (here's the  
 point)

Unless by misadventure, and defect  
 Of that which ought to be — nay, which there's  
 none

Would dare so much as wish to profit by —  
 Since who dares put in just so many words  
 "May Pietro fail to have a child, please God!  
 So shall his house and goods belong to me,  
 The sooner that his heart will pine betimes?"  
 Well then, God does n't please, nor heart shall  
 pine!

Because he has a child at last, you see,  
 Or selfsame thing as though a child it were,  
 He thinks, whose sole concern it is to think:  
 If he accepts it why should you demur?

Moreover, say that certain sin there seem,  
 The proper process of unsinning sin  
 Is to begin well-doing somehow else.  
 Pietro, — remember, with no sin at all  
 I' the substitution, — why, this gift of God  
 Flung in his lap from over Paradise  
 Steadied him in a moment, set him straight  
 On the good path he had been straying from.  
 Henceforward no more wilfulness and waste,  
 Cuppings, carousings, — these a sponge wiped  
 out.

All sort of self-denial was easy now  
 For the child's sake, the chatelaine to be,  
 Who must want much and might want who  
 knows what?

And so, the debts were paid, habits reformed,  
 Expense curtailed, the dowry set to grow.  
 As for the wife, — I said, hers the whole sin:  
 So, hers the exemplary penance. 'T was a text  
 Whereon folk preached and praised, the district  
 through:

"Oh, make us happy and you make us good!

It all comes of God giving her a child :  
Such graces follow God's best earthly gift ! ”

Here you put by my guard, pass to my heart  
By the home-thrust — “ There 's a lie at base  
of all.”

Why, thou exact Prince, is it a pearl or no,  
Yon globe upon the Principessa's neck ?  
That great round glory of pellucid stuff,  
A fish secreted round a grain of grit !  
Do you call it worthless for the worthless core ?  
(She does n't, who well knows what she changed  
for it.)

So, to our brace of burgesses again !  
You see so far i' the story, who was right,  
Who wrong, who neither, don't you ? What,  
you don't ?

EH ? Well, admit there 's somewhat dark i'  
the case,

Let 's on — the rest shall clear, I promise you.  
Leap over a dozen years : you find, these passed,  
An old good easy creditable sire,  
A careful housewife's beaming bustling face,  
Both wrapped up in the love of their one child,  
The strange tall pale beautiful creature grown  
Lily-like out o' the cleft i' the sun-smit rock  
To bow its white miraculous birth of buds  
I' the way of wandering Joseph and his  
spouse, —

So painters fancy : here it was a fact.  
And this their lily, — could they but transplant  
And set in vase to stand by Solomon's porch  
'Twixt lion and lion ! — this Pompilia of theirs,  
Could they see worthily married, well bestowed,  
In house and home ! And why despair of this  
With Rome to choose from, save the topmost  
rank ?

Themselves would help the choice with heart  
and soul,

Throw their late savings in a common heap  
To go with the dowry, and be followed in time  
By the heritage legitimately hers :  
And when such paragon was found and fixed,  
Why, they might chant their “ *Nunc di-  
mittis* ” straight.

Indeed the prize was simply full to a fault,  
Exorbitant for the suitor they should seek,  
And social class should choose among, these  
cits.

Yet there 's a latitude : exceptional white  
Amid the general brown o' the species, lurks  
A Burgess nearly an aristocrat,  
Legitimately in reach : look out for him !  
What banker, merchant, has seen better days,  
What second rate painter a-pushing up,  
Poet a-slipping down, shall bid the best  
For this young beauty with the thumping purse ?  
Alack, were it but one of such as these  
So like the real thing that they pass for it,  
All had gone well ! Unluckily, poor souls,  
It proved to be the impossible thing itself ;  
Truth and not sham : hence ruin to them all.

For, Guido Franceschini was the head  
Of an old family in Arezzo, old  
To that degree they could afford be poor  
Better than most : the case is common too.

Out of the vast door 'scutcheoned overhead,  
Creeps out a serving-man on Saturdays  
To cater for the week, — turns up anon  
I' the market, chaffering for the lamb's least  
leg,

Or the quarter-fowl, less entrails, claws and  
comb :

Then back again with prize, — a liver begged  
Into the bargain, gizzard overlooked.

He 's mincing these to give the beans a taste,  
When, at your knock, he leaves the simmering  
soup,

Waits on the curious stranger-visitant,  
Napkin in half-wiped hand, to show the rooms.  
Point pictures out have hung their hundred  
years,

“ Priceless,” he tells you, — puts in his place at  
once

The man of money : yes, you 're banker-king  
Or merchant-kaiser, wallow in your wealth  
While patron, the house-master, can't afford  
To stop our ceiling-hole that rain so rots :  
But he 's the man of mark, and there 's his  
shield,

And yonder 's the famed Rafael, first in kind,  
The painter painted for his grandfather,  
And you have paid to see : “ Good morning,  
Sir ! ”

Such is the law of compensation. Still  
The poverty was getting nigh acute ;  
There gaped so many noble mouths to feed,  
Beans must suffice unflavored of the fowl.  
The mother, — hers would be a spun-out life  
I' the nature of things ; the sisters had done  
well

And married men of reasonable rank :  
But that sort of illumination stops,  
Throws back no heat upon the parent-hearth.  
The family instinct felt out for its fire  
To the Church, — the Church traditionally helps  
A second son : and such was Paolo,  
Established here at Rome these thirty years,  
Who played the regular game, — priest and  
Abate,

Made friends, owned house and land, became of  
use

To a personage : his course lay clear enough.  
The youngest caught the sympathetic flame,  
And, though unfledged wings kept him still i'  
the cage,

Yet he shot up to be a Canon, so  
Clung to the higher perch and crowed in hope.  
Even our Guido, eldest brother, went  
As far i' the way o' the Church as safety seemed,  
He being Head o' the House, ordained to wive, —  
So, could but dally with an Order or two  
And testify good-will i' the cause : he clipt  
His top-hair and thus far affected Christ.  
But main promotion must fall otherwise,  
Though still from the side o' the Church : and  
here was he

At Rome, since first youth, worn threadbare of  
soul

By forty-six years' rubbing on hard life,  
Getting fast tired o' the game whose word is —  
“ Wait ! ”

When one day, — he too having his Cardinal  
To serve in some ambiguous sort, as serve

To draw the coach the plumes o' the horses' heads, —  
The Cardinal saw fit to dispense with him,  
Ride with one plume the less; and off it dropped.

Guido thus left, — with a youth spent in vain  
And not a penny in purse to show for it, —  
Advised with Paolo, bent no doubt in chafe  
The black brows somewhat formidably, growled  
“Where is the good I came to get at Rome?  
Where the repayment of the servitude  
To a purple popinjay, whose feet I kiss,  
Knowing his father wiped the shoes of mine?”

“Patience,” pats Paolo the recalcitrant —  
“You have not had, so far, the proper luck,  
Nor do my gains suffice to keep us both:  
A modest competency is mine, not more.  
You are the Count however, yours the style,  
Heirdom and state, — you can't expect all good.  
Had I, now, held your hand of cards . . . well,  
well —

What's yet unplayed, I'll look at, by your leave,

Over your shoulder, — I who made my game,  
Let's see, if I can't help to handle yours.  
Fie on you, all the Honors in your fist,  
Countship, Househeadship, — how have you misdealt!

Why, in the first place, these will marry a man!  
*Notum tonsoribus!* To the Tonsor then!  
Come, clear your looks, and choose your freshest suit,

And, after function's done with, down we go  
To the woman-dealer in perukes, a wench  
I and some others settled in the shop  
At Place Colonna: she's an oracle. Hmm!  
'Dear, 'tis my brother: brother, 'tis my dear.  
Dear, give us counsel! Whom do you suggest  
As properest party in the quarter round  
For the Count here? — he is minded to take  
wife,

And further tells me he intends to slip  
Twenty zecchines under the bottom-scalp  
Of his old wig when he sends it to revive  
For the wedding: and I add a trifle too.  
You know what personage I'm potent with.”  
And so plumped out Pompilia's name the first.  
She told them of the household and its ways,  
The easy husband and the shrewder wife  
In Via Vittoria, — how the tall young girl,  
With hair black as yon patch and eyes as big  
As yon pomander to make freckles fly,  
Would have so much for certain, and so much  
more

In likelihood, — why, it suited, slept as smooth  
As the Pope's pantoufle does on the Pope's foot.  
“I'll to the husband!” Guido ups and cries.  
“Ay, so you'd play your last court-card, no  
doubt!”

Puts Paolo in with a groan — “Only, you see,  
'Tis I, this time, that supervise your lead.  
Priests play with women, maids, wives, mothers  
— why?

These play with men and take them off our hands.

Did I come, counsel with some cut-beard gruff

Or rather this sleek young-old barberess?  
Go, brother, stand you rapt in the ante-room  
Of Her Efficacy my Cardinal  
For an hour, — he likes to have lord-suitors  
lounge, —

While I betake myself to the gray mare,  
The better horse, — how wise the people's  
word! —

And wait on Madam Violante.”

Said and done,

He was at Via Vittoria in three skips:  
Proposed at once to fill up the one want  
O' the burgess-family which, wealthy enough,  
And comfortable to heart's desire, yet crouched  
Outside a gate to heaven, — locked, bolted,  
barred,

Whereof Count Guido had a key he kept  
Under his pillow, but Pompilia's hand  
Might slide behind his neck and pilfer thence.  
The key was fairy; its mere mention made  
Violante feel the thing shoot one sharp ray  
That reached the womanly heart: so — “I as-  
sent!

Yours be Pompilia, hers and ours that key  
To all the glories of the greater life!  
There's Pietro to convince: leave that to me!”

Then was the matter broached to Pietro; then  
Did Pietro make demand and get response  
That in the Countship was a truth, but in  
The counting up of the Count's cash, a lie.  
He thereupon stroked grave his chin, looked  
great,

Declined the honor. Then the wife wiped tear,  
Winked with the other eye turned Paolo-ward,  
Whispered Pompilia, stole to church at eve,  
Found Guido there and got the marriage done,  
And finally begged pardon at the feet  
Of her dear lord and master. Whereupon  
Quoth Pietro — “Let us make the best of  
things!”

“I knew your love would license us,” quoth  
she:

Quoth Paolo once more, “Mothers, wives and  
maids,

These be the tools wherewith priests manage  
men.”

Now, here take breath and ask, — which bird  
o' the brace

Decoyed the other into clapnet? Who  
Was fool, who knave? Neither and both, per-  
chance.

There was a bargain mentally proposed  
On each side, straight and plain and fair  
enough;

Mind knew its own mind: but when mind must  
speak,

The bargain have expression in plain terms,  
There came the blunder incident to words,  
And in the clumsy process, fair turned foul.  
The straight backbone-thought of the crooked  
speech

Were just — “I Guido truck my name and rank  
For so much money and youth and female  
charms. —

We Pietro and Violante give our child



And wealth to you for a rise i' the world thereby."

Such naked truth while chambered in the brain  
Shocks nowise: walk it forth by way of  
tongue, —

Out on the cynical unseemliness!

Hence was the need, on either side, of a lie  
To serve as decent wrappage: so, Guido gives  
Money for money, — and they, bride for groom,  
Having, he, not a doit, they, not a child  
Honestly theirs, but this poor waif and stray.  
According to the words, each cheated each;  
But in the inexpressive barter of thoughts,  
Each did give and did take the thing designed,  
The rank on this side and the cash on that —  
Attained the object of the traffic, so.

The way of the world, the daily bargain struck  
In the first market! Why sells Jack his ware?  
"For the sake of serving an old customer."

Why does Jill buy it? "Simply not to break  
A custom, pass the old stall the first time."  
Why, you know where the gist is of the ex-  
change:

Each sees a profit, throws the fine words in.  
Don't be too hard o' the pair! Had each pre-  
tence

Been simultaneously discovered, stript  
From off the body o' the transaction, just  
As when a cook (will Excellency forgive?)  
Strips away those long rough superfluous legs  
From either side the crayfish, leaving folk  
A meal all meat henceforth, no garnishry,  
(With your respect, Prince!) — balance had  
been kept,

No party blamed the other, — so, starting fair,  
All subsequent fence of wrong returned by  
wrong

I' the matrimonial thrust and parry, at least  
Had followed on equal terms. But, as it  
chanced,

One party had the advantage, saw the cheat  
Of the other first and kept its own concealed:  
And the luck o' the first discovery fell, beside,  
To the least adroit and self-possessed o' the pair.  
'T was foolish Pietro and his wife saw first  
The nobleman was penniless, and screamed  
"We are cheated!"

Such unprofitable noise  
Angers at all times: but when those who plague,  
Do it from inside your own house and home,  
Gnats which yourself have closed the curtain  
round,

Noise goes too near the brain and makes you  
mad.

The gnats say, Guido used the candle-flame  
Unfairly, — worsened that first bad of his,  
By practising all kinds of cruelty  
To oust them and suppress the wail and whine, —  
That speedily he so scared and bullied them,  
Fain were they, long before five months had  
passed,

To beg him grant, from what was once their  
wealth,

Just so much as would help them back to Rome,  
Where, when they finished paying the last doit  
O' the dowry, they might beg from door to door.  
So say the Comparini — as if it came

Of pure resentment for this worse than bad,  
That then Violante, feeling conscience prick,  
Confessed her substitution of the child  
Whence all the harm fell, — and that Pietro  
first

Bethought him of advantage to himself  
I' the deed, as part revenge, part remedy  
For all miscalculation in the pact.

On the other hand, "Not so!" Guido retorts —  
"I am the wronged, solely, from first to last,  
Who gave the dignity I engaged to give,  
Which was, is, cannot but continue gain.  
My being poor was a by-circumstance,  
Miscalculated piece of untowardness,  
Might end to-morrow did heaven's windows  
ope,

Or uncle die and leave me his estate.  
You should have put up with the minor flaw,  
Getting the main prize of the jewel. If wealth,  
Not rank, had been prime object in your  
thoughts,

Why not have taken the butcher's son, the boy  
O' the baker or candlestick-maker? In all the  
rest,

It was yourselves broke compact and played  
false,

And made a life in common impossible.

Show me the stipulation of our bond  
That you should make your profit of being in-  
side

My house, to hustle and edge me out o' the  
same,

First make a laughing-stock of mine and me,  
Then round us in the ears from morn to night  
(Because we show wry faces at your mirth)  
That you are robbed, starved, beaten and what  
not!

You fled a hell of your own lighting-up,  
Pay for your own miscalculation too:  
You thought nobility, gained at any price,  
Would suit and satisfy, — find the mistake,  
And now retaliate, not on yourselves, but me.  
And how? By telling me, i' the face of the  
world,

I it is have been cheated all this while,  
Abominably and irreparably, — my name  
Given to a cur-cast mongrel, a drab's brat,  
A beggar's by-blow, — thus depriving me  
Of what yourselves allege the whole and sole  
Aim on my part i' the marriage, — money, to  
wit.

This thrust I have to parry by a guard  
Which leaves me open to a counter-thrust  
On the other side, — no way but there's a pass  
Clean through me. If I prove, as I hope to do,  
There's not one truth in this your odious tale  
O' the buying, selling, substituting — prove  
Your daughter was and is your daughter, —  
well,

And her dowry hers and therefore mine, — what  
then?

Why, where's the appropriate punishment for  
this

Enormous lie hatched for mere malice' sake  
To ruin me? Is that a wrong or no?  
And if I try revenge for remedy,  
Can I well make it strong and bitter enough?"

I anticipate however — only ask,  
Which of the two here sinned most? A nice  
point!

Which brownness is least black, — decide who  
can,

Wager-by-battle-of-cheating! What do you say,  
Highness? Suppose, your Excellency, we leave  
The question at this stage, proceed to the next,  
Both parties step out, fight their prize upon,  
In the eye o' the world?

They brandish law 'gainst law;  
The grinding of such blades, each parry of each,  
Throws terrible sparks off, over and above the  
thrusts,

And makes more sinister the fight, to the eye,  
Than the very wounds that follow. Beside the  
tale

Which the Comparini have to re-assert,  
They needs must write, print, publish all abroad  
The straitnesses of Guido's household life —  
The petty nothings we bear privately  
But break down under when fools flock to jeer.  
What is it all to the facts o' the couple's case,  
How helps it prove Pompilia not their child,  
If Guido's mother, brother, kith and kin  
Fare ill, lie hard, lack clothes, lack fire, lack  
food?

That's one more wrong than needs.

On the other hand,  
Guido, — whose cue is to dispute the truth  
O' the tale, reject the shame it throws on  
him, —

He may retaliate, fight his foe in turn  
And welcome, we allow. Ay, but he can't!  
He's at home, only acts by proxy here;  
Law may meet law, — but all the gibes and  
jeers,

The superfluity of naughtiness,  
Those libels on his House, — how reach at  
them?

Two hateful faces, grinning all aglow,  
Not only make parade of spoil they filched.  
But foul him from the height of a tower, you  
see.

Unluckily temptation is at hand —  
To take revenge on a trifle overlooked,  
A pet lamb they have left in reach outside,  
Whose first bleat, when he plucks the wool  
away,

Will strike the grinners grave: his wife re-  
mains,

Who, four months earlier, some thirteen years  
old,

Never a mile away from mother's house  
And petted to the height of her desire,  
Was told one morning that her fate had come,  
She must be married — just as, a month before,  
Her mother told her she must comb her hair  
And twist her curls into one knot behind.  
These fools forgot their pet lamb, fed with  
flowers,

Then 'ticed as usual by the bit of cake,  
Out of the bower into the butchery.  
Plague her, he plagues them threefold: but  
how plague?

The world may have its word to say to that:

You can't do some things with impunity.  
What remains . . . well, it is an ugly thought . . .  
But that he drive herself to plague herself —  
Herself disgrace herself and so disgrace  
Who seek to disgrace Guido?

There's the clue  
To what else seems gratuitously vile,  
If, as is said, from this time forth the rack  
Was tried upon Pompilia: 't was to wrench  
Her limbs into exposure that brings shame.  
The aim o' the cruelty being so crueller still,  
That cruelty almost grows compassion's self  
Could one attribute it to mere return  
O' the parents' outrage, wrong avenging wrong.  
They see in this a deeper deadlier aim,  
Not to vex just a body they held dear,  
But blacken too a soul they boasted white,  
And show the world their saint in a lover's  
arms,  
No matter how driven thither, — so they say.

On the other hand, so much is easily said,  
And Guido lacks not an apologist.  
The pair had nobody but themselves to blame,  
Being selfish beasts throughout no less, no  
more:

— Cared for themselves, their supposed good,  
nought else,  
And brought about the marriage; good proved  
bad,

As little they cared for her its victim — nay,  
Meant she should stay behind and take the  
chance,

If haply they might wriggle themselves free.  
They baited their own hook to catch a fish  
With this poor worm, failed o' the prize, and  
then

Sought how to unbait tackle, let worm float  
Or sink, amuse the monster while they 'scaped.  
Under the best stars Hymen brings above,  
Had all been honesty on either side,  
A common sincere effort to good end,  
Still, this would prove a difficult problem,  
Prince!

— Given, a fair wife, aged thirteen years,  
A husband poor, care-bitten, sorrow-sunk,  
Little, long-nosed, bush-bearded, lantern-  
jawed,

Forty-six years old, — place the two grown one,  
She, cut off sheer from every natural aid,  
In a strange town with no familiar face —  
He, in his own parade-ground or retreat  
If need were, free from challenge, much less  
check

To an irritated, disappointed will —  
How evolve happiness from such a match?  
'T were hard to serve up a congenial dish  
Out of these ill-agreeing morsels, Duke,  
By the best exercise of the cook's craft,  
Best interspersions of spice, salt and sweet!  
But let two ghastly scullions concoct mess  
With brimstone, pitch, vitriol and devil's-  
dung —

Throw in abuse o' the man, his body and soul,  
Kith, kin and generation, shake all slab  
At Rome, Arezzo, for the world to nose,  
Then end by publishing, for fiend's arch-prank,

That, over and above sauce to the meat's self,  
Why, even the meat, bedevilled thus in dish,  
Was never a pheasant but a carrion-crow —  
Prince, what will then the natural loathing  
be?

What wonder if this? — the compound plague  
o' the pair

Pricked Guido, — not to take the course they  
hoped,

That is, submit him to their statement's truth,  
Accept its obvious promise of relief,  
And thrust them out of doors the girl again  
Since the girl's dowry would not enter there,  
— Quit of the one if balked of the other: no!  
Rather did rage and hate so work in him,  
Their product proved the horrible conceit  
That he should plot and plan and bring to pass  
His wife might, of her own free will and deed,  
Relieve him of her presence, get her gone,  
And yet leave all the dowry safe behind,  
Confirmed his own henceforward past dispute,  
While blotting out, as by a belch of hell,  
Their triumph in her misery and death.

You see, the man was Aretine, had touch  
O' the subtle air that breeds the subtle wit;  
Was noble too, of old blood thrice-refined  
That shrinks from clownish coarseness in dis-  
gust:

Allow that such an one may take revenge,  
You don't expect he'll catch up stone and fling,  
Or try cross-buttock, or whirl quarter-staff?  
Instead of the honest drubbing clowns bestow,  
When out of temper at the dinner spoilt,  
On meddling mother-in-law and tiresome  
wife, —

Substitute for the clown a nobleman,  
And you have Guido, practising, 't is said,  
Immutigably from the very first,  
The finer vengeance: this, they say, the fact  
O' the famous letter shows — the writing  
traced

At Guido's instance by the timid wife  
Over the pencilled words himself writ first —  
Wherein she, who could neither write nor read,  
Was made unblushingly declare a tale  
To the brother, the Abate then in Rome,  
How her putative parents had impressed,  
On their departure, their enjoiment; bade  
"We being safely arrived here, follow, you!  
Poison your husband, rob, set fire to all,  
And then by means o' the gallant you procure  
With ease, by helpful eye and ready tongue,  
Some brave youth ready to dare, do and die,  
You shall run off and merrily reach Rome  
Where we may live like flies in honey-pot:" —  
Such being exact the programme of the course  
Imputed her as carried to effect.

They also say, — to keep her straight therein,  
All sort of torture was piled, pain on pain,  
On either side Pompilia's path of life,  
Built round about and over against by fear,  
Circumvallated month by month, and week  
By week, and day by day, and hour by hour,  
Close, closer and yet closer still with pain,  
No outlet from the encroaching pain save just  
Where stood one savior like a piece of heaven,

Hell's arms would strain round but for this  
blue gap.

She, they say further, first tried every chink,  
Every imaginable break i' the fire,  
As way of escape: ran to the Commissary,  
Who bade her not malign his friend her spouse;  
Flung herself thrice at the Archbishop's feet,  
Where three times the Archbishop let her lie,  
Spend her whole sorrow and sob full heart  
forth,

And then took up the slight load from the  
ground

And bore it back for husband to chastise, —  
Mildly of course, — but natural right is right.  
So went she slipping ever yet catching at help,  
Missing the high till come to lowest and last,  
To wit, a certain friar of mean degree,  
Who heard her story in confession, wept,  
Crossed himself, showed the man within the  
monk.

"Then, will you save me, you the one i' the  
world?"

I cannot even write my woes, nor put  
My prayer for help in words a friend may  
read, —

I no more own a coin than have an hour  
Free of observance, — I was watched to church,  
Am watched now, shall be watched back pres-  
ently, —

How buy the skill of scribe i' the market-  
place?

Pray you, write down and send whatever I say  
O' the need I have my parents take me hence!"  
The good man rubbed his eyes and could not  
choose —

Let her dictate her letter in such a sense  
That parents, to save breaking down a wall,  
Might lift her over: she went back, heaven in  
heart.

Then the good man took counsel of his couch,  
Woke and thought twice, the second thought  
the best:

"Here am I, foolish body that I be,  
Caught all but pushing, teaching, who but I,  
My betters their plain duty, — what, I dare  
Help a case the Archbishop would not help,  
Mend matters, peradventure, God loves mar?  
What hath the married life but strifes and  
plagues

For proper dispensation? So a fool  
Once touched the ark, — poor Uzzah that I  
am!

Oh married ones, much rather should I bid,  
In patience all of ye possess your souls!  
This life is brief and troubles die with it:  
Where were the prick to soar up homeward  
else?"

So saying, he burnt the letter he had writ,  
Said *Ave* for her intention, in its place,  
Took snuff and comfort, and had done with  
all.

Then the grim arms stretched yet a little more  
And each touched each, all but one streak i'  
the midst,

Whereat stood Caponsacchi, who cried, "This  
way,

Out by me! Hesitate one moment more  
And the fire shuts out me and shuts in you!



Here my hand holds you life out ! " Where-  
upon  
She clasped the hand, which closed on hers and  
drew

Pompilia out o' the circle now complete.  
Whose fault or shame but Guido's ? — ask her  
friends.

But then this is the wife's — Pompilia's tale —  
Eve's . . . no, not Eve's, since Eve, to speak  
the truth,  
Was hardly fallen (our candor might pro-  
nounce)

When simply saying in her own defence  
" The serpent tempted me and I did eat."  
So much of paradisaic nature, Eve's !  
Her daughters ever since prefer to urge  
" Adam so starved me I was fain accept  
The apple any serpent pushed my way."  
What an elaborate theory have we here,  
Ingenuously nursed up, pretentiously  
Brought forth, pushed forward amid trumpet-  
blast,

To account for the thawing of an icicle,  
Show us there needed *Etna vomit flame*  
Ere run the crystal into dewdrops ! Else,  
How, unless hell broke loose to cause the step,  
How could a married lady go astray ?  
Bless the fools ! And 't is just this way they  
are blessed,

And the world wags still, — because fools are  
sure

— Oh, not of my wife nor your daughter ! No !  
But of their own : the case is altered quite.  
Look now, — last week, the lady we all love, —  
Daughter o' the couple we all venerate,  
Wife of the husband we all cap before,  
Mother o' the babes we all breathe blessings  
on, —

Was caught in converse with a negro page.  
Hell thawed that icicle, else " Why was it —  
Why ? " asked and echoed the fools. " Be-  
cause, you fools, — "

So did the dame's self answer, she who could,  
With that fine candor only forthcoming  
When 't is no odds whether withheld or no —  
" Because my husband was the saint you say,  
And, — with that childish goodness, absurd  
faith,

Stupid self-satisfaction, you so praise, —  
Saint to you, insupportable to me.

Had he, — instead of calling me fine names,  
Lucretia and Susanna and so forth,  
And certaining Correggio carefully

Lest I be taught that Leda had two legs, —  
— But once never so little tweaked my nose  
For peeping through my fan at Carnival,  
Confessing thereby, ' I have no easy task —  
I need use all my powers to hold you mine,  
And then, — why 't is so doubtful if they serve,  
That — take this, as an earnest of despair ! ' "

Why, we were quits : I had wiped the harm  
away,

Thought, ' The man fears me ! ' and foregone  
revenge."

We must not want all this elaborate work  
T solve the problem why young Fancy-and-  
flesh

Slips from the dull side of a spouse in years,  
Betakes it to the breast of Brisk-and-bold  
Whose love-scrapes furnish talk for all the  
town !

Accordingly, one word on the other side  
Tips over the piled-up fabric of a tale.  
Guido says — that is, always, his friends say —  
It is unlikely, from the wickedness,  
That any man treat any woman so.

The letter in question was her very own,  
Unprompted and unaided : she could write —  
As able to write as ready to sin, or free,  
When there was danger, to deny both facts.  
He bids you mark, herself from first to last  
Attributes all the so-styled torture just  
To jealousy, — jealousy of whom but just  
This very Caponsacchi ! How suits here  
This with the other alleged motive, Prince ?  
Would Guido make a terror of the man  
He meant should tempt the woman, as they  
charge ?

Do you fright your hare that you may catch  
your hare ?

Consider too, the charge was made and met  
At the proper time and place where proofs were  
plain —

Heard patiently and disposed of thoroughly  
By the highest powers, possessors of most light,  
The Governor for the law and the Archbishop  
For the gospel : which acknowledged primacies,  
'T is impudently pleaded, he could warp  
Into a tacit partnership with crime —  
He being the while, believe their own account,  
Impotent, penniless and miserable !  
He further asks — Duke, note the knotty  
point ! —

How he — concede him skill to play such part  
And drive his wife into a gallant's arms —  
Could bring the gallant to play his part too  
And stand with arms so opportunely wide ?  
How bring this Caponsacchi, — with whom,  
friends

And foes alike agree, throughout his life  
He never interchanged a civil word  
Nor lifted courteous cap to — him, how bend  
To such observancy of beck and call,  
— To undertake this strange and perilous  
feat

For the good of Guido, using, as the lure,  
Pompilia whom, himself and she avouch,  
He had nor spoken with nor seen, indeed,  
Beyond sight in a public theatre,  
When she wrote letters (she that could not  
write !)

The importunate shamelessly-protested love  
Which brought him, though reluctant, to her  
feet,

And forced on him the plunge which, howsoe'er  
She might swim up i' the whirl, must bury  
him

Under abysmal black : a priest contrive  
No better, no amour to be hushed up,  
But open flight and noonday infamy ?  
Try and concoct defence for such revolt !

Take the wife's tale as true, say she was  
wronged, —

Pray, in what rubric of the breviary

Do you find it registered — the part of a priest  
Is — that to right wrongs from the church he  
skip,

Go journeying with a woman that's a wife,  
And be pursued, o'ertaken and captured . . .  
how?

In a lay-dress, playing the kind sentinel  
Where the wife sleeps (says he who best should  
know)

And sleeping, sleepless, both have spent the  
night!

Could no one else be found to serve at need —  
No woman — or if man, no safer sort  
Than this not well-reputed turbulence?

Then, look into his own account o' the case!  
He, being the stranger and astonished one,  
Yet received protestations of his love  
From lady neither known nor cared about:  
Love, so protested, bred in him disgust  
After the wonder, — or incredulity,  
Such impudence seeming impossible.  
But, soon assured such impudence might be,  
When he had seen with his own eyes at last  
Letters thrown down to him i' the very street  
From behind lattice where the lady lurked,  
And read their passionate summons to her  
side —

Why then, a thousand thoughts swarmed up  
and in, —

How he had seen her once, a moment's space,  
Observed she was both young and beautiful,  
Heard everywhere report she suffered much  
From a jealous husband thrice her age, — in  
short,

There flashed the propriety, expediency  
Of treating, trying might they come to terms,  
— At all events, granting the interview  
Prayed for, one so adapted to assist  
Decision as to whether he advance,  
Stand or retire, in his benevolent mood!  
Therefore the interview befell at length;  
And at this one and only interview,  
He saw the sole and single course to take —  
Bade her dispose of him, head, heart and hand,  
Did her behest and braved the consequence,  
Not for the natural end, the love of man  
For woman whether love be virtue or vice,  
But, please you, altogether for pity's sake —  
Pity of innocence and helplessness!  
And how did he assure himself of both?  
Had he been the house-inmate, visitor,  
Eye-witness of the described martyrdom,  
So, competent to pronounce its remedy  
Ere rush on such extreme and desperate  
course —

Involving such enormity of harm,  
Moreover, to the husband judged thus, doomed  
And damned without a word in his defence?  
Not he! the truth was felt by instinct here,  
— Process which saves a world of trouble and  
time.

There's the priest's story: what do you say  
to it,

Trying its truth by your own instinct too,  
Since that's to be the expeditious mode?  
"And now, do hear my version," Guido cries:  
'I accept argument and inference both.

It would indeed have been miraculous  
Had such a confidency sprung to birth  
With no more fanning from acquaintanceship  
Than here avowed by my wife and this priest.  
Only, it did not: you must substitute  
The old stale unromantic way of fault,  
The commonplace adventure, mere intrigue  
In prose form with the unpoetic tricks,  
Cheatings and lies: they used the hackney  
chair

Satan jaunts forth with, shabby and service-  
able,

No gilded jimerack-novelty from below,  
To bowl you along thither, swift and sure.  
That same officious go-between, the wench  
Who gave and took the letters of the two,  
Now offers self and service back to me:  
Bears testimony to visits night by night  
When all was safe, the husband far and  
away, —

To many a timely slipping out at large  
By light o' the morning-star, ere he should  
wake.

And when the fugitives were found at last,  
Why, with them were found also, to belie  
What protest they might make of innocence,  
All documents yet wanting, if need were,  
To establish guilt in them, disgrace in me —  
The chronicle o' the converse from its rise  
To culmination in this outrage: read!  
Letters from wife to priest, from priest to  
wife, —

Here they are, read and say where they chime  
in

With the other tale, superlative purity  
O' the pair of saints! I stand or fall by  
these."

But then on the other side again, — how say  
The pair of saints? That not one word is  
theirs —

No syllable o' the batch or writ or sent  
Or yet received by either of the two.

"Found," says the priest, "because he needed  
them,

Failing all other proofs, to prove our fault:  
So, here they are, just as is natural.  
Oh yes — we had our missives, each of us!  
Not these, but to the full as vile, no doubt:  
Hers as from me, — she could not read, so  
burnt, —

Mine as from her, — I burnt because I read.  
Who forged and found them? *Cui profue-  
rint!*"

(I take the phrase out of your Highness'  
mouth)

"He who would gain by her fault and my  
fall,

The trickster, schemer and pretender — he  
Whose whole career was lie entailing lie  
Sought to be sealed truth by the worst lie  
last!"

Guido rejoins — "Did the other end o' the  
tale

Match this beginning! 'Tis alleged I prove  
A murderer at the end, a man of force  
Prompt, indiscriminate, effectual — good!

Then what need all this trifling woman's-work,  
Letters and embassies and weak intrigue,  
When will and power were mine to end at once  
Safely and surely? Murder had come first  
Not last with such a man, assure yourselves!  
The silent *acquetta*, stilling at command—  
A drop a day i' the wine or soup, the dose, —  
The shattering beam that breaks above the  
bed

And beats out brains, with nobody to blame  
Except the wormy age which eats even oak, —  
Nay, the stanch steel or trusty cord, — who  
cares

I' the blind old palace, a pitfall at each step,  
With none to see, much more to interpose  
O' the two, three, creeping-house-dog-servant-  
things

Born mine and bred mine? Had I willed  
gross death,

I had found nearer paths to thrust him prey  
Than this that goes meandering here and there  
Through half the world and calls down in its  
course

Notice and noise, — hate, vengeance, should it  
fail,

Derision and contempt though it succeed!  
Moreover, what o' the future son and heir?  
The unborn babe about to be called mine, —  
What end in heaping all this shame on him,  
Were I indifferent to my own black share?  
Would I have tried these crookednesses, say,  
Willing and able to effect the straight?"

"Ay, would you!" — one may hear the priest  
retort,

"Being as you are, i' the stock, a man of guile,  
And ruffianism but an added graft.

You, a born coward, try a coward's arms,  
Trick and chicanery, — and only when these fail  
Does violence follow, and like fox you bite  
Caught out in stealing. Also, the disgrace  
You hardly shrunk at, wholly shrivelled her:  
You plunged her thin white delicate hand i'  
the flame

Along with your coarse horny brutish fist,  
Held them a second there, then drew out both  
— Yours roughed a little, hers ruined through  
and through.

Your hurt would heal forthwith at ointment's  
touch—

Namely, succession to the inheritance  
Which bolder crime had lost you: let things  
change,

The birth o' the boy warrant the bolder crime,  
Why, murder was determined, dared and done.  
For me," the priest proceeds with his reply,  
"The look o' the thing, the chances of mistake,  
All were against me, — that, I knew the first:  
But, knowing also what my duty was,  
I did it: I must look to men more skilled  
In reading hearts than ever was the world."

Highness, decide! Pronounce, Her Excellency!  
Or . . . even leave this argument in doubt,  
Account it a fit matter, taken up  
With all its faces, manifold enough,  
To ponder on — what fronts us, the next stage,  
Next legal process? Guido, in pursuit,

Coming up with the fugitives at the inn,  
Caused both to be arrested then and there  
And sent to Rome for judgment on the case —  
Thither, with all his army of proofs,  
Betook himself: 't is there we 'll meet him now,  
Waiting the further issue.

Here you smile:  
"And never let him henceforth dare to plead —  
Of all pleas and excuses in the world  
For any deed hereafter to be done —  
His irrepressible wrath at honor's wound!  
Passion and madness irrepressible?  
Why, Count and cavalier, the husband comes  
And catches foe i' the very act of shame!  
There's man to man, — nature must have her  
way, —

We look he should have cleared things on the  
spot.

Yes, then, indeed — even though it prove he  
erred —

Though the ambiguous first appearance, mount  
Of solid injury, melt soon to mist,  
Still, — had he slain the lover and the wife —  
Or, since she was a woman and his wife,  
Slain him, but stript her naked to the skin,  
Or at best left no more of an attire  
Than patch sufficient to pin paper to,  
Some one love-letter, infamy and all,  
As passport to the Paphos fit for such,  
Safe-conduct to her natural home the stews, —  
Good! One had recognized the power o' the  
pulse.

But when he stands, the stock-fish, — sticks to  
law —

Offers the hole in his heart, all fresh and warm,  
For scrivener's pen to poke and play about —  
Can stand, can stare, can tell his beads per-  
haps,

Oh, let us hear no syllable o' the rage!  
Such rage were a convenient afterthought  
For one who would have shown his teeth be-  
like,

Exhibited unbridled rage enough,  
Had but the priest been found, as was to hope,  
In serge, not silk, with crucifix, not sword:  
Whereas the gray innocuous grub, of yore,  
Had hatched a hornet, tickle to the touch,  
The priest was metamorphosed into knight.  
And even the timid wife, whose cue was —  
shriek,

Bury her brow beneath his trampling foot, —  
She too sprang at him like a pythoness:  
So, gulp down rage, passion must be postponed,  
Calm be the word! Well, our word is — we  
brand

This part o' the business, howsoever the rest  
Befall."

"Nay," interpose as prompt his friends —  
"This is the world's way! So you adjudge re-  
ward

To the forbearance and legality  
Yourselves begin by inculcating — ay,  
Exacting from us all with knife at throat!  
This one wrong more you add to wrong's  
amount, —

You publish all, with the kind comment here,  
'Its victim was too cowardly for revenge.'"  
Make it your own case, — you who stand apart!



The husband wakes one morn from heavy sleep,

With a taste of poppy in his mouth, — rubs eyes,  
Finds his wife flown, his strong-box ransacked too,

Follows as he best can, overtakes i' the end.

You bid him use his privilege: well, it seems  
He's scarce cool-blooded enough for the right move —

Does not shoot when the game were sure, but stands

Bewildered at the critical minute, — since

He has the first flash of the fact alone

To judge from, act with, not the steady lights

Of after-knowledge, — yours who stand at ease

To try conclusions: he's in smother and smoke,

You outside, with explosion at an end:

The sulphur may be lightning or a squib —

He'll know in a minute, but till then, he doubts.

Back from what you know to what he knew not!

Hear the priest's lofty "I am innocent,"

The wife's as resolute "You are guilty!"

Come!

Are you not staggered? — pause, and you lose the move!

Naught left you but a low appeal to law,

"Coward" tied to your tail for compliment!

Another consideration: have it your way!

Admit the worst: his courage failed the Count,

He's cowardly like the best o' the burgesses

He's grown incorporate with, — a very cur,

Kick him from out your circle by all means!

Why, trundled down this reputable stair,

Still, the church-door lies wide to take him in,

And the court-porch also: in he sneaks to

each, —

"Yes, I have lost my honor and my wife,

And, being moreover an ignoble hound,

I dare not jeopardize my life for them!"

Religion and Law lean forward from their chairs,

"Well done, thou good and faithful servant!"

Ay,

Not only applaud him that he scorned the world,

But punish should he dare do otherwise.

If the case be clear or turbid, — you must say!

Thus, anyhow, it mounted to the stage

In the law-courts, — let's see clearly from this point! —

Where the priest tells his story true or false,

And the wife her story, and the husband his,

All with result as happy as before.

The courts would nor condemn nor yet acquit

This, that or the other, in so distinct a sense

As end the strife to either's absolute loss:

Pronounced, in place of something definite,

"Each of the parties, whether goat or sheep

I' the main, has wool to show and hair to hide.

Each has brought somehow trouble, is somehow

cause

Of pains enough, — even though no worse were

proved.

Here is a husband, cannot rule his wife

Without provoking her to scream and scratch

And scour the fields, — causelessly, it may be:

Here is that wife, — who makes her sex our

plague,

Wedlock, our bugbear, — perhaps with cause enough:

And here is the truant priest o' the trio, worst  
Or best — each quality being conceivable.

Let us impose a little mulet on each.

We punish youth in state of pupilage

Who talk at hours when youth is bound to sleep,

Whether the prattle turn upon Saint Rose

Or Donna Olimpia of the Vatican:

'T is talk, talked wisely or unwisely talked,

I' the dormitory where to talk at all

Transgresses, and is mulet: as here we mean.

For the wife, — let her betake herself, for rest,

After her run, to a House of Convertites —

Keep there, as good as real imprisonment:

Being sick and tired, she will recover so.

For the priest, spritely strayer out of bounds,

Who made Arezzo hot to hold him, — Rome

Profits by his withdrawal from the scene.

Let him be relegate to Civita,

Circumscribed by its bounds till matters mend:

There he at least lies out o' the way of harm

From foes — perhaps from the too friendly fair.

And finally for the husband, whose rash rule

Has but itself to blame for this ado, —

If he be vexed that, in our judgments dealt,

He fails obtain what he accounts his right,

Let him go comforted with the thought, no less,

That, turn each sentence howsoever he may,

There's satisfaction to extract therefrom.

For, does he wish his wife proved innocent?

Well, she's not guilty, he may safely urge,

Has missed the stripes dishonest wives endure —

This being a fatherly pat o' the cheek, no more.

Does he wish her guilty? Were she otherwise

Would she be locked up, set to say her prayers,

Prevented intercourse with the outside world,

And that suspected priest in banishment,

Whose portion is a further help i' the case?

Oh, ay, you all of you want the other thing,

The extreme of law, some verdict neat, complete, —

Either, the whole o' the dowry in your poke

With full release from the false wife, to boot,

And heading, hanging for the priest, beside —

Or, contrary, claim freedom for the wife,

Repayment of each penny paid her spouse,

Amends for the past, release for the future!

Such

Is wisdom to the children of this world;

But we've no mind, we children of the light,

To miss the advantage of the golden mean,

And push things to the steel point." Thus the courts.

Is it settled so far? Settled or disturbed,

Console yourselves: 't is like . . . an instance, now!

You've seen the puppets, of Place Navona, play, —

Punch and his mate, — how threats pass, blows are dealt,

And a crisis comes: the crowd or clap or hiss

Accordingly as disposed for man or wife —

When down the actors duck awhile perdue,

Donning what novel rag-and-feather trim

Best suits the next adventure, new effect :  
 And, — by the time the mob is on the move,  
 With something like a judgment *pro* and *con*, —  
 There's a whistle, up again the actors pop  
 In t' other tatter with fresh-tinselled staves,  
 To re-engage in one last worst fight more  
 Shall show, what you thought tragedy was farce.  
 Note, that the climax and the crown of things  
 Invariably is, the devil appears himself,  
 Armed and accoutred, horns and hoofs and  
 tail !

Just so, nor otherwise it proved — you 'll see :  
 Move to the murder, never mind the rest !

Guido, at such a general duck-down,  
 I' the breathing-space, — of wife to convent  
 here,

Priest to his relegation, and himself  
 To Arezzo, — had resigned his part perforce  
 To brother Abate, who bustled, did his best,  
 Retrieved things somewhat, managed the three  
 suits —

Since, it should seem, there were three suits-at-  
 law

Behoved him look to, still, lest bad grow worse :  
 First civil suit, — the one the parents brought,  
 Impugning the legitimacy of his wife,  
 Affirming thence the nullity of her rights :  
 This was before the Rota, — Molinès,  
 That's judge there, made that notable decree  
 Which partly leaned to Guido, as I said, —  
 But Pietro had appealed against the same  
 To the very court will judge what we judge  
 now —

Tommato and his fellows, — Suit the first.  
 Next civil suit, — demand on the wife's part  
 Of separation from the husband's bed  
 On plea of cruelty and risk to life —  
 Claims restitution of the dowry paid,  
 Immunity from paying any more :  
 This second, the Vicerent has to judge.  
 Third and last suit, — this time, a criminal  
 one, —

Answer to, and protection from, both these, —  
 Guido's complaint of guilt against his wife  
 In the Tribunal of the Governor,  
 Venturini, also judge of the present cause.  
 Three suits of all importance plaguing him  
 Beside a little private enterprise  
 Of Guido's, — essay at a shorter cut.  
 For Paolo, knowing the right way at Rome,  
 Had, even while superintending these three  
 suits

I' the regular way, each at its proper court,  
 Ingeniously made interest with the Pope  
 To set such tedious regular forms aside,  
 And, acting the supreme and ultimate judge,  
 Declare for the husband and against the wife.  
 Well, at such crisis and extreme of straits, —  
 The man at bay, buffeted in this wise, —  
 Happened the strangest accident of all.  
 "Then," sigh friends, "the last feather broke  
 his back,

Made him forget all possible remedies  
 Save one — he rushed to, as the sole relief  
 From horror and the abominable thing."  
 "Or rather," laugh foes, "then did there be-  
 fall

The luckiest of conceivable events,  
 Most pregnant with impunity for him,  
 Which henceforth turned the flank of all at-  
 tack,

And bade him do his wickedest and worst."  
 — The wife's withdrawal from the Convertites.  
 Visit to the villa where her parents lived,  
 And birth there of his babe. Divergence here  
 I simply take the facts, ask what they show.

First comes this thunderclap of a surprise :  
 Then follow all the signs and silences  
 Premonitory of earthquake. Paolo first  
 Vanished, was swept off somewhere, lost to  
 Rome :

(Wells dry up, while the sky is sunny and blue.)  
 Then Guido girds himself for enterprise,  
 Hies to Vittiano, counsels with his steward,  
 Comes to terms with four peasants young and  
 bold,

And starts for Rome the Holy, reaches her  
 At very holiest, for 't is Christmas Eve,  
 And makes straight for the Abate's dried-up  
 font,

The lodge where Paolo ceased to work the  
 pipes.

And then, rest taken, observation made  
 And plan completed, all in a grim week,  
 The five proceed in a body, reach the place,  
 — Pietro's, at the Paolina, silent, lone,  
 And stupefied by the propitious snow.

'T is one i' the evening: knock : a voice,  
 "Who's there ?"

"Friends with a letter from the priest your  
 friend."

At the door, straight smiles old Violante's self.  
 She falls, — her son-in-law stabs through and  
 through,

Reaches through her at Pietro — "With your  
 son

This is the way to settle suits, good sire !"  
 He bellows, "Mercy for heaven, not for earth !  
 Leave to confess and save my sinful soul,  
 Then do your pleasure on the body of me !"  
 — "Nay, father, soul with body must take its  
 chance !"

He presently got his portion and lay still.  
 And last, Pompilia rushes here and there  
 Like a dove among the lightnings in her brake,  
 Falls also : Guido's, this last husband's-act.  
 He lifts her by the long dishevelled hair,  
 Holds her away at arm's length with one hand,  
 While the other tries if life come from the  
 mouth —

Looks out his whole heart's hate on the shut  
 eyes,

Draws a deep satisfied breath, "So — dead at  
 last !"

Throws down the burden on dead Pietro's  
 knees,

And ends all with "Let us away, my boys !"

And, as they left by one door, in at the other  
 Tumbled the neighbors — for the shrieks had  
 pierced

To the mill and the grange, this cottage and  
 that shed.

Soon followed the Public Force ; pursuit began

Though Guido had the start and chose the road :

So, that same night was he, with the other four,

Overtaken near Baccano, — where they sank  
By the wayside, in some shelter meant for  
beasts,

And now lay heaped together, nuzzling swine,  
Each wrapped in bloody cloak, each grasping  
still

His unwiped weapon, sleeping all the same  
The sleep o' the just, — a journey of twenty  
miles

Brought just and unjust to a level, you see.  
The only one i' the world that suffered aught  
By the whole night's toil and trouble, flight and  
chase,

Was just the officer who took them, Head  
O' the Public Force, — Patrizj, zealous soul,  
Who, having but duty to sustain weak flesh,  
Got heated, caught a fever and so died :

A warning to the over-vigilant,  
— Virtue in a chafe should change her linen  
quick,

Lest pleurisy get start of providence.  
(That's for the Cardinal, and told, I think !)

Well, they bring back the company to Rome.  
Says Guido, " By your leave, I fain would ask  
How you found out 't was I who did the deed ?

What put you on my trace, a foreigner,  
Supposed in Arezzo, — and assuredly safe  
Except for an oversight : who told you, pray ? "

" Why, naturally your wife ! " Down Guido  
drops

O' the horse he rode, — they have to steady  
and stay

At either side the brute that bore him bound,  
So strange it seemed his wife should live and  
speak !

She had prayed — at least so people tell you  
now —

For but one thing to the Virgin for herself,  
Not simply, as did Pietro 'mid the stabs, —  
Time to confess and get her own soul saved, —

But time to make the truth apparent, truth  
For God's sake, lest men should believe a lie :  
Which seems to have been about the single  
prayer

She ever put up, that was granted her.  
With this hope in her head, of telling truth, —  
Being familiarized with pain, beside, —

She bore the stabbing to a certain pitch  
Without a useless cry, was flung for dead  
On Pietro's lap, and so attained her point.

Her friends subjoin this — have I done with  
them ? —

And cite the miracle of continued life  
(She was not dead when I arrived just now)  
As attestation to her probity.

Does it strike your Excellency ? Why, your  
Highness,

The self-command and even the final prayer,  
Our candor must acknowledge explicable  
As easily by the consciousness of guilt.

So, when they add that her confession runs  
She was of wifehood one white innocence

In thought, word, act, from first of her short  
life

To last of it ; praying, i' the face of death,  
That God forgive her other sins — not this,  
She is charged with and must die for, that she  
failed

Anyway to her husband : while thereon  
Comments the old Religious — " So much good,  
Patience beneath enormity of ill,

I hear to my confusion, woe is me,  
Sinner that I stand, shamed in the walk and  
gait

I have practised and grown old in, by a  
child ! " —

Guido's friends shrug the shoulder, " Just the  
same

Prodigious absolute calm in the last hour  
Confirms us, — being the natural result  
Of a life which proves consistent to the close.

Having braved heaven and deceived earth  
throughout,

She braves still and deceives still, gains thereby  
Two ends, she prizes beyond earth or heaven :

First sets her lover free, imperilled sore  
By the new turn things take : he answers yet

For the part he played : they have summoned  
him indeed :

The past ripped up, he may be punished still :  
What better way of saving him than this ?

Then, — thus she dies revenged to the utter-  
most

On Guido, drags him with her in the dark,  
The lower still the better, do you doubt ?

Thus, two ways, does she love her love to the  
end,

And hate her hate, — death, hell is no such  
price

To pay for these, — lovers and haters hold."

But there's another parry for the thrust.  
" Confession," cry folks — " a confession,  
think !

Confession of the moribund is true ! "

Which of them, my wise friends ? This public  
one,

Or the private other we shall never know ?  
The private may contain — your casuists  
teach —

The acknowledgment of, and the penitence for,  
That other public one, so people say.

However it be, — we trench on delicate ground,  
Her Eminence is peeping o'er the cards, —

Can one find nothing in behalf of this  
Catastrophe ? Deaf folks accuse the dumb !

You criticise the drunken reel, fool's speech,  
Maniacal gesture of the man, — we grant !

But who poured poison in his cup, we ask ?  
Recall the list of his excessive wrongs.

First cheated in his wife, robbed by her kin,  
Rendered anon the laughing-stock o' the world

By the story, true or false, of his wife's birth, —  
The last seal publicly apposed to shame

By the open flight of wife and priest, — why,  
Sirs,

Step out of Rome a furlong, would you know  
What an otherguess tribunal than ours here,

Mere worldly Court without the help of grace,  
Thinks of just that one incident o' the flight ?



Guido preferred the same complaint before  
The court at Arezzo, bar of the Granduke, —  
In virtue of it being Tuscany  
Where the offence had rise and flight began, —  
Selfsame complaint he made in the sequel here  
Where the offence grew to the full, the flight  
Ended : offence and flight, one fact judged  
twice

By two distinct tribunals, — what result ?  
There was a sentence passed at the same time  
By Arezzo and confirmed by the Granduke,  
Which nothing balks of swift and sure effect  
But absence of the guilty, (flight to Rome  
Frees them from Tuscan jurisdiction now)  
— Condemns the wife to the opprobrious doom  
Of all whom law just lets escape from death.  
The Stinche, House of Punishment, for life, —  
That's what the wife deserves in Tuscany :  
Here, she deserves — remitting with a smile  
To her father's house, main object of the flight!  
The thief presented with the thing he steals !

At this discrepancy of judgments — mad,  
The man took on himself the office, judged ;  
And the only argument against the use  
O' the law he thus took into his own hands  
Is . . . what, I ask you ? — that, revenging  
wrong,

He did not revenge sooner, kill at first  
Whom he killed last ! That is the final charge.  
Sooner ? What's soon or late i' the case ? —  
ask we.

A wound i' the flesh no doubt wants prompt redress ;

It smarts a little to-day, well in a week,  
Forgotten in a month ; or never, or now, revenge !

But a wound to the soul ? That rankles worse and worse.

Shall I comfort you, explaining — “ Not this one

But now it may be some five hundred times  
I called you ruffian, pandar, liar and rogue :  
The injury must be less by lapse of time ? ”  
The wrong is a wrong, one and immortal too,  
And that you bore it those five hundred times,  
Let it rankle unrevenge five hundred years,  
Is just five hundred wrongs the more and worse !

Men, plagued this fashion, get to explode this way,

If left no other.

“ But we left this man

Many another way, and there's his fault,”

'T is answered — “ He himself preferred our arm

O' the law to fight his battle with. No doubt  
We did not open him an armory  
To pick and choose from, use, and then reject.  
He tries one weapon and fails, — he tries the next

And next : he flourishes wit and common sense,

They fail him, — he plies logic doughtily,  
It fails him too, — thereon, discovers last  
He has been blind to the combustibles —  
That all the while he is aglow with ire,

Boiling with irrepressible rage, and so  
May try explosives and discard cold steel, —  
So hires assassins, plots, plans, executes !  
Is this the honest self-forgetting rage  
We are called to pardon ? Does the furious  
bull

Pick out four help-mates from the grazing herd  
And journey with them over hill and dale  
Till he find his enemy ? ”

What rejoinder ? save

That friends accept our bull-similitude.  
Bull-like, — the indiscriminate slaughter, rude  
And reckless aggravation of revenge,  
Were all i' the way o' the brute who never  
once

Ceases, amid all provocation more,  
To bear in mind the first tormentor, first  
Giver o' the wound that goaded him to fight :  
And, though a dozen follow and reinforce  
The aggressor, wound in front and wound in  
flank,

Continues undisturbedly pursuit,  
And only after prostrating his prize  
Turns on the pettier, makes a general prey.  
So Guido rushed against Violante, first  
Author of all his wrongs, *fons et origo*  
*Malorum* — drops first, deluge since, — which  
done,

He finished with the rest. Do you blame a  
bull ?

In truth you look as puzzled as ere I preached !  
How is that ? There are difficulties perhaps  
On any supposition, and either side.

Each party wants too much, claims sympathy  
For its object of compassion, more than just.

Cry the wife's friends, “ Oh, the enormous crime  
Caused by no provocation in the world ! ”

“ Was not the wife a little weak ? ” — inquire —  
“ Punished extravagantly, if you please,

But meriting a little punishment ? ”  
One treated inconsiderately, say,

Rather than one deserving not at all  
Treatment and discipline o' the harsher sort ? ”

No, they must have her purity itself,  
Quite angel, — and her parents angels too

Of an aged sort, immaculate, word and deed :  
At all events, so seeming, till the fiend,

Even Guido, by his folly, forced from them  
The untoward avowal of the trick o' the birth,

Which otherwise were safe and secret now.  
Why, here you have the awfulest of crimes

For nothing ! Hell broke loose on a butterfly !  
A dragon born of rose-dew and the moon !

Yet here is the monster ! Why he's a mere  
man —

Born, bred and brought up in the usual way,  
His mother loves him, still his brothers stick

To the good fellow of the boyish games ;  
The Governor of his town knows and approves,

The Archbishop of the place knows and assists :  
Here he has Cardinal This to vouch for the  
past,

Cardinal That to trust for the future, — match  
And marriage were a Cardinal's making. — in  
short,

What if a tragedy be acted here

Impossible for malice to improve,  
And innocent Guido with his innocent four  
Be added, all five, to the guilty three,  
That we of these last days be edified  
With one full taste o' the justice of the world ?

The long and the short is, truth seems what I  
show : —

Undoubtedly no pains ought to be spared  
To give the mob an inkling of our lights.  
It seems unduly harsh to put the man  
To the torture, as I hear the court intends,  
Though readiest way of twisting out the truth ;  
He is noble, and he may be innocent.  
On the other hand, if they exempt the man  
(As it is also said they hesitate  
On the fair ground, presumptive guilt is weak  
I' the case of nobility and privilege), —  
What crime that ever was, ever will be,  
Deserves the torture ? Then abolish it !  
You see the reduction *ad absurdum*, Sirs ?

Her Excellency must pronounce, in fine :  
What, she prefers going and joining play ?  
Her Highness finds it late, intends retire ?  
I am of their mind : only, all this talk talked,  
'T was not for nothing that we talked, I hope ?  
Both know as much about it, now, at least,  
As all Rome : no particular thanks, I beg !  
(You'll see, I have not so advanced myself,  
After my teaching the two idiots here !)

## V

## COUNT GUIDO FRANCESCHINI

Thanks, Sir, but, should it please the reverend  
Court,

I feel I can stand somehow, half sit down  
Without help, make shift to even speak, you  
see,

Fortified by the sip of . . . why, 't is wine,  
Velletri, — and not vinegar and gall,  
So changed and good the times grow ! Thanks,  
kind Sir !

Oh, but one sip's enough ! I want my head  
To save my neck, there 's work awaits me still.  
How cautious and considerate . . . aie, aie,  
aie,

Nor your fault, sweet Sir ! Come, you take to  
heart

An ordinary matter. Law is law.  
Noblemen were exempt, the vulgar thought,  
From racking ; but, since law thinks otherwise,  
I have been put to the rack : all's over now,  
And neither wrist — what men style, out of  
joint :

If any harm be, 't is the shoulder-blade.  
The left one, that seems wrong i' the socket, —  
Sirs,

Much could not happen, I was quick to faint.  
Being past my prime of life, and out of health.  
In short, I thank you, — yes, and mean the  
word.

Needs must the Court be slow to understand  
How this quite novel form of taking pain,  
This getting tortured merely in the flesh,

Amounts to almost an agreeable change  
In my case, me fastidious, plied too much  
With opposite treatment, used (forgive the  
joke)

To the rasp-tooth toying with this brain of  
mine,  
And, in and out my heart, the play o' the  
probe.

Four years have I been operated on  
I' the soul, do you see — its tense or tremulous  
part —

My self-respect, my care for a good name,  
Pride in an old one, love of kindred — just  
A mother, brothers, sisters, and the like,  
That looked up to my face when days were  
dim,

And fancied they found light there — no one  
spot,

Foppishly sensitive, but has paid its pang.  
That, and not this you now oblige me with,  
That was the Vigil-torment, if you please !  
The poor old noble House that drew the rags  
O' the Franceschini's once superb array  
Close round her, hoped to slink unchallenged  
by, —

Pluck off these ! Turn the drapery inside out  
And teach the tittering town how scarlet  
wears !

Show men the lucklessness, the improvidence  
Of the easy-natured Count before this Count,  
The father I have some slight feeling for,  
Who let the world slide, nor foresaw that  
frends

Then proud to cap and kiss their patron's shoe,  
Would, when the purse he left held spider-  
webs,

Properly push his child to wall one day !  
Mimic the tetchy humor, furtive glance,  
And brow where half was furious, half fa-  
tigued,

O' the same son got to be of middle age,  
Sour, saturnine, — your humble servant here, —  
When things grow cross and the young wife, he  
finds

Take to the window at a whistle's bid,  
And yet demurs thereon, preposterous fool ! —  
Whereat the worthies judge he wants advice  
And beg to civilly ask what 's evil here,  
Perhaps remonstrate on the habit they deem  
He 's given unduly to, of beating her :

. . . Oh, sure he beats her — why says John so  
else,

Who is cousin to George who is sib to Tecla's  
self

Who cooks the meal and combs the lady's  
hair ?

What ! 'T is my wrist you merely dislocate  
For the future when you mean me martyrdom ?  
— Let the old mother's economy alone,  
How the brocade-strips saved o' the seamy side  
O' the wedding-gown buy raiment for a year ?  
— How she can dress and dish up — lordly dish  
Fit for a duke, lamb's head and purtenance —  
With her proud hands, feast household so a  
week ?

No word o' the wine rejoicing God and man,  
The less when three-parts water ? Then, I  
say,

A trifle of torture to the flesh, like yours,  
While soul is spared such foretaste of hell-fire,  
Is naught. But I curtail the catalogue  
Through policy, — a rhetorician's trick, —  
Because I would reserve some choicer points  
O' the practice, more exactly parallel  
(Having an eye to climax) with what gift,  
Eventual grace the Court may have in store  
I' the way of plague — what crown of punish-  
ments.

When I am hanged or headed, time enough  
To prove the tenderness of only that,  
Mere heading, hanging, — not their counter-  
part.

Not demonstration public and precise  
That I, having married the mongrel of a drab,  
Am bound to grant that mongrel-brat, my  
wife,

Her mother's birthright-license as is just, —  
Let her sleep undisturbed, i' the family style,  
Her sleep out in the embraces of a priest,  
Nor disallow their bastard as my heir!  
Your sole mistake — dare I submit so much  
To the reverend Court? — has been in all this  
pains

To make a stone roll down hill, — rack and  
wrench

And rend a man to pieces, all for what?  
Why — make him ope mouth in his own defence,  
Show cause for what he has done, the irregular  
deed,

(Since that he did it, scarce dispute can be)  
And clear his fame a little, beside the luck  
Of stopping even yet, if possible,  
Discomfort to his flesh from noose or axe —  
For that, out come the implements of law!  
May it content my lords the gracious Court  
To listen only half so patient-long  
As I will in that sense profusely speak,  
And — fie, they shall not call in screws to  
help!

I killed Pompilia Franceschini, Sirs;  
Killed too the Comparini, husband, wife,  
Who called themselves, by a notorious lie,  
Her father and her mother to ruin me.  
There's the irregular deed: you want no more  
Than right interpretation of the same,  
And truth so far — am I to understand?  
To that then, with convenient speed; — because  
Now I consider, — yes, despite my boast,  
There is an ailing in this omoplate  
May clip my speech all too abruptly short,  
Whatever the good-will in me. Now for truth!

I' the name of the indivisible Trinity!  
Will my lords, in the plentitude of their light,  
Weigh well that all this trouble has come on  
me

Through my persistent treading in the paths  
Where I was trained to go, — wearing that  
yoke

My shoulder was predestined to receive,  
Born to the hereditary stoop and crease?  
Noble, I recognized my nobler still,  
The Church, my suzerain; no mock-mistress,  
she;

The secular owned the spiritual: mates of  
mine

Have thrown their careless hoofs up at her call  
“ Forsake the clover and come drag my wain!”  
There they go cropping: I protruded nose  
To halter, bent my back of docile beast,  
And now am wheeled, one wide wound all of  
me,

For being found at the eleventh hour o' the day  
Padding the mill-track, not neck-deep in grass:  
— My one fault, I am stiffened by my work,  
— My one reward, I help the Court to smile!

I am representative of a great line,  
One of the first of the old families  
In Arezzo, ancientest of Tuscan towns.  
When my worst foe is fain to challenge this.  
His worst exception runs — not first in rank  
But second, noble in the next degree  
Only; not malice' self maligns me more.  
So, my lord opposite has composed, we know,  
A marvel of a book, sustains the point  
That Francis boasts the primacy 'mid saints;  
Yet not inaptly hath his argument  
Obtained response from yon my other lord  
In thesis published with the world's applause  
— Rather 't is Dominic such post befits:  
Why, at the worst, Francis stays Francis still,  
Second in rank to Dominic it may be,  
Still, very saintly, very like our Lord;  
And I at least descend from Guido once  
Homager to the Empire, naught below —  
Of which account as proof that, none o' the line  
Having a single gift beyond brave blood,  
Or able to do aught but give, give, give  
In blood and brain, in house and land and cash,  
Not get and garner as the vulgar may,  
We became poor as Francis or our Lord.  
Be that as it likes you, Sirs, — whenever it  
chanced

Myself grew capable anyway of remark,  
(Which was soon — penury makes wit pre-  
mature)

This struck me, I was poor who should be rich  
Or pay that fault to the world which trifles not  
When lineage lacks the flag yet lifts the pole:  
On, therefore, I must move forthwith, transfer  
My stranded self, born fish with gill and fin  
Fit for the deep sea, now left flap bare-backed  
In slush and sand, a show to crawlers vile  
Reared of the low-tide and aright therein.  
The enviable youth with the old name,  
Wide chest, stout arms, sound brow and prick-  
ing veins,

A heartful of desire, man's natural load,  
A brainful of belief, the noble's lot, —  
All this life, cramped and gasping, high and dry  
I' the wave's retreat, — the misery, good my  
lords,

Which made you merriment at Rome of late, —  
It made me reason, rather — muse, demand  
— Why our bare dropping palace, in the street  
Where such-an-one whose grandfather sold tripe  
Was adding to his purchased pile a fourth  
Tall tower, could hardly show a turret sound?  
Why Countess Beatrice, whose son I am,  
Covered in the winter-time as she spun flax,  
Blew on the earthen basket of live ash,  
Instead of jaunting forth in coach and six  
Like such-another widow who ne'er was wed?



I asked my fellows, how came this about ?

"Why, Jack, the sutler's child, perhaps the camp's,

Went to the wars, fought sturdily, took a town  
And got rewarded as was natural.

She of the coach and six — excuse me there !

Why, don't you know the story of her friend ?

A clown dressed vines on somebody's estate,

His boy recoiled from muck, liked Latin more,

Stuck to his pen and got to be a priest,

Till one day . . . don't you mind that telling  
tract

Against Molinos, the old Cardinal wrote ?

He penned and dropped it in the patron's desk,

Who, deep in thought and absent much of mind,

Licensed the thing, allowed it for his own ;

Quick came promotion, — *suum cuique*, Count !

Oh, he can pay for coach and six, be sure !"

"— Well, let me go, do likewise : war 's the  
word —

That way the Franceschini worked at first,

I'll take my turn, try soldiership." — "What,  
you ?

The eldest son and heir and prop o' the house,

So do you see your duty ? Here 's your post,

Hard by the hearth and altar. (Roam from  
roof,

This youngster, play the gypsy out of doors,

And who keeps kith and kin that fall on us ?)

Stand fast, stick tight, conserve your gods at  
home !"

"— Well then, the quiet course, the contrary  
trade !

We had a cousin amongst us once was Pope,

And minor glories manifold. Try the Church,

The tonsure, and, — since heresy 's but half-slain

Even by the Cardinal's tract he thought he  
wrote, —

Have at Molinos !" — "Have at a fool's head !

You a priest ? How were marriage possible ?

There must be Franceschini till time ends —

That's your vocation. Make your brothers  
priests,

Paul shall be porporate, and Girolamo step

Red-stockinged in the presence when you choose,

But save one Franceschini for the age !

Be not the vine but dig and dung its root,

Be not a priest but gird up priesthood's loins,

With one foot in Arezzo stride to Rome,

Spend yourself there and bring the purchase  
back !

Go hence to Rome, be guided !"

So I was.

I turned alike from the hillside zigzag thread

Of way to the table-land a soldier takes,

Alike from the low-lying pasture-place

Where churchmen graze, recline and ruminate,

— Ventured to mount no platform like my lords

Who judge the world, bear brain I dare not  
brag —

But stationed me, might thus the expression  
serve,

As who should fetch and carry, come and go,

Meddle and make i' the cause my lords love  
most —

The public weal, which hangs to the law, which  
holds

By the Church, which happens to be through  
God himself.

Humbly I helped the Church till here I stand, —

Or would stand but for the omoplate, you see !

Bidden qualify for Rome, I, having a field,

Went, sold it, laid the sum at Peter's foot :

Which means — I settled home-accounts with  
speed,

Set apart just a modicum should suffice

To hold the villa's head above the waves

Of weed inundating its oil and wine,

And prop roof, stanchion wall o' the palace so

As to keep breath i' the body, out of heart

Amid the advance of neighboring loftiness —

(People like building where they used to beg) —

Till succored one day, — shared the residue

Between my mother and brothers and sisters  
there,

Black-eyed babe Donna This and Donna That,

As near to starving as might decently be,

— Left myself journey-charges, change of suit,

A purse to put i' the pocket of the Groom

O' the Chamber of the patron, and a glove

With a ring to it for the digits of the niece

Sure to be helpful in his household, — then

Started for Rome, and led the life prescribed.

Close to the Church, though clean of it, I as-  
sumed

Three or four orders of no consequence,

— They cast out evil spirits and exorcise,

For example ; bind a man to nothing more,

Give clerical savor to his layman's-salt,

Facilitate his claim to loaf and fish

Should miracle leave, beyond what feeds the  
flock,

Fragments to brim the basket of a friend —

While, for the world's sake, I rode, danced and  
gamed,

Quitted me like a courtier, measured mine

With whatsoever blade had fame in fence,

— Ready to let the basket go its round

Even though my turn was come to help myself,

Should Dives count on me at dinner-time

As just the understander of a joke

And not immoderate in repartee.

*Utrique sic paratus*, Sirs, I said,

"Here," (in the fortitude of years fifteen,

So good a pedagogue is penury)

"Here wait, do service, — serving and to serve !

And, in due time, I nowise doubt at all,

The recognition of my service comes.

Next year I'm only sixteen. I can wait."

I waited thirty years, may it please the Court :

Saw meanwhile many a denizen o' the dung

Hop, skip, jump o'er my shoulder, make him  
wings

And fly aloft, — succeed, in the usual phrase.

Every one soon or late comes round by Rome :

Stand still here, you'll see all in turn succeed.

Why, look you, so and so, the physician here,

My father's lacquey's son we sent to school,

Doctored and dosed this Eminence and that,

Salved the last Pope his certain obstinate sore,

Soon bought land as became him, names it now :

I grasp bell at his griffin-guarded gate,

Traverse the half-mile avenue, — a term.

A cypress, and a statue, three and three, —

Deliver message from my Monsignor,  
 With varletry at lounge i' the vestibule  
 I'm barred from, who bear mud upon my shoe.  
 My father's chaplain's nephew, Chamberlain, —  
 Nothing less, please you! — courteous all the  
 same,

— He does not see me though I wait an hour  
 At his staircase-landing 'twixt the brace of  
 busts,

A noseless Sylla, Marius maimed to match,  
 My father gave him for a hexastich  
 Made on my birthday, — but he sends me down,  
 To make amends, that relie I prize most —  
 The unburnt end o' the very candle, Sirs,  
 Purled with paint so prettily round and round,  
 He carried in such state last Peter's-day, —  
 In token I, his gentleman and squire,  
 Had held the bridle, walked his managed mule  
 Without a tittup the procession through.  
 Nay, the official, — one you know, sweet  
 lords! —

Who drew the warrant for my transfer late  
 To the New Prisons from Tordinona, — he  
 Graciously had remembrance — “Francesc . . .  
 ha?”

His sire, now — how a thing shall come  
 about! —

Paid me a dozen florins above the fee,  
 For drawing deftly up a deed of sale  
 When troubles fell so thick on him, good heart,  
 And I was prompt and pushing! By all means!  
 At the New Prisons be it his son shall lie, —  
 Anything for an old friend!” and thereat  
 Signed name with triple flourish underneath.  
 These were my fellows, such their fortunes now,  
 While I — kept fasts and feasts innumerable,  
 Matins and vespers, functions to no end  
 I' the train of Monsignor and Eminence,  
 As gentleman-squire, and for my zeal's reward  
 Have rarely missed a place at the table-foot  
 Except when some Ambassador, or such like,  
 Brought his own people. Brief, one day I felt  
 The tick of time inside me, turning-point  
 And slight sense there was now enough of this:  
 That I was near my seventh climacteric,  
 Hard upon, if not over, the middle life,  
 And, although fed by the east-wind, fulsome-  
 fine

With foretaste of the Land of Promise, still  
 My gorge gave symptom it might play me false;  
 Better not press it further, — be content  
 With living and dying only a nobleman,  
 Who merely had a father great and rich,  
 Who simply had one greater and richer yet,  
 And so on back and back till first and best  
 Began i' the night: I finish in the day.  
 “The mother must be getting old,” I said;  
 “The sisters are well wedded away, our name  
 Can manage to pass a sister off, at need,  
 And do for dowry: both my brothers thrive —  
 Regular priests they are, nor, bad-like, 'bide  
 'Twixt flesh and fowl with neither privilege.  
 My spare revenue must keep me and mine.  
 I am tired: Arezzo's air is good to breathe;  
 Vittiano, — one limes flocks of thrushes there;  
 A leathern coat costs little and lasts long;  
 Let me bid good-by, content at home!”  
 Thus, one day, I disbosomed me and bowed.

Whereat began the little buzz and thrill  
 O' the gazers round me; each face brightened  
 up:

As when at your Casino, deep in dawn,  
 A gamester says at last, “I play no more,  
 Forego gain, acquiesce in loss, withdraw  
 Anyhow:” and the watchers of his ways,  
 A trifle struck compunctious at the word,  
 Yet sensible of relief, breathe free once more,  
 Break up the ring, venture polite advice —  
 “How, Sir? So scant of heart and hope indeed?  
 Retire with neither cross nor pile from play? —  
 So incurious, so short-casting? — give your  
 chance

To a younger, stronger, bolder spirit belike,  
 Just when luck turns and the fine throw sweeps  
 all?”

Such was the chorus: and its goodwill meant —  
 “See that the loser leave door handsomely!  
 There's an ill look, — it's sinister, spoils sport,  
 When an old bruised and battered year-by-year  
 Fighter with fortune, not a penny in poke,  
 Reels down the steps of our establishment  
 And staggers on broad daylight and the world,  
 In shagrag beard and doleful doublet, drops  
 And breaks his heart on the outside: people  
 prate

“Such is the profit of a trip upstairs!”  
 Contrive he sidle forth, balked of the blow  
 Best dealt by way of moral, bidding down  
 No curse but blessings rather on our heads  
 For some poor prize he bears at tattered breast,  
 Some palpable sort of kind of good to set  
 Over and against the grievance: give him  
 quick!”

Whereon protested Paul, “Go hang yourselves!  
 Leave him to me. Count Guido and brother of  
 mine,

A word in your ear! Take courage, since  
 faint heart

Ne'er won . . . aha, fair lady, don't men say?  
 There's a *sors*, there's a right Virgilian dip!  
 Do you see the happiness o' the hint? At worst,  
 If the Church want no more of you, the Court  
 No more, and the Camp as little, the ingrates, —  
 come,

Count you are counted: still you've coat to back,  
 Not cloth of gold and tissue, as we hoped,  
 But cloth with sparks and spangles on its frieze  
 From Camp, Court, Church, enough to make a  
 shine,

Entitle you to carry home a wife  
 With the proper dowry, let the worst betide!  
 Why, it was just a wife you meant to take!”

Now, Paul's advice was weighty: priests should  
 know:

And Paul apprised me, ere the week was out,  
 That Pietro and Violante, the easy pair,  
 The cits enough, with stomach to be more,  
 Had just the daughter and exact the sum  
 To truck for the quality of myself: “She's  
 young,

Pretty and rich: you're noble, classic, choice.  
 Is it to be a match?” “A match,” said I.  
 Done! He proposed all, I accepted all,  
 And we performed all. So I said and did  
 Simply. As simply followed, not at first,

But with the outbreak of misfortune, still  
One comment on the saying and doing—  
“What?”

No blush at the avowal you dared buy  
A girl of age beseems your granddaughter,  
Like ox or ass? Are flesh and blood a ware?  
Are heart and soul a chattel?”

Softly, Sirs!

Will the Court of its charity teach poor me  
Anxious to learn, of any way i' the world,  
Allowed by custom and convenience, save  
This same which, taught from my youth up, I  
trod?

Take me along with you; where was the wrong  
step?

If what I gave in barter, style and state  
And all that hangs to Franceschinihood,  
Were worthless, — why, society goes to ground,  
Its rules are idiot's-rambling. Honor of  
birth, —

If that thing has no value, cannot buy  
Something with value of another sort,  
You've no reward nor punishment to give  
I' the giving or the taking honor; straight  
Your social fabric, pinnacle to base,  
Comes down a-clatter like a house of cards.  
Get honor, and keep honor free from flaw,  
Aim at still higher honor,—gabble o' the  
goose!

Go bid a second blockhead like myself  
Spend fifty years in guarding bubbles of breath,  
Soapsuds with air i' the belly, gilded brave,  
Guarded and guided, all to break at touch  
O' the first young girl's hand and first old fool's  
purse!

All my privation and endurance, all  
Love, loyalty and labor dared and did,  
Fiddle-de-dee! — why, doer and darer both, —  
Count Guido Franceschini had hit the mark  
Far better, spent his life with more effect,  
As a dancer or a prizier, trades that pay!  
On the other hand, bid this buffoonery cease,  
Admit that honor is a privilege,  
The question follows, privilege worth what?  
Why, worth the market-price, — now up, now  
down,

Just so with this as with all other ware:  
Therefore essay the market, sell your name,  
Style and condition to who buys them best!  
“Does my name purchase,” had I dared in-  
quire,

“Your niece, my lord?” there would have been  
rebuff

Though courtesy, your Lordship cannot else —  
“Not altogether! Rank for rank may stand:  
But I have wealth beside, you — poverty:  
Your scale flies up there: bid a second bid,  
Rank too and wealth too!” Reasoned like  
yourself!

But was it to you I went with goods to sell?  
This time 't was my scale quietly kissed the  
ground,

Mere rank against mere wealth — some youth  
beside,

Some beauty too, thrown into the bargain, just  
As the buyer likes or lets alone. I thought  
To deal o' the square: others find fault, it  
seems:

The thing is, those my offer most concerned,  
Pietro, Violante, cried they fair or foul?  
What did they make o' the terms? Prepos-  
terous terms?

Why then accede so promptly, close with such  
Nor take a minute to chaffer? Bargain  
struck,

They straight grew bilious, wished their money  
back,

Repented them, no doubt: why, so did I,  
So did your Lordship, if town-talk be true,  
Of paying a full farm's worth for that piece  
By Pietro of Cortona — probably  
His scholar Ciro Ferri may have retouched —  
You caring more for color than design —  
Getting a little tired of cupids too.

That's incident to all the folk who buy!  
I am charged, I know, with gilding fact by  
fraud;

I falsified and fabricated, wrote  
Myself down roughly richer than I prove,  
Rendered a wrong revenue, — grant it all!  
Mere grace, mere coquetry such fraud, I say:  
A flourish round the figures of a sum  
For fashion's sake, that deceives nobody.  
The veritable back-bone, understood  
Essence of this same bargain, blank and bare,  
Being the exchange of quality for wealth, —  
What may such fancy-flights be? Flecks of  
oil

Flirted by chapmen where plain dealing rates.  
I may have dripped a drop — “My name I  
sell;

Not but that I too boast my wealth” — as they,  
“— We bring you riches; still our ancestor  
Was hardly the rapsallion, folk saw flogged,  
But heir to we know who, were rights of force!”  
They knew and I knew where the back-bone  
lurked

I' the writhings of the bargain, lords, believe!  
I paid down all engaged for, to a doit,  
Delivered them just that which, their life long,  
They hungered in the hearts of them to gain —  
Incorporation with nobility thus  
In word and deed: for that they gave me  
wealth.

But when they came to try their gain, my  
gift,

Quit Rome and qualify for Arezzo, take  
The tone o' the new sphere that absorbed the  
old,

Put away gossip Jack and goody Joan  
And go become familiar with the Great,  
Greatness to touch and taste and handle  
now, —

Why, then, — they found that all was vanity,  
Vexation, and what Solomon describes!  
The old abundant city-fare was best,  
The kindly warmth o' the commons, the glad  
clap

Of the equal on the shoulder, the frank grin  
Of the underling at all so many spoons  
Fire-new at neighborly treat, — best, best and  
best

Beyond compare! — down to the loll itself  
O' the pot-house settle, — better such a bench  
Than the stiff crucifixion by my dais  
Under the piecemeal damask canopy



With the coroneted coat-of-arms a-top !  
 Poverty and privation for pride's sake,  
 All they engaged to easily brave and bear, —  
 With the fit upon them and their brains  
 a-work, —

Proved unendurable to the sobered sots.  
 A banished prince, now, will exude a juice  
 And salamander-like support the flame :  
 He dines on chestnuts, chucks the husks to  
 help

The broil o' the brazier, pays the due baioc,  
 Goes off light-hearted : his grimace begins  
 At the funny humors of the christening-feast  
 Of friend the money-lender, — then he's  
 touched

By the flame and frizzles at the babe to kiss !  
 Here was the converse trial, opposite mind :  
 Here did a petty nature split on rock  
 Of vulgar ways predestinate for such —  
 One dish at supper and weak wine to boot !  
 The prince had grinned and borne : the citizen  
 shrieked,

Summoned the neighborhood to attest the  
 wrong,

Made noisy protest he was murdered, — stoned  
 And burned and drowned and hanged, — then  
 broke away,

He and his wife, to tell their Rome the rest.  
 And this you admire, you men o' the world,  
 my lords ?

This moves compassion, makes you doubt my  
 faith ?

Why, I appeal to . . . sun and moon ? Not I !  
 Rather to Plautus, Terence, Boccaccio's Book,  
 My townsman, frank Ser Franco's merry  
 Tales, —

To all who strip a vizard from a face,  
 A body from its padding, and a soul  
 From froth and ignorance it styles itself, —  
 If this be other than the daily hap  
 Of purblind greed that dog-like still drops bone,  
 Grasps shadow, and then howls the case is  
 hard !

So much for them so far : now for myself,  
 My profit or loss i' the matter : married am I :  
 Text whereon friendly censors burst to preach.

Ay, at Rome even, long ere I was left  
 To regulate her life for my young bride  
 Alone at Arezzo, friendliness outbroke  
 (Sifting my future to predict its fault)

"Purchase and sale being thus so plain a point,  
 How of a certain soul bound up, maybe,  
 I' the barter with the body and money-bags ?  
 From the bride's soul what is it you expect ?"

Why, loyalty and obedience, — wish and will  
 To settle and suit her fresh and plastic mind  
 To the novel, not disadvantageous mould !  
 Father and mother shall the woman leave,  
 Cleave to the husband, be it for weal or woe :

There is the law : what sets this law aside  
 In my particular case ? My friends submit  
 "Guide, guardian, benefactor, — fee, faw, fum,  
 The fact is you are forty-five years old,  
 Nor very comely even for that age :

Girls must have boys." Why, let girls say so  
 then,

Nor call the boys and men, who say the same,

Brute this and beast the other as they do !  
 Come, cards on table ! When you chant us  
 next

Epithalamium full to overflow  
 With praise and glory of white womanhood,  
 The chaste and pure — troll no such lies o'er  
 lip !

Put in their stead a crudity or two,  
 Such short and simple statement of the case  
 As youth chalks on our walls at spring of  
 year !

No ! I shall still think nobler of the sex,  
 Believe a woman still may take a man  
 For the short period that his soul wears flesh,  
 And, for the soul's sake, understand the fault  
 Of armor frayed by fighting. Tush, it tempts  
 One's tongue too much ! I'll say — the law's  
 the law :

With a wife I look to find all wifeliness,  
 As when I buy, timber and twig, a tree —  
 I buy the song o' the nightingale inside.

Such was the pact : Pompilia from the first  
 Broke it, refused from the beginning day  
 Either in body or soul to cleave to mine,  
 And published it forthwith to all the world.  
 No rupture, — you must join ere you can  
 break, —

Before we had cohabited a month  
 She found I was a devil and no man, —  
 Made common cause with those who found as  
 much,

Her parents, Pietro and Violante, — moved  
 Heaven and earth to the rescue of all three.  
 In four months' time, the time o' the parents'  
 stay,

Arezzo was a-ringing, bells in a blaze,  
 With the unimaginable story rife  
 I' the mouth of man, woman and child — to  
 wit

My misdemeanor. First the lighter side,  
 Ludicrous face of things, — how very poor  
 The Franceschini had become at last,  
 The meanness and the misery of each shift  
 To save a soldo, stretch and make ends meet.  
 Next, the more hateful aspect, — how myself  
 With cruelty beyond Caligula's  
 Had stripped and beaten, robbed and murdered  
 them,

The good old couple, I decoyed, abused,  
 Plundered and then cast out, and happily so,  
 Since, — in due course the abominable comes, —  
 Woe worth the poor young wife left lonely here !

Repugnant in my person as my mind,  
 I sought, — was ever heard of such revenge ?

— To lure and bind her to so cursed a couch,  
 Such co-embrace with sulphur, snake and toad,  
 That she was fain to rush forth, call the stones  
 O' the common street to save her, not from hate  
 Of mine merely, but . . . must I burn my lips  
 With the blister of the lie ? . . . the satyr-love  
 Of who but my own brother, the young priest,  
 Too long enforced to lenten fare belike,  
 Now tempted by the morsel tossed him full  
 I' the trencher where lay bread and herbs at  
 best.

Mark, this yourselves say ! — this, none disal-  
 lows,

Was charged to me by the universal voice  
At the instigation of my four-months' wife! —  
And then you ask, "Such charges so preferred,  
(Truly or falsely, here concerns us not)  
Pricked you to punish now if not before? —  
Did not the harshness double itself, the hate  
Harden?" I answer, "Have it your way and  
will!"

Say my resentment grew apace: what then?  
Do you cry out on the marvel? When I find  
That pure smooth egg which, laid within my  
nest,

Could not but hatch a comfort to us all,  
Issues a cockatrice for me and mine,  
Do you stare to see me stamp on it? Swans  
are soft:

Is it not clear that she you call my wife,  
That any wife of any husband, caught  
Whetting a sting like this against his breast, —  
Speckled with fragments of the fresh-broke  
shell,

Married a month and making outcry thus, —  
Proves a plague-prodigy to God and man?  
She married: what was it she married for?  
Counted upon and meant to meet thereby?

"Love," suggests some one, "love, a little word  
Whereof we have not heard one syllable."

So, the Pompilia, child, girl, wife, in one,  
Wanted the beating pulse, the rolling eye,

The frantic gesture, the devotion due  
From Thyrsis to Neæra! Guido's love —

Why not Provencal roses in his shoe,  
Plume to his cap, and trio of guitars

At casement, with a bravo close beside?  
Good things all these are, clearly claimable

When the fit price is paid the proper way.  
Had it been some friend's wife, now, threw her  
fan

At my foot, with just this pretty scrap attached.  
"Shame, death, damnation — fall these as they  
may,

So I find you, for a minute! Come this eve!"  
— Why, at such sweet self-sacrifice, — who  
knows?

I might have fired up, found me at my post,  
Ardent from head to heel, nor feared catch  
cough.

Nay, had some other friend's . . . say, daugh-  
ter, tripped

Upstairs and tumbled flat and frank on me,  
Bareheaded and barefooted, with loose hair

And garments all at large, — cried "Take me  
thus!

Duke So-and-So, the greatest man in Rome —  
To escape his hand and heart have I broke  
bounds,

Traversed the town and reached you!" — Then,  
indeed,

The lady had not reached a man of ice!  
I would have rummaged, ransacked at the word

Those old odd corners of an empty heart  
For remnants of dim love the long disused,

And dusty crumbings of romance! But here,  
We talk of just a marriage, if you please —

The every-day conditions and no more;  
Where do these bind me to bestow one drop

Of blood shall dye my wife's true-love-knot  
pink?

Pompilia was no pigeon, Venus' pet,  
That shuffled from between her pressing paps  
To sit on my rough shoulder, — but a hawk,  
I bought at a hawk's price and carried home  
To do hawk's service — at the Rotunda, say,  
Where, six o' the callow nestlings in a row,  
You pick and choose and pay the price for such.  
I have paid my pound, await my penny's worth,  
So, hoodwink, starve and properly train my bird,  
And, should she prove a haggard, — twist her  
neck!

Did I not pay my name and style, my hope  
And trust, my all? Through spending these  
amiss

I am here! 'T is scarce the gravity of the Court  
Will blame me that I never piped a tune,

Treated my falcon-gentle like my finch.  
The obligation I incurred was just

To practise mastery, prove my mastership: —  
Pompilia's duty was — submit herself,

Afford me pleasure, perhaps cure my bile.  
Am I to teach my lords what marriage means,

What God ordains thereby and man fulfils  
Who, docile to the dictate, treads the house?

My lords have chosen the happier part with Paul  
And neither marry nor burn, — yet priestliness  
Can find a parallel to the marriage-bond

In its own blessed special ordinance  
Whereof indeed was marriage made the type:

The Church may show her insubordinate,  
As marriage her refractory. How of the Monk  
Who finds the claustral regimen too sharp

After the first month's essay? What's the  
mode

With the Deacon who supports indifferently  
The rod o' the Bishop when he tastes its smart

Full four weeks? Do you straightway slacken  
hold

Of the innocents, the all-unwary ones  
Who, eager to profess, mistook their mind? —

Remit a fast-day's rigor to the Monk  
Who fancied Francis' manna meant roast  
quails, —

Concede the Deacon sweet society,  
He never thought the Levite-rule renounced, —

Or rather prescribe short chain and sharp  
scourge

Corrective of such peccant humors? This —  
I take to be the Church's mode, and mine.

If I was over-harsh, — the worse 't the wife  
Who did not win from harshness as she ought,

Wanted the patience and persuasion, lore  
Of love, should cure me and console herself.

Put case that I mishandle, flurry and fright  
My hawk through clumsiness in sportsmanship,

Twitoh out five pens where plucking one would  
serve —

What, shall she bite and claw to mend the case?  
And, if you find I pluck five more for that,

Shall you weep "How he roughs the turtle  
there"?

Such was the starting; now of the further step.  
In lieu of taking penance in good part,

The Monk, with hue and cry, summons a mob  
To make a bonfire of the convent, say, —

And the Deacon's pretty piece of virtue (save  
The ears o' the Court! I try to save my head!)

Instructed by the ingenuous postulant,  
Taxes the Bishop with adultery, (mud  
Needs must pair off with mud, and filth with  
filth) —

Such being my next experience. Who knows  
not —

The couple, father and mother of my wife,  
Returned to Rome, published before my lords,  
Put into print, made circulate far and wide  
That they had cheated me who cheated them?  
Pompilia, I supposed their daughter, drew  
Breath first 'mid Rome's worst rankness,  
through the deed

Of a drab and a rogue, was by-blow bastard-babe  
Of a nameless strumpet, passed off, palmed on  
me

As the daughter with the dowry. Daughter?  
Dirt

O' the kennel! Dowry? Dust o' the street!  
Naught more

Naught less, naught else but — oh — ah — as-  
suredly

A Franceschini and my very wife!

Now take this charge as you will, for false or  
true, —

This charge, preferred before your very selves  
Who judge me now, — I pray you, adjudge  
again,

Classing it with the cheats or with the lies,  
By which category I suffer most!

But of their reckoning, theirs who dealt with me  
In either fashion, — I reserve my word,

Justify that in its place; I am now to say,  
Whichever point o' the charge might poison  
most,

Pompilia's duty was no doubtful one.

You put the protestation in her mouth,

"Henceforward and forevermore, avaunt

Ye fiends, who drop disguise and glare revealed

In your own shape, no longer father mine

Nor mother mine! Too nakedly you hate

Me whom you looked as if you loved once, — me  
Whom, whether true or false, your tale now  
damns,

Divulged thus to my public infamy,  
Private perdition, absolute overthrow.

For, hate my husband to your hearts' content,

I, spoil and prey of you from first to last,

I who have done you the blind service, lured

The lion to your pitfall, — I, thus left

To answer for my ignorant bleating there,

I should have been remembered and withdrawn

From the first o' the natural fury, not flung loose

A proverb and a byword men will mouth

At the cross-way, in the corner, up and down

Rome and Arezzo, — there, full in my face,

If my lord, missing them and finding me,

Content himself with casting his reproach

To drop i' the street where such impostors die.

Ah, but — that husband, what the wonder  
were! —

If, far from casting thus away the rag

Smeared with the plague, his hand had chanced  
upon,

Sewn to his pillow by Locusta's wile, —

Far from abolishing, root, stem and branch,

The misgrowth of infectious mistletoe

Foisted into his stock for honest graft, —

If he repudiate not, renounce nowise,  
But, guarding, guiding me, maintain my cause  
By making it his own, (what other way?)

— To keep my name for me, he call it his,

Claim it of who would take it by their lie, —

To save my wealth for me — or babe of mine

Ther lie was framed to beggar at the birth —

He bid them loose grasp, give our gold again:

If he become no partner with the pair

Even in a game which, played adroitly, gives

Its winner life's great wonderful new chance, —

Of marrying, to wit, a second time, —

Ah, if he did thus, what a friend were he!

Anger he might show, — who can stamp out  
flame

Yet spread no black o' the brand? — yet, rough  
albeit

In the act, as whose bare feet feel embers  
seorch,

What grace were his, what gratitude were  
mine!"

Such protestation should have been my wife's.

Looking for this, do I exact too much?

Why, here's the — word for word so much, no  
more —

Avowal she made, her pure spontaneous speech

To my brother the Abate at first blush,

Ere the good impulse had begun to fade:

So did she make confession for the pair,

So pour forth praises in her own behalf.

"Ay, the false letter," interpose my lords —

"The simulated writing, — 't was a trick:

You traced the signs, she merely marked the  
same,

The product was not hers but yours." Alack,

I want no more impulsion to tell truth

From the other trick, the torture inside there!

I confess all — let it be understood —

And deny nothing! If I baffle you so,

Can so fence, in the plentitude of right,

That my poor lathen dagger puts aside

Each pass o' the Bilboa, beats you all the  
same, —

What matters inefficiency of blade?

Mine and not hers the letter, — conceded, lords!

Impute to me that practice! — take as proved

I taught my wife her duty, made her see

What it behoved her see and say and do,

Feel in her heart and with her tongue declare,

And, whether sluggish or recalcitrant,

Forced her to take the right step, I myself

Was marching in marital rectitude!

Why, who finds fault here, say the tale be true?

Would not my lords commend the priest whose  
zeal

Seized on the sick, morose or moribund,

By the palsy-smitten finger, made it cross

His brow correctly at the critical time?

— Or answered for the inarticulate babe

At baptism, in its stead declared the faith,

And saved what else would perish unprofessed?

True, the incapable hand may rally yet,

Renounce the sign with renovated strength, —

The babe may grow up man and Molinist, —

And so Pompilia, set in the good path

And left to go alone there, soon might see

That too frank-forward, all too simple-straight

Her step was, and decline to tread the rough,



When here lay, tempting foot, the meadow-side,  
And there the coppice rang with singing-birds!  
Soon she discovered she was young and fair,  
That many in Arezzo knew as much, —  
Yes, this next cup of bitterness, my lords,  
Had to begin go filling, drop by drop,  
Its measure up of full disgust for me,  
Filtered into by every noisome drain —  
Society's sink toward which all moisture runs.  
Would not you prophesy — "She on whose  
brow is stamped

The note of the imputation that we know, —  
Rightly or wrongly mothered with a whore, —  
Such an one, to disprove the frightful charge,  
What will she but exaggerate chastity,  
Err in excess of wifehood, as it were,  
Renounce even levities permitted youth,  
Though not youth struck to age by a thunder-  
bolt?

Cry 'wolf' i' the sheepfold, where's the sheep  
dares bleat,

Knowing the shepherd listens for a growl? "  
So you expect. How did the devil decree?  
Why, my lords, just the contrary of course!  
It was in the house from the window, at the  
church

From the hassock, — where the theatre lent its  
ledge,

Or staging for the public show left space, —  
That still Pompilia needs must find herself  
Launching her looks forth, letting looks reply  
As arrows to a challenge; on all sides  
Ever new contribution to her lap,  
Till one day, what is it knocks at my clenched  
teeth

But the cup full, curse-collected all for me?  
And I must needs drink, drink this gallant's  
praise,

That minion's prayer, the other fop's reproach,  
And come at the dregs to — Caponsacchi!  
Sirs,

I, — chin deep in a marsh of misery,  
Struggling to extricate my name and fame  
And fortune from the marsh would drown them  
all,

My face the sole unstrangled part of me, —  
I must have this new gad-fly in that face,  
Must free me from the attacking lover too!  
Men say I battled ungracefully enough —  
Was harsh, uncouth and ludicrous beyond  
The proper part o' the husband: have it so!  
Your lordships are considerate at least —  
You order me to speak in my defence  
Plainly, expect no quavering tuneful trills  
As when you bid a singer solace you, —  
Nor look that I shall give it, for a grace,  
*Stans pede in uno*: — you remember well  
In the one case, 't is a plainsong too severe,  
This story of my wrongs, — and that I ache  
And need a chair, in the other. Ask you me  
Why, when I felt this trouble flap my face,  
Already pricked with every shame could  
perch, —

When, with her parents, my wife plagued me  
too, —

Why I enforced not exhortation mild  
To leave whore's-tricks and let my brows alone,  
With mullet of comfits, promise of perfume?

"Far from that! No, you took the opposite  
course,

Breathed threatenings, rage and slaughter!"  
What you will!

And the end has come, the doom is verily  
here,

Unhindered by the threatening. See fate's  
flare

Full on each face of the dead guilty three!  
Look at them well, and now, lords, look at  
this!

Tell me: if on that day when I found first  
That Caponsacchi thought the nearest way  
To his church was some half-mile round by my  
door,

And that he so admired, shall I suppose,  
The manner of the swallows' come-and-go  
Between the props o' the window overhead, —  
That window happening to be my wife's, —  
As to stand gazing by the hour on high,  
Of May-eyes, while she sat and let him smile, —  
If I, — instead of threatening, talking big,  
Showing hair-powder, a prodigious pinch,  
For poison in a bottle, — making believe  
At desperate doings with a bauble-sword,  
And other bugaboo-and-baby-work, —

Had, with the vulgarest household implement,  
Calmly and quietly cut off, clean through bone,  
But one joint of one finger of my wife,  
Saying, "For listening to the serenade,  
Here's your ring-finger shorter a full third:  
Be certain I will slice away next joint,  
Next time that anybody underneath  
Seems somehow to be sauntering as he hoped

A flower would eddy out of your hand to his.  
While you please fidget with the branch above  
O' the rose-tree in the terrace!" — had I done  
so,

Why, there had followed a quick sharp scream,  
some pain,

Much calling for plaister, damage to the dress,  
A somewhat sulky countenance next day,  
Perhaps reproaches, — but reflections too!  
I don't hear much of harm that Malchus did  
After the incident of the ear, my lords!

Saint Peter took the efficacious way;  
Malchus was sore but silenced for his life:  
He did not hang himself i' the Potter's Field  
Like Judas, who was trusted with the bag  
And treated to sops after he proved a thief.  
So, by this time, my true and obedient wife  
Might have been telling beads with a gloved  
hand;

Awkward a little at pricking hearts and darts  
On sampler possibly, but well otherwise:  
Not where Rome shudders now to see her lie.  
I give that for the course a wise man takes;  
I took the other however, tried the fool's,  
The lighter remedy, brandished rapier dread  
With cork-ball at the tip, boxed Malchus' ear  
Instead of severing the cartilage,  
Called her a terrible nickname and the like,  
And there an end: and what was the end of  
that?

What was the good effect o' the gentle course?  
Why, one night I went drowsily to bed,  
Dropped asleep suddenly, not suddenly woke,  
But did wake with rough rousing and loud cry,

To find noon in my face, a crowd in my room,  
Fumes in my brain, fire in my throat, my wife  
Gone God knows whither, — rifled vesture-  
chest,

And ransacked money-coffer. "What does it  
mean?"

The servants had been drugged too, stared and  
yawned,

"It must be that our lady has eloped!"

—"Whither and with whom?"—"With  
whom but the Canon's self?"

One recognizes Caponsacchi there!"—

(By this time the admiring neighborhood  
Joined chorus round me while I rubbed my  
eyes)

"'T is months since their intelligence began, —  
A comedy the town was privy to, —

He wrote and she wrote, she spoke, he re-  
plied,

And going in and out your house last night  
Was easy work for one . . . to be plain with  
you . . .

Accustomed to do both, at dusk and dawn

When you were absent, — at the villa, you  
know,

Where husbandry required the master-mind.

Did not you know? Why, we all knew, you  
see!"

And presently, bit by bit, the full and true

Particulars of the tale were volunteered

With all the breathless zeal of friendship —  
"Thus

Matters were managed: at the seventh hour of  
night"

—"Later, at daybreak" . . . "Caponsacchi  
came" . . .

—"While you and all your household slept like  
death,

Drugged as your supper was with drowsy  
stuff" . . .

—"And your own cousin Guillichini too —

Either or both entered your dwelling-place,

Plundered it at their pleasure, made prize of  
all,

Including your wife" . . . — "Oh, your wife  
led the way,

Out of doors, on to the gate" . . . — "But  
gates are shut,

In a decent town, to darkness and such deeds:  
They climbed the wall — your lady must be  
lithe —

At the gap, the broken bit" . . . — "Torrione,  
true!

To escape the questioning guard at the proper  
gate,

Clemente, where at the inn, hard by, 'the  
Horse,'

Just outside, a calash in readiness

Took the two principals, all alone at last,

To gate San Spirito, which o'erlooks the road,  
Leads to Perugia, Rome and liberty."

Bit by bit thus made-up mosaic-wise,

Flat lay my fortune, — tessellated floor,

Imperishable tracery devils should foot

And frolic it on, around my broken gods,

Over my desecrated hearth.

So much

For the terrible effect of threatening, Sirs!

Well, this way I was shaken wide awake,  
Doctored and drenched, somewhat unpoisoned  
so.

Then, set on horseback and bid seek the lost,  
I started alone, head of me, heart of me  
Fire, and each limb as languid . . . ah, sweet  
lords,

Bethink you! — poison-torture, try persuade  
The next refractory Molinist with that! . . .  
Floundered through day and night, another day  
And yet another night, and so at last,  
As Lucifer kept falling to find hell,  
Tumbled into the court-yard of an inn  
At the end, and fell on whom I thought to  
find,

Even Caponsacchi, — what part once was priest,  
Cast to the winds now with the cassock-rags:  
In cape and sword a cavalier confessed,  
There stood he chiding dilatory grooms,  
Chafing that only horseflesh and no team  
Of eagles would supply the last relay,

Whirl him along the league, the one post more  
Between the couple and Rome and liberty.

'T was dawn, the couple were rested in a sort,  
And though the lady, tired, — the tenderer  
sex, —

Still lingered in her chamber, — to adjust  
The limp hair, look for any blush astray, —  
She would descend in a twinkling, — "Have  
you out

The horses therefore!"

So did I find my wife.

Is the case complete? Do your eyes here see  
with mine?

Even the parties dared deny no one  
Point out of all these points.

What follows next?

"Why, that then was the time," you interpose,  
"Or then or never, while the fact was fresh,

To take the natural vengeance: there and thus  
They and you, — somebody had stuck a sword  
Beside you while he pushed you on your  
horse, —

'T was requisite to slay the couple, Count!"  
Just so my friends say — "Kill!" they cry in  
a breath,

Who presently, when matters grow to a head  
And I do kill the offending ones indeed, —

When crime of theirs, only surmised before,  
Is patent, proved indisputably now, —

When remedy for wrong, untried at the time,  
Which law professes shall not fail a friend,  
Is thrice tried now, found threefold worse than  
null, —

When what might turn to transient shade, who  
knows?

Solidifies into a blot which breaks  
Hell's black off in pale flakes for fear of  
mine, —

Then, when I claim and take revenge — "So  
rash?"

They cry — "so little reverence for the law?"

Listen, my masters, and distinguish here!

At first, I called in law to act and help:  
Seeing I did so, "Why, 't is clear," they cry,  
"You shrank from gallant readiness and risk,  
Were coward: the thing's inexplicable else."

Sweet my lords, let the thing be! I fall flat,  
 Play the reed, not the oak, to breath of man.  
 Only, inform my ignorance! Say I stand  
 Convicted of the having been afraid,  
 Proved a poltroon, no lion but a lamb, —  
 Does that deprive me of my right of lamb  
 And give my fleece and flesh to the first wolf?  
 Are eunuchs, women, children, shieldless quite  
 Against attack their own timidity tempts?  
 Cowardice were misfortune and no crime!  
 — Take it that way, since I am fallen so low  
 I scarce dare brush the fly that blows my face,  
 And thank the man who simply spits not  
 there, —

Unless the Court be generous, comprehend  
 How one brought up at the very feet of law  
 As I, awaits the grave Gamaliel's nod  
 Ere he clench fist at outrage, — much less,  
 stab!

— How, ready enough to rise at the right time,  
 I still could recognize no time mature  
 Unsanctioned by a move o' the judgment-seat,  
 So, mute in misery, eyed my masters here  
 Motionless till the authoritative word  
 Pronounced amercement. There's the riddle  
 solved:

This is just why I slew nor her nor him,  
 But called in law, law's delegate in the place,  
 And bade arrest the guilty couple, Sirs!  
 We had some trouble to do so — you have  
 heard

They braved me, — he with arrogance and  
 scorn,

She, with a volubility of curse,  
 A conversancy in the skill of tooth  
 And claw to make suspicion seem absurd,  
 Nay, an alacrity to put to proof  
 At my own throat my own sword, teach me so  
 To try conclusions better the next time, —  
 Which did the proper service with the mob.

They never tried to put on mask at all:  
 Two avowed lovers forcibly torn apart,  
 Upbraided the tyrant as in a playhouse scene,  
 Ay, and with proper clapping and applause  
 From the audience that enjoys the bold and  
 free.

I kept still, said to myself, "There's law!"  
 Anon

We searched the chamber where they passed  
 the night,

Found what confirmed the worst was feared be-  
 fore,

However needless confirmation now —  
 The witches' circle intact, charms undisturbed  
 That raised the spirit and succubus, — letters,  
 to wit,

Love-laden, each the bag o' the bee that bore  
 Honey from lily and rose to Cupid's hive, —  
 Now, poetry in some rank blossom-burst,  
 Now, prose, — "Come here, go there, wait such  
 a while,

He's at the villa, now he's back again:  
 We are saved, we are lost, we are lovers all the  
 same!"

All in order, all complete, — even to a clue  
 To the drowsiness that happened so opportune —  
 No mystery, when I read, "Of all things, find  
 What wine Sir Jealousy decides to drink —

Red wine? Because a sleeping-potion, dust  
 Dropped into white, discolours wine and shows."

— "Oh, but we did not write a single word!  
 Somebody forged the letters in our name! —"  
 Both in a breath protested presently.  
 Aha, Sacchetti again! — "Dame," — quoth the  
 Duke,

"What meaneth this epistle, counsel me,  
 I pick from out thy packet and peruse,  
 Wherein my page averreth thou art white  
 And warm and wonderful 'twixt pap and  
 pap?"

"Sir," laughed the Lady, "'t is a counterfeit!  
 Thy page did never stork but Dian's breast.  
 The pretty hound I nurture for thy sake:  
 To lie were losel, — by my fay, no more!"  
 And no more say I too, and spare the Court.

Ah, the Court! yes, I come to the Court's self;  
 Such the case, so complete in fact and proof,  
 I laid at the feet of law, — there sat my lords,  
 Here sit they now, so may they ever sit  
 In easier attitude than suits my haunch!  
 In this same chamber did I bare my sores  
 O' the soul and not the body, — shun no shame,  
 Shrink from no probing of the ulcerous part,  
 Since confident in Nature, — which is God, —  
 That she who, for wise ends, concocts a plague,  
 Curbs, at the right time, the plague's virulence  
 too:

Law renovates even Lazarus, — cures me!  
 Cesar thou seekest? To Cesar thou shalt go!  
 Cesar's at Rome: to Rome accordingly!

The case was soon decided: both weights, cast  
 I' the balance, vibrate, neither kicks the beam,  
 Here away, there away, this now and now that.  
 To every one o' my grievances law gave  
 Redress, could purblind eye but see the point.  
 The wife stood a convicted runagate  
 From house and husband, — driven to such a  
 course

By what she somehow took for cruelty,  
 Oppression and imperilment of life —  
 Not that such things were, but that so they  
 seemed:

Therefore, the end conceded lawful, (since  
 To save life there's no risk should stay our  
 leap)

It follows that all means to the lawful end  
 Are lawful likewise, — poison, theft and flight.  
 As for the priest's part, did he meddle or make,  
 Enough that he too thought life jeopardized;  
 Concede him then the color charity  
 Casts on a doubtful course, — if blackish white  
 Or whitish black, will charity hesitate?  
 What did he else but act the precept out,  
 Leave, like a provident shepherd, his safe flock  
 To follow the single lamb and strayaway?  
 Best hope so and think so, — that the ticklish  
 time

I' the carriage, the tempting privacy, the last  
 Somewhat ambiguous accident at the inn,  
 — All may bear explanation: may? then,  
 must!

The letters, — do they so incriminate?  
 But what if the whole prove a prank o' the pen,



Flight of the fancy, none of theirs at all,  
 Bred of the vapors of my brain belike,  
 Or at worst mere exercise of scholar's-wit  
 In the courtly Caponsacchi: verse, convict?  
 Did not Catullus write less seemly once?  
 Yet *doctus* and unblemished he abides.  
 Wherefore so ready to infer the worst?  
 Still, I did righteously in bringing doubts  
 For the law to solve, — take the solution now!  
 "Seeing that the said associates, wife and  
 priest,  
 Bear themselves not without some touch of  
 blame

— Else why the pother, scandal and outcry  
 Which trouble our peace and require chastise-  
 ment?

We, for complicity in Pompilia's flight  
 And deviation, and carnal intercourse  
 With the same, do set aside and relegate  
 The Canon Caponsacchi for three years  
 At Civita in the neighborhood of Rome:  
 And we consign Pompilia to the care  
 Of a certain Sisterhood of penitents  
 I' the city's self, expert to deal with such."  
 Word for word, there's your judgment! Read  
 it, lords,

Re-utter your deliberate penalty  
 For the crime yourselves establish! Your  
 award —

Who chop a man's right-hand off at the wrist  
 For tracing with forefinger words in wine  
 O' the table of a drinking-booth that bear  
 Interpretation as they mocked the Church!  
 — Who brand a woman black between the  
 breasts

For sinning by connection with a Jew:  
 While for the Jew's self — pudency be dumb! —  
 You mete out punishment such and such, yet so  
 Punish the adultery of wife and priest!  
 Take note of that, before the Molinists do,  
 And read me right the riddle, since right must  
 be!

While I stood rapt away with wonderment,  
 Voices broke in upon my mood and muse.  
 "Do you sleep?" began the friends at either  
 ear,

"The case is settled, — you willed it should be  
 so —

None of our counsel, always recollect!  
 With law's award, budge! Back into your  
 place!

Your betters shall arrange the rest for you.  
 We'll enter a new action, claim divorce:  
 Your marriage was a cheat themselves allow:  
 You erred i' the person, — might have married  
 thus

Your sister or your daughter unaware.  
 We'll gain you, that way, liberty at least,  
 Sure of so much by law's own showing. Up  
 And off with you and your unluckiness —  
 Leave us to bury the blunder, sweep things  
 smooth!"

I was in humble frame of mind, be sure!  
 I bowed, betook me to my place again.  
 Station by station I retraced the road,  
 Touched at this hostel, passed this post-house by,  
 Where, fresh-remembered yet, the fugitives  
 Had risen to the heroic stature: still —

"That was the bench they sat on, — there's  
 the board

They took the meal at, — yonder garden-ground  
 They leaned across the gate of," — ever a word  
 O' the Helen and the Paris, with "Ha! you're  
 he,

The . . . much-commiserated husband?"

Step  
 By step, across the pelting, did I reach  
 Arezzo, underwent the archway's grin,  
 Traversed the length of sarcasm in the street,  
 Found myself in my horrible house once more,  
 And after a colloquy . . . no word assists!  
 With the mother and the brothers, stiffened me  
 Straight out from head to foot as dead man  
 does,

And, thus prepared for life as he for hell,  
 Marched to the public Square and met the  
 world.

Apologize for the pincers, palliate screws?  
 Ply me with such toy-trifles, I entreat!  
 Trust who has tried both sulphur and sops-in-  
 wine!

I played the man as I best might, bade friends  
 Put non-essentials by and face the fact.

"What need to hang myself as you advise?  
 The paramour is banished, — the ocean's width,  
 Or the suburb's length, — to Ultima Thule, say,  
 Or Proxima Civitas, what's the odds of name  
 And place? He's banished, and the fact's the  
 thing.

Why should law banish innocence an inch?  
 Here's guilt then, what else do I care to know?  
 The adulteress lies imprisoned, — whether in a  
 well

With bricks above and a snake for company,  
 Or tied by a garter to a bedpost, — much  
 I mind what's little, — least's enough and to  
 spare!

The little fillip on the coward's cheek  
 Serves as though crab-tree cudgel broke his  
 pate.

Law has pronounced there's punishment, less  
 or more:

And I take note o' the fact and use it thus —  
 For the first flaw in the original bond,  
 I claim release. My contract was to wed  
 The daughter of Pietro and Violante. Both  
 Protest they never had a child at all.  
 Then I have never made a contract: good!  
 Cancel me quick the thing pretended one.  
 I shall be free. What matter if hurried over  
 The harbor-boom by a great favoring tide,  
 Or the last of a spent ripple that lifts and  
 leaves?

The Abate is about it. Laugh who wins!  
 You shall not laugh me out of faith in law!  
 I listen, through all your noise, to Rome!"

Rome spoke.  
 In three months letters thence admonished me,  
 "Your plan for the divorce is all mistake.  
 It would hold, now, had you, taking thought to  
 wed

Rachel of the blue eye and golden hair,  
 Found swarth-skinned Leah cumber couch  
 next day:

But Rachel, blue-eyed golden-haired aright,

Proving to be only Laban's child, not Lot's,  
Remains yours all the same forevermore.  
No whit to the purpose is your plea : you err  
I' the person and the quality — nowise  
In the individual, — that's the case in point !  
You go to the ground, — are met by a cross-suit  
For separation, of the Rachel here,  
From bed and board, — she is the injured one,  
You did the wrong and have to answer it.  
As for the circumstance of imprisonment  
And color it lends to this your new attack,  
Never fear, that point is considered too !  
The durance is already at an end ;  
The convent-quiet preyed upon her health,  
She is transferred now to her parents' house  
— No-parents, when that cheats and plunders  
you,

But parentage again confessed in full,  
When such confession pricks and plagues you  
more —

As now — for, this their house is not the house  
In Via Vittoria wherein neighbors' watch  
Might incommode the freedom of your wife,  
But a certain villa smothered up in vines  
At the town's edge by the gate i' the Pauline  
way,

Out of eye-reach, out of ear-shot, little and lone,  
Whither a friend, — at Civita, we hope,  
A good half-dozen-hours' ride off, — might,  
some eve,

Betake himself, and whence ride back, some  
morn,

Nobody the wiser : but be that as it may,  
Do not afflict your brains with trifles now.  
You have still three suits to manage, all and  
each

Ruinous truly should the event play false.  
It is indeed the likelier so to do,  
That brother Paul, your single prop and stay,  
After a vain attempt to bring the Pope  
To set aside procedures, sit himself  
And summarily use prerogative,  
Afford us the infallible finger's tact  
To disentwine your tangle of affairs,  
Paul, — finding it moreover past his strength  
To stem the irruption, bear Rome's ridicule  
Of . . . since friends must speak . . . to be  
round with you . . .

Of the old outwitted husband, wronged and  
wroth,

Pitted against a brace of juveniles —  
A brisk priest who is versed in Ovid's art  
More than his 'Summa,' and a gamesome wife  
Able to act Corinna without book,  
Beside the waggish parents who played dupes  
To dupe the duper — (and truly divers scenes  
Of the Arezzo palace, tickle rib  
And tease eye till the tears come, so we laugh ;  
Nor wants the shock at the inn its comic force,  
And then the letters and poetry — *merum sal !*)  
— Paul, finally, in such a state of things,  
After a brief temptation to go jump  
And join the fishes in the Tiber, drowns  
Sorrow another and a wiser way :

House and goods, he has sold all off, is gone,  
Leaves Rome, — whether for France or Spain,  
who knows ?

Or Britain almost divided from our orb.

You have lost him anyhow."

Now, — I see my lords  
Shift in their seat, — would I could do the  
same !

They probably please expect my bile was  
moved

To purpose, nor much blame me : now, they  
judge,

The fiery titillation urged my flesh  
Break through the bonds. By your pardon, no,  
sweet Sirs !

I got such missives in the public place ;  
When I sought home, — with such news,  
mounted stair

And sat at last in the sombre gallery,  
(T was Autumn, the old mother in bed betimes,  
Having to bear that cold, the finer frame  
Of her daughter-in-law had found intolerable —

The brother, walking misery away  
O' the mountain-side with dog and gun belike.)  
As I supped, ate the coarse bread, drank the  
wine

Weak once, now acrid with the toad's-head-  
squeeze,

My wife's bestowment, — I broke silence thus :  
" Let me, a man, manfully meet the fact,  
Confront the worst o' the truth, end, and have  
peace !

I am irremediably beaten here, —  
The gross illiterate vulgar couple, — bah !

Why, they have measured forces, mastered  
mine,

Made me their spoil and prey from first to last.  
They have got my name, — 't is nailed now  
fast to theirs,

The child or changeling is anyway my wife ;  
Point by point as they plan they execute,  
They gain all, and I lose all — even to the lure  
That led to loss, — they have the wealth again  
They hazarded awhile to hook me with,  
Have caught the fish and find the bait entire :  
They even have their child or changeling back  
To trade with, turn to account a second time.

The brother, presumably might tell a tale  
Or give a warning, — he, too, flies the field,  
And with him vanish help and hope of help.  
They have caught me in the cavern where I fell,  
Covered my loudest cry for human aid  
With this enormous paving-stone of shame.

Well, are we demigods or merely clay ?  
Is success still attendant on desert ?

Is this, we live on, heaven and the final state,  
Or earth which means probation to the end ?

Why claim escape from man's predestined lot  
Of being beaten and baffled ? — God's decree,

In which I, bowing bruised head, acquiesce.  
One of us Franceschini fell long since

I' the Holy Land, betrayed, tradition runs,  
To Paynim by the feigning of a girl

He rushed to free from ravisher, and found  
Lay safe enough with friends in ambushade

Who flayed him while she clapped her hands  
and laughed :

Let me end, falling by a like device.  
It will not be so hard. I am the last

O' my line which will not suffer any more.  
I have attained to my full fifty years,

(About the average of us all, 't is said,  
Though it seems longer to the unlucky man)  
— Lived through my share of life; let all end  
here,

Me and the house and grief and shame at once.  
Friends my informants, — I can bear your  
blow!"

And I believe 't was in no unmeet match  
For the stoic's mood, with something like a  
smile,

That, when morose December roused me next,  
I took into my hand, broke seal to read  
The new epistle from Rome. "All to no use!  
Whate'er the turn next injury take," smiled I,  
"Here's one has chosen his part and knows  
his cue.

I am done with, dead now; strike away, good  
friends!

Are the three suits decided in a trice?  
Against me, — there's no question! How does  
it go?

Is the parentage of my wife demonstrated  
Infamous to her wish? Parades she now  
Loosed of the cincture that so irked the loin?  
Is the last penny extracted from my purse  
To mulct me for demanding the first pound  
Was promised in return for value paid?  
Has the priest, with nobody to court beside,  
Courtied the Muse in exile, hitched my hap  
Into a rattling ballad-rhyme which, bawled  
At tavern-doors, wakes rapture everywhere,  
And helps cheap wine down throat this Christ-  
mas time,

Beating the bagpipes? Any or all of these!  
As well, good friends, you cursed my palace  
here

To its old cold stone face, — stuck your cap for  
crest

Over the shield that's extant in the Square, —  
Or spat on the statue's cheek, the impatient  
world

Sees cumber tomb-top in our family church:  
Let him creep under covert as I shall do,  
Half below-ground already indeed. Good-by!  
My brothers are priests, and childless so; that's  
well —

And, thank God most for this, no child leave  
I —

None after me to bear till his heart break  
The being a Franceschini and my son!"

"Nay," said the letter, "but you have just  
that!

A babe, your veritable son and heir —  
Lawful, — 't is only eight months since your  
wife

Left you, — so, son and heir, your babe was  
born

Last Wednesday in the villa, — you see the  
cause

For quitting Convent without beat of drum,  
Stealing a hurried march to this retreat  
That's not so savage as the Sisterhood  
To slips and stumbles: Pietro's heart is soft,  
Violante leans to pity's side, — the pair  
Ushered you into life a bouncing boy:  
And he's already hidden away and safe  
From any claim on him you mean to make —

They need him for themselves, — don't fear,  
they know

The use o' the bantling, — the nerve thus laid  
bare

To nip at, new and nice, with finger-nail!"

Then I rose up like fire, and fire-like roared.  
What, all is only beginning not ending now?  
The worm which wormed its way from skin  
through flesh

To the bone and there lay biting, did its best, —  
What, it goes on to scrape at the bone's self,  
Will wind to inmost marrow and madden me?

There's to be yet my representative,  
Another of the name shall keep displayed  
The flag with the ordure on it, brandish still  
The broken sword has served to stir a jakes?  
Who will he be, how will you call the man?  
A Franceschini, — when who cut my purse,  
Filched my name, hemmed me round, hustled  
me hard

As rogues at a fair some fool they strip i' the  
midst,

When these count gains, vaunt pillage pres-  
ently: —

But a Caponsacchi, oh, be very sure!  
When what demands its tribute of applause  
Is the cunning and impudence o' the pair of  
cheats,

The lies and lust o' the mother, and the brave  
Bold carriage of the priest, worthily crowned  
By a witness to his feat i' the following age, —  
And how this threefold cord could hook and  
fetch

And land leviathan that king of pride!  
Or say, by some mad miracle of chance,  
Is he indeed my flesh and blood, this babe?

Was it because fate forged a link at last  
Betwixt my wife and me, and both alike  
Found we had henceforth some one thing to  
love,

Was it when she could damn my soul indeed  
She undarked door, let all the devils o' the  
dark

Dance in on me to cover her escape?  
Why then, the surplusage of disgrace, the  
spilth

Over and above the measure of infamy,  
Failing to take effect on my coarse flesh  
Seasoned with scorn now, saturate with  
shame, —

Is saved to instil on and corrode the brow,  
The baby-softness of my first-born child —  
The child I had died to see though in a dream,  
The child I was bid strike out for, beat the  
wave

And baffle the tide of troubles where I swam,  
So I might touch shore, lay down life at last  
At the feet so dim and distant and divine  
Of the apparition, as 't were Mary's babe  
Had held, through night and storm, the torch  
aloft, —

Born now in very deed to bear this brand  
On forehead and curse me who could not save!  
Rather be the town-talk true, Square's jest,  
street's jeer

True, my own inmost heart's confession true,  
And he the priest's bastard and none of mine!



Ay, there was cause for flight, swift flight and sure!

The husband gets unruly, breaks all bounds  
When he encounters some familiar face,  
Fashion of feature, brow and eyes and lips  
Where he least looked to find them, — time to fly!

This bastard then, a nest for him is made,  
As the manner is of vermin, in my flesh —  
Shall I let the filthy pest buzz, flap and sting,  
Busy at my vitals and, nor hand nor foot  
Lift, but let be, lie still and rot resigned?  
No, I appeal to God, — what says himself,  
How lessons Nature when I look to learn?  
Why, that I am alive, am still a man  
With brain and heart and tongue and right-hand too —

Nay, even with friends, in such a cause as this,  
To right me if I fail to take my right.  
Why, that I am alive, a voice beyond the law  
Enters my heart, *Quis est pro Domino?*

Myself, in my own Vittiano, told the tale  
To my own serving-people summoned there:  
Told the first half of it, scarce heard to end  
By judges who got done with judgment quick  
And clamored to go execute her 'hest —  
Who cried, "Not one of us that dig your soil  
And dress your vineyard, prune your olive-trees,

But would have brained the man debauched  
our wife,

And staked the wife whose lust allured the man,  
And paunched the Duke, had it been possible,  
Who ruled the land, yet barred us such revenge!"

I fixed on the first whose eyes caught mine,  
some four

Resolute youngsters with the heart still fresh,  
Filled my purse with the residue o' the coin  
Uncaught-up by my wife whom haste made blind,

Donned the first rough and rural garb I found,  
Took whatsoever weapon came to hand,  
And out we flung and on we ran or reeled  
Romeward. I have no memory of our way,  
Only that, when at intervals the cloud  
Of horror about me opened to let in life,  
I listened to some song in the ear, some snatch  
Of a legend, relie of religion, stray  
Fragment of record very strong and old  
Of the first conscience, the anterior right,  
The God's-gift to mankind, impulse to quench  
The antagonistic spark of hell and tread  
Satan and all his malice into dust,  
Declare to the world the one law, right is right.  
Then the cloud re-encompassed me, and so  
I found myself, as on the wings of winds,  
Arrived: I was at Rome on Christmas Eve.

Festive bells — everywhere the Feast o' the Babe,

Joy upon earth, peace and good will to man!  
I am baptized. I started and let drop  
The dagger. "Where is it, his promised peace?"

Nine days o' the Birth-Feast did I pause and pray

To enter into no temptation more.

I bore the hateful house, my brother's once,  
Deserted, — let the ghost of social joy  
Mock and make mouths at me from empty room

And idle door that missed the master's step, —  
Bore the frank wonder of incredulous eyes,  
As my own people watched without a word,  
Waited, from where they huddled round the hearth

Black like all else, that nod so slow to come.  
I stopped my ears even to the inner call  
Of the dread duty, only heard the song

"Peace upon earth," saw nothing but the face  
O' the Holy Infant and the halo there  
Able to cover yet another face

Behind it, Satan's which I else should see.  
But, day by day, joy waned and withered off:  
The Babe's face, premature with peak and pine,

Sank into wrinkled ruinous old age,  
Suffering and death, then mist-like disappeared,

And showed only the Cross at end of all,  
Left nothing more to interpose 'twixt me  
And the dread duty, — for the angels' song,

"Peace upon earth," louder and louder pealed,  
"O Lord, how long, how long be unavenged?"  
On the ninth day, this grew too much for man.  
I started up — "Some end must be!" At once,

Silence: then, scratching like a death-watch-tick,

Slowly within my brain was syllabled,  
"One more concession, one decisive way  
And but one, to determine thee the truth, —  
This way, in fine, I whisper in thy ear:  
Now doubt, anon decide, thereupon act!"

"That is a way, thou whisperest in my ear!  
I doubt, I will decide, then act," said I —  
Then beckoned my companions: "Time is come!"

And so, all yet uncertain save the will  
To do right, and the daring aught save leave  
Right undone, I did find myself at last  
I' the dark before the villa with my friends,  
And made the experiment, the final test,  
Ultimate chance that ever was to be  
For the wretchedness inside. I knocked — pronounced

The name, the predetermined touch for truth,  
"What welcome for the wanderer? Open straight —"

To the friend, physician, friar upon his rounds,  
Traveller belated, beggar lame and blind?  
No, but — "to Caponsacchi!" And the door  
Opened.

And then, — why, even then, I think,  
I' the minute that confirmed my worst of fears,

Surely, — I pray God that I think aright! —  
Had but Pompilia's self, the tender thing  
Who once was good and pure, was once my lamb

And lay in my bosom, had the well-known shape

Fronted me in the doorway, — stood there faint  
With the recent pang, perhaps, of giving birth  
To what might, though by miracle, seem my  
child, —

Nay more, I will say, had even the aged fool  
Pietro, the dotard, in whom folly and age  
Wrought, more than enmity or malevolence,  
To practise and conspire against my peace, —  
Had either of these but opened, I had paused.  
But it was she the hag, she that brought hell  
For a dowry with her to her husband's house,  
She the mock-mother, she that made the  
match

And married me to perdition, spring and  
source

O' the fire inside me that boiled up from heart  
To brain and hailed the Fury gave it birth, —  
Violante Comparini, she it was,  
With the old grin amid the wrinkles yet,  
Opened : as if in turning from the Cross,  
With trust to keep the sight and save my soul,  
I had stumbled, first thing, on the serpent's  
head

Coiled with a leer at foot of it.

There was the end !  
Then was I rapt away by the impulse, one  
Immeasurable everlasting wave of a need  
To abolish that detested life. 'T was done :  
You know the rest and how the folds o' the  
thing,

Twisting for help, involved the other two  
More or less serpent-like : how I was mad,  
Blind, stamped on all, the earth-worms with  
the asp,  
And ended so.

You came on me that night,  
Your officers of justice, — caught the crime  
In the first natural frenzy of remorse ?  
Twenty miles off, sound sleeping as a child  
On a cloak i' the straw which promised shelter  
first,

With the bloody arms beside me, — was it not  
so ?

Wherefore not ? Why, how else should I be  
found ?

I was my own self, had my sense again,  
My soul safe from the serpents. I could sleep :  
Indeed and, dear my lords, I shall sleep now,  
Spite of my shoulder, in five minutes' space,  
When you dismiss me, having truth enough !  
It is but a few days are passed, I find,  
Since this adventure. Do you tell me, four ?  
Then the dead are scarce quiet where they lie,  
Old Pietro, old Violante, side by side  
At the church Lorenzo, — oh, they know it  
well !

So do I. But my wife is still alive,  
Has breath enough to tell her story yet,  
Her way, which is not mine, no doubt at all.  
And Caponsacchi, you have summoned him, —  
Was he so far to send for ? Not at hand ?  
I thought some few o' the stabs were in his  
heart,

Or had not been so lavish : less had served.  
Well, he too tells his story, — florid prose  
As smooth as mine is rough. You see, my  
lords,  
There will be a lying intoxicating smoke

Born of the blood, — confusion probably, —  
For lies breed lies — but all that rests with  
you !

The trial is no concern of mine ; with me  
The main of the care is over : I at least  
Recognize who took that huge burden off,  
Let me begin to live again. I did  
God's bidding and man's duty, so, breathe  
free ;

Look you to the rest ! I heard Himself pre-  
scribe,

That great Physician, and dared lance the core  
Of the bad ulcer ; and the rage abates,  
I am myself and whole now : I proved cured  
By the eyes that see, the ears that hear again,  
The limbs that have relearned their youthful  
play,

The healthy taste of food and feel of clothes  
And taking to our common life once more,  
All that now urges my defence from death,  
The willingness to live, what means it else ?  
Before, — but let the very action speak !

Judge for yourselves, what life seemed worth  
to me

Who, not by proxy but in person, pitched  
Head-foremost into danger as a fool  
That never cares if he can swim or no —  
So he but find the bottom, braves the brook.  
No man omits precaution, quite neglects  
Secrecy, safety, schemes not how retreat,  
Having schemed he might advance. Did I so  
scheme ?

Why, with a warrant which 't is ask and have,  
With horse thereby made mine without a word,  
I had gained the frontier and slept safe that  
night.

Then, my companions, — call them what you  
please,

Slave or stipendiary, — what need of one  
To me whose right-hand did its owner's work ?  
Hire an assassin yet expose yourself ?  
As well buy glove and then thrust naked hand  
I' the thorn-bush. No, the wise man stays at  
home,

Sends only agents out, with pay to earn :  
At home, when they come back, — he straight  
discards

Or else disowns. Why use such tools at all  
When a man's foes are of his house, like mine,  
Sit at his board, sleep in his bed ? Why noise,  
When there 's the *acquetta* and the silent way ?  
Clearly my life was valueless.

But now  
Health is returned, and sanity of soul  
Nowise indifferent to the body's harm.  
I find the instinct bids me save my life ;  
My wits, too, rally round me ; I pick up  
And use the arms that strewed the ground be-  
fore,

Unnoticed or spurned aside : I take my stand,  
Make my defence. God shall not lose a life  
May do him further service, while I speak  
And you hear, you my judges and last hope !  
You are the law : 't is to the law I look.  
I began life by hanging to the law.  
To the law it is I hang till life shall end.  
My brother made appeal to the Pope, 't is true,

To stay proceedings, judge my cause himself  
 Nor trouble law, — some fondness of conceit  
 That rectitude, sagacity sufficed  
 The investigator in a case like mine,  
 Dispensed with the machine of law. The Pope  
 Knew better, set aside my brother's plea  
 And put me back to law, — referred the cause  
*Ad iudices meos*, — doubtlessly did well.  
 Here, then, I clutch my judges, — I claim law —  
 Cry, by the higher law whereof your law  
 O' the land is humbly representative, —  
 Cry, on what point is it, where either accuse,  
 I fail to furnish you defence? I stand  
 Acquitted, actually or virtually,  
 By every intermediate kind of court  
 That takes account of right or wrong in man,  
 Each unit in the series that begins  
 With God's throne, ends with the tribunal here.  
 God breathes, not speaks, his verdicts, felt not  
 heard,  
 Passed on successively to each court I call  
 Man's conscience, custom, manners, all that  
 make  
 More and more effort to promulgate, mark  
 God's verdict in determinable words,  
 Till last come human jurists — solidify  
 Fluid result, — what's fixable lies forged,  
 Statute, — the residue escapes in fume,  
 Yet hangs aloft, a cloud, as palpable  
 To the finer sense as word the legist welds.  
 Justinian's Pandects only make precise  
 What simply sparkled in men's eyes before,  
 Twisted in their brow or quivered on their  
 lip,  
 Waited the speech they called but would not  
 come.  
 These courts then, whose decree your own con-  
 firms, —  
 Take my whole life, not this last act alone,  
 Look on it by the light reflected thence!  
 What has Society to charge me with?  
 Come, unreservedly, — favor none nor fear, —  
 I am Guido Franceschini, am I not?  
 You know the courses I was free to take?  
 I took just that which let me serve the Church,  
 I gave it all my labor in body and soul  
 Till these broke down i' the service. "Spe-  
 cify?"  
 Well, my last patron was a Cardinal.  
 I left him unconvicted of a fault —  
 Was even helped, by way of gratitude,  
 Into the new life that I left him for,  
 This very misery of the marriage, — he  
 Made it, kind soul, so far as in him lay —  
 Signed the deed where you yet may see his  
 name.  
 He is gone to his reward, — dead, being my  
 friend  
 Who could have helped here also, — that, of  
 course!  
 So far, there's my acquittal, I suppose.  
 Then comes the marriage itself — no question,  
 lords,  
 Of the entire validity of that!  
 In the extremity of distress, 't is true,  
 For after-reasons, furnished abundantly,  
 I wished the thing invalid, went to you  
 Only some months since, set you duly forth

My wrong and prayed your remedy, that a cheat  
 Should not have force to cheat my whole life  
 long.  
 "Annul a marriage? 'T is impossible!  
 Though ring about your neck be brass not gold,  
 Needs must it clasp, gangrene you all the  
 same!"  
 Well, let me have the benefit, just so far,  
 O' the fact announced, — my wife then is my  
 wife,  
 I have allowance for a husband's right.  
 I am charged with passing right's due bound,  
 — such acts  
 As I thought just, my wife called cruelty,  
 Complained of in due form, — convoked no court  
 Of common gossipry, but took her wrongs —  
 And not once, but so long as patience served —  
 To the town's top, jurisdiction's pride of place,  
 To the Archbishop and the Governor.  
 These heard her charge with my reply, and found  
 That futile, this sufficient: they dismissed  
 The hysteric querulous rebel, and confirmed  
 Authority in its wholesome exercise,  
 They, with directest access to the facts.  
 "— Ay, for it was their friendship favored you,  
 Hereditary alliance against a breach  
 I' the social order: prejudice for the name  
 Of Franceschini!" — So I hear it said:  
 But not here. You, lords, never will you say  
 "Such is the nullity of grace and truth,  
 Such the corruption of the faith, such lapse  
 Of law, such warrant have the Molinists  
 For daring reprehend us as they do, —  
 That we pronounce it just a common case,  
 Two dignitaries, each in his degree  
 First, foremost, this the spiritual head, and that  
 The secular arm o' the body politic,  
 Should, for mere wrongs' love and injustice'  
 sake,  
 Side with, aid and abet in cruelty  
 This broken beggarly noble, — bribed perhaps  
 By his watered wine and mouldy crust of  
 bread —  
 Rather than that sweet tremulous flower-like  
 wife  
 Who kissed their hands and curled about their  
 feet  
 Looking the irresistible loveliness  
 In tears that takes man captive, turns" . . .  
 enough!  
 Do you blast your predecessors? What for-  
 bids  
 Posterity to trebly blast yourselves  
 Who set the example and instruct their tongue?  
 You dreading the crowd, succumbed to the pop-  
 ular cry,  
 Or else, would nowise seem defer thereto  
 And yield to public clamor though i' the right!  
 You ridded your eye of my unseemliness,  
 The noble whose misfortune wearied you, —  
 Or, what's more probable, made common cause  
 With the cleric section, punished in myself  
 Maladroit uncomplaisant laity,  
 Defective in behavior to a priest  
 Who claimed the customary partnership  
 I' the house and the wife. Lords, any lie will  
 serve!  
 Look to it, — or allow me freed so far!



Then I proceed a step, come with clean hands  
 Thus far, re-tell the tale told eight months since.  
 The wife, you allow so far, I have not wronged,  
 Has fled my roof, plundered me and decamped  
 In company with the priest her paramour:  
 And I gave chase, came up with, caught the two  
 At the wayside inn where both had spent the  
 night,

Found them in flagrant fault, and found as well,  
 By documents with name and plan and date,  
 The fault was furtive then that's flagrant now,  
 Their intercourse a long established crime.  
 I did not take the license law's self gives  
 To slay both criminals o' the spot at the time,  
 But held my hand, — preferred play prodigy  
 Of patience which the world calls cowardice,  
 Rather than seem anticipate the law  
 And cast discredit on its organs, — you.  
 So, to your bar I brought both criminals,  
 And made my statement: heard their counter-  
 charge,

Nay, — their corroboration of my tale,  
 Nowise disputing its allegements, not  
 I' the main, not more than nature's decency  
 Compels men to keep silence in this kind, —  
 Only contending that the deeds avowed  
 Would take another color and bear excuse.  
 You were to judge between us; so you did.  
 You disregard the excuse, you breathe away  
 The color of innocence and leave guilt black;  
 "Guilty" is the decision of the court,  
 And that I stand in consequence untouched,  
 One white integrity from head to heel.  
 Not guilty? Why then did you punish them?  
 True, punishment has been inadequate —  
 'T is not I only, not my friends that joke,  
 My foes that jeer, who echo "inadequate" —  
 For, by a chance that comes to help for once,  
 The same case simultaneously was judged  
 At Arezzo, in the province of the Court  
 Where the crime had its beginning but not end.  
 They then, deciding on but half o' the crime,  
 The effraction, robbery, — features of the fault  
 I never cared to dwell upon at Rome, —  
 What was it they adjudged as penalty  
 To Pompilia, — the one criminal o' the pair  
 Amenable to their judgment, not the priest  
 Who is Rome's? Why, just imprisonment for  
 life

I' the Stinche. There was Tuscany's award  
 To a wife that robs her husband: you at  
 Rome —

Having to deal with adultery in a wife  
 And, in a priest, breach of the priestly vow —  
 Give gentle sequestration for a month  
 In a manageable Convent, then release,  
 You call imprisonment, in the very house  
 O' the very couple, which the aim and end  
 Of the culprits' crime was — just to reach and  
 rest

And there take solace and defy me: well, —  
 This difference 'twixt their penalty and yours  
 Is immaterial: make your penalty less —  
 Merely that she should henceforth wear black  
 gloves

And white fan, she who wore the opposite —  
 Why, all the same the fact o' the thing sub-  
 sists.

Reconcile to your conscience as you may,  
 Be it on your own heads, you pronounced but  
 half

O' the penalty for heinousness like hers  
 And his, that pays a fault at Carnival  
 Of comfit-pelting past discretion's law,  
 Or accident to handkerchief in Lent  
 Which falls perversely as a lady kneels  
 Abruptly, and but half conceals her neck!  
 I acquiesce for my part: punished, though  
 By a pin-point scratch, means guilty: guilty  
 means

— What have I been but innocent hitherto?  
 Anyhow, here the offence, being punished,  
 ends.

Ends? — for you deemed so, did you not, sweet  
 lords?

That was throughout the veritable aim  
 O' the sentence light or heavy, — to redress  
 Recognized wrong? You righted me, I think?  
 Well then, — what if I, at this last of all,  
 Demonstrate you, as my whole pleading proves,  
 No particle of wrong received thereby  
 One atom of right? — that cure grew worse dis-  
 ease?

That in the process you call "justice done"  
 All along you have nipped away just inch  
 By inch the creeping climbing length of plague  
 Breaking my tree of life from root to branch,  
 And left me, after all and every act  
 Of your interference, — lightened of what load?  
 At liberty wherein? Mere words and wind!  
 "Now I was saved, now I should feel no more  
 The hot breath, find a respite from fixed eye  
 And vibrant tongue!" Why, scarce your back  
 was turned,

There was the reptile, that feigned death at  
 first,

Renewing its detested spire and spire  
 Around me, rising to such heights of hate  
 That, so far from mere purpose now to crush  
 And coil itself on the remains of me,  
 Body and mind, and there flesh fang content,  
 Its aim is now to evoke life from death,  
 Make me anew, satisfy in my son  
 The hunger I may feed but never sate,  
 Tormented on to perpetuity —  
 My son, whom dead, I shall know, understand,  
 Feel, hear, see, never more escape the sight  
 In heaven that's turned to hell, or hell re-  
 turned

(So rather say) to this same earth again, —  
 Moulded into the image and made one,  
 Fashioned of soul as featured like in face,  
 First taught to laugh and lisp and stand and  
 go

By that thief, poisoner and adulteress  
 I call Pompilia, he calls . . . sacred name,  
 Be unpronounced, be unpolled here!  
 And last led up to the glory and prize of hate  
 By his . . . foster-father, Caponsacchi's self,  
 The perjured priest, pink of conspirators,  
 Tricksters and knaves, yet polished, superfine,  
 Lordhood to model adolescence by!  
 Lords, look on me, declare, — when, what I  
 show,  
 Is nothing more nor less than what you deemed

And doled me out for justice, — what did you say ?

For reparation, restitution and more, —  
Will you not thank, praise, bid me to your breasts

For having done the thing you thought to do,  
And thoroughly trampled out sin's life at last ?  
I have heightened phrase to make your soft speech serve,

Doubled the blow you but essayed to strike,  
Carried into effect your mandate here  
That else had fallen to ground : mere duty done,

Oversight of the master just supplied  
By zeal i' the servant. I, being used to serve,  
Have simply . . . what is it they charge me with ?

Blackened again, made legible once more  
Your own decree, not permanently writ,  
Rightly conceived but all too faintly traced.  
It reads efficient, now, comminatory,  
A terror to the wicked, answers so  
The mood o' the magistrate, the mind of law.  
Absolve, then, me, law's mere executant !  
Protect your own defender, — save me, Sirs !  
Give me my life, give me my liberty,  
My good name and my civic rights again !  
It would be too fond, too complacent play  
Into the hands o' the devil, should we lose  
The game here, I for God : a soldier-bee  
That yields his life, exenterate with the stroke  
O' the sting that saves the hive. I need that life.

Oh, never fear ! I'll find life plenty use  
Though it should last five years more, aches and all !

For, first thing, there's the mother's age to help —

Let her come break her heart upon my breast,  
Not on the blank stone of my nameless tomb !  
The fugitive brother has to be bidden back  
To the old routine, repugnant to the tread,  
Of daily suit and service to the Church, —  
Through gibe and jest, those stones that Shi-meï flung !

Ay, and the spirit-broken youth at home,  
The awe-struck altar-ministrant, shall make  
Amends for faith now palsied at the source,  
Shall see truth yet triumphant, justice yet  
A victor in the battle of this world !  
Give me — for last, best gift — my son again,  
Whom law makes mine, — I take him at your word,

Mine be he, by miraculous mercy, lords !  
Let me lift up his youth and innocence  
To purify my palace, room by room  
Purged of the memories, lend from his bright brow

Light to the old proud paladin my sire  
Shrunk now for shame into the darkest shade  
O' the tapestry, showed him once and shrouds him now !

Then may we, — strong from that rekindled smile, —

Go forward, face new times, the better day.  
And when, in times made better through your brave

Decision now, — might but Utopia be ! —

Rome rife with honest women and strong men,  
Manners reformed, old habits back once more,  
Customs that recognize the standard worth, —  
The wholesome household rule in force again,  
Husbands once more God's representative,  
Wives like the typical Spouse once more, and Priests

No longer men of Belial, with no aim  
At leading silly women captive, but  
Of rising to such duties as yours now, —  
Then will I set my son at my right-hand  
And tell his father's story to this point,  
Adding, " The task seemed superhuman, still  
I dared and did it, trusting God and law :  
And they approved of me : give praise to both ! "

And if, for answer, he shall stoop to kiss  
My hand, and peradventure start thereat, —  
I engage to smile, " That was an accident  
I' the necessary process, — just a trip  
O' the torture-irons in their search for truth, —  
Hardly misfortune, and no fault at all. "

## VI

## GIUSEPPE CAPONSACCHI

Answer you, Sirs ? Do I understand aright ?  
Have patience ! In this sudden smoke from hell, —

So things disguise themselves, — I cannot see  
My own hand held thus broad before my face  
And know it again. Answer you ? Then that means

Tell over twice what I, the first time, told  
Six months ago : 't was here, I do believe,  
Fronting you same three in this very room,  
I stood and told you : yet now no one laughs,  
Who then . . . nay, dear my lords, but laugh you did,

As good as laugh, what in a judge we style  
Laughter — no levity, nothing indecorous, lords !  
Only, — I think I apprehend the mood :

There was the blameless shrug, permissible smirk,

The pen's pretence at play with the pursed mouth,

The titter stifled in the hollow palm  
Which rubbed the eyebrow and caressed the nose,

When I first told my tale : they meant, you know,

" The sly one, all this we are bound believe !  
Well, he can say no other than what he says.  
We have been young, too, — come, there's a greater guilt !

Let him but decently disembody himself,  
Scramble from out the scrape nor move the mud, —

We solid ones may risk a finger-stretch ! "  
And now you sit as grave, stare as aghast  
As if I were a phantom : now 't is — " Friend.  
Collect yourself ! " — no laughing matter more —  
" Counsel the Court in this extremity,  
Tell us again ! " — tell that, for telling which.  
I got the jocular piece of punishment,  
Was sent to lounge a little in the place

Whence now of a sudden here you summon me  
To take the intelligence from just — your lips !  
You, Judge Tommati, who then tittered most, —  
That she I helped eight months since to escape  
Her husband, was retaken by the same,  
Three days ago, if I have seized your sense, —  
(I being disallowed to interfere,  
Meddle or make in a matter none of mine,  
For you and law were guardians quite enough  
O' the innocent, without a pert priest's help) —  
And that he has butchered her accordingly,  
As she foretold and as myself believed, —  
And, so foretelling and believing so,  
We were punished, both of us, the merry way :  
Therefore, tell once again the tale ! For what ?  
Pompilia is only dying while I speak !  
Why does the mirth hang fire and miss the  
smile ?

My masters, there 's an old book, you should con  
For strange adventures, applicable yet,  
'Tis stuffed with. Do you know that there was  
once

This thing : a multitude of worthy folk  
Took recreation, watched a certain group  
Of soldiery intent upon a game, —  
How first they wrangled, but soon fell to play,  
Threw dice, — the best diversion in the world.  
A word in your ear, — they are now casting lots,  
Ay, with that gesture quaint and cry uncouth,  
For the coat of One murdered an hour ago !  
I am a priest, — talk of what I have learned.  
Pompilia is bleeding out her life belike,  
Gasping away the latest breath of all,  
This minute, while I talk — not while you  
laugh.

Yet, being sobered now, what is it you ask  
By way of explanation ? There 's the fact !  
It seems to lack the universe with sight  
And sound, — from the four corners of this  
earth  
Tells itself over, to my sense at least.  
But you may want it lower set i' the scale, —  
Too vast, too close it clangs in the ear, perhaps ;  
You 'd stand back just to comprehend it more.  
Well then, let me, the hollow rock, condense  
The voice o' the sea and wind, interpret you  
The mystery of this murder. God above !  
It is too paltry, such a transference  
O' the storm's roar to the cranny of the stone !

This deed, you saw begin — why does its end  
Surprise you ? Why should the event enforce  
The lesson, we ourselves learned, she and I,  
From the first o' the fact, and taught you, all  
in vain ?  
This Guido from whose throat you took my  
grasp,

Was this man to be favored, now, or feared,  
Let do his will, or have his will restrained,  
In the relation with Pompilia ? — say !  
Did any other man need interpose  
— Oh, though first comer, though as strange at  
the work

As fribble must be, coxcomb, fool that 's near  
To knave as, say, a priest who fears the world —  
Was he bound brave the peril, save the doomed,  
Or go on, sing his snatch and pluck his flower,

Keep the straight path and let the victim die ?  
I held so ; you decided otherwise,  
Saw no such peril, therefore no such need  
To stop song, loosen flower, and leave path.

Law,  
Law was aware and watching, would suffice,  
Wanted no priest's intrusion, palpably  
Pretence, too manifest a subterfuge !  
Whereupon I, priest, coxcomb, fribble and fool,  
Enseanced me in my corner, thus rebuked,  
A kind of culprit, over-zealous hound  
Kicked for his pains to kennel ; I gave place  
To you, and let the law reign paramount :  
I left Pompilia to your watch and ward,  
And now you point me — there and thus she  
lies !

Men, for the last time, what do you want with  
me ?

Is it, — you acknowledge, as it were, a use,  
A profit in employing me ? — at length  
I may conceivably help the august law ?  
I am free to break the blow, next hawk that  
swoops

On next dove, nor miss much of good repute ?  
Or what if this your summons, after all,  
Be but the form of mere release, no more,  
Which turns the key and lets the captive go ?  
I have paid enough in person at Civita,  
Am free, — what more need I concern me with ?  
Thank you ! I am rehabilitated then,  
A very reputable priest. But she —  
The glory of life, the beauty of the world,  
The splendor of heaven, . . . well, Sirs, does  
no one move ?

Do I speak ambiguously ? The glory, I say,  
And the beauty, I say, and splendor, still say I,  
Who, priest and trained to live my whole life  
long

On beauty and splendor, solely at their source,  
God, — have thus recognized my food in her,  
You tell me, that 's fast dying while we talk,  
Pompilia ! How does lenity to me  
Remit one death-bed pang to her ? Come,  
smile !

The proper wink at the hot-headed youth  
Who lets his soul show, through transparent  
words,

The mundane love that 's sin and scandal too !  
You are all struck acquiescent now, it seems :  
It seems the oldest, gravest signor here,  
Even the redoubtable Tommati, sits  
Chopfallen, — understands how law might take  
Service like mine, of brain and heart and hand,  
In good part. Better late than never, law !  
You understand of a sudden, gospel too  
Has a claim here, may possibly pronounce  
Consistent with my priesthood, worthy Christ,  
That I endeavored to save Pompilia ?

Then,  
You were wrong, you see : that 's well to see,  
though late :

That 's all we may expect of man, this side  
The grave : his good is — knowing he is bad :  
Thus will it be with us when the books ope  
And we stand at the bar on judgment-day.  
Well then, I have a mind to speak, see cause



To relume the quenched flax by this dreadful light,

Burn my soul out in showing you the truth.  
I heard, last time I stood here to be judged,  
What is priest's-duty, — labor to pluck tares  
And weed the corn of Molinism; let me  
Make you hear, this time, how, in such a case,  
Man, be he in the priesthood or at plough,  
Mindful of Christ or marching step by step  
With . . . what's his style, the other potentate  
Who bids have courage and keep honor safe,  
Nor let minuter admonition tease? —  
How he is bound, better or worse, to act.  
Earth will not end through this misjudgment,  
no!

For you and the others like you sure to come,  
Fresh work is sure to follow, — wickedness  
That wants withstanding. Many a man of blood,  
Many a man of guile will clamor yet,  
Bid you redress his grievance, — as he clutched  
The prey, forsooth a stranger stepped between  
And there 's the good gripe in pure waste! My  
part

Is done; i' the doing it, I pass away  
Out of the world. I want no more with earth.  
Let me, in heaven's name, use the very snuff  
O' the taper in one last spark shall show truth  
For a moment, show Pompilia who was true!  
Not for her sake, but yours: if she is dead,  
Oh, Sirs, she can be loved by none of you  
Most or least priestly! Saints, to do us good,  
Must be in heaven, I seem to understand:  
We never find them saints before, at least.  
Be her first prayer then presently for you —  
She has done the good to me . . .

What is all this?  
There, I was born, have lived, shall die, a fool!  
This is a foolish outset: — might with cause  
Give color to the very lie o' the man,  
The murderer, — make as if I loved his wife  
In the way he called love. He is the fool  
there!

Why, had there been in me the touch of taint,  
I had picked up so much of knaves'-policy  
As hide it, keep one hand pressed on the place  
Suspected of a spot would damn us both.  
Or no, not her! — not even if any of you  
Dares think that I, i' the face of death, her  
death

That 's in my eyes and ears and brain and heart,  
Lie, — if he does, let him! I mean to say.  
So he stop there, stay thought from smirching  
her

The snow-white soul that angels fear to take  
Untenderly. But, all the same, I know  
I too am taintless, and I bare my breast.  
You can't think, men as you are, all of you,  
But that, to hear thus suddenly such an end  
Of such a wonderful white soul, that comes  
Of a man and murderer calling the white black,  
Must shake me, trouble and disadvantage.

Sirs,  
Only seventeen!

Why, good and wise you are!  
You might at the beginning stop my mouth:  
So, none would be to speak for her, that knew.  
I talk impertinently, and you bear,

All the same. This it is to have to do  
With honest hearts: they easily may err,  
But in the main they wish well to the truth.  
You are Christians; somehow, no one ever  
plucked

A rag, even, from the body of the Lord,  
To wear and mock with, but, despite himself,  
He looked the greater and was the better.

Yes,  
I shall go on now. Does she need or not  
I keep calm? Calm I'll keep as monk that  
croons

Transcribing battle, earthquake, famine,  
plague,

From parchment to his cloister's chronicle.  
Not one word more from the point now!

I begin.  
Yes, I am one of your body and a priest.  
Also I am a younger son o' the House  
Oldest now, greatest once, in my birth-town  
Arezzo, I recognize no equal there —  
(I want all arguments, all sorts of arms  
That seem to serve, — use this for a reason,  
wait!)

Not therefore thrust into the Church, because  
O' the piece of bread one gets there. We were  
first

Of Fiesole, that rings still with the fame  
Of Capo-in-Sacco our progenitor:  
When Florence ruined Fiesole, our folk  
Migrated to the victor-city, and there  
Flourished, — our palace and our tower attest,  
In the Old Mercato, — this was years ago,  
Four hundred, full, — no, it wants fourteen just.  
Our arms are those of Fiesole itself,  
The shield quartered with white and red: a  
branch

Are the Salviati of us, nothing more.  
That were good help to the Church? But  
better still —

Not simply for the advantage of my birth  
I' the way of the world, was I proposed for  
priest;

But because there 's an illustration, late  
I' the day, that 's loved and looked to as a  
saint

Still in Arezzo, he was bishop of,  
Sixty years since: he spent to the last do it  
His bishop's-revenue among the poor,  
And used to tend the needy and the sick,  
Barefoot, because of his humility.  
He it was, — when the Granduke Ferdinand  
Swore he would raze our city, plough the place  
And sow it with salt, because we Aretines  
Had tied a rope about the neck, to hale  
The statue of his father from its base  
For hate's sake, — he availed by prayers and  
tears

To pacify the Duke and save the town.  
This was my father's father's brother. You see,  
For his sake, how it was I had a right  
To the selfsame office, bishop in the egg,  
So, grew i' the garb and prattled in the school,  
Was made expect, from infancy almost,  
The proper mood o' the priest; till time ran by  
And brought the day when I must read the  
vows,

Declare the world renounced, and undertake  
To become priest and leave probation, — leap  
Over the ledge into the other life,  
Having gone trippingly hitherto up to the height  
O'er the wan water. Just a vow to read !

I stopped short awe-struck. "How shall holiest  
flesh

Engage to keep such vow inviolate,  
How much less mine ? I know myself too  
weak,

Unworthy ! Choose a worthier stronger man !"  
And the very Bishop smiled and stopped my  
mouth

In its mid-protestation. "Incapable ?  
Qualmish of conscience ? Thou ingenuous boy !  
Clear up the clouds and cast thy scruples far !

I satisfy thee there's an easier sense  
Wherein to take such vow than suits the first  
Rough rigid reading. Mark what makes all  
smooth,

Nay, has been even a solace to myself !  
The Jews who needs must, in their synagogue,  
Utter sometimes the holy name of God,  
A thing their superstition boggles at,  
Pronounce aloud the ineffable sacrosanct. —  
How does their shrewdness help them ? In this  
wise ;

Another set of sounds they substitute,  
Jumble so consonants and vowels — how  
Should I know ? — that there grows from out  
the old

Quite a new word that means the very same —  
And o'er the hard place slide they with a smile.  
Giuseppe Maria Caponsacchi mine,  
Nobody wants you in these latter days  
To prop the Church by breaking your back-  
bone, —

As the necessary way was once, we know,  
When Diocletian flourished and his like.  
That building of the buttress-work was done  
By martyrs and confessors : let it bide,  
Add not a brick, but, where you see a chink,  
Stick in a sprig of ivy or root a rose  
Shall make amends and beautify the pile !

We profit as you were the painfullest  
O' the martyrs, and you prove yourself a match  
For the cruellest confessor ever was,  
If you march boldly up and take your stand  
Where their blood soaks, their bones yet strew  
the soil,

And cry "Take notice, I the young and free  
And well-to-do i' the world, thus leave the  
world,

Cast in my lot thus with no gay young world  
But the grand old Church : she tempts me of  
the two !"

Renounce the world ? Nay, keep and give it us !  
Let us have you, and boast of what you bring.  
We want the pick o' the earth to practise with,  
Not its off-scouring, halt and deaf and blind  
In soul and body. There's a rubble-stone  
Unfit for the front o' the building, stuff to stow  
In a gap behind and keep us weather-tight ;  
There's porphyry for the prominent place.  
Good luck !

Saint Paul has had enough and to spare, I trow,  
Of ragged runaway Onesimus :

He wants the right-hand with the signet-ring  
Of King Agrippa, now, to shake and use.

I have a heavy scholar cloistered up,  
Close under lock and key, kept at his task  
Of letting Fénelon know the fool he is,  
In a book I promise Christendom next Spring.  
Why, if he covets so much meat, the clown,  
As a lark's wing next Friday, or, any day,  
Diversion beyond catching his own fleas,  
He shall be properly swinged, I promise him.  
But you, who are so quite another paste  
Of a man, — do you obey me ? Cultivate  
Assiduous that superior gift you have  
Of making madrigals — (who told me ? Ah !)  
Get done a Marinesque Adoniat straight  
With a pulse o' the blood a-pricking, here and  
there,

That I may tell the lady, 'And he's ours !' "

So I became a priest : those terms changed all,  
I was good enough for that, nor cheated so ;  
I could live thus and still hold head erect.  
Now you see why I may have been before  
A fribble and coxcomb, yet, as priest, break  
word

Nowise, to make you disbelieve me now.  
I need that you should know my truth. Well,  
then,

According to prescription did I live,  
— Conformed myself, both read the breviary  
And wrote the rhymes, was punctual to my  
place

I' the Pieve, and as diligent at my post  
Where beauty and fashion rule. I throve apace,  
Sub-deacon, Canon, the authority  
For delicate play at tarocs, and arbiter  
O' the magnitude of fan-mounts : all the while  
Wanting no whit the advantage of a hint  
Benignant to the promising pupil, — thus :  
"Enough attention to the Countess now,  
The young one ; 'tis her mother rules the roast,  
We know where, and puts in a word : go pay  
Devoir to-morrow morning after mass !  
Break that rash promise to preach, Passion-  
week !

Has it escaped you the Archbishop grunts  
And snuffles when one grieves to tell his  
Grace

No soul dares treat the subject of the day  
Since his own masterly handling it (ha, ha !)  
Five years ago, — when somebody could help  
And touch up an odd phrase in time of need,  
(He, he !) — and somebody helps you, my son !  
Therefore, don't prove so indispensable  
At the Pieve, sit more loose i' the seat, nor  
grow

A fixture by attendance morn and eve !  
Arezzo's just a haven midway Rome —  
Rome's the eventual harbor, — make for port.  
Crowd sail, crack cordage ! And your cargo  
be

A polished presence, a genteel manner, wit  
At will, and tact at every pore of you !  
I sent our lump of learning, Brother Clout,  
And Father Slouch, our piece of piety,  
To see Rome and try suit the Cardinal.  
Thither they clump-clumped, beads and book  
in hand,

And ever since 't is meat for man and maid  
How both flopped down, prayed blessing on  
bent pate

Bald many an inch beyond the tonsure's need,  
Never once dreaming, the two moony dolts,  
There's nothing moves his Eminence so much  
As — far from all this awe at sanctitude —  
Heads that wag, eyes that twinkle, modified  
mirth

At the closet-lectures on the Latin tongue  
A lady learns so much by, we know where.  
Why, body o' Bacchus, you should crave his  
rule

For pauses in the elegiac couplet, chasms  
Permissible only to Catullus! There!  
Now go to duty : brist, break Priscian's head  
By reading the day's office — there's no help.  
You've Ovid in your poke to plaster that ;  
Amen's at the end of all : then sup with me ! ”

Well, after three or four years of this life,  
In prosecution of my calling, I  
Found myself at the theatre one night  
With a brother Canon, in a mood and mind  
Proper enough for the place, amused or no :  
When I saw enter, stand, and seat herself  
A lady, young, tall, beautiful, strange and sad.  
It was as when, in our cathedral once,  
As I got yawningly through matin-song,  
I saw *faccini* bear a burden up,  
Base it on the high-altar, break away  
A board or two, and leave the thing inside  
Lofty and lone : and lo, when next I looked,  
There was the Rafael ! I was still one stare.  
When — “ Nay, I'll make her give you back  
your gaze ” —

Said Canon Conti ; and at the word he tossed  
A paper-twist of comfits to her lap,  
And dodged and in a trice was at my back  
Nodding from over my shoulder. Then she  
turned,

Looked our way, smiled the beautiful sad  
strange smile.

“ Is not she fair ? ’T is my new cousin,” said  
he :

“ The fellow lurking there i' the black o' the  
box

Is Guido, the old scapegrace : she's his wife,  
Married three years since : how his Countship  
sulks !

He has brought little back from Rome beside,  
After the bragging, bullying. A fair face,  
And — they do say — a pocketful of gold  
When he can worry both her parents dead.  
I don't go much there, for the chamber's cold  
And the coffee pale. I got a turn at first  
Paying my duty : I observed they crouched  
— The two old frightened family spectres —  
close

In a corner, each on each like mouse on mouse  
I' the cat's cage : ever since, I stay at home.  
Hallo, there's Guido, the black, mean and  
small,

Bends his brows on us — please to bend your  
own

On the shapely nether limbs of Light-skirts  
there

By way of a diversion ! I was a fool

To fling the sweetmeats. Prudence, for God's  
love !

To-morrow I'll make my peace, e'en tell some  
fib,

Try if I can't find means to take you there.”

That night and next day did the gaze endure,  
Burnt to my brain, as sunbeam through shut  
eyes,

And not once changed the beautiful sad strange  
smile.

At vespers Conti leaned beside my seat  
I' the choir, — part said, part sung — “ *In ex-cel-*  
*sis* —

All's to no purpose ; I have louted low,  
But he saw you staring — *quia sub* — don't in-  
cline

To know you nearer ; him we would not hold  
For Hercules, — the man would lick your shoe  
If you and certain efficacious friends  
Managed him warily, — but there's the wife :  
Spare her, because he beats her, as it is,  
She's breaking her heart quite fast enough —  
*jam tu* —

So, be you rational and make amends  
With little Light-skirts yonder — *in secula*  
*Secu-lo-o-o-rum*. Ah, you rogue ! Every one  
knows

What great dame she makes jealous : one  
against one,

Play, and win both ! ”

Sirs, ere the week was out,  
I saw and said to myself, “ Light-skirts hides  
teeth

Would make a dog sick, — the great dame  
shows spite

Should drive a cat mad : 't is but poor work  
this —

Counting one's fingers till the sonnet's crowned.  
I doubt much if Marino really be  
A better bard than Dante after all.

'T is more amusing to go pace at eve  
I' the Duomo, — watch the day's last gleam  
outside

Turn, as into a skirt of God's own robe,  
Those lancet-windows' jewelled miracle, —  
Than go eat the Archbishop's ortolans,  
Digest his jokes. Luckily Lent is near :  
Who cares to look will find me in my stall  
At the Pieve, constant to this faith at least —  
Never to write a canzonet any more.”

So, next week, 't was my patron spoke abrupt,  
In altered guise, “ Young man, can it be true  
That after all your promise of sound fruit,  
You have kept away from Countess young or  
old

And gone play truant in church all day long ?  
Are you turning Molinist ? ” I answered  
quick :

“ Sir, what if I turned Christian ? It might be.  
The fact is, I am troubled in my mind,  
Beset and pressed hard by some novel thoughts.  
This your Arezzo is a limited world ;  
There's a strange Pope, — 't is said, a priest  
who thinks.

Rome is the port, you say : to Rome I go.  
I will live alone, one does so in a crowd,



And look into my heart a little," "Lent Ended," — I told friends, — "I shall go to Rome."

One evening I was sitting in a muse  
Over the opened "Summa," darkened round  
By the mid-March twilight, thinking how my life

Had shaken under me, — broke short indeed  
And showed the gap 'twixt what is, what should be, —

And into what abyss the soul may slip,  
Leave aspiration here, achievement there,  
Lacking omnipotence to connect extremes —  
Thinking moreover . . . oh, thinking, if you like,

How utterly dissociated was I  
A priest and celibate, from the sad strange wife

Of Guido, — just as an instance to the point,  
Naught more, — how I had a whole store of strengths

Eating into my heart, which craved employ,  
And she, perhaps, need of a finger's help, —  
And yet there was no way in the wide world  
To stretch out mine and so relieve myself, —  
How when the page o' the "Summa" preached its best,

Her smile kept glowing out of it, as to mock  
The silence we could break by no one word, —  
There came a tap without the chamber-door,  
And a whisper, when I bade who tapped speak out,

And, in obedience to my summons, last  
In glided a masked muffled mystery,  
Laid lightly a letter on the opened book,  
Then stood with folded arms and foot demure,  
Pointing as if to mark the minutes' flight.

I took the letter, read to the effect  
That she, I lately flung the confits to,  
Had a warm heart to give me in exchange,  
And gave it, — loved me and confessed it thus,  
And bade me render thanks by word of mouth,  
Going that night to such a side o' the house  
Where the small terrace overhangs a street  
Blind and deserted, not the street in front:  
Her husband being away, the surly patch,  
At his villa of Vittiano.

"And you?" — I asked:  
"What may you be?" "Count Guido's kind of maid —"

Most of us have two functions in his house.  
We all hate him, the lady suffers much,  
'T is just we show compassion, furnish help,  
Specially since her choice is fixed so well.  
What answer may I bring to cheer the sweet  
Pompilia?"

Then I took a pen and wrote:  
"No more of this! That you are fair, I know:  
But other thoughts now occupy my mind.  
I should not thus have played the insensible  
Once on a time. What made you — may one ask —

Marry your hideous husband? 'T was a fault,  
And now you taste the fruit of it. Farewell."

"There!" smiled I as she snatched it and was gone —

"There, let the jealous miscreant, — Guido's self,

Whose mean soul grins through this transparent trick, —

Be balked so far, defrauded of his aim!  
What fund of satisfaction to the knave,  
Had I kicked this his messenger down stairs,  
Trussed to the middle of her impudence,  
And set his heart at ease so! No, indeed!  
There's the reply which he shall turn and twist  
At pleasure, snuff at till his brain grow drunk,  
As the bear does when he finds a scented glove  
That puzzles him, — a hand and yet no hand,  
Of other perfume than his own foul paw!

Last month, I had doubtless chosen to play the dupe,

Accepted the mock-invitation, kept  
The sham appointment, cudgel beneath cloak,  
Prepared myself to pull the appointer's self  
Out of the window from his hiding-place  
Behind the gown of this part-messenger  
Part-mistress who would personate the wife.  
Such had seemed once a jest permissible:  
Now, I am not i' the mood."

Back next morn brought  
The messenger, a second letter in hand.

"You are cruel, Thyriss, and Myrtilla moans  
Neglected but adores you, makes request  
For mercy: why is it you dare not come?  
Such virtue is scarce natural to your age:  
You must love some one else; I hear you do,  
The Baron's daughter or the Advocate's wife,  
Or both, — all's one, would you make me the third —

I take the crumbs from table gratefully  
Nor grudge who feasts there. 'Faith, I blush  
and blaze!

Yet if I break all bounds, there's reason sure.  
Are you determined bent on Rome?  
I am wretched here, a monster tortures me:  
Carry me with you! Come and say you will!  
Concert this very evening! Do not write!  
I am ever at the window of my room  
Over the terrace, at the Ave. Come!"

I questioned — lifting half the woman's mask  
To let her smile loose. "So, you gave my line

To the merry lady?" "She kissed off the wax,

And put what paper was not kissed away  
In her bosom to go burn: but merry, no!  
She wept all night when evening brought no friend,

Alone, the unkind missive at her breast;  
Thus Philomel, the thorn at her breast too,  
Sings" . . . "Writes this second letter?"

"Even so!  
Then she may peep at vespers forth?" —

"What risk  
Do we run o' the husband?" — "Ah, — no risk at all!

He is more stupid even than jealous. Ah —  
That was the reason? Why, the man's away!  
Beside, his bugbear is that friend of yours,  
Fat little Canon Conti. He fears him,

How should he dream of you? I told you truth:

He goes to the villa at Vittiano — 't is  
The time when Spring-sap rises in the vine —  
Spends the night there. And then his wife's a  
child:

Does he think a child outwits him? A mere  
child:

Yet so full-grown, a dish for any duke.  
Don't quarrel longer with such cates, but  
come!"

I wrote, "In vain do you solicit me.  
I am a priest: and you are wedded wife,  
Whatever kind of brute your husband prove.  
I have scruples, in short. Yet should you  
really show  
Sign at the window . . . but nay, best be  
good!  
My thoughts are elsewhere." — "Take her  
that!"

— "Again

Let the incarnate meanness, cheat and spy,  
Mean to the marrow of him, make his heart  
His food, anticipate hell's worm once more!  
Let him watch shivering at the window — ay,  
And let this hybrid, this his light-of-love  
And lackey-of-lies, — a sage economy, —  
Paid with embracings for the rank brass  
coin, —

Let her report and make him chuckle o'er  
The breakdown of my resolution now,  
And lour at disappointment in good time!  
— So tantalize and so enrage by turns,  
Until the two fall each on the other like  
Two famished spiders, as the coveted fly.  
That toys long, leaves their net and them at  
last!"

And so the missives followed thick and fast  
For a month, say, — I still came at every turn  
On the soft sly adder, endlong 'neath my tread.  
I was met i' the street, made sign to in the  
church,

A slip was found i' the door-sill, scribbled word  
'Twixt page and page o' the prayer-book in my  
place.

A crumpled thing dropped even before my feet,  
Pushed through the blind, above the terrace-  
rail,

As I passed, by day, the very window once.  
And ever from corners would be peering up  
The messenger, with the selfsame demand,  
"Obdurate still, no flesh but adamant?"

Nothing to cure the wound, assuage the throe.  
O' the sweetest lamb that ever loved a bear?"

And ever my one answer in one tone —  
"Go your ways, temptress! Let a priest read,  
pray,

Unplugged of vain talk, visions not for him!  
In the end, you'll have your will and ruin  
me!"

One day, a variation: thus I read:  
"You have gained little by timidity.  
My husband has found out my love at length,  
Sees cousin Conti was the stalking-horse,  
And you the game he covered, poor fat soul!

My husband is a formidable foe,  
Will stick at nothing to destroy you. Stand  
Prepared, or better, run till you reach Rome!  
I bade you visit me, when the last place  
My tyrant would have turned suspicious at,  
Or cared to seek you in, was . . . why say,  
where?"

But now all's changed: beside, the season's  
past

At the villa, — wants the master's eye no more.  
Anyhow, I beseech you, stay away  
From the window! He might well be posted  
there."

I wrote — "You raise my courage, or call up  
My curiosity, who am but man.  
Tell him he owns the palace, not the street  
Under — that's his and yours and mine alike,  
If it should please me pad the path this eve,  
Guido will have two troubles, first to get  
Into a rage and then get out again.  
Be cautious, though: at the *Ave*!"

You of the court

When I stood question here and reached this  
point

O' the narrative, — search notes and see and say  
If some one did not interpose with smile  
And sneer, "And prithee why so confident  
That the husband must, of all needs, not the  
wife,

Fabricate thus, — what if the lady loved?  
What if she wrote the letters?"

Learned Sir,

I told you there's a picture in our church.  
Well, if a low-browed verger sidled up  
Bringing me, like a blotch, on his prod's point,  
A transfixed scorpion, let the reptile writhe,  
And then said, "See a thing that Rafael  
made —

This venom issued from Madonna's mouth!"  
I should reply, "Rather, the soul of you  
Has issued from your body, like from like,  
By way of the ordure-corner!"

But no less,

I tired of the same long black teasing lie  
Obtruded thus at every turn; the pest  
Was far too near the picture, anyhow:

One does Madonna service, making clowns  
Remove their dung-heap from the sacristy.

"I will to the window, as he tempts," said I:  
"Yes, whom the easy love has failed allure,  
This new bait of adventure tempts, — thinks  
he.

Though the imprisoned lady keeps afar,  
There will they lie in ambush, heads alert,  
Kith, kin, and Count mustered to bite my heel.  
No mother nor brother viper of the brood  
Shall scuttle off without the instructive  
bruise!"

So I went: crossed street and street: "The  
next street's turn,

I stand beneath the terrace, see, above,  
The black of the ambush-window. Then, in  
place

Of hand's throw of soft prelude over lute,  
And cough that clears way for the ditty  
last."

I began to laugh already — "he will have  
'Out of the hole you hide in, on to the front,  
Count Guido Franceschini, show yourself!  
Hear what a man thinks of a thing like you,  
And after, take this foulness in your face!'"

The words lay living on my lip, I made  
The one turn more — and there at the window  
stood,

Framed in its black square length, with lamp  
in hand,

Pompilia; the same great, grave, grievful air  
As stands i' the dusk, on altar that I know,  
Left alone with one moonbeam in her cell,  
Our Lady of all the Sorrows. Ere I knelt —  
Assured myself that she was flesh and blood —  
She had looked one look and vanished.

I thought — "Just so :

It was herself, they have set her there to  
watch —

Stationed to see some wedding-band go by,  
On fair pretence that she must bless the bride,  
Or wait some funeral with friends wind past,  
And crave peace for the corpse that claims its  
due.

She never dreams they used her for a snare,  
And now withdraw the bait has served its turn.  
Well done, the husband, who shall fare the  
worse !"

And on my lip again was — "Out with thee,  
Guido !" When all at once she reappeared ;  
But, this time, on the terrace overhead,  
So close above me, she could almost touch  
My head if she bent down ; and she did bend,  
While I stood still as stone, all eye, all ear.

She began — "You have sent me letters, Sir :  
I have read none, I can neither read nor write ;  
But she you gave them to, a woman here,  
One of the people in whose power I am,  
Partly explained their sense, I think, to me  
Obliged to listen while she inculcates  
That you, a priest, can dare love me, a wife,  
Desire to live or die as I shall bid,  
(She makes me listen if I will or no)  
Because you saw my face a single time.  
It cannot be she says the thing you mean ;  
Such wickedness were deadly to us both :  
But good true love would help me now so  
much —

I tell myself, you may mean good and true.  
You offer me, I seem to understand,  
Because I am in poverty and starve,  
Much money, where one piece would save my  
life.

The silver cup upon the altar-cloth  
Is neither yours to give nor mine to take ;  
But I might take one bit of bread therefrom,  
Since I am starving, and return the rest,  
Yet do no harm : this is my very case.  
I am in that strait, I may not dare abstain  
From so much of assistance as would bring  
The guilt of theft on neither you nor me ;  
But no superfluous particle of aid.  
I think, if you will let me state my case,  
Even had you been so fancy-fevered here,  
Not your sound self, you must grow healthy  
now —

Care only to bestow what I can take.  
That it is only you in the wide world,  
Knowing me nor in thought nor word nor deed,  
Who, all unprompted save by your own heart,  
Come proffering assistance now, — were strange  
But that my whole life is so strange : as strange  
It is, my husband whom I have not wronged  
Should hate and harm me. For his own soul's  
sake,

Hinder the harm ! But there is something  
more,

And that the strangest : it has got to be  
Somehow for my sake too, and yet not mine,  
— This is a riddle — for some kind of sake

Not any clearer to myself than you,  
And yet as certain as that I draw breath, —  
I would fain live, not die — oh no, not die !  
My case is, I was dwelling happily

At Rome with those dear Comparini, called  
Father and mother to me ; when at once  
I found I had become Count Guido's wife :  
Who then, not waiting for a moment, changed  
Into a fury of fire, if once he was  
Merely a man : his face threw fire at mine,  
He laid a hand on me that burned all peace,  
All joy, all hope, and last all fear away,  
Dipping the bough of life, so pleasant once,  
In fire which shrivelled leaf and bud alike,  
Burning not only present life but past,  
Which you might think was safe beyond his  
reach.

He reached it, though, since that beloved pair,  
My father once, my mother all those years,  
That loved me so, now say I dreamed a dream  
And bid me wake, henceforth no child of theirs,  
Never in all the time their child at all.  
Do you understand ? I cannot ; yet so it is.  
Just so I say of you that proffer help :  
I cannot understand what prompts your soul,  
I simply needs must see that it is so,  
Only one strange and wonderful thing more.  
They came here with me, those two dear ones,  
kept

All the old love up, till my husband, till  
His people here so tortured them, they fled.  
And now, is it because I grow in flesh  
And spirit one with him their torturer,  
That they, renouncing him, must cast off me ?  
If I were graced by God to have a child,  
Could I one day deny God graced me so ?  
Then, since my husband hates me, I shall break  
No law that reigns in this fell house of hate,  
By using — letting have effect so much  
Of hate as hides me from that whole of hate  
Would take my life which I want and must  
have —

Just as I take from your excess of love  
Enough to save my life with, all I need.  
The Archbishop said to murder me were sin :  
My leaving Guido were a kind of death  
With no sin, — more death, he must answer for.  
Hear now what death to him and life to you  
I wish to pay and owe. Take me to Rome !  
You go to Rome, the servant makes me hear.  
Take me as you would take a dog, I think,  
Masterless left for strangers to maltreat :  
Take me home like that — leave me in the  
house



Where the father and the mother are ; and soon  
They'll come to know and call me by my name,  
Their child once more, since child I am, for  
all

They now forget me, which is the worst o' the  
dream —

And the way to end dreams is to break them,  
stand,

Walk, go : then help me to stand, walk, and go !  
The Governor said the strong should help the  
weak :

You know how weak the strongest women are.  
How could I find my way there by myself ?

I cannot even call out, make them hear —  
Just as in dreams : I have tried and proved the  
fact.

I have told this story and more to good great  
men,

The Archbishop and the Governor : they smiled.  
'Stop your mouth, fair one !' — presently they  
frowned,

'Get you gone, disengage you from our feet !'  
I went in my despair to an old priest,

Only a friar, no great man like these two,  
But good, the Augustinian, people name  
Romano, — he confessed me two months since :  
He fears God, why then needs he fear the  
world ?

And when he questioned how it came about  
That I was found in danger of a sin —

Despair of any help from providence, —  
'Since, though your husband outrage you,' said  
he,

'That is a case too common, the wives die  
Or live, but do not sin so deep as this' —  
Then I told — what I never will tell you —  
How, worse than husband's hate, I had to bear  
The love — soliciting to shame called love —  
Of his brother, — the young idle priest i' the  
house

With only the devil to meet there. 'This is  
grave —

Yes, we must interfere : I counsel, — write  
To those who used to be your parents once,  
Of dangers here, bid them convey you hence !'  
'But,' said I, 'when I neither read nor write ?'  
Then he took pity and promised 'I will write.'

If he did so, — why, they are dumb or dead :  
Either they give no credit to the tale,

Or else, wrapped wholly up in their own joy  
Of such escape, they care not who cries, still  
I' the clutches. Anyhow, no word arrives.

All such extravagance and dreadfulness  
Seems incident to dreaming, cured one way, —

Wake me ! The letter I received this morn,  
Said — if the woman spoke your very sense —

'You would die for me : ' I can believe it now :  
For now the dream gets to involve yourself.

First of all, you seemed wicked and not good,  
In writing me those letters : you came in  
Like a thief upon me. I this morning said

In my extremity, entreat the thief !  
Try if he have in him no honest touch !

A thief might save me from a murderer.  
'T was a thief said the last kind word to Christ :

Christ took the kindness and forgave the theft :  
And so did I prepare what I now say.

But now, that you stand and I see your face,

Though you have never uttered word yet, —  
well, I know,

Here too has been dream-work, delusion too,  
And that at no time, you with the eyes here,  
Ever intended to do wrong by me,  
Nor wrote such letters therefore. It is false,  
And you are true, have been true, will be true.  
To Rome then, — when is it you take me there ?  
Each minute lost is mortal. When ? — I ask."

I answered, "It shall be when it can be.  
I will go hence and do your pleasure, find  
The sure and speedy means of travel, then  
Come back and take you to your friends in  
Rome.

There wants a carriage, money and the rest, —  
A day's work by to-morrow at this time.  
How shall I see you and assure escape ?"

She replied, "Pass, to-morrow at this hour.  
If I am at the open window, well :

If I am absent, drop a handkerchief  
And walk by ! I shall see from where I watch,  
And know that all is done. Return next eve,  
And next, and so till we can meet and speak !"  
"To-morrow at this hour I pass," said I.

She was withdrawn.

Here is another point  
I bid you pause at. When I told thus far,  
Some one said, subtly, "Here at least was found  
Your confidence in error, — you perceived  
The spirit of the letters, in a sort,  
Had been the lady's, if the body should be  
Supplied by Guido : say, he forged them all !  
Here was the unforged fact — she sent for you,  
Spontaneously elected you to help,  
— What men call, loved you : Guido read her  
mind,

Gave it expression to assure the world  
The case was just as he foresaw : he wrote,  
She spoke."

Sirs, that first simile serves still, —  
That falsehood of a scorpion hatched, I say,  
Nowhere i' the world but in Madonna's mouth.  
Go on ! Suppose, that falsehood foiled, next  
eve

Pictured Madonna raised her painted hand,  
Fixed the face Rafael bent above the Babe,  
On my face as I flung me at her feet :  
Such miracle vouchsafed and manifest,  
Would that prove the first lying tale was true ?  
Pompilia spoke, and I at once received,  
Accepted my own fact, my miracle  
Self-authorized and self-explained, — she chose  
To summon me and signify her choice.  
Afterward, — oh ! I gave a passing glance  
To a certain ugly cloud-shape, goblin-shred  
Of hell-smoke hurrying past the splendid moon  
Out now to tolerate no darkness more,  
And saw right through the thing that tried to  
pass

For truth and solid, not an empty lie :  
"So, he not only forged the words for her  
But words for me, made letters he called mine :  
What I sent, he retained, gave these in place,  
All by the mistress-messenger ! As I  
Recognized her, at potency of truth,  
So she, by the crystalline soul, knew me,

Never mistook the signs. Enough of this —  
Let the wraith go to nothingness again,  
Here is the orb, have only thought for her ! ”

“ Thought ? ” nay, Sirs, what shall follow was  
not thought :

I have thought sometimes, and thought long  
and hard.

I have stood before, gone round a serious thing,  
Tasked my whole mind to touch and clasp it  
close,

As I stretch forth my arm to touch this bar.  
God and man, and what duty I owe both, —  
I dare to say I have confronted these  
In thought : but no such faculty helped here.  
I put forth no thought, — powerless, all that  
night

I paced the city : it was the first Spring.  
By the invasion I lay passive to,  
In rushed new things, the old were rapt away ;  
Alike abolished — the imprisonment  
Of the outside air, the inside weight o’ the  
world

That pulled me down. Death meant, to spurn  
the ground,

Soar to the sky, — die well and you do that.  
The very immolation made the bliss ;  
Death was the heart of life, and all the harm  
My folly had crouched to avoid, now proved a  
veil

Hiding all gain my wisdom strove to grasp :  
As if the intense centre of the flame  
Should turn a heaven to that devoted fly  
Which hitherto, sophist alike and sage,  
Saint Thomas with his sober gray goose-quill,  
And sinner Plato by Cephissian reed,  
Would fain, pretending just the insect’s good,  
Whisk off, drive back, consign to shade again.  
Into another state, under new rule  
I knew myself was passing swift and sure ;  
Whereof the initiatory pang approached,  
Felicitous annoy, as bitter-sweet  
As when the virgin-band, the victors chaste,  
Feel at the end the earthly garments drop,  
And rise with something of a rosy shame  
Into immortal nakedness : so I  
Lay, and let come the proper throe would thrill  
Into the ecstasy and outthrob pain.

I’ the gray of dawn it was I found myself  
Facing the pillared front o’ the Pieve — mine,  
My church : it seemed to say for the first time,  
“ But am not I the Bride, the mystic love  
O’ the Lamb, who took thy plighted troth, my  
priest,

To fold thy warm heart on my heart of stone  
And freeze thee nor unfasten any more ?  
This is a fleshly woman, — let the free  
Bestow their life-blood, thou art pulseless  
now ! ”

See ! Day by day I had risen and left this  
church

At the signal waved me by some foolish fan,  
With half a curse and half a pitying smile  
For the monk I stumbled over in my haste,  
Prostrate and corpse-like at the altar-foot  
Intent on his *corona* : then the church  
Was ready with her quip, if word conduced,

To quicken my pace nor stop for prating —  
“ There !

Be thankful you are no such ninny, go  
Rather to teach a black-eyed novice cards  
Than gabble Latin and protrude that nose  
Smooth to a sheep’s through no brains and much  
faith ! ”

That sort of incentive ! Now the church  
changed tone —  
Now, when I found out first that life and  
death

Are means to an end, that passion uses both,  
Indisputably mistress of the man  
Whose form of worship is self-sacrifice :  
Now, from the stone lungs sighed the scranell  
voice,

“ Leave that live passion, come be dead with  
me ! ”

As if, i’ the fabled garden, I had gone  
On great adventure, plucked in ignorance  
Hedge-fruit, and feasted to satiety,  
Laughing at such high fame for hips and haws,  
And scorned the achievement : then come all at  
once

O’ the prize o’ the place, the thing of perfect  
gold,

The apple’s self : and, scarce my eye on that,  
Was ’ware as well o’ the seven-fold dragon’s  
watch.

Sirs, I obeyed. Obedience was too strange, —  
This new thing that had been struck into me  
By the look o’ the lady, — to dare disobey  
The first authoritative word. ’T was God’s.  
I had been lifted to the level of her,  
Could take such sounds into my sense. I said,  
“ We two are cognizant o’ the Master now ;  
She it is bids me bow the head : how true,  
I am a priest ! I see the function here ;  
I thought the other way self-sacrifice :  
This is the true, seals up the perfect sum.  
I pay it, sit down, silently obey.”

So, I went home. Dawn broke, noon broadened,  
I —

I sat stone-still, let time run over me.  
The sun slanted into my room, had reached  
The west. I opened book, — Aquinas blazed  
With one black name only on the white page.  
I looked up, saw the sunset : vespers rang :  
“ She counts the minutes till I keep my word  
And come say all is ready. I am a priest.  
Duty to God is duty to her : I think  
God, who created her, will save her too  
Some new way, by one miracle the more,  
Without me. Then, prayer may avail perhaps.”  
I went to my own place i’ the Pieve, read  
The office : I was back at home again  
Sitting i’ the dark. “ Could she but know —  
but know

That, were there good in this distinct from  
God’s,

Really good as it reached her, though procured  
By a sin of mine, — I should sin : God forgives.  
She knows it is no fear withholds me : fear ?  
Of what ? Suspense here is the terrible thing.  
If she should, as she counts the minutes, come  
On the fantastic notion that I fear

The world now, fear the Archbishop, fear perhaps  
Count Guido, he who, having forged the lies,  
May wait the work, attend the effect, — I fear  
The sword of Guido ! Let God see to that —  
Hating lies, let not her believe a lie ! ”

Again the morning found me. “ I will work,  
Tie down my foolish thoughts. Thank God so  
far !

I have saved her from a scandal, stopped the  
tongues  
Had broken else into a cackle and hiss  
Around the noble name. Duty is still  
Wisdom : I have been wise.” So the day wore.

At evening — “ But, achieving victory,  
I must not blink the priest's peculiar part,  
Nor shrink to counsel, comfort : priest and  
friend —

How do we discontinue to be friends ?  
I will go minister, advise her seek  
Help at the source, — above all, not despair :  
There may be other happier help at hand.  
I hope it, — wherefore then neglect to say ? ”

There she stood — leaned there, for the second  
time,

Over the terrace, looked at me, then spoke :  
“ Why is it you have suffered me to stay  
Breaking my heart two days more than was  
need ?

Why delay help, your own heart yearns to  
give ?

You are again here, in the selfsame mind,  
I see here, steadfast in the face of you, —  
You grudge to do no one thing that I ask.  
Why then is nothing done ? You know my  
need.

Still, through God's pity on me, there is time  
And one day more : shall I be saved or no ? ”

I answered — “ Lady, waste no thought, no  
word

Even to forgive me ! Care for what I care —  
Only ! Now follow me as I were fate !  
Leave this house in the dark to-morrow night,  
Just before daybreak : — there's new moon  
this eve —

It sets, and then begins the solid black.  
Descend, proceed to the Torrione, step  
Over the low dilapidated wall,  
Take San Clemente, there's no other gate  
Un guarded at the hour : some paces thence  
An inn stands ; cross to it ; I shall be there.”

She answered, “ If I can but find the way.  
But I shall find it. Go now ! ”

I did go,  
Took rapidly the route myself prescribed,  
Stopped at Torrione, climbed the ruined place,  
Proved that the gate was practicable, reached  
The inn, no eye, despite the dark, could miss,  
Knocked there and entered, made the host se-  
cure :

“ With Caponsacchi it is ask and have ;  
I know my betters. Are you bound for Rome ?  
I get swift horse and trusty man,” said he.

Then I retraced my steps, was found once more  
In my own house for the last time : there lay  
The broad pale opened “ Summa.” “ Shut his  
book,

There's other showing ! 'T was a Thomas too  
Obtained — more favored than his namesake  
here —

A gift, tied fast, foiled the tug of doubt, —  
Our Lady's girdle ; down he saw it drop  
As she ascended into heaven, they say :  
He kept that safe and bade all doubt adieu.  
I too have seen a lady and hold a grace.”

I know not how the night passed : morning  
broke,

Presently came my servant. “ Sir, this eve —  
Do you forget ? ” I started. “ How forget ?  
What is it you know ? ” “ With due submis-  
sion, Sir,

This being last Monday in the month but one,  
And a vigil, since to-morrow is Saint George,  
And feast-day, and moreover day for copes,  
And Canon Conti now away a month,  
And Canon Crispi sour because, forsooth,  
You let him sulk in stall and bear the brunt  
Of the octave . . . Well, Sir, 't is important ! ”

“ True !  
Hearken, I have to start for Rome this night.  
No word, lest Crispi overboil and burst !

Provide me with a laic dress ! Throw dust  
I' the Canon's eye, stop his tongue's scandal so !  
See there 's a sword in case of accident.”  
I knew the knave, the knave knew me.

And thus  
Through each familiar hindrance of the day  
Did I make steadily for its hour and end, —  
Felt time's old barrier-growth of right and fit  
Give way through all its twines, and let me  
go.

Use and wont recognized the excepted man,  
Let speed the special service, — and I sped  
Till, at the dead between midnight and morn,  
There was I at the goal, before the gate,  
With a tune in the ears, low leading up to loud,  
A light in the eyes, faint that would soon be  
flare,

Ever some spiritual witness new and new  
In faster frequency, crowding solitude  
To watch the way o' the warfare, — till, at last,  
When the ecstatic minute must bring birth,  
Began a whiteness in the distance, waxed  
Whiter and whiter, near grew and more near,  
Till it was she : there did Pompilia come :  
The white I saw shine through her was her  
soul's,

Certainly, for the body was one black,  
Black from head down to foot. She did not  
speak,

Glided into the carriage, — so a cloud  
Gathers the moon up. “ By San Spirito,  
To Rome, as if the road burned underneath !  
Reach Rome, then hold my head in pledge, I  
pay

The run and the risk to heart's content ! ”  
Just that,

I said, — then, in another tick of time,  
Sprang, was beside her, she and I alone.



So it began, our flight through dusk to clear,  
Through day and night and day again to night  
Once more, and to last dreadful dawn of all.  
Sirs, how should I lie quiet in my grave  
Unless you suffer me wring, drop by drop,  
My brain dry, make a riddance of the drench  
Of minutes with a memory in each,  
Recorded motion, breath or look of hers,  
Which poured forth would present you one pure  
glass,

Mirror you plain — as God's sea, glassed in gold,  
His saints — the perfect soul Pompilia? Men,  
You must know that a man gets drunk with  
truth

Stagnant inside him! Oh, they've killed her,  
Sirs!

Can I be calm?

Calmly! Each incident  
Proves, I maintain, that action of the flight  
For the true thing it was. The first faint scratch  
O' the stone will test its nature, teach its worth  
To idiots who name Parian — coprolite.  
After all, I shall give no glare — at best  
Only display you certain scattered lights  
Lamping the rush and roll of the abyss:  
Nothing but here and there a fire-point pricks  
Wavelet from wavelet: well!

For the first hour  
We both were silent in the night, I know:  
Sometimes I did not see nor understand.  
Blackness engulfed me, — partial stupor, say —  
Then I would break way, breathe through the  
surprise,

And be aware again, and see who sat  
In the dark vest with the white face and hands.  
I said to myself — "I have caught it, I con-  
ceive

The mind o' the mystery: 't is the way they  
wake

And wait, two martyrs somewhere in a tomb  
Each by each as their blessing was to die;  
Some signal they are promised and expect, —  
When to arise before the trumpet scares:  
So, through the whole course of the world they  
wait

The last day, but so fearless and so safe!  
No otherwise, in safety and not fear,  
I lie, because she lies too by my side."  
You know this is not love, Sirs, — it is faith,  
The feeling that there's God, he reigns and  
rules

Out of this low world: that is all; no harm!  
At times she drew a soft sigh — music seemed  
Always to hover just above her lips,  
Not settle, — break a silence music too.

In the determined morning, I first found  
Her head erect, her face turned full to me,  
Her soul intent on mine through two wide eyes.  
I answered them. "You are saved hitherto.  
We have passed Perugia, — gone round by the  
wood,

Not through, I seem to think, — and opposite  
I know Assisi; this is holy ground."

Then she resumed. "How long since we both  
left  
Arezzo?" — "Years — and certain hours be-  
side."

It was at . . . ah, but I forget the names!  
'Tis a mere post-house and a hovel or two;  
I left the carriage and got bread and wine  
And brought it her. — "Does it detain to eat?"  
— "They stay perforce, change horses, — there-  
fore eat!

We lose no minute: we arrive, be sure!"  
This was — I know not where — there's a great  
hill

Close over, and the stream has lost its bridge,  
One fords it. She began — "I have heard say  
Of some sick body that my mother knew,  
'T was no good sign when in a limb diseased  
All the pain suddenly departs, — as if  
The guardian angel discontinued pain  
Because the hope of cure was gone at last:  
The limb will not again exert itself,  
It needs be pained no longer: so with me,  
— My soul whence all the pain is past at once:  
All pain must be to work some good in the end.  
True, this I feel now, this may be that good,  
Pain was because of, — otherwise, I fear!"

She said, — a long while later in the day,  
When I had let the silence be, — abrupt —  
"Have you a mother?" "She died, I was  
born."

"A sister then?" "No sister." "Who was  
it —

What woman were you used to serve this way,  
Be kind to, till I called you and you came?"  
I did not like that word. Soon afterward —  
"Tell me, are men unhappy, in some kind  
Of mere unhappiness at being men,  
As women suffer, being womanish?  
Have you, now, some unhappiness, I mean,  
Born of what may be man's strength overmuch,  
To match the undue susceptibility,  
The sense at every pore when hate is close?  
It hurts us if a baby hides its face  
Or child strikes at us punily, calls names  
Or makes a mouth, — much more if stranger  
men  
Laugh or frown, — just as that were much to  
bear!  
Yet rocks split, — and the blow-oal does no  
more,  
Quivers to feathery nothing at a touch;  
And strength may have its drawback, weakness  
'scapes."

Once she asked, "What is it that made you  
smile,  
At the great gate with the eagles and the  
snakes,  
Where the company entered, 't is a long time  
since?"

— "Forgive — I think you would not under-  
stand:

Ah, but you ask me, — therefore, it was this.  
That was a certain bishop's villa-gate,  
I knew it by the eagles, — and at once  
Remember this same bishop was just he  
People of old were wont to bid me please  
If I would catch preferment: so, I smiled  
Because an impulse came to me, a whim —  
What if I prayed the prelate leave to speak,  
Begin upon him in his presence-hall

— 'What, still at work so gray and obsolete ?  
Still roched and mitred more or less ?  
Don't you feel all that out of fashion now ?  
I find out when the day of things is done ! ' "

At eve we heard the *angelus* : she turned —  
"I told you I can neither read nor write.  
My life stopped with the play-time ; I will  
learn,  
If I begin to live again : but you —  
Who are a priest — wherefore do you not read  
The service at this hour ? Read Gabriel's song,  
The lesson, and then read the little prayer  
To Raphael, proper for us travellers !"  
I did not like that, neither, but I read.

When we stopped at Foligno it was dark.  
The people of the post came out with lights :  
The driver said, "This time to-morrow, may  
Saints only help, relays continue good,  
Nor robbers hinder, we arrive at Rome.  
I urged, — "Why tax your strength a second  
night ?

Trust me, alight here and take brief repose !  
We are out of harm's reach, past pursuit : go  
sleep

If but an hour ! I keep watch, guard the while  
Here in the doorway." But her whole face  
changed,

The misery grew again about her mouth,  
The eyes burned up from faintness, like the  
fawn's

Tired to death in the thicket, when she feels  
The probing spear o' the huntsman. "Oh, no  
stay !"

She cried, in the fawn's cry, "On to Rome, on,  
on —  
Unless 't is you who fear, — which cannot  
be !"

We did go on all night ; but at its close  
She was troubled, restless, moaned low, talked  
at whiles

To herself, her brow on quiver with the dream :  
Once, wide awake, she menaced, at arms'  
length

Waved away something — "Never again with  
you !

My soul is mine, my body is my soul's :  
You and I are divided ever more  
In soul and body : get you gone !" Then I —  
"Why, in my whole life I have never prayed !  
Oh, if the God, that only can, would help !  
Am I his priest with power to cast out fiends ?  
Let God arise and all his enemies  
Be scattered !" By morn, there was peace, no  
sigh

Out of the deep sleep.

When she woke at last,  
I answered the first look — "Scarce twelve  
hours more,  
Then, Rome ! There probably was no pursuit,  
There cannot now be peril : bear up brave !  
Just some twelve hours to press through to the  
prize :  
Then, no more of the terrible journey !"  
"Then,

No more o' the journey : if it might but last !  
Always, my life long, thus to journey still !  
It is the interruption that I dread, —  
With no dread, ever to be here and thus !  
Never to see a face nor hear a voice !  
Yours is no voice ; you speak when you are  
dumb ;  
Nor face, I see it in the dark. I want  
No face nor voice that change and grow  
unkind."  
That I liked, that was the best thing she said.

In the broad day, I dared entreat, "Descend !"  
I told a woman, at the garden-gate  
By the post-house, white and pleasant in the  
sun,

"It is my sister, — talk with her apart !  
She is married and unhappy, you perceive ;  
I take her home because her head is hurt ;  
Comfort her as you women understand !"  
So, there I left them by the garden-wall,  
Paced the road, then bade put the horses to,  
Came back, and there she sat : close to her  
knee,

A black-eyed child still held the bowl of milk,  
Wondered to see how little she could drink,  
And in her arms the woman's infant lay.  
She smiled at me, "How much good this has  
done !

This is a whole night's rest and how much  
more !

I can proceed now, though I wish to stay.  
How do you call that tree with the thick top  
That holds in all its leafy green and gold  
The sun now like an immense egg of fire ?"  
(It was a million-leaved mimosa.) "Take  
The babe away from me and let me go !"  
And in the carriage, "Still a day, my friend !  
And perhaps half a night, the woman fears.  
I pray it finish since it cannot last.

There may be more misfortune at the close,  
And where will you be ? God suffice me  
then !"

And presently — for there was a roadside-  
shrine —

"When I was taken first to my own church  
Lorenzo in Lucina, being a girl,  
And bid confess my faults, I interposed  
'But teach me what fault to confess and  
know !'

So, the priest said — 'You should bethink  
yourself :  
Each human being needs must have done  
wrong !'

Now, be you candid and no priest but friend —  
Were I surprised and killed here on the spot,  
A runaway from husband and his home,  
Do you account it were in sin I died ?  
My husband used to seem to harm me, not . . .  
Not on pretence he punished sin of mine,  
Nor for sin's sake and lust of cruelty,  
But as I heard him bid a farming-man  
At the villa take a lamb once to the wood  
And there ill-treat it, meaning that the wolf  
Should hear its cries, and so come, quick be  
caught,

Enticed to the trap : he practised thus with me  
That so, whatever were his gain thereby,

Others than I might become prey and spoil.  
 Had it been only between our two selves, —  
 His pleasure and my pain, — why, pleasure him  
 By dying, nor such need to make a coil!  
 But this was worth an effort, that my pain  
 Should not become a snare, prove pain three-  
 fold

To other people — strangers — or unborn —  
 How should I know? I sought release from  
 that —

I think, or else from, — dare I say, some cause  
 Such as is put into a tree, which turns  
 Away from the north wind with what nest it  
 holds, —

The woman said that trees so turn: now,  
 friend,

Tell me, because I cannot trust myself!  
 You are a man: what have I done amiss? "  
 You must conceive my answer, — I forget —  
 Taken up wholly with the thought, perhaps,  
 This time she might have said, — might, did  
 not say —

"You are a priest." She said, "my friend."  
 Day wore,

We passed the places, somehow the calm went,  
 Again the restless eyes began to rove  
 In new fear of the foe mine could not see.

She wandered in her mind, — addressed me  
 once

"Gaetano!" — that is not my name: whose  
 name?

I grew alarmed, my head seemed turning too.  
 I quickened pace with promise now, now  
 threat:

Bade drive and drive, nor any stopping more.  
 "Too deep is the thick of the struggle, struggle  
 through!

Then drench her in repose though death's self  
 pour

The plenitude of quiet, — help us, God,  
 Whom the winds carry!"

Suddenly I saw

The old tower, and the little white-walled  
 clump

Of buildings and the cypress-tree or two, —

"Already Castelnovo — Rome!" I cried,  
 "As good as Rome, — Rome is the next stage,  
 think!

This is where travellers' hearts are wont to  
 beat.

Say you are saved, sweet lady!" Up she  
 woke.

The sky was fierce with color from the sun  
 Setting. She screamed out, "No, I must not  
 die!

Take me no farther, I should die: stay here!  
 I have more life to save than mine!"

She swooned.

We seemed safe: what was it foreboded so?  
 Out of the coach into the inn I bore

The motionless and breathless pure and pale  
 Pompilia, — bore her through a pitying group  
 And laid her on a couch, still calm and cured  
 By deep sleep of all woes at once. The host  
 Was urgent, "Let her stay an hour or two!  
 Leave her to us, all will be right by morn!"  
 Oh, my foreboding! But I could not choose.

I paced the passage, kept watch all night long.  
 I listened, — not one movement, not one sigh.

"Fear not: she sleeps so sound!" they said:  
 but I

Fear'd, all the same, kept fearing more and  
 more,

Found myself throb with fear from head to foot,  
 Filled with a sense of such impending woe,  
 That, at first pause of night, pretence of gray,  
 I made my mind up it was morn. — "Reach  
 Rome,

Lest hell reach her! A dozen miles to make,  
 Another long breath, and we emerge!" I stood  
 I' the courtyard, roused the sleepy grooms.

"Have out  
 Carriage and horse, give haste, take gold!"  
 said I.

While they made ready in the doubtful morn,  
 'T was the last minute, — needs must I ascend  
 And break her sleep; I turned to go.

And there

Faced me Count Guido, there posed the mean  
 man

As master, — took the field, encamped his  
 rights,

Challenged the world: there leered new tri-  
 umph, there

Scowled the old malice in the visage bad  
 And black o' the scamp. Soon triumph suppl'd  
 the tongue

A little, malice glued to his dry throat,  
 And he part howled, part hissed . . . oh, how  
 he kept

Well out o' the way, at arm's length and to  
 spare! —

"My salutation to your priesthood! What?  
 Matutinal, busy with book so soon

Of an April day that's damp as tears that now  
 Deluge Arezzo at its darling's flight? —

'T is unfair, wrongs femininity at large,  
 To let a single dame monopolize

A heart the whole sex claims, should share alike:  
 Therefore I overtake you, Canon! Come!

The lady, — could you leave her side so soon?  
 You have not yet experienced at her hands

My treatment, you lay down undrugged, I see!  
 Hence this alertness — hence no death-in-life

Like what held arms fast when she stole from  
 mine.

To be sure, you took the solace and repose  
 That first night at Foligno! — news abound

O' the road by this time, — men regaled me  
 much,

As past them I came halting after you,  
 Vulcan pursuing Mars, as poets sing, —

Still at the last here pant I, but arrive,  
 Vulcan — and not without my Cyclops too,

The Commissary and the unpoisoned arm  
 O' the Civil Force, should Mars turn mutineer.

Enough of fooling: capture the culprits. friend!  
 Here is the lover in the smart disguise

With the sword, — he is a priest, so mine lies  
 still.

There upstairs hides my wife the runaway,  
 His leman: the two plotted, poisoned first,

Plundered me after, and eloped thus far  
 Where now you find them. Do your duty

quick!



Arrest and hold him! That's done: now catch her!"

During this speech of that man, — well, I stood away, as he managed, — still, I stood as near the throat of him, — with these two hands, my own, —

As now I stand near yours, Sir, — one quick spring,

One great good satisfying gripe, and lo! There had he lain abolished with his lie, Creation purged o' the miscreate, man re-deemed,

A spittle wiped off from the face of God! I, in some measure, seek a poor excuse For what I left undone, in just this fact That my first feeling at the speech I quote Was — not of what a blasphemy was dared, Not what a bag of venom'd purulence Was split and noisome, — but how splendidly Mirthful, how ludicrous a lie was launched! Would Molière's self wish more than hear such man

Call, claim such woman for his own, his wife, Even though, in due amazement at the boast, He had stammered, she moreover was divine? She to be his, — were hardly less absurd Than that he took her name into his mouth, Licked, and then let it go again, the beast, Signed with his slaver. Oh, she poisoned him, Plundered him, and the rest! Well, what I wished

Was, that he would but go on, say once more So to the world, and get his meed of men, The first's reply to the filth. And while I mused, The minute, oh the misery, was gone! On either idle hand of me there stood Really an officer, nor laughed i' the least: Nay, rendered justice to his reason, laid Logic to heart, as 't were submitted them "Twice two makes four."

"And now, catch her!" he cried. That sobered me. "Let myself lead the way — Ere you arrest me, who am somebody, Being, as you hear, a priest and privileged, — To the lady's chamber! I presume you — men Expert, instructed how to find out truth, Familiar with the guise of guilt. Detect Guilt on her face when it meets mine, then judge Between us and the mad dog howling there!" Up we all went together, in they broke O' the chamber late my chapel. There she lay, Composed as when I laid her, that last eve, O' the couch, still breathless, motionless, sleep's self,

Wax-white, seraphic, saturate with the sun O' the morning that now flooded from the front And filled the window with a light like blood. "Behold the poisoner, the adulteress, — And feigning sleep too! Seize, bind!" Guido hissed.

She started up, stood erect, face to face With the husband: back he fell, was buttressed there

By the window all aflame with morning-red, He the black figure, the opprobrious blur Against all peace and joy and light and life, "Away from between me and hell!" she cried:

"Hell for me, no embracing any more! I am God's, I love God, God — whose knees I clasp.

Whose utterly most just award I take, But bear no more love-making devils: hence!" I may have made an effort to reach her side From where I stood i' the doorway, — anyhow I found the arms, I wanted, pinioned fast, Was powerless in the clutch to left and right O' the rabble pouring in, rascality Enlisted, rampant on the side of hearth, Home and the husband, — pay in prospect too! They heaped themselves upon me. "Ha! — and him

Also you outrage? Him, too, my sole friend, Guardian and savior? That I balk you of, Since — see how God can help at last and worst!"

She sprang at the sword that hung beside him, seized,

Drew, brandished it, the sunrise burned for joy O' the blade, "Die," cried she, "devil, in God's name!"

Ah, but they all closed round her, twelve to one — The unmanly men, no woman-mother made, Spawned somehow! Dead-white and disarmed she lay.

No matter for the sword, her word sufficed To spike the coward through and through: he shook,

Could only spit between the teeth — "You see? You hear? Bear witness, then! Write down . . . but no —

Carry these criminals to the prison-house, For first thing! I begin my search meanwhile After the stolen effects, gold, jewels, plate, Money and clothes, they robbed me of and fled, With no few amorous pieces, verse and prose, I have much reason to expect to find."

When I saw that — no more than the first mad speech,

Made out the speaker mad and a laughing-stock, So neither did this next device explode One listener's indignation, — that a scribe Did sit down; set himself to write indeed, While sundry knaves began to peer and pry In corner and hole, — that Guido, wiping brow And getting him a countenance, was fast Losing his fear, beginning to strut free O' the stage of his exploit, snuff here, sniff there, —

Then I took truth in, guessed sufficiently The service for the moment. "What I say, Slight at your peril! We are aliens here, My adversary and I, called noble both; I am the nobler, and a name men know. I could refer our cause to our own court In our own country, but prefer appeal To the nearer jurisdiction. Being a priest, Though in a secular garb, — for reasons good I shall adduce in due time to my peers, — I demand that the Church I serve, decide Between us, right the slandered lady there. A Tuscan noble, I might claim the Duke: A priest, I rather choose the Church, — bid Rome Cover the wronged with her inviolate shield."

There was no refusing this: they bore me off,  
 They bore her off, to separate cells o' the same  
 Ignoble prison, and, separate, thence to Rome.  
 Pompilia's face, then and thus, looked on me  
 The last time in this life: not one sight since,  
 Never another sight to be! And yet  
 I thought I had saved her. I appealed to  
 Rome:

It seems I simply sent her to her death.  
 You tell me she is dying now, or dead;  
 I cannot bring myself to quite believe  
 This is a place you torture people in:  
 What if this your intelligence were just  
 A subtlety, an honest wile to work  
 On a man at unawares? 'T were worthy you.  
 No, Sirs, I cannot have the lady dead!  
 That erect form, flashing brow, fulgurant eye,  
 That voice immortal (oh, that voice of hers!)  
 That vision in the blood-red daybreak — that  
 Leap to life of the pale electric sword  
 Angels go armed with, — that was not the last  
 O' the lady! Come, I see through it, you find —  
 Know the manoeuvre! Also herself said  
 I had saved her: do you dare say she spoke  
 false?

Let me see for myself if it be so!  
 Though she were dying, a Priest might be of  
 use,  
 The more when he's a friend too, — she called  
 me  
 Far beyond "friend." Come, let me see her —  
 indeed

It is my duty, being a priest: I hope  
 I stand confessed, established, proved a priest?  
 My punishment had motive that, a priest  
 I, in a laic garb, a mundane mode,  
 Did what were harmlessly done otherwise.  
 I never touched her with my finger-tip  
 Except to carry her to the couch, that eve,  
 Against my heart, beneath my head, bowed  
 low,

As we priests carry the paten: that is why  
 — To get leave and go see her of your grace —  
 I have told you this whole story over again.  
 Do I deserve grace? For I might lock lips,  
 Laugh at your jurisdiction: what have you  
 To do with me in the matter? I suppose  
 You hardly think I donned a bravo's dress  
 To have a hand in the new crime; on the old,  
 Judgment's delivered, penalty imposed,  
 I was chained fast at Civita hand and foot —  
 She had only you to trust to, you and Rome,  
 Rome and the Church, and no pert meddling  
 priest

Two days ago, when Guido, with the right,  
 Hacked her to pieces. One might well be  
 wroth;

I have been patient, done my best to help:  
 I come from Civita and punishment  
 As friend of the court — and for pure friend-  
 ship's sake  
 Have told my tale to the end, — nay, not the  
 end —

For, wait — I'll end — not leave you that excuse!

When we were parted, — shall I go on there?  
 I was presently brought to Rome — yes, here I  
 stood

Opposite yonder very crucifix —  
 And there sat you and you, Sirs, quite the  
 same.

I heard charge, and bore question, and told tale  
 Noted down in the book there, — turn and see  
 If, by one jot or tittle, I vary now!  
 I' the color the tale takes, there's change per-  
 haps;

'T is natural, since the sky is different,  
 Eclipse in the air now; still, the outline stays.  
 I showed you how it came to be my part  
 To save the lady. Then your clerk produced  
 Papers, a pack of stupid and impure  
 Banalities called letters about love —  
 Love, indeed, — I could teach who styled them  
 so,

Better, I think, though priest and loveless both!  
 "— How was it that a wife, young, innocent,  
 And stranger to your person, wrote this  
 page?" —

"— She wrote it when the Holy Father wrote  
 The bestiality that posts through Rome,  
 Put in his mouth by Pasquin." "Nor per-  
 haps

Did you return these answers, verse and prose,  
 Signed, sealed and sent the lady? There's  
 your hand!"

"— This precious piece of verse, I really judge.  
 Is meant to copy my own character,  
 A clumsy mimic; and this other prose,  
 Not so much even; both rank forgery:  
 Verse, quotha? Bembo's verse! When Saint  
 John wrote

The tract '*De Tribus*,' I wrote this to match."  
 "— How came it, then, the documents were  
 found

At the inn on your departure?" — "I opine,  
 Because there were no documents to find  
 In my presence, — you must hide before you  
 find.

Who forged them hardly practised in my view;  
 Who found them waited till I turned my  
 back."

"— And what of the clandestine visits paid,  
 Nocturnal passage in and out the house  
 With its lord absent? 'T is alleged you  
 climbed" . . .

"— Flew on a broomstick to the man i' the  
 moon!

Who witnessed or will testify this trash?"  
 "— The trusty servant, Margherita's self.  
 Even she who brought you letters, you con-  
 fess,

And, you confess, took letters in reply:  
 Forget not we have knowledge of the facts!"  
 "— Sirs, who have knowledge of the facts, de-  
 fray

The expenditure of wit I waste in vain,  
 Trying to find out just one fact of all!  
 She who brought letters from who could not  
 write,

And took back letters to who could not read, —  
 Who was that messenger, of your charity?"  
 "— Well, so far favors you the circumstance  
 That this same messenger . . . how shall we  
 say? . . .

*Sub imputatione meretricis*  
 Laborat, — which makes accusation null:

We waive this woman's:—naught makes void the next.

Borsi, called Venerino, he who drove,  
O' the first night when you fled away, at length  
Deposes to your kissings in the coach,  
—Frequent, frenetic" . . . "When deposed  
he so?"

"After some weeks of sharp imprisonment" . . .

"Granted by friend the Governor, I engage"—  
"—For his participation in your flight!

At length his obduracy melting made  
The avowal mentioned" . . . "Was dismissed  
forthwith

To liberty, poor knave, for recompense.

Sirs, give what credit to the lie you can!

For me, no word in my defence I speak,

And God shall argue for the lady!"

So

Did I stand question, and make answer, still

With the same result of smiling disbelief,

Polite impossibility of faith

In such affected virtue in a priest;

But a showing fair play, an indulgence, even,

To one no worse than others after all—

Who had not brought disgrace to the order,  
played

Discreetly, ruffled gown nor ripped the cloth

In a bungling game at romps: I have told you,  
Sirs—

If I pretended simply to be pure

Honest and Christian in the case,—absurd!

As well go boast myself above the needs

O' the human nature, careless how meat smells,

Wine tastes,—a saint above the smack! But  
once

Abate my crest, own flaws i' the flesh, agree

To go with the herd, be hog no more nor less,

Why, hogs in common herd have common  
rights:

I must not be unduly borne upon,

Who just romanced a little, sowed wild oats,

But 'scaped without a scandal, flagrant fault.

My name helped to a mirthful circumstance:

"Joseph" would do well to amend his plea:

Undoubtedly—some toying with the wife,

But as for ruffian violence and rape,

Potiphar pressed too much on the other side!

The intrigue, the elopement, the disguise,—  
well charged!

The letters and verse looked hardly like the  
truth,

Your apprehension was—of guilt enough

To be compatible with innocence,

So, punished best a little and not too much.

Had I struck Guido Franceschini's face,

You had counselled me withdraw for my own  
sake,

Balk him of bravo-hiring. Friends came  
round,

Congratulated, "Nobody mistakes!

The pettiness o' the forfeiture defines

The peccadillo: Guido gets his share:

His wife is free of husband and hook-nose,

The mouldy viands and the mother-in-law.

To Civita with you and amuse the time,

Travesty us 'De Raptu Helenæ'!

A funny figure must the husband cut

When the wife makes him skip,—too ticklish,  
eh?

Do it in Latin, not the Vulgar, then!

Scazons we'll copy and send his Eminence.

Mind—one iambus in the final foot!

He'll rectify it, be your friend for life!"

Oh, Sirs, depend on me for much new light

Thrown on the justice and religion here

By this proceeding, much fresh food for  
thought!

And I was just set down to study these

In relegation, two short days ago,

Admiring how you read the rules, when, clap,

A thunder comes into my solitude—

I am caught up in a whirlwind and cast here,

Told of a sudden, in this room where so late

You dealt out law adroitly, that those scales,

I meekly bowed to, took my allotment from,

Guido has snatched at, broken in your hands,

Metes to himself the murder of his wife,

Full measure, pressed down, running over now!

Can I assist to an explanation?—Yes,

I rise in your esteem, sagacious Sirs,

Stand up a renderer of reasons, not

The officious priest would personate Saint  
George

For a mock Princess in undragoned days.

What, the blood startles you? What, after all

The priest who needs must carry sword on  
thigh

May find imperative use for it? Then, there  
was

A Princess, was a dragon belching flame,

And should have been a Saint George also?

Then,

There might be worse schemes than to break  
the bonds

At Arezzo, lead her by the little hand,

Till she reached Rome, and let her try to live?

But you were law and gospel,—would one  
please

Stand back, allow your faculty elbow-room?

You blind guides who must needs lead eyes  
that see!

Fools, alike ignorant of man and God!

What was there here should have perplexed  
your wit

For a wink of the owl-eyes of you? How miss,  
then,

What's now forced on you by this flare of  
fact—

As if Saint Peter failed to recognize

Nero as no apostle, John or James,

Till some one burned a martyr, made a torch

O' the blood and fat to show his features by!

Could you fail read this cartulary aright

On head and front of Franceschini there,—

Large-lettered like hell's masterpiece of  
print,—

That he, from the beginning pricked at heart

By some lust, lech of hate against his wife,

Plotted to plague her into overt sin

And shame, would slay Pompilia body and  
soul.

And save his mean self—miserably caught

I' the quagmire of his own tricks, cheats and  
lies?



— That himself wrote those papers, — from himself  
 To himself, — which, i' the name of me and her,  
 His mistress-messenger gave her and me,  
 Touching us with such pustules of the soul  
 That she and I might take the taint, be shown  
 To the world and shuddered over, speckled so ?  
 — That the agent put her sense into my words,  
 Made substitution of the thing she hoped,  
 For the thing she had and held, its opposite,  
 While the husband in the background bit his lips  
 At each fresh failure of his precious plot ?  
 — That when at the last we did rush each on each,  
 By no chance but because God willed it so —  
 The spark of truth was struck from out our souls —  
 Made all of me, desecrated in the first glance,  
 Seem fair and honest and permissible love  
 O' the good and true — as the first glance told me  
 There was no duty patent in the world  
 Like daring try be good and true myself,  
 Leaving the shows of things to the Lord of Show  
 And Prince o' the Power of the Air. Our very flight,  
 Even to its most ambiguous circumstance,  
 Irrefragably proved how futile, false . . .  
 Why, men — men and not boys — boys and not babes —  
 Babes and not beasts — beasts and not stocks and stones ! —  
 Had the liar's lie been true one pin-point speck,  
 Were I the accepted suitor, free o' the place,  
 Disposer of the time, to come at a call  
 And go at a wink as who should say me nay, —  
 What need of flight, what were the gain therefrom  
 But just damnation, failure or success ?  
 Damnation pure and simple to her the wife  
 And me the priest — who bartered private bliss  
 For public reprobation, the safe shade  
 For the sunshine which men see to pelt me by :  
 What other advantage — we who led the days  
 And nights alone i' the house — was flight to find ?  
 In our whole journey did we stop an hour,  
 Diverge a foot from strait road till we reached  
 Or would have reached — but for that fate of ours —  
 The father and mother, in the eye of Rome,  
 The eye of yourselves we made aware of us  
 At the first fall of misfortune ? And indeed  
 You did so far give sanction to our flight,  
 Confirm its purpose, as lend helping hand,  
 Deliver up Pompilia not to him  
 She fled, but those the flight was ventured for.  
 Why then could you, who stopped short, not go on  
 One poor step more, and justify the means,  
 Having allowed the end ? — not see and say,  
 " Here 's the exceptional conduct that should claim  
 To be exceptionally judged on rules

Which, understood, make no exception here " —  
 Why play instead into the devil's hands  
 By dealing so ambiguously as gave  
 Guido the power to intervene like me,  
 Prove one exception more ? I saved his wife  
 Against law : against law he slays her now :  
 Deal with him !

I have done with being judged.  
 I stand here guiltless in thought, word and deed,  
 To the point that I apprise you, — in contempt  
 For all misapprehending ignorance  
 O' the human heart, much more the mind of Christ, —  
 That I assuredly did bow, was blessed  
 By the revelation of Pompilia. There !  
 Such is the final fact I fling you, Sirs,  
 To mouth and mumble and misinterpret : there !  
 " The priest 's in love," have it the vulgar way !  
 Unpriest me, rend the rags o' the vestment, do —  
 Degrade deep, disenfranchise all you dare —  
 Remove me from the midst, no longer priest  
 And fit companion for the like of you —  
 Your gay Abati with the well-turned leg  
 And rose i' the hat-rim, Canons, cross at neck  
 And silk mask in the pocket of the gown,  
 Brisk bishops with the world's musk still unbrushed  
 From the rochet ; I'll no more of these good things :  
 There's a crack somewhere, something that 's unsound  
 I' the rattle !

For Pompilia — be advised,  
 Build churches, go pray ! You will find me there,  
 I know, if you come, — and you will come, I know.  
 Why, there 's a Judge weeping ! Did not I say  
 You were good and true at bottom ? You see the truth —  
 I am glad I helped you : she helped me just so.  
 But for Count Guido, — you must counsel there !  
 I bow my head, bend to the very dust,  
 Break myself up in shame of faultiness.  
 I had him one whole moment, as I said —  
 As I remember, as will never out  
 O' the thoughts of me, — I had him in arm's reach  
 There, — as you stand, Sir, now you cease to sit, —  
 I could have killed him ere he killed his wife,  
 And did not : he went off alive and well  
 And then effected this last feat — through me !  
 Me — not through you — dismiss that fear !  
 'T was you  
 Hindered me staying here to save her, — not  
 From leaving you and going back to him  
 And doing service in Arezzo. Come,  
 Instruct me in procedure ! I conceive —

In all due self-abasement might I speak —  
How you will deal with Guido: oh, not  
death!

Death, if it let her life be: otherwise  
Not death, — your lights will teach you clear-  
er! I

Certainly have an instinct of my own  
I' the matter: bear with me and weigh its  
worth!

Let us go away — leave Guido all alone  
Back on the world again that knows him now!  
I think he will be found (indulge so far!)

Not to die so much as slide out of life,  
Pushed by the general horror and common hate  
Low, lower, — left o' the very ledge of things,

I seem to see him catch convulsively  
One by one at all honest forms of life,  
At reason, order, decency and use —

To cramp him and get foothold by at least;  
And still they disengage them from his clutch.  
"What, you are he, then, had Pompilia once

And so forwent her? Take not up with us!"  
And thus I see him slowly and surely edged  
Off all the table-land whence life upsprings

Aspiring to be immortality,  
As the snake, hatched on hill-top by mischance,  
Despite his wriggling, slips, slides, slidders down

Hillside, lies low and prostrate on the smooth  
Level of the outer place, lapsed in the vale:  
So I lose Guido in the loneliness,

Silence and dusk, till at the doleful end,  
At the horizontal line, creation's verge,  
From what just is to absolute nothingness —

Whom is it, straining onward still, he meets?  
What other man deep further in the fate,  
Who, turning at the prize of a footfall

To flatter him and promise fellowship,  
Discovers in the act a frightful face —  
Judas, made monstrous by much solitude!

The two are at one now! Let them love their  
love

That bites and claws like hate, or hate their  
hate

That mops and mows and makes as it were  
love!

There, let them each tear each in devil's-fun,  
Or fondle this the other while malice aches —  
Both teach, both learn detestability!

Kiss him the kiss, Iscariot! Pay that back,  
That smatch o' the slaver blistering on your  
lip,

By the better trick, the insult he spared  
Christ —

Lure him the lure o' the letters, Aretine!  
Lick him o'er slimy-smooth with jelly-filth  
O' the verse-and-prose pollution in love's guise!

The cockatrice is with the basilisk!  
There let them grapple, denizens o' the dark,  
Foes or friends, but indissolubly bound,  
In their one spot out of the ken of God

Or care of man, forever and evermore!

Why, Sirs, what's this? Why, this is sorry  
and strange!

Futility, divagation: this from me  
Bound to be rational, justify an act  
Of sober man! — whereas, being moved so  
much,

I give you cause to doubt the lady's mind:  
A pretty sarcasm for the world! I fear  
You do her wit injustice, — all through me!

Like my fate all through, — ineffective help!  
A poor rash advocate I prove myself.  
You might be angry with good cause: but sure

At the advocate, — only at the undue zeal  
That spoils the force of his own plea, I think?  
My part was just to tell you how things stand,

State facts and not be flustered at their fume.  
But then 'tis a priest speaks: as for love, —  
no!

If you let buzz a vulgar fly like that  
About your brains, as if I loved, forsooth,  
Indeed, Sirs, you do wrong! We had no

thought  
Of such infatuation, she and I:  
There are many points that prove it: do be

just!  
I told you, — at one little roadside-place  
I spent a good half-hour, paced to and fro

The garden; just to leave her free awhile,  
I plucked a handful of Spring herb and bloom:  
I might have sat beside her on the bench

Where the children were: I wish the thing had  
been,

Indeed: the event could not be worse, you  
know:  
One more half-hour of her saved! She's dead

now, Sirs!  
While I was running on at such a rate,  
Friends should have plucked me by the sleeve:

I went  
Too much o' the trivial outside of her face  
And the purity that shone there — plain to me,

Not to you, what more natural? Nor am I  
Infatuated, — oh, I saw, be sure!  
Her brow had not the right line, leaned too

much,  
Painters would say; they like the straight-up  
Greek:

This seemed bent somewhat with an invisible  
crown

Of martyr and saint, not such as art approves.  
And how the dark orbs dwelt deep underneath,  
Looked out of such a sad sweet heaven on me!

The lips, compressed a little, came forward too,  
Careful for a whole world of sin and pain.  
That was the face, her husband makes his plea,

He sought just to disfigure, — no offence  
Beyond that! Sirs, let us be rational!  
He needs must vindicate his honor, — ay,

Yet shirks, the coward, in a clown's disguise,  
Away from the scene, endeavors to escape.  
Now, had he done so, slain and left no trace

O' the slayer, — what were vindicated, pray?  
You had found his wife disfigured or a corpse,  
For what and by whom? It is too palpable!

Then, here's another point involving law:  
I use this argument to show you meant  
No calumny against us by that title

O' the sentence, — liars try to twist it so:  
What penalty it bore, I had to pay  
Till further proof should follow of innocence —

*Probationis ob defectum*, — proof?  
How could you get proof without trying us?  
You went through the preliminary form,  
Stopped there, contrived this sentence to amuse

The adversary. If the title ran  
For more than fault imputed and not proved,  
That was a simple penman's error, else  
A slip i' the phrase, — as when we say of you  
"Charged with injustice" — which may either  
be  
Or not be, — 'tis a name that sticks mean-  
while.

Another relevant matter: fool that I am!  
Not what I wish true, yet a point friends urge:  
It is not true, — yet, since friends think it  
helps, —

She only tried me when some others failed —  
Began with Conti, whom I told you of,  
And Guillichini, Guido's kinsfolk both,  
And when abandoned by them, not before,  
Turned to me. That's conclusive why she  
turned.

Much good they got by the happy cowardice!  
Conti is dead, poisoned a month ago:  
Does that much strike you as a sin? Not  
much,

After the present murder, — one mark more  
On the Moor's skin, — what is black by blacker  
still?

Conti had come here and told truth. And so  
With Guillichini; he 's condemned of course  
To the galleys, as a friend in this affair,  
Tried and condemned for no one thing i' the  
world,

A fortnight since by who but the Governor? —  
The just judge, who refused Pompilia help  
At first blush, being her husband's friend, you  
know.

There are two tales to suit the separate courts,  
Arezzo and Rome: he tells you here, we fled  
Alone, unhelped, — lays stress on the main  
fault,

The spiritual sin, Rome looks to: but elsewhere  
He likes best we should break in, steal, bear off,  
Be fit to brand and pillory and flog —  
That's the charge goes to the heart of the  
Governor:

If these unpriest me, you and I may yet  
Converse, Vincenzo Marzi-Medici!

Oh, Sirs, there are worse men than you, I say!  
More easily duped, I mean; this stupid lie,  
Its liar never dared propound in Rome,  
He gets Arezzo to receive, — nay more,  
Gets Florence and the Duke to authorize!  
This is their Rota's sentence, their Granduke  
Signs and seals! Rome for me henceforward  
— Rome,

Where better men are, — most of all, that man  
The Augustinian of the Hospital,  
Who writes the letter, — he confessed, he says,  
Many a dying person, never one  
So sweet and true and pure and beautiful.  
A good man! Will you make him Pope one  
day?

Not that he is not good too, this we have —  
But old, — else he would have his word to  
speak,  
His truth to teach the world: I thirst for truth,  
But shall not drink it till I reach the source,

Sirs, I am quiet again. You see, we are  
So very pitiable, she and I,

Who had conceivably been otherwise.  
Forget distemperature and idle heat!  
Apart from truth's sake, what's to move so  
much?

Pompilia will be presently with God;  
I am, on earth, as good as out of it,  
A relegated priest; when exile ends,  
I mean to do my duty and live long.  
She and I are mere strangers now: but priests  
Should study passion; how else cure mankind,  
Who come for help in passionate extremes?  
I do but play with an imagined life  
Of who, unfettered by a vow, unblesed  
By the higher call, — since you will have it  
so, —

Leads it companioned by the woman there.  
To live, and see her learn, and learn by her,  
Out of the low obscure and petty world —  
Or only see one purpose and one will  
Evolve themselves i' the world, change wrong  
to right:

To have to do with nothing but the true,  
The good, the eternal — and these, not alone  
In the main current of the general life,  
But small experiences of every day,  
Concerns of the particular hearth and home:  
To learn not only by a comet's rush  
But a rose's birth, — not by the grandeur,  
God, —

But the comfort, Christ. All this, how far  
away!

Mere delectation, meet for a minute's dream! —  
Just as a drudging student trims his lamp,  
Opens his Plutarch, puts him in the place  
Of Roman, Grecian; draws the patched gown  
close,

Dreams, "Thus should I fight, save or rule the  
world!" —

Then smilingly, contentedly, awakes  
To the old solitary nothingness.  
So I, from such communion, pass content . . .

O great, just, good God! Miserable me!

## VII

## POMPILIA

I am just seventeen years and five months old.  
And, if I lived one day more, three full weeks,  
'T is writ so in the church's register,  
Lorenzo in Lucina, all my names  
At length, so many names for one poor child,  
— Francesca Camilla Vittoria Angela  
Pompilia Comparini, — laughable!  
Also 't is writ that I was married there  
Four years ago: and they will add, I hope,  
When they insert my death, a word or two, —  
Omitting all about the mode of death, —  
This, in its place, this which one cares to know,  
That I had been a mother of a son  
Exactly two weeks. It will be through grace  
O' the Curate, not through any claim I have;  
Because the boy was born at, so baptized  
Close to, the Villa, in the proper church:  
A pretty church, I say no word against,  
Yet stranger-like, — while this Lorenzo seems



I never had a father, — no, nor yet  
A mother : my own boy can say at least,  
“ I had a mother whom I kept two weeks ! ”  
Not I, who little used to doubt . . . I doubt  
Good Pietro, kind Violante, gave me birth ?  
They loved me always as I love my babe  
(— Nearly so, that is — quite so could not  
be —)

Did for me all I meant to do for him,  
Till one surprising day, three years ago.  
They both declared, at Rome, before some  
judge

In some court where the people flocked to hear,  
That really I had never been their child,  
Was a mere castaway, the careless crime  
Of an unknown man, the crime and care too  
much

Of a woman known too well, — little to these,  
Therefore, of whom I was the flesh and blood :  
What then to Pietro and Violante, both  
No more my relatives than you or you ?  
Nothing to them ! You know what they de-  
clared.

So with my husband, — just such a surprise,  
Such a mistake, in that relationship !  
Every one says that husbands love their wives,  
Guard them and guide them, give them  
happiness ;

'T is duty, law, pleasure, religion : well,  
You see how much of this comes true in mine !  
People indeed would fain have somehow proved  
He was no husband : but he did not hear,  
Or would not wait, and so has killed us all.  
Then there is . . . only let me name one more !  
There is the friend, — men will not ask about,  
But tell untruths of, and give nicknames to,  
And think my lover, most surprise of all !

Do only hear, it is the priest they mean,  
Giuseppe Caponsacchi : a priest — love,  
And love me ! Well, yet people think he did.  
I am married, he has taken priestly vows,  
They know that, and yet go on, say, the same,  
" Yes, how he loves you ! " " That was love " —  
— they say,

When anything is answered that they ask :  
Or else " No wonder you love him " — they say.  
Then they shake heads, pity much, scarcely  
blame —

As if we neither of us lacked excuse,  
And anyhow are punished to the full,  
And downright love atones for everything !  
Nay, I heard read out in the public court  
Before the judge, in presence of my friends,  
Letters 't was said the priest had sent to me,  
And other letters sent him by myself,  
We being lovers !

Listen what this is like !

When I was a mere child, my mother . . .  
that's

Violante, you must let me call her so,  
Nor waste time, trying to unlearn the word. . .  
She brought a neighbor's child of my own age  
To play with me of rainy afternoons :  
And, since there hung a tapestry on the wall,  
We two agreed to find each other out  
Among the figures. " Tisbe, that is you,  
With half-moon on your hair-knot, spear in  
hand,

Flying, but no wings, only the great scarf  
Blown to a bluish rainbow at your back :  
Call off your hound and leave the stag  
alone ! "

" — And there are you, Pompilia, such green  
leaves

Flourishing out of your five finger-ends,  
And all the rest of you so brown and rough :  
Why is it you are turned a sort of tree ? "  
You know the figures never were ourselves  
Though we nicknamed them so. Thus, all my  
life, —

As well what was, as what, like this, was  
not, —

Looks old, fantastic and impossible :  
I touch a fairy thing that fades and fades.  
— Even to my babe ! I thought, when he was  
born,

Something began for once that would not end,  
Nor change into a laugh at me, but stay  
Forevermore, eternally quite mine.  
Well, so he is, — but yet they bore him off,  
The third day, lest my husband should lay  
traps

And catch him, and by means of him catch me.  
Since they have saved him so, it was well done :  
Yet thence comes such confusion of what was  
With what will be, — that late seems long ago,  
And, what years should bring round, already  
come,

Till even he withdraws into a dream  
As the rest do : I fancy him grown great,  
Strong, stern, a tall young man who tutors me,  
Frowns with the others, " Poor imprudent  
child !

Why did you venture out of the safe street ?  
Why go so far from help to that lone house ?  
Why open at the whisper and the knock ? "

Six days ago when it was New Year's day,  
We bent above the fire and talked of him,  
What he should do when he was grown and  
great.

Violante, Pietro, each had given the arm  
I leant on, to walk by, from couch to chair  
And fireside, — laughed, as I lay safe at last,  
" Pompilia's march from bed to board is made,  
Pompilia back again and with a babe,  
Shall one day lend his arm and help her  
walk ! "

Then we all wished each other more New  
Years.

Pietro began to scheme — " Our cause is  
gained ;

The law is stronger than a wicked man :  
Let him henceforth go his way, leave us ours !  
We will avoid the city, tempt no more  
The greedy ones by feasting and parade, —  
Live at the other villa, we know where,  
Still farther off, and we can watch the babe  
Grow fast in the good air ; and wood is cheap  
And wine sincere outside the city gate,  
I still have two or three old friends will grope  
Their way along the mere half-mile of road,  
With staff and lantern on a moonless night  
When one needs talk : they 'll find me, never  
fear.

And I 'll find them a flask of the old sort  
yet ! "

Violante said, " You chatter like a crow :  
Pompilia tires o' the tattle, and shall to bed :  
Do not too much the first day, — somewhat  
more

To-morrow, and, the next, begin the cape

And hood and coat! I have spun wool enough."

Oh what a happy friendly eve was that!

And, next day, about noon, out Pietro went — He was so happy and would talk so much, Until Violante pushed and laughed him forth Sight-seeing in the cold, — "So much to see I' the churches! Swathe your throat three times!" she cried,

"And, above all, beware the slippery ways, And bring us all the news by supper-time!" He came back late, laid by cloak, staff and hat, Powdered so thick with snow it made us laugh, Rolled a great log upon the ash o' the hearth, And bade Violante treat us to a flask, Because he had obeyed her faithfully, Gone sight-see through the seven, and found no church

To his mind like San Giovanni — "There's the fold,

And all the sheep together, big as cats! And such a shepherd, half the size of life, Starts up and hears the angel" — when, at the door,

A tap: we started up: you know the rest.

Pietro at least had done no harm, I know; Nor even Violante, so much harm as makes Such revenge lawful. Certainly she erred — Did wrong, how shall I dare say otherwise? — In telling that first falsehood, buying me From my poor faulty mother at a price, To pass off upon Pietro as his child, If one should take my babe, give him a name, Say he was not Gaetano and my own, But that some other woman made his mouth And hands and feet, — how very false were that! No good could come of that; and all harm did. Yet if a stranger were to represent

"Needs must you either give your babe to me And let me call him mine forevermore, Or let your husband get him" — ah, my God, That were a trial I refuse to face! Well, just so here: it proved wrong but seemed right

To poor Violante — for there lay, she said, My poor real dying mother in her rags, Who put me from her with the life and all, Poverty, pain, shame and disease at once, To die the easier by what price I fetched — Also (I hope) because I should be spared Sorrow and sin, — why may not that have helped?

My father, — he was no one, any one, — The worse, the likelier, — call him, — he who came,

Was wicked for his pleasure, went his way, And left no trace to track by; there remained Nothing but me, the unnecessary life, To catch up or let fall, — and yet a thing She could make happy, be made happy with, This poor Violante, — who would frown there-at?

Well, God, you see! God plants us where we grow.

It is not that, because a bud is born

At a wild brier's end, full i' the wild beast's way,

We ought to pluck and put it out of reach On the oak-tree top, — say, "There the bud belongs!"

She thought, moreover, real lies were lies told For harm's sake; whereas this had good at heart,

Good for my mother, good for me, and good For Pietro who was meant to love a babe, And needed one to make his life of use, Receive his house and land when he should die.

Wrong, wrong, and always wrong! how plainly wrong!

For see, this fault kept pricking, as faults do, All the same at her heart: this falsehood hatched,

She could not let it go nor keep it fast. She told me so, — the first time I was found Locked in her arms once more after the pain, When the nuns let me leave them and go home,

And both of us cried all the cares away, — This it was set her on to make amends, This brought about the marriage — simply this!

Do let me speak for her you blame so much! When Paul, my husband's brother, found me out,

Heard there was wealth for who should marry me,

So, came and made a speech to ask my hand For Guido, — she, instead of piercing straight Through the pretence to the ignoble truth, Fancied she saw God's very finger point, Designate just the time for planting me (The wild-brier slip she plucked to love and wear)

In soil where I could strike real root, and grow, And get to be the thing I called myself: For, wife and husband are one flesh, God says, And I, whose parents seemed such and were none,

Should in a husband have a husband now, Find nothing, this time, but was what it seemed,

— All truth and no confusion any more. I know she meant all good to me, all pain To herself, — since how could it be aught but pain

To give me up, so, from her very breast, The wilding flower-tree-branch that, all those years,

She had got used to feel for and find fixed? She meant well: has it been so ill? the main? That is but fair to ask: one cannot judge Of what has been the ill or well of life, The day that one is dying, — sorrows change Into not altogether sorrow-like; I do see strangeness but scarce misery, Now it is over, and no danger more. My child is safe; there seems not so much pain. It comes, most like, that I am just absolved, Purged of the past, the foul in me, washed fair, —

One cannot both have and not have, you know, —



Being right now, I am happy and color things.  
 Yes, everybody that leaves life sees all  
 Softened and bettered : so with other sights :  
 To me at least was never evening yet  
 But seemed far beautifuller than its day,  
 For past is past.

There was a fancy came,  
 When somewhere, in the journey with my  
 friend,  
 We stepped into a hovel to get food ;  
 And there began a yelp here, a bark there, —  
 Misunderstanding creatures that were wroth  
 And vexed themselves and us till we retired.  
 The hovel is life : no matter what dogs bit  
 Or cat scratched in the hovel I break from,  
 All outside is lone field, moon and such peace —  
 Flowing in, filling up as with a sea  
 Whereon comes Someone, walks fast on the  
 white,  
 Jesus Christ's self, Don Celestine declares,  
 To meet me and calm all things back again.

Beside, up to my marriage, thirteen years  
 Were, each day, happy as the day was long :  
 This may have made the change too terrible.  
 I know that when Violante told me first  
 The cavalier — she meant to bring next morn,  
 Whom I must also let take, kiss my hand —  
 Would be at San Lorenzo the same eve  
 And marry me, — which over, we should go  
 Home both of us without him as before,  
 And, till she bade speak, I must hold my  
 tongue,  
 Such being the correct way with girl-brides,  
 From whom one word would make a father  
 blush, —

I know, I say, that when she told me this,  
 — Well, I no more saw sense in what she said  
 Than a lamb does in people clipping wool ;  
 Only lay down and let myself be clipped.  
 And when next day the cavalier who came —  
 (Tisbe had told me that the slim young man  
 With wings at head, and wings at feet, and  
 sword

Threatening a monster, in our tapestry,  
 Would eat a girl else, — was a cavalier) —  
 When he proved Guido Franceschini, — old  
 And nothing like so tall as I myself,  
 Hook-nosed and yellow in a bush of beard,  
 Much like a thing I saw on a boy's wrist,  
 He called an owl and used for catching birds, —  
 And when he took my hand and made a smile —  
 Why, the uncomfortableness of it all  
 Seemed hardly more important in the case  
 Than — when one gives you, say, a coin to  
 spend —

Its newness or its oldness ; if the piece  
 Weigh properly and buy you what you wish,  
 No matter whether you get grime or glare !  
 Men take the coin, return you grapes and figs.  
 Here, marriage was the coin, a dirty piece  
 Would purchase me the praise of those I loved :  
 About what else should I concern myself ?

So, hardly knowing what a husband meant,  
 I supposed this or any man would serve,  
 No whit the worse for being so uncouth :

For I was ill once and a doctor came  
 With a great ugly hat, no plume thereto,  
 Black jerkin and black buckles and black  
 sword,  
 And white sharp beard over the ruff in front,  
 And oh so lean, so sour-faced and austere ! —  
 Who felt my pulse, made me put out my tongue.  
 Then oped a phial, dripped a drop or two  
 Of a black bitter something, — I was cured !  
 What mattered the fierce beard or the grim  
 face ?

It was the physic beautified the man,  
 Master Malpichi, — never met his match  
 In Rome, they said, — so ugly all the same !

However, I was hurried through a storm,  
 Next dark eve of December's deadead day —  
 How it rained ! — through our street and the  
 Lion's-mouth  
 And the bit of Corso, — cloaked round, covered  
 close,

I was like something strange or contraband, —  
 Into blank San Lorenzo, up the aisle,  
 My mother keeping hold of me so tight,  
 I fancied we were come to see a corpse  
 Before the altar which she pulled me toward.  
 There we found waiting an unpleasant priest  
 Who proved the brother, not our parish friend,  
 But one with mischief-making mouth and eye,  
 Paul, whom I know since to my cost. And then  
 I heard the heavy church-door lock out help  
 Behind us : for the customary warmth,  
 Two tapers shivered on the altar. " Quick —  
 Lose no time ! " cried the priest. And straight-  
 way down

From . . . what's behind the altar where he  
 hid —

Hawk-nose and yellowness and bush and all,  
 Stepped Guido, caught my hand, and there  
 was I

O' the chancel, and the priest had opened book,  
 Read here and there, made me say that and  
 this,

And after, told me I was now a wife,  
 Honored indeed, since Christ thus weds the  
 Church,

And therefore turned he water into wine,  
 To show I should obey my spouse like Christ.  
 Then the two slipped aside and talked apart,  
 And I, silent and scared, got down again  
 And joined my mother, who was weeping now.  
 Nobody seemed to mind us any more,  
 And both of us on tiptoe found our way  
 To the door which was unlocked by this, and  
 wide.

When we were in the street, the rain had  
 stopped,  
 All things looked better. At our own house-  
 door,

Violante whispered, " No one syllable  
 To Pietro ! Girl-brides never breathe a word ! "  
 " — Well treated to a wetting, drabble-tails ! "  
 Laughed Pietro as he opened — " Very near  
 You made me brave the gutter's roaring sea  
 To carry off from roost old dove and young,  
 Trussed up in church, the cote, by me, the kite !  
 What do these priests mean, praying folk to  
 death

On stormy afternoons, with Christmas close  
To wash our sins off nor require the rain?"  
Violante gave my hand a timely squeeze,  
Madonna saved me from immodest speech,  
I kissed him and was quiet, being a bride.

When I saw nothing more, the next three weeks,  
Of Guido — "Nor the Church sees Christ"  
thought I:

"Nothing is changed however, wine is wine  
And water only water in our house.  
Nor did I see that ugly doctor since  
That cure of the illness: just as I was cured,  
I am married, — neither scarecrow will return."

Three weeks, I chuckled — "How would Giulia  
stare,

And Tecla smile and Tisbe laugh outright,  
Were it not impudent for brides to talk!" —  
Until one morning, as I sat and sang  
At the broidery-frame alone i' the chamber, —  
loud

Voices, two, three together, sobbings too,  
And my name, "Guido," "Paolo," flung like  
stones

From each to the other! In I ran to see.  
There stood the very Guido and the priest  
With sly face, — formal but nowise afraid, —  
While Pietro seemed all red and angry, scarce  
Able to stutter out his wrath in words;  
And this it was that made my mother sob,  
As he reproached her — "You have murdered  
us,

Me and yourself and this our child beside!"  
Then Guido interposed, "Murdered or not,  
Be it enough your child is now my wife!  
I claim and come to take her." Paul put in,  
"Consider — kinsman, dare I term you so? —  
What is the good of your sagacity  
Except to counsel in a strait like this?  
I guarantee the parties man and wife  
Whether you like or loathe it, bless or ban.  
May spilt milk be put back within the bowl —  
The done thing, undone? You, it is, we look  
For counsel to, you fittest will advise!  
Since milk, though spilt and spoilt, does marble  
good,

Better we down on knees and scrub the floor,  
Thansigh, 'the waste would make a syllabub!'  
Help us so turn disaster to account,  
So predispose the groom, he needs shall grace  
The bride with favor from the very first,  
Not begin marriage an embittered man!"  
He smiled, — the game so wholly in his hands!  
While fast and faster sobbed Violante — "Ay,  
All of us murdered, past averting now!  
O my sin, O my secret!" and such like.

Then I began to half surmise the truth;  
Something had happened, low, mean, under-  
hand,

False, and my mother was to blame, and I  
To pity, whom all spoke of, none addressed:  
I was the chattel that had caused a crime.  
I stood mute, — those who tangled must untie  
The embroilment. Pietro cried, "Withdraw,  
my child!  
She is not helpful to the sacrifice

At this stage, — do you want the victim by  
While you discuss the value of her blood?  
For her sake, I consent to hear you talk:  
Go, child, and pray God help the innocent!"

I did go and was praying God, when came  
Violante, with eyes swollen and red enough,  
But movement on her mouth for make-believe  
Matters were somehow getting right again.  
She bade me sit down by her side and hear.  
"You are too young and cannot understand,  
Nor did your father understand at first.  
I wished to benefit all three of us,  
And when he failed to take my meaning, —  
why,

I tried to have my way at unaware —  
Obtained him the advantage he refused.  
As if I put before him wholesome food  
Instead of broken victual, — he finds change  
I' the viands, never cares to reason why,  
But falls to blaming me, would fling the plate  
From window, scandalize the neighborhood,  
Even while he smacks his lips, — men's way,  
my child!

But either you have prayed him unperverse  
Or I have talked him back into his wits:  
And Paolo was a help in time of need, —  
Guido, not much — my child, the way of men!  
A priest is more a woman than a man,  
And Paul did wonders to persuade. In short,  
Yes, he was wrong, your father sees and says;  
My scheme was worth attempting: and bears  
fruit,

Gives you a husband and a noble name,  
A palace and no end of pleasant things.  
What do you care about a handsome youth?  
They are so volatile, and tease their wives!  
This is the kind of man to keep the house.  
We lose no daughter, — gain a son, that's all:  
For 't is arranged we never separate,  
Nor miss, in our gray time of life, the tints  
Of you that color eve to match with morn.  
In good or ill, we share and share alike,  
And cast our lots into a common lap,  
And all three die together as we lived!  
Only, at Arezzo, — that's a Tuscan town,  
Not so large as this noisy Rome, no doubt,  
But older far and finer much, say folk, —  
In a great palace where you will be queen,  
Know the Archbishop and the Governor,  
And we see homage done you ere we die.  
Therefore, be good and pardon!" — "Pardon  
what?

You know things, I am very ignorant:  
All is right if you only will not cry!"

And so an end! Because a blank begins  
From when, at the word, she kissed me hard  
and hot,

And took me back to where my father leaned  
Opposite Guido — who stood eying him,  
As eyes the butcher the cast panting ox  
That feels his fate is come, nor struggles  
more, —

While Paul looked archly on, pricked brow at  
whiles

With the pen-point as to punish triumph  
there, —

And said, "Count Guido, take your lawful wife  
Until death part you!"

All since is one blank,  
Over and ended; a terrific dream.  
It is the good of dreams — so soon they go!  
Wake in a horror of heart-beats, you may —  
Cry, "The dread thing will never from my thoughts!"

Still, a few daylight doses of plain life,  
Cock-crow and sparrow-chirp, or bleat and bell  
Of goats that trot by, tinkling, to be milked;  
And when you rub your eyes awake and wide,  
Where is the harm o' the horror? Gone! So  
here.

I know I wake, — but from what? Blank, I  
say!

This is the note of evil: for good lasts.  
Even when Don Celestine bade "Search and  
find!"

For your soul's sake, remember what is past,  
The better to forgive it, — all in vain!  
What was fast getting indistinct before,  
Vanished outright. By special grace perhaps,  
Between that first calm and this last, four  
years

Vanish, — one quarter of my life, you know.  
I am held up, amid the nothingness,  
By one or two truths only — thence I hang,  
And there I live, — the rest is death or dream,  
All but those points of my support. I think  
Of what I saw at Rome once in the Square  
O' the Spaniards, opposite the Spanish House:  
There was a foreigner had trained a goat,  
A shuddering white woman of a beast,  
To climb up, stand straight on a pile of sticks  
Put close, which gave the creature room  
enough:

When she was settled there, he, one by one,  
Took away all the sticks, left just the four  
Whereon the little hoofs did really rest,  
There she kept firm, all underneath was air.  
So, what I hold by, are my prayer to God,  
My hope, that came in answer to the prayer,  
Some hand would interpose and save me —  
hand

Which proved to be my friend's hand: and, —  
blest bliss, —

That fancy which began so faint at first,  
That thrill of dawn's suffusion through my  
dark,

Which I perceive was promise of my child,  
The light his unborn face sent long before, —  
God's way of breaking the good news to flesh.  
That is all left now of those four bad years.  
Don Celestine urged, "But remember more!  
Other men's faults may help me find your own.  
I need the cruelty exposed, explained,  
Or how can I advise you to forgive?"  
He thought I could not properly forgive  
Unless I ceased forgetting, — which is true:  
For, bringing back reluctantly to mind  
My husband's treatment of me, — by a light  
That's later than my lifetime, I review  
And comprehend much and imagine more,  
And have but little to forgive at last.  
For now, — be fair and say, — is it not true

He was ill-used and cheated of his hope  
To get enriched by marriage? Marriage gave  
Me and no money, broke the compact so:  
He had a right to ask me on those terms,  
As Pietro and Violante to declare  
They would not give me: so the bargain stood:  
They broke it, and he felt himself aggrieved,  
Became unkind with me to punish them.  
They said 't was he began deception first,  
Nor, in one point whereto he pledged himself,  
Kept promise: what of that, suppose it were?  
Echoes die off, scarcely reverberate  
Forever, — why should ill keep echoing ill,  
And never let our ears have done with noise?  
Then my poor parents took the violent way  
To thwart him, — he must needs retaliate, —  
wrong,

Wrong, and all wrong, — better say, all blind!  
As I myself was, that is sure, who else  
Had understood the mystery: for his wife  
Was bound in some sort to help somehow  
there.

It seems as if I might have interposed,  
Blunted the edge of their resentment so,  
Since he vexed me because they first vexed  
him;

"I will entreat them to desist, submit,  
Give him the money and be poor in peace, —  
Certainly not go tell the world: perhaps  
He will grow quiet with his gains."

Yes, say

Something to this effect and you do well!  
But then you have to see first: I was blind.  
That is the fruit of all such wormy ways,  
The indirect, the unapproved of God:  
You cannot find their author's end and aim,  
Not even to substitute your good for bad,  
Your straight for the irregular; you stand  
Stupefied, profitless, as cow or sheep  
That miss a man's mind; anger him just twice  
By trial at repairing the first fault.  
Thus, when he blamed me, "You are a co-  
quette,

A lure-owl posturing to attract birds,  
You look love-lures at theatre and church,  
In walk, at window!" — that, I knew, was  
false:

But why he charged me falsely, whither sought  
To drive me by such charge, — how could I  
know?

So, unaware, I only made things worse.  
I tried to soothe him by abjuring walk,  
Window, church, theatre, for good and all,  
As if he had been in earnest: that, you know,  
Was nothing like the object of his charge.  
Yes, when I got my maid to supplicate  
The priest, whose name she read when she  
would read

Those feigned false letters I was forced to hear  
Though I could read no word of, — he should  
cease

Writing, — nay, if he minded prayer of mine,  
Cease from so much as even pass the street  
Whereon our house looked, — in my ignorance  
I was just thwarting Guido's true intent;  
Which was, to bring about a wicked change  
Of sport to earnest, tempt a thoughtless man  
To write indeed, and pass the house, and more,



Till both of us were taken in a crime.  
He ought not to have wished me thus act lies,  
Simulate folly: but — wrong or right, the wish —

I failed to apprehend its drift. How plain  
It follows, — if I fell into such fault,  
He also may have overreached the mark,  
Made mistake, by perversity of brain,  
I' the whole sad strange plot, the grotesque in-  
trigue

To make me and my friend unself ourselves,  
Be other man and woman than we were!  
Think it out, you who have the time! for  
me, —

I cannot say less; more I will not say.  
Leave it to God to cover and undo!  
Only, my dulness should not prove too much!  
— Not prove that in a certain other point  
Wherein my husband blamed me, — and you  
blame,

If I interpret smiles and shakes of head, —  
I was dull too. Oh, if I dared but speak!  
Must I speak? I am blamed that I forwent  
A way to make my husband's favor come.  
That is true: I was firm, withstood, refused . . .  
— Women as you are, how can I find the words?

I felt there was just one thing Guido claimed  
I had no right to give nor he to take;  
We being in estrangement, soul from soul:  
Till, when I sought help, the Archbishop smiled,  
Inquiring into privacies of life,  
— Said I was blamable — (he stands for God)  
Nowise entitled to exemption there.  
Then I obeyed, — as surely had obeyed  
Were the injunction "Since your husband bids,  
Swallow the burning coal he proffers you!"  
But I did wrong, and he gave wrong advice  
Though he were thrice Archbishop, — that, I  
know! —

Now I have got to die and see things clear.  
Remember I was barely twelve years old —  
A child at marriage: I was let alone  
For weeks, I told you, lived my child-life still  
Even at Arezzo, when I woke and found  
First . . . but I need not think of that again —  
Over and ended! Try and take the sense  
Of what I signify, if it must be so.  
After the first, my husband, for hate's sake,  
Said one eve, when the simpler cruelty  
Seemed somewhat dull at edge and fit to bear,  
"We have been man and wife six months al-  
most:

How long is this your comedy to last?  
Go this night to my chamber, not your own!"  
At which word, I did rush — most true the  
charge —

And gain the Archbishop's house — he stands  
for God —

And fall upon my knees and clasp his feet,  
Praying him hinder what my estranged soul  
Refused to bear, though patient of the rest:  
"Place me within a convent," I implored —  
"Let me henceforward lead the virgin life  
You praise in her you bid me imitate!"  
What did he answer? "Folly of ignorance!  
Know, daughter, circumstances make or mar  
Virginity, — 't is virtue or 't is vice.

That which was glory in the Mother of God  
Had been, for instance, damnable in Eve  
Created to be mother of mankind.  
Had Eve, in answer to her Maker's speech  
'Be fruitful, multiply, replenish earth' —  
Pouted 'But I choose rather to remain  
Single' — why, she had spared herself forthwith  
Further probation by the apple and snake,  
Been pushed straight out of Paradise! For  
see —

If motherhood be qualified impure,  
I catch you making God command Eve sin!  
— A blasphemy so like these Molinists',  
I must suspect you dip into their books."  
Then he pursued "'T was in your covenant!"

No! There my husband never used deceit.  
He never did by speech nor act imply  
"Because of our souls' yearning that we meet  
And mix in soul through flesh, which yours and  
mine

Wear and impress, and make their visible  
selves,

— All which means, for the love of you and me,  
Let us become one flesh, being one soul!"  
He only stipulated for the wealth;  
Honest so far. But when he spoke as plain —  
Dreadfully honest also — "Since our souls  
Stand each from each, a whole world's width  
between,

Give me the fleshly vesture I can reach  
And rend and leave just fit for hell to burn!" —  
Why, in God's name, for Guido's soul's own sake  
Imperilled by polluting mine, — I say,  
I did resist; would I had overcome!

My heart died out at the Archbishop's smile;  
— It seemed so stale and worn a way o' the  
world,

As though 't were nature frowning — "Here is  
Spring,

The sun shines as he shone at Adam's fall,  
The earth requires that warmth reach every-  
where:

What, must your patch of snow be saved for-  
sooth

Because you rather fancy snow than flowers?"  
Something in this style he began with me.

Last he said, savagely for a good man,  
"This explains why you call your husband  
harsh,

Harsh to you, harsh to whom you love. God's  
Bread!

The poor Count has to manage a mere child  
Whose parents leave untaught the simplest  
things

Their duty was and privilege to teach, —  
Goodwives' instruction, gossips' lore: they laugh  
And leave the Count the task, — or leave it  
me!"

Then I resolved to tell a frightful thing.  
"I am not ignorant, — know what I say,  
Declaring this is sought for hate, not love.  
Sir, you may hear things like almighty God.  
I tell you that my housemate, yes — the priest  
My husband's brother, Canon Girolamo —  
Has taught me what depraved and misnamed  
love

Means, and what outward signs denote the sin,  
For he solicits me and says he loves,  
The idle young priest with naught else to do.  
My husband sees this, knows this, and lets be.  
Is it your counsel I bear this beside?"

"— More scandal, and against a priest this time!

What, 't is the Canon now?" — less snap-  
pishly —

"Rise up, my child, for such a child you are,  
The rod were too advanced a punishment!  
Let's try the honeyed cake. A parable!  
'Without a parable spake he not to them.'  
There was a ripe round long black toothsome  
fruit,

Even a flower-fig, the prime boast of May;  
And, to the tree, said . . . either the spirit o'  
the fig,

Or, if we bring in men, the gardener,  
Archbishop of the orchard — had I time  
To try o' the two which fits in best: indeed  
It might be the Creator's self, but then  
The tree should bear an apple, I suppose, —  
Well, anyhow, one with authority said,  
'Ripe fig, burst skin, regale the fig-pecker —  
The bird whereof thou art a perquisite!' —  
'Nay,' with a founce, replied the restif fig,  
'I much prefer to keep my pulp myself:  
He may go breakfastless and dinnerless,  
Supperless of one crimson seed, for me!' —  
So, back she flopped into her bunch of leaves.  
He flew off, left her, — did the natural lord, —  
And lo, three hundred thousand bees and wasps  
Found her out, feasted on her to the shuck:  
Such gain the fig's that gave its bird no bite!  
The moral, — fools elude their proper lot,  
Tempt other fools, get ruined all alike.  
Therefore go home, embrace your husband  
quick!

Which if his Canon brother chance to see,  
He will the sooner back to book again."

So, home I did go; so, the worst befell:  
So, I had proof the Archbishop was just man,  
And hardly that, and certainly no more.  
For, miserable consequence to me,  
My husband's hatred waxed nor waned at all,  
His brother's boldness grew effrontery soon,  
And my last stay and comfort in myself  
Was forced from me: henceforth I looked to  
God

Only, nor cared my desecrated soul  
Should have fair walls, gay windows for the  
world.

God's glimmer, that came through the ruin-top,  
Was witness why all lights were quenched in-  
side:

Henceforth I asked God counsel, not mankind.

So, when I made the effort, freed myself,  
They said — "No care to save appearance here!  
How cynic, — when, — how wanton, were  
enough!"

— Adding, it all came of my mother's life —  
My own real mother, whom I never knew,  
Who did wrong (if she needs must have done  
wrong)

Through being all her life, not my four years,

At mercy of the hateful: every beast  
O' the field was wout to break that fountain-  
fence,

Trample the silver into mud so murk  
Heaven could not find itself reflected there.  
Now they cry, "Out on her, who, plashy pool,  
Bequeathed turbidity and bitterness  
To the daughter-stream where Guido dipt and  
drank!"

Well, since she had to bear this brand — let me!  
The rather do I understand her now, —  
From my experience of what hate calls love, —  
Much love might be in what their love called  
hate,

If she sold . . . what they call, sold . . . me,  
her child —

I shall believe she hoped in her poor heart  
That I at least might try be good and pure,  
Begin to live untempted, not go doomed  
And done with ere once found in fault, as she.  
Oh and, my mother, it all came to this?  
Why should I trust those that speak ill of you,  
When I mistrust who speaks even well of them?  
Why, since all bound to do me good, did harm,  
May not you, seeming as you harmed me most,  
Have meant to do most good — and feed your  
child

From bramble-bush, whom not one orchard-tree  
But drew bough back from, nor let one fruit  
fall?

This it was for you sacrificed your babe?  
Gained just this, giving your heart's hope away  
As I might give mine, loving it as you,  
If . . . but that never could be asked of me!

There, enough! I have my support again,  
Against the knowledge that my babe was, is,  
Will be mine only. Him, by death, I give  
Outright to God, without a further care, —  
But not to any parent in the world, —  
So to be safe: why is it we repine?  
What guardianship were safer could we choose?  
All human plans and projects come to naught:  
My life, and what I know of other lives,  
Prove that: no plan nor project! God shall  
care!

And now you are not tired? How patient then  
All of you, — oh yes, patient this long while  
Listening, and understanding, I am sure!  
Four days ago, when I was sound and well  
And like to live, no one would understand.  
People were kind, but smiled, "And what of  
him,

Your friend, whose tonsure the rich dark-brown  
hides?

There, there! — your lover, do we dream he  
was?

A priest too — never were such naughtiness!  
Still, he thinks many a long think, never fear,  
After the shy pale lady, — lay so light  
For a moment in his arms, the lucky one!"  
And so on: wherefore should I blame you  
much?

So we are made, such difference in minds,  
Such difference too in eyes that see the minds!  
That man, you misinterpret and misprise —

All this, now, — being not so strange to me,  
Used to such misconception day by day  
And broken-in to bear, — I bore, this time.



More quietly than woman should perhaps ;  
Repeated the mere truth and held my tongue.

Then he said, "Since you play the ignorant,  
I shall instruct you. This amour, — com-  
menced

Or finished or midway in act, all 's one. —  
'T is the town-talk ; so my revenge shall be.  
Does he presume because he is a priest ?  
I warn him that the sword I wear shall pink  
His lily-scented cassock through and through,  
Next time I catch him underneath your eaves !"  
But he had threatened with the sword so oft  
And, after all, not kept his promise. All  
I said was, "Let God save the innocent !  
Moreover, death is far from a bad fate.  
I shall go pray for you and me, not him ;  
And then I look to sleep, come death or, worse,  
Life." So, I slept.

There may have elapsed a week,  
When Margherita, — called my waiting-maid,  
Whom it is said my husband found too fair —  
Who stood and heard the charge and the reply,  
Who never once would let the matter rest  
From that night forward, but rang changes  
still

On this the thrust and that the shame, and how  
Good cause for jealousy cures jealous fools,  
And what a paragon was this same priest  
She talked about until I stopped my ears, —  
She said, "A week is gone ; you comb your  
hair,

Then go mope in a corner, cheek on palm,  
Till night comes round again, — so, waste a  
week

As if your husband menaced you in sport.  
Have not I some acquaintance with his tricks ?  
Oh no, he did not stab the serving-man  
Who made and sang the rhymes about me  
once !

For why ? They sent him to the wars next  
day.

Nor poisoned he the foreigner, my friend,  
Who wagered on the whiteness of my breast, —  
The swarth skins of our city in dispute :  
For, though he paid me proper compliment,  
The Count well knew he was besotted with  
Somebody else, a skin as black as ink,  
(As all the town knew save my foreigner) —  
He found and wedded presently, — "Why need  
Better revenge ?" — the Count asked. But  
what 's here ?

A priest that does not fight, and cannot wed,  
Yet must be dealt with ! If the Count took fire  
For the poor pastime of a minute, — me —  
What were the conflagration for yourself,  
Countess and lady-wife and all the rest ?  
'The priest will perish ; you will grieve too late :  
So shall the city-ladies' handsomest  
Frankest and libelest gentleman  
Die for you, to appease a scurvy dog  
Hanging 's too good for. Is there no escape ?  
Were it not simple Christian charity  
To warn the priest be on his guard, — save him  
Assured death, save yourself from causing it ?  
I meet him in the street. Give me a glove,  
A ring to show for token ! Mum 's the word !"

I answered, "If you were, as styled, my maid,  
I would command you : as you are, you say,  
My husband's intimate, — assist his wife  
Who can do nothing but entreat 'Be still !'  
Even if you speak truth and a crime is planned,  
Leave help to God as I am forced to do !  
There is no other help, or we should craze,  
Seeing such evil with no human cure.  
Reflect that God, who makes the storm desist,  
Can make an angry violent heart subside.  
Why should we venture teach him governance ?  
Never address me on this subject more !"

Next night she said, "But I went, all the same,  
— Ay, saw your Caponsacchi in his house,  
And come back stuffed with news I must out-  
pour.

I told him, 'Sir, my mistress is a stone :  
Why should you harm her for no good you  
get ?

For you do harm her — prowling about our place  
With the Count never distant half the street,  
Lurking at every corner, would you look !  
'T is certain she has witched you with a spell.  
Are there not other beauties at your beck ?  
We all know, Donna This and Monna That  
Die for a glance of yours, yet here you gaze !  
Go make them grateful, leave the stone its  
cold !'

And he — oh, he turned first white and then  
red,

And then — 'To her behest I bow myself,  
Whom I love with my body and my soul :  
Only a word ! the bowing ! See, I write  
One little word, no harm to see or hear !  
Then, hear no further !' This is what he  
wrote.

I know you cannot read, — therefore, let me !  
'My idol !' . . .

But I took it from her hand  
And tore it into shreds. "Why, join the rest  
Who harm me ? Have I ever done you  
wrong ?

People have told me 'tis you wrong myself :  
Let it suffice I either feel no wrong  
Or else forgive it, — yet you turn my foe !  
The others hunt me and you throw a noose !"

She muttered, "Have your wilful way !" I  
slept.

Whereupon . . . no, I leave my husband out !  
It is not to do him more hurt, I speak.  
Let it suffice, when misery was most,  
One day, I swooned and got a respite so.  
She stooped as I was slowly coming to,  
This Margherita, ever on my trace,  
And whispered — "Caponsacchi !"

If I drowned,  
But woke afloat i' the wave with upturned  
eyes,  
And found their first sight was a star ! I  
turned —  
For the first time, I let her have her will,  
Heard passively, — "The imposthume at such  
head,

One touch, one lancet-puncture would relieve, —

And still no glance the good physician's way  
Who rides you of the torment in a trice!  
Still he writes letters you refuse to hear.

He may prevent your husband, kill himself,  
So desperate and all fordone is he!

Just hear the pretty verse he made to-day!  
A sonnet from Mirtillo. '*Peerless fair. . .*'

All poetry is difficult to read,

— The sense of it is, anyhow, he seeks  
Leave to contrive you an escape from hell,  
And for that purpose asks an interview.

I can write, I can grant it in your name,  
Or, what is better, lead you to his house.  
Your husband dashes you against the stones;  
This man would place each fragment in a  
shrine:

You hate him, love your husband!"

I returned,

"It is not true I love my husband, — no,  
Nor hate this man. I listen while you speak,  
— Assured that what you say is false, the  
same:

Much as when once, to me a little child,  
A rough gaunt man in rags, with eyes on fire,  
A crowd of boys and idlers at his heels,  
Rushed as I crossed the Square, and held my  
head

In his two hands, 'Here's she will let me  
speak!

You little girl, whose eyes do good to mine,  
I am the Pope, am Sextus, now the Sixth;  
And that Twelfth Innocent, proclaimed to-day,  
Is Lucifer disguised in human flesh!

The angels, met in conclave, crowned me!' —  
thus

He gibbered and I listened; but I knew  
All was delusion, ere folk interposed,  
'Unfasten him, the maniac!' Thus I know  
All your report of Caponsacchi false,  
Folly or dreaming: I have seen so much  
By that adventure at the spectacle,  
The face I fronted that one first, last time:  
He would belie it by such words and thoughts.  
Therefore while you profess to show him me,  
I ever see his own face. Get you gone!"

"— That will I, nor once open mouth again, —  
No, by Saint Joseph and the Holy Ghost!  
On your head be the damage, so adieu!"

And so more days, more deeds I must forget,  
Till . . . what a strange thing now is to de-  
clare!

Since I say anything, say all if true!  
And how my life seems lengthened as to serve!  
It may be idle or inopportune,  
But, true? — why, what was all I said but  
truth,

Even when I found that such as are untrue  
Could only take the truth in through a lie?  
Now — I am speaking truth to the Truth's self:  
God will lend credit to my words this time.

It had got half through April. I arose  
One vivid daybreak, — who had gone to bed

In the old way my wont those last three years,  
Careless until, the cup drained, I should die.

The last sound in my ear, the over-night,  
Had been a something let drop on the sly  
In prattle by Margherita, "Soon enough  
Gayeties end, now Easter's past: a week,  
And the Archbishop gets him back to  
Rome, —

Every one leaves the town for Rome, this  
Spring, —

Even Caponsacchi, out of heart and hope,  
Resigns himself and follows with the flock."  
I heard this drop and drop like rain outside  
Fast-falling through the darkness while she  
spoke:

So had I heard with like indifference,  
"And Michael's pair of wings will arrive first  
At Rome, to introduce the company,  
And bear him from our picture where he fights  
Satan, — expect to have that dragon loose  
And never a defender!" — my sole thought  
Being still, as night came, "Done, another  
day!

How good to sleep and so get nearer death!" —  
When, what, first thing at daybreak, pierced the  
sleep

With a summons to me? Up I sprang alive,  
Light in me, light without me, everywhere  
Change! A broad yellow sunbeam was let  
fall

From heaven to earth, — a sudden drawbridge  
lay,

Along which marched a myriad merry motes,  
Mocking the flies that crossed them and re-  
crossed

In rival dance, companions new-born too.  
On the house-eaves, a dripping shag of weed  
Shook diamonds on each dull gray lattice-  
square,

As first one, then another bird leapt by,  
And light was off, and lo was back again,  
Always with one voice, — where are two such  
joys? —

The blessed building-sparrow! I stepped  
forth,  
Stood on the terrace, — o'er the roofs, such  
sky!

My heart sang, "I too am to go away,  
I too have something I must care about,  
Carry away with me to Rome, to Rome!  
The bird brings hither sticks and hairs and  
wool,

And nowhere else i' the world; what fly breaks  
rank,

Falls out of the procession that befits,  
From window here to window there, with all  
The world to choose, — so well he knows his  
course?

I have my purpose and my motive too,  
My march to Rome, like any bird or fly!  
Had I been dead! How right to be alive!  
Last night I almost prayed for leave to die,  
Wished Guido all his pleasure with the sword  
Or the poison, — poison, sword, was but a trick,  
Harmless, may God forgive him the poor jest!  
My life is charmed, will last till I reach Rome!  
Yesterday, but for the sin, — ah, nameless be  
The deed I could have dared against myself!

Now — see if I will touch an unripe fruit,  
And risk the health I want to have and use !  
Not to live, now, would be the wickedness, —  
For life means to make haste and go to Rome  
And leave Arezzo, leave all woes at once ! ”

Now, understand here, by no means mistake !  
Long ago had I tried to leave that house  
When it seemed such procedure would stop  
sin ;  
And still failed more the more I tried — at  
first

The Archbishop, as I told you, — next, our  
lord

The Governor, — indeed I found my way,  
I went to the great palace where he rules,  
Though I knew well 't was he who, — when I  
gave

A jewel or two, themselves had given me,  
Back to my parents, — since they wanted bread,  
They who had never let me want a nosegay, —  
he

Spoke of the jail for felons, if they kept  
What was first theirs, then mine, so doubly  
theirs,

Though all the while my husband's most of all !  
I knew well who had spoke the word wrought  
this :

Yet, being in extremity, I fled  
To the Governor, as I say, — scarce opened  
lip

When — the cold cruel snicker close behind —  
Guido was on my trace, already there,  
Exchanging nod and wink for shrug and smile,  
And I — pushed back to him and, for my pains,  
Paid with . . . but why remember what is  
past ?

I sought out a poor friar the people call  
The Roman, and confessed my sin which came  
Of their sin, — that fact could not be re-  
pressed, —

The frightfulness of my despair in God :  
And feeling, through the grate, his horror  
shake,

Implored him, “ Write for me who cannot  
write,

Apprise my parents, make them rescue me !  
You bid me be courageous and trust God :  
Do you in turn dare somewhat, trust and  
write,

‘ Dear friends, who used to be my parents once,  
And now declare you have no part in me,  
This is some riddle I want wit to solve,  
Since you must love me with no difference,  
Even suppose you altered, — there's your hate,  
To ask for: hate of you two dearest ones  
I shall find liker love than love found here,  
If husbands love their wives. Take me away  
And hate me as you do the gnats and fleas,  
Even the scorpions ! How I shall rejoice ! ’  
Write that and save me ! ” And he promised  
— wrote

Or did not write ; things never changed at all :  
He was not like the Augustinian here !

Last, in a desperation I appealed  
To friends, whoever wished me better days,  
To Guillichini, that's of kin, — “ What, I —  
Travel to Rome with you ? A flying gout

Bids me deny my heart and mind my leg ! ”  
Then I tried Conti, used to brave — laugh back  
The louring thunder when his cousin scowled  
At me protected by his presence : “ You —  
Who well know what you cannot save me  
from, —

Carry me off ! What frightens you, a priest ? ”  
He shook his head, looked grave — “ Above my  
strength !

Guido has claws that scratch, shows feline  
teeth ;

A formidabler foe than I dare fret :  
Give me a dog to deal with, twice the size !

Of course I am a priest and Canon too,  
But . . . by the bye . . . though both, not  
quite so bold

As he, my fellow-Canon, brother-priest,  
The personage in such ill odor here  
Because of the reports — pure birth o' the  
brain !

Our Caponsacchi, he's your true Saint George  
To slay the monster, set the Princess free,  
And have the whole High-Altar to himself :  
I always think so when I see that piece  
I' the Pieve, that's his church and mine, you  
know :

Though you drop eyes at mention of his name ! ”

That name had got to take a half-grotesque  
Half-ominous, wholly enigmatic sense,  
Like any by-word, broken bit of song  
Born with a meaning, changed by mouth and  
mouth

That mix it in a sneer or smile, as chance  
Bids, till it now means naught but ugliness  
And perhaps shame.

— All this intends to say,  
That, over-night, the notion of escape  
Had seemed distemper, dreaming ; and the  
name, —

Not the man, but the name of him, thus made  
Into a mockery and disgrace, — why, she  
Who uttered it persistently, had laughed,  
“ I name his name, and there you start and  
wine

As criminal from the red tongs' touch ! ” — yet  
now,

Now, as I stood letting morn bathe me bright,  
Choosing which butterfly should bear my  
news, —

The white, the brown one, or that tinier blue, —  
The Margherita, I detested so,  
In she came — “ The fine day, the good Spring  
time !

What, up and out at window ? That is best,  
No thought of Caponsacchi ? — who stood  
there

All night on one leg, like the sentry crane,  
Under the pelting of your water-spout —  
Looked last look at your lattice ere he leave  
Our city, bury his dead hope at Rome.

Ay, go to looking-glass and make you fine,  
While he may die ere touch one least loose  
hair

You drag at with the comb in such a rage ! ”

I turned — “ Tell Caponsacchi he may come ! ”



"Tell him to come? Ah, but, for charity,  
A truce to fooling! Come? What, — come  
this eve?  
Peter and Paul! But I see through the trick!  
Yes, come, and take a flower-pot on his head.  
Flung from your terrace! No joke, sincere  
truth?"

How plainly I perceived hell flash and fade  
O' the face of her, — the doubt that first paled  
joy,

Then, final reassurance I indeed  
Was caught now, never to be free again!  
What did I care? — who felt myself of force  
To play with silk, and spurn the horsehair-  
springe.

"But — do you know that I have bade him  
come,  
And in your own name? I presumed so much,  
Knowing the thing you needed in your heart.  
But somehow — what had I to show in proof?  
He would not come: half-promised, that was  
all,  
And wrote the letters you refused to read.  
What is the message that shall move him  
now?"

"After the Ave Maria, at first dark,  
I will be standing on the terrace, say!"

"I would I had a good long lock of hair  
Should prove I was not lying! Never mind!"

Off she went — "May he not refuse, that's  
all —  
Fearing a trick!"

I answered, "He will come."  
And, all day, I sent prayer like incense up  
To God the strong, God the beneficent,  
God ever mindful in all strife and strait,  
Who, for our own good, makes the need ex-  
treme,

Till at the last he puts forth might and saves.  
An old rhyme came into my head and rang  
Of how a virgin, for the faith of God,  
Hid herself, from the Paynims that pursued,  
In a cave's heart; until a thunderstone,  
Wrapped in a flame, revealed the couch and  
prey:

And they laughed — "Thanks to lightning,  
ours at last!"  
And she cried, "Wrath of God, assert his  
love!"

Servant of God, thou fire, befriend his child!"  
And lo, the fire she grasped at, fixed its flash,  
Lay in her hand a calm cold dreadful sword  
She brandished till pursuers strewed the  
ground,

So did the souls within them die away,  
As o'er the prostrate bodies, sworded, safe,  
She walked forth to the solitudes and Christ:  
So should I grasp the lightning and be saved!

And still, as the day wore, the trouble grew  
Whereby I guessed there would be born a star,  
Until at an intense throe of the dusk,

I started up, was pushed, I dare to say,  
Out on the terrace, leaned and looked at last  
Where the deliverer waited me: the same  
Silent and solemn face, I first descried  
At the spectacle, confronted mine once more.

So was that minute twice vouchsafed me, so  
The manhood, wasted then, was still at watch  
To save me yet a second time: no change  
Here, though all else changed in the changing  
world!

I spoke on the instant, as my duty bade,  
In some such sense as this, whatever the phrase.

"Friend, foolish words were borne from you to  
me;  
Your soul behind them is the pure strong wind,  
Not dust and feathers which its breath may  
bear:

These to the witless seem the wind itself,  
Since proving thus the first of it they feel.  
If by mischance you blew offence my way,  
The straws are dropt, the wind desists no whit,  
And how such strays were caught up in the  
street

And took a motion from you, why inquire?  
I speak to the strong soul, no weak disguise.  
If it be truth, — why should I doubt it truth? —  
You serve God specially, as priests are bound,  
And care about me, stranger as I am,  
So far as wish my good, that — miracle  
I take to imitate he wills you serve  
By saying me, — what else can he direct?  
Here is the service. Since a long while now,  
I am in course of being put to death:  
While death concerned nothing but me, I bowed  
The head and bade, in heart, my husband  
strike.

Now I imperil something more, it seems,  
Something that's trulier me than this myself,  
Something I trust in God and you to save.  
You go to Rome, they tell me: take me there.  
Put me back with my people!"

He replied —  
The first word I heard ever from his lips,  
All himself in it, — an eternity  
Of speech, to match the immeasurable depth  
O' the soul that then broke silence — "I am  
yours."

So did the star rise, soon to lead my step,  
Lead on, nor pause before it should stand still  
Above the House o' the Babe, — my babe to be,  
That knew me first and thus made me know  
him,

That had his right of life and claim on mine,  
And would not let me die till he was born,  
But pricked me at the heart to save us both,  
Saying, "Have you the will? Leave God the  
way!"

And the way was Caponsacchi — "mine," thank  
God!

He was mine, he is mine, he will be mine.

No pause 't the leading and the light! I know,  
Next night there was a cloud came, and not he:

But I prayed through the darkness till it broke  
And let him shine. The second night, he came.

"The plan is rash; the project desperate:  
In such a flight needs must I risk your life,  
Give food for falsehood, folly or mistake,  
Ground for your husband's rancor and revenge"—

So he began again, with the same face.  
I felt that, the same loyalty — one star  
Turning now red that was so white before —  
One service apprehended newly: just  
A word of mine and there the white was back!

"No, friend, for you will take me! 'T is your-  
self

Risk all, not I, — who let you, for I trust  
In the compensating great God: enough!  
I know you: when is it that you will come?"

"To-morrow at the day's dawn." Then I heard  
What I should do: how to prepare for flight  
And where to fly.

That night my husband bade  
"— You, whom I loathe, beware you break my  
sleep  
This whole night! Couch beside me like the  
corpse  
I would you were!" The rest you know, I  
think —  
How I found Caponsacchi and escaped.

And this man, men call sinner? Jesus Christ!  
Of whom men said, with mouths Thyself  
mad'st once,

"He hath a devil" — say he was Thy saint,  
My Caponsacchi! Shield and show — unshroud  
In Thine own time the glory of the soul  
If aught obscure, — if ink-spot, from vile pens  
Scribbling a charge against him — (I was glad  
Then, for the first time, that I could not  
write) —

Flirted his way, have flecked the blaze!

For me,  
'T is otherwise: let men take, sift my thoughts  
— Thoughts I throw like the flax for sun to  
bleach!

I did pray, do pray, in the prayer shall die,  
"Oh, to have Caponsacchi for my guide!"  
Ever the face upturned to mine, the hand  
Holding my hand across the world, — a sense  
That reads, as only such can read, the mark  
God sets on woman, signifying so  
She should — shall peradventure — be divine;  
Yet 'ware, the while, how weakness mars the  
print

And makes confusion, leaves the thing men  
see,

— Not this man sees, — who from his soul, re-  
writes

The obliterated charter, — love and strength  
Mending what's marred. "So kneels a vo-  
tarist,

Weeds some poor waste traditionary plot  
Where shrine once was, where temple yet may  
be,

Purging the place but worshipping the while,  
By faith and not by sight, sight clearest so, —  
Such way the saints work," — says Don Ce-  
lestine.

But I, not privileged to see a saint  
Of old when such walked earth with crown and  
palm,

If I call "saint" what saints call something  
else —

The saints must bear with me, impute the fault  
To a soul i' the bud, so starved by ignorance,  
Stinted of warmth, it will not blow this year  
Nor recognize the orb which Spring-flowers  
know.

But if meanwhile some insect with a heart  
Worth floods of lazy music, spendthrift joy —  
Some fire-fly renounced Spring for my dwarfed  
cup,

Crept close to me, brought lustre for the dark,  
Comfort against the cold, — what though ex-  
cess

Of comfort should miscall the creature — sun?  
What did the sun to hinder while harsh hands  
Petal by petal, crude and colorless,  
Tore me? This one heart gave me all the  
Spring!

Is all told? There's the journey: and where's  
time

To tell you how that heart burst out in shine?  
Yet certain points do press on me too hard.  
Each place must have a name, though I forget:  
How strange it was — there where the plain  
begins

And the small river mitigates its flow —  
When eve was fading fast, and my soul sank,  
And he divined what surge of bitterness,  
In overtaking me, would float me back  
Whence I was carried by the striding day —  
So, — "This gray place was famous once," said  
he —

And he began that legend of the place  
As if in answer to the unspoken fear,  
And told me all about a brave man dead,  
Which lifted me and let my soul go on!  
How did he know too — at that town's approach  
By the rock-side — that in coming near the  
signs

Of life, the house-roofs and the church and  
tower,

I saw the old boundary and wall o' the world  
Rise plain as ever round me, hard and cold,  
As if the broken circlet joined again,  
Tightened itself about me with no break, —  
As if the town would turn Arezzo's self, —  
The husband there, — the friends my enemies,  
All ranged against me, not an avenue  
To try, but would be blocked and drive me  
back

On him, — this other, . . . oh the heart in that!  
Did not he find, bring, put into my arms  
A new-born babe? — and I saw faces beam  
Of the young mother proud to teach me joy,  
And gossips round expecting my surprise  
At the sudden hole through earth that lets in  
heaven.

I could believe himself by his strong will  
Had woven around me what I thought the world

We went along in, every circumstance,  
Towns, flowers and faces, all things helped so  
well !

For, through the journey, was it natural  
Such comfort should arise from first to last ?  
As I look back, all is one milky way ;  
Still bettered more, the more remembered, so  
Do new stars bud while I but search for old,  
And fill all gaps i' the glory, and grow him —  
Him I now see make the shine everywhere.  
Even at the last when the bewildered flesh,  
The cloud of weariness about my soul  
Clogging too heavily, sucked down all sense, —  
Still its last voice was, "He will watch and  
care ;

Let the strength go, I am content : he stays !"  
I doubt not he did stay and care for all —  
From that sick minute when the head swam  
round,  
And the eyes looked their last and died on  
him,

As in his arms he caught me, and, you say,  
Carried me in, that tragical red eve,  
And laid me where I next returned to life  
In the other red of morning, two red plates  
That crushed together, crushed the time be-  
tween,

And are since then a solid fire to me, —  
When in, my dreadful husband and the world  
Broke, — and I saw him, master, by hell's right,  
And saw my angel helplessly held back  
By guards that helped the malice — the lamb  
prone,

The serpent towering and triumphant — then  
Came all the strength back in a sudden swell,  
I did for once see right, do right, give tongue  
The adequate protest : for a worm must turn  
If it would have its wrong observed by God.  
I did spring up, attempt to thrust aside  
That ice-block 'twixt the sun and me, lay low  
The neutralizer of all good and truth.  
If I sinned so, — never obey voice more  
O' the Just and Terrible, who bids us —  
"Bear !"

Not — "Stand by, bear to see my angels bear !"  
I am clear it was on impulse to serve God  
Not save myself, — no — nor my child unborn !  
Had I else waited patiently till now ? —  
Who saw my old kind parents, silly-sooth  
And too much trustful, for their worst of faults,  
Cheated, browbeaten, stripped and starved, cast  
out

Into the kennel : I remonstrated,  
Then sank to silence, for, — their woes at end,  
Themselves gone, — only I was left to plague.  
If only I was threatened and belied,  
What matter ? I could bear it and did bear ;  
It was a comfort, still one lot for all :  
They were not persecuted for my sake  
And I, estranged, the single happy one.  
But when at last, all by myself I stood  
Obeying the clear voice which bade me rise,  
Not for my own sake but my babe unborn,  
And take the angel's hand was sent to help —  
And found the old adversary athwart the path —  
Not my hand simply struck from the angel's,  
but

The very angel's self made foul i' the face

By the fiend who struck there, — that I would  
not bear,

That only I resisted ! So, my first  
And last resistance was invincible.  
Prayers move God ; threats, and nothing else,  
move me !

I must have prayed a man as he were God  
When I implored the Governor to right  
My parents' wrongs : the answer was a smile.  
The Archbishop, — did I clasp his feet enough,  
Hide my face hotly on them, while I told  
More than I dared make my own mother know ?  
The profit was — compassion and a jest.  
This time, the foolish prayers were done with,  
right

Used might, and solemnized the sport at once.  
All was against the combat : vantage, mine ?  
The runaway avowed, the accomplice-wife,  
In company with the plan-conceiving priest ?  
Yet, shame thus rank and patent, I struck,  
bare,  
At foe from head to foot in magic mail,  
And off it withered, cobweb-armory  
Against the lightning ! 'T was truth singed the  
lies  
And saved me, not the vain sword nor weak  
speech !

You see, I will not have the service fail !  
I say, the angel saved me : I am safe !  
Others may want and wish, I wish nor want  
One point o' the circle plainer, where I stand  
Traced round about with white to front the  
world.

What of the calumny I came across,  
What o' the way to the end ? — the end crowns  
all.

The judges judged aright i' the main, gave me  
The uttermost of my heart's desire, a truce  
From torture and Arezzo, balm for hurt,  
With the quiet nuns, — God recompense the  
good !

Who said and sang away the ugly past.  
And, when my final fortune was revealed,  
What safety, while, amid my parents' arms,  
My babe was given me ! Yes, he saved my  
babe :

It would not have peeped forth, the bird-like  
thing,

Through that Arezzo noise and trouble : back  
Had it returned nor ever let me see !  
But the sweet peace cured all, and let me live  
And give my bird the life among the leaves  
God meant him ! Weeks and months of que-  
tude,

I could lie in such peace and learn so much —  
Begin the task, I see how needful now,  
Of understanding somewhat of my past, —  
Know life a little, I should leave so soon.  
Therefore, because this man restored my soul,  
All has been right ; I have gained my gain, en-  
joyed

As well as suffered, — nay, got foretaste too  
Of better life beginning where this ends —  
All through the breathing-while allowed me  
thus,

Which let good premonitions reach my soul  
Unthwarted, and benignant influence flow



And interpenetrate and change my heart,  
Uncrossed by what was wicked, — nay, unkind.  
For, as the weakness of my time drew nigh,  
Nobody did me one disservice more,  
Spoke coldly or looked strangely, broke the love  
I lay in the arms of, till my boy was born,  
Born all in love, with naught to spoil the bliss  
A whole long fortnight: in a life like mine  
A fortnight filled with bliss is long and much.  
All women are not mothers of a boy,  
Though they live twice the length of my whole  
life,

And, as they fancy, happily all the same.  
There I lay, then, all my great fortnight long,  
As if it would continue, broaden out  
Happily more and more, and lead to heaven:  
Christmas before me, — was not that a chance?  
I never realized God's birth before —  
How he grew likest God in being born.  
This time I felt like Mary, had my babe  
Lying a little on my breast like hers.  
So all went on till, just four days ago —  
The night and the tap.

Oh, it shall be success  
To the whole of our poor family! My friends  
. . . Nay, father and mother, — give me back  
my word!

They have been rudely stripped of life, disgraced  
Like children who must needs go clothed too  
fine,

Carry the garb of Carnival in Lent.  
If they too much affected frippery,  
They have been punished and submit them-  
selves,

Say no word: all is over, they see God  
Who will not be extreme to mark their fault  
Or he had granted respite: they are safe.

For that most woeful man my husband once,  
Who, needing respite, still draws vital breath,  
I — pardon him? So far as lies in me,  
I give him for his good the life he takes,  
Praying the world will therefore acquiesce.  
Let him make God amends, — none, none to  
me

Who thank him rather that, whereas strange  
fate

Mockingly styled him husband and me wife,  
Himself this way at least pronounced divorce,  
Blotted the marriage-bond: this blood of mine  
Flies forth exultingly at any door,  
Washes the parchment white, and thanks the  
blow.

We shall not meet in this world nor the next,  
But where will God be absent? In his face  
Is light, but in his shadow healing too:  
Let Guido touch the shadow and be healed!  
And as my presence was importunate, —  
My earthly good, temptation and a snare, —  
Nothing about me but drew somehow down  
His hate upon me, — somewhat so excused  
Therefore, since hate was thus the truth of  
him, —

May my evanishment forevermore  
Help further to relieve the heart that cast  
Such object of its natural loathing forth!  
So he was made; he nowhere made himself:

I could not love him, but his mother did.  
His soul has never lain beside my soul;  
But for the unresisting body, — thanks!  
He burned that garment spotted by the flesh.  
Whatever he touched is rightly ruined: plague  
It caught, and disinfection it had craved  
Still but for Guido; I am saved through him  
So as by fire; to him — thanks and farewell!

Even for my babe, my boy, there's safety  
thence —

From the sudden death of me, I mean: we poor  
Weak souls, how we endeavor to be strong!

I was already using up my life, —  
This portion, now, should do him such a good,  
This other go to keep off such an ill!

The great life; see, a breath and it is gone!

So is detached, so left all by itself

The little life, the fact which means so much.

Shall not God stoop the kindlier to his work,

His marvel of creation, foot would crush,

Now that the hand he trusted to receive

And hold it, lets the treasure fall perforce?

The better; he shall have in orphanage

His own way all the clearer: if my babe

Outlived the hour — and he has lived two

weeks —

It is through God who knows I am not by.

Who is it makes the soft gold hair turn black,

And sets the tongue, might lie so long at rest,

Trying to talk? Let us leave God alone!

Why should I doubt he will explain in time

What I feel now, but fail to find the words?

My babe nor was, nor is, nor yet shall be

Count Guido Franceschini's child at all —

Only his mother's, born of love not hate!

So shall I have my rights in after-time.

It seems absurd, impossible to-day;

So seems so much else, not explained but

known!

Ah! Friends, I thank and bless you every one!

No more now: I withdraw from earth and

man

To my own soul, compose myself for God.

Well, and there is more! Yes, my end of

breath

Shall bear away my soul in being true!

He is still here, not outside with the world,

Here, here, I have him in his rightful place!

'T is now, when I am most upon the move,

I feel for what I verily find — again

The face, again the eyes, again, through all,

The heart and its immeasurable love

Of my one friend, my only, all my own,

Who put his breast between the spears and

me.

Ever with Caponsacchi! Otherwise

Here alone would be failure, loss to me —

How much more loss to him, with life debarred

From giving life, love locked from love's dis-

play,

The day-star stopped its task that makes night

more!

O lover of my life, O soldier-saint,

No work begun shall ever pause for death!

Love will be helpful to me more and more

I the coming course, the new path I must tread —  
My weak hand in thy strong hand, strong for that!

Tell him that if I seem without him now,  
That's the world's insight! Oh, he understands!

He is at Civita — do I once doubt  
The world again is holding us apart?  
He had been here, displayed in my behalf  
The broad brow that reverberates the truth,  
And flashed the word God gave him, back to man!

I know where the free soul is flown! My fate  
Will have been hard for even him to bear:  
Let it confirm him in the trust of God,  
Showing how holly he dared the deed!  
And, for the rest, — say, from the deed, no touch

Of harm came, but all good, all happiness,  
Not one faint fleck of failure! Why explain?  
What I see, oh, he sees and how much more!  
Tell him, — I know not wherefore the true word

Should fade and fall unuttered at the last —  
It was the name of him I sprang to meet  
When came the knock, the summons and the end.

"My great heart, my strong hand are back again!"

I would have sprung to these, beckoning across  
Murder and hell gigantic and distinct  
O' the threshold, posted to exclude me heaven:  
He is ordained to call and I to come!  
Do not the dead wear flowers when dressed for God?

Say, — I am all in flowers from head to foot!  
Say, — not one flower of all he said and did,  
Might seem to flit unnoticed, fade unknown,  
But dropped a seed, has grown a balsam-tree  
Whereof the blossoming perfumes the place  
At this supreme of moments! He is a priest;  
He cannot marry therefore, which is right:  
I think he would not marry if he could.  
Marriage on earth seems such a counterfeit,  
Mere imitation of the inimitable:  
In heaven we have the real and true and sure.  
'T is there they neither marry nor are given  
In marriage but are as the angels: right,  
Oh how right that is, how like Jesus Christ  
To say that! Marriage-making for the earth,  
With: gold so much, — birth, power, repute so much,

Or beauty, youth so much, in lack of these!  
Be as the angels rather, who, apart,  
Know themselves into one, are found at length  
Married, but marry never, no, nor give  
In marriage; they are man and wife at once  
When the true time is: here we have to wait  
Not so long neither! Could we by a wish  
Have what we will and get the future now,  
Would we wish aught done undone in the past?  
So, let him wait God's instant men call years;  
Meantime hold hard by truth and his great soul,

Do out the duty! Through such souls alone  
God stooping shows sufficient of his light  
For us i' the dark to rise by. And I rise.

## VIII

DOMINUS HYACINTHUS DE ARCH-  
ANGELIS,

## PAUPERUM PROCURATOR

Ah, my Giacinto, he's no ruddy rogue,  
Is not Cinone? What, to-day we're eight?  
Seven and one's eight, I hope, old curly-pate!  
— Branches me out his verb-tree on the slate,  
*Amo -as -avi -atum -are -ans*,  
Up to -aturus, person, tense, and mood,  
*Quies me cum subjunctivo* (I could cry)  
And chews Corderius with his morning crust!  
Look eight years onward, and he's perched,  
he's perched

Dapper and deft on stool beside this chair,  
Cinozzo, Cinoncello, who but he?  
— Trying his milk-teeth on some crusty case  
Like this, papa shall triturate full soon  
To smooth Papinianian pulp!

It trots  
Already through my head, though noon be now,  
Does supper-time and what belongs to eve,  
Dispose, O Don, o' the day, first work then play!  
— The proverb bids. And "then" means,  
won't we hold

Our little yearly lovesome frolic feast,  
Cinnolo's birth-night, Cincicello's own,  
That makes gruff January grin perforce!  
For too contagious grows the mirth, the warmth  
Escaping from so many hearts at once —  
When the good wife, buxom and bonny yet,  
Jokes the hale grandsire, — such are just the sort

To go off suddenly, — he who hides the key  
O' the box beneath his pillow every night, —  
Which box may hold a parchment (some one thinks)

Will show a scribbled something like a name  
"Cinino, Cincicino," near the end,  
"To whom I give and I bequeath my lands,  
Estates, tenements, hereditaments,  
When I decease as honest grandsire ought."  
Wherefore — yet this one time again perhaps —  
Sha'n't my Orvieto fuddle his old nose!  
Then, uncles, one or the other, well i' the world,

May — drop in, merely? — trudge through rain and wind,

Rather! The smell-feasts rouse them at the hint

There's cookery in a certain dwelling-place!  
Gossips, too, each with keepsake in his poke,  
Will pick the way, thriffling lane by lantern-light,  
And so find door, put galligaskin off  
At entry of a decent domicile  
Cornered in snug Condotti, — all for love,  
All to crush cup with Cinucciato!

Well,  
Let others climb the heights o' the court, the camp!

How vain are chambering and wantonness,  
Revel and rout and pleasures that make mad!  
Commend me to home-joy, the family board,  
Altar and hearth! These, with a brisk career,

A source of honest profit and good fame,  
Just so much work as keeps the brain from  
rust,

Just so much play as lets the heart expand,  
Honoring God and serving man, — I say,  
These are reality, and all else, — fluff,  
Nutshell and naught, — thank Flaccus for the  
phrase!

Suppose I had been Fisc, yet bachelor!

Why, work with a will, then! Wherefore lazy  
now?

Turn up the hour-glass, whence no sand-grain  
slips

But should have done its duty to the saint  
O' the day, the son and heir that's eight years  
old!

Let law come dimple Cinoncino's cheek,  
And Latin duple Cinarello's chin,  
The while we spread him fine and toss him flat  
This pulp that makes the pancake, trim our  
mass

Of matter into Argument the First,  
Prime Pleading in defence of our accused,  
Which, once a-waft on paper wing, shall soar,  
Shall signalize before applause Rome  
What study, and mayhap some mother-wit,  
Can do toward making Master fop and Fisc  
Old bachelor Bottinius bite his thumb.  
Now, how good God is! How falls plumb to  
point

This murder, gives me Guido to defend  
Now, of all days i' the year, just when the  
boy

Verges on Virgil, reaches the right age  
For some such illustration from his sire,  
Stimulus to himself! One might wait years  
And never find the chance which now finds  
me!

The fact is, there's a blessing on the hearth,  
A special providence for fatherhood!  
Here's a man, and what's more, a noble, kills  
— Not sneakingly but almost with parade —  
Wife's father and wife's mother and wife's self  
That's mother's self of son and heir (like  
mine!)

— And here stand I, the favored advocate,  
Who pluck this flower o' the field, no Solomon  
Was ever clothed in glorious gold to match,  
And set the same in Cinoncino's cap!  
I defend Guido and his comrades — I!  
Pray God, I keep me humble: not to me —  
*Non nobis, Domine, sed tibi laus!*  
How the fop chuckled when they made him  
Fisc!

We'll beat you, my Bottinius, all for love,  
O' for our tribute to Cinotto's day!  
Why, 'sbuddikins, old Innocent himself  
May rub his eyes at the bustle, — ask "What's  
this

Rolling from out the rostrum, as a gust  
O' the *Pro Milone* had been prisoned there,  
And rattled Rome awake?" Awaken Rome,  
How can the Pope doze on in decency?  
He needs must wake up also, speak his word,  
Have his opinion like the rest of Rome,  
About this huge, this hurly-burly case:  
He wants who can excogitate the truth,

Give the result in speech, plain black and  
white,

To mumble in the mouth and make his own  
— A little changed, good man, a little changed!  
No matter, so his gratitude be moved,  
By when my Giacinto gets of age,  
Mindful of who thus helped him at a pinch,  
Archangelus *Procurator Pauperum* —  
And proved Hortensius *Redivivus*!

Whew!

To earn the *Est-est*, merit the minced herb  
That mollifies the liver's leathery slice,  
With here a goose-foot, there a cock's-comb  
stuck,

Cemented in an element of cheese!

I doubt if dainties do the grandsire good:  
Last June he had a sort of strangling . . . bah!  
He's his own master, and his will is made.  
So, liver fizz, law flit and Latin fly  
As we rub hands o'er dish by way of grace!  
May I lose cause if I vent one word more  
Except — with fresh-cut quill we ink the  
white —

*P-r-o-pro Guidone et Sociis.* There!

Count Guido married — or, in Latin due,  
What? *Duxit in uxorem*? — commonplace!  
*Tedas jugales iniiit, subiit*, — ha!  
He underwent the matrimonial torch?  
*Connubio stabili sibi junxit*, — hum!  
In stable bond of marriage bound his own?  
That's clear of any modern taint: and yet . .

Virgil is little help to who writes prose,  
He shall attack me Terence with the dawn,  
Shall Cinuccino! Mum, mind business, Sir!  
Thus circumstantially evolve we facts,  
*Ita se habet ideo series facti*:  
He wedded, — ah, with owls for augury!  
*Nupserat, heu sinistris avibus*,  
One of the blood Arezzo boasts her best,  
*Dominus Guido, nobili genere ortus*,  
*Pompilæ* . . .

But the version afterward!

Curb we this ardor! Notes alone, to-day,  
The speech to-morrow, and the Latin last:  
Such was the rule in Farinacci's time.  
Indeed I hitched it into verse and good.  
Unluckily, law quite absorbs a man,  
Or else I think I too had poetized.  
"Law is the pork substratum of the fry,  
Goose-foot and cock's-comb are Latinity," —  
And in this case, if circumstance assist,  
We'll garnish law with idiom, never fear!  
Out-of-the-way events extend our scope:  
For instance, when Bottini brings his charge,  
"That letter which you say Pompilia wrote,  
To criminate her parents and herself  
And disengage her husband from the coil, —  
That, Guido Franceschini wrote, say we:  
Because Pompilia could nor read nor write,  
Therefore he pencilled her such letter first,  
Then made her trace in ink the same again."  
— Ha, my Bottini, have I thee on hip?  
How will he turn this and break Tully's pate?  
"*Exstimandum*" (don't I hear the dog!)  
"*Quod Guido designaverit elementa*



*Dictæ epistolæ, quæ fuerint*  
*(Superinducto ab ea calamo)*  
*Notata atramento* " — there 's a style ! —  
*" Quia ipsa scribere nesciebat.*" Boh !  
 Now, my turn ! Either, *Insulse!* (I outburst)  
 Stupidly put ! Inane is the response,  
*Inanis est responsio*, or the like —  
 To wit, that each of all those characters,  
*Quod singula elementa epistolæ,*  
 Had first of all been traced for her by him,  
*Fuerant per eum prius designata,*  
 And then, the ink applied a-top of that,  
*Et deinde, superinducto calamo,*  
 The piece, she says, became her handiwork,  
*Per eam, efformata, ut ipsa asserit.*  
 Inane were such response ! (a second time : )  
 Her husband outlined her the whole, forsooth ?  
*Vir ejus lineabat epistolam ?*  
 What, she confesses that she wrote the thing,  
*Fatetur eam scripsisse,* (scorn that scathes !)  
 That she might pay obedience to her lord ?  
*Ut viro obtemperaret, apices*  
 (Here repeat each with proper varied phrase)  
*Eo designante, ipsaque calamum*  
*Super inducente ?* By such argument,  
*Ita pariter,* she seeks to show the same,  
 (Ay, by Saint Joseph and what saints you  
 please)  
*Epistolam ostendit, medius fidius,*  
 No voluntary deed but fruit of force !  
*Non voluntarie sed coacte scriptam !*  
 That 's the way to write Latin, friend my  
 Fise !  
 Bottini is a beast, one barbarous :  
 Look out for him when he attempts to say  
 " Armed with a pistol, Guido followed her !"  
 Will not I be beforehand with my Fise,  
 Cut away phrase by phrase from underfoot !  
*Guido Pompilius* — Guido thus his wife  
 Following with igneous engine, shall I have ?  
*Armis munitus igneis persequens —*  
*Arma sulphurea gestans,* sulphury arms,  
 Or, might one style a pistol — popping-piece ?  
*Armatus breviori sclopolo ?*  
 We 'll let him have been armed so, though it  
 make  
 Somewhat against us : I had thought to own —  
 Provided with a simple travelling-sword,  
*Ense solummodo viatorio*  
*Instructus :* but we 'll grant the pistol here :  
 Better we lost the cause than lacked the gird  
 At the Fise's Latin, lost the Judge's laugh !  
 It 's Venturini that decides for style.  
 Tommati rather goes upon the law.  
 So, as to law, —

Ah, but with law ne'er hope  
 To level the fellow, — don't I know his trick !  
 How he draws up, ducks under, twists aside !  
 He 's a lean-gutted hectic rascal, fine  
 As pale-haired red-eyed ferret which pretends  
 'T is ermine, pure soft snow from tail to snout.  
 He eludes law by piteous looks aloft.  
 Lets Latin glance off as he makes appeal  
 To saint that 's somewhere in the ceiling-top :  
 Do you suppose I don't conceive the beast ?  
 Plague of the ermine-vermin ! For it takes,  
 It takes, and here 's the fellow Fise, you see,

And Judge, you 'll not be long in seeing next !  
 Confound the fop — he 's now at work like me :  
 Enter his study, as I seem to do,  
 Hear him read out his writing to himself !  
 I know he writes as if he spoke : I hear  
 The hoarse shrill throat, see shut eyes, neck  
 shot-forth,  
 — I see him strain on tiptoe, soar and pour  
 Eloquence out, nor stay nor stint at all —  
 Perorate in the air, then quick to press  
 With the product ! What abuse of type and  
 sheet !  
 He 'll keep clear of my cast, my logic-throw,  
 Let argument slide, and then deliver swift  
 Some bowl from quite an unguessed point of  
 stand —  
 Having the luck o' the last word, the reply !  
 A plaguy cast, a mortifying stroke :  
 You face a fellow — cries, " So, there you  
 stand ?  
 But I discourteous jump clean o'er your head !  
 You take ship-carpentry for pilotage,  
 Stop rat-holes, while a sea sweeps through the  
 breach, —  
 Hammer and fortify at puny points ?  
 Do, clamp and tenon, make all tight and safe !  
 'T is here and here and here you ship a sea,  
 No good of your stopped leaks and littleness !"

Yet what do I name " little and a leak " ?  
 The main defence o' the murder's used to  
 death,  
 By this time, dry bare bones, no scrap we  
 pick :  
 Safer I worked the new, the unforeseen,  
 The nice by-stroke, the fine and improvised  
 Point that can titillate the brain o' the Bench  
 Torpid with over-teaching, long ago !  
 As if Tommati (that has heard, reheard  
 And heard again, first this side and then  
 that —  
 Guido and Pietro, Pietro and Guido, din  
 And dea. en, full three years, at each long ear)  
 Don't want amusement for instruction now,  
 Won't rather feel a flea run o'er his ribs,  
 Than a daw settle heavily on his head !  
 Oh, I was young and had the trick of fence,  
 Knew subtle pass and push with careless  
 right —  
 My left arm ever quiet behind back,  
 With dagger ready : not both hands to blade !  
 Puff and blow, put the strength out, Blunder-  
 bore !  
 There 's my subordinate, young Spreti, now,  
 Pedant and prig, — he 'll pant away at proof,  
 That 's his way !

Now for mine — to rub some life  
 Into one's choppy fingers this cold day !  
 I trust Cinuzzo ties on tippet, guards  
 The precious throat on which so much depends !  
 Guido must be all goose-flesh in his hole,  
 Despite the prison-straw : bad Carnival  
 For captives ! no sliced fry for him, poor  
 Count !

Carnival-time, — another providence !  
 The town a-swarm with strangers to amuse,

To edify, to give one's name and fame  
In charge of, till they find, some future day,  
Cintino come and claim it, his name too,  
Pledge of the pleasantness they owe papa —  
Who else was it cured Rome of her great  
qualms,

When she must needs have her own judgment ?  
— ay,

When all her topping wits had set to work,  
Pronounced already on the case : mere boys,  
Twice Cineruggiolo's age with half his sense,  
As good as tell me, when I cross the court,  
" Master Arcangeli ! " (plucking at my gown)  
" We can predict, we comprehend your play,  
We'll help you save your client." Tra-la-la !  
I've travelled ground, from childhood to this  
hour,

To have the town anticipate my track ?  
The old fox takes the plain and velvet path,  
The young hound's predilection, — prints the  
dew,

Don't he, to suit their pulpy pads of paw ?  
No ! Burying nose deep down i' the briery  
bush,

Thus I defend Count Guido.

Where are we weak ?

First, which is foremost in advantage too,  
Our murder, — we call, killing, — is a fact  
Confessed, defended, made a boast of : good !  
To think the Fisc claimed use of torture here,  
And got thereby avowal plump and plain  
That gives me just the chance I wanted, —  
scope

Not for brute-force but ingenuity,  
Explaining matters, not denying them !  
One may dispute, — as I am bound to do,  
And shall, — validity of process here :  
Inasmuch as a noble is exempt  
From torture which plebeians undergo  
In such a case : for law is lenient, lax,  
Remits the torture to a nobleman  
Unless suspicion be of twice the strength  
Attaches to a man born vulgarly :  
We don't eard silk with comb that dresses  
wool,

Moreover, 't was severity undue  
In this case, even had the lord been lout.  
What utters, on this head, our oracle,  
Our Farinacci, my Gamaliel erst,  
In those immortal " Questions " ? This I  
quote :

" Of all the tools at Law's disposal, sure  
That named *Vigiliarum* is the best —  
That is, the worst — to whoso needs must bear :  
Lasting, as it may do, from some seven hours  
To ten ; (beyond ten, we've no precedent ;  
Certain have touched their ten but, bah, they  
died !)

It does so efficaciously convince,  
That — speaking by much observation here —  
Out of each hundred cases, by my count,  
Never I knew of patients beyond four  
Withstand its taste, or less than ninety-six  
End by succumbing : only martyrs four,  
Of obstinate silence, guilty or no, — against  
Ninety-six full confessors, innocent  
Or otherwise, — so shrewd a tool have we !"  
No marvel either : in unwary hands.

Death on the spot is no rare consequence :  
As indeed all but happened in this case  
To one of ourselves, our young tough peasant-  
friend

The accomplice called Baldeschi : they were  
rough,

Dosed him with torture as you drench a horse,  
Not modify your treatment to a man :

So, two successive days he fainted dead,  
And only on the third essay, gave up,  
Confessed like flesh and blood. We could re-  
claim, —

Blockhead Bottini giving cause enough !  
But no, — we'll take it as spontaneously  
Confessed : we'll have the murder beyond  
doubt.

Ah, fortunate (the poet's word reversed)  
Inasmuch as we know our happiness !  
Had the antagonist left dubiety,  
Here were we proving murder a mere myth,  
And Guido innocent, ignorant, absent, — ay,  
Absent ! He was — why, where should Chris-  
tian be ? —

Engaged in visiting his proper church,  
The duty of us all at Christmas-time,  
When Caponsacchi, the seducer, stung  
To madness by his relegation, cast  
About him and contrived a remedy  
In murder : since opprobrium broke afresh,  
By birth o' the babe, on him the imputed sire.  
He it was quietly sought to smother up  
His shame and theirs together, — killed the  
three,

And fled — (go seek him where you please to  
search) —

Just at the time when Guido, touched by  
grace,

Devotions ended, hastened to the spot,  
Meaning to pardon his convicted wife,  
" Neither do I condemn thee, go in peace ! " —  
And thus arrived i' the nick of time to catch  
The charge o' the killing, though great-  
heartedly

He came but to forgive and bring to life.  
Doubt ye the force of Christmas on the soul ?  
" Is thine eye evil because mine is good ? "

So, doubtless, had I needed argue here  
But for the full confession round and sound !  
Thus might you wrong some kingly alchem-  
ist, —

Whose concern should not be with showing brass  
Transmuted into gold, but triumphing,  
Rather, about his gold changed out of brass,  
Not vulgarly to the mere sight and touch,  
But in the idea, the spiritual display,  
The apparition buoyed by winged words  
Hovering above its birthplace in the brain, —  
Thus would you wrong this excellent personage  
Forced, by the gross need, to gird apron round,  
Plant forge, light fire, ply bellows, — in a  
word,

Demonstrate : when a faulty pipkin's crack  
May disconcert you his presumptive truth !  
Here were I hanging to the testimony  
Of one of these poor rustics — four, ye gods !  
Whom the first taste of friend the Fiscal's cord  
May drive into undoing my whole speech,

Undoing, on his birthday, — what is worse, —  
My son and heir!

I wonder, all the same,  
Not so much at those peasants' lack of heart;  
But — Guido Franceschini, nobleman,  
Bear pain no better! Everybody knows  
It used once, when my father was a boy,  
To form a proper, nay, important point  
I' the education of our well-born youth,  
That they took torture handsomely at need,  
Without confessing in this clownish guise.  
Each noble had his rack for private use,  
And would, for the diversion of a guest,  
Bid it be set up in the yard of arms,  
And take thereon his hour of exercise, —  
Command the varletry stretch, strain their  
best,  
While friends looked on, admired my lord could  
smile  
'Mid tugging which had caused an ox to roar.  
Men are no longer men!

— And advocates

No longer Farinaeci, let us add,  
If I one more time fly from point proposed!  
So, *Vindicatio*, — here begins the speech!  
*Honoris causa*; thus we make our stand:  
Honor in us had injury, we prove.  
Or if we fail to prove such injury  
More than misprision of the fact, — what then?  
It is enough, authorities declare,  
If the result, the deed in question now,  
Be caused by confidence that injury  
Is veritable and no figment: since,  
What, though proved fancy afterward, seemed  
fact

At the time, they argue shall excuse result.  
That which we do, persuaded of good cause  
For what we do, hold justifiable! —  
So casuists bid: man, bound to do his best,  
They would not have him leave that best undone  
And mean to do his worst, — though fuller light  
Show best was worst and worst would have been  
best.

Act by the present light! — they ask of man.  
*Ultra quod hic non agitur*, besides  
It is not anyway our business here,  
*De probatione adulterii*,  
To prove what we thought crime was crime in-  
deed,

*Ad irrogandam pœnam*, and require  
Its punishment: such nowise do we seek:  
*Sed ad effectum*, but 'tis our concern,  
*Excusandi*, here to simply find excuse.  
*Occisorem*, for who did the killing-work,  
*Et ad illius defensionem*, (mark  
The difference) and defend the man, just that!

*Quo casu levior probatio*  
*Exuberaret*, to which end far lighter proof  
Suffices than the prior case would claim:  
It should be always harder to convict,  
In short, than to establish innocence.  
Therefore we shall demonstrate first of all  
That Honor is a gift of God to man  
Precious beyond compare: which natural sense  
Of human rectitude and purity, —  
Which white, man's soul is born with, — brooks  
no touch:

Therefore, the sensitivest spot of all,  
Wounded by any wafture breathed from black,  
Is — honor within honor, like the eye  
Centred i' the ball — the honor of our wife.  
Touch us o' the pupil of our honor, then,  
Not actually, — since so you slay outright, —  
But by a gesture simulating touch,  
Presumable mere menace of such taint, —  
This were our warrant for eruptive ire  
"To whose dominion I impose no end."

(Virgil, now, should not be too difficult  
To Cinonino, — say, the early books.  
Pen, truce to further gambols! *Poscimus*!)

Nor can revenge of injury done here  
To the honor proved the life and soul of us,  
Be too excessive, too extravagant:  
Such wrong seeks and must have complete re-  
venge.

Show we this, first, on the mere natural ground:  
Begin at the beginning, and proceed  
Incontrovertibly. Theodorici,  
In an apt sentence Cassiodorus cites,  
Propounds for basis of all household law —  
I hardly recollect it, but it ends,  
"Bird mates with bird, beast genders with his  
like,

And brooks no interference." Bird and beast?  
The very insects . . . if they wive or no,  
How dare I say when Aristotle doubts?  
But the presumption is they likewise wive,  
At least the nobler sorts; for take the bee  
As instance, — copying King Solomon, —  
Why that displeasure of the bee to aught  
Which savors of incontinency, makes  
The unchaste a very horror to the hive?  
Whence comes it bees obtain their epithet  
Of *castæ apes*, notably "the chaste"?  
Because, ingeniously saith Scaliger,  
(The young sage, — see his book of table-talk)  
"Such is their hatred of immodest act,  
They fall upon the offender, sting to death."  
I mind a passage much confirmative  
I' the *Idyllist* (though I read him Latinized) —  
"Why," asks a shepherd, "is this bank unfit  
For celebration of our vernal loves?"  
"Oh swain," returns the instructed shepherdess,  
"Bees swarm here, and would quick resent our  
warmth!"

Only cold-blooded fish lack instinct here,  
Nor gain nor guard connubiality:  
But beasts, quadrupedal, mammiferous,  
Do credit to their beasthood: witness him  
That Ælian cites, the noble elephant,  
(Or if not Ælian, somebody as sage)  
Who seeing, much offence beneath his nose,  
His master's friend exceed in courtesy  
The due allowance to his master's wife,  
Taught them good manners and killed both at  
once,

Making his master and the world admire.  
Indubitably, then, that master's self,  
Favored by circumstance, had done the same  
Or else stood clear rebuked by his own beast.  
*Adeo, ut qui honorem spernit*, thus,  
Who values his own honor not a straw, —  
*Et non recuperare curat*, nor



Labors by might and main to salve its wound,  
*Se ulciscendo*, by revenging him,  
*Nil differat a belluis*, is a brute,  
*Quinimo irrationabilior*  
*Ipsimet belluis*, nay, contrariwise,  
 Much more irrational than brutes themselves,  
 Should be considered, *reputetur*! How?  
 If a poor animal feel honor smart,  
 Taught by blind instinct nature plants in him,  
 Shall man, — confessed creation's master-  
   stroke,  
 Nay, intellectual glory, nay, a god,  
 Nay, of the nature of my Judges here, —  
 Shall man prove the insensible, the block,  
 The blot o' the earth he crawls on to disgrace?  
 (Come, that's both solid and poetic!) Man  
 Derogate, live for the low tastes alone,  
 Mean creeping cares about the animal life?  
*Absit* such homage to vile flesh and blood!

(May Gigia have remembered, nothing stings  
 Fried liver out of its monotony  
 Of richness, like a root of fennel, chopped  
 Fine with the parsley: parsley-sprigs, I said —  
 Was there need I should say "and fennel too"?  
 But no, she cannot have been so obtuse!  
 To our argument! The fennel will be chopped.)

From beast to man next mount we — ay, but,  
   mind,  
 Still mere man, not yet Christian, — that, in  
   time!

Not too fast, mark you! 'Tis on Heathen  
   grounds

We next defend our act: then, fairly urge —  
 If this were done of old, in a green tree,  
 Allowed in the Spring rawness of our kind,  
 What may be licensed in the Autumn dry  
 And ripe, the latter harvest-tide of man?  
 If, with his poor and primitive half-lights,  
 The Pagan, whom our devils served for gods,  
 Could stigmatize the breach of marriage-vow  
 As that which blood, blood only might efface, —  
 Absolve the husband, outraged, whose revenge  
 Anticipated law, plied sword himself, —  
 How with the Christian in full blaze of noon?  
 Shall not he rather double penalty,  
 Multiply vengeance, than, degenerate,  
 Let privilege be diminished, droop, decay?  
 Therefore set forth at large the ancient law!  
 Superabundant the examples be  
 To pick and choose from. The Athenian Code,  
 Solon's, the name is serviceable, — then,  
 The Laws of the Twelve Tables, that fif-  
   teenth, —

"Romulus" likewise rolls out round and large.  
 The Julian; the Cornelian; Gracchus' Law:  
 So old a chime, the bells ring of themselves!  
 Spreti can set that going if he please,  
 I point you, for my part, the belfry plain,  
 Intent to rise from dusk, *diluculum*,  
 Into the Christian day shall broaden next.

First, the fit compliment to His Holiness  
 Happily reigning: then sustain the point —  
 All that was long ago declared as law  
 By the natural revelation, stands confirmed  
 By Apostle and Evangelist and Saint, —

To wit — that Honor is man's supreme good.  
 Why should I balk Saint Jerome of his phrase?  
*Ubi honor non est*, where no honor is,  
*Ibi contemptus est*; and where contempt,  
*Ibi injuria frequens*; and where that,  
 The frequent injury, *ibi et indignatio*;  
 And where the indignation, *ibi quies*  
*Nulla*: and where there is no quietude,  
 Why, *ibi*, there, the mind is often cast  
 Down from the heights where it proposed to  
   dwell,

*Mens a proposito sæpe dejicitur*.  
 And naturally the mind is so cast down,  
 Since harder 't is, *quum difficilior sit*,  
*Iram cohibere*, to coerce one's wrath,  
*Quam miracula facere*, than work miracles, —  
 So Gregory smiles in his First Dialogue.  
 Whence we infer, the ingenious soul, the man  
 Who makes esteem of honor and repute,  
 Whenever honor and repute are touched,  
 Arrives at term of fury and despair,  
 Loses all guidance from the reason-check:  
 As in delirium or a frenzy-fit,  
 Nor fury nor despair he satiates, — no,  
 Not even if he attain the impossible,  
 O'erturn the hinges of the universe  
 To annihilate — not whoso caused the smart  
 Solely, the author simply of his pain,  
 But the place, the memory, *vituperii*,  
 O' the shame and scorn: *quia*, — says Solomon.  
 (The Holy Spirit speaking by his mouth  
 In Proverbs, the sixth chapter near the end)  
 — Because, the zeal and fury of a man,  
*Zelus et furor viri*, will not spare,  
*Non parcat*, in the day of his revenge,  
*In die vindictæ*, nor will acquiesce,  
*Nec acquiescet*, through a person's prayers,  
*Cujusdam precibus*, — *nec suscipiet*,  
 Nor yet take, *pro redemptione*, for  
 Redemption, *dona plurimum*, gifts of friends,  
 Mere money-payment to compound for ache.  
 Who recognizes not my client's case?  
 Where to, as strangely consentaneous here,  
 Adduce Saint Bernard in the Epistle writ  
 To Robertulus, his nephew: "Too much grief,  
*Dolor quippe nimis non deliberat*,  
 Does not excogitate propriety,  
*Non verecundatur*, nor knows shame at all,  
*Non consulit rationem*, nor consults  
 Reason, *non dignitatis metuit*  
*Dammum*, nor dreads the loss of dignity;  
*Modum et ordinem*, order and the mode,  
*Ignorat*, it ignores;" why, trait for trait,  
 Was ever portrait limned so like the life?  
 (By Cavalier Maratta, shall I say?  
 I hear he's first in reputation now.)  
 Yes, that of Samson in the Sacred Text:  
 That's not so much the portrait as the man!  
 Samson in Gaza was the antetype  
 Of Guido at Rome: observe the Nazarite!  
 Blinded he was, — an easy thing to bear:  
 Intrepidly he took imprisonment,  
 Gyves, stripes, and daily labor at the mill:  
 But when he found himself, i' the public place,  
 Destined to make the common people sport,  
 Disdain burned up with such an impetus  
 I' the breast of him, that, all the man one fire,  
*Moriatur*, roared he, let my soul's self die,

*Anima mea*, with the Philistines!  
So, pulled down pillar, roof, and death and all,  
*Multosque plures interfecit*, ay,  
And many more he killed thus, *moriens*,  
Dying, *quam vivus*, than in his whole life,  
*Occiderat*, he ever killed before.  
Are these things writ for no example, Sirs?  
One instance more, and let me see who doubts!  
Our Lord himself, made all of mansuetude,  
Sealing the sum of sufferance up, received  
Opprobrium, contumely and buffeting  
Without complaint: but when he found him-  
self

Touched in his honor never so little for once,  
Then outbroke indignation pent before —  
“*Honorem meum nemini dabo!*” “No,  
My honor I to nobody will give!”  
And certainly the example so hath wrought,  
That whosoever, at the proper worth,  
Apprises worldly honor and repute,  
Esteems it nobler to die honored man  
Beneath Mannaia, than live centuries  
Disgraced in the eye o’ the world. We find  
Saint Paul

No recreant to this faith delivered once:  
“Far worthier were it that I died,” cries he,  
*Expedit mihi magis mori*, “than  
That any one should make my glory void,”  
*Quam ut gloriam meam quis evacuet!*  
See, *ad Corinthienses*: whereupon  
Saint Ambrose makes a comment with much  
fruit,

Doubtless my Judges long since laid to heart,  
So I desist from bringing forward here.  
(I can’t quite recollect it.)

Have I proved

*Satis superque*, both enough and to spare,  
That Revelation old and new admits  
The natural man may effervesce in ire,  
O’erflood earth, o’erfroth heaven with foamy  
rage,

At the first puncture to his self-respect?  
Then, Sirs, this Christian dogma, this law-bud  
Full-blown now, soon to bask the absolute flower  
Of Papal doctrine in our blaze of day, —  
Bethink you, shall we miss one promise-streak,  
One doubtful birth of dawn crepuscular,  
One dew-drop comfort to humanity,  
Now that the chalice teems with noonday wine?  
Yea, argue Molinists who bar revenge —  
Referring just to what makes out our case!  
Under old dispensation, argue they.  
The doom of the adulterous wife was death,  
Stoning by Moses’ law. “Nay, stone her not,  
Put her away!” next legislates our Lord;  
And last of all, “Nor yet divorce a wife!”  
Ordains the Church, “she typifies ourself,  
The Bride no fault shall cause to fall from  
Christ.”

Then, as no jot nor tittle of the Law  
Has passed away — which who presumes to  
doubt?

As not one word of Christ is rendered vain —  
Which, could it be though heaven and earth  
should pass?

— Where do I find my proper punishment  
For my adulterous wife, I humbly ask

Of my infallible Pope, — who now remits  
Even the divorce allowed by Christ in lieu  
Of lapidation Moses licensed me?  
The Gospel checks the Law which throws the  
stone,

The Church tears the divorce-bill Gospel grants:  
Shall wives sin and enjoy impunity?  
What profits me the fulness of the days,  
The final dispensation, I demand,  
Unless Law, Gospel, and the Church subjoin,  
“But who hath barred thee primitive revenge,  
Which, like fire damped and dammed up, burns  
more fierce?”

Use thou thy natural privilege of man,  
Else wert thou found like those old ingrate  
Jews,

Despite the manna-banquet on the board,  
A-longing after melons, cucumbers,  
And such like trash of Egypt left behind!”

(There was one melon had improved our soup:  
But did not Cinoncinco need the rind  
To make a boat with? So I seem to think.)

Law, Gospel, and the Church — from these we  
leap

To the very last revelation, easy rule  
Befitting the well-born and thorough-bred  
O’ the happy day we live in, not the dark  
O’ the early rude and acorn-eating race.  
“Behold,” quoth James, “we bridle in a horse  
And turn his body as we would thereby!”  
Yea, but we change the bit to suit the growth,  
And rasp our colt’s jaw with a rugged spike,  
We hasten to remit our managed steed  
Who wheels round at persuasion of a touch.  
Civilization bows to decency,  
The acknowledged use and wont: ’t is manners  
— mild

But yet imperative law — which make the man.  
Thus do we pay the proper compliment  
To rank, and that society of Rome  
Hath so obliged us by its interest,  
Taken our client’s part instinctively,  
As unaware defending its own cause.  
What *dictum* doth Society lay down  
I’ the case of one who hath a faithless wife?  
Wherewithal should the husband cleanse his  
way?

Be patient and forgive? Oh, language fails, —  
Shrinks from depicting his turpitude!  
For if wronged husband raise not hue and cry,  
*Quod si maritus de adulterio non*  
*Conqueretur*, he ’s presumed a — foh!  
*Presumitur leno*: so, complain he must.  
But how complain? At your tribunal, lords?  
Far weightier challenge suits your sense, I wot!  
You sit not to have gentlemen propose  
Questions gentility can itself discuss.  
Did not you prove that to our brother Paul?  
The Abate, *quum judicialiter*  
*Prosequeretur*, when he tried the law,  
*Guidonis causam*, in Count Guido’s case,  
*Accidit ipsi*, this befell himself,  
*Quod risum moverit et cachinnos*, that  
He moved to mirth and cackinnation, all  
Or nearly all, *fere in omnibus*  
*Etiā sensatis et cordatis*, men

Strong-sensed, sound-hearted, nay, the very Court,

*Ipsimet in iudicibus*, I might add,  
*Non tamen dicam*. In a cause like this,  
 So multiplied were reasons *pro* and *con*,  
 Delicate, intertwined and obscure,  
 That Law refused loan of a finger-tip  
 To unravel, readjust the hopeless twine.  
 Since, half-a-dozen steps outside Law's seat,  
 There stood a foolish trifler with a tool  
 A-dangle to no purpose by his side,  
 Had clearly cut the embroilment in a trice.

*Asserunt enim unanimiter*  
*Doctores*, for the Doctors all assert,  
 That husbands, *quod mariti*, must be held  
*Viles, cornuti reputantur*, vile,  
 Fronts branching forth a florid infamy,  
*Si propriis manibus*, if with their own hands,  
*Non sumunt*, they fail straight to take revenge,  
*Vindictam*, but expect the deed be done  
 By the Court — *expectant illam fieri*  
*Per iudices, qui summopere rident*, which  
 Gives an enormous guffaw for reply,  
*Et cachinnantur*. For he ran away,  
*Deliquit enim*, just that he might 'scape  
 The censure of both counsellors and crowd,  
*Ut vulgi et Doctorum evitaret*  
*Censuram*, and lest he be superadd  
 To loss of honor ignominy too,  
*Et sic ne istam quoque ignominiam*  
*Anisso honori superadderet*.

My lords, my lords, the inconsiderate step  
 Was — we referred ourselves to Law at all!  
 Twit me not with, "Law else had punished  
 you!"

Each punishment of the extra-legal step,  
 To which the high-born preferably revert,  
 Is ever for some oversight, some slip  
 I' the taking vengeance, not for vengeance' self.  
 A good thing, done unhandsomely, turns ill;  
 And never yet lacked ill the law's rebuke.  
 For pregnant instance, let us contemplate  
 The luck of Leonardus, — see at large  
 Of Sicily's Decisions sixty-first.  
 This Leonard finds his wife is false: what  
 then?

He makes her own son snare her, and entice  
 Out of the town walls to a private walk,  
 Wherein he slays her with commodity.  
 They find her body half-devoured by dogs:  
 Leonard is tried, convicted, punished, sent  
 To labor in the galleys seven years long:  
 Why? For the murder? Nay, but for the  
 mode!

*Malus modus occidendi*, ruled the Court,  
 An ugly mode of killing, nothing more!  
 Another fructuous sample, — see "*De Re*  
*Criminali*," in Mattheus' divine piece.  
 Another husband, in no better plight,  
 Simulates absence, thereby tempts his wife;  
 On whom he falls, out of sly ambushade,  
 Backed by a brother of his, and both of them  
 Armed to the teeth with arms that law had  
 blamed.

*Nimis dolose*, overwily,  
*Fuisse operatum*, did they work,  
 Pronounced the law: had all been fairly done  
 Law had not found him worthy, as she did,

Of four years' exile. Why cite more? Enough  
 Is good as a feast — (unless a birthday-feast  
 For one's Cinuccio) so, we finish here.  
 My lords, we rather need defend ourselves  
 Inasmuch as, for a twinkling of an eye,  
 We hesitatingly appealed to law, —  
 Than need deny that, on mature advice,  
 We blushing bethought us, bade revenge  
 Back to its simple proper private way  
 Of decent self-dealt gentlemanly death.  
 Judges, here is the law, and here beside,  
 The testimony! Look to it!

Pause and breathe!

So far is only too plain; we must watch:  
 Bottini will scarce hazard an attack  
 Here: best anticipate the fellow's play,  
 And guard the weaker places — warily ask,  
 What if considerations of a sort,  
 Reasons of a kind, arise from out the strange  
 Peculiar unforeseen new circumstance  
 Of this our (candor owns) abnormal act,  
 To bar the right of us revenging so?  
 "Impunity were otherwise your meed:  
 Go slay your wife and welcome," — may be  
 urged, —

"But why the innocent old couple slay,  
 Pietro, Violante? You may do enough,  
 Not too much, not exceed the golden mean:  
 Neither brute-beast nor Pagan, Gentile, Jew,  
 Nor Christian, nor nor votarist of the mode,  
 Is justified to push revenge so far!"

No, indeed? Why, thou very sciolist!  
 The actual wrong, Pompilia seemed to do,  
 Was virtual wrong done by the parents here —  
 Imposing her upon us as their child —  
 Themselves allow: then, her fault was their  
 fault,

Her punishment be theirs accordingly!  
 But wait a little, sneak not off so soon!  
 Was this cheat solely harm to Guido, pray?  
 The precious couple you call innocent, —  
 Why, they were felons that Law failed to  
 clutch,

*Qui ut fraudarent*, who that they might rob,  
*Legitime vocatos*, folk law called,  
*Ad fidei commissum*, true heirs to the Trust,  
*Partum supposuerunt*, feigned this birth,  
*Inmemores reos factos esse*, blind  
 To the fact that, guilty, they incurred thereby,  
*Ultimi supplicii*, hanging or what's worse.  
 Do you blame us that we turn Law's instru-  
 ments,

Nor mere self-seekers, — mind the public weal,  
 Nor make the private good our sole concern?  
 That having — shall I say — secured a thief,  
 Not simply we recover from his pouch  
 The stolen article our property.  
 But also pounce upon our neighbor's purse  
 We opportunely find reposing there,  
 And do him justice while we right ourselves?  
 He owes us, for our part, a drubbing say,  
 But owes our neighbor just a dance i' the air  
 Under the gallows: so, we throttle him.  
 That neighbor's Law, that couple are the Thief.  
 We are the over-ready to help Law —  
 Zeal of her house hath eaten us up: for which,  
 Can it be, Law intends to eat up us,



*Crudum Priamum*, devour poor Priam raw,  
(‘T was Jupiter’s own joke,) with babes to boot,  
*Priamique pisinnos*, in Homeric phrase?  
Shame! — and so ends my period prettily.

But even, — prove the pair not culpable,  
Free as unborn babe from connivance at,  
Participation in, their daughter’s fault:  
Ours the mistake. Is that a rare event?  
*Non semel*, it is anything but rare,  
*In contingentia facti*, that by chance,  
*Impunes evaserunt*, go scot-free,  
*Qui*, such well-meaning people as ourselves,  
*Iusto dolore moti*, who aggrieved  
With cause, *apposuerunt manus*, lay  
Rough hands, in *innocentes*, on wrong heads.  
Cite me an illustrative case in point:  
*Mulier Smirnea quedam*, good my lords,  
A gentlewoman lived in Smyrna once,  
*Virum et filium ex eo conceptum*, who,  
Both husband and her son begot by him,  
Killed, *interfecerat, ex quo*, because,  
*Vir filium suum perdiderat*, her spouse  
Had been beforehand with her, killed her son,  
*Matrimonii primi*, of a previous bed.  
Deinde *accusata*, then accused,  
*Apud Dolabellam*, before him that sat  
Proconsul, *nec duabus cædibus*  
*Contaminatam liberare*, nor  
To liberate a woman doubly-dyed  
With murder, *voluit*, made he up his mind,  
*Nec condemnare*, nor to doom to death,  
*Iusto dolore impulsam*, one impelled  
By just grief; *sed remisit*, but sent her up  
*Ad Areopagum*, to the Hill of Mars,  
*Sapientissimorum iudicum*  
*Cætum*, to that assembly of the sage  
Paralleled only by my judges here;  
*Ubi, cognito de causa*, where, the cause  
Well weighed, *responsum est*, they gave reply,  
*Ut ipsa et accusator*, that both sides  
O’ the suit, *redirent*, should come back again,  
*Post centum annos*, after a hundred years,  
For judgment; *et sic*, by which sage decree,  
*Duplici parricidio rea*, one  
Convicted of a double parricide,  
*Quamvis etiam innocentem*, though in truth  
Out of the pair, one innocent at least  
She, *occidisset*, plainly had put to death,  
*Undequaque*, yet she altogether ‘scaped,  
*Evasit impunis*. See the case at length  
In Valerius, fittingly styled *Maximus*,  
That eighth book of his Memorable Facts.  
Nor Cyriacus cites beside the mark:  
*Similiter uxor quæ mandaverat*,  
Just so, a lady who had taken care,  
*Homicidium viri*, that her lord be killed,  
*Ex denegatione debiti*,  
For denegation of a certain debt,  
*Matrimonialis*, he was loth to pay,  
*Fuit pecuniaria mulcta*, was  
Amersed in a pecuniary mulct,  
*Punita, et ad pœnam*, and to pains,  
*Temporalem*, for a certain space of time,  
In *monasterio*, in a convent.

(Ay,

In *monasterio*! — He mismanages

In with the ablative, the accusative!  
I had hoped to have hitched the villain into verse  
For a gift, this very day, a complete list  
O’ the prepositions each with proper case,  
Telling a story, long was in my head.  
What prepositions take the accusative?  
*Ad*, to or at — *who saw the cat*? — down to  
Ob, for, because of, *keep her claws off!* Tush!  
Law in a man takes the whole liberty:  
The muse is fettered: just as Ovid found!)

And now, sea widens and the coast is clear.  
What of the dubious act you bade excuse?  
Surely things broaden, brighten, till at length  
Remains — so far from act that needs de-  
fence —

Apology to make for act delayed  
One minute, let alone eight mortal months  
Of hesitation! “Why procrastinate?”  
(Out with it, my Bottinius, ease thyself!)  
“Right, promptly done, is twice right: right  
delayed

Turns wrong. We grant you should have  
killed your wife,

But killed o’ the moment, at the meeting her  
In company with the priest: then did the  
tongue

O’ the Brazen Head give license, ‘Time is  
now!’

Wait to make mind up? ‘Time is past’ it  
peals.

Friend, you are competent to mastery  
O’ the passions that confessedly explain  
An outbreak: you allow an interval.  
And then break out as if time’s clock still  
clanged.

You have forfeited your chance, and flat you  
fall

Into the commonplace category  
Of men bound to go softly all their days,  
Obeying law.”

Now, which way make response?

What was the answer Guido gave, himself?

— That so to argue came of ignorance

How honor bears a wound: “For, wound,”  
said he,

“My body, and the smart soon mends and ends:  
While, wound my soul where honor sits and  
rules,

Longer the sufferance, stronger grows the pain,  
Being *ex incontinenti*, fresh as first.”

But try another tack, urge common sense

By way of contrast: say — Too true, my lords!  
We did demur, awhile did hesitate:

Since husband sure should let a scruple speak  
Ere he slay wife, — for his own safety, lords!  
Carpers abound in this misjudging world:

Moreover, there’s a nicety in law  
That seems to justify them should they carp.

Suppose the source of injury a son, —

Father may slay such son yet run no risk:

Why graced with such a privilege? Because

A father so incensed with his own child,

Or must have reason, or believe he has:

*Quia semper*, seeing that in such event,

*Presumitur*, the law is bound suppose,  
*Quod capiat pater*, that the sire must take,

*Bonum consilium pro filio.*

The best course as to what befits his boy,  
Through instinct, *ex instinctu*, of mere love,  
*Amoris*, and, *paterni*, fatherhood;  
*Quam confidentiam*, which confidence,  
*Non habet*, law declines to entertain,  
*De viro*, of the husband : where finds he  
An instinct that compels him love his wife ?  
Rather is he presumably her foe.  
So, let him ponder long in this bad world  
Ere do the simplest act of justice.

But

Again — and here we brush Bottini's breast —  
Object you, "See the danger of delay,  
Suppose a man murdered my friend last month :  
Had I come up and killed him for his pains  
In rage, I had done right, allows the law :  
I meet him now and kill him in cold blood,  
I do wrong, equally allows the law :  
Wherein do actions differ, yours and mine ?"  
*In plenitudine intellectus es ?*  
Hast thy wits, Fisc ? To take such slayer's  
life,

Returns it life to thy slain friend at all ?  
Had he stolen ring instead of stabbing friend, —  
To-day, to-morrow, or next century,  
Meeting the thief, thy ring upon his thumb,  
Thou justifiably hadst wrung it thence :  
So, couldst thou wrench thy friend's life back  
again,

Though prisoned in the bosom of his foe,  
Why, law would look complacent on thy  
wrath.

Our case is, that the thing we lost, we found :  
The honor, we were robbed of eight months  
since,

Being recoverable at any day  
By death of the delinquent. Go thy ways !  
Ere thou hast learned law, will be much to do,  
As said the gaby while he shod the goose.

Nay, if you urge me, interval was none !  
From the inn to the villa — blank or else a bar  
Of adverse and contrarious incident  
Solid between us and our just revenge !  
What with the priest who flourishes his blade,  
The wife who like a fury flings at us,  
The crowd — and then the capture, the appeal  
To Rome, the journey there, the jaunting  
thence

To shelter at the House of Convertites,  
The visits to the Villa, and so forth,  
Where was one minute left us all this while  
To put in execution that revenge  
We planned o' the instant ? — as it were,  
plumpped down

O' the spot, some eight months since, which  
round sound egg,

Rome, more propitious than our nest, should  
hatch !

Object not, "You reached Rome on Christmas-  
eve,

And, despite liberty to act at once,  
Waited a whole and indecorous week !"

Hath so the Molinism, the canker, lords,  
Eaten to our bone ? Is no religion left ?

No care for aught held holy by the Church ?

What, would you have us skip and miss those  
Feasts

O' the Natal Time, must we go prosecute  
Secular business on a sacred day ?  
Should not the merest charity expect,  
Setting our poor concerns aside for once,  
We hurried to the song matutinal  
I' the Sistine, and pressed forward for the  
Mass

The Cardinal that's Camerlengo chants,  
Then rushed on to the blessing of the Hat  
And Rapier, which the Pope sends to what  
prince

Has done most detriment to the Infidel —  
And thereby whetted courage if 't were blunt ?  
Meantime, allow we kept the house a week,  
Suppose not we were idle in our mew !  
Picture us raging here and raving there —  
"Money ?" "I need none. 'Friends ?' The  
word is null.

Restore the white was on that shield of mine  
Borne at" . . . wherever might be shield to  
bear.

"I see my grandsire, he who fought so well  
At" . . . here find out and put in time and  
place,

Or else invent the fight his grandsire fought :  
"I see this ! I see that !"

(See nothing else,

Or I shall scarce see lamb's fry in an hour !  
What to the uncle, as I bid advance  
The smoking dish ? "Fry suits a tender tooth !  
Behooves we care a little for our kin —  
You, Sir, — who care so much for cousinship  
As come to your poor loving nephew's feast !"  
He has the reversion of a long lease yet —  
Land to bequeath ! He loves lamb's fry, I  
know !)

Here fall to be considered those same six  
Qualities ; what Bottini needs must call  
So many aggravations of our crime,  
Parasite-growth upon mere murder's back.

We summarily might dispose of such  
By some off-hand and jauntily fling, some skit —  
"So, since there's proved no crime to aggra-  
vate,

A fico for your aggravations, Fisc !"

No, — handle mischief rather, — play with  
spells

Were meant to raise a spirit, and laugh the  
while

We show that did he rise we stand his match !

Therefore, first aggravation : we made up —  
Over and above our simple murderous selves —  
A regular assemblage of armed men,  
*Coadunatio armatorum*, — ay,  
Unluckily it was the very judge

That sits in judgment on our cause to-day

Who passed the law as Governor of Rome :

"Four men armed" — though for lawful pur-  
pose, mark !

Much more for an acknowledged crime —  
"shall die."

We five were armed to the teeth, meant murder  
too ?

Why, that's the very point that saves us, Fisc !

Let me instruct you. Crime nor done nor meant, —

You punish still who arm and congregate :  
For wherefore use bad means to a good end ?  
(Crime being meant not done, — you punish still  
The means to crime, whereon you haply pounce,  
Though accident have balked them of effect.  
But crime not only compassed but complete,  
Meant and done too ? Why, since you have  
the end,

Be that your sole concern, nor mind those means

No longer to the purpose ! Murdered we ?  
(— Which, that our luck was in the present case,

*Quod contigisse in presenti casu,*  
*Is palpable, manibus palpatum est* —)  
Make murder out against us, nothing else !  
Of many crimes committed with a view  
To one main crime, Law overlooks the less,  
Intent upon the large. Suppose a man  
Having in view commission of a theft,  
Climbs the town-wall : 't is for the theft he hangs,

In case he stands convicted of such theft :  
Law remits whipping, due to who clomb wall  
Through bravery or wantonness alone,  
Just to dislodge a daw's nest, plant a flag.  
So I interpret you the manly mind  
Of him about to judge both you and me, —  
Our Governor, who, being no Fisc, my Fisc,  
Cannot have blundered on ineptitude !  
Next aggravation, — that the arms themselves  
Were specially of such forbidden sort  
Through shape or length or breadth, as, prompt,  
Law plucks

From single hand of solitary man,  
Making him pay the carriage with his life :  
*Delatio armorum*, arms against the rule,  
*Contra formam constitutionis*, of  
Pope Alexander's blessed memory.  
Such are the poniards with the double prong,  
Horn-like, when tines make bold the antlered  
buck,

Each prong of brittle glass — wherewith to stab  
And break off short and so let fragment stick  
Fast in the flesh to baffle surgery :  
Such being the Genoese blade with hooked edge  
That did us service at the villa here.

*Sed parcat mihi tam eximius vir,*  
But, — let so rare a personage forgive, —  
Fisc, thy objection is a popperry !  
Thy charge runs that we killed three inno-  
cents :

Killed, dost see ? Then, if killed, what matter  
how ? —

By stick or stone, by sword or dagger, tool  
Long or tool short, round or triangular —  
Poor slain folk find small comfort in the choice !  
Means to an end, means to an end, my Fisc !  
Nature cries out, "Take the first arms you  
find !"

*Furor ministrat arma* : where 's a stone ?  
*Unde mi lapidem*, where darts for me ?  
*Unde sagittas* ? But subdue the bard  
And rationalize a little. Eight months since,  
Had we, or had we not, incurred your blame  
For letting 'scape unpunished this bad pair ?

I think I proved that in last paragraph !  
Why did we so ? Because our courage failed.  
Wherefore ? Through lack of arms to fight the  
foe :

We had no arms or merely lawful ones,  
An unimportant sword and blunderbuss,  
Against a foe, pollut in potency,  
The *amasius*, and our vixen of a wife.  
Well then, how culpably do we gird loin  
And once more undertake the high emprise,  
Unless we load ourselves this second time  
With handsome superfluity of arms,  
Since better is "too much" than "not enough,"  
And "*plus non vitiat*," too much does no harm,  
Except in mathematics, sages say.  
Gather instruction from the parable !  
At first we are advised — "A lad hath here  
Seven barley loaves and two small fishes : what  
Is that among so many ?" Aptly asked :  
But put that question twice and, quite as apt,  
The answer is, "Fragments, twelve baskets  
full !"

And, while we speak of superabundance, fling  
We word by the way to fools who cast their  
flout

On Guido — "Punishment were pardoned him,  
But here the punishment exceeds offence :  
He might be just, but he was cruel too !"  
Why, grant there seems a kind of cruelty  
In downright stabbing people he could maim,  
(If so you stigmatize the stern and strict)  
Still, Guido meant no cruelty — may plead  
Transgression of his mandate, over-zeal  
O' the part of his companions : all he craved  
Was, they should fray the faces of the folk,  
Merely disfigure, nowise make them die.  
*Solummodo fassus est*, he owns no more,  
*Dedisse mandatum*, than that he desired,  
*Ad sfrisiandum, dicam*, that they hack  
And hew, i' the customary phrase, his wife  
*Uxorem tantum*, and no harm beside.  
If his instructions then be misconceived,  
Nay, disobeyed, impute you blame to him ?  
Cite me no Panicollus to the point,  
As adverse ! Oh, I quite expect his case —  
How certain noble youths of Sicily  
Having good reason to mistrust their wives,  
Killed them and were absolved in consequence :  
While others who had gone beyond the need  
By mutilation of each paramour —  
As Galba in the Horatian satire grieved  
— These were condemned to the galleys, cast for  
guilt

Exceeding simple murder of a wife.  
But why ? Because of ugliness, and not  
Cruelty, in the said revenge, I trow !  
*Ex causa abscissionis partium* ;  
*Qui nempe id facientes reputantur*  
*Nature inimici*, man revolts  
Against them as the natural enemy.  
Pray, grant to one who meant to slit the nose  
And slash the cheek and slur the mouth, at  
most,

A somewhat more humane award than these  
Obtained, these natural enemies of man !  
*Objectum funditus corruit*, flat you fall.  
My Fisc ! I waste no kick on you, but pass.



Third aggravation : that our act was done —  
Not in the public street, where safety lies,  
Not in the by-place, caution may avoid,  
Wood, cavern, desert, spots contrived for  
crime, —

But in the very house, home, nook and nest,  
O' the victims, murdered in their dwelling-place,  
*In domo ac habitatione propria*,  
Where all presumably is peace and joy.  
The spider, crime, pronounce we twice a pest  
When, creeping from congenial cottage, she  
Takes hold with her hands, to horrify  
His household more, i' the palace of the king.  
All three were housed and safe and confident.  
Moreover, the permission that our wife  
Should have at length *domum pro carcere*,  
Her own abode in place of prison — why,  
We ourselves granted, by our other self  
And proxy Paolo : did we make such grant,  
Meaning a lure ? — elude the vigilance  
O' the jailer, lead her to commodious death,  
While we ostensibly relented ?

Ay,

Just so did we, nor otherwise, my Fisc !  
Is vengeance lawful ? We demand our right,  
But find it will be questioned or refused  
By jailer, turnkey, hangdog, — what know we ?  
Pray, how is it we should conduct ourselves ?  
To gain our private right — break public peace,  
Do you bid us ? — trouble order with our broils ?  
Endanger . . . shall I shrink to own . . . our-  
selves ? —

Who want no broken head nor bloody nose  
(While busied slitting noses, breaking heads)  
From the first tipstaff that may interfere !  
*Nam quicquid sit*, for howsoever it be,  
*An de consensu nostro*, if with leave  
Or not, *a monasterio*, from the nuns,  
*Educta esset*, she had been led forth,  
*Potuius id dissimulare*, we  
May well have granted leave in pure pretence,  
*Ut aditum habere*, that thereby  
An entry we might compass, a free move  
*Potuissemus*, to her easy death,  
*Ad eam occidendam*. Privacy  
O' the hearth, and sanctitude of home, say you ?  
Shall we give man's abode more privilege  
Than God's ? — for in the churches where he  
dwells,

*In quibus assistit Regum Rex*, by means  
Of his essence, *per essentiam*, all the same,  
*Et nihilominus*, therein, *in eis*,  
*Ex justa via delinquens*, whose dares  
To take a liberty on ground enough,  
Is pardoned, *excusatur* : that 's our case —  
Delinquent through befitting cause. You hold,  
To punish a false wife in her own house  
Is graver than, what happens every day,  
To hale a debtor from his hiding-place  
In church protected by the Sacrament ?  
To this conclusion have I brought my Fisc ?  
Foxes have holes, and fowls o' the air their  
nests ;

Praise you the impiety that follows, Fisc ?  
Shall false wife yet have where to lay her head ?  
" *Contra Fiscum definitum est !* " He 's done !  
" *Surge et scribe*, " make a note of it !  
— If I may dally with Aquinas' word.

Or in the death-throe does he mutter still,  
Fourth aggravation, that we changed our garb,  
And rusticized ourselves with uncouth hat,  
Rough vest and goatskin wrappage ; murdered  
thus

*Mutatione vestium*, in disguise,  
Whereby were murder got complexed with wile,  
Turned *homicidium ex insidiis* ? Fisc,  
How often must I round thee in the ears —  
All means are lawful to a lawful end ?  
Concede he had the right to kill his wife :  
The Count indulged in a travesty ; why ?  
*De illa ut vindictam sumeret*,  
That on her he might lawful vengeance take,  
*Commodius*, with more ease, *et tutius*,  
And safer : wants he warrant for the step ?  
Read to thy profit how the Apostle once  
For ease and safety, when Damascus raged,  
Was let down in a basket by the wall,  
To 'scape the malice of the governor  
(Another sort of Governor boasts Rome !)  
— Many are of opinion, — covered close,  
Concealed with — what except that very cloak  
He left behind at Troas afterward ?  
I shall not add a syllable : Molinists may !  
Well, have we more to manage ? Ay, indeed !  
Fifth aggravation, that our wife reposed  
*Sub potestate iudicis*, beneath  
Protection of the judge, — her house was styled  
A prison, and his power became its guard  
In lieu of wall and gate and bolt and bar.  
This is a tough point, shrewd, redoubtable :  
Because we have to supplicate that judge  
Shall overlook wrong done the judgment-seat.  
Now, I might suffer my own nose be pulled,  
As man : but then as father . . . if the Fisc  
Touched one hair of my boy who held my hand  
In confidence he could not come to harm  
Crossing the Corso, at my own desire,  
Going to see those bodies in the church —  
What would you say to that, Don Hyacinth ?  
This is the sole and single knotty point :  
For, bid Tommati blink his interest,  
You laud his magnanimity the while :  
But balk Tommati's office, — he talks big ! .  
" My predecessors in the place, — those sons  
O' the prophets that may hope succeed me  
here, —

Shall I diminish their prerogative ?  
Count Guido Franceschini's honor ! — well,  
Has the Governor of Rome none ? "

You perceive,

The cards are all against us. Make a push,  
Kick over table, as shrewd gamesters do !  
We, do you say, encroach upon the rights,  
Deny the omnipotence o' the Judge forsooth ?  
We, who have only been from first to last  
Intending that his purpose should prevail,  
Nay more, at times, anticipating it  
At risk of his rebuke ?

But wait awhile !

Cannot we lump this with the sixth and last  
Of the aggravations — that the Majesty  
O' the Sovereign here received a wound ? to  
wit,  
*Læsa Majestas*, since our violence

Was out of envy to the course of law,  
*In odium litis?* We cut short thereby  
 Three pending suits, promoted by ourselves  
 I' the main, — which worsens crime, *accedit ad*  
*Exasperationem criminis!*

Yes, here the eruptive wrath with full effect!  
 How, did not indignation chain my tongue,  
 Could I repel this last, worst charge of all!  
 (There is a porcupine to barbecue;  
 Gigia can jug a rabbit well enough,  
 With sour-sweet sauce and pine-pips; but, good  
 Lord,

Suppose the devil instigate the wench  
 To stew, not roast him? Stew my porcupine?  
 If she does, I know where his quills shall stick!  
 Come, I must go myself and see to things:  
 I cannot stay much longer stewing here.)  
 Our stomach . . . I mean, our soul is stirred  
 within,

And we want words. We wounded Majesty?  
 Fall under such a censure, we? — who yearned  
 So much that Majesty dispel the cloud  
 And shine on us with healing on her wings,  
 That we prayed Pope *Majestas'* very self  
 To anticipate a little the tardy pack.  
 Bell us forth deep the authoritative bay  
 Should start the beagles into sudden yelp  
 Unisonous, — and, Gospel leading Law,  
 Grant there assemble in our own behoof  
 A Congregation, a particular Court,  
 A few picked friends of quality and place,  
 To hear the several matters in dispute,  
 Causes big, little, and indifferent,  
 Bred of our marriage like a mushroom-growth,  
 All at once (can one brush off such too soon?)  
 And so with laudable dispatch decide  
 Whether we, in the main (to sink detail)  
 Were one the Pope should hold fast or let go.  
 "What, take the credit from the Law?" you  
 ask?

Indeed, we did! Law ducks to Gospel here:  
 Why should Law gain the glory and pronounce  
 A judgment shall immortalize the Pope?  
 Yes: our self-abnegating policy  
 Was Joab's — we would rouse our David's  
 sloth,

Bid him encamp against a city, sack  
 A place whereto ourselves had long laid seige,  
 Lest, taking it at last, it take our name  
 Nor be styled *Innocentinopolis*.  
 But no! The modesty was in alarm,  
 The temperance refused to interfere,  
 Returned us our petition with the word  
 "*Ad iudices suos*," "Leave him to his  
 Judge!"

As who should say, "Why trouble my repose?  
 Why consult Peter in a simple case,  
 Peter's wife's sister in her fever-fit  
 Might solve as readily as the Apostle's self?  
 Are my Tribunals posed by aught so plain?  
 Hath not my Court a conscience? It is of age,  
 Ask it!"

We do ask, — but, inspire reply  
 To the Court thou bidst me ask, as I have  
 asked —  
 Oh thou, who vigilantly dost attend

To even the few, the ineffectual words  
 Which rise from this our low and mundane  
 sphere

Up to thy region out of smoke and noise,  
 Seeking corroboration from thy nod  
 Who art all justice — which means mercy too,  
 In a low noisy smoky world like ours  
 Where Adam's sin made peccable his seed!  
 We venerate the father of the flock,  
 Whose last faint sands of life, the frittered  
 gold,

Fall noiselessly, yet all too fast, o' the cone  
 And tapering heap of those collected years:  
 Never have these been hurried in their flow.  
 Though justice fain would jog reluctant arm,  
 In eagerness to take the forfeiture  
 Of guilty life: much less shall mercy sue  
 In vain that thou let innocence survive,  
 Precipitate no minim of the mass  
 O' the all-so precious moments of thy life,  
 By pushing Guido into death and doom!

(Our Cardinal engages to go read  
 The Pope my speech, and point its beauties  
 out.

They say, the Pope has one half-hour, in  
 twelve,

Of something like a moderate return  
 Of the intellectuals, — never much to lose! —  
 If I adroitly plant this passage there,  
 The Fisc will find himself forestalled, I think,  
 Though he stand, beat till the old ear-drum  
 break!

— Ah, boy of my own bowels, Hyacinth,  
 Wilt ever catch the knack, requite the pains  
 Of poor papa, become proficient too  
 I' the how and why and when, the time to  
 laugh,

The time to weep, the time, again, to pray,  
 And all the times prescribed by Holy Writ?  
 Well, well, we fathers can but care, but east  
 Our bread upon the waters!)

In a word,  
 These secondary charges go to ground,  
 Since secondary, and superfluous, — motes  
 Quite from the main point: we did all and  
 some,

Little and much, adjunct and principal,  
*Causa honoris*. Is there such a cause  
 As the sake of honor? By that sole test try  
 Our action, nor demand if more or less,  
 Because of the action's mode, we merit blame  
 Or maybe deserve praise! The Court decides.  
 Is the end lawful? It allows the means:  
 What we may do, we may with safety do,  
 And what means "safety" we ourselves must  
 judge.

Put case a person wrongs me past dispute:  
 If my legitimate vengeance be a blow,  
 Mistrusting my bare arm can deal that blow,  
 I claim co-operation of a stick;  
 Doubtful if stick be tough, I crave a sword;  
 Diffident of ability in fence,  
 I fee a friend, a swordsman to assist:  
 Take one — he may be coward, fool or knave:  
 Why not take fifty? — and if these exceed  
 I' the due degree of drubbing, whom accuse  
 But the first author of the aforesaid wrong

Who put poor me to such a world of pains?  
Surgery would have just excised a wart;  
The patient made such pother, struggled so  
That the sharp instrument sliced nose and all.  
Taunt us not that our friends performed for  
pay!

Ourselves had toiled for simple honor's sake:  
But country clowns want dirt they comprehend,  
The piece of gold! Our reasons, which suffice  
Ourselves, be ours alone; our piece of gold  
Be, to the rustic, reason he approves!  
We must translate our motives like our speech,  
Into the lower phrase that suits the sense  
O' the limitedly apprehensive. Let  
Each level have its language! Heaven speaks  
first

To the angel, then the angel tames the word  
Down to the ear of Tobit: he, in turn,  
Diminishes the message to his dog,  
And finally that dog finds how the flea  
(Which else, importunate, might check his  
speed)

Shall learn its hunger must have holiday,  
By application of his tongue or paw:  
So many varied sorts of language here,  
Each following each with pace to match the  
step,  
*Haud passibus æquis!*

Talking of which flea,

Reminds me I must put in special word  
For the poor humble following, — the four  
friends,

*Sicarii*, our assassins caught and caged.  
Ourselves are safe in your approval now:  
Yet must we care for our companions, plead  
The cause o' the poor, the friends (of old-world  
faith)

Who lie in tribulation for our sake.  
*Pauperum Procurator* is my style:  
I stand forth as the poor man's advocate:  
And when we treat of what concerns the poor,  
*Et cum agatur de pauperibus*,  
In bondage, *carceratis*, for their sake,  
*In eorum causis*, natural piety,  
*Pietas*, ever ought to win the day,  
*Triumphare debet, quia ipsi sunt*,  
Because those very paupers constitute,  
*Thesaurus Christi*, all the wealth of Christ.  
Nevertheless I shall not hold you long  
With multiplicity of proofs, nor burn  
Candle at noontide, clarify the clear.  
There beams a case refulgent from our  
books —

Castrensis, Butringarius, everywhere  
I find it burn to dissipate the dark.  
'Tis this: a husband had a friend, which  
friend

Seemed to him over-friendly with his wife  
In thought and purpose, — I pretend no more.  
To justify suspicion or dispel,  
He bids his wife make show of giving heed,  
Semblance of sympathy — propose, in fine,  
A secret meeting in a private place.  
The friend, enticed thus, finds an ambuscade,  
To wit, the husband posted with a pack  
Of other friends, who fall upon the first  
And beat his love and life out both at once.

These friends were brought to question for  
their help;  
Law ruled, "The husband being in the right,  
Who helped him in the right can scarce be  
wrong" —

*Opinio*, an opinion every way,  
*Mulum tenenda cordi*, heart should hold!  
When the inferiors follow as befits  
The lead o' the principal, they change their  
name,

And, *non dicuntur*, are no longer called  
His mandatories, *mandatorii*,  
But helpmates, *sed auxiliatores*; since  
To that degree does honor's sake lend aid,  
*Adeo honoris causa est efficax*,  
That not alone, *non solum*, does it pour  
Itself out, *se diffundat*, on mere friends  
We bring to do our bidding of this sort,  
*In mandatorios simplices*, but sucks  
Along with it in wide and generous whirl,  
*Sed etiam assassinii qualitate*  
*Qualificatos*, people qualified  
By the quality of assassination's self,  
Dare I make use of such neologism,  
*Ut utar verbo*.

Haste we to conclude:

Of the other points that favor, leave some few  
For Spreti; such as the delinquents' youth.  
One of them falls short, by some months, of  
age

Fit to be managed by the gallows; two  
May plead exemption from our law's award,  
Being foreigners, subjects of the Granduke —  
I spare that bone to Spreti, and reserve  
Myself the juicier breast of argument —  
Flinging the breast-blade i' the face o' the Fise,  
Who furnished me the tidbit: he must needs  
Play off his privilege and rack the clowns, —  
And they, at instance of the rack, confess  
All four unanimously made resolve, —  
The night o' the murder, in brief minute  
snatched

Behind the back of Guido as he fled, —  
That, since he had not kept his promise, paid  
The money for the murder on the spot,  
So, reaching home again, might please ignore  
The pact or pay them in improper coin, —  
They one and all resolved, these hopeful  
friends,

'T were best inaugurate the morrow's light,  
Nature recruited with her due repose,  
By killing Guido as he lay asleep  
Pillowed on wallet which contained their fee.

I thank the Fise for knowledge of this fact:  
What fact could hope to make more manifest  
Their rectitude, Guido's integrity?  
For who fails recognize the touching truth  
That these poor rustics bore no envy, hate,  
Malice nor yet uncharitableness  
Against the people they had put to death?  
In them, did such an act reward itself?  
All done was to deserve the simple pay,  
Obtain the bread clowns earn by sweat of  
brow,  
And missing which, they missed of every-  
thing —



Hence claimed pay, even at expense of life  
 To their own lord, so little warped (admire !)  
 By prepossession, such the absolute  
 Instinct of equity in rustic souls !  
 Whereas our Count, the cultivated mind,  
 He, wholly rapt in his serene regard  
 Of honor, he contemplating the sun,  
 Who hardly marks if taper blink below,  
 He, dreaming of no argument for death  
 Except a vengeance worthy noble hearts, —  
 Dared not so desecrate the deed, forsooth.  
 Vulgarize vengeance, as defray its cost  
 By money dug from out the dirty earth,  
 Irritant mere, in Ovid's phrase, to ill.  
 What though he lured base hinds by lucre's  
     hope, —  
 The only motive they could masticate,  
 Milk for babes, not strong meat which men re-  
     quire ?  
 The deed done, those coarse hands were soiled  
     enough,  
 He spared them the pollution of the pay.  
 So much for the allegement, thine, my Fisc,  
*Quo nil absurdius*, than which naught more  
     mad,  
*Excogitari potest*, may be squeezed  
 From out the cogitative brain of thee !

And now, thou excellent the Governor !  
 (Push to the peroration) *cæterum*  
*Enize supplico*, I strive in prayer,  
*Ut dominis meis*, that unto the Court,  
*Benigna fronte*, with a gracious brow,  
*Et oculis serenis*, and mild eyes,  
*Perpendere placeat*, it may please them weigh,  
*Quod dominus Guido*, that our noble Count,  
*Occidit*, did the killing in dispute,  
*Ut ejus honor tumulatus*, that  
 The honor of him buried fathom-deep  
 In infamy, in *infamia*, might arise,  
*Resurgeret*, as ghost breaks sepulchre !  
*Occidit*, for he killed, *uxorem*, wife,  
*Quia illi fuit*, since she was to him,  
*Opprobrio*, a disgrace and nothing more !  
*Et genitores*, killed her parents too,  
*Qui*, who, *postposita verecundia*,  
 Having thrown off all sort of decency,  
*Filiam repudiarunt*, had renounced  
 Their daughter, *atque declarare non*  
*Erubuerunt*, nor felt blush tinge cheek,  
 Declaring, *meretricis genitum*  
*Esse*, she was the offspring of a drab,  
*Ut ipse dehonestaretur*, just  
 That so himself might lose his social rank !  
*Cujus mentem*, and which daughter's heart and  
     soul,  
 They, *perverterunt*, turned from the right  
     course,  
*Et ad illicitos amores non*  
*Dumtaxat pellerunt*, and to love  
 Not simply did alluringly incite,  
*Sed vi obedientiæ*, but by force  
 O' the duty, *filialis*, daughters owe,  
*Cogerunt*, forced and drove her to the deed :  
*Occidit*, I repeat he killed the clan,  
*Ne scilicet amplius in dedecore*,  
 Lest peradventure longer life might trail.  
*Viveret*, link by link his turpitude

*Invis consanguineis*, hateful so  
 To kith and kindred, *a nobilibus*  
*Notatus*, shunned by men of quality,  
*Relictus ab amicis*, left i' the lurch  
 By friends, *ab omnibus derisus*, turned  
 A common hack-block to try edge of jokes.  
*Occidit*, and he killed them here in Rome,  
*In Urbe*, the Eternal City, Sirs,  
*Nempe quæ alias spectata est*,  
 The appropriate theatre which witnessed once,  
*Matronam nobilem*, Lucretia's self,  
*Abluere pudicitie maculas*,  
 Wash off the spots of her pudicity,  
*Sanguine proprio*, with her own pure blood ;  
*Quæ vidit*, and which city also saw,  
*Patrem*, Virginus, *undequaque*, quite,  
*Impunem*, with no sort of punishment,  
 Nor, *et non illaudatum*, lacking praise,  
*Sed polluentem parricidio*,  
 Imbrue his hands with butchery, *filix*,  
 Of chaste Virginia, to avoid a rape,  
*Ne raperetur ad stupra* ; so to heart,  
*Tanti illi cordi fuit*, did he take,  
*Suspicio*, the mere fancy men might have,  
*Honoris amittendi*, of fame's loss,  
*Ut potius voluerit filia*  
*Orbati*, he preferred to lose his child,  
*Quam illa incederet*, rather than she walk  
 The ways an, *inhonesta*, child disgraced,  
*Licet non sponte*, though against her will.  
*Occidit* — killed them, I reiterate —  
*In propria domo*, in their own abode,  
*Ut adultera et parentes*, that each wretch,  
*Conscii agnoscerent*, might both see and say,  
*Nullum locum*, there 's no place, *nullumque esse*  
*Asylum*, nor yet refuge of escape,  
*Impenetrabilem*, shall serve as bar,  
*Honori læso*, to the wounded one  
 In honor ; *neve ibi opprobria*  
*Continuarentur*, killed them on the spot  
 Moreover, dreading lest within those walls  
 The opprobrium peradventure be prolonged,  
*Et domus quæ testis fuit turpium*,  
 And that the domicile which witnessed crime,  
*Esset et pœnæ*, might watch punishment :  
*Occidit*, killed, I round you in the ears,  
*Quia alio modo*, since by other mode,  
*Non poterat ejus existimatio*,  
 There was no possibility his fame,  
*Læsa*, gashed griesly, *tam enormiter*,  
*Ducere cicatrices*, might be healed :  
*Occidit ut exemplum præberet*  
*Uxoribus*, killed her, so to lesson wives  
*Jura conjugii*, that the marriage-oath.  
*Esse servanda*, must be kept henceforth :  
*Occidit denique*, killed her, in a word,  
*Ut pro posse honestas viveret*,  
 That he, please God, might creditably live,  
*Sin minus*, but if fate willed otherwise,  
*Proprii honoris*, of his outraged fame,  
*Offensi*, by Mannaia, if you please,  
*Commiseranda victima caderet*,  
 The pitiable victim he should fall !

Done ! I' the rough, i' the rough ! But done !  
 And, lo,  
 Landed and stranded lies my very speech,  
 My miracle, my monster of defence —

Leviathan into the nose whereof  
I have put fish-hook, pierced his jaw with  
thorn,

And given him to my maidens for a play !  
I' the rough : to-morrow I review my piece  
Tame here and there undue floridity.  
It's hard : you have to plead before these  
priests

And poke at them with Scripture, or you pass  
For heathen and, what 's worse, for ignorant  
O' the quality o' the Court and what it likes  
By way of illustration of the law.  
To-morrow stick in this, and throw out that,  
And, having first ecclesiasticized,  
Regularize the whole, next emphasize,  
Then latinize, and lastly Cicero-ize.

Giving my Fise his finish. There 's my  
speech !

And where 's my fry, and family and friends ?  
Where 's that huge Hyacinth I mean to hug  
Till he cries out, "*Jam satis!* Let me  
breathe !"

Now, what an evening have I earned to-day !  
Hail, ye true pleasures, all the rest are false !  
Oh, the old mother, oh, the fattish wife !  
Rogue Hyacinth shall put on paper toque,  
And wrap himself around with mamma's veil  
Done up to imitate papa's black robe,  
(I 'm in the secret of the comedy, —  
Part of the program leaked out long ago !)  
And call himself the Advocate o' the Poor,  
Mimic Don father that defends the Count :  
And for reward shall have a small full glass  
Of manly red rosolio to himself,

— Always provided that he conjugate  
*Bibo*, I drink, correctly — nor be found  
Make the *perfectum*, *bipsi*, as last year !  
How the ambitious do so harden heart  
As lightly hold by these home-sanctitudes,  
To me is matter of bewilderment —  
Bewilderment ! Because ambition's range  
Is nowise tethered by domestic tie :  
Am I refused an outlet from my home  
To the world's stage ? — whereon a man should  
play

The man in public, vigilant for law,  
Zealous for truth, a credit to his kind,  
Nay, — since, employing talent so, I yield  
The Lord his own again with usury, —  
A satisfaction, yea, to God himself !  
Well, I have modelled me by Agur's wish,  
"Remove far from me vanity and lies,  
Feed me with food convenient for me !"  
What I' the world should a wise man require beyond ?  
Can I but coax the good fat little wife  
To tell her fool of a father the mad prank  
His scapegrace nephew played this time last  
year

At Carnival ! He could not choose, I think,  
But modify that inconsiderate gift  
O' the cup and cover (somewhere in the will  
Under the pillow, some one seems to guess)  
— Correct that clause in favor of a boy  
The trifle ought to grace, with name engraved,  
Would look so well, produced in future years  
To pledge a memory, when poor papa  
Latin and law are long since laid at rest —  
*Hyacintho dono dedit avus !* Why,

The wife should get a necklace for her pains,  
The very pearls that made Violante proud,  
And Pietro pawned for half their value once, —  
Redeemable by somebody, *ne sit*  
*Marita quæ rotundioribus*  
*Onusta mammis . . . baccis ambulet :*  
Her bosom shall display the big round balls,  
No braver proudly borne by wedded wife !  
With which Horatian promise I conclude.

Into the pigeon-hole with thee, my speech !  
Off and away, first work, then play, play, play !  
Bottini, burn thy books, thou blazing ass !  
Sing "Tra-la-la, for, lambkins, we must live !"

## IX

JURIS DOCTOR JOHANNES-BAPTISTA  
BOTTINIUS,

FISCI ET REV. CAM. APOSTOL. ADVOCATUS

Had I God's leave, how I would alter things !  
If I might read instead of print my speech, —  
Ay, and enliven speech with many a flower  
Refuses obstinate to blow in print,  
As wildings planted in a prim parterre, —  
This scurvy room were turned an immense hall ;  
Opposite, fifty judges in a row ;  
This side and that of me, for audience — Rome :  
And, where yon window is, the Pope should  
hide —

Watch, curtained, but peep visibly enough.  
A buzz of expectation ! Through the crowd,  
Jingling his chain and stumping with his staff,  
Up comes an usher, louts him low, "The Court  
Requires the allocation of the Fisc !"  
I rise, I bend, I look about me, pause  
O'er the hushed multitude : I count — One,  
two —

Have ye seen, Judges, have ye, lights of law, —  
When it may hap some painter, much in vogue  
Throughout our city nutritive of arts,  
Ye summon to a task shall test his worth,  
To manufacture, as he knows and can,  
A work may decorate a palace-wall,  
Affords my lords their Holy Family, —  
Hath it escaped the acumen of the Court  
How such a painter sets himself to paint ?  
Suppose that Joseph, Mary and her Babe  
A-journeying to Egypt, prove the piece :  
Why, first he sedulously practiseth,  
This painter, — girding loin and lighting lamp, —  
On what may nourish eye, make facile hand ;  
Getteth him studies (styled by draughtsmen so)  
From some assistant corpse of Jew or Turk  
Or, haply, Molinist, he cuts and carves, —  
This Luca or this Carlo or the like.  
To him the bones their inmost secret yield,  
Each notch and nodule signify their use :  
On him the muscles turn, in triple tier,  
And pleasantly entreat the entrusted man  
"Familiarize thee with our play that lifts  
Thus, and thus lowers again, leg, arm and  
foot !"

— Ensuring due correctness in the nude,  
Which done, is all done? Not a whit, ye know!  
He, — to art's surface rising from her depth, —  
If some flax-poll'd soft-bearded sire be found,  
May simulate a Joseph, (happy chance!) —  
Limneth exact each wrinkle of the brow,  
Loseth no involution, cheek or chap,  
Till lo, in black and white, the senior lives!  
Is it a young and comely peasant-nurse  
That poseth? (be the phrase accorded me!)  
Each feminine delight of florid lip,  
Eyes brimming o'er and brow bowed down  
with love,  
Marmoreal neck and bosom uberous, —  
Glad on the paper in a trice they go  
To help his notion of the Mother-maid:  
Methinks I see it, chalk a little stumped!  
Yea and her babe — that flexure of soft limbs,  
That budding face imbued with dewy sleep,  
Contribute each an excellence to Christ.  
Nay, since he humbly lent companionship,  
Even the poor ass, unpannied and elate  
Stands, perks an ear up, he a model too;  
While clouted shoon, staff, scrip and water-  
gourd, —  
Aught may betoken travel, heat and haste, —  
No jot nor tittle of these but in its turn  
Ministers to perfection of the piece:  
Till now, such piece before him, part by  
part, —  
Such prelude ended, — pause our painter may,  
Submit his fifty studies one by one,  
And in some sort boast "I have served my  
lords."

But what? And hath he painted once this  
while?  
Or when ye cry, "Produce the thing required,  
Show us our picture shall rejoice its niche,  
Thy Journey through the Desert done in  
oils!" —  
What, doth he fall to shuffling 'mid his sheets,  
Fumbling for first this, then the other fact  
Consigned to paper, — "studies," bear the  
term! —  
And stretch a canvas, mix a pot of paste,  
And fasten here a head and there a tail,  
(The ass hath one, my Judges!) so dove-tail  
Or, rather, ass-tail in, piece sorrowily out —  
By bits of reproduction of the life —  
The picture, the expected Family?  
I trow not! do I miss with my conceit  
The mark, my lords? — not so my lords were  
served!  
Rather your artist turns abrupt from these,  
And preferably buries him and broods  
(Quite away from aught vulgar and extern)  
On the inner spectrum, filtered through the eye,  
His brain-deposit, bred of many a drop,  
*E pluribus unum*: and the wiser he!  
For in that brain, — their fancy sees at work,  
Could my lords peep indulged, — results alone,  
Not processes which nourish such results,  
Would they discover and appreciate, — life  
Fed by digestion, not raw food itself,  
No gobbets but smooth comfortable chyme  
Secreted from each snapped-up crudity, —  
Less distinct, part by part, but in the whole

Truer to the subject, — the main central truth  
And soul o' the picture, would my Judges  
spy, —  
Not those mere fragmentary studied facts  
Which answer to the outward frame and  
flesh —  
Not this nose, not that eyebrow, the other fact  
Of man's staff, woman's stole or infant's clout,  
But lo, a spirit-birth conceived of flesh,  
Truth rare and real, not transcripts, fact and  
false.  
The studies — for his pupils and himself!  
The picture be for our eximious Rome  
And — who knows? — satisfy its Governor,  
Whose new wing to the villa he hath bought  
(God give him joy of it) by Capena, soon  
(*'T* is bruited) shall be glowing with the brush  
Of who hath long surpassed the Florentine,  
The Urbinate and . . . what if I dared add,  
Even his master, yea the Cortonese, —  
I mean the accomplished *Ciro Ferri*, *Sirs*!  
(— Did not he die? I'll see before I print.)  
End we exordium, *Phœbus* plucks my ear!  
Thus then, just so and no whit otherwise,  
Have I, — engaged as I were *Ciro's* self,  
To paint a parallel, a Family,  
The patriarch *Pietro* with his wise old wife  
To boot (as if one introduced *Saint Anne*  
By bold conjecture to complete the group)  
And juvenile *Pompilia* with her babe,  
Who, seeking safety in the wilderness,  
Were all surprised by *Herod*, while out-  
stretched  
In sleep beneath a palm-tree by a spring,  
And killed — the very circumstance I paint,  
Moving the pity and terror of my lords —  
Exactly so have I, a month at least,  
Your Fiscal, made me cognizant of facts,  
Searched out, pried into, pressed the meaning  
forth  
Of every piece of evidence in point,  
How bloody *Herod* slew these innocents, —  
Until the glad result is gained, the group  
Demonstrably presented in detail,  
Their slumber and his onslaught, — like as life.  
Yea, and, availing me of help allowed  
By law, discreet provision lest my lords  
Be too much troubled by effrontery, —  
The rack, law plies suspected crime withal —  
(Law that hath listened while the lyrist sang  
"*Lene tormentum ingenio admoveas.*")  
Gently thou joggest by a twinge the wit,  
"*Plerumque duro,*" else were slow to blab!)  
Through this concession my full cup runs o'er:  
The guilty owns his guilt without reserve.  
Therefore by part and part I clutch my case  
Which, in entirety now, — momentous task, —  
My lords demand, so render them I must,  
Since, one poor pleading more and I have done,  
But shall I ply my papers, play my proofs,  
Parade my studies, fifty in a row,  
As though the Court were yet in pupilage,  
Claimed not the artist's ultimate appeal?  
Much rather let me soar the height prescribed  
And, bowing low, proffer my picture's self!  
No more of proof, disproof, — such virtue was,  
Such vice was never in *Pompilia*, now!



Far better say "Behold Pompilia!" — for  
I leave the family as unmanageable,  
And stick to just one portrait, but life-size.)  
Hath calumny imputed to the fair  
A blemish, mole on cheek or wart on chin,  
Much more, blind hidden horrors best un-  
named?

Shall I descend to prove you, point by point,  
Never was knock-knee known nor splay-foot  
found

In Phryne? (I must let the portrait go,  
Content me with the model, I believe) —  
— I prove this? An indignant sweep of hand,  
Dash at and doing away with drapery,  
And, — use your eyes, Athenians, smooth she  
smiles!

Or, — since my client can no longer smile,  
And more appropriate instances abound, —  
What is this Tale of Tarquin, how the slave  
Was caught by him, preferred to Collatine?  
Thou, even from thy corpse-clothes virginal,  
Look'st the lie dead, Lucretia!

Thus at least

I, by the guidance of antiquity,  
(Our one infallible guide,) now operate,  
Sure that the innocence thus shown is safe;  
Sure, too, that, while I plead, the echoes cry  
(Lend my weak voice thy trump, sonorous  
Fame!)

"Monstrosity the Phrynean shape shall mar,  
Lucretia's soul comport with Tarquin's lie,  
When thistles grow on vines or thorns yield figs,  
Or oblique sentence leave this judgment-seat!"

A great theme: may my strength be adequate!  
For — paint Pompilia, dares my feebleness?  
How did I unaware engage so much  
— Find myself undertaking to produce  
A faultless nature in a flawless form?  
What's here? Oh, turn aside nor dare the  
blaze

Of such a crown, such constellation, say,  
As jewels here thy front, Humanity!  
First, infancy, pellucid as a pearl;  
Then, childhood — stone which, dewdrop at the  
first,

(An old conjecture) sucks, by dint of gaze,  
Blue from the sky and turns to sapphire so:  
Yet both these gems eclipsed by, last and best,  
Womanliness and wifehood opaline,  
Its milk-white pallor, — chastity, — suffused  
With here and there a tint and hint of flame, —  
Desire, — the lapidary loves to find.  
Such jewels bind conspicuously thy brow,  
Pompilia, infant, child, maid, woman, wife —  
Crown the ideal in our earth at last!  
What should a faculty like mine do here?  
Close eyes, or else, the rashlier hurry hand!

Which is to say, — lose no time but begin!  
*Sermocinando ne declamem*, Sirs,  
*Ultra clepsydram*, as our preachers smile,  
Lest I exceed my hour-glass. Whereupon,  
As Flaccus prompts, I dare the epic plunge —  
Begin at once with marriage, up till when  
Little or nothing would arrest your love,  
In the easeful life o' the lady; lamb and lamb,  
How do they differ? Know one, you know all

Manners of maidenhood: mere maiden she.  
And since all lambs are like in more than fleece,  
Prepare to find that, lamb-like, she too frisks —  
O' the weaker sex, my lords, the weaker sex!  
To whom, the Teian teaches us, for gift,  
Not strength, — man's dower, — but beauty,  
nature gave,

"Beauty in lieu of spears, in lieu of shields!"  
And what is beauty's sure concomitant,  
Nay, intimate essential character,  
But melting wiles, deliciouslest deceits,  
The whole redoubted armory of love?  
Therefore of vernal pranks, dishevellings  
O' the hair of youth that dances April in,  
And easily-imagined Hebe-slips  
O'er sward which May makes over-smooth for  
foot —

These shall we pry into? — or wiselier wink,  
Though numerous and dear they may have  
been?

For lo, advancing Hymen and his pomp!  
*Discedunt nunc amores*, loves, farewell!  
*Maneat amor*, let love, the sole, remain!  
Farewell to dewiness and prime of life!  
Remains the rough determined day: dance  
done,

To work, with plough and harrow! What  
comes next?

'T is Guido henceforth guides Pompilia's step,  
Cries, "No more friskings o'er the foodful glebe,  
Else, 'ware the whip!" Accordingly, — first  
crack

O' the thong, — we hear that his young wife  
was barred,

*Cohibita fuit*, from the old free life,  
*Vitam liberiorem ducere*.  
Demur we? Nowise: heifer brave the hind?  
We seek not there should lapse the natural law,  
The proper piety to lord and king  
And husband: let the heifer bear the yoke!  
Only, I crave he cast not patience off,  
This hind; for deem you she endures the whip,  
Nor winces at the goad, nay, restive, kicks?  
What if the adversary's charge be just,  
And all untowardly she pursue her way  
With groan and grunt, though hind strike ne'er  
so hard?

If petulant remonstrance made appeal,  
Unseasonable, o'erprotracted, — if  
Importunate challenge taxed the public ear  
When silence more decorously had served  
For protestation, — if Pompilian plaint  
Wrought but to aggravate Guidonian ire, —  
Why, such mishaps, ungainly though they be,  
Ever companion change, are incident  
To altered modes and novelty of life:  
The philosophic mind expects no less,  
Smilingly knows and names the crisis, sits  
Waiting till old things go and new arrive.  
Therefore, I hold a husband but inept  
Who turns impatient at such transit-time,  
As if this running from the rod would last!

Since, even while I speak, the end is reached:  
Success awaits the soon-disheartened man.  
The parents turn their backs and leave the  
house,

The wife may wail but none shall intervene :  
 He hath attained his object, groom and bride  
 Partake the nuptial bower no soul can see,  
 Old things are passed and all again is new,  
 Over and gone the obstacles to peace,  
*Novorum* — tenderly the Mantuan turns  
 The expression, some such purpose in his eye —  
*Nascitur ordo!* Every storm is laid,  
 And forth from plain each pleasant herb may  
 peep,  
 Each bloom of wifehood in abeyance late :  
 (Confer a passage in the Canticles.)

But what if, as 't is wont with plant and wife,  
 Flowers — after a suppression to good end,  
 Still, when they do spring forth — sprout here,  
 spread there,

Anywhere likelier than beneath the foot  
 O' the lawful good-man gardener of the ground ?  
 He dug and dibbled, sowed and watered, — still  
 'T is a chance wayfarer shall pluck the increase.  
 Just so, respecting persons not too much,  
 The lady, foes allege, put forth each charm  
 And proper floweret of femininity  
 To whosoever had a nose to smell  
 Or breast to deck : what if the charge be true ?  
 The fault were graver had she looked with  
 choice,

Fastidiously appointed who should grasp,  
 Who, in the whole town, go without the prize !  
 To nobody she destined donative,  
 But, first come was first served, the accuser  
 saith,

Put case her sort of . . . in this kind . . .  
 escapes

Were many and oft and indiscriminate —  
 Impute ye as the action were prepense,  
 The gift particular, arguing malice so ?  
 Which butterfly of the wide air shall brag  
 "I was preferred to Guido" — when 't is clear  
 The cup, he quaffs at, lay with olent breast  
 Open to gnat, midge, bee and moth as well ?  
 One chalice entertained the company ;  
 And if its peevish lord object the more,  
 Mistake, misname such bounty in a wife,  
 Haste we to advertise him — charm of cheek,  
 Lustre of eye, allowance of the lip,  
 All womanly components in a spouse,  
 These are no household-bread each stranger's  
 bite

Leaves by so much diminished for the mouth  
 O' the master of the house at supper-time :  
 But rather like a lump of spice they lie,  
 Morsel of myrrh, which scents the neighborhood  
 Yet greets its lord no lighter by a grain.

Nay, even so, he shall be satisfied !  
 Concede we there was reason in his wrong,  
 Grant we his grievance and content the man !  
 For lo, Pompilia, she submits herself ;  
 Ere three revolving years have crowned their  
 course,

Off and away she puts this same reproach  
 Of lavish bounty, inconsiderate gift  
 O' the sweets of wifehood stored to other ends :  
 No longer shall he blame "She none excludes,"  
 But substitute "She laudably sees all,  
 Searches the best out and selects the same."

For who is here, long sought and latest found,  
 Waiting his turn unmoved amid the whirl,  
 "*Constans in levitate*," — Ha, my lords ?  
 Calm in his levity, — indulge the quip ! —  
 Since 't is a levite bears the bell away,  
 Parades him henceforth as Pompilia's choice,  
 'T is no ignoble object, husband ! Doubt'st ?  
 When here comes tripping Flaccus with his  
 phrase,  
 "Trust me, no miscreant singled from the mob,  
*Crede non illum tibi de scelestis*  
*Plebe delectum*," but a man of mark,  
 A priest, dost hear ? Why then, submit thy-  
 self !

Priest, ay, and very phoenix of such fowl,  
 Well-born, of culture, young and vigorous,  
 Comely too, since precise the precept points —  
 On the selected levite be there found  
 Nor mole nor scar nor blemish, lest the mind  
 Come all uncandid through the thwarting flesh !  
 Was not the son of Jesse ruddy, sleek,  
 Pleasant to look on, pleasant every way ?  
 Since well he smote the harp and sweetly sang,  
 And danced till Abigail came out to see,  
 And seeing smiled and smiling ministered  
 The raisin-cluster and the cake of figs,  
 With ready meal refreshed the gifted youth,  
 Till Nabal, who was absent shearing sheep,  
 Felt heart sink, took to bed (discreetly done —  
 They might have been beforehand with him else)  
 And died — would Guido have behaved as well ?  
 But ah, the faith of early days is gone,  
*Heu prisca fides!* Nothing died in him  
 Save courtesy, good sense and proper trust,  
 Which, when they ebb from souls they should  
 o'erflow,

Discover stub, weed, sludge and ugliness.  
 (The Pope, we know, is Neapolitan  
 And relishes a sea-side simile.)  
 Deserted by each charitable wave,  
 Guido, left high and dry, shows jealous now !  
 Jealous avouched, paraded : tax the fool  
 With any peccadillo, he responds,  
 "Truly I beat my wife through jealousy,  
 Imprisoned her and punished otherwise,  
 Being jealous : now would threaten, sword in  
 hand,

Now manage to mix poison in her sight,  
 And so forth : jealously I dealt, in fine."  
 Concede thus much, and what remains to prove ?  
 Have I to teach my masters what effect  
 Hath jealousy, and how, befooling men,  
 It makes false true, abuses eye and ear,  
 Turns mere mist adamantine, loads with sound  
 Silence, and into void and vacancy  
 Crowds a whole phalanx of conspiring foes ?  
 Therefore who owns "I watched with jealousy  
 My wife," adds "for no reason in the world !"  
 What need that, thus proved madman, he re-  
 mark  
 "The thing I thought a serpent proved an  
 eel" ? —

Perchance the right Comacchian, six foot  
 length,

And not an inch too long for that rare pie  
 (Master Arcangeli has heard of such)  
 Whose succulence makes fasting bearable ;  
 Meant to regale some moody splenetic

Who, pleasing to mistake the donor's gift,  
 Spying I know not what Lernaean snake  
 I the luscious Lenten creature, stamps for-  
 sooth  
 The dainty in the dust.

Enough ! Prepare,  
 Such luns announced, for downright lunacy !  
*Insanit homo*, threat succeeds to threat,  
 And blow redoubles blow, — his wife, the  
 block.

But, if a block, shall not she jar the hand  
 That buffets her ? The injurious idle stone  
 Rebounds and hits the head of him who flung.  
 Causeless rage breeds, i' the wife now, rageful  
 cause,

Tyranny wakes rebellion from its sleep.  
 Rebellion, say I ? — rather, self-defence,  
 Laudable wish to live and see good days,  
 Pricks our Pompilia now to fly the fool  
 By any means, at any price, — nay, more,  
 Nay, most of all, i' the very interest  
 O' the fool that, baffled of his blind desire  
 At any price, were truest victor so.  
 Shall he effect his crime and lose his soul ?  
 No, dictates duty to a loving wife !  
 Far better that the unconsummate blow,  
 Adroitly barked by her, should back again,  
 Correctively admonish his own pate !

Crime then, — the Court is with me ? — she  
 must crush ;  
 How crush it ? By all efficacious means ;  
 And these, — why, what in woman should they  
 be ?

"With horns the bull, with teeth the lion  
 fights ;  
 To woman," quoth the lyrist quoted late,  
 "Nor teeth, nor horns, but beauty, Nature  
 gave !"

Pretty i' the Pagan ! Who dares blame the use  
 Of armory thus allowed for natural, —  
 Exclaim against a seeming-dubious play  
 O' the sole permitted weapon, spear and shield  
 Alike, resorted to i' the circumstance  
 By poor Pompilia ? Grant she somewhat plied  
 Arts that allure, the magic nod and wink,  
 The witchery of gesture, spell of word,  
 Whereby the likelier to enlist this friend,  
 Yea stranger, as a champion on her side ?  
 Such man, being but mere man, ('t was all she  
 knew.)

Must be made sure by beauty's silken bond,  
 The weakness that subdues the strong, and  
 bows

Wisdom alike and folly. Grant the tale  
 O' the husband, which is false, were proved  
 and true

To the letter — or the letters. I should say,  
 Abominations he professed to find  
 And fix upon Pompilia and the priest, —  
 Allow them hers — for though she could not  
 write,

In early days of Eve-like innocence  
 That plucked no apple from the knowledge-  
 tree,

Yet, at the Serpent's word, Eve plucks and eats  
 And knows — especially how to read and write :

And so Pompilia, — as the move o' the maw,  
 Quoth Persius, makes a parrot bid "Good  
 day !"

A crow salute the concave, and a pie  
 Endeavor at proficiency in speech, —  
 So she, through hunger after fellowship,  
 May well have learned, though late, to play the  
 scribe :

As indeed, there 's one letter on the list  
 Explicitly declares did happen here.

"You thought my letters could be none of  
 mine,"

She tells her parents — "mine, who wanted  
 skill ;

But now I have the skill, and write, you see !"  
 She needed write love-letters, so she learned,  
*"Neqatas artifex sequi voces"* — though

This letter nowise 'scapes the common lot,  
 But lies i' the condemnation of the rest,  
 Found by the husband's self who forged them  
 all.

Yet, for the sacredness of argument,  
 For this once an exemption shall it plead —  
 Anything, anything to let the wheels  
 Of argument run glibly to their goal !  
 Concede she wrote (which were preposterous)  
 This and the other epistle, — what of it ?  
 Where does the figment touch her candid  
 fame ?

Being in peril of her life — "my life,  
 Not an hour's purchase," as the letter runs, —  
 And having but one stay in this extreme,  
 Out of the wide world but a single friend —  
 What could she other than resort to him,  
 And how with any hope resort but thus ?  
 Shall modesty dare bid a stranger brave  
 Danger, disgrace, nay death in her behalf —  
 Think to entice the sternness of the steel  
 Yet spare love's loadstone moving manly  
 mind ?

— Most of all, when such mind is hampered so  
 By growth of circumstance athwart the life  
 O' the natural man, that decency forbids  
 He stoop and take the common privilege,  
 Say frank "I love," as all the vulgar do.

A man is wedded to philosophy,  
 Married to statesmanship ; a man is old ;  
 A man is fettered by the foolishness  
 He took for wisdom and talked ten years  
 since ;

A man is, like our friend the Canon here,  
 A priest, and wicked if he break his vow :  
 Shall he dare love, who may be Pope one day ?  
 Despite the coil of such encumbrance here,  
 Suppose this man could love, unhappily,  
 And would love, dared he only let love show !  
 In case the woman of his love speaks first,  
 From what embarrassment she sets him free !  
 " 'Tis I who break reserve, begin appeal,  
 Confess that, whether you love me or no,  
 I love you ! " What an ease to dignity,  
 What help of pride from the hard high-backed  
 chair

Down to the carpet where the kittens bask,  
 All under the pretence of gratitude !

From all which, I deduce — the lady here  
 Was bound to proffer nothing short of love



To the priest whose service was to save her.  
What?

Shall she propose him lucre, dust o' the mine,  
Rubbish o' the rock, some diamond, muck-  
worms prize,  
Some pearl secreted by a sickly fish?  
Scarcely! She caters for a generous taste.  
'T is love shall beckon, beauty bid to feast.  
Till all the Samson sink into the snare!  
Because, permit the end — permit therewith  
Means to the end!

How say you, good my lords?  
I hope you heard my adversary ring  
The changes on this precept: now, let me  
Reverse the peal! *Quia dato licito fine,*  
*Ad illum assequendum ordinata*  
*Non sunt damnanda media*, — licit end  
Enough was found in mere escape from death,  
To legalize our means illicit else  
Of feigned love, false allurements, fancied fact.  
Thus Venus losing Cupid on a day,  
(See that *Idyllium Moschi*) seeking help,  
In the anxiety of motherhood,  
Allowably promised, "Who shall bring report  
Where he is wandered to, my winged babe,  
I give him for reward a nectared kiss;  
But who brings safely back the truant's self,  
His be a super-sweet makes kiss seem cold!"  
Are not these things writ for example-sake?

To such permitted motive, then, refer  
All those professions, else were hard explain,  
Of hope, fear, jealousy, and the rest of love!  
He is Myrtillus, Amaryllis she,  
She burns, he freezes, — all a mere device  
To catch and keep the man, may save her  
life,

Whom otherwise nor catches she nor keeps!  
Worst, once, turns best now: in all faith, she  
feigns:

Feigning, — the liker innocence to guilt,  
The truer to the life in what she feigns!  
How if Ulysses, — when, for public good  
He sunk particular qualms and played the spy,  
Entered Troy's hostile gate in beggar's garb —  
How if he first had boggled at this clout,  
Grown dainty o'er that clack-dish? Grime is  
grace

To whose grapes amid the dung for gold.

Hence, beyond promises, we praise each proof  
That promise was not simply made to break,  
Mere moonshine-structure meant to fade at  
dawn:

We praise, as consequent and requisite,  
What, enemies allege, were more than words,  
Deeds — meetings at the window, twilight-  
trysts,

Nocturnal entertainments in the dim  
Old labyrinthine palace; lies, we know —  
Inventions we, long since, turned inside out.  
Must such external semblance of intrigue  
Demonstrate that intrigue there lurks perdue?  
Does every hazel-sheath disclose a nut?  
He were a Molinist who dared maintain  
That midnight meetings in a screened alcove  
Must argue folly in a matron — since  
So would he bring a slur on Judith's self,

Commended beyond women, that she lured  
The lustful to destruction through his lust.  
Pompilia took not Judith's liberty,  
No falchion find you in her hand to smite,  
No damsel to convey in dish the head  
Of Holoernes, — style the Canon so —  
Or is it the Count? If I entangle me  
With my similitudes, — if wax wings melt,  
And earthward down I drop, not mine the  
fault:

Blame your beneficence, O Court, O sun,  
Whereof the beamy smile affects my flight!  
What matter, so Pompilia's fame revive  
I' the warmth that proves the bane of Icarus?

Yea, we have shown it lawful, necessary  
Pompilia leave her husband, seek the house  
O' the parents: and because 'twixt home and  
home

Lies a long road with many a danger rife,  
Lions by the way and serpents in the path,  
To rob and ravish, — much behooves she keep  
Each shadow of suspicion from fair fame,  
For her own sake much, but for his sake more,  
The ingrate husband's. Evidence shall be,  
Plain witness to the world how white she walks  
I' the mire she wanders through ere Rome she  
reach.

And who so proper witness as a priest?  
Gainsay ye? Let me hear who dares gainsay!  
I hope we still can punish heretics!  
"Give me the man," I say with him of Gath,  
"That we may fight together!" None, I  
think:

The priest is granted me.

Then, if a priest,  
One juvenile and potent: else, mayhap,  
That dragon, our Saint George would slay, slays  
him.

And should fair face accompany strong hand,  
The more complete equipment: nothing mars  
Work, else praiseworthy, like a bodily flaw  
I' the worker: as 't is said Saint Paul himself  
Deplored the cheek o' the puny presence, still  
Cheating his fulmination of its flash,  
Albeit the bolt therein went true to oak.  
Therefore the agent, as prescribed, she takes, —  
Both juvenile and potent, handsome too, —  
In all obedience: "good," you grant again.  
Do you? I would you were the husband, lords!  
How prompt and facile might departure be!  
How boldly would Pompilia and the priest  
March out of door, spread flag at beat of drum,  
But that inapprehensive Guido grants  
Neither premiss nor yet conclusion here,  
And, purblind, dreads a bear in every bush!  
For his own quietude and comfort, then,  
Means must be found for flight in masquerade  
At hour when all things sleep — "Save  
jealousy!"

Right, Judges! Therefore shall the lady's  
wit

Supply the boon thwart nature balks him of,  
And do him service with the potent drug  
(Helen's nepenthe, as my lords opine)  
Which respite blessedly each fretted nerve  
O' the much-enduring man: accordingly,

There lies he, duly dosed and sound asleep,  
Relieved of woes or real or raved about.  
While soft she leaves his side, he shall not  
wake;

Nor stop who steals away to join her friend,  
Nor do him mischief should he catch that friend  
Intent on more than friendly office, — nay,  
Nor get himself raw head and bones laid bare  
In payment of his apparition!

Thus  
Would I defend the step, — were the thing  
true

Which is a fable, — see my former speech, —  
That Guido slept (who never slept a wink)  
Through treachery, an opiate from his wife,  
Who not so much as knew what opiates mean.

Now she may start: or hist, — a stoppage still!  
A journey is an enterprise of cost!

As in campaigns, we fight but others pay,  
*Suis expensis, nemo militat.*

'T is Guido's self we guard from accident,  
Ensuring safety to Pompilia, versed  
Nowise in misadventures by the way,  
Hard riding and rough quarters, the rude fare,  
The unready host. What magic mitigates  
Each plague of travel to the unpractised wife?  
Money, sweet Sirs! And were the fiction fact  
She helped herself thereto with liberal hand  
From out her husband's store, — what fitter  
use

Was ever husband's money destined to?  
With bag and baggage thus did Dido once  
Decamp, — for more authority, a queen!

So is she fairly on her route at last,  
Prepared for either fortune: nay and if  
The priest, now all aglow with enterprise,  
Cool somewhat presently when fades the flush  
O' the first adventure, clouded o'er belike  
By doubts, misgivings how the day may die,  
Though born with such auroral brilliance, — if  
The brow seem over-pensive and the lip  
'Gin lag and lose the prattle lightsome late, —  
Vanquished by tedium of a prolonged jaunt  
In a close carriage o'er a jolting road,  
With only one young female substitute  
For seventeen other Canons of ripe age  
Were wont to keep him company in church, —  
Shall not Pompilia haste to dissipate  
The silent cloud that, gathering, bodes her  
bale? —

Prop the irresoluteness may portend  
Suspension of the project, check the flight,  
Bring ruin on them both? Use every means,  
Since means to the end are lawful! What if  
the way

Of wile should have allowance like a kiss  
Sagely and sisterly administered,  
*Sororia saltem oscula?* We find  
Such was the remedy her wit applied  
To each incipient scruple of the priest,  
If we believe, — as, while my wit is mine  
I cannot, — what the driver testifies,  
Borsi, called Venerino, the mere tool  
Of Guido and his friend the Governor, —  
Avowal I proved wrung from out the wretch.

After long rotting in imprisonment,  
As price of liberty and favor: long  
They tempted, he at last succumbed, and lo  
Counted them out full tale each kiss and more,  
"The journey being one long embrace," quoth  
he.

Still, though we should believe the driver's lie,  
Nor even admit as probable excuse,  
Right reading of the riddle, — as I urged  
In my first argument, with fruit perhaps —  
That what the owl-like eyes (at back of head!)  
O' the driver, drowsed by driving night and  
day,

Supposed a vulgar interchange of lips,  
This was but innocent jog of head 'gainst head,  
Cheek meeting jowl as apple may touch pear  
From branch and branch contiguous in the  
wind,

When Autumn blusters and the orchard  
rocks: —

That rapid run and the rough road were cause  
O' the casual ambiguity, no harm  
I' the world to eyes awake and penetrative: —  
Say, — not to grasp a truth I can release  
And safely fight without, yet conquer still, —  
Say, she kissed him, say, he kissed her again!  
Such osculation was a potent means,  
A very efficacious help, no doubt:  
Such with a third part of her nectar did  
Venus imbue: why should Pompilia fling  
The poet's declaration in his teeth? —  
Pause to employ what — since it had success,  
And kept the priest her servant to the end —  
We must presume of energy enough,  
No whit superfluous, so permissible?

The goal is gained: day, night, and yet a day  
Have run their round: a long and devious road  
Is traversed, — many manners, various men  
Passed in review, what cities did they see,  
What hamlets mark, what profitable food  
For after-meditation cull and store!  
Till Rome, that Rome whereof — this voice  
Would it might make our Molinists observe,  
That she is built upon a rock nor shall  
Their powers prevail against her! — Rome, I  
say,

Is all but reached; one stage more and they  
stop  
Saved: pluck up heart, ye pair, and forward,  
then!

Ah, Nature — baffled she recurs, alas!  
Nature imperiously exacts her due,  
Spirit is willing but the flesh is weak:  
Pompilia needs must acquiesce and swoon,  
Give hopes alike and fears a breathing-while.  
The innocent sleep soundly: sound she sleeps,  
So let her slumber, then, unguarded save  
By her own chastity, a triple mail,  
And his good hand whose stalwart arms have  
borne

The sweet and senseless burden like a babe  
From coach to couch, — the serviceable  
strength!

Nay, what and if he gazed rewardedly  
On the pale beauty prisoned in embrace,  
Stooped over, stole a balmy breath perhaps

For more assurance sleep was not decease —  
*" Ut vidi, "* " how I saw ! " succeeded by  
*" Ut peri, "* " how I sudden lost my brams ! "  
 — What harm ensued to her unconscious quite ?  
 For, curiosity — how natural !  
 Importunateness — what a privilege  
 In the ardent sex ! And why curb ardor here ?  
 How can the priest but pity whom he saved ?  
 And pity is so near to love, and love  
 So neighborly to all unreasonableness !  
 As to love's object, whether love were sage  
 Or foolish, could Pompilia know or care,  
 Being still sound asleep, as I premised ?  
 Thus the philosopher absorbed by thought,  
 Even Archimedes, busy o'er a book  
 The while besiegers sacked his Syracuse,  
 Was ignorant of the imminence o' the point  
 O' the sword till it surprised him : let it stab,  
 And never knew himself was dead at all.  
 So sleep thou on, secure whate'er betide !  
 For thou, too, hast thy problem hard to solve —  
 How so much beauty is compatible  
 With so much innocence !

Fit place, methinks,

While in this task she rosily is lost,  
 To treat of and repel objection here  
 Which, — frivolous, I grant, — my mind mis-  
 gives,

May somehow still have flitted, gaddy-like,  
 And teased the Court at times — as if, all said  
 And done, there seemed, the Court might nearly  
 say,

In a certain acceptance, somewhat more  
 Of what may pass for insincerity,  
 Falsehood, throughout the course Pompilia  
 took,

Than befits Christian. Pagans held, we know,  
 Man always ought to aim at good and truth,  
 Not always put one thing in the same words :  
*Non idem semper dicere sed spectare*  
*Debemus.* But the Pagan yoke was light ;  
 " Lie not at all, " the exacter precept bids :  
 Each least lie breaks the law, — is sin, we  
 hold.

I humble me, but venture to submit —  
 What prevents sin, itself is sinless, sure :  
 And sin, which hinders sin of deeper dye,  
 Softens itself away by contrast so.

Conceive me ! Little sin, by none at all,  
 Were properly condemned for great : but great,  
 By greater, dwindles into small again.  
 Now, what is greatest sin of womanhood ?

That which unwomans it, abolishes  
 The nature of the woman, — impudence.  
 Who contradicts me here ? Concede me, then,  
 Whatever friendly fault may interpose  
 To save the sex from self-abolishment  
 Is three-parts on the way to virtue's rank !  
 And, what is taxed here as duplicity,  
 Feint, wile, and trick, — admitted for the  
 nonce, —

What worse do one and all than interpose,  
 Hold, as it were, a deprecating hand,  
 Statuesquely, in the Medicean mode,  
 Before some shame which modesty would veil ?  
 Who blames the gesture prettily perverse ?  
 Thus, — lest ye miss a point illustrative, —

Admit the husband's calumny — allow  
 That the wife, having penned the epistle  
 fraught

With horrors, charge on charge of crime she  
 heaped

O' the head of Pietro and Violante — (still  
 Presumed her parents) — having dispatched the  
 same

To their arch-enemy Paolo, through free choice  
 And no sort of compulsion in the world —

Put ease she next discards simplicity  
 For craft, denies the voluntary act,

Declares herself a passive instrument  
 I' the husband's hands ; that, duped by knavery,

She traced the characters she could not write,  
 And took on trust the unread sense which, read,

And recognized were to be spurned at once :  
 Allow this calumny, I reiterate !

Who is so dull as wonder at the pose  
 Of our Pompilia in the circumstance ?

Who sees not that the too-ingenuous soul,  
 Repugnant even at a duty done

Which brought beneath too scrutinizing glare  
 The misdemeanors, — buried in the dark, —

Of the authors of her being, was believed, —  
 Stung to the quick at her impulsive deed,

And willing to repair what harm it worked,  
 She — wise in this beyond what Nero proved,

Who, when folk urged the candid juvenile  
 To sign the warrant, doom the guilty dead,

" Would I had never learned to write ! " quoth  
 he !

— Pompilia rose above the Roman, cried,  
 " To read or write I never learned at all ! "

O splendidly mendacious !

But time fleets :

Let us not linger : hurry to the end,  
 Since flight does end, and that disastrously.

Beware ye blame desert for unsuccess,  
 Disparage each expedient else to praise,

Call failure folly ! Man's best effort fails,  
 After ten years' resistance Troy succumbed :

Could valor save a town, Troy still had stood.  
 Pompilia came off halting in no point

Of courage, conduct, her long journey through :  
 But nature sank exhausted at the close.

And, as I said, she swooned and slept all night.  
 Morn breaks and brings the husband : we assist

At the spectacle. Discovery succeeds.  
 Ha, how is this ? What moonstruck rage is  
 here ?

Though we confess to partial frailty now,  
 To error in a woman and a wife,

Is 't by the rough way she shall be reclaimed ?  
 Who bursts upon her chambered privacy ?

What crowd profanes the chaste *cubiculum* ?  
 What outeries and lewd laughter, scurril gibe

And ribald jest to scare the ministrant  
 Good angels that commerce with souls in sleep ?

Why, had the worst crowned Guido to his  
 wish,

Confirmed his most irrational surmise,  
 Yet there be bounds to man's emotion,

checks  
 To an immoderate astonishment.

'T is decent horror, regulated wrath,  
 Befit our dispensation : have we back



The old Pagan license? Shall a Vulcan clap  
His net o' the sudden and expose the pair  
To the unquenchable universal mirth?  
A feat, antiquity saw scandal in  
So clearly, that the nauseous tale thereof —  
Demodocus his nugatory song —  
Hath ever been concluded modern stuff  
Impossible to the mouth of the grave Muse,  
So, foisted into that Eighth Odyssey  
By some impertinent pickthank. O thou fool,  
Count Guido Franceschini, what didst gain  
By publishing thy secret to the world?  
Were all the precepts of the wise a waste —  
Bred in thee not one touch of reverence?  
Admit thy wife — admonish we the fool —  
Were falseness' self, why chronicle thy shame?  
Much rather should thy teeth bite out thy  
tongue,

Dumb lip consort with desecrated brow,  
Silence become historiographer,  
And thou — thine own Cornelius Tacitus!  
But virtue, barred, still leaps the barrier, lords!  
— Still, moon-like, penetrates the encroaching  
mist

And bursts, all broad and bare, on night, ye  
know!

Surprised, then, in the garb of truth, perhaps,  
Pompilia, thus opposed, breaks obstacle,  
Springs to her feet, and stands Thalassian-pure,  
Confronts the foe, — nay, catches at his sword  
And tries to kill the intruder, he complains.  
Why, so she gave her lord his lesson back,  
Crowned him, this time, the virtuous woman's  
way.

With an exact obedience; he brought sword,  
She drew the same, since swords are meant to  
draw.

Tell not me 't is sharp play with tools on edge!  
It was the husband chose the weapon here  
Why did not he inaugurate the game  
With some gentility of apophthegm  
Still pregnant on the philosophic page,  
Some captivating cadence still a-lisp  
O' the poet's lyre? Such spells subdue the  
surge,

Make tame the tempest, much more mitigate  
The passions of the mind, and probably  
Had moved Pompilia to a smiling blush.  
No, he must needs prefer the argument  
O' the blow: and she obeyed, in duty bound,  
Returned him buffet ratiocinative —  
Ay, in the reasoner's own interest,  
For wife must follow whither husband leads,  
Vindicate honor as himself prescribes,  
Save him the very way himself bids save!  
No question but who jumps into a quag  
Should stretch forth hand and pray us "Pull  
me out

By the hand!" such were the customary cry:  
But Guido pleased to bid "Leave hand alone!  
Join both feet, rather, jump upon my head:  
I extricate myself by the rebound!"  
And dutifully as enjoined she jumped —  
Drew his own sword and menaced his own life,  
Anything to content a wilful spouse.

And so he was contented — one must do  
Justice to the expedient which succeeds,

Strange as it seem: at flourish of the blade.  
The crowd drew back, stood breathless and  
abashed,

Then murmured, "This should be no wanton  
wife,

No conscience-stricken sinner, caught i' the  
act,

And patiently awaiting our first stone:  
But a poor hard-pressed all-bewildered thing,  
Has rushed so far, misguidedly perhaps,  
Meaning no more harm than a frightened sheep.  
She sought for aid; and if she made mistake  
I' the man could aid most, why — so mortals  
do:

Even the blessed Magdalen mistook  
Far less forgivably: consult the place —  
Supposing him to be the gardener,  
'Sir,' said she, and so following." Why more  
words?

Forthwith the wife is pronounced innocent:  
What would the husband more than gain his  
cause,

And find that honor flash in the world's eye.  
His apprehension was lest soil had snatched?

So, happily the adventure comes to close  
Whereon my fat opponent grounds his charge  
Preposterous: at mid-day he groans "How  
dark!"

Listen to me, thou Archangelic swine!  
Where is the ambiguity to blame.  
The flaw to find in our Pompilia? Safe  
She stands, see! Does thy comment follow  
quick,

"Safe, inasmuch as at the end proposed;  
But thither she picked way by devious path —  
Stands dirtied, no dubiety at all!  
I recognize success, yet, all the same,  
Importunately will suggestion prompt —  
Better Pompilia gained the right to boast,  
'No devious path, no doubtful patch was mine.  
I saved my head nor sacrificed my foot!'  
Why, being in a peril, show mistrust  
Of the angels set to guard the innocent?  
Why rather hold by obvious vulgar help  
Of stratagem and subterfuge, excused  
Somewhat, but still no less a foil, a fault,  
Since low with high, and good with bad is  
linked?

Methinks I view some ancient bas-relief.  
There stands Hesione thrust out by Troy,  
Her father's hand has chained her to a crag,  
Her mother's from the virgin plucked the vest,  
At a safe distance both distressful watch,  
While near and nearer comes the snorting ore.  
I look that, white and perfect to the end,  
She wait till Jove dispatch some demigod;  
Not that, — impatient of celestial club  
Alcmena's son should brandish at the beast, —  
She daub, disguise her dainty limbs with pitch,  
And so elude the purblind monster! Ay,  
The trick succeeds, but 't is an ugly trick,  
Where needs have been no trick!"

My answer? Faugh!  
*Nimis incongrue!* Too absurdly put!  
*Sententiam ego teneo contrariam,*  
Trick, I maintain, had no alternative.

The heavens were bound with brass, — Jove far  
at feast

(No feast like that thou didst not ask me to,  
Arcangeli, — I heard of thy regale !)  
With the unblamed Æthiop, — Hercules spun  
wool

I' the lap of Omphale, while Virtue shrieked —  
The brute came paddling all the faster. You  
Of Troy, who stood at distance, where 's the aid  
You offered in the extremity ? Most and least,  
Gentle and simple, here the Governor,  
There the Archbishop, everywhere the friends,  
Shook heads and waited for a miracle.  
Or went their way, left Virtue to her fate.  
Just this one rough and ready man leapt forth !  
— Was found, sole anti-Fabius (dare I say)  
Who restored things, with no delay at all,  
*Qui haud cunctando rem restituit !* He,  
He only, Caponsacchi 'mid a crowd,  
Caught Virtue up, carried Pompilia off  
Through gaping impotence of sympathy  
In ranged Arezzo : what you take for pitch  
Is nothing worse, belike, than black and blue,  
Mere evanescent proof that hardy hands  
Did yeoman's service, cared not where the gripe  
Was more than duly energetic : bruised,  
She smarts a little, but her bones are saved  
A fracture, and her skin will soon show sleek.  
How it disgusts when weakness, false-refined,  
Censures the honest rude effective strength, —  
When sickly dreamers of the impossible  
Decry plain sturdiness which does the feat  
With eyes wide open !

Did occasion serve,

I could illustrate, if my lords allow ;  
*Quid vetat*, what forbids I aptly ask  
With Horace, that I give my anger vent,  
While I let breathe, no less, and recreate,  
The gravity of my Judges, by a tale ?  
A case in point — what though an apologue  
Graced by tradition ? — possibly a fact :  
Tradition must precede all scripture, words  
Serve as our warrant ere our books can be :  
So, to tradition back we needs must go  
For any fact's authority : and this  
Hath lived so far (like jewel hid in muck)  
On page of that old lying vanity  
Called "Sepher Toldoth Yeschu : " God be  
praised,

I read no Hebrew, — take the thing on trust :  
But I believe the writer meant no good  
(Blind as he was to truth in some respects)  
To our pestiferous and schismatic . . . well,  
My lords' conjecture be the touchstone, show  
The thing for what it is ! The author lacks  
Discretion, and his zeal exceeds : but zeal, —  
How rare in our degenerate day ! Enough !  
Here is the story : fear not, I shall chop  
And change a little, else my Jew would press  
All too unmannerly before the Court.

It happened once, — begins this foolish Jew,  
Pretending to write Christian history, —  
That three, held greatest, best and worst of men,  
Peter and John and Judas, spent a day  
In toil and travel through the country-side  
On some sufficient business — I suspect,

Suppression of some Molinism i' the bud.

Foot-sore and hungry, dropping with fatigue,  
They reached by nightfall a poor lonely grange,  
Hostel or inn : so, knocked and entered there.  
"Your pleasure, great ones ? " — "Shelter,  
rest and food !"

For shelter, there was one bare room above ;  
For rest therein, three beds of bundled straw :  
For food, one wretched starveling fowl, no  
more —

Meat for one mouth, but mockery for three.  
"You have my utmost." How should supper  
serve ?

Peter broke silence : "To the spit with fowl !  
And while 't is cooking, sleep ! — since beds  
there be,

And, so far, satisfaction of a want.

Sleep we an hour, awake at supper-time,  
Then each of us narrate the dream he had,  
And he whose dream shall prove the happiest,  
point

The clearest lost the dreamer as ordained  
Beyond his fellows to receive the fowl,  
Him let our shares be cheerful tribute to,  
His the entire meal, may it do him good !"  
Who could dispute so plain a consequence ?  
So said, so done : each hurried to his straw,  
Slept his hour's-sleep and dreamed his dream,  
and woke.

"I," commenced John, "dreamed that I gained  
the prize

We all aspire to : the proud place was mine,  
Throughout the earth and to the end of time  
I was the Loved Disciple : mine the meal !"  
"But I," proceeded Peter, "dreamed, a word  
Gave me the headship of our company,  
Made me the Vicar and Vice-gerent, gave  
The keys of heaven and hell into my hand,  
And o'er the earth, dominion : mine the meal !"  
"While I," submitted in soft under-tone  
The Iscariot — sense of his unworthiness  
Turning each eye up to the inmost white —  
With long-drawn sigh, yet letting both lips  
smack,

"I have had just the pitifullest dream  
That ever proved man meanest of his mates,  
And born foot-washer and foot-wiper, nay  
Foot-kisser to each comrade of you all !  
I dreamed I dreamed ; and in that mimic dream  
(Impalpable to dream as dream to fact)  
Methought I meanly chose to sleep no wink  
But wait until I heard my brethren snore ;  
Then stole from couch, slipped noiseless o'er  
the planks,

Slid downstairs, furtively approached the  
hearth,

Found the fowl duly brown, both back and  
breast,

Hissing in harmony with the cricket's chirp,  
Grilled to a point ; said no grace, but fell to,  
Nor finished till the skeleton lay bare.  
In penitence for which ignoble dream,  
Lo, I renounce my portion cheerfully !  
Fie on the flesh — be mine the ethereal gust,  
And yours the sublunary sustenance !

See that whate'er be left ye give the poor !"  
Down the two scuttled, one on other's heel,  
Stung by a fell surmise ; and found, alas,

A goodly savor, both the drumstick bones,  
And that which henceforth took the appropri-  
ate name

O' the Merry-thought, in memory of the fact  
That to keep wide awake is man's best dream.

So, — as was said once of Thucydides  
And his sole joke, "The lion, lo, hath  
laughed!" —

Just so, the Governor and all that's great  
I' the city never meant that Innocence  
Should quite starve while Authority sat at  
meat;

They meant to fling a bone at banquet's end :  
Wished well to our Pompilia — in their dreams,  
Nor bore the secular sword in vain — asleep.  
Just so the Archbishop and all good like him  
Went to bed meaning to pour oil and wine  
I' the wounds of her, next day, — but long ere  
day,

They had burned the one and drunk the other,  
while

Just so, again, contrariwise, the priest  
Sustained poor Nature in extremity  
By stuffing barley-bread into her mouth,  
Saving Pompilia (grant the parallel)  
By the plain homely and straightforward way  
Taught him by common sense. Let others  
shriek

"Oh what refined expedients did we dream  
Proved us the only fit to help the fair!"  
He cried, "A carriage waits, jump in with  
me!"

And now, this application pardoned, lords, —  
This recreative pause and breathing-while, —  
Back to beseechingness and gravity!

For Law steps in : Guido appeals to Law,  
Demands she arbitrate, — does well for once.  
O Law, of thee how neatly was it said  
By that old Sophocles, thou hast thy seat  
I' the very breast of Jove, no meanlier throned!  
Here is a piece of work now, hitherto  
Begun and carried on, concluded near,  
Without an eye-glance east thy sceptre's way ;  
And, lo, the stumbling and discomfiture!  
Well may you call them "lawless" means,  
men take

To extricate themselves through mother-wit  
When tangled haply in the toils of life!  
Guido would try conclusions with his foe,  
Whoe'er the foe was and whate'er the offence ;  
He would recover certain dowry-dues :  
Instead of asking Law to lend a hand,  
What pother of sword drawn and pistol cocked,  
What peddling with forged letters and paid  
spies,

Politic circumvention! — all to end  
As it began — by loss of the fool's head,  
First in a figure, presently in a fact.  
It is a lesson to mankind at large.

How other were the end, would men be sage  
And bear confidingly each quarrel straight,  
O Law, to thy recipient mother-knees!  
How would the children light come and prompt  
go,

This, with a red-cheeked apple for reward,  
The other, peradventure red-cheeked too

I' the rear, by taste of birch for punishment.  
No foolish brawling murder any more!  
Peace for the household, practice for the Fise,  
And plenty for the exchequer of my lords!  
Too much to hope, in this world : in the next,  
Who knows? Since, why should sit the Twelve  
enthroned

To judge the tribes, unless the tribes be judged?  
And 't is impossible but offences come :  
So, all's one lawsuit, all one long leet-day!

Forgive me this digression — that I stand  
Entranced awhile at Law's first beam, outbreak  
O' the business, when the Count's good angel  
bade

"Put up thy sword, born enemy to the ear,  
And let Law listen to thy difference!"  
And Law does listen and compose the strife,  
Settle the suit, how wisely and how well!  
On our Pompilia, faultless to a fault,  
Law bends a brow maternally severe,  
Implies the worth of perfect chastity,  
By fancying the flaw she cannot find.  
Superfluous sifting snow, nor helps nor harms :  
'T is safe to censure levity in youth,  
Tax womanhood with indiscretion, sure!  
Since toys, permissible to-day, become  
Follies to-morrow : prattle shocks in church :  
And that curt skirt which lets a maiden skip,  
The matron changes for a trailing robe.  
Mothers may aim a blow with half-shut eyes  
Nodding above their spindles by the fire,  
And chance to hit some hidden fault, else safe.  
Just so, Law hazarded a punishment —  
If applicable to the circumstance,  
Why, well! if not so apposite, well too.

"Quit the gay range o' the world," I hear her  
cry,

"Enter, in lieu, the penitential pound :  
Exchange the gauds of pomp for ashes, dust!  
Leave each mollitious haunt of luxury!  
The golden-garnished silken-couched alcove,  
The many-columned terrace that so tempts  
Feminine soul put foot forth, extend ear  
To fluttering joy of lover's serenade, —  
Leave these for cellular seclusion! mask  
And dance no more, but fast and pray!  
avaunt —

Be burned, thy wicked townsman's sonnet-  
book!

Welcome, mild hymnal by . . . some better  
scribe!

For the warm arms were wont enfold thy flesh,  
Let wire-shirt plough and whip-cord disci-  
pline!"

If such an exhortation proved, perchance,  
Inapplicable, words bestowed in waste,  
What harm, since Law has store, can spend nor  
miss?

And so, our paragon submits herself,  
Goes at command into the holy house.  
And, also at command, comes out again :  
For, could the effect of such obedience prove  
Too certain, too immediate? Being healed,  
Go blaze abroad the matter, blessed one!  
Art thou sound forthwith? Speedily vacate  
The step by pool-side, leave Bethesda free



To patients plentifully posted round,  
 Since the whole need not the physician! Brief,  
 She may betake her to her parents' place.  
 Welcome her, father, with wide arms once  
 more;

Motion her, mother, to thy breast again!  
 For why? Since Law relinquishes the charge,  
 Grants to your dwelling-place a prison's style.  
 Rejoice you with Pompilia! golden days,  
*Redeunt Saturnia regna.* Six weeks slip,  
 And she is domiciled in house and home  
 As though she thence had never budged at all.  
 And thither let the husband — joyous, ay,  
 But contrite also — quick betake himself,  
 Proud that his dove which lay among the pots  
 Hath mued those dingy feathers, — moulted  
 now,

Shows silver bosom clothed with yellow gold!  
 So shall he tempt her to the perch she fled,  
 Bid to domestic bliss the truant back.

But let him not delay! Time fleets how fast,  
 And opportunity, the irrevocable,  
 Once flown will flout him! Is the furrow  
 traced?

If field with corn ye fail preoccupied,  
 Darnel for wheat and thistle-beards for grain,  
*Infelix lolium, carduus horridus.*  
 Will grow apace in combination prompt,  
 Defraud the husbandman of his desire.  
 Already — hie! — what murmurs 'monish now  
 The laggard? — doubtful, nay, fantastic bruit  
 Of such an apparition, such return  
*Interdum*, to anticipate the spouse,  
 Of Caponsacchi's very self! 'Tis said,  
 When nights are lone and company is rare,  
 His visitations brighten winter up.  
 If so they did — which nowise I believe —  
 (How can I? — proof abounding that the priest,  
 Once fairly at his relegation-place,  
 Never once left it), still, admit he stole  
 A midnight march, would fain see friend again,  
 Find matter for instruction in the past,  
 Renew the old adventure in such chat  
 As cheers a fireside! He was lonely too,  
 He, too, must need his recreative hour.  
 Shall it amaze the philosophic mind  
 If he, long wont the empurpled cup to quaff,  
 Have feminine society at will,  
 Being debarred abruptly from all drink  
 Save at the spring which Adam used for wine,  
 Dreads harm to just the health he hoped to  
 guard,

And, trying abstinence, gains malady?  
 Ask Tozzi, now physician to the Pope!  
 "Little by little break" — (I hear he bids  
 Master Arcangeli my antagonist,  
 Who loves good cheer, and may indulge too  
 much:

So I explain the logic of the plea  
 Wherewith he opened our proceedings late) —  
 "Little by little break a habit, Don,  
 Become necessity to feeble flesh!"  
 And thus, nocturnal taste of intercourse  
 (Which never happened, — but, suppose it did)  
 May have been used to dishabituate  
 By sip and sip this drainer to the dregs  
 O' the draught of conversation, — heady stuff,

Brewage which, broached, it took two days and  
 nights

To properly discuss i' the journey, Sirs!  
 Such power has second-nature, men call use,  
 That undelightful objects get to charm  
 Instead of chafe: the daily colocynt  
 Tickle the palate by repeated dose,  
 Old sores scratch kindly, the ass makes a push  
 Although the mill-yoke-wound be smarting yet,  
 For mill-door bolted on a holiday:  
 Nor must we marvel here if impulse urge  
 To talk the old story over now and then,  
 The hopes and fears, the stoppage and the  
 haste, —

Subjects of colloquy to surfeit once.

"Here did you bid me twine a rosy wreath!"  
 "And there you paid my lips a compliment!"  
 "Here you admired the tower could be so  
 tall!"

"And there you likened that of Lebanon  
 To the nose of the beloved!" "Trifles! still,  
*"Forsan et hæc olim,"* — such trifles serve  
 To make the minutes pass in winter-time.

Husband, return then, I re-counsel thee!  
 For, finally, of all glad circumstance  
 Should make a prompt return imperative,  
 What in the world awaits thee, dost suppose?  
 O' the sudden, as good gifts are wont befall,  
 What is the hap of our unconscious Count?  
 That which lights bonfire and sets cask a-tilt,  
 Dissolves the stubborn'st heart in jollity.  
 O admirable, there is born a babe,  
 A son, an heir, a Franceschini last  
 And best o' the stock! Pompilia, thine the  
 palm!

Repaying incredulity with faith,  
 Ungenerous thrift of each marital debt  
 With bounty in profuse expenditure,  
 Pompilia scorns to have the old year end  
 Without a present shall ring in the new —  
 Bestows on her too-parsimonious lord  
 An infant for the apple of his eye,  
 Core of his heart, and crown completing life,  
 True *summum bonum* of the earthly lot!  
 "We," saith ingeniously the sage, "are born  
 Solely that others may be born of us."  
 So, father, take thy child, for thine that child,  
 Oh nothing doubt! In wedlock born, law  
 holds

Baseness impossible: since "*filius est  
 Quem nuptiae demonstrant*," twits the text  
 Whoever dares to doubt.

Yet doubt he dares!

O faith, where art thou flown from out the  
 world?

Already on what an age of doubt we fall!  
 Instead of each disputing for the prize,  
 The babe is bandied here from that to this.  
 Whose the babe? "*Cujum pecus?*" Guido's  
 lamb?

"*An Melibæi?*" Nay, but of the priest!  
 "*Non sed Ægonis!*" Some one must be sire:  
 And who shall say, in such a puzzling strait,  
 If there were not vouchsafed some miracle  
 To the wife who had been harassed and abused  
 More than enough by Guido's family

For non-production of the promised fruit  
Of marriage? What if Nature, I demand,  
Touched to the quick by taunts upon her sloth,  
Had roused herself, put forth recondite power,  
Bestowed this birth to vindicate her sway,  
Like the strange favor Maro memorized  
As granted Aristæus when his hive  
Lay empty of the swarm? not one more bee —  
Not one more babe to Franceschini's house!  
And lo, a new birth filled the air with joy,  
Sprung from the bowels of the generous steer,  
A novel son and heir rejoiced the Count!  
Spontaneous generation, need I prove  
Were facile feat to Nature at a pinch?  
Let whoso doubts, steep horsehair certain  
weeks,

In water, there will be produced a snake;  
Spontaneous product of the horse, which horse  
Happens to be the representative —  
Now that I think on't — of Arezzo's self,  
The very city our conception blessed:  
Is not a prancing horse the City-arms?  
What sane eye fails to see coincidence?  
*Cur ego*, boast thou, my Pompilia, then,  
*Desperem fieri sine conjuge*  
*Mater* — How well the Ovidian distich suits! —  
*Et parere intacto dummodo*  
*Casta viro*? such miracle was wrought!  
Note, further, as to mark the prodigy,  
The babe in question neither took the name  
Of Guido, from the sire presumptive, nor  
Gaetano, from the sire potential, but  
Gaetano — last saint of our hierarchy,  
And newest namer for a thing so new!  
What other motive could have prompted  
choice?

Therefore be peace again: exult, ye hills!  
Ye vales rejoicingly break forth in song!  
*Incipe, parve puer*, begin, small boy,  
*Risu cognoscere patrem*, with a laugh  
To recognize thy parent! Nor do thou  
Boggle, O parent, to return the grace!  
*Nec anceps hære, pater, puero*  
*Cognoscendo* — one may well eke out the  
prayer!

In vain! The perverse Guido doubts his eyes,  
Distrusts assurance, lets the devil drive.  
Because his house is swept and garnished now,  
He, having summoned seven like himself,  
Must hurry thither, knock and enter in,  
And make the last worse than the first, indeed!

Is he content? We are. No further blame  
O' the man and murder! They were stigmatized

Befitting: the Court heard long ago  
My mind o' the matter, which, outpouring full,  
Has long since swept like surge, i' the simile  
Of Homer, overborne both dyke and dam,  
And whelmed alike client and advocate:  
His fate is sealed, his life as good as gone,  
On him I am not tempted to waste word.  
Yet though my purpose holds, — which was and  
is

And solely shall be to the very end,  
To draw the true *effigies* of a saint,  
Do justice to perfection in the sex, —

Yet let not some gross pamperer of the flesh  
And niggard in the spirit's nourishment,  
Whose feeding hath obfuscated his wit  
Rather than law, — he never had, to lose —  
Let not such advocate object to me  
I leave my proper function of attack!  
"What's this to Bacchus?" — (in the classic  
phrase,

Well used, for once) he hiccups probably.  
O Advocate o' the Poor, thou born to make  
Their blessing void — *beati pauperes*!  
By painting saintship I depicture sin:  
Beside my pearl, I prove how black thy jet,  
And, through Pompilia's virtue, Guido's crime.

Back to her, then, — with but one beauty more,  
End we our argument, — one crowning grace  
Pre-eminent 'mid agony and death.  
For to the last Pompilia played her part,  
Used the right means to the permissible end,  
And, wily as an eel that stirs the mud  
Thick overhead, so baffling spearman's thrust,  
She, while he stabbed her, simulated death,  
Delayed, for his sake, the catastrophe,  
Obtained herself a respite, four days' grace,  
Whereby she told her story to the world,  
Enabled me to make the present speech,  
And, by a full confession, saved her soul.

Yet hold, even here would malice leer its last,  
Gurgle its choked remonstrance: snake, hiss  
free!

Oh, that's the objection? And to whom? —  
not her

But me, forsooth — as, in the very act  
Of both confession and (what followed close)  
Subsequent talk, chatter and gossipry,  
Babble to sympathizing he and she  
Whoever chose besiege her dying-bed, —  
As this were found at variance with my tale,  
Falsified all I have adduced for truth,  
Admitted not one peccadillo here,  
Pretended to perfection, first and last,  
O' the whole procedure — perfect in the end,  
Perfect i' the means, perfect in everything,  
Leaving a lawyer nothing to excuse,  
Reason away and show his skill about!  
— A flight, impossible to Adamic flesh,  
Just to be fancied, scarcely to be wished,  
And, anyhow, unpleadable in court!  
"How reconcile," gasps Malice, "that with  
this?"

Your "this," friend, is extraneous to the law,  
Comes of men's outside meddling, the unskilled  
Interposition of such fools as press  
Out of their province. Must I speak my  
mind?

Far better had Pompilia died o' the spot  
Than found a tongue to wag and shame the  
law,  
Shame most of all herself, — could friendship  
fail,

And advocacy lie less on the alert:  
But no, they shall protect her to the end!  
Do I credit the alleged narration? No!  
Lied our Pompilia then, to laud herself?  
Still, no! Clear up what seems discrepancy?

The means abound : art's long, though time is short ;

So, keeping me in compass, all I urge  
Is — since, confession at the point of death,  
*Nam in articulo mortis*, with the Church  
Passes for statement honest and sincere,  
*Nemo presumitur reus esse*, — then,  
If sure that all affirmed would be believed,  
'T was charity, in her so circumstanced,  
To spend the last breath in one effort more  
For universal good of friend and foe :  
And, — by pretending utter innocence,  
Nay, freedom from each foible we forgive, —  
Re-integrate — not solely her own fame,  
But do the like kind office for the priest  
Whom telling the crude truth about might vex,  
Haply expose to peril, abbreviate  
Indeed the long career of usefulness  
Presumably before him : while her lord,  
Whose fleeting life is forfeit to the law, —  
What mercy to the culprit if, by just  
The gift of such a full certificate  
Of his inmitigable guiltiness,  
She stifled in him the absurd conceit  
Of murder as it were a mere revenge  
— Stopped confirmation of that jealousy  
Which, did she but acknowledge the first flaw,  
The faintest foible, had emboldened him  
To battle with the charge, balk penitence,  
Bar preparation for impending fate !  
Whereas, persuade him that he slew a saint  
Who sinned not even where she may have sinned,  
You urge him all the brisklier to repent  
Of most and least and aught and everything !  
Still, if this view of mine content you not,  
Lords, nor excuse the genial falsehood here,  
We come to our *Triarii*, last resource :  
We fall back on the inexpugnable,  
Submitting, — she confessed before she talked !  
The sacrament obliterates the sin :  
What is not, — was not, therefore, in a sense.  
Let Molinists distinguish, "Souls washed white  
But red once, still show pinkish to the eye !"  
We say, abolishment is nothingness,  
And nothingness has neither head nor tail,  
End nor beginning ! Better estimate  
Exorbitantly, than disparage aught  
Of the efficacy of the act, I hope !

*Solvuntur turbule ?* May we laugh and go ?  
Well, — not before (in filial gratitude  
To Law, who, mighty mother, waves adieu)  
We take on us to vindicate Law's self !  
For, — yea, Sirs, — curb the start, curtail the  
stare ! —  
Remains that we apologize for haste  
I' the Law, our lady who here bristles up,  
"Blame my procedure ? Could the Court mis-  
take ?

(Which were indeed a misery to think) ;  
Did not my sentence in the former stage  
O' the business bear a title plain enough ?  
*Decretum* " — I translate it word for word —  
"Decreed : the priest, for his complicity  
I' the flight and deviation of the dame,  
As well as for unlawful intercourse,  
Is banished three years : ' crime and penalty  
Declared alike. If he be taxed with guilt,

How can you call Pompilia innocent ?  
If both be innocent, have I been just ? "

Gently, O mother, judge men — whose mis-  
take

Is in the mere misapprehensiveness !  
The *Titulus* a-top of your decree  
Was but to ticket there the kind of charge  
You in good time would arbitrate upon.  
Title is one thing, — arbitration's self,  
*Probatio*, quite another possibly.  
*Subsistit*, there holds good the old response,  
*Responsio tradita*, we must not stick,  
*Quod non sit attendendus Titulus*,  
To the Title, *sed Probatio*, but the Proof,  
*Resultans ex processu*, the result  
O' the Trial, and the style of punishment,  
*Et pena per sententiam imposita*.  
All is tentative, till the sentence come :  
An indication of what men expect,  
But novise an assurance they shall find.  
Lords, what if we permissibly relax  
The tense bow, as the law-god Phœbus bids,  
Relieve our gravity at labor's close ?  
I traverse Rome, feel thirsty, need a draught,  
Look for a wine-shop, find it by the bough  
Projecting as to say "Here wine is sold !"  
So much I know, — "sold : " but what sort of  
wine ?

Strong, weak, sweet, sour, home-made or foreign  
drink ?

That much must I discover by myself.

"Wine is sold," quoth the bough, "but good  
or bad,

Find, and inform us when you smack your lips !"

Exactly so, Law hangs her title forth,

To show she entertains you with such ease

About such crime. Come in ! she pours, you  
quaff.

You find the Priest good liquor in the main,

But heady and provocative of brawls :

Remand the residue to flask once more,

Lay it low where it may deposit lees,

I' the cellar : thence produce it presently,

Three years the brighter and the better !

Thus,

Law's son, have I bestowed my filial help,

And thus I end, *tenax proposito* ;

Point to point as I purposed have I drawn

Pompilia, and implied as terribly

Guido : so, gazing, let the world crown Law —

Able once more, despite my impotence,

And helped by the acumen of the Court,

To eliminate, display, make triumph truth !

What other prize than truth were worth the  
pains ?

There 's my oration — much exceeds in length

That famed panegyric of Isocrates,

They say it took him fifteen years to pen.

But all those ancients could say anything !

He put in just what rushed into his head :

While I shall have to prune and pare and print.

This comes of being born in modern times

With priests for auditory. Still, it pays.



## X

## THE POPE

Like to Ahasuerus, that shrewd prince,  
 I will begin, — as is, these seven years now,  
 My daily wont, — and read a History  
 (Written by one whose deft right hand was dust  
 To the last digit, ages ere my birth)  
 Of all my predecessors, Popes of Rome :  
 For though mine ancient early dropped the pen,  
 Yet others picked it up and wrote it dry,  
 Since of the making books there is no end.  
 And so I have the Papacy complete  
 From Peter first to Alexander last ;  
 Can question each and take instruction so.  
 Have I to dare ! — I ask, how dared this Pope ?  
 To suffer ? Such-an-one, how suffered he ?  
 Being about to judge, as now, I seek  
 How judged once, well or ill, some other Pope ;  
 Study some signal judgment that subsists  
 To blaze on, or else blot, the page which seals  
 The sum up of what gain or loss to God  
 Came of his one more Vicar in the world.  
 So, do I find example, rule of life ;  
 So, square and set in order the next page,  
 Shall be stretched smooth o'er my own funeral  
 cyst.

Eight hundred years exact before the year  
 I was made Pope, men made Formosus Pope,  
 Say Siebert and other chroniclers.  
 Ere I confirm or quash the Trial here  
 Of Guido Franceschini and his friends,  
 Read, — How there was a ghastly Trial once  
 Of a dead man by a live man, and both, Popes :  
 Thus — in the antique penman's very phrase.

" Then Stephen, Pope and seventh of the name,  
 Cried out, in synod as he sat in state,  
 While choler quivered on his brow and beard,  
 ' Come into court, Formosus, thou lost wretch,  
 That claimedst to be late Pope as even I ! '

" And at the word, the great door of the church  
 Flew wide, and in they brought Formosus' self,  
 The body of him, dead, even as embalmed  
 And buried duly in the Vatican  
 Eight months before, exhumed thus for the  
 nonce.

They set it, that dead body of a Pope,  
 Clothed in pontifical vesture now again,  
 Upright on Peter's chair as if alive.

" And Stephen, springing up, cried furiously,  
 ' Bishop of Porto, wherefore didst presume  
 To leave that see and take this Roman see,  
 Exchange the lesser for the greater see,  
 — A thing against the canons of the Church ? '

" Then one — (a Deacon who, observing forms,  
 Was placed by Stephen to repel the charge,  
 Be advocate and mouthpiece of the corpse) —  
 Spoke as he dared, set stammeringly forth  
 With white lips and dry tongue, — as but a  
 youth.

For frightful was the corpse-face to behold, —  
 How nowise lacked there precedent for this.

" But when, for his last precedent of all,  
 Emboldened by the Spirit, out he blurts,  
 ' And, Holy Father, didst not thou thyself  
 Vacate the lesser for the greater see,  
 Half a year since change Arago for Rome ? '  
 " — Ye have the sin's defence now, synod mine ! '  
 Shrieks Stephen in a beastly froth of rage :  
 ' Judge now betwixt him dead and me alive !  
 Hath he intruded, or do I pretend ?  
 Judge, judge ! ' — breaks wavelike one whole  
 foam of wrath.

" Whereupon they, being friends and followers,  
 Said, ' Ay, thou art Christ's Vicar, and not he !  
 Away with what is frightful to behold !  
 This act was uncanonic and a fault. '

" Then, swallowed up in rage, Stephen ex-  
 claimed,

' So, guilty ! So, remains I punish guilt !  
 He is unpoped, and all he did I damn :  
 The Bishop, that ordained him, I degrade :  
 Depose to laics those he raised to priests :  
 What they have wrought is mischief nor shall  
 stand,

It is confusion, let it vex no more !

Since I revoke, annul and abrogate  
 All his decrees in all kinds : they are void !  
 In token whereof and warning to the world,  
 Strip me yon miscreant of those robes usurped,  
 And clothe him with vile serge befitting such !  
 Then hale the carrion to the market-place ;  
 Let the town-hangman chop from his right  
 hand

Those same three fingers which he blessed  
 withal ;

Next cut the head off, once was crowned for-  
 sooth :

And last go fling them, fingers, head and trunk,  
 To Tiber that my Christian fish may sup ! '

— Either because of ΙΧΘΥΣ which means Fish  
 And very aptly symbolizes Christ,  
 Or else because the Pope is Fisherman,  
 And seals with Fisher's-signet.

" Anyway,

So said, so done : himself, to see it done,  
 Followed the corpse they trailed from street to  
 street

Till into Tiber wave they threw the thing.  
 The people, crowded on the banks to see,  
 Were loud or mute, wept or laughed, cursed or  
 jeered,

According as the deed addressed their sense ;  
 A scandal verily : and out spake a Jew,  
 ' Wot ye your Christ had vexed our Herod  
 thus ? '

" Now when, Formosus being dead a year,  
 His judge Pope Stephen tasted death in turn,  
 Made captive by the mob and strangled straight,  
 Romanus, his successor for a month,  
 Did make protest Formosus was with God,  
 Holy, just, true in thought and word and deed.  
 Next Theodore, who reigned but twenty days,  
 Therein convoked a synod, whose decree  
 Did reinstate, repope the late unpoped,  
 And do away with Stephen as accursed.

So that when presently certain fisher-folk  
 (As if the queasy river could not hold  
 Its swallowed Jonas, but discharged the meal)  
 Produced the timely product of their nets,  
 The mutilated man, Formosus, — saved  
 From putrefaction by the embalmer's spice,  
 Or, as some said, by sanctity of flesh, —  
 'Why, lay the body again,' bade Theodore,  
 'Among his predecessors, in the church  
 And burial-place of Peter!' which was done.  
 'And,' addeth Luitprand, 'many of repute,  
 Pious and still alive, avouch to me  
 That, as they bore the body up the aisle,  
 The saints in imaged row bowed each his head  
 For welcome to a brother-saint come back.'  
 As for Romanus and this Theodore,  
 These two Popes, through the brief reign  
 granted each,  
 Could but initiate what John came to close  
 And give the final stamp to: he it was,  
 Ninth of the name, (I follow the best guides)  
 Who, — in full synod at Ravenna held  
 With Bishops seventy-four, and present too  
 Eude King of France with his Archbishopry, —  
 Did condemn Stephen, anathematize  
 The disinterment, and make all blots blank.  
 'For,' argueth here Auxilius in a place  
*De Ordinationibus*, 'precedents  
 Had been, no lack, before Formosus long,  
 Of Bishops so transferred from see to see, —  
 Marinus, for example:' read the tract.

"But, after John, came Sergius, reaffirmed  
 The right of Stephen, cursed Formosus, nay  
 Cast out, some say, his corpse a second time,  
 And here, — because the matter went to  
 ground,  
 Fretted by new griefs, other cares of the age, —  
 Here is the last pronouncing of the Church,  
 Her sentence that subsists unto this day.  
 Yet constantly opinion hath prevailed  
 I' the Church, Formosus was a holy man."

Which of the judgments was infallible?  
 Which of my predecessors spoke for God?  
 And what availed Formosus that this cursed,  
 That blessed, and then this other cursed again?  
 "Fear ye not those whose power can kill the  
 body  
 And not the soul," saith Christ, "but rather  
 those  
 Can cast both soul and body into hell!"

John judged thus in Eight Hundred Ninety  
 Eight,  
 Exact eight hundred years ago to-day  
 When, sitting in his stead, Vicegerent here,  
 I must give judgment on my own behoof.  
 So worked the predecessor: now, my turn!

In God's name! Once more on this earth of  
 God's,  
 While twilight lasts and time wherein to work,  
 I take his staff with my uncertain hand,  
 And stay my six and fourscore years, my due  
 Labor and sorrow, on his judgment-seat,  
 And forthwith think, speak, act, in place of  
 him —

The Pope for Christ. Once more appeal is  
 made

From man's assize to mine: I sit and see  
 Another poor weak trembling human wretch  
 Pushed by his fellows, who pretend the right,  
 Up to the gulf which, where I gaze, begins  
 From this world to the next, — gives way and  
 way,

Just on the edge over the awful dark:  
 With nothing to arrest him but my feet.  
 He catches at me with convulsive face,  
 Cries "Leave to live the natural minute more!"  
 While hollowly the avengers echo "Leave?"  
 None! So has he exceeded man's due share  
 In man's fit license, wrung by Adam's fall,  
 To sin and yet not surely die, — that we.  
 All of us sinful, all with need of grace,  
 All chary of our life, — the minute more  
 Or minute less of grace which saves a soul, —  
 Bound to make common cause with who craves  
 time,

— We yet protest against the exorbitance  
 Of sin in this one sinner, and demand  
 That his poor sole remaining piece of time  
 Be plucked from out his clutch: put him to  
 death!

Punish him now! As for the weal or woe  
 Hereafter, God grant mercy! Man be just.  
 Nor let the felon boast he went scot-free!"  
 And I am bound, the solitary judge,  
 To weigh the worth, decide upon the plea,  
 And either hold a hand out, or withdraw  
 A foot and let the wretch drift to the fall.  
 Ay, and while thus I dally, dare perchance  
 Put fancies for a comfort 'twixt this calm  
 And yonder passion that I have to bear, —  
 As if reprieve were possible for both  
 Prisoner and Pope, — how easy were reprieve!  
 A touch o' the hand-bell here, a hasty word  
 To those who wait, and wonder they wait long,  
 I' the passage there, and I should gain the  
 life! —

Yea, though I flatter me with fancy thus,  
 I know it is but Nature's craven-trick.  
 The case is over, judgment at an end,  
 And all things done now and irrevocable:  
 A mere dead man is Franceschini here,  
 Even as Formosus centuries ago.  
 I have worn through this sombre wintry day,  
 With winter in my soul beyond the world's,  
 Over these dismalest of documents  
 Which drew night down on me ere eve befell, —  
 Pleadings and counter-pleadings, figure of fact  
 Beside fact's self, these summaries, to wit, —  
 How certain three were slain by certain five:  
 I read here why it was, and how it went,  
 And how the chief o' the five preferred ex-  
 cuse,

And how law rather chose defence should lie, —  
 What argument he urged by wary word  
 When free to play off wile, start subterfuge,  
 And what the unguarded groan told, torture's  
 feat

When law grew brutal, outbroke, overbore  
 And glutted hunger on the truth, at last, —  
 No matter for the flesh and blood between.  
 All's a clear rede and no more riddle now.  
 Truth, nowhere, lies yet everywhere in these —

Not absolutely in a portion, yet  
 Evolvable from the whole: evolved at last  
 Painfully, held tenaciously by me.  
 Therefore there is not any doubt to clear  
 When I shall write the brief word presently  
 And chink the hand-bell, which I pause to do.  
 Irresolute? Not I, more than the mound  
 With the pine-trees on it yonder! Some sur-  
 mise,  
 Perchance, that since man's wit is fallible,  
 Mine may fail here? Suppose it so,—what  
 then?  
 Say,—Guido, I count guilty, there's no babe  
 So guiltless, for I misconceive the man!  
 What's in the chance should move me from my  
 mind?

If, as I walk in a rough country-side,  
 Peasants of mine cry, "Thou art he can help,  
 Lord of the land and counted wise to boot:  
 Look at our brother, strangling in his foam,  
 He fell so where we find him,—prove thy  
 worth!"

I may presume, pronounce, "A frenzy-fit,  
 A falling-sickness or a fever-stroke!  
 Breathe a vein, copiously let blood at once!"  
 So perishes the patient, and anon  
 I hear my peasants—"All was error, lore!  
 Our story, thy prescription: for there crawled  
 In due time from our hapless brother's breast  
 The serpent which had stung him: bleeding  
 slow

Whom a prompt cordial had restored to health."  
 What other should I say than "God so willed:  
 Mankind is ignorant, a man am I:  
 Call ignorance my sorrow, not my sin!"  
 So and not otherwise, in after-time,  
 If some acuter wit, fresh probing, sound  
 This multifarious mass of words and deeds  
 Deeper, and reach through guilt to innocence,  
 I shall face Guido's ghost nor blench a jot.  
 "God who set me to judge thee, meted out  
 So much of judging faculty, no more:  
 Ask him if I was slack in use thereof!"  
 I hold a heavier fault imputable  
 Inasmuch as I changed a chaplain once,  
 For no cause,—no, if I must bare my heart,—  
 Save that he snuffled somewhat saying mass.  
 For I am 'ware it is the seed of act,  
 God holds appraising in his hollow palm,  
 Not act grown great thence on the world be-  
 low,

Leafage and branchage. vulgar eyes admire.  
 Therefore I stand on my integrity,  
 Nor fear at all: and if I hesitate,  
 It is because I need to breathe awhile,  
 Rest, as the human right allows, review  
 Intent the little seeds of act, my tree,—  
 The thought, which, clothed in deed, I give the  
 world

At chink of bell and push of arrased door.

O pale departure, dim disgrace of day!  
 Winter's in wane, his vengeful worst art thou,  
 To dash the boldness of advancing March!  
 Thy chill persistent rain has purged our streets  
 Of gossipry; pert tongue and idle ear  
 By this, consort 'neath archway, portico.  
 But wheresoe'er Rome gathers in the gray,

Two names now snap and flash from mouth to  
 mouth—  
 (Sparks, flint and steel strike)—Guido and the  
 Pope.

By this same hour to-morrow eve—aha,  
 How do they call him?—the sagacious Swede  
 Who finds by figures how the chances prove,  
 Why one comes rather than another thing,  
 As, say, such dots turn up by throw of dice,  
 Or, if we dip in Virgil here and there  
 And prick for such a verse, when such shall  
 point.

Take this Swede, tell him, hiding name and  
 rank,

Two men are in our city this dull eve;  
 One doomed to death,—but hundreds in such  
 plight

Slip aside, clean escape by leave of law  
 Which leans to mercy in this latter time;  
 Moreover in the plenitude of life  
 Is he, with strength of limb and brain adroit,  
 Presumably of service here: beside,  
 The man is noble, backed by nobler friends:  
 Nay, they so wish him well, the city's self  
 Makes common cause with who—house-magis-  
 trate,

Patron of hearth and home, domestic lord—  
 But ruled his own, let aliens cavil. Die?  
 He'll bribe a jailer or break prison first!  
 Nay, a sedition may be helpful, give  
 Hint to the mob to batter wall, burn gate,  
 And bid the favorite malefactor march.  
 Calculate now these chances of escape!  
 "It is not probable, but well may be."  
 Again, there is another man, weighed now  
 By twice eight years beyond the seven-times-  
 ten,

Appointed overweight to break our branch.  
 And this man's loaded branch lifts, more than  
 snow,

All the world's cark and care, though a bird's  
 nest

Were a superfluous burden: notably  
 Hath he been pressed, as if his age were youth,  
 From to-day's dawn till now that day departs,  
 Trying one question with true sweat of soul,  
 "Shall the said doomed man fittier die or live?"  
 When a straw swallowed in his posset, stool  
 Stumbled on where his path lies, any puff  
 That's incident to such a smoking flax,  
 Hurries the natural end and quenches him!  
 Now calculate, thou sage, the chances here,  
 Say, which shall die the sooner, this or that?  
 "That, possibly, this in all likelihood."  
 I thought so: yet thou tripp'st, my foreign  
 friend!

No, it will be quite otherwise,—to-day  
 Is Guido's last: my term is yet to run.

But say the Swede were right, and I forthwith  
 Acknowledge a prompt summons and lie dead:  
 Why, then I stand already in God's face  
 And hear, "Since by its fruit a tree is judged,  
 Show me thy fruit, the latest act of thine!  
 For in the last is summed the first and all,—  
 What thy life last put heart and soul into,  
 There shall I taste thy product." I must plead  
 This condemnation of a man to-day.



Not so! Expect nor question nor reply  
 At what we figure as God's judgment-bar!  
 None of this vile way by the barren words  
 Which, more than any deed, characterize  
 Man as made subject to a curse: no speech —  
 That still bursts o'er some lie which lurks inside,  
 As the split skin across the coppery snake,  
 And most denotes man! since, in all beside,  
 In hate or lust or guile or unbelief,  
 Out of some core of truth the excrescence comes,  
 And, in the last resort, the man may urge  
 "So was I made, a weak thing that gave way  
 To truth, to impulse only strong since true,  
 And hated, lusted, used guile, forwent faith."  
 But when man walks the garden of this world  
 For his own solace, and, unchecked by law,  
 Speaks or keeps silence as himself sees fit,  
 Without the least incumbency to lie,  
 — Why, can he tell you what a rose is like,  
 Or how the birds fly, and not slip to false  
 Though truth serve better? Man must tell his  
 mate

Of you, me and himself, knowing he lies,  
 Knowing his fellow knows the same, — will think  
 "He lies, it is the method of a man!"  
 And yet will speak for answer "It is truth"  
 To him who shall rejoine "Again a lie!"  
 Therefore these filthy rags of speech, this coil  
 Of statement, comment, query and response,  
 Tatters all too contaminate for use,  
 Have no renewing: He the Truth is, too,  
 The Word. We men, in our degree, may know  
 There, simply, instantaneously, as here  
 After long time and amid many lies,  
 Whatever we dare think we know indeed  
 — That I am I, as He is He, — what else?  
 But be man's method for man's life at least!  
 Wherefore, Antonio Pignatelli, thou  
 My ancient self, who wast no Pope so long  
 But studiedst God and man, the many years  
 I' the school, i' the cloister, in the diocese  
 Domestic, legate-rule in foreign lands, —  
 Thou other force in those old busy days  
 Than this gray ultimate decrepitude, —  
 Yet sensible of fires that more and more  
 Visit a soul, in passage to the sky,  
 Left nakeder than when flesh-robe was new —  
 Thou, not Pope but the mere old man o' the  
 world,  
 Supposed inquisitive and dispassionate,  
 Wilt thou, the one whose speech I somewhat  
 trust,

Question the after-me, this self now Pope,  
 Hear his procedure, criticise his work?  
 Wise in its generation is the world.

This is why Guido is found reprobate.  
 I see him furnished forth for his career,  
 On starting for the life-chance in our world,  
 With nearly all we count sufficient help:  
 Body and mind in balance, a sound frame,  
 A solid intellect: the wit to seek,  
 Wisdom to choose, and courage wherewithal  
 To deal in whatsoever circumstance  
 Should minister to man, make life succeed.  
 Oh, and much drawback! what were earth  
 without?  
 Is this our ultimate stage, or starting-place

To try man's foot, if it will creep or climb,  
 'Mid obstacles in seeming, points that prove  
 Advantage for who vaults from low to high  
 And makes the stumbling-block a stepping-  
 stone?

So, Guido, born with appetite, lacks food:  
 Is poor, who yet could deftly play-off wealth:  
 Straitened, whose limbs are restless till at large.  
 He, as he eyes each outlet of the cirque  
 And narrow penfold for probation, pines  
 After the good things just outside its grate,  
 With less monition, fainter conscience-twitch,  
 Rarer instinctive qualm at the first feel  
 Of greed unseemly, prompting grasp undue,  
 Than nature furnishes her man mankind, —  
 Making it harder to do wrong than right  
 The first time, careful lest the common ear  
 Break measure, miss the outstep of life's march.  
 Wherein I see a trial fair and fit  
 For one else too unfairly fenced about,  
 Set above sin, beyond his fellows here:  
 Guarded from the arch-tempter all must fight,  
 By a great birth, traditionary name,  
 Diligent culture, choice companionship,  
 Above all, conversancy with the faith  
 Which puts forth for its base of doctrine just,  
 "Man is born nowise to content himself,  
 But please God." He accepted such a rule,  
 Recognized man's obedience; and the Church,  
 Which simply is such rule's embodiment,  
 He clave to, he held on by, — nay, indeed,  
 Near pushed inside of, deep as layman durst,  
 Professed so much of priesthood as might sue  
 For priest's — exemption where the layman  
 sinned, —

Go this arm frocked which, bare, the law would  
 bruise,  
 Hence, at this moment, what's his last resource,  
 His extreme stay and utmost stretch of hope  
 But that, — convicted of such crime as law  
 Wipes not away save with a worldling's  
 blood, —

Guido, the three-parts consecrate, may 'scape?  
 Nay, the portentous brothers of the man  
 Are veritably priests, protected each  
 May do his murder in the Church's pale,  
 Abate Paul, Canon Girolamo!  
 This is the man proves irreligiousest  
 Of all mankind, religion's parasite!  
 This may forsooth plead dinned ear, jaded  
 sense,

The vice o' the watcher who bides near the bell,  
 Sleeps sound because the clock is vigilant,  
 And cares not whether it be shade or shine,  
 Doling out day and night to all men else!  
 Why was the choice o' the man to niche him-  
 self

Perversely 'neath the tower where Time's own  
 tongue

Thus undertakes to sermonize the world?  
 Why, but because the solemn is safe too,  
 The belfry proves a fortress of a sort,  
 Has other uses than to teach the hour:  
 Turns unscreen, paravent and ombrifuge  
 To whoso seeks a shelter in its pale,  
 — Ay, and attractive to unwary folk  
 Who gaze at storied portal, statued spire,  
 And go home with full head but empty purse,

Nor dare suspect the sacristan the thief !  
 Shall Judas — hard upon the donor's heel,  
 To filch the fragments of the basket — plead  
 He was too near the preacher's mouth, nor sat  
 Attent with fifties in a company ?  
 No, — closer to promulgated decree,  
 Clearer the censure of default. Proceed !

I find him bound, then, to begin life well ;  
 Fortified by propitious circumstance,  
 Great birth, good breeding, with the Church for  
 guide,

How lives he ? Cased thus in a coat of proof,  
 Mailed like a man-at-arms, though all the while  
 A puny starveling, — does the breast pant big,  
 The limb swell to the limit, emptiness  
 Strive to become solidity indeed ?  
 Rather, he shrinks up like the ambiguous fish,  
 Detaches flesh from shell and outside show,  
 And steals by moonlight (I have seen the thing)  
 In and out, now to prey and now to skulk.  
 Armor he boasts when a wave breaks on beach,  
 Or bird stoops for the prize : with peril nigh, —  
 The man of rank, the much-befriended man,  
 The man almost affiliate to the Church,  
 Such is to deal with, let the world beware !  
 Does the world recognize, pass prudently ?  
 Do tides abate and sea-fowl hunt i' the deep ?  
 Already is the slug from out its mew,  
 Ignobly faring with all loose and free,  
 Sand-fly and slush-worm at their garbage-feast,  
 A naked blotch no better than they all :  
 Guido has dropped nobility, slipped the Church,  
 Plays trickster if not cut-purse, body and soul  
 Prostrate among the filthy feeders — laugh !  
 And when Law takes him by surprise at last,  
 Catches the foul thing on its carrion-prey,  
 Behold, he points to shell left high and dry,  
 Pleads " But the case out yonder is myself ! "  
 Nay, it is thou, Law prongs amid thy peers,  
 Congenial vermin ; that was none of thee,  
 Thine outside, — give it to the soldier-crab !

For I find this black mark impinge the man,  
 That he believes in just the vile of life.  
 Low instinct, base pretension, are these truth ?  
 Then, that aforesaid armor, probity,  
 He figures in, is falsehood scale on scale ;  
 Honor and faith, — a lie and a disguise,  
 Probably for all livers in this world,  
 Certainly for himself ! All say good words  
 To who will hear, all do thereby bad deeds  
 To who must undergo ; so thrive mankind !  
 See this habitual creed exemplified  
 Most in the last deliberate act ; as last,  
 So, very sum and substance of the soul  
 Of him that planned and leaves one perfect  
 piece,

The sin brought under jurisdiction now,  
 Even the marriage of the man : this act  
 I sever from his life as sample, show  
 For Guido's self, intend to test him by,  
 As, from a cup filled fairly at the fount,  
 By the components we decide enough  
 Or to let flow as late, or stanch the source.

He purposes this marriage, I remark,  
 On no one motive that should prompt thereto —

Farthest, by consequence, from ends alleged  
 Appropriate to the action ; so they were :  
 The best, he knew and feigned, the worst he  
 took.

Not one permissible impulse moves the man,  
 From the mere liking of the eye and ear,  
 To the true longing of the heart that loves,  
 No trace of these : but all to instigate,  
 Is what sinks man past level of the brute,  
 Whose appetite if brutish is a truth.  
 All is the lust for money : to get gold, —  
 Why, lie, rob, if it must be, murder ! Make  
 Body and soul wring gold out, lured within  
 The clutch of hate by love, the trap's pretence !  
 What good else get from bodies and from souls ?  
 This got, there were some life to lead thereby,  
 — What, where or how, appreciate those who  
 tell

How the toad lives : it lives, — enough for me !  
 To get this good — but with a groan or so,  
 Then, silence of the victims — were the feat.  
 He foresaw, made a picture in his mind, —  
 Of father and mother stunned and echoless  
 To the blow, as they lie staring at fate's jaws  
 Their folly danced into, till the woe fell ;  
 Edged in a month by strenuous cruelty  
 From even the poor nook whence they watched  
 the wolf

Feast on their heart, the lamb-like child his  
 prey ;

Plundered to the last remnant of their wealth,  
 (What daily pittance pleased the plunderer  
 dole.)

Hunted forth to go hide head, starve and die,  
 And leave the pale awe-stricken wife, past hope  
 Of help i' the world now, mute and motionless,  
 His slave, his chattel, to first use, then destroy.  
 All this, he bent mind how to bring about,  
 Put plain in act and life, as painted plain,  
 So have success, reach crown of earthly good,  
 In this particular enterprise of man,  
 By marriage — undertaken in God's face  
 With all these lies so opposite God's truth,  
 For end so other than man's end.

Thus schemes

Guido, and thus would carry out his scheme :  
 But when an obstacle first blocks the path,  
 When he finds none may boast monopoly  
 Of lies and trick i' the tricking lying world, —  
 That sorry timid natures, even this sort  
 O' the Comparini, want nor trick nor lie  
 Proper to the kind, — that as the gor-crow  
 treats

The bramble-finch so treats the finch the moth,  
 And the great Guido is minutely matched  
 By this same couple. — whether true or false  
 The revelation of Pompilia's birth,  
 Which in a moment brings his scheme to  
 naught, —

Then, he is piqued, advances yet a stage,  
 Leaves the low region to the finch and fly,  
 Soars to the zenith whence the fiercer fowl  
 May draw the inimitable swoop. I see.  
 He draws now on the curious crime, the fine  
 Felicity and flower of wickedness ;  
 Determines, by the utmost exercise  
 Of violence, made safe and sure by craft.

To satiate malice, pluck one last arch-pang  
From the parents, else would triumph out of  
reach,

By punishing their child, within reach yet,  
Who, by thought, word or deed, could nowise  
wrong

I' the matter that now moves him. So plans he,  
Always subordinating (note the point !)

Revenge, the manlier sin, to interest  
The meaner, — would pluck pang forth, but  
unclench

No gripe in the act, let fall no money-piece.  
Hence a plan for so plaguing, body and soul,  
His wife, so putting, day by day, hour by hour,  
The untried torture to the untouched place,

As must precipitate an end foreseen,  
Goad her into some plain revolt, most like  
Plunge upon patent suicidal shame,  
Death to herself, damnation by rebound  
To those whose hearts he, holding hers, holds  
still :

Such plan as, in its bad completeness, shall  
Ruin the three together and alike,  
Yet leave himself in luck and liberty,  
No claim renounced, no right a forfeiture,  
His person unendangered, his good fame  
Without a flaw, his pristine worth intact, —  
While they, with all their claims and rights that  
cling,

Shall forthwith crumble off him every side,  
Scorched into dust, a plaything for the winds.  
As when, in our Campagna, there is fired  
The nest-like work that overruns a hut ;  
And, as the thatch burns here, there, every-  
where,

Even to the ivy and wild vine, that bound  
And blessed the home where men were happy  
once,

There rises gradual, black amid the blaze,  
Some grim and unscathed nucleus of the  
nest, —

Some old malicious tower, some obscene tomb  
They thought a temple in their ignorance,  
And clung about and thought to lean upon —  
There laughs it o'er their ravage, — where are  
they ?

So did his cruelty burn life about,  
And lay the ruin bare in dreadfulnss,  
Try the persistency of torment so  
Upon the wife, that, at extremity,  
Some crisis brought about by fire and flame,  
The patient frenzy-stung must needs break  
loose,

Fly anyhow, find refuge anywhere,  
Even in the arms of who should front her first,  
No monster but a man — while nature shrieked  
"Or thus escape, or die !" The spasm arrived,  
Not the escape by way of sin, — O God,  
Who shall pluck sheep thou holdest, from thy  
hand ?

Therefore she lay resigned to die, — so far  
The simple cruelty was foiled. Why then,  
Craft to the rescue, let craft supplement  
Cruelty and show hell a masterpiece !

Hence this consummate lie, this love-intrigue,  
Unmanly simulation of a sin,  
With place and time and circumstance to  
suit —

These letters false beyond all forgery —  
Not just handwriting and mere authorship,  
But false to body and soul they figure forth —  
As though the man had cut out shape and  
shape

From fancies of that other Aretine,  
To paste below — incorporate the filth  
With cherub faces on a missal-page !

Whereby the man so far attains his end  
That strange temptation is permitted, — see !  
Pompilia, wife, and Caponsacchi, priest,  
Are brought together as nor priest nor wife  
Should stand, and there is passion in the place,  
Power in the air for evil as for good,  
Promptings from heaven and hell, as if the  
stars

Fought in their courses for a fate to be.  
Thus stand the wife and priest, a spectacle,  
I doubt not, to unseen assemblage there.  
No lamp will mark that window for a shrine,  
No tablet signalize the terrace, teach  
New generations which succeed the old,  
The pavement of the street is holy ground :  
No bard describe in verse how Christ prevailed  
And Satan fell like lightning ! Why repine ?  
What does the world, told truth, but lie the  
more ?

A second time the plot is foiled ; nor, now,  
By corresponding sin for countercheck,  
No wile and trick that baffle trick and wile, —  
The play o' the parents ! Here the blot is  
blanched

By God's gift of a purity of soul  
That will not take pollution, ermine-like  
Armed from dishonor by its own soft snow.  
Such was this gift of God who showed for once  
How he would have the world go white : it  
seems

As a new attribute were born of each  
Champion of truth, the priest and wife I  
praise, —

As a new safeguard sprang up in defence  
Of their new noble nature : so a thorn  
Comes to the aid of and completes the rose —  
Courage to wit, no woman's gift nor priest's,  
I' the crisis ; might leaps vindicating right.  
See how the strong aggressor, bad and bold,  
With every vantage, preconcerts surprise,  
Leaps of a sudden at his victim's throat  
In a byway, — how fares he when face to face  
With Caponsacchi ? Who fights, who fears  
now ?

There quails Count Guido, armed to the chat-  
tering teeth,

Cowers at the steadfast eye and quiet word  
O' the Canon of the Pieve ! There skulks  
crime

Behind law called in to back cowardice !  
While out of the poor trampled worm the wife,  
Springs up a serpent !

But anon of these !  
Him I judge now, — of him proceed to note,  
Failing the first, a second chance befriends  
Guido, gives pause ere punishment arrive.  
The law he called, comes, hears, adjudicates,



Nor does amiss i' the main, — secludes the wife  
From the husband, respites the oppressed one,  
grants

Probation to the oppressor, could he know

The mercy of a minute's fiery purge!

The furnace-coals alike of public scorn,

Private remorse, heaped glowing on his head,

What if — the force and guile, the ore's alloy,

Eliminate, his baser soul refined —

The lost be saved even yet, so as by fire?

Let him, rebuked, go softly all his days

And, when no graver musings claim their due,

Meditate on a man's immense mistake

Who, fashioned to use feet and walk, deigns

crawl —

Takes the unmanly means — ay, though to

ends

Man scarce should make for, would but reach

through wrong, —

May sin, but nowise needs shame manhood so:

Since fowlers hawk, shoot, nay and snare the

game,

And yet eschew vile practice, nor find sport

In torch-light treachery or the luring owl.

But how hunts Guido? Why, the fraudulent

trap —

Late spurned to ruin by the indignant feet

Of fellows in the chase who loved fair play —

Here he picks up its fragments to the least,

Lades him and hies to the old lurking-place

Where haply he may patch again, refit

The mischief, file its blunted teeth anew,

Make sure, next time, first snap shall break

the bone.

Craft, greed and violence complot revenge:

Craft, for its quota, schemes to bring about

And seize occasion and be safe withal:

Greed craves its act may work both far and

near,

Crush the tree, branch and trunk and root be-

side,

Whichever twig or leaf arrests a streak

Of possible sunshine else would coin itself,

And drop down one more gold piece in the

path:

Violence stipulates, " Advantage proved,

And safety sure, be pain the overplus!

Murder with jagged knife! Cut but tear too!

Foiled oft, starved long, glut malice for

amends!"

And what, craft's scheme? scheme sorrowful

and strange

As though the elements, whom mercy checked,

Had mustered hate for one eruption more,

One final deluge to surprise the Ark

Cradled and sleeping on its mountain-top:

Their outbreak-signal — what but the dove's

coo,

Back with the olive in her bill for news

Sorrow was over? 'Tis an infant's birth,

Guido's first-born, his son and heir, that gives

The occasion: other men cut free their souls

From care in such a case, fly up in thanks

To God, reach, recognize his love for once:

Guido cries, " Soul, at last the mire is thine!

Lie there in likeness of a money-bag.

My babe's birth so pins down past moving now,

That I dare cut adrift the lives I late

Scrupled to touch lest thou escape with them!

These parents and their child my wife, — touch

one,

Lose all! Their rights determined on a head

I could but hate, not harm, since from each

hair

Dangled a hope for me: now — chance and

change!

No right was in their child but passes plain

To that child's child and through such child to

me.

I am a father now, — come what come will,

I represent my child; he comes between —

Cuts sudden off the sunshine of this life

From those three: why, the gold is in his curls!

Not with old Pietro's, Violante's head,

Not his gray horror, her more hideous black —

Go these, devoted to the knife!"

'T is done:

Wherefore should mind misgive, heart hesitate?

He calls to counsel, fashions certain four

Colorless natures counted clean till now,

— Rustic simplicity, uncorrupted youth,

Ignorant virtue! Here 's the gold o' the prime

When Saturn ruled, shall shock our leaden

day —

The clown abash the courtier! Mark it, bards!

The courtier tries his hand on clownship here,

Speaks a word, names a crime, appoints a

price, —

Just breathes on what, suffused with all himself,

Is red-hot henceforth past distinction now

I' the common glow of hell. And thus they

break

And blaze on us at Rome, Christ's birthnight-

eve!

Oh angels that sang erst " On the earth, peace!

To man, good will!" — such peace finds earth

to-day!

After the seventeen hundred years, so man

Wills good to man, so Guido makes complete

His murder! what is it I said? — cuts loose

Three lives that hitherto he suffered cling,

Simply because each served to nail secure,

By a corner of the money-bag, his soul, —

Therefore, lives sacred till the babe's first

breath

O'erweights them in the balance, — off they fly!

So is the murder managed, sin conceived

To the full: and why not crowned with triumph

too?

Why must the sin, conceived thus, bring forth

death?

I note how, within hair's-breadth of escape,

Impunity and the thing supposed success,

Guido is found when the check comes, the

change,

The monetary touch o' the tether — felt

By few, not marked by many, named by none

At the moment, only recognized aright

I' the fulness of the days, for God's, lest sin

Exceed the service, leap the line: such check —

A secret which this life finds hard to keep,

And, often guessed, is never quite revealed —

Needs must trip Guido on a stumbling-block

Too vulgar, too absurdly plain i' the path!

Study this single oversight of care,  
 This hebetude that marred sagacity,  
 Forgetfulness of all the man best knew, —  
 How any stranger having need to fly,  
 Needs but to ask and have the means of flight.  
 Why, the first urchin tells you, to leave Rome,  
 Get horses, you must show the warrant, just  
 The banal scrap, clerk's scribble, a fair word  
 buys,  
 Or foul one, if a ducat sweeten word, —  
 And straight authority will back demand,  
 Give you the pick o' the post-house! — how  
 should he,  
 Then, resident at Rome for thirty years,  
 Guido, instruct a stranger! And himself  
 Forgets just this poor paper scrap, wherewith  
 Armed, every door he knocks at opens wide  
 To save him: horsed and manned, with such  
 advance  
 O' the hunt behind, why, 't were the easy task  
 Of hours told on the fingers of one hand,  
 To reach the Tuscan frontier, laugh at home,  
 Light-hearted with his fellows of the place, —  
 Prepared by that strange shameful judgment,  
 that  
 Satire upon a sentence just pronounced  
 By the Rota and confirmed by the Granduke, —  
 Ready in a circle to receive their peer,  
 Appreciate his good story how, when Rome,  
 The Pope-King and the populace of priests  
 Made common cause with their confederate  
 The other priestling who seduced his wife,  
 He, all unaided, wiped out the affront  
 With decent bloodshed and could face his  
 friends,  
 Frolic it in the world's eye. Ay, such tale  
 Missed such applause, and by such oversight!  
 So, tired and footsore, those blood-flustered  
 five  
 Went reeling on the road through dark and cold,  
 The few permissible miles, to sink at length,  
 Wallow and sleep in the first wayside straw,  
 As the other herd quenched, i' the wash o' the  
 wave,  
 — Each swine, the devil inside him: so slept  
 they,  
 And so were caught and caged — all through  
 one trip,  
 One touch of fool in Guido the astute!  
 He curses the omission, I surmise,  
 More than the murder. Why, thou fool and  
 blind,  
 It is the mercy-stroke that stops thy fate,  
 Hamstrings and holds thee to thy hurt, — but  
 how?  
 On the edge o' the precipice! One minute more,  
 Thou hadst gone farther and fared worse, my  
 son,  
 Fathoms down on the flint and fire beneath!  
 Thy comrades each and all were of one mind,  
 Thy murder done, to straightway murder thee  
 In turn, because of promised pay withheld.  
 So, to the last, greed found itself at odds  
 With craft in thee, and, proving conqueror,  
 Had sent thee, the same night that crowned thy  
 hope,  
 Thither where, this same day, I see thee not,  
 Nor, through God's mercy, need, to-morrow, see.

Such I find Guido, midmost blotch of black  
 Discernible in this group of clustered crimes  
 Huddling together in the cave they call  
 Their palace, outraged day thus penetrates.  
 Around him ranged, now close and now remote,  
 Prominent or obscure to meet the needs  
 O' the mage and master, I detect each shape  
 Subsidiary i' the scene nor loathed the less,  
 All alike colored, all desecrated akin  
 By one and the same pitchy furnace stirred  
 At the centre: see, they lick the master's  
 hand, —  
 This fox-faced horrible priest, this brother-brute  
 The Abate, — why, mere wolfishness looks well,  
 Guido stands honest in the red o' the flame,  
 Beside this yellow that would pass for white,  
 Twice Guido, all craft but no violence,  
 This copier of the mien and gait and garb  
 Of Peter and Paul, that he may go disguised,  
 Rob halt and lame, sick folk i' the temple-  
 porch!  
 Armed with religion, fortified by law,  
 A man of peace, who trims the midnight lamp  
 And turns the classic page — and all for craft,  
 All to work harm with, yet incur no scratch!  
 While Guido brings the struggle to a close,  
 Paul steps back the due distance, clear o' the  
 trap  
 He builds and baits. Guido I catch and judge;  
 Paul is past reach in this world and my time:  
 That is a case reserved. Pass to the next,  
 The boy of the brood, the young Girolamo,  
 Priest, Canon, and what more? nor wolf nor  
 fox,  
 But hybrid, neither craft nor violence  
 Wholly, part violence part craft: such cross  
 Tempts speculation — will both blend one day,  
 And prove hell's better product? Or subside  
 And let the simple quality emerge,  
 Go on with Satan's service the old way?  
 Meanwhile, what promise, — what performance  
 too!  
 For there's a new distinctive touch, I see,  
 Lust — lacking in the two — hell's own blue tint  
 That gives a character and marks the man  
 More than a match for yellow and red. Once  
 more,  
 A case reserved: why should I doubt? Then  
 comes  
 The gaunt gray nightmare in the furthest  
 smoke,  
 The hag that gave these three abortions birth,  
 Unmotherly mother and unwomanly  
 Woman, that near turns motherhood to shame,  
 Womanliness to loathing: no one word,  
 No gesture to curb cruelty a whit  
 More than the she-pard thwarts her playsome  
 whelps  
 Trying their milk-teeth on the soft o' the throat  
 O' the first fawn, flung, with those beseeching  
 eyes,  
 Flat in the covert! How should she but couch,  
 Lick the dry lips, unsheathe the blunted claw,  
 Catch 'twixt her placid eyewinks at what chance  
 Old bloody half-forgotten dream may fit,  
 Born when herself was novice to the taste,  
 The while she lets youth take its pleasure  
 Last,

These God-abandoned wretched lumps of life,  
These four companions, — country-folk this  
time,

Not tainted by the unwholesome civic breath,  
Much less the curse o' the court ! Mere strip-  
lings too,

Fit to do human nature justice still !

Surely when impudence in Guido's shape  
Shall propose crime and proffer money's-worth  
To these stout tall rough bright-eyed black-  
haired boys,

The blood shall bound in answer to each cheek  
Before the indignant outcry break from lip !

Are these i' the mood to murder, hardly loosed  
From healthy autumn-finish of ploughed glebe,  
Grapes in the barrel, work at happy end,  
And winter near with rest and Christmas play ?  
How greet they Guido with his final task —

(As if he but proposed "One vineyard more  
To dig, ere frost come, then relax indeed !")

"Anywhere, anyhow and anyway,  
Murder me some three people, old and young,  
Ye never heard the names of, — and be paid  
So much !" And the whole four accede at  
once.

Demur ? Do cattle bidden march or halt ?

Is it some lingering habit, old fond faith

I' the lord o' the land, instructs them, — birth-  
right badge

Of feudal tenure claims its slaves again ?

Not so at all, thou noble human heart !

All is done purely for the pay, — which, earned,

And not forthcoming at the instant, makes

Religion heresy, and the lord o' the land

Fit subject for a murder in his turn.

The patron with cut throat and rifled purse,

Deposited i' the roadside-ditch, his due,

Naught hinders each good fellow trudging  
home,

The heavier by a piece or two in poke,

And so with new zest to the common life,

Mattock and spade, plough-tail and wagon-  
shaft,

Till some such other piece of luck betide,

Who knows ? Since this is a mere start in life,

And none of them exceeds the twentieth year.

Nay, more i' the background yet ? Unnoticed  
forms

Claim to be classed, subordinately vile ?

Complacent lookers - on that laugh, — per-  
chance

Shake head as their friend's horse - play grows  
too rough

With the mere child he manages amiss —

But would not interfere and make bad worse

For twice the fractious tears and prayers : thou  
know'st

Civility better, Marzi-Medici,

Governor for thy kinsman the Granduke !

Fit representative of law, man's lamp

I' the magistrate's grasp full-flare, no rushlight-  
end

Sputtering 'twixt thumb and finger of the  
priest !

Whose answer to the couple's cry for help

Is a threat, — whose remedy of Pompilia's  
wrong,

A shrug o' the shoulder, and facetious word

Or wink, traditional with Tuscan wits,  
To Guido in the doorway. Laud to law !  
The wife is pushed back to the husband, he  
Who knows how these home-squabbings perse-  
cute

People who have the public good to mind,  
And work best with a silence in the court !

Ah, but I save my word at least for thee,  
Archbishop, who art under, i' the Church,  
As I am under God, — thou, chosen by both  
To do the shepherd's office, feed the sheep —  
How of this lamb that panted at thy foot  
While the wolf pressed on her within crook's  
reach ?

Wast thou the hireling tha' did turn and flee ?  
With thee at least anon the little word !

Such denizens o' the cave now cluster round  
And heat the furnace sevenfold : time indeed  
A bolt from heaven should cleave roof and  
clear place,

Transfix and show the world, suspiring flame,  
The main offender, scar and brand the rest  
Hurrying, each miscerant to his hole : then flood  
And purify the scene with outside day —  
Which yet, in the absolutest drench of dark,  
Ne'er wants a witness, some stray beauty-beam  
To the despair of hell.

First of the first,

Such I pronounce Pompilia, then as now  
Perfect in whiteness : stoop thou down, my  
child,

Give one good moment to the poor old Pope  
Heart-sick at having all his world to blame —  
Let me look at thee in the flesh as erst,  
Not me enjoy the old clean linen garb,  
Not the new splendid vesture ! Armed and  
crowned,

Would Michael, yonder, be, nor crowned nor  
armed,

The less pre-eminent angel ? Everywhere  
I see in the world the intellect of man,  
That sword, the energy his subtle spear,  
The knowledge which defends him like a  
shield —

Everywhere ; but they make not up, I think,  
The marvel of a soul like thine, earth's flower  
She holds up to the softened gaze of God !  
It was not given Pompilia to know much,  
Speak much, to write a book, to move man-  
kind,

Be memorized by who records my time.

Yet if in purity and patience, if  
In faith held fast despite the plucking fiend,  
Safe like the signet stone with the new name  
That saints are known by, — if in right returned  
For wrong, most pardon for worst injury,  
If there be any virtue, any praise, —  
Then will this woman-child have proved —  
who knows ? —

Just the one prize vouchsafed unworthy me,  
Seven years a gardener of the untoward ground  
I till, — this earth, my sweat and blood manure  
All the long day that barrenly grows dusk :  
At least one blossom makes me proud at eve  
Born 'mid the briers of my enclosure ! Still



(Oh, here as elsewhere, nothingness of man!)  
 Those be the plants, imbedded yonder South  
 To mellow in the morning, those made fat  
 By the master's eye, that yield such timid leaf,  
 Uncertain bud, as product of his pains!  
 While — see how this mere chance-sown, cleft-  
 nursed seed,

That sprang up by the wayside 'neath the foot  
 Of the enemy, this breaks all into blaze,  
 Spreads itself, one wide glory of desire  
 To incorporate the whole great sun it loves  
 From the inch-height whence it looks and  
 longs! My flower,

My rose, I gather for the breast of God,  
 This I praise most in thee, where all I praise,  
 That having been obedient to the end  
 According to the light allotted, law  
 Prescribed thy life, still tried, still standing  
 test, —

Dutiful to the foolish parents first,  
 Submissive next to the bad husband, — nay,  
 Tolerant of those meaner miserable  
 That did his hests, eked out the dole of pain, —  
 Thou, patient thus, couldst rise from law to  
 law,

The old to the new, promoted at one cry  
 O' the trump of God to the new service, not  
 To longer bear, but henceforth fight, be found  
 Sublime in new impatience with the foe!  
 Endure man and obey God: plant firm foot  
 On neck of man, tread man into the hell  
 Meet for him, and obey God all the more!  
 Oh child that didst despise thy life so much  
 When it seemed only thine to keep or lose,  
 How the fine ear felt fall the first low word  
 "Value life, and preserve life for My sake!"  
 Thou didst . . . how shall I say? . . . receive  
 so long

The standing ordinance of God on earth,  
 What wonder if the novel claim had clashed  
 With old requirement, seemed to supersede  
 Too much the customary law? But, brave,  
 Thou at first prompting of what I call God,  
 And fools call Nature, didst hear, comprehend,  
 Accept the obligation laid on thee,  
 Mother elect, to save the unborn child,  
 As brute and bird do, reptile and the fly,  
 Ay and, I nothing doubt, even tree, shrub, plant  
 And flower o' the field, all in a common pact  
 To worthily defend the trust of trusts,  
 Life from the Ever Living: — didst resist —  
 Anticipate the office that is mine —  
 And with his own sword stay the upraised arm,  
 The endeavor of the wicked, and defend  
 Him who — again in my default — was there  
 For visible providence: one less true than thou  
 To touch, i' the past, less practised in the right,  
 Approved less far in all docility  
 To all instruction, — how had such an one  
 Made scruple "Is this motion a decree?"  
 It was authentic to the experienced ear  
 O' the good and faithful servant. Go past me  
 And get thy praise, — and be not far to seek  
 Presently when I follow if I may!

And surely not so very much apart  
 Need I place thee, my warrior-priest, — in  
 whom

What if I gain the other rose, the gold,  
 We grave to imitate God's miracle,  
 Greet monarchs with, good rose in its degree?  
 Irregular noble scapegrace — on the same!  
 Faulty — and peradventure ours the fault  
 Who still mistake, mislead, throw hook and  
 line,

Thinking to land leviathan forsooth,  
 Tame the scaled neck, play with him as a bird,  
 And bind him for our maidens! Better bear  
 The King of Pride go wantoning awhile,  
 Unplagued by cord in nose and thorn in jaw,  
 Through deep to deep, followed by all that  
 shine,

Churning the blackness hoary: He who made  
 The comely terror, He shall make the sword  
 To match that piece of netherstone his heart,  
 Ay, nor miss praise thereby; who else shut fire  
 I' the stone, to leap from mouth at sword's first  
 stroke,

In lamps of love and faith, the chivalry  
 That dares the right and disregards alike  
 The yea and nay o' the world? Self-sacri-  
 fice, —

What if an idol took it? Ask the Church  
 Why she was wont to turn each Venus here, —  
 Poor Rome perversely lingered round, despite  
 Instruction, for the sake of purblind love, —  
 Into Madonna's shape, and waste no whit  
 Of aught so rare on earth as gratitude!  
 All this sweet savor was not ours but thine,  
 Nard of the rock, a natural wealth we name  
 Incense, and treasure up as food for saints,  
 When flung to us — whose function was to give  
 Not find the costly perfume. Do I smile?  
 Nay, Caponsacchi, much I find amiss,  
 Blameworthy, punishable in this freak  
 Of thine, this youth prolonged, though age was  
 ripe,

This masquerade in sober day, with change  
 Of motley too, — now hypocrite's disguise,  
 Now fool's costume: which lie was least like  
 truth,

Which the ungainlier, more discordant garb,  
 With that symmetric soul inside my son,  
 The churchman's or the worldling's, — let him  
 judge,

Our adversary who enjoys the task!  
 I rather chronicle the healthy rage, —  
 When the first moan broke from the martyr-  
 maid

At that uncaging of the beasts, — made bare  
 My athlete on the instant, gave such good  
 Great undisguised leap over post and pale  
 Right into the mid-cirque, free fighting-place.  
 There may have been rash stripping — every  
 rag

Went to the winds, — infringement manifold  
 Of laws prescribed pudicity, I fear,  
 In this impulsive and prompt self-display!  
 Ever such tax comes of the foolish youth;  
 Men mulet the wiser manhood, and suspect  
 No veritable star swims out of cloud.  
 Bear thou such imputation, undergo  
 The penalty I nowise dare relax, —  
 Conventional chastisement and rebuke.  
 But for the outcome, the brave starry birth  
 Conciliating earth with all that cloud,

Thank heaven as I do! Ay, such champion-  
ship

Of God at first blush, such prompt cheery thud  
Of glove on ground that answers ringingly  
The challenge of the false knight, — watch we  
long,

And wait we vainly for its gallant like  
From those appointed to the service, sworn  
His body-guard with pay and privilege —  
White-cinct, because in white walks sanctity,  
Red-socked, how else proclaim fine scorn of  
flesh,

Unchariness of blood when blood faith begs!  
Where are the men-at-arms with cross on coat?  
Aloof, bewraying their attire: whilst thou  
In mask and motley, pledged to dance not  
fight,

Sprang'st forth the hero! In thought, word  
and deed,

How throughout all thy warfare thou wast  
pure,

I find it easy to believe: and if  
At any fateful moment of the strange  
Adventure, the strong passion of that strait,  
Fear and surprise, may have revealed too  
much, —

As when a thundrous midnight, with black air  
That burns, raindrops that blister, breaks a  
spell,

Draws out the excessive virtue of some  
sheathed

Shut unsuspected flower that hoards and hides  
Immensity of sweetness, — so, perchance,  
Might the surprise and fear release too much  
The perfect beauty of the body and soul  
Thou savedst in thy passion for God's sake,  
He who is Pity. Was the trial sore?  
Temptation sharp? Thank God a second  
time!

Why comes temptation but for man to meet  
And master and make crouch beneath his foot,  
And so be pedestalled in triumph? Pray  
“Lead us into no such temptations, Lord!”

Yea, but, O Thou whose servants are the bold,  
Lead such temptations by the head and hair,  
Reluctant dragons, up to who dares fight,  
That so he may do battle and have praise!

Do I not see the praise? — that while thy mates  
Bound to deserve it the matter, prove at need  
Unprofitable through the very pains

We gave to train them well and start them  
fair, —

Are found too stiff, with standing ranked and  
ranged,

For onset in good earnest, too obtuse  
Of ear, through iteration of command,  
For catching quick the sense of the real cry, —  
Thou, whose sword-hand was used to strike the  
lute,

Whose sentry-station graced some wanton's  
gate,

Thou didst push forward and show mettle,  
shame

The laggards, and retrieve the day. Well  
done!

Be glad thou hast let light into the world,  
Through that irregular breach o' the boundary,  
— see

The same upon thy path and march assured,  
Learning anew the use of soldiership,  
Self-abnegation, freedom from all fear,  
Loyalty to the life's end! Ruminatè,  
Deserve the initiatory spasm, — once more  
Work, be unhappy but bear life, my son!

And troop you, somewhere 'twixt the best and  
worst,

Where crowd the indifferent product, all too  
poor

Makeshift, starved samples of humanity!  
Father and mother, huddle there and hide!

A gracious eye may find you! Foul and fair,  
Sadly mixed natures: self-indulgent, — yet

Self-sacrificing too: how the love soars,  
How the craft, avarice, vanity and spite

Sink again! So they keep the middle course,  
Slide into silly crime at unaware,

Slip back upon the stupid virtue, stay  
Nowhere enough for being classed, I hope

And fear. Accept the swift and rueful death,  
Taught, somewhat sternlier than is wont, what  
waits

The ambiguous creature, — how the one black  
tuft

Steadies the aim of the arrow just as well  
As the wide faultless white on the bird's

breast!

Nay, you were punished in the very part  
That looked most pure of speck, 't was honest

love

Betrayed you, — did love seem most worthy  
pains,

Challenge such purging, since ordained survive  
When all the rest of you was done with? Go!

Never again elude the choice of tints!  
White shall not neutralize the black, nor good

Compensate bad in man, absolve him so:  
Life's business being just the terrible choice.

So do I see, pronounce on all and some  
Grouped for my judgment now, — profess no  
doubt

While I pronounce: dark, difficult enough  
The human sphere, yet eyes grow sharp by use,

I find the truth, dispart the shine from shade,  
As a mere man may, with no special touch

O' the lynx-gift in each ordinary orb:  
Nay, if the popular notion class me right,

One of wellnigh decayed intelligence, —  
What of that? Through hard labor and good

will,

And habitude that gives a blind man sight  
At the practised finger-ends of him, I do

Discern, and dare decree in consequence,  
Whatever prove the peril of mistake.

Whence, then, this quite new quick cold thrill,  
— cloud-like,

This keen dread creeping from a quarter scarce  
Suspected in the skies I nightly scan?

What slacks the tense nerve, saps the wound-  
up spring

Of the act that should and shall be, sends the  
mount

And mass o' the whole man's-strength, — con-  
globed so late —

Shudderingly into dust, a moment's work?

While I stand firm, go fearless, in this world,  
 For this life recognize and arbitrate,  
 Touch and let stay, or else remove a thing,  
 Judge "This is right, this object out of place,"  
 Candle in hand that helps me and to spare, —  
 What if a voice deride me, "Perk and pry!  
 Brighten each nook with thine intelligence!  
 Play the good householder, ply man and maid  
 With tasks prolonged into the midnight, test  
 Their work and nowise stint of the due wage  
 Each worthy worker: but with gyves and whip  
 Pay thou misprision of a single point  
 Plain to thy happy self who lift'st the light,  
 Lament'st the darkling, — bold to all beneath!  
 What if thyself adventure, now the place  
 Is purged so well? Leave pavement and mount  
 roof,

Look round thee for the light of the upper sky,  
 The fire which lit thy fire which finds default  
 In Guido Franceschini to his cost!  
 What if, above in the domain of light,  
 Thou miss the accustomed signs, remark  
 eclipse?

Shalt thou still gaze on ground nor lift a lid, —  
 Steady in thy superb prerogative,  
 Thy inch of inkling, — nor once face the doubt  
 I' the sphere above thee, darkness to be felt?"

Yet my poor spark had for its source, the sun;  
 Thither I sent the great looks which compel  
 Light from its fount: all that I do and am  
 Comes from the truth, or seen or else surmised,  
 Remembered or divined, as mere man may:  
 I know just so, nor otherwise. As I know,  
 I speak, — what should I know, then, and how  
 speak

Were there a wild mistake of eye or brain  
 As to recorded governance above?  
 If my own breath, only, blew coal alight  
 I styled celestial and the morning-star?  
 I, who in this world act resolutely,  
 Dispose of men, their bodies and their souls,  
 As they acknowledge or gainsay the light  
 I show them, — shall I too lack courage? —  
 leave

I, too, the post of me, like those I blame?  
 Refuse, with kindred inconsistency,  
 To grapple danger whereby souls grow strong?  
 I am near the end; but still not at the end;  
 All to the very end is trial in life:  
 At this stage is the trial of my soul  
 Danger to face, or danger to refuse?  
 Shall I dare try the doubt now, or not dare?

O Thou, — as represented here to me  
 In such conception as my soul allows, —  
 Under Thy measureless, my atom width! —  
 Man's mind, what is it but a convex glass  
 Wherein are gathered all the scattered points  
 Picked out of the immensity of sky,  
 To reunite there, be our heaven for earth,  
 Our known unknown, our God revealed to  
 man?  
 Existent somewhere, somehow, as a whole;  
 Here, as a whole proportioned to our sense, —  
 There, (which is nowhere, speech must babble  
 thus!)

In the absolute immensity, the whole

Appreciable solely by Thyself, —  
 Here, by the little mind of man, reduced  
 To littleness that suits his faculty,  
 In the degree appreciable too;  
 Between Thee and ourselves — nay even,  
 again,

Below us, to the extreme of the minute,  
 Appreciable by how many and what diverse  
 Modes of the life Thou madest be! (why live  
 Except for love, — how love unless they know?)  
 Each of them, only filling to the edge,  
 Insect or angel, his just length and breadth,  
 Due facet of reflection, — full, no less,  
 Angel or insect, as Thou framedst things.  
 I it is who have been appointed here  
 To represent Thee, in my turn, on earth,  
 Just as, if new philosophy know aught,  
 This one earth, out of all the multitude  
 Of peopled worlds, as stars are now supposed, —  
 Was chosen, and no sun-star of the swarm,  
 For stage and scene of Thy transcendent act  
 Beside which even the creation fades  
 Into a puny exercise of power.

Choice of the world, choice of the thing I am,  
 Both emanate alike from Thy dread play  
 Of operation outside this our sphere  
 Where things are classed and counted small or  
 great, —

Incomprehensibly the choice is Thine!  
 I therefore bow my head and take Thy place.  
 There is, beside the works, a tale of Thee  
 In the world's mouth, which I find credible:  
 I love it with my heart: unsatisfied,  
 I try it with my reason, nor disceant  
 From any point I probe and pronounce sound.  
 Mind is not matter nor from matter, but  
 Above, — leave matter then, proceed with  
 mind!

Man's be the mind recognized at the height, —  
 Leave the inferior minds and look at man!  
 Is he the strong, intelligent and good  
 Up to his own conceivable height? Nowise.  
 Enough o' the low, — soar the conceivable  
 height,

Find cause to match the effect in evidence,  
 The work i' the world, not man's but God's;  
 leave man!

Conjecture of the worker by the work:  
 Is there strength there? — enough: intelli-  
 gence?

Ample: but goodness in a like degree?  
 Not to the human eye in the present state,  
 An isosceles deficient in the base.  
 What lacks, then, of perfection fit for God  
 But just the instance which this tale supplies  
 Of love without a limit? So is strength,  
 So is intelligence; let love be so,  
 Unlimited in its self-sacrifice,  
 Then is the tale true and God shows complete.  
 Beyond the tale, I reach into the dark,  
 Feel what I cannot see, and still faith stands:  
 I can believe this dread machinery  
 Of sin and sorrow, would confound me else,  
 Devised — all pain, at most expenditure  
 Of pain by Who devised pain — to evolve,  
 By new machinery in counterpart,  
 The moral qualities of man — how else? —  
 To make him love in turn and be beloved,



Creative and self-sacrificing too,  
And thus eventually God-like, (ay,  
"I have said ye are Gods," — shall it be said  
for naught?)

Enable man to wring, from out all pain,  
All pleasure for a common heritage  
To all eternity: this may be surmised,  
The other is revealed, — whether a fact,  
Absolute, abstract, independent truth,  
Historic, not reduced to suit man's mind, —  
Or only truth reverberate, changed, made pass  
A spectrum into mind, the narrow eye, —  
The same and not the same, else unconceived —  
Though quite conceivable to the next grade  
Above it in intelligence, — as truth  
Easy to man were blindness to the beast  
By parity of procedure, — the same truth  
In a new form, but changed in either case:  
What matter so intelligence be filled?  
To a child, the sea is angry, for it roars:  
Frost bites, else why the tooth-like fret on  
face?

Man makes acoustics deal with the sea's wrath,  
Explains the choppy cheek by chymic law, —  
To man and child remains the same effect  
On drum of ear and root of nose, change cause  
Never so thoroughly: so my heart be struck,  
What care I, — by God's gloved hand or the  
bare?

Nor do I much perplex me with aught hard,  
Dubious in the transmitting of the tale, —  
No, nor with certain riddles set to solve.  
This life is training and a passage; pass, —  
Still, we march over some flat obstacle  
We made give way before us; solid truth  
In front of it, what motion for the world?  
The moral sense grows but by exercise.  
'T is even as man grew probatively  
Initiated in Godship, set to make  
A fairer moral world than this he finds,  
Guess now what shall be known hereafter.  
Deal

Thus with the present problem: as we see,  
A faultless creature is destroyed, and sin  
Has had its way i' the world where God should  
rule.

Ay, but for this irrelevant circumstance  
Of inquisition after blood, we see  
Pompilia lost and Guido saved: how long?  
For his whole life: how much is that whole  
life?

We are not babes, but know the minute's  
worth,

And feel that life is large and the world small.  
So, wait till life have passed from out the  
world.

Neither does this astonish at the end,  
That whereas I can so receive and trust,  
Other men, made with hearts and souls the  
same,

Reject and disbelieve, — subordinate  
The future to the present, — sin, nor fear.  
This I refer still to the foremost fact,  
Life is probation and the earth no goal  
But starting-point of man: compel him strive,  
Which means, in man, as good as reach the  
goal, —

Why institute that race, his life, at all?

But this does overwhelm me with surprise,  
Touch me to terror, — not that faith, the  
pearl,

Should be let lie by fishers wanting food, —  
Nor, seen and handled by a certain few  
Critical and contemptuous, straight consigned  
To shore and shingle for the pebble it proves, —  
But that, when haply found and known and  
named

By the residue made rich forevermore,  
These, — that these favored ones, should in a  
trice

Turn, and with double zest go dredge for  
whelks,

Mud - worms that make the savory soup!  
Enough

O' the disbelievers, see the faithful few!  
How do the Christians here deport them, keep  
Their robes of white unspotted by the world?  
What is this Aretine Archbishop, this  
Man under me as I am under God,  
This champion of the faith, I armed and  
decked,

Pushed forward, put upon a pinnacle,  
To show the enemy his victor, — see!  
What's the best fighting when the couple  
close?

Pompilia cries, "Protect me from the wolf!"  
He — "No, thy Guido is rough, heady, strong,  
Dangerous to disquiet: let him bide!  
He needs some bone to mumble, help amuse  
The darkness of his den with: so, the fawn  
Which limps up bleeding to my foot and lies,  
— Come to me, daughter! — thus I throw him  
back!"

Have we misjudged here, over-armed our  
knight,

Given gold and silk where plain hard steel  
serves best,

Enfeebled whom we sought to fortify,  
Made an archbishop and undone a saint?  
Well, then, descend these heights, this pride of  
life,

Sit in the ashes with a barefoot monk  
Who long ago stamped out the worldly sparks,  
By fasting, watching, stone cell and wire  
scourge,

— No such indulgence as unknots the strength —  
These breed the tight nerve and tough cuticle,  
And the world's praise or blame runs rillet-  
wise

Off the broad back and brawny breast, we  
know!

He meets the first cold sprinkle of the world,  
And shudders to the marrow. "Save this child?  
Oh, my superiors, oh, the Archbishop's self!  
Who was it dared lay hand upon the ark  
His betters saw fall nor put finger forth?  
Great ones could help yet help not: why should  
small?

I break my promise: let her break her heart!"  
These are the Christians not the worldlings, not  
The sceptics, who thus battle for the faith!  
If foolish virgins disobey and sleep,  
What wonder? But, this time, the wise that  
watch,

Sell lamps and buy lutes, exchange oil for wine,  
The mystic Spouse betrays the Bridegroom here.

To our last resource, then! Since all flesh is weak,

Bind weaknesses together, we get strength :  
The individual weighed, found wanting, try  
Some institution, honest artifice  
Whereby the units grow compact and firm !  
Each props the other, and so stand is made  
By our embodied cowards that grow brave.  
The Monastery called of Convertites,  
Meant to help women because these helped  
Christ, —

A thing existent only while it acts,  
Does as designed, else a nonentity, —  
For what is an idea unrealized ? —  
Pompilia is consigned to these for help.  
They do help : they are prompt to testify  
To her pure life and saintly dying days.  
She dies, and lo, who seemed so poor, proves  
rich !

What does the body that lives through helpful-  
ness

To women for Christ's sake? The kiss turns  
bite,

The dove's note changes to the crow's cry :  
judge !

"Seeing that this our Convent claims of right  
What goods belong to those we succor, be  
The same proved women of dishonest life, —  
And seeing that this Trial made appear  
Pompilia was in such predicament, —  
The Convent hereupon pretends to said  
Succession of Pompilia, issues writ,  
And takes possession by the Fisc's advice."  
Such is their attestation to the cause  
Of Christ, who had one saint at least, they  
hoped :

But, is a title-deed to filch, a corpse  
To slander, and an infant-heir to cheat ?  
Christ must give up his gains then ! They unsay  
All the fine speeches, — who was saint is whore.  
Why, scripture yields no parallel for this !  
The soldiers only threw dice for Christ's coat ;  
We want another legend of the Twelve  
Disputing if it was Christ's coat at all,  
Claiming as prize the woof of price — for why ?  
The Master was a thief, purloined the same,  
Or paid for it out of the common bag !  
Can it be this is end and outcome, all  
I take with me to show as stewardship's fruit,  
The best yield of the latest time, this year  
The seventeen-hundredth since God died for  
man ?

Is such effect proportionate to cause ?  
And still the terror keeps on the increase  
When I perceive . . . how can I blink the fact ?  
That the fault, the obduracy to good,  
Lies not with the impracticable stuff  
Whence man is made, his very nature's fault,  
As if it were of ice the moon may gild  
Not melt, or stone 't was meant the sun should  
warn

Not make bear flowers, — nor ice nor stone to  
blame :

But it can melt, that ice, can bloom, that stone,  
Impossible to rule of day and night !  
This terrifies me, thus compelled perceive,  
Whatever love and faith we looked should spring  
At advent of the authoritative star,

Which yet lie sluggish, curdled at the source, —  
These have leapt forth profusely in old time,  
These still respond with promptitude to-day,  
At challenge of — what unacknowledged powers  
O' the air, what uncommissioned meteors,  
warmth

By law, and light by rule should supersede ?  
For see this priest, this Caponsacchi, stung  
At the first summons, — " Help for honor's  
sake,

Play the man, pity the oppressed ! " — no pause,  
How does he lay about him in the midst,  
Strike any foe, right wrong at any risk,  
All blindness, bravery and obedience ! — blind ?  
Ay, as a man would be inside the sun,  
Delirious with the plenitude of light  
Should interfuse him to the finger-ends —  
Let him rush straight, and how shall he go  
wrong ?

Where are the Christians in their panoply ?  
The loins we girt about with truth, the breasts  
Righteousness plated round, the shield of faith,  
The helmet of salvation, and that sword  
O' the Spirit, even the word of God, — where  
these ?

Slunk into corners ! Oh, I hear at once  
Hubbub of protestation ! " What, we monks,  
We friars, of such an order, such a rule,  
Have not we fought, bled, left our martyr-mark  
At every point along the boundary-line  
'Twixt true and false, religion and the world,  
Where this or the other dogma of our Church  
Called for defence ? " And I, despite myself,  
How can I but speak loud what truth speaks  
low,

" Or better than the best, or nothing serves !  
What boots deed, I can cap and cover straight  
With such another doughtiness to match,  
Done at an instinct of the natural man ? "  
Immolate body, sacrifice soul too, —  
Do not these publicans the same ? Outstrip !  
Or else stop race you boast runs neck and neck,  
You with the wings, they with the feet, — for  
shame !

Oh, I remark your diligence and zeal !  
Five years long, now, rounds faith into my ears,  
" Help thou, or Christendom is done to death ! "  
Five years since, in the Province of To-kien,  
Which is in China as some people know,  
Maigrot, my Vicar Apostolic there,  
Having a great qualm, issues a decree.  
Alack, the converts use as God's name, not  
*Tien-chu* but plain *Tien* or else mere *Shang-ti*,  
As Jesuits please to fancy politic,  
While, say Dominicans, it calls down fire, —  
For *Tien* means heaven, and *Shang-ti*, supreme  
prince,

While *Tien-chu* means the lord of heaven : all  
cry,

" There is no business urgent for dispatch  
As that thou send a legate, specially  
Cardinal Tournon, straight to Peking, there  
To settle and compose the difference ! "  
So have I seen a potentate all fume  
For some infringement of his realm's just right,  
Some menace to a mud-built straw-thatched  
farm

O' the frontier ; while inside the mainland lie,

Quite undisputed—for in solitude,  
Whole cities plague may waste or famine sap :  
What if the sun crumble, the sands encroach,  
While he looks on sublimely at his ease ?  
How does their ruin touch the empire's bound ?

And is this little all that was to be ?  
Where is the gloriously-decisive change,  
Metamorphosis the immeasurable  
Of human clay to divine gold, we looked  
Should, in some poor sort, justify its price ?  
Had an adept of the mere Rosy Cross  
Spent his life to consummate the Great Work,  
Would not we start to see the stuff it touched  
Yield not a grain more than the vulgar got  
By the old smelting-process years ago ?  
If this were sad to see in just the sage  
Who should profess so much, perform no more,  
What is it when suspected in that Power  
Who undertook to make and made the world,  
Devised and did effect man, body and soul,  
Ordained salvation for them both, and yet . . .  
Well, is the thing we see, salvation ?

I  
Put no such dreadful question to myself,  
Within whose circle of experience burns  
The central truth, Power, Wisdom, Good-  
ness, — God :

I must outlive a thing ere know it dead :  
When I outlive the faith there is a sun,  
When I lie, ashes to the very soul, —  
Some one, not I, must wail above the heap,  
“ He died in dark whence never morn arose.”  
While I see day succeed the deepest night —  
How can I speak but as I know ? — my speech  
Must be, throughout the darkness, “ It will  
end :

The light that did burn, will burn !” Clouds  
obscure —

But for which obscurity all were bright ?  
Too hastily concluded ! Sun-suffused,  
A cloud may soothe the eye made blind by  
blaze, —

Better the very clarity of heaven :  
The soft streaks are the beautiful and dear.  
What but the weakness in a faith supplies  
The incentive to humanity, no strength  
Absolute, irresistible, comports ?  
How can man love but what he yearns to help ?  
And that which men think weakness within  
strength,  
But angels know for strength and stronger  
yet —

What were it else but the first things made new,  
But repetition of the miracle,  
The divine instance of self-sacrifice  
That never ends and aye begins for man ?  
So, never I miss footing in the maze,  
No, — I have light nor fear the dark at all.

But are mankind not real, who pace outside  
My petty circle, world that's measured me ?  
And when they stumble even as I stand,  
Have I a right to stop ear when they cry,  
As they were phantoms who took clouds for  
crags,  
Tripped and fell, where man's march might  
safely move ?

Beside, the cry is other than a ghost's,  
When out of the old time there pleads some  
bard,

Philosopher, or both, and — whispers not,  
But words it boldly. “ The inward work and  
worth

Of any mind, what other mind may judge  
Save God who only knows the thing he made,  
The veritable service he exacts ?  
It is the outward product men appraise.  
Behold, an engine hoists a tower aloft :  
‘ I looked that it should move the mountain  
too !’

Or else ‘ Had just a turret toppled down,  
Success enough !’ — may say the Machinist.  
Who knows what less or more result might be :  
But we, who see that done we cannot do,  
‘ A feat beyond man's force,’ we men must say.  
Regard me and that shake I gave the world !  
I was born, not so long before Christ's birth  
As Christ's birth haply did preceede thy day, —  
But many a watch before the star of dawn :  
Therefore I lived, — it is thy creed affirms,  
Pope Innocent, who art to answer me ! —  
Under conditions, nowise to escape,  
Whereby salvation was impossible.  
Each impulse to achieve the good and fair,  
Each aspiration to the pure and true,  
Being without a warrant or an aim,  
Was just as sterile a felicity  
As if the insect, born to spend his life  
Soaring his circles, stopped them to describe  
(Painfully motionless in the mid-air)  
Some word of weighty counsel for man's sake,  
Some ‘ Know thyself ’ or ‘ Take the golden  
mean !’

— Forwent his happy dance and the glad ray,  
Died half an hour the sooner and was dust.  
I, born to perish like the brutes, or worse,  
Why not live brutishly, obey brutes' law ?  
But I, of body as of soul complete,  
A gymnast at the games, philosopher  
I the schools, who painted, and made music,  
— all

Glories that met upon the tragic stage  
When the Third Poet's tread surprised the  
Two, —

Whose lot fell in a land where life was great  
And sense went free and beauty lay profuse,  
I, untouched by one adverse circumstance,  
Adopted virtue as my rule of life,  
Waived all reward, loved but for loving's sake,  
And, what my heart taught me, I taught the  
world,  
And have been teaching now two thousand  
years.

Witness my work, — plays that should please,  
forsooth !

‘ They might please, they may displease, they  
shall teach,

For truth's sake,’ so I said, and did, and do.  
Five hundred years ere Paul spoke, Felix  
heard, —

How much of temperance and righteousness,  
Judgment to come, did I find reason for,  
Corroborate with my strong style that spared  
No sin, nor swerved the more from branding  
brow



Because the sinner was called Zeus and God ?  
 How nearly did I guess at that Paul knew ?  
 How closely come, in what I represent  
 As duty, to his doctrine yet a blank ?  
 And as that limner not untruly limns  
 Who draws an object round or square, which  
 square

Or round seems to the unassisted eye,  
 Though Galileo's tube display the same  
 Oval or oblong, — so, who controverts  
 I rendered rightly what proves wrongly  
 wrought

Beside Paul's picture ? Mine was true for me.  
 I saw that there are, first and above all,  
 The hidden forces, blind necessities,  
 Named Nature, but the thing's self uncon-  
 ceived :

Then follow — how dependent upon these,  
 We know not, how imposed above ourselves,  
 We well know — what I name the gods, a  
 power

Various or one : for great and strong and good  
 Is there, and little, weak and bad there too,  
 Wisdom and folly : say, these make no God, —  
 What is it else that rules outside man's self ?

A fact then, — always, to the naked eye, —  
 And so, the one revelation possible  
 Of what were unimagined else by man,  
 Therefore, what gods do, man may criticise,  
 Applaud, condemn, — how should he fear the  
 truth ? —

But likewise have in awe because of power,  
 Venerate for the main munificence,  
 And give the doubtful deed its due excuse  
 From the acknowledged creature of a day  
 To the Eternal and Divine. Thus, bold  
 Yet self-mistrusting, should man bear himself,  
 Most assured on what now concerns him most —  
 The law of his own life, the path he prints, —  
 Which law is virtue and not vice, I say, —  
 And least inquisitive where search least skills,  
 'T the nature we best give the clouds to keep.  
 What could I paint beyond a scheme like this  
 Out of the fragmentary truths where light  
 Lay fitful in a tenebrific time ?

You have the sunrise now, joins truth to truth,  
 Shoots life and substance into death and void ;  
 Themselves compose the whole we made before :  
 The forces and necessity grow God, —  
 The beings so contrarious that seemed gods,  
 Prove just his operation manifold  
 And multiform, translated, as must be,  
 Into intelligible shape so far

As suits our sense and sets us free to feel.  
 What if I let a child think, childhood-long,  
 That lightning, I would have him spare his eye,  
 Is a real arrow shot at naked orb ?

The man knows more, but shuts his lids the  
 same :

Lightning's cause comprehends nor man nor  
 child.

Why then, my scheme, your better knowledge  
 broke,

Presently readjusts itself, the small  
 Proportioned largelier, parts and whole named  
 new :

So much, no more two thousand years have  
 done !

Pope, dost thou dare pretend to punish me,  
 For not deserving sunshine at midnight,  
 Me who crept all-fours, found my way so far —  
 While thou rewardest teachers of the truth,  
 Who miss the plain way in the blaze of noon, —  
 Though just a word from that strong style of  
 mine,

Grasped honestly in hand as guiding-staff,  
 Had pricked them a sure path across the bog,  
 That mire of cowardice and slush of lies  
 Wherein I find them wallow in wide day ! "

How should I answer this Euripides ?

Paul — 't is a legend — answered Seneca,  
 But that was in the day-spring ; noon is now,  
 We have got too familiar with the light.  
 Shall I wish back once more that thrill of  
 dawn ?

When the whole truth-touched man burned up,  
 one fire ?

— Assured the trial, fiery, fierce, but fleet,  
 Would, from his little heap of ashes, lend  
 Wings to that conflagration of the world  
 Which Christ awaits ere he makes all things  
 new :

So should the frail become the perfect, rapt  
 From glory of pain to glory of joy ; and so,  
 Even in the end, — the act renouncing earth,  
 Lands, houses, husbands, wives and children  
 here, —

Begin that other act which finds all, lost,  
 Regained, in this time even, a hundredfold,  
 And, in the next time, feels the finite love  
 Blent and embathed with the eternal life.  
 So does the sun ghastly seem to sink  
 In those north parts, lean all but out of life,  
 Desist a dread mere breathing-stop, then slow  
 Re-assert day, begin the endless rise.

Was this too easy for our after-stage ?  
 Was such a lighting-up of faith, in life,  
 Only allowed initiate, set man's step  
 In the true way by help of the great glow ?  
 A way wherein it is ordained he walk,  
 Bearing to see the light from heaven still more  
 And more encroached on by the light of earth,  
 Tentatives earth puts forth to rival heaven,  
 Earthly incitements that mankind serve God  
 For man's sole sake, not God's and therefore  
 man's.

Till at last, who distinguishes the sun  
 From a mere Druid fire on a far mount ?  
 More praise to him who with his subtle prism  
 Shall decompose both beams and name the true  
 In such sense, who is last proves first indeed ;  
 For how could saints and martyrs fail see  
 truth

Streak the night's blackness ? Who is faithful  
 now,

Who untwists heaven's white from the yellow  
 flare

O' the world's gross torch, without night's foil  
 that helped

Produce the Christian act so possible  
 When in the way stood Nero's cross and  
 stake, —

So hard now when the world smiles " Right and  
 wise !

Faith points the politic, the thrifty way,

Will make who plods it in the end returns  
Beyond mere fool's-sport and improvidence.  
We fools dance through the cornfield of this  
life,

Pluck ears to left and right and swallow raw,  
— Nay, tread, at pleasure, a sheaf underfoot,  
To get the better at some poppy-flower, —  
Well aware we shall have so much less wheat  
In the eventual harvest: you meantime  
Waste not a spike, — the richer will you reap!  
What then? There will be always garnered  
meal

Sufficient for our comfortable loaf,  
While you enjoy the undiminished sack!"  
Is it not this ignoble confidence,  
Cowardly hardihood, that dulls and damps,  
Makes the old heroism impossible?

Unless . . . what whispers me of times to  
come?

What if it be the mission of that age  
My death will usher into life, to shake  
This torpor of assurance from our creed,  
Reintroduce the doubt discarded, bring  
That formidable danger back, we drove  
Long ago to the distance and the dark?  
No wild beast now prowls round the infant  
camp:

We have built wall and sleep in city safe:  
But if some earthquake try the towers that  
laugh,

To think they once saw lions rule outside,  
And man stand out again, pale, resolute,  
Prepared to die, — which means, alive at last?  
As we broke up that old faith of the world,  
Have we, next age, to break up this the new —  
Faith, in the thing, grown faith in the report —  
Whence need to bravely disbelieve report  
Through increased faith i' the thing reports be-  
lie?

Must we deny, — do they, these Molinists,  
At peril of their body and their soul, —  
Recognized truths, obedient to some truth  
Unrecognized yet, but perceptible? —  
Correct the portrait by the living face,  
Man's God, by God's God in the mind of man?  
Then, for the few that rise to the new height,  
The many that must sink to the old depth,  
The multitude found fall away! A few,  
E'en ere new law speak clear, may keep the  
old,

Preserve the Christian level, call good good  
And evil evil, (even though razed and blank  
The old titles,) helped by custom, habitude,  
And all else they mistake for finer sense  
O' the fact that reason warrants, — as before.  
They hope perhaps, fear not impossibly,  
At least some one Pompilia left the world  
Will say "I know the right place by foot's feel,  
I took it and tread firm there; wherefore  
change?"

But what a multitude will surely fall  
Quite through the crumbling truth, late sub-  
jacent,

Sink to the next discoverable base,  
Rest upon human nature, settle there  
On what is firm, the lust and pride of life!  
A mass of men, whose very souls even now

Seem to need re-creating, — so they slink  
Worm-like into the mud, light now lays  
bare, —

Whose future we dispose of with shut eyes  
And whisper — "They are grafted, barren  
twigs,

Into the living stock of Christ: may bear  
One day, till when they lie death-like, not  
dead," —

Those who with all the aid of Christ succumb.  
How, without Christ, shall they, unaided,  
sink?

Whither but to this gulf before my eyes?

Do not we end, the century and I?

The impatient antimasque treads close on kibe  
O' the very masque's self it will mock, — on  
me,

Last lingering personage, the impatient mime  
Pushes already, — will I block the way?

Will my slow trail of garments ne'er leave  
space

For pantaloons, sock, plume and castanet?

Here comes the first experimentalist

In the new order of things, — he plays a priest:

Does he take inspiration from the Church,

Directly make her rule his law of life?

Not he: his own mere impulse guides the  
man —

Happily sometimes, since ourselves allow

He has danced, in gayety of heart, i' the main  
The right step through the maze we bade him  
foot.

But if his heart had prompted him break loose  
And mar the measure? Why, we must sub-  
mit,

And thank the chance that brought him safe so  
far.

Will he repeat the prodigy? Perhaps.

Can he teach others how to quit themselves,

Show why this step was right while that were  
wrong?

How should he? "Ask your hearts as I asked  
mine,

And get discreetly through the morrice too;

If your hearts misdirect you, — quit the stage,  
And make amends, — be there amends to  
make!"

Such is, for the Augustin that was once,

This Canon Caponsacchi we see now.

"But my heart answers to another tune,"

Puts in the Abate, second in the suite;

"I have my taste too, and tread no such step!

You choose the glorious life, and may, for me!

I like the lowest of life's appetites, —

So you judge, — but the very truth of joy

To my own apprehension which decides.

Call me knave and you get yourself called  
fool!

I live for greed, ambition, lust, revenge;

Attain these ends by force, guile: hypocrite,

To-day perchance to-morrow recognized

The rational man, the type of common sense."

There's Loyola adapted to our time!

Under such guidance Guido plays his part,

He also influencing in the due turn

These last clods where I track intelligence

By any glimmer, these four at his beck

Ready to murder any, and, at their own,

As ready to murder him, — such make the world!

And, first effect of the new cause of things,  
There they lie also duly, — the old pair  
Of the weak head and not so wicked heart,  
With the one Christian mother, wife and girl,  
— Which three gifts seem to make an angel  
up, —

The world's first foot o' the dance is on their heads!

Still, I stand here, not off the stage though close

On the exit : and my last act, as my first,  
I owe the scene, and Him who armed me thus  
With Paul's sword as with Peter's key. I smite

With my whole strength once more, ere end my part,

Ending, so far as man may, this offence.  
And when I raise my arm, who plucks my sleeve?

Who stops me in the righteous function, — foe  
Or friend? Oh, still as ever, friends are they  
Who, in the interest of outraged truth  
Deprecate such rough handling of a lie!  
The facts being proved and incontestable,  
What is the last word I must listen to?  
Perchance — "Spare yet a term this barren  
stock,

We pray thee dig about and dung and dress  
Till he repent and bring forth fruit even yet!"  
Perchance — "So poor and swift a punishment  
Shall throw him out of life with all that sin :  
Let mercy rather pile up pain on pain  
Till the flesh expiate what the soul pays else!"  
Nowise! Remonstrants on each side com-  
mence

Instructing, there's a new tribunal now  
Higher than God's — the educated man's!  
Nice sense of honor in the human breast  
Supersedes here the old coarse oracle —  
Confirming none the less a point or so  
Wherein blind predecessors worked aright.  
By rule of thumb: as when Christ said, —  
when, where?

Enough, I find it pleaded in a place, —  
"All other wrongs done, patiently I take :  
But touch my honor and the case is changed!  
I feel the due resentment, — *nemini*  
*Honorem trado* is my quick retort."

Right of Him, just as if pronounced to-day!  
Still, should the old authority be mute  
Or doubtful, or in speaking clash with new,  
The younger takes permission to decide.  
At last we have the instinct of the world  
Ruling its household without tutelage :  
And while the two laws, human and divine,  
Have busied finger with this tangled case,  
In pushes the brisk junior, cuts the knot,  
Pronounces for acquittal. How it trips  
Silverly o'er the tongue! "Remit the death!  
Forgive, . . . well, in the old way, if thou please,  
Decency and the relics of routine  
Respected, — let the Count go free as air!

Since he may plead a priest's immunity, —  
The minor orders help enough for that,  
With Farinacci's license, — who decides  
That the mere implication of such man,

So privileged, in any cause, before  
Whatever Court except the Spiritual,  
Straight quashes law-procedure, — quash it,  
then!

Remains a pretty loophole of escape  
Moreover, that, beside the patent fact  
O' the law's allowance, there's involved the  
weal

O' the Popedom : a son's privilege at stake,  
Thou wilt pretend the Church's interest,  
Ignore all finer reasons to forgive!  
But herein lies the crowning cogency —  
(Let thy friends teach thee while thou tellest  
beads)

That in this case the spirit of culture speaks,  
Civilization is imperative.

To her shall we remand all delicate points  
Henceforth, nor take irregular advice  
O' the sly, as heretofore : she used to hint  
Remonstrances, when law was out of sorts  
Because a saucy tongue was put to rest,  
An eye that roved was cured of arrogance :  
But why be forced to mumble under breath  
What soon shall be acknowledged as plain fact,  
Outspoken, say, in thy successor's time?  
Methinks we see the golden age return!  
Civilization and the Emperor  
Succeed to Christianity and Pope.

One Emperor then, as one Pope now : mean-  
while,

Anticipate a little! We tell thee 'Take  
Guido's life, sapped society shall crash,  
Whereof the main prop was, is, and shall be  
— Supremacy of husband over wife!'  
Does the man rule i' the house, and may his  
mate

Because of any plea dispute the same?  
Oh, pleas of all sorts shall abound, be sure,  
One but allowed validity, — for, harsh  
And savage, for, inept and silly-sooth,  
For, this and that, will the ingenious sex  
Demonstrate the best master e'er graced slave :  
And there's but one short way to end the  
coil, —

Acknowledge right and reason steadily  
I' the man and master : then the wife submits  
To plain truth broadly stated. Does the time  
Advise we shift — a pillar? nay, a stake  
Out of its place i' the social tenement?  
One touch may send a shudder through the  
heap

And bring it toppling on our children's heads!  
Moreover, if ours breed a qualm in thee,  
Give thine own better feeling play for once!  
Thou, whose own life winks o'er the socket-  
edge,

Wouldst thou it went out in such ugly snuff  
As dooming sons dead, e'en though justice  
prompt?

Why, on a certain feast, Barabbas' self  
Was set free, not to cloud the general cheer :  
Neither shalt thou pollute thy Sabbath close!  
Mercy is safe and graceful. How one hears  
The howl begin, scarce the three little taps  
O' the silver mallet silent on thy brow, —  
'His last act was to sacrifice a Count  
And thereby screen a scandal of the Church!  
Guido condemned, the Canon justified



Of course, — delinquents of his cloth go free !  
 And so the Luthers chuckle, Calvins scowl,  
 So thy hand helps Molinos to the chair  
 Whence he may hold forth till doom's day on  
 just

These *petit-maitre* priestlings, — in the choir,  
*Sanctus et Benedictus*, with a brush  
 Of soft guitar-strings that obey the thumb,  
 Touched by the bedside, for accompaniment !  
 Does this give umbrage to a husband ? Death  
 To the fool, and to the priest impunity !  
 But no impunity to any friend  
 So simply over-loyal as these four  
 Who made religion of their patron's cause,  
 Believed in him and did his bidding straight,  
 Asked not one question but laid down the lives  
 This Pope took, — all four lives together make  
 Just his own length of days, — so, dead they  
 lie,

As these were times when loyalty 's a drug,  
 And zeal in a subordinate too cheap  
 And common to be saved when we spend life !  
 Come, 't is too much good breath we waste in  
 words :

The pardon, Holy Father ! Spare grimace,  
 Shrugs and reluctance ! Are not we the world,  
 Art not thou Priam ? let soft culture plead  
 Hecuba-like, '*non tali*' (Virgil serves)  
 '*Auxilio*,' and the rest ! Enough, it works !  
 The Pope relaxes, and the Prince is loth,  
 The father's bowels yearn, the man's will  
 bends,

Reply is apt. Our tears on tremble, hearts  
 Big with a benediction, wait the word  
 Shall circulate through the city in a trice,  
 Set every window flaring, give each man  
 O' the mob his torch to wave for gratitude.  
 Pronounce then, for our breath and patience  
 fail !"

I will, Sirs : but a voice other than yours  
 Quickens my spirit. "*Quis pro Domino ?*  
 Who is upon the Lord's side ?" asked the  
 Comt.  
 I, who write —

" On receipt of this command,  
 Acquaint Count Guido and his fellows four  
 They die to-morrow : could it be to-night,  
 The better, but the work to do, takes time.  
 Set with all diligence a scaffold up,  
 Not in the customary place, by Bridge  
 Saint Angelo, where die the common sort ;  
 But since the man is noble, and his peers  
 By predilection haunt the People's Square,  
 There let him be beheaded in the midst,  
 And his companions hanged on either side :  
 So shall the quality see, fear, and learn.  
 All which work takes time : till to-morrow,  
 then,

Let there be prayer incessant for the five !"

For the main criminal I have no hope  
 Except in such a suddenness of fate.  
 I stood at Naples once, a night so dark  
 I could have scarce conjectured there was earth  
 Anywhere, sky or sea or world at all :  
 But the night's black was burst through by a  
 blaze —

Thunder struck blow on blow, earth groaned  
 and bore,

Through her whole length of mountain visible :  
 There lay the city thick and plain with spires,  
 And, like a ghost disshrouded, white the sea.  
 So may the truth be flashed out by one blow,  
 And Guido see, one instant, and be saved.  
 Else I avert my face, nor follow him  
 Into that sad obscure sequestered state  
 Where God unmakes but to remake the soul  
 He else made first in vain ; which must not be.  
 Enough, for I may die this very night :  
 And how should I dare die, this man let live ?

Carry this forthwith to the Governor !

## XI

### GUIDO

You are the Cardinal Acciaiuoli, and you,  
 Abate Panciatichi — two good Tuscan names :  
 Acciaiuoli — ah, your ancestor it was  
 Built the huge battlemented convent-block  
 Over the little forky flashing Greve  
 That takes the quick turn at the foot o' the  
 hill

Just as one first sees Florence : oh those days !  
 'T is Ema, though, the other rivulet,  
 The one-arched brown brick bridge yawns over,  
 — yes,

Gallop and go five minutes, and you gain  
 The Roman Gate from where the Ema's  
 bridged :

Kingfishers fly there : how I see the bend  
 O'erturreted by Certosa which he built,  
 That Senescal (we styled him) of your House !  
 I do adjure you, help me, Sirs ! My blood  
 Comes from as far a source : ought it to end  
 This way, by leakage through their scaffold-  
 planks

Into Rome's sink where her red refuse runs ?  
 Sirs, I beseech you by blood-sympathy,  
 If there be any vile experiment  
 In the air, — if this your visit simply prove,  
 When all's done, just a well-intentioned trick,  
 That tries for truth truer than truth itself,  
 By startling up a man, ere break of day,  
 To tell him he must die at sunset, — pshaw !  
 That man's a Franceschini ; feel his pulse,  
 Laugh at your folly, and let's all go sleep !  
 You have my last word, — innocent am I  
 As Innocent my Pope and murderer,  
 Innocent as a babe, as Mary's own,  
 As Mary's self. — I said, say and repeat, —  
 And why, then, should I die twelve hours  
 hence ? I —

Whom, not twelve hours ago, the jailer bade  
 Turn to my straw-truss, settle and sleep sound  
 That I might wake the sooner, promptlier pay  
 His due of meat-and-drink-indulgence, cross  
 His palm with fee of the good-hand, beside,  
 As gallants use who go at large again !  
 For why ? All honest Rome approved my part ;  
 Whoever owned wife, sister, daughter, — nay,  
 Mistress, — had any shadow of any right  
 That looks like right, and, all the more resolved,

Held it with tooth and nail, — these manly men  
Approved! I being for Rome, Rome was for  
me.

Then, there's the point reserved, the subter-  
fuge

My lawyers held by, kept for last resource,  
Firm should all else — the impossible fancy! —  
fail,

And sneaking burgess-spirit win the day.  
The knives! One plea at least would hold, —  
they laughed, —

One grappling-iron scratch the bottom-rock  
Even should the middle mud let anchor go!

I hooked my cause on to the Clergy's, — plea  
Which, even if law tipped off my hat and plume,  
Revealed my priestly tonsure, saved me so.

The Pope moreover, this old Innocent,  
Being so meek and mild and merciful,

So fond o' the poor and so fatigued of earth,  
So . . . fifty thousand devils in deepest hell!

Why must he cure us of our strange conceit  
Of the angel in man's likeness, that we loved

And looked should help us at a pinch? He help?  
He pardon? Here's his mind and message —  
death!

Thank the good Pope! Now, is he good in  
this,

Never mind, Christian, — no such stuff's ex-  
tant, —

But will my death do credit to his reign,  
Show he both lived and let live, so was good?

Cannot I live if he but like? "The Law!"  
Why, just the law gives him the very chance,

The precise leave to let my life alone,  
Which the archangelic soul of him (he says)

Yearns after! Here they drop it in his palm,  
My lawyers, capital o' the cursed kind, —

Drop life to take and hold and keep: but no!  
He sighs, shakes head, refuses to shut hand,

Motions away the gift they bid him grasp,  
And of the coyness comes — that off I run

And down I go, he best knows whither! mind,  
He knows, who sets me rolling all the same!

Disinterested Vicar of our Lord,  
This way he abrogates and disallows,

Nullifies and ignores, — reverts in fine  
To the good and right, in detriment of me!

Talk away! Will you have the naked truth?  
He's sick of his life's supper, — swallowed lies:

So, hobbling backward, needs must ease his maw  
Just where I sit o' the doorsill. Sir Abate,

Can you do nothing? Friends, we used to  
frisk:

What of this sudden slash in a friend's face,  
This cut across our good companionship

That showed its front so gay when both were  
young?

Were not we put into a beaten path,  
Bid pace the world, we nobles born and bred,

We body of friends with each his 'scutcheon  
full

Of old achievement and impunity, —  
Taking the laugh of morn and Sol's salute

As forth we fared, pricked on to breathe our  
steeds

And take equestrian sport over the green  
Under the blue, across the crop, — what care?

If we went prancing up hill and down dale,

In and out of the level and the straight,  
By the bit of pleasant byway, where was harm?  
Still Sol salutes me and the morning laughs:  
I see my grandsire's hoofprints, — point the  
spot

Where he drew rein, slipped saddle, and  
stabbed knave

For daring throw gibe — much less, stone —  
from pale:

Then back, and on, and up with the cavalcade.  
Just so wend we, now canter, now converse,

Till, 'mid the jauncing pride and jaunty port,  
Something of a sudden jerks at somebody —

A dagger is out, a flashing cut and thrust,  
Because I play some prank my grandsire

played,  
And here I sprawl: where is the company?  
Gone!

A trot and a trample! Only I lie trapped,  
Writhe in a certain novel springe just set

By the good old Pope: I'm first prize. Warn  
me? Why?

Apprise me that the law o' the game is  
changed?

Enough that I'm a warning, as I writhe,  
To all and each my fellows of the file,

And make law plain henceforward past mis-  
take,

"For such a prank, death is the penalty!"  
Pope the Five Hundredth (what do I know or  
care?)

Deputes your Eminency and Abateship  
To announce that, twelve hours from this time,  
he needs

I just essay upon my body and soul  
The virtue of his brand-new engine, prove

Repressor of the pranksome! I'm the first!  
Thanks. Do you know what teeth you mean  
to try

The sharpness of, on this soft neck and throat?  
I know it, — I have seen and hate it, — ay,

As you shall, while I tell you! Let me talk,  
Or leave me, at your pleasure! talk I must:

What is your visit but my lure to talk?  
Nay, you have something to disclose? — a  
smile,

At end of the forced sternness, means to mock  
The heart-beats here? I call your two hearts  
stone!

Is your charge to stay with me till I die?  
Be tacit as your bench, then! Use your ears,

I use my tongue: how glibly yours will run  
At pleasant supper-time . . . God's curse! . . .  
to-night

When all the guests jump up, begin so brisk,  
"Welcome, his Eminence who shrived the  
wretch!

Now we shall have the Abate's story!"

Life!

How I could spill this overplus of mine  
Among those hoar-haired, shrunk-shanked  
odds and ends

Of body and soul old age is chewing dry!  
Those winkle-straws that stare while purblind  
death

Mows here, mows there, makes hay of juicy me,  
And misses just the bunch of withered weed

Would brighten hell and streak its smoke with flame!

How the life I could shed yet never shrink,  
Would drench their stalks with sap like grass  
in May!

Is it not terrible, I entreat you, Sirs?  
With manifold and plenitudinous life,  
Prompt at death's menace to give blow for  
threat,

Answer his "Be thou not!" by "Thus I  
am!" —

Terrible so to be alive yet die?

How I live, how I see! so, — how I speak!

Lucidity of soul unlocks the lips:

I never had the words at will before.

How I see all my folly at a glance!

"A man requires a woman and a wife:"

There was my folly; I believed the saw.

I knew that just myself concerned myself,

Yet needs must look for what I seemed to lack,

In a woman, — why, the woman's in the man!

Fools we are, how we learn things when too  
late!

Overmuch life turns round my woman-side;

The male and female in me, mixed before,

Settle of a sudden: I'm my wife outright

In this unmanly appetite for truth,

This careless courage as to consequence,

This instantaneous sight through things and  
through,

This voluble rhetoric, if you please, — 't is she!

Here you have that Pompilia whom I slew,

Also the folly for which I slew her!

Fool!

And, fool-like, what is it I wander from?

What did I say of your sharp iron tooth?

Ah, — that I know the hateful thing! this way.

I chanced to stroll forth, many a good year  
gone,

One warm Spring eve in Rome, and unaware

Looking, mayhap, to count what stars were out,

Came on your fine axe in a frame, that falls

And so cuts off a man's head underneath,

Mannaia, — thus we made acquaintance first:

Out of the way, in a by-part o' the town,

At the Mouth-of-Truth o' the river-side, you  
know:

One goes by the Capitol: and wherefore coy,

Retiring out of crowded noisy Rome?

Because a very little time ago

It had done service, chopped off head from  
trunk,

Belonging to a fellow whose poor house

The thing must make a point to stand before.

Felice Whatsoever-was-the-name

Who stabled buffaloes and so gained bread,

(Our clowns unyoke them in the ground hard  
by,)

And, after use of much improper speech,

Had struck at Duke Some-title-or-other's face,

Because he kidnapped, carried away and kept

Felice's sister who would sit and sing

I' the filthy doorway while she plaited fringe

To deck the brutes with, — on their gear it  
goes, —

The good girl with the velvet in her voice.

So did the Duke, so did Felice, so

Did Justice, intervening with her axe.

There the man-mutilating engine stood

At ease, both gay and grim, like a Swiss guard

Off duty, — purified itself as well,

Getting dry, sweet and proper for next week, —

And doing incidental good, 't was hoped

To the rough lesson-lacking populace

Who now and then, forsooth, must right their  
wrongs!

There stood the twelve-foot-square of scaffold,  
railed

Considerately round to elbow-height,

For fear an officer should tumble thence

And sprain his ankle and be lame a month,

Through starting when the axe fell and head  
too!

Railed likewise were the steps whereby 't was  
reached.

All of it painted red: red, in the midst,

Ran up two narrow tall beams barred across,

Since from the summit, some twelve feet to  
reach,

The iron plate with the sharp shearing edge

Had slammed, jerked, shot, slid, — I shall soon  
find which!

And so lay quiet, fast in its fit place,

The wooden half-moon collar, now eclipsed

By the blade which blocked its curvature:  
apart,

The other half, — the under half-moon board

Which, helped by this, completes a neck's em-  
brace, —

Joined to a sort of desk that wheels aside

Out of the way when done with, — down you  
kneel,

In you're pushed, over you the other drops,

Tight you're clipped, whiz, there's the blade  
cleaves its best,

Out trundles body, down flops head on floor,

And where's your soul gone? That, too, I  
shall find!

This kneeling-place was red, red, never fear!

But only slimy-like with paint, not blood,

For why? a decent pitcher stood at hand,

A broad dish to hold sawdust, and a broom

By some unnamed utensil, — scraper-rake, —

Each with a conscious air of duty done.

Underneath, loungers, — boys and some few  
men, —

Discoursed this platter, named the other tool,

Just as, when grooms tie up and dress a steed,

Boys lounge and look on, and elucubrate

What the round brush is used for, what the  
square, —

So was explained — to me the skill-less then —

The manner of the grooming for next world

Undergone by Felice What's-his-name.

There's no such lovely month in Rome as  
May —

May's crescent is no half-moon of red plank,

And came now tilting o'er the wave i' the west.

One greenish-golden sea, right 'twixt those bars

Of the engine — I began acquaintance with,

Understood, hated, hurried from before,

To have it out of sight and cleanse my soul!

Here it is all again, conserved for use:

Twelve hours hence, I may know more, not hate  
worse.



That young May-moon-month ! Devils of the deep !

Was not a Pope then Pope as much as now ?  
Used not he chirrup o'er the Merry Tales,  
Chuckle, — his nephew so exact the wag  
To play a jealous cullion such a trick  
As wins the wife i' the pleasant story ! Well ?  
Why do things change ? Wherefore is Rome  
un-Romed ?

I tell you, ere Felice's corpse was cold,  
The Duke, that night, threw wide his palace-  
doors,  
Received the compliments o' the quality  
For justice done him, — bowed and smirked his  
best,

And in return passed round a pretty thing,  
A portrait of Felice's sister's self,  
Florid old rogue Albano's masterpiece,  
As — better than virginity in rags —  
Bouncing Europa on the back o' the bull :  
They laughed and took their road the safelier  
home.

Ah, but times change, there's quite another  
Pope,

I do the Duke's deed, take Felice's place,  
And, being no Felice, lout and clout,  
Stomach but ill the phrase, " I lose my head ! "  
How euphemistic ! Lose what ? Lose your ring,  
Your snuff-box, tablets, kerchief ! — but, your  
head ?

I learnt the process at an early age ;  
'Twas useful knowledge, in those same old  
days,

To know the way a head is set on neck.  
My fencing-master urged, " Would you excel ?  
Rest not content with mere bold give-and-  
guard,

Nor pink the antagonist somehow-anyhow !  
See me dissect a little, and know your game !  
Only anatomy makes a thrust the thing." —  
Oh, Cardinal, those lithe live necks of ours !  
Here go the vertebrae, here 's *Atlas*, here  
*Axix*, and here the symphyses stop short,  
So wisely and well, — as, o'er a corpse, we  
cant, —

And here 's the silver cord which . . . what 's  
our world ?

Depends from the gold bowl, which loosed (not  
" lost ")

Lets us from heaven to hell, — one chop, we 're  
loose !

" And not much pain i' the process," quoth a  
sage :

Who told him ? Not Felice's ghost, I think !  
Such " losing " is scarce Mother Nature's mode.  
She fain would have cord ease itself away,  
Worn to a thread by threescore years and ten,  
Snap while we slumber : that seems bearable.  
I 'm told one clod of blood extravasate  
Ends one as certainly as Roland's sword. —  
One drop of lymph suffused proves Oliver's  
mace, —

Intruding, either of the pleasant pair,  
On the arachnoid tunic of my brain.  
That's Nature's way of loosing cord ! — but  
Art,

How of Art's process with the engine here,  
When bowl and cord alike are crushed across.

Bored between, bruised through ? Why, if  
Fagon's self,

The French Court's pride, that famed practi-  
tioner,

Would pass his cold pale lightning of a knife,  
Pistoja-ware, adroit 'twixt joint and joint,  
With just a " See how facile, gentlefolk ! " —  
The thing were not so bad to bear ! Brute force  
Cuts as he comes, breaks in, breaks on, breaks  
out

O' the hard and soft of you : is that the same ?  
A lithe snake thrids the hedge, makes throb no  
leaf :

A heavy ox sets chest to brier and branch,  
Bursts somehow through, and leaves one hid-  
eous hole

Behind him !

And why, why must this needs be ?  
Oh, if men were but good ! They are not good,  
Nowise like Peter : people called him rough,  
But if, as I left Rome, I spoke the Saint,  
— " *Petrus, quo vadis ?* " — doubtless, I should  
hear,

" To free the prisoner and forgive his fault !  
I plucked the absolute dead from God's own  
bar,

And raised up Dorcas, — why not rescue thee ?"  
What would cost one such nullifying word ?  
If Innocent succeeds to Peter's place,  
Let him think Peter's thought, speak Peter's  
speech !

I say, he is bound to it : friends, how say you ?  
Concede I be all one bloodguiltiness  
And mystery of murder in the flesh,  
Why should that fact keep the Pope's mouth  
shut fast ?

He execrates my crime, — good ! — sees hell  
yawn

One inch from the red plank's end which I  
press, —

Nothing is better ! What's the consequence ?  
How should a Pope proceed that knows his  
cue ?

Why, leave me linger out my minute here,  
Since close on death comes judgment and  
comes doom,

Not crib at dawn its pittance from a sheep  
Destined ere dewfall to be butcher's-meat !  
Think, Sirs, if I have done you any harm,  
And you require the natural revenge,  
Suppose, and so intend to poison me,  
— Just as you take and slip into my draught  
The paperful of powder that clears scores,  
You notice on my brow a certain blue :  
How you both overset the wine at once !  
How you both smile, " Our enemy has the  
plague !

Twelve hours hence he 'll be scraping his bones  
bare

Of that intolerable flesh, and die,  
Frenzied with pain : no need for poison here !  
Step aside and enjoy the spectacle ! "  
Tender for souls are you, Pope Innocent !  
Christ's maxim is — one soul outweighs the  
world :

Respite me, save a soul, then, curse the world !  
" No," venerable sire, I hear you smirk,

"No: for Christ's gospel changes names, not things,

Renews the obsolete, does nothing more!

Our fire-new gospel is re-tinkered law,

Our mercy, justice, — Jove's rechristened God, —

Nay, whereas, in the popular conceit,

'T is pity that old harsh Law somehow limps,

Lingers on earth, although Law's day be done,

Else would benignant Gospel interpose,

Not furtively as now, but bold and frank

O'erflutter us with healing in her wings,

Law being harshness, Gospel only love —

We tell the people, on the contrary,

Gospel takes up the rod which Law lets fall;

Mercy is vigilant when justice sleeps!

Does Law permit a taste of Gospel-grace?

The secular arm allow the spiritual power

To act for once? — no compliment so fine

As that our Gospel handsomely turn harsh,

Thrust victim back on Law the nice and coy!"

Yes, you do say so, — else you would forgive

Me, whom Law does not touch but tosses you!

Don't think to put on the professional face!

You know what I know, — casuists as you are,

Each nerve must creep, each hair start, sting and stand,

At such illogical inconsequence!

Dear my friends, do but see! A murder's tried,

There are two parties to the cause: I'm one,

— Defend myself, as somebody must do:

I have the best o' the battle: that's a fact,

Simple fact, — fancies find no place just now.

What though half Rome condemned me? Half approved

And, none disputes, the luck is mine at last,

All Rome, i' the main, acquitting me: whereon,

What has the Pope to ask but "How finds Law?"

"I find," replies Law, "I have erred this while:

Guilty or guiltless, Guido proves a priest,

No layman: he is therefore yours, not mine:

I bound him; loose him, you whose will is Christ's!"

And now what does this Vicar of our Lord,

Shepherd o' the flock, — one of whose charge bleats sore

For crook's help from the quag wherein it drowns?

Law suffers him employ the crumpled end:

His pleasure is to turn staff, use the point,

And thrust the shuddering sheep, he calls a wolf,

Back and back, down and down to where hell gapes!

"Guiltless," cries Law — "Guilty," corrects the Pope!

"Guilty," for the whim's sake! "Guilty," he somehow thinks.

And anyhow says: 't is truth; he dares not lie!

Others should do the lying. That's the cause

Brings you both here: I ought in decency

Confess to you that I deserve my fate,

Am guilty, as the Pope thinks, — ay, to the end,

Keep up the jest, lie on, lie ever, lie

I' the latest gasp of me! What reason, Sirs?

Because to-morrow will succeed to-day

For you, though not for me: and if I stick

Still to the truth, declare with my last breath,

I die an innocent and murdered man, —

Why, there's the tongue of Rome will wag apace

This time to-morrow, — don't I hear the talk!

"So, to the last he proved impenitent?"

Pagans have said as much of martyred saints!

Law demurred, washed her hands of the whole case.

Prince Somebody said this, Duke Something, that.

Doubtless the man's dead, dead enough, don't fear!

But, hang it, what if there have been a spice,

A touch of . . . eh? You see, the Pope's so old,

Some of us add, obtuse, — age never slips

The chance of shoving youth to face death first!"

And so on. Therefore to suppress such talk

You two come here, entreat I tell you lies,

And end, the edifying way. I end,

Telling the truth! Your self-styled shepherd thieves!

A thief — and how thieves hate the wolves we know:

Damage to theft, damage to thrift, all's one!

The red hand is sworn foe of the black jaw.

That's only natural, that's right enough:

But why the wolf should compliment the thief

With shepherd's title, bark out life in thanks,

And, spiteless, lick the prong that spits him, — eh,

Cardinal? My Abate, scarcely thus!

There, let my sheepskin-garb, a curse on't, go —

Leave my teeth free if I must show my shag!

Repent? What good shall follow? If I pass

Twelve hours repenting, will that fact hold fast

The thirteenth at the horrid dozen's end?

If I fall forthwith at your feet, gnash, tear,

Foam, rave, to give your story the due grace,

Will that assist the engine half-way back

Into its hiding-house? — boards, shaking now,

Bone against bone, like some old skeleton bat

That wants, at winter's end, to wake and prey!

Will howling put the spectre back to sleep?

Ah, but I misconceive your object, Sirs!

Since I want new life like the creature, — life,

Being done with here, begins i' the world away:

I shall next have "Come, mortals, and be judged!"

There's but a minute betwixt this and then:

So, quick, be sorry since it saves my soul!

Sirs, truth shall save it, since no lies assist!

Hear the truth, you, whatever you style yourselves,

Civilization and society!

Come, one good grapple, I with all the world!

Dying in cold blood is the desperate thing;

The angry heart explodes, bears off in blaze

The indignant soul, and I'm combustion-ripe.

Why, you intend to do your worst with me!

That's in your eyes! You dare no more than death,

And mean no less. I must make up my mind !  
 So Pietro — when I chased him here and there,  
 Morsel by morsel cut away the life  
 I loathed — cried for just respite to confess  
 And save his soul : much respite did I grant !  
 Why grant me respite who deserve my doom ?  
 Me — who engaged to play a prize, fight you,  
 Knowing your arms, and foil you, trick for  
 trick,

At rapier-fence, your match and, maybe, more.  
 I knew that if I chose sin certain sins,  
 Solace my lusts out of the regular way  
 Prescribed me, I should find you in the path,  
 Have to try skill with a redoubted foe ;  
 You would lunge, I would parry, and make  
 end.

At last, occasion of a murder comes :  
 We cross blades, I, for all my brag, break  
 guard,

And in goes the cold iron at my breast,  
 Out at my back, and end is made of me.  
 You stand confessed the adroiter swordsman,  
 — ay,

But on your triumph you increase, it seems,  
 Want more of me than lying flat on face :  
 I ought to raise my ruined head, allege  
 Not simply I pushed worse blade o' the pair,  
 But my antagonist dispensed with steel !  
 There was no passage of arms, you looked me  
 low,

With brow and eye abolished cut and thrust,  
 Nor used the vulgar weapon ! This chance  
 scratch,

This incidental hurt, this sort of hole  
 I' the heart of me ? I stumbled, got it so !  
 Fell on my own sword as a bungler may !  
 Yourself proscribe such heathen tools, and  
 trust

To the naked virtue : it was virtue stood  
 Unarmed and awed me, — on my brow there  
 burned

Crime out so plainly, intolerably red,  
 That I was fain to cry — " Down to the dust  
 With me, and bury there brow, brand and  
 all ! "

Law had essayed the adventure, — but what 's  
 Law ?

Morality exposed the Gorgon shield !  
 Morality and Religion conquer me.  
 If Law sufficed would you come here, entreat  
 I supplement law, and confess forsooth ?  
 Did not the Trial show things plain enough ?  
 " Ah, but a word of the man's very self  
 Would somehow put the keystone in its place  
 And crown the arch ! " Then take the word  
 you want !

I say that, long ago, when things began,  
 All the world made agreement, such and such  
 Were pleasure-giving profit-bearing acts,  
 But henceforth extra-legal, nor to be :  
 You must not kill the man whose death would  
 please

And profit you, unless his life stop yours  
 Plainly, and need so be put aside :  
 Get the thing by a public course, by law,  
 Only no private bloodshed as of old !  
 All of us, for the good of every one

Renounced such license and conformed to law :  
 Who breaks law, breaks pact therefore, helps  
 himself

To pleasure and profit over and above the due,  
 And must pay forfeit, — pain beyond his  
 share :

For, pleasure being the sole good in the world,  
 Any one's pleasure turns to some one's pain.  
 So, law must watch for every one, — say we,  
 Who call things wicked that give too much joy,  
 And nickname mere reprisal, envy makes,  
 Punishment: quite right ! thus the world goes  
 round.

I, being well aware such pact there was,  
 I, in my time who found advantage come  
 Of law's observance and crime's penalty, —  
 Who, but for wholesome fear law bred in  
 friends,

Had doubtless given example long ago,  
 Furnished forth some friend's pleasure with my  
 pain,

And, by my death, pieced out his scanty life, —  
 I could not, for that foolish life of me,  
 Help risking law's infringement, — I broke  
 bond,

And needs must pay price, — wherefore, here 's  
 my head,

Flung with a flourish ! But, repentance too ?  
 But pure and simple sorrow for law's breach  
 Rather than blunderer's ineptitude ?  
 Cardinal, no ! Abate, scarcely thus !

'Tis the fault, not that I dared try a fall  
 With Law and straightway am found under-  
 most,

But that I failed to see, above man's law,  
 God's precept you, the Christians, recognize ?  
 Colly my cow ! Don't fidget, Cardinal !  
 Abate, cross your breast and count your beads  
 And exorcise the devil, for here he stands  
 And stiffens in the bristly nape of neck,  
 Daring you drive him hence ! You, Christians  
 both ?

I say, if ever was such faith at all  
 Born in the world, by your community  
 Suffered to live its little tick of time,  
 'Tis dead of age, now, ludicrously dead ;  
 Honor its ashes, if you be discreet,  
 In epitaph only ! For, concede its death,  
 Allow extinction, you may boast unchecked  
 What feats the thing did in a crazy land  
 At a fabulous epoch, — treat your faith, that  
 way,

Just as you treat your relics : " Here 's a shred  
 Of saintly flesh, a scrap of blessed bone,  
 Raised King Cophetua, who was dead, to life  
 In Mesopotamy twelve centuries since.  
 Such was its virtue ! " — twangs the Sacristan,  
 Holding the shrine-box up, with hands like  
 feet

Because of gout in every finger-joint :  
 Does he bethink him to reduce one knob,  
 Allay one twinge by touching what he vaunts ?  
 I think he half uncrooks fist to catch fee,  
 But, for the grace, the quality of cure, —  
 Cophetua was the man put that to proof !  
 Not otherwise, your faith is shrined and shown  
 And shamed at once: you banter while you  
 bow !



Do you dispute this? Come, a monster-laugh,  
A madman's laugh, allowed his Carnival  
Later ten days than when all Rome, but he,  
Laughed at the candle-contest: mine's alight,  
'T is just it sputter till the puff o' the Pope  
End it to-morrow and the world turn Ash.  
Come, thus I wave a wand and bring to pass  
In a moment, in the twinkle of an eye,  
What but that — feigning everywhere grows  
fact,

Professors turn possessors, realize  
The faith they play with as a fancy now,  
And bid it operate, have full effect  
On every circumstance of life, to-day,  
In Rome, — faith's flow set free at fountain-head!

Now, you 'll own, at this present, when I speak,  
Before I work the wonder, there's no man,  
Woman or child in Rome, faith's fountain-head,  
But might, if each were minded, realize  
Conversely unbelief, faith's opposite —  
Set it to work on life unflinchingly,  
Yet give no symptom of an outward change:  
Why should things change because men dis-  
believe?

What's incompatible, in the whited tomb,  
With bones and rottenness one inch below?  
What saintly act is done in Rome to-day  
But might be prompted by the devil, — "is"  
I say not, — "has been, and again may be," —  
I do say, full i' the face o' the crucifix  
You try to stop my mouth with! Off with it!  
Look in your own heart, if your soul have eyes!  
You shall see reason why, though faith were  
fled,

Unbelief still might work the wires and move  
Man, the machine, to play a faithful part.  
Preside your college, Cardinal, in your cape,  
Or, — having got above his head, grown Pope, —  
Abate, gird your loins and wash my feet!  
Do you suppose I am at loss at all  
Why you crook, why you cringe, why fast or  
feast?

Praise, blame, sit, stand, lie or go! — all of it,  
In each of you, purest unbelief may prompt,  
And wit explain to who has eyes to see.  
Put, lo, I wave wand, make the false the true!  
Here's Rome believes in Christianity!  
What an explosion, how the fragments fly  
Of what was surface, mask and make-believe!  
Begin now, — look at this Pope's-halberdier  
In wasp-like black and yellow foolery!  
He, doing duty at the corridor,  
Wakes from a muse and stands convinced of  
sin!

Down he flings halbert, leaps the passage-length,  
Pushes into the presence, pantingly  
Submits the extreme peril of the case  
To the Pope's self, — whom in the world  
beside? —

And the Pope breaks talk with ambassador,  
Bids aside bishop, wills the whole world wait  
Till he secure that prize, outweighs the world,  
A soul, relieve the sentry of his qualm!  
His Altitude the Referendary —  
Robed right, and ready for the usher's word  
To pay devoir — is, of all times, just then  
'Ware of a master-stroke of argument

Will cut the spinal cord . . . ugh, ugh! . . . I  
mean,

Paralyze Molinism forevermore!  
Straight he leaves lobby, trundles, two and two,  
Down steps to reach home, write, if but a word  
Shall end the impudence: he leaves who likes  
Go pacify the Pope: there's Christ to serve!  
How otherwise would men display their zeal?  
If the same sentry had the least surmise  
A powder-barrel 'neath the pavement lay  
In neighborhood with what might prove a  
match,  
Meant to blow sky-high Pope and presence  
both —

Would he not break through courtiers, rank  
and file,  
Bundle up, bear off, and save body so,  
The Pope, no matter for his priceless soul?  
There's no fool's-freak here, naught to soundly  
swinge,

Only a man in earnest, you 'll so praise  
And pay and prate about, that earth shall ring!  
Had thought possessed the Referendary  
His jewel-case at home was left ajar,  
What would be wrong in running, robes awry,  
To be beforehand with the pilferer?  
What talk then of indecent haste? Which  
means,

That both these, each in his degree, would do  
Just that — for a comparative nothing's sake,  
And thereby gain approval and reward —  
Which, done for what Christ says is worth the  
world,

Procures the doer curses, cuffs and kicks.  
I call such difference 'twixt act and act,  
Sheer lunacy unless your truth on lip  
Be recognized a lie in heart of you!  
How do you all act, promptly or in doubt,  
When there's a guest poisoned at supper-time  
And he sits chatting on with spot on cheek?  
"Pluck him by the skirt, and round him in the  
ears,

Have at him by the beard, warn anyhow!"  
Good; and this other friend that's cheat and  
thief

And dissolute, — go stop the devil's feast,  
Withdraw him from the imminent hell-fire!  
Why, for your life, you dare not tell your friend,  
"You lie, and I admonish you for Christ!"  
Who yet dare seek that same man at the  
Mass

To warn him — on his knees, and tinkle near, —  
He left a cask a-tilt, a tap returned,  
The Trebbian running: what a grateful jump  
Out of the Church rewards your vigilance!  
Perform that selfsame service just a thought  
More maladroitness, — since a bishop sits  
At function! — and he budes not, bites lip, —  
"You see my case: how can I quit my post?  
He has an eye to any such default.  
See to it, neighbor, I beseech your love!"  
He and you know the relative worth of things,  
What is permissible or inopportune.  
Contort your brows! You know I speak the  
truth:

Gold is called gold, and dross called dross, i' the  
Book:

Gold you let lie and dross pick up and prize!

— Despite your muster of some fifty monks  
And nuns a-maundering here and mumping  
there,

Who could, and on occasion would, spurn dross,  
Clutch gold, and prove their faith a fact so  
far, —

I grant you ! Fifty times the number squeak  
And gibber in the madhouse — firm of faith,  
This fellow, that his nose supports the moon ;  
The other, that his straw hat crowns him Pope :  
Does that prove all the world outside insane ?  
Do fifty miracle-mongers match the mob  
That acts on the frank faithless principle,  
Born-baptized-and-bred Christian-atheists, each  
With just as much a right to judge as you, —  
As many senses in his soul, and nerves  
I' neck of him as I, — whom, soul and sense,  
Neck and nerve, you abolish presently, —  
I being the unit in creation now  
Who pay the Maker, in this speech of mine,  
A creature's duty, spend my last of breath  
In bearing witness, even by my worst fault,  
To the creature's obligation, absolute,  
Perpetual : my worst fault protests, " The  
faith

Claims all of me : I would give all she claims,  
But for a spice of doubt : the risk 's too rash :  
Double or quits, I play, but, all or naught,  
Exceeds my courage : therefore, I descend  
To the next faith with no dubiety —  
Faith in the present life, made last as long  
And prove as full of pleasure as may hap,  
Whatever pain it cause the world." I 'm  
wrong ?

I 've had my life, whate'er I lose : I 'm right ?  
I 've got the single good there was to gain.  
Entire faith, or else complete unbelief !  
Aught between has my loathing and contempt,  
Mine and God's also, doubtless : ask yourself,  
Cardinal, where and how you like a man !  
Why, either with your feet upon his head,  
Confessed your caudatory, or, at large,  
The stranger in the crowd who caps to you  
But keeps his distance, — why should he pre-  
sume ?

You want no hanger-on and dropper-off,  
Now yours, and now not yours but quite his own,  
According as the sky looks black or bright,  
Just so I capped to and kept off from faith —  
You promised trudge behind through fair and  
foul,

Yet leave i' the lurch at the first spit of rain.  
Who holds to faith whenever rain begins ?  
What does the father when his son lies dead,  
The merchant when his money-bags take wing,  
The politician whom a rival ousts ?  
No case but has its conduct, faith prescribes :  
Where 's the obedience that shall edify ?  
Why, they laugh frankly in the face of faith  
And take the natural course, — this rends his  
hair

Because his child is taken to God's breast,  
That gnashes teeth and raves at loss of trash  
Which rust corrupts and thieves break through  
and steal,

And this, enabled to inherit earth  
Through meekness, curses till your blood runs  
cold !

Down they all drop to my low level, rest  
Heart upon duny earth that 's warm and soft,  
And let who please attempt the altitudes  
Each playing prodigal son of heavenly sire,  
Turning his nose up at the fatted calf,  
Fain to fill belly with the husks, we swine  
Did eat by born depravity of taste !

Enough of the hypocrites. But you, Sirs,  
you —

Who never budged from litter where I lay,  
And buried snout i' the draff-box while I fed,  
Cried amen to my creed's one article —  
" Get pleasure, 'scape pain, — give your prefer-  
ence

To the immediate good, for time is brief,  
And death ends good and ill and everything !  
What's got is gained, what's gained soon is  
gained twice,  
And — inasmuch as faith gains most — feign  
faith ! "

So did we brother-like pass word about :

— You, now, — like bloody drunkards but half-  
drunk,

Who fool men yet perceive men find them  
fool, —

Vexed that a titter gains the gravest mouth, —  
O' the sudden you must needs reintroduce  
Solemnity, straight sober undue mirth  
By a blow dealt me your boon companion here,  
Who, using the old license, dreamed of harm  
No more than snow in harvest : yet it falls !  
You check the merriment effectually  
By pushing your abrupt machine i' the midst,  
Making me Rome's example : blood for wine !  
The general good needs that you chop and  
change !

I may dislike the hocus-pocus, — Rome,  
The laughter-loving people, won't they stare  
Chapfallen ! — while serious natures sermonize.  
" The magistrate, he beareth not the sword  
In vain ; who sins may taste its edge, we see ! "  
Why my sin, drunkards ? Where have I abused  
Liberty, scandalized you all so much ?  
Who called me, who crooked finger till I came,  
Fool that I was, to join companionship ?

I knew my own mind, meant to live my life,  
Elude your envy, or else make a stand,  
Take my own part and sell you my life dear.  
But it was " Fie ! No prejudice in the world  
To the proper manly instinct ! Cast your lot  
Into our lap, one genius ruled our births,  
We 'll compass joy by concert ; take with us  
The regular irregular way i' the wood ;  
You 'll miss no game through riding breast by  
breast,

In this preserve, the Church's park and pale,  
Rather than outside where the world lies  
waste ! "

Come, if you said not that, did you say this ?  
Give plain and terrible warning, " Live, enjoy !  
Such life begins in death and ends in hell !  
Dare you bid us assist your sins, us priests  
Who hurry sin and sinners from the earth ?  
No such delight for us, why then for you ?  
Leave earth, seek heaven or find its opposite ! "  
Had you so warned me, not in lying words  
But veritable deeds with tongues of flame,

That had been fair, that might have struck a man,

Silenced the squabble between soul and sense,  
Compelled him to make mind up, take one course

Or the other, peradventure! — wrong or right,  
Foolish or wise, you would have been at least  
Sincere, no question, — forced me choose, indulge

Or else renounce my instincts, still play wolf  
Or find my way submissive to your fold,  
Be red-crossed on my fleece, one sheep the more.  
But you as good as bade me wear sheep's-wool  
Over wolf's-skin, suck blood and hide the noise  
By mimicry of something like a bleat, —

Whence it comes that because, despite my care,  
Because I smack my tongue too loud for once,  
Drop baaing, here's the village up in arms!  
Have at the wolf's throat, you who hate the breed!

Oh, were it only open yet to choose —  
One little time more — whether I'd be free  
Your foe, or subsidized your friend forsooth!  
Should not you get a growl through the white fangs

In answer to your beckoning! Cardinal,  
Abate, managers o' the multitude,  
I'd turn your gloved hands to account, be sure!  
You should manipulate the coarse rough mob:  
'Tis you I'd deal directly with, not them, —  
Using your fears: why touch the thing myself  
When I could see you hunt, and then cry  
"Shares!"

Quarter the carcass or we quarrel; come,  
Here's the world ready to see justice done!"  
Oh, it had been a desperate game, but game  
Wherein the winner's chance were worth the pains!

We'd try conclusions! — at the worst, what worse

Than this Mannaia-machine, each minute's talk  
Helps push an inch the nearer me? Fool, fool!

You understand me and forgive, sweet Sirs?  
I blame you, tear my hair and tell my woe —  
All's but a flourish, figure of rhetoric!  
One must try each expedient to save life.  
One makes fools look foolisher fifty-fold  
By putting in their place men wise like you,  
To take the full force of an argument  
Would buffet their stolidity in vain.  
If you should feel aggrieved by the mere wind  
O' the blow that means to miss you and maul them,

That's my success! Is it not folly, now,  
To say with folk, "A plausible defence —  
We see through notwithstanding, and reject"?  
Reject the plausible they do, these fools,  
Who never even make pretence to show  
One point beyond its plausibility

In favor of the best belief they hold!  
"Saint Somebody-or-other raised the dead:"  
Did he? How do you come to know as much?  
"Know it, what need?" The story's plausible,  
Avouched for by a martyrologist,  
And why should good men sup on cheese and leeks

On such a saint's day, if there were no saint?"

I praise the wisdom of these fools, and straight  
Tell them my story — "plausible, but false!"  
False, to be sure! What else can story be  
That runs — a young wife tired of an old spouse,  
Found a priest whom she fled away with, — both  
Took their full pleasure in the two-days' flight,  
Which a gray-headed grayer-hearted pair  
(Whose best boast was, their life had been a lie)  
Helped for the love they bore all liars. Oh,  
Here incredulity begins! Indeed?  
Allow then, were no one point strictly true,  
There's that i' the tale might seem like truth  
at least

To the unlucky husband, — jaundiced patch, —  
Jealousy maddens people, why not him?  
Say, he was maddened, so forgivable!  
Humanity pleads that though the wife were true,

The priest true, and the pair of liars true,  
They might seem false to one man in the world!  
A thousand gnats make up a serpent's sting,  
And many sly soft stimulants to wrath  
Compose a formidable wrong at last,  
That gets called easily by some one name  
Not applicable to the single parts,  
And so draws down a general revenge,  
Excessive if you take crime, fault by fault.  
Jealousy! I have known a score of plays,  
Were listened to and laughed at in my time  
As like the every-day life on all sides,  
Wherein the husband, mad as a March hare,  
Suspected all the world contrived his shame.  
What did the wife? The wife kissed both eyes  
blind,

Explained away ambiguous circumstance,  
And while she held him captive by the hand,  
Crowned his head — you know what's the  
mockery —

By half her body behind the curtain. That's  
Nature now! That's the subject of a piece  
I saw in Vallombrosa Convent, made  
Expressly to teach men what marriage was!  
But say, "Just so did I misapprehend,  
Imagine she deceived me to my face,"  
And that's pretence too easily seen through!  
All those eyes of all husbands in all plays,  
At stare like one expanded peacock-tail,  
Are laughed at for pretending to be keen  
While horn-blind: but the moment I step  
forth —

Oh, I must needs o' the sudden prove a lynx  
And look the heart, that stone-wall, through  
and through!

Such an eye, God's may be, — not yours nor mine.

Yes, presently . . . what hour is fleeting now?  
When you cut earth away from under me,  
I shall be left alone with, pushed beneath  
Some such an apparitional dread orb  
As the eye of God, since such an eye there  
glares:

I fancy it go filling up the void  
Above my mote-self it devours, or what  
Proves wrath, immensity wreaks on nothingness  
Just how I felt once, couching through the dark.  
Hard by Vittiano; young I was, and gay,  
And wanting to trap fieldfares: first a spark



Tipped a bent, as a mere dew-globule might  
Any stiff grass-stalk on the meadow, — this  
Grew fiercer, flamed out full, and proved the  
sun.

What do I want with proverbs, precepts here?  
Away with man! What shall I say to God?  
This, if I find the tongue and keep the mind —  
“Do Thou wipe out the being of me, and smear  
This soul from off Thy white of things, I blot!  
I am one huge and sheer mistake, — whose  
fault?”

Not mine at least, who did not make myself! “  
Some one declares my wife excused me so!  
Perhaps she knew what argument to use.  
Grind your teeth, Cardinal, Abate, writhe!  
What else am I to cry out in my rage,  
Unable to repent one particle  
O’ the past? Oh, how I wish some cold wise  
man

Would dig beneath the surface which you  
scrape,

Deal with the depths, pronounce on my desert  
Groundedly! I want simple sober sense,  
That asks, before it finishes with a dog,  
Who taught the dog that trick you hang him  
for?

You both persist to call that act a crime,  
Which sense would call . . . yes, I maintain it,  
Sirs,

A blunder! At the worst, I stood in doubt  
On cross-road, took one path of many paths:  
It leads to the red thing, we all see now,  
But nobody saw at first: one primrose-patch  
In bank, one singing-bird in bush, the less,  
Had warned me from such wayfare: let me  
prove!

Put me back to the cross-road, start afresh!  
Advise me when I take the first false step!  
Give me my wife: how should I use my wife,  
Love her or hate her? Prompt my action  
now!

There she is, there she stands alive and pale,  
The thirteen-years-old child, with milk for  
blood,

Pompilia Comparini, as at first,  
Which first is only four brief years ago!  
I stand too in the little ground-floor room  
O’ the father’s house at Via Vittoria: see!  
Her so-called mother — one arm round the  
waist

O’ the child to keep her from the toys, let fall  
At wonder I can live yet look so grim —  
Ushers her in, with deprecating wave  
Of the other, — and she fronts me loose at last,  
Held only by the mother’s finger-tip.

Struck dumb, for she was white enough before!  
She eyes me with those frightened balls of  
black,

As heifer — the old simile comes pat —  
Eyes trembly the altar and the priest.  
The amazed look, all one insuppressive  
prayer, —

Might she but breathe, set free as heretofore,  
Have this cup leave her lips unblistered, bear  
Any cross anywhere anyhow,

No but alone, so but apart from me!  
You are touched? So am I, quite otherwise,  
If ’t is with pity. I resent my wrong,

Being a man: I only show man’s soul  
Through man’s flesh: she sees mine, it strikes  
her thus!

Is that attractive? To a youth perhaps —  
Calf-creature, one-part boy to three-parts girl,  
To whom it is a flattering novelty  
That he, men use to motion from their path,  
Can thus impose, thus terrify in turn  
A chit whose terror shall be changed apace  
To bliss unbearable when grace and glow,  
Prowess and pride descend the throne and  
touch

Esther in all that pretty tremble, cured  
By the dove o’ the sceptre! But myself am  
old,

O’ the wane at least, in all things: what do you  
say

To her who frankly thus confirms my doubt?  
I am past the prime, I scare the woman-world,  
Done-with that way: you like this piece of  
news?

A little saucy rose-bud minx can strike  
Death-damp into the breast of doughty king  
Though ’t were French Louis, — soul I under-  
stand, —

Saying, by gesture of repugnance, just  
“Sire, you are regal, puissant, and so forth,  
But — young you have been, are not, nor will  
be!”

In vain the mother nods, winks, bustles up,  
“Count, girls incline to mature worth like you!  
As for Pompilia, what’s flesh, fish or fowl  
To one who apprehends no difference,  
And would accept you even were you old  
As you are . . . youngish by her father’s side?  
Trim but your beard a little, thin your bush  
Of eyebrow; and for presence, portliness,  
And decent gravity, you beat a boy!”  
Deceive yourself one minute, if you may,  
In presence of the child that so loves age,  
Whose neck writhes, cords itself against your  
kiss,

Whose hand you wring stark, rigid with de-  
spair!

Well, I resent this; I am young in soul,  
Nor old in body, — thews and sinews here, —  
Though the vile surface be not smooth as  
once, —

Far beyond that first wheelwork which went  
wrong

Through the untempered iron ere ’t was proof:  
I am the rock man worth ten times the  
crude, —

Would woman see what this declines to see,  
Declines to say “I see,” — the officious word  
That makes the thing, pricks on the soul to  
shoot

New fire into the half-used cinder, flesh!  
Therefore ’t is she begins with wronging me,  
Who cannot but begin with hating her.  
Our marriage follows: there she stands again!  
Why do I laugh? Why, in the very gripe  
O’ the jaws of death’s gigantic skull, do I  
Grin back his grin, make sport of my own  
pangs?

Why from each clashing of his molars, ground  
To make the devil bread from out my grist,  
Leaps out a spark of mirth, a hellish joy?

Take notice we are lovers in a church,  
Waiting the sacrament to make us one  
And happy! Just as bid, she bears herself,  
Comes and kneels, rises, speaks, is silent, —  
goes :

So have I brought my horse, by word and blow,  
To stand stock-still and front the fire he  
dreads.

How can I other than remember this,  
Resent the very obedience? Gain thereby?  
Yes, I do gain my end and have my will, —  
Thanks to whom? When the mother speaks  
the word,

She obeys it — even to enduring me!  
There had been compensation in revolt —  
Revolt 's to quell : but martyrdom rehearsed,  
But predetermined saintship for the sake  
O' the mother? — "Go!" thought I, "we  
meet again!"

Pass the next weeks of dumb contented death,  
She lives, — wakes up, installed in house and  
home,

Is mine, mine all day-long, all night-long mine.  
Good folk begin at me with open mouth :  
"Now, at least, reconcile the child to life!  
Study and make her love . . . that is, endure  
The . . . hem! the . . . all of you though  
somewhat old,

Till it amount to something, in her eye,  
As good as love, better a thousand times, —  
Since nature helps the woman in such strait,  
Makes passiveness her pleasure : failing which,  
What if you give up boy-and-girl-fools'-play  
And go on to wise friendship all at once?  
Those boys and girls kiss themselves cold, you  
know,

Toy themselves tired and slink aside full soon  
To friendship, as they name satiety:  
Thither go you and wait their coming!"  
Thanks,

Considerate advisers, — but, fair play!  
Had you and I, friends, started fair at first,  
We, keeping fair, might reach it, neck by  
neck,

This blessed goal, whenever fate so please :  
But why am I to miss the daisied mile  
The course begins with, why obtain the dust  
Of the end precisely at the starting-point?  
Why quaff life's cup blown free of all the  
heads.

The bright red froth wherein our beard should  
steep

Before our mouth essay the black o' the wine?  
Foolish, the love-fit? Let me prove it such  
Like you, before like you I puff things clear!  
"The best 's to come, no rapture but content!  
Not love's first glory but a sober glow,  
Not a spontaneous outburst in pure boon,  
So much as, gained by patience, care and toil,  
Proper appreciation and esteem!"

Go preach that to your nephews, not to me  
Who, tired i' the midway of my life, would stop  
And take my first refreshment, pluck a rose :  
What 's this coarse woolly hip, worn smooth of  
leaf,

You counsel I go plant in garden-plot,  
Water with tears, manure with sweat and  
blood,

In confidence the seed shall germinate  
And, for its very best, some far-off day,  
Grow big, and blow me out a dog-rose bell?  
Why must your nephews begin breathing spice  
O' the hundred-petalled Provence prodigy?  
Nay, more and worse, — would such my root  
bear rose —

Prove really flower and favorite, not the kind  
That 's queen, but those three leaves that make  
one cup

And hold the hedge-bird's breakfast, — then  
indeed

The prize though poor would pay the care and  
toil!

Respect we Nature that makes least as most,  
Marvelous in the minim! But this bad,  
Bit through and burned black by the tempter's  
tooth,

This bloom whose best grace was the slug out-  
side

And the wasp inside its bosom, — call you  
"rose"?

Claim no immunity from a weed's fate  
For the horrible present! What you call my  
wife

I call a nullity in female shape,  
Vapid disgust, soon to be pungent plague,  
When mixed with, made confusion and a curse  
By two abominable nondescripts.

That father and that mother: think you see  
The dreadful bronze our boast, we Aretines,  
The Etruscan monster, the three-headed thing,  
Bellerophon's foe! How name you the whole  
beast?

You choose to name the body from one head,  
That of the simple kid which droops the eye,  
Hangs the neck and dies tenderly enough:  
I rather see the griesly lion belch  
Flame out i' the midst, the serpent writhe her  
rings,

Grafted into the common stock for tail,  
And name the brute, Chimera, which I slew!  
How was there ever more to be — (concede  
My wife's insipid harmless nullity) —  
Dissociation from that pair of plagues —  
That mother with her cunning and her cant —  
The eyes with first their twinkle of conceit,  
Then, dropped to earth in mock-demureness, —  
now,

The smile self-satisfied from ear to ear,  
Now, the prim pursed-up mouth's protruded  
lips,

With deferential duck, slow swing of head,  
Tempting the sudden fit of man too much, —  
That owl-like screw of lid and rock of ruff!  
As for the father, — Cardinal, you know  
The kind of idiot! — such are rife in Rome,  
But they wear velvet commonly; good fools,  
At the end of life, to furnish forth young folk  
Who grin and bear with imbecility:  
Since the stalled ass, the joker, sheds from jaw  
Corn, in the joke, for those who laugh or  
starve.

But what say we to the same solemn beast  
Wagging his ears and wishful of our pat,  
When turned, with holes in hide and bones laid  
bare,

To forage for himself i' the waste o' the world.

Sir Dignity i' the dumps? Pat him? We  
drub

Self-knowledge, rather, into frowzy pate,  
Teach Pietro to get trappings or go hang!  
Fancy this quondam oracle in vogue  
At Via Vittoria, this personified  
Authority when time was, — Pantaloon  
Flaunting his tom-fool tawdry just the same  
As if Ash-Wednesday were mid-Carnival!  
That 's the extreme and unforgivable  
Of sins, as I account such. Have you stooped  
For your own ends to bestialize yourself  
By flattery of a fellow of this stamp?  
The ends obtained or else shown out of reach,  
He goes on, takes the flattery for pure  
truth, —

"You love, and honor me, of course: what  
next?"

What, but the trifle of the stabbing, friend? —  
Which taught you how one worships when the  
shrine

Has lost the relic that we bent before.  
Angry! And how could I be otherwise?  
'T is plain: this pair of old pretentious fools  
Meant to fool me: it happens, I fooled them.  
Why could not these who sought to buy and  
sell

Me, — when they found themselves were bought  
and sold,

Make up their mind to the proved rule of right,  
Be chattel and not chapman any more?  
Miscalculation has its consequence;  
But when the shepherd crooks a sheep-like thing  
And meaning to get wool, dislodges fleece  
And finds the veritable wolf beneath,  
(How that stanch image serves at every turn!)  
Does he, by way of being politic,  
Pluck the first whisker grimly visible?  
Or rather grow in a trice all gratitude,  
Protest this sort-of-what-one-might-name sheep  
Beats the old other curly-coated kind,  
And shall share board and bed, if so it deign,  
With its discoverer, like a royal ram?  
Ay, thus, with chattering teeth and knocking  
knees,

Would wisdom treat the adventure! these,  
forsooth,

Tried whisker-plucking, and so found what  
trap

The whisker kept perdue, two rows of teeth —  
Sharp, as too late the prying fingers felt.  
What would you have? The fools transgress,  
the fools

Forthwith receive appropriate punishment:  
They first insult me, I return the blow,  
There follows noise enough: four hubbub  
months,

Now hue and cry, now whimpering and wail —  
A perfect goose-yard cackle of complaint  
Because I do not gild the geese their oats, —  
I have enough of noise, ope wicket wide,  
Sweep out the couple to go whine elsewhere,  
Frightened a little, hurt in no respect,  
And am just taking thought to breathe again,  
Taste the sweet sudden silence all about,  
When, there they raise it, the old noise I know,  
At Rome i' the distance! "What, begun once  
more?"

Whine on, wail ever, 't is the loser's right!"  
But eh, what sort of voice grows on the wind?  
Triumph it sounds and no complaint at all!  
And triumph it is. My boast was premature:  
The creatures, I turned forth, clapped wing  
and crew

Fighting-cock-fashion, — they had filched a  
pearl

From dung-heap, and might boast with cause  
enough!

I was defrauded of all bargained for:  
You know, the Pope knows, not a soul but  
knows

My dowry was derision, my gain — muck,  
My wife (the Church declared my flesh and  
blood)

The nameless bastard of a common whore:  
My old name turned henceforth to . . . shall I  
say

"He that received the ordure in his face"?  
And they who planned this wrong, performed  
this wrong,

And then revealed this wrong to the wide  
world,

Rounded myself in the ears with my own  
wrong, —

Why, these were (note hell's lucky malice,  
now!)

These were just they who, they alone, could act  
And publish and proclaim their infamy,  
Secure that men would in a breath believe,  
Compassionate and pardon them, — for why?  
They plainly were too stupid to invent,  
Too simple to distinguish wrong from right, —  
Inconscious agents they, the silly-sooth,  
Of heaven's retributive justice on the strong  
Proud cunning violent oppressor — me!  
Follow them to their fate and help your best,  
You Rome, Arezzo, foes called friends of me,  
They gave the good long laugh to, at my cost!  
Defray your share o' the cost, since you par-  
took

The entertainment! Do! — assured the while,  
That not one stab, I dealt to right and left,  
But went the deeper for a fancy — this —  
That each might do me twofold service, find  
A friend's face at the bottom of each wound,  
And scratch its smirk a little!

Panciatichi!

There 's a report at Florence, — is it true? —  
That when your relative the Cardinal  
Built, only the other day, that barrack-bulk,  
The palace in Via Larga, some one picked  
From out the street a saucy quip enough  
That fell there from its day's flight through the  
town,

About the flat front and the windows wide  
And bulging heap of cornice, — hitched the  
joke

Into a sonnet, signed his name thereto,  
And forthwith pinned on post the pleasantray:  
For which he 's at the galleys, rowing now  
Up to his waist in water, — just because  
*Panciatich* and *lymphatic* rhymed so pat!  
I hope, Sir, those who passed this joke on me  
Were not unduly punished? What say you,  
Prince of the Church, my patron? Nay, in-  
deed,



I shall not dare insult your wits so much  
As think this problem difficult to solve.  
This Pietro and Violante then, I say,  
These two ambiguous insects, changing name  
And nature with the season's warmth or  
chill, —

Now, grovelled, grubbing toiling moping ants,  
A very synonym of thrift and peace, —  
Anon, with lusty June to prick their heart,  
Soared i' the air, winged flies for more offence,  
Circled me, buzzed me deaf and stung me blind,  
And stunk me dead with fetor in the face  
Until I stopped the nuisance: there's my  
crime!

Pity I did not suffer them subside  
Into some further shape and final form  
Of execrable life? My masters, no!  
I, by one blow, wisely cut short at once  
Them and their transformations of disgust,  
In the snug little Villa out of hand.

"Grant me confession, give bare time for  
that!" —

Shouted the sinner till his mouth was stopped.  
His life confessed! — that was enough for me,  
Who came to see that he did penance. 'S  
death!

Here 's a coil raised, a pother and for what?  
Because strength, being provoked by weakness,  
fought

And conquered, — the world never heard the  
like!

Pah, how I spend my breath on them, as if  
'T was their fate troubled me, too hard to  
range

Among the right and fit and proper things!

Ay, but Pompilia, — I await your word, —  
She unimpeached of crime, unimplicate  
In folly, one of alien blood to these  
I punish, why extend my claim, exact  
Her portion of the penalty? Yes, friends,  
I go too fast: the orator 's at fault:  
Yes, ere I lay her, with your leave, by them  
As she was laid at San Lorenzo late,  
I ought to step back, lead you by degrees,  
Recounting at each step some fresh offence,  
Up to the red bed, — never fear, I will!  
Gaze at her, where I place her, to begin,  
Confound me with her gentleness and worth!  
The horrible pair have fled and left her now,  
She has her husband for her sole concern:  
His wife, the woman fashioned for his help,  
Flesh of his flesh, bone of his bone, the bride  
To groom as is the Church and Spouse to  
Christ:

There she stands in his presence: "Thy desire  
Shall be to the husband, o'er thee shall he  
rule!"

— "Pompilia, who declare that you love God,  
You know who said that: then, desire my love,  
Yield me contentment and be ruled aright!"  
She sits up, she lies down, she comes and goes,  
Kneels at the couch-side, overleans the sill  
O' the window, cold and pale and mute as  
stone,

Strong as stone also. "Well, are they not fled?  
Am I not left, am I not one for all?"

Speak a word, drop a tear, detach a glance,

Bless me or curse me of your own accord!  
Is it the ceiling only wants your soul,  
Is worth your eyes?" And then the eyes de-  
scend,

And do look at me. Is it at the meal?  
"Speak!" she obeys. "Be silent!" she  
obeys,

Counting the minutes till I cry "Depart,"  
As brood-bird when you saunter past her eggs.  
Departs she, just the same through door and  
wall

I see the same stone strength of white despair,  
And all this will be never otherwise!

Before, the parents' presence lent her life:  
She could play off her sex's armory,  
Entreat, reproach, be female to my male,  
Try all the shrieking doubles of the hare,  
Go clamor to the Commissary, bid  
The Archbishop hold my hands and stop my  
tongue,

And yield fair sport so: but the tactics change,  
The hare stands stock-still to enrage the hound!  
Since that day when she learned she was no  
child

Of those she thought her parents, — that their  
trick

Had tricked me whom she thought sole  
trickster late, —

Why, I suppose she said within herself,  
"Then, no more struggle for my parents' sake!  
And, for my own sake, why needs struggle  
be?"

But is there no third party to the pact?  
What of her husband's relish or dislike  
For this new game of giving up the game,  
This worst offence of not offending more?  
I'll not believe but instinct wrought in this,  
Set her on to conceive and execute  
The preferable plague: how sure they probe, —  
These jades, the sensitivest soft of man!  
The long black hair was wound now in a wisp,  
Crowned sorrow better than the wild web late:  
No more soiled dress, 'tis trimness triumphs  
now,

For how should malice go with negligence?  
The frayed silk looked the fresher for her  
spite!

There was an end to springing out of bed,  
Praying me, with face buried on my feet,  
Be hindered of my pastime, — so an end  
To my rejoinder, "What, on the ground at  
last?"

Vanquished in fight, a supplicant for life?  
What if I raise you? 'Ware the casting down  
When next you fight me!" Then, she lay  
there, mine:

Now, mine she is if I please wring her neck, —  
A moment of disquiet, working eyes,  
Protruding tongue, a long sigh, then no more, —  
As if one killed the horse one could not ride!  
Had I enjoined "Cut off the hair!" — why,  
snap

The scissors, and at once a yard or so  
Had fluttered in black serpents to the floor:  
But till I did enjoin it, how she combs,  
Uncurls and draws out to the complete length,  
Plaits, places the insulting rope on head  
To be an eyesore past dishevelment!

Is all done? Then sit still again and stare!  
I advise — no one think to bear that look  
Of steady wrong, endured as steadily  
— Through what sustainment of deluding hope?  
Who is the friend i' the background that notes  
all?

Who may come presently and close accounts?  
This self-possession to the uttermost,  
How does it differ in aught, save degree,  
From the terrible patience of God?

"All which just means,  
She did not love you!" Again the word is  
launched

And the fact fronts me! What, you try the  
wards

With the true key and the dead lock flies ope?  
No, it sticks fast and leaves you fumbling still!  
You have some fifty servants, Cardinal, —  
Which of them loves you? Which subordinate  
But makes parade of such officiousness  
That — if there's no love prompts it — love, the  
sham,

Does twice the service done by love, the true.  
God bless us liars, where's one touch of truth?  
In what we tell the world, or world tells us,  
Of how we love each other? All the same,  
We calculate on word and deed, nor err, —  
Bid such a man do such a loving act,  
Sure of effect and negligent of cause,  
Just as we bid a horse, with cluck of tongue,  
Stretch his legs arch-wise, crouch his saddled  
back

To foot-reach of the stirrup — all for love,  
And some for memory of the smart of switch  
On the inside of the foreleg — what care we?  
Yet where's the bond obliges horse to man  
Like that which binds fast wife to husband?  
God

Laid down the law: gave man the brawny arm  
And ball of fist — woman the beardless cheek  
And proper place to suffer in the side:  
Since it is he can strike, let her obey!  
Can she feel no love? Let her show the more,  
Sham the worse, damn herself praiseworthy!  
Who's that soprano, Rome went mad about  
Last week while I lay rotting in my straw?  
The very jailer gossiped in his praise —  
How, — dressed up like Armida, though a man;  
And painted to look pretty, though a fright, —  
He still made love so that the ladies swooned,  
Being an eunuch. "Ah, Rinaldo mine!  
But to breathe by thee while Jove slays us  
both!"

All the poor bloodless creature never felt,  
*Si, do, re, mi, fa*, squeak and squall — for  
what?

Two gold zeechines the evening. Here's my  
slave,

Whose body and soul depend upon my nod,  
Can't falter out the first note in the scale  
For her life! Why blame me if I take the life?  
All women cannot give men love, forsooth!  
No, nor all pullets lay the henwife eggs —  
Whereat she bids them remedy the fault,  
Brood on a chalk-ball: soon the nest is  
stocked —

Otherwise, to the plucking and the spit!  
This wife of mine was of another mood —

Would not begin the lie that ends with truth,  
Nor feign the love that brings real love about:  
Wherefore I judged, sentenced, and punished  
her.

But why particularize, defend the deed?  
Say that I hated her for no one cause  
Beyond my pleasure so to do, — what then?  
Just on as much incitement acts the world,  
All of you! Look and like! You favor one,  
Browbeat another, leave alone a third, —  
Why should you master natural caprice?  
Pure nature! Try: plant elm by ash in file;  
Both unexceptionable trees enough,  
They ought to overlean each other, pair  
At top, and arch across the avenue  
The whole path to the pleasure: do they so —  
Or loathe, lie off abhorrent each from each?  
Lay the fault elsewhere: since we must have  
faults,

Mine shall have been — seeing there's ill in the  
end

Come of my course — that I fare somehow  
worse

For the way I took: my fault . . . as God's  
my judge,

I see not where my fault lies, that's the truth!  
I ought . . . oh, ought in my own interest  
Have let the whole adventure go untried,  
This chance by marriage, — or else, trying it,  
Ought to have turned it to account, some one  
O' the hundred otherways? Ay, my friend,  
Easy to say, easy to do: step right  
Now you've stepped left and stumbled on the  
thing,

— The red thing! Doubt I any more than you  
That practice makes man perfect? Give again  
The chance, — same marriage and no other  
wife,

Be sure I'll edify you! That's because  
I'm practised, grown fit guide for Guido's self.  
You proffered guidance, — I know, none so  
well, —

You laid down law and rolled decorum out,  
From pulpit-corner on the gospel-side, —  
Wanted to make your great experience mine,  
Save me the personal search and pains so:  
thanks!

Take your word on life's use? When I take  
his —

The muzzled ox that treadeth out the corn,  
Gone blind in padding round and round one  
path, —

As to the taste of green grass in the field!  
What do you know o' the world that's trodden  
flat

And salted sterile with your daily dung,  
Leavened into a lump of loathsomeness?  
Take your opinion of the modes of life,  
The aims of life, life's triumph or defeat,  
How to feel, how to scheme, and how to do  
Or else leave undone? You preached long and  
loud

On high-days, "Take our doctrine upon trust!  
Into the mill-house with you! Grind our corn,  
Relish our chaff, and let the green grass grow!"  
I tried chaff, found I famished on such fare,  
So made this mad rush at the mill-house-door,  
Buried my head up to the ears in dew,

Browsed on the best : for which you brain me,  
Sirs !

Be it so. I conceived of life that way,  
And still declare — life, without absolute use  
Of the actual sweet therein, is death, not life.  
Give me, — pay down, — not promise, which is  
air, —

Something that 's out of life and better still,  
Make sure reward, make certain punishment,  
Entice me, scare me, — I 'll forego this life ;  
Otherwise, no ! — the less that words, mere wind,  
Would cheat me of some minutes while they  
plague,

Balk fulness of revenge here, — blame your-  
selves

For this eruption of the pent-up soul  
You prisoned first and played with afterward !  
" Deny myself " meant simply pleasure you,  
The sacred and superior, save the mark !  
You, — whose stupidity and insolence  
I must defer to, soothe at every turn, —  
Whose swine-like snuffing greed and grunting  
lust

I had to wink at or help gratify, —  
While the same passions, — dared they perk in  
me,

Me, the immeasurably marked, by God,  
Master of the whole world of such as you, —  
I, boast such passions ? 'T was, " Suppress  
them straight !

Or stay, we 'll pick and choose before destroy.  
Here 's wrath in you, a serviceable sword, —  
Beat it into a ploughshare ! What 's this long  
Lance-like ambition ? Forge a pruning-hook,  
May be of service when our vines grow tall !  
But — sword used swordwise, spear thrust out  
as spear ?

Anathema ! Suppression is the word !"  
My nature, when the outrage was too gross,  
Widened itself an outlet over-wide  
By way of answer, sought its own relief  
With more of fire and brimstone than you  
wished.

All your own doing : preachers, blame your-  
selves !

'Tis I preach while the hour-glass runs and  
runs !

God keep me patient ! All I say just means —  
My wife proved, whether by her fault or mine, —  
That 's immaterial, — a true stumbling-block  
I' the way of me her husband. I but plied  
The hatchet yourselves use to clear a path.  
Was politic, played the game you warrant wins,  
Plucked at law's robe a-rustle through the  
courts,

Bowed down to kiss divinity's buckled shoe  
Cushioned i' the church : efforts all wide the  
aim !

Procedurcs to no purpose ! Then flashed truth.  
The letter kills, the spirit keeps alive  
In law and gospel : there be nods and winks  
Instruct a wise man to assist himself  
In certain matters, nor seek aid at all.

" Ask money of me," — quoth the clownish  
saw, —

\* And take my purse ! But, — speaking with  
respect, —

Need you a solace for the troubled nose ?  
Let everybody wipe his own himself !"  
Sirs, tell me free and fair ! Had things gone  
well

At the wayside inn : had I surprised asleep  
The runaways, as was so probable,  
And pinned them each to other partridge-wise,  
Through back and breast to breast and back,  
then bade

Bystanders witness if the spit, my sword,  
Were loaded with unlawful game for once —  
Would you have interposed to damp the glow  
Applauding me on every husband's cheek ?  
Would you have checked the cry, " A judg-  
ment, see !

A warning, note ! Be henceforth chaste, ye  
wives,  
Nor stray beyond your proper precinct,  
priests !"

If you had, then your house against itself  
Divides, nor stands your kingdom any more.  
Oh why, why was it not ordained just so ?  
Why fell not things out so nor otherwise ?  
Ask that particular devil whose task it is  
To trip the all-but-at perfection, — slur  
The line o' the painter just where paint leaves off  
And life begins, — put ice into the ode  
O' the poet while he cries " Next stanza — fire !"  
Inscribe all human effort with one word,  
Artistry's haunting curse, the Incomplete !  
Being incomplete, my act escaped success.  
Easy to blame now ! Every fool can swear  
To hole in net that held and slipped the fish.  
But, treat my act with fair unjaundiced eye,  
What was there wanting to a masterpiece  
Except the luck that lies beyond a man ?  
My way with the woman, now proved grossly  
wrong,

Just missed of being gravely grandly right  
And making mouths laugh on the other side.  
Do, for the poor obstructed artist's sake,  
Go with him over that spoiled work once more !  
Take only its first flower, the ended act  
Now in the dusty pod, dry and defunct !  
I march to the Villa, and my men with me,  
That evening, and we reach the door and stand.  
I say . . . no, it shoots through me lightning-  
like

While I pause, breathe, my hand upon the latch,  
" Let me forebode ! Thus far, too much success :  
I want the natural failure — find it where ?  
Which thread will have to break and leave a  
loop

I' the meshy combination, my brain's loom  
Wove this long while, and now next minute  
tests ?

Of three that are to catch, two should go free,  
One must : all three surprised, — impossible !  
Beside, I seek three and may chance on six, —  
This neighbor, t' other gossip, — the babe's  
birth

Brings such to fireside, and folks give them  
wine, —

'T is late : but when I break in presently  
One will be found outlingering the rest  
For promise of a posset, — one whose shout  
Would raise the dead down in the catacombs,  
Much more the city-watch that goes its round.



When did I ever turn adroitly up  
To sun some brick embedded in the soil,  
And with one blow crush all three scorpions  
there?

Or Pietro or Violante shambles off —  
It cannot be but I surprise my wife —  
If only she is stopped and stamped on, good!  
That shall suffice: more is improbable.  
Now I may knock!" And this once for my  
sake

The impossible was effected: I called king,  
Queen and knave in a sequence, and cards  
came,

All three, three only! So, I had my way,  
Did my deed: so, unbrokenly lay bare  
Each tænia that had sucked me dry of juice,  
At last outside me, not an inch of ring  
Left now to writhe about and root itself  
I' the heart all powerless for revenge! Hence-  
forth

I might thrive: these were drawn and dead and  
dammèd.

Oh, Cardinal, the deep long sigh you heave  
When the load 's off you, ringing as it runs  
All the way down the serpent-stair to hell!  
No doubt the fine delirium flustered me,  
Turned my brain with the influx of success  
As if the sole need now were to wave wand  
And find doors fly wide, — wish and have my  
will, —

The rest o' the scheme would care for itself:  
escape?

Easy enough were that, and poor beside!  
It all but proved so. — ought to quite have  
proved,

Since, half the chances had sufficed, set free  
Any one, with his senses at command,  
From thrice the danger of my flight. But,  
drunk,

Redundantly triumphant, — some reverse  
Was sure to follow! There 's no other way  
Accounts for such prompt perfect failure then  
And there on the instant. Any day o' the week,  
A ducat slid discreetly into palm  
O' the mute post-master, while you whisper  
him —

How you the Count and certain four your  
knaves,

Have just been mauling who was malapert,  
Suspect the kindred may prove troublesome,  
Therefore, want horses in a hurry, — that  
And nothing more secures you any day  
The pick o' the stable! Yet I try the trick,  
Double the bribe, call myself Duke for Count,  
And say the dead man only was a Jew,  
And for my pains find I am dealing just  
With the one scrupulous fellow in all Rome —  
Just this immaculate official stares,  
Sees I want bat on head and sword in sheath,  
Am splashed with other sort of wet than wine,  
Shrugs shoulder, puts my hand by, gold and all,  
Stands on the strictness of the rule o' the road!  
"Where 's the Permission?" Where 's the  
wretched rag

With the due seal and sign of Rome's Police,  
To be had for asking, half an hour ago?  
"Gone? Get another, or no horses hence!"  
He dares not stop me, we five glare too grim,

But hinders, — hacks and hamstrings sure  
enough,

Gives me some twenty miles of miry road  
More to march in the middle of that night  
Whereof the rough beginning taxed the strength  
O' the youngsters, much more mine, both soul  
and flesh,

Who had to think as well as act: dead-beat,  
We gave in ere we reached the boundary  
And safe spot out of this irrational Rome, —  
Where, on dismounting from our steeds next  
day,

We had snapped our fingers at you, safe and  
sound,

Tuscans once more in blessed Tuscany,  
Where laws make wise allowance, understand  
Civilized life and do its champions right!  
Witness the sentence of the Rota there,  
Arezzo uttered, the Granduke confirmed,  
One week before I acted on its hint, —  
Giving friend Guillichini, for his love,  
The galleys, and my wife your saint, Rome's  
saint, —

Rome manufactures saints enough to know, —  
Seclusion at the Stinche for her life.  
All this, that all but was, might all have been,  
Yet was not! balked by just a scrupulous knave  
Whose palm was horn through handling horses'  
hoofs

And could not close upon my proffered gold!  
What say you to the spite of fortune? Well,  
The worst 's in store: thus hindered, halted this  
way

To Rome again by hangdogs, whom find I  
Here, still to fight with, but my pale frail wife?  
— Riddled with wounds by one not like to  
waste

The blows he dealt, — knowing anatomy, —  
(I think I told you) bound to pick and choose  
The vital parts! 'T was learning all in vain!  
She too must shimmer through the gloom o'  
the grave,

Come and confront me — not at judgment-seat  
Where I could twist her soul, as erst her flesh,  
And turn her truth into a lie, — but there,  
O' the death-bed, with God's hand between us  
both,

Striking me dumb, and helping her to speak,  
Tell her own story her own way, and turn  
My plausibility to nothingness!  
Four whole days did Pompilia keep alive,  
With the best surgery of Rome apace  
At the miracle, — this cut, the other slash,  
And yet the life refusing to dislodge,  
Four whole extravagant impossible days,  
Till she had time to finish and persuade  
Every man, every woman, every child  
In Rome, of what she would: the selfsame she  
Who, but a year ago, had wrung her hands,  
Reddened her eyes and beat her breasts, re-  
hearsed

The whole game at Arezzo, nor availed  
Thereby to move one heart or raise one hand!  
When destiny intends you cards like these,  
What good of skill and preconcerted play?  
Had she been found dead, as I left her dead,  
I should have told a tale brooked no reply:  
You scarcely will suppose me found at fault

With that advantage ! "What brings me to Rome ?

Necessity to claim and take my wife :  
Better, to claim and take my new-born babe. —  
Strong in paternity a fortnight old,  
When 't is at strongest : warily I work,  
Knowing the machinations of my foe ;  
I have companionship and use the night :  
I seek my wife and child, — I find — no child  
But wife, in the embraces of that priest  
Who caused her to elope from me. These two,  
Backed by the pander-pair who watch the while,

Spring on me like so many tiger-cats,  
Glad of the chance to end the intruder. I —  
What should I do but stand on my defence,  
Strike right, strike left, strike thick and three-  
fold, slay,

Not all — because the coward priest escapes.  
Last, I escape, in fear of evil tongues,  
And having had my taste of Roman law."  
What 's disputable, refutable here ? —  
Save by just this one ghost-thing half on earth,  
Half out of it. — as if she held God's hand  
While she leant back and looked her last at me,

Forgiving me (here monks begin to weep)  
Oh, from her very soul, commending mine  
To heavenly mercies which are infinite, —  
While fixing fast my head beneath your knife !  
'T is fate, not fortune. All is of a piece !  
When was it chance informed me of my youths ?  
My rustic four o' the family, soft swains.  
What sweet surprise had they in store for me,  
Those of my very household. — what did Law  
Twist with her rack-and-cord-contrivance late  
From out their bones and marrow ? What but this —

Had no one of these several stumbling-blocks  
Stopped me, they yet were cherishing a scheme,  
All of their honest country homespun wit,  
To quietly next day at crow of cock  
Cut my own throat too, for their own behoof,  
Seeing I had forgot to clear accounts  
O' the instant, nowise slackened speed for that, —

And somehow never might find memory,  
Once safe back in Arezzo, where things change,  
And a court-lord needs mind no country lout.  
Well, being the arch-offender, I die last, —  
May, ere my head falls, have my eyesight free,  
Nor miss them dangling high on either hand.  
Like scarecrows in a hemp-field, for their pains !

And then my Trial, — 't is my Trial that bites  
Like a corrosive, so the cards are packed,  
Dice loaded, and my life-stake tricked away !  
Look at my lawyers, lacked they grace of law,  
Latin or logic ? Were not they fools to the height,

Fools to the depth, fools to the level between,  
O' the foolishness set to decide the case ?  
They feign, they flatter ; nowise does it skill,  
Everything goes against me : deal each judge  
His dole of flattery and feigning, — why,  
He turns and tries and snuffs and savors it,  
As some old fly the sugar-grain, your gift ;

Then eyes your thumb and finger, brushes  
clear

The absurd old head of him, and whisks away,  
Leaving your thumb and finger dirty. Faugh !

And finally, after this long-drawn range  
Of affront and failure, failure and affront, —  
This path, 'twixt crosses leading to a skull,  
Paced by me barefoot, bloodied by my palms  
From the entry to the end, — there 's light at length,

A cranny of escape : appeal may be  
To the old man, to the father, to the Pope,  
For a little life — from one whose life is spent,  
A little pity — from pity's source and seat,  
A little indulgence to rank, privilege,  
From one who is the thing personified,  
Rank, privilege, indulgence, grown beyond  
Earth's bearing, even, ask Jansenius else !  
Still the same answer, still no other tune  
From the cicala perched at the tree-top  
Than crickets noisy round the root, — 't is  
"Die !"

Bids Law — "Be damned !" adds Gospel, —  
nay,  
No word so frank, — 't is rather, "Save your-  
self !"

The Pope subjoins — "Confess and be ab-  
solved !

So shall my credit countervail your shame,  
And the world see I have not lost the knack  
Of trying all the spirits : yours, my son,  
Wants but a fiery washing to emerge  
In clarity ! Come, cleanse you, ease the ache  
Of these old bones, refresh our bowels, boy !"  
Do I mistake your mission from the Pope ?  
Then, bear his Holiness the mind of me !  
I do get strength from being thrust to wall,  
Successively wrenched from pillar and from  
post

By this tenacious hate of fortune, hate  
Of all things in, under, and above earth.  
Warfare, begun this mean unmanly mode,  
Does best to end so, — gives earth spectacle  
Of a brave fighter who succumbs to odds  
That turn defeat to victory. Stab, I fold  
My mantle round me ! Rome approves my act :  
Applauds the blow which costs me life but  
keeps

My honor spotless : Rome would praise no more  
Had I fallen, say, some fifteen years ago,  
Helping Vienna when our Aretines  
Flocked to Duke Charles and fought Turk  
Mustafa ;

Nor would you two be trembling o'er my corpse  
With all this exquisite solicitude.  
Why is it that I make such suit to live ?  
The popular sympathy that 's round me now  
Would break like bubble that o'er-domes a  
fly —

Solid enough while he lies quiet there,  
But let him want the air and ply the wing,  
Why, it breaks and bespatters him, what else ?  
Cardinal, if the Pope had pardoned me,  
And I walked out of prison through the crowd,  
It would not be your arm I should dare press !  
Then, if I got safe to my place again,  
How sad and sapless were the years to come !

I go my old ways and find things grown gray ;  
 You priests leer at me, old friends look askance ;  
 The mob 's in love, I 'll wager, to a man,  
 With my poor young good beauteous murdered wife :

For hearts require instruction how to beat,  
 And eyes, on warrant of the story, wax  
 Wanton at portraiture in white and black  
 Of dead Pompilia gracing ballad-sheet,  
 Which eyes, lived she unmurdered and unsung,  
 Would never turn though she paced street as bare

As the mad penitent ladies do in France.  
 My brothers quietly would edge me out  
 Of use and management of things called mine ;  
 Do I command ? " You stretched command before ! "

Show anger ? " Anger little helped you once ! "  
 Advise ? " How managed you affairs of old ? "  
 My very mother, all the while they gird,  
 Turns eye up, gives confirmatory groan ;  
 For unsuccess, explain it how you will,  
 Disqualifies you, makes you doubt yourself,  
 — Much more, is found decisive by your friends.  
 Beside, am I not fifty years of age ?

What new leap would a life take, checked like mine

I 'd the spring at outset ? Where 's my second chance ?

Ay, but the babe . . . I had forgot my son,  
 My heir ! Now for a burst of gratitude !  
 There 's some appropriate service to intone,  
 Some *gaudeamus* and thanksgiving-psalm !  
 Old, I renew my youth in him, and poor  
 Possess a treasure, — is not that the phrase ?  
 Only I must wait patient twenty years —  
 Nourishing all the while, as father ought,  
 The excrecence with my daily blood of life.  
 Does it respond to hope, such sacrifice, —  
 Grows the wen plump while I myself grow lean ?

Why, here 's my son and heir in evidence,  
 Who stronger, wiser, handsomer than I  
 By fifty years, relieves me of each load, —  
 Tames my hot horse, carries my heavy gun,  
 Courts my coy mistress, — has his apt advice  
 On house-economy, expenditure,  
 And what not ? All which good gifts and great growth,

Because of my decline, he brings to bear  
 On Guido, but half apprehensive how  
 He cumbers earth, crosses the brisk young Count,

Who civilly would thrust him from the scene.  
 Contrariwise, does the blood-offering fail ?  
 There 's an ineptitude, one blank the more  
 Added to earth in semblance of my child ?  
 Then, this has been a costly piece of work,  
 My life exchanged for his ! — why he, not I,  
 Enjoy the world, if no more grace accrue ?  
 Dwarf me, what giant have you made of him ?  
 I do not dread the disobedient son —  
 I know how to suppress rebellion there,  
 Being not quite the fool my father was.  
 But grant the medium measure of a man,  
 The usual compromise 'twixt fool and sage,  
 — You know — the tolerably-obstinate,

The not-so-much-perverse but you may train,  
 The true son-servant that, when parent bids  
 " Go work, son, in my vineyard ! " makes reply  
 " I go, Sir ! " — Why, what profit in your son  
 Beyond the drudges you might subsidize,  
 Have the same work from, at a paul the head ?  
 Look at those four young precious olive-plants  
 Reared at Vittiano, — not on flesh and blood,  
 These twenty years, but black bread and sour wine !

I bade them put forth tender branch, hook, hold,  
 And hurt three enemies I had in Rome :  
 They did my best as unreluctantly,  
 At promise of a dollar, as a son  
 Adjured by mumping memories of the past.  
 No, nothing repays youth expended so —  
 Youth, I say, who am young still : grant but leave

To live my life out, to the last I 'd live  
 And die conceding age no right of youth !  
 It is the will runs the renewing nerve  
 Through flaccid flesh that faints before the time.

Therefore no sort of use for son have I —  
 Sick, not of life's feast but of steps to climb  
 To the house where life prepares her feast, —  
 of means

To the end : for make the end attainable  
 Without the means, — my relish were like yours.

A man may have an appetite enough  
 For a whole dish of robins ready cooked,  
 And yet lack courage to face sleet, pad snow,  
 And snare sufficiently for supper.

Thus

The time 's arrived when, ancient Roman-like,  
 I am bound to fall on my own sword : why not  
 Say — Tuscan-like, more ancient, better still ?  
 Will you hear truth can do no harm nor good ?  
 I think I never was at any time  
 A Christian, as you nickname all the world,  
 Me among others : truce to nonsense now !  
 Name me, a primitive religionist —  
 As should the aboriginal be  
 I boast myself, Etruscan, Aretine,  
 One sprung — your frigid Virgil's fieriest word —  
 From fauns and nymphs, trunks and the heart  
 of oak,

With — for a visible divinity —  
 The portent of a Jove Ægiochus  
 Descried 'mid clouds, lightning and thunder,  
 couched

On topmost crag of your Capitoline :  
 'Tis in the Seventh Æneid, — what, the Eighth ?

Right, — thanks, Abate, — though the Christian's dumb,

The Latinist's vivacious in you yet !  
 I know my grand sire had our tapestry  
 Marked with the motto, 'neath a certain shield,  
 Whereto his grandson presently will give gules  
 To vary azure. First we fight for faiths,  
 But get to shake hands at the last of all :  
 Mine 's your faith too, — in Jove Ægiochus !  
 Nor do Greek gods, that serve as supplement,  
 Jar with the simpler scheme, if understood.  
 We want such intermediary race



To make communication possible ;  
 The real thing were too lofty, we too low,  
 Midway hang these : we feel their use so plain  
 In linking height to depth, that we doff hat  
 And put no question nor pry narrowly  
 Into the nature hid behind the names.  
 We grudge no rite the fancy may demand ;  
 But never, more than needs, invent, refine,  
 Improve upon requirement, idly wise  
 Beyond the letter, teaching gods their trade,  
 Which is to teach us : we 'll obey when taught.  
 Why should we do our duty past the need ?  
 When the sky darkens, Jove is wroth, — say  
 prayer !

When the sun shines and Jove is glad, — sing  
 psalm !

But wherefore pass prescription and devise  
 Blood-offering for sweat-service, lend the rod  
 A pungency through pickle of our own ?  
 Learned Abate, — no one teaches you  
 What Venus means and who's Apollo here !  
 I spare you, Cardinal, — but, though you wince,  
 You know me, I know you, and both know  
 that !

So, if Apollo bids us fast, we fast :  
 But where does Venus order we stop sense  
 When Master Pietro rhymes a pleasantry ?  
 Give alms prescribed on Friday, — but, hold  
 hand

Because your foe lies prostrate, — where's the  
 word

Explicit in the book debars revenge ?

The rationale of your scheme is just

"Pay toll here, there pursue your pleasure  
 free !"

So do you turn to use the medium-powers,  
 Mars and Minerva, Bacchus and the rest,  
 And so are saved propitiating — whom ?  
 What all-good, all-wise, and all-potent Jove  
 Vexed by the very sins in man, himself  
 Made life's necessity when man he made ?  
 Irrational bunglers ! So, the living truth  
 Revealed to strike Pan dead, ducks low at last,  
 Prays leave to hold its own and live good days  
 Provided it go masque grotesquely, called  
 Christian not Pagan. Oh, you purged the sky  
 Of all gods save the One, the great and good,  
 Clapped hands and triumphed ! But the change  
 came fast :

The inexorable need in man for life  
 (Life, you may mulet and minish to a grain  
 Out of the lump, so that the grain but live)  
 Laughed at your substituting death for life, —  
 And bade you do your worst : which worst was  
 done

In just that age styled primitive and pure  
 When Saint this, Saint that, dutifully starved,  
 Froze, fought with beasts, was beaten and abused  
 And finally riddled of his flesh by fire :  
 He kept life-long unspotted from the world ! —  
 Next age, how goes the game, what mortal gives  
 His life and emulates Saint that, Saint this ?  
 Men mutter, make excuse, or mutiny,  
 In fine are minded all to leave the new,  
 Stick to the old, — enjoy old liberty,  
 No prejudice in enjoyment, if you please,  
 To the new profession : sin o' the sly, hence-  
 forth !

The law stands though the letter kills : what  
 then ?

The spirit saves as unmistakably.

Omniscience sees, Omnipotence could stop,  
 Omnibenevolence pardons : it must be,  
 Frown law its fiercest, there's a wink some-  
 where !

Such was the logic in this head of mine :

I, like the rest, wrote "poison" on my bread,  
 But broke and ate : — said "Those that use the  
 sword

Shall perish by the same ;" then stabbed my  
 foe.

I stand on solid earth, not empty air :

Dislodge me, let your Pope's crook hale me  
 hence !

Not he, nor you ! And I so pity both,  
 I 'll make the true charge you want wit to  
 make :

"Count Guido, who reveal our mystery,  
 And trace all issues to the love of life :  
 We having life to love and guard, like you,  
 Why did you put us upon self-defence ?  
 You well knew what prompt pass-word would  
 appease

The sentry's ire when folk infringed his bounds,  
 And yet kept mouth shut : do you wonder then  
 If, in mere decency, he shot you dead ?

He can't have people play such pranks as yours  
 Beneath his nose at noonday : you disdained  
 To give him an excuse before the world

By crying 'I break rule to save our camp !'  
 Under the old rule, such offence were death ;  
 And you had heard the Pontifex pronounce,

'Since you slay foe and violate the form,  
 Slaying turns murder, which were sacrifice  
 Had you, while, say, lawsuiting foe to death,  
 But raised an altar to the Unknown God,  
 Or else the Genius of the Vatican.'

Why then this pother ? — all because the Pope,  
 Doing his duty, cried 'A foreigner,  
 You scandalize the natives : here at Rome  
*Romano vivitur more* : wise men, here,  
 Put the Church forward and efface themselves.  
 The fit defence had been, — you stamped on  
 wheat,

Intending all the time to trample tares, —  
 Were fain extirpate, then, the heretic,  
 You now find, in your haste was slain a fool :  
 Nor Pietro, nor Violante, nor your wife  
 Meant to breed up your babe a Molinist !  
 Whence you are duly contrite. N't one word  
 Of all this wisdom did you urge : which slip  
 Death must atone for."

So, let death atone !  
 So ends mistake, so end mistakers ! — end  
 Perhaps to recommence, — how should I know ?  
 Only, be sure, no punishment, no pain  
 Childish, preposterous, impossible,  
 But some such fate as Ovid could foresee, —  
*Byblis in fluvium*, let the weak soul end  
 In water, *sed Lycæon in lupum*, but  
 The strong become a wolf forevermore !  
 Change that Pompilia to a puny stream  
 Fit to reflect the daisies on its bank !  
 Let me turn wolf, be whole, and sate, for  
 once, —

Wallow in what is now a wolfishness  
Coerced too much by the humanity  
That 's half of me as well ! Grow out of man,  
(Glut the wolf-nature, — what remains but grow  
Into the man again, be man indeed  
And all man ? Do I ring the changes right ?  
Deformed, transformed, reformed, informed,  
conformed !

The honest instinct, pent and crossed through  
life,

Let surge by death into a visible flow  
Of rapture : as the strangled thread of flame  
Painfully winds, annoying and annoyed,  
Malignant and maligned, through stone and  
ore,

Till earth exclude the stranger : vented once,  
It finds full play, is recognized atop  
Some mountain as no such abnormal birth,  
Fire for the mount, not streamlet for the vale !  
Ay, of the water was that wife of mine —  
Be it for good, be it for ill, no run  
O' the red thread through that insignificance !  
Again, how she is at me with those eyes !  
Away with the empty stare ! Be holy still,  
And stupid ever ! Occupy your patch  
Of private snow that 's somewhere in what  
world

May now be growing icy round your head,  
And aguish at your footprint, — freeze not me,  
Dare follow not another step I take,  
Not with so much as those detested eyes,  
No, though they follow but to pray me pause  
(On the incline, earth's edge that 's next to hell !  
None of your abnegation of revenge !  
Fly at me frank, tug while I tear again !  
There 's God, go tell him, testify your worst !  
Not she ! There was no touch in her of hate :  
And it would prove her hell, if I reached mine !  
To know I suffered, would still sadden her,  
Do what the angels might to make amends !  
Therefore there 's either no such place as hell,  
Or thence shall I be thrust forth, for her sake,  
And thereby undergo three hells, not one —  
I who, with outlet for escape to heaven,  
Would tarry if such flight allowed my foe  
To raise his head, relieved of that firm foot  
Had pinned him to the fiery pavement else !  
So am I made, " who did not make myself : "  
(How dared she rob my own lip of the word ?)  
Beware me in what other world may be ! —  
Pompilia, who have brought me to this pass !  
All I know here, will I say there, and go  
Beyond the saying with the deed. Some use  
There cannot but be for a mood like mine,  
Implacable, persistent in revenge.  
She maundered, " All is over and at end :  
I go my own road, go you where God will !  
Forgive you ? I forget you ! " There 's the  
saint

That takes your taste, you other kind of men !  
How you had loved her ! Guido wanted skill  
To value such a woman at her worth !  
Properly the instructed criticise,  
" What 's here, you simpleton have tossed to  
take

Its chance i' the gutter ? This a daub, indeed ?  
Why, 't is a Rafael that you kicked to rags ! "  
Perhaps so : some prefer the pure design :

Give me my gorge of color, glut of gold  
In a glory round the Virgin made for me !  
Titian 's the man, not Monk Angelico  
Who traces you some timid chalky ghost  
That turns the church into a chancel : ay,  
Just such a pencil might depict my wife !  
She, — since she, also, would not change her-  
self, —

Why could not she come in some heart-shaped  
cloud,

Rainbowed about with riches, royalty  
Rimming her round, as round the tintless lawn  
Guardingly runs the selvage cloth of gold ?  
I would have left the faint fine gauze un-  
touched,

Needle-worked over with its lily and rose,  
Let her bleach unmolested in the midst,  
Chill that selected solitary spot  
Of quietude she pleased to think was life.  
Purity, pallor grace the lawn no doubt  
When there 's the costly bordure to unthread  
And make again an ingot : but what 's grace  
When you want meat and drink and clothes  
and fire ?

A tale comes to my mind that 's apposite —  
Possibly true, probably false, a truth  
Such as all truths we live by, Cardinal !  
'T is said, a certain ancestor of mine  
Followed — whoever was the potentate,  
To Paynimrie, and in some battle, broke  
Through more than due allowance of the foe,  
And, risking much his own life, saved the  
lord's.

Battered and bruised, the Emperor scrambles  
up,  
Rubs his eyes and looks round and sees my  
sire,

Picks a furze-sprig from out his hauberk-joint,  
(Token how near the ground went majesty,)  
And says, " Take this, and if thou get safe  
home,

Plant the same in thy garden-ground to grow :  
Run thence an hour in a straight line, and stop :  
Describe a circle round (for central point)  
The furze aforesaid, reaching every way  
The length of that hour's run : I give it  
thee, —

The central point, to build a castle there,  
The space circumjacent, for fit demesne,  
The whole to be thy children's heritage, —  
Whom, for the sake, bid thou wear furze on  
cap ! "

Those are my arms : we turned the furze a tree  
To show more, and the greyhound tied thereto,  
Straining to start, means swift and greedy  
both ;

He stands upon a triple mount of gold —  
By Jove, then, he 's escaping from true gold  
And trying to arrive at empty air !  
Aha ! the fancy never crossed my mind !  
My father used to tell me, and subjoin,  
" As for the castle, that took wings and flew :  
The broad lands, — why, to traverse them to-  
day

Scarce tasks my gouty feet, and in my prime  
I doubt not I could stand and spit so far :  
But for the furze, boy, fear no lack of that,

So long as fortune leaves one field to grub !  
Wherefore, hurrah for furze and loyalty !"  
What may I mean, where may the lesson lurk ?  
" Do not bestow on man, by way of gift,  
Furze without land for framework, — vaunt no  
grace

Of purity, no furze-sprig of a wife,  
To me, i' the thick of battle for my bread,  
Without some better dowry, — gold will do !"  
No better gift than sordid muck ? Yes, Sirs !  
Many more gifts much better. Give them me !  
O those Olympias bold, those Biancas brave,  
That brought a husband power worth Ormuz'  
wealth !

Cried, " Thou being mine, why, what but thine  
am I ?

Be thou to me law, right, wrong, heaven and  
hell !

Let us blend souls, blent, thou in me, to bid  
Two bodies work one pleasure ! What are these  
Called king, priest, father, mother, stranger,  
friend ?

They fret thee or they frustrate ? Give the  
word —

Be certain they shall frustrate nothing more !  
And who is this young florid foolishness  
That holds thy fortune in his pygmy clutch,  
— Being a prince and potency, forsooth ! —  
He hesitates to let the trifle go ?

Let me but seal up eye, sing ear to sleep  
Sounder than Samson, — pounce thou on the  
prize

Shall slip from off my breast, and down couch-  
side,

And on to floor, and far as my lord's feet —  
Where he stands in the shadow with the knife,  
Waiting to see what Delilah dares do !

Is the youth fair ? What is a man to me  
Who am thy call-bird ? Twist his neck — my  
dupe's, —

Then take the breast shall turn a breast  
indeed !"

Such women are there ; and they marry  
whom ?

Why, when a man has gone and hanged himself  
Because of what he calls a wicked wife, —  
See, if the very turpitude bemoaned  
Prove not mere excellence the fool ignores !  
His monster is perfection, — Circe, sent  
Straight from the sun, with wand the idiot  
blames

As not an honest distaff to spin wool !  
O thou Lucrezia, is it long to wait  
Yonder where all the gloom is in a glow  
With thy suspected presence ? — virgin yet,  
Virtuous again, in face of what's to teach —  
Sin unimagined, unimaginable, —  
I come to claim my bride, — thy Borgia's self  
Not half the burning bridegroom I shall be !  
Cardinal, take away your crucifix !

Abate, leave my lips alone, — they bite !  
Vainly you try to change what should not  
change,

And shall not. I have bared, you bathe my  
heart —

It grows the stonier for your saving dew !  
You steep the substance, you would lubricate,  
In waters that but touch to petrify !

You too are petrifications of a kind :  
Move not a muscle that shows mercy ; rave  
Another twelve hours, every word were waste !  
I thought you would not slay impenitence,  
But teased, from men you slew, contrition  
first, —

I thought you had a conscience. Cardinal,  
You know I am wronged ! — wronged, say, and  
wronged, maintain.

Was this strict inquisition made for blood  
When first you showed us scarlet on your back,  
Called to the College ? Your straightforward  
way

To your legitimate end, — I think it passed  
Over a scantling of heads brained, hearts broke,  
Lives trodden into dust ! — how otherwise ?  
Such was the way o' the world, and so you  
walked.

Does memory haunt your pillow ? Not a whit.  
God wills you never pace your garden-path,  
One appetizing hour ere dinner-time,  
But your intrusion there treads out of life  
A universe of happy innocent things :  
Feel you remorse about that damsel-fly  
Which buzzed so near your mouth and flapped  
your face ?

You blotted it from being at a blow :  
It was a fly, you were a man, and more,  
Lord of created things, so took your course.  
Manliness, mind, — these are things fit to save,  
Fit to brush fly from : why, because I take  
My course, must needs the Pope kill me ? —  
kill you !

You ! for this instrument, he throws away,  
Is strong to serve a master, and were yours  
To have and hold and get much good from out !  
The Pope who dooms me needs must die next  
year ;

I'll tell you how the chances are supposed  
For his successor : first the Chamberlain,  
Old San Cesario, — Colloredo, next, —  
Then, one, two, three, four, I refuse to name ;  
After these, comes Altieri ; then come you —  
Seventh on the list you come, unless . . . ha, ha,  
How can a dead hand give a friend a lift ?

Are you the person to despise the help  
O' the head shall drop in pannier presently ?  
So a child seesaws on or kicks away  
The fulcrum-stone that's all the sage requires  
To fit his lever to and move the world.  
Cardinal, I adjure you in God's name,  
Save my life, fall at the Pope's feet, set forth  
Things your own fashion, not in words like these  
Made for a sense like yours who apprehend !  
Translate into the Court-conventional  
" Count Guido must not die, is innocent !  
Fair, be assured ! But what an he were foul,  
Blood-drenched and murder-crust head to  
foot ?

Spare one whose death insults the Emperor,  
Nay, outrages the Louis you so love !  
He has friends who will avenge him ; enemies  
Who will hate God now with impunity,  
Missing the old coercive : would you send  
A soul straight to perdition, dying frank  
An atheist ?" Go and say this, for God's sake !  
— Why, you don't think I hope you'll say one  
word ?



Neither shall I persuade you from your stand  
Nor you persuade me from my station : take  
Your crucifix away, I tell you twice !

Come, I am tired of silence ! Pause enough !  
You have prayed : I have gone inside my soul  
And shut its door behind me : 't is your torch  
Makes the place dark : the darkness let alone  
Grows tolerable twilight : one may grope  
And get to guess at length and breadth and  
depth.

What is this fact I feel persuaded of —  
This something like a foothold in the sea,  
Although Saint Peter's bark scuds, billow-  
borne,

Leaves me to founder where it flung me first ?  
Spite of your splashing, I am high and dry !  
God takes his own part in each thing he made ;  
Made for a reason, he conserves his work,  
Gives each its proper instinct of defence.  
My lamblike wife could neither bark nor bite,  
She bleated, bleated, till for pity pure

The village roused up, ran with pole and prong  
To the rescue, and behold the wolf 's at bay !  
Shall he try bleating ? — or take turn or two,  
Since the wolf owns some kinship with the fox,  
And, failing to escape the foe by craft,  
Give up attempt, die fighting quietly ?  
The last bad blow that strikes fire in at eye  
And on to brain, and so out, life and all,

How can it but be cheated of a pang  
If, fighting quietly, the jaws enjoy  
One re-embrace in mid backbone they break,  
After their weary work through the foe's flesh ?  
That 's the wolf-nature. Don't mistake my  
trope !

A Cardinal so qualmish ? Eminence,  
My fight is figurative, blows i' the air,  
Brain-war with powers and principalities,  
Spirit-bravado, no real fisticuffs !  
I shall not presently, when the knock comes,  
Cling to this bench nor claw the hangman's face,  
No, trust me ! I conceive worse lots than mine.  
Whether it be, the old contagious fit  
And plague o' the prison have surprised me  
too,

The appropriate drunkenness of the death-hour  
Crept on my sense, kind work o' the wine and  
myrrh, —

I know not, — I begin to taste my strength,  
Careless, gay even. What 's the worth of life ?  
The Pope 's dead now, my murderous old man,  
For Tozzi told me so : and you, forsooth —  
Why, you don't think, Abate, do your best,  
You 'll live a year more with that hacking cough  
And blotch of crimson where the cheek 's a pit ?

Tozzi has got you also down in book !  
Cardinal, only seventh of seventy near,  
Is not one called Albano in the lot ?  
Go eat your heart, you 'll never be a Pope !  
Inform me, is it true you left your love,  
A Pucci, for promotion in the church ?  
She 's more than in the church — in the church-  
yard !

Plautilla Pucci, your affianced bride,  
Has dust now in the eyes that held the love, —  
And Martinez, suppose they make you Pope,  
Stops that with *veto*, — so, enjoy yourself !

I see you all reel to the rock, you waves —  
Some forthright, some describe a sinuous track,  
Some, crested brilliantly, with heads above,  
Some in a strangled swirl sunk who knows  
how,

But all bound whither the main-current sets  
Rockward, an end in foam for all of you !  
What if I be o'ertaken, pushed to the front  
By all you crowding smoother souls behind,  
And reach, a minute sooner than was meant,  
The boundary whereon I break to mist ?  
Go to ! the smoothest safest of you all,  
Most perfect and compact wave in my train,  
Spite of the blue tranquillity above,  
Spite of the breadth before of lapsing peace,  
Where broods the halcyon and the fish leaps  
free,

Will presently begin to feel the prick  
At lazy heart, the push at torpid brain,  
Will rock vertiginously in turn, and reel,  
And, emulative, rush to death like me.  
Later or sooner by a minute then,  
So much for the untimeliness of death !  
And, as regards the manner that offends,  
The rude and rough, I count the same for gain.  
Be the act harsh and quick ! Undoubtedly  
The soul 's condensed and, twice itself, expands  
To burst through life, by alternation due,  
Into the other state whate'er it prove.  
You never know what life means till you die :  
Even throughout life, 't is death that makes  
life live,

Gives it whatever the significance.  
For see, on your own ground and argument,  
Suppose life had no death to fear, how find  
A possibility of nobleness  
In man, prevented daring any more ?  
What 's love, what 's faith without a worst to  
dread ?

Lack-lustre jewelry ! but faith and love  
With death behind them bidding do or die —  
Put such a foil at back, the sparkle 's born !  
From out myself how the strange colors come !  
Is there a new rule in another world ?  
Be sure I shall resign myself : as here  
I recognized no law I could not see,  
There, what I see, I shall acknowledge too :  
On earth I never took the Pope for God,  
In heaven I shall scarce take God for the Pope  
Unmanned, remanned : I hold it probable —  
With something changeless at the heart of me  
To know me by, some nucleus that 's myself :  
Accretions did it wrong ? Away with them —  
You soon shall see the use of fire !

Till when,

All that was, is ; and must forever be.  
Nor is it in me to unhathe my hates, —  
I use up my last strength to strike once more  
Old Pietro in the wine-house-gossip-face,  
To trample underfoot the whine and wile  
Of beast Violante, — and I grow one gorge  
To loathingly reject Pompilia's pale  
Poison my hasty hunger took for food.  
A strong tree wants no wreaths about its trunk,  
No cloying cups, no sickly sweet of scent,  
But sustenance at root, a bucketful.  
How else lived that Athenian who died so,

Drinking hot bull's blood, fit for men like me ?  
I lived and died a man, and take man's chance,  
Honest and bold : right will be done to such.

Who are these you have let descend my stair ?  
Ha, their accursed psalm ! Lights at the sill !  
Is it "Open" they dare bid you ? Treachery !  
Sirs, have I spoken one word all this while  
Out of the world of words I had to say ?  
Not one word ! All was folly — I laughed and  
mocked !

Sirs, my first true word, all truth and no lie,  
Is — save me notwithstanding ! Life is all !  
I was just stark mad, — let the madman live  
Pressed by as many chains as you please pile !  
Don't open ! Hold me from them ! I am  
yours,

I am the Granduke's — no, I am the Pope's !  
Abate, — Cardinal, — Christ, — Maria, — God, . . .  
Pompilia, will you let them murder me ?

## XII

## THE BOOK AND THE RING

Here were the end, had anything an end :  
Thus, lit and launched, up and up roared and  
soared

A rocket, till the key o' the vault was reached,  
And wide heaven held, a breathless minute-  
space,

In brilliant usurpature : thus caught spark,  
Rushed to the height, and hung at full of fame  
Over men's upturned faces, ghastly thence,  
Our glaring Guido : now decline must be.  
In its explosion, you have seen his act,  
By my power — maybe, judged it by your  
own, —

Or composite as good orbs prove, or crammed  
With worse ingredients than the Wormwood  
Star.

The act, over and ended, falls and fades :  
What was once seen, grows what is now de-  
scribed,

Then talked or, told about, a tinge the less  
In every fresh transmission ; till it melts,  
Trickles in silent orange or wan gray  
Across our memory, dies and leaves all dark,  
And presently we find the stars again.  
Follow the main streaks, meditate the mode  
Of brightness, how it hastes to blend with  
black !

After that February Twenty Two,  
Since our salvation, Sixteen Ninety Eight,  
Of all reports that were, or may have been,  
Concerning those the day killed or let live,  
Four I count only. Take the first that comes.  
A letter from a stranger, man of rank,  
Venetian visitor at Rome, — who knows,  
On what pretence of busy idleness ?  
Thus he begins on evening of that day.

"Here are we at our end of Carnival ;  
Prodigious gayety and monstrous mirth,

And constant shift of entertaining show :  
With influx, from each quarter of the globe,  
Of strangers nowise wishful to be last  
I' the struggle for a good place presently  
When that befalls fate cannot long defer.  
The old Pope totters on the verge o' the grave :  
You see, Malpichi understood far more  
Than Tozzi how to treat the ailments : age,  
No question, renders these inveterate.  
Cardinal Spada, actual Minister,  
Is possible Pope ; I wager on his head,  
Since those four entertainments of his niece  
Which set all Rome a-stare : Pope probably —  
Though Colloredo has his backers too,  
And San Cesario makes one doubt at times :  
Altieri will be Chamberlain at most.

"A week ago the sun was warm like May,  
And the old man took daily exercise  
Along the river-side ; he loves to see  
That Custom-house he built upon the bank,  
For, Naples-born, his tastes are maritime :  
But yesterday he had to keep in-doors  
Because of the outrageous rain that fell.  
On such days the good soul has fainting-fits,  
Or lies in stupor, scarcely makes believe  
Of minding business, fumbles at his beads.  
They say, the trust that keeps his heart alive  
Is that, by lasting till December next,  
He may hold Jubilee a second time,  
And, twice in one reign, ope the Holy Doors.  
By the way, somebody responsible  
Assures me that the King of France has writ  
Fresh orders : Fénelon will be condemned :  
The Cardinal makes a wry face enough,  
Having a love for the delinquent : still,  
He's the ambassador, must press the point.  
Have you a wager too, dependent here ?

"Now, from such matters to divert awhile,  
Hear of to-day's event which crowns the week,  
Casts all the other wagers into shade.  
Tell Dandolo I owe him fifty drops  
Of heart's blood in the shape of gold zecchines !  
The Pope has done his worst : I have to pay  
For the execution of the Count, by Jove !  
Two days since, I reported him as safe,  
Re-echoing the conviction of all Rome :  
Who could suspect its one deaf ear — the  
Pope's ?

But prejudices grow insuperable,  
And that old enmity to Austria, that  
Passion for France and France's pageant-king  
(Of which, why pause to multiply the proofs  
Now scandalously rife in Europe's mouth ?)  
These fairly got the better in our man  
Of justice, prudence, and *esprit de corps*,  
And he persisted in the butchery.  
Also, 't is said that in his latest walk  
To that Dogana-by-the-Bank he built,  
The crowd, — he suffers question, unrebuked, —  
Asked, 'Whether murder was a privilege  
Only reserved for nobles like the Count ?'  
And he was ever mindful of the mob.  
Martinez, the Cæsarean Minister,  
— Who used his best endeavors to spare blood,  
And strongly pleaded for the life 'of one,'  
Urged he, 'I may have dined at table with !' —

He will not soon forget the Pope's rebuff,  
 — Feels the slight sensibly, I promise you !  
 And but for the dissuasion of two eyes  
 That make with him foul weather or fine day,  
 He had abstained, nor graced the spectacle :  
 As it was, barely would he condescend  
 Look forth from the *palchetto* where he sat  
 Under the Pincian : we shall hear of this !  
 The substituting, too, the People's Square  
 For the out-o'-the-way old quarter by the  
 Bridge,

Was meant as a conciliatory sop  
 To the mob ; it gave one holiday the more.  
 But the French Embassy might unfurl flag, —  
 Still the good luck of France to fling a foe !  
 Cardinal Bouillon triumphs properly !  
*Palchetti* were erected in the Place,  
 And houses, at the edge of the Three Streets,  
 Let their front windows at six dollars each :  
 Anguisciola, that patron of the arts,  
 Hired one ; our Envoys Contarini too.

" Now for the thing ; no sooner the decree  
 Gone forth, — 't is four-and-twenty hours ago, —  
 Than Acciaiuoli and Panciatichi,  
 Old friends, indeed compatriots of the man,  
 Being pitched on as the couple properest  
 To intimate the sentence yesternight,  
 Were closeted ere cock-crow with the Count.  
 They both report their efforts to dispose  
 The unhappy nobleman for ending well,  
 Despite the natural sense of injury,  
 Were crowned at last with a complete success.  
 And when the Company of Death arrived  
 At twenty - hours, — the way they reckon  
 here, —

We say, at sunset, after dinner-time, —  
 The Count was led down, hoisted up on car,  
 Last of the five, as heinouslest, you know :  
 Yet they allowed one whole car to each man.  
 His intrepidity, nay, nonchalance,  
 As up he stood and down he sat himself,  
 Struck admiration into those who saw.  
 Then the procession started, took the way  
 From the New Prisons by the Pilgrim's Street,  
 The street of the Governo, Pasquin's Street,  
 (Where was stuck up, 'mid other epigrams,  
 A quatrain . . . but of all that, presently !)  
 The Place Navona, the Pantheon's Place,  
 Place of the Column, last the Corso's length,  
 And so debouched thence at Mannaia's foot  
 I' the Place o' the People. As is evident,  
 (Despite the malice, — plainly meant, I fear,  
 By this abrupt change of locality, —  
 The Square 's no such bad place to head and  
 hang)

We had the titillation as we sat  
 Assembled, (quality in conclave, ha ?)  
 Of, minute after minute, some report  
 How the slow show was winding on its way.  
 Now did a car run over, kill a man,  
 Just opposite a pork-shop numbered Twelve :  
 And bitter were the outcries of the mob  
 Against the Pope : for, but that he forbids  
 The Lottery, why, Twelve were Tern Qua-  
 terry !

Now did a beggar by Saint Agnes, lame  
 From his youth up, recover use of leg,

Through prayer of Guido as he glanced that  
 way :  
 So that the crowd near crammed his hat with  
 coin.

Thus was kept up excitement to the last,  
 — Not an abrupt out-bolting, as of yore,  
 From Castle, over Bridge and on to block,  
 And so all ended ere you well could wink !

" To mount the scaffold-steps, Guido was last  
 Here also, as atrociouslest in crime.  
 We hardly noticed how the peasants died,  
 They dangled somehow soon to right and left,  
 And we remained all ears and eyes, could give  
 Ourselves to Guido undividedly,  
 As he harangued the multitude beneath.  
 He begged forgiveness on the part of God,  
 And fair construction of his act from men,  
 Whose suffrage he entreated for his soul,  
 Suggesting that we should forthwith repeat  
 A *Pater* and an *Ave*, with the hymn  
*Salve Regina Celi*, for his sake.

Which said, he turned to the confessor, crossed  
 And reconciled himself, with decency,  
 Oft glancing at Saint Mary's opposite,  
 Where they possess, and showed in shrine to-  
 day,

The blessed *Umbilicus* of our Lord,  
 (A relic 't is believed no other church  
 In Rome can boast of) — then rose up, as brisk  
 Knelt down again, bent head, adapted neck,  
 And, with the name of Jesus on his lips,  
 Received the fatal blow.

" The headsman showed  
 The head to the populace. Must I avouch  
 We strangers own to disappointment here ?  
 Report pronounced him fully six feet high,  
 Youngish, considering his fifty years,  
 And, if not handsome, dignified at least.  
 Indeed, it was no face to please a wife !  
 His friends say, this was caused by the cos-  
 tume :

He wore the dress he did the murder in,  
 That is, a *just-a-corps* of russet serge,  
 Black camisole, coarse cloak of baracan  
 (So they style here the garb of goat's-hair  
 cloth),

White hat and cotton cap beneath, poor Count,  
 Preservative against the evening dews  
 During the journey from Arezzo. Well,  
 So died the man, and so his end was peace ;  
 Whence many a moral were to meditate.  
 Spada — you may bet Dandolo — is Pope !  
 Now for the quatrain !"

No, friend, this will do !  
 You've sputtered into sparks. What streak  
 comes next ?

A letter : Don Giacinto Arcangeli,  
 Doctor and Proctor, him I made you mark  
 Buckle to business in his study late,  
 The virtuous sire, the valiant for the truth,  
 Acquaints his correspondent, — Florentine,  
 By name Cencini, advocate as well,  
*Socius* and brother-in-the-devil to match, —  
 A friend of Franceschini, anyhow,



And knit up with the bowels of the case, —  
 Acquaints him (in this paper that I touch)  
 How their joint effort to obtain reprieve  
 For Guido had so nearly nicked the nine  
 And ninety and one over, — folk would say,  
 At Tarocs, — or succeeded, — in our phrase.  
 To this Cencini's care I owe the Book,  
 The yellow thing I take and toss once more, —  
 How will it be, my four-years'-intimate,  
 When thou and I part company anon? —  
 'T was he, the "whole position of the case,"  
 Pleading and summary, were put before;  
 Discreetly in my Book he bound them all,  
 Adding some three epistles to the point.  
 Here is the first of these, part fresh as penned,  
 The sand, that dried the ink, not rubbed away,  
 Though penned the day whereof it tells the  
 deed:

Part — extant just as plainly, you know where,  
 Whence came the other stuff, went, you know  
 how,  
 To make the Ring that's all but round and  
 done.

"Late they arrived, too late, egregious Sir,  
 Those same justificative points you urge  
 Might benefit His Blessed Memory  
 Count Guido Franceschini now with God:  
 Since the Court, — to state things succinctly, —  
 styled

The Congregation of the Governor,  
 Having resolved on Tuesday last our cause  
 I' the guilty sense, with death for punishment,  
 Spite of all pleas by me deducible  
 In favor of said Blessed Memory, —  
 I, with expenditure of pains enough,  
 Obtained a respite, leave to claim and prove  
 Exemption from the law's award, — alleged  
 The power and privilege o' the Clericate:  
 To which effect a courier was dispatched.  
 But ere an answer from Arezzo came,  
 The Holiness of our Lord the Pope (prepare!)  
 Judging it inexpedient to postpone  
 The execution of such sentence passed,  
 Saw fit, by his particular chirograph,  
 To derogate, dispense with privilege,  
 And wink at any hurt accruing thence  
 To Mother Church through damage of her son:  
 Also, to overpass and set aside  
 That other plea on score of tender age,  
 Put forth by me to do Pasquini good,  
 One of the four in trouble with our friend.  
 So that all five, to-day, have suffered death  
 With no distinction save in dying, — he,  
 Decollate by mere due of privilege,  
 The rest hanged decently and in order. Thus  
 Came the Count to his end of gallant man,  
 Defunct in faith and exemplarity:  
 Nor shall the shield of his great House lose  
 shine

Thereby, nor its blue banner blush to red.  
 This, too, should yield sustainment to our  
 hearts —

He had commiseration and respect  
 In his decease from universal Rome,  
*Quantum est hominum venustiorum,*  
 The nice and cultivated everywhere:

Though, in respect of me his advocate,  
 Needs must I groan o'er my debility,  
 Attribute the untoward event o' the strife  
 To nothing but my own crass ignorance  
 Which failed to set the valid reasons forth,  
 Find fit excuse: such is the fate of war!  
 May God compensate us the direful blow  
 By future blessings on his family,  
 Whereof I lowly beg the next commands;  
 — Whereeto, as humbly, I confirm myself" . . .

And so forth, — follow name and place and  
 date.

On next leaf —

"*Hactenus senioribus!*

There, old fox, show the clients t' other side  
 And keep this corner sacred, I beseech!  
 You and your pleas and proofs were what folk  
 call

Pisan assistance, aid that comes too late,  
 Saves a man dead as nail in post of door.  
 Had I but time and space for narrative!  
 What was the good of twenty Clericates  
 When Somebody's thick headpiece once was  
 bent

On seeing Guido's drop into the bag?  
 How these old men like giving youth a push!  
 So much the better: next push goes to him,  
 And a new Pope begins the century.  
 Much good I get by my superb defence!  
 But argument is solid and subsists,  
 While obstinacy and ineptitude  
 Accompany the owner to his tomb;  
 What do I care how soon? Beside, folks see!  
 Rome will have relished heartily the show,  
 Yet understood the motives, never fear,  
 Which caused the indecent change o' the Peo-  
 ple's Place

To the People's Playground, — stigmatize the  
 spit

Which in a trice precipitated things!  
 As oft the moribund will give a kick  
 To show they are not absolutely dead,  
 So feebleness i' the socket shoots its last,  
 A spirit of violence for energy!

"But thou, Cencini, brother of my breast,  
 O fox, whose home is 'mid the tender grape,  
 Whose couch in Tuscany by Themis' throne,  
 Subject to no such . . . best I shut my mouth  
 Or only open it again to say,  
 This pother and confusion fairly laid,  
 My hands are empty and my satchel lank.  
 Now then for both the Matrimonial Cause  
 And the case of Gomez! Serve them hot and  
 hot!

"*Reliqua differamus in crastinum!*

The impatient estafette cracks whip outside:  
 Still, though the earth should swallow him  
 who swears

And me who make the mischief, in must slip  
 My boy, your godson, fat-chaps Hyacinth,  
 Enjoyed the sight while Papa plodded here.  
 I promised him, the rogue, a month ago,  
 The day his birthday was, of all the days.  
 That if I failed to save Count Guido's head,  
 Cinuccio should at least go see it chopped

From trunk — 'So, latinize your thanks !'  
 quoth I,  
 'That I prefer, *hoc malim*,' raps me out  
 The rogue : you notice the subjunctive ? Ah !  
 Accordingly he sat there, bold in box,  
 Proud as the Pope behind the peacock-fans :  
 Whereon a certain lady-patroness  
 For whom I manage things (my boy in front,  
 Her Marquis sat the third in evidence ;  
 Boys have no eyes nor ears save for the show)  
 'This time, *Cintino*,' was her sportive word,  
 When whizz and thump went axe and mowed  
 lay man,

And folk could fall to the suspended chat,  
 'This time, you see, Bottini rules the roast,  
 Nor can Papa with all his eloquence  
 Be reckoned on to help as heretofore !'  
 Whereat Cinone pouts ; then, sparkishly —  
 'Papa knew better than aggrieve his Pope,  
 And balk him of his grudge against our Count,  
 Else he'd have argued-off Bottini's' . . .  
 what ?

'His nose,' — the rogue ! well parried of the  
 boy !

He's long since out of Cæsar (eight years old)  
 And as for tripping in Eutropius . . . well,  
 Reason the more that we strain every nerve  
 To do him justice, mould a model-mouth,  
 A Bartolus-cum-Baldo for next age :  
 For that I purse the pieces, work the brain,  
 And want both Gomez and the marriage-case,  
 Success with which shall plaster aught of pate  
 That's broken in me by Bottini's flail,  
 And bruise his own, belike, that wags and  
 brags.

*Adverti supplico humiliter*

*Quod*, don't the fungus see, the fop divine  
 That one hand drives two horses, left and  
 right ?

With this reign did I rescue from the ditch  
 The fortune of our Franceschini, keep  
 Unsplashed the credit of a noble House,  
 And set the fashionable cause at Rome  
 A-prancing till bystanders shouted 'ware !'  
 The other rein's judicious management  
 Suffered old Somebody to keep the pace,  
 Hobblingly play the roadster : who but he  
 Had his opinion, was not led by the nose  
 In leash of quibbles strung to look like law !  
 You'll soon see, — when I go to pay devoir  
 And compliment him on confuting me, —  
 If, by a back-swing of the pendulum,  
 Grace be not, thick and threefold, consequent.  
 'I must decide as I see proper, Don !  
 I'm Pope, I have my inward lights for guide.  
 Had learning been the matter in dispute,  
 Could eloquence avail to gainsay fact,  
 Yours were the victory, be comforted !'  
 Cinuzzo will be gainer by it all.  
 Quick then with Gomez, hot and hot next  
 case !"

Follows, a letter, takes the other side.  
 Tall blue-eyed Fise whose head is capped with  
 cloud,  
 Doctor Bottini, — to no matter who,  
 Writes on the Monday two days afterward.

Now shall the honest championship of right,  
 Crowned with success, enjoy at last, unblamed,  
 Moderate triumph ! Now shall eloquence  
 Poured forth in fancied floods for virtue's sake,  
 (The print is sorrowfully dyked and dammed,  
 But shows where tain the unbridled force  
 would flow,  
 Finding a channel) — now shall this refresh  
 The thirsty donor with a drop or two !  
 Here has been truth at issue with a lie :  
 Let who gained truth the day have handsome  
 pride  
 In his own prowess ! Eh ? What ails the  
 man ?

"Well, it is over, ends as I foresaw :  
 Easily proved, Pompilia's innocence !  
 Catch them entrusting Guido's guilt to me  
 Who had, as usual, the plain truth to plead,  
 I always knew the clearness of the stream  
 Would show the fish so thoroughly, child might  
 prong

The clumsy monster : with no mud to splash,  
 Small credit to lynx-eye and lightning-spear !  
 This Guido — (much sport he contrived to  
 make,

Who at first twist, preamble of the cord,  
 Turned white, told all, like the poltroon he  
 was !) —

Finished, as you expect, a penitent,  
 Fully confessed his crime, and made amends,  
 And, edifying Rome last Saturday,  
 Died like a saint, poor devil ! That's the man  
 The gods still give to my antagonist :  
 Imagine how Arcangeli claps wing  
 And crows ! 'Such formidable facts to face,  
 So naked to attack, my client here,  
 And yet I kept a month the Fise at bay,  
 And in the end had foiled him of the prize  
 By this arch-stroke, this plea of privilege,  
 But that the Pope must gratify his whim,  
 Put in his word, poor old man, — let it pass !'  
 — Such is the cue to which all Rome responds.  
 What with the plain truth given me to uphold,  
 And, should I let truth slip, the Pope at hand  
 To pick up, steady her on legs again,  
 My office turns a pleasantry indeed !  
 Not that the burly boaster did one jot  
 O' the little was to do — young Spreti's work !  
 But for him, — manikin and dandiprat,  
 Mere candle-end and inch of cleverness  
 Stuck on Arcangeli's save-all, — but for him  
 The spruce young Spreti, what is bad were  
 worse !

"I looked that Rome should have the natural  
 gird  
 At advocate with ease that proves itself ;  
 I knew Arcangeli would grin and brag ;  
 But what say you to one impertinence  
 Might move a stone ? That monk, you are to  
 know,  
 That barefoot Augustinian whose report  
 O' the dying woman's words did detriment  
 To my best points it took the freshness from,  
 — That meddler preached to purpose yesterday  
 At San Lorenzo as a winding-up

O' the show which proved a treasure to the church.

Out comes his sermon smoking from the press :  
Its text — ' Let God be true, and every man  
A liar ' — and its application, this,  
The longest-winded of the paragraphs,  
I straight unstitch, tear out and treat you  
with :

'Tis piping hot and posts through Rome to-day.

Remember it, as I engage to do !

" But if you rather be disposed to see  
in the result of the long trial here, —  
This dealing doom to guilt and doling praise  
To innocency, — any proof that truth  
May look for vindication from the world,  
Much will you have misread the signs, I say.  
God, who seems acquiescent in the main  
With those who add ' So will he ever sleep ' —  
Flutters their foolishness from time to time,  
Puts forth his right-hand recognizably ;  
Even as, to fools who deem he needs must right  
Wrong on the instant, as if earth were heaven,  
He wakes remonstrance — ' Passive, Lord,  
how long ? '

Because Pompilia's purity prevails,  
Conclude you, all truth triumphs in the end ?  
So might those old inhabitants of the ark,  
Witnessing haply their dove's safe return,  
Pronounce there was no danger, all the while  
O' the deluge, to the creature's counterparts,  
Aught that beat wing i' the world, was white  
or soft, —

And that the lark, the thrush, the culver too,  
Might equally have traversed air, found earth,  
And brought back olive-branch in unharmed  
bill.

Methinks I hear the Patriarch's warning  
voice —

' Though this one breast, by miracle, return,  
No wave rolls by, in all the waste, but bears  
Within it some dead dove-like thing as dear,  
Beauty made blank and harmlessness de-  
stroyed ! '

How many chaste and noble sister-fames  
Wanted the extricating hand, so lie  
Strangled, for one Pompilia proud above  
The welter, plucked from the world's calumny,  
Stupidity, simplicity, — who cares ?

" Romans ! An elder race possessed your land  
Long ago, and a false faith lingered still,  
As shades do, though the morning-star be out.  
Doubtless some pagan of the twilight-day  
Has often pointed to a cavern-mouth,  
Obnoxious to beholders, hard by Rome,  
And said, — nor he a bad man, no, nor fool, —  
Only a man born blind like all his mates, —  
' Here skulk in safety, lurk, defying law,  
The devotees to execrable creed,  
Adoring — with what culture . . . Jove, avert  
Thy vengeance from us worshippers of  
thee ! . . .

What rites obscene — their idol-god an Ass !'  
So went the word forth, so acceptance found,  
So century re-echoed century,

Cursed the accursed, — and so, from sire to  
son,

You Romans cried, ' The offscourings of our  
race,

Corrupt within the depths there : fitly fiends  
Perform a temple-service o'er the dead :  
Child, gather garment round thee, pass nor  
pry ! '

Thus groaned your generations : till the time  
Grew ripe, and lightning had revealed, belike, —  
Through crevice peeped into by curious fear, —  
Some object even fear could recognize

I' the place of spectres ; on the illumined wall,  
To wit, some nook, tradition talks about,  
Narrow and short, a corpse's length, no more :  
And by it, in the due receptacle,

The little rude brown lamp of earthenware,  
The cruse, was meant for flowers, but now held  
blood,

The rough-scratched palm-branch, and the  
legend left

*Pro Christo*. Then the mystery lay clear :  
The abhorred one was a martyr all the time,  
Heaven's saint whereof earth was not worthy.  
What ?

Do you continue in the old belief ?  
Where blackness bides unbroke, must devils  
brood ?

Is it so certain not another cell  
O' the myriad that make up the catacomb,  
Contains some saint a second flash would show ?  
Will you ascend into the light of day  
And, having recognized a martyr's shrine,  
Go join the votaries that gape around  
Each vulgar god that awes the market-place ?  
Are these the objects of your praising ? See !  
In the outstretched right hand of Apollo, there,  
Lies screened a scorpion : housed amid the  
folds

Of Juno's mantle lurks a centipede !  
Each statue of a god were fittier styled  
Demon and devil. Glorify no brass  
That shines like burnished gold in noonday  
glare,

For fools ! Be otherwise instructed, you !  
And preferably ponder, ere ye judge,  
Each incident of this strange human play  
Privily acted on a theatre  
That seemed secure from every gaze but  
God's, —

Till, of a sudden, earthquake laid wall low  
And let the world perceive wild work inside,  
And how, in petrification of surprise,  
The actors stood, — raised arm and planted  
foot, —

Mouth as it made, eye as it evidenced,  
Despairing shriek, triumphant hate, — trans-  
fixed.

Both he who takes and she who yields the life.

" As ye become spectators of this scene —  
Watch obscuration of a pearl-pure fame  
By vapory films, enwoven circumstance,  
— A soul made weak by its pathetic want  
Of just the first apprenticeship to sin,  
Which thenceforth makes the sinning soul  
secure

From all foes save itself, soul's truest foe, —



Since egg turned snake needs fear no serpentry, —

As ye behold this web of circumstance  
Deepen the more for every thrill and throe,  
Convulsive effort to disperse the films  
And disenmesh the fame o' the martyr, — mark  
How all those means, the unfriended one pursues,

To keep the treasure trusted to her breast,  
Each struggle in the flight from death to life,  
How all, by procurement of the powers  
Of darkness, are transformed, — no single ray,  
Shot forth to show and save the inmost star,  
But, passed as through hell's prism, proceeding  
black

To the world that hates white : as ye watch, I say,

Till dusk and such defacement grow eclipse  
By — marvellous perversity of man ! —  
The inadequacy and inaptitude  
Of that selfsame machine, that very law  
Man vaunts, devised to dissipate the gloom,  
Rescue the drowning orb from calumny,  
— Hear law, appointed to defend the just,  
Submit, for best defence, that wickedness  
Was bred of flesh and innate with the bone  
Borne by Pompilia's spirit for a space,  
And no mere chance fault, passionate and  
brief :

Finally, when ye find, — after this touch  
Of man's protection which intends to mar  
The last pin-point of light and damn the disc, —  
One wave of the hand of God amid the worlds  
Bid vapor vanish, darkness flee away,  
And let the vexed star culminate in peace  
Approachable no more by earthly mist —  
What I call God's hand, — you, perhaps, —  
mere chance

Of the true instinct of an old good man  
Who happens to hate darkness and love light, —  
In whom too was the eye that saw, not dim,  
The natural force to do the thing he saw,  
Nowise abated, — both by miracle, —  
All this well pondered, — I demand assent  
To the enunciation of my text  
In face of one proof more that ' God is true  
And every man a liar ' — that who trusts  
To human testimony for a fact  
Gets this sole fact — himself is proved a fool ;  
Man's speech being false, if but by consequence  
That only strength is true ! while man is weak,  
And, since truth seem reserved for heaven not  
earth,

Plagued here by earth's prerogative of lies,  
Should learn to love and long for what, one  
day,  
Approved by life's probation, he may speak.

" For me, the weary and worn, who haply  
prompt

To mirth or pity, as I move the mood, —  
A friar who glides unnoticed to the grave,  
With these bare feet, coarse robe and rope-girt  
waist, —

I have long since renounced your world, ye  
know :

Yet what forbids I weigh the prize foregone,  
The worldly worth ? I dare, as I were dead,

Disinterestedly judge this and that  
Good ye account good : but God tries the heart.  
Still, if you question me of my content  
At having put each human pleasure by,  
I answer, at the urgency of truth :

As this world seems, I dare not say I know  
— Apart from Christ's assurance which de-  
cides —

Whether I have not failed to taste much joy.  
For many a doubt will fain perturb my choice —  
Many a dream of life spent otherwise —  
How human love, in varied shapes, might work  
As glory, or as rapture, or as grace :  
How conversancy with the books that teach,  
The arts that help, — how, to grow good and  
great,

Rather than simply good, and bring thereby  
Goodness to breathe and live, nor born, i' the  
brain,

Die there, — how these and many another gift  
Of life are precious though abjured by me.  
But, for one prize, best meed of mightiest man,  
Arch-object of ambition, — earthly praise,  
Repute o' the world, the flourish of loud trump,  
The softer social fluting, — Oh, for these,  
— No, my friends ! Fame, — that bubble which,  
world-wide

Each blows and bids his neighbor lend a breath,  
That so he haply may behold thereon  
One more enlarged distorted false fool's-face,  
Until some glassy nothing grown as big  
Send by a touch the imperishable to suds, —  
No, in renouncing fame, my loss was light,  
Choosing obscurity, my chance was well ! "

Didst ever touch such ampollosity  
As the monk's own bubble, let alone its spite ?  
What's his speech for, but just the fame he  
flouts ?

How he dares reprehend both high and low,  
Nor stoops to turn the sentence " God is true  
And every man a liar — save the Pope  
Happily reigning — my respects to him ! "  
And so round off the period. Molinism  
Simple and pure ! To what pitch get we next ?  
I find that, for first pleasant consequence,  
Gomez, who had intended to appeal  
From the absurd decision of the Court,  
Declines, though plain enough his privilege,  
To call on help from lawyers any more —  
Resolves earth's liars may possess the world,  
Till God have had sufficiency of both :  
So may I whistle for my job and fee !

But, for this virulent and rabid monk, —  
If law be an inadequate machine,  
And advocacy, froth and impotence,  
We shall soon see, my blatant brother ! That's  
Exactly what I hope to show your sort !  
For, by a veritable piece of luck,  
The providence, you monks round period with,  
All may be gloriously retrieved. Perpend !  
That Monastery of the Convertites  
Whereto the Court consigned Pompilia first,  
— Observe, if convertite, why, sinner then,  
Or what's the pertinency of award ? —  
And whither she was late returned to die,

— Still in their jurisdiction, mark again ! —  
That thrifty Sisterhood, for perquisite,  
Claims every piece whereof may die possessed  
Each sinner in the circuit of its walls.  
Now, this Pompilia seeing that, by death  
O' the couple, all their wealth devolved on her,  
Straight utilized the respite ere decease,  
By regular conveyance of the goods  
She thought her own, to will and to devise, —  
Gave all to friends, Tighetti and the like,  
In trust for him she held her son and heir,  
Gaetano, — trust which ends with infancy :  
So willing and devising, since assured  
The justice of the court would presently  
Confirm her in her rights and exculpate,  
Re-integrate and rehabilitate —  
Place her as, through my pleading, now she  
stands.

But here 's the capital mistake : the Court  
Found Guido guilty, — but pronounced no word  
About the innocence of his wife :  
I grounded charge on broader base, I hope !  
No matter whether wife be true or false,  
The husband must not push aside the law,  
And punish of a sudden : that 's the point :  
Gather from out my speech the contrary !  
It follows that Pompilia, unrelieved  
By formal sentence from imputed fault,  
Remains unfit to have and to dispose  
Of property which law provides shall lapse :  
Wherefore the Monastery claims its due.  
And whose, pray, whose the office, but the Fisc's ?  
Who but I institute procedure next  
Against the person of dishonest life,  
Pompilia, whom last week I sainted so ?  
I it is teach the monk what scripture means,  
And that the tongue should prove a two-edged  
sword,

No axe sharp one side, blunt the other way,  
Like what amused the town at Guido's cost !  
*Astræa redux !* I 've a second chance  
Before the selfsame Court o' the Governor  
Who soon shall see volte-face and chop, change  
sides.

Accordingly, I charge you on your life,  
Send me with all dispatch the judgment late  
O' the Florence Rota Court, confirmative  
O' the prior judgment at Arezzo, clenched  
Again by the Granducal signature,  
Wherein Pompilia is convicted, doomed,  
And only destined to escape through flight  
The proper punishment. Send me the piece. —  
I 'll work it ! And this foul-mouthed friar  
shall find

His Noah's-dove that brought the olive back  
Turn into quite the other sooty scout,  
The raven, Noah first put forth the ark,  
Which never came back, but ate carcasses !  
No adequate machinery in law ?  
No power of life and death i' the learned  
tongue ?

Methinks I am already at my speech,  
Startle the world with " Thou, Pompilia, thus ?  
How is the fine gold of the Temple dim ! "  
And so forth. But the courier bids me close,  
And clip away one joke that runs through  
Rome,  
Side by side with the sermon which I send.

How like the heartlessness of the old hunks  
Arcangeli ! His Count is hardly cold,  
The client whom his blunders sacrificed,  
When somebody must needs describe the  
scene —

How the procession ended at the church  
That boasts the famous relic : quoth our brute,  
" Why, that 's just Martial's phrase for 'make  
an end ' —

*Ad umbilicum sic perventum est ! "*  
The callous dog, — let who will cut off head,  
He cuts a joke, and cares no more than so !  
I think my speech shall modify his mirth :  
" How is the fine gold dim ! " — but send the  
piece !

Alack, Bottini, what is my next word  
But death to all that hope ? The Instrument  
Is plain before me, print that ends my Book  
With the definitive verdict of the Court,  
Dated September, six months afterward,  
(Such trouble and so long the old Pope gave !)  
" In restitution of the perfect fame  
Of dead Pompilia, *quondam* Guido's wife,  
And warrant to her representative  
Domenico Tighetti, barred hereby,  
While doing duty in his guardianship,  
From all molesting, all disquietude,  
Each perturbation and vexation brought  
Or threatened to be brought against the heir  
By the Most Venerable Convent called  
Saint Mary Magdalen o' the Convertites  
I' the Corso."

Justice done a second time !  
Well judged, Marc Antony, *Locum-tenens*  
O' the Governor, a Venturini too !  
For which I save thy name, — last of the list !

Next year but one, completing his nine years  
Of rule in Rome, died Innocent my Pope  
— By some account, on his accession-day.  
If he thought doubt would do the next age  
good,

'T is pity he died unapprised what birth  
His reign may boast of, be remembered by —  
Terrible Pope, too, of a kind, — Voltaire.

And so an end of all i' the story. Strain  
Never so much my eyes, I miss the mark  
If lived or died that Gaetano, child  
Of Guido and Pompilia : only find,  
Immediately upon his father's death,  
A record, in the annals of the town —  
That Porzia, sister of our Guido, moved  
The Priors of Arezzo and their head  
Its Gonfalonier to give loyally  
A public attestation of the right  
O' the Franceschini to all reverence —  
Apparently because of the incident  
O' the murder, — there 's no mention made o'  
the crime,

But what else could have caused such urgency  
To cure the mob, just then, of greediness  
For scandal, love of lying vanity,  
And appetite to swallow crude reports  
That bring annoyance to their betters ? — bane  
Which, here, was promptly met by antidote.  
I like and shall translate the eloquence

Of nearly the worst Latin ever writ :  
 " Since antique time whereof the memory  
 Holds the beginning, to this present hour,  
 The Franceschini ever shone, and shine  
 Still i' the primary rank, supreme amid  
 The lustres of Arezzo, proud to own  
 In this great family, the flag-bearer,  
 Guide of her steps and guardian against foe, —  
 As in the first beginning, so to-day ! "  
 There, would you disbelieve the annalist,  
 Go rather by the babble of a bard ?  
 I thought, Arezzo, thou hadst fitter souls,  
 Petrarch, — nay, Buonarroti at a pinch,  
 To do thee credit as *verillifer* !  
 Was it mere mirth the Patavinian meant,  
 Making thee out, in his voracious page,  
 Founded by Janus of the Double Face ?

Well, proving of such perfect parentage,  
 Our Gaetano, born of love and hate,  
 Did the babe live or die ? I fain would find !  
 What were his fancies if he grew a man ?  
 Was he proud, — a true scion of the stock  
 Which bore the blazon, shall make bright my  
 page —  
 Shield, Azure, on a Triple Mountain, Or,  
 A Palm-tree, Proper, whereunto is tied  
 A Greyhound, Rampant, striving in the slips ?  
 Or did he love his mother, the base-born,  
 And fight i' the ranks, unnoticed by the  
 world ?

Such, then, the final state o' the story. So  
 Did the Star Wornwood in a blazing fall  
 Frighten awhile the waters and lie lost.  
 So did this old woe fade from memory :  
 Till after, in the fulness of the days,  
 I needs must find an ember yet unquenched,  
 And, breathing, blow the spark to flame. It  
 lives,  
 If precious be the soul of man to man.

So, British Public, who may like me yet,  
 (Marry and amen !) learn one lesson hence  
 Of many which whatever lives should teach :  
 This lesson, that our human speech is naught,  
 Our human testimony false, our fame  
 And human estimation words and wind.  
 Why take the artistic way to prove so much ?  
 Because, it is the glory and good of Art,  
 That Art remains the one way possible  
 Of speaking truth, to mouths like mine at least.  
 How look a brother in the face and say,  
 " Thy right is wrong, eyes hast thou yet art  
 blind ;  
 Thine ears are stuffed and stopped, despite their  
 length :  
 And, oh, the foolishness thou countest faith ! "  
 Say this as silverly as tongue can troll —  
 The anger of the man may be endured,

The shrug, the disappointed eyes of him  
 Are not so bad to bear — but here 's the plague  
 That all this trouble comes of telling truth,  
 Which truth, by when it reaches him, looks  
 false,

Seems to be just the thing it would supplant,  
 Nor recognizable by whom it left :  
 While falsehood would have done the work of  
 truth.

But Art, — wherein man nowise speaks to men,  
 Only to mankind, — Art may tell a truth  
 Obliquely, do the thing shall breed the thought,  
 Nor wrong the thought, missing the mediate  
 word.

So may you paint your picture, twice show  
 truth,

Beyond mere imagery on the wall, —  
 So, note by note, bring music from your mind,  
 Deeper than ever e'en Beethoven dived, —  
 So write a book shall mean beyond the facts,  
 Suffice the eye and save the soul beside.

And save the soul ! If this intent save mine, —  
 If the rough ore be rounded to a ring,  
 Render all duty which good ring should do,  
 And, failing grace, succeed in guardianship, —  
 Might mine but lie outside thine, Lyric Love,  
 Thy rare gold ring of verse (the poet praised)  
 Linking our England to his Italy !

## HELEN'S TOWER

Written at the request of the Earl of Dufferin  
 and Clandeboye, who had built a tower to the  
 memory of his mother, Helen, Countess of  
 Giffard, on a rock on his estate at Clandeboye,  
 Ireland, and printed in the *Pall Mall Gazette* of  
 December 28, 1883.

WHO hears of Helen's Tower, may dream per-  
 chance  
 How the Greek Beauty from the Scæan Gate  
 Gazed on old friends unanimous in hate,  
 Death-doom'd because of her fair countenance.

Hearts would leap otherwise, at thy advance,  
 Lady, to whom this Tower is consecrate !  
 Like hers, thy face once made all eyes elate,  
 Yet, unlike hers, was bless'd by every glance.

The Tower of Hate is outworn, far and strange :  
 A transitory shame of long ago,  
 It dies into the sand from which it sprang ;  
 But thine, Love's rock-built Tower, shall fear  
 no change :  
 God's self laid stable earth's foundation so,  
 When all the morning-stars together sang.  
*April 26, 1870.*



## BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE

INCLUDING

A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURIPIDES

---

"Our Euripides, the Human,  
With his droppings of warm tears,  
And his touches of things common  
Till they rose to touch the spheres."

---

TO THE COUNTESS COWPER

IF I mention the simple truth, that this poem absolutely owes its existence to you, — who not only suggested, but imposed on me as a task, what has proved the most delightful of May-month amusements, — I shall seem honest, indeed, but hardly prudent; for, how good and beautiful ought such a poem to be!

Euripides might fear little; but I, also, have an interest in the performance; and what wonder if I beg you to suffer that it make, in another and far easier sense, its nearest possible approach to those Greek qualities of goodness and beauty, by laying itself gratefully at your feet?

R. B.

LONDON, July 23, 1871.

AFTER the publication of the fourth volume of *The Ring and the Book* in February, 1869, Browning published nothing until March, 1871, when he printed *Hervé Riel* in the *Cornhill Magazine*, afterward including it in his first new volume of collected poems. In August of the same year appeared the first of his larger ventures in the field of Greek life. This poem was followed four years later by *Aristophanes'*

*Apology*, and it is so intimately connected with *Balaustion's Adventure* that in this edition it is made to follow it, though the chronological sequence was broken, as will be seen, by the composition and publication of other considerable works. The motto at the head of the poem is from Mrs. Browning, and in the last lines of the poem Browning couples her with his friend Sir Frederick Leighton.

ABOUT that strangest, saddest, sweetest song  
I, when a girl, heard in Kameiros once,  
And, after, saved my life by? Oh, so glad  
To tell you the adventure!

Petalé,  
Phullis, Charopé, Chrusion! You must know,  
This "after" fell in that unhappy time  
When poor reluctant Nikias, pushed by fate,  
Went faltering against Syracuse;  
And there shamed Athens, lost her ships and  
men,

And gained a grave, or death without a grave.  
I was at Rhodes — the isle, not Rhodes the  
town,

Mine was Kameiros — when the news arrived:  
Our people rose in tumult, cried, "No more  
Duty to Athens, let us join the League  
And side with Sparta, share the spoil, — at  
worst,

Abjure a headship that will ruin Greece!"  
And so, they sent to Knidos for a fleet  
To come and help revolvers. Ere help came, —  
Girl as I was, and never out of Rhodes  
The whole of my first fourteen years of life,  
But nourished with Ilissian mother's-milk, —  
I passionately cried to who would hear

And those who loved me at Kameiros — "No!  
Never throw Athens off for Sparta's sake —  
Never disloyal to the life and light  
Of the whole world worth calling world at all!  
Rather go die at Athens, lie outstretched  
For feet to trample on, before the gate  
Of Diomedes or the Hippadai,  
Before the temples and among the tombs,  
Than tolerate the grim felicity  
Of harsh Lakonia! Ours the fasts and feasts,  
Choës and Chutroi; ours the sacred grove,  
Agora, Dikasteria, Poikilé,  
Pnux, Keramikos; Salamis in sight,  
Psuttalia, Marathon itself, not far!  
Ours the great Dionusiæc theatre,  
And tragic triad of immortal fames,  
Aischulos, Sophokles, Euripides!  
To Athens, all of us that have a soul,  
Follow me!" And I wrought so with my  
prayer,

That certain of my kinsfolk crossed the strait  
And found a ship at Kaunos; well-disposed  
Because the Captain — where did he draw  
breath  
First but within Psuttalia? Thither fled  
A few like-minded as ourselves. We turned

The glad prow westward, soon were out at sea,  
Pushing, brave ship with the vermilion cheek,  
Proud for our heart's true harbor. But a wind  
Lay ambushed by Point Malea of bad fame,  
And leapt out, bent us from our course. Next  
day

Broke stormless, so broke next blue day and  
next.

"But whither bound in this white waste?"  
we plagued

The pilot's old experience: "Cos or Crete?"

Because he promised us the land ahead.

While we strained eyes to share in what he saw,  
The Captain's shout startled us; round we  
rushed:

What hung behind us but a pirate-ship

Panting for the good prize! "Row! harder  
row!

Row for dear life!" the Captain cried: "'t is  
Crete,

Friendly Crete looming large there! Beat this  
craft

That's but a keles, one-benched pirate-bark,

Lokrian, or that bad breed off Thessaly!

Only, so cruel are such water-thieves,

No man of you, no woman, child, or slave,

But falls their prey, once let them board our  
boat!"

So, furiously our oarsmen rowed and rowed:

And when the oars flagged somewhat, dash and  
dip,

As we approached the coast and safety, so

That we could hear behind us plain the threats

And curses of the pirate panting up

In one more throe and passion of pursuit,—

Seeing our oars flag in the rise and fall,

I sprang upon the altar by the mast

And sang aloft—some genius prompting me—

That song of ours which saved at Salamis:

"O sons of Greeks, go, set your country free,

Free your wives, free your children, free the  
fanés

O the Gods, your fathers founded,—sep-  
ulchres

They sleep in! Or save all, or all be lost!"

Then, in a frenzy, so the noble oars

Churned the black water white, that well away

We drew, soon saw land rise, saw hills grow  
up,

Saw spread itself a sea-wide town with towers,

Not fifty stadia distant; and, betwixt

A large bay and a small, the islet-bar,

Even Ortugia's self—oh, luckless we!

For here was Sicily and Syracuse:

We ran upon the lion from the wolf.

Ere we drew breath, took counsel, out there  
came

A galley, hailed us. "Who asks entry here

In war-time? Are you Sparta's friend or  
foe?"

"Kaunians,"—our Captain judged his best  
reply,

"The mainland-seaport that belongs to Rhodes;

Rhodes that casts in her lot now with the  
League,

Forsaking Athens,—you have heard belike!"

"Ay, but we heard all Athens in one ode

Just now! we heard her in that Aischulos!

You bring a boatful of Athenians here,  
Kaunians although you be: and prudence bids,  
For Kaunos' sake, why, carry them unhurt  
To Kaunos, if you will: for Athens' sake,  
Back must you, though ten pirates blocked the  
bay!

We want no colony from Athens here,

With memories of Salamis, forsooth,

To spirit up our captives, that pale crowd

! the quarry, whom the daily pint of corn

Keeps in good order and submissiveness."

Then the gray Captain prayed them by the  
Gods,

And by their own knees, and their fathers'  
beards,

They should not wickedly thrust suppliants  
back,

But save the innocent on traffic bound—

Or, maybe, some Athenian family

Perishing of desire to die at home,—

From that vile foe still lying on its oars,

Waiting the issue in the distance. Vain!

Words to the wind! And we were just about

To turn and face the foe, as some tired bird

Barbarians pelt at, drive with shouts away

From shelter in what rocks, however rude,

She makes for, to escape the kindled eye,

Split beak, crook'd claw o' the creature, cormo-  
rant

Or ossifrage, that, hardly baffled, hangs

Afloat i' the foam, to take her if she turn.

So were we at destruction's very edge,

When those o' the galley, as they had discussed

A point, a question raised by somebody,

A matter mooted in a moment,— "Wait!"

Cried they (and wait we did, you may be sure).

"That song was veritable Aischulos,

Familiar to the mouth of man and boy,

Old glory: how about Euripides?

The newer and not yet so famous bard,

He that was born upon the battle-day

While that song and the salpinx sounded him

Into the world, first sound, at Salamis—

Might you know any of his verses too?"

Now, some one of the Gods inspired this speech:  
Since ourselves knew what happened but last  
year—

How, when Gulippos gained his victory

Over poor Nikias, poor Demosthenes,

And Syracuse condemned the conquered force

To dig and starve i' the quarry, branded

them—

Freeborn Athenians, brute-like in the front

With horse-head brands,—ah, "Region of  
the Steed"!—

Of all these men immersed in misery,

It was found none had been advantaged so

By aught in the past life he used to prize

And pride himself concerning,—no rich man

By riches, no wise man by wisdom, no

Wiser man still (as who loved more the Muse)

By storing, at brain's edge and tip of tongue,

Old glory, great plays that had long ago

Made themselves wings to fly about the  
world,—

Not one such man was helped so at his need

As certain few that (wisest they of all)

Had, at first summons, oped heart, flung door wide

At the new knocking of Euripides,  
Nor drawn the bolt with who cried "Decadence!"

And, after Sophokles, be nature dumb!"  
Such, — and I see in it God Bacchos' boon  
To souls that recognized his latest child,  
He who himself, born latest of the Gods,  
Was stoutly held impostor by mankind, —  
Such were in safety: any who could speak  
A chorus to the end, or prologize,  
Roll out a rhesis, wield some golden length  
Stiffened by wisdom out into a line,  
Or thrust and parry in bright monostich,  
Teaching Euripides to Syracuse —  
Any such happy man had prompt reward:  
If he lay bleeding on the battlefield  
They stanch'd his wounds and gave him drink  
and food;

If he were slave i' the house, for reverence  
They rose up, bowed to who proved master  
now,

And bade him go free, thank Euripides!  
Ay, and such did so: many such, he said,  
Returning home to Athens, sought him out,  
The old bard in the solitary house,  
And thanked him ere they went to sacrifice.  
I say, we knew that story of last year!

Therefore, at mention of Euripides,  
The Captain crowed out, "Euoï, praise the  
God!"

Oöp, boys, bring our owl-shield to the fore!  
Out with our Sacred Anchor! Here she  
stands,

Balaustion! Strangers, greet the lyric girl!  
Euripides! Babai! what a word there 'scaped  
Your teeth's enclosure, quoth my grandsire's  
song!

Why, fast as snow in Thrace, the voyage  
through,

Has she been falling thick in flakes of him!  
Frequent as figs at Kaunos, Kaunians said.  
Balaustion, stand forth and confirm my speech!  
Now it was some whole passion of a play;  
Now, peradventure, but a honey-drop  
That slipt its comb i' the chorus. If there rose  
A star, before I could determine steer  
Southward or northward — if a cloud surprised  
Heaven, ere I fairly holla'd 'Furl the sail!' —  
She had at fingers' end both cloud and star;  
Some thought that perched there, tame and  
tunable,

Fitted with wings; and still, as off it flew,  
'So sang Euripides,' she said, 'so sang  
The meteoric poet of air and sea,  
Planets and the pale populace of heaven,  
The mind of man, and all that's made to soar!'  
And so, although she has some other name,  
We only call her Wild-pomegranate-flower,  
Balaustion; since, where'er the red bloom burns  
I' the dull dark verdure of the bounteous tree,  
Dethroning, in the Rosy Isle, the rose,  
You shall find food, drink, odor, all at once;  
Cool leaves to bind about an aching brow,  
And, never much away, the nightingale.  
Sing them a strophe, with the turn-again,

Down to the verse that ends all, proverb-like,  
And save us, thou Balaustion, bless the  
name!"

But I cried, "Brother Greek! better than so, —  
Save us, and I have courage to recite  
The main of a whole play from first to last;  
That strangest, saddest, sweetest song of his,  
ALKESTIS; which was taught, long years ago  
At Athens, in Glaukinos' archonship,  
But only this year reached our Isle o' the Rose.  
I saw it at Kameiros; played the same,  
They say, as for the right Lenean feast  
In Athens; and beside the perfect piece —  
Its beauty and the way it makes you weep, —  
There is much honor done your own loved God  
Herakles, whom you house i' the city here  
Nobly, the Temple wide Greece talks about!  
I come a suppliant to your Herakles!  
Take me and put me on his temple-steps,  
To tell you his achievement as I may,  
And, that told, he shall bid you set us free!"

Then, because Greeks are Greeks, and hearts  
are hearts,

And poetry is power, — they all outbroke  
In a great joyous laughter with much love:  
"Thank Herakles for the good holiday!  
Make for the harbor! Row, and let voice  
ring,

'In we row, bringing more Euripides!'"  
All the crowd, as they lined the harbor now,  
"More of Euripides!" — took up the cry.  
We landed; the whole city, soon astir,  
Came rushing out of gates in common joy  
To the suburb temple; there they stationed me  
O' the topmost step: and plain I told the play,  
Just as I saw it; what the actors said,  
And what I saw, or thought I saw the while,  
At our Kameiros theatre, clean-scooped  
Out of a hillside, with the sky above  
And sea before our seats in marble row:  
Told it, and, two days more, repeated it,  
Until they sent us on our way again  
With good words and great wishes.

Oh, for me —  
A wealthy Syracusan brought a whole  
Talent and bade me take it for myself:  
I left it on the tripod in the fane,  
— For had not Herakles a second time  
Wrestled with Death and saved devoted ones? —  
Thank-offering to the hero. And a band  
Of captives, whom their lords grew kinder to  
Because they called the poet countryman,  
Sent me a crown of wild-pomegranate-flower:  
So, I shall live and die Balaustion now.  
But one — one man — one youth, — three days,  
each day, —

(If, ere I lifted up my voice to speak,  
I gave a downward glance by accident.)  
Was found at foot o' the temple. When we  
sailed,

There, in the ship too, was he found as well,  
Having a hunger to see Athens too.  
We reached Peiraieus; when I landed — lo,  
He was beside me. Anthesterion-month  
Is just commencing: when its moon rounds full,  
We are to marry. O Euripides!



I saw the master: when we found ourselves  
(Because the young man needs must follow me)  
Firm on Peiraieus, I demanded first  
Whither to go and find him. Would you think?  
The story how he saved us made some smile:  
They wondered strangers were exorbitant  
In estimation of Euripides.

He was not Aischulos nor Sophokles:  
—"Then, of our younger bards who boast the  
bay,

Had I sought Agathon, or Iophon,  
Or, what now had it been Kephisophon?  
A man that never kept good company,  
The most unsociable of poet-kind,  
All beard that was not freckle in his face!"

I soon was at the tragic house, and saw  
The master, held the sacred hand of him  
And laid it to my lips. Men love him not:  
How should they? Nor do they much love his  
friend

Sokrates: but those two have fellowship:  
Sokrates often comes to hear him read,  
And never misses if he teach a piece.  
Both, being old, will soon have company,  
Sit with their peers above the talk. Meantime,  
He lives as should a statue in its niche;  
Cold walls enclose him, mostly darkness there,  
Alone, unless some foreigner uncouth  
Breaks in, sits, stares an hour, and so departs,  
Brain-stuffed with something to sustain his life,  
Dry to the marrow 'mid much merchandise.  
How should such know and love the man?

Why, mark!

Even when I told the play and got the praise,  
There spoke up a brisk little somebody,  
Critic and whippersnapper, in a rage  
To set things right: "The girl departs from  
truth!

Pretends she saw what was not to be seen,  
Making the mask of the actor move, forsooth!  
'Then a fear flitted o'er the wife's white face,'—  
'Then frowned the father,'—then the husband  
shook,'—

'Then from the festal forehead slipt each spray,  
And the heroic mouth's gay grace was gone;'—  
As she had seen each naked fleshly face,  
And not the merely-painted mask it wore!"  
Well, is the explanation difficult?

What's poetry except a power that makes?  
And, speaking to one sense, inspires the rest,  
Pressing them all into its service; so  
That who sees painting, seems to hear as well  
The speech that's proper for the painted mouth;  
And who hears music, feels his solitude  
Peopled at once—for how count heartbeats  
plain

Unless a company, with hearts which beat,  
Come close to the musician, seen or no?  
And who receives true verse at eye or ear,  
Takes in (with verse) time, place, and person too,  
So, links each sense on to its sister-sense,  
Grace-like: and what if but one sense of three  
Front you at once? The sidelong pair conceive  
Through faintest touch of finest finger-tips, —  
Hear, see and feel, in faith's simplicity,  
Alike, what one was sole recipient of:  
Who hears the poem, therefore, sees the play.

Enough and too much! Hear the play itself!  
Under the grape-vines, by the streamlet-side,  
Close to Baccheion; till the cool increase,  
And other stars steal on the evening-star,  
And so, we homeward flock i' the dusk, we  
five!

You will expect, no one of all the words  
O' the play but is grown part now of my soul,  
Since the adventure. 'Tis the poet speaks:  
But if I, too, should try and speak at times,  
Leading your love to where my love, perchance,  
Climbed earlier, found a nest before you knew —  
Why, bear with the poor climber, for love's  
sake!

Look at Baccheion's beauty opposite,  
The temple with the pillars at the porch!  
See you not something beside masonry?  
What if my words wind in and out the stone  
As yonder ivy, the God's parasite?  
Though they leap all the way the pillar leads,  
Festoon about the marble, foot to frieze,  
And serpentiningly enrich the roof,  
Toy with some few bees and a bird or two, —  
What then? The column holds the cornice  
up!

There slept a silent palace in the sun,  
With plains adjacent and Thessalian peace —  
Pherai, where King Admetos ruled the land.

Out from the portico there gleamed a God,  
Apollon: for the bow was in his hand,  
The quiver at his shoulder, all his shape  
One dreadful beauty. And he hailed the house,  
As if he knew it well and loved it much:  
"O Admetean domes, where I endured,  
Even the God I am, to drudge awhile,  
Do righteous penance for a reckless deed,  
Accepting the slaves' table thankfully!"  
Then told how Zeus had been the cause of all,  
Raising the wrath in him which took revenge  
And slew those forgers of the thunderbolt  
Wherewith Zeus blazed the life from out the  
breast

Of Phoibos' son Asklepios (I surmise,  
Because he brought the dead to life again),  
And so, for punishment, must needs go slave,  
God as he was, with a mere mortal lord:  
—Told how he came to King Admetos' land,  
And played the ministrant, was herdsman there,  
Warding all harm away from him and his  
Till now; "For, holy as I am," said he,  
"The lord I chanced upon was holy too:  
Whence I deceived the Moirai, drew from death  
My master, this same son of Pheres, — ay,  
The Goddesses conceded him escape  
From Hades, when the fated day should fall,  
Could he exchange lives, find some friendly one  
Ready, for his sake, to content the grave.  
But trying all in turn, the friendly list,  
Why, he found no one, none who loved so much,  
Nor father, nor the aged mother's self  
That bore him, no, not any save his wife,  
Willing to die instead of him and watch  
Never a sunrise nor a sunset more:  
And she is even now within the house,  
Upborne by pitying hands, the feeble frame

Gasping its last of life out ; since to-day  
Destiny is accomplished, and she dies,  
And I, lest here pollution light on me,  
Leave, as ye witness, all my wonted joy  
In this dear dwelling. Ay, — for here comes  
Death

Close on us of a sudden ! who, pale priest  
Of the mute people, means to bear his prey  
To the house of Hades. The symmetric step !  
How he treads true to time and place and thing,  
Dogging day, hour and minute, for death's-  
due ! ”

And we observed another Deity,  
Half in, half out the portal, — watch and ward, —  
Eying his fellow : formidably fixed,  
Yet faltering too at who affronted him,  
As somehow disadvantaged, should they strive.  
Like some dread heapy blackness, ruffled wing,  
Convulsed and cowering head that is all eye,  
Which proves a ruined eagle who, too blind  
Swooping in quest o' the quarry, fawn or kid,  
Desired deep down the chasm 'twixt rock and

rock,  
Has wedged and mortised, into either wall  
O' the mountain, the pent earthquake of his  
power ;

So lies, half hurtless yet still terrible,  
Just when — who stalks up, who stands front  
to front,

But the great lion-guarder of the gorge,  
Lord of the ground, a stationed glory there !  
Yet he too pauses ere he try the worst  
O' the frightful unfamiliar nature, new  
To the chasm, indeed, but elsewhere known  
enough,

Among the shadows and the silences  
Above i' the sky : so, each antagonist  
Silently faced his fellow and forbore,  
Till Death shrilled, hard and quick, in spite  
and fear :

“ Ha, ha, and what mayst thou do at the  
domes,  
Why hauntest here, thou Phoibos ? Here  
again

At the old injustice, limiting our rights,  
Balking of honor due us Gods o' the grave ?  
Was 't not enough for thee to have delayed  
Death from Admetos, — with thy crafty art  
Cheating the very Fates, — but thou must arm  
The bow-hand and take station, press 'twixt  
me

And Pelias' daughter, who then saved her  
spouse, —

Did just that, now thou comest to undo, —  
Taking his place to die, Alkestis here ? ”

But the God sighed, “ Have courage ! All my  
arms,  
This time, are simple justice and fair words.”

Then each plied each with rapid interchange :

“ What need of bow, were justice arms  
enough ? ”

“ Ever it is my wont to bear the bow.”

“ Ay, and with bow, not justice, help this  
house ! ”

“ I help it, since a friend's woe weighs me too.”

“ And now, — wilt force from me this second  
corpse ? ”

“ By force I took no corpse at first from thee.”

“ How then is he above ground, not beneath ? ”

“ He gave his wife instead of him, thy prey.”

“ And prey, this time at least, I bear below ! ”

“ Go take her ! — for I doubt persuading  
thee . . . ”

“ To kill the doomed one ? What my function  
else ? ”

“ No ! Rather, to dispatch the true mature.”

“ Truly I take thy meaning, see thy drift ! ”

“ Is there a way then she may reach old age ? ”

“ No way ! I glad me in my honors too ! ”

“ But, young or old, thou tak'st one life, no  
more ! ”

“ Younger they die, greater my praise re-  
dounds ! ”

“ If she die old, — the sumptuous funeral ! ”

“ Thou layest down a law the rich would like.”

“ How so ? Did wit lurk there and 'scape thy  
sense ? ”

“ Who could buy substitutes would die old  
men.”

“ It seems thou wilt not grant me, then, this  
grace ? ”

“ This grace I will not grant : thou know'st  
my ways.”

“ Ways harsh to men, hateful to Gods, at  
least ! ”

“ All things thou canst not have : my rights  
for me ! ”

And then Apollon prophesied, — I think,  
More to himself than to impatient Death,  
Who did not hear or would not heed the  
while, —

For he went on to say, “ Yet even so,  
Cruel above the measure, thou shalt clutch  
No life here ! Such a man do I perceive  
Advancing to the house of Pheres now,  
Sent by Eurustheus to bring out of Thrace,  
The winter world, a chariot with its steeds !

He indeed, when Admetos proves the host,  
And he the guest, at the house here, — he it is  
Shall bring to bear such force, and from thy  
hands

Rescue this woman! Grace no whit to me  
Will that prove, since thou dost thy deed the  
same,  
And earnest too my hate, and all for naught!"

But how should Death or stay or understand?  
Doubtless, he only felt the hour was come,  
And the sword free; for he but flung some  
taunt —

"Having talked much, thou wilt not gain the  
more!"

This woman, then, descends to Hades' hall  
Now that I rush on her, begin the rites  
O' the sword; for sacred, to us Gods below,  
That head whose hair this sword shall  
sanctify!"

And, in the fire-flash of the appalling sword,  
The uprush and the outburst, the onslaught  
Of Death's portentous passage through the door,  
Apollon stood a pitying moment-space:  
I caught one last gold gaze upon the night  
Nearing the world now: and the God was  
gone,

And mortals left to deal with misery,  
As in came stealing slow, now this, now that  
Old sojourner throughout the country-side,  
Servants grown friends to those unhappy here:  
And, cloudblike in their increase, all these  
griefs

Broke and began the over-brimming wail,  
Out of a common impulse, word by word.

"What now may mean the silence at the door?"

Why is Admetos' mansion stricken dumb?

Not one friend near, to say if we should mourn

Our mistress dead, or if Alkestis lives

And sees the light still, Pelias' child — to me,

To all, conspicuously the best of wives

That ever was toward husband in this world!

Hears any one or wail beneath the roof,

Or hands that strike each other, or the groan

Announcing all is done and naught to dread?

Still not a servant stationed at the gates!

O Paian, that thou wouldst dispart the wave

O' the woe, be present! Yet, had woe o'er-

whelmed

The housemates, they were hardly silent thus:

It cannot be, the dead is forth and gone,

Whence comes thy gleam of hope? I dare not

hope:

What is the circumstance that heartens thee?

How could Admetos have dismissed a wife

So worthy, unescorted to the grave?

Before the gates I see no hallowed vase

Of fountain-water, such as suits death's door;

Nor any clipt locks strew the vestibule,

Though surely these drop when we grieve the

dead,

Nor hand sounds smitten against youthful

hand,

The women's way. And yet — the appointed

time —

How speak the word? — this day is even the day

Ordned her for departing from its light.

O touch calamitous to heart and soul!

Needs must one, when the good are tortured so,  
Sorrow, — one reckoned faithful from the  
first."

Then their souls rose together, and one sigh

Went up in cadence from the common mouth:

How "Vainly — anywhither in the world

Directing or land-labor or sea-search —

To Lukia or the sand-waste, Ammon's seat —

Might you set free their hapless lady's soul

From the abrupt Fate's footstep instant now.

Not a sheep-sacrificer at the hearths

Of Gods had they to go to: one there was

Who, if his eyes saw light still, — Phoibos'

son, —

Had wrought so, she might leave the shadowy

place

And Hades' portal: for he propped up Death's

Subdued ones, till the Zeus-flung thunder-

flame

Struck him; and now what hope of life were

hailed

With open arms? For, all the king could do

Is done already, — not one God whereof

The altar fails to reek with sacrifice:

And for assuagement of these evils — naught!"

But here they broke off, for a matron moved

Forth from the house: and, as her tears flowed

fast,

They gathered round. "What fortune shall we

hear?

For mourning thus, if aught affect thy lord,

We pardon thee: but lives the lady yet

Or has she perished? — that we fain would

know!"

"Call her dead, call her living, each style

serves,"

The matron said: "though grave-ward bowed,

she breathed;

Nor knew her husband what the misery meant

Before he felt it: hope of life was none:

The appointed day pressed hard; the funeral

pomp

He had prepared too."

When the friends broke out,

"Let her in dying know herself at least

Sole wife, of all the wives 'neath the sun wide,

For glory and for goodness!" — "Ah, how else

Than best? who controverts the claim?" quoth

she:

"What kind of creature should the woman

prove

That has surpassed Alkestis? — surelier shown

Preference for her husband to herself

Than by determining to die for him?

But so much all our city knows indeed:

Hear what she did indoors and wonder then!

For, when she felt the crowning day was come,

She washed with river-waters her white skin,

And, taking from the cedar closets forth

Vesture and ornament, bedecked herself

Nobly, and stood before the hearth, and prayed:

'Mistress, because I now depart the world,

Falling before thee the last time, I ask —



Be mother to my orphans! wed the one  
 To a kind wife, and make the other's mate  
 Some princely person: nor, as I who bore  
 My children perish, suffer that they too  
 Die all untimely, but live, happy pair,  
 Their full glad life out in the fatherland!'  
 And every altar through Admetos' house  
 She visited and crowned and prayed before,  
 Stripping the myrtle-foliage from the boughs,  
 Without a tear, without a groan, — no change  
 At all to that skin's nature, fair to see,  
 Caused by the imminent evil. But this done, —  
 Reaching her chamber, falling on her bed,  
 There, truly, burst she into tears and spoke:  
 'O bride-bed, where I loosened from my life  
 Virginity for that same husband's sake  
 Because of whom I die now — fare thee well!  
 Since nowise do I hate thee: me alone  
 Hast thou destroyed; for, shrinking to betray  
 Thee and my spouse, I die: but thee, O bed,  
 Some other woman shall possess as wife —  
 Truer, no! but of better fortune, say!'  
 — So falls on, kisses it till all the couch  
 Is moistened with the eyes' sad overflow.  
 But when of many tears she had her fill,  
 She flings from off the couch, goes headlong  
 forth,

Yet — forth the chamber — still keeps turning  
 back

And casts her on the couch again once more.  
 Her children, clinging to their mother's robe,  
 Wept meanwhile: but she took them in her  
 arms,

And, as a dying woman might, embraced  
 Now one and now the other: 'neath the roof,  
 All of the household servants wept as well,  
 Moved to compassion for their mistress; she  
 Extended her right hand to all and each,  
 And there was no one of such low degree  
 She spoke not to nor had an answer from.  
 Such are the evils in Admetos' house.  
 Dying, — why, he had died; but, living, gains  
 Such grief as this he never will forget!"

And when they questioned of Admetos,  
 "Well —

Holding his dear wife in his hands, he weeps;  
 Entreats her not to give him up, and seeks  
 The impossible, in fine: for there she wastes  
 And withers by disease, abandoned now,  
 A mere dead weight upon her husband's arm.  
 Yet, none the less, although she breathe so  
 faint,

Her will is to behold the beams o' the sun:  
 Since never more again, but this last once,  
 Shall she see sun, its circler or its ray.  
 But I will go, announce your presence, —  
 friends

Indeed; since 't is not all so love their lords  
 As seek them in misfortune, kind the same:  
 But you are the old friends I recognize."

And at the word she turned again to go:  
 The while they waited, taking up the plaint  
 To Zeus again: "What passage from this  
 strait?"

What loosing of the heavy fortune fast  
 About the palace? Will such help appear,

Or must we clip the locks and cast around  
 Each form already the black peplos' fold?  
 Clearly the black robe, clearly! All the same,  
 Pray to the Gods! — like Gods' no power so  
 great!

O thou king Paian, find some way to save!  
 Reveal it, yea, reveal it! Since of old  
 Thou found'st a cure, why, now again become  
 Releaser from the bonds of Death, we beg,  
 And give the sanguinary Hades pause!"  
 So the song dwindled into a mere moan,  
 How dear the wife, and what her husband's  
 woe;

When suddenly —

"Behold, behold!" breaks forth:  
 "Here is she coming from the house indeed!  
 Her husband comes, too! Cry aloud, lament,  
 Pheraïan land, this best of women, bound —  
 So is she withered by disease away —  
 For realms below and their infernal king!  
 Never will we affirm there's more of joy  
 Than grief in marriage; making estimate  
 Both from old sorrows anciently observed,  
 And this misfortune of the king we see —  
 Admetos who, of bravest spouse bereaved,  
 Will live life's remnant out, no life at all!"

So wailed they, while a sad procession wound  
 Slow from the innermost o' the palace, stopped  
 At the extreme verge of the platform-front:  
 There opened, and disclosed Alkestis' self,  
 The consecrated lady, borne to look  
 Her last — and let the living look their last —  
 She at the sun, we at Alkestis.

We!

For would you note a memorable thing?

We grew to see in that severe regard, —  
 Hear in that hard dry pressure to the point,  
 Word slow pursuing word in monotone, —  
 What Death meant when he called her conse-  
 crate

Henceforth to Hades. I believe, the sword —  
 Its office was to cut the soul at once  
 From life, — from something in this world  
 which hides

Truth, and hides falsehood, and so lets us live  
 Somehow. Suppose a rider furls a cloak  
 About a horse's head; unfrightened, so,  
 Between the menace of a flame, between  
 Solicitation of the pasturage,  
 Untempted equally, he goes his gait  
 To journey's end: then pluck the pharos off!  
 Show what delusions steadied him i' the straight  
 O' the path, made grass seem fire and fire  
 seem grass,

All through a little bandage o'er the eyes!  
 As certainly with eyes unbanded now  
 Alkestis looked upon the action here,  
 Self-immolation for Admetos' sake;  
 Saw, with a new sense, all her death would do,  
 And which of her survivors had the right,  
 And which the less right, to survive thereby.  
 For, you shall note, she uttered no one word  
 Of love more to her husband, though he wept  
 Plenteously, waxed importunate in prayer —  
 Folly's old fashion when its seed bears fruit.  
 I think she judged that she had bought the  
 ware

O' the seller at its value, — nor praised him  
Nor blamed herself, but, with indifferent eye,  
Saw him purse money up, prepare to leave  
The buyer with a solitary bale —  
True purple — but in place of all that coin,  
Had made a hundred others happy too,  
If so willed fate or fortune! What remained  
To give away, should rather go to these  
Than one with coin to clink and contemplate.  
Admetos had his share and might depart,  
The rest was for her children and herself.  
(Charopé makes a face: but wait awhile!)  
She saw things plain as Gods do: by one stroke  
O' the sword that rends the life-long veil away.  
(Also Euripedes saw plain enough:  
But you and I, Charopé! — you and I  
Will trust his sight until our own grow clear.)

"Sun, and thou light of day, and heavenly  
dance  
O' the fleet cloud - figure!" (so her passion  
paused,  
While the awe-stricken husband made his moan,  
Muttered now this now that ineptitude:  
"Sun that sees thee and me, a suffering pair,  
Who did the Gods no wrong whence thou  
shouldst die!")  
Then, as if caught up, carried in their course,  
Fleeting and free as cloud and sunbeam are,  
She missed no happiness that lay beneath:  
"O thou wide earth, from these my palace  
roofs,  
To distant nuptial chambers once my own  
In that Iolkos of my ancestry!" —  
There the flight failed her. "Raise thee,  
wretched one!  
Give us not up! Pray pity from the Gods!"

Vainly Admetos: for "I see it — see  
The two-oared boat! The ferryer of the dead,  
Charon, hand hard upon the boatman's-pole,  
Calls me — even now calls — 'Why delayest  
thou?  
Quick! Thou obstructest all made ready here  
For prompt departure: quick, then!'"

"Woe is me!  
A bitter voyage this to undergo,  
Even i' the telling! Adverse Powers above,  
How do ye plague us!"

Then a shiver ran:  
"He has me — seest not? — hales me, — who is  
it —  
To the hall o' the Dead — ah, who but Hades'  
self,  
He, with the wings there, glares at me, one gaze  
All that blue brilliance, under the eyebrow!  
What wilt thou do? Unhand me! Such a  
way  
I have to traverse, all unhappy one!"

"Way — piteous to thy friends, but, most of all,  
Me and thy children: ours assuredly  
A common partnership in grief like this!"

Whereat they closed about her; but "Let be!  
Leave, let me lie now! Strength forsakes my  
feet.  
Hades is here, and shadowy on my eyes

Comes the night creeping. Children — chil-  
dren, now  
Indeed, a mother is no more for you!  
Farewell, O children, long enjoy the light!"

"Ah me, the melancholy word I hear,  
Oppressive beyond every kind of death!  
No, by the Deities, take heart nor dare  
To give me up — no, by our children too  
Made orphans of! But rise, be resolute,  
Since, thou departed, I no more remain!  
For in thee are we bound up, to exist  
Or cease to be — so we adore thy love!"

— Which brought out truth to judgment. At  
this word  
And protestation, all the truth in her  
Claimed to assert itself: she waved away  
The blue-eyed black-wing'd phantom, held in  
check  
The advancing pageantry of Hades there,  
And, with no change in her own countenance,  
She fixed her eyes on the protesting man,  
And let her lips unlock their sentence, — so!

"Admetos, — how things go with me thou  
seest, —  
I wish to tell thee, ere I die, what things  
I will should follow. I — to honor thee,  
Secure for thee, by my own soul's exchange,  
Continued looking on the daylight here —  
Die for thee — yet, if so I pleased, might live,  
Nay, wed what man of Thessaly I would,  
And dwell i' the dome with pomp and queenli-  
ness.  
I would not, — would not live bereft of thee,  
With children orphaned, neither shrank at all,  
Though having gifts of youth wherein I joyed.  
Yet, who begot thee and who gave thee birth,  
Both of these gave thee up; no less, a term  
Of life was reached when death became them  
well,

Ay, well — to save their child and glorious die:  
Since thou wast all they had, nor hope re-  
mained  
Of having other children in thy place.  
So, I and thou had lived out our full time,  
Nor thou, left lonely of thy wife, wouldst groan  
With children reared in orphanage: but thus  
Some God disposed things, willed they so should  
be.

Be they so! Now do thou remember this,  
Do me in turn a favor — favor, since  
Certainly I shall never claim my due,  
For nothing is more precious than a life:  
But a fit favor, as thyself wilt say,  
Loving our children here no less than I,  
If head and heart be sound in thee at least.  
Uphold them, make them masters of my house,  
Nor wed and give a step-dame to the pair,  
Who, being a worse wife than I, through spite  
Will raise her hand against both thine and  
mine.

Never do this at least, I pray to thee!  
For hostile the new-comer, the step-dame,  
To the old brood — a very viper she  
For gentleness! Here stand they, boy and  
girl;

The boy has got a father, a defence  
 Tower-like, he speaks to and has answer from :  
 But thou, my girl, how will thy virginhood  
 Conclude itself in marriage fittingly ?  
 Upon what sort of sire-found yoke-fellow  
 Art thou to chance ? with all to apprehend —  
 Lest, casting on thee some unkind report,  
 She blast thy nuptials in the bloom of youth.  
 For neither shall thy mother watch thee wed,  
 Nor harken thee in childbirth, standing by  
 Just when a mother's presence helps the most !  
 No, for I have to die : and this my ill  
 Comes to me, nor to-morrow, no, nor yet  
 The third day of the month, but now, even  
 now,

I shall be reckoned among those no more.  
 Farewell, be happy ! And to thee, indeed,  
 Husband, the boast remains permissible  
 Thou hadst a wife was worthy ! and to you,  
 Children ; as good a mother gave you birth."

"Have courage!" interposed the friends.  
 "For him

I have no scruple to declare — all this  
 Will he perform, except he fail of sense."

"All this shall be — shall be!" Admetos  
 sobbed:

"Fear not! And, since I had thee living,  
 dead

Alone wilt thou be called my wife : no fear  
 That some Thessalian ever styles herself  
 Bride, hails this man for husband in thy place !  
 No woman, be she of such lofty line  
 Or such surpassing beauty otherwise !  
 Enough of children : gain from these I have,  
 Such only may the Gods grant ! since in thee  
 Absolute is our loss, where all was gain.  
 And I shall bear for thee no year-long grief,  
 But grief that lasts while my own days last,  
 love !

Love ! For my hate is she who bore me, now :  
 And him I hate, my father : loving-ones  
 Truly, in word not deed ! But thou didst pay  
 All dearest to thee down, and buy my life,  
 Saving me so ! Is there not cause enough  
 That I who part with such companionship  
 In thee, should make my moan ? I moan, and  
 more :

For I will end the feastings — social flow  
 O' the wine friends flock for, garlands and the  
 Muse

That graced my dwelling. Never now for me  
 To touch the lyre, to lift my soul in song  
 At summons of the Lydian flute ; since thou  
 From out my life hast emptied all the joy !  
 And this thy body, in thy likeness wrought  
 By some wise hand of the artificers,  
 Shall lie disposed within my marriage-bed :  
 This I will fall on, this enfold about,  
 Call by thy name, — my dear wife in my arms  
 Even though I have not, I shall seem to have —  
 A cold delight, indeed, but all the same  
 So should I lighten of its weight my soul !  
 And, wandering my way in dreams perchance,  
 Thyself wilt bless me : for, come when they  
 will,  
 Even by night our loves are sweet to see.

But were the tongue and tune of Orpheus  
 mine,

So that to Koré crying, or her lord,  
 In hymns, from Hades I might rescue thee —  
 Down would I go, and neither Plouton's dog  
 Nor Charon, he whose oar sends souls across,  
 Should stay me till again I made thee stand  
 Living, within the light ! But, failing this,  
 There, where thou art, await me when I die,  
 Make ready our abode, my housemate still !  
 For in the selfsame cedar, me with thee  
 Will I provide that these our friends shall  
 place,

My side lay close by thy side ! Never, corpse  
 Although I be, would I division bear  
 From thee, my faithful one of all the world !"

So he stood sobbing : nowise insincere,  
 But somehow child-like, like his children, like  
 Childishness the world over. What was new  
 In this announcement that his wife must die ?  
 What particle of pain beyond the pact  
 He made, with eyes wide open, long ago —  
 Made and was, if not glad, content to make ?  
 Now that the sorrow, he had called for, came,  
 He sorrowed to the height : none heard him say,  
 However, what would seem so pertinent,  
 "To keep this pact, I find surpass my power :  
 Rescind it, Moirai ! Give me back her life,  
 And take the life I kept by base exchange !  
 Or, failing that, here stands your laughing-  
 stock

Fooled by you, worthy just the fate o' the fool  
 Who makes a pother to escape the best  
 And gain the worst you wiser Powers allot !"  
 No, not one word of this : nor did his wife  
 Despite the sobbing, and the silence soon  
 To follow, judge so much was in his thought —  
 Fancy that, should the Moirai acquiesce,  
 He would relinquish life nor let her die.  
 The man was like some merchant who, in  
 storm,

Throws the freight over to redeem the ship :  
 No question, saving both were better still.  
 As it was, — why, he sorrowed, which sufficed.  
 So, all she seemed to notice in his speech  
 Was what concerned her children. Children,  
 too,

Bear the grief and accept the sacrifice.  
 Rightly rules nature : does the blossomed  
 bough  
 O' the grape-vine, or the dry grape's self, bleed  
 wine ?

So, bending to her children all her love,  
 She fastened on their father's only word  
 To purpose now, and followed it with this :  
 "O children, now yourselves have heard these  
 things —  
 Your father saying he will never wed  
 Another woman to be over you,  
 Nor yet dishonor me !"

"And now at least  
 I say it, and I will accomplish too !"

"Then, for such promise of accomplishment,  
 Take from my hand these children !"



"Thus I take —  
Dear gift from the dear hand!"

"Do thou become  
Mother, now, to these children in my place!"

"Great the necessity, I should be so,  
At least, to these bereaved of thee!"

"Child — child!  
Just when I needed most to live, below  
Am I departing from you both!"

"Ah me!  
And what shall I do, then, left lonely thus?"

"Time will appease thee: who is dead is  
naught."

"Take me with thee — take, by the Gods  
below!"

"We are sufficient, we who die for thee."

"O Powers, ye widow me of what a wife!"

"And truly the dimmed eye draws earthward  
now!"

"Wife, if thou leav'st me, I am lost indeed!"

"She once was — now is nothing, thou mayst  
say."

"Raise thy face, nor forsake thy children  
thus!"

"Ah, willingly indeed I leave them not!  
But — fare ye well, my children!"

"Look on them —  
Look!"

"I am nothingness."

"What dost thou? Leav'st . . ."

"Farewell!"

And in the breath she passed away.

"Undone — me miserable!" moaned the king,  
While friends released the long-suspended sigh.  
"Gone is she: no wife for Admetos more!"

Such was the signal: how the woe broke forth,  
Why tell? — or how the children's tears ran  
fast

Bidding their father note the eyelids' stare,  
Hands' droop, each dreadful circumstance of  
death.

"Ay, she hears not, she sees not: I and you,  
'Tis plain, are stricken hard and have to  
bear!"

Was all Admetos answered; for, I judge,  
He only now began to taste the truth:  
The thing done lay revealed, which undone  
thing,

Rehearsed for fact by fancy, at the best,

Never can equal. He had used himself  
This long while (as he muttered presently)  
To practise with the terms, the blow involved  
By the bargain, sharp to bear, but bearable  
Because of plain advantage at the end.  
Now that, in fact not fancy, the blow fell —  
Needs must he busy him with the surprise.  
"Alkestis — not to see her nor be seen,  
Hear nor be heard of by her, any more  
To-day, to-morrow, to the end of time —  
Did I mean this should buy my life?" thought  
he.

So, friends came round him, took him by the  
hand,

Bade him remember our mortality.  
Its due, its doom: how neither was he first,  
Nor would be last, to thus deplore the loved.

"I understand," slow the words came at last.

"Nor of a sudden did the evil here  
Fly on me: I have known it long ago,  
Ay, and essayed myself in misery;  
Nothing is new. You have to stay, you friends,  
Because the next need is to carry forth  
The corpse here: you must stay and do your  
part,

Chant proper pæan to the God below;  
Drink-sacrifice he likes not. I decree  
That all Thessalians over whom I rule  
Hold grief in common with me; let them shear  
Their locks, and be the peplos black they show!  
And you who to the chariot yoke your steeds,  
Or manage steeds one-frontleted, — I charge,  
Clip from each neck with steel the mane away!  
And through my city, nor of flute nor lyre  
Be there a sound till twelve full moons succeed.  
For I shall never bury any corpse  
Dearer than this to me, nor better friend:  
One worthy of all honor from me, since  
Me she has died for, she and she alone."

With that, he sought the inmost of the house,  
He and his dead, to get grave's garniture,  
While the friends sang the pæan that should  
peal.

"Daughter of Pelias, with farewell from me,  
I' the house of Hades have thy unsunned home!  
Let Hades know, the dark-haired deity, —  
And he who sits to row and steer alike,  
Old corpse-conductor, let him know he bears  
Over the Acherontian lake, this time,  
I' the two-oared boat, the best — oh, best by far  
Of womankind! For thee, Alkestis Queen!  
Many a time those haunters of the Muse  
Shall sing thee to the seven-stringed mountain-  
shell,

And glorify in hymns that need no harp,  
At Sparta when the cycle comes about,  
And that Karneian month wherein the moon  
Rises and never sets the whole night through:  
So too at splendid and magnificent  
Athenai. Such the spread of thy renown,  
And such the lay that, dying, thou hast left  
Singer and sayer. Oh that I availed  
Of my own might to send thee once again  
From Had's hall, Kokutos' stream, by help  
O' the oar that dips the river, back to-day!"

So, the song sank to prattle in her praise :  
 " Light, from above thee, lady, fall the earth,  
 Thou only one of womankind to die,  
 Wife for her husband ! If Admetos take  
 Anything to him like a second spouse —  
 Hate from his offspring and from us shall be  
 His portion, let the king assure himself !  
 No mind his mother had to hide in earth  
 Her body for her son's sake, nor his sire  
 Had heart to save whom he begot, — not they,  
 The white-haired wretches ! only thou it was,  
 I' the bloom of youth, didst save him and so  
 die !

Might it be mine to chance on such a mate  
 And partner ! For there 's penury in life  
 Of such allowance : were she mine at least,  
 So wonderful a wife, assuredly  
 She would companion me throughout my days  
 And never once bring sorrow ! "

A great voice —  
 " My hosts here ! "

Oh, the thrill that ran through us !  
 Never was aught so good and opportune  
 As that great interrupting voice ! For see !  
 Here maundered this dispirited old age  
 Before the palace ; whence a something crept  
 Which told us well enough without a word  
 What was a-doing inside, — every touch  
 O' the garland on those temples, tenderest  
 Disposure of each arm along its side,  
 Came putting out what warmth i' the world  
 was left.

Then, as it happens at a sacrifice  
 When, drop by drop, some lustral bath is  
 brimmed :

Into the thin and clear and cold, at once  
 They slaughter a whole wine-skin ; Bacchos'   
 blood

Sets the white water all aflame : even so,  
 Sudden into the midst of sorrow, leapt  
 Along with the gay cheer of that great voice,  
 Hope, joy, salvation : Herakles was here !  
 Himself, o' the threshold, sent his voice on first  
 To herald all that human and divine  
 I' the weary happy face of him, — half God,  
 Half man, which made the god-part God the  
 more.

" Hosts mine," he broke upon the sorrow with,  
 " Inhabitants of this Pheraion soil,  
 Chance I upon Admetos inside here ? "

The irresistible sound wholesome heart  
 O' the hero, — more than all the mightiness  
 At labor in the limbs that, for man's sake,  
 Labored and meant to labor their life-long. —  
 This drove back, dried up sorrow at its source.  
 How could it brave the happy weary laugh  
 Of who had bantered sorrow, " Sorrow here ?  
 What have you done to keep your friend from  
 harm ?

Could no one give the life I see he keeps ?  
 Or, say there 's sorrow here past friendly help,  
 Why waste a word or let a tear escape  
 While other sorrows wait you in the world.  
 And want the life of you, though helpless  
 here ? "

Clearly there was no telling such an one

How, when their monarch tried who loved him  
 more  
 Than he loved them, and found they loved, as  
 he,

Each man, himself, and held, no otherwise,  
 That, of all evils in the world, the worst  
 Was — being forced to die, whate'er death  
 gain :

How all this selfishness in him and them  
 Caused certain sorrow which they sang about, —  
 I think that Herakles, who held his life  
 Out on his hand, for any man to take —  
 I think his laugh had marred their threnody.

" He is in the house," they answered. After  
 all,

They might have told the story, talked their  
 best

About the inevitable sorrow here,  
 Nor changed nor checked the kindly nature, —  
 no !

So long as men were merely weak, not bad,  
 He loved men : were they Gods he used to help ?  
 " Yea, Pheres' son is in-doors, Herakles.  
 But say, what sends thee to Thessalian soil,  
 Brought by what business to this Pherai  
 town ? "

" A certain labor that I have to do  
 Eurustheus the Tirunthian," laughed the God.

" And whither wendest — on what wandering  
 Bound now ? " (They had an instinct, guessed  
 what meant  
 Wanderings, labors, in the God's light mouth.)

" After the Thrakian Diomedes' car  
 With the four horses."

" Ah, but canst thou that ?  
 Art inexperienced in thy host to be ? "

" All-inexperienced : I have never gone  
 As yet to the land o' the Bistones."

" Then, look  
 By no means to be master of the steeds  
 Without a battle ! "

" Battle there may be :  
 I must refuse no labor, all the same."

" Certainly, either having slain a foe  
 Wilt thou return to us, or, slain thyself,  
 Stay there ! "

" And, even if the game be so,  
 The risk in it were not the first I run."

" But, say thou overpower the lord o' the place,  
 What more advantage dost expect thereby ? "

" I shall drive off his horses to the king."

" No easy handling them to bit the jaw ! "

" Easy enough ; except, at least, they breathe  
 Fire from their nostrils ! "

" But they mince up men  
 With those quick jaws ! "

"You talk of provender

For mountain-beasts, and not mere horses' food ! "

"Thou mayst behold their mangers caked with gore ! "

"And of what sire does he who bred them boast Himself the son ? "

"Of Ares, king o' the targe — Thrakian, of gold throughout."

Another laugh.

"Why, just the labor, just the lot for me Dost thou describe in what I recognize !

Since hard and harder, high and higher yet, Truly this lot of mine is like to go

If I must needs join battle with the brood Of Ares ; ay, I fought Lukaon first,

And again, Kuknos : now engage in strife This third time, with such horses and such lord.

But there is nobody shall ever see Alkmené's son shrink foemen's hand before ! "

— "Or ever hear him say" (the Chorus thought)

"That death is terrible ; and help us so To chime in — ' terrible beyond a doubt,

And, if to thee, why, to ourselves much more : Know what has happened, then, and sympathize ! "

Therefore they gladly stopped the dialogue, Shifted the burden to new shoulder straight,

As, "Look where comes the lord o' the land, himself,

Admetos, from the palace ! " they outbroke In some surprise, as well as much relief.

What had induced the king to waive his right And luxury of woe in loneliness ?

Out he came quietly ; the hair was clipt, And the garb sable ; else no outward sign

Of sorrow as he came and faced his friend. Was truth fast terrifying tears away ?

"Hail, child of Zeus, and sprung from Perseus too ! "

The salutation ran without a fault.

"And thou, Admetos, King of Thessaly ! "

"Would, as thou wishest me, the grace might fall !

But my good-wisher, that thou art, I know."

"What's here ? these shorn locks, this sad show of thee ? "

"I must inter a certain corpse to-day."

"Now, from thy children God avert mischance ! "

"They live, my children ; all are in the house ! "

"Thy father — if 't is he departs indeed, His age was ripe at least."

"My father lives, And she who bore me lives too, Herakles."

"It cannot be thy wife Alkestis gone ? "

"Twofold the tale is, I can tell of her."

"Dead dost thou speak of her, or living yet ? "

"She is — and is not : hence the pain to me ! "

"I learn no whit the more, so dark thy speech ! "

"Know'st thou not on what fate she needs must fall ? "

"I know she is resigned to die for thee."

"How lives she still, then, if submitting so ? "

"Eh, weep her not beforehand ! wait till then ! "

"Who is to die is dead ; doing is done."

"To be and not to be are thought diverse."

"Thou judgest this — I, that way, Herakles ! "

"Well, but declare what causes thy complaint ! Who is the man has died from out thy friends ? "

"No man : I had a woman in my mind."

"Alien, or some one born akin to thee ? "

"Alien : but still related to my house."

"How did it happen then that here she died ? "

"Her father dying left his orphan here."

"Alas, Admetos — would we found thee gay, Not grieving ! "

"What as if about to do Subjoinest thou that comment ? "

"I shall seek Another hearth, proceed to other hosts."

"Never, O king, shall that be ! No such ill Betide me ! "

"Nay, to mourners should there come A guest, he proves importunate ! "

"The dead — Dead are they : but go thou within my house ! "

"'Tis base carousing beside friends who mourn."

"The guest-rooms, whither we shall lead thee, lie

Apart from ours."

"Nay, let me go my way ! Ten-thousandfold the favor I shall thank ! "

"It may not be thou goest to the hearth Of any man but me ! " so made an end

Admetos, softly and decisively, Of the altercation. Herakles forbore :

And the king bade a servant lead the way, Open the guest-rooms ranged remote from view



O' the main hall, tell the functionaries, next,  
They had to furnish forth a pleteous feast :  
And then shut close the doors o' the hall, mid-  
way,

"Because it is not proper friends who feast  
Should hear a groaning or be grieved," quoth  
he,

Whereat the hero, who was truth itself,  
Let out the smile again, repressed awhile  
Like fountain-brilliance one forbids to play.  
He did too many grandnesses, to note  
Much in the meaner things about his path :  
And stepping there, with face towards the sun,  
Stopped seldom to pluck weeds or ask their  
names.

Therefore he took Admetos at the word :  
This trouble must not hinder any more  
A true heart from good will and pleasant ways.  
And so, the great arm, which had slain the  
snake,

Strained his friend's head a moment in embrace  
On that broad breast beneath the lion's hide,  
Till the king's cheek winced at the thick rough  
gold ;

And then strode off, with who had care of  
him,

To the remote guest-chamber : glad to give  
Poor flesh and blood their respite and relief  
In the interval 'twixt fight and fight again —  
All for the world's sake. Our eyes followed  
him,

Be sure, till those mid-doors shut us outside.  
The king, too, watched great Herakles go off  
All faith, love, and obedience to a friend.

And when they questioned him, the simple  
ones,

"What dost thou? Such calamity to face,  
Lies full before thee — and thou art so bold  
As play the host, Admetos? Hast thy wits?"  
He replied calmly to each chiding tongue :  
"But if from house and home I forced away  
A coming guest, wouldst thou have praised me  
more?"

No, truly! since calamity were mine,  
Nowise diminished : while I showed myself  
Unhappy and inhospitable too :  
So adding to my ills this other ill,  
That mine were styled a stranger-hating house.  
Myself have ever found this man the best  
Of entertainers when I went his way  
To parched and thirsty Argos."

"If so be —

Why didst thou hide what destiny was here,  
When one came that was kindly, as thou  
say'st?"

"He never would have willed to cross my door  
Had he known aught of my calamities.  
And probably to some of you I seem  
Unwise enough in doing what I do ;  
Such will scarce praise me : but these halls of  
mine  
Know not to drive off and dishonor guests."

And so, the duty done, he turned once more  
To go and busy him about his dead.

As for the sympathizers left to muse,  
There was a change, a new light thrown on  
things,

Contagion from the magnanimity  
O' the man whose life lay on his hand so light,  
As up he stepped, pursuing duty still  
"Higher and harder," as he laughed and said.  
Somehow they found no folly now in the act  
They blamed erewhile : Admetos' private grief  
Shrank to a somewhat pettier obstacle  
I' the way o' the world: they saw good days  
had been,

And good days, peradventure, still might be,  
Now that they overlooked the present cloud  
Heavy upon the palace opposite.  
And soon the thought took words and music  
thus : —

"Harbor of many a stranger, free to friend,  
Ever and always, O thou house o' the man  
We mourn for! Thee, Apollon's very self,  
The lyric Puthian, deigned inhabit once,  
Become a shepherd here in thy domains,  
And pipe, adown the winding hillside paths,  
Pastoral marriage-poems to thy flocks  
At feed : while with them fed in fellowship,  
Through joy i' the music, spot-skin lynxes ; ay,  
And lions too, the bloody company,  
Came, leaving Othrus' dell; and round thy  
lyre,

Phoibos, there danced the speckle-coated fawn,  
Pacing on lightsome fetlock past the pines  
Tress-topped, the creature's natural boundary  
Into the open everywhere ; such heart  
Had she within her, beating joyous beats,  
At the sweet reassurance of thy song !  
Therefore the lot o' the master is, to live  
In a home multitudinous with herds,  
Along by the fair-flowing Boibian lake,  
Limited, that ploughed land and pasture-plain.  
Only where stand the sun's steeds, stabled west  
I' the cloud, by that mid-air which makes the  
clime

Of those Molossoi : and he rules as well  
O'er the Aigaian, up to Pelion's shore, —  
Sea-stretch without a port! Such lord have  
we:

And here he opens house now, as of old,  
Takes to the heart of it a guest again :  
Though moist the eyelid of the master, still  
Mourning his dear wife's body, dead but  
now!"

And they admired : nobility of soul  
Was self-impelled to reverence, they saw :  
The best men ever prove the wisest too :  
Something instinctive guides them still aright.  
And on each soul this boldness settled now,  
That one who revered the Gods so much  
Would prosper yet : (or — I could wish it  
ran —

Who venerates the Gods i' the main will still  
Practise things honest though obscure to  
judge).

They ended, for Admetos entered now ;  
Having disposed all duteously indoors,  
He came into the outside world again,

Quiet as ever : but a quietude  
 Bent on pursuing its descent to truth,  
 As who must grope until he gain the ground  
 O' the dungeon doomed to be his dwelling now.  
 Already high o'er head was piled the dusk,  
 When something pushed to stay his downward  
 step,  
 Pluck back despair just reaching its repose.  
 He would have bidden the kind presence there  
 Observe that, — since the corpse was coming  
 out,  
 Cared for in all things that befit the case,  
 Carried aloft, in decency and state,  
 To the last burial-place and burning pile, —  
 'T were proper friends addressed, as custom  
 prompts,  
 Alkestis bound on her last journeying.

"Ay, for we see thy father," they subjoined,  
 "Advancing as the aged foot best may ;  
 His servants, too : each bringing in his hand  
 Adornments for thy wife, all pomp that's due  
 To the downward-dwelling people." And in  
 truth,

By slow procession till they filled the stage,  
 Came Pheres, and his following, and their gifts.  
 You see, the worst of the interruption was,  
 It plucked back, with an over-hasty hand,  
 Admetos from descending to the truth,  
 (I told you) — put him on the brink again,  
 Full i' the noise and glare where late he stood :  
 With no fate fallen and irrevocable,  
 But all things subject still to chance and  
 change :

And that chance — life, and that change —  
 happiness.

And with the low strife came the little mind :  
 He was once more the man might gain so  
 much,

Life too and wife too, would his friends but  
 help !

All he felt now was that there faced him one  
 Supposed the likeliest, in emergency,  
 To help : and help, by mere self-sacrifice  
 So natural, it seemed as if the sire  
 Must needs lie open still to argument,  
 Withdraw the rash decision, not to die  
 But rather live, though death would save his  
 son : —

Argument like the ignominious grasp  
 O' the drowner whom his fellow grasps as  
 fierce,

Each marvelling that the other needs must  
 hold

Head out of water, though friend choke there-  
 by.

And first the father's salutation fell.  
 Burdened he came, in common with his child,  
 Who lost, none would gainsay, a good chaste  
 spouse :

Yet such things must be borne, though hard to  
 bear.

"So, take this tribute of adornment, deep  
 In the earth let it descend along with her !  
 Behooves we treat the body with respect  
 — Of one who died, at least, to save thy life,  
 Kept me from being childless, nor allowed

That I, bereft of thee, should peak and pine  
 In melancholy age ! she, for the sex,  
 All of her sisters, put in evidence,  
 By daring such a feat, that female life  
 Might prove more excellent than men suppose.  
 O thou Alkestis ! " out he burst in fine,  
 "Who, while thou savedst this my son, didst  
 raise

Also myself from sinking, — hail to thee !  
 Well be it with thee even in the house  
 Of Hades ! I maintain, if mortals must  
 Marry, this sort of marriage is the sole  
 Permitted those among them who are wise ! "

So his oration ended. Like hates like :  
 Accordingly Admetos, — full i' the face  
 Of Pheres, his true father, outward shape  
 And inward fashion, body matching soul, —  
 Saw just himself when years should do their  
 work

And reinforce the selfishness inside  
 Until it pushed the last disguise away :  
 As when the liquid metal cools i' the mould,  
 Stands forth a statue : bloodless, hard, cold  
 bronze.

So, in old Pheres, young Admetos showed,  
 Pushed to completion : and a shudder ran,  
 And his repugnance soon had vent in speech :  
 Glad to escape outside, nor, pent within,  
 Find itself there fit food for exercise.

"Neither to this interment called by me  
 Comest thou, nor thy presence I account  
 Among the covetable proofs of love.  
 As for thy tribute of adornment, — no !  
 Ne'er shall she do it, ne'er in debt to thee  
 Be buried ! What is thine, that keep thou  
 still !

Then it behooved thee to commiserate  
 When I was perishing : but thou — who stood'st  
 Foot-free o' the snare, wast acquiescent then  
 That I, the young, should die, not thou, the  
 old —

Wilt thou lament this corpse thyself hast slain ?  
 Thou wast not, then, true father to this flesh ;  
 Nor she, who makes profession of my birth  
 And styles herself my mother, neither she  
 Bore me : but, come of slave's blood, I was cast  
 Stealthily 'neath the bosom of thy wife !  
 Thou showedst, put to touch, the thing thou  
 art,

Nor I esteem myself born child of thee !  
 Otherwise, thine is the preëminence  
 O'er all the world in cowardice of soul :  
 Who, being the old man thou art, arrived  
 Where life should end, didst neither will nor  
 dare

Die for thy son, but left the task to her,  
 The alien woman, whom I well might think  
 Own, only mother both and father too !  
 And yet a fair strife had been thine to strive,  
 — Dying for thy own child ; and brief for thee  
 In any case, the rest of time to live ;  
 While I had lived, and she, our rest of time,  
 Nor I been left to groan in solitude.  
 Yet certainly all things which happy man  
 Ought to experience, thy experience grasped.  
 Thou wast a ruler through the bloom of youth.

And I was son to thee, recipient due  
Of sceptre and demesne, — no need to fear  
That dying thou shouldst leave an orphan  
house

For strangers to despoil. Nor yet wilt thou  
Allege that as dishonoring, forsooth,  
Thy length of days, I gave thee up to die, —  
I, who have held thee in such reverence!  
And in exchange for it, such gratitude  
Thou, father, — thou award'st me, mother  
mine!

Go, lose no time, then, in begetting sons  
Shall cherish thee in age, and, when thou diest,  
Deck up and lay thee out as corpses claim!  
For never I, at least, with this my hand  
Will bury thee: it is myself am dead  
So far as lies in thee. But if I light  
Upon another savior, and still see  
The sunbeam, — his, the child I call myself,  
His, the old age that claims my cherishing.  
How vainly do these aged pray for death,  
Abuse the slow drag of senility!  
But should death step up, nobody inclines  
To die, nor age is now the weight it was!"

You see what all this poor pretentious talk  
Tried at, — how weakness strove to hide itself  
In bluster against weakness, — the loud word  
To hide the little whisper, not so low  
Already in that heart beneath those lips!  
Ha, could it be, who hated cowardice  
Stood confessed craven, and who lauded so  
Self-immolating love, himself had pushed  
The loved one to the altar in his place?  
Friends interposed, would fain stop further play  
O' the sharp-edged tongue: they felt love's  
champion here

Had left an undefended point or two,  
The antagonist might profit by; bade "Pause!  
Enough the present sorrow! Nor, O son,  
Whet thus against thyself thy father's soul!"

Ay, but old Pheres was the stouter stuff!  
Admetos, at the flintiest of the heart,  
Had so much soft in him as held a fire:  
The other was all iron, clashed from flint  
Its fire, but shed no spark and showed no  
bruise.

Did Pheres crave instruction as to facts?  
He came, content, the ignoble word, for him,  
Should lurk still in the blackness of each  
breast,

As sleeps the water-serpent half surmised:  
Not brought up to the surface at a bound,  
By one touch of the idly-probing spear,  
Reed-like against unconquerable scale.  
He came pacific, rather, as strength should,  
Bringing the decent praise, the due regret,  
And each banality prescribed of old.

Did he commence "Why let her die for you?"  
And rouse the coiled and quiet ugliness,  
"What is so good to man as man's own life?"  
No: but the other did: and, for his pains,  
Out, full in face of him, the venom leapt.

"And whom dost thou make bold, son — Lud-  
ian slave,  
Or Phrugian whether, money made thy ware,

To drive at with revilings? Know'st thou  
not

I, a Thessalian, from Thessalian sire  
Spring and am born legitimately free?  
Too arrogant art thou; and, youngster words  
Casting against me, having had thy fling,  
Thou goest not off as all were ended so!  
I gave thee birth indeed and mastership  
I' the mansion, brought thee up to boot: there  
ends

My owing, nor extends to die for thee!  
Never did I receive it as a law  
Hereditary, no, nor Greek at all,  
That sires in place of sons were bound to die.  
For, to thy sole and single self wast thou  
Born, with whatever fortune, good or bad;  
Such things as bear bestowment, those thou  
hast;

Already ruling widely, broad lands, too,  
Doubt not but I shall leave thee in due time:  
For why? My father left me them before.  
Well then, where wrong I thee? — of what de-  
fraud?

Neither do thou die for this man, myself,  
Nor let him die for thee! — is all I beg.  
Thou joyst seeing daylight: dost suppose  
Thy father joys not too? Undoubtedly,  
Long I account the time to pass below,  
And brief my span of days; yet sweet the  
same:

Is it otherwise to thee who, impudent,  
Didst fight off this same death, and livest now  
Through having sneaked past fate apportioned  
thee,

And slain thy wife so? Cryest cowardice  
On me, I wonder, thou — whom, poor poltroon,  
A very woman worsted, daring death  
Just for the sake of thee, her handsome spark?  
Shrewdly hast thou contrived how not to die  
Forevermore now: 't is but still persuade  
The wife, for the time being, to take thy  
place!

What, and thy friends who would not do the  
like,

These dost thou carp at, craven thus thyself?  
Crouch and be silent, craven! Comprehend  
That, if thou lovest so that life of thine,  
Why, everybody loves his own life too:  
So, good words, henceforth! If thou speak us  
ill,

Many and true an ill thing shalt thou hear!"

There you saw leap the hydra at full length!  
Only, the old kept glorying the more,  
The more the portent thus uncoiled itself,  
Whereas the young man shuddered head to foot,  
And shrank from kinship with the creature.

Why  
Such horror, unless what he hated most,  
Vaunting itself outside, might fairly claim  
Acquaintance with the counterpart at home?  
I would the Chorus here had plucked up heart,  
Spoken out boldly and explained the man,  
If not to men, to Gods. That way, I think,  
Sophokles would have led their dance and song.  
Here, they said simply, "Too much evil spoke  
On both sides!" As the young before, so now  
They bade the old man leave abusing thus.



"Let him speak, — I have spoken!" said the youth:

And so died out the wrangle by degrees,  
In wretched bickering. "If thou wince at fact,  
Behooved thee, not prove faulty to myself!"

"Had I died for thee I had faulted more!"

"All's one, then, for youth's bloom and age to die?"

"Our duty is to live one life, not two!"

"Go then, and outlive Zeus, for aught I care!"

"What, curse thy parents with no sort of cause?"

"Curse, truly! All thou lovest is long life!"

"And dost not thou, too, all for love of life,  
Carry out now, in place of thine, this corpse?"

"Monument, rather, of thy cowardice,  
Thou worst one!"

"Not for me she died, I hope!  
That, thou wilt hardly say!"

"No; simply this:  
Would, some day, thou mayst come to need  
myself!"

"Meanwhile, woo many wives — the more will die!"

"And so shame thee who never dared the like!"

"Dear is this light o' the sun-god — dear, I say!"

"Proper conclusion for a beast to draw!"

"One thing is certain: there's no laughing  
now,  
As out thou bearest the poor dead old man!"

"Die when thou wilt, thou wilt die infamous!"

"And once dead, whether famed or infamous,  
I shall not care!"

"Alas and yet again!  
How full is age of impudency!"

"True!  
Thou couldst not call thy young wife impudent:  
She was found foolish merely."

"Get thee gone!  
And let me bury this my dead!"

"I go.  
Thou buried her whom thou didst murder  
first;

Whereof there's some account to render yet  
Those kinsfolk by the marriage-side! I think,  
Brother Akastos may be classed with me,  
Among the beasts, not men, if he omit  
Avenging upon thee his sister's blood!"

"Go to perdition, with thy housemate too!  
Grow old all childlessly, with child alive,  
Just as ye merit! for to me, at least,  
Beneath the same roof ne'er do ye return.  
And did I need by heralds' help renounce  
The ancestral hearth, I had renounced the  
same!"

But we — since this woe, lying at our feet  
I' the path, is to be borne — let us proceed  
And lay the body on the pyre."

I think,  
What, through this wretched wrangle, kept  
the man

From seeing clear — beside the cause I gave —  
Was, that the woe, himself described as full  
I' the path before him, there did really lie —  
Not roll into the abyss of dead and gone.

How, with Alkestis present, calmly crowned,  
Was she so irrecoverable yet —  
The bird, escaped, that's just on bough above,  
The flower, let flutter half-way down the  
brink?

Not so detached seemed lifelessness from life  
But — one dear stretch beyond all straining  
yet —

And he might have her at his heart once more,  
When, in the critical minute, up there comes  
The father and the fact, to trifle time!

"To the pyre!" an instinct prompted: pallid  
face,

And passive arm and pointed foot, when these  
No longer shall absorb the sight, O friends,  
Admetos will begin to see indeed  
Who the true foe was, where the blows should  
fall!

So, the old selfish Pheres went his way,  
Case-hardened as he came; and left the youth,  
(Only half selfish now, since sensitive)  
To go on learning by a light the more,  
As friends moved off, renewing dirge the while:

"Unhappy in thy daring! Noble dame,  
Best of the good, farewell! With favoring  
face

May Hermes the infernal, Hades too,  
Receive thee! And if there, — ay, there, —  
some touch

Of further dignity await the good,  
Sharing with them, mayst thou sit throned by  
her

The Bride of Hades, in companionship!"

Wherewith, the sad procession wound away,  
Made slowly for the suburb sepulchre.  
And lo, — while still one's heart, in time and  
tune,

Paced after that symmetric step of Death  
Mute-marching, to the mind's eye, at the head  
O' the mourners — one hand pointing out their  
path

With the long pale terrific sword we saw,  
The other leading, with grim tender grace,  
Alkestis quieted and consecrate, —  
Lo, life again knocked laughing at the door!  
The world goes on, goes ever, in and through,  
And out again o' the cloud. We faced about,

Fronted the palace where the mid-hall gate  
Opened — not half, nor half of half, perhaps —  
Yet wide enough to let out light and life,  
And warmth, and bounty, and hope, and joy, at  
once.

Festivity burst wide, fruit rare and ripe  
Crushed in the mouth of Bacchos, pulpy-prime,  
All juice and flavor, save one single seed  
Duly ejected from the God's nice lip,  
Which lay o' the red edge, blackly visible —  
To wit, a certain ancient servitor:  
On whom the festal jaws o' the palace shut,  
So, there he stood, a much-bewildered man.  
Stupid? Nay, but sagacious in a sort:  
Learned, life-long, i' the first outside of things,  
Though bat for blindness to what lies beneath  
And needs a nail-scratch ere 't is laid you bare.  
This functionary was the trusted one  
We saw deputed by Admetos late  
To lead in Herakles and help him, soul  
And body, to such snatched repose, snapped-  
up

Sustainment, as might do away the dust  
O' the last encounter, knit each nerve anew  
For that next onset sure to come at cry  
O' the creature next assailed, — nay, should it  
prove

Only the creature that came forward now  
To play the critic upon Herakles!

"Many the guests," — so he soliloquized  
In musings burdensome to breast before,  
When it seemed not too prudent tongue should  
wag, —

"Many, and from all quarters of this world,  
The guests I now have known frequent our  
house,

For whom I spread the banquet; but than this,  
Never a worse one did I yet receive  
At the hearth here! One who seeing, first of  
all,

The master's sorrow, entered gate the same,  
And had the hardihood to house himself.  
Did things stop there! But, modest by no  
means,

He took what entertainment lay to hand,  
Knowing of our misfortune, — did we fail  
In aught of the fit service, urged us serve  
Just as a guest expects! And in his hands  
Taking the ivied goblet, drinks and drinks  
The unmixed product of black mother-earth,  
Until the blaze o' the wine went round about  
And warmed him: then he crowns with myrtle  
sprigs

His head, and howls discordance — twofold lay  
Was thereupon for us to listen to —

This fellow singing, namely, nor restrained  
A jot by sympathy with sorrows here —

While we o' the household mourned our mis-  
tress — mourned,

That is to say, in silence — never showed  
The eyes, which we kept wetting, to the  
guest —

For there Admetos was imperative.

And so, here am I helping make at home  
A guest, some fellow ripe for wickedness,  
Robber or pirate, while she goes her way  
Out of our house: and neither was it mine

To follow in procession, nor stretch forth  
Hand, wave my lady dear a last farewell,  
Lamenting who to me and all of us  
Domestics was a mother: myriad harms  
She used to ward away from every one,  
And mollify her husband's ireful mood.  
I ask then, do I justly hate or no  
This guest, this interloper on our grief?"

"Hate him and justly!" Here's the proper  
judge

Of what is due to the house from Herakles!  
This man of much experience saw the first  
O' the feeble duckings-down at destiny,  
When King Admetos went his rounds, poor  
soul,

A-begging somebody to be so brave  
As die for one afraid to die himself —

"Thou, friend? Thou, love? Father or  
mother, then!

None of you? What, Alkestis must Death  
catch?

O best of wives, one woman in the world!  
But nowise droop: our prayers may still assist:

Let us try sacrifice; if those avail  
Nothing and Gods avert their countenance,  
Why, deep and durable our grief will be!"

Whereat the house, this worthy at its head,  
Re-echoed "deep and durable our grief!"

This sage, who justly hated Herakles,  
Did he suggest once "Rather I than she!"

Admonish the Turannos — "Be a man!  
Bear thine own burden, never think to thrust  
Thy fate upon another and thy wife!

It were a dubious gain could death be doomed  
That other, and no passionatest plea

Of thine, to die instead, have force with fate;  
Seeing thou lov'st Alkestis: what were life  
Unlighted by the loved one? But to live —

Not merely live unsolaced by some thought,  
Some word so poor — yet solace all the same —

As "Thou i' the sepulchre, Alkestis, say!  
Would I, or would not I, to save thy life,

Die, and die on, and die forevermore?"

No! but to read red-written up and down  
The world 'This is the sunshine, this the shade,

This is some pleasure of earth, sky or sea,  
Due to that other, dead that thou mayst live!"

Such were a covetable gain to thee?  
Go die, fool, and be happy while 't is time!"

One word of counsel in this kind, methinks,  
Had fallen to better purpose than Ai, ai,

Pheu, pheu, e, papai, and a pother of praise  
O' the best, best, best one! Nothing was to  
hate

In King Admetos, Pheres, and the rest  
O' the household down to his heroic self!

This was the one thing hateful: Herakles  
Had flung into the presence, frank and free,

Out from the labor into the repose,  
Ere out again and over head and ears

I' the heart of labor, all for love of men:  
Making the most o' the minute, that the soul

And body, strained to height a minute since,  
Might lie relaxed in joy, this breathing-space,

For man's sake more than ever; till the bow,  
Restrung o' the sudden, at first cry for help,

Should send some unimaginable shaft

True to the aim and shatteringly through  
The plate-mail of a monster, save man so.  
He slew the pest o' the marsh yesterday:  
To-morrow he would bit the flame-breathed  
stud

That fed on man's flesh: and this day between —  
Because he held it natural to die,  
And fruitless to lament a thing past cure,  
So, took his fill of food, wine, song and flowers,  
Till the new labor claimed him soon enough, —  
"Hate him and justly!"

True, Charopé mine!  
The man surmised not Herakles lay hid  
I' the guest; or, knowing it, was ignorant  
That still his lady lived — for Herakles;  
Or else judged lightness needs must indicate  
This or the other catifit quality:  
And therefore — had been right if not so wrong!  
For who expects the sort of him will scratch  
A nail's depth, scrape the surface just to see  
What peradventure underlies the same?

So, he stood petting up his puny hate,  
Parent-wise, proud of the ill-favored babe.  
Not long! A great hand, careful lest it crush,  
Startled him on the shoulder: up he stared,  
And over him, who stood but Herakles!  
There smiled the mighty presence, all one smile  
And no touch more of the world-weary God,  
Through the brief respite. Just a garland's

grace  
About the brow, a song to satisfy  
Head, heart and breast, and trumpet-lips at  
once,

A solemn draught of true religious wine,  
And — how should I know? — half a mountain-  
goat

Torn up and swallowed down, — the feast was  
fierce

But brief: all cares and pains took wing and  
flew,

Leaving the hero ready to begin  
And help mankind, whatever woe came next,  
Even though what came next should be naught  
more

Than the mean querulous mouth o' the man, re-  
marked

Pursing its grievance up till patience failed  
And the sage needs must rush out, as we saw,  
To sulk outside and pet his hate in peace.  
By no means would the Helper have it so:  
He who was just about to handle brutes  
In Thrace, and bit the jaws which breathed the  
flame, —

Well, if a good laugh and a jovial word  
Could bridle age which blew bad humors forth.  
That were a kind of help, too!

"Thou, there!" hailed  
This grand benevolence the ungracious one —  
"Why look'st so solemn and so thought-ab-  
sorbed?"

To guests a servant should not sour-faced be,  
But do the honors with a mind urbane.  
While thou, contrariwise, beholding here  
Arrive thy master's comrade, hast for him  
A churlish visage, all one beetle-brow —  
Having regard to grief that's out-of-door!  
Come hither, and so get to grow more wise!

Things mortal — know'st the nature that they  
have?

No, I imagine! whence could knowledge spring?  
Give ear to me, then! For all flesh to die,  
Is Nature's due; nor is there any one  
Of mortals with assurance he shall last  
The coming morrow: for, what's born of chance  
Invisibly proceeds the way it will,  
Not to be learned, no fortune-teller's prize.  
This, therefore, having heard and known  
through me,  
Gladden thyself! Drink! Count the day-by-  
day

Existence thine, and all the other — chance!  
Ay, and pay homage also to by far  
The sweetest of divinities for man,  
Kupris! Benignant Goddess will she prove!  
But as for aught else, leave and let things be!  
And trust my counsel, if I seem to speak  
To purpose — as I do, apparently.  
Wilt not thou, then, — discarding overmuch  
Mournfulness, do away with this shut door,  
Come drink along with me, be-garlanded  
This fashion? Do so, and — I well know  
what —

From this stern mood, this shrunk-up state of  
mind,

The pit-pat fall o' the flagon-juice down throat,  
Soon will dislodge thee from bad harborage!  
Men being mortal should think mortal-like:  
Since to your solemn, brow-contracting sort,  
All of them, — so I lay down law at least, —  
Life is not truly life but misery."

Whereto the man with softened surliness:

"We know as much: but deal with matters,  
now,  
Hardly befitting mirth and revelry."

"No intimate, this woman that is dead:  
Mourn not too much! For, those o' the house  
itself,  
Thy masters live, remember!"

"Live indeed?  
Ah, thou know'st naught o' the woe within  
these walls!"

"I do — unless thy master spoke me false  
Somehow!"

"Ay, ay, too much he loves a guest,  
Too much, that master mine!" so muttered he.

"Was it improper he should treat me well,  
Because an alien corpse was in the way?"

"No alien, but most intimate indeed!"

"Can it be, some woe was, he told me not?"

"Farewell and go thy way! Thy cares for  
thee —  
To us, our master's sorrow is a care."

"This word begins no tale of alien woe!"

"Had it been other woe than intimate,  
I could have seen thee feast, nor felt amiss."



"What! have I suffered strangely from my host?"

"Thou can'st not at a fit reception-time:  
With sorrow here beforehand: and thou seest  
Shorn hair, black robes."

"But who is it that's dead?  
Some child gone? or the aged sire perhaps?"

"Admetos' wife, then! she has perished,  
guest!"

"How sayest? And did ye house me, all the  
same?"

"Ay: for he had thee in that reverence  
He dared not turn thee from his door away!"

"O hapless, and bereft of what a mate!"

"All of us now are dead, not she alone!"

"But I divined it! seeing, as I did,  
His eye that ran with tears, his close-clipt hair,  
His countenance! Though he persuaded me,  
Saying it was a stranger's funeral  
He went with to the grave: against my wish,  
He forced on me that I should enter doors,  
Drink in the hall o' the hospitable man  
Circumstanced so! And do I revel yet  
With wreath on head? But—thou to hold thy  
peace,

Nor tell me what a woe oppressed my friend!  
Where is he gone to bury her? Where am I  
To go and find her?"

"By the road that leads  
Straight to Larissa, thou wilt see the tomb,  
Out of the suburb, a carved sepulchre."

So said he, and therewith dismissed himself  
Inside to his lamenting: somewhat soothed,  
However, that he had adroitly spoilt  
The mirth of the great creature: oh, he marked  
The movement of the mouth, how lip pressed  
lip,

And either eye forgot to shine, as, fast,  
He plucked the chaplet from his forehead,  
dashed

The myrtle-sprays down, trod them under-  
foot.

And all the joy and wonder of the wine  
Withered away, like fire from off a brand  
The wind blows over — beacon though it be,  
Whose merry ardor only meant to make  
Somebody all the better for its blaze,  
And save lost people in the dark: quenched  
now!

Not long quenched! As the flame, just hurried  
off

The brand's edge, suddenly renews its bite,  
Tasting some richness caked i' the core o' the  
tree, —

Pine, with a blood that's oil, — and triumphs  
up

Pillar-wise to the sky and saves the world:

So, in a spasm and splendor of resolve,  
All at once did the God surmount the man.

"O much-enduring heart and hand of mine!  
Now show what sort of son she bore to Zeus,  
That daughter of Elektruon, Tiruus' child,  
Alkmené! for that son must needs save now  
The just-dead lady: ay, establish here  
I' the house again Alkestis, bring about  
Comfort and succor to Admetos so!  
I will go lie in wait for Death, black-stoled  
King of the corpses! I shall find him, sure,  
Drinking, beside the tomb, o' the sacrifice:  
And if I lie in ambuscade, and leap  
Out of my lair, and seize — encircle him  
Till one hand join the other round about —  
There lives not who shall pull him out from me,  
Rib-mauled, before he let the woman go!  
But even say I miss the booty, — say,  
Death comes not to the boltered blood, — why  
then,

Down go I, to the sunned dwelling-place  
Of Koré and the king there, — make demand,  
Confident I shall bring Alkestis back,  
So as to put her in the hands of him  
My host, that housed me, never drove me off:  
Though stricken with sore sorrow, hid the  
stroke,

Being a noble heart and honoring me!  
Who of Thessalians, more than this man, loves  
The stranger? Who, that now inhabits Greece?  
Wherefore he shall not say the man was vile  
Whom he befriended, — native noble heart!"

So, one look upward, as if Zeus might laugh  
Approval of his human progeny, —  
One summons of the whole magnific frame,  
Each sinew to its service, — up he caught,  
And over shoulder cast, the lion-shag,  
Let the club go, — for had he not those hands?  
And so went striding off, on that straight way  
Leads to Larissa and the suburb tomb.  
Gladness be with thee, Helper of our world!  
I think this is the authentic sign and seal  
Of Godship, that it ever waxes glad,  
And more glad, until gladness blossoms, bursts  
Into a rage to suffer for mankind,  
And recommence at sorrow: drops like seed  
After the blossom, ultimate of all.  
Say, does the seed scorn earth and seek the  
sun?

Surely it has no other end and aim  
Than to drop, once more die into the ground,  
Taste cold and darkness and oblivion there:  
And thence rise, tree-like grow through pain to  
joy,

More joy and most joy, — do man good again.

So, of the struggle off strode Herakles.  
When silence closed behind the lion-garb,  
Back came our dull fact settling in its place,  
Though heartiness and passion half-dispersed  
The inevitable fate. And presently  
In came the mourners from the funeral,  
One after one, until we hoped the last  
Would be Alkestis and so end our dream.  
Could they have really left Alkestis lone  
I' the wayside sepulchre! Home, all save she!  
And when Admetos felt that it was so,  
By the stand-still: when he lifted head and  
face

From the two hiding hands and peplos' fold,  
And looked forth, knew the palace, knew the  
hills,  
Knew the plains, knew the friendly frequency  
there,  
And no Alkestis any more again,  
Why, the whole woe billow-like broke on him.

"O hateful entry, hateful countenance  
O' the widowed halls!" — he moaned. "What  
was to be?"

Go there? Stay here? Speak, not speak? All  
was now

Mad and impossible alike; one way  
And only one was sane and safe — to die:  
Now he was made aware how dear is death,  
How lovable the dead are, how the heart  
Yearns in us to go hide where they repose,  
When we find sunbeams do no good to see,  
Nor earth rests rightly where our footsteps  
fall.

His wife had been to him the very pledge,  
Sun should be sun, earth — earth; the pledge  
was robbed,

Pact broken, and the world was left no world."  
He stared at the impossible, mad life:

Stood, while they urged "Advance — advance!  
Go deep

Into the utter dark, thy palace-core!"

They tried what they called comfort, "touched  
the quick

Of the ulceration in his soul," he said,  
With memories, — "once thy joy was thus and  
thus!"

True comfort were to let him fling himself  
Into the hollow grave o' the tomb, and so  
Let him lie dead along with all he loved.

One bade him note that his own family  
Boasted a certain father whose sole son,  
Worthy bewailment, died: and yet the sire  
Bore stoutly up against the blow and lived;  
For all that he was childless now, and prone  
Already to gray hairs, far on in life.  
Could such a good example miss effect?  
Why fix foot, stand so, staring at the house,  
Why not go in, as that wise kinsman would?

"Oh that arrangement of the house I know!  
How can I enter, how inhabit thee  
Now that one cast of fortune changes all?  
Oh me, for much divides the then from now!  
Then — with those pine-tree torches, Pelian  
pomp

And marriage-hymns, I entered, holding high  
The hand of my dear wife; while many-voiced  
The revelry that followed me and her  
That's dead now, — friends felicitating both,  
As who were lofty-lineaged, each of us  
Born of the best, two wedded and made one;  
Now — wail is wedding-chant's antagonist,  
And, for white peplos, stoles in sable state  
Herald my way to the deserted couch!"

The one word more they ventured was, "This  
grief

Befell thee witless of what sorrow means,  
Close after prosperous fortune: but, reflect!

Thou hast saved soul and body. Dead, thy  
wife —

Living, the love she left. What's novel here?  
Many the man, from whom Death long ago  
Loosed the life-partner!"

Then Admetos spoke:  
Turned on the comfort, with no tears, this  
time.

He was beginning to be like his wife.

I told you of that pressure to the point,  
Word slow pursuing word in monotone,  
Alkestis spoke with; so Admetos, now,  
Solemnly bore the burden of the truth.

And as the voice of him grew, gathered  
strength,

And groaned on, and persisted to the end,  
We felt how deep had been descent in grief,  
And with what change he came up now to light,  
And left behind such littleness as tears.

"Friends, I account the fortune of my wife  
Happier than mine, though it seem otherwise:  
For, her indeed no grief will ever touch,  
And she from many a labor pauses now,  
Renowned one! Whereas I, who ought not live,  
But do live, by evading destiny,  
Sad life am I to lead, I learn at last!  
For how shall I bear going in-doors here?  
Accosting whom? By whom saluted back,  
Shall I have joyous entry? Whither turn?  
Inside, the solitude will drive me forth,  
When I behold the empty bed — my wife's —  
The seat she used to sit upon, the floor  
Unsprinkled as when dwellers loved the cool,  
The children that will clasp my knees about,  
Cry for their mother back: these servants too  
Moaning for what a guardian they have lost!  
Inside my house such circumstance awaits,  
Outside, — Thessalian people's marriage-feasts  
And gatherings for talk will harass me,  
With overflow of women everywhere;  
It is impossible I look on them —  
Familiars of my wife and just her age!  
And then, whoever is a foe of mine,  
And lights on me — why, this will be his word —  
'See there! alive ignobly, there he skulks  
That played the dastard when it came to die,  
And, giving her he wedded, in exchange,  
Kept himself out of Hades safe and sound,  
The coward! Do you call that creature — man?  
He hates his parents for declining death,  
Just as if he himself would gladly die!  
This sort of reputation shall I have,  
Beside the other ills enough in store.  
Ill-famed, ill-faring, — what advantage, friends,  
Do you perceive I gain by life for death?"

That was the truth. Vexed waters sank to  
smooth:

'T was only when the last of bubbles broke,  
The latest circlet widened all away  
And left a placid level, that up swam  
To the surface the drowned truth, in dreadful  
change.

So, through the quiet and submission, — ay,  
Spite of some strong words — (for you miss the  
tone)

The grief was getting to be infinite —

Grief, friends fell back before. Their office  
shrank

To that old solace of humanity ! —

" Being born mortal, bear grief ! Why born  
else ? "

And they could only meditate anew.

" They, too, upborne by airy help of song,  
And haply science, which can find the stars,  
Had searched the heights : had sounded depths  
as well

By catching much at books where logic lurked,  
Yet nowhere found they aught could overcome  
Necessity : not any medicine served,

Which Thirakian tablets treasure, Orphic voice  
Wrote itself down upon : nor remedy

Which Phoibos gave to the Asklepiadai ;

Cutting the roots of many a virtuous herb

To solace overburdened mortals. None !

Of this sole goddess, never may we go

To altar nor to image : sacrifice

She hears not. All to pray for is — ' Approach !

But, oh, no harder on me, awful one,

Than heretofore ! Let life endure thee still !

For, whatsoe'er Zeus' nod decree, that same

In concert with thee hath accomplishment.

Iron, the very stuff o' the Chaluboi,

Thou, by sheer strength, dost conquer and  
subdue ;

Nor, of that harsh abrupt resolve of thine,

Any relenting is there ! "

" O my king !

Thee also, in the shackles of those hands,

Not to be shunned, the Goddess grasped ! Yet,  
bear !

Since never wilt thou lead from underground

The dead ones, wail thy worst ! If mortals  
die, —

The very children of immortals, too,

Dropped 'mid our darkness, these decay as  
sure !

Dear indeed was she while among us : dear,

Now she is dead, must she forever be :

Thy portion was to clasp, within thy couch,

The noblest of all women as a wife.

Nor be the tomb of her supposed some heap

That hides mortality : but like the Gods

Honored, a veneration to a world

Of wanderers ! Oft the wanderer, struck there-  
by,

Who else had sailed past in his merchant-ship,

Ay, he shall leave ship, land, long wind his way

Up to the mountain-summit, till there break

Speech forth, " So, this was she, then, died of  
old

To save her husband ! now, a deity

She bends above us. Hail, benignant one !

Give good ! " Such voices so will supplicate.

But — can it be ? Alkmené's offspring comes,  
Admetos ! — to thy house advances here ! "

I doubt not, they supposed him decently

Dead somewhere in that winter world of  
Thrace —

Vanquished by one o' the Bistones, or else

Victim to some mad steed's voracity —

For did not friends prognosticate as much ?

It were a new example to the point,

That " children of immortals, dropped by  
stealth

Into our darkness, die as sure as we ! "

A case to quote and comfort people with :

But, as for lamentation, ai and phen,

Right-minded subjects kept them for their  
lord.

Ay, he it was advancing ! In he strode,

And took his stand before Admetos, — turned

Now by despair to such a quietude,

He neither raised his face nor spoke, this time,

The while his friend surveyed him steadily.

That friend looked rough with fighting : had he  
strained

Worst brute to breast was ever strangled yet ?

Somehow, a victory — for there stood the  
strength,

Happy, as always ; something grave, perhaps

The great vein-cordage on the fret-worked  
front,

Black-swollen, beaded yet with battle-dew

The yellow hair o' the hero ! — his big frame

A-quiver with each muscle sinking back

Into the sleepy smooth it leaped from late.

Under the great guard of one arm, there leant

A shrouded something, live and woman-like,

Propped by the heartbeats 'neath the lion-coat.

When he had finished his survey, it seemed,

The heavings of the heart began subside,

The helpful breath returned, and last the smile

Shone out, all Herakles was back again,

As the words followed the saluting hand.

" To friendly man, behooves we freely speak,

Admetos ! — nor keep buried, deep in breast,

Blame we leave silent. I assuredly

Judged myself proper, if I should approach

By accident calamities of thine,

To be demonstrably thy friend : but thou

Told'st me not of the corpse then claiming  
care,

That was thy wife's, but didst instal me guest

I' the house here, as though busied with a  
grief

Indeed, but then, mere grief beyond thy gate :

And so, I crowned my head, and to the Gods

Poured my libations in thy dwelling-place,

With such misfortune round me. And I  
blame —

Certainly blame thee, having suffered thus !

But still I would not pain thee, pained enough :

So let it pass ! Wherefore I seek thee now,

Having turned back again though onward  
bound,

That I will tell thee. Take and keep for me

This woman, till I come thy way again,

Driving before me, having killed the king

O' the Bistones, that drove of Thrakian steeds :

In such case, give the woman back to me !

But should I fare, — as fare I fain would not,

Seeing I hope to prosper and return, —

Then, I bequeath her as thy household slave.

She came into my hands with good hard toil !

For, what find I, when started on my course,

But certain people, a whole countrv-side,

Holding a wrestling-bout ? as good to me

As a new labor : whence I took, and here



Come keeping with me, this, the victor's prize.  
For, such as conquered in the easy work,  
Gained horses which they drove away: and  
such

As conquered in the harder, — those who  
boxed

And wrestled, — cattle; and, to crown the  
prize.

A woman followed. Chancing as I did,  
Base were it to forego this fame and gain!  
Well, as I said, I trust her to thy care:  
No woman I have kidnapped, understand!  
But good hard toil has done it: here I come!  
Some day, who knows? even thou wilt praise  
the feat!"

Admetos raised his face and eyed the pair:  
Then, hollowly and with submission, spoke,  
And spoke again, and spoke time after time,  
When he perceived the silence of his friend  
Would not be broken by consenting word.  
As a tired slave goes adding stone to stone  
Until he stop some current that molests,  
So poor Admetos piled up argument  
Vainly against the purpose all too plain  
In that great brow acquainted with command.

"Nowise dishonoring, nor amid my foes  
Ranking thee, did I hide my wife's ill fate;  
But it were grief superimposed on grief,  
Shouldst thou have hastened to another home.  
My own woe was enough for me to weep!  
But, for this woman, — if it so may be, —  
Bid some Thessalian, — I entreat thee,  
king!"

Keep her, — who has not suffered like myself!  
Many of the Pheraioi welcome thee.  
Be no reminder to me of my ills!

I could not, if I saw her come to live,  
Restrain the tear! Inflict on me, diseased,  
No new disease: woe bends me down enough!  
Then, where could she be sheltered in my house,  
Female and young too? For that she is young,  
The vesture and adornment prove. Reflect!  
Should such an one inhabit the same roof  
With men? And how, mixed up, a girl, with  
youths,  
Shall she keep pure, in that case? No light  
task

To curb the May-day youngster, Herakles!  
I only speak because of care for thee.  
Or must I, in avoidance of such harm,  
Make her to enter, lead her life within  
The chamber of the dead one, all apart?  
How shall I introduce this other, couch  
This where Alkestis lay? A double blame  
I apprehend: first, from the citizens —  
Lest some tongue of them taunt that I betray  
My benefactress, fall into the snare  
Of a new fresh face: then, the dead one's self, —  
Will she not blame me likewise? Worthy, sure,  
Of worship from me! circumspect my ways,  
And jealous of a fault, are bound to be.  
But thou, — O woman, whosoe'er thou art, —  
Know, thou hast all the form, art like as like  
Alkestis, in the bodily shape! Ah me!  
Take — by the Gods — this woman from my  
sight,

Lest thou undo me, the undone before!  
Since I seem — seeing her — as if I saw  
My own wife! And confusions cloud my  
heart,  
And from my eyes the springs break forth!  
Ah me  
Unhappy — how I taste for the first time  
My misery in all its bitterness!"

Whereat the friends conferred: "The chance,  
in truth,  
Was an untoward one — none said otherwise.  
Still, what a God comes giving, good or bad,  
That, one should take and bear with. Take  
her, then!"

Herakles, — not unfastening his hold  
On that same misery, beyond mistake  
Hoarse in the words, convulsive in the face, —  
"I would that I had such a power," said he,  
"As to lead up into the light again  
Thy very wife, and grant thee such a grace!"

"Well do I know thou wouldst: but where the  
hope?  
There is no bringing back the dead to light."

"Be not extravagant in grief, no less!  
Bear it, by augury of better things!"

"'Tis easier to advise 'bear up,' than bear!"

"But how carve way i' the life that lies be-  
fore,  
If bent on groaning ever for the past?"

"I myself know that: but a certain love  
Allures me to the choice I shall not change."

"Ay, but, still loving dead ones, still makes  
weep."

"And let it be so! She has ruined me,  
And still more than I say: that answers all."

"Oh, thou hast lost a brave wife: who dis-  
putes?"

"So brave a one — that he whom thou be-  
hold'st  
Will never more enjoy his life again!"

"Time will assuage! The evil yet is young!"

"Time, thou mayst say, will; if time mean —  
to die."

"A wife — the longing for new marriage-joys  
Will stop thy sorrow!"  
"Hush, friend, — hold thy peace!  
What hast thou said! I could not credit ear!"

"How then? Thou wilt not marry, then, but  
keep  
A widowed couch?"

"There is not any one  
Of womankind shall couch with whom thou  
seest!"

"Dost think to profit thus in any way  
The dead one?"

"Her, wherever she abide,  
My duty is to honor."

"And I praise —  
Indeed I praise thee! Still, thou hast to pay  
The price of it, in being held a fool!"

"Fool call me — only one name call me not!  
Bridegroom!"

"No: it was praise, I portioned thee,  
Of being good true husband to thy wife!"

"When I betray her, though she is no more,  
May I die!"

And the thing he said was true:  
For out of Herakles a great glow broke.  
There stood a victor worthy of a prize:  
The violet-crown that withers on the brow  
Of the half-hearted claimant. Oh, he knew  
The signs of battle hard fought and well won,  
This queller of the monsters! — knew his friend  
Planted firm foot, now, on the loathly thing  
That was Admetos late! "would die," he  
knew,

Ere let the reptile raise its crest again.  
If that was truth, why try the true friend  
more?

"Then, since thou canst be faithful to the  
death,  
Take, deep into thy house, my dame!" smiled  
he.

"Not so! — I pray, by thy Progenitor!"

"Thou wilt mistake in disobeying me!"

"Obeying thee, I have to break my heart!"

"Obey me! Who knows but the favor done  
May fall into its place as duty too?"

So, he was humble, would decline no more  
Bearing a burden: he just sighed, "Alas!  
Would thou hadst never brought this prize  
from game!"

"Yet, when I conquered there, thou con-  
queredst!"

"All excellently urged! Yet — spite of all,  
Bear with me! let the woman go away!"

"She shall go, if needs must: but ere she go,  
See if there is need!"

"Need there is! At least,  
Except I make thee angry with me, so!"

"But I persist, because I have my spice  
Of intuition likewise: take the dame!"

"Be thou the victor, then! But certainly  
Thou dost thy friend no pleasure in the act!"

"Oh, time will come when thou shalt praise  
me! Now —  
Only obey!"

"Then, servants, since my house  
Must needs receive this woman, take her  
there!"

"I shall not trust this woman to the care  
Of servants."

"Why, conduct her in, thyself,  
If that seem preferable!"

"I prefer,  
With thy good leave, to place her in thy  
hands!"

"I would not touch her! Entry to the  
house —  
That, I concede thee."

"To thy sole right hand  
I mean to trust her!"

"King! Thou wrenchest this  
Out of me by main force, if I submit!"

"Courage, friend! Come, stretch hand forth!  
Good! Now touch  
The stranger-woman!"

"There! A hand I stretch —  
As though it meant to cut off Gorgon's head!"

"Hast hold of her?"

"Fast hold."  
"Why, then, hold fast  
And have her! and, one day, asseverate  
Thou wilt, I think, thy friend, the son of Zeus,  
He was the gentle guest to entertain!  
Look at her! See if she, in any way,  
Present thee with resemblance of thy wife!"

Ah, but the tears come, find the words at fault!  
There is no telling how the hero twitched  
The veil off: and there stood, with such fixed  
eyes

And such slow smile, Alkestis' silent self!  
It was the crowning grace of that great heart,  
To keep back joy: procrastinate the truth  
Until the wife, who had made proof and found  
The husband wanting, might essay once more,  
Hear, see, and feel him renovated now —  
Able to do, now, all herself had done,  
Risen to the height of her: so, hand in hand,  
The two might go together, live and die.

Beside, when he found speech, you guess the  
speech.

He could not think he saw his wife again:  
It was some mocking God that used the bliss  
To make him mad! Till Herakles must help:  
Assure him that no spectre mocked at all;  
He was embracing whom he buried once.  
Still, — did he touch, might he address the  
true, —

True eye, true body of the true live wife?

And Herakles said, smiling, "All was truth.  
Spectre? Admetos had not made his guest  
One who played ghost-invoker, or such cheat!  
Oh, he might speak and have response, in time!  
All heart could wish was gained now — life for  
death:

Only, the rapture must not grow immense:  
Take care, nor wake the envy of the Gods!"

"O thou, of greatest Zeus true son," — so spoke

Admetos when the closing word must come,  
 "Go ever in a glory of success,  
 And save, that sire, his offspring to the end!  
 For thou hast — only thou — raised me and mine

Up again to this light and life!" Then asked  
 Tremblingly, how was trod the perilous path  
 Out of the dark into the light and life:  
 How it had happened with Alkestis there.

And Herakles said little, but enough —  
 How he engaged in combat with that king  
 O' the dæmons: how the field of contest lay  
 By the tomb's self: how he sprang from ambushade,  
 Captured Death, captured him in that pair of hands.

But all the time, Alkestis moved not once  
 Out of the set gaze and the silent smile;  
 And a cold fear ran through Admetos' frame:  
 "Why does she stand and front me, silent thus?"

Herakles solemnly replied, "Not yet  
 Is it allowable thou hear the things  
 She has to tell thee; let vanish quite  
 That consecration to the lower Gods,  
 And on our upper world the third day rise!  
 Lead her in, meanwhile; good and true thou art,

Good, true, remain thou! Practise piety  
 To stranger-guests the old way! So, farewell!  
 Since forth I fare, fulfil my urgent task  
 Set by the king, the son of Sthenelos."

Fain would Admetos keep that splendid smile  
 Ever to light him. "Stay with us, thou heart!  
 Remain our house-friend!"

"At some other day!  
 Now, of necessity, I haste!" smiled he.

"But mayst thou prosper, go forth on a foot  
 Sure to return! Through all the tetrarchy,  
 Command my subjects that they institute  
 Thanksgiving-dances for the glad event,  
 And bid each altar smoke with sacrifice!  
 For we are minded to begin a fresh  
 Existence, better than the life before;  
 Seeing I own myself supremely blest."

Whereupon all the friendly moralists  
 Drew this conclusion: chirped, each beard to each:

"Manifold are thy shapings, Providence!  
 Many a hopeless matter Gods arrange.  
 What we expected never came to pass:  
 What we did not expect Gods brought to bear;  
 So have things gone, this whole experience  
 through!"

Ah, but if you had seen the play itself!  
 They say, my poet failed to get the prize:

Sophokles got the prize, — great name! They say,

Sophokles also means to make a piece,  
 Model a new Admetos, a new wife:  
 Success to him! One thing has many sides.  
 The great name! But no good supplants a good,  
 Nor beauty undoes beauty. Sophokles  
 Will carve and carry a fresh cup, brimful  
 Of beauty and good, firm to the altar-foot,  
 And glorify the Dionusiac shrine:  
 Not clash against this crater in the place  
 Where the God put it when his mouth had drained,

To the last dregs, libation lifeblood-like,  
 And praised Euripides forevermore —  
*The Human with his droppings of warm tears.*

Still, since one thing may have so many sides,  
 I think I see how, — far from Sophokles, —  
 You, I, or any one might mould a new  
 Admetos, new Alkestis. Ah, that brave  
 Bounty of poets, the one royal race  
 That ever was, or will be, in this world!  
 They give no gift that bounds itself and ends  
 I' the giving and the taking: theirs so breeds  
 I' the heart and soul o' the taker, so trans-  
 mutes

The man who only was a man before,  
 That he grows godlike in his turn, can give —  
 He also: share the poets' privilege,  
 Bring forth new good, new beauty, from the old.

As though the cup that gave the wine, gave, too,

The God's prolific giver of the grape,  
 That vine, was wont to find out, fawn around  
 His footstep, springing still to bless the dearth,  
 At bidding of a Mainad. So with me:  
 For I have drunk this poem, quenched my thirst,

Satisfied heart and soul — yet more remains!  
 Could we too make a poem? Try at least,  
 Inside the head, what shape the rose-mists take!

When God Apollon took, for punishment,  
 A mortal form and sold himself a slave  
 To King Admetos till a term should end, —  
 Not only did he make, in servitude,  
 Such music, while he fed the flocks and herds,  
 As saved the pasture from wrong or fright,  
 Curing rough creatures of ungentleness:  
 Much more did that melodious wisdom work  
 Within the heart o' the master: there, ran wild  
 Many a lust and greed that grow to strength  
 By preying on the native pity and care,  
 Would else, all undisturbed, possess the land.

And these the God so tamed, with golden tongue,  
 That, in the plenitude of youth and power,  
 Admetos vowed himself to rule thenceforth  
 In Pherai solely for his people's sake,  
 Subduing to such end each lust and greed  
 That dominates the natural charity.

And so the struggle ended. Right ruled might:  
 And soft yet brave, and good yet wise, the man  
 Stood up to be a monarch; having learned



The worth of life, life's worth would he bestow  
On all whose lot was cast, to live or die,  
As he determined for the multitude.  
So stands a statue : pedestalled sublime,  
Only that it may wave the thunder off,  
And ward, from winds that vex, a world below.

And then, — as if a whisper found its way  
E'en to the sense o' the marble, — " Vain thy  
vow !

The royalty of its resolve, that head  
Shall hide within the dust ere day be done :  
That arm, its outstretch of beneficence,  
Shall have a speedy ending on the earth :  
Lie patient, prone, while light some cricket  
leaps

And takes possession of the masterpiece,  
To sit, sing louder as more near the sun.  
For why ? A flaw was in the pedestal ;  
Who knows ? A worm's work ! Sapped, the  
certain fate

O' the statue is to fall, and thine to die ! "

Whereat the monarch, calm, addressed himself  
To die, but bitterly the soul outbroke —

" O prodigality of life, blind waste  
I' the world, of power profuse without the will  
To make life do its work, deserve its day !  
My ancestors pursued their pleasure, poured  
The blood o' the people out in idle war,  
Or took occasion of some weary peace  
To bid men dig down deep or build up high,  
Spend bone and marrow that the king might  
feast

Entrenched and buttressed from the vulgar  
gaze.

Yet they all lived, nay, lingered to old age :  
As though Zeus loved that they should laugh  
to scorn

The vanity of seeking other ends  
In rule, than just the ruler's pastime. They  
Lived ; I must die."

And, as some long last moan  
Of a minor suddenly is propped beneath  
By note which, new-struck, turns the wail that  
was

Into a wonder and a triumph, so  
Began Alkestis : " Nay, thou art to live !  
The glory that, in the disguise of flesh,  
Was helpful to our house, — he prophesied  
The coming fate : whereon, I pleaded sore  
That he, — I guessed a God, who to his couch  
Amid the clouds must go and come again,  
While we were darkling, — since he loved us  
both,

He should permit thee, at whatever price,  
To live and carry out to heart's content  
Soul's purpose, turn each thought to very deed,  
Nor let Zeus lose the monarch meant in thee.

" To which Apollon, with a sunset smile,  
Sadly — ' And so should mortals arbitrate !  
It were unseemly if they aped us Gods,  
And, mindful of our chain of consequence,  
Lost care of the immediate earthly link :  
Forwent the comfort of life's little hour,  
In prospect of some cold abysmal blank  
Alien eternity, — unlike the time

They know, and understand to practise with, —  
No, — our eternity — no heart's blood, bright  
And warm outpoured in its behoof, would  
tinge

Never so palely, warm a whit the more :  
Whereas retained and treasured — left to beat  
Joyously on, a life's length, in the breast  
O' the loved and loving — it would throb itself  
Through, and suffuse the earthly tenement,  
Transform it, even as your mansion here  
Is love-transformed into a temple-home  
Where I, a God, forget the Olumpian glow,  
I' the feel of human richness like the rose :  
Your hopes and fears, so blind and yet so sweet  
With death about them. Therefore, well in  
thee

To look, not on eternity, but time :  
To apprehend that, should Admetos die,  
All, we Gods purposed in him, dies as sure :  
That, life's link snapping, all our chain is lost.  
And yet a mortal glance might pierce, me-  
thinks,

Deeper into the seeming dark of things,  
And learn, no fruit, man's life can bear, will  
fade :

Learn, if Admetos die now, so much more  
Will pity for the frailness found in flesh,  
Will terror at the earthly chance and change  
Frustrating wisest scheme of noblest soul,  
Will these go wake the seeds of good asleep  
Throughout the world : as oft a rough wind  
sheds

The unripe promise of some field-flower, —  
true !

But loosens too the level, and lets breathe  
A thousand captives for the year to come.  
Nevertheless, obtain thy prayer, stay fate !  
Admetos lives — if thou wilt die for him ! "

" So was the pact concluded that I die,  
And thou live on, live for thyself, for me,  
For all the world. Embrace and bid me hail,  
Husband, because I have the victory —  
Am, heart, soul, head to foot, one happiness ! "

Whereto Admetos, in a passionate cry :  
" Never, by that true word Apollon spoke !  
All the unwise wish is unwished, O wife !  
Let purposes of Zeus fulfil themselves,  
If not through me, then through some other  
man !

Still, in myself he had a purpose too,  
Inalienably mine, to end with me :  
This purpose — that, throughout my earthly  
life,

Mine should be mingled and made up with  
thine, —

And we two prove one force and play one part  
And do one thing. Since death divides the  
pair,

'T is well that I depart and thou remain  
Who wast to me as spirit is to flesh :  
Let the flesh perish, be perceived no more,  
So thou, the spirit that informed the flesh,  
Bend yet awhile, a very flame above  
The rift I drop into the darkness by, —  
And bid remember, flesh and spirit once  
Worked in the world, one body, for man's sake.

Never be that abominable show  
Of passive death without a quickening life —  
Admetos only, now Alkestis now ! ”

Then she : “ O thou Admetos, must the pile  
Of truth on truth, which needs but one truth  
more

To tower up in completeness, trophy-like,  
Emprise of man, and triumph of the world,  
Must it go ever to the ground again  
Because of some faint heart or faltering hand,  
Which we, that breathless world about the  
base,

Trusted should carry safe to altitude,  
Superimpose o' the summit, our supreme  
Achievement, our victorious coping-stone ?  
Shall thine, Beloved, prove the hand and heart  
That fail again, flinch backward at the truth  
Would cap and crown the structure this last  
time, —

Precipitate our monumental hope  
And strew the earth ignobly yet once more ?  
See how, truth piled on truth, the structure  
wants,

Waits justs the crowning truth I claim of thee !  
Wouldst thou, for any joy to be enjoyed,  
For any sorrow that thou mightst escape,  
Unwill thy will to reign a righteous king ?  
Nowise ! And were there two lots, death and  
life, —

Life, wherein good resolve should go to air,  
Death, whereby finest fancy grew plain fact  
I' the reign of thy survivor, — life or death ?  
Certainly death, thou choosest. Here stand I  
The wedded, the beloved one : hadst thou  
loved

Her who less worthily could estimate  
Both life and death than thou ? Not so should  
say

Admetos, whom Apollon made come court  
Alkestis in a car, submissive brutes  
Of blood were yoked to, symbolizing soul  
Must dominate unruly sense in man.  
Then, shall Admetos and Alkestis see  
Good alike, and alike choose, each for each,  
Good, — and yet, each for other, at the last,  
Choose evil ? What ? thou soundest in my soul  
To depths below the deepest, reachest good  
In evil, that makes evil good again,  
And so allottest to me that I live  
And not die — letting die, not thee alone,  
But all true life that lived in both of us ?  
Look at me once ere thou decree the lot ! ”

Therewith her whole soul entered into his,  
He looked the look back, and Alkestis died.

And even while it lay, i' the look of him,  
Dead the dimmed body, bright Alkestis' soul  
Had penetrated through the populace  
Of ghosts, was got to Koré, — throned and  
crowned

The pensive queen o' the twilight, where she  
dwells

Forever in a muse, but half away  
From flowery earth she lost and hankers for, —  
And there demanded to become a ghost  
Before the time.

Whereat the softened eyes

Of the lost maidenhood that lingered still  
Straying among the flowers in Sicily,  
Sudden was startled back to Hades' throne  
By that demand : broke through humanity  
Into the orb'd omniscience of a God,  
Searched at a glance Alkestis to the soul,  
And said — while a long slow sigh lost itself  
I' the hard and hollow passage of a laugh :

“ Hence, thou deceiver ! This is not to die,  
If, by the very death which mocks me now,  
The life, that's left behind and past my power,  
Is formidably doubled. Say, there fight  
Two athletes, side by side, each athlete armed  
With only half the weapons, and no more,  
Adequate to a contest with their foe :

If one of these should fling helm, sword and  
shield  
To follow — shieldless, swordless, helmless  
late —

And so leap naked o'er the barrier, leave  
A combatant equipped from head to heel,  
Yet cry to the other side, ‘ Receive a friend  
Who fights no longer ! ’ ‘ Back, friend, to the  
fray ! ’

Would be the prompt rebuff ; I echo it.  
Two souls in one were formidable odds :  
Admetos must not be himself and thou ! ”

And so, before the embrace relaxed a whit,  
The lost eyes opened, still beneath the look ;  
And lo, Alkestis was alive again,  
And of Admetos' rapture who shall speak ?

So, the two lived together long and well.  
But never could I learn, by word of scribe  
Or voice of poet, rumor wafts our way,  
That — of the scheme of rule in righteousness,  
The bringing back again the Golden Age,  
Which, rather than renounce, our pair would  
die —

That ever one faint particle came true,  
With both alive to bring it to effect :  
Such is the envy Gods still bear mankind !

So might our version of the story prove,  
And no Euripidean pathos plague  
Too much my critic-friend of Syracuse.

“ Besides your poem failed to get the prize :  
(That is, the first prize : second prize is none.)  
Sophokles got it ! ” Honor the great name !  
All cannot love two great names ; yet some do :  
I know the poetess who graved in gold,  
Among her glories that shall never fade,  
This style and title for Euripides,  
*The Human with his droppings of warm tears.*

I know, too, a great Kaonian painter, strong  
As Herakles, though rosy with a robe  
Of grace that softens down the sinewy strength :  
And he has made a picture of it all.  
There lies Alkestis dead, beneath the sun,  
She longed to look her last upon, beside  
The sea, which somehow tempts the life in us  
To come trip over its white waste of waves,  
And try escape from earth, and fleet as free.

Behind the body, I suppose there bends  
 Old Pheres in his hoary impotence;  
 And women-wailers in a corner crouch  
 — Four, beautiful as you four — yes, indeed! —  
 Close, each to other, agonizing all,  
 As fastened, in fear's rhythmic sympathy,  
 To two contending opposite. There strains  
 The might o' the hero 'gainst his more than  
     match,  
 — Death, dreadful not in thew and bone, but  
     like  
 The envenomed substance that exudes some dew  
 Whereby the merely honest flesh and blood  
 Will fester up and run to ruin straight,  
 Ere they can close with, clasp and overcome

The poisonous impalpability  
 That simulates a form beneath the flow  
 Of those gray garments; I pronounce that  
     piece  
 Worthy to set up in our Poikilé!

And all came, — glory of the golden verse,  
 And passion of the picture, and that fine  
 Frank outgush of the human gratitude  
 Which saved our ship and me, in Syracuse, —  
 Ay, and the tear or two which slipt perhaps  
 Away from you, friends, while I told my tale,  
 — It all came of this play that gained no prize;  
 Why crown whom Zeus has crowned in soul  
     before?

## ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY

INCLUDING A TRANSCRIPT FROM EURIPIDES, BEING

### THE LAST ADVENTURE OF BALAUSTION

οὐκ ἔσθω κενέβρει' \* ὁπότεν δὲ θύῃς τι, καλεῖ με.

"I eat no carrion; when you sacrifice  
 Some cleanly creature — call me for a slice!"

WIND, wave, and bark, bear Euthukles and me,  
 Balaustion, from — not sorrow but despair,  
 Not memory but the present and its pang!  
 Athenai, live thou hearted in my heart:  
 Never, while I live, may I see thee more,  
 Never again may these repugnant orbs  
 Ache themselves blind before the hideous  
     pomp,  
 The ghastly mirth which mocked thine over-  
     throw  
 — Death's entry, Haides' outrage!

                    Doomed to die, —  
 Fire should have flung a passion of embrace  
 About thee till, resplendently unarmed,  
 (Temple by temple folded to his breast,  
 All thy white wonder fainting out in ash,)  
 Lightly some vaporous sigh of soul escaped  
 And so the Immortals bade Athenai back!  
 Or earth might sunder and absorb thee, save,  
 Buried below Olumpus and its gods,  
 Akropolis to dominate her realm  
 For Koré, and console the ghosts; or, sea,  
 What if thy watery plural vastitude,  
 Rolling unanimous advance, had rushed,  
 Might upon might, a moment, — stood, one  
     stare,  
 Sea-face to city-face, thy glaucous wave  
 Glassing that marbled last magnificence, —  
 Till fate's pale tremulous foam-flower tipped  
     the gray,  
 And when wave broke and overswarned, and,  
     sucked

To bounds back, multitudinously ceased,  
 Let land again breathe unconfused with sea,  
 Attiké was, Athenai was not now!

Such end I could have borne, for I had shared.  
 But this which, glanced at, aches within my  
     orbs  
 To blinding, — bear me thence, bark, wind and  
     wave!

Me, Euthukles, and, hearted in each heart,  
 Athenai, undisgraced as Pallas' self,  
 Bear to my birthplace, Helios' island-bride,  
 Zeus' darling: thither speed us, homeward-  
     bound,

Wafted already twelve hours' sail away  
 From horror, nearer by one sunset Rhodes!

Why should despair be? Since, distinct above  
 Man's wickedness and folly, flies the wind  
 And floats the cloud, free transport for our  
     soul

Out of its fleshly durance dim and low, —  
 Since disembodied soul anticipates  
 (Thought-borne as now in rapturous unrestraint)  
 Above all crowding, crystal silentness,  
 Above all noise, a silver solitude: —  
 Surely, where thought so bears soul, soul in  
     time

May permanently bide, "assert the wise,"  
 There live in peace, there work in hope once  
     more —  
 Oh, nothing doubt, Philemon! Greed and strife,



Hatred and cark and care, what place have they

In yon blue liberality of heaven ?

How the sea helps ! How rose-smit earth will rise

Breast-high thence, some bright morning, and be Rhodes !

Heaven, earth and sea, my warrant — in their name,

Believe — o'er falsehood, truth is surely sphered,

O'er ugliness beams beauty, o'er this world

Extends that realm where "as the wise assert,"

Philemon, thou shalt see Euripides

Clearer than mortal sense perceived the man !

A sunset nearer Rhodes, by twelve hours' sweep

Of surge secured from horror ? Rather say,

Quieted out of weakness into strength.

I dare invite, survey the scene my sense

Staggered to apprehend : for, disenvolved

From the mere outside anguish and contempt,

Slowly a justice centred in a doom

Reveals itself. Ay, pride succumbed to pride,

Oppression met the oppressor and was matched.

Athenai's vaunt braved Sparté's violence

Till, in the shock, prone fell Peiraios, low

Rampart and bulwark lay, as — timing stroke

Of hammer, axe, and beam hoist, poised and swung —

The very flute-girls blew their laughing best,

In dance about the conqueror while he bade

Music and merriment help enginery

Batter down, break to pieces all the trust

Of citizens once, slaves now. See what walls

Play substitute for the long double range

Themistoklean, heralding a guest

From harbor on to citadel ! Each side

Their senseless walls demolished stone by stone,

See, — outer wall as stonelike, heads and hearts, —

Athenai's terror-stricken populace !

Prattlers, tongue-tied in crouching abjectness, —

Braggarts, who wring hands wont to flourish swords —

Sophist and rhetorician, demagogue,

(Argument dumb, authority a jest),

Dikast and heliast, pleader, litigant,

Quack-priest, sham-prophecy-retailer, scout

O' the customs, sycophant, whate'er the style,

Altar-scrap-snatcher, pimp and parasite, —

Rivalries at truce now each with each,

Stupefied mud-banks, — such an use they serve !

While the one order which performs exact

To promise, functions faithful last as first,

What is it but the city's lyric troop,

Chantress and psaltress, flute-girl, dancing-girl ?

Athenai's ha lotry takes laughing care

Their patron miss no pipings, late she loved,

But deathward tread at least the kordax-step.

Die then, who pulled such glory on your heads !

There let it grind to powder ! Perikles !

The living are the dead now : death be life !

Why should the sunset yonder waste its wealth ?

Prove thee Olumpian ! If my heart supply

Inviolate the structure, — true to type,

Build me some spirit-place no flesh shali find,

As Pheidias may inspire thee ; slab on slab,

Renew Athenai, quarry out the cloud,

Convert to gold yon west extravagance !

'Neath Propylaia, from Akropolis

By vapory grade and grade, gold all the way,

Step to thy snow-Pnux, mount thy Bema-cloud,

Thunder and lighten thence a Hellas through

That shall be better and more beautiful

And too august for Sparté's foot to spurn !

Chased in the crag, again our Theatre

Predominates, one purple : Staghunt-month,

Brings it not Dionusia ? Hail, the Three !

Aischulos, Sophokles, Euripides

Compete, gain prize or lose prize, godlike still.

Nay, lest they lack the old god-exercise —

Their noble want the unworthy, — as of old,

(How otherwise should patience crown their might ?)

What if each find his ape promoted man,

His censor raised for antic service still ?

Some new Hermippos to pelt Perikles,

Kratinos to swear Pheidias robbed a shrine,

Eruxis — I suspect, Euripides,

No brow will ache because with mop and mow

He gibes my poet ! There 's a dog-faced dwarf

That gets to godship somehow, yet retains

His apehood in the Egyptian hierarchy,

More decent, indecorous just enough :

Why should not dog-ape, graced in due degree,

Grow Momos as thou Zeus ? Or didst thou sigh

Rightly with thy Makaria ? "After life,

Better no sentience than turbulence ;

Death cures the low contention." Be it so !

Yet progress means contention, to my mind.

Euthukles, who, except for love that speaks,

Art silent by my side while words of mine

Provoke that foe from which escape is vain

Henceforward, wake Athenai's fate and fall, —

Memories asleep as, at the altar-foot,

Those Furies in the Oresteian song, —

Do I amiss, who wanting strength use craft,

Advance upon the foe I cannot fly,

Nor feign a snake is dormant though it gnaw ?

That fate and fall, once bedded in our brain,

Roots itself past upwrenching ; but coaxed forth,

Encouraged out to practise fork and fang, —

Perhaps, when satiate with prompt sustenance,

It may pine, likelier die than if left swell

In peace by our pretension to ignore,

Or pricked to threefold fury, should our stamp

Bruise and not brain the pest.

A middle course !

What hinders that we treat this tragic theme

As the Three taught when either woke some woe,

— How Klutaimnestra hated, what the pride

Of Iokasté, why Medeia clove

Nature asunder. Small rebuked by large,

We felt our puny hates refine to air,

Our poor prides sink, prevent the humbling hand,

Our petty passions purify their tide.

So, Euthukles, permit the tragedy

To re-enact itself, this voyage through,  
Till sunsets end and sunrise brighten Rhodes!  
Majestic on the stage of memory,  
Peplosed and kothorned, let Athenai fall  
Once more, nay, oft again till life conclude,  
Lent for the lesson: Choros, I and thou!  
What else in life seems piteous any more  
After such pity, or proves terrible  
Beside such terror?

Still — since Phrunichos

Offended, by too premature a touch  
Of that Milesian smart-place freshly frayed —  
(Ah, my poor people, whose prompt remedy  
Was — fine the poet, not reform thyself!)  
Beware precipitate approach! Rehearse  
Rather the prologue, well a year away,  
Than the main misery, a sunset old.  
What else but fitting prologue to the piece  
Style an adventure, stranger than my first  
By so much as the issue it enwombed  
Lurked big beyond Balaustion's littleness?  
Second supreme adventure! O that Spring,  
That eve I told the earlier to my friends!  
Where are the four now, with each red-ripe  
mouth

Crumpled so close, no quickest breath it fetched  
Could disengage the lip-flower furred to bud  
For fear Admetos — shivering head and foot,  
As with sick soul and blind averted face  
He trusted hand forth to obey his friend —  
Should find no wife in her cold hand's response,  
Nor see the disenshrouded statue start  
Alkestis, live the life and love the love!  
I wonder, does the streamlet ripple still,  
Out-smoothing galingale and watermint  
Its mat-floor? while at brim, 'twixt sedge and  
sedge,

What bubbblings past Baccheion, broadened  
much,

Pricked by the reed and fretted by the fly,  
Oared by the boatman-spider's pair of arms!  
Lenaia was a gladsome month ago —  
Euripides had taught "Andromedé:"  
Next month, would teach "Kresphontes" —  
which same month

Some one from Phokis, who companioned me  
Since all that happened on those temple-steps,  
Would marry me and turn Athenian too.  
Now! if next year the masters let the slaves  
Do Bacchic service and restore mankind  
That trilogy whereof, 't is noised, one play  
Presents the Bacchai, — no Euripides  
Will teach the choros, nor shall we be tinged  
By any such grand sunset of his soul,  
Exiles from dead Athenai, — not the live  
That's in the cloud there with the new-born  
star!

Speak to the infinite intelligence,  
Sing to the everlasting sympathy!  
Winds belly sail, and drench of dancing brine  
Buffet our boat-side, so the prore bound free!  
Condense our voyage into one great day  
Made up of sunset-closes: eve by eve,  
Resume that memorable night-discourse  
When — like some meteor-brilliance, fire and  
filth,

Or say, his own Amphitheos, deity  
And dung, who, bound on the gods' embassy,  
Got men's acknowledgement in kick and cuff —  
We made acquaintance with a visitor  
Ominous, apparitional, who went  
Strange as he came, but shall not pass away.  
Let us attempt that memorable talk,  
Clothe the adventure's every incident  
With due expression: may not looks be told,  
Gesture made speak, and speech so amplified  
That words find blood-warmth which, cold-  
writ, they lose?

Recall the night we heard the news from  
Thrace,  
One year ago, Athenai still herself.

We two were sitting silent in the house,  
Yet cheerless hardly. Euthukles, forgive!  
I somehow speak to unseen auditors.  
Not *you*, but — Euthukles had entered, grave,  
Grand, may I say, as who brings laurel-branch  
And message from the tripod: such it proved.

He first removed the garland from his brow,  
Then took my hand and looked into my face.

"Speak good words!" much misgiving fal-  
tered I.

"Good words, the best, Balaustion! He is  
crowned,  
Gone with his Attic ivy home to feast,  
Since Aischulos required companionship.  
Pour a libation for Euripides!"

When we had sat the heavier silence out —  
"Dead and triumphant still!" began reply  
To my eye's question. "As he willed, he  
worked:

And, as he worked, he wanted not, be sure,  
Triumph his whole life through, submitting  
work

To work's right judges, never to the wrong,  
To competency, not ineptitude.

When he had run life's proper race and worked  
Quite to the stade's end, there remained to try  
The stade's turn, should strength dare the  
double course.

Half the diaulos reached, the hundred plays  
Accomplished, force in its rebound sufficed  
To lift along the athlete and ensure  
A second wreath, proposed by fools for first,  
The statist's olive as the poet's bay.

Wiselier, he suffered not a twofold aim  
Retard his pace, confuse his sight; at once  
Poet and statist; though the multitude  
Girded him ever 'All thine aim thine art?  
The idle poet only? No regard  
For civic duty, public service, here?  
We drop our ballot-bean for Sophokles!  
Not only could he write "Antigoné,"  
But — since (we argued) whose penned that  
piece

Might just as well conduct a squadron, —  
straight  
Good-naturedly he took on him command,  
Got laughed at, and went back to making plays,

Having allowed us our experiment  
Respecting the fit use of faculty.  
No whit the more did athlete slacken pace.  
Soon the jeers grew: 'Cold hater of his kind,  
A sea-cave suits him, not the vulgar hearth!  
What need of tongue-talk, with a bookish store  
Would stock ten cities?' Shadow of an ass!  
No whit the worse did athlete touch the mark  
And, at the turning-point, consign his scorn  
O' the scorners to that final trilogy  
'Hupsipule,' 'Phoinissai,' and the Match  
Of Life Contemplative with Active Life,  
Zethos against Amphin. Ended so?  
Nowise! — began again; for heroes rest  
Dropping shield's oval o'er the entire man,  
And he who thus took Contemplation's prize  
Turned stade-point but to face Activity.  
Out of all shadowy hands extending help  
For life's decline pledged to youth's labor  
still,

Whatever renovation flatter age, —  
Society with pastime, solitude  
With peace, — he chose the hand that gave the  
heart,

Bade Macedonian Archelaos take  
The leavings of Athenai, ash once flame.  
For fifty politicians' frosty work,  
One poet's ash proved ample and to spare:  
He propped the state and filled the treasury,  
Counselled the king as might a meaner soul,  
Furnished the friend with what shall stand in  
stead

Of crown and sceptre, star his name about  
When these are dust; for him, Euripides  
Laid the old hand on the old phorminx flung,  
Clashed thence 'Alkaion,' maddened 'Pen-  
theus' up;

Then music sighed itself away, one moan  
Iphigeneia made by Aulis' strand;  
With her and music died Euripides.

"The poet-friend who followed him to Thrace,  
Agathon, writes thus much: the merchant-  
ship

Moreover brings a message from the king  
To young Euripides, who went on board  
This morning at Mounuechia: all is true."

I said "Thank Zeus for the great news and  
good!"

"Nay, the report is running in brief fire  
Through the town's stubbly furrow," he re-  
sumed:

— "Entertains brightly what their favorite  
styles

'The City of Gapers' for a week perhaps,  
Supplants three luminous tales, but yesterday  
Pronounced sufficient lamps to last the month:  
How Glauketes, outbidding Morsimos,  
Paid market-price for one Kopaic eel  
A thousand drachmai, and then cooked his  
prize

Not proper conger-fashion but in oil  
And nettles, as man fries the foam-fish-kind;  
How all the captains of the triremes, late  
Victors at Arginousai, on return  
Will, for return, be straightway put to death;

How Mikon wagered a Thessalian mime  
Trained him by Laïs, looked on as complete,  
Against Leogoras' blood-mare koppa-marked,  
Valued six talents, — swore, accomplished so,  
The girl could swallow at a draught, nor  
breathe,

A choenix of unmixed Mendesian wine;  
And having lost the match will — dine on  
herbs!

Three stories late aflame, at once extinet,  
Outblazed by just 'Euripides is dead'!

"I met the concourse from the Theatre,  
The audience flocking homeward: victory  
Again awarded Aristophanes  
Precisely for his old play chopped and  
changed,

'The Female Celebrators of the Feast' —  
That Thesmophoria, tried a second time.  
'Never such full success!' — assured the folk,  
Who yet stopped praising to have word of mouth  
With 'Euthukles, the bard's own intimate,  
Balaustion's husband, the right man to ask.'

"Dead, yes, but how dead, may acquaintance  
know?

You were the couple constant at his cave:  
Tell us now, is it true that women, moved  
By reason of his liking Krateros' . . .

"I answered 'He was loved by Sokrates.'

"Nay," said another, 'envy did the work!  
For, emulating poets of the place,  
One Arridaïos, one Krateues, both  
Established in the royal favor, these' . . .

"Protagoras instructed him," said I.

"Phu," whistled Comic Platon, 'hear the  
fact!

'Twas well said of your friend by Sophokles,  
'He hate our women?' In his verse, belike,  
But when it comes to prose-work, — ha, ha,  
ha!"

New climes don't change old manners: so, it  
chanced,

Pursuing an intrigue one moonless night  
With Arethousian Nikodikos' wife,  
(Come now, his years were simply seventy-  
five.)

Crossing the palace-court, what haps he on  
But Archelous' pack of hungry hounds?  
Who tore him piecemeal ere his cry brought  
help.'

"I asked: Did not you write 'The Festivals'?  
You best know what dog tore him when alive.  
You others, who now make a ring to hear,  
Have not you just enjoyed a second treat,  
Proclaimed that ne'er was play more worthy  
prize

Than this, myself assisted at, last year,  
And gave its worth to, — spitting on the same?  
Appraise no poetry, — price cuttlefish,  
Or that seaweed-alphistes, scorpion-sort,  
Much famed for mixing mud with fantasy  
On midnights! I interpret no foul dreams."



If so said Euthukles, so could not I,  
Balaustion, say. After "Lusistraté"  
No more for me of "people's privilege,"  
No witnessing "the Grand old Comedy  
Coeval with our freedom, which, curtailed,  
Were freedom's deathblow: relic of the past,  
When Virtue laughingly told truth to Vice,  
Uncensured, since the stern mouth, stuffed with  
flowers,  
Through poetry breathed satire, perfumed blast  
Which sense snuffed up while searched unto  
the bone!"

I was a stranger: "For first joy," urged  
friends,

"Go hear our Comedy, some patriot piece  
That plies the selfish advocates of war  
With argument so unevadable  
That crash fall Kleons whom the finer play  
Of reason, tickling, deeper wounds no whit  
Than would a spear-thrust from a savory-stalk!  
No: you hear knave and fool told crime and  
fault,

And see each scourged his quantity of stripes.  
'Rough dealing, awkward language,' whine  
our fops:

The world's too squeamish now to bear plain  
words

Concerning deeds it acts with gust enough:  
But, thanks to wine-lees and democracy,  
We've still our stage where truth calls spade a  
spade!

Ashamed? Phruomachos' decree provides  
The sex may sit discreetly, witness all.  
Sorted, the good with good, the gay with gay,  
Themselves unseen, no need to force a blush.  
A Rhodian wife and ignorant so long?  
Go hear next play!"

I heard "Lusistraté."

Waves, said to wash pollution from the world,  
Take that plague-memory, cure that pustule  
caught

As, past escape, I sat and saw the piece  
By one appalled at Phaidra's fate, — the chaste,  
Whom, because chaste, the wicked goddess  
chained

To that same serpent of unchastity  
She loathed most, and who, coiled so, died dis-  
traught

Rather than make submission, loose one limb  
Love-wards, at lambency of honeyed tongue,  
Or torture of the scales which scraped her snow  
— I say, the piece by him who charged this piece  
(Because Euripides shrank not to teach,  
If gods be strong and wicked, man, though  
weak,

May prove their match by willing to be good)  
With infamies the Scythian's whip should cure —  
"Such outrage done the public — Phaidra  
named!

Such purpose to corrupt ingenuous youth,  
Such insult cast on female character!" —

Why, when I saw that bestiality —  
So beyond all brute-beast imagining,  
That when, to point the moral at the close,  
Poor Salabaccho, just to show how fair  
Was "Reconciliation," stripped her charms,  
That exhibition simply bade us breathe,

Seemed something healthy and commendable  
After obscenity grotesqued so much  
It slunk away revolted at itself.  
Henceforth I had my answer when our sage  
Pattern-proposing seniors pleaded grave,  
"You fail to fathom here the deep design!  
All's acted in the interest of truth,  
Religion, and those manners old and dear  
Which made our city great when citizens  
Like Aristoides and like Miltiades  
Wore each a golden tettix in his hair."  
What do they wear now under — Kleophon?

Well, for such reasons, — I am out of breath,  
But loathsomeness we needs must hurry past, —  
I did not go to see, nor then nor now,  
The "Thesmophoriazousai." But, since males  
Choose to brave first, blame afterward, nor  
brand

Without fair taste of what they stigmatize,  
Euthukles had not missed the first display,  
Original portrait of Euripides  
By "Virtue laughingly reproving Vice:"  
"Virtue," — the author, Aristophanes,  
Who mixed an image out of his own depths,  
Ticketed as I tell you. Oh, this time  
No more pretension to recondite worth!  
No joke in aid of Peace, no demagogue  
Pun-pelleted from Pnux, no kordax-dance  
Overt helped covertly the Ancient Faith!  
All now was muck, home-produce, honestman  
The author's soul secreted to a play  
Which gained the prize that day we heard the  
death.

I thought "How thoroughly death alters things!  
Where is the wrong now, done our dead and  
great?"

How natural seems grandeur in relief,  
Cliff-base with frothy spites against its calm!"

Euthukles interposed — he read my thought —

"O'er them, too, in a moment came the change.  
The crowd's enthusiastic, to a man:  
Since, rake as such may please the ordure-heap  
Because of certain sparkles presumed ore,  
At first flash of true lightning overhead,  
They look up, nor resume their search too soon.  
The insect-scattering sign is evident,  
And nowhere winks a firefly rival now,  
Nor bustles any beetle of the brood  
With trundled dung-ball meant to menace  
heaven.

Contrariwise, the cry is 'Honor him!'  
'A statue in the theatre!' wants one;  
Another 'Bring the poet's body back,  
Bury him in Peiraïos: o'er his tomb  
Let Alkamenēs carve the music-witch,  
The songstress-siren, meed of melody:  
Thoukudides invent his epitaph!'  
To-night the whole town pays its tribute thus."

Our tribute should not be the same, my friend!  
Statue? Within our heart he stood, he stands!  
As for the vest outgrown now by the form,  
Low flesh that clothed high soul, — a vesture's  
fate —

Why, let it fade, mix with the elements  
 There where it, falling, freed Euripides!  
 But for the soul that's tutelary now  
 Till time end, o'er the world to teach and bless —  
 How better hail its freedom than by first  
 Singing, we two, its own song back again,  
 Up to that face from which flowed beauty — face  
 Now abler to see triumph and take love  
 Than when it glorified Athenai once?

The sweet and strange Alkestis, which saved  
 me,  
 Secured me — you, ends nowise, to my mind,  
 In pardon of Admetos. Hearts are fain  
 To follow cheerful weary Herakles  
 Striding away from the huge gratitude,  
 Clubshouldered, lion-fleece round loin and flank,  
 Bound on the next new labor "height o'er height  
 Ever surmounting, — destiny's decree!"  
 Thither He helps us: that's the story's end;  
 He smiling said so, when I told him mine —  
 My great adventure, how Alkestis helped.  
 Afterward, when the time for parting fell,  
 He gave me, with two other precious gifts,  
 This third and best, consummating the grace,  
 "Herakles," writ by his own hand, each line.

"If it have worth, reward is still to seek.  
 Somebody, I forget who, gained the prize  
 And proved arch-poet: time must show!" he  
 smiled:

"Take this, and, when the noise tires out, judge  
 me —

Some day, not slow to dawn, when somebody —  
 Who? I forget — proves nobody at all!"

Is not that day come? What if you and I  
 Re-sing the song, inaugurate the fame?  
 We have not waited to acquaint ourselves  
 With song and subject; we can prologize  
 How, at Eurustheus' bidding, — hate strained  
 hard, —

Herakles had departed, one time more,  
 On his last labor, worst of all the twelve;  
 Descended into Hades, thence to drag  
 The triple-headed hound, which sun should see  
 Spite of the god whose darkness whelped the  
 Fear.

Down went the hero, "back — how should he  
 come?"

So laughed King Lukos, an old enemy,  
 Who judged that absence testified defeat  
 Of the land's loved one, — since he saved the  
 land

And for that service wedded Megara  
 Daughter of Thebai, realm her child should rule.  
 Ambition, greed and malice seized their prey,  
 The Heracleian House, defenceless left.

Father and wife and child, to trample out  
 Trace of its hearth-fire: since extreme old age  
 Wakes pity, woman's wrong wins championship,  
 And child may grow up man and take revenge,  
 Hence see we that, from out their palace-home  
 Hunted, for last resource they cluster now  
 Couched on the cold ground, hapless supplicants  
 About their court-yard altar, — Household Zeus  
 It is, the Three in funeral garb beseech,  
 Delaying death so, till deliverance come —

When did it ever? — from the deep and dark.  
 And thus breaks silence old Amphitruon's  
 voice. . . .

Say I not true thus far, my Euthukles?

Suddenly, torch-light! knocking at the door,  
 Loud, quick, "Admittance for the revels'  
 lord!"

Some unintelligible Komos-cry —  
*Raw-flesh red, no cap upon his head,  
 Dionusos, Bacchos, Phales, Iacchos,  
 In let him reel with the kid-skin at his heel,  
 Where it buries in the spread of the bushy myrtle-  
 bed!*

(Our Rhodian Jackdaw-song was sense to that!)  
 Then laughter, outbursts ruder and more rude,  
 Through which, with silver point, a fluting  
 pierced,

And ever "Open, open, Bacchos bids!"

But at last — one authoritative word,  
 One name of an immense significance:  
 For Euthukles rose up, threw wide the door.

There trooped the Choros of the Comedy  
 Crowned and triumphant; first, those flushed  
 Fifteen,

Men that wore women's garb, grotesque disguise,  
 Then marched the Three, — who played Mnesi-  
 lochos,

Who, Toxotes, and who, robed right, masked  
 rare,

Monkeyed our Great and Dead to heart's content  
 That morning in Athenai. Masks were down  
 And robes doffed now; the sole disguise was  
 drink.

Mixing with these — I know not what gay crowd,  
 Girl-dancers, flute-boys, and pre-eminent  
 Among them, — doubtless draped with such re-  
 serve

As stopped fear of the fifty-drachma fine  
 (Beside one's name on public fig-tree nailed)  
 Which women pay who in the streets walk  
 bare, —

Behold Elaphion of the Persic dance!  
 Who lately had frisked fawn-foot, and the rest,  
 — All for the Patriot Cause, the Antique Faith,  
 The Conservation of True Poesy —

Could I but penetrate the deep design!  
 Elaphion, more Peiraïos-known as "Phaps,"  
 Tripped at the head of the whole banquet-band  
 Who came in front now, as the first fell back;  
 And foremost — the authoritative voice,  
 The revels-leader, he who gained the prize,  
 And got the glory of the Archon's feast —  
 There stood in person Aristophanes.

And no ignoble presence! On the bulge  
 Of the clear baldness, — all his head one brow, —  
 True, the veins swelled, blue network, and  
 there surged

A red from cheek to temple, — then retired  
 As if the dark-leaved chaplet damped a  
 flame, —

Was never nursed by temperance or health.  
 But huge the eyeballs rolled back native fire,  
 Imperiously triumphant: nostrils wide

Waited their incense ; while the pursed mouth's  
pout

Aggressive, while the beak supreme above,  
While the head, face, nay, pillared throat  
thrown back,

Beard whitening under like a vinous foam,  
These made a glory, of such insolence —  
I thought, — such domineering deity  
Hephaistos might have carved to cut the brine  
For his gay brother's prow, imbrue that path  
Which, purpling, recognized the conqueror.  
Impudent and majestic: drunk, perhaps,  
But that's religion ; sense too plainly snuffed :  
Still, sensuality was grown a rite.

What I had disbelieved most proved most true.  
There was a mind here, mind a-wantoning  
At ease of undisputed mastery  
Over the body's brood, those appetites.  
Oh, but he grasped them grandly, as the god  
His either struggling handful, — hurtless snakes  
Held deep down, strained hard off from side  
and side!

Mastery his, theirs simply servitude,  
So well could firm fist help intrepid eye.  
Fawning and fulsome, had they licked and  
hissed ?

At mandate of one muscle, order reigned.  
They had been wreathing much familiar now  
About him on his entry ; but a squeeze  
Choked down the pests to place: their lord  
stood free.

Forward he stepped : I rose and fronted him.

" Hail, house, the friendly to Euripides ! "

(So he began) " Hail, each inhabitant !  
You, lady ? What, the Rhodian ? Form and  
face,

Victory's self upsoaring to receive  
The poet ? Right they named you . . . some  
rich name,

Vowel-buds thorned about with consonants,  
Fragrant, felicitous, rose-glow enriched  
By the Isle's unguent : some diminished end  
In *ion*, Kallistion ? delicater still,  
Kubelion or Melittion, — or, suppose  
(Less vulgar love than bee or violet)  
Phibalion, for the mouth split red-fig-wise,  
Korakinidion for the coal-black hair,  
Nettarion, Phabion for the darlingness ?  
But no, it was some fruit-flower, Rhoidion  
. . . ha,

We near the balsam-bloom — Balaustion !  
Thanks.

Rhodes ! Folk have called me Rhodian, do  
you know ?

Not fools so far ! Because, if Helios wived,  
As Pindaros sings somewhere prettily,  
Here blooms his offspring, earth-flesh with sun-  
fire,

Rhodes' blood and Helios' gold. My phorminx,  
boy !

Why does the boy hang back and balk an ode  
Tiptoe at spread of wing ? But like enough,  
Sunshine frays torchlight. Witness whom you  
scare,

Superb Balaustion ! Look outside the house !

*Pho*, you have quenched my Komos by first  
frown,

Struck dead all joyance : not a fluting puffs  
From idle cheekband ! Ah, my Choros too ?  
You've eaten cuckoo-apple ? Dumb, you  
dogs ?

So much good Thasian wasted on your throats  
And out of them not one *Threttanelo* ?  
*Neblaretai* ! Because this earth-and-sun  
Product looks wormwood and all bitter herbs ?  
Well, do I blench, though me she hates the most  
Of mortals ? By the cabbage, off they slink !  
You, too, my Chrusomelolonthion-Phaps,  
Girl-golding-beetle-beauty ? You, abashed,  
Who late, supremely unabashable,  
Propped up my play at that important point  
When Artamouxia tricks the Toxotes ?  
Ha, ha, — thank Hermes for the lucky  
throw, —

We came last comedy of the whole seven,  
So went all fresh to judgment well-disposed  
For who should fatly feast them, eye and ear.  
We two between us ! What, you fail your  
friend ?

Away then, free me of your cowardice !  
Go, get you the goat's breakfast ! Fare afield,  
Ye circumcised of Egypt, pigs to sow,  
Back to the Priest's or forward to the crows,  
So you but rid me of such company !  
Once left alone, I can protect myself  
From statuesque Balaustion pedestalled  
On much disapprobation and mistake !  
She dares not beat the sacred brow, beside !  
Bacehos' equipment, ivy safeguards well  
As Phoibos' bay.

" They take me at my word !

One comfort is, I shall not want them long,  
The Archon's cry creaks, creaks, ' Curtail ex-  
pense ! '

The war wants money, year the twenty-sixth !  
Cut down our Choros number, clip costume,  
Save birds' wings, beetles' armor, spend the  
cash

In three-crest skull-caps, three days' salt-fish-  
slice,  
Three-banked-ships for these sham-ambassa-  
dors,

And what not : any cost but Comedy's !  
' No Choros ' — soon will follow ; what care I ?  
Archinos and Agurrios, scrape your flint,  
Flay your dead dog, and curry favor so !  
Choros in rags, with loss of leather next,  
We lose the boys' vote, lose the song and dance,  
Lose my Elaphion ! Still, the actor stays.  
Save but my acting, and the baldhead bard  
Kudathenaian and Pandionid,  
Son of Philippos, Aristophanes  
Surmounts his rivals now as heretofore,  
Though stinted to mere sober prosy verse —  
' Manners and men, ' so squeamish gets the  
world !

No more ' Step forward, strip for anapaests ! '  
No calling naughty people by their names,  
No tickling audience into gratitude  
With chickpease, barleygroats and nuts and  
plums,  
No setting Salabaccho " . . .



As I turned —

"True, lady, I am tolerably drunk :  
The proper inspiration ! Otherwise, —  
Phrunchichos, Choirilos ! — had Aischulos  
So foiled you at the goat-song ? Drink 's a  
god.

How else did that old doating driveller  
Kratinos foil me, match my masterpiece  
The 'Clouds' ? I swallowed cloud-distilment  
— dew

Undimmed by any grape-blush, knit my brow  
And gnawed my style and laughed my learned-  
est ;

While he worked at his 'Willow-wicker-flask,'  
Swigging at that same flask by which he swore,  
Till, sing and empty, sing and fill again,  
Somehow result was — what it should not be  
Next time, I promised him and kept my word !  
Hence, brimful now of Thasian . . . I'll be  
bound,

Mendesian, merely : triumph-night, you know,  
The High Priest entertains the conqueror,  
And, since war worsens all things, stingily  
The rascal starves whom he is bound to stuff,  
Choros and actors and their lord and king  
The poet : supper, still he needs must spread —  
And this time all was conscientious fare :  
He knew his man, his match, his master —  
made

Amends, spared neither fish, flesh, fowl nor  
wine :

So merriment increased, I promise you,  
Till — something happened."

Here he strangely paused,

"After that, — Well, it either was the cup  
To the Good Genius, our concluding pledge,  
That wrought me mischief, decently un-  
mixed, —

Or, what if, when *that* happened, need arose  
Of new libation ? Did you only know  
What happened ! Little wonder I am drunk."

Euthukles, o'er the boat-side, quick, what  
change,

Watch, in the water ! But a second since,  
It laughed a ripply spread of sun and sea,  
Ray fused with wave, to never disunite.  
Now, sudden all the surface, hard and black,  
Lies a quenched light, dead motion : What the  
cause ?

Look up and lo, the menace of a cloud  
Has solemnized the sparkling, spoil the sport !  
Just so, some overshadow, some new care  
Stopped all the mirth and mocking on his face  
And left there only such a dark surmise  
— No wonder if the revel disappeared,  
So did his face shed silence every side !  
I recognized a new man fronting me.

"So !" he smiled, piercing to my thought at  
once,

"You see myself ? Balaustion's fixed regard  
Can strip the proper Aristophanes  
Of what our sophists, in their jargon, style  
His accidents ? My soul sped forth but now

To meet your hostile survey, — soul unseen,  
Yet veritably cinet for soul-defence  
With satyr sportive quips, cranks, boss and  
spike,

Just as my visible body paced the street,  
Environed by a boon companionship  
Your apparition also puts to flight.  
Well, what care I, if, unaccounted twice,  
I front my foe — no comicality  
Round soul, and body-guard in banishment ?  
Thank your eyes' searching, undisguised I  
stand :

The merest female child may question me.  
Spare not, speak bold, Balaustion !"

I did speak :

"Bold speech be — welcome to this honored  
hearth,

Good Genius ! Glory of the poet, glow  
O' the humorist who castigates his kind,  
Suave summer-lightning lambency which plays  
On stag-horned tree, misshapen crag askew,  
Then vanishes with unvindictive smile  
After a moment's laying black earth bare.  
Splendor of wit that springs a thunderball —  
Satire — to burn and purify the world,

True aim, fair purpose : just wit justly strikes  
Injustice, — right, as rightly quells the wrong,  
Finds out in knaves' fools', cowards' armory  
The tricky tinselled place fire flashes through,  
No damage else, sagacious of true ore ;  
Wit, learned in the laurel, leaves each wreath  
O'er lyric shell or tragic barbiton, —  
Though alien gauds be singed, — undesecrate,  
The genuine solace of the sacred brow.

Ay, and how pulses flame a patriot-star  
Steadfast athwart our country's night of things,  
To beacon, would she trust no meteor-blaze,  
Athenai from the rock she steers for straight !  
O light, light, light, I hail light everywhere,  
No matter for the murk that was, — perchance,  
That will be, — certes, never should have been  
Such orb's associate !

"Aristophanes !

'The merest female child may question you ?'  
Once, in my Rhodes, a portent of the wave  
Appalled our coast : for many a darkened day,  
Intolerable mystery and fear.

Who snatched a furtive glance through crannied  
peak,

Could but report of snake-scale, lizard-limb, —  
So swam what, making whirlpools as it went,  
Madded the brine with wrath or monstrous  
sport.

'Tis Tuphon, loose, unmanacled from mount,'  
Declared the priests, 'no way appeasable  
Unless perchance by virgin-sacrifice !'

Thus grew the terror and o'erhanging the doom —  
Until one eve a certain female-child  
Strayed in safe ignorance to seacoast edge,  
And there sat down and sang to please herself.  
When all at once, large-looming from his wave,  
Out leaned, chin hand-propped, pensive on the  
ledge,

A sea-worn face, sad as mortality,  
Divine with yearning after fellowship.

He rose but breast-high. So much god she saw ;  
So much she sees now, and does reverence ! ”

Ah, but there followed tail-splash, frisk of fin !  
Let cloud pass, the sea's ready laugh outbreaks.  
No very godlike trace retained the mouth  
Which mocked with —

“ So, He taught you tragedy !

I always asked ‘ Why may not women act ? ’  
Nay, wear the comic visor just as well ;  
Or, better, quite cast off the face-disguise  
And voice-distortion, simply look and speak,  
Real women playing women as men — men !  
I shall not wonder if things come to that,  
Some day when I am distant far enough.  
Do you conceive the quite new Comedy  
When laws allow ? laws only let girls dance,  
Pipe, posture, — above all, Elaphionize,  
Provided they keep decent — that is, dumb.  
Ay, and, conceiving, I would execute,  
Had I but two lives : one were overworked !  
How penetrate encrusted prejudice,  
Pierce ignorance three generations thick  
Since first Ousarion crossed our boundary ?  
He battered with a big Megaric stone ;  
Chionides felled oak and rough-hewed thence  
This club I wield now, having spent my life  
In planing knobs and sticking studs to shine ;  
Somebody else must try mere polished steel ! ”

Emboldened by the sober mood's return,  
“ Meanwhile,” said I, “ since planed and  
studded club

Once more has pashed competitors to dust,  
And poet proves triumphant with that play  
Euthukles found last year unfortunate, —  
Does triumph spring from smoothness still more  
smoothed,

Fresh studs sown thick and threefold ? In  
plain words,

Have you exchanged brute - blows, — which  
teach the brute

Man may surpass him in brutality, —  
For human fighting, or true god-like force  
Which breathes persuasion nor needs fight at  
all ?

Have you essayed attacking ignorance,  
Convicting folly, by their opposites,  
Knowledge and wisdom ? not by yours for ours,  
Fresh ignorance and folly, new for old,  
Greater for less, your crime for our mistake !  
If so success at last have crowned desert.  
Bringing surprise (dashed haply by concern  
At your discovery such wild waste of strength  
— And what strength ! — went so long to keep  
in vogue

Such warfare — and what warfare ! — shamed  
so fast,

So soon made obsolete, as fell their foe  
By the first arrow native to the orb,  
First onslaught worthy Aristophanes) —  
Was this conviction's entry that same strange  
‘ Something that happened ’ to confound your  
feast ? ”

“ Ah, did he witness then my play that failed,  
First ‘ Thesmophoriazousai ’ ? Well and good !

But did he also see — your Euthukles —  
My ‘ Grasshoppers,’ which followed and failed  
too,  
Three months since, at the ‘ Little-in-the-  
Fields ’ ? ”

“ To say that he did see that First — should  
say  
He never cared to see its following. ”

“ There happens to be reason why I wrote  
First play and second also. Ask the cause !  
I warrant you receive, ere talk be done,  
Fit answer, authorizing either act.  
But here 's the point : as Euthukles made vow  
Never again to taste my quality,  
So I was minded next experiment  
Should tickle palate — yea, of Euthukles !  
Not by such utter change, such absolute  
A topsyturvy of stage-habitude  
As you and he want, — Comedy built fresh,  
By novel brick and mortar, base to roof, —  
No, for I stand too near and look too close !  
Pleasure and pastime yours, spectators brave,  
Should I turn art's fixed fabric upside down !  
Little you guess how such tough work tasks  
soul !

Not overtasks, though : give fit strength fair  
play,

And strength 's a demiourgos ! Art renewed ?  
Ay, in some closet where strength shuts out —  
first

The friendly faces, sympathetic cheer :  
‘ More of the old provision, none supplies  
So bounteously as thou, — our love, our pride,  
Our author of the many a perfect piece !  
Stick to that standard, change were deca-  
dence ! ’

Next, the unfriendly : ‘ This time, strain will  
tire,

He 's fresh, Ameipsias thy antagonist ! ’  
— Or better, in some Salaminian cave  
Where sky and sea and solitude make earth  
And man and noise one insignificance,  
Let strength propose itself, — behind the  
world, —

Sole prize worth winning, work that satisfies  
Strength it has dared and done strength's utter-  
most !

After which, — clap-to closet and quit cave, —  
Strength may conclude in Archelaos' court,  
And yet esteem the silken company  
So much sky-seud, sea-froth, earth-thistledown.  
For aught their praise or blame should joy or  
grieve.

Strength amid crowds as late in solitude  
May lead the still life, ply the wordless task :  
Then only, when seems need to move or speak,  
Moving — for due respect, when statesmen pass.  
(Strength, in the closet, watched how spiders  
spin !)

Speaking — when fashion shows intelligence,  
(Strength, in the cave, oft whistled to the  
gulls !)

In short, has learnt first, practised afterwards !  
Despise the world and reverence yourself, —  
Why, you may unmake things and remake  
things,

And throw behind you, unconcerned enough,  
What 's made or marred: 'you teach men, are  
not taught!'

So marches off the stage Euripides!

"No such thin fare feeds flesh and blood like  
mine,

No such faint fume of fancy sates my soul,  
No such seclusion, closet, cave or court,  
Suits either: give me Iostephanos  
Worth making happy what coarse way she  
will—

O happy-maker, when her cries increase  
About the favorite! 'Aristophanes!  
More grist to mill, here 's Kleophon to grind!  
He 's for refusing peace, though Sparté cede  
Even Dekeleia! Here 's Kleonumos  
Declaring—though he threw away his shield,  
He 'll thrash you till you lay your lyre aside!  
Orestes bids mind where you walk of nights—  
He wants your cloak as you his cudgelling.  
Here 's, finally, Melanthios fat with fish,  
The gormandizer-spendthrift-dramatist!  
So, bustle! Pounce on opportunity!  
Let fun a-screaming in Parabasis,  
Find food for folk agape at either end,  
Mad for amusement! Times grow better  
too,  
And should they worsen, why, who laughs, for-  
gets.

In no case, venture boy-experiments!  
Old wine 's the wine: new poetry drinks raw:  
Two plays a season is your pledge, beside;  
So, give us "Wasps" again, grown hornets  
now!"

Then he changed.

"Do you so detect in me—  
Brow-bald, chin-bearded, me, curved cheek,  
carved lip,

Or where soul sits and reigns in either eye—  
What suits the—stigma, I say,—style say you,  
Of 'Wine-lees-poet'? Bravest of buffoons,  
Less bold than Telekleides, less obscene  
Than Mutilos, Hermippos: quite a match  
In elegance for Eupolis himself,  
Yet pungent as Kratinos at his best?  
Graced with traditional immunity  
Ever since, much about my grandsire's time,  
Some funny village-man in Megara,  
Lout-lord and clown-king, used a privilege,  
As due religious drinking-bouts came round,  
To daub his phiz,—no, that was afterward,—  
He merely mounted cart with mates of choice  
And traversed country, taking house by house,  
At night,—because of danger in the freak,—  
Then hollaed 'Skin-flint starves his laborers!  
Clench-fist stows figs away, cheats government!  
Such an one likes to kiss his neighbor's wife,  
And beat his own; while such another . . .  
Boh!

Soon came the broad day, circumstantial tale,  
Dancing and verse, and there 's our Comedy.  
There 's Mullos, there 's Euetes, there 's the  
stock

I shall be proud to graft my powers upon!  
Protected? Punished quite as certainly

When Archons pleased to lay down each his  
law,—

Your Morucheides-Surakosios sort,—  
Each season, 'No more naming citizens,  
Only abuse the vice, the vicious spare!  
Observe, henceforth no Areopagite  
Demean his rank by writing Comedy!'   
(They one and all could write the 'Clouds' of  
course.)

'Needs must we nick expenditure, allow  
Comedy half a choros, supper—none,  
Times being hard, while applicants increase  
For, what costs cash, the 'Tragic Trilogy.'  
Lofty Tragedians! How they lounge aloof  
Each with his Triad, three plays to my one,  
Not counting the contemptuous fourth, the frank  
Concession to mere mortal levity,  
Satyric pittance tossed our beggar-world!  
Your proud Euripides from first to last  
Doled out some five such, never deigned us  
more!

And these—what curds and whey for marrowy  
wine!

That same Alkestis you so rave about  
Passed muster with him for a Satyr-play,  
The prig!—why trifle time with toys and skits  
When he could stuff four ragbags sausage-wise  
With sophistry, with bookish odds and ends,  
Sokrates, meteors, moonshine, 'Life's not  
Life,'

'The tongue swore, but unsworn the mind re-  
mains,'

And fifty such concoctions, crabtree-fruit  
Digested while, head low and heels in heaven,  
He lay, let Comics laugh—for privilege!  
Looked puzzled on, or pityingly off,  
But never dreamed of paying gibe by jeer,  
Buffet by blow: plenty of proverb-pokes  
At vice and folly, wicked kings, mad mobs!  
No sign of wincing at my Comic lash,  
No protest against infamous abuse,  
Malignant censure,—naught to prove I scourged  
With tougher thong than leek-and-onion-plait!  
If ever he glanced gloom, aggrieved at all,  
The aggriever must be—Aischulos perhaps:  
Or Sophokles he 'd take exception to.  
—Do you detect in me—in me, I ask,  
The man like to accept this measurement  
Of faculty, contentedly sit classed  
Mere Comic Poet—since I wrote 'The  
Birds'?"

I thought there might lurk truth in jest's dis-  
guise.

"Thanks!" he resumed, so quick to construe  
smile!

"I answered—in my mind—these gapers  
thus:

Since old wine 's ripe and new verse raw, you  
judge—

What if I vary vintage-mode and mix  
Blossom with must, give nosegay to the brew,  
Fining, refining, gently, surely, till  
The educated taste turns unawares  
From customary dregs to draught divine?

Then answered—with my lips: More 'Wasps'  
you want?



Come next year and I give you 'Grasshoppers' !  
And 'Grasshoppers' I gave them, — last  
month's play.

They formed the Choros. Alkibiades,  
No longer Triphales but Trilophos,  
(Whom I called Darling-of-the-Summertime,  
Born to be nothing else but beautiful  
And brave, to eat, drink, love his life away)  
Persuades the Tettix (our Autochthon-brood,  
That sip the dew and sing on olive-branch  
Above the ant-and-emmet populace)  
To summon all who meadow, hill and dale  
Inhabit — bee, wasp, woodlouse, dragonfly —  
To band themselves against red nipper-nose  
Stagbeetle, huge Taügetan (you guess —  
Sparté) Athenai needs must battle with,  
Because her sons are grown effeminate  
To that degree — so morbifies their flesh  
The poison-drama of Euripides,  
Morals and music — there's no antidote  
Occurs save warfare which inspirits blood,  
And brings us back perchance the blessed time  
When (Choros takes up tale) our commonalty  
Firm in primeval virtue, antique faith,  
Ere earwig-sophist plagued or pismire-sage,  
Cocked no noddle up with A, b, g,  
Book-learning, logic-chopping, and the moon,  
But just employed their brains on 'Ruppapai,  
Row, boys, munch barley-bread, and take your  
ease —

Mindful, however, of the tier beneath !  
Ah, golden epoch ! while the nobler sort  
(Such needs must study, no contesting that !)  
Wore no long curls but used to crop their hair,  
Gathered the tunic well about the ham,  
Remembering 't was soft sand they used for  
seat

At school-time, while — mark this — the lesson  
long,

No learner ever dared to cross his legs !  
Then, if you bade him take the myrtle-bough  
And sing for supper — 't was some grave ro-  
maunt

*How man of Mitulené, wondrous wise,  
Jumped into hedge, by mortals quickset called,  
And there, anticipating Oidipous,  
Scratched out his eyes and scratched them in  
again.*

None of your Phaidras, Augés, Kanakés,  
To mincing music, turn, trill, tweedle-trash,  
Whence comes that Marathon is obsolete !  
Next, my Antistrophé was — praise of Peace :  
Ah, could our people know what Peace implies !  
Home to the farm and furrow ! Grub one's  
vine,

Romp with one's Thratta, pretty serving-girl,  
When wife's busy bathing ! Eat and drink,  
And drink and eat, what else is good in life ?  
Slice hare, toss pancake, gayly gurgle down  
The Thasian grape in celebration due  
Of Bacchos ! Welcome, dear domestic rite,  
When wife and sons and daughters, Thratta  
too,

Pour pea-soup as we chant delectably  
*In Bacchos reels, his tunic at his heels !*  
Enough, you comprehend, — I do at least !  
Then, — be but patient, — the Parabasis !  
Pray ! For in that I also pushed reform.

None of the self-laudation, vulgar brag,  
Vainglorious rivals cultivate so much !  
No ! If some merest word in Art's defence  
Justice demanded of me, — never fear !  
Claim was preferred, but dignifiedly.  
A cricket asked a locust (winged, you know)  
What he had seen most rare in foreign parts ?  
'I have flown far,' chirped he, 'North, East,  
South, West,

And nowhere heard of poet worth a fig  
If matched with Bald-head here, Aigina's  
boast,

Who in this play bids rivalry despair  
Past, present, and to come, so marvellous  
His Tragic, Comic, Lyric excellence !  
Whereof the fit reward were (not to speak  
Of dinner every day at public cost  
I' the Prutaneion) supper with yourselves,  
My Public, best dish offered bravest bard !'  
No more ! no sort of sin against good taste !  
Then, satire, — Oh, a plain necessity !  
But I won't tell you : for — could I dispense  
With one more gird at old Aripheades ?  
How scorpion-like he feeds on human flesh —  
Ever finds out some novel infamy  
Unutterable, inconceivable,  
Which all the greater need was to describe  
Minutely, each tail-twist at ink-shed time . . .  
Now, what's your gesture caused by ? What  
you loathe,

Don't I loathe doubly, else why take such pains  
To tell it you ? But keep your prejudice !  
My audience justified you ! Housebreakers !  
This pattern-purity was played and failed  
Last Rural Dionusia — failed ! for why ?  
Ameipsias followed with the genuine stuff.  
He had been mindful to engage the Four —  
Karkinos and his dwarf-crab-family —  
Father and sons, they whirled like spinning-  
tops,

Choros gigantically poked his fun,  
The boys' frank laugh relaxed the seniors' —  
brow,  
The skies re-echoed victory's acclaim,  
Ameipsias gained his due, I got my dose  
Of wisdom for the future. Purity ?  
No more of that next month, Athenai mine !  
Contrive new cut of robe who will, — I patch  
The old exomis, add no purple sleeve !  
The Thesmophoriazousai, smartened up  
With certain plaits, shall please, I promise you !

"Yes, I took up the play that failed last year,  
And re-arranged things ; threw adroitly in —  
No Parachoregema — men to match  
My women there already ; and when these  
(I had a hit at Aristullos here,  
His plan how womankind should rule the roast)  
Drove men to plough — 'A-field, ye cribbed of  
cape !'

Men showed themselves exempt from service  
straight  
Stupendously, till all the boys cried 'Brave !'  
Then for the elders, I bethought me too,  
Improved upon Mnesilochos' release  
From the old bowman, board and binding-strap :  
I made his son-in-law Euripides  
Engage to put both shrewish wives away —

'Gravity,' one, the other 'Sophist-lore' —  
And mate with the Bald Bard's hetairai  
twain —

'Goodhumor' and 'Indulgence:' on they  
tripped,  
Murrhiné, Akalanthis, — 'beautiful  
Their whole belongings' — crowd joined choros  
there!

And while the Toxotes wound up his part  
By shower of nuts and sweetmeats on the mob,  
The woman-choros celebrated New  
Kalligeneia, the frank last-day rite.  
Brief, I was chaired and caressed and crowned  
And the whole theatre broke out a-roar,  
Echoed my admonition — choros-cap —  
*Rivals of mine, your hands to your faces!*  
*Summon no more the Muses, the Graces,*  
*Since here by my side they have chosen their*  
*places!*

And so we all flocked merrily to feast, —  
I, my choragos, choros, actors, mates  
And flutes aforesaid, friends in crowd, no fear,  
At the Priest's supper; and hilarity  
Grew none the less that, early in the piece,  
Ran a report, from row to row close-packed,  
Of messenger's arrival at the Port  
With weighty tidings, 'Of Lusandros' flight,'  
Opined one; 'That Eubolia penitent  
Sends the Confederation fifty ships,'  
Preferred another; while 'The Great King's  
Eye

Has brought a present for Elaphion here,  
That rarest peacock Kompolakuthes!'

Such was the supposition of a third.  
'No matter what the news,' friend Strattis  
laughed,

'It won't be worse for waiting: while each  
click

Of the klepsudra sets a shaking grave  
Resentment in our shark's-head, boiled and  
spoiled

By this time: dished in Spbettian vinegar,  
Silphion and honey, served with cocks'-brain-  
sauce!

So, swift to supper, Poet! No mistake,  
This play; nor, like the unflavored "Grass-  
hoppers,"

Salt without thyme!' Right merrily we  
supped,

Till — something happened.

"Out it shall, at last!

"Mirth drew to ending, for the cup was  
crowned

To the Triumphant! 'Kleonclapper erst,  
Now, Plier of a scourge Euripides  
Fairly turns tail from, flying Attiké  
For Makedonia's rocks and frosts and bears,  
Where, furry grown, he growls to match the  
sneak

Of girl-voiced, crocus-vested Agathon!  
Ha ha, he he!' When suddenly a knock —  
Sharp, solitary, cold, authoritative.

"'Babaiax! Sokrates a-passing by,  
A-peering in, for Aristullos' sake,  
To put a question touching Comic Law?'

"No! Enters an old pale-swathed majesty,  
Makes slow mute passage through two ranks as  
mute,

(Strattis stood up with all the rest, the sneak!)  
Gray brow still bent on ground, upraised at  
length

When, our Priest reached, full front the vision  
passed.

"'Priest!' — the deep tone succeeded the  
fixed gaze —

'Thou carest that thy god have spectacle  
Decent and seemly; wherefore, I announce  
That, since Euripides is dead to-day,  
My Choros, at the Greater Feast, next month,  
Shall, clothed in black, appear ungarlanded!'

"Then the gray brow sank low, and Sophokles  
Re-swathed him, sweeping downward: mutely  
passed

"Twixt rows as mute, to mingle possibly  
With certain gods who convoy age to port;  
And night resumed him.

"When our stupor broke,  
Chirpings took courage, and grew audible.

"'Dead — so one speaks now of Euripides!'

'Ungarlanded dance Choros, did he say?

I guess the reason: in extreme old age  
No doubt such have the gods for visitants.

Why did he dedicate to Herakles  
An altar else, but that the god, turned Judge,  
Told him in dream who took the crown of  
gold?

He who restored Akropolis the theft,  
Himself may feel perhaps a timely twinge  
At thought of certain other crowns he filched  
From — who now visits Herakles the Judge.  
Instance "Medeia" that play yielded palm  
To Sophokles; and he again — to whom?  
Euphorion! Why? Ask Herakles the  
Judge!

'Ungarlanded, just means — economy!  
Suppress robes, chaplets, everything suppress  
Except the poet's present! An old tale  
Put capitably by Trugaioi — eh?  
News from the world of transformation  
strange!

How Sophokles is grown Simonides,  
And — aged, rotten — all the same, for greed  
Would venture on a hurdle out to sea!  
So jokes Philonides. Kallistratos  
Retorts, Mistake! Instead of stinginess —  
The fact is, in extreme decrepitude,  
He has discarded poet and turned priest,  
Priest of Half-Hero Alkon: visited  
In his own house too by Asklepios' self,  
So he avers. Meanwhile, his own estate  
Lies fallow; Iophon's the manager, —  
Nay, touches up a play, brings out the same,  
Asserts true sonship. See to what you sink  
After your dozen-dozen prodigies!  
Looking so old — Euripides seems young,  
Born ten years later.'

"Just his tricky style!  
Since, stealing first away, he wins first word

Out of good-natured rival Sophokles,  
Procures himself no bad panegyric.  
Had fate willed otherwise, himself were taxed  
To pay survivor's-tribute, — harder squeezed  
From anybody beaten first to last,  
Than one who, steadily a conqueror,  
Finds that his magnanimity is tasked  
To merely make pretence and — beat itself !

"So chirped the feasters though suppressedly.

"But I — what else do you suppose ? — had  
pierced  
Quite through friends' outside-straining, foes'  
mock-praise,  
And reached conviction hearted under all.  
Death's rapid line had closed a life's account,  
And cut off, left unalterably clear  
The summed-up value of Euripides.

"Well, it might be the Thasian ! Certainly  
There sang suggestive music in my ears ;  
And, through — what sophists style — the wall  
of sense

My eyes pierced : death seemed life and life  
seemed death,  
Envisaged that way, now, which I, before,  
Conceived was just a moon-struck mood.  
Quite plain

There re-insisted, — ay, each prim stiff phrase  
Of each old play, my still-new laughing-stock,  
Had meaning, well worth poet's pains to state,  
Should life prove half true life's term, — death,  
the rest.

As for the other question, late so large,  
Now all at once so little, — he or I, —  
Which better comprehended playwright  
craft, —

There, too, old admonition took fresh point.  
As clear recurred our last word-interchange  
Two years since, when I tried with 'Ploutos,'  
Vain !

Saluted me the cold grave-bearded bard —  
'Vain, this late trial, Aristophanes !  
None balks the genius with impunity !  
You know what kind 's the nobler, what makes  
grave

Or what makes grin : there 's yet a nobler still,  
Possibly, — what makes wise, not grave, — and  
glad,  
Not grinning : whereby laughter joins with  
tears.

Tragic and Comic Poet prove one power,  
And Aristophanes becomes our Fourth —  
Nay, greatest ! Never needs the Art stand still,  
But those Art leans on lag, and none like you,  
Her strongest of supports, whose step aside  
Undoes the march : defection checks advance  
Too late adventured ! See the "Ploutos"  
here !

This step decides your foot from old to new —  
Proves you relinquish song and dance and jest,  
Discard the beast, and, rising from all-fours,  
Fain would paint, manlike, actual human life,  
Make veritable men think, say and do.  
Here 's the conception : which to execute,  
Where 's the force ? Spent ! Ere the race began,  
was breath

O' the runner squandered on each friendly  
fool —

Wit-fireworks fizzed off while day craved no  
flame :

How should the night receive her due of fire  
Flared out in Wasps and Horses, Clouds and  
Birds,

Prodigiously a-crackle ? Rest content !

The new adventure for the novel man

Born to that next success myself foresee

In right of where I reach before I rest.

At end of a long course, straight all the way,

Well may there tremble somewhat into ken  
The untrod path, clouds veiled from earlier  
gaze !

None may live two lives : I have lived mine  
through,

Die where I first stand still. You retrograde.

I leave my life's work. I compete with you,

My last with your last, my "Antiope" —

"Phoinissai" — with this "Ploutos" ? No, I  
think !

Ever shall great and awful Victory

Accompany my life — in Maketis

If not Athenai. Take my farewell, friend !

Friend, — for from no consummate excellence

Like yours, whatever fault may countervail,

Do I profess estrangement : murk the marsh,

Yet where a solitary marble block

Blanches the gloom, there let the eagle perch !

You show — what splinters of Pentelikos,

Islanded by what ordure ! Eagles fly,

Rest on the right place, thence depart as free ;

But 'ware man's footstep, would it traverse  
mire

Untainted ! Mire is safe for worms that  
crawl.'

"Balaustion ! Here are very many words,  
All to portray one moment's rush of thought, —

And much they do it ! Still, you understand.

The Archon, the Feast-master, read their sum

And substance, judged the banquet-glow ex-  
tinct,

So rose, discreetly if abruptly, crowned

The parting cup, — 'To the Good Genius,  
then !

"Up starts young Strattis for a final flash :

'Ay, the Good Genius ! To the Comic Muse,

She who evolves superiority,

Triumph and joy from sorrow, unsuccess

And all that 's incomplete in human life ;

Who proves such actual failure transient wrong

Since out of body uncouth, halt and maimed —

Since out of soul grotesque, corrupt or blank —

Fancy, uplifted by the Muse, can flit

To soul and body, reinstate them Man :

Beside which perfect man, how clear we see

Divergency from type was earth's effect !

Escaping whence by laughter, — Fancy's  
feat, —

We right man's wrong, establish true for  
false, —

Above misshapen body, uncouth soul,

Reach the fine form, the clear intelligence —

Above unseemliness, reach decent law, —

By laughter : attestation of the Muse



That low-and-ugsome is not signed and sealed  
Incontrovertibly man's portion here,  
Or, if here, — why, still high-and-fair exists  
In that ethereal realm where laughs our soul  
Lift by the Muse. Hail thou her ministrant !  
Hail who accepted no deformity  
In man as normal and remediless,  
But rather pushed it to such gross extreme  
That, outraged, we protest by eye's recoil  
The opposite proves somewhere rule and law !  
Hail who implied, by limning Lamachos,  
Plenty and pastime wait on peace, not war !  
Philokleon — better bear a wrong than plead,  
Play the litigious fool to stuff the mouth  
Of dikast with the due three-obol fee !  
The Paphlagonian — stick to the old sway  
Of few and wise, not rabble-government !  
Trugaios, Pisthetairios, Strepsidaios, —  
Why multiply examples ? Hail, in fine,  
The hero of each painted monster — so  
Suggesting the unpictured perfect shape !  
Pour out ! A laugh to Aristophanes !

“ ‘Stay, my fine Strattis’ — and I stopped applause —

‘To the Good Genius — but the Tragic Muse !  
She who instructs her poet, bids man's soul  
Play man's part merely nor attempt the gods’  
Ill-guessed of ! Task humanity to height,  
Put passion to prime use, urge will, unshamed  
When will's last effort breaks in impotence !  
No power forego, elude : no weakness, — plied  
Fairly by power and will, — renounce, deny !  
Acknowledge, in such mis-called weakness,  
strength

Latent : and substitute thus things for words !  
Make man run life's race fairly, — legs and feet,

Craving no false wings to o'erfly its length !  
Trust on, trust ever, trust to end — in truth !  
By truth of extreme passion, utmost will,  
Shame back all false display of either force —  
Barrier about such strenuous heat and glow,  
That cowardice shall shirk contending, — cant,  
Pretension, shrivel at truth's first approach !  
Pour to the Tragic Muse's ministrant  
Who, as he pictured pure Hippolotos,  
Abolished our earth's blot Arphrades ;  
Who, as he drew Bellerophon the bold,  
Proclaimed Kleonumos incredible ;  
Who, as his Thesens towered up man once more,  
Made Alkibiades shrink boy again !  
A tear — no woman's tribute, weak exchange  
For action, water spent and heart's-blood saved —

No man's regret for greatness gone, ungraced  
Perchance by even that poor meed, man's praise —

But some god's superabundance of desire,  
Yearning of will to 'scape necessity, —  
Love's overbrimming for self-sacrifice,  
Whence good might be, which never else may be,  
By power displayed, forbidden this strait sphere, —

Effort expressible one only way —  
Such tear from me fall to Euripides !

“ The Thasian ! — All, the Thasian, I account !

“ Whereupon outburst the whole company  
Into applause and — laughter, would you think ?

“ ‘The unrivalled one ! How, never at a loss,  
He turns the Tragic on its Comic side  
Else imperceptible ! Here's death itself —  
Death of a rival, of an enemy, —  
Scarce seen as Comic till the master-touch  
Made it acknowledge Aristophanes !  
Lo, that Euripidean laurel-tree  
Struck to the heart by lightning ! Sokrates  
Would question us, with buzz of “how” and  
“why,”

Wherefore the berry's virtue, the bloom's vice,  
Till we all wished him quiet with his friend ;  
Agathon would compose an elegy,  
Lyric bewailment fit to move a stone,  
And, stones responsive, we might wince, 't is  
like ;

Nay, with most cause of all to weep the least,  
Sophokles ordains mourning for his sake  
While we confess to a remorseful twinge : —  
Suddenly, who but Aristophanes,  
Prompt to the rescue, puts forth solemn hand,  
Singles us out the tragic tree's best branch,  
Persuades it groundward and, at tip, appends,  
For votive-visor, Faun's goat-grinning face !  
Back it flies, evermore with jest a-top,  
And we recover the true mood, and laugh !

“ I felt as when some Nikias, — ninny-like  
Troubled by sunspot-portent, moon-eclipse, —  
At fault a little, sees no choice but sound  
Retreat from foeman ; and his troops mistake  
The signal, and hail onset in the blast,  
And at their joyous answer, *alalé*,  
Back the old courage brings the scattered wits ;  
He wonders what his doubt meant, quick con-  
firms

The happy error, blows the charge amain.  
So I repaired things.

“ ‘Both be praised,’ thanked I.  
‘You who have laughed with Aristophanes,  
You who wept rather with the Lord of Tears !  
Priest, do thou, president alike o'er each,  
Tragic and Comic function of the god,  
Help with libation to the blended twain !  
Either of which who serving, only serves —  
Proclaims himself disqualified to pour  
To that Good Genius — complex Poetry,  
Uniting each god-grace, including both :  
Which, operant for body as for soul,  
Masters alike the laughter and the tears,  
Supreme in lowliest earth, sublimest sky.  
Who dares disjoin these, — whether he ignores  
Body or soul, whichever half destroys, —  
Maims the else perfect manhood, perpetrates  
Again the inextinguishable crime we curse —  
Hacks at the Hermai, halves each guardian  
shape

Combining, nowise vainly, prominence  
Of august head and enthroned intellect,  
With homelier symbol of asserted sense, —  
Nature's prime impulse, earthly appetite.  
For, when our folly ventures on the freak,  
Would fain abolish joy and fruitfulness,  
Mutilate nature — what avails the Head !

Left solitarily predominant, —  
 Unbodied soul, — not Hermes, both in one ?  
 I, no more than our City, acquiesce  
 In such a desecration, but defend  
 Man's double nature — ay, wert thou its foe !  
 Could I once more, thou cold Euripides,  
 Encounter thee, in naught would I abate  
 My warfare, nor subdue my worst attack  
 On thee whose life-work preached "Raise soul,  
 sink sense !"

Evirate Hermes !" — would avenge the god,  
 And justify myself. Once face to face,  
 Thou, the argute and tricky, shouldst not wrap,  
 As thine old fashion was, in silent scorn  
 The breast that quickened at the sting of truth,  
 Nor turn from me, as, if the tale be true,  
 From Lais when she met thee in thy walks,  
 And questioned why she had no rights as thou.  
 Not so shouldst thou betake thee, be assured,  
 To book and pencil, deign me no reply !  
 I would extract an answer from those lips  
 So closed and cold, were mine the garden-chance !  
 Gone from the world ! Does none remain to  
 take

Thy part and ply me with thy sophist-skill ?  
 No sun makes proof of his whole potency  
 For gold and purple in that orb we view :  
 The apparent orb does little but leave blind  
 The audacious, and confused the worshipping ;  
 But, close on orb's departure, must succeed  
 The serviceable cloud, — must intervene,  
 Induce expenditure of rose and blue,  
 Reveal what lay in him was lost to us.  
 So, friends, what hinders, as we homeward go,  
 If, privileged by triumph gained to-day,  
 We clasp that cloud our sun left saturate,  
 The Rhodian rosy with Euripides ?  
 Not of my audience on my triumph-day,  
 She nor her husband ! After the night's news  
 Neither will sleep but watch ; I know the mood.  
 Accompany ! my crown declares my right !

"And here you stand with those warm golden  
 eyes !

"In honest language, I am scarce too sure  
 Whether I really felt, indeed expressed  
 Then, in that presence, things I now repeat :  
 Nor half, nor any one word, — will that do ?  
 Maybe, such eyes must strike conviction, turn  
 One's nature bottom upwards, show the base —  
 The live rock latent under wave and foam :  
 Superimposed these ! Yet solid stuff  
 Will ever and anon, obeying star,  
 (And what star reaches rock-nerve like an eye ?)  
 Swim up to surface, spout or mud or flame,  
 And find no more to do than sink as fast.

"Anyhow, I have followed happily  
 The impulse, pledged my Genius with effect,  
 Since, come to see you, I am shown — myself !"

I answered :

"One of us declared for both  
 'Welcome the glory of Aristophanes.'  
 The other adds: and, — if that glory last,  
 Nor marsh-born vapor creep to veil the same, —

Once entered, share in our solemnity !  
 Commemorate, as we, Euripides !"

"What ?" he looked round, "I darken the  
 bright house ?

Profane the temple of your deity ?

That's true ! Else wherefore does he stand  
 portrayed ?

What Rhodian paint and pencil saved so much,  
 Beard, freckled face, brow — all but breath, I  
 hope !

Come, that's unfair : myself am somebody,  
 Yet my pictorial fame's just potter's work, —  
 I merely figure on men's drinking-mugs !  
 I and the Flat-nose, Sophroniskos' son,  
 Oft make a pair. But what's this lies be-

low ?

His table-book and graver, playwright's tool !  
 And lo, the sweet psalterion, strung and screwed,  
 Whereon he tried those *le-t-le-t-s*  
 And *ke-t-le-t-s* and turns and trills,  
 Lovely lark's *tirra-lirra*, lad's delight !

Aischulos' bronze-throat eagle-bark at blood  
 Has somehow spoiled my taste for twitterings !

With . . . what, and did he leave you 'Her-  
 akles' ?

The 'Frenzied Hero,' one unfractured sheet,  
 No pine-wood tablets smeared with treacherous  
 wax —

Papuros perfect as e'er tempted pen !

This sacred twist of bay-leaves dead and sere  
 Must be that crown the fine work failed to  
 catch, —

No wonder ! This might crown 'Antiope,'

'Herakles' triumph ? In your heart perhaps !  
 But elsewhere ? Come now, I'll explain the  
 case,

Show you the main mistake. Give me the  
 sheet !"

I interrupted :

"Aristophanes !

The stranger-woman snes in her abode —  
 'Be honored as our guest !' But, call it —  
 shrine.

Then 'No dishonor to the Daimon !' bids  
 The priestess 'or expect dishonor's due !'  
 You enter fresh from your worst infamy,  
 Last instance of long outrage ; yet I pause,

Withhold the word a-tremble on my lip,  
 Incline me, rather, yearn to reverence, —  
 So you but suffer that I see the blaze

And not the bolt, — the splendid fancy-fling,  
 Not the cold iron malice, the launched lie  
 Whence heavenly fire has withered ; impotent,  
 Yet execrable, leave it 'neath the look

Of yon impassive presence ! What he scorned,  
 His life long, need I touch, offend my foot,  
 To prove that malice missed its mark, that lie  
 Cumbers the ground, returns to whence it came ?

I marvel, I deplore, — the rest be mute !  
 But, throw off hate's celestuality, —

Show me, apart from song-flash and wit-flame,  
 A mere man's hand ignobly clenched against

Yon supreme calmness, — and I interpose,  
 Such as you see me ! Silk breaks lightning's  
 blow !"

He seemed to scarce so much as notice me,  
Aught I had spoken, save the final phrase :  
Arrested there.

"Euripides grown calm!  
Calmness supreme means dead and therefore  
safe,"

He muttered ; then more audibly began —

"Dead ! Such must die ! Could people com-  
prehend !

There 's the unfairness of it ! So obtuse  
Are all : from Solon downward with his saw,  
'Let none revile the dead, — no, though the  
son,

Nay, far descendant, should revile thyself !' —  
To him who made Elektra, in the act  
Of wreaking vengeance on her worst of foes,  
Scruple to blame, since speech that blames  
insults

Too much the very villain life-released.  
Now, I say, not only after death, begins  
That formidable claim, — immunity  
Of faultiness from fault's due punishment !  
The living, who defame me, — why, they live :  
Fools, — I best prove them foolish by their life,  
Will they but work on, lay their work by mine,  
And wait a little, one Olympiad, say !  
Then, where 's the vital force, mine froze  
beside ?

The sturdy fibre, shamed my brittle stuff ?  
The school-correctness, sure of wise award.  
When my vagaries cease to tickle taste ?  
Where 's censure that must sink me, judgment  
big

Awaiting just the word posterity  
Pants to pronounce ? Time's wave breaks,  
buries — *whom*,  
Fools, when myself confronts you four years  
hence ?

But die, ere next Lænæa, — safely so  
You 'scape me, slink with all your ignorance,  
Stupidity and malice, to that hole  
O'er which survivors croak 'Respect the  
dead !'

Ay, for I needs must ! But allow me clutch  
Only a carrion-handful, lend it sense,  
(Mine, not its own, or could it answer me ?)  
And question, 'You, I pluck from hiding-place,  
Whose cant was, certain years ago, my "Clouds"  
Might last until the swallows came with Spring—  
Whose chatter, "Birds" are unintelligible,  
Mere psychologic puzzling : poetry ?  
List, the true lay to rock a cradle with !  
*O man of Mitulen<sup>4</sup>, wondrous wise !*

— Would not I rub each face in its own filth  
To tune of 'Now that years have come and  
gone,

How does the fact stand ? What 's demon-  
strable

By time, that tries things ? — your own test,  
not mine

Who think men are, were, ever will be fools,  
Though somehow fools confute fools, — as these,  
you !

Don't mumble to the sheepish twos and threes  
You cornered and called "audience !" face this  
*me*

Who know, and can, and — helped by fifty  
years —  
Do pulverize you pygmies, then as now !'

"Ay, now as then, I pulverize the brood,  
Balaustion ! Mindful, from the first, where foe  
Would hide head safe when hand had flung its  
stone,

I did not turn cheek and take pleasantry,  
But flogged while skin could purple and flesh  
start,

To teach fools whom they tried conclusions  
with.

First face a-splutter at me got such splotch  
Of prompt slab mud as, filling mouth to maw,  
Made its concern thenceforward not so much  
To criticise me as go cleanse itself.  
The only drawback to which huge delight, —  
(He saw it, how he saw it, that calm cold  
Sagacity you call Euripides !)

— Why, 't is that, make a muckheap of a man,  
There, pillared by your prowess, he remains,  
Immortally immerded. Not so he !  
Men pelted him but got no pellet back.  
He reasoned, I'll engage, — 'Acquaint the  
world

Certain minuteness butted at my knee ?  
Dogface Eruxis, the small satirist, —  
What better would the manikin desire  
Than to strut forth on tiptoe, notable  
As who so far up fouled me in the flank ?'  
So dealt he with the dwarfs : we giants, too,  
Why must we emulate their pin-point play ?  
Render imperishable — impotence,  
For mud throw mountains ? Zeus, by mud un-  
reached, —

Well, 't was no dwarf he heaved Olumpos at !"

My heart burned up within me to my tongue.

"And why must men remember, ages hence,  
Who it was rolled down rocks, but refuse too —  
Strattis might steal from ! mixture-monument,  
Recording what ? 'I, Aristophanes,  
Who boast me much inventive in my art,  
Against Euripides thus volleyed muck  
Because, in art, he too extended bounds.  
I — patriot, loving peace and hating war, —  
Choosing the rule of few, but wise and good,  
Rather than mob-dictature, fools and knaves  
However multiplied their mastery, —  
Despising most of all the demagogue,  
(Noisome air-bubble, buoyed up, borne along  
By kindred breath of knave and fool below,  
Whose hearts swell proudly as each puffing face  
Grows big, reflected in that glassy ball,  
Vacuity, just bellied out to break  
And righteously bespatter friends the first,)  
I loathing, — beyond less puissant speech  
Than my own god-grand language to declare, —  
The fawning, cozenage and calumny  
Wherewith such favorite feeds the populace  
That fan and set him flying for reward : —  
I who, detecting what vice underlies  
Thought's superstructure, — fancy's sludge  
and slime

'Twixt fact's sound floor and thought's mere  
surface-growth



Of hopes and fears which root no deeper down  
Than where all such mere fungi breed and  
bloat —

Namely, man's misconception of the God : —  
I, loving, hating, wishful from my soul  
That truth should triumph, falsehood have  
defeat.

— Why, all my soul's supremacy of power  
Did I pour out in volley just on him  
Who, his whole life long, championed every  
cause

I called my heart's cause, loving as I loved,  
Hating my hates, spurned falsehood, championed  
truth, —

Championed truth not by flagellating foe  
With simple rose and lily, gibe and jeer,  
Sly wink of boon-companion o'er the bowze  
Who, while he blames the liquor, smacks the  
lip.

Blames, doubtless, but leers condonation too, —  
No, the balled fist broke brow like thunder-  
bolt.

Battered till brain flew ! Seeing which descent,  
None questioned that was first acquaintance-  
ship,

The avenger's with the vice he crashed through  
bone.

Still, he displeased me ; and I turned from foe  
To fellow-fighter, flung much stone, more  
mud, —

But missed him, since he lives aloof, I see.  
Pah ! stop more shame, deep-cutting glory  
through,

Nor add, this poet, learned, — found no taunt  
Tell like ' That other poet studies books ! '  
Wise, — cried ' At each attempt to move our  
hearts,

He uses the mere phrase of daily life ! '  
Witty, — ' His mother was a herb-woman ! '  
Veracious, honest, loyal, fair and good, —  
' It was Kephisophon who helped him write ! '

" Whence, — oh the tragic end of Comedy ! —  
Balaustion pities Aristophanes.  
For, who believed him ? Those who laughed  
so loud ?

They heard him call the sun Sicilian cheese !  
Had he called true cheese — curd, would muscle  
move ?

What made them laugh but the enormous lie ?  
' Kephisophon wrote " Herakles " ? ha, ha,  
What can have stirred the wine-dregs, soured  
the soul,

And set a-lying Aristophanes ?  
Some accident at which he took offence !  
The Tragic Master in a moody muse  
Passed him unhailing, and it hurts — it hurts !  
Beside, there's license for the Wine-lees-  
song ! "

Blood burnt the cheekbone, each black eye  
flashed fierce.

" But this exceeds our license ! Stay awhile —  
That's the solution ! both are foreigners,  
The fresh-come Rhodian lady, and her spouse  
The man of Phokis : newly resident,  
Nowise instructed — that explains it all !

No born and bred Athenian but would smile,  
Unless frown seemed more fit for ignorance.  
These strangers have a privilege !

" You blame "

(Presently he resumed with milder mien)

" Both theory and practice — Comedy :  
Blame her from alt tudes the Tragic friend  
Rose to, and upraised friends along with him,  
No matter how. Once there, all's cold and  
fine,

Passionless, rational ; our world beneath  
Shows (should you condescend to grace so much  
As glance at poor Athenai) grimly gross —  
A population which, mere flesh and blood,  
Eats, drinks, and kisses, falls to fisticuffs,  
Then hugs as hugely : speaks too as it acts,  
Prodigiously talks nonsense, — townsmen needs  
Must parley in their town's vernacular.

Such world has, of two courses, one to choose :  
Unworld itself, — or else go blackening off  
To its crow-kindred, leave philosophy  
Her heights serene, fit perch for owls like you.  
Now, since the world demurs to either course,  
Permit me, — in default of boy or girl,  
So they be reared Athenian, good and true, —  
To praise what you most blame ! Hear Art's  
defence !

I'll prove our institution, Comedy,  
Coeval with the birth of freedom, matched  
So nice with our Republic, that its growth  
Measures each greatness, just as its decline  
Would signalize the downfall of the pair.  
Our Art began when Bacchos . . . never  
mind !

You and your master don't acknowledge gods :  
' They are not, no, they are not ! ' well, — began  
When the rude instinct of our race outspoke,  
Found, — on recurrence of festivity  
Occasioned by black mother-earth's good will  
To children, as they took her vintage-gifts, —  
Found — not the least of many benefits —  
That wine unlocked the stiffest lip, and loosed  
The tongue late dry and reticent of joke,  
Through custom's gripe which gladness thrusts  
aside.

So, emulating liberalities,  
Heaven joined with earth for that god's day at  
least,

Renewed man's privilege, grown obsolete,  
Of telling truth nor dreading punishment.  
Whereon the joyous band disguised their forms  
With skins, beast-fashion, daubed each pliz  
with dregs,

Then hollaed ' Neighbor, you are fool, you —  
knave,

You — hard to serve, you — stingy to reward ! '  
The guiltless crowed, the guilty sunk their  
crest,

And good folk gained thereby, 't was evident.  
Whence, by degrees, a birth of happier thought,  
The notion came — not simply this to say,  
But this to do — prove, put in evidence,  
And act the fool, the knave, the harsh, the  
hunks,

Who *did* prate, cheat, shake fist, draw purse-  
string tight,  
As crowd might see, which only heard before.

"So played the Poet, with his man of parts;  
And all the others, found unqualified  
To mount cart and be persons, made the mob.  
Joined choros, fortified their fellows' fun,  
Anticipated the community,  
Gave judgment which the public ratified.  
Suiting rough weapon doubtless to plain truth,  
They flung, for word-artillery, why — filth;  
Still folks who wiped the unsavory salute  
From visage, would prefer the mess, to wit —  
Steel, poked through midriff with a civil  
speech.

As now the way is: then, the kindlier mode  
Was — drub not stab, rib-roast not scarify!  
So did Soursarion introduce, and so  
Did I, acceding, find the Comic Art:  
Club, — if I call it, — notice what's implied!  
An engine proper for rough chastisement,  
No downright slaying: with impunity —  
Provided crabtree, steeped in oily joke,  
Deal only such a bruise as laughter cures.  
I kept the gained advantage: stickled still  
For club-law — stout fun and allowedance  
thumps:

Knocked in each knob a crevice to hold joke  
As fig-leaf holds the fat-fry.

"Next, whom thrash?  
Only the coarse fool and the clownish knave?  
Higher, more artificial, composite  
Offence should prove my prowess, eye and arm!  
Not who robs henroost, tells of untaxed figs,  
Spends all his substance on stewed ellops-fish,  
Or gives a pheasant to his neighbor's wife:  
No! strike malpractice that affects the State.  
The common weal — intriguer or poltroon,  
Venality, corruption, what care I  
If shrewd or witless merely? — so the thing  
Lay sap to aught that made Athenai bright  
And happy, change her customs, lead astray  
Youth or age, play the demagogue at Pnux,  
The sophist in Palaistra, or — what's worst,  
As widest mischief, — from the Theatre  
Preach innovation, bring contempt on oaths,  
Adorn licentiousness, despise the Cult.  
Are such to be my game? Why, then there  
wants

Quite other cunning than a cudgel-sweep!  
Grasp the old stout stock, but new tip with  
steel  
Each boss, if I would bray — no callous hide  
Simply, but Lamachos in coat of proof,  
Or Kleon cased about with impudence!  
Shaft pushed no worse while point pierced  
sparkling so  
That none smiled 'Sportive, what seems sav-  
agant,

— Immovest anger, spiteless rustic mirth!  
Yet spiteless in a sort, considered well,  
Since I pursued my warfare till each wound  
Went through the mere man, reached the prin-  
ciple

Worth purging from Athenai. Lamachos?  
No, I attacked war's representative;  
Kleon? No, flattery of the populace;  
Sokrates? No, but that pernicious seed  
Of sophists whereby hopeful youth is taught  
To jabber argument, chop logic, pore

On sun and moon, and worship Whirligig.  
Oh, your tragedian, with the lofty grace,  
Aims at no other and effects as much?  
Candidly: what's a polished period worth,  
Filed curt sententiousness of loaded line,  
When he who deals out doctrine, primly steps  
From just that selfsame moon he maunders of,  
And, blood-thinned by his pallid nutriment,  
Proposes to rich earth-blood — purity?  
In me, 't was equal-balanced flesh rebuked  
Excess alike in stuff-guts Glauketes  
Or starveling Chairephon; I challenged both, —  
Strong understander of our common life,  
I urged sustainment of humanity.  
Whereas when your tragedian cries up Peace —  
He's silent as to cheese-cakes Peace may chew;  
Seeing through rabble-rule, he shuts his eye  
To what were better done than crowding  
Pnux —  
That's dance 'Threttanelo, the Kuklops  
drunk!'

"My power has hardly need to vaunt itself!  
Opposers peep and mutter, or speak plain:  
'No naming names in Comedy!' votes one,  
'Nor vilifying live folk!' legislates  
Another, 'urge amendment on the dead!'  
'Don't throw away hard cash,' supplies a third,  
'But crib from actor's dresses, choros-treats!'  
Then Kleon did his best to bully me:  
Called me before the Law Court: 'Such a play  
Satirized citizens with strangers there,  
Such other,' — why, its fault was in myself!  
I was, this time, the stranger, privileged  
To act no play at all, — Egyptian, I —  
Rhodian or Kameirensian, Aiginete,  
Lindian, or any foreigner he liked —  
Because I can't write Attic, probably!  
Go ask my rivals, — how they roughed my  
fleece,  
And how, shorn pink themselves, the huddled  
sheep  
Shiver at distance from the snapping shears!  
Why must they needs provoke me?

"All the same,  
No matter for my triumph, I foretell  
Subsidence of the day-star: quench his beams?  
No Aias e'er was equal to the feat  
By throw of shield, tough-hided seven times  
seven,  
'Twixt sky and earth! 'tis dullards soft and  
sure  
Who breathe against his brightest, here a sigh  
And there a 'So let be, we pardon you!'  
Till the minute mist hangs a block, has tamed  
Noonblaze to 'twilight mild and equable,'  
Vote the old women spinning out of doors.  
Give me the earth-spasm, when the lion ramped  
And the bull gendered in the brave gold flare!  
Oh, you shall have amusement, — better still,  
Instruction! no more horse-play, naming names,  
Taxing the fancy when plain sense will serve!  
Thearion, now, my friend who bakes you bread,  
What's worthier limning than his household  
life?  
His whims and ways, his quarrels with the  
spouse,

And how the son, instead of learning knead  
 Kilikian loaves, brings heartbreak on his sire  
 By buying horseflesh branded *San*, each flank,  
 From shrewd Menippos who imports the ware :  
 While pretty daughter Kepphé too much haunts  
 The shop of Sporgilos the barber ! brave !  
 Out with Thearion's meal-tub politics  
 In lieu of Pisthetairos, Strepsiades !  
 That's your exchange ? O Muse of Megara !  
 Advise the fools ' *Feed babe on weasel-lap*  
*For wild-boar's marrow, Cheiron's hero-pap,*  
*And rear, for man — Ariphrades, mayhap !*  
 Yes, my Balaustion, yes, my Euthukles,  
 That's *your* exchange, — who, foreigners in fact  
 And fancy, would impose your squeamishness  
 On sturdy health, and substitute such brat  
 For the right offspring of us Rocky Ones,  
 Because babe kicks the cradle, — crows, not  
 mewls !

" Which brings me to the prime fault, poison-  
 speck  
 Whence all the plague springs — that first feud  
 of all

'Twixt me and you and your Euripides.  
 'Unworld the world,' frowns he, my opposite.  
 I cry, ' Life ! ' Death,' he groans, ' our better  
 Life ! '

Despise what is — the good and graspable,  
 Prefer the out of sight and in at mind,  
 To village-joy, the well-side violet-patch,  
 The jolly club-feast when our field's in soak,  
 Roast thrushes, hare-soup, pea-soup, deep  
 washed down

With Pepharethian ; the prompt paying off  
 That black-eyed brown-skinned country-fla-  
 vored wench

We caught among our brushwood foraging :  
 On these look fig-juice, curdle up life's cream,  
 And fall to magnifying misery !  
 Or, if you condescend to happiness,  
 Why, talk, talk, talk about the empty name  
 While thing's self lies neglected 'neath your  
 nose !

I need particular discourtesy  
 And private insult from Euripides  
 To render contest with him credible ?  
 Say, all of me is outraged ! one stretched sense,  
 I represent the whole Republic, — gods,  
 Heroes, priests, legislators, poets, — prone,  
 And pummelled into insignificance,  
 If will in him were matched with power of  
 stroke.

For see what he has changed or hoped to  
 change !

How few years since, when he began the fight,  
 Did there beat life indeed Athenai through !  
 Plenty and peace, then ! Hellas thundersmote  
 The Persian. He himself had birth, you say,  
 That morn salvation broke at Salamis,  
 And heroes still walked earth. Themistokles —  
 Surely his mere back-stretch of hand could still  
 Find, not so lost in dark, Odusseus ? — he  
 Holding as surely on to Herakles, —  
 Who touched Zeus, link by link, the unrup-  
 tured chain !

Were poets absent ? Aischulos might hail —  
 With Pindaros, Theognis, — whom for sire ?

Homeros' self, departed yesterday !  
 While Hellas, saved and sung to, then and  
 thus, —

Ah, people, — ah, lost antique liberty !  
 We lived, ourselves, undoubted lords of earth :  
 Wherever olives flourish, corn yields crop  
 To constitute our title — ours such land !  
 Outside of oil and breadstuff, — barbarism !  
 What need of conquest ? Let barbarians starve !  
 Devote our whole strength to our sole defence,  
 Content with peerless native products, home,  
 Beauty profuse in earth's mere sights and  
 sounds,

Such men, such women, and such gods their  
 guard !

The gods ? he worshipped best who feared  
 them most,

And left their nature uninquired into,  
 — Nature ? their very names ! pay reverence,  
 Do sacrifice for our part, theirs would be  
 To prove benignant of playfellows.

With kindly humanism they countenanced  
 Our emulation of divine escapes

Through sense and soul : soul, sense are made  
 to use ;

Use each, acknowledging its god the while !  
 Crush grape, dance, drink, indulge, for Bac-  
 chos' sake !

'Tis Aphrodité's feast-day — frisk and fling,  
 Provided we observe our oaths, and house  
 Duly the stranger : Zeus takes umbrage else !  
 Ah, the great time — had I been there to taste !

Perikles, right Olympian, — occupied  
 As yet with getting an Olumpus reared  
 Marble and gold above Akropolis, —  
 Wisely so spends what thrifty fools amassed  
 For cut-throat projects. Who carves Proma-  
 chos ?

Who writes the Oresteia ?

" Ah, the time !

For, all at once, a cloud has blanched the blue,  
 A cold wind creeps through the close vineyard-  
 rank,

The olive-leaves curl, violets crisp and close  
 Like a nymph's wrinkling at the bath's first  
 splash

On breast. (Your pardon !) There's a restless  
 change,

Deterioration. Larks and nightingales  
 Are silenced, here and there a gor-crow grim  
 Flaps past, as scenting opportunity.

Where Kimon passed to the Boulé once,  
 A starveling crew, unkempt, unshorn, un-  
 washed,

Occupy altar-base and temple-step,  
 Are minded to indoctrinate our youth !  
 How call these carrion kill-joys that intrude ?

' Wise men,' their nomenclature ! Prodikos —  
 Who scarce could, unassisted, pick his steps  
 From way Theseia to the Tripods' way, —

This empty noddle comprehends the sun, —  
 How he's Aigina's bigness, wheels no whit  
 His way from east to west, nor wants a steed !

And here's Protagoras sets wrongheads right,  
 Explains what virtue, vice, truth, falsehood  
 mean,

Makes all we seemed to know prove ignorance



Yet knowledge also, since, on either side  
Of any question, something is to say,  
Nothing to 'stablish, all things to disturb!  
And shall youth go and play at kottabos,  
Leaving unsettled whether moon-spots breed?  
Or dare keep Choes ere the problem 's solved —  
Why should I like my wife who dislikes me?  
'But sure the gods permit this, censure that?'  
So tell them! straight the answer's in your  
teeth:

'You relegate these points, then, to the gods?  
What and where are they?' What my sire  
supposed,  
And where you cloud conceals them! 'Till  
they 'scape,

And scramble down to Leda, as a swan,  
Europa, as a bull! why not as — ass  
To somebody? Your sire was Zeus perhaps!  
Either — away with such ineptitude!  
Or, wanting energy to break your bonds,  
Stick to the good old stories, think the rain  
Is — Zeus distilling pickle through a sieve!  
Think thunder's thrown to break Theoros'  
head

For breaking oaths first! Meanwhile let our-  
selves

Instruct your progeny you prate like fools  
Of father Zeus, who's but the atmosphere,  
Brother Poseidon, otherwise called — sea,  
And son Hephaistos — fire and nothing else!  
Over which nothings there's a something still,  
'Necessity,' that rules the universe  
And cares as much about your Choes-feast  
Performed or intermitted, as you care  
Whether gnats sound their trump from head or  
tail!

When, stupefied at such philosophy,  
We cry, 'Arrest the madmen, governor!  
Pound hemlock and pour bull's-blood, Peri-  
kles!'

Would you believe? The Olumpian bends his  
brow,

Scarce pauses from his building! 'Say they  
thus?

Then, they say wisely. Anaxagoras,  
I had not known how simple proves eclipse  
But for thy teaching! Go, fools, learn like me!'

"Well, Zeus nods: man must reconcile him-  
self,

So, let the Charon's-company harangue,  
And Anaxagoras be — as we wish!  
A comfort is in nature: while grass grows  
And water runs, and sesame pricks tongue,  
And honey from Brileian hollow melts  
On mouth, and Bacchis' flavorful lip beats  
both,

You will not be untaught life's use, young man?  
*Pho!* My young man just proves that pan-  
nied ass

Said to have borne Youth strapped on his stout  
back,

With whom a serpent bargained, bade him swap  
The priceless boon for — water to quench  
thirst!

What's youth to my young man? In love  
with age,

He Spartanizes, argues, fasts and frowns,

Denies the plainest rules of life, long since  
Proved sound; sets all authority aside,  
Must simply recommence things, learn ere act,  
And think out thoroughly how youth should  
pass —  
Just as if youth stops passing, all the same!

"One last resource is left us — poetry!  
'Vindicate nature, prove Plataian help,  
Turn out, a thousand strong, all right and  
tight,

To save Sense, poet! Bang the sophist-brood  
Would cheat man out of wholesome sustenance  
By swearing wine is water, honey — gall,  
Saperdion — the Empousa! Panic-smit,  
Our juveniles abstain from Sense and starve:  
Be yours to disenchant them! Change things  
back!

Or better, strain a point the other way  
And handsomely exaggerate wronged truth!  
Lend wine a glory never gained from grape,  
Help honey with a snatch of him we style  
The Muses' Bee, baybloom-fed Sophokles,  
And give Saperdion a Kimberic robe!

"'I, his successor,' gruff the answer grunts,  
'Incline to poetize philosophy,  
Extend it rather than restrain; as thus —  
Are heroes men? No more, and scarce as  
much,

Shall mine be represented. Are men poor?  
Behold them ragged, sick, lame, halt and  
blind!

Do they use speech? Ay, street-terms, market-  
phrase!

Having thus drawn sky earthwards, what  
comes next

But dare the opposite, lift earth to sky?  
Mere puppets once, I now make womankind,  
For thinking, saying, doing, match the male.  
Lift earth? I drop to, dally with, earth's  
dung!

— Recognize in the very slave — man's mate,  
Declare him brave and honest, kind and true,  
And reasonable as his lord, in brief.

I paint men as they are — so runs my boast —  
Not as they should be: paint — what's part of  
man,

— Women and slaves, — not as, to please your  
pride,

They should be, but your equals, as they are.  
Oh, and the Gods! Instead of abject mien,  
Submissive whisper, while my Choros cants,  
'Zeus, — with thy cubit's length of attributes, —  
May I, the ephemeral, ne'er scrutinize  
Who made the heaven and earth and all things  
there!'

Myself shall say . . . Ay, 'Herakles' may  
help!

Give me, — I want the very words, — attend!''

He read, Then — "Murder's out, — 'There  
are no Gods,'

Man has no master, owns, by consequence,  
No right, no wrong, except to please or plague!  
His nature: what man likes be man's sole law  
Still, since he likes Saperdion, honey, figs,  
Man may reach freedom by your roundabout!

'Never believe yourselves the freer thence!  
There are no gods, but there's "Necessity," —  
Duty enjoined you, fact in figment's place,  
Throned on no mountain, native to the mind!  
Therefore deny yourselves Saperdion, figs  
And honey, for the sake of — what I dream,  
A-sitting with my legs up!'

"Infamy!

The poet casts in calm his lot with these  
Assailants of Apollon! Sworn to serve  
Each Grace, the Furies call him minister —  
He, who was born for just that roseate world  
Renounced so madly, where what's false is  
fact,

Where he makes beauty out of ugliness,  
Where he lives, life itself disguised for him  
As immortality — so works the spell,  
The enthusiastic mood which marks a man  
Muse-mad, dream-drunken, wrapt around by  
verse,

Encircled with poetic atmosphere,  
As lark emballed by its own crystal song,  
Or rose enmisted by that scent it makes!  
No, this were unreality! the real  
He wants, not falsehood, — truth alone he  
seeks,

Truth, for all beauty! Beauty, in all truth —  
That's certain somehow! Must the eagle lilt  
Lark-like, needs fir-tree blossom rose-like?  
No!

Strength and utility charm more than grace,  
And what's most ugly proves most beautiful.  
So much assistance from Euripides!

"Whereupon I betake me, since needs must,  
To a concluding — 'Go and feed the crows!  
Do! Spoil your art as you reneounce your life,  
Poetize your so precious system, do,  
Degrade the hero, nullify the god,  
Exhibit women, slaves and men as peers, —  
Your castigation follows prompt enough!  
When all's concocted upstairs, heels o'erhead,  
Down must submissive drop the masterpiece  
For public praise or blame: so, praise away,  
Friend Sokrates, wife's-friend Kephisophon!  
Boast innovations, cramp phrase, uncouth  
song,

Hard matter and harsh manner, gods, men,  
slaves

And women jumbled to a laughing-stock  
Which Hellas shall hold sides at lest she split!  
Hellas, on these, shall have her word to say!'

"She has it and she says it — there's the  
curse! —

She finds he makes the shag-rag hero-race,  
The noble slaves, wise women, move as much  
Pity and terror as true tragic types:  
Applauds inventiveness — the plot so new,  
The turn and trick subsidiary so strange!  
She relishes that homely phrase of life,  
That common town-talk, more than trumpet-  
blasts;

Accords him right to chop and change a myth:  
What better right had he, who told the tale  
In the first instance, to embellish fact?  
This last may disembellish yet improve!

Both find a block: this man carves back to  
bull

What first his predecessor cut to sphinx:  
Such genuine actual roarer, nature's brute,  
Intelligible to our time, was sure  
The old-world artist's purpose, had he worked  
To mind; this both means and makes the  
thing!

If, past dispute, the verse slips oily-bathed  
In unctuous music — say, effeminate —  
We also say, like Kuthereia's self,  
A lulling effluence which enswathes some isle  
Where hides a nymph, not seen but felt the  
more.

That's Hellas' verdict!

"Does Euripides

Even so far absolved, remain content?  
Nowise! His task is to refine, refine,  
Divide, distinguish, subtilize away  
Whatever seemed a solid planting-place  
For footfall, — not in that phantasmal sphere  
Proper to poet, but on vulgar earth  
Where people used to tread with confidence.  
There's left no longer one plain positive  
Enunciation incontestable  
Of what is good, right, decent here on earth.  
Nobody now can say, 'This plot is mine,  
Though but a plethron square, — my duty!' —  
Yours?

Mine, or at least not yours,' snaps somebody!  
And, whether the dispute be parent-right  
Or children's service, husband's privilege  
Or wife's submission, there's a snarling straight,  
Smart passage of opposing 'yea' and 'nay,'  
'Should,' 'should not,' till, howe'er the contest  
end,

Spectators go off sighing 'Clever thrust!  
Why was I so much hurried to pay debt,  
Attend my mother, sacrifice an ox,  
And set my name down "for a trireme, good"?'  
Something I might have urged on t'other side!  
No doubt, Chresphontes or Bellerophon  
We don't meet every day; but Stab-and-stitch  
The tailor — ere I turn the drachmas o'er  
I owe him for a chiton, as he thinks,  
I'll pose the blockhead with an argument!'

"So has he triumphed, your Euripides!  
Oh, I concede, he rarely gained a prize:  
That's quite another matter! cause for that!  
Still, when 't was got by Ions, Iophons,  
Off he would pace confoundedly superb,  
Supreme, no smile at movement on his mouth  
Till Sokrates winked, whispered: out it broke!  
And Aristollos jotted down the jest,  
While Iophons or Ions, bay on brow,  
Looked queerly, and the foreigners — like  
you —

Asked o'er the border with a puzzled smile,  
— 'And so, you value Ions, Iophons,  
Euphorions! How about Euripides?'  
(Eh, brave bard's-champion? Does the anger  
boil?

Keep within bounds a moment, — eye and lip  
Shall loose their doom on me, their fiery worst!)  
What strangers? Archelaos heads the file!  
He sympathizes, he concerns himself,

He pens epistle, each successful play :  
 ' Athenai sinks effete ; there 's younger blood  
 In Makedonia. Visit where I rule !  
 Do honor to me and take gratitude !  
 Live the guest's life, or work the poet's way,  
 Which also means the statesman's : he who  
 wrote  
 " Erechtheus " may seem rawly politic  
 At home where Kleophon is ripe ; but here  
 My council-board permits him choice of seats.'

" Now, this was operating, — what should prove  
 A poison-tree, had flowered far on to fruit  
 For many a year, — when I was moved, first  
 man,

To dare the adventure, down with root and  
 branch.

So, from its sheath I drew my Comic steel,  
 And dared what I am now to justify.  
 A serious question first, though !

" Once again !

Do you believe, when I aspired in youth,  
 I made no estimate of power at all,  
 Nor paused long, nor considered much, what  
 class

Of fighters I might claim to join, beside  
 That class wherewith I cast in company ?  
 Say, you — profuse of praise no less than  
 blame —

Could not I have competed — franker phrase  
 Might trulier correspond to meaning — still,  
 Competed with your Tragic paragon ?  
 Suppose me minded simply to make verse,  
 To fabricate, parade resplendent arms,  
 Flourish and sparkle out a Trilogy, —  
 Where was the hindrance ? But my soul bade  
 ' Fight !

Leave flourishing for mock-foe, pleasure-time ;  
 Prove arms efficient on real heads and hearts !  
 How ? With degeneracy sapping fast  
 The Marathonian muscle, nerved of old  
 To maul the Mede, now strung at best to help  
 — How did I fable ? — War and Hubbub mash  
 To mincemeat Fatherland and Brotherhood,  
 Pound in their mortar Hellas, State by State,  
 That greed might gorge, the while frivolity  
 Rubbed hands and smacked lips o'er the  
 dainty dish !

Authority, experience — pushed aside  
 By any upstart who pleads throng and press,  
 O the people ! ' Think, say, do thus ! ' Where-  
 fore, pray ?

' We are the people : who impugns our right  
 Of choosing Kleon that tans hide so well,  
 Hyperbolos that turns out lamps so trim,  
 Hemp-seller Eukrates or Lusikles  
 Sheep-dealer, Kephalos the potter's son,  
 Diitriphe who weaves the willow-work  
 To go round bottles, and Nausikudes  
 The meal-man ? Such we choose and more,  
 their mates,

To think and say and do in our behalf !'  
 While sophistry wagged tongue, emboldened  
 still,

Found matter to propose, contest, defend,  
 ' Establish, turn topsyturvy, — all the same,  
 No matter what provided the result

Were something new in place of something  
 old, —

Set wagging by pure insolence of soul  
 Which needs must pry into, have warrant for  
 Each right, each privilege good policy  
 Protects from curious eye and prating mouth !  
 Everywhere lust to shape the world anew,  
 Spurn this Athenai as we find her, build  
 A new impossible Cloudeuckooburg  
 For feather-headed birds, once solid men,  
 Where rules, discarding jolly habitude,  
 Nourished on myrtle-berries and stray ants,  
 King Tereus who, turned Hoopoe Triple-Crest,  
 Shall terrify and bring the gods to terms !

" Where was I ? Oh ! Things ailing thus — I  
 ask,

What cure ? Cut, thrust, hack, hew at heap-on-  
 heaped

Abomination with the exquisite  
 Palaistra-tool of polished Tragedy ?  
 Erechtheus shall harangue Amphiktaon,  
 And incidentally drop word of weight  
 On justice, righteousness, so turn aside  
 The audience from attacking Sicily ! —  
 The more that Choros, after he recounts  
 How Phrixos rode the ram, the far-famed  
 Fleece,

Shall add — at last fall of grave dancing-foot —  
 ' Aggression never yet was helped by Zeus !'  
 That helps or hinders Alkibiades ?  
 As well expect, should Pheidias carve Zeus' self  
 And set him up, some half a mile away,  
 His frown would frighten sparrows from your  
 field !

Eagles may recognize their lord, belike,  
 But as for vulgar sparrows, — change the god,  
 And plant some big Priapos with a pole !  
 I wield the Comic weapon rather — hate !  
 Hate ! honest, earnest, and directest hate —  
 Warfare wherein I close with enemy,  
 Call him one name and fifty epithets,  
 Remind you his great-grandfather sold bran,  
 Describe the new exomion, sleeveless coat  
 He knocked me down last night and robbed  
 me of,

Protest he voted for a tax on air !  
 And all this hate — if I write Comedy —  
 Finds tolerance, most like — applause, perhaps  
 True veneration ; for I praise the god  
 Present in person of his minister,  
 And pay — the wilder my extravagance —  
 The more appropriate worship to the Power  
 Adulterous, night-roaming, and the rest :  
 Otherwise, — that originaive force  
 Of nature, impulse stirring death to life,  
 Which, underlying law, seems lawlessness,  
 Yet is the outbreak which, ere order be,  
 Must thrill creation through, warm stocks and  
 stones,  
 Phales Iachos.

" Comedy for me !

Why not for you, my Tragic masters ? Sneaks  
 Whose art is mere desertion of a trust !  
 Such weapons lay to hand, the ready club,  
 The clay-ball, on the ground a stone to  
 snatch, —



Arms fit to bruise the boar's neck, break the  
chine

O' the wolf, — and you must impiously — de-  
spise?

No, I'll say, furtively let fall that trust  
Consigned you! 'I was not 'take or leave  
alone,

But 'take and, wielding, recognize your god  
In his prime attributes!' And though full soon  
You sneaked, subsided into poetry.

Nor met your due reward, still, — heroize  
And speechify and sing-song and forego

Faras you may your function, — still its pact  
Endures, one piece of early homage still

Exacted of you; after your three bouts  
At hoitytoity, great men with long words,

And so forth, — at the end, must tack itself  
The genuine sample, the Satyric Play,

Concession, with its wood-boys' fun and freak,  
To the true taste of the mere multitude.

Yet, there again! What does your Still-at-itch,  
Always-the-innovator? Shrugs and shirks!

Out of his fifty Trilogies, some five  
Are somehow suited: Satyrs dance and sing,

Try merriment, a grimly prank or two,  
Sour joke squeezed through pursed lips and

teeth on edge,  
Then quick on top of toe to pastoral sport,

Goat-tending and sheep-herding, cheese and  
cream,

Soft grass and silver rillets, country-fare —  
When throats were promised Thasian! Five

such feats, —  
Then frankly off he threw the yoke: next

Droll,  
Next festive drama, covenanted fun,

Decent reversion to indecency,  
Proved — your 'Alkestis'! There 's quite fun

enough,  
Herakles drunk! From out fate's blackening

wave  
Calamitous, just zigzags some shot star,

Poor promise of faint joy, and turns the laugh  
On dupes whose fears and tears were all in

waste!  
"For which sufficient reasons, in truth's name,

I closed with whom you count the Meaner  
Muse,

Classed me with Comic Poets who should weld  
Dark with bright metal, show their blade may

keep  
Its adamantine birthright though ablaze

With poetry, the gold, and wit, the gem,  
And strike mere gold, unstiffened out by steel,

Or gem, no iron joints its strength around,  
From hand of — posturer, not combatant!

"Such was my purpose: it succeeds, I say!  
Have not we beaten Kallikratidas,

Not humbled Sparté? Peace awaits our word,  
Spite of Theramenes, and fools his like.

Since my previsions — warranted too well  
By the long war now waged and worn to end —

Had spared such heritage of misery,  
My after-counsels scarce need fear repulse,

Athenai, taught prosperity has wings,  
Cages the glad recapture. Demos, see,

From folly's premature decrepitude  
Boiled young again, emerges from the stew  
Of twenty-five years' trouble, sits and sways,  
One brilliance and one balsam, — sways and  
sits

Monarch of Hellas! ay, and, sage again,  
No longer jeopardizes chieftainship,

No longer loves the brutish demagogue  
Appointed by a bestial multitude.

But seeks out sound advisers. Who are they?  
Ourselves, of parentage proved wise and good!

To such may hap strains thwarting quality,  
(As where shall want its flaw mere human

stuff?)  
Still, the right grain is proper to right race;

What's contrary, call curious accident!  
Hold by the usual! Orchard-grafted tree,

Not wilding, racehorse-sired, not rouncey-born,  
Aristocrat, no sausage-selling snob!

Nay, why not Alkibiades, come back  
Filled by the Genius, freed of petulance,

Frailty, — mere youthfulness that's all at  
fault, —

Advanced to Perikles and something more?  
— Being at least our duly born and bred, —

Curse on what chaunoprockt first gained his  
ear

And got his . . . well, once true man in right  
place,

Our commonality soon content themselves  
With doing just what they are born to do,

Eat, drink, make merry, mind their own affairs  
And leave state-business to the larger brain!

I do not stickle for their punishment;  
But certain culprits have a cloak to twitch,

A purse to pay the piper: flog, say I,  
Your fine fantastics, paragons of parts,

Who choose to play the important! Far from  
side

With us, their natural supports, allies, —  
And, best by brain, help who are best by birth

To fortify each weak point in the wall  
Built broad and wide and deep for permanence

Between what's high and low, what's rare  
and vile, —

They cast their lot perversely in with low  
And vile, lay flat the barrier, lift the mob

To dizzy heights where Privilege stood firm.  
And then, simplicity become conceit, —

Woman, slave, common soldier, artisan,  
Crazy with new - found worth, new - fangled

claims, —  
These must be taught next how to use their

heads  
And hands in driving man's right to mob's

rule!  
What fellows thus inflame the multitude?

Your Sokrates, still crying 'Understand!  
Your Aristillos, — 'Argue!' Last and worst,

Should, by good fortune, mob still hesitate,  
Remember there 's degree in heaven and earth,

Cry 'Aischulos enjoined us fear the gods,  
And Sophokles advised respect the kings!'

Why, your Euripides informs them — Gods?  
They are not! Kings? They are, but . . .

do not I,  
In 'Suppliants,' make my Theseus, — yours,

no more, —

Fire up at insult of who styles him King?  
 Play off that Herald, I despise the most,  
 As patronizing kings' prerogative  
 Against a Theseus proud to dare no step  
 Till he consult the people?

"Such as these —  
 Ah, you expect I am for strangling straight?  
 Nowise, Balaustion! All my roundabout  
 Ends at beginning, with my own defence!  
 I dose each culprit just with — Comedy.  
 Let each be doctored in exact the mode  
 Himself prescribes: by words, the word-mon-  
 ger —

My words to his words, — my lies, if you like,  
 To his lies. Sokrates I nickname thief,  
 Quack, necromancer; Aristullos, — say,  
 Male Kirké who bewitches and bewrays  
 And changes folk to swine; Euripides, —  
 Well, I acknowledge! Every word is false,  
 Looked close at; but stand distant and stare  
 through,

All's absolute indubitable truth  
 Behind lies, truth which only lies declare!  
 For come, concede me truth's in thing not  
 word,

Meaning not manner! Love smiles 'rogue'  
 and 'wretch'

When 'sweet' and 'dear' seem vapid; Hate  
 adopts

Love's 'sweet' and 'dear,' when 'rogue' and  
 'wretch' fall flat;

Love, Hate — are truths, then, each, in sense  
 not sound.

Further: if Love, remaining Love, fell back  
 On 'sweet' and 'dear,' — if Hate, though  
 Hate the same,

Dropped down to 'rogue' and 'wretch,' — each  
 phrase were false.

Good! and now grant I hate no matter whom  
 With reason: I must therefore fight my foe,  
 Finish the mischief which made enmity.

How? By employing means to most hurt him  
 Who much harmed me. What way did he do  
 harm?

Through word or deed? Through word? with  
 word, wage war!

Word with myself directly? As direct

Reply shall follow: word to you, the wise,

Whence indirectly came the harm to me?

What wisdom I can muster waits on such!

Word to the populace which, misconceived

By ignorance and incapacity,

Ends in no such effect as follows cause

When I, or you the wise, are reasoned with,

So damages what I and you hold dear?

In that event, I ply the populace

With just such word as leavens their whole  
 lump

To the right ferment for my purpose. *They*

Arbitrate properly between us both?

*They* weigh my answer with his argument,

Match quip with quibble, wit with eloquence?

All they attain to understand is — blank!

Two adversaries differ; which is right

And which is wrong, none takes on him to say,

Since both are unintelligible. Pooh!

Swear my foe's mother vended herbs she stole,

They fall a-laughing! Add, — his household  
 drudge

Of all-work justifies that office well,

Kisses the wife, composing him the play, —

They grin at whom they gaped in wonderment,

And go off — 'Was he such a sorry scrub?

This other seems to know! we praised too  
 fast!'

When then, my lies have done the work of  
 truth,

Since 'scrub,' improper designation, means

Exactly what the proper argument

— Had such been comprehensible — proposed

To proper audience — were I graced with  
 such —

Would properly result in; so your friend

Gets an impartial verdict on his verse,

'The tongue swears, but the soul remains un-  
 sworn!'

"There, my Balaustion! All is summed and  
 said.

No other cause of quarrel with yourself!

Euripides and Aristophanes

Differ: he needs must round our difference

Into the mob's ear; with the mob I plead.

You angrily start forward 'This to me?'

No speak of this on you the thrice refined!

Could parley be restricted to us two,

My first of duties were to clear up doubt

As to our true divergence each from each.

Does my opinion so diverge from yours?

Probably less than little — not at all!

To know a matter, for my very self

And intimates — that's one thing: to imply

By 'knowledge' — losing whatsoe'er I know

Among the vulgar who, by mere mistake,

May brain themselves and me in conse-  
 quence, —

That's quite another. 'O the daring flight!

This only bard maintains the exalted brow,

Nor grovels in the slime nor fears the gods!'

Did I fear — I play superstitious fool,

Who, with the due proviso, introduced,

Active and passive, their whole company

As creatures too absurd for scorn itself?

Zeus? I have styled him — 'slave, mere  
 thrashing-block!'

I'll tell you: in my very next of plays,

At Bacchos' feast, in Bacchos' honor, full

In front of Bacchos' representative.

I mean to make main-actor — Bacchos' self!

Forth shall he strut, apparent, first to last,

A blockhead, coward, braggart, liar, thief,

Demonstrated all these by his own mere

Xanthias the man-slave: such man shows such  
 god

Shamed to brute-beastship by comparison!

And when ears have their fill of his abuse,

And eyes are sated with his pummelling, —

My Choros taking care, by, all the while

Singing his glory, that men recognize

A god in the abused and pummelled beast, —

Then, should one ear be stopped of auditor,

Should one spectator shut revolted eye, —

Why, the Priest's self will first raise outraged  
 voice:

'Back, thou barbarian, thou ineptitude!'

Does not most license hallow best our day,  
And least decorum prove its strictest rite?  
Since Bacchos bids his followers play the fool,  
And there 's no fooling like a majesty  
Mocked at, — who mocks the god, obeys the  
law —

Law which, impute but indiscretion to,  
And . . . why, the spirit of Euripides  
Is evidently active in the world!  
Do I stop here? No! feat of flightier force!  
See Hermes! what commotion raged, — re-  
flect! —

When imaged god alone got injury  
By drunkards' frolic! How Athenai stared  
Aghast, then fell to frenzy, fit on fit, —  
Ever the last, the longest! At this hour,  
The craze abates a little: so, my Play  
Shall have up Hermes: and a Karion, slave,  
(Since there 's no getting lower) calls our friend  
The profitable god, we honor so,  
Whatever contumely fouls the mouth —  
Bids him go earn more honest livelihood  
By washing tripe in well-trough — wash he  
does,

Duly obedient! Have I dared my best?  
Asklepios, answer! — deity in vogue,  
Who visits Sophokles familiarly,  
If you believe the old man, — at his age,  
Living is dreaming, and strange guests haunt  
door

Of house, belike, peep through and tap at  
times

When a friend yawns there, waiting to be  
fetched, —

At any rate, to memorize the fact,  
He has spent money, set an altar up  
In the god's temple, now in much repute.  
That temple-service trust me to describe —  
Cheaters and choused, the god, his brace of  
girls,

Their snake, and how they manage to snap  
gifts

'And consecrate the same into a bag,'  
For whimsies done away with in the dark!  
As if, a stone's throw from that theatre  
Whereon I thus unmask their dupery,  
The thing were not religious and august!

"Of Sophokles himself — nor word nor sign  
Beyond a harmless parody or so!  
He founds no anti-school, upsets no faith,  
But, living, lets live, the good easy soul  
Who, — if he saves his cash, unpoetlike,  
Loves wine and — never mind what other  
sport,

Boasts for his father just a swordblade-smith,  
Proves but queer captain when the people  
claim,

For one who conquered with 'Antigone,'  
The right to undertake a squadron's charge, —  
And needs the son's help now to finish plays,  
Seeing his dotage calls for governance  
And Iophon to share his property, —  
Why, of all this, reported true, I breathe  
Not one word — true or false, I like the man!  
Sophokles lives and lets live: long live he!  
Otherwise, — sharp the scourge and hard the  
blow!

"And what's my teaching but — accept the  
old,  
Contest the strange! acknowledge work that's  
done,

Misdoubt men who have still their work to do!  
Religions, laws and customs, poetries,  
Are old? So much achieved victorious truth!  
Each work was product of a lifetime, wrung  
From each man by an adverse world: for why?  
He worked, destroying other older work  
Which the world loved and so was loth to lose,  
Whom the world beat in battle — dust and ash!  
Who beat the world, left work in evidence,  
And wears its crown till new men live new  
lives,  
And fight new fights, and triumph in their  
turn.

I mean to show you on the stage! you'll see  
My Just Judge only venture to decide  
Between two suitors, which is god, which man,  
By thrashing both of them as flesh can bear.  
You shall agree, — whichever bellows first,  
He's human; who holds longest out, divine:  
That is the only equitable test!  
Cruelty? Pray, who pricked them on to court  
My thong's award? Must they needs domi-  
nate?

Then I — rebel! Their instinct grasps the  
new?

Mine bids retain the old: a fight must be,  
And which is stronger the event will show.  
Oh, but the pain! Your proved divinity  
Still smarts all reddened? And the rightlier  
served!

Was not some man's-flesh in him, after all?  
Do let us lack no frank acknowledgment  
There's nature common to both gods and men!  
All of them — spirit? What so winced was  
clay!

Away pretence to some exclusive sphere  
Cloud-nourishing a sole selected few  
Fume-fed with self-superiority!  
I stand up for the common coarse-as-clay  
Existence, — stamp and ramp with heel and  
hoof

On solid vulgar life, you fools disown!  
Make haste from your unreal eminence,  
And measure lengths with me upon that ground  
Whence this mud-pellet sings and summons  
you!

I know the soul, too, how the spark ascends  
And how it drops apace and dies away.  
I am your poet-peer, man thrice your match!  
I too can lead an airy life when dead,  
Fly like Kinesias when I'm cloud-ward bound;  
But here, no death shall mix with life it mars!

"So, my old enemy who caused the fight,  
Own I have beaten you, Euripides!  
Or, — if your advocate would contravene, —  
Help him, Balaustion! Use the rosy strength!  
I have not done my utmost, — treated you  
As I might Aristullos, mint-perfumed, —  
Still, let the whole rage burst in brave attack!  
Don't pay the poor ambiguous compliment  
Of fearing any pearl-white knuckled fist  
Will damage this broad buttress of a brow!  
Fancy yourself my Aristonumos,



Ameipsias or Sannurion : punch and pound !  
 Three cuckoos who cry 'cuckoo' ! much I  
 care !  
 They boil a stone ! *Nebaretai ! Rattei !* "

Cannot your task have end here, Euthukles ?  
 Day by day glides our galley on its path :  
 Still sunrise and still sunset, Rhodes half-  
 reached,  
 And still, my patient scribe ! no sunset's peace  
 Descends more punctual than that brow's in-  
 cline

O'er tablets which your serviceable hand  
 Prepares to trace. Why treasure up, forsooth,  
 These relics of a night that make me rich,  
 But, half-remembered merely, leave so poor  
 Each stranger to Athenai and her past ?  
 For — how remembered ! As some greedy hind  
 Persuades a honeycomb, beyond the due,  
 To yield its hoarding, — heedless what alloy  
 Of the poor bee's own substance taints the gold  
 Which, unforced, yields few drops, but pur-  
 ity, —

So would you fain relieve of load this brain,  
 Though the hived thoughts must bring away,  
 with strength,

What words and weakness, strength's recepta-  
 cle —

Wax from the store ! Yet, — aching soothed  
 away, —

Accept the compound ! No suspected scent  
 But proves some rose was rifled, though its  
 ghost

Scarce lingers with what promised musk and  
 myrrh.

No need of farther squeezing ! What remains  
 Can only be Balaustion, just her speech !

Ah, but — because speech serves a purpose  
 still ! —

He ended with that flourish. I replied :

" Fancy myself your Aristonumos ?  
 Advise me, rather, to remain myself,  
 Balaustion, — mindful what mere mouse con-  
 fronts

The forest-monarch Aristophanes !  
 I who, a woman, claim no quality  
 Beside the love of all things lovable  
 Created by a power pre-eminent  
 In knowledge, as in love I stand perchance,  
 — You, the consummately-creative ! How  
 Should I, then, dare deny submissive trust  
 To any process aiming at result  
 Such as you say your songs are pregnant with ?  
 Result, all judge : means, let none scrutinize  
 Save those aware how glory best is gained  
 By daring means to end, ashamed of shame,  
 Constant in faith that only good works good,  
 While evil yields no fruit but impotence !  
 Graced with such plain good, I accept the  
 means !

Nay, if result itself in turn become  
 Means, — who shall say ? — to ends still loftier  
 yet, —

Though still the good prove hard to under-  
 stand,

The bad still seemingly predominate, —  
 Never may I forget which order bears  
 The burden, toils to win the great reward,  
 And finds, in failure, the grave punishment,  
 So, meantime, claims of me a faith I yield !  
 Moreover, a mere woman, I recoil  
 From what may prove man's-work permissi-  
 ble,

Imperative. Rough strokes surprise : what  
 then ?

Some lusty armsweep needs must cause the  
 crash

Of thorn and bramble, ere those shrubs, those  
 flowers,

We fain would have earth yield exclusively,  
 Are sown, matured and garlanded for boys  
 And girls, who know not how the growth was  
 gained.

Finally, am I not a foreigner ?  
 No born and bred Athenian, — isled about,  
 I scarce can drink, like you, at every breath,  
 Just some particular doctrine which may best  
 Explain the strange thing I revolt against —  
 How — by involvement, who may extricate ? —  
 Religion perks up through impiety,  
 Law leers with license, folly wise-like frowns,  
 The seemly lurks inside the abominable.

But opposites, — each neutralizes each  
 Haply by mixture : what should promise death,

May haply give the good ingredient force,  
 Disperse in fume the antagonistic ill.

This institution, therefore, — Comedy, —  
 By origin, a rite ; by exercise,

Proved an achievement tasking poet's power  
 To utmost, eking legislation out

Beyond the legislator's faculty,  
 Playing the censor where the moralist

Declines his function, far too dignified  
 For dealing with minute absurdities ;

By efficacy, — virtue's guard, the scourge  
 Of vice, each folly's fly-flap, arm in aid

Of all that's righteous, customary, sound  
 And wholesome ; sanctioned therefore, — better

say,  
 Prescribed for fit acceptance of this age

By, not alone the long recorded roll  
 Of earlier triumphs, but, success to-day —

(The multitude as prompt recipient still  
 Of good gay teaching from that monitor

They crowned this morning — Aristophanes —  
 As when Sousarion's ear first traversed street) —

This product of Athenai — I dispute,  
 Impugn ? There's just one only circumstance

Explains that ! I, poor critic, see, hear, feel ;  
 But eyes, ears, senses prove me — foreigner !

Who shall gainsay that the raw new-come guest  
 Blames oft, too sensitive ? On every side

Of — larger than your stage — life's spectacle,  
 Convention here permits and there forbids

Impulse and action, nor alleges more  
 Than some mysterious 'So do all, and so

Does no one : ' which the hasty stranger blames  
 Because, who bends the head unquestioning,

Transgresses, turns to wrong what else were  
 right,

By failure of a reference to law

Beyond convention ; blames unjustly, too —  
As if, through that defect, all gained were lost  
And slave-brand set on brow indelibly ; —  
Blames unobservant or experienceless  
That men, like trees, if stout and sound and  
sane,

Show stem no more affected at the root  
By bough's exceptional submissive dip  
Of leaf and bell, light danced at end of spray  
To windy fitfulness in wayward sport, —  
No more lie prostrate, — than low files of flower  
Which, when the blast goes by, unruffled raise  
Each head again o'er ruder meadow-wreck  
Of thorn and thistle that refractory  
Demurred to cower at passing wind's caprice.  
Why shall not guest extend like charity,  
Conceive how, — even when astounded most  
That natives seem to acquiesce in muck  
Changed by prescription, they affirm, to gold, —  
Such may still bring to test, still bear away  
Safely and surely much of good and true  
Though latent ore, themselves unspecked, un-  
spoiled ?

Fresh bathed i' the icebrook, any hand may pass  
A placid moment through the lamp's fierce  
flame :

And who has read your 'Lemnians,' seen 'The  
Hours,'

Heard 'Female-Playhouse-seat-Preoccupants,'  
May feel no worse effect than, once a year,  
Those who leave decent vesture, dress in rags  
And play the mendicant, conform thereby  
To country's rite, and then, no beggar-taint  
Retained, don vesture due next morrow-day.  
What if I share the stranger's weakness then ?  
Well, could I also show his strength, his sense  
Untutored, ay ! — but then untampered with !

"I fancy, though the world seems old enough,  
Though Hellas be the sole unbarbarous land,  
Years may conduct to such extreme of age,  
And outside Hellas so isles new may lurk,  
That haply, — when and where remain a  
dream ! —

In fresh days when no Hellas fills the world,  
In novel lands as strange where, all the same,  
Their men and women yet behold, as we,  
Blue heaven, black earth, and love, hate, hope  
and fear.

Over again, unhelped by Attiké —  
Haply some philanthropic god steers bark,  
Gift-laden, to the lonely ignorance  
Islanded, say, where mist and snow mass hard  
To metal — ay, those Kassiterides !

Then asks : 'Ye apprehend the human form.  
What of this statue, made to Pheidias' mind,  
This picture, as it pleased our Zeuxis paint ?  
Ye too feel truth, love beauty : judge of these !'  
Such strangers may judge feebly, stranger-like :  
'Each hair too indistinct — for, see our own !  
Hands, not skin-colored as these hands we have,  
And lo, the want of due decorum here !

A citizen, arrayed in civic garb,  
Just as he walked your streets apparently,  
Yet wears no sword by side, adventures thus,  
In thronged Athenai ! foolish painter's-freak !  
While here 's his brother-sculptor found at fault  
Still more egregiously, who shames the world,

Shows wrestler, wrestling at the public games,  
Atrociously exposed from head to foot !  
Sure, the Immortal would impart at once  
Our slow-stored knowledge, how small truths  
suppressed

Conduce to the far greater truth's display, —  
Would replace simple by instructed sense,  
And teach them how Athenai first so tamed  
The natural fierceness that her progeny  
Discarded arms nor feared the beast in man :  
Wherefore at games, where earth's wise grati-  
tude,

Proved by responsive culture, claimed the prize  
For man's mind, body, each in excellence, —  
When mind had bared itself, came body's turn,  
And only irreligion grudged the gods  
One naked glory of their master-work  
Where all is glorious rightly understood, —  
The human frame ; enough that man mistakes :  
Let him not think the gods mistaken too !

"But, peradventure, if the stranger's eye  
Detected . . . Ah, too high my fancy-flight !  
Pheidias, forgive, and Zeuxis bear with me —  
How on your faultless should I fasten fault  
Of my own framing, even ? Only say, —  
Suppose the impossible were realized,  
And some as patent incongruity,  
Unseemliness, — of no more warrant, there  
And then, than now and here, whate'er the time  
And place, — I say, the Immortal, — who can  
doubt ? —

Would never shrink, but own, 'The blot escaped  
Our artist : thus he shows humanity !'

"May stranger tax one peccant part in thee,  
Poet, three-parts divine ! May I proceed ?

"Comedy is prescription and a rite.'  
Since when ? No growth of the blind antique  
time,

'It rose in Attiké with liberty ;  
When freedom falls, it too will fall.' Scarce so !  
Your games, — the Olympian, Zeus gave birth  
to these ;

Your Puthian, — these were Phoibos' institute.  
Isthmian, Nemean, — Theseus, Herakles  
Appointed each, the boys and barbers say !  
Earth's day is growing late : where 's Comedy ?  
'Oh, that commenced an age since, — two, be-  
like, —

In Megara, whence here they brought the thing !'  
Or I misunderstand, or here 's the fact —  
Your grandsire could recall that rustic song,  
How such-an-one was thief, and miser such,  
And how, — immunity from chastisement  
Once promised to bold singers of the same  
By daylight on the drunkard's holiday, —  
The clever fellow of the joyous troop  
Tried acting what before he sang about,  
Acted and stole, or hoarded, acting too :  
While his companions ranged a-row, closed up  
For Choros, — bade the general rabblement  
Sit, see, hear, laugh, — not join the dance them-  
selves.

Soon, the same clever fellow found a mate,  
And these two did the whole stage-mimicking,  
Still closer in approach to Tragedy, —

So led the way to Aristophanes,  
Whose grandsire saw Sousarion, and whose  
sire —

Chionides; yourself wrote 'Banqueters'  
When Aischulos had made 'Prometheus,' nay,  
All of the marvels; Sophokles, — I'll cite,  
'Oidipous' — and Euripides — I bend  
The head — 'Medeia' henceforth awed the  
world!

'Banqueters,' 'Babylonians' — next come you!  
Surely the great days that left Hellas free  
Happened before such advent of huge help,  
Eighty-years-late assistance? Marathon,  
Plataia, Salamis were fought, I think,  
Before new educators stood reproved,  
Or foreign legates blushed, excepted to!  
Where did the helpful rite pretend its rise?  
Did it break forth, as gifts divine are wont,  
Plainly authentic, incontestably  
Adequate to the helpful ordinance?  
Founts, dowered with virtue, pulse out pure  
from source;

'T is there we taste the god's benign intent:  
Not when, — fatigued away by journey, foul  
With brutish trampling, — crystal sinks to slime,  
And lymph forgets the first salubriousness.  
Sprang Comedy to light thus crystal-pure?  
'Nowise!' yourself protest with vehemence;  
'Gross, bestial, did the clowns' diversion break;  
Every successor paddled in the slush;  
Nay, my contemporaries one and all  
Gay played the mudlark till I joined their game;  
Then was I first to change buffoonery  
For wit, and stupid filth for cleanly sense,  
Transforming pointless joke to purpose fine,  
Transfusing rude enforcement of home-law —  
'Drop knave's-tricks, deal more neighbor-like,  
ye boors!' —

With such new glory of poetic breath  
As, lifting application far past use  
O' the present, launched it o'er men's lowly  
heads

To future time, when high and low alike  
Are dead and done with, while my airy power  
Flies disengaged, as vapor from what stuff  
It — say not, dwell in — fittier, dallied with  
To forward work, which done, — deliverance  
brave, —

It soars away, and mud subsides to dust.  
Say then, myself invented Comedy!

"So months full many a famed Parabasis!  
Agreed! No more, then, of prescriptive use,  
Authorization by antiquity,  
For what offends our judgment! 'T is your  
work,  
Performed your way: not work delivered you  
Intact, intact producible in turn.  
Everywhere have you altered old to new —  
Your will, your warrant: therefore, work must  
stand

Or stumble by intrinsic worth. What worth?  
Its aim and object! Peace you advocate,  
And war would fain abolish from the land:  
Support religion, lash irreverence,  
Yet laughingly administer rebuke  
To superstitious folly, — equal fault!  
While innovating rashness, lust of change,

New laws, new habits, manners, men and  
things.

Make your main quarry, — 'oldest' meaning  
best.

You check the fretful litigation-itch,  
Withstand mob-rule, expose mob-flattery,  
Punish mob-favorites; most of all press hard  
On sophists who assist the demagogue,  
And poets their accomplices in crime.  
Such your main quarry, — by the way, you  
strike

Ignobler game, mere miscreants, snob or scamp,  
Cowardly, gluttonous, effeminate:  
Still with a bolt to spare when dramatist  
Proves haply unproficient in his art,  
Such aims — alone, no matter for the means —  
Declare the unexampled excellence  
Of their first author — Aristophanes!

"Whereat — Euripides, oh, not thyself —  
Augustlier than the need! — thy century  
Of subjects dreamed and dared and done, be-  
fore

'Banqueters' gave dark earth enlightenment,  
Or 'Babylonians' played Prometheus here, —  
These let me summon to defend thy cause!  
Lo, as indignantly took life and shape  
Labor by labor, all of Herakles, —  
Palpably fronting some o'erbold pretence  
'Eurusthes slew the monsters, purged the  
world!'

So shall each poem pass you and imprint  
Shame on the strange assurance. You praised  
Peace?

Sing him full-face, Kresphontes! 'Peace' the  
theme?

'Peace, in whom depths of wealth lie, — of the  
blest

Immortals beauteousest, —  
Come! for the heart within me dies away,  
So long dost thou delay!  
Oh, I have feared lest old age, much annoy,  
Conquer me, quite outstrip the tardy joy,  
Thy gracious triumph-season I would see,  
The song, the dance, the sport, profuse of  
crowns to be.

But come! for my sake, goddess great and dear,  
Come to the city here!  
Hateful Sedition drive thou from our homes,  
With Her who madly roams  
Rejoicing in the steel against the life  
That's whetted — banish Strife!

"Shall I proceed? No need of next and next!  
That were too easy, play so presses play,  
Trooping tumultuous, each with instance apt,  
Each eager to confute the idle boast!  
What virtue but stands forth panegyrized,  
What vice, unburned by stigma, in the books  
Which bettered Hellas, — beyond graven gold  
Or gem-indenture, sung by Phoibos' self  
And saved in Kunthia's mountain treasure-  
house —

Ere you, mau, moralist, were youth or boy?  
— Not praise which, in the proffer, mocks the  
praised

By sly admixture of the blameworthy  
And enforced coupling of base fellowship, —



Not blame which gloats the while it frowning laughs,

'Allow one glance on horrors — laughable !' —  
This man's entire of heart and soul, discharged  
Its love or hate, each unalloyed by each,  
On objects worthy either ; earnestness,  
Attribute him, and power ! but novelty ?  
Nor his nor yours a doctrine — all the world's !  
What man of full-grown sense and sanity  
Holds other than the truth, — wide Hellas  
through, —

Though truth he acts discredit truth he holds ?  
What imbecile has dared to formulate  
'Love war, hate peace, become a litigant !' —  
And so preach on, reverse each rule of right  
Because he quarrels, combats, goes to law ?  
No, for his comment runs, with smile or sigh  
According to heart's temper, 'Peace were best,  
Except occasions when we put aside  
Peace, and bid all the blessings in her gift  
Quick join the crows, for sake of Marathon !'

" 'Nay,' you reply ; for one, whose mind with-  
stands

His heart, and, loving peace, for conscience'  
sake

Wants war, — you find a crowd of hypocrites  
Whose conscience means ambition, grudge and  
greed.

On such, reproof, sonorous doctrine, melts  
Distilled like universal but thin dew  
Which all too sparsely covers country : dear,  
No doubt, to universal crop and clown,  
Still, each bedewed keeps his own head-gear  
dry

With upthrust *skiadeion*, shakes adroit  
The droppings to his neighbor. No ! collect  
All of the moisture, leave unhurt the heads  
Which nowise need a washing, save and store  
And dash the whole condensed to one fierce  
spout

On some one evil-doer, sheltered close, —  
The fool supposed, — till you beat guard away,  
And showed your audience, not that war was  
wrong,

But Lamachos absurd, — case, crests and all, —  
Not that democracy was blind of choice,  
But Kleon and Huperbolos were shams :  
Not superstition vile, but Nikias crazed, —  
The concrete for the abstract ; that 's the way !  
What matters Choros crying 'Hence, impure !'  
You cried 'Ariphrades does thus and thus !'  
Now, earnestness seems never earnest more  
Than when it dons for garb — indifference ;  
So, there 's much laughing : but, compensative,  
When frowning follows laughter, then indeed  
Scout innuendo, sarcasm, irony ! —

Wit's polished warfare glancing at first graze  
From off hard headpiece, coarsely-coated brain  
O' the commonalty — whom, unless you prick  
To purpose, what avails that finer pates  
Succumb to simple scratching ? Those — not  
these —

'T is Multitude, which, moved, fines Lamachos,  
Banishes Kleon and burns Sokrates,  
House over head, or, better, poisons him.  
Therefore in dealing with King Multitude,  
Club-drub the callous numskulls ! In and in

Beat this essential consequential fact  
That here they have a hater of the three,  
Who hates in word, phrase, nickname, epithet  
And illustration, beyond doubt at all !  
And similarly, would you win assent  
To — Peace, suppose ? You tickle the tough  
hide

With good plain pleasure her concomitant —  
And, past mistake again, exhibit Peace —  
Peace, vintager and festive, cheesecake-time,  
Hare-slice-and-peasoup-season, household-joy ;  
Theoria's beautiful belongings match  
Opora's lavish condescendings : brief,  
Since here the people are to judge, you press  
Such argument as people understand :  
If with exaggeration — what care you ?

" Have I misunderstood you in the main ?  
No ! then must answer be, such argument,  
Such policy, no matter what good love  
Or hate it help, in practice proves absurd,  
Useless and null : henceforward intercepts  
Sober effective blow at what you blame,  
And renders nugatory rightful praise  
Of thing or person. The coarse brush has  
daubed —

What room for the finer limner's pencil-mark ?  
Blame ? You curse, rather, till who blames  
must blush —

Lean to apology or praise, more like !  
Does garment, simpered o'er as white, prove  
gray ?

'Black, blacker than Acharnian charcoal, black  
Beyond Kimmerian, Stugian blackness black,'  
You bawl, till men sigh 'nearer snowiness !'  
What follows ? What one faint-rewarding fall  
Of foe belabored ne'er so lustily ?  
Laugh Lamachos from out the people's heart ?  
He died, commanding, 'hero,' say yourself !  
Gibe Nikias into privacy ? — nay, shake  
Kleon a little from his arrogance  
By cutting him to shoe-sole-shreds ? I think,  
He ruled his life long, and, when time was ripe,  
Died fighting for amusement, — good tough  
hide !

Sokrates still goes up and down the streets,  
And Aristullos puts his speech in book,  
When both should be abolished long ago.  
Nay, wretchedest of rags, Ariphrades —  
You have been fouling that redoubtable  
Harp-player, twenty years, with what effect ?  
Still he strums on, strums ever cheerily,  
And earns his wage, — 'Who minds a joke ?'  
men say.

No, friend ! The statues stand — mud-stained  
at most —

Titan or pygmy : what achieves their fall  
Will be, long after mud is flung and spent,  
Some clear thin spirit-thrust of lightning —  
truth !

" Your praise, then — honey-smearing helps  
your friend,

More than blame's ordure-smirch hurts foe,  
perhaps ?

Peace, now, misunderstood, ne'er prized  
enough,

You have interpreted to ignorance

Till ignorance opes eye, bat-blind before,  
And for the first time knows Peace means the  
power

On maw of pancake, cheese-cake, barley-cake,  
No stop nor stint to stuffing. While, in camp,  
Who fights chews rancid tunny, onions raw,  
Peace sits at cosy feast with lamp and fire,  
Complaisant smooth-sleeked flute-girls giggling  
gay.

How thick and fast the snow falls, freezing War  
Who shrugs, campaigns it, and may break a  
shin

Or twist an ankle! come, who hesitates  
To give Peace, over War, the preference?  
Ah, friend — had this indubitable fact  
Haply occurred to poor Leonidas,  
How had he turned tail on Thermopulai!  
It cannot be that even his few wits  
Were added to the point that, so advised,  
Preposterous he had answered — 'Cakes are  
prime,

Hearth-sides are snug, sleek dancing-girls have  
worth,

And yet — for country's sake, to save our gods  
Their temples, save our ancestors their tombs,  
Save wife and child and home and liberty, —  
I would chew sliced salt-fish, bear snow — nay,  
starve,

If need were, — and by much prefer the  
choice!

Why, friend, your genuine hero, all the while,  
Has been — who served precisely for your butt —  
Kleonumos that, wise, cast shield away  
On battle-ground; cried 'Coke my buckler be.  
Embossed with cream-clot! peace, not war, I  
choose,

Holding with Dikaïopolis!' Comedy  
Shall triumph, Dikaïopolis win assent,  
When Miltiades shall next shirk Marathon,  
Themistokles swap Salamis for — cake,  
And Kimon grunt 'Peace, grant me dancing-  
girls!'

But sooner, hardly! twenty-five years since,  
The war began, — such pleas for Peace have  
reached

A reasonable age. The end shows all!

And so with all the rest you advocate!

'Wise folk leave litigation!' 'ware the wasps!  
Whoso loves law and lawyers, heliast-like,  
Wants hemlock!' None shows that so funnily.  
But, once cure madness, how comports himself  
Your sane exemplar, what's our gain thereby?  
Philokleon turns Bdelukleon! just this change, —  
New sanity gets straightway drunk as sow,  
Cheats baker-wives, brawls, kicks, cuffs, curses  
folk,

Parades a shameless flute-girl, bandies filth  
With his own son who cured his father's cold  
By making him catch fever — funnily!  
But as for curing love of lawsuits — laugh!

"And how does new improve upon the old  
— Your boast — in even abusing? Rough, may  
be —

Still, honest was the old mode. 'Call thief —  
thief!'

But never call thief even — murderer!  
Much less call fop and fribble, worse one whit

Than fribble and fop! Spare neither! beat  
your brains

For adequate invective, — cut the life  
Clean out each quality, — but load your lash  
With no least lie, or we pluck scourge from  
hand!

Does poet want a whipping, write bad verse,  
Inculcate foul deeds? There's the fault to  
flog!

You vow, 'The rascal cannot read nor write,  
Spends more in buying fish than Morsimos,  
Somebody helps his Muse and courts his wife,  
His uncle deals in crockery, and last —  
Himself's a stranger!' That's the cap and  
crown

Of stinging-nettle, that's the master-stroke!  
What poet-rival, — after 'housebreaker,'  
'Fish-gorging,' 'midnight footpad,' and so  
forth, —

Proves not, beside, 'a stranger'? Chased from  
charge

To charge, and, lie by lie, laughed out of  
court, —

Lo, wit's sure refuge, satire's grand resource —  
All, from Kratinos downward — 'strangers'  
they!

Pity the trick's too facile! None so raw  
Among your playmates but have caught the  
ball

And sent it back as briskly to — yourself!  
You too, my Attic, are styled 'stranger' —  
Rhodes,

Aigina, Lindos or Kameiros, — nay,  
'T was Egypt reared (if Eupolis be right)  
Who wrote the comedy (Kratinos vows)  
Kratinos helped a little! Kleon's self  
Was nigh promoted Comic, when he haled  
My poet into court, and o'er the coals  
Hauled and re-hauled 'the stranger, — insolent,  
Who brought out plays, usurped our privilege!  
Why must you Comies one and all take stand  
On lower ground than truth from first to last?

Why all agree to let folk disbelieve,  
So laughter but reward a funny lie?

Repel such onslaughts — answer, sad and grave.  
Your fancy-fleerings — who would stoop so low?

Your own adherents whisper, — when disgust

Too menacingly thrills Logeion through  
At — Perikles invents this present war

Because men robbed his mistress of three  
maids —

Or — Sokrates wants burning, house o'er  
head, —

'What, so obtuse, not read between the lines?  
Our poet means no mischief! All should  
know —

Ribaldry here implies a compliment!  
He deals with things, not men, — his men are  
things —

Each represents a class, plays figure-head  
And names the ship: no meaner than the first  
Would serve; he styles a trireme "Sokrates" —

Fears "Sokrates" may prove unseaworthy,  
(That's merely — "Sophists are the bane of  
boys")

Rat-riddled ("they are capable of theft")  
Rotten or whatsoe'er shows ship-disease,  
("They war with gods and worship whirligig."

You never took the joke for earnest? scarce  
Supposed mere figure-head meant entire ship,  
And Sokrates — the whole fraternity?'

"This then is Comedy, our sacred song,  
Censor of vice, and virtue's guard as sure:  
Manners-instructing, morals' stop-estray,  
Which, born a twin with public liberty,  
Thrives with its welfare, dwindles with its  
wane!

Liberty? what so exquisitely framed  
And fitted to suck dry its life of life  
To last faint fibre? — since that life is truth.  
You who profess your indignation swells  
At sophistry, when specious words confuse  
Deeds right and wrong, distinct before, you  
say —

(Though all that's done is — dare veracity,  
Show that the true conception of each deed  
Affirmed, in vulgar parlance, 'wrong' or 'right,'  
Proves to be neither, as the hasty hold,  
But, change your side, shoots light, where dark  
alone

Was apprehended by the vulgar sense) —  
You who put sophistry to shame, and shout  
'There's but a single side to man and thing;  
A side so much more big than thing or man  
Possibly can be, that — believe 't is true?  
Such were too marvellous simplicity!' —  
Confess, those sophists whom yourself depict,  
(— Abide by your own painting!) what they  
teach,

They wish at least their pupil to believe,  
And, what believe, to practise! Did *you* wish  
Hellas should haste, as taught, with torch in  
hand,

And fire the horrid Speculation-shop?  
Straight the shop's master rose and showed the  
mob

What man was your so monstrous Sokrates;  
Himself received amusement, why not they?  
Just as did Kleon first play magistrate  
And bid you put your birth in evidence —  
Since no unbadged buffoon is licensed here  
To shame us all when foreign guests may mock —  
Then, — birth established, fooling licensed you, —  
He, duty done, resumed mere auditor,  
Laughed with the loudest at his Lamia-shape,  
Kukloros-roaring, and the camel-rest.  
Nay, Aristullos, — once your volley spent  
On the male-Kirké and her swinish crew, —  
PLATON, — so others call the youth we love, —  
Sends your performance to the curious king —  
'Do you desire to know Athenai's knack  
At turning seriousness to pleasantry?  
Read this! One Aristullos means myself.  
The author is indeed a merry grig!'

Nay, it would seem as if yourself were bent  
On laying down the law, 'Tell lies I must —  
Aforethought and of purpose, no mistake!'

When forth yourself step, tell us from the stage,  
'Here you behold the King of Comedy —  
Me, who, the first, have purged my every piece  
From each and all my predecessors' filth,  
Abjured those satyr-adjuncts sewn to bid  
The boys laugh, satyr-jokes whereof not one  
Least sample but would make my hair turn  
gray

Beyond a twelvemonth's ravage! I renounce  
Mountebank-claptrap, such as firework-fizz  
And torchflare, or else nuts and barleycorns  
Scattered among the crowd, to scramble for  
And stop their mouths with; no such stuff  
shames me!

Who — what's more serious — know both when  
to strike

And when to stay my hand: once dead, my foe,  
Why, done, my fighting! I attack a corpse?  
I spare the corpse-like even! punish age?  
I pity from my soul that sad effete

Toothless old mumbler called Kratinos! once  
My rival, — now, alack, the dotard slinks  
Ragged and hungry to what hole's his home;  
Ay, slinks through byways where no passenger  
Flings him a bone to pick. You formerly  
Adored the Muses' darling: dotard now,  
Why, he may starve! O mob most mutable!  
So you harangued in person; while, — to point  
Precisely out, these were but lies you  
launched, —

Prompt, a play followed primed with satyr-  
frisks,

No spice spared of the stomach-turning stew,  
Full-fraught with torch-display, and barley-  
throw,

And Kleon, dead enough, bedaubed afresh;  
While daft Kratinos — home to hole trudged he,  
Wrung dry his wit to the last vinous dregs,  
Decanted them to 'Bottle,' — beat, next  
year, —

'Bottle' and dregs — your best of 'Clouds'  
and dew!

Where, Comic King, may keenest eye detect  
Improvement on your predecessors' work  
Except in lying more audaciously?

"Why — genius! That's the grandeur, that's  
the gold —

That's *you* — superlatively true to touch —  
Gold, leaf or lump — gold, anyhow the mass  
Takes manufacture and proves Pallas' casque  
Or, at your choice, simply a cask to keep  
Corruption from decay. Your rivals' hoard  
May ooze forth, lacking such preservative:  
Yours cannot — gold plays guardian far too  
well!

Genius, I call *you*: dross, your rivals share;  
Ay, share and share alike, too! says the world,  
However you pretend supremacy  
In aught beside that gold, your very own.

Satire? 'Kratinos for our satirist!'  
The world cries. Elegance? 'Who elegant  
As Eupolis?' resounds as noisily.

Artistic fancy? Choros-creatures quaint?  
Magnes invented 'Birds' and 'Frogs' enough,  
Archippos punned, Hegemon parodied,  
To heart's content, before you stepped on stage.  
Moral invective? Eupolis exposed  
'That prating beggar, he who stole the cup,'  
Before your 'Clouds' rained grime on Sokrates;  
Nay, what beat 'Clouds' but 'Konnos,' muck  
for mud?

Courage? How long before, well-masked, you  
poured

Abuse on Eukrates and Lusikles,  
Did Telekleides and Hermippos pelt



Their Perikles and Kumon ? standing forth,  
Bareheaded, not safe crouched behind a  
name, —

Philonides or else Kallistratos,  
Put forth, when danger threatened, — mask for  
face,

To bear the brunt, — if blame fell, take the  
blame, —

If praise . . . why, frank laughed Aristophanes

'They write such rare stuff ? No, I promise  
you !'

Rather, I see all true improvements, made  
Or making, go against you — tooth and nail  
Contented with ; 't is still Moruchides,  
'T is Euthumenes, Surakosios, nay,  
Argurhios and Kinesias, — common sense  
And public shame, these only cleanse your sty !  
Coerced, prohibited, — you grin and bear,  
And, soon as may be, hug to heart again  
The banished nastiness too dear to drop !  
Krates could teach and practise festive song  
Yet scorn scurrility ; as gay and good,  
Pherekates could follow. *Who* loosed hold,  
Must let fall rose-wreath, stoop to muck once  
more ?

Did your particular self advance in aught,  
Task the sad genius — steady slave the while —  
To further — say, the patriotic aim ?  
No, there's deterioration manifest  
Year by year, play by play ! survey them all,  
From that boy's-triumph when 'Acharnes'  
dawned,

To 'Thesmophoriazousai,' — this man's-shame !  
There, truly, patriot zeal so prominent  
Allowed friends' plea perhaps : the baser stuff  
Was but the nobler spirit's vehicle.

Who would imprison, unvolatilize  
A violet's perfume, blends with fatty oils  
Essence too fugitive in flower alone ;  
So, calling unguent — violet, call the play —  
Obscenity impregnated with 'Peace' !  
But here 's the boy grown bald, and here 's the  
play  
With twenty years' experience : where 's one  
spice

Of odor in the hogs'-lard ? what pretends  
To aught except a grease-pot's quality ?  
Friend, sophist-hating ! know, — worst sophistry  
Is when man's own soul plays its own self false,  
Reasons a vice into a virtue, pleads  
'I detail sin to shame its author' — not  
'I shame Ariphrades for sin's display !'  
'I show Opora to commend Sweet Home' —  
Not 'I show Bacchis for the striplings' sake !'

" Yet all the same — O genius and O gold —  
Had genius ne'er diverted gold from use  
Worthy the temple, to do copper's work  
And coat a swine's trough — which abundantly  
Might furnish Phoibos' tripod, Pallas' throne !  
Had you, I dream, discarding all the base,  
The brutish, spurned alone convention's watch  
And ward against invading decency  
Disguised as licens, law in lawlessness,  
And so, re-ordinating outworn rule,  
Made Comedy and Tragedy combine,  
Prove some new Both-yet-neither, all one bard,

Euripides with Aristophanes  
Co-operand ! this, reproducing Now  
As that gave Then existence : Life to-day,  
This, as that other — Life dead long ago !  
The mob decrees such feat no crown, perchance,  
But — why call crowning the reward of quest ?  
Tell him, my other poet, — where thou walk'st  
Some rarer world than e'er Ilissos washed !

" But dream goes idly in the air. To earth !  
Earth's question just amounts to — which suc-  
ceeds,

Which fails of two life-long antagonists ?  
Suppose my charges all mistake ! assume  
Your end, despite ambiguous means, the best —  
The only ! you and he, a patriot-pair,  
Have striven alike for one result — say, Peace !  
You spoke your best straight to the arbiters —  
Our people : have you made them end this war  
By dint of laughter and abuse and lies  
And postures of Opora ? Sadly — No !  
This war, despite your twenty-five years' work,  
May yet endure until Athenai falls,  
And freedom falls with her. So much for you !  
Now, the antagonist Euripides —  
Has he succeeded better ? Who shall say ?  
He spoke quite o'er the heads of Kleon's crowd  
To a dim future, and if there he fail,  
Why, you are fellows in adversity.  
But that's unlike the fate of wise words  
launched

By music on their voyage. Hail, Depart,  
Arrive, Glad Welcome ! Not my single wish —  
Yours also wafts the white sail on its way,  
Your nature too is kindly. All beside  
I call pretension, — no true potentate,  
Whatever intermediary be crowned,  
Zeus or Poseidon, where the vulgar sky  
Lacks not Triballos to complete the group.  
I recognize — behind such phantom-crew —  
Necessity, Creation, Poet's Power,  
Else never had I dared approach, appeal  
To poetry, power, Aristophanes !  
But I trust truth's inherent kingliness,  
Trust who, by reason of much truth, shall  
reign

More or less royally — may prayer but push  
His sway past limit, purge the false from true !  
Nor, even so, had boldness nerved my tongue  
But that the other king stands suddenly,  
In all the grand investiture of death,  
Bowing your knee beside my lowly head —  
Equals one moment !

" Now, arise and go !  
Both have done homage to Euripides ! "

Silence pursued the words : till he broke out —

" Scarce so ! This constitutes, I may believe.  
Sufficient homage done by who defames  
Your poet's foe, since you account me such ;  
But homage-proper, — pay it by defence  
Of him, direct defence and not oblique,  
Not by mere mild admonishment of me ! "

" Defence ? The best, the only ! " I replied.  
" A story goes — When Sophokles, last year,

Cited before tribunal by his son  
 (A poet — to complete the parallel),  
 Was certified unsound of intellect,  
 And claimed as only fit for tutelage,  
 Since old and doting and incompetent  
 To carry on this world's work, — the defence  
 Consisted just in his reciting (calm  
 As the verse bore, which sets our heart a-swell  
 And voice a-heaving too tempestuously)  
 That choros-chant 'The station of the steed,  
 Stranger! thou comest to, — Kolonos white!' —  
 Then he looked round and all revolt was dead.  
 You know the one adventure of my life —  
 What made Euripides Balaustion's friend.  
 When I last saw him, as he bade farewell,  
 'I sang another "Herakles,"' smiled he;  
 'It gained no prize: your love be prize I gain!  
 Take it — the tablets also where I traced  
 The story first with stulos pendent still —  
 Nay, the psalterion may complete the gift,  
 So, should you croon the ode bewailing Age,  
 Yourself shall modulate — same notes, same  
 strings —

With the old friend who loved Balaustion once.'  
 There they lie! When you broke our solitude,  
 We were about to honor him once more  
 By reading the consummate Tragedy.  
 Night is advanced; I have small mind to sleep;  
 May I go on, and read, — so make defence,  
 So test true godship? You affirm, not I,  
 — Beating the god, affords such test: I hold  
 That when rash hands but touch divinity,  
 The chains drop off, the prison-walls dispart,  
 And — fire — he fronts mad Pentheus! Dare we  
 try?"

Accordingly I read the perfect piece.

#### HERAKLES

*Amphitruon.* Zeus' Couchmate, — who of  
 mortals knows not me,

Argive Amphitruon whom Alkaios sired  
 Of old, as Perseus him, I — Herakles?  
 My home, this Thebai where the earth-born  
 spike

Of Sown-ones burgeoned: Ares saved from  
 these

A handful of their seed that stocks to-day  
 With children's children Thebai, Kadmos  
 built.

Of these had Kreon birth, Menoikeus' child,  
 King of the country, — Kreon that became  
 The father of this woman, Megara,  
 Whom, when time was, Kadmeians one and all  
 Pealed praise to, marriage-songs with fluted  
 help,

While to my dwelling that grand Herakles  
 Bore her, his bride. But, leaving Thebes —  
 where I

Abode perforce — this Megara and those  
 Her kinsmen, the desire possessed my son  
 Rather to dwell in Argos, that walled work,  
 Kuklopiian city, which I fly, myself,  
 Because I slew Elektruon. Seeking so  
 To ease away my hardships and once more  
 Inhabit his own land, for my return

Heavy the price he pays Eurustheus there —  
 The letting in of light on this choked world!  
 Either he promised, vanquished by the goad  
 Of Heré, or because fate willed it thus.  
 The other labors — why, he toiled them  
 through;

But for this last one — down by Tainaros,  
 Its mouth, to Haides' realm descended he  
 To drag into the light the three-shaped hound  
 Of Hell: whence Herakles returns no more.  
 Now, there's an old-world tale, Kadmeians  
 have,

How Dirké's husband was a Lukos once,  
 Holding the seven-towered city here in sway  
 Before they ruled the land, white-steeded  
 pair,

The twins Amphion, Zethos, born to Zeus.  
 This Lukos' son, — named like his father too,  
 No born Kadmeian but Euboiá's gift, —  
 Comes and kills Kreon, lords it o'er the land,  
 Falling upon our town sedition-sick.

To us, akin to Kreon, just that bond  
 Becomes the worst of evils, seemingly;  
 For, since my son in the earth's abyssms,  
 This man of valor, Lukos, lord and king,  
 Seeks now to slay these sons of Herakles,  
 And slay his wife as well, — by murder thus  
 Thinking to stamp out murder, — slay too me,  
 (If me 't is fit you count among men still, —  
 Useless old age,) and all for fear lest these,  
 Grown men one day, exact due punishment  
 Of bloodshed and their mother's father's fate.  
 I therefore, since he leaves me in these domes,  
 The children's household guardian, — left, when  
 earth's

Dark dread he underwent, that son of mine, —  
 I, with their mother, lest his boys should die,  
 Sit at this altar of the savior Zeus

Which, glory of triumphant spear, he raised  
 Conquering — my nobly-born! — the Minuai.  
 Here do we guard our station, destitute  
 Of all things, drink, food, raiment, on bare  
 ground

Couched side by side: sealed out of house and  
 home

Sit we in a resourcelessness of help.  
 Our friends — why, some are no true friends, I  
 see!

The rest, that are true, want the means to aid.  
 So operates in man adversity:

Whereof may never anybody — no,  
 Though half of him should really wish me  
 well, —

Happen to taste! a friend-test faultless, that!

*Megara.* Old man, who erst did raze the Ta-  
 phian town,

Illustriously, the army-leader, thou,  
 Of speared Kadmeians — how gods play men  
 false!

I, now, missed nowise fortune in my sire,  
 Who, for his wealth, was boasted mighty once,  
 Having supreme rule, — for the love of which  
 Leap the long lances forth at favored breasts, —  
 And having children too: and me he gave  
 Thy son, his house with that of Herakles  
 Uniting by the far-famed marriage-bed.  
 And now these things are dead and flown away  
 While thou and I await our death, old man,

These Herakleian boys too, whom — my chicks —

I save beneath my wings like brooding bird.

But one or other falls to questioning.

"O mother," cries he, "where in all the world

Is father gone to? What's he doing? when Will he come back?" At fault through tender years.

They seek their sire. For me, I put them off, Telling them stories; at each creak of doors, All wonder "Does he come?" — and all a-foot Make for the fall before the parent knee.

Now then, what hope, what method of escape Facilitatest thou? — for, thee, old man,

I look to, — since we may not leave by stealth The limits of the land, and guards, more strong

Than we, are at the outlets: nor in friends Remain to us the hopes of safety more.

Therefore, whatever thy decision be, Impart it for the common good of all!

Least now should prove the proper time to die, Though, being weak, we spin it out and live.

*Amph.* Daughter, it scarce is easy, do one's best,

To blurt out counsel, things at such a pass.

*Meg.* You want some sorrow more, or so love life?

*Amph.* I both enjoy life, and love hopes beside.

*Meg.* And I; but hope against hope — no, old man!

*Amph.* In these delayings of an ill lurks cure.

*Meg.* But bitter is the meantime, and it bites.

*Amph.* Oh, there may be a run before the wind From out these present ills, for me and thee,

Daughter, and yet may come my son, thy spouse!

But hush! and from the children take away Their founts aflo w with tears, and talk them calm,

Steal them by stories — sad theft, all the same! For, human troubles — they grow weary too;

Neither the wind-blasts always have their strength,

Nor happy men keep happy to the end: Since all things change — their natures part in twain;

And that man's bravest therefore, who hopes on, Hopes ever: to despair is coward-like.

*Choros.* These comes that overroof,

This long-used couch, I come to, having made A staff my prop, that song may put to proof

The swan-like power, age-whitened, — poet's aid

Of sobbed-forth dirges — words that stand aloof

From action now: such am I — just a shade With night for all its face, a mere night-dream —

And words that tremble too: howe'er they seem,

Devoted words, I deem.

O of a father ye unfathered ones,

O thou old man, and thou whose groaning stuns —

Unhappy mother — only us above, Nor reaches him below in Haides' realm, thy love!

— (Faint not too soon, urge forward foot and limb

Way-weary, nor lose courage — as some horse Yoked to the car whose weight recoils on him

Just at the rock-ridge that concludes his course!

Take by the hand, the peplos, any one Whose foothold fails him, printless and for-

done!

Aged, assist along me aged too, Who, — mate with thee in toils when life was new,

And shields and spears first made acquaintanceship, —

Stood by thyself and proved no bastard-slip Of fatherland when loftiest glory grew.) —

See now, how like the sire's Each eyeball fiercely fires!

What though ill-fortune have not left his race?

Neither is gone the grand paternal grace! Hellas! O what — what combatants, de-

stroyed

In these, wilt thou one day seek — seek, and find all void!

Pause! for I see the ruler of this land, Lukos, now passing through the palace-gate.

*Lukos.* The Herakleian couple — father, wife —

If needs I must, I question: "must" forsooth?

Being your master — all I please, I ask.

To what time do you seek to spin out life? What hope, what help see, so as not to die?

Is it you trust the sire of these, that's sunk In Haides, will return? How past the pitch,

Suppose you have to die, you pile the woe — Thou, casting, Hellas through, thy empty

vaunts

As though Zeus helped thee to a god for son; And thou, that thou wast styled our best man's

wife!

Where was the awful in his work wound up, If he did quell and quench the marshy snake

Or the Nemeian monster whom he snared

And — says, by throttlings of his arm, he slew? With these do you outwrestle me? Such feats

Shall save from death the sons of Herakles

Who got praise, being naught, for bravery In wild-beast-battle, otherwise a blank?

No man to throw on left arm buckler's weight, Not he, nor get in spear's reach! bow he

bore — True coward's-weapon: shoot first and then fly!

No bow-and-arrow proves a man is brave, But who keeps rank, — stands, one unwinking

stare

As, plunging up, the darts come, — brave is he.

My action has no impudence, old man! Providence, rather: for I own I slew

Kreon, this woman's sire, and have his seat.

Nowise I wish, then, to leave, these grown up,



Avengers on me, payment for my deeds.

*Amph.* As to the part of Zeus in his own child,

Let Zeus defend that! As to mine, 't is me  
The care concerns to show by argument  
The folly of this fellow, — Herakles,  
Whom I stand up for! since to hear thee  
styled —

Cowardly — that is unendurable.

First then, the infamous (for I account  
Amongst the words denied to human speech,  
Timidity ascribed thee, Herakles!)  
This I must put from thee, with gods in proof.  
Zeus' thunder I appeal to, those four steeds  
Whereof he also was the charioteer  
When, having shut down the earth's Giant-  
growth —

(Never shaft flew but found and fitted flank) —  
Triumph he sang in common with the gods.  
The Kentaur-race, four-footed insolence —  
Go ask at Pholoé, vilest thou of kings,  
Whom they would pick out and pronounce best  
man,

If not my son, "the seeming-brave," say'st  
thou!

But Dirphus, thy Abantid mother-town,  
Question her, and she would not praise, I  
think!

For there's no spot, where having done some  
good,

Thy country thou might'st call to witness  
worth.

Now, that allwise invention, archer's-gear,  
Thou blamest: hear my teaching and grow  
sage!

A man in armor is his armor's slave,  
And, mixed with rank and file that want to  
run,

He dies because his neighbors have lost heart.  
Then, should he break his spear, no way  
remains

Of warding death off, — gone that body-guard,  
His one and only; while, whatever folk  
Have the true bow-hand, — here 's the one main  
good, —

Though he have sent ten thousand shafts  
abroad,

Others remain wherewith the archer saves  
His limbs and life, too, — stands afar and  
wards

Away from flesh the foe that vainly stares  
Hurt by the viewless arrow, while himself  
Offers no full front to those opposite,  
But keeps in thorough cover: there's the  
point

That's capital in combat — damage foe,  
Yet keep a safe skin — foe not out of reach  
As you are! Thus my words contrast with  
thine,

And such, in judging facts, our difference.  
These children, now, why dost thou seek to  
slay?

What have they done thee? In a single point  
I count thee wise — if, being base thyself,  
Thou dread'st the progeny of nobleness.  
Yet this bears hard upon us, all the same,  
If we must die — because of fear in thee —  
A death 't were fit thou suffer at our hands,

Thy betters, did Zeus rightly judge us all.  
If therefore thou art bent on sceptre-sway,  
Thyself, here — suffer us to leave the land,  
Fugitives! nothing do by violence,  
Or violence thyself shalt undergo  
When the gods' gale may chance to change for  
thee!

Alas, O land of Kadmos, — for 't is thee  
I mean to close with, dealing out the due  
Revelment, — in such sort dost thou defend  
Herakles and his children? Herakles  
Who, coming, one to all the world, against  
The Minuai, fought them and left Thebes an  
eye

Unblinded henceforth to front freedom with!  
Neither do I praise Hellas, nor shall brook  
Ever to keep in silence that I count  
Towards my son, craven of cravens — her  
Whom it behooved go bring the young ones  
here

Fire, spears, arms — in exchange for seas made  
safe,

And cleansings of the land, his labor's price,  
But fire, spears, arms, — O children, neither  
Thebes

Nor Hellas has them for you! 'T is myself,  
A feeble friend, ye look to: nothing now  
But a tongue's murmur, for the strength is  
gone

We had once, and with age are limbs a-shake  
And force a-flicker! Were I only young,  
Still with the mastery o'er bone and thew,  
Grasping first spear that came, the yellow locks  
Of this insulter would I bloody so —  
Should send him skipping o'er the Atlantic  
bounds

Out of my arm's reach through poltroonery!

*Cho.* Have not the really good folk starting-  
points

For speech to purpose, — though rare talkers  
they?

*Luk.* Say thou against us words thou towerest  
with!

I, for thy words, will deal thee blows, their  
due.

Go, some to Helikon, to Parnasos  
Some, and the clefts there! Bid the woodmen  
fell

Oak-trunks, and, when the same are brought  
inside

The city, pile the altar round with logs,  
Then fire it, burn the bodies of them all,  
That they may learn thereby, no dead man  
rules

The land here, but 't is I, by acts like these!  
As for you, old sirs, who are set against  
My judgments, you shall groan for — not alone  
The Herakleian children, but the fate  
Of your own house beside, when faring ill  
By any chance: and you shall recollect  
Slaves are you of a tyranny that 's mine!

*Cho.* O progeny of earth, — whom Ares  
sowed

When he laid waste the dragon's greedy jaw —  
Will ye not lift the staves, right-hand supports,  
And bloody this man's irreligious head?  
Who, being no Kadmeian, rules, — the  
wretch, —

Our easy youth : an interloper too !  
 But not of me, at least, shalt thou enjoy  
 Thy lordship ever ; nor my labor's fruit —  
 Hand worked so hard for — have ! A curse  
 with thee,  
 Whence thou didst come, there go and tyrannize !

For never while I live shalt thou destroy  
 The Herakleian children : not so deep  
 Hides he below ground, leaving thee their lord !

But we bear both of you in mind, — that thou,  
 The land's destroyer, dost possess the land,  
 While he who saved it, loses every right.  
 I play the busybody — for I serve  
 My dead friends when they need friends' service most ?

O right-hand, how thou yearnest to snatch spear

And serve indeed ! in weakness dies the wish,  
 Or I had stayed thee calling me a slave,  
 And nobly drawn my breath at home in Thebes  
 Where thou exuldest ! — city that 's insane,  
 Sick through sedition and bad government,  
 Else never had she gained for master — thee !

*Meg.* Old friends, I praise you : since a righteous wrath

For friend's sake well becomes a friend. But no !  
 On our account in anger with your lord,  
 Suffer no injury ! Hear my advice,  
 Amphitruon, if I seem to speak aright.  
 Oh, yes, I love my children ! how not love  
 What I brought forth, what toiled for ? and to die —

Sad I esteem too ; still, the fated way  
 Who stiffens him against, that man I count  
 Poor creature ; us, who are of other mood,  
 Since we must die, behooves us meet our death  
 Not burnt to cinders, giving foes the laugh —  
 To me, worse ill than dying, that ! we owe  
 Our houses many a brave deed, now to pay.  
 Thee, indeed, gloriously men estimate  
 For spear-work, so that unendurable  
 Were it that thou shouldst die a death of shame.

And for my glorious husband, where wants he  
 A witness that he would not save his boys  
 If touched in their good fame thereby ? since birth

Bears ill with baseness done for children's sake,

My husband needs must be my pattern here.  
 See now thy hope — how much I count thereon !  
 Thou thinkest that thy son will come to light :  
 And, of the dead, who came from Hades back ?

But we with talk this man might mollify :  
 Never ! Of all foes, fly the foolish one !  
 Wise, well-bred people, make concession to !  
 Sooner you meet respect by speaking soft.  
 Already it was in my mind — perchance  
 We might beg off these children's banishment ;  
 But even that is sad, involving them  
 In safety, ay — and piteous poverty !  
 Since the host's visage for the flying friend  
 Has, only one day, the sweet look, 't is said.  
 Dare with us death, which waits thee, dared or no !

We call on thine ancestral worth, old man !  
 For who out-labors what the gods appoint  
 Shows energy, but energy gone mad.  
 Since what must — none e'er makes what must not be !

*Cho.* Had any one, while yet my arms were strong,  
 Been scorning thee, he easily had ceased.  
 But we are naught, now ; thine henceforth to see —

Amphitruon, how to push aside these fates !  
*Amph.* Nor cowardice nor a desire of life  
 Stops me from dying : but I seek to save  
 My son his children. Vain ! I set my heart,  
 It seems, upon impossibility.

See, it is ready for the sword, this throat  
 To pierce, divide, dash down from precipice !  
 But one grace grant us, king, we supplicate !  
 Slay me and this unhappy one before  
 The children, lest we see them — impious sight ! —

Gasping the soul forth, calling all the while  
 On mother and on father's father ! Else,  
 Do as thy heart inclines thee ! No resource  
 Have we from death, and we resign ourselves.

*Meg.* And I too supplicate : add grace to grace,  
 And, though but one man, doubly serve us both !

Let me bestow adornment of the dead  
 Upon these children ! Throw the palace wide !  
 For now we are shut out. Thence these shall share

At least so much of wealth was once their sire's !

*Luk.* These things shall be. Withdraw the bolts, I bid

My servants ! Enter and adorn yourselves !  
 I grudge no peploi ; but when these ye wind  
 About your bodies, — that adornment done, —  
 Then I shall come and give you to the grave.

*Meg.* O children, follow this unhappy foot,  
 Your mother's, into your ancestral home,  
 Where others have the power, are lords in truth,

Although the empty name is left us yet !  
*Amph.* O Zeus, in vain I had thee marriage-mate,

In vain I called thee father of my child !  
 Thou wast less friendly far than thou didst seem.

I, the mere man, o'ermatch in virtue thee  
 The mighty god : for I have not betrayed  
 The Herakleian children, — whereas thou  
 Hadst wit enough to come clandestinely  
 Into the chamber, take what no man gave,  
 Another's place ; and when it comes to help  
 Thy loved ones, there thou lackest wit indeed !  
 Thou art some stupid god or born unjust.

*Cho.* Even a dirge, can Phoibos suit  
 In song to music jubilant  
 For all its sorrow : making shoot  
 His golden plectron o'er the lute,  
 Melodious ministrant.

And I, too, am of mind to raise,  
 Despite the imminence of doom,  
 A song of joy, outpour my praise  
 To him — what is it rumor says ? —

Whether — now buried in the ghostly gloom  
Below ground — he was child of Zeus indeed,  
Or mere Amphitruon's mortal seed —  
To him I weave the wreath of song, his labor's  
meed.

For, is my hero perished in the feat?  
The virtues of brave toils, in death complete,  
These save the dead in song, — their glory-  
garland meet!

First, then, he made the wood  
Of Zeus a solitude,  
Slaying its lion-tenant; and he spread  
The tawinness behind — his yellow head  
Enmuffled by the brute's, backed by that grin  
of dread.

The mountain-roving savage Kentaur-race  
He strewed with deadly bow about their place,  
Slaying with winged shafts: Peneios knew,  
Beauteously-eddyng, and the long tracts too  
Of pasture trampled fruitless, and as well  
Those desolated haunts Mount Pelion under,  
And, grassy up to Homolè, each dell  
Whence, having filled their hands with pine-  
tree plunder,  
Horse-like was wont to prance from, and sub-  
due

The land of Thessaly, that bestial crew.  
The golden-headed spot-back'd stag he slew,  
That robber of the rustics: glorified  
Therewith the goddess who in hunter's pride  
Slaughters the game along Oinoé's side.  
And, yoked abreast, he brought the chariot-  
breed

To pace submissive to the bit, each steed  
That in the bloody cribs of Diomede  
Champed and, unbridled, hurried down that  
gore

For grain, exultant the dread feast before —  
Of man's flesh: hideous feeders they of yore!  
All as he crossed the Hebros' silver-flow  
Accomplished he such labor, toiling so  
For Mukenaian tyrant; ay, and more —  
He crossed the Melian shore  
And, by the sources of Amauros, shot  
To death that strangers'-pest  
Kuknos, who dwelt in Amphanaia: not  
Of fame for good to guest!

And next, to the melodious maids he came,  
Inside the Hesperian court-yard: hand must  
aim

At plucking gold fruit from the appled leaves,  
Now he had killed the dragon, backed like  
flame,

Who guards the unapproachable he weaves  
Himself all round, one spire about the same.  
And into those sea-troughs of ocean dived  
The hero, and for mortals calm contrived,  
Whatever oars should follow in his wake.  
And under heaven's mid-seat his hands thrust  
he,

At home with Atlas: and, for valor's sake,  
Held the gods up their star-faced mansionry.  
Also, the rider-host of Amazons  
About Maiotis many-streamed, he went  
To conquer through the billowy Euxin once,  
Having collected what an armament

Of friends from Hellas, all on conquest bent  
Of that gold-garnished cloak, dread girdle-  
chase!

So Hellas gained the girl's barbarian grace  
And at Mukenai saves the trophy still —  
Go wonder there, who will!

And the ten-thousand-headed hound  
Of many a murder, the Lernaian snake  
He burned out, head by head, and cast around  
His darts a poison thence, — darts soon to  
slake

Their rage in that three-bodied herdsman's gore  
Of Erutheia. Many a running more  
He made for triumph and felicity,  
And, last of toils, to Haides, never dry  
Of tears, he sailed: and there he, luckless, ends  
His life completely, nor returns again.  
The house and home are desolate of friends,  
And where the children's life-path leads them,  
plain

I see, — no step retraceable, no god  
Availing, and no law to help the lost!  
The oar of Charon marks their period,  
Waits to end all. Thy hands, these roofs ac-  
cost! —

To thee, though absent, look their uttermost!

But if in youth and strength I flourished still,  
Still shook the spear in fight, did power match  
will

In these Kadmeian co-mates of my age,  
They would, — and I, — when warfare was to  
wage,

Stand by these children; but I am bereft  
Of youth now, lone of that good genius left!

But hist, desist! for here come these, —  
Draped as the dead go, under and over, —  
Children long since — now hard to discover —  
Of the once so potent Herakles!  
And the loved wife dragging, in one tether  
About her feet, the boys together;  
And the hero's aged sire comes last!  
Unhappy that I am! Of tears which rise, —  
How am I all unable to hold fast,  
Longer, the aged fountains of these eyes!

Meg. Be it so! Who is priest, who butcher  
here

Of these ill-fated ones, or stops the breath  
Of me, the miserable? Ready, see,  
The sacrifice — to lead where Haides lives!  
O children, we are led — no lovely team  
Of corpses — age, youth, motherhood, all mixed!  
O sad fate of myself and these my sons  
Whom with these eyes I look at, this last time!  
I, indeed, bore you: but for enemies  
I brought you up to be a laughing-stock,  
Matter for merriment, destruction-stuff!  
Woe's me!

Strangely indeed my hopes have struck me down  
From what I used to hope about you once —  
The expectation from your father's talk!  
For thee, now, thy dead sire dealt Argos to:  
Thou wast to have Eurustheus' house one day,  
And rule Pelasgia where the fine fruits grow;  
And, for a stole of state, he wrapped about  
Thy head with that the lion-monster bore,



That which himself went wearing armor-wise.  
And thou wast King of Thebes — such chariots  
there!

Those plains I had for portion — all for thee,  
As thou hast coaxed them out of who gave  
birth

To thee, his boy : and into thy right hand  
He thrust the guardian-club of Daïdalos, —  
Poor guardian proves the gift that plays thee  
false!

And upon thee he promised to bestow  
Oichalia — what, with those far-shooting shafts,  
He ravaged once ; and so, since three you were,  
With threefold kingdoms did he build you up  
To very towers, your father, — proud enough,  
Prognosticating, from your manliness  
In boyhood, what the manhood's self would be.  
For my part, I was picking out for you  
Brides, suiting each with his alliance — this  
From Athens, this from Sparté, this from  
Thebes —

Whence, suited — as stern-cables steady ship —  
You might have hold on life gods bless. All  
gone!

Fortune turns round and gives us — you, the  
Fates

Instead of brides — me, tears for nuptial baths,  
Unhappy in my hoping! And the sire  
Of your sire — he prepares the marriage-feast  
Befitting Haides who plays father now —  
Bitter relationship! Oh me! which first —  
Which last of you shall I to bosom fold?

To whom shall I fit close, his mouth to mine?  
Of whom shall I lay hold and ne'er let go?  
How would I gather, like the brown-winged bee,  
The groans from all, and, gathered into one,  
Give them you back again, a crowded tear!  
Dearest, if any voice be heard of men  
Dungeoned in Haides, thee — to thee I speak!  
Here is thy father dying, and thy boys!  
And I too perish, famed as fortunate  
By mortals once, through thee! Assist them!

Come!

But come! though just a shade, appear to me!  
For, coming, thy ghost-grandeur would suffice,  
Such cowards are they in thy presence, these  
Who kill thy children now thy back is turned!

*Amph.* Ay, daughter, bid the powers below  
assist!

But I will rather, raising hand to heaven,  
Call thee to help, O Zeus, if thy intent  
Be, to these children, helpful anyway,  
Since soon thou wilt be valueless enough!  
And yet thou hast been called and called; in  
vain

I labor : for we needs must die, it seems.  
Well, aged brothers — life 's a little thing!  
Such as it is, then, pass life pleasantly  
From day to night, nor once grieve all the while!  
Since Time concerns him not about our hopes, —  
To save them, — but his own work done, flies off.  
Witness myself, looked up to among men,  
Doing noteworthy deeds : when here comes fate  
Lifts me away, like feather skyward borne,  
In one day! Riches then and glory, — whom  
These are found constant to, I know not.

Friends,  
Farewell! the man who loved you all so much,

Now, this last time, my mates, ye look upon!

*Meg.* Ha!  
O father, do I see my dearest? Speak!

*Amph.* No more than thou canst, daughter —  
dumb like thee!

*Meg.* Is this he whom we heard was under  
ground?

*Amph.* Unless at least some dream in day we  
see!

*Meg.* What do I say? what dreams insanely  
view?

This is no other than thy son, old sire!  
Here, children! hang to these paternal robes,  
Quick, haste, hold hard on him, since here 's  
your true

Zeus that can save — and every whit as well!

*Herakles.* Oh, hail, my palace, my hearth's  
propula, —

How glad I see thee as I come to light!  
Ha, what means this? My children I behold  
Before the house in garments of the grave,  
Chapleted, and, amid a crowd of men,  
My very wife — my father weeping too,  
Whatever the misfortune! Come, best take  
My station nearer these and learn it all!

Wife, what new sorrow has approached our  
home?

*Meg.* O dearest! light flashed on thy father  
now!

Art thou come? art thou saved and dost thou  
fall

On friends in their supreme extremity?

*Her.* How say'st thou? Father! what 's the  
trouble here?

*Meg.* Undone are we! — but thou, old man,  
forgive

If first I snatch what thou shouldst say to him!  
For somehow womanhood wakes pity more.

Here are my children killed and I undone!

*Her.* Apollon, with what preludes speech be-  
gins!

*Meg.* Dead are my brothers and old father too.

*Her.* How say'st thou? — doing what? — by  
spear-stroke whence?

*Meg.* Lukos destroyed them — the land's noble  
king!

*Her.* Met them in arms? or through the  
land's disease?

*Meg.* Sedition : and he sways seven-gated  
Thebes.

*Her.* Why then came fear on the old man  
and thee?

*Meg.* He meant to kill thy father, me, our  
boys.

*Her.* How say'st thou? Fearing what from  
orphanage?

*Meg.* Lest they should some day pay back  
Kreon's death.

*Her.* And why trick out the boys corpse-  
fashion thus?

*Meg.* These wraps of death we have already  
donned.

*Her.* And you had died through violence?  
Woe 's me!

*Meg.* Left bare of friends : and thou wast  
dead, we heard.

*Her.* And whence came on you this faint-  
heartedness?

*Meg.* The heralds of Eurustheus brought the news.

*Her.* And why was it you left my house and hearth?

*Meg.* Forced thence: thy father — from his very couch!

*Her.* And no shame at insulting the old man?

*Meg.* Shame, truly! no near neighbors *he* and Shame!

*Her.* And so much, in my absence, lacked I friends?

*Meg.* Friends, — are there any to a luckless man?

*Her.* The Minuai-war I waged, — they spat forth these?

*Meg.* Friendless — again I tell thee — is ill-luck.

*Her.* Will not you cast these hell-wraps from your hair

And look on light again, and with your eyes Taste the sweet change from nether dark to day?

While I — for now there needs my handiwork —

First I shall go, demolish the abodes Of these new lordships; next hew off the head Accurst and toss it for the dogs to trail.

Then, such of the Kadmeians as I find Were craven though they owed me gratitude, —

Some I intend to handle with this club Renowned for conquest; and with winged shafts

Scatter the others, fill Ismenos full With bloody corpses, — Dirke's flow so white Shall be incarnadined. For, whom, I pray, Behooves me rather help than wife and child And aged father? Farewell, "Labors" mine! Vainly I wrought them: my true work lay here!

My business is to die defending these, — If for their father's sake they meant to die. Or how shall we call brave the battling it With snake and lion, as Eurustheus bade, If yet I must not labor death away From my own children? "Conquering Herakles"

Folk will not call me as they used, I think! The right thing is for parents to assist Children, old age, the partner of the couch.

*Amph.* True, son! thy duty is — be friend to friends

And foe to foes: yet — no more haste than needs!

*Her.* Why, father, what is over-hasty here?

*Amph.* Many a pauper — seeming to be rich, As the word goes — the king calls partisan. Such made a riot, ruined Thebes to rob Their neighbor: for, what good they had at home

Was spent and gone, — flew off through idleness.

You came to trouble Thebes, they saw: since seen,

Beware lest, raising foes, a multitude, You stumble where you apprehend no harm.

*Her.* If all Thebes saw me, not a whit care I.

But seeing as I did a certain bird Not in the lucky seats, I knew some woe Was fallen upon the house: so, purposely, By stealth I made my way into the land.

*Amph.* And now, advancing, hail the hearth with praise

And give the ancestral home thine eye to see! For he himself will come, thy wife and sons

The drag-forth — slaughter — slay me too, — this king!

But, here remaining, all succeeds with thee — Gain lost by no false step. So, this thy town Disturb not, son, ere thou right matters here!

*Her.* Thus will I do, for thou say'st well; my home

Let me first enter! Since at the due time Returning from the unsunned depths where dwells

Haides' wife Koré, let me not affront Those gods beneath my roof, I first should hail!

*Amph.* For didst thou really visit Haides, son?

*Her.* Ay — dragged to light, too, his three-headed beast.

*Amph.* By fight didst conquer — or through Koré's gift?

*Her.* Fight: well for me, I saw the Orgies first!

*Amph.* And is he in Eurustheus' house, the brute?

*Her.* Chthonia's grove, Hermion's city, holds him now.

*Amph.* Does not Eurustheus know thee back on earth?

*Her.* No: I would come first and see matters here.

*Amph.* But how wast thou below ground such a time?

*Her.* I stopped, from Haides, bringing The-seus up.

*Amph.* And where is he? — bound o'er the plain for home?

*Her.* Gone glad to Athens — Haides' fugitive!

But, up, boys! follow father into house! There's a far better going-in for you

Truly, than going-out was! Nay, take heart, And let the eyes no longer run and run!

And thou, O wife, my own, collect thy soul Nor tremble now! Leave grasping, all of you,

My garments! I'm not winged, nor fly from friends!

Ah, —

No letting go for these, who all the more Hang to my garments! Did you foot indeed

The razor's edge? Why, then I'll carry them —

Take with my hands these small craft up, and tow

Just as a ship would. There! don't fear I shirk

My children's service! this way, men are men, No difference! best and worst, they love their boys

After one fashion: wealth they differ in — Some have it, others not; but each and all

Combine to form the children-loving race.

*Cho.* Youth is a pleasant burden to me ;  
But age on my head, more heavily  
Than the crags of Aitna, weighs and weighs,  
And darkening cloaks the lids and intercepts  
the rays.

Never be mine the preference  
Of an Asian empire's wealth, nor yet  
Of a house all gold, to youth, to youth  
That's beauty, whatever the gods dispense !  
Whether in wealth we joy, or fret  
Paupers, — of all God's gifts most beautiful, in  
truth !

But miserable murderous age I hate !  
Let it go to wreck, the waves adown,  
Nor ever by rights plague tower or town  
Where mortals bide, but still elate  
With wings, on ether, precipitate,  
Wander them round — nor wait !

But if the gods, to man's degree,  
Had wit and wisdom, they would bring  
Mankind a twofold youth, to be  
Their virtue's sign-mark, all should see,  
In those with whom life's winter thus grew  
spring.

For when they died, into the sun once more  
Would they have traversed twice life's race-  
course o'er ;

While ignobility had simply run  
Existence through, nor second life begun,  
And so might we discern both bad and good  
As surely as the starry multitude  
Is numbered by the sailors, one and one.  
But now the gods by no apparent line  
Limit the worthy and the base define ;  
Only, a certain period rounds, and so  
Brings man more wealth, — but youthful vigor,  
no !

Well ! I am not to pause  
Mingling together — wine and wine in cup —  
The Graces with the Muses up —  
Most dulcet marriage : loosed from music's laws,  
No life for me !

But where the wreaths abound, there ever may  
I be !

And still, an aged bard, I shout Mnemosuné —  
Still chant of Herakles the triumph-chant,  
Companied by the seven-stringed tortoise-  
shell

And Libuan flute, and Bromios' self as well,  
God of the grape, with man participant !  
Not yet will we arrest their glad advance —  
The Muses who so long have led me forth to  
dance !

A paian — hymn the Delian girls indeed,  
Weaving a beauteous measure in and out  
His temple-gates, Latona's goodly seed ;  
And paiauns — I too, these thy domes about,  
From these gray cheeks, my king, will swan-  
like shout —

Old songster ! Ay, in song it starts off brave —  
" Zeus' son is he ! " and yet, such grace of birth  
Surpassing far, to man his labors gave  
Existence, one calm flow without a wave,  
Having destroyed the beasts, the terrors of the  
earth.

*Luk.* From out the house Amphitruon comes  
— in time !

For 't is a long while now since ye bedecked  
Your bodies with the dead-folks' finery.  
But quick ! the boys and wife of Herakles —  
Bid them appear outside this house, keep pact  
To die, and need no bidding but your own !

*Amph.* King ! you press hard on me sore-  
pressed enough.

And give me scorn — beside my dead ones here.  
Meet in such matters were it, though you reign,  
To temper zeal with moderation. Since  
You do impose on us the need to die —  
Needs must we love our lot, obey your will.

*Luk.* Where's Megara, then ? Alkmené's  
grandsons, where ?

*Amph.* She, I think, — as one figures from  
outside, —

*Luk.* Well, this same thinking, — what af-  
fords its ground ?

*Amph.* — Sits suppliant on the holy altar-  
steps, —

*Luk.* Idly indeed a suppliant to save life !

*Amph.* — And calls on her dead husband,  
vainly too !

*Luk.* For he's not come, nor ever will arrive.

*Amph.* Never — at least, if no god raise him  
up.

*Luk.* Go to her, and conduct her from the  
house !

*Amph.* I should partake the murder, doing  
that.

*Luk.* We, — since thou hast a scruple in the  
case, —

Outside of fears, we shall march forth these  
lads,

Mother and all. Here, follow me, my folk —  
And gladly so remove what stops our toils !

*Amph.* Thou — go then ! March where needs  
must ! What remains —

Perhaps concerns another. Doing ill,  
Expect some ill be done thee !

Ha, old friends !

On he strides beautifully ! in the toils  
O' the net, where swords spring forth, will he  
be fast —

Minded to kill his neighbors — the arch-knave !  
I go, too — I must see the falling corpse !

For he has sweets to give — a dying man,  
Your foe, that pays the price of deeds he did.

*Cho.* Troubles are over ! He the great king  
once,

Turns the point, tends for Haidēs, goal of life !  
O justice, and the gods' back-flowing fate !

*Amph.* Thou art come, late indeed, where  
death pays crime —

These insults heaped on better than thyself !

*Cho.* Joy gives this outburst to my tears !  
Again

Come round those deeds, his doing, which of  
old

He never dreamed himself was to endure —  
King of the country ! But enough, old man !

Indoors, now, let us see how matters stand —  
If somebody be faring as I wish !

*Luk.* Ah me — me !

*Cho.* This strikes the keynote — music to  
my mind,



Merry i' the household! Death takes up the tune!

The king gives voice, groans murder's prelude well!

*Luk.* O all the land of Kadmos! slain by guile!

*Cho.* Ay, for who slew first? Paying back thy due,

Resign thee! make, for deeds done, mere amends!

Who was it grazed the gods through lawlessness —

Mortal himself, threw up his fools'-conceit  
Against the blessed heavenly ones — as though  
Gods had no power? Old friends, the impious man

Exists not any more! The house is mute.  
Turn we to song and dance! For, those I love,  
Those I wish well to, well fare they, to wish!

Dances, dances and banqueting  
To Thebes, the sacred city through,  
Are a care! for, change and change  
Of tears to laughter, old to new,  
Our lays, glad birth, they bring, they bring!  
He is gone and past, the mighty king!  
And the old one reigns, returned — Oh, strange!  
From the Acherontian harbor too!  
Advent of hope, beyond thought's widest range!

To the gods, the gods, are crimes a care,  
And they watch our virtue, well aware  
That gold and that prosperity drive man  
Out of his mind — those charioteers who hale  
Might-without-right behind them: face who can

Fortune's reverse which time prepares, nor quail?

— He who evades law and in lawlessness  
Delights him, — he has broken down his trust —

The chariot, riches haled — now blackening in the dust!

Ismenos, go thou garlanded!  
Break into dance, ye ways, the polished bed  
O' the seven-gated city! Dirke, thou  
Fair-flowing, with the Asopiad sisters all,  
Leave your sire's stream, attend the festival  
Of Herakles, one choir of nymphs, sing triumph now!

O woody rock of Puthios and each home  
O' the Helikonian Muses, ye shall come  
With joyous shouting to my walls, my town  
Where saw the light that Spartan race, those  
"Sown,"

Brazen-shield-bearing chiefs, whereof the band  
With children's children renovates our land,  
To Thebes a sacred light!  
O combination of the marriage rite —  
Bed of the mortal-born and Zeus, who couched  
Beside the nymph of Perseus' progeny!  
For credible, past hope, becomes to me  
That nuptial story long ago avouched,  
O Zeus! and time has turned the dark to bright,  
And made one blaze of truth the Herakleidan might —

His, who emerged from earth's pavilion, left

Plouton's abode, the nether palace-cleft.  
Iris: wast the lord that nature gave me — not  
That baseness born and bred — my king, by lot!  
— Baseness made plain to all, who now regard  
The match of sword with sword in fight, —  
If to the gods the Just and Right  
Still pleasing be, still claim the palm's award.

Horror!

Are we come to the selfsame passion of fear,  
Old friends? — such a phantasm fronts me here  
Visible over the palace-roof!

In flight, in flight, the laggard limb

Bestir! and haste aloof

From that on the roof there — grand and grim!

O Paian, king!

Be thou my safeguard from the woeful thing!

*Iris.* Courage, old men! beholding here —  
Night's birth —

Madness, and me the handmaid of the gods,  
*Iris:* since to your town we come, no plague —  
Wage war against the house of but one man  
From Zeus and from Alkmené sprung, they say.  
Now, till he made an end of bitter toils,  
Fate kept him safe, nor did his father Zeus  
Let us once hurt him, Heré nor myself.  
But, since he has toiled through Eurustheus' task,

Heré desires to fix fresh blood on him —  
Slaying his children: I desire it too.

Up then, collecting the unsoftened heart,  
Unwedded virgin of black Night! Drive, drag  
Frenzy upon the man here — whirls of brain  
Big with child-murder, while his feet leap gay!  
Let go the bloody cable its whole length!  
So that, — when o'er the Acherousian ford  
He has sent floating, by self-homicide,  
His beautiful boy-garland, — he may know  
First, Heré's anger, what it is to him,  
And then learn mine. The gods are vile indeed  
And mortal matters vast, if he 'scape free!

*Madness.* Certes, from well-born sire and mother too

Had I my birth, whose blood is Night's and Heaven's;

But here's my glory, — not to grudge the good!  
Nor love I raids against the friends of man.

I wish, then, to persuade, — before I see  
You stumbling, you and Heré! trust my words!

This man, the house of whom ye hound me to,  
Is not unfamed on earth nor gods among;  
Since, having quelled waste land and savage sea,

He alone raised again the falling rights  
Of gods — gone ruminous through impious men.  
Desire no mighty mischief, I advise!

*Iris.* Give thou no thought to Heré's faulty schemes!

*Mad.* Changing her step from faulty to fault-free!

*Iris.* Not to be wise, did Zeus' wife send thee here!

*Mad.* Sun, thee I cite to witness — doing what I loathe to do!

But since indeed to Heré and thyself I must subserve,

And follow you quick, with a whiz, as the  
hounds a-hunt with the huntsman,  
— Go I will ! and neither the sea, as it groans  
with its waves so furiously,  
Nor earthquake, no, nor the bolt of thunder  
gaspings out heaven's labor-throe,  
Shall cover the ground as I, at a bound, rush  
into the bosom of Herakles !

And home I scatter, and house I batter,  
Having first of all made the children fall, —  
And he who felled them is never to know  
He gave birth to each child that received the  
blow,  
Till the Madness, I am, have let him go !

Ha, behold, already he rocks his head — he is  
off from the starting-place !

Not a word, as he rolls his frightful orbs, from  
their sockets wrenched in the ghastly  
race !

And the breathings of him he tempers and  
times no more than a bull in act to toss,  
And hideously he bellows invoking the Keres,  
daughters of Tartaros.

Ay, and I soon will dance thee madder, and  
pipe thee quite out of thy mind with fear !  
So, up with the famous foot, thou Iris, march to  
Olympus, leave me here !

Me and mine, who now combine, in the dread-  
ful shape no mortal sees,  
And now are about to pass, from without, inside  
of the home of Herakles !

*Cho.* Otototoi, — groan ! Away is mown  
Thy flower, Zeus' offspring, City !  
Unhappy Hellas, who dost cast (the pity !)  
Who worked thee all the good,  
Away from thee, — destroyest in a mood  
Of madness him, to death whom pipings dance !  
There goes she, in her chariot — groans, her  
brood —

And gives her team the goad, as though adrift  
For doom, Zeus' Gorgon, Madness, she whose  
glance

Turns man to marble ! with what hissings lift  
Their hundred heads the snakes, her head's in-  
heritance !

Quick has the god changed fortune : through  
their sire

Quick will the children, that he saved, ex-  
pire !

O miserable me ! O Zeus ! thy child —  
Childless himself — soon vengeance, hunger-  
wild,

Craving for punishment, will lay how low —  
Loaded with many a woe !

O palace-roofs ! your courts about,  
A measure begins all unrejoiced  
By the tympanies and the thyrsos hoist  
Of the Bromian revel-rout !  
O ye domes ! and the measure proceeds  
For blood, not such as the cluster bleeds  
Of the Dionusian pouring-out !

Break forth, fly, children ! fatal this —  
Fatal the lay that is piped, I wis !  
Ay, for he hunts a children-chase —  
Never shall Madness lead her revel

And leave no trace in the dwelling-place !

Ai ai, because of the evil !

Ai ai, the old man — how I groan

For the father, and not the father alone !

She who was nurse of his children, — small

Her gain that they ever were born at all !

See ! See !

A whirlwind shakes hither and thither

The house — the roof falls in together !

Ha, ha ! what dost thou, son of Zeus ?

A trouble of Tartaros broke loose,

Such as once Pallas on the Titan thundered,

Thou sendest on thy domes, roof-shattered and  
wall-sundered !

*Messenger.* O bodies white with age ! —

*Cho.* What cry, to me —

What, dost thou call with ?

*Mes.* There 's a curse indoors !

*Cho.* I shall not bring a prophet : you suffice !

*Mes.* Dead are the children !

*Cho.* Ai ai !

*Mes.* Groan ! for, groans

Suit well the subject ! Dire the children's  
death,

Dire too the parent's hands that dealt the fate.  
No one could tell worse woe than we have  
borne !

*Cho.* How dost thou that same curse —  
curse, cause for groan

The father's on the children, make appear ?

Tell in what matter they were hurled from  
heaven

Against the house — these evils ; and recount

The children's hapless fate, O Messenger !

*Mes.* The victims were before the hearth of  
Zeus

A household-expiation : since the king  
O' the country, Herakles had killed and cast  
From out the dwelling ; and a beauteous choir  
Of boys stood by his sire, too, and his wife.

And now the basket had been carried round

The altar in a circle, and we used

The consecrated speech. Alkmené's son —

Just as he was about, in his right hand,

To bear the torch, that he might dip into

The cleansing-water — came to a stand-still ;

And, as their father yet delayed, his boys

Had their eyes on him. But he was himself

No longer ; lost in rollings of the eyes ;

Out-thrusting eyes — their very roots — like  
blood !

Froth he dropped down his bushy-bearded  
cheek,

And said — together with a madman's laugh —

“ Father ! why sacrifice, before I slay

Eurustheus ? why have twice the lustral fire,

And double pains, when 't is permitted me

To end, with one good hand-sweep, matters  
here ?

Then, — when I hither bring Eurustheus'  
head, —

Then for these just slain, wash hands once for  
all !

Now, — cast drink-offerings forth, throw bas-  
kets down !

Who gives me bow and arrows, who my club ?

I go to that Mukenai ! One must match

Crowbars and mattocks, so that — those sunk stones  
 The Kuklopsquared with picks and plumb-line red —  
 I, with my bent steel, may o'ertumble town ! ”  
 Which said, he goes and — with no car to have —  
 Affirms he has one ! mounts the chariot-board,  
 And strikes, as having really goad in hand !  
 And two ways laughed the servants — laugh with awe ;  
 And one said, as each met the other's stare,  
 “ Playing us boys' tricks ? or is master mad ? ”  
 But up he climbs, and down along the roof,  
 And, dropping into the men's place, maintains  
 He 's come to Nisos city, when he 's come  
 Only inside his own house ! then reclines  
 On floor, for couch, and, as arrived indeed,  
 Makes himself supper ; goes through some brief stay,  
 Then says he 's traversing the forest-flats  
 Of Isthmos ; thereupon lays body bare  
 Of bucklings, and begins a contest with  
 — No one ! and is proclaimed the conqueror —  
 He by himself — having called out to hear  
 — Nobody ! Then, if you will take his word,  
 Blaring against Eurustheus horribly,  
 He 's at Mukanai. But his father laid  
 Hold of the strong hand and addressed him thus :  
 “ O son, what ails thee ? Of what sort is this  
 Extravagance ? Has not some murder-craze,  
 Bred of those corpses thou didst just dispatch,  
 Danced thee drunk ? ” But he, — taking him to crouch,  
 Eurustheus' sire, that apprehensive touched  
 His hand, a suppliant, — pushes him aside,  
 Gets ready quiver, and bends low against  
 His children — thinking them Eurustheus' boys  
 He means to slay. They, horrified with fear,  
 Rushed here and there, — this child, into the robes  
 O' the wretched mother, — this, beneath the shade  
 O' the column, — and this other, like a bird,  
 Covered at the altar-foot. The mothers shrieks,  
 “ Parent — what dost thou ? — kill thy children ? ” So  
 Shriek the old sire and crowd of servitors.  
 But he, outwinding him, as round about  
 The column ran the boy, — a horrid whirl  
 O' the lathe his foot described ! — stands opposite,  
 Strikes through the liver ! and supine the boy  
 Bedews the stone shafts, breathing out his life.  
 But “ Victory ” he shouted ! boasted thus :  
 “ Well, this one nestling of Eurustheus — dead —  
 Falls by me, pays back the paternal hate ! ”  
 Then bends bow on another who was crouched  
 At base of altar — overlooked, he thought —  
 And now prevents him, falls at father's knee,  
 Throwing up hand to beard and cheek above.  
 “ O dearest ! ” cries he, “ father, kill me not !  
 Yours, I am — your boy : not Eurustheus' boy  
 You kill now ! ” But he, rolling the wild eye  
 Of Gorgon, — as the boy stood all too close  
 For deadly bowshot, — mimicry of smith

Who batters red-hot iron, — hand o'er head  
 Heaving his club, on the boy's yellow hair  
 Hurls it and breaks the bone. This second caught, —  
 He goes, would slay the third, one sacrifice  
 He and the couple ; but, beforehand here,  
 The miserable mother catches up,  
 Carries him inside house and bars the gate.  
 Then he, as he were at those Kuklops' work,  
 Digs at, heaves doors up, wrenches doorposts out,  
 Lays wife and child low with the selfsame shaft.  
 And this done, at the old man's death he drives ;  
 But there came, as it seemed to us who saw,  
 A statue — Pallas with the crested head,  
 Swinging her spear — and threw a stone which smote  
 Herakles' breast and stayed his slaughter-rage,  
 And sent him safe to sleep. He falls to ground —  
 Striking against the column with his back —  
 Column which, with the falling of the roof,  
 Broken in two, lay by the altar-base.  
 And we, foot-free now from our several flights,  
 Along with the old man, we fastened bonds  
 Of rope-noose to the column, so that he,  
 Ceasing from sleep, might not go adding deeds  
 To deeds done. And he sleeps a sleep, poor wretch,  
 No gift of any god ! since he has slain  
 Children and wife. For me, I do not know  
 What mortal has more misery to bear.  
 Cho. A murder there was which Argolis  
 Holds in remembrance, Hellas through,  
 As, at that time, best and famousst :  
 Of those, the daughters of Danaos slew.  
 A murder indeed was that ! but this  
 Outstrips it, straight to the goal has pressed.  
 I am able to speak of a murder done  
 To the hapless Zeus-born offspring, too —  
 Proknè's son, who had but one —  
 Or a sacrifice to the Muses, say  
 Rather, who Itus sing away,  
 Her single child ! But thou, the sire  
 Of children three — O thou consuming fire ! —  
 In one outrageous fate hast made them all expire !  
 And this outrageous fate —  
 What groan, or wail, or deadmen's dirge,  
 Or choric dance of Haides shall I urge  
 The Muse to celebrate ?  
 Woe ! woe ! behold !  
 The portalled palace lies unrolled,  
 This way and that way, each prodigious fold !  
 Alas for me ! these children, see,  
 Stretched, hapless group, before their father —  
 he  
 The all-unhappy, who lies sleeping out  
 The murder of his sons, a dreadful sleep !  
 And bonds, see, all about, —  
 Rope-tangle, ties and tether, — these  
 Tightenings around the body of Herakles  
 To the stone columns of the house made fast !

But — like a bird that grieves



For callow nestlings some rude hand bereaves —  
See, here, a bitter journey overpast,  
The old man — all too late — is here at last !

*Amph.* Silently, silently, aged Kadmeians !  
Will ye not suffer my son, diffused  
Yonder, to slide from his sorrows in sleep ?

*Cho.* And thee, old man, do I, groaning, weep,  
And the children too, and the head there —  
used

Of old to the wreaths and pains !

*Amph.* Farther away ! Nor beat the breast,  
Nor wail aloud, nor rouse from rest  
The slumberer — asleep, so best !

*Cho.* Ah me — what a slaughter !

*Amph.* Refrain — refrain !  
Ye will prove my perdition !

*Cho.* Unlike water,  
Bloodshed rises from earth again !

*Amph.* Do I bid you bate your breath, in  
vain —

Ye elders ? Lament in a softer strain !  
Lest he rouse himself, burst every chain,

And bury the city in ravage — bray  
Father and house to dust away !

*Cho.* I cannot forbear — I cannot forbear !

*Amph.* Hush ! I will learn his breathings :  
there !

I will lay my ears close.

*Cho.* What, he sleeps ?

*Amph.* Ay, — sleeps ! A horror of slumber  
keeps

The man who has piled  
On wife and child

Death and death, as he shot them down

With clang o' the bow.

*Cho.* Wail —

*Amph.* Even so !

*Cho.* — The fate of the children —

*Amph.* Triple woe !

*Cho.* — Old man, the fate of thy son !

*Amph.* Hush, hush ! Have done !

He is turning about !

He is breaking out !

Away ! I steal

And my body conceal,

Before he arouse,

In the depths of the house !

*Cho.* Courage ! The Night

Maintains her right

On the lids of thy son there, sealed from sight !

*Amph.* See, see ! To leave the light

And, wretch that I am, bear one last ill,

I do not avoid ; but if he kill

Me, his own father, and devise

Beyond the present miseries

A misery more ghastly still —

And to haunt him, over and above

Those here who, as they used to love,

Now hate him, what if he have with these

My murder, the worst of Erinnēs ?

*Cho.* Then was the time to die, for thee,

When ready to wreak in the full degree

Vengeance on those

Thy consort's foes

Who murdered her brothers ! glad, life's close,

With the Taphioi down,

And sacked their town

Clustered about with a wash of sea !

*Amph.* To flight — to flight !

Away from the house, troop off, old men !

Save yourselves out of the maniac's sight !

He is rousing himself right up ; and then,

Murder on murder heaping anew,

He will revel in blood your city through !

*Cho.* O Zeus, why hast, with such unmeas-  
ured hate,

Hated thy son, whelmed in this sea of woes ?

*Her.* Ha, —

In breath indeed I am — see things I ought —  
Æther, and earth, and these the sunbeam-  
shafts !

But then — some billow and strange whirl of  
sense

I have fallen into ! and breathings hot I  
breathe —

Smoked upwards, not the steady work from  
lungs.

See now ! Why, bound — at moorings like a  
ship, —

About my young breast and young arm, to this  
Stone piece of carved work broke in half, do I  
Sit, have my rest in corpses' neighborhood ?

Strewn on the ground are winged darts, and bow  
Which played my brother-shieldman, held in  
hand, —

Guarded my side, and got my guardianship !

I cannot have gone back to Haides — twice

Begun Eurustheus' race I ended thence ?

But I nor see the Sisupheian stone,

Nor Plouton, nor Demeter's sceptred maid !

I am struck witless sure ! Where can I be ?

Ho there ! what friend of mine is near or far —

Some one to cure me of bewilderment ?

For naught familiar do I recognize.

*Amph.* Old friends, shall I go close to these  
my woes ?

*Cho.* Ay, and let me too, — nor desert your  
ills !

*Her.* Father, why weepest thou, and buriest  
up

Thine eyes, aloof so from thy much-loved son ?

*Amph.* O child ! — for, faring badly, mine  
thou art !

*Her.* Do I fare somehow ill, that tears should  
flow ?

*Amph.* Ill, — would cause any god who bore  
to groan !

*Her.* That's boasting, truly ! still, you state  
no hap.

*Amph.* For, thyself seest — if in thy wits  
again.

*Her.* Heyday ! How riddlingly that hint re-  
turns !

*Amph.* Well, I am trying — art thou sane and  
sound !

*Her.* Say if thou lay'st aught strange to my  
life's charge !

*Amph.* If thou no more art Haides-drunk, —  
I tell !

*Her.* I bring to mind no drunkenness of soul.

*Amph.* Shall I unwind my son, old men, or  
what ?

*Her.* And who was binder, tell ! — not *that*,  
my deed !

*Amph.* Mind that much of misfortune — pass  
the rest !

- Her.* Enough! from silence, I nor learn nor wish.
- Amph.* O Zeus, dost witness here throned Heré's work?
- Her.* But have I had to bear aught hostile thence?
- Amph.* Let be the goddess — bury thine own guilt!
- Her.* Undone! What is the sorrow thou wilt say?
- Amph.* Look! See the ruins of thy children here!
- Her.* Ah me! What sight do wretched I behold?
- Amph.* Unfair fight, son, this fight thou fastenest
- On thine own children!
- Her.* What fight? Who slew these?
- Amph.* Thou and thy bow, and who of gods was cause.
- Her.* How say'st? What did I? Ill-announcing sire!
- Amph.* — Go mad! Thou askest a sad clearing up!
- Her.* And am I also murderer of my wife?
- Amph.* All the work here was just one hand's work — thine!
- Her.* Ai ai — for groans encompass me — a cloud!
- Amph.* For these deeds' sake do I begroan thy fate!
- Her.* Did I break up my house or dance it down?
- Amph.* I know just one thing — all's a woe with thee!
- Her.* But where did the craze catch me, where destroy?
- Amph.* When thou didst cleanse hands at the altar-flame.
- Her.* Ah me! why is it then I save my life — Proved murderer of my dearest ones, my boys? Shall not I rush to the rock-level's leap, Or, darting sword through breast and all, become
- My children's blood-avenger? or, this flesh Burning away with fire, so thrust away The infamy, which waits me there, from life?
- Ah, but, — a hindrance to my purposed death, Theseus arrives, my friend and kinsman, here! Eyes will be on me! my child-murder-plague In evidence before friends loved so much! O me, what shall I do? Where, taking wing Or gliding underground, shall I seek out A solitariness from misery? I will pull night upon my muffled head! Let this wretch here content him with his curse
- Of blood: I would pollute no innocents!
- Theseus.* I come, — with others who await beside
- Asopos' stream, the armed Athenian youth, — Bring thy son, old man, spear's fight-fellowship!
- For a bruit reached the Erechtheidai's town That, having seized the sceptre of this realm, Lukos prepares you battle-violence. So, paying good back, — Herakles began,
- Saving me down there, — I have come, old man, If aught, of my hand or my friends', you want. What's here? Why all these corpses on the ground?
- Am I perhaps behindhand — come too late For newer ill? Who killed these children now?
- Whose wife was she, this woman I behold? Boys, at least, take no stand in reach of spear! Some other woe than war, I chance upon!
- Amph.* O thou, who sway'st the olive-bearing height! —
- Thes.* Why hail'st thou me with woeful prelude thus?
- Amph.* Dire sufferings have we suffered from the gods.
- Thes.* These boys, — who are they, thou art weeping o'er?
- Amph.* He gave them birth, indeed, my hapless son!
- Begot, but killed them — dared their bloody death.
- Thes.* Speak no such horror!
- Amph.* Would I might obey!
- Thes.* O teller of dread tidings!
- Amph.* Lost are we —
- Lost — flown away from life!
- Thes.* What sayest thou?
- What did he?
- Amph.* Erring through a frenzy-fit, He did all, with the arrows dipt in dye Of hundred-headed Hudra.
- Thes.* Heré's strife!
- But who is this among the dead, old man?
- Amph.* Mine, mine, this progeny — the labor-plagued,
- Who went with gods once to Phlegruia's plain, And in the giant-slaying war bore shield!
- Thes.* Woe — woe! What man was born mischanceful thus!
- Amph.* Thou couldst not know another mortal man
- Toil-weary, more outworn by wanderings.
- Thes.* And why i' the peploi hides he his sad head?
- Amph.* Not daring meet thine eye, thy friendliness
- And kinship, — nor that children's - blood about!
- Thes.* But I come to who shared my woe with me!
- Uncover him!
- Amph.* O child, put from thine eyes The peplos, throw it off, show face to sun! Woe's weight well matched contends with tears in thee.
- I supplicate thee, falling at thy cheek And knee and hand, and shedding this old tear!
- O son, remit the savage lion's mood, Since to a bloody, an unholy race Art thou led forth, if thou be resolute To go on adding ill to ill, my child!
- Thes.* Let me speak! Thee, who sittest — seated woe —
- I call upon to show thy friends thine eye! For there's no darkness has a cloud so black May hide thy misery thus absolute.

Why, waving hand, dost sign me — murder's done?

Lest a pollution strike me, from thy speech?  
Naught care I to — with thee, at least — fare ill:  
For I had joy once! *Then*, — soul rises to, —  
When thou didst save me from the dead to light!

Friends' gratitude that tastes old age, I loathe,  
And him who likes to share when things look fine,

But, sail along with friends in trouble — no!

Arise, uncover thine unhappy head!

Look on us! Every man of the right race

Bears what, at least, the gods inflict, nor shrinks.

*Her.* Theseus, hast seen this match — my boys with me?

*Thes.* I heard of, now I see the ills thou sign'st.

*Her.* Why then hast thou displayed my head to sun?

*Thes.* Why? mortals bring no plague on aught divine!

*Her.* Fly, O unhappy, this my impious plague!

*Thes.* No plague of vengeance flits to friends from friends.

*Her.* I praise thee! But I helped thee, — that is truth.

*Thes.* And I, advantaged then, now pity thee.

*Her.* — The pitiable, — my children's murderer!

*Thes.* I mourn for thy sake, in this altered lot.

*Her.* Hast thou found others in still greater woe?

*Thes.* Thou, from earth, touchest heaven, one huge distress!

*Her.* Accordingly, I am prepared to die.

*Thes.* Think'st thou thy threats at all import the gods?

*Her.* Gods please themselves: to gods I give their like.

*Thes.* Shut thy mouth, lest big words bring bigger woe!

*Her.* I am full fraught with ills — no stowing more!

*Thes.* Thou wilt do — what, then? Whither moody borne?

*Her.* Dying, I go below earth whence I came.

*Thes.* Thou hast used words of — what man turns up first!

*Her.* While thou, being outside sorrow, school'st me.

*Thes.* The much-enduring Herakles talks thus? —

*Her.* Not the so much-enduring: measure's past!

*Thes.* — Mainstay to mortals, and their mighty friend?

*Her.* They nowise profit me: but Heré rules.

*Thes.* Hellas forbids thou shouldst ineptly die.

*Her.* But hear, then, how I strive by arguments

Against thy teachings! I will ope thee out

My life — past, present — as unlivable.

First, I was born of this man, who had slain  
His mother's aged sire, and, sullied so,  
Married Alkmené, she who gave me birth.  
Now, when the basis of a family  
Is not laid right, what follows needs must fall;  
And Zeus, whoever Zeus is, formed me foe  
To Heré (take not thou offence, old man!  
Since father, in Zeus' stead, account I thee)  
And, while I was at suck yet, frightful snakes  
She introduced among my swaddling-clothes, —  
That bedfellow of Zeus! — to end me so.  
But when I gained the youthful garb of flesh,  
The labors I endured — what need to tell?  
What lions ever, or three-bodied brutes,  
Tuphons or giants, or the four-legg'd swarms  
Of Kentaur-battle, did not I end out?  
And that hound, headed all about with heads  
Which cropped up twice, the Hudra, having slain —

I both went through a myriad other toils  
In full drove, and arrived among the dead  
To convoy, as Eurustheus bade, to light  
Haides' three-headed dog and doorkeeper.  
But then I, — wretch, — dared this last labor  
— see!

Slew my sons, keystone-coped my house with ills.

To such a strait I come! nor my dear Thebes  
Dare I inhabit, — and, suppose I stay?  
Into what fane or festival of friends  
Am I to go? My curse scarce courts accost!  
Shall I seek Argos? How, if fled from home?  
But say, — I hurry to some other town!  
And there they eye me, as notorious now, —  
Kept by sharp tongue-taunts under lock and key —

“Is not this he, Zeus' son, who murdered once  
Children and wife? Let him go rot elsewhere!”

To any man renowned as happy once,  
Reverses are a grave thing; but to whom  
Evil is old acquaintance, there's no hurt  
To speak of, he and misery are twins.  
To this degree of woe I think to come:  
For earth will utter voice forbidding me  
To touch the ground, and sea — to pierce the wave,

The river-springs — to drink, and I shall play  
Ixion's part quite out, the chained and wheeled!  
And best of all will be, if so I 'scape  
Sight from one man of those Hellenes, — once  
I lived among, felicitous and rich!  
Why ought I then to live? What gain accrues  
From good-for-nothing, wicked life I lead?  
In fine, let Zeus' brave consort dance and sing,  
Stamp foot, the Olumpian Zeus' own sandal-trick!

What she has willed, that brings her will to pass —  
The foremost man of Hellas pedestalled,  
Up, over, and down whirling! Who would pray

To such a goddess? — that, begrudging Zeus  
Because he loved a woman, ruins me —  
Lover of Hellas, faultless of the wrong!

*Thes.* This strife is from no other of the gods  
Than Zeus' wife; rightly apprehend, as well,  
Why, to no death — thou meditatest now —



I would persuade thee, but to bear thy woes!  
None, none of mortals boasts a fate unmixed,  
Nor gods — if poets' teaching be not false.  
Have not they joined in wedlock against law  
With one another? not, for sake of rule,  
Branded their sires in bondage? Yet they

house,  
All the same, in Olumpos, carry heads  
High there, notorious sinners though they be!  
What wilt thou say, then, if thou, mortal-born,  
Bearest outrageously fate gods endure?  
Leave Thebes, now, pay obedience to the law,  
And follow me to Pallas' citadel!

There, when thy hands are purified from stain,  
House will I give thee, and goods shared alike.  
What gifts I hold too from the citizens  
For saving twice seven children, when I slew  
The Knosian bull, these also give I thee.  
And everywhere about the land are plots  
Apportioned me: these, named by thine own

name,  
Shall be henceforward styled by all men —  
thine,  
Thy life-long; but at death, when Haides-

bound,  
All Athens shall uphold the honored one  
With sacrifices, and huge marble heaps:  
For that's a fair crown our Hellenes grant  
Their people — glory, should they help the

brave!  
And I repay thee back this grace for thine  
That saved me, now that thou art lorn of

friends —  
Since, when the gods give honor, friends may

flit:  
For, a god's help suffices, if he please.

*Her.* Ah me, these words are foreign to my  
woes!

I neither fancy gods love lawless beds,  
Nor, that with chains they bind each other's  
hands,

Have I judged worthy faith, at any time;  
Nor shall I be persuaded — one is born  
His fellows' master! since God stands in

need —  
If he is really God — of naught at all.

These are the poets' pitiful conceits!

But this it was I pondered, though woe-

whelmed —  
"Take heed lest thou be taxed with cowardice

Somehow in leaving thus the light of day!"  
For whoso cannot make a stand against  
These same misfortunes, neither could with-

stand  
A mere man's dart, oppose death, strength to

strength.  
Therefore unto thy city I will go  
And have the grace of thy ten thousand gifts.

There! I have tasted of ten thousand toils  
As truly — never waived a single one,

Nor let these runnings drop from out my eyes!  
Nor ever thought it would have come to this —

That I from out my eyes do drop tears! Well!  
At present, as it seems, one bows to fate.

So be it! Old man, thou seest my exile —

Seest, too, me — my children's murderer!

These give thou to the tomb, and deck the dead,  
Doing them honor with thy tears — since me

Law does not sanction! Propping on her  
breast,

And giving them into their mother's arms,

— Reconstitute the sad community

Which I, unhappy, brought to nothingness —

Not by my will! And, when earth hides the  
dead,

Live in this city! — sad, but, all the same,

Force thy soul to bear woe along with me!

O children, who begat and gave you birth —

Your father — has destroyed you! naught you  
gain

By those fair deeds of mine I laid you up,

As by main-force I labored glory out

To give you, — that fine gift of fatherhood!

And thee, too, O my poor one, I destroyed.

Not rendering like for like, as when thou  
kept'st

My marriage-bed inviolate, — those long

Household-seclusions draining to the dregs

Inside my house! O me, my wife, my boys —

And — O myself, how, miserably moved.

Am I disyoked now from both boys and wife!

Oh, bitter those delights of kisses now —

And bitter these my weapons' fellowship!

For I am doubtful whether shall I keep

Or cast away these arrows which will clang

Ever such words out, as they knock my side —

"Us — thou didst murder wife and children

with!

Us — child-destroyers — still thou keepest

thine!"

Ha, shall I bear them in my arms, then? What

Say for excuse? Yet, naked of my darts

Wherewith I did my bravest, Hellas through,

Throwing myself beneath foot to my foes,

Shall I die basely? No! relinquishment

Of these must never be, — companions once,

We sorrowfully must observe the pact!

In just one thing, co-operate with me

Thy sad friend, Theseus! Go along with him

To Argos, and in concert get arranged

The price my due for bringing there the Hound!

O land of Kadmos, Theban people all,

Shear off your locks, lament one wide lament,

Go to my children's grave and, in one strain,

Lament the whole of us — my dead and me —

Since all together are foredone and lost,

Smitten by Her's single stroke of fate!

*Thes.* Rise up now from thy dead ones!

Tears enough,

Poor friend!

*Her.*

I cannot: for my limbs are fixed.

*Thes.* Ay: even these strong men fate over-

throws!

*Her.* Woe!

Here might I grow a stone, nor mind woes  
more!

*Thes.* Cease! Give thy hand to friendly  
helpmate now!

*Her.* Nay, but I wipe off blood upon thy

robes!

*Thes.* Squeeze out and spare no drop! I take  
it all!

*Her.* Of sons bereaved, I have thee like my  
son!

*Thes.* Give to my neck thy hand! 't is I will  
lead.

*Her.* Yoke-fellows friendly — one heart-broken, though!

O father! such a man we need for friend!

*Amph.* Certes, the land that bred him boasts good sons!

*Her.* Turn me round, Theseus — to behold my boys!

*Thes.* What? will the having such a love-charm soothe?

*Her.* I want it; and to press my father's breast.

*Amph.* See here, O son! for, what I love thou seek'st!

*Thes.* Strange! Of thy labors no more memory?

*Her.* All those were less than these, those ills I bore!

*Thes.* Who sees thee grow a woman, — will not praise!

*Her.* I live low to thee? Not so once, I think!

*Thes.* Too low by far! "Famed Herakles" — where's he?

*Her.* Down amid evils, of what kind wast thou?

*Thes.* As far as courage — least of all man-kind!

*Her.* How say'st, then, I in evils shrink to naught?

*Thes.* Forward!

*Her.* Farewell, old father!

*Amph.* Thou too, son!

*Her.* Bury the boys as I enjoined!

*Amph.* And me —

Who will be found to bury now, my child?

*Her.* Myself!

*Amph.* When, coming?

*Her.* When thy task is done.

*Amph.* How?

*Her.* I will have thee carried forth from Thebes

To Athens. But bear in the children, earth Is burdened by! Myself, — who with these shames

Have cast away my house, — a ruined hulk, I follow — trailed by Theseus — on my way; And whoso rather would have wealth and strength

Than good friends, reasons foolishly therein!

*Cho.* And we depart, with sorrow at heart,

Sobs that increase with tears that start;

The greatest of all our friends of yore

We have lost forevermore!

When the long silence ended, — "Our best friend —

Lost, our best friend!" he muttered musingly.

Then, "Lachares the sculptor" (half aloud)

"Sinned he or sinned he not? 'Outrageous sin!'

Shuddered our elders, 'Pallas should be clothed:

He carved her naked.' 'But more beautiful!'

Answers this generation: 'Wisdom formed

For love not fear!' And there the statue stands,

Entraps the eye severer art repels.

Moreover, Pallas wields the thunderbolt, Yet has not struck the artist all this while.

Pheidias and Aischulos? Euripides

And Lachares? But youth will have its way!

The ripe man ought to be as old as young —

As young as old. I too have youth at need.

Much may be said for stripping wisdom bare!

"And who's 'our best friend'? You play kottabos;

Here's the last mode of playing. Take a sphere

With orifices at due interval,

Through topmost one of which, a throw adroit

Sends wine from cup, clean passage, from outside

To where, in hollow midst, a manikin

Suspended ever bobs with head erect

Right underneath whatever hole's a-top

When you set orb a-rolling: plumb, he gets

Ever this benediction of the splash.

An other-fashioned orb presents him fixed:

Of all the outlets, he fronts only one,

And only when that one — and rare the chance —

Comes uppermost, does he turn upward too:

He can't turn all sides with the turning orb.

Inside this sphere of life — all objects, sense

And soul perceive — Euripides hangs fixed,

Gets knowledge through the single aperture

Of High and Right: with visage fronting these

He waits the wine thence ere he operate,

Work in the world and write a tragedy.

When that hole happens to revolve to point,

In drops the knowledge, waiting meets reward.

But, duly in rotation, Low and Wrong —

When these enjoy the moment's altitude,

His heels are found just where his head should be!

No knowledge that way! I am movable, —

To slightest shift of orb make prompt response,

Face Low and Wrong and Weak and all the rest,

And still drink knowledge, wine-drenched every turn, —

Equally favored by their opposites.

Little and Bad exist, are natural:

Then let me know them, and be twice as great

As he who only knows one phase of life!

So doubly shall I prove 'best friend of man,'

If I report the whole truth — Vice, perceived

While he shut eyes to all but Virtue there.

Man's made of both: and both must be of use

To somebody: if not to him, to me.

While, as to your imaginary Third,

Who, — stationed (by mechanics past my guess)

So as to take in every side at once,

And not successively, — may reconcile

The High and Low in tragicomic verse, —

He shall be hailed superior to us both

When born — in the Tin-islands! Meantime, here

In bright Athenai, I contest the claim,

Call myself Iostephanos? 'best friend,'

Who took my own course, worked as I descried

Ordainment, stuck to my first faculty!

"For, listen! There's no failure breaks the heart,

Whate'er be man's endeavor in this world,  
 Like the rash poet's when he — nowise fails  
 By poetizing badly, — Zeus or makes  
 Or mars a man, so — at it, merrily!  
 But when, — made man, — much like myself,  
 — equipt  
 For such and such achievement, — rash he turns  
 Out of the straight path, bent on snatch of  
 feat  
 From — who's the appointed fellow born  
 thereto, —  
 Crows take him! — in your Kassiterides?  
 Half-doing his work, leaving mine untouched,  
 That were the failure! Here I stand, heart-  
 whole,  
 No Thamuris!

“ Well thought of, Thamuris!  
 Has zeal, pray, for 'best friend' Euripides  
 Allowed you to observe the honor done  
 His elder rival, in our Poikilé?  
 You don't know? Once and only once, trod  
 stage,  
 Sang and touched lyre in person, in his youth,  
 Our Sophokles, — youth, beauty, dedicate  
 To Thamuris who named the tragedy.  
 The voice of him was weak; face, limbs and  
 lyre,  
 These were worth saving: Thamuris stands  
 yet  
 Perfect as painting helps in such a case.  
 At least you know the story, for 'best friend'  
 Enriched his 'Rhesos' from the Blind Bard's  
 store;  
 So haste and see the work, and lay to heart  
 What it was struck me when I eyed the piece!  
 Here stands a poet punished for rash strife  
 With Powers above his power, who see with  
 sight  
 Beyond his vision, sing accordingly  
 A song, which he must needs dare emulate!  
 Poet, remain the man nor ape the Muse!

“ But — lend me the psalterion! Nay, for  
 once —  
 Once let my hand fall where the other's lay!  
 I see it, just as I were Sophokles,  
 That sunrise and combustion of the east!”

And then he sang — are these unlike the words?

Thamuris marching, — lyre and song of  
 Thrace —  
 (Perpend the first, the worst of woes that were,  
 Allotted lyre and song, ye poet-race!)

Thamuris from Oichalia, feasted there  
 By kindly Eurutos of late, now bound  
 For Dorian at the uprise broad and bare

Of Mount Pangaios (ore with earth enwound  
 Glittered beneath his footstep) — marching gay  
 And glad, Thessalia through, came, robed and  
 crowned,

From triumph on to triumph, 'mid a ray  
 Of early morn, — came, saw and knew the spot  
 Assigned him for his worst of woes, that day.

Balura — happier while its name was not —  
 Met him, but nowise menaced; slipt aside,  
 Obsequious river, to pursue its lot

Of solacing the valley — say, some wide  
 Thick busy human cluster, house and home,  
 Embanked for peace, or thrift that thanks the  
 tide.

Thamuris, marching, laughed “ Each flake of  
 foam”  
 (As sparkingly the ripple raced him by)  
 “ Mocks slower clouds adrift in the blue  
 dome!”

For Autumn was the season: red the sky  
 Held morn's conclusive signet of the sun  
 To break the mists up, bid them blaze and die.

Morn had the mastery as, one by one,  
 All poms produced themselves along the tract  
 From earth's far ending to near heaven begun.

Was there a ravaged tree? it laughed compact  
 With gold, a leaf-ball crisp, high-brandished  
 now,  
 Tempting to onset frost which late attacked.

Was there a wizened shrub, a starveling bough,  
 A fleecy thistle filched from by the wind,  
 A weed, Pan's trampling hoof would disallow?

Each, with a glory and a rapture twined  
 About it, joined the rush of air and light  
 And force: the world was of one joyous mind.

Say not the birds flew! they forebore their  
 right —  
 Swam, revelling onward in the roll of things.  
 Say not the beasts' mirth bounded! that was  
 flight —

How could the creatures leap, no lift of wings?  
 Such earth's community of purpose, such  
 The ease of earth's fulfilled imaginings, —

So did the near and far appear to touch  
 I' the moment's transport, — that an inter-  
 change  
 Of function, far with near, seemed scarce too  
 much;

And had the rooted plant aspired to range  
 With the snake's license, while the insect  
 yearned  
 To glow fixed as the flower it were not  
 strange —

No more than if the fluttery tree-top turned  
 To actual music, sang itself aloft;  
 Or if the wind, impassioned chantress, earned

The right to soar embodied in some soft  
 Fine form all fit for cloud-companionship,  
 And, blissful, once touch beauty chased so oft.

Thamuris, marching, let no fancy slip  
 Born of the fiery transport; lyre and song



Were his, to smite with hand and launch from lip —

Peerless recorded, since the list grew long  
Of poets (saith Homeros) free to stand  
Pedestalled 'mid the Muses' temple-throng,

A statued service, laurelled, lyre in hand,  
(Ay, for we see them) — Thamuris of Thrace  
Predominating foremost of the band.

Therefore the morn-ray that enriched his face,  
If it gave lambent chill, took flame again  
From flush of pride; he saw, he knew the place.

What wain arrived with all the rhythms from plain,  
Hill, dale, and that rough wildwood interspersed?  
Compounding these to one consummate strain,

It reached him, music; but his own outburst  
Of victory concluded the account,  
And that grew song which was mere music erst.

"Be my Parnassos, thou Pangaian mount!  
And turn thee, river, nameless hitherto!  
Famed shalt thou vie with famed Pieria's fount!

Here I await the end of this ado:  
Which wins — Earth's poet or the Heavenly Muse." . . .

But song broke up in laughter. "Tell the rest,  
Who may! I have not spurned the common life,

Nor vaunted mine a lyre to match the Muse  
Who sings for gods, not men! Accordingly,  
I shall not decorate her vestibule —  
Mute marble, blind the eyes and quenched the brain,  
Loose in the hand a bright, a broken lyre!  
— Not Thamuris but Aristophanes!

"There! I have sung content back to myself,  
And started subject for a play beside.  
My next performance shall content you both.  
Did 'Prelude-Battle' maul 'best friend' too much?

Then 'Main-Fight' be my next song, fairness' self!

Its subject — Contest for the Tragic Crown.  
Ay, you shall hear none else but Aischulos  
Lay down the law of Tragedy, and prove  
'Best friend' a stray-away, — no praise denied  
His manifold deservings, never fear —  
Nor word more of the old fun! Death defends!

Sound admonition has its due effect.  
Oh, you have uttered weighty words, believe!  
Such as shall bear abundant fruit, next year,  
In judgment, regular, legitimate.  
Let Bacchos' self preside in person! Ay —  
For there's a buzz about those 'Bacchanals'  
Rumor attributes to your great and dead

For final effort: just the prodigy  
Great dead men leave, to lay survivors low!  
— Until we make acquaintance with our fate  
And find, fate's worst done, we, the same, survive

Perchance to honor more the patron-god,  
Fittler inaugurate a festal year.  
Now that the cloud has broken, sky laughs blue,

Earth blossoms youthfully! Athenai breathes!  
After a twenty-six years' wintry blank  
Struck from her life, — war-madness, one long swoon,

She wakes up: Arginousai bids good cheer!  
We have disposed of Kallikratidas;  
Once more will Sparté sue for terms, — who knows?

Cede Dekeleia, as the rumor runs:  
Terms which Athenai, of right mind again,  
Accepts — she can no other! Peace declared,  
Have my long labors borne their fruit or no?  
Grinned coarse buffoonery so oft in vain?  
Enough — it simply saved you. Vain ones, praise

Theoria's beauty and Opora's breadth!  
Nor, when Peace realizes promised bliss,  
Forget the Bald Bard, Envy! but go burst  
*As the cup goes round, and the cates abound,*  
*Collops of hare, with roast spinks rare!*  
Confess my pipings, dancings, posings served  
A purpose: guttlings, guzzlings, had their use!  
Say whether light Muse, Rosy-finger-tips,  
Or, 'best friend's' Heavy-hand, Melpomené,  
Touched lyre to purpose, played Amphion's part,

And built Athenai to the skies once more!  
Farewell, brave couple! Next year, welcome me!"

No doubt, in what he said that night, sincere!  
One story he referred to, false or fact,  
Was not without adaptability.  
They do say — Laïs the Corinthian once  
Chancing to see Euripides (who paced  
Composing in a garden, tablet-book  
In left hand, with appended stulos prompt) —  
"Answer me," she began, "O Poet, — this!  
What didst intend by writing in thy play,  
*Go hang, thou filthy doer?*" Struck on heap,  
Euripides, at the audacious speech —  
"Well now," quoth he, "thyself art just the one

I should imagine fit for deeds of filth!"  
She laughingly retorted his own line  
"What's filth, — unless who does it, thinks it so?"

So might he doubtless think. "Farewell," said we.

And he was gone, lost in the morning-gray,  
Rose-streaked and gold to eastward. Did we dream?

Could the poor twelve-hours hold this argument

We render durable from fugitive,  
As duly at each sunset's droop of sail,

Delay of oar, submission to sea-might,  
I still remember, you as duly dint  
Remembrance, with the punctual rapid style,  
Into — what calm cold page!

Thus soul escapes  
From eloquence made captive: thus mere  
words

— Ah, would the lifeless body stay! But no:  
Change upon change till, — who may recognize  
What did soul service, in the dusty heap?  
What energy of Aristophanes  
Inflames the wreck Balaustion saves to show?  
Ashes be evidence how fire — with smoke —  
All night went lamping on! But morn must  
rise.

The poet — I shall say — burned up and, blank,  
Smouldered this ash, now white and cold  
enough.

Nay, Euthukles! for best, though mine it be,  
Comes yet! Write on, write ever, wrong no  
word!

Add, first, — he gone, if jollity went too,  
Some of the graver mood, which mixed and  
marred,

Departed likewise. Sight of narrow scope  
Has this meek consolation: neither ill  
We dread, nor joys we dare anticipate,  
Perform to promise. Each soul sows a seed —  
Euripides and Aristophanes;  
Seed bears crop, scarce within our little lives;  
But germinates — perhaps enough to judge —  
Next year?

Whereas, next year brought harvest-time!  
For, next year came, and went not, but is now,  
Still now, while you and I are bound for Rhodes  
That's all but reached! — and harvest has it  
brought,

Dire as the homicidal dragon-crop!  
Sophokles had dismissal ere it dawned,  
Happy as ever; though men mournfully  
Plausible, — when only soul could triumph now,  
And Iophon produced his father's play, —  
Crowned the consummate song where Oidipous  
Dared the descent 'mid earthquake-thundering,  
And hardly Theseus' hands availed to guard  
Eyes from the horror, as their grove disgorged  
Its dread ones, while each daughter sank to  
ground.

Then Aristophanes, on heel of that,  
Triumphant also, followed with his "Frogs:"  
Produced at next Lenaia, — three months  
since, —

The promised Main-Fight, loyal, license-free!  
As if the poet, primed with Thasian juice,  
(Himself swore — wine that conquers every kind  
For long abiding in the head) could fix  
Thenceforward any object in its truth,  
Through eyeballs bathed by mere Castalian dew,  
Nor miss the borrowed medium, — vinous drop  
That colors all to the right crimson pitch  
When mirth grows mockery, censure takes the  
tinge  
Of malice!

All was Aristophanes:

There blazed the glory, there shot black the  
shame!

Ay, Bacchos did stand forth, the Tragic God  
In person! and when duly dragged through  
mire, —

Having lied, filched, played fool, proved coward,  
flung

The boys their dose of fit indecency,  
And finally got trounced to heart's content,  
At his own feast, in his own theatre  
(— Oh, never fear! 'T was consecrated sport,  
Exact tradition, warranted no whit  
Offensive to instructed taste, — indeed,  
Essential to Athenai's liberty,  
Could the poor stranger understand!) why,  
then —

He was pronounced the rarely-qualified  
To rate the work, adjust the claims to worth,  
Of Aischulos (of whom, in other mood,  
This same appreciative poet pleased  
To say, "He's all one stiff and gluey piece  
Of back of swine's-neck!") — and of Chatter-  
box

Who, "twisting words like wool," usurped his  
seat

In Plouton's realm: "the arch-rogue, liar,  
scamp

That lives by snatching-up of altar-orts,"  
— Who failed to recognize Euripides?

Then came a contest for supremacy —  
Crammed full of genius, wit and fun and freak.  
No spice of undue spite to spoil the dish  
Of all sorts, — for the Mystics matched the Frogs  
In poetry, no Siren sang so sweet! —  
Till, pressed into the service (how dispense  
With Phaps-Elaphion and free foot-display?)  
The Muse of dead Euripides danced frank,  
Rattled her bits of tile, made all too plain  
How baby-work like "Herakles" had birth!  
Last, Bacchos — candidly disclaiming brains  
Able to follow finer argument —  
Confessed himself much moved by three main  
facts:

First, — if you stick a "Lost his flask of oil"  
At pause of period, you perplex the sense, —  
Were it the Elegy for Marathon!  
Next, if you weigh two verses, "car" — the  
word,

Will outweigh "club" — the word, in each  
packed line!

And — last, worst fact of all! in rivalry  
The younger poet dared to improvise  
Laudation less distinct of — Triphales?  
(Nay, that served when ourself abused the  
youth!)

Pheidippides — (nor that's appropriate now!)  
Then, — Alkibiades, our city's hope,  
Since times change and we Comics should change  
too!

These three main facts, well weighed, drew  
judgment down,

Conclusively assigned the wretch his fate —  
"Fate due," admonished the sage Mystic choir,  
"To sitting, prate-apace, with Sokrates,  
Neglecting music and each tragic aid!"  
— All wound-up by a wish "We soon may cease

From certain griefs, and warfare, worst of them!"  
 — Since, deaf to Comedy's persistent voice,  
 War still raged, still was like to rage. In vain  
 Had Sparté cried once more, "But grant us  
 Peace,  
 We give you Dekeleia back!" Too shrewd  
 Was Kleophon to let escape, forsooth,  
 The enemy — at final gasp, besides!

So, Aristophanes obtained the prize,  
 And so Athenai felt she had a friend  
 Far better than her "best friend," lost last  
 year;  
 And so, such fame had "Frogs" that, when  
 came round  
 This present year, those Frogs croaked gay again  
 At the great Feast, Elaphebolion-month.  
 Only — there happened Aigispotamoi!

And, in the midst of the frog-merriment,  
 Plump o' the sudden, pounces stern King Stork  
 On the light-hearted people of the marsh!  
 Spartan Lusandros swooped precipitate,  
 Ended Athenai, rowed her sacred bay  
 With oars which brought a hundred triremes  
 back  
 Captive!

And first word of the conqueror  
 Was "Down with those Long Walls, Peiraios'  
 pride!  
 Destroy, yourselves, your bulwarks! Peace  
 needs none!"  
 And "We obey" they shuddered in their dream.

But, at next quick imposure of decree —  
 "No longer democratic government!  
 Henceforth such oligarchy as ourselves  
 Please to appoint you!" — then the horror-  
 stung  
 Dreamers awake; they started up a-stare  
 At the half-helot captain and his crew  
 — Spartans, "men used to let their hair grow  
 long,  
 To fast, be dirty, and just — Sokratize" —  
 Whose word was "Trample on Themistokles!"

So, as the way is with much misery,  
 The heads swam, hands refused their office,  
 hearts  
 Sunk as they stood in stupor. "Wreck the  
 Walls?  
 Ruin Peiraios? — with our Pallas armed  
 For interference? — Herakles apprised,  
 And Theseus hasting? Lay the Long Walls  
 low?"

Three days they stood, stared, — stonier than  
 their walls.

Whereupon, sleep who might, Lusandros woke:  
 Saw the prostration of his enemy,  
 Utter and absolute beyond belief,  
 Past hope of hatred even. I surmise  
 He also probably saw fade in fume  
 Certain fears, bred of Bakis-prophecy,  
 Nor apprehended any more that gods

And heroes, — fire, must glow forth, guard the  
 ground  
 Where prone, by sober day-dawn, corpse-like lay  
 Powerless Athenai, late predominant  
 Lady of Hellas, — Sparté's slave-prize now!  
 Where should a menace lurk in those slack  
 limbs?  
 What was to move his circumspection? Why  
 Demolish just Peiraios?

"Stay!" bade he:  
 "Already promise-breakers? True to type,  
 Athenians! past, and present, and to come, —  
 The fickle and the false! No stone dislodged,  
 No implement applied, yet three days' grace  
 Expire! Forbearance is no longer-lived.  
 By breaking promise, terms of peace you  
 break —  
 Too gently framed for falsehood, fickleness!  
 All must be reconsidered — yours the fault!"

Wherewith, he called a council of allies.  
 Pent-up resentment used its privilege, —  
 Outburst at ending: this the summed result.

"Because we would avenge no transient wrong  
 But an eternity of insolence,  
 Aggression, — folly, no disasters mend,  
 Pride, no reverses teach humility, —  
 Because too plainly were all punishment,  
 Such as comports with less obdurate crime,  
 Evadable by falsehood, fickleness —  
 Experience proves the true Athenian type, —  
 Therefore, 't is need we dig deep down into  
 The root of evil; lop nor bole nor branch.  
 Look up, look round and see, on every side,  
 What nurtured the rank tree to noisome fruit!  
 We who live hutted (so they laugh) not housed,  
 Build barns for temples, prize mud-monuments,  
 Nor show the sneering stranger aught but —  
 men, —

Spartans take insult of Athenians just  
 Because they boast Akropolis to mount,  
 And Propulaia to make entry by,  
 Through a mad maze of marble arrogance  
 Such as you see — such as let none see more!  
 Abolish the detested luxury!  
 Leave not one stone upon another, raze  
 Athenai to the rock! Let hill and plain  
 Become a waste, a grassy pasture-ground  
 Where sheep may wander, grazing goats depend  
 From shapeless crags once columns! so at last  
 Shall peace inhabit there, and peace enough."

Whereon, a shout approved "Such peace be-  
 stow!"

Then did a Man of Phokis rise — O heart!  
 Rise — when no bolt of Zeus disparted sky,  
 No omen-bird from Pallas scared the crew,  
 Rise — when mere human argument could  
 stem  
 No foam-fringe of the passion surging fierce,  
 Baffle no wrath-wave that o'er barrier broke —  
 Who was the Man of Phokis rose and flung  
 A flower i' the way of that fierce foot's advance,  
 Which — stop for? — nay, had stamped down  
 sword's assault!



Could it be *He* stayed Sparté with the snatch —  
 "Daughter of Agamemnon, late my liege,  
 Elektra, palaced, once a visitant  
 To thy poor rustic dwelling, now I come?"

Ay, facing fury of revenge, and lust  
 Of hate, and malice moaning to appease  
 Hunger on prey presumptuous, prostrate now —  
 Full in the hideous faces — last resource,  
 You flung that choric flower, my Euthukles!

And see, as through some pinhole, should the  
 wind

Wedgingly pierce but once, in with a rush  
 Hurries the whole wild weather, rends to rags  
 The weak sail stretched against the outside  
 storm —

So did the power of that triumphant play  
 Pour in, and oversweep the assembled foe!  
 Triumphant play, wherein our poet first  
 Dared bring the grandeur of the Tragic Two  
 Down to the level of our common life,  
 Close to the beating of our common heart.  
 Elektra? 'T was Athenai, Sparté's ice  
 Thawed to, while that sad portraiture ap-  
 pealed —

Agamemnonian lady, lost by fault  
 Of her own kindred, cast from house and home,  
 Deprived of all the brave inheritance,  
 Dowered humbly as befits a herdsman's mate,  
 Partaker of his cottage, clothed in rags,  
 Patient performer of the poorest chares,  
 Yet mindful, all the while, of glory past  
 When she walked darling of Mekenai, dear  
 Beyond Orestes to the King of Men!

So, because Greeks are Greeks, though Sparté's  
 brood,

And hearts are hearts, though in Lusandros'  
 breast,

And poetry is power, and Euthukles  
 Had faith therein to, full-face, fling the same —  
 Sudden, the ice-thaw! The assembled foe,  
 Heaving and swaying with strange friendliness,  
 Cried, "Reverence Elektra!" — cried, "Ab-  
 stain

Like that chaste Herdsman, nor dare violate  
 The sanctity of such reverse! Let stand  
 Athenai!"

Mindful of that story's close,  
 Perchance, and how, — when he, the Herds-  
 man chaste,

Needs apprehend no break of tranquil sleep, —  
 All in due time, a stranger, dark, disguised,  
 Knocks at the door: with searching glance,  
 notes keen,

Knows quick, through mean attire and disre-  
 spect,

The ravaged princess! Ay, right on, the clutch  
 Of guiding retribution has in charge

The author of the outrage! While one hand,  
 Elektra's, pulls the door behind, made fast  
 On fate, — the other strains, prepared to push  
 The victim-queen, should she make frightened  
 pause

Before that serpentine blood which steals  
 Out of the darkness where, a pace beyond,

Above the slain Aigisthos, hides his blow  
 Dreadful Orestes!

Klutaimnestra, wise  
 This time, forebore; Elektra held her own;  
 Saved was Athenai through Euripides,  
 Through Euthukles, through — more than ever  
 — me,

Balaustion, me, who, Wild-pomegranate-flower,  
 Felt my fruit triumph, and fade proudly so!

But next day, as ungracious minds are wont,  
 The Spartan, late surprised into a grace,  
 Grew sudden sober at the enormity,  
 And grudging, by daybreak, midnight's easy  
 gift;

Splenetically must repay its cost  
 By due increase of rigor, doglike snatch  
 At aught still left dog to concede like man.  
 Rough sea, at flow of tide, may lip, perchance,  
 Smoothly the land-line reached as for repose —  
 Lie indolent in all unquestioned sway;  
 But ebbing, when needs must, all thwart and  
 loth,

Sea claws at sand relinquished strugglingly.  
 So, harsh Lusandros — pinioned to inflict  
 The lesser penalty alone — spoke harsh,  
 As minded to embitter seathie by scorn.

"Athenai's self be saved then, thank the Lyre!  
 If Tragedy withdraws her presence — quick,  
 If Comedy replace her, — what more just?  
 Let Comedy do service, frisk away,  
 Dance off stage these indomitable stones,  
 Long Walls, Peiraian bulwarks! Hew and  
 heave,

Pick at, pound into dust each dear defence!  
 Not to the Kommos — *eleleleleu*  
 With breast bethumped, as Tragic lyre prefers,  
 But Comedy shall sound the flute, and crow  
 At kordax-end — the hearty slapping-dance!  
 Collect those flute-girls — trash who flattered  
 ear

With whistlings, and fed eye with caper-cuts,  
 While we Lakonians supped black broth or  
 crunched

Sea-urchin, conchs and all, unpricked — coarse  
 brutes!

Command they lead off step, time steady  
 stroke

To spade and pickaxe, till demolished lie  
 Athenai's pride in powder!"

Done that day —  
 That sixteenth famed day of Munuchion-month!  
 The day when Hellas fought at Salamis,  
 The very day Euripides was born,  
 Those flute-girls — Phaps-Elaphion at their  
 head —

Did blow their best, did dance their worst, the  
 while

Sparté pulled down the walls, wrecked wide  
 the works,

Laid low each merest molehill of defence,  
 And so the Power, Athenai, passed away!

We would not see its passing! Ere I knew  
 The issue of their counsels, — crouching low

And shrouded by my peplos, — I conceived,  
Despite the shut eyes, the stopped ears, — by  
count

Only of heart-beats, telling the slow time, —  
Athenai's doom was signed and signified  
In that assembly, — ay, but knew there  
watched

One who would dare and do, nor bate at all  
The stranger's licensed duty, — speak the  
word

Allowed the Man from Phokis! Naught re-  
mained

But urge departure, flee the sights and sounds,  
Hideous exultings, wailings worth contempt,  
And pressed to other earth, new heaven, by sea  
That somehow ever prompts to 'scape despair.

Help rose to heart's wish; at the harbor-side,  
The old gray mariner did reverence  
To who had saved his ship, still weather-tight  
As when with prow gay-garlanded she praised  
The hospitable port and pushed to sea.  
"Convoy Balaustion back to Rhodes, for sake  
Of her and her Euripides!" laughed he.

Rhodes, — shall it not be there, my Euthukles,  
Till this brief trouble of a lifetime end,  
That solitude — two make so populous! —  
For food finds memories of the past suffice,  
Maybe, anticipations, — hope so swells, —  
Of some great future we, familiar once  
With who so taught, should hail and entertain?  
He lies now in the little valley, laughed  
And moaned about by those mysterious  
streams,

Boiling and freezing, like the love and hate  
Which helped or harmed him through his  
earthly course.

They mix in Arethousa by his grave.  
The warm spring, traveller, dip thine arms  
into,  
Brighten thy brow with! Life detests black  
cold!

I sent the tablets, the psalterion, so  
Rewarded Sicily; the tyrant there  
Bestowed them worthily in Phoibos' shrine.  
A gold-graved writing tells — "I also loved  
The poet, Free Athenai cheaply prized —  
King Dionusios, — Archelaos-like!"

And see if young Philemon, — sure one day  
To do good service and be loved himself, —  
If he too have not made a votive verse!  
"Grant, in good sooth, our great dead, all the  
same,

Retain their sense, as certain wise men say,  
I'd hang myself — to see Euripides!"  
Hands off, Philemon! nowise hang thyself,  
But pen the prime plays, labor the right life,  
And die at good old age as grand men use, —  
Keeping thee, with that great thought, warm  
the while, —

That he does live, Philemon! Ay, most sure!  
"He lives!" hark, — waves say, winds sing  
out the same,

And yonder dares the citted ridge of Rhodes  
Its headlong plunge from sky to sea, disparts  
North bay from south, — each guarded calm,  
that guest

May enter gladly, blow what wind there will, —  
Boiled round with breakers, to no other cry!  
All in one chorus, — what the master-word  
They take up? — hark! "There are no gods,  
no gods!"

Glory to God — who saves Euripides!"

## PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWANGAU

### SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY

Ἦδραν φονεύσας, μυρίων τ' ἄλλων πόνων  
διήλθον ἀγέλας . . .  
τὸ λούσθιον δὲ τὸνδ' ἔτλην τάλας πόρον,  
. . . δῶμα θριγκῶσαι κακοῖς.

I slew the Hydra, and from labor pass'd  
To labor — tribes of labors! Till, at last,  
Attempting one more labor, in a trice,  
Alack, with ills I crowned the edifice.

THIS poem, written in Scotland in 1871,  
shortly after the downfall of Napoleon III.,  
was published in December of the same year.  
The suggestion of the emperor is transparent,  
and Browning writing in January, 1872, to Miss  
Isa Blagden, says of it: "I am glad you have

got my little book, and seen for yourself  
whether I make the best or the worst of the  
case. I think, in the main, he meant to do  
what I say, and, but for weakness — grown  
more apparent in his last years than formerly  
— would have done what I say he did not. I

thought badly of him at the beginning of his career, *et pour cause*: better afterward, on the strength of the promises he made, and gave indications of intending to redeem. I think him very weak in the last miserable year. At his worst I prefer him to Thiers's best. I am told my little thing is succeeding — sold 1400 in the first five days, and before any notice appeared." And again, to the same correspondent: "I am glad you like what the editor of the *Edinburgh* calls my eulogium on the second empire — which it is not, any more than

what another wiseacre affirms it to be, 'a scandalous attack on the old constant friend of England' — it is just what I imagine the man might, if he pleased, say for himself." Mrs. Browning's well-known enthusiasm for Napoleon III. as instanced in her poems unquestionably gave distinctness to Browning's own reflections. The motto is from the *Hercules Furens* of Euripides, vv. 1276-1280, and the translation is presumably by Browning. There is a palace Hohen-Schwangau, built by the Bavarian mad king Ludwig.

You have seen better days, dear? So have I —

And worse too, for they brought no such bud-mouth

As yours to lip "You wish you knew me!" Well,

Wise men, 't is said, have sometimes wished the same,

And wished and had their trouble for their pains.

Suppose my *Œdipus* should lurk at last  
Under a pork-pie hat and crinoline,  
And, latish, pounce on Sphinx in Leicester Square?

Or likelier, what if Sphinx in wise old age,  
Grown sick of snapping foolish people's heads,  
And jealous for her riddle's proper rede, —  
Jealous that the good trick which served the turn

Have justice rendered it, nor class one day  
With friend Home's stilts and tongs and medium-ware, —

What if the once redoubted Sphinx, I say,  
(Because night draws on, and the sands increase,

And desert-whispers grow a prophecy,)   
Tell all to Corinth of her own accord,  
Bright Corinth, not dull Thebes, for Lais' sake,

Who finds me hardly gray, and likes my nose,  
And thinks a man of sixty at the prime?  
Good! It shall be! Revealment of myself!  
But listen, for we must co-operate;  
I don't drink tea: permit me the cigar!

First, how to make the matter plain, of course —

What was the law by which I lived. Let's see:

Ay, we must take one instant of my life  
Spent sitting by your side in this neat room:  
Watch well the way I use it, and don't laugh!  
Here's paper on the table, pen and ink:  
Give me the soiled bit — not the pretty rose!  
See! having sat an hour, I'm rested now,  
Therefore want work: and spy no better work  
For eye and hand and mind that guides them both,

During this instant, than to draw my pen  
From blot One — thus — up, up to blot Two —  
thus —

Which I at last reach, thus, and here's my line

Five inches long and tolerably straight:

Better to draw than leave undrawn, I think,

Fitter to do than let alone, I hold,

Though better, fitter, by but one degree.

Therefore it was that, rather than sit still

Simply, my right-hand drew it while my left

Pulled smooth and pinched the moustache to a point.

Now I permit your plump lips to unpurse:

"So far, one possibly may understand

Without recourse to witchcraft!" True, my dear.

Thus folks begin with Euclid, — finish, how?

Trying to square the circle! — at any rate,

Solving abstruser problems than this first,

"How find the nearest way 'twixt point and point."

Deal but with moral mathematics so —

Master one merest moment's work of mine,

Even this practising with pen and ink, —

Demonstrate why I rather plied the quill

Than left the space a blank, — you gain a fact,

And God knows what a fact's worth! So proceed

By inference from just this moral fact

— I don't say, to that plaguy quadrature,

"What the whole man meant, whom you wish you knew,"

But, what meant certain things he did of old,  
Which puzzled Europe, — why, you'll find them plain,

This way, not otherwise: I guarantee,

Understand one, you comprehend the rest.

Rays from all round converge to any point:

Study the point then ere you track the rays!

The size of the circle's nothing; subdivide

Earth, and earth's smallest grain of mustard-seed,

You count as many parts, small matching large,

If you can use the mind's eye: otherwise,

Material optics, being gross at best,

Prefer the large and leave our mind the small —

And pray how many folk have minds can see?

Certainly you — and somebody in Thrace

Whose name escapes me at the moment. You —

Lend me your mind then! Analyze with me

This instance of the line 'twixt blot and blot

I rather chose to draw than leave a blank,

Things else being equal. You are taught thereby

That 't is my nature, when I am at ease,



Rather than idle out my life too long,  
To want to do a thing — to put a thought,  
Whether a great thought or a little one,  
Into an act, as nearly as may be.  
Make what is absolutely new — I can't,  
Mar what is made already well enough —  
I won't : but turn to best account the thing  
That's half-made — that I can. Two blots, you  
saw

I knew how to extend into a line  
Symmetric on the sheet they blurred before —  
Such little act sufficed, this time, such thought.

Now, we'll extend rays, widen out the verge,  
Describe a larger circle ; leave this first  
Clod of an instance we began with, rise  
To the complete world many clods effect.  
Only continue patient while I throw,  
Delver-like, spadeful after spadeful up,  
Just as truths come, the subsoil of me, mould  
Whence spring my moods : your object, — just  
to find,

Alike from handlift and from barrow-load,  
What salts and silts may constitute the earth —  
If it be proper stuff to blow man glass,  
Or bake him pottery, bear him oaks or wheat —  
What's born of me, in brief ; which found,  
all's known.

If it were genius did the digging-job,  
Logic would speedily sift its product smooth  
And leave the crude truths bare for poetry ;  
But I'm no poet, and am stiff i' the back.  
What one spread fails to bring, another may.  
In goes the shovel and out comes scoop — as  
here !

I live to please myself. I recognize  
Power passing mine, immeasurable, God —  
Above me, whom he made, as heaven beyond  
Earth — to use figures which assist our sense.  
I know that he is there as I am here,  
By the same proof, which seems no proof at all,  
It so exceeds familiar forms of proof.  
Why "there," not "here" ? Because, when  
I say "there"

I treat the feeling with distincter shape  
That space exists between us : I, — not he, —  
Live, think, do human work here — no machine,  
His will moves, but a being by myself,  
His, and not he who made me for a work,  
Watches my working, judges its effect,  
But does not interpose. He did so once,  
And probably will again some time — not now,  
Life being the minute of mankind, not God's,  
In a certain sense, like time before and time  
After man's earthly life, so far as man  
Needs apprehend the matter. Am I clear ?  
Suppose I bid a courier take to-night —  
( . . . Once for all, let me talk as if I smoked  
Yet in the Residenz, a personage :  
I must still represent the thing I was,  
Galvanically make dead muscle play,  
Or how shall I illustrate muscle's use ? )  
I could then, last July, bid courier take  
Message for me, post-haste, a thousand miles.  
I bid him, since I have the right to bid,  
And, my part done so far, his part begins ;  
He starts with due equipment, will and power,

Means he may use, misuse, not use at all,  
At his discretion, at his peril too.  
I leave him to himself : but, journey done,  
I count the minutes, call for the result  
In quickness and the courier quality,  
Weigh its worth, and then punish or reward  
According to proved service ; not before.  
Meantime, he sleeps through noontide, rides till  
dawn,  
Sticks to the straight road, tries the crooked  
path,

Measures and manages resource, trusts, doubts  
Advisers by the wayside, does his best  
At his discretion, lags or launches forth,  
(He knows and I know) at his peril too.  
You see ? Exactly thus men stand to God :  
I with my courier, God with me. Just so  
I have his bidding to perform ; but mind  
And body, all of me, though made and meant  
For that sole service, must consult, concert  
With my own self and nobody beside,  
How to effect the same : God helps not else.  
'Tis I who, with my stock of craft and strength,  
Choose the director cut across the hedge,  
Or keep the foot-track that respects a crop.  
Lie down and rest, rise up and run, — live spare,  
Feed free, — all that's my business : but, ar-  
rive,

Deliver message, bring the answer back,  
And make my bow, I must : then God will  
speak,

Praise me or haply blame as service proves.  
To other men, to each and every one,  
Another law ! what likelier ? God, perchance,  
Grants each new man, by some as new a mode,  
Intercommunication with himself,  
Wreaking on finiteness infinitude ;  
By such a series of effects, gives each  
Last his own imprint : old yet ever new  
The process : 'tis the way of Deity.  
How it succeeds, he knows : I only know  
That varied modes of creatureship abound,  
Implying just as varied intercourse  
For each with the creator of them all.  
Each has his own mind and no other's mode.  
What mode may yours be ? I shall sympathize !  
No doubt, you, good young lady that you are,  
Despite a natural naughtiness or two,  
Turn eyes up like a Pradier Magdalen  
And see an outspread providential hand  
Above the owl's-wing aigrette — guard and  
guide —

Visibly o'er your path, about your bed,  
Through all your practisings with London-town.  
It points, you go ; it stays fixed, and you stop ;  
You quicken its procedure by a word  
Spoken, a thought in silence, prayer and praise.  
Well, I believe that such a hand may stoop,  
And such appeals to it may stave off harm,  
Pacify the grim guardian of this Square,  
And stand you in good stead on quarter-day :  
Quite possible in your case ; not in mine.  
"Ah, but I choose to make the difference,  
Find the emancipation ?" No, I hope !  
If I deceive myself, take noon for night,  
Please to become determinedly blind  
To the true ordinance of human life,  
Through mere presumption — that is my affair

And truly a grave one ; but as grave I think  
Your affair, yours, the specially observed, —  
Each favored person that perceives his path  
Pointed him, inch by inch, and looks above  
For guidance, through the mazes of this world,  
In what we call its meanest life-career  
— Not how to manage Europe properly,  
But how keep open shop, and yet pay rent,  
Rear household, and make both ends meet, the  
same.

I say, such man is no less tasked than I  
To duly take the path appointed him  
By whatsoever sign he recognize.  
Our insincerity on both our heads !  
No matter what the object of a life,  
Small work or large, — the making thrive a  
shop,

Or seeing that an empire take no harm, —  
There are known fruits to judge obedience by.  
You've read a ton's weight, now, of news-  
paper —

Lives of me, gabble about the kind of prince —  
You know my work i' the rough ; I ask you,  
then,

Do I appear subordinated less  
To hand-impulsion, one prime push for all,  
Than little lives of men, the multitude  
That cried out, every quarter of an hour,  
For fresh instructions, did or did not work,  
And praised in the odd minutes ?

Eh, my dear ?

Such is the reason why I acquiesced  
In doing what seemed best for me to do,  
So as to please myself on the great scale,  
Having regard to immortality  
No less than life — did that which head and  
heart

Prescribed my hand, in measure with its means  
Of doing — used my special stock of power —  
Not from the aforesaid head and heart alone,  
But every sort of helpful circumstance,  
Some problematic and some nondescript :  
All regulated by the single care  
I' the last resort — that I made thoroughly serve  
The when and how, toiled where was need, re-  
posed

As resolutely at the proper point,  
Braved sorrow, courted joy, to just one end :  
Namely, that just the creature I was bound  
To be, I should become, nor thwart at all  
God's purpose in creation. I conceive  
No other duty possible to man, —  
Highest mind, lowest mind, — no other law  
By which to judge life failure or success :  
What folk call being saved or cast away.

Such was my rule of life ; I worked my best,  
Subject to ultimate judgment, God's not man's.  
Well then, this settled, — take your tea, I beg,  
And meditate the fact, 'twixt sip and sip, —  
This settled — why I pleased myself, you saw,  
By turning blot and blot into a line,  
O' the little scale, — we'll try now (as your  
tongue

Tries the concluding sugar-drop) what 's meant  
To please me most o' the great scale. Why,  
just now,

With nothing else to do within my reach,  
Did I prefer making two blots one line  
To making yet another separate  
Third blot, and leaving those I found unlinked ?  
It meant, I like to use the thing I find,  
Rather than strive at unfound novelty :  
I make the best of the old, nor try for new.  
Such will to act, such choice of action's way,  
Constitute — when at work on the great scale,  
Driven to their farthest natural consequence  
By all the help from all the means — my own  
Particular faculty of serving God,  
Instinct for putting power to exercise  
Upon some wish and want o' the time, I prove  
Possible to mankind as best I may.  
This constitutes my mission, — grant the  
phrase, —

Namely, to rule men — men within my reach,  
To order, influence and dispose them so  
As render solid and stabilize  
Mankind in particles, the light and loose,  
For their good and my pleasure in the act.  
Such good accomplished proves twice good to  
me —  
Good for its own sake, as the just and right,  
And, in the effecting also, good again  
To me its agent, tasked as suits my taste.

Is this much easy to be understood  
At first glance ? Now begin the steady gaze !

My rank — (if I must tell you simple truth —  
Telling were else not worth the whiff o' the  
weed  
I lose for the tale's sake) — dear, my rank i'  
the world

Is hard to know and name precisely : err  
I may, but scarcely overestimate  
My style and title. Do I class with men  
Most useful to their fellows ? Possibly, —  
Therefore, in some sort, best ; but, greatest  
mind

And rarest nature ? Evidently no.  
A conservator, call me, if you please,  
Not a creator nor destroyer : one  
Who keeps the world safe. I profess to trace  
The broken circle of society,  
Dim actual order, I can redescribe  
Not only where some segment silver-true  
Stays clear, but where the breaks of black  
commence

Baffling you all who want the eye to probe —  
As I make out yon problematic thin  
White paring of your thumb-nail outside there,  
Above the plaster-monarch on his steed —  
See an inch, name an ell, and prophesy  
O' the rest that ought to follow, the round  
moon

Now hiding in the night of things : that round,  
I labor to demonstrate moon enough  
For the month's purpose, — that society,  
Render efficient for the age's need :  
Preserving you in either case the old,  
Nor aiming at a new and greater thing,  
A sun for moon, a future to be made  
By first abolishing the present law :  
No such proud task for me by any means !  
History shows you men whose master-touch

Not so much modifies as makes anew :  
Minds that transmute nor need restore at all.  
A breath of God made manifest in flesh  
Subjects the world to change, from time to time,

Alters the whole conditions of our race  
Abruptly, not by unperceived degrees  
Nor play of elements already there,  
But quite new leaven, leavening the lump,  
And liker, so, the natural process. See !  
Where winter reigned for ages -- by a turn  
I' the time, some star-change, (ask geologists.)  
The ice-tracts split, clash, splinter and disperse,  
And there 's an end of immobility,  
Silence, and all that tinted pageant, base  
To pinnacle, one flush from fairy-land  
Dead-asleep and deserted somewhere, -- see ! --  
As a fresh sun, wave, spring and joy outburst.  
Or else the earth it is, time starts from trance,  
Her mountains tremble into fire, her plains  
Heave blinded by confusion : what result ?  
New teeming growth, surprises of strange life  
Impossible before, a world broke up  
And re-made, order gained by law destroyed.  
Not otherwise, in our society  
Follow like portents, all as absolute  
Regenerations : they have birth at rare  
Uncertain unexpected intervals  
O' the world, by ministry impossible  
Before and after fullness of the days :  
Some dervish desert-spectre, swordsmen, saint,  
Lawgiver, lyrist, -- oh, we know the names !  
Quite other these than I. Our time requires  
No such strange potentate, -- who else would dawn, --

No fresh force till the old have spent itself.  
Such seems the natural economy.  
To shoot a beam into the dark, assists :  
To make that beam do fuller service, spread  
And utilize such bounty to the height,  
That assists also, -- and that work is mine.  
I recognize, contemplate, and approve  
The general compact of society,  
Not simply as I see effected good,  
But good i' the germ, each chance that 's possible

I' the plan traced so far : all results, in short,  
For better or worse of the operation due  
To those exceptional natures, unlike mine,  
Who, helping, thwarting, conscious, unaware,  
Did somehow manage to so far describe  
This diagram left ready to my hand,  
Waiting my turn of trial. I see success,  
See failure, see what makes or mars through-

out.  
How shall I else but help complete this plan  
Of which I know the purpose and approve,  
By letting stay therein what seems to stand,  
And adding good thereto of easier reach  
To-day than yesterday ?

So much, no more !

Whereon, "No more than that ?" -- inquire  
aggrieved  
Half of my critics : "nothing new at all ?  
The old plan saved, instead of a sponged slate  
And fresh-drawn figure ?" -- while, "So much  
as that ?"

Object their fellows of the other faith :  
"Leave uneffaced the crazy labyrinth  
Of alteration and amendment, lines  
Which every dabster felt in duty bound  
To signalize his power of pen and ink  
By adding to a plan once plain enough ?  
Why keep each fool's bequeathment, scratch  
and blur  
Which overscrawl and underscore the piece --  
Nay, strengthen them by touches of your  
own ?"

Well, that 's my mission, so I serve the world,  
Figure as man o' the moment, -- in default  
Of somebody inspired to strike such change  
Into society -- from round to square,  
The ellipsis to the rhomboid, how you please,  
As suits the size and shape o' the world he finds.

But this I can, -- and nobody my peer, --  
Do the best with the least change possible :  
Carry the incompleteness on, a stage,  
Make what was crooked straight, and rough-

ness smooth,  
And weakness strong : wherein if I succeed,  
It will not prove the worst achievement, sure,  
In the eyes at least of one man, one I look  
Nowise to catch in critic company :  
To wit, the man inspired, the genius' self  
Destined to come and change things thoroughly.  
He, at least, finds his business simplified,  
Distinguishes the done from undone, reads  
Plainly what meant and did not mean this time

We live in, and I work on, and transmit  
To such successor : he will operate  
On good hard substance, not mere shade and shine.

Let all my critics, born to idleness  
And impotency, get their good, and have  
Their hooting at the giver : I am deaf --  
Who find great good in this society,  
Great gain, the purchase of great labor. Touch  
The work I may and must, but -- reverent  
In every fall o' the finger-tip, no doubt.  
Perhaps I find all good there 's warrant for  
I' the world as yet : nay, to the end of time, --  
Since evil never means part company  
With mankind, only shift side and change shape.

I find advance i' the main, and notably  
The Present an improvement on the Past,  
And promise for the Future -- which shall prove

Only the Present with its rough made smooth,  
Its indistinctness emphasized ; I hope  
No better, nothing newer for mankind,  
But something equally smoothed everywhere,  
Good, reconciled with hardly-quite-as-good,  
Instead of good and bad each jostling each.

"And that 's all ?" Ay, and quite enough for me !

We have toiled so long to gain what gain I find  
I' the Present, -- let us keep it ! We shall toil  
So long before we gain -- if gain God grant --  
A Future with one touch of difference  
I' the heart of things, and not their outside face, --



Let us not risk the whiff of my cigar  
For Fourier, Comte, and all that ends in smoke !

This I see clearest probably of men  
With power to act and influence, now alive :  
Juster than they to the true state of things ;  
In consequence, more tolerant that, side  
By side, shall co-exist and thrive alike  
In the age, the various sorts of happiness  
Moral, mark ! — not material — moods o' the  
mind

Suited to man and man his opposite :  
Say, minor modes of movement — hence to  
there,

Or thence to here, or simply round about —  
So long as each toe spares its neighbor's kibe,  
Nor spoils the major march and main advance.  
The love of peace, care for the family,  
Contentment with what's bad but might be  
worse —

Good movements these ! and good, too, dis-  
contented,

So long as that spurs good, which might be  
best,

Into becoming better, anyhow :

Good — pride of country, putting hearth and  
home

I' the background, out of undue prominence :  
Good — yearning after change, strife, victory,  
And triumph. Each shall have its orbit  
marked,

But no more, — none impede the other's path  
In this wide world, — though each and all  
alike,

Save for me, fain would spread itself through  
space

And leave its fellow not an inch of way.

I rule and regulate the course, excite,

Restrain : because the whole machine should  
march

Impelled by those diversely-moving parts,

Each blind to aught beside its little bent.

Out of the turnings round and round inside,  
Comes that straightforward world-advance, I  
want,

And none of them supposes God wants too

And gets through just their hindrance and my  
help.

I think that to have held the balance straight

For twenty years, say, weighing claim and  
claim

And giving each its due, no less no more,

This was good service to humanity,

Right usage of my power in head and heart,

And reasonable piety beside.

Keep those three points in mind while judging  
me !

You stand, perhaps, for some one man, not  
men, —

Represent this or the other interest,

Nor mind the general welfare, — so, impugn

My practice and dispute my value : why ?

You man of faith, I did not tread the world

Into a paste, and thereof make a smooth

Uniform mound whereon to plant your flag,

The lily-white, above the blood and brains !

Nor yet did I, you man of faithlessness,

So roll things to the level which you love,

That you could stand at ease there and survey  
The universal Nothing undisgraced  
By pert obtrusion of some old church-spire  
I' the distance ! Neither friend would I con-  
tent,

Nor, as the world were simply meant for him,  
Thrust out his fellow and mend God's mistake.  
Why, you two fools, — my dear friends all the  
same, —

Is it some change o' the world and nothing else  
Contents you ? Should whatever was, not be ?  
How thanklessly you view things ! There's  
the root

Of the evil, source of the entire mistake :

You see no worth i' the world, nature and life,  
Unless we change what is to what may be,  
Which means, — may be, i' the brain of one of  
you !

" Reject what is ? " — all capabilities —

Nay, you may style their chances if you  
choose —

All chances, then, of happiness that lie

Open to anybody that is born,

Tumbles into this life and out again, —

All that may happen, good and evil too,

I' the space between, to each adventurer

Upon this 'sixty, Anno Domini :

A life to live — and such a life ! a world

To learn, one's lifetime in, — and such a  
world !

How did the foolish ever pass for wise

By calling life a burden, man a fly

Or worm or what's most insignificant ?

" O littleness of man ! " deplores the bard ;

And then, for fear the Powers should punish  
him,

" O grandeur of the visible universe

Our human littleness contrasts withal !

O sun, O moon, ye mountains and thou sea,

Thou emblem of immensity, thou this,

That and the other, — what impertinence

In man to eat and drink and walk about

And have his little notions of his own,

The while some wave sheds foam upon the  
shore ! "

First of all, 't is a lie some three-times thick :

The bard, — this sort of speech being poetry, —

The bard puts mankind well outside himself

And then begins instructing them : " This way

I and my friend the sea conceive of you !

What would you give to think such thoughts  
as ours

Of you and the sea together ? " Down they go

On the humbled knees of them : at once they  
draw

Distinction, recognize no mate of theirs

In one, despite his mock humility,

So plain a match for what he plays with. Next.

The turn of the great ocean-playfellow,

When the bard, leaving Bond Street very far

From ear-shot, cares not to ventriloquize,

But tells the sea its home-truths : " You, my  
match ?

You, all this terror and immensity

And what not ? Shall I tell you what you are ?

Just fit to hitch into a stanza, so

Wake up and set in motion who's asleep

O' the other side of you in England, else

Unaware, as folk pace their Bond Street now,  
Somebody here despises them so much!  
Between us, — they are the ultimate! to them  
And their perception go these lordly thoughts:  
Since what were ocean — mane and tail, to  
boot —

Mused I not here, how make thoughts think-  
able?

Start forth my stanza and astound the world!  
Back, billows, to your insignificance!  
Deep, you are done with!"

Learn, my gifted friend,  
There are two things i' the world, still wiser  
folk

Accept — intelligence and sympathy.

You pant about unutterable power

I' the ocean, all you feel but cannot speak?

Why, that's the plainest speech about it all.

You did not feel what was not to be felt.

Well, then, all else but what man feels is  
naught —

The wash o' the liquor that o'erbrims the cup  
Called man, and runs to waste adown his side,  
Perhaps to feed a cataract, — who cares?

I'll tell you: all the more I know mankind,

The more I thank God, like my grandmother,

For making me a little lower than

The angels, honor-clothed and glory-crowned:

This is the honor, — that no thing I know,

Feel or conceive, but I can make my own

Somehow, by use of hand or head or heart:

This is the glory, — that in all conceived,

Or felt or known, I recognize a mind

Not mine but like mine, — for the double joy, —

Making all things for me and me for Him.

There's folly for you at this time of day!

So think it! and enjoy your ignorance

Of what — no matter for the worthy's name —

Wisdom set working in a noble heart.

When he, who was earth's best geometer

Up to that time of day, consigned his life

With its results into one matchless book,

The triumph of the human mind so far,

All in geometry man yet could do:

And then wrote on the dedication-page

In place of name the universe applauds,

"But, God, what a geometer art Thou!"

I suppose Heaven is, through Eternity,

The equalizing, ever and anon,

In momentary rapture, great with small,

Omniscience with intelligency, God

With man, — the thunder-glow from pole to  
pole

Abolishing, a blissful moment-space,

Great cloud alike and small cloud, in one fire —

As sure to ebb as sure again to flow

When the new receptivity deserves

The new completion. There's the Heaven for  
me.

And I say, therefore, to live out one's life

I' the world here, with the chance, — whether  
by pain

Or pleasure be the process, long or short

The time, august or mean the circumstance

To human eye, — of learning how set foot

Decidedly on some one path to Heaven,

Touch segment in the circle whence all lines

Lead to the centre equally, red lines

Or black lines, so they but produce them-  
selves —

This, I do say, — and here my sermon ends, —

This makes it worth our while to tenderly

Handle a state of things which mend we might,

Mar we may, but which meanwhile helps so far.

Therefore my end is — save society!

"And that's all?" twangs the never-failing  
taunt

O' the foe — "No novelty, creativeness,

Mark of the master that renews the age?"

"Nay, all that?" rather will demur my judge

I look to hear some day, nor friend nor foe —

"Did you attain, then, to perceive that God

Knew what he undertook when he made  
things?"

Ay: that my task was to co-operate

Rather than play the rival, chop and change

The order whence comes all the good we know,

With this, — good's last expression to our  
sense, —

That there's a further good conceivable

Beyond the utmost earth can realize:

And, therefore, that to change the agency,

The evil whereby good is brought about —

Try to make good do good as evil does —

Were just as if a chemist, wanting white,

And knowing black ingredients bred the dye,

Insisted these too should be white forsooth!

Correct the evil, mitigate your best,

Blend mild with harsh, and soften black to  
gray

If gray may follow with no detriment

To the eventual perfect purity!

But as for hazarding the main result

By hoping to anticipate one half

In the intermediate process, — no, my friends!

This bad world, I experience and approve;

Your good world, — with no pity, courage,  
hope,

Fear, sorrow, joy, — devotedness, in short,

Which I account the ultimate of man,

Of which there's not one day nor hour but  
brings,

In flower or fruit, some sample of success,

Out of this same society I save —

None of it for me! That I might have none,

I rapped your tampering knuckles twenty years.

Such was the task imposed me, such my end.

Now for the means thereto. Ah, confidence —

Keep we together or part company?

This is the critical minute! "Such my end?"

Certainly; how could it be otherwise?

Can there be question which was the right  
task —

To save or to destroy society?

Why, even prove that, by some miracle,

Destruction were the proper work to choose,

And that a torch best remedies what's wrong

I' the temple, whence the long procession  
wound

Of powers and beauties, earth's achievements  
all,

The human strength that strove and over-  
threw, —

The human love that, weak itself, crowned strength, —

The instinct crying, "God is whence I came!" —

The reason laying down the law, "And such His will! the world must be!" — the leap and shout

Of genius, "For I hold his very thoughts, The meaning of the mind of him!" — nay, more

The ingenuities, each active force

That turning in a circle on itself

Looks neither up nor down but keeps the spot,

Mere creature-like and, for religion, works,

Works only and works ever, makes and shapes

And changes, still wrings more of good from less,

Still stamps some bad out, where was worst before,

So leaves the handiwork, the act and deed,

Were it but house and land and wealth, to show

Here was a creature perfect in the kind —

Whether as bee, beaver, or behemoth,

What's the importance? he has done his work

For work's sake, worked well, earned a creature's praise; —

I say, concede that same fane, whence deploys

Age after age, all this humanity,

Diverse but ever dear, out of the dark

Behind the altar into the broad day

By the portal — enter, and, concede there mocks

Each lover of free motion and much space

A perplexed length of apse and aisle and nave, —

Pillared roof and carved screen, and what care I? —

Which irk the movement and impede the march, —

Nay, possibly, bring flat upon his nose

At some odd breakneck angle, by some freak

Of old-world artistry, that personage

Who, could he but have kept his skirts from grief

And catching at the hooks and crooks about,

Had stepped out on the daylight of our time

Plainly the man of the age, — still, still, I bar

Excessive conflagration in the case.

"Shake the flame freely!" shout the multitude:

The architect approves I stuck my torch

Inside a good stout lantern, hung its light

Above the hooks and crooks, and ended so.

To save society was well: the means

Whereby to save it, — there begins the doubt

Permitted you, imperative on me;

Were mine the best means? Did I work aright

With powers appointed me? — since powers denied

Concern me nothing.

Well, my work reviewed

Fairly, leaves more hope than discouragement.

First, there's the deed done: what I found, I leave, —

What tottered, I kept stable: if it stand

One month, without sustainment, still thank me

The twenty years' sustainer! Now, observe, Sustaining is no brilliant self-display

Like knocking down or even setting up:

Much bustle these necessitate; and still

To vulgar eye, the mightier of the myth

Is Hercules, who substitutes his own

For Atlas' shoulder and supports the globe

A whole day, — not the passive and obscure

Atlas who bore, ere Hercules was born,

And is to go on bearing that same load

When Hercules turns ash on Ceta's top.

'T is the transition-stage, the tug and strain,

That strike men: standing still is stupid-like.

My pressure was too constant on the whole

For any part's eruption into space

'Mid sparkles, crackling, and much praise of me.

I saw that, in the ordinary life,

Many of the little make a mass of men

Important beyond greatness here and there;

As certainly as, in life exceptional,

When old things terminate and new commence,

A solitary great man's worth the world.

God takes the business into his own hands

At such time: who creates the novel flower

Contrives to guard and give it breathing-room:

I merely tend the cornfield, care for crop,

And weed no acre thin to let emerge

What prodigy may stifle there perchance,

— No, though my eye have noted where he lurks.

Oh those mute myriads that spoke loud to me —

The eyes that craved to see the light, the mouths

That sought the daily bread and nothing more,

The hands that supplicated exercise,

Men that had wives, and women that had babes,

And all these making suit to only live!

Was I to turn aside from husbandry,

Leave hope of harvest for the corn, my care,

To play at horticulture, rear some rose

Or poppy into perfect leaf and bloom

When, 'mid the furrows, up was pleased to sprout

Some man, cause, system, special interest

I ought to study, stop the world meanwhile?

"But I am Liberty, Philanthropy,

Enlightenment, or Patriotism, the power

Whereby you are to stand or fall!" cries each

"Mine and mine only be the flag you flaunt!"

And, when I venture to object, "Meantime,

What of yon myriads with no flag at all —

My crop which, who flaunts flag must tread across?"

"Now, this it is to have a puny mind!"

Admire my mental prodigies: "down — down —

Ever at home o' the level and the low,

There bides he brooding! Could he look above,

With less of the owl and more of the eagle eye,

He'd see there's no way helps the little cause

Like the attainment of the great. Dare first

The chief emprise; dispel yon cloud between

The sun and us; nor fear that, though our heads

Find earlier warmth and comfort from his ray,

What lies about our feet, the multitude



Will fail of benefaction presently.

Come now, let each of us awhile cry truce  
To special interests, make common cause  
Against the adversary — or perchance  
More dullard to his own plain interest!  
Which of us will you choose? — since needs  
must be

Some one o' the warring causes you incline  
To hold, i' the main, has right and should pre-  
vail :

Why not adopt and give it prevalence?  
Choose strict Faith or lax Incredulity, —  
King, Caste, and Cultus — or the Rights of  
Man,

Sovereignty of each Proudhon o'er himself,  
And all that follows in just consequence!  
Go free the stranger from a foreign yoke;  
Or stay, concentrate energy at home;  
Succeed! — when he deserves, the stranger will.  
Comply with the Great Nation's impulse, print  
By force of arms, — since reason pleads in vain,  
And, 'mid the sweet compulsion, pity weeps, —  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau on the universe!  
Snub the Great Nation, cure the impulsive itch  
With smartest fillip on a restless nose  
Was ever launched by thumb and finger! Bid  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau first repeal the tax  
On pig-tails and pomatum, and then mind  
Abstruser matters for next century!  
Is your choice made? Why then, act up to  
choice!

Leave the illogical touch now here now there  
I' the way of work, the tantalizing help  
First to this, then the other opposite:  
The blowing hot and cold, sham policy,  
Sure ague of the mind and nothing more,  
Disease of the perception or the will,  
That fain would hide in a fine name! Your  
choice,

Speak it out and condemn yourself thereby!"

Well, Leicester Square is not the Residenz:  
Instead of shrugging shoulder, turning friend  
The deaf ear, with a wink to the police —  
I'll answer — by a question, wisdom's mode.  
How many years, o' the average, do men  
Live in this world? Some score, say computists.  
Quintuple me that term and give mankind  
The likely hundred, and with all my heart  
I'll take your task upon me, work your way,  
Concentrate energy on some one cause:  
Since, counsellor, I also have my cause,  
My flag, my faith in its effect, my hope  
In its eventual triumph for the good  
O' the world. And once upon a time, when I  
Was like all you, mere voice and nothing more,  
Myself took wings, soared sunward, and thence  
sang,

"Look where I live i' the loft, come up to me,  
Groundlings, nor grovel longer! gain this  
height,

And prove you breathe here better than below!  
Why, what emancipation far and wide  
Will follow in a trice! They too can soar,  
Each tenant of the earth's circumference  
Claiming to elevate humanity,  
They also must attain such altitude,  
Live in the luminous circle that surrounds

The planet, not the leaden orb itself.

Press out, each point, from surface to yon verge  
Which one has gained and guaranteed your  
realm!"

Ay, still my fragments wander, music-fraught,  
Sighs of the soul, mine once, mine now, and  
mine

Forever! Crumbled arch, crushed aqueduct.  
Alive with tremors in the shaggy growth  
Of wild-wood, crevice-sown, that triumphs there  
Imparting exultation to the hills!  
Sweep of the swathe when only the winds walk  
And waft my words above the grassy sea  
Under the blinding blue that basks o'er

Rome, —

Hear ye not still — "Be Italy again?"  
And ye, what strikes the panic to your heart?  
Decrepit council-chambers, — where some lamp  
Drives the unbroken black three paces off  
From where the graybeards huddle in debate,  
Dim cowl and capes, and midmost glimmers  
one

Like tarnished gold, and what they say is  
doubt,

And what they think is fear, and what suspends  
The breath in them is not the plaster-patch  
Time disengages from the painted wall  
Where Rafael moulderingly bids adieu,  
Nor tick of the insect turning tapestry  
Which a queen's finger traced of old, to dust;  
But some word, resonant, redoubtable,  
Of who once felt upon his head a hand  
Whereof the head now apprehends his foot.  
"Light in Rome, Law in Rome, and Liberty  
O' the soul in Rome — the free Church, the  
free State!

Stamp out the nature that's best typified  
By its embodiment in Peter's Dome,  
The scorpion-body with the greedy pair  
Of outstretched nippers, either colonnade  
Agape for the advance of heads and hearts!"  
There's one cause for you! one and only one,  
For I am vocal through the universe,  
I' the workshop, manufactory, exchange  
And market-place, seaport and custom-house  
O' the frontier: listen if the echoes die —  
"Unfettered commerce! Power to speak and  
hear,

And print and read! The universal vote!  
Its rights for labor!" This, with much beside,  
I spoke when I was voice and nothing more,  
But altogether such an one as you  
My censors. "Voice, and nothing more, in-  
deed!"

Re-echoes round me: "that's the censure,  
there's

Involved the ruin of you soon or late!  
Voice, — when its promise beat the empty air:  
And nothing more, — when solid earth's your  
stage,

And we desiderate performance, deed  
For word, the realizing all you dreamed  
In the old days: now, for deed, we find at door  
O' the council-chamber posted, mute as mouse,  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau, sentry and safeguard  
O' the graybeards all a-chuckle, cowl to cape,  
Who challenge Judas, — that's endearment's  
style, —

To stop their mouths or let escape grimace,  
While they keep cursing Italy and him.  
The power to speak, hear, print and read is  
ours ?

Ay, we learn where and how, when clapped  
inside

A convict-transport bound for cool Cayenne !  
The universal vote we have : its urn,  
We also have where votes drop, fingered-o'er  
By the universal Prefect. Say, Trade 's free  
And Toil turned master out o' the slave it was :  
What then ? These feed man's stomach, but  
his soul

Graves finer fare, nor lives by bread alone,  
As somebody says somewhere. Hence you  
stand

Proved and recorded either false or weak,  
Faulty in promise or performance : which ?"  
Neither, I hope. Once pedestalled on earth,  
To act not speak, I found earth was not air.  
I saw that multitude of mine, and not  
The nakedness and nullity of air  
Fit only for a voice to float in free.

Such eyes I saw that craved the light alone,  
Such mouths that wanted bread and nothing  
else,

Such hands that supplicated handiwork,  
Men with the wives, and women with the babes,  
Yet all these pleading just to live, not die !  
Did I believe one whit less in belief,  
Take truth for falsehood, wish the voice re-  
voked

That told the truth to heaven for earth to hear ?  
No, this should be, and shall ; but when and  
how ?

At what expense to these who average  
Your twenty years of life, my computists ?  
" Not bread alone," but bread before all else  
For these : the bodily want serve first, said I ;  
If earth-space and the lifetime help not here,  
Where is the good of body having been ?  
But, helping body, if we somewhat balk  
The soul of finer fare, such food 's to find  
Elsewhere and afterward — all indicates,  
Even this selfsame fact that soul can starve  
Yet body still exist its twenty years :  
While, stint the body, there 's an end at once  
O' the revel in the fancy that Rome 's free,  
And superstition 's fettered, and one prints  
Whate'er one pleases, and who pleases reads  
The same, and speaks out and is spoken to,  
And divers hundred thousand fools may vote  
A vote untampered with by one wise man,  
And so elect Barabbas deputy  
In lieu of his concurrent. I who trace  
The purpose written on the face of things,  
For my behoof and guidance — (whose needs  
No such sustainment, sees beneath my signs,  
Proves, what I take for writing, penmanship,  
Scribble and flourish with no sense for me  
O' the sort I solemnly go spelling out, —  
Let him ! there 's certain work of mine to show  
Alongside his work : which gives warranty  
Of shrewder vision in the workman — judge !)  
I who trace Providence without a break  
I' the plan of things, drop plumb on this plain  
print  
Of an intention with a view to good,

That man is made in sympathy with man  
At outset of existence, so to speak ;  
But in dissociation, more and more,  
Man from his fellow, as their lives advance  
In culture ; still humanity, that 's born  
A mass, keeps flying off, fining away  
Ever into a multitude of points,  
And ends in isolation, each from each :  
Peerless above i' the sky, the pinnacle, —  
Absolute contact, fusion, all below  
At the base of being. How comes this about ?  
This stamp of God characterizing man  
And nothing else but man in the universe —  
That, while he feels with man (to use man's  
speech)

I' the little things of life, its fleshly wants  
Of food and rest and health and happiness,  
Its simplest spirit-motions, loves and hates,  
Hopes, fears, soul-cravings on the ignoblest scale,  
O' the fellow - creature, — owns the bond at  
base, —

He tends to freedom and divergency  
In the upward progress, plays the pinnacle  
When life 's at greatest (grant again the  
phrase !

Because there 's neither great nor small in life).  
" Consult thou for thy kind that have the eyes  
To see, the mouths to eat, the hands to work.  
Men with the wives, and women with the  
babes !"

Prompts Nature. " Care thou for thyself alone  
I' the conduct of the mind God made thee with !  
Think, as if man had never thought before !  
Act, as if all creation hung attent  
On the acting of such faculty as thine,  
To take prime pattern from thy masterpiece !"  
Nature prompts also : neither law obeyed  
To the uttermost by any heart and soul  
We know or have in record : both of them  
Acknowledged blindly by whatever man  
We ever knew or heard of in this world.  
" Will you have why and wherefore, and the  
fact

Made plain as pikestaff ? " modern Science asks.  
" That mass man sprung from was a jelly-lump  
Once on a time ; he kept an after-course  
Through fish and insect, reptile, bird and beast,  
Till he attained to be an ape at last  
Or last but one. And if this doctrine shock  
In aught the natural pride " . . . Friend, ban-  
ish fear,

The natural humility replies.  
Do you suppose, even I, poor potentate,  
Hohenstiel - Schwangan, who once ruled the  
roast, —

I was born able at all points to ply  
My tools ? or did I have to learn my trade,  
Practise as exile ere perform as prince ?  
The world knows something of my ups and  
downs :

But grant me time, give me the management  
And manufacture of a model me,  
Me fifty-fold, a prince without a flaw, —  
Why, there 's no social grade, the sordidest,  
My embryo potentate should blink and 'scape.  
King, all the better he was cobbler once,  
He should know, sitting on the throne, how  
tastes

Life to who sweeps the doorway. But life's hard,

Occasion rare ; you cut probation short,  
And, being half-instructed, on the stage  
You shuffle through your part as best you can,  
And bless your stars, as I do. God takes time.  
I like the thought he should have lodged me once

I' the hole, the cave, the hut, the tenement,  
The mansion and the palace ; made me learn  
The feel o' the first, before I found myself  
Loftier i' the last, not more emancipate ;  
From first to last of lodging, I was I,  
And not at all the place that harbored me.

Do I refuse to follow farther yet  
I' the backwardness, repine if tree and flower,  
Mountain or streamlet were my dwelling-place  
Before I gained enlargement, grew mollusc ?  
As well account that way for many a thrill  
Of kinship, I confess to, with the powers  
Called Nature : animate, inanimate,

In parts or in the whole, there's something there  
Man-like that somehow meets the man in me.

My pulse goes altogether with the heart  
O' the Persian, that old Xerxes, when he stayed  
His march to conquest of the world, a day  
I' the desert, for the sake of one superb  
Plane-tree which queened it there in solitude :  
Giving her neck its necklace, and each arm  
Its armet, suiting soft waist, snowy side,  
With cincture and apparel. Yes, I lodged  
In those successive tenements ; perchance  
Taste yet the straitness of them while I stretch  
Limb and enjoy new liberty the more.

And some abodes are lost or ruinous ;  
Some, patched-up and pieced-out, and so transformed

They still accommodate the traveller  
His day of lifetime. Oh, you count the links,  
Desery no bar of the unbroken man ?  
Yes, — and who welds a lump of ore, suppose  
He likes to make a chain and not a bar,  
And reach by link on link, link small, link large,  
Out to the due length — why, there's fore-  
thought still

Outside o' the series, forging at one end,  
While at the other there's — no matter what  
The kind of critical intelligence  
Believing that last link had last but one  
For parent, and no link was, first of all,  
Fitted to anvil, hammered into shape.  
Else, I accept the doctrine, and deduce  
This duty, that I recognize mankind,  
In all its height and depth and length and  
breadth.

Mankind i' the main have little wants, not large :  
I, being of will and power to help, i' the main,  
Mankind, must help the least wants first. My  
friend,

That is, my foe, without such power and will,  
May plausibly concentrate all he wieldes,  
And do his best at helping some large want,  
Exceptionally noble cause, that's seen  
Subordinate enough from where I stand.  
As he helps, I helped once, when like himself,  
Unable to help better, work more wide ;  
And so would work with heart and hand to-day,  
Did only computists confess a fault,

And multiply the single score by five,  
Five only, give man's life its hundred years.  
Change life, in me shall follow change to match !  
Time were then, to work here, there, every-  
where,

By turns and try experiment at ease !  
Full time to mend as well as mar : why wait  
The slow and sober uprising all around  
O' the building ? Let us run up, right to roof,  
Some sudden marvel, piece of perfectness,  
And testify what we intend the whole !  
Is the world losing patience ? " Wait ! " say we :  
" There's time : no generation needs to die  
Unsolaced ; you've a century in store ! "

But, no : I sadly let the voices wing  
Their way i' the upper vacancy, nor test  
Truth on this solid as I promised once.  
Well, and what is there to be sad about ?  
The world's the world, life's life, and nothing  
else.

'Tis part of life, a property to prize,  
That those o' the higher sort engaged i' the  
world,

Should fancy they can change its ill to good,  
Wrong to right, ugliness to beauty : find  
Enough success in fancy turning fact,  
To keep the sanguine kind in countenance  
And justify the hope that busies them :  
Failure enough, — to who can follow change  
Beyond their vision, see new good prove ill  
I' the consequence, see blacks and whites of life  
Shift square indeed, but leave the checkered face  
Unchanged i' the main, — failure enough for  
such,

To bid ambition keep the whole from change,  
As their best service. I hope naught beside.  
No, my brave thinkers, whom I recognize,  
Gladly, myself the first, as, in a sense,  
All that our world's worth, flower and fruit of  
man !

Such minds myself award supremacy  
Over the common insignificance,  
When only Mind's in question, — Body bows  
To quite another government, you know.  
Be Kant crowned king o' the castle in the air !  
Hans Slouch — his own, and children's mouths  
to feed

I' the hovel on the ground — wants meat, nor  
chews

" The Critique of Pure Reason " in exchange.  
But, now, — suppose I could allow your claims  
And quite change life to please you, — would it  
please ?

Would life comport with change and still be life ?  
Ask, now, a doctor for a remedy :

There's his prescription. Bid him point you out  
Which of the five or six ingredients saves  
The sick man. " Such the efficacy ?  
Then why not dare and do things in one dose  
Simple and pure, all virtue, no alloy  
Of the idle drop and powder ? " What's his  
word ?

The efficacy, neat, were neutralized :  
It wants dispersing and retarding, — nay,  
Is put upon its mettle, plays its part  
Precisely through such hindrance everywhere,  
Finds some mysterious give and take i' the ease,  
Some gain by opposition, he foregoes



Should he unfetter the medicament,  
So with this thought of yours that fain would  
work

Free in the world : it wants just what it finds —  
The ignorance, stupidity, the hate,  
Envy and malice and uncharitableness  
That bar your passage, break the flow of you  
Down from those happy heights where many a  
cloud

Combined to give you birth and bid you be  
The royalest of rivers : on you glide  
Silverly till you reach the summit-edge,  
Then over, on to all that ignorance,  
Stupidity, hate, envy, bluffs and blocks,  
Posted to fret you into foam and noise.  
What of it? Up you mount in minute mist,  
And bridge the chasm that crushed your quietude,

A spirit-rainbow, earthborn jewelry  
Outsparkling the insipid firmament  
Blue above Terni and its orange-trees.  
Do not mistake me! You, too, have your rights!  
Hans must not burn Kant's house above his head  
Because he cannot understand Kant's book :  
And still less must Hans' pastor burn Kant's self  
Because Kant understands some books too well.  
But, justice seen to on this little point,  
Answer me, is it manly, is it sage  
To stop and struggle with arrangements here  
It took so many lives, so much of toil,  
To tinker up into efficiency?  
Can't you contrive to operate at once, —  
Since time is short and art is long, — to show  
Your quality i' the world, whate'er you boast,  
Without this fractious call on folks to crush  
The world together just to set you free,  
Admire the capers you will cut perchance,  
Nor mind the mischief to your neighbors?

"Age!

Age and experience bring discouragement,"  
You taunt me : I maintain the opposite.  
Am I discouraged who — perceiving health,  
Strength, beauty, as they tempt the eye of soul,  
Are uncombinable with flesh and blood —  
Resolve to let my body live its best,  
And leave my soul what better yet may be  
Or not be, in this life or afterward?  
— In either fortune, wiser than who waits  
Till magic art procure a miracle.  
In virtue of my very confidence  
Mankind ought to outgrow its babyhood;  
I prescribe rocking, deprecate rough hands,  
While thus the cradle holds it past mistake.  
Indeed, my task 's the harder — equable  
Sustainment everywhere, all strain, no push —  
Whereby friends credit me with indolence,  
Apathy, hesitation. "Stand stock-still  
If able to move briskly? 'All a-strain' —  
So must we compliment your passiveness?  
Sound asleep, rather!"

Just the judgment passed  
Upon a statue, luckless like myself,  
I saw at Rome once! 'Twas some artist's  
whim  
To cover all the accessories close  
I' the group, and leave you only Laocoön

With neither sons nor serpents to denote  
The purpose of his gesture. Then a crowd  
Was called to try the question, criticise  
Wherefore such energy of legs and arms,  
Nay, eyeballs, starting from the socket. One —  
I give him leave to write my history —  
Only one said, "I think the gesture strives  
Against some obstacle we cannot see."  
All the rest made their minds up. "Tis a  
yawn

Of sheer fatigue subsiding to repose :  
The statue 's 'Somnolency' clear enough!"

There, my arch stranger-friend, my audience  
both  
And arbitress, you have one half your wish,  
At least : you know the thing I tried to do!  
All, so far, to my praise and glory — all  
Told as befits the self-apologist, —  
Who ever promises a candid sweep  
And clearance of those errors mis-called crimes  
None knows more, none laments so much as he,  
And ever rises from confession, proved  
A god whose fault was — trying to be man.  
Just so, fair judge, — if I read smile aright —  
I condescend to figure in your eyes  
As biggest heart and best of Europe's friends.  
And hence my failure. God will estimate  
Success one day ; and, in the mean time — you!

I daresay there 's some fancy of the sort  
Frolicking round this final puff I send  
To die up yonder in the ceiling-rose, —  
Some consolation-stakes, we losers win!  
A plague of the return to "I — I — I"  
Did this, meant that, hoped, feared the other  
thing!"

Autobiography, adieu! The rest  
Shall make amends, be pure blame, history  
And falsehood : not the ineffective truth,  
But Thiers-and-Victor-Hugo exercise.  
Hear what I never was, but might have been  
I' the better world where goes tobacco-smoke!  
Here lie the dozen volumes of my life:  
(Did I say "lie"? the pregnant word will  
serve.)

Cut on to the concluding chapter, though!  
Because the little hours begin to strike.  
Hurry Thiers-Hugo to the labor's end!

Something like this the unwritten chapter  
reads.

Exemplify the situation thus!  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau, being, no dispute,  
Absolute mistress, chose the Assembly, first,  
To serve her : chose this man, its President  
Afterward, to serve also, — specially  
To see that folk did service one and all.  
And now the proper term of years was out,  
When the Head-servant must vacate his place;  
And nothing lay so patent to the world  
As that his fellow-servants one and all  
Were — mildly to make mention — knaves or  
fools,  
Each of them with his promise flourished full  
I' the face of you by word and impudence,  
Or filtered slyly out by nod and wink

And nudge upon your sympathetic rib —  
That not one minute more did knave or fool  
Mean to keep faith and serve as he had sworn  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau, once her Head away.  
Why should such swear except to get the  
chance,

When time should ripen and confusion bloom,  
Of putting Hohenstieler-Schwangause  
To the true use of human property —  
Restoring souls and bodies, this to Pope,  
And that to King, that other to his planned  
Perfection of a Share-and-share-alike,  
That other still, to Empire absolute  
In shape of the Head-servant's very self  
Transformed to Master whole and sole? each  
scheme

Discussible, concede one circumstance —  
That each scheme's parent were, beside him-  
self,

Hohenstiel-Schwangau, not her serving-man  
Sworn to do service in the way she chose  
Rather than his way : way superlative,  
Only, — by some infatuation, — his  
And his and his and every one's but hers  
Who stuck to just the Assembly and the Head.  
I make no doubt the Head, too, had his dream  
Of doing sudden duty swift and sure  
On all that heap of untrustworthiness —  
Catching each vaunter of the villany  
He meant to perpetrate when time was ripe,  
Once the Head-servant fairly out of doors, —  
And, caging here a knave and there a fool,  
Cry, "Mistress of your servants, these and me,  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau ! I, their trusty Head,  
Pounce on a pretty scheme concocting here  
That's stopped, extinguished by my vigilance.  
Your property is safe again : but mark !  
Safe in these hands, not yours, who lavish  
trust

Too lightly. Leave my hands their charge  
awhile !

I know your business better than yourself :  
Let me alone about it ! Some fine day,  
Once we are rid of the embarrassment.  
You shall look up and see your longings  
crowned ! "

Such fancy might have tempted him be false,  
But this man chose truth and was wiser so.  
He recognized that for great minds i' the world  
There is no trial like the appropriate one  
Of leaving little minds their liberty  
Of littleness to blunder on through life,  
Now aiming at right ends by foolish means,  
Now, at absurd achievement through the aid  
Of good and wise endeavor — to acquiesce  
In folly's life-long privilege, though with power  
To do the little minds the good they need,  
Despite themselves, by just abolishing  
Their right to play the part and fill the place  
I' the scheme of things He schemed who made  
alike

Great minds and little minds, saw use for each.  
Could the orb sweep those puny particles  
It just half-lights at distance, hardly leads  
I' the leash — sweep out each speck of them  
from space

They anticise in with their days and nights  
And whirlings round and dancings off, forsooth,

And all that fruitless individual life  
One cannot lend a beam to but they spoil —  
Sweep them into itself and so, one star,  
Preponderate henceforth i' the heritage  
Of heaven ! No ! in less senatorial phrase,  
The man endured to help, not save outright  
The multitude by substituting him  
For them, his knowledge, will and way, for  
God's :

Nor change the world, such as it is, and was  
And will be, for some other, suiting all  
Except the purpose of the maker. No !  
He saw that weakness, wickedness will be,  
And therefore should be : that the perfect man,  
As we account perfection — at most pure  
O' the special gold, whate'er the form it take,  
Head-work or heart-work, fined and thrice-  
refined

I' the crucible of life, whereto the powers  
Of the refiner, one and all, are flung  
To feed the flame, he saw that e'en the block,  
Such perfect man holds out triumphant, breaks  
Into some poisonous ore, gold's opposite,  
At the very purest, so compensating  
Man's Adversary — what if we believe ?  
For earlier stern exclusion of his stuff.  
See the sage, with the hunger for the truth,  
And see his system that's all true, except  
The one weak place that's stanchioned by a  
lie !

The moralist, who walks with head erect  
I' the crystal clarity of air so long,  
Until a stumble, and the man's one mire !  
Philanthropy undoes the social knot  
With axe-edge, makes love room 'twixt head  
and trunk :

Religion — but, enough, the thing's too clear !  
Well, if these sparks break out i' the greenest  
tree,

Our topmost of performance, yours and mine,  
What will be done i' the dry ineptitude  
Of ordinary mankind, bark and bole,  
All seems ashamed of but their mother-earth ?  
Therefore throughout Head's term of servitude  
He did the appointed service, and forebore  
Extraneous action that were duty else,  
Done by some other servant, idle now  
Or mischievous : no matter, each his own —  
Own task, and, in the end, own praise or blame !  
He suffered them strut, prate, and brag their  
best,

Squabble at odds on every point save one,  
And there shake hands, — agree to trifle time,  
Obstruct advance with, each, his cricket-cry,  
" Wait till the Head be off the shoulders here !  
Then comes my King, my Pope, my Autocrat,  
My Socialist Republic to her own —  
To-wit, that property of only me,  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau who conceits herself  
Free, forsooth, and expects I keep her so ! "  
— Nay, suffered when, perceiving with dismay  
Head's silence paid no tribute to their noise,  
They turned on him. " Dumb menace in that  
mouth,

Malice in that unstridulosity !  
He cannot but intend some stroke of state  
Shall signalize his passage into peace  
Out of the creaking, — hinder transference

O' the Hohenstiellers-Schwangauese to king,  
 Pope, autocrat, or socialist republic! That's  
 Exact the cause his lips unlocked would cry!  
 Therefore be stirring: brave, beard, bully him!  
 Dock, by the million, of its friendly joints,  
 The electoral body short at once! who did,  
 May do again, and undo us beside;  
 Wrest from his hands the sword for self-defence,

The right to parry any thrust in play  
 We peradventure please to meditate!"  
 And so forth; creak, creak, creak: and ne'er  
 a line

His locked mouth oped the wider, till at last  
 O' the long degraded and insulting day,  
 Sudden the clock told it was judgment-time.  
 Then he addressed himself to speak indeed  
 To the fools, not knaves: they saw him walk  
 straight down

Each step of the eminence, as he first engaged,  
 And stand at last o' the level, — all he swore.  
 "People, and not the people's varletry,  
 This is the task you set myself and these!  
 Thus I performed my part of it, and thus  
 They thwarted me throughout, here, here and  
 here:

Study each instance! yours the loss, not mine.  
 What they intend now is demonstrable  
 As plainly: here's such man, and here's such  
 mode

Of making you some other than the thing  
 You, wisely or unwisely, choose to be,  
 And only set him up to keep you so.  
 Do you approve this? Yours the loss, not  
 mine.

Do you condemn it? There's a remedy.  
 Take me — who know your mind, and mean  
 your good,

With clearer brain and stouter arm than they,  
 Or you, or haply anybody else —  
 And make me master for the moment! Choose  
 What time, what power you trust me with: I  
 too

Will choose as frankly ere I trust myself  
 With time and power: they must be adequate  
 To the end and aim, since mine the loss, with  
 yours,

If means be wanting; once their worth ap-  
 proved,

Grant them, and I shall forthwith operate —  
 Ponder it well! — to the extremest stretch  
 O' the power you trust me: if with unsuccess,  
 God wills it, and there's nobody to blame."

Whereon the people answered with a shout,  
 "The trusty one! no tricksters any more!"  
 How could they other? He was in his place.

What followed? Just what he foresaw, what  
 proved  
 The soundness of both judgments, — his, o' the  
 knaves

And fools, each trickster with his dupe, — and  
 theirs,

The people's, in what head and arm could help.  
 There was uprising, masks dropped, flags un-  
 furled,

Weapons outflourished in the wind, my faith!

Heavily did he let his fist fall plumb  
 On each perturber of the public peace,  
 No matter whose the wagging head it broke —  
 From bald-pate craft and greed and impudence  
 Of night-hawk at first chance to prowl and prey  
 For glory and a little gain beside,  
 Passing for eagle in the dusk of the age, —  
 To florid head-top, foamy patriotism  
 And tribunitary daring, breast laid bare  
 Through confidence in rectitude, with hand  
 On private pistol in the pocket: these  
 And all the dupes of these, who lent themselves  
 As dust and feather do, to help offence  
 O' the wind that whirls them at you, then sub-  
 sides

In safety somewhere, leaving filth afloat,  
 Annoyance you may brush from eyes and  
 beard, —

These he stopped: bade the wind's spite howl  
 or whine

Its worst outside the building, wind conceives  
 Meant to be pulled together and become  
 Its natural playground so. What foolishness  
 Of dust or feather proved importunate  
 And fell 'twixt thumb and finger, found them  
 gripe

To detriment of bulk and buoyancy.  
 Then followed silence and submission. Next,  
 The inevitable comment came on work  
 And work's cost: he was censured as profuse  
 Of human life and liberty: too swift  
 And thorough his procedure, who had lagged  
 At the outset, lost the opportunity  
 Through timid scruples as to right and wrong.  
 "There's no such certain mark of a small  
 mind"

(So did Sagacity explain the fault)

"As when it needs must square away and sink  
 To its own small dimensions, private scale  
 Of right and wrong, — humanity! the large,  
 The right and wrong of the universe, forsooth!  
 This man addressed himself to guard and  
 guide

Hohenstiel-Schwanganau. When the case de-  
 mands

He frustrate villany in the egg, unhatched,  
 With easy stamp and minimum of pang  
 E'en to the punished reptile, 'There's my oath  
 Restrains my foot,' objects our guide and  
 guard,

'I must leave guardianship and guidance now:  
 Rather than stretch one handbreadth of the  
 law,

I am bound to see it break from end to end.  
 First show me death! the body politic:  
 Then prescribe pill and potion, what may  
 please

Hohenstiel-Schwanganau! all is for her sake:  
 'T was she ordained my service should be so.  
 What if the event demonstrate her unwise,  
 If she unwilling the thing she willed before?  
 I hold to the letter and obey the bond  
 And leave her to perdition loyally.'

Whence followed thrice the expenditure we  
 blame

Of human life and liberty: for want  
 O' the by-blow, came deliberate butcher's-  
 work!"



"Elsewhere go carry your complaint!" bade he.

"Least, largest, there's one law for all the minds,

Here or above: be true at any price!

'T is just o' the great scale, that such happy stroke

Of falsehood would be found a failure. Truth Still stands unshaken at her base by me, Reigns paramount i' the world, for the large good

O' the long late generations, — I and you Forgotten like this buried foolishness! Not so the good I rooted in its grave."

This is why he refused to break his oath, Rather appealed to the people, gained the power

To act as he thought best, then used it, once For all, no matter what the consequence To knaves and fools. As thus began his sway, So, through its twenty years, one rule of right Sufficed him: govern for the many first, The poor mean multitude, all mouths and eyes: Bid the few, better favored in the brain, Be patient, nor presume on privilege, Help him or else be quiet, — never crave That he help them, — increase, forsooth, the gulf

Yawning so terribly 'twixt mind and mind I' the world here, which his purpose was to block

At bottom, were it by an inch, and bridge, If by a filament, no more, at top.

Equalize things a little! And the way He took to work that purpose out, was plain Enough to intellect and honesty

And — superstition, style it if you please, So long as you allow there was no lack O' the quality imperative in man — Reverence. You see deeper? thus saw he, And by the light he saw, must walk: how else Was he to do his part? a man's, with might And main, and not a faintest touch of fear, Sure he was in the hand of God who comes Before and after, with a work to do Which no man helps nor hinders. Thus the man, —

So timid when the business was to touch The uncertain order of humanity, Imperil, for a problematic cure Of grievance on the surface, any good I' the deep of things, dim yet discernible, — This same man, so irresolute before, Show him a true exerescence to cut sheer, A devil's graft on God's foundation-stock, Then — no complaint of indecision more! He wrenched out the whole canker, root and branch,

Deaf to who cried that earth would tumble in At its four corners if he touched a twig. Witness that lie of lies, arch-infamy, When the Republic, with her life involved In just this law — "Each people rules itself Its own way, not as any stranger please" — Turned, and for first proof she was living, bade Hohenstiel-Schwangau fasten on the throat Of the first neighbor that claimed benefit

O' the law herself established: "Hohenstiel For Hohenstiellers! Rome, by parity Of reasoning, for Romans? That 's a jest Wants proper treatment, — lancet - puncture suits

The proud flesh: Rome ape Hohenstiel for-sooth!"

And so the siege and slaughter and success Whereof we nothing doubt that Hohenstiel Will have to pay the price, in God's good time, Which does not always fall on Saturday When the world looks for wages. Anyhow, He found this infamy triumphant. Well: Sagacity suggested, make this speech!

"The work was none of mine: suppose wrong wait,

Stand over for redressing? Mine for me, My predecessors' work on their own head! Meantime, there's plain advantage, should we leave

Things as we find them. Keep Rome manacled

Hand and foot: no fear of unruliness! Her foes consent to even seem our friends So long, no longer. Then, there's glory got By boldness and bravado to the world: The disconcerted world must grin and bear The old saucy writing, — 'Grunt thereat who may,

So shall things be, for such my pleasure is — Hohenstiel-Schwangau's.' How that reads in Rome,

I' the capitol where Brennus broke his pate, And lends a flourish to our journalists!" Only, it was nor read nor flourished of, Since, not a moment did such glory stay Exeision of the canker! Out it came, Root and branch, with much roaring, and some blood,

And plentiful abuse of him from friend And foe. Who cared? Not Nature, who assuaged

The pain and set the patient on his legs Promptly: the better! had it been the worse, 'T is Nature you must try conclusions with, Not he, since nursing canker kills the sick For certain, while to cut may cure, at least.

"Ah," groaned a second time Sagacity, "Again the little mind, precipitate, Rash, rude, when even in the right, as here! The great mind knows the power of gentleness, Only tries force because persuasion fails. Had this man, by prelusive trumpet-blast, Signified, 'Truth and Justice mean to come, Nay, fast approach your threshold! Ere they knock,

See that the house be set in order, swept And garnished, windows shut, and doors thrown wide!

The free State comes to visit the free Church: Receive her! or . . . or . . . never mind what else!"

Thus moral suasion heralding brute force, How had he seen the old abuses die, And new life kindle here, there, everywhere, Roused simply by that mild yet potent spell — Beyond or beat of drum or stroke of sword — Public opinion!"

"How, indeed?" he asked,  
 "When all to see, after some twenty years,  
 Were your own fool-face waiting for the sight,  
 Faced by as wide a grin from ear to ear  
 O' the knaves who, while the fools were wait-  
 ing, worked —  
 Broke yet another generation's heart —  
 Twenty years' respite helping! Teach your  
 nurse  
 'Compliance with, before you suck, the teat!'  
 Find what that means, and meanwhile hold  
 your tongue!"

Whereof the war came which he knew must  
 be.

Now, this had proved the dry-rot of the race  
 He ruled o'er, that, i' the old day, when was  
 need

They fought for their own liberty and life,  
 Well did they fight, none better: whence, such  
 love

Of fighting somehow still for fighting's sake  
 Against no matter whose the liberty  
 And life, so long as self-conceit should crow  
 And clap the wing, while justice sheathed her  
 claw, —

That what had been the glory of the world  
 When thereby came the world's good, grew its  
 plague

Now that the champion-armor, donned to dare  
 The dragon once, was clattered up and down  
 Highway and by-path of the world at peace,  
 Merely to mask marauding, or for sake  
 O' the shine and rattle that appraised the fields  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau was a fighter yet,  
 And would be, till the weary world suppressed  
 Her peccant humors out of fashion now.  
 Accordingly the world spoke plain at last,  
 Promised to punish who next played with fire.

So, at his advent, such discomfiture  
 Taking its true shape of beneficence,  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau, half-sad and part-wise,  
 Sat: if with wistful eye reverting oft  
 To each pet weapon, rusty on its peg,  
 Yet, with a sigh of satisfaction too  
 That, peacefulness become the law, herself  
 Got the due share of godsend in its train,  
 Cried shame and took advantage quietly.  
 Still, so the dry-rot had been nursed into  
 Blood, bones and marrow, that, from worst to  
 best,

All, — clearest brains and soundest hearts save  
 here, —

All had this lie acceptable for law  
 Plain as the sun at noonday — "War is best,  
 Peace is worst; peace we only tolerate  
 As needful preparation for new war:  
 War may be for whatever end we will —  
 Peace only as the proper help thereto.  
 Such is the law of right and wrong for us  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau: for the other world,  
 As naturally, quite another law.  
 Are we content? The world is satisfied.  
 Discontent? Then the world must give us  
 leave  
 To strike right, left, and exercise our arm

Torpid of late through overmuch repose,  
 And show its strength is still superlative  
 At somebody's expense in life or limb:  
 Which done, — let peace succeed and last a  
 year!"

Such devil's-doctrine so was judged God's law,  
 We say, when this man stepped upon the stage,  
 That it had seemed a venial fault at most  
 Had he once more obeyed Sagacity.

"You come i' the happy interval of peace,  
 The favorable weariness from war:  
 Prolong it! artfully, as if intent  
 On ending peace as soon as possible.  
 Quietly so increase the sweets of ease  
 And safety, so employ the multitude,  
 Put hod and trowel so in idle hands,  
 So stuff and stop up wagging jaws with bread,  
 That selfishness shall surreptitiously  
 Do wisdom's office, whisper in the ear  
 Of Hohenstiel-Schwangau, there's a pleasant  
 feel

In being gently forced down, pinioned fast  
 To the easy arm-chair by the pleading arms  
 O' the world beseeching her to there abide  
 Content with all the harm done hitherto,  
 And let herself be petted in return,  
 Free to re-wage, in speech and prose and verse,  
 The old unjust wars, nay — in verse and prose  
 And speech, — to vaunt new victories, shall  
 prove

A plague o' the future, — so that words suffice  
 For present comfort, and no deeds denote  
 That — tired of illimitable line on line  
 Of boulevard-building, tired o' the theatre  
 With the tuneless thousand in their thrones  
 above,

For glory of the male intelligence,  
 And Nakedness in her due niche below,  
 For illustration of the female use —  
 That she, 'twixt yawn and sigh, prepares to  
 slip

Out of the arm-chair, wants fresh blood again  
 From over the boundary, to color-up  
 The sheeny sameness, keep the world aware  
 Hohenstiel-Schwangau's arm needs exercise  
 Despite the petting of the universe!  
 Come, you're a city-builder: what's the way  
 Wisdom takes when time needs that she entice  
 Some fierce tribe, castled on the mountain-peak,  
 Into the quiet and amenity  
 O' the meadow-land below? By crying 'Done  
 With fight now, down with fortress'? Rather  
 — 'Dare

On, dare ever, not a stone displaced!'  
 Cries Wisdom: 'Cradle of our ancestors,  
 Be bulwark, give our children safety still!  
 Who of our children please may stoop and taste  
 O' the valley-fatness, unafraid, — for why?  
 At first alarm they have thy mother-ribs  
 To run upon for refuge; foes forget  
 Scarcely that Terror on her vantage-coign,  
 Couchant supreme among the powers of air,  
 Watches — prepared to pounce — the country  
 wide!

Meanwhile the encouraged valley holds its own,  
 From the first hut's adventure in descent,  
 Half home, half hiding-place, — to dome and  
 spire

Befitting the assured metropolis :  
Nor means offence to the fort which caps the  
crag,

All undismantled of a turret-stone,  
And bears the banner-pole that creaks at times  
Embarrassed by the old emblazonment,  
When festal days are to commemorate :  
Otherwise left untenanted, no doubt,  
Since, never fear, our myriads from below  
Would rush, if needs were, man the walls again,  
Renew the exploits of the earlier time  
At moment's notice ! But till notice sound,  
Inhabit we in ease and opulence !

And so, till one day thus a notice sounds,  
Not trumpeted, but in a whisper-gust  
Fitfully playing through mute city streets  
At midnight weary of day's feast and game —  
' Friends, your famed fort's a ruin past repair !  
Its use is — to proclaim it had a use  
Obsolete long since. Climb and study there  
How to paint barbican and battlement  
I' the scenes of our new theatre ! We fight  
Now — by forbidding neighbors to sell steel  
Or buy wine, not by blowing out their brains !  
Moreover, while we let time sap the strength  
O' the walls omnipotent in menace once,  
Neighbors would seem to have prepared sur-  
prise —

Run up defences in a mushroom-growth,  
For all the world like what we boasted : brief —  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau's policy is peace ! ' ”

Ay, so Sagacity advised him filch  
Folly from fools ; handsomely substitute  
The dagger o' lath, while gay they sang and  
danced,  
For that long dangerous sword they liked to  
feel,  
Even at feast-time, clink and make friends  
start.

No ! he said : “ Hear the truth, and bear the  
truth,

And bring the truth to bear on all you are  
And do, assured that only good comes thence  
Whate'er the shape good take ! While I have  
rule,

Understand ! — war for war's sake, war for sake  
O' the good war gets you as war's sole excuse,  
Is damnable and damned shall be. You want  
Glory ? Why so do I, and so does God.  
Where is it found, — in this paraded shame, —  
One particle of glory ? Once you warred  
For liberty against the world, and won :  
There was the glory. Now, you fain would war  
Because the neighbor prospers overmuch, —  
Because there has been silence half-an-hour,  
Like Heaven on earth, without a cannon-shot  
Announcing Hohenstieler-Schwangauese  
Are minded to disturb the jubilee, —  
Because the loud tradition echoes faint,  
And who knows but posterity may doubt  
If the great deeds were ever done at all,  
Much less believe, were such to do again,  
So the event would follow : therefore, prove  
The old power, at the expense of somebody !  
Oh, Glory, — gilded bubble, bard and sage  
So nickname rightly, — would thy dance endure  
One moment, would thy vaunting make believe

Only one eye thy ball was solid gold,  
Hadst thou less breath to buoy thy vacancy  
Than a whole multitude expends in praise,  
Less range for roaming than from head to head  
Of a whole people ? Flit, fall, fly again,  
Only, fix never where the resolute hand  
May prick thee, prove the glassy lie thou art !  
Give me real intellect to reason with,  
No multitude, no entity that apes  
One wise man, being but a million fools !  
How and whence wishest glory, thou wise one ?  
Wouldst get it, — didst thyself guide Provi-  
dence, —

By stinting of his due each neighbor round  
In strength and knowledge and dexterity  
So as to have thy littleness grow large  
By all those somethings once, turned nothings  
now,

As children make a molehill mountainous  
By scooping out a trench around their pile,  
And saving so the mudwork from approach ?  
Quite otherwise the cheery game of life,  
True yet mimetic warfare, whereby man  
Does his best with his utmost, and so ends  
The victor most of all in fair defeat.

Who thinks, — would he have no one think be-  
side ?

Who knows, who does, — save his must learning  
die

And action cease ? Why, so our giant proves  
No better than a dwarf, once rivalry  
Prostrate around him. Let the whole race stand  
For him to try conclusions fairly with !  
Show me the great man would engage his peer  
Rather by grinning ' Cheat, thy gold is brass ! '  
Than granting ' Perfect piece of purest ore ! '  
Still, is it less good mintage, this of mine ? '  
Well, and these right and sound results of soul  
I' the strong and healthy one wise man, — shall  
such

Be vainly sought for, scornfully renounced  
I' the multitude that make the entity —  
The people ? — to what purpose, if no less,  
In power and purity of soul, below  
The reach of the unit than, by multiplied  
Might of the body, vulgarized the more,  
Above, in thick and threefold brutishness ?  
See ! you accept such one wise man, myself :  
Wiser or less wise, still I operate  
From my own stock of wisdom, nor exact  
Of other sort of natures you admire,  
That whoso rhymes a sonnet pays a tax,  
Who paints a landscape dips brush at his cost,  
Who scores a septett true for strings and wind  
Mulcted must be — else how should I impose  
Properly, attitudinize aright,  
Did such conflicting claims as these divert  
Hohenstiel-Schwanganau from observing me ?  
Therefore, what I find facile, you be sure,  
With effort or without it, you shall dare —  
You, I aspire to make my better self  
And truly the Great Nation. No more war  
For war's sake, then ! and, — seeing, wickedness  
Springs out of folly, — no more foolish dread  
O' the neighbor waxing too inordinate  
A rival, through his gain of wealth and ease !  
What ? — keep me patient, Powers ! — the peo-  
ple here,



Earth presses to her heart, nor owns a pride  
Above her pride i' the race all flame and air  
And aspiration to the boundless Great,  
The incommensurably Beautiful—  
Whose very falterings groundward come of  
flight

Urged by a pinion all too passionate  
For heaven and what it holds of gloom and  
glow:

Bravest of thinkers, bravest of the brave  
Doers, exalt in Science, rapturous  
In Art, the — more than all — magnetic race  
To fascinate their fellows, mould mankind  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau-fashion, — these, what?  
— these

Will have to abdicate their primacy  
Should such a nation sell them steel untaxed,  
And such another take itself, on hire  
For the natural sennight, somebody for lord  
Unpatronized by me whose back was turned?  
Or such another yet would fain build bridge,  
Lay rail, drive tunnel, busy its poor self  
With its appropriate fancy: so there's —  
flash —

Hohenstiel-Schwangau up in arms at once!  
Genius has somewhat of the infantine:  
But of the childish, not a touch nor taint  
Except through self-will, which, being foolish-  
ness,

Is certain, soon or late, of punishment.  
Which Providence avert! — and that it may  
Avert what both of us would so deserve,  
No foolish dread o' the neighbor, I enjoin!  
By consequence, no wicked war with him,  
While I rule!

“Does that mean — no war at all  
When just the wickedness I here proscribe  
Comes, haply, from the neighbor? Does my  
speech

Precede the praying that you beat the sword  
To ploughshare, and the spear to pruning-hook,  
And sit down henceforth under your own vine  
And fig-tree through the sleepy summer month,  
Letting what hurly-burly please explode  
On the other side the mountain-frontier? No,  
Beloved! I foresee and I announce

Necessity of warfare in one case,  
For one cause: one way, I bid broach the blood  
O' the world. For truth and right, and only  
right

And truth, — right, truth, on the absolute scale  
of God,

No pettiness of man's admeasurement, —  
In such case only, and for such one cause.  
Fight your hearts out, whatever fate betide  
Hands energetic to the uttermost!

Lie not! Endure no lie which needs your heart  
And hand to push it out of mankind's path —

No lie that lets the natural forces work  
Too long ere lay it plain and pulverized!  
Seeing man's life lasts only twenty years!  
And such a lie, before both man and God,  
Proving, at this time present, Austria's rule  
O'er Italy, — for Austria's sake the first,  
Italy's next, and our sake last of all,  
Come with me and deliver Italy!  
Smite hip and thigh until the oppressor leave

Free from the Adriatic to the Alps  
The oppressed one! We were they who laid  
her low

In the old bad day when Villany braved Truth  
And Right, and laughed 'Henceforward, God  
deposed,

Satan we set to rule forevermore  
I' the world!' — whereof to stop the conse-  
quence,

And for atonement of false glory there  
Gaped at and gabbled over by the world,  
I purpose to get God enthroned again  
For what the world will gird at as sheer shame  
I' the cost of blood and treasure. 'All for  
naught —

Not even, say, some patch of province, splice  
O' the frontier? — some snug honorarium-fee  
Shut into glove and pocketed apace?'  
(Questions Sagacity) 'in deference

To the natural susceptibility  
Of folks at home, unwitting of that pitch  
You soar to, and misdoubting if Truth, Right  
And the other such augustnesses repay  
Expenditure in coin o' the realm, — but prompt  
To recognize the cession of Savoy  
And Nice as marketable value!' No,  
Sagacity, go preach to Metternich,  
And, sermon ended, stay where he resides!  
Hohenstiel-Schwangau, you and I must march  
The other road! war for the hate of war,  
Not love, this once!" So Italy was free.

What else noteworthy and commendable  
I' the man's career? — that he was resolute —  
No trepidation, much less treachery  
On his part, should imperil from its poise  
The ball o' the world, heaved up at such expense  
Of pains so far, and ready to rebound,  
Let but a finger maladroitly fall,  
Under pretence of making fast and sure  
The inch gained by late volubility,  
And run itself back to the ancient rest  
At foot o' the mountain. Thus he ruled, gave  
proof

The world had gained a point, progressive so,  
By choice, this time, as will and power con-  
curred,

O' the fittest man to rule; not chance of birth,  
Or such-like dice-throw. Oft Sagacity  
Was at his ear: "Confirm this clear advance,  
Support this wise procedure! You, elect  
O' the people, mean to justify their choice  
And out-king all the kingly imbeciles;  
But that's just half the enterprise: remains  
You find them a successor like yourself,  
In head and heart and eye and hand and aim.  
Or all done's undone; and whom hope to  
mould

So like you as the pupil Nature sends,  
The son and heir's completeness which you  
lack?

Lack it no longer! Wed the pick o' the world,  
Where'er you think you find it. Should she be  
A queen, — tell Hohenstiellers-Schwangaueses,  
'So do the old enthroned decrepitudes  
Acknowledge, in the rotten hearts of them,  
Their knell is knolled, they hasten to make  
peace

With the new order, recognize in me  
Your right to constitute what king you will,  
Cringe therefore crown in hand and bride on  
arm,

To both of us: we triumph, I suppose! '  
Is it the other sort of rank? — bright eye,  
Soft smile, and so forth, all her queenly boast?  
Undaunted the exordium — 'I, the man  
O' the people, with the people mate myself:  
So stand, so fall. Kings, keep your crowns and  
brides!

Our progeny (if Providence agree)  
Shall live to tread the baubles underfoot  
And bid the scarecrows consort with their kin.  
For son, as for his sire, be the free wife  
In the free state! "

That is, Sagacity

Would prop up one more lie, the most of all  
Pernicious fancy that the son and heir  
Receives the genius from the sire, himself  
Transmits as surely, — ask experience else!  
Which answers, — never was so plain a truth  
As that God drops his seed of heavenly flame  
Just where he wills on earth: sometimes  
where man

Seems to tempt — such the accumulated store  
Of faculties — one spark to fire the heap;  
Sometimes where, fireball-like, it falls upon  
The naked unpreparedness of rock,  
Burns, beaconing the nations through their  
night.

Faculties, fuel for the flame? All helps  
Come, ought to come, or come not, crossed by  
chance,  
From culture and transmission. What's your  
want

I' the son and heir? Sympathy, aptitude,  
Teachableness, the fuel for the flame?  
You'll have them for your pains: but the  
flame's self,

The novel thought of God shall light the world?  
No, poet, though your offspring rhyme and  
chime

I' the cradle, — painter, no, for all your pet  
Draws his first eye, beats Salvatore's boy, —  
And thrice no, statesman, should your progeny  
Tie bib and tucker with no tape but red,  
And make a foolscap-kite of protocols!

Critic and copyist and bureaucrat  
To heart's content! The seed o' the apple-  
tree

Brings forth another tree which bears a crab:  
'T is the great gardener grafts the excellence  
On wildings where he will.

"How plain I view,  
Among those misty years 'twixt me and  
Rome" —

(Such the man's answer to Sagacity)  
"The little wayside temple, half-way down  
To a mild river that makes oxen white  
Miraculously, un-mouse-colored skin,  
Or so the Roman country people dream!  
I view that sweet small shrub-embedded shrine  
On the declivity, was sacred once  
To a transmuting Genius of the land,  
Could touch and turn its dunest natures bright,

— Since Italy means the Land of the Ox, we  
know.

Well, how was it the due succession fell  
From priest to priest who ministered i' the cool  
Calm fane o' the Clitumnian god? The sire  
Brought forth a son and sacerdotal sprout,  
Endowed instinctively with good and grace  
To suit the gliding gentleness below —  
Did he? Tradition tells another tale.

Each priest obtained his predecessor's staff,  
Robe, fillet and insignia, blamelessly,  
By springing out of ambush, soon or late,  
And slaying him: the initiative rite  
Simply was murder, save that murder took,  
I' the case, another and religious name.

So it was once, is now, shall ever be  
With genius and its priesthood in this world:  
The new power slays the old — but handsomely.

There he lies, not diminished by an inch  
Of stature that he graced the altar with,  
Though somebody of other bulk and build  
Cries, 'What a goodly personage lies here  
Reddening the water where the bulrush roots!  
May I conduct the service in his place,  
Decently and in order, as did he,

And, as he did not, keep a wary watch  
When meditating 'neath yon willow shade!'  
Find out your best man, sure the son of him  
Will prove best man again, and, better still  
Somehow than best, the grandson-prodigy!

You think the world would last another day  
Did we so make us masters of the trick  
Whereby the works go, we could pre-arrange  
Their play and reach perfection when we please?  
Depend on it, the change and the surprise  
Are part o' the plan: 't is we wish steadiness;  
Nature prefers a motion by unrest,  
Advancement through this force which jostles  
that.

And so, since much remains i' the world to  
see,

Here 's the world still, affording God the  
sight."

Thus did the man refute Sagacity,  
Ever at this old whisper in his ear:

"Here are you picked out, by a miracle,  
And placed conspicuously enough, folks say  
And you believe, by Providence outright  
Taking a new way — nor without success —  
To put the world upon its mettle: good!  
But Fortune alternates with Providence;  
Resource is soon exhausted. Never count  
On such a happy hit occurring twice!  
Try the old method next time!"

"Old enough,"

(At whisper in his ear, the laugh outbroke,  
"And made the most discredited of all,  
By just the men and women who make boast  
They are kings and queens thereby! Mere  
self-defence

Should teach them, on one chapter of the law  
Must be no sort of trifling — chastity:  
They stand or fall, as their progenitors

Were chaste or unchaste. Now, run eye  
around

My crowned acquaintance, give each life its  
look

And no more, — why, you 'd think each life  
was led

Purposely for example of what pains  
Who leads it took to cure the prejudice,  
And prove there 's nothing so unprovable  
As who is who, what son of what a sire,  
And — inferentially — how faint the chance  
That the next generation needs to fear  
Another fool o' the selfsame type as he  
Happily regnant now by right divine  
And luck o' the pillow! No: select your lord  
By the direct employment of your brains  
As best you may, — bad as the blunder prove,  
A far worse evil stank beneath the sun  
When some legitimate blockhead managed so  
Matters that high time was to interfere,  
Though interference came from hell itself  
And not the blind mad miserable mob  
Happily ruled so long by pillow-luck  
And divine right, — by lies in short, not truth.  
And meanwhile use the allotted minute . . ."

One, —

Two, three, four, five — yes, five the pendule  
warns!

Eh? Why, this wild work wanders past all  
bound

And bearing! Exile, Leicester Square, the life  
I' the old gay miserable time, rehearsed,  
Tried on again like cast clothes, still to serve  
At a pinch, perhaps? "Who's who?" was  
aptly asked,

Since certainly I am not I! since when?

Where is the bud-mouthed arbitress? A nod  
Out-Homerizing Homer! Stay — there flits the  
clue

I fain would find the end of! Yes, — "Mean-  
while,

Use the allotted minute!" Well, you see,  
(Veracious and imaginary Thiers,  
Who map out thus the life I might have led,  
But did not, — all the worse for earth and  
me, —

Doff spectacles, wipe pen, shut book, decamp!)  
You see 't is easy in heroics! Plain

Pedestrian speech shall help me perorate.  
Ah, if one had no need to use the tongue!

How obvious and how easy 't is to talk  
Inside the soul, a ghostly dialogue —

Instincts with guesses, — instinct, guess, again  
With dubious knowledge, half - experience :  
each

And all the interlocutors alike

Subordinating, — as decorum bids,

Oh, never fear! but still decisively, —

Claims from without that take too high a tone,  
— ("God wills this, man wants that, the dig-  
nity

Prescribed a prince would wish the other  
thing") —

Putting them back to insignificance

Beside one intimatest fact — myself

Am first to be considered, since I live

Twenty years longer and then end, perhaps!

But, where one ceases to soliloquize,  
Somehow the motives, that did well enough

I' the darkness, when you bring them into  
light

Are found, like those famed cave-fish, to lack  
eye

And organ for the upper magnitudes.

The other common creatures, of less fine

Existence, that acknowledge earth and heaven,

Have it their own way in the argument.

Yes, forced to speak, one stoops to say — one's  
aim

Was — what it peradventure should have  
been:

To renovate a people, mend or end

That bane come of a blessing meant the  
world —

Inordinate culture of the sense made quick

By soul, — the lust o' the flesh, lust of the eye,

And pride of life, — and, consequent on these,

The worship of that prince o' the power o' the  
air

Who paints the cloud and fills the emptiness

And bids his votaries, famishing for truth,

Feed on a lie.

Alack, one lies one's self

Even in the stating that one's end was truth,

Truth only, if one states as much in words!

Give me the inner chamber of the soul

For obvious easy argument! 't is there

One pits the silent truth against a lie —

Truth which breaks shell a careless simple bird,

Nor wants a gorget nor a beak filed fine,

Steel spurs and the whole armory o' the tongue,

To equalize the odds. But, do your best,

Words have to come: and somehow words  
deflect

As the best cannon ever rifled will.

"Deflect" indeed! nor merely words from  
thoughts

But names from facts: "Clitumnus" did I  
say?

As if it had been his ox-whitening wave

Whereby folk practised that grim cult of old —

The murder of their temple's priest by who

Would qualify for his succession. Sure —

Nemi was the true lake's style. Dream had  
need

Of the ox-whitening peace of prettiness

And so confused names, well known once  
awake.

So, i' the Residenz yet, not Leicester Square,

Alone, — no such congenial intercourse! —

My reverie concludes, as dreaming should,

With daybreak: nothing done and over yet,

Except cigars! The adventure thus may be,

Or never needs to be at all: who knows?

My Cousin-Duke, perhaps, at whose hard head

— Is it, now — is this letter to be launched,

The sight of whose gray oblong, whose grim  
seal,

Set all these fancies floating for an hour?

Twenty years are good gain, come what come  
will!

Double or quits! The letter goes! Or stays?



## FIFINE AT THE FAIR

DONE ELVIRE

Vous plaît-il, don Juan, nous éclaircir ces beaux mystères?

DON JUAN

Madame, à vous dire la vérité . . .

DONE ELVIRE

Ah! que vous savez mal vous défendre pour un homme de cour, et qui doit être accoutumé à ces sortes de choses! J'ai pitié de vous voir la confusion que vous avez. Que ne vous armez-vous le front d'une noble effronterie? Que ne me jurez-vous que vous êtes toujours dans les mêmes sentimens pour moi, que vous m'aimez toujours avec une ardeur sans égale, et que rien n'est capable de vous détacher de moi que la mort? — (MOLIERE, *Don Juan*, Acte i. Sc 3.)

DONNA ELVIRA

Don Juan, might you please to help one give a guess,  
Hold up a candle, clear this fine mysteriousness?

DON JUAN

Madam, if needs I must declare the truth, — in short . . .

DONNA ELVIRA

Fie, for a man of mode, accustomed at the court  
To such a style of thing, how awkwardly my lord  
Attempts defence! You move compassion, that's the word—  
Dumb-founded and chapfallen! Why don't you arm your brow  
With noble impudence? Why don't you swear and vow  
No sort of change is come to any sentiment  
You ever had for me? Affection holds the bent,  
You love me now as erst, with passion that makes pale  
All ardor else: nor aught in nature can avail  
To separate us two, save what, in stopping breath,  
May peradventure stop devotion likewise — death!

## PROLOGUE

AMPHIBIAN

THE fancy I had to-day,  
Fancy which turned a fear!  
I swam far out in the bay,  
Since waves laughed warm and clear.

I lay and looked at the sun,  
The noon-sun looked at me:  
Between us two, no one  
Live creature, that I could see.

Yes! There came floating by  
Me, who lay floating too,  
Such a strange butterfly!  
Creature as dear as new:

Because the membraned wings  
So wonderful, so wide,  
So sun-suffused, were things  
Like soul and naught beside.

A handbreadth overhead!  
All of the sea my own,  
It owned the sky instead;  
Both of us were alone.

I never shall join its flight,  
For, naught buoys flesh in air.  
If it touch the sea — good night!  
Death sure and swift waits there.

Can the insect feel the better  
For watching the uncouth play  
Of limbs that slip the fetter,  
Pretend as they were not clay?

Undoubtedly I rejoice  
That the air comports so well  
With a creature which had the choice  
Of the land once. Who can tell?

What if a certain soul  
Which early slipped its sheath,  
And has for its home the whole  
Of heaven, thus look beneath,

Thus watch one who, in the world,  
Both lives and likes life's way,  
Nor wishes the wings unfurled  
That sleep in the worm, they say ?

But sometimes when the weather  
Is blue, and warm waves tempt  
To free one's self of tether,  
And try a life exempt

From worldly noise and dust,  
In the sphere which overbrims  
With passion and thought, — why, just  
Unable to fly, one swims !

By passion and thought upborne,  
One smiles to one's self — "They fare  
Scarce better, they need not scorn  
Our sea, who live in the air !"

Emancipate through passion  
And thought, with sea for sky,  
We substitute, in a fashion,  
For heaven — poetry :

Which sea, to all intent,  
Gives flesh such noon-disport  
As a finer element  
Affords the spirit-sort.

Whatever they are, we seem :  
Imagine the thing they know ;  
All deeds they do, we dream ;  
Can heaven be else but so ?

And meantime, yonder streak  
Meets the horizon's verge ;  
That is the land, to seek  
If we tire or dread the surge :

Land the solid and safe —  
To welcome again (confess !)  
When, high and dry, we chafe  
The body, and don the dress.

Does she look, pity, wonder  
At one who mimics flight,  
Swims — heaven above, sea under,  
Yet always earth in sight ?

## FIFINE AT THE FAIR

## I

O TRIP and skip, Elvire ! Link arm in arm  
with me !

Like husband and like wife, together let us see  
The tumbling-troop arrayed, the strollers on  
their stage,  
Drawn up and under arms, and ready to engage.

## II

Now, who supposed the night would play us  
such a prank ?  
— That what was raw and brown, rough pole  
and shaven plank,  
Mere bit of hoarding, half by trestle propped,  
half tub,

Would flaunt it forth as brisk as butterfly from  
grub ?

This comes of sun and air, of Autumn afternoon,  
And Pornic and Saint Gille, whose feast affords  
the boon —

This scaffold turned parterre, this flower-bed in  
full blow,

Bateleurs, baladines ! We shall not miss the  
show !

They pace and promenade ; they presently will  
dance :

What good were else i' the drum and fife ? O  
pleasant land of France !

## III

Who saw them make their entry ? At wink  
of eve, be sure !

They love to steal a march, nor lightly risk the  
lure.

They keep their treasure hid, nor stale (impro-  
vident)

Before the time is ripe, each wonder of their  
tent —

Yon six-legged sheep, to wit, and he who beats  
a gong,

Lifts cap and waves salute, exhilarates the  
throng —

Their ape of many years and much adventure,  
grim

And gray with pitying fools who find a joke in  
him.

Or, best, the human beauty, Mimi, Toinette,  
Fifine,

Tricot fines down if fat, padding plumps up if  
lean,

Ere, shedding petticoat, modesty, and such toys,  
They bounce forth, squalid girls transformed  
to gamesome boys.

## IV

No, no, thrice, Pornic, no ! Perpend the  
authentic tale !

'T was not for every Gawain to gaze upon the  
Grail !

But whoso went his rounds, when flew bat,  
flitted midge,

Might hear across the dusk, — where both  
roads join the bridge,

Hard by the little port, — creak a slow caravan,  
A chimneyed house on wheels ; so shyly-  
sheathed, began

To broaden out the bud which, bursting un-  
aware,

Now takes away our breath, queen-tulip of the  
Fair !

## V

Yet morning promised much : for, pitched  
and slung and reared

On terrace 'neath the tower, 'twixt tree and  
tree appeared

An airy structure ; how the pennon from its  
dome,

Frenetic to be free, makes one red stretch for  
home !

The home far and away, the distance where  
lives joy,

The cure, at once and ever, of world and world's annoy;  
 Since, what lolls full in front, a furlong from the booth,  
 But ocean-idleness, blue-blue and millpond-smooth?

## VI

Frenetic to be free! And, do you know, there beats  
 Something within my breast, as sensitive? — repeats  
 The fever of the flag? My heart makes just the same  
 Passionate stretch, fires up for lawlessness, lays claim  
 To share the life they lead: losels, who have and use  
 The hour what way they will, — applaud them or abuse  
 Society, whereof myself am at the beck,  
 Whose call obey, and stoop to burden stiffest neck!

## VII

Why is it that when'er a faithful few combine  
 To cast allegiance off, play truant, nor repine,  
 Agree to bear the worst, forego the best in store  
 For us who, left behind, do duty as of yore, —  
 Why is it that, disgraced, they seem to relish life the more?  
 — Seem as they said, "We know a secret passing praise  
 Or blame of such as you! Remain! we go our ways  
 With something you o'erlooked, forgot or chose to sweep  
 Clean out of door: our pearl picked from your rubbish-heap.  
 You care not for your loss, we calculate our gain.  
 All's right. Are you content? Why, so let things remain!  
 To the wood then, to the wild: free life, full liberty!"  
 And when they rendezvous beneath the inclement sky,  
 House by the hedge, reduced to brute-companionship,  
 — Misguided ones who gave society the slip,  
 And find too late how boon a parent they despised,  
 What ministration spurned, how sweet and civilized —  
 Then, left alone at last with self-sought wretchedness,  
 No interloper else! — why is it, can we guess? —  
 At somebody's expense, goes up so frank a laugh?  
 As though they held the corn, and left us only chaff  
 From garners crammed and closed. And we indeed are clever  
 If we get grain as good, by threshing straw forever!

## VIII

Still, truants as they are and purpose yet to be,  
 That nowise needs forbid they venture — as you see —  
 To cross confine, approach the once familiar roof  
 O' the kindly race their flight estranged: stand half aloof,  
 Sidle half up, press near, and proffer wares for sale  
 — In their phrase, — make in ours, white levy of black mail.  
 They, of the wild, require some touch of us the tame,  
 Since clothing, meat and drink, mean money all the same.

## IX

If hunger, proverbs say, allures the wolf from wood,  
 Much more the bird must dare a dash at something good:  
 Must snatch up, bear away in beak, the trifle-treasure  
 To wood and wild, and then — oh, how enjoy at leisure!  
 Was never tree-built nest, you climbed and took, of bird,  
 (Rare city-visitant, talked of, scarce seen or heard.)  
 But, when you would dissect the structure, piece by piece,  
 You found, enwreathed amid the country-product — fleece  
 And feather, thistle-fluffs and bearded windlestraws —  
 Some shred of foreign silk, unravelling of gauze,  
 Bit, maybe, of brocade, mid fur and blow-bell-down:  
 Filched plainly from mankind, dear tribute paid by town,  
 Which proved how oft the bird had plucked up heart of grace,  
 Swooped down at waif and stray, made fur-tively our place  
 Pay tax and toll, then borne the booty to enrich  
 Her paradise i' the waste; the how and why of which,  
 That is the secret, there the mystery that stings!

## X

For, what they traffic in, consists of just the things  
 We, — proud ones who so scorn dwellers without the pale,  
 Bateleurs, baladines, white leviers of black mail, —  
 I say, they sell what we most pique us that we keep!  
 How comes it, all we hold so dear they count so cheap?



## XI

What price should you impose, for instance, on  
 repute,  
 Good fame, your own good fame and family's  
 to boot?  
 Stay start of quick moustache, arrest the angry  
 rise  
 Of eyebrow! All I asked is answered by sur-  
 prise.  
 Now tell me: are you worth the cost of a cigar?  
 Go boldly, enter booth, disburse the coin at bar  
 Of doorway where presides the master of the  
 troop,  
 And forthwith you survey his Graces in a  
 group,  
 Live Picture, picturesque no doubt and close  
 to life;  
 His sisters, right and left; the Grace in front,  
 his wife.  
 Next, who is this performs the feat of the Tra-  
 peze?  
 Lo, she is launched, look — fie, the fairy! —  
 how she flees  
 O'er all those heads thrust back, — mouths,  
 eyes, one gape and stare, —  
 No scrap of skirt impedes free passage through  
 the air,  
 Till, plumb on the other side, she lights and  
 laughs again,  
 That fairy-form, whereof each muscle, nay,  
 each vein  
 The curious may inspect, — his daughter that  
 he sells  
 Each rustic for five sous. Desiderate aught  
 else  
 O' the vendor? As you leave his show, why,  
 joke the man!  
 "You cheat: your six-legged sheep, I recollect,  
 began  
 Both life and trade, last year, trimmed prop-  
 erly and clipt,  
 As the Twin-headed Babe, and Human Nonde-  
 script!"  
 What does he care? You paid his price, may  
 pass your jest.  
 So values he repute, good fame, and all the  
 rest!

## XII

But try another tack; say: "I indulge ca-  
 price,  
 Who am Don and Duke, and Knight, beside, o'  
 the Golden Fleece,  
 And, never mind how rich. Abandon this  
 career!  
 Have hearth and home, nor let your woman-  
 kind appear  
 Without as multiplied a coating as protects  
 An onion from the eye! Become, in all respects,  
 God-fearing householder, subsistent by brain-  
 skill,  
 Hand-labor; win your bread whatever way  
 you will,  
 So it be honestly, — and, while I have a purse,  
 Means shall not lack!" — his thanks will be  
 the roundest curse  
 That ever rolled from lip.

## XIII

Now, what is it? — returns  
 The question — heartens so this losel that he  
 spurns  
 All we so prize? I want, put down in black  
 and white,  
 What compensating joy, unknown and infin-  
 ite,  
 Turns lawlessness to law, makes destitution —  
 wealth,  
 Vice — virtue, and disease of soul and body —  
 health?

## XIV

Ah, the slow shake of head, the melancholy  
 smile,  
 The sigh almost a sob! What's wrong, was  
 right erewhile?  
 Why are we two at once such ocean-width  
 apart?  
 Pale fingers press my arm, and sad eyes probe  
 my heart.  
 Why is the wife in trouble?

## XV

This way, this way, Fifine!  
 Here's she, shall make my thoughts be surer  
 what they mean!  
 First let me read the signs, portray you past  
 mistake  
 The gypsy's foreign self, no swarth our sun  
 could bake.  
 Yet where's a woolly trace degrades the wiry  
 hair?  
 And note the Greek-nymph nose, and — oh, my  
 Hebrew pair  
 Of eye and eye — o'erarched by velvet of the  
 mole —  
 That swim as in a sea, that dip and rise and  
 roll,  
 Spilling the light around! While either ear is  
 cut  
 Thin as a dusk-leaved rose carved from a  
 cocoanut.  
 And then, her neck! now, grant you had the  
 power to deck,  
 Just as your fancy pleased, the bistre-length of  
 neck,  
 Could lay, to shine against its shade, a moon-  
 like row  
 Of pearls, each round and white as bubble  
 Cupids blow  
 Big out of mother's milk, — what pearl-moon  
 would surpass  
 That string of mock-turquoise, those alman-  
 dines of glass,  
 Where girlhood terminates? for with breasts'-  
 birth commence  
 The boy, and page-costume, till pink and im-  
 pudence  
 End admirably all: complete the creature  
 trips  
 Our way now, brings sunshine upon her span-  
 gled hips,  
 As here she fronts us full, with pose half-  
 frank, half-fierce!

## XVI

Words urged in vain, Elvire ! You waste  
 your quart and tierce,  
 Lunge at a phantom here, try fence in fairy-  
 land.  
 For me, I own defeat, ask but to understand  
 The acknowledged victory of whom I call my  
 queen,  
 Sexless and bloodless sprite : though mischiev-  
 ous and mean,  
 Yet free and flower-like too, with loveliness  
 for law,  
 And self-sustainment made morality.

## XVII

## A flaw

Do you account i' the lily, of lands which  
 travellers know,  
 That, just as golden gloom supersedes Northern  
 snow  
 I' the chalice, so, about each pistil, spice is  
 packed, —  
 Deliriously - drugged scent, in lieu of odor  
 lacked,  
 With us, by bee and moth, their banquet to en-  
 hance  
 At morn and eve, when dew, the chilly suste-  
 nance,  
 Needs mixture of some chaste and temperate  
 perfume ?  
 I ask, is she in fault who guards such golden  
 gloom,  
 Such dear and damning scent, by who cares  
 what devices,  
 And takes the idle life of insects she entices  
 When, drowned to heart's desire, they satiate  
 the inside  
 O' the lily, mark her wealth and manifest her  
 pride ?

## XVIII

But, wiser, we keep off, nor tempt the acrid  
 juice ;  
 Discreet we peer and praise, put rich things to  
 right use.  
 No flavorous venom'd bell, — the rose it is, I  
 wot,  
 Only the rose, we pluck and place, unwrong'd  
 a jot,  
 No worse for homage done by every devotee,  
 I' the proper loyal throne, on breast where rose  
 should be.  
 Or if the simpler sweets we have to choose  
 among,  
 Would taste between our teeth, and give its toy  
 the tongue, —  
 O gorgeous poison-plague, on thee no hearts are  
 set !  
 We gather daisy meek, or maiden violet :  
 I think it is Elvire we love, and not Fifine.

## XIX

"How does she make my thoughts be sure of  
 what they mean ?"  
 Judge and be just ! Suppose, an age and time  
 long past  
 Renew for our behoof one pageant more, the last

O' the kind, sick Louis liked to see defile be-  
 tween  
 Him and the yawning grave, its passage served  
 to screen.  
 With eye as gray as lead, with cheek as brown  
 as bronze,  
 Here where we stand, shall sit and suffer Louis  
 Onze :  
 The while from yonder tent parade forth, not  
 — oh, no —  
 Bateleurs, baladines ! but range themselves  
 a-row  
 Those well-sung women-worthies whereof loud  
 fame still finds  
 Some echo linger faint, less in our hearts than  
 minds.

## XX

See, Helen ! pushed in front o' the world's  
 worst night and storm.  
 By Lady Venus' hand on shoulder : the sweet  
 form  
 Shrinkingly prominent, though mighty, like a  
 moon  
 Outbreaking from a cloud, to put harsh things  
 in tune,  
 And magically bring mankind to acquiesce  
 In its own ravage, — call no curse upon, but  
 bless  
 (Beldame, a moment since) the outbreaking  
 beauty, now.  
 That casts o'er all the blood a candor from her  
 brow.  
 See, Cleopatra ! bared, the entire and sinuous  
 wealth  
 O' the shining shape ; each orb of indolent ripe  
 health,  
 Captured, just where it finds a fellow-orb as fine  
 I' the body : traced about by jewels which out-  
 line,  
 Fire-frame, and keep distinct, perfections — lest  
 they melt  
 To soft smooth unity ere half their hold be  
 feited :  
 Yet, o'er that white and wonder, a soul's pre-  
 dominance  
 I' the head so high and haught — except one  
 thievish glance,  
 From back of oblong eye, intent to count the  
 slain.  
 Hush, — oh, I know, Elvire ! Be patient, more  
 remain !  
 What say you to Saint ? . . . Pish ! Whatever  
 Saint you please,  
 Cold-pinnac'd aloft o' the spire, prays calm the  
 seas  
 From Pornic Church, and oft at midnight  
 (peasants say)  
 Goes walking out to save from shipwreck :  
 well she may !  
 For think how many a year has she been con-  
 versant  
 With naught but winds and rains, sharp cour-  
 tesy and scant  
 O' the wintry snow that coats the pent-house of  
 her shrine,  
 Covers each knee, climbs near, but spares the  
 smile benign

Which seems to say, "I looked for scarce so much from earth!"  
 She follows, one long thin pure finger in the girth  
 O' the girdle—whence the folds of garment, eye and eye,  
 Besprent with fleurs-de-lys, flow down and multiply  
 Around her feet, — and one, pressed hushingly to lip:  
 As if, while thus we made her march, some foundering ship  
 Might miss her from her post, nearer to God halfway  
 In heaven, and she inquired, "Who that treads earth can pray?"  
 I doubt if even she, the unashamed! though, sure,  
 She must have stripped herself only to clothe the poor."

## XXI

This time, enough 's a feast, not one more form, Elvire!  
 Provided you allow that, bringing up the rear  
 O' the bevy I am loth to — by one bird — curtail,  
 First note may lead to last, an octave crown the scale,  
 And this femininity be followed — do not flout! —  
 By — who concludes the masque with curtesy, smile and pout,  
 Submissive-mutinous? No other than Fifine  
 Points toe, imposes haunch, and pleads with tambourine!

## XXII

"Well, what 's the meaning here, what does the masque intend,  
 Which, unabridged, we saw file past us, with no end  
 Of fair ones, till Fifine came, closed the catalogue?"

## XXIII

Task fancy yet again! Suppose you cast this clog  
 Of flesh away (that weeps, upbraids, withstands my arm)  
 And pass to join your peers, paragon charm with charm,  
 As I shall show you may, — prove best of beauty there!  
 Yourself confront yourself! This, help me to declare  
 That yonder-you, who stand beside these, braving each  
 And blinking none, beat her who lured to Troy-town beach  
 The purple prows of Greece, — nay, beat Fifine; whose face,  
 Mark how I will inflame, when seigneur-like I place  
 I' the tambourine, to spot the strained and piteous blank  
 Of pleading parchment, see, no less than a whole face!

## XXIV

Ah, do you mark the brown o' the cloud, made bright with fire  
 Through and through? as, old wiles succeeding to desire,  
 Quality (you and I) once more compassionate  
 A hapless infant, doomed (fie on such partial fate!)  
 To sink the inborn shame, waive privilege of sex,  
 And posture as you see, support the nods and becks  
 Of clowns that have their stare, nor always pay its price;  
 An infant born perchance as sensitive and nice  
 As any soul of you, proud dames, whom destiny  
 Keeps uncontaminate from stigma of the sty  
 She wallows in! You draw back skirts from filth like her  
 Who, possibly, braves scorn, if, scorned, she minister  
 To age, want, and disease of parents one or both;  
 Nay, peradventure, stoops to degradation, loth  
 That some just-budding sister, the dew yet on the rose,  
 Should have to share in turn the ignoble trade, — who knows?

## XXV

Ay, who indeed! Myself know nothing, but dare guess  
 That off she trips in haste to hand the booty . . . yes,  
 'Twixt fold and fold of tent, there looms he, dim-discerned,  
 The ogre, lord of all those lavish lirubs have earned!  
 — Brute-beast-face, — ravage, scar, scowl and malignancy, —  
 O' the Strong Man, whom (no doubt, her husband) by and by  
 You shall behold do feats: lift up nor quail beneath  
 A quintal in each hand, a cart-wheel 'twixt his teeth.  
 Oh, she prefers sheer strength to ineffective grace,  
 Breeding and culture! seeks the essential in the case!  
 To him has flown my franc; and welcome, if that squint  
 O' the diabolic eye so soften through absinthie,  
 That for once, tambourine, tunic and tricoteau  
 Their customary curse "Not half the gain o' the ape!"  
 Ay, they go in together!

## XXVI

Yet still her phantom stays  
 Opposite, where you stand: as steady 'neath our gaze, —  
 The live Elvire's and mine, — though fancy-stuff and mere



Illusion ; to be judged — dream-figures — without fear  
Or favor, those the false, by you and me the true.

## XXVII

“What puts it in my head to make yourself judge you?”  
Well, it may be, the name of Helen brought to mind  
A certain myth I mused in years long left behind:  
How she that fled from Greece with Paris whom she loved,  
And came to Troy, and there found shelter, and so proved  
Such cause of the world's woe, — how she, old stories call  
This creature, Helen's self, never saw Troy at all.  
Jove had his fancy-fit, must needs take empty air,  
Fashion her likeness forth, and set the phantom there  
I' the midst for sport, to try conclusions with the blind  
And blundering race, the game create for Gods, mankind:  
Experiment on these, — establish who would yearn  
To give up life for her, who, other-minded, spurn  
The best her eyes could smile, — make half the world sublime,  
And half absurd, for just a phantom all the time!  
Meanwhile true Helen's self sat, safe and far away,  
By a great river-side, beneath a purer day,  
With solitude around, tranquillity within;  
Was able to lean forth, look, listen, through the din  
And stir; could estimate the worthlessness or worth  
Of Helen who inspired such passion to the earth,  
A phantom all the time! That put it in my head  
To make yourself judge you — the phantom-wife instead  
O' the tearful true Elvire!

## XXVIII

I thank the smile at last  
Which thins away the tear! Our sky was overcast,  
And something fell; but day clears up: if there chanced rain,  
The landscape glistens more. I have not vexed in vain  
Elvire: because she knows, now she has stood the test,  
How, this and this being good, herself may still be best  
O' the beauty in review; because the flesh that claimed  
Unduly my regard, she thought, the taste, she blamed

In me, for things externe, was all mistake, she finds, —  
Or will find, when I prove that bodies show me minds,  
That, through the outward sign, the inward grace allures,  
And sparks from heaven transpierce earth's coarsest covertures,  
All by demonstrating the value of Fine!

## XXIX

Partake my confidence! No creature's made so mean  
But that, some way, it boasts, could we investigate,  
Its supreme worth: fulfils, by ordinance of fate,  
Its momentary task, gets glory all its own,  
Tastes triumph in the world, pre-eminent, alone.  
Where is the single grain of sand, 'mid millions heaped  
Confusedly on the beach, but, did we know, has leaped  
Or will leap, would we wait, i' the century, some once,  
To the very throne of things? — earth's brightest for the nonce,  
When sunshine shall impinge on just that grain's facet  
Which fronts him fullest, first, returns his ray with jet  
Of promptest praise, thanks God best in creation's name!  
As firm is my belief, quick sense perceives the same  
Self-vindicating flash illustrate every man  
And woman of our mass, and prove, throughout the plan,  
No detail but, in place allotted it, was prime  
And perfect.

## XXX

Witness her, kept waiting all this time!  
What happy angle makes Fine reverberate  
Sunshine, least sand-grain, she, of shadiest social state?  
No adamantine shield, polished like Helen there,  
Fit to absorb the sun, regorge him till the glare,  
Dazing the universe, draw Troy-ward those blind beaks  
Of equal-sided ships rowed by the well-greaved Greeks!  
No Asian mirror, like yon Ptolemaic witch  
Able to fix sun fast and tame sun down, enrich,  
Not burn the world with beams thus flatteringly rolled  
About her, head to foot, turned slavish snakes of gold!  
And oh, no tinted pane of oriel sanctity,  
Does our Fine afford, such as permits supply  
Of lustrous heaven, revealed, far more than mundane sight  
Could master, to thy cell, pure Saint! where, else too bright,  
So suits thy sense the orb, that, what outside was noon,

Pales, through thy lozenged blue, to meek  
 benefic moon!  
 What then? does that prevent each dunghill,  
 we may pass  
 Daily, from boasting too its bit of looking-glass,  
 Its sherd which, sun-smit, shines, shoots arrowy  
 fire beyond  
 That satin-muffled mope, your sulky diamond?

## XXXI

And now, the mingled ray she shoots, I de-  
 compose.  
 Her antecedents, take for execrable! Gloze  
 No whit on your premiss: let be, there was no  
 worst  
 Of degradation spared Fifine: ordained from  
 first  
 To last, in body and soul, for one life-long  
 debauch,  
 The Pariah of the North, the European Nautch!  
 This, far from seek to hide, she puts in evidence  
 Calmly, displays the brand, bids pry without  
 offence  
 Your finger on the place. You comment,  
 "Fancy us  
 So operated on, maltreated, mangled thus!  
 Such torture in our case, had we survived an  
 hour?  
 Some other sort of flesh and blood must be,  
 with power  
 Appropriate to the vile, unsensitive, tough-  
 thonged,  
 In lieu of our fine nerve! Be sure, she was  
 not wronged  
 Too much: you must not think she winced at  
 prick as we!"  
 Come, come, that's what you say, or would,  
 were thoughts but free.

## XXXII

Well then, thus much confessed, what won-  
 der if there steal  
 Unchallenged to my heart the force of one  
 appeal  
 She makes, and justice stamp the sole claim  
 she asserts?  
 So absolutely good is truth, truth never hurts  
 The teller, whose worst crime gets somehow  
 grace, avowed.  
 To me, that silent pose and prayer proclaimed  
 aloud:  
 "Know all of me outside, the rest be emptiness  
 For such as you! I call attention to my dress,  
 Coiffure, outlandish features, lithe memorable  
 limbs,  
 Piquant entreaty, all that eye-glance overskims.  
 Does this give pleasure? Then, repay the  
 pleasure, put  
 Its price i' the tambourine! Do you seek  
 further? Tut!  
 I'm just my instrument, — sound hollow:  
 mere smooth skin  
 Stretched o'er gilt framework, I; rub-dub,  
 naught else within —  
 Always, for such as you! — if I have use else-  
 where, —  
 If certain bells, now mute, can jingle, need you  
 care?

Be it enough, there's truth i' the pleading,  
 which comforts  
 With no word spoken out in cottages or courts,  
 Since all I plead is, 'Pay for just the sight you  
 see,  
 And give no credit to another charm in me!'  
 Do I say, like your Love? 'To praise my face  
 is well,  
 But, who would know my worth, must search  
 my heart to tell!  
 Do I say, like your Wife? 'Had I passed in  
 review  
 The produce of the globe, my man of men were  
 — you!  
 Do I say, like your Helen? 'Yield yourself  
 up, obey  
 Implicitly, nor pause to question, to survey  
 Even the worshipful! prostrate you at my  
 shrine!  
 Shall you dare controvert what the world  
 counts divine?  
 Array your private taste, own liking of the  
 sense,  
 Own longing of the soul, against the impudence  
 Of history, the blare and bullying of verse?  
 As if man ever yet saw reason to disburse  
 The amount of what sense liked, soul longed  
 for, — given, devised  
 As love, forsooth, — until the price was recog-  
 nized  
 As moderate enough by divers fellow-men!  
 Then, with his warrant safe that these would  
 love too, then,  
 Sure that particular gain implies a public loss,  
 And that no smile he buys but proves a slash  
 across  
 The face, a stab into the side of somebody —  
 Sure that, along with love's main-purchase, he  
 will buy  
 Up the whole stock of earth's uncharitableness,  
 Envy and hatred, — then, decides he to profess  
 His estimate of one, by love discerned, though  
 dim  
 To all the world beside: since what's the  
 world to him?  
 Do I say, like your Queen of Egypt? 'Who  
 foregoes  
 My cup of witchcraft — fault be on the fool!  
 He knows  
 Nothing of how I pack my wine-press, turn its  
 winch  
 Three-times-three, all the time to song and  
 dance, nor flinch  
 From charming on and on, till at the last I  
 squeeze  
 Out the exhaustive drop that leaves behind  
 mere lees  
 And dregs, rapidity, thought essence hereto-  
 fore!  
 Sup of my sorcery, old pleasures please no more!  
 Be great, be good, love, learn, have potency of  
 hand  
 Or heart or head, — what boots? You die, nor  
 understand  
 What bliss might be in life: you ate the grapes,  
 but knew  
 Never the taste of wine, such vintage as I  
 brew!

Do I say, like your Saint? 'An exquisitest  
touch  
Bides in the birth of things: no after-time can  
much  
Enhance that fine, that faint, fugitive first of  
all!  
What color paints the cup o' the May-rose, like  
the small  
Suspicion of a blush which doubtfully begins?  
What sound outwarbles brook, while, at the  
source, it wins  
That moss and stone dispart, allow its bub-  
blings breathe?  
What taste excels the fruit, just where sharp  
flavors sheathe  
Their sting, and let encroach the honey that  
allays?  
And so with soul and sense; when sanctity  
betrays  
First fear lest earth below seem real as heaven  
above,  
And holy worship, late, change soon to sinful  
love —  
Where is the plenitude of passion which en-  
dures  
Comparison with that, I ask of amateurs?'  
Do I say, like Elvire" . . .

## XXXIII

(Your husband holds you fast,

Will have you listen, learn your character at  
last!)  
"Do I say? — like her mixed unrest and dis-  
content,  
Reproachfulness and scorn, with that submis-  
sion blent  
So strangely, in the face, by sad smiles and gay  
tears, —  
Quiescence which attacks, rebellion which en-  
dears, —  
Say? 'As you loved me once, could you but  
love me now!  
Years probably have graved their passage on  
my brow,  
Lips turn more rarely red, eyes sparkle less  
than erst;  
Such tribute body pays to time; but, un-  
amerced,  
The soul retains, nay, boasts old treasure  
multiplied.  
Though dew-prime flee, — mature at noonday,  
love defied  
Chance, the wind, change, the rain: love stren-  
uous all the more  
For storm, struck deeper root and choicer fruit-  
age bore,  
Despite the rocking world; yet truth struck  
root in vain:  
While tenderness bears fruit, you praise, not  
taste again.  
Why? They are yours, which once were hardly  
yours, might go  
To grace another's ground: and then — the  
hopes we know,  
The fears we keep in mind! — when, ours to ar-  
bitrate,  
Your part was to bow neck, bid fall decree of  
fate.

Then, O the knotty point — white-night's work  
to revolve —  
What meant that smile, that sigh? Not Solon's  
self could solve!  
Then, O the deep surmise what one word might  
express,  
And if what seemed her "No" may not have  
meant her "Yes!"  
Then, such annoy, for cause — calm welcome,  
such acquist  
Of rapture if, refused her arm, hand touched  
her wrist!  
Now, what's a smile to you? Poor candle  
that lights up  
The decent household gloom which sends you  
out to sup.  
A tear? worse! warns that health requires you  
keep aloof  
From nuptial chamber, since rain penetrates  
the roof!  
Soul, body got and gained, inalienably safe  
Your own, become despised; more worth has  
any waif  
Or stray from neighbor's pale: pouch that, —  
't is pleasure, pride,  
Novelty, property, and larceny beside!  
Preposterous thought! to find no value fixed in  
things,  
To covet all you see, hear, dream of, till fate  
brings  
About that, what you want, you gain; then  
follows change.  
Give you the sun to keep, forthwith must fancy  
range:  
A goodly lamp, no doubt, — yet might you  
catch her hair  
And capture, as she frisks, the fen-fire dancing  
there!  
What do I say? at least a meteor's half in  
heaven;  
Provided filth but shine, my husband hankers  
even  
After putridity that's phosphorescent, cribs  
The rustic's tallow-rush, makes spoil of urchins'  
squibs,  
In short, prefers to me — chaste, temperate,  
serene —  
What sputters green and blue, this fizzig called  
Fifine!"

## XXXIV

So all your sex mistake! Strange that so  
plain a fact  
Should raise such dire debate! Few families  
were racked  
By torture self-supplied, did Nature grant but  
this —  
That women comprehend mental analysis!

## XXXV

Elvire, do you recall when, years ago, our  
home  
The intimation reached, a certain pride of  
Rome,  
Authenticated piece, in the third, last and best  
Manner — whatever, fools and connoisseurs con-  
test, —  
No particle disturbed by rude restorer's touch,



The palaced picture-pearl, so long eluding clutch  
 Of creditor, at last, the Rafael might — could we  
 But come to terms — change lord, pass from the Prince to me?  
 I think you recollect my fever of a year:  
 How the Prince would, and how he would not; now, — too dear  
 That promise was, he made his grandsire so long since,  
 Rather to boast "I own a Rafael" than "am Prince!"  
 And now, the fancy soothed — if really sell he must  
 His birthright for a mess of pottage — such a thrust  
 I' the vitals of the Prince were mollified by balm,  
 Could he prevail upon his stomach to bear quail,  
 And bequeath Liberty (because a purchaser Was ready with the sum — a trifle!) yes, transfer  
 His heart at all events to that land where, at least,  
 Free institutions reign! And so, its price increased  
 Fivefold (Americans are such importunates!),  
 Soon must his Rafael start for the United States.  
 Oh, alternating bursts of hope now, then despair!  
 At last, the bargain 's struck, I'm all but beggared, there  
 The Rafael faces me, in fine, no dream at all,  
 My housemate, evermore to glorify my wall.  
 A week must pass, before heart-palpitations sink,  
 In gloating o'er my gain, so late I edged the brink  
 Of doom; a fortnight more, I spend in Paradise:  
 "Was outline e'er so true, could coloring entice So calm, did harmony and quiet so avail?  
 How right, how resolute, the action tells the tale!"  
 A month, I bid my friends congratulate their best:  
 "You happy Don!" (to me): "The block-head!" (to the rest):  
 "No doubt he thinks his daub original, poor dupe!"  
 Then I resume my life: one chamber must not coop  
 Man's life in, though it boast a marvel like my prize.  
 Next year, I saunter past with unaverted eyes,  
 Nay, loll and turn my back: perchance to overlook  
 With relish, leaf by leaf, Doré's last picture-book.

XXXVI

Imagine that a voice reproached me from its frame:  
 "Here do I hang, and may! Your Rafael, just the same,

'Tis only you that change; no ecstasies of yore!  
 No purposed suicide distracts you any more!" Prompt would my answer meet such frivolous attack:  
 "You misappropriate sensations. What men lack,  
 And labor to obtain, is hoped and feared about After a fashion; what they once obtain, makes doubt,  
 Expectancy's old fret and fume, henceforward void.  
 But do they think to hold such havings unalloyed  
 By novel hopes and fears, of fashion just as new,  
 To correspond i' the scale? Nowise, I promise you!  
 Mine you are, therefore mine will be, as fit to cheer  
 My soul and glad my sense to-day as this-day-year.  
 So, any sketch or scrap, pochade, caricature, Made in a moment, meant a moment to endure,  
 I snap at, seize, enjoy, then tire of, throw aside, Find you in your old place. But if a servant cried  
 'Fire in the gallery!' — methinks, were I enraged  
 In Doré, elbow-deep, picture-books million-paged  
 To the four winds would pack, sped by the heartiest curse  
 Was ever launched from lip, to strew the universe.  
 Would not I brave the best o' the burning, bear away  
 Either my perfect piece in safety, or else stay And share its fate, be made its martyr, nor repine?  
 Inextricably wed, such ashes mixed with mine!"

XXXVII

For which I get the eye, the hand, the heart, the whole  
 O' the wondrous wife again!

XXXVIII

But no, play out your rôle  
 I' the pageant! 'Tis not fit your phantom leave the stage:  
 I want you, there, to make you, here, confess you wage  
 Successful warfare, pique those proud ones, and advance  
 Claim to . . . equality? nay but predominance  
 In physique o'er them all, where Helen heads the scene  
 Closed by its tiniest of tail-tips, pert Fifine.  
 How ravishingly pure you stand in pale constraint!  
 My new-created shape, without or touch or taint,  
 Inviolable of life and worldliness and sin —  
 Fettered, I hold my flower, her own cup's weight would win

From off the tall slight stalk a-top of which  
 she turns  
 And trembles, makes appeal to one who  
 roughly earns  
 Her thanks instead of blame, (did lily only  
 know,)  
 By thus constraining length of lily, letting snow  
 Of cup-crown, that's her face, look from its  
 guardian stake,  
 Superb on all that crawls beneath, and mutely  
 make  
 Defiance, with the mouth's white movement of  
 disdain,  
 To all that stoops, retires, and hovers round  
 again!  
 How windingly the limbs delay to lead up,  
 reach  
 Where, crowned, the head waits calm: as if  
 reluctant, each,  
 That eye should traverse quick such lengths  
 of loveliness,  
 From feet, which just are found embedded in  
 the dress  
 Deep swathed about with folds and flowings  
 virginal,  
 Up to the pleated breasts, rebellious 'neath  
 their pall,  
 As if the vesture's snow were moulding sleep  
 not death,  
 Must melt and so release; whereat, from the  
 fine sheath,  
 The flower-cup-crown starts free, the face is  
 unconcealed,  
 And what shall now divert me, once the sweet  
 face revealed,  
 From all I loved so long, so lingeringly left?

## XXXIX

Because indeed your face fits into just the  
 left  
 O' the heart of me, Elvire, makes right and  
 whole once more  
 All that was half itself without you! As be-  
 fore,  
 My truant finds its place! Doubtlessly sea-  
 shells yearn,  
 If plundered by sad chance: would pray their  
 pearls return,  
 Let negligently slip away into the wave!  
 Never may eyes desist, those eyes so gray and  
 grave,  
 From their slow sure supply of the effluent soul  
 within!  
 And, would you humor me? I dare to ask,  
 unpin  
 The web of that brown hair! O'erwash o' the  
 sudden, but  
 As promptly, too, disclose, on either side, the jut  
 Of alabaster brow! So part rich rilleys dyed  
 Deep by the woodland leaf, when down they  
 pour, each side  
 O' the rock-top, pushed by Spring!

## XL

"And where i' the world is all  
 This wonder, you detail so trippingly, espied?  
 My mirror would reflect a tall, thin, pale, deep-  
 eyed

Personage, pretty once, it may be, doubtless  
 still  
 Loving,—a certain grace yet lingers, if you  
 will,—  
 But all this wonder, where?"

## XLI

Why, where but in the sense  
 And soul of me, Art's judge? Art is my  
 evidence  
 That something was, is, might be; but no more  
 thing itself,  
 Than flame is fuel. Once the verse-book laid  
 on shelf,  
 The picture turned to wall, the music fled  
 from ear,—  
 Each beauty, born of each, grows clearer and  
 more clear,  
 Mine henceforth, ever mine!

## XLII

But if I would retrace  
 Effect, in Art, to cause,—corroborate, erase  
 What's right or wrong i' the lines, test fancy in  
 my brain  
 By fact which gave it birth? I re-peruse in  
 vain  
 The verse, I fail to find that vision of delight  
 I' the Bazzi's lost-profile, eye-edge so exqui-  
 site.  
 And, music: what? that burst of pillared  
 cloud by day  
 And pillared fire by night, was product, must  
 we say,  
 Of modulating just, by enharmonic change,—  
 The augmented sixth resolved,—from out the  
 straighter range  
 Of D sharp minor—leap of disimprisoned  
 thrall—  
 Into thy light and life, D major natural?

## XLIII

Elvire, will you partake in what I shall impart?  
 I seem to understand the way heart chooses  
 heart  
 By help of the outside form,—a reason for our  
 wild  
 Diversity in choice,—why each grows recon-  
 ciled  
 To what is absent, what superfluous in the mask  
 Of flesh that's meant to yield,—did nature ply  
 her task  
 As artist should,—precise the features of the  
 soul,  
 Which, if in any case they found expression,  
 whole  
 I' the traits, would give a type, undoubtedly  
 display  
 A novel, true, distinct perfection in its way.  
 Never shall I believe any two souls were made  
 Similar; granting, then, each soul of every  
 grade  
 Was meant to be itself, prove in itself com-  
 plete,  
 And, in completion, good,—nay, best o' the  
 kind,—as meet  
 Needs must it be that show on the outside cor-  
 respond

With inward substance, — flesh, the dress which  
soul has donned,  
Exactly reproduce, — were only justicee done  
Inside and outside too, — types perfect every  
one.

How happens it that here we meet a mystery  
Insoluble to man, a plaguy puzzle? Why  
Each soul is either made imperfect, and de-  
serves

As rude a face to match; or else a bungler  
swerves,

And nature, on a soul worth rendering aright,  
Works ill, or proves perverse, or, in her own  
despite,

— Here too much, there too little, — bids each  
face, more or less,

Retire from beauty, make approach to ugliness?  
And yet succeeds the same: since, what is want-  
ing to success,

If somehow every face, no matter how deform,  
Evidence, to some one of hearts on earth, that,  
warm

Beneath the veriest ash, there hides a spark of  
soul

Which, quickened by love's breath, may yet  
pervade the whole

O' the gray, and, free again, be fire? — of  
worth the same,

Howe'er produced, for, great or little, flame is  
flame.

A mystery, whereof solution is to seek.

## XLIV

I find it in the fact that each soul, just as weak  
Its own way as its fellow, — departure from de-  
sign

As flagrant in the flesh, — goes striving to com-  
bine

With what shall right the wrong, the under or  
above

The standard: supplement unloveliness by love.  
— Ask Plato else! And this corroborates the  
sage,

That Art, — which I may style the love of lov-  
ing, rage

Of knowing, seeing, feeling the absolute truth  
of things

For truth's sake, whole and sole, not any good,  
truth brings

The knower, seer, feeler, beside, — instinctive  
Art

Must fumble for the whole, once fixing on a part  
However poor, surpass the fragment, and aspire  
To reconstruct thereby the ultimate entire.

Art, working with a will, discards the super-  
flux,

Contributes to defect, toils on till, — *fiat lux*. —  
There 's the restored, the prime, the individual  
type!

## XLV

Look, for example now! This piece of broken  
pipe

(Some shipman's solace erst) shall act as crayon;  
and

What tablet better serves my purpose than the  
sand?

— Smooth slab whereon I draw, no matter with  
what skill,

A face, and yet another, and yet another still.

There lie my three prime types of beauty!

## XLVI

Laugh your best!  
"Exaggeration and absurdity?" Confessed!

Yet, what may that face mean, no matter for  
its nose,

A yard long, or its chin, a foot short?

## XLVII

"You suppose,  
Horror?" Exactly! What's the odds if,  
more or less

By yard or foot, the features do manage to ex-  
press

Such meaning in the main? Were I of Gé-  
rôme's force,

Nor feeble as you see, quick should my crayon  
course

O'er outline, curb, excite, till, — so completion  
speeds

With Gérôme well at work, — observe how  
brow recedes,

Head shudders back on spine, as if one haled  
the hair,

Would have the full-face front what pin-point  
eye's sharp stare

Announces; mouth agape to drink the flowing  
fate,

While chin protrudes to meet the burst o' the  
wave: elate

Almost, spurred on to brave necessity, expend  
All life left, in one flash, as fire does at its end.

Retrenchment and addition effect a masterpiece,  
Not change i' the motive: here diminish, there  
increase —

And who wants Horror, has it.

## XLVIII

Who wants some other show  
Of soul, may seek elsewhere — this second of  
the row?

What does it give for germ, monadic mere in-  
tent

Of mind in face, faint first of meanings ever  
meant?

Why, possibly, a grin, that, strengthened, grows  
a laugh;

That, softened, leaves a smile; that, tempered,  
bids you quaff

At such a magic cup as English Reynolds once  
Compounded: for the witch pulls out of you

response  
Like Garrick's to Thalia, however due may be

Your homage claimed by that stiff-stoled Mel-  
pomene!

## XLIX

And just this one face more! Pardon the  
bold pretence!

May there not lurk some hint, struggle toward  
evidence

In that compressed mouth, those strained nos-  
trils, steadfast eyes



Of utter passion, absolute self-sacrifice,  
Which — could I but subdue the wild grotesque,  
refine  
That bulge of brow, make blunt that nose's  
aquiline,  
And let, although compressed, a point of pulp  
appear  
I' the mouth — would give at last the portrait  
of Elvire ?

## L

Well, and if so succeed hand-practice on awry  
Preposterous art-mistake, shall soul-proficiency  
Despair, — when exercised on nature, which at  
worst  
Always implies success, — however crossed and  
curst  
By failure, — such as art would emulate in vain ?  
Shall any soul despair of setting free again  
Trait after trait, until the type as wholly start  
Forth, visible to sense, as that minutest part,  
(Whate'er the chance,) which first arresting eye,  
warned soul  
That, under wrong enough and ravage, lay the  
whole  
O' the loveliness it "loved" — I take the ac-  
cepted phrase ?

## LI

So I account for tastes : each chooses, none  
gainsays  
The fancy of his fellow, a paradise for him,  
A hell for all beside. You can but crown the  
brim  
O' the cup ; if it be full, what matters less or  
more ?  
Let each, i' the world, amend his love, as I, o'  
the shore,  
My sketch, and the result as undisputed be !  
Their handiwork to them, and my Elvire to me :  
— Result more beautiful than beauty's self,  
when lo,  
What was my Rafael turns my Michelagnolo !

## LII

For, we two boast, beside our pearl, a dia-  
mond.  
I' the palace-gallery, the corridor beyond,  
Upheaves itself a marble, a magnitude man-  
shaped  
As snow might be. One hand — the Master's —  
smoothed and scraped  
That mass, he hammered on and hewed at, till  
he hurled  
Life out of death, and left a challenge : for the  
world,  
Death still, — since who shall dare, close to the  
image, say  
If this be purposed Art, or mere mimetic play  
Of Nature ? — wont to deal with crag or cloud,  
as stuff  
To fashion novel forms, like forms we know,  
enough  
For recognition, but enough unlike the same,  
To leave no hope ourselves may profit by her  
game ;  
Death therefore to the world. Step back a pace  
or two !

And then, who dares dispute the gradual birth  
its due  
Of breathing life, or breathless immortality,  
Where out she stands, and yet stops short, half  
bold, half shy,  
Hesitates on the threshold of things, since  
partly blent  
With stuff she needs must quit, her native ele-  
ment  
I' the mind o' the Master, — what's the crea-  
ture, dear-divine  
Yet earthly-awful too, so manly-feminine,  
Pretends this white advance ? What startling  
brain-escape  
Of Michelagnolo takes elemental shape ?  
I think he meant the daughter of the old man  
o' the sea,  
Emerging from her wave, goddess Eidotheé —  
She who, in elvish sport, spite with benevolence  
Mixed Mab-wise up, must needs instruct the  
Hero whence  
Salvation dawns o'er that mad misery of his  
isle.  
Yes, she imparts to him, by what a pranksome  
wile  
He may surprise her sire, asleep beneath a rock,  
When he has told their tale, amid his webfoot  
flock  
Of sea-beasts, "fine fat seals with bitter  
breath !" laughs she  
At whom she likes to save, no less : Eidotheé,  
Whom you shall never face evolved, in earth, in  
air,  
In wave ; but, manifest i' the soul's domain,  
why, there  
She ravishingly moves to meet you, all through  
aid  
O' the soul ! Bid shine what should, dismiss  
into the shade  
What should not be, — and there triumphs the  
paramount  
Emprise o' the Master ! But, attempt to make  
account  
Of what the sense, without soul's help perceives ?  
I bought  
That work — (despite plain proof, whose hand  
it was had wrought  
I' the rough : I think we trace the tool of triple  
tooth,  
Here, there, and everywhere) — bought dearly  
that uncouth  
Unwieldy bulk, for just ten dollars — "Bulk,  
would fetch —  
Converted into lime — some five pauls !"  
grinned a wretch,  
Who, bound on business, paused to hear the  
bargaining,  
And would have pitied me "but for the fun o'  
the thing !"

## LIII

Shall such a wretch be — you ? Must —  
while I show Elvire  
Shaming all other forms, seen as I see her here  
I' the soul, — this other-you perversely look out-  
side,  
And ask me, "Where i' the world is charm to  
be descried

I' the tall thin personage, with paled eye, pensive face,  
Any amount of love, and some remains of grace?"  
See yourself in my soul!

## LIV

And what a world for each  
Must somehow be i' the soul, — accept that mode of speech, —  
Whether an aura gird the soul, wherein it seems  
To float and move, a belt of all the glints and gleams  
It struck from out that world, its weaklier fellows found  
So dead and cold; or whether these not so much surround,  
As pass into the soul itself, add worth to worth,  
As wine enriches blood, and straightway send it forth,  
Conquering and to conquer, through all eternity,  
That's battle without end.

## LV

I search but cannot see  
What purpose serves the soul that strives, or world it tries  
Conclusions with, unless the fruit of victories  
Stay, one and all, stored up and guaranteed its own  
Forever, by some mode whereby shall be made known  
The gain of every life. Death reads the title clear —  
What each soul for itself conquered from out things here;  
Since, in the seeing soul, all worth lies, I assert, —  
And naught i' the world, which, save for soul that sees, inert  
Was, is, and would be ever, — stuff for transmuting, — null  
And void until man's breath evoke the beautiful —  
But, touched aright, prompt yields each particle its tongue  
Of elemental flame, — no matter whence flame sprung  
From gums and spice, or else from straw and rotteness,  
So long as soul has power to make them burn, express  
What lights and warms henceforth, leaves only ash behind,  
Howe'er the chance: if soul be privileged to find  
Food so soon that, by first snatch of eye, suck of breath,  
It can absorb pure life: or, rather, meeting death  
I' the shape of ugliness, by fortunate recoil  
So put on its resource, it find therein a foil  
For a new birth of life, the challenged soul's response  
To ugliness and death, — creation for the nonce.

## LVI

I gather heart through just such conquests of the soul,  
Through evocation out of that which, on the whole,  
Was rough, ungainly, partial accomplishment, at best,  
And — what, at worst, save failure to spit at and detest? —  
— Through transference of all, achieved in visible things,  
To where, secured from wrong, rest soul's imaginings —  
Through ardor to bring help just where completion halts,  
Do justice to the purpose, ignore the slips and faults —  
And, last, through waging with deformity a fight  
Which wrings thence, at the end, precise its opposite.  
I praise the loyalty o' the scholar, — stung by taunt  
Of fools, "Does this evince thy Master men so vaunt?"  
Did he then perpetrate the plain abortion here?" —  
Who cries, "His work am I! full fraught by him, I clear  
His fame from each result of accident and time,  
Myself restore his work to its fresh morning-prime,  
Not daring touch the mass of marble, fools deride,  
But putting my idea in plaster by its side,  
His, since mine; I, he made, vindicate who made me!"

## LVII

For you must know, I too achieved Eidotheé,  
In silence and by night — dared justify the lines  
Plain to my soul, although, to sense, that triple-time's  
Achievement halt halfway, break down, or leave a blank.  
If she stood forth at last, the Master was to thank!  
Yet may there not have smiled approval in his eyes —  
That one at least was left who, born to recognize  
Perfection in the piece imperfect, worked, that night,  
In silence, such his faith, until the apposite  
Design was out of him, truth palpable once more?  
And then — for at one blow, its fragments strewn the floor —  
Recalled the same to live within his soul as heretofore.

## LVIII

And, even as I hold and have Eidotheé,  
I say, I cannot think that gain, — which would not be

Except a special soul had gained it, — that  
 such gain  
 Can ever be estranged, do aught but appertain  
 Immortally, by right firm, indefeasible,  
 To who performed the feat, through God's  
 grace and man's will !  
 Gain, never shared by those who practised with  
 earth's stuff,  
 And spoiled whate'er they touched, leaving its  
 roughness rough,  
 Its blankness bare, and, when the ugliness  
 opposed,  
 Either struck work or laughed "He doted or  
 he dozed !"

## LIX

While, oh, how all the more will love become  
 intense  
 Hereafter, when "to love" means yearning to  
 dispense,  
 Each soul, its own amount of gain through its  
 own mode  
 Of practising with life, upon some soul which  
 owed  
 Its treasure, all diverse and yet in worth the  
 same,  
 To new work and changed way ! Things fur-  
 nish you rose-flame,  
 Which burn up red, green, blue, nay, yellow  
 more than needs,  
 For me, I nowise doubt ; why doubt a time  
 succeeds  
 When each one may impart, and each receive,  
 both share  
 The chemic secret, learn, — where I lit force,  
 why there  
 You drew forth lambent pity, — where I found  
 only food  
 For self-indulgence, you still blew a spark at  
 brood  
 I' the gravest ember, stopped not till self-  
 sacrifice imbued  
 Heaven's face with flame ? What joy, when  
 each may supplement  
 The other, changing each, as changed, till,  
 wholly blent,  
 Our old things shall be new, and, what we both  
 ignite,  
 Fuse, lose the varicolor in achromatic white !  
 Exemplifying law, apparent even now  
 In the eternal progress, — love's law, which I  
 avow  
 And thus would formulate : each soul lives,  
 longs and works  
 For itself, by itself, because a lodestar lurks,  
 An other than itself, — in whatsoe'er the niche  
 Of mistiest heaven it hide, whoe'er the Glum-  
 daldelich  
 May grasp the Gulliver : or it, or he, or she —  
*Theosutos e broteios eper kekramene*, —  
 (For fun's sake, where the phrase has fastened,  
 leave it fixed !  
 So soft it says, — "God, man, or both together  
 mixed !")  
 This, guessed at through the flesh, by parts  
 which prove the whole,  
 This constitutes the soul discernible by soul  
 — Elvire, by me !

## LX

"And then" — (pray you, permit remain  
 This hand upon my arm ! — your cheek dried,  
 if you deign,  
 Choosing my shoulder) — "then !" — (Stand  
 up for, boldly state  
 The objection in its length and breadth !)  
 "You abdicate,  
 With boast yet on your lip, soul's empire, and  
 accept  
 The rule of sense ; the Man, from monarch's  
 throne has stepped —  
 Leapt, rather, at one bound, to base, and there  
 lies, Brute.  
 You talk of soul, — how soul, in search of soul  
 to suit,  
 Must needs review the sex, the army, rank and  
 file  
 Of womankind, report no face nor form so  
 vile  
 But that a certain worth, by certain signs, may  
 thence  
 Evolve itself and stand confessed — to soul —  
 by sense.  
 Sense ? Oh, the loyal bee endeavors for the  
 hive !  
 Disinterested hunts the flower-field through,  
 alive  
 Not one mean moment, no, — suppose on flower  
 he light, —  
 To his peculiar drop, petal-dew perquisite,  
 Matter-of-course snatched snack : unless he  
 taste, how try ?  
 This, light on tongue-tip laid, allows him pack  
 his thigh,  
 Transport all he counts prize, provision for the  
 comb,  
 Food for the future day, — a banquet, but at  
 home !  
 Soul ? Ere you reach Fifine's, some flesh may  
 be to pass !  
 That bombed brow, that eye, a kindling chrys-  
 opras,  
 Beneath its stiff black lash, inquisitive how  
 speeds  
 Each functionary limb, hew play of foot suc-  
 ceeds,  
 And how you let escape or duly sympathize  
 With gastro-knemian grace, — true, your soul  
 tastes and tries,  
 And trifles time with these, but, fear not, will  
 arrive  
 At essence in the core, bring honey home to  
 hive,  
 Brain-stock and heart-stuff both — to strike  
 objectors dumb —  
 Since only soul affords the soul fit pabulum !  
 Be frank for charity ! Who is it you de-  
 ceive —  
 Yourself or me or God, with all this make  
 believe ?"

## LXI

And frank I will respond as you interrogate.  
 Ah, Music, wouldst thou help ! Words strug-  
 gle with the weight  
 So feebly of the False, thick element between



Our soul, the True, and Truth! which, but  
 that intervene  
 False shows of things, were reached as easily  
 by thought  
 Reducible to word, as now by yearnings  
 wrought  
 Up with thy fine free force, O Music, that  
 canst thrud,  
 Electrically win a passage through the lid  
 Of earthly sepulchre, our words may push  
 against,  
 Hardly transpierce as thou! Not dissipate,  
 thou deign'st,  
 So much as tricksily elude what words attempt  
 To heave away, i' the mass, and let the soul,  
 exempt  
 From all that vapory obstruction, view, instead  
 Of glimmer underneath, a glory overhead.  
 Not feebly, like our phrase, against the barrier  
 go  
 In suspirative swell the authentic notes I know,  
 By help whereof, I would our souls were found  
 without  
 The pale, above the dense and dim which breeds  
 the doubt!  
 But Music, dumb for you, withdraws her help  
 from me;  
 And, since to weary words recourse again must  
 be,  
 At least permit they rest their burden here and  
 there,  
 Music-like: cover space! My answer, — need  
 you care  
 If it exceed the bounds, reply to questioning  
 You never meant should plague? Once fairly  
 on the wing,  
 Let me flap far and wide!

## LXII

For this is just the time,  
 The place, the mood in you and me, when all  
 things chime.  
 Clash forth life's common chord, whence, list  
 how there ascend  
 Harmonies far and faint, till our perception  
 end, —  
 Reverberated notes whence we construct the  
 scale  
 Embracing what we know and feel and are!  
 How fail  
 To find or, better, lose your question, in this  
 quick  
 Reply which nature yields, ample and catholic?  
 For, arm in arm, we too have reached, nay,  
 passed, you see,  
 The village-precinct; sun sets mild on Sainte-  
 Marie —  
 We only catch the spire, and yet I seem to  
 know  
 What's hid i' the turn o' the hill: how all the  
 graves must glow  
 Soberly, as each warms its little iron cross,  
 Flourished about with gold, and graced (if  
 private loss  
 Be fresh) with stiff rope-wreath of yellow crisp  
 bead-blooms  
 Which tempt down birds to pay their supper,  
 'mid the tombs,

With prattle good as song, amuse the dead  
 awhile,  
 If couched they hear beneath the matted camo-  
 mile!

## LXIII

Bid them good-by before last friend has  
 sung and supped!  
 Because we pick our path and need our eyes, —  
 abrupt  
 Descent enough, — but here 's the beach, and  
 there 's the bay,  
 And, opposite, the streak of Île Noirmoutier.  
 Thither the waters tend; they freshen as they  
 haste,  
 At feel o' the night-wind, though, by cliff and  
 cliff embraced,  
 This breadth of blue retains its self-possession  
 still;  
 As you and I intend to do, who take our fill  
 Of sights and sounds — soft sound, the countless  
 hum and skip  
 Of insects we disturb, and that good fellow-  
 ship  
 Of rabbits our footfall sends huddling, each to  
 hide  
 He best knows how and where; and what  
 whirred past, wings wide?  
 That was an owl, their young may justlier  
 apprehend!  
 Though you refuse to speak, your beating heart,  
 my friend,  
 I feel against my arm, — though your bent head  
 forbids  
 A look into your eyes, yet, on my cheek, their  
 lids  
 That ope and shut, soft send a silken thrill the  
 same,  
 Well, out of all and each these nothings, comes  
 — what came  
 Often enough before, the something that would  
 aim  
 Once more at the old mark: the impulse to at  
 last  
 Succeed where hitherto was failure in the past,  
 And yet again essay the adventure. Clearlier  
 sings  
 No bird to its couched corpse, "Into the truth  
 of things —  
 Out of their falseness rise, and reach thou, and  
 remain!"

## LXIV

"That rise into the true out of the false —  
 explain?"  
 May an example serve? In yonder bay I bathed,  
 This sunny morning: swam my best, then hung,  
 half swathed  
 With chill, and half with warmth, i' the chan-  
 nel's midmost deep:  
 You know how one — not treads, but stands in  
 water? Keep  
 Body and limbs below, hold head back, uplift  
 chin,  
 And, for the rest, leave care! If brow, eyes,  
 mouth, should win  
 Their freedom, — excellent! If they must  
 brook the surge,

No matter though they sink, let but the nose  
 emerge.  
 So, all of me in brine lay soaking : did I care  
 One jot ? I kept alive by man's due breath of  
 air  
 I' the nostrils, high and dry. At times, o'er  
 these would run  
 The ripple, even wash the wavelet, — morning's  
 sun  
 Tempted advance, no doubt : and always flash  
 of froth,  
 Fish-outbreak, bubbling by, would find me no-  
 thing loth  
 To rise and look around ; then all was overswept  
 With dark and death at once. But trust the  
 old adept !  
 Back went again the head, a merest motion  
 made,  
 Fin-fashion, either hand, and nostril soon con-  
 veyed  
 Assurance light and life were still in reach as  
 erst :  
 Always the last and — wait and watch — some-  
 times the first.  
 Try to ascend breast-high ? wave arms wide  
 free of tether ?  
 Be in the air and leave the water altogether ?  
 Under went all again, till I resigned myself  
 To only breathe the air, that 's footed by an  
 elf,  
 And only swim the water, that 's native to a fish.  
 But there is no denying that, ere I curbed my  
 wish,  
 And schooled my restive arms, salt entered  
 mouth and eyes  
 Often enough — sun, sky, and air so tantalize !  
 Still, the adept swims, this accorded, that de-  
 nied ;  
 Can always breathe, sometimes see and be sat-  
 isfied !

## LXV

I liken to this play o' the body — fruitless  
 strife  
 To slip the sea and hold the heaven — my  
 spirit's life  
 'Twixt false, whence it would break, and true,  
 where it would bide.  
 I move in, yet resist, am upborne every side  
 By what I beat against, an element too gross  
 To live in, did not soul duly obtain her dose  
 Of life-breath, and inhale from truth's pure  
 plenitude  
 Above her, snatch and gain enough to just illude  
 With hope that some brave bound may baffle  
 evermore  
 The obstructing medium, make who swam  
 henceforward soar :  
 — Gain scarcely snatched when, foiled by the  
 very effort, souse,  
 Underneath ducks the soul, her truthward  
 yearnings drowse  
 Deeper in falsehood ! ay, but fitted less and less  
 To bear in nose and mouth old briny bitterness  
 Proved alien more and more : since each experi-  
 ence proves  
 Air — the essential good, not sea, wherein who  
 moves

Must thence, in the act, escape, apart from will  
 or wish.  
 Move a mere hand to take water-weed, jelly-fish,  
 Upward you tend ! And yet our business with  
 the sea  
 Is not with air, but just o' the water, watery :  
 We must endure the false, no particle of which  
 Do we acquaint us with, but up we mount a pitch  
 Above it, find our head reach truth, while hands  
 explore  
 The false below : so much while here we bathe,  
 — no more !

## LXVI

Now, there is one prime point (hear and be  
 edified !)  
 One truth more true for me than any truth  
 beside —  
 To-wit, that I am I, who have the power to  
 swim,  
 The skill to understand the law whereby each  
 limb  
 May bear to keep immersed, since, in return,  
 made sure  
 That its mere movement lifts head clean  
 through coverture.  
 By practice with the false, I reach the true ?  
 Why, thence  
 It follows, that the more I gain self-confidence,  
 Get proof I know the trick, can float, sink, rise,  
 at will,  
 The better I submit to what I have the skill  
 To conquer in my turn, even now, and by and by  
 Leave wholly for the land, and there laugh,  
 shake me dry  
 To last drop, saturate with noonday — no need  
 more  
 Of wet and fret, plagued once : on Pornic's  
 placid shore,  
 Abundant air to breathe, sufficient sun to feel !  
 Meantime I buoy myself : no whit my senses reel  
 When over me there breaks a billow ; nor, elate  
 Too much by some brief taste, I quaff intem-  
 perate  
 The air, o'er top breast-high the wave-envir-  
 onment.  
 Full well I know the thing I grasp, as if intent  
 To hold, — my wandering wave, — will not be  
 grasped at all :  
 The solid-seeming grasped, the handful great  
 or small  
 Must go to nothing, glide through fingers fast  
 enough ;  
 But none the less, to treat liquidity as stuff —  
 Though failure — certainly succeeds beyond its  
 aim,  
 Sends head above, past thing that hands miss,  
 or the same.

## LXVII

So with this wash o' the world, wherein life-  
 long we drift ;  
 We push and paddle through the foam by mak-  
 ing shift  
 To breathe above at whiles when, after deepest  
 duck  
 Down underneath the show, we put forth hand  
 and pluck

At what seems somehow like reality — a soul.  
I catch at this and that, to capture and control,

Presume I hold a prize, discover that my pains  
Are run to naught : my hands are balked, my head regains

The surface where I breathe and look about, a space.

The soul that helped me mount ? Swallowed up in the race

O' the tide, come who knows whence, gone gayly who knows where !

I thought the prize was mine ; I flattered myself there.

It did its duty, though : I felt it, it felt me ;  
Or, where I look about and breathe, I should not be.

The main point is — the false fluidity was bound  
Acknowledge that it frothed o'er substance, nowise found

Fluid, but firm and true. Man, outcast, "howls," — at rods ? —

If "sent in playful spray a-shivering to his gods !"

Childishest childe, man makes thereby no bad exchange.

Stay with the flat-fish, thou ! We like the upper range

Where the "gods" live, perchance the dæmons also dwell :

Where operates a Power, which every throb and swell

Of human heart invites that human soul approach,

"Sent" near and nearer still, however "spray" encroach

On "shivering" flesh below, to altitudes, which gained,

Evil proves good, wrong right, obscurity explained,

And "howling" childishness. Whose howl have we to thank.

If all the dogs 'gan bark and puppies whine, till sank

Each yelpers' tail 'twixt legs ? for Huntsman Common-sense

Came to the rescue, bade prompt thwack of thong dispense

Quiet i' the kennel ; taught that ocean might be blue,

And rolling and much more, and yet the soul have, too.

Its touch of God's own flame, which he may so expand,

"Who measured the waters i' the hollow of his hand,"

That ocean's self shall dry, turn dewdrop in respect

Of all-triumphant fire, matter with intellect  
Once fairly matched ; bade him who egged on hounds to bay,

Go curse, i' the poultry yard, his kind : "there let him lay"

The swan's one addled egg : which yet shall put to use,

Rub breast-bone warm against, so many a sterile goose !

## LXVIII

No, I want sky not sea, prefer the larks to shrimps.

And never dive so deep but that I get a glimpse O' the blue above, a breath of the air around.

Elvire,  
I seize — by catching at the melted beryl here,  
The tawny hair that just has trickled off, —

Fifine !  
Did not we two trip forth to just enjoy the scene,  
The tumbling-troop arrayed, the strollers on their stage,

Drawn up and under arms, and ready to engage —

Dabble, and there an end, with foam and froth o'er face.

Till suddenly Fifine suggested change of place ?  
Now we taste æther, scorn the wave, and interchange apace

No ordinary thoughts, but such as evidence  
The cultivated mind in both. On what pretence  
Are you and I to sneer at who lent help to hand,  
And gave the lucky lift ?

## LXIX

Still sour ? I understand !  
One ugly circumstance discredits my fair plan —

That Woman does the work : I waive the help of Man.

"Why should experiment be tried with only waves,

When solid spars float round ? Still some Thalassia saves

Too pertinaciously, as though no Triton, bluff  
As e'er blew brine from conch, were free to help enough !

Surely, to recognize a man, his mates serve best !

Why is there not the same or greater interest  
In the strong spouse as in the pretty partner, pray,

Were recognition just your object, as you say,  
Amid this element o' the false ?"

## LXX

We come to terms.  
I need to be proved true ; and nothing so confirms

One's faith in the prime point that one's alive, not dead,

In all Descents to Hell whereof I ever read,  
As when a phantom there, male enemy or friend,

Or merely stranger-shade, is struck, is forced suspend

His passage : "You that breathe, along with us the ghosts ?"

Here, why must it be still a woman that accosts ?

## LXXI

Because, one woman's worth, in that respect, such hairy hosts

Of the other sex and sort ! Men ? Say you have the power

To make them yours, rule men, throughout life's little hour,



According to the phrase ; what follows ? Men,  
 you make,  
 By ruling them, your own : each man for his  
 own sake

Accepts you as his guide, avails him of what  
 worth

He apprehends in you to sublimate his earth  
 With fire : content, if so you convoy him  
 through night,

That you shall play the sun, and he, the satel-  
 lite,

Pilfer your light and heat and virtue, starry  
 self,

While, caught up by your course, he turns upon  
 himself.

Women rush into you, and there remain ab-  
 sorbed.

Beside, 't is only men completely formed, full-  
 orbed,

Are fit to follow track, keep pace, illustrate so  
 The leader : any sort of woman may bestow

Her atom on the star, or clod she counts for  
 such, —

Each little making less bigger by just that  
 much.

Women grow you, while men depend on you at  
 best.

And what dependence ! Bring and put him to  
 the test,

Your specimen disciple, a handbreadth sepa-  
 rate

From you, he almost seemed to touch before !  
 Abate

Complacency you will, I judge, at what's di-  
 vulged !

Some flabbiness you fixed, some vacancy out-  
 bulged,

Some — much — nay, all, perhaps, the outward  
 man's your work :

But, inside man ? — find him, wherever he may  
 lurk,

And where's a touch of you in his true self ?

LXXII

I wish

Some wind would waft this way a glassy bub-  
 ble-fish

O' the kind the sea inflates, and show you, once  
 detached

From wave . . . or no, the event is better told  
 than watched :

Still may the thing float free, globose and opal-  
 ine

All over, save where just the amethysts com-  
 bine

To blue their best, rim-round the sea-flower  
 with a tinge

Earth's violet never knew ! Well, 'neath that  
 gem-tipped fringe,

A head lurks — of a kind — that acts as stom-  
 ach too ;

Then comes the emptiness which out the water  
 blew

So big and belly-like, but, dry of water drained,  
 Withers away nine-tenths. Ah, but a tenth  
 remained !

That was the creature's self : no more akin to  
 sea,

Poor rudimental head and stomach, you agree,  
 Than sea's akin to sun who yonder dips his  
 edge.

LXXIII

But take the rill which ends a race o'er yon-  
 der ledge

O' the fissured cliff, to find its fate in smoke  
 below !

Disengage that, and ask — what news of life,  
 you know

It led, that long lone way, through pasture,  
 plain and waste ?

All's gone to give the sea ! no touch of earth,  
 no taste

Of air, reserved to tell how rushes used to  
 bring

The butterfly and bee, and fisher-bird that's  
 king

O' the purple kind, about the snow-soft silver-  
 sweet

Infant of mist and dew ; only these atoms fleet,  
 Embittered evermore, to make the sea one

drop

More big thereby — if thought keep count  
 where sense must stop.

LXXIV

The full-blown ingrate, mere recipient of the  
 brine,

That takes all and gives naught, is Man ; the  
 feminine

Rillet that, taking all and giving naught in  
 turn,

Goes headlong to her death i' the sea, without  
 concern

For the old inland life, snow-soft and silver-  
 clear,

That's woman — typified from Fifine to Elvire.

LXXV

Then, how diverse the modes prescribed to  
 who would deal

With either kind of creature ! 'T is Man, you  
 seek to seal

Your very own ? Resolve, for first step, to  
 discard

Nine-tenths of what you are ! To make, you  
 must be marred, —

To raise your race, must stoop, — to teach them  
 aught, must learn

Ignorance, meet halfway what most you hope  
 to spurn

I' the sequel. Change yourself, dissimulate the  
 thought

And vulgarize the word, and see the deed be  
 brought

To look like nothing done with any such intent  
 As teach men — though perchance it teach, by

accident !

So may you master men : assured that if you  
 show

One point of mastery, departure from the low  
 And level, — head or heart-revolt at long dis-  
 guise,

Immurement, stifling soul in mediocrities, —  
 If inadvertently a gesture, much more, word  
 Reveal the hunter no companion for the herd,

His chance of capture's gone. Success means,  
 they may snuff,  
 Examine, and report, — a brother, sure enough,  
 Disports him in brute-guise; for skin is truly  
 skin,  
 Horns, hoofs, are hoofs and horns, and all, out-  
 side and in,  
 Is veritable beast, whom fellow-beasts resigned  
 May follow, made a prize in honest pride, be-  
 hind  
 One of themselves and not creation's upstart  
 lord!  
 Well, there's your prize i' the pound — much  
 joy may it afford  
 My Indian! Make survey and tell me, — was it  
 worth  
 You acted part so well, went all-fours upon  
 earth  
 The live-long day, brayed, belled, and all to  
 bring to pass  
 That stags should deign eat hay when winter  
 stints them grass?

## LXXVI

So much for men, and how disguise may make  
 them mind  
 Their master. But you have to deal with  
 womankind?  
 Abandon stratagem for strategy! Cast quite  
 The vile disguise away, try truth clean-opposite  
 Such creep-and-crawl, stand forth all man and,  
 might it chance,  
 Somewhat of angel too! — whate'er inheritance,  
 Actual on earth, in heaven prospective, be your  
 boast,  
 Lay claim to! Your best self revealed at utter-  
 most, —  
 That's the wise way o' the strong! And e'en  
 should falsehood tempt  
 The weaker sort to swerve, — at least the lie's  
 exempt  
 From slur, that's loathlier still, of aiming to  
 debase  
 Rather than elevate its object. Mimic grace,  
 Not make deformity your mask! Be sick by  
 stealth,  
 Nor traffic with disease — malingering in  
 health!  
 No more of: "Countrymen, I boast me one  
 like you —  
 My lot, the common strength, the common  
 weakness too!  
 I think the thoughts you think; and if I have  
 the knack  
 Of fitting thoughts to words, you peradventure  
 lack,  
 Envy me not the chance, yourselves more for-  
 tunate!  
 Many the loaded ship self-sunk through treas-  
 ure freight,  
 Many the pregnant brain brought never child  
 to birth,  
 Many the great heart broke beneath its girdle-  
 girth!  
 Be mine the privilege to supplement defect,  
 Give dumbness voice, and let the laboring in-  
 tellect  
 Find utterance in word, or possibly in deed!

What though I seem to go before? 't is you that  
 lead!  
 I follow what I see so plain — the general mind  
 Projected pillar-wise, flame kindled by the  
 kind,  
 Which dwarfs the unit — me — to insignifi-  
 cance!  
 Halt you, I stop forthwith, — proceed, I too ad-  
 vance!"

## LXXVII

Ay, that's the way to take with men you  
 wish to lead,  
 Instruct and benefit. Small prospect you suc-  
 ceed  
 With women so! Be all that's great and good  
 and wise,  
 August, sublime — swell out your frog the  
 right ox-size —  
 He's buoyed like a balloon, to soar, not burst,  
 you'll see!  
 The more you prove yourself, less fear the  
 prize will flee  
 The captor. Here you start after no pompous  
 stag  
 Who condescends be snared, with toss of horn,  
 and brag  
 Of bray, and ramp of hoof; you have not to  
 subdue  
 The foe through letting him imagine he snares  
 you!  
 'T is rather with . . .

## LXXVIII

Ah, thanks! quick — where the dipping disk  
 Shows red against the rise and fall o' the fin!  
 there frisk  
 In shoal the — porpoises? Dolphins, they shall  
 and must  
 Cut through the freshening clear — dolphins,  
 my instance just!  
 'T is fable, therefore truth: who has to do with  
 these,  
 Needs never practice trick of going hands and  
 knees  
 As beasts require. Art fain the fish to capti-  
 vate?  
 Gather thy greatness round, Arion! Stand in  
 state,  
 As when the banqueting thrilled conscious —  
 like a rose  
 Throughout its hundred leaves at that approach  
 it knows  
 Of music in the bird — while Corinth grew one  
 breast  
 A-throb for song and thee; nay, Periander  
 pressed  
 The Methymnaean hand, and felt a king indeed,  
 and guessed  
 How Phoebus' self might give that great mouth  
 of the gods  
 Such a magnificence of song! The pillar nods,  
 Rocks roof, and trembles door, gigantic, post  
 and jamb,  
 As harp and voice rend air — the shattering  
 dithyramb!  
 So stand thou, and assume the robe that tingles  
 yet

With triumph; strike the harp, whose every  
golden fret  
Still smoulders with the flame, was late at  
fingers' end —  
So, standing on the bench o' the ship, let voice  
expend  
Thy soul, sing, unalloyed by meaner mode,  
thine own,  
The Orthian lay; then leap from music's lofty  
throne  
Into the lowest surge, make fearlessly thy  
launch!  
Whatever storm may threat, some dolphin will  
be stanch!  
Whatever roughness rage, some exquisite sea-  
thing  
Will surely rise to save, will bear — palpitat-  
ing —  
One proud humility of love beneath its load —  
Stem tide, part wave, till both roll on, thy  
jewell'd road  
Of triumph, and the grim o' the gulf grow  
wonder-white  
I' the phosphorescent wake; and still the ex-  
quisite  
Sea-thing stems on, saves still, palpitatingly  
thus,  
Lands safe at length its load of love at Tænarus,  
True woman-creature!

## LXXIX

Man? Ah, would you prove what power  
Marks man, — what fruit his tree may yield,  
beyond the sour  
And stinted crab, he calls love-apple, which  
remains  
After you toil and moil your utmost, — all, love  
gains  
By lavishing manure? — try quite the other  
plan!  
And, to obtain the strong true product of a  
man,  
Set him to hate a little! Leave cherishing his  
root,  
And rather prune his branch, nip off the pettiest  
shoot  
Superfluous on his bough! I promise, you  
shall learn  
By what grace came the goat, of all beasts else,  
to earn  
Such favor with the god o' the grape: 't was  
only he  
Who, browsing on its tops, first stung fertility  
Into the stock's heart, stayed much growth of  
tendrill-twine,  
Some faintish flower, perhaps, but gained the  
indignant wine,  
Wrath of the red press! Catch the puniest of  
the kind —  
Man-animalcule, starved body, stunted mind,  
And, as you nip the blotch 'twixt thumb and  
finger-nail,  
Admire how heaven above and earth below  
avail  
No jot to soothe the mite, sore at God's prime  
offence  
In making mites at all, — coax from its impo-  
tence

One virile drop of thought, or word, or deed, by  
strain  
To propagate for once — which nature rendered  
vain,  
Who lets first failure stay, yet cares not to re-  
cord  
Mistake that seems to cast opprobrium on the  
Lord!  
Such were the gain from love's best pains!  
But let the elf  
Be touched with hate, because some real man  
bears himself  
Manlike in body and soul, and, since he lives,  
must thwart  
And furify and set a-fizz this counterpart  
O' the pismire that's surprised to efferves-  
cence, if,  
By chance, black bottle come in contact with  
chalk cliff,  
Acid with alkali! Then thrice the bulk, out  
blows  
Our insect, does its kind, and cuckoo-spits some  
rose!

## LXXX

No — 't is ungainly work, the ruling men, at  
best!  
The graceful instinct's right: 't is women  
stand confessed  
Auxiliary, the gain that never goes away,  
Takes nothing and gives all: Elvire, Fiffine,  
't is they  
Convince, — if little, much, no matter! — one  
degree  
The more, at least, convince unreasonable me  
That I am, anyhow, a truth, though all else seem  
And be not: if I dream, at least I know I  
dream.  
The falsity, beside, is fleeting: I can stand  
Still, and let truth come back, — your steady-  
ing touch of hand  
Assists me to remain self-centred, fixed amid  
All on the move. Believe in me, at once you  
bid  
Myself believe that, since one soul has disen-  
gaged  
Mine from the shows of things, so much is fact:  
I waged  
No foolish warfare, then, with shades, myself a  
shade,  
Here in the world — may hope my pains will be  
repaid!  
How false things are, I judge: how change-  
able, I learn:  
When, where, and how it is I shall see truth  
return,  
That I expect to know, because Fiffine knows  
me! —  
How much more, if Elvire!

## LXXXI

“And why not, only she?”  
Since there can be for each, one Best, no more,  
such Best,  
For body and mind of him, abolishes the rest  
O' the simply Good and Better. You please  
select Elvire  
To give you this belief in truth, dispel the fear



Yourself are, after all, as false as what sur-  
rounds ;  
And why not be content ? When we two  
watched the rounds  
The boatman made, 'twixt shoal and sandbank,  
yesterday,  
As, at dead slack of tide, he chose to push his  
way,  
With oar and pole, across the creek, and reach  
the isle  
After a world of pains — my word provoked  
your smile,  
Yet none the less deserved reply : 'T were  
wiser wait  
The turn o' the tide, and find conveyance for  
his freight —  
How easily — within the ship to purpose  
moored,  
Managed by sails, not oars ! But no, — the  
man 's allured  
By liking for the new and hard in his exploit !  
First come shall serve ! He makes — coura-  
geous and adroit —  
The merest willow-leaf of boat do duty, bear  
His merchandise across : once over, needs he  
care  
If folk arrive by ship, six hours hence, fresh  
and gay ? '  
No : he scorns commonplace, affects the un-  
usual way ;  
And good Elvire is moored, with not a breath  
to flap  
The yards of her, no lift of ripple to o'erlap  
Keel, much less, prow. What care ? since  
here 's a cockle-shell,  
Fifine, that 's taut and crank, and carries just  
as well  
Such seamanship as yours ! "

LXXXII

Alack, our life is lent,  
From first to last, the whole, for this experi-  
ment  
Of proving what I say — that we ourselves are  
true !  
I would there were one voyage, and then no  
more to do  
But tread the firm-land, tempt the uncertain  
sea no more  
I would we might dispense with change of  
shore for shore  
To evidence our skill, demonstrate — in no  
dream  
It was, we tided o'er the trouble of the stream.  
I would the steady voyage, and not the fitful  
trip, —  
Elvire, and not Fifine, — might test our sea-  
manship.  
But why expend one's breath to tell you,  
change of boat  
Means change of tactics too ? Come see the  
same afloat  
To-morrow, all the change, new stowage fore  
and aft  
O' the cargo ; then, to cross requires new  
sailor-craft !  
To-day, one step from stern to bow keeps boat  
in trim :

To-morrow, some big stone — or woe to boat  
and him ! --  
Must ballast both. That man stands for Mind,  
paramount  
Throughout the adventure : ay, howe'er you  
make account,  
'Tis mind that navigates, — skips over, twists  
between  
The bales i' the boat, — now gives importance  
to the mean,  
And now abates the pride of life, accepts all  
fact,  
Discards all fiction, — steers Fifine, and cries, i'  
the act,  
" Thou art so bad, and yet so delicate a brown !  
Wouldst tell no end of lies : I talk to smile or  
frown !  
Wouldst rob me : do men blame a squirrel,  
lithe and sly,  
For pilfering the nut she adds to hoard ? Nor  
I, "  
Elvire is true, as truth, honesty's self, alack !  
The worse ! too safe the ship, the transport  
there and back  
Too certain ! one may loll and lounge and  
leave the helm,  
Let wind and tide do work : no fear that  
waves o'erwhelm  
The steady-going bark, as sure to feel her  
way  
Blindfold across, reach land, next year as yes-  
terday !  
How can I but suspect, the true feat were to  
slip  
Down side, transfer myself to cockle-shell from  
ship,  
And try if, trusting to sea-tracklessness, I  
class  
With those around whose breast grew oak and  
triple brass :  
Who dreaded no degree of death, but, with dry  
eyes,  
Surveyed the turgid main and its monstrosi-  
ties —  
And rendered futile so, the prudent Power's  
decree  
Of separate earth and disassociating sea ;  
Since, how is it observed, if impious vessels  
leap  
Across, and tempt a thing they should not  
touch — the deep ?  
(See Horace to the boat, wherein, for Athens  
bound,  
When Virgil must embark — Jove keep him  
safe and sound ! —  
The poet bade his friend start on the watery  
road,  
Much reassured by this so comfortable ode.)

LXXXIII

Then, never grudge my poor Fifine her com-  
pliment !  
The rakish craft could slip her moorings in the  
hoist,  
And, hoisting every stitch of spangled canvas,  
steer  
Through divers rocks and shoals, — in fine, de-  
posit here

Your Virgil of a spouse, in Attica: yea, thrid  
The mob of men, select the special virtue hid  
In him, forsooth, and say — or rather, smile so  
sweet,

"Of all the multitude, you — I prefer to cheat!  
Are you for Athens bound? I can perform the  
trip,

Shove little pinnace off, while yon superior  
ship,

The Elvire, refits in port!" So, off we push  
from beach

Of Pornic town, and lo, ere eye can wink, we  
reach

The Long Walls, and I prove that Athens is no  
dream,

For there the temples rise! they are, they  
nowise seem!

Earth is not all one lie, this truth attests me  
true!

Thanks therefore to Fifine! Elvire, I'm back  
with you!

Share in the memories! Embark I trust we  
shall

Together some fine day, and so, for good and  
all,

Bid Pornic Town adieu, — then, just the strait  
to cross,

And we reach harbor, safe, in Iostephanos!

LXXXIV

How quickly night comes! Lo, already 't is  
the land

Turns sea-like; overcrept by gray, the plains  
expand,

Assume significance; while ocean dwindles,  
shrinks

Into a pettier bound: its splash and plaint,  
methinks,

Six steps away, how both retire, as if their  
part

Were played, another force were free to prove  
her art,

Protagonist in turn! Are you unterrified?

All false, all fleeting too! And nowhere things  
abide,

And everywhere we strain that things should  
stay, — the one

Truth, that ourselves are true!

LXXXV

A word, and I have done.  
Is it not just our hate of falsehood, fleeting-

ness,  
And the mere part, things play, that constitutes  
express

The inmost charm of this Fifine and all her  
tribe?

Actors! We also act, but only they inscribe  
Their style and title so, and preface, only they,

Performance with "A lie is all we do or say,"  
Wherein but there can be the attraction,

Falsehood's bribe,  
That wins so surely o'er to Fifine and her  
tribe

The liking, nay the love of who hate Falsehood  
most,

Except that these alone of mankind make their  
boast

"Frankly, we simulate!" To feign, means —  
to have grace

And so get gratitude! This ruler of the race,  
Crowned, sceptred, stoled to suit, — 't is not  
that you detect

The cobbler in the king, but that he makes  
effect

By seeming the reverse of what you know to  
be

The man, the mind, whole form, fashion, and  
quality.

Mistake his false for true, one minute, — there 's  
an end

Of the admiration! Truth, we grieve at or  
rejoice:

'T is only falsehood, plain in gesture, look and  
voice,

That brings the praise desired, since profit  
comes thereby.

The histrionic truth is in the natural lie.

Because the man who wept the tears was, all  
the time,

Happy enough; because the other man, a-grime  
With guilt was, at the least, as white as I and  
you;

Because the timid type of bashful maidhood,  
who

Starts at her own pure shade, already numbers  
seven

Born babes and, in a month, will turn their  
odd to even;

Because the saucy prince would prove, could  
you unfurl

Some yards of wrap, a meek and meritorious  
girl —

Precisely as you see success attained by each  
O' the mimes, do you approve, not foolishly  
impeach

The falsehood!

LXXXVI

That's the first o' the truths found: all  
things, slow

Or quick i' the passage, come at last to that,  
you know!

Each has a false outside, whereby a truth is  
forced

To issue from within: truth, falsehood, are  
divorced

By the excepted eye, at the rare season, for  
The happy moment. Life means — learning to  
abhor

The false, and love the true, truth treasured  
snatch by snatch,

Waifs counted at their worth. And when with  
strays they match

I' the particolored world, — when, under foul,  
shines fair,

And truth, displayed i' the point, flashes forth  
everywhere

I' the circle, manifest to soul, though hid from  
sense,

And no obstruction more affects this confi-  
dence, —

When faith is ripe for sight, — why, reason-  
ably, then

Comes the great clearing-up. Wait threescore  
years and ten!

## LXXXVII

Therefore I prize stage-play, the honest  
cheating; thence  
The impulse pricked, when fife and drum bade  
Fair commence,  
To bid you trip and skip, link arm in arm with  
me,  
Like husband and like wife, and so together  
see  
The tumbling-troop arrayed, the strollers on  
their stage  
Drawn up and under arms, and ready to en-  
gage.  
And if I started thence upon abstruser  
themes . . .  
Well, 't was a dream, pricked too!

## LXXXVIII

A poet never dreams :  
We prose-folk always do : we miss the proper  
duct  
For thoughts on things unseen, which stagnate  
and obstruct  
The system, therefore ; mind, sound in a body  
sane,  
Keeps thoughts apart from facts, and to one  
flowing vein  
Confines its sense of that which is not, but  
might be,  
And leaves the rest alone. What ghosts do  
poets see?  
What demons fear ? what man or thing misap-  
prehend ?  
Unchecked, the channel's flush, the fancy's  
free to spend  
Its special self aright in manner, time and  
place.  
Never believe that who create the busy race  
O' the brain, bring poetry to birth, such act  
performed,  
Feel trouble them, the same, such residue as  
warmed  
My prosy blood, this morn, — intrusive fancies,  
meant  
For outbreak and escape by quite another  
vent!  
Whence follows that, asleep, my dreamings oft  
exceed  
The bound. But you shall hear.

## LXXXIX

I smoked. The webs o' the weed,  
With many a break i' the mesh, were floating  
to re-form  
Cupola-wise above: chased thither by soft  
warm  
Inflow of air without; since I — of mind to  
muse, to clench  
The gain of soul and body, got by their noon-  
day drench  
In sun and sea — had flung both frames o' the  
window wide,  
To soak my body still and let soul soar beside.  
In came the country sounds and sights and  
smells — that fine  
Sharp needle in the nose from our fermenting  
wine!

In came a dragon-fly with whirl and stir, then  
out,  
Off and away : in came, — kept coming, rather,  
— pout  
Succeeding smile, and take-away still close on  
give, —  
One loose long creeper-branch, tremblingly sen-  
sitive  
To risks, which blooms and leaves, — each leaf  
tongue-broad, each bloom  
Midfinger-deep, — must run by prying in the  
room  
Of one who loves and grasps and spoils and  
speculates.  
All so far plain enough to sight and sense :  
but, weights,  
Measures and numbers, — ah, could one apply  
such test  
To other visitants that came at no request  
Of who kept open house, — to fancies manifold  
From this four-cornered world, the memories  
new and old,  
The antenatal prime experience — what know  
I ? —  
The initiatory love preparing us to die —  
Such were a crowd to count, a sight to see, a  
prize  
To turn to profit, were but fleshly ears and  
eyes  
Able to cope with those o' the spirit !

## XC

Therefore, — since  
Thought hankers after speech, while no speech  
may evince  
Feeling like music, — mine, o'erburdened with  
each gift  
From every visitant, at last resolved to shift  
Its burden to the back of some musician dead  
And gone, who feeling once what I feel now,  
instead  
Of words, sought sounds, and saved forever, in  
the same,  
Truth that escapes prose, — nay, puts poetry to  
shame.  
I read the note, I strike the key, I bid *record*  
The instrument, — thanks greet the veritable  
word!  
And not in vain I urge : "O dead and gone  
away,  
Assist who struggles yet, thy strength become  
my stay,  
Thy record serve as well to register — I felt  
And knew thus much of truth ! With me,  
must knowledge melt  
Into surmise and doubt and disbelief, unless  
Thy music reassure — I gave no idle guess,  
But gained a certitude, I yet may hardly keep !  
What care ? since round is piled a monumental  
heap  
Of music that conserves the assurance, thou as  
well  
Wast certain of the same ! thou, master of the  
spell,  
Mad'st moonbeams marble, didst *record* what  
other men  
Feel only to forget !" Who was it helped me,  
then ?



What master's work first came responsive to  
my call,  
Found my eye, fixed my choice ?

## XCI

Why, Schumann's "Carnival" !  
My choice chimed in, you see, exactly with the  
sounds  
And sights of yestereve, when, going on my  
rounds,  
Where both roads join the bridge, I heard  
across the dusk  
Creak a slow caravan, and saw arrive the husk  
O' the spice-nut, which peeled off this morning,  
and displayed,  
"Twixt tree and tree, a tent whence the red  
pennon made  
Its vivid reach for home and ocean-idleness —  
And where, my heart surmised, at that same  
moment, — yes, —  
Tugging her tricot on — yet tenderly, lest stitch  
Announce the crack of doom, reveal disaster  
which  
Our Pornic's modest stock of merceries in vain  
Were ransacked to retrieve, — there, cautiously  
a-strain,  
(My heart surmised) must crouch in that tent's  
corner, curved  
Like Spring-month's russet moon, some girl by  
fate reserved  
To give me once again the electric snap and  
spark  
Which prove, when finger finds out finger in  
the dark  
O' the world, there's fire and life and truth  
there, link but hands  
And pass the secret on. Lo, link by link, ex-  
pands  
The circle, lengthens out the chain, till one  
embrace  
Of high with low is found uniting the whole  
race,  
Not simply you and me and our Fifine, but all  
The world: the Fair expands into the Carni-  
val,  
And Carnival again to . . . ah, but that's my  
dream !

## XCII

I somehow played the piece: remarked on  
each old theme  
I' the new dress; saw how food o' the soul, the  
stuff that 's made  
To furnish man with thought and feeling, is  
purveyed  
Substantially the same from age to age, with  
change  
Of the outside only for successive feasters,  
Range  
The banquet-room o' the world, from the dim  
farthest head  
O' the table, to its foot, for you and me be-  
spread,  
This merry morn, we find sufficient fare, I trow.  
But, novel? Scrape away the sauce; and taste,  
below,  
The verity o' the viand, — you shall perceive  
there went

To board-head just the dish which other condi-  
ment  
Makes palatable now: guests came, sat down,  
fell-to,  
Rose up, wiped mouth, went way, — lived,  
died, — and never knew  
That generations yet should, seeking sustenance,  
Still find the selfsame fare, with somewhat to  
enhance  
Its flavor, in the kind of cooking. As with hates  
And loves and fears and hopes, so with what  
emulates  
The same, expresses hates, loves, fears, and  
hopes in Art:  
The forms, the themes — no one without its  
counterpart  
Ages ago; no one but, mumbled the due time  
I' the mouth of the eater, needs be cooked  
again in rhyme,  
Dished up anew in paint, sauce-smothered fresh  
in sound,  
To suit the wisdom-tooth, just cut, of the age,  
that 's found  
With gums obtuse to gust and smack which  
relished so  
The meat o' the meal folk made some fifty  
years ago.  
But don't suppose the new was able to efface  
The old without a struggle, a pang! The  
commonplace  
Still clung about his heart, long after all the rest  
O' the natural man, at eye and ear, was caught,  
confessed  
The charm of change, although wry lip and  
wrinkled nose  
Owned ancient virtue more conducive to repose  
Than modern nothings roused to somethings by  
some shred  
Of pungency, perchance garlic in amber's stead.  
And so on, till one day, another age, by due  
Rotation, pries, sniffs, smacks, discovers old is  
new,  
And sauce, our sires pronounced insipid, proves  
again  
Sole piquant, may resume its titillating reign —  
With music, most of all the arts, since change is  
there  
The law, and not the lapse: the precious means  
the rare,  
And not the absolute in all good save surprise.  
So I remarked upon our Schumann's victories  
Over the commonplace, how faded phrase grew  
fine,  
And palled perfection — piqued, up-startled by  
that brine,  
His pickle — bit the mouth and burnt the  
tongue aright,  
Beyond the merely good no longer exquisite:  
Then took things as I found, and thanked with-  
out demur  
The pretty piece — played through that move-  
ment, you prefer  
Where dance and shuffle past, — he scolding  
while she pouts,  
She canting while he calms, — in those eternal  
bouts  
Of age, the dog — with youth, the cat — by  
rose-festoon

Tied teasingly enough — Columbine, Pantaloon :  
 She, toe-tips and *staccato*, — *legato*, shakes his  
 poll  
 And shambles in pursuit, the senior. *Fi la  
 folle !*  
 Lie to him ! get his gold and pay its price !  
 begin  
 Your trade betimes, nor wait till you 've wed  
 Harlequin  
 And need, at the week's end, to play the du-  
 teous wife,  
 And swear you still love slaps and leapings  
 more than life !  
 Pretty ! I say.

## XCIII

And so, I somehow-nohow played  
 The whole o' the pretty piece ; and then . . .  
 whatever weighed  
 My eyes down, furl'd the films about my wits ?  
 suppose,  
 The morning-bath, — the sweet monotony of  
 those  
 Three keys, flat, flat and flat, never a sharp at  
 all, —  
 Or else the brain's fatigue, forced even here to  
 fall  
 Into the same old track, and recognize the  
 shift  
 From old to new, and back to old again, and, —  
 swift  
 Or slow, no matter, — still the certainty of  
 change,  
 Conviction we shall find the false, where'er we  
 range,  
 In art no less than nature : or what if wrist were  
 numb,  
 And over-tense the muscle, abductor of the  
 thumb,  
 Taxed by those tenths' and twelfths' uncon-  
 scionable stretch ?  
 Howe'er it came to pass, I soon was far to  
 fetch —  
 Gone off in company with Music !

## XCIV

Whither bound  
 Except for Venice ? She it was, by instinct  
 found  
 Carnival-country proper, who far below the  
 perch  
 Where I was pinnacled, showed, opposite,  
 Mark's Church,  
 And, underneath, Mark's Square, with those  
 two lines of street,  
*Procuratie*-sides, each leading to my feet —  
 Since from above I gazed, however I got there.

## XCV

And what I gazed upon was a prodigious Fair.  
 Concourse immense of men and women, crowned  
 or casqued,  
 Turbaned or tiar'd, wreathed, plumed, hatted  
 or wigged, but masked —  
 Always masked, — only, how ? No face-shape,  
 beast or bird.  
 Nay, fish and reptile even, but some one had  
 preferred,

From out its frontispiece, feathered or scaled  
 or curled,  
 To make the vizard whence himself should  
 view the world,  
 And where the world believed himself was  
 manifest.  
 Yet when you came to look, mixed up among  
 the rest  
 More funnily by far, were masks to imitate  
 Humanity's mishap : the wrinkled brow, bald  
 pate,  
 And rheumy eyes of Age, peak'd chin and  
 parchment chap,  
 Were signs of day-work done, and wage-time  
 near, — mishap  
 Merely ; but, Age reduced to simple greed and  
 guile,  
 Worn apathetic else as some smooth slab, ere-  
 while  
 A clear-cut man-at-arms i' the pavement, till  
 foot's tread  
 Effaced the sculpture, left the stone you saw  
 instead, —  
 Was not that terrible beyond the mere un-  
 couth ?  
 Well, and perhaps the next revolting you was  
 Youth,  
 Stark ignorance and crude conceit, half smirk,  
 half stare  
 On that frank fool-face, gay beneath its head  
 of hair  
 Which covers nothing.

## XCVI

These, you are to understand,  
 Were the mere hard and sharp distinctions.  
 On each hand,  
 I soon became aware, flocked the infinitude  
 Of passions, loves and hates, man pampers till  
 his mood  
 Becomes himself, the whole sole face we name  
 him by,  
 Nor want denotement else, if age or youth  
 supply  
 The rest of him : old, young, — classed crea-  
 ture : in the main  
 A love, a hate, a hope, a fear, each soul  
 astrain  
 Some one way through the flesh — the face, an  
 evidence  
 O' the soul at work inside ; and, all the more  
 intense,  
 So much the more grotesque.

## XCVII

"Why should each soul be tasked  
 Some one way, by one love or else one hate ?"  
 I asked.  
 When it occurred to me, from all these sights  
 beneath  
 There rose not any sound : a crowd, yet dumb  
 as death !

## XCVIII

Soon I knew why. (Propose a riddle, and  
 't is solved  
 Forthwith — in dream !) They spoke ; but,  
 since on me devolved

To see, and understand by sight, — the vulgar  
 speech  
 Might be dispensed with. "He who cannot  
 see, must reach  
 As best he may the truth of men by help of  
 words  
 They please to speak, must fare at will of who  
 affords  
 The banquet," — so I thought. "Who sees  
 not, hears and so  
 Gets to believe; myself it is that, seeing,  
 know,  
 And, knowing, can dispense with voice and  
 vanity  
 Of speech. What hinders then, that, drawing  
 closer, I  
 Put privilege to use, see and know better still  
 These *simulacra*, taste the profit of my skill,  
 Down in the midst ?"

## XCIX

And plumb I pitched into the square —  
 A groundling like the rest. What think you  
 happened there ?  
 Precise the contrary of what one would expect !  
 For, — whereas, so much more monstrosities  
 deflect  
 From nature and the type, as you the more  
 approach  
 Their precinct, — here, I found brutality en-  
 croach  
 Less on the human, lie the lightlier as I looked  
 The nearer on these faces that seemed but  
 now so crook'd  
 And clawed away from God's prime purpose.  
 They diverged  
 A little from the type, but somehow rather urged  
 To pity than disgust : the prominent, before,  
 Now dwindled into mere distinctness, nothing  
 more.  
 Still, at first sight, stood forth undoubtedly the  
 fact  
 Some deviation was : in no one case there  
 lacked  
 The certain sign and mark, say hint, say, trick  
 of lip  
 Or twist of nose, that proved a fault in work-  
 manship,  
 Change in the prime design, some hesitancy  
 here  
 And there, which checked the man and let  
 the beast appear ;  
 But that was all.

## C

All ; yet enough to bid each tongue  
 Lie in abeyance still. They talked, themselves  
 among,  
 Of themselves, to themselves : I saw the  
 mouths at play,  
 The gesture that enforced, the eye that strove  
 to say  
 The same thing as the voice, and seldom gained  
 its point  
 — That this was so, I saw ; but all seemed out  
 of joint  
 I the vocal medium 'twixt the world and me.  
 I gained

Knowledge by notice, not by giving ear, —  
 attained  
 To truth by what men seemed, not said : to me  
 one glance  
 Was worth whole histories of noisy utterance,  
 — At least, to me in dream.

## CI

And presently I found  
 That, just as ugliness had withered, so unwound  
 Itself, and perished off, repugnance to what  
 wrong  
 Might linger yet i' the make of man. My will  
 was strong  
 I' the matter ; I could pick and choose, project  
 my weight :  
 (Remember how we saw the boatman trim his  
 freight !)  
 Determine to observe, or manage to escape,  
 Or make divergency assume another shape  
 By shift of point of sight in me the observer :  
 thus  
 Corrected, added to, subtracted from, — dis-  
 cuss  
 Each variant quality, and brute-beast touch  
 was turned  
 Into mankind's safeguard ! Force, guile, were  
 arms which earned  
 My praise, not blame at all : for we must learn  
 to live,  
 Case-hardened at all points, not bare and  
 sensitive,  
 But plated for defence, nay, furnished for  
 attack,  
 With spikes at the due place, that neither front  
 nor back  
 May suffer in that squeeze with nature, we find  
 — life.  
 Are we not here to learn the good of peace  
 through strife,  
 Of love through hate, and reach knowledge by  
 ignorance ?  
 Why, those are helps thereto, which late we  
 eyed askance,  
 And nicknamed unaware ! Just so, a sword  
 we call  
 Superfluous, and cry out against, at festival :  
 Wear it in time of war, its clink and clatter  
 grate  
 O' the ear to purpose then !

## CII

I found, one must abate  
 One's scorn of the soul's casing, distinct from  
 the soul's self —  
 Which is the centre-drop : whereas the pride in  
 pelf,  
 The lust to seem the thing it cannot be, the  
 greed  
 For praise, and all the rest seen outside, —  
 these indeed  
 Are the hard polished cold crystal environment  
 Of those strange orbs unearthed i' the Druid  
 temple, meant  
 For divination (so the learned please to think)  
 Wherein you may admire one dewdrop roll and  
 wink,  
 All unaffected by — quite alien to — what sealed



And saved it long ago: though how it got con-  
gealed  
I shall not give a guess, nor how, by power  
occult,  
The solid surface-shield was outcome and result  
Of simple dew at work to save itself amid  
The unwatery force around; protected thus,  
dew slid  
Safe through all opposites, impatient to absorb  
Its spot of life, and last forever in the orb  
We, now, from hand to hand pass with impunity.

## CIII

And the delight wherewith I watch this  
crowd must be  
Akin to that which crowns the chemist when he  
winds  
Thread up and up, till clue be fairly clutched,  
— unbinds  
The composite, ties fast the simple to its mate,  
And, tracing each effect back to its cause, elate,  
Constructs in fancy, from the fewest primitives,  
The complex and complete, all diverse life, that  
lives  
Not only in beast, bird, fish, reptile, insect, but  
The very plants and earths and ores. Just so  
I glut  
My hunger both to be and know the thing I am,  
By contrast with the thing I am not; so,  
through sham  
And outside, I arrive at inmost real, probe  
And prove how the nude form obtained the  
checkered robe.

## CIV

— Experience, I am glad to master soon or  
late,  
Here, there, and everywhere i' the world, with-  
out debate!  
Only, in Venice why? What reason for Mark's  
Square  
Rather than Timbuctoo?

## CV

And I became aware,  
Scarcely the word escaped my lips, that swift  
ensued  
In silence and by stealth, and yet with certitude,  
A formidable change of the amphitheatre  
Which held the Carnival; although the human  
stir  
Continued just the same amid that shift of  
scene.

## CVI

For as on edifice of cloud i' the gray and  
green  
Of evening, — built about some glory of the  
west,  
To barricade the sun's departure, — manifest,  
He plays, pre-eminently gold, gilds vapor, crag  
and crest  
Which bend in rapt suspense above the act and  
deed  
They cluster round and keep their very own,  
nor heed  
The world at watch; while we, breathlessly at  
the base

O' the castellated bulk, note momentarily the  
mace  
Of night fall here, fall there, bring change with  
every blow,  
Alike to sharpened shaft and broadened portico  
I' the structure: heights and depths, beneath  
the leaden stress,  
Crumble and melt and mix together, coalesce,  
Re-form, but sadder still, subdued yet more and  
more  
By every fresh defeat, till wearied eyes need  
pore  
No longer on the dull impoverished decadence  
Of all that pomp of pile in towering evidence  
So lately: —

## CVII

Even thus nor otherwise, meseemed  
That if I fixed my gaze awhile on what I  
dreamed  
Was Venice' Square, Mark's Church, the  
scheme was straight unschemed,  
A subtle something had its way within the  
heart  
Of each and every house I watched, with coun-  
terpart  
Of tremor through the front and outward face,  
until  
Mutation was at end; impassive and stock-still  
Stood now the ancient house, grown — new, is  
scarce the phrase,  
Since older, in a sense, — altered to . . . what  
i' the ways,  
Ourselves are wont to see, coerced by city, town,  
Or village, anywhere i' the world, pace up or  
down  
Europe! In all the maze, no single tenement  
I saw, but I could claim acquaintance with.

## CVIII

There went  
Conviction to my soul, that what I took of late  
For Venice was the world; its Carnival — the  
state  
Of mankind, masquerade in life-long perma-  
nence  
For all time, and no one particular feast-day.  
Whence  
'T was easy to infer what meant my late dis-  
gust  
At the brute-pageant, each grotesque of greed  
and lust  
And idle hate, and love as impotent for good —  
When from my pride of place I passed the in-  
terlude  
In critical review; and what, the wonder that  
ensued  
When, from such pinnacle pre-eminence, I  
found  
Somehow the proper goal for wisdom was the  
ground  
And not the sky, — so, slid sagaciously betimes  
Down heaven's baluster-rope, to reach the mob  
of mimes  
And mummers; whereby came discovery there  
was just  
Enough and not too much of hate, love, greed  
and lust,

Could one discerningly but hold the balance,  
 shift  
 'The weight from scale to scale, do justice to the  
 drift  
 Of nature, and explain the glories by the  
 shames  
 Mixed up in man, one stuff miscalled by differ-  
 ent names  
 According to what stage i' the process turned  
 his rough,  
 Even as I gazed, to smooth — only get close  
 enough !  
 — What was all this except the lesson of a life ?

## CIX

And — consequent upon the learning how from  
 strife  
 Grew peace — from evil, good — came know-  
 ledge that, to get  
 Acquaintance with the way o' the world, we  
 must nor fret  
 Nor fume, on altitudes of self-sufficiency,  
 But bid a frank farewell to what — we think —  
 should be,  
 And, with as good a grace, welcome what is —  
 we find.

## CX

Is — for the hour, observe ! Since something  
 to my mind  
 Suggested soon the fancy, nay, certitude that  
 change,  
 Never suspending touch, continued to derange  
 What architecture, we, walled up within the  
 cirque  
 O' the world, consider fixed as fate, not fairy-  
 work.  
 For those were temples, sure, which tremblingly  
 grew blank  
 From bright, then broke afresh in triumph, —  
 ah, but sank  
 As soon, for liquid change through artery and  
 vein  
 O' the very marble wound its way ! And first a  
 stain  
 Would startle and offend amid the glory ; next,  
 Spot swift succeeded spot, but found me less  
 perplexed  
 By portents ; then, as 't were, a sleepiness soft  
 stole  
 Over the stately fane, and shadow sucked the  
 whole  
 Façade into itself, made uniformly earth  
 What was a piece of heaven ; till, lo, a second  
 birth,  
 And the veil broke away because of something  
 new  
 Inside, that pushed to gain an outlet, paused in  
 view  
 At last, and proved a growth of stone or brick  
 or wood  
 Which, alien to the aim o' the Builder, some-  
 how stood  
 The test, could satisfy, if not the early race  
 For whom he built, at least our present popu-  
 lace,  
 Who must not bear the blame for what, blamed,  
 proves mishap

Of the Artist : his work gone, another fills the  
 gap,  
 Serves the prime purpose so. Undoubtedly  
 there spreads  
 Building around, above, which makes men lift  
 their heads  
 To look at, or look through, or look — for aught  
 I care —  
 Over : if only up, it is, not down, they stare.  
 "Commercing with the skies," and not the  
 pavement in the Square.

## CXI

But are they only temples that subdivide, col-  
 lapse,  
 And tower again, transformed ? Academies,  
 perhaps !  
 Domes where dwells Learning, seats of Science,  
 bower and hall  
 Which house Philosophy — do these, too, rise  
 and fall,  
 Based though foundations be on steadfast  
 mother-earth,  
 With no chimeric claim to supermundane birth,  
 No boast that, dropped from cloud, they did  
 not grow from ground ?  
 Why, these fare worst of all ! these vanish and  
 are found  
 Nowhere, by who tasks eye some twice within  
 his term  
 Of threescore years and ten, for tidings what  
 each germ  
 Has burgeoned out into, whereof the promise  
 stunned  
 His ear with such acclaim, — praise-payment to  
 refund  
 The praisers, never doubt, some twice before  
 they die  
 Whose days are long i' the land.

## CXII

Alack, Philosophy !  
 Despite the chop and change, diminished or in-  
 creased,  
 Patched-up and plastered-o'er, Religion stands  
 at least  
 I' the temple-type. But thou ? Here gape I,  
 all agog  
 These thirty years, to learn how tadpole turns  
 to frog ;  
 And thrice at least have gazed with mild aston-  
 ishment,  
 As, skyward up and up, some fire-new fabric  
 sent  
 Its challenge to mankind, that, clustered under-  
 neath  
 To hear the word, they straight believe, ay, in  
 the teeth  
 O' the Past, clap hands, and hail triumphant  
 Truth's outbreak —  
 Tadpole-frog-theory propounded past mistake !  
 In vain ! A something ails the edifice, it bends,  
 It bows, it buries . . . Haste ! cry " Heads  
 below " to friends —  
 But have no fear they find, when smother shall  
 subside,  
 Some substitution perk with unabated pride  
 I' the predecessor's place !

## CXIII

No, — the one voice which failed  
 Never, the preachment's coign of vantage  
 nothing ailed, —  
 That had the luck to lodge i' the house not  
 made with hands!  
 And all it preached was this: "Truth builds  
 upon the sands,  
 Though stationed on a rock: and so her work  
 decays,  
 And so she builds afresh, with like result.  
 Naught stays  
 But just the fact that Truth not only is, but  
 fain  
 Would have men know she needs must be, by  
 each so plain  
 Attempt to visibly inhabit where they dwell."  
 Her works are work, while she is she; that  
 work does well  
 Which lasts mankind their lifetime through,  
 and lets believe  
 One generation more, that, though sand run  
 through sieve,  
 Yet earth now reached is rock, and what we  
 moderns find  
 Erected here is Truth, who, 'stablished to her  
 mind  
 I' the fulness of the days, will never change in  
 show  
 More than in substance erst: men thought  
 they knew; we know!

## CXIV

Do you, my generation? Well, let the blocks  
 prove mist  
 I' the main enclosure, — church and college, if  
 they list,  
 Be something for a time, and everything anon,  
 And anything awhile, as fit is off or on,  
 Till they grow nothing, soon to reappear no  
 less  
 As something, — shape reshaped, till out of  
 shapelessness  
 Come shape again as sure! no doubt, or round  
 or square  
 Or polygon its front, some building will be  
 there,  
 Do duty in that nook o' the wall o' the world  
 where once  
 The Architect saw fit precisely to ensconce  
 College or church, and bid such bulwark guard  
 the line  
 O' the barrier round about, humanity's confine.

## CXV

Leave watching change at work i' the greater  
 scale, on these  
 The main supports, and turn to their interstices  
 Filled up by fabrics too, less costly and less  
 rare,  
 Yet of importance, yet essential to the Fair  
 They help to circumscribe, instruct, and regu-  
 late!  
 See, where each booth-front boasts, in letters  
 small or great,  
 Its speciality, proclaims its privilege to stop  
 A breach, beside the best!

## CXVI

Here History keeps shop,  
 Tells how past deeds were done, so and not  
 otherwise:  
 "Man! hold truth evermore! forget the early  
 lies!"  
 There sits Morality, demure behind her stall,  
 Dealing out life and death: "This is the thing  
 to call  
 Right, and this other, wrong; thus think, thus  
 do, thus say,  
 Thus joy, thus suffer! — not to-day as yester-  
 day —  
 Yesterday's doctrine dead, this only shall en-  
 dure!  
 Obey its voice and live!" — enjoins the dame  
 demure.  
 While Art gives flag to breeze, bids drum beat,  
 trumpet blow,  
 Inviting eye and ear to yonder raree-show.  
 Up goes the canvas, hauled to height of pole.  
 I think,  
 We know the way — long lost, late learned —  
 to paint! A wink  
 Of eye, and lo, the pose! the statue on its  
 plinth!  
 How could we moderns miss the heart o' the  
 labyrinth  
 Perversely all these years, permit the Greek  
 seclude  
 His secret till to-day? And here's another  
 feud  
 Now happily composed: inspect this quartet-  
 score!  
 Got long past melody, no word has Music more  
 To say to mortal man! But is the bard to be  
 Behindhand? Here's his book, and now per-  
 haps you see  
 At length what poetry can do!

## CXVII

Why, that's stability  
 Itself, that change on change we sorrowfully  
 saw  
 Creep o'er the prouder piles! We acquiesced  
 in law  
 When the fine gold grew dim i' the temple,  
 when the brass  
 Which pillared that so brave abode where  
 Knowledge was,  
 Bowed and resigned the trust; but, bear all  
 this caprice,  
 Harlequinade where swift to birth succeeds  
 decease  
 Of hue at every turn o' the tinsel-flag which  
 flames  
 While Art holds booth in Fair? Such glories  
 chased by shames  
 Like these, distract beyond the solemn and  
 august  
 Procedure to decay, evanishment in dust,  
 Of those marmoreal domes, — above vicissi-  
 tude,  
 We used to hope!

## CXVIII

"So, all is change, in fine," pursued



The preachment to a pause. When — "All is permanence!"  
 Returned a voice. Within? without? No matter whence  
 The explanation came: for, understand, I ought  
 To simply say — "I saw," each thing I say "I thought."  
 Since ever, as, unrolled, the strange scene-picture grew  
 Before me, sight flashed first, though mental comment too  
 Would follow in a trice, come hobblingly to halt.

## CXXIX

So, what did I see next but, — much as when the vault  
 I' the west, — wherein we watch the vapory, manifold  
 Transfiguration, — tired turns blaze to black, — behold,  
 Peak reconciled to base, dark ending feud with bright,  
 The multiform subsides, becomes the definite.  
 Contrasting life and strife, where battle they i' the blank  
 Severity of peace in death, for which we thank  
 One wind that comes to quell the concourse, drive at last  
 'Things to a shape which suits the close of things, and cast  
 Palpably o'er vexed earth heaven's mantle of repose?

## CXX

Just so, in Venice' Square, that things were at the close  
 Was signalled to my sense; for I perceived arrest  
 O' the change all round about. As if some impulse pressed  
 Each gently into each, what was distinctness, late,  
 Grew vague, and, line from line no longer separate,  
 No matter what its style, edifice . . . shall I say,  
 Died into edifice? I find no simpler way  
 Of saying how, without or dash or shock or trace  
 Of violence, I found unity in the place  
 Of temple, tower, — nay, hall and house and hut, — one blank  
 Severity of peace in death; to which they sank  
 Resigned enough, till . . . ah, conjecture, I beseech,  
 What special blank did they agree to, all and each?  
 What common shape was that wherein they mutely merged  
 Likes and dislikes of form, so plain before?

## CXXI

I urged  
 Your step this way, prolonged our path of enterprise

To where we stand at last, in order that your eyes  
 Might see the very thing, and save my tongue describe  
 The Druid monument which fronts you. Could I bribe  
 Nature to come in aid, illustrate what I mean,  
 What wants there she should lend to solemnize the scene?

## CXXII

How does it strike you, this construction gaunt and gray —  
 Sole object, these piled stones, that gleam unground-away  
 By twilight's hungry jaw, which champs fine all beside  
 I' the solitary waste we grope through? Oh, no guide  
 Need we to grope our way and reach the monstrous door  
 Of granite! Take my word, the deeper you explore  
 That caverned passage, filled with fancies to the brim,  
 The less will you approve the adventure! such a grim  
 Bar-sinister soon blocks abrupt your path, and ends  
 All with a cold dread shape, — shape whereon Learning spends  
 Labor, and leaves the text obscurer for the gloss,  
 While Ignorance reads right — recoiling from that Cross!  
 Whence came the mass and mass, strange quality of stone  
 Unquarried anywhere i' the region round? Unknown!  
 Just as unknown, how such enormity could be  
 Conveyed by land, or else transported over sea,  
 And laid in order, so, precisely each on each,  
 As you and I would build a grotto where the beach  
 Sheds shell — to last an hour: this building lasts from age  
 To age the same. But why?

## CXXIII

Ask Learning! I engage  
 You get a proxy wherefore, shall help you to advance  
 In knowledge just as much as helps you Ignorance  
 Surmising, in the mouth of peasant-lad or lass,  
 "I heard my father say he understood it was made  
 A building, people built as soon as earth was made  
 Almost, because they might forget (they were afraid)  
 Earth did not make itself, but came of Somebody.  
 They labored that their work might last, and show thereby  
 He stays, while we and earth, and all things come and go.  
 Come whence? Go whither? That, when come and gone, we know

Perhaps, but not while earth and all things  
 need our best  
 Attention: we must wait and die to know the  
 rest.  
 Ask, if that's true, what use in setting up the  
 pile?  
 To make one fear and hope: remind us, all the  
 while  
 We come and go, outside there's Somebody  
 that stays;  
 A circumstance which ought to make us mind  
 our ways,  
 Because, — whatever end we answer by this  
 life, —  
 Next time, best chance must be for who, with  
 toil and strife,  
 Manages now to live most like what he was  
 meant  
 Become: since who succeeds so far, 't is evi-  
 dent,  
 Stands foremost on the file; who fails, has less  
 to hope  
 From new promotion. That's the rule — with  
 even a rope  
 Of mushrooms, like this rope I dangle! those  
 that grew  
 Greatest and roundest, all in life they had to  
 do,  
 Gain a reward, a grace they never dreamed, I  
 think;  
 Since, outside white as milk and inside black as  
 ink,  
 They go to the Great House to make a dainty  
 dish  
 For Don and Donna; while this basket-load, I  
 wish  
 Well off my arm, it breaks, — no starveling of  
 the heap  
 But had his share of dew, his proper length of  
 sleep  
 I' the sunshine: yet, of all, the outcome is —  
 this queer  
 Cribbed quantity of dwarfs which burden bas-  
 ket here  
 Till I reach home; 't is there that, having run  
 their rigs,  
 They end their earthly race, are flung as food  
 for pigs.  
 Any more use I see? Well, you must know,  
 there lies  
 Something, the Curé says, that points to myste-  
 ries  
 Above our grasp: a huge stone pillar, once up-  
 right,  
 Now laid at length, half-lost — discreetly shun-  
 ning sight  
 I' the bush and brier, because of stories in the  
 air —  
 Hints what it signified, and why was stationed  
 there,  
 Once on a time. In vain the Curé tasked his  
 lungs —  
 Showed, in a preachment, how, at bottom of the  
 rungs  
 O' the ladder, Jacob saw, where heavenly an-  
 gels steep  
 Up and down, lay a stone which served him,  
 while he slept,

For pillow; when he woke, he set the same up-  
 right  
 As pillar, and a-top poured oil: things requisite  
 To instruct posterity, there mounts from floor  
 to roof,  
 A staircase, earth to heaven; and also put in  
 proof,  
 When we have scaled the sky, we well may let  
 alone  
 What raised us from the ground, and — paying  
 to the stone  
 Proper respect, of course — take staff and go  
 our way,  
 Leaving the Pagan night for Christian break of  
 day.  
 'For,' preached he, 'what they dreamed, these  
 Pagans, wide-awake  
 We Christians may behold. How strange, then,  
 were mistake  
 Did anybody style the stone, — because of drop  
 Remaining there from oil which Jacob poured  
 a-top, —  
 Itself the Gate of Heaven, itself the end, and not  
 The means thereto!' Thus preached the Curé,  
 and no jot  
 The more persuaded people but that, what once  
 a thing  
 Meant and had right to mean, it still must  
 mean. So cling  
 Folk somehow to the prime authoritative  
 speech,  
 And so distrust report, it seems as they could  
 reach  
 Far better the arch-word, whereon their fate  
 depends.  
 Through rude character, than all the grace it  
 lends,  
 That lettering of your scribes! who flourish  
 pen apace  
 And ornament the text, they say — we say,  
 efface.  
 Hence, when the earth began its life afresh in  
 May,  
 And fruit-trees bloomed, and waves would wan-  
 ton, and the bay  
 Ruffle its wealth of weed, and stranger-birds  
 arrive,  
 And beasts take each a mate, — folk, too,  
 found sensitive,  
 Surmised the old gray stone upright there,  
 through such tracts  
 Of solitariness and silence, kept the facts  
 Entrusted it, could deal out doctrine, did it  
 please:  
 No fresh and frothy draught, but liquor on the  
 lees,  
 Strong, savage, and sincere: first bleedings from  
 a vine  
 Whereof the product now do Curés so refine  
 To insipidity, that, when heart sinks, we strive  
 And strike from the old stone the old restora-  
 tive.  
 'Which is?' — why, go and ask our grandames  
 how they used  
 To dance around it, till the Curé disabused  
 Their ignorance, and bade the parish in a band  
 Lay flat the obtrusive thing that cumbered so  
 the land!

And there, accordingly, in bush and brier it—  
 ‘bides  
 Its time to rise again!’ (so somebody derides,  
 That’s pert from Paris,) ‘since, yon spire, you  
 keep erect  
 Yonder, and pray beneath, is nothing, I suspect,  
 But just the symbol’s self, expressed in slate  
 for rock,  
 Art’s smooth for Nature’s rough, new chip  
 from the old block!’  
 There, sir, my say is said! Thanks, and Saint  
 Gille increase  
 The wealth bestowed so well!’—wherewith  
 he pockets piece,  
 Doffs cap, and takes the road. I leave in  
 Learning’s clutch  
 More money for his book, but scarcely gain as  
 much.

## CXXIV

To this it was, this same primeval monument,  
 That, in my dream, I saw building with build-  
 ing blent  
 Fall: each on each they fast and founderingly  
 went  
 Confusion-ward; but thence again subsided fast,  
 Became the mound you see. Magnificently  
 massed  
 Indeed, those mammoth-stones, piled by the  
 Protoplast  
 Temple-wise in my dream! beyond compare  
 with fanes  
 Which, solid-looking late, had left no least re-  
 mains  
 I’ the bald and blank, now sole usurper of the  
 plains  
 Of heaven, diversified and beautiful before.  
 And yet simplicity appeared to speak no more  
 Nor less to me than spoke the compound. At  
 the core,  
 One and no other word, as in the crust of late,  
 Whispered, which, audible through the transi-  
 tion-state,  
 Was no loud utterance in even the ultimate  
 Disposure. For as some imperial chord sub-  
 sists,  
 Steadily underlies the accidental mists  
 Of music springing thence, that run their mazy  
 race  
 Around, and sink, absorbed, back to the triad  
 base,—  
 So, out of that one word, each variant rose and  
 fell  
 And left the same “All’s change, but perma-  
 nence as well.”  
 —Grave note whence—list aloft!—harmonies  
 sound, that mean:  
 “Truth inside, and outside, truth also; and  
 between  
 Each, falsehood that is change, as truth is  
 permanence.  
 The individual soul works through the shows  
 of sense  
 (Which, ever proving false, still promise to be  
 true)  
 Up to an outer soul as individual too;  
 And, through the fleeting, lives to die into the  
 fixed,

And reach at length ‘God, man, or both to-  
 gether mixed,’  
 Transparent through the flesh, by parts which  
 prove a whole,  
 By hints which make the soul discernible by  
 soul—  
 Let only soul look up, not down, not hate but  
 love,  
 As truth successively takes shape, one grade  
 above  
 Its last presentment, tempts as it were truth  
 indeed  
 Revealed this time; so tempts, till we attain to  
 read  
 The signs aright, and learn, by failure, truth is  
 forced  
 To manifest itself through falsehood; whence  
 divorced  
 By the excepted eye, at the rare season, for  
 The happy moment, truth instructs us to abhor  
 The false, and prize the true, obtainable  
 thereby.  
 Then do we understand the value of a lie;  
 Its purpose served, its truth once safe deposited,  
 Each lie, superfluous now, leaves, in the singer’s  
 stead,  
 The indubitable song; the historic personage  
 Put by, leaves prominent the impulse of his age;  
 Truth sets aside speech, act, time, place, in-  
 deed, but brings  
 Nakedly forward now the principle of things  
 Highest and least.”

## CXXV

Wherewith change ends. What change to  
 dread  
 When, disengaged at last from every veil, in-  
 stead  
 Of type remains the truth? once—falsehood:  
 but anon  
*Theosuton e brotton eper kekramenon,*  
 Something as true as soul is true, though veils  
 between  
 Prove false and fleet away. As I mean, did he  
 mean,  
 The poet whose bird-phrase sits, singing in my  
 ear  
 A mystery not unlike? What through the  
 dark and drear  
 Brought comfort to the Titan? Emerging  
 from the lymph,  
 “God, man, or mixture” proved only to be a  
 nymph:  
 “From whom the clink on clink of metal”  
 (money, judged  
 Abundant in my purse) “struck” (bumped at,  
 till it budged)  
 “The modesty, her soul’s habitual resident”  
 (Where late the sisterhood were lively in their  
 tent)  
 “As out of wingèd car” (that caravan on  
 wheels)  
 “Impulsively she rushed, no slippers to her  
 heels.”  
 And “Fear not, friends we flock!” soft smiled  
 the sea-Fifine—  
 Primitive of the veils (if he meant what I  
 mean)



The poet's Titan learned to lift, ere "Three-formed Fate,  
*Moirai Trimorphoi*," stood unmasked the Ultimate.

## CXXVI

Enough o' the dream! You see how poetry turns prose.  
Announcing wonder-work, I dwindle at the close  
Down to mere commonplace old facts which everybody knows.  
So dreaming disappoints! The fresh and strange at first,  
Soon wears to trite and tame, nor warrants the outburst  
Of heart with which we hail those heights, at very brink  
Of heaven, whereto one least of lifts would lead, we think,  
But wherefrom quick decline conducts our step, we find,  
To homely earth, old facts familiar left behind.  
Did not this monument, for instance, long ago  
Say all it had to say, show all it had to show,  
Nor promise to do duty more in dream?

## CXXVII

Awaking so, What if we, homeward-bound, all peace and some fatigue,  
Trudge, soberly complete our tramp of near a league,  
Last little mile which makes the circuit just, Elvire?  
We end where we began: that consequence is clear.  
All peace and some fatigue, wherever we were nursed  
To life, we bosom us on death, find last is first  
And thenceforth final too.

## CXXVIII

"Why final? Why the more  
Worth credence now than when such truth proved false before?"  
Because a novel point impresses now: each lie  
Redounded to the praise of man, was victory  
Man's nature had both right to get, and might to gain,  
And by no means implied submission to the reign  
Of other quite as real a nature, that saw fit  
To have its way with man, not man his way with it.  
This time, acknowledgment and acquiescence quell  
Their contrary in man; promotion proves as well  
Defeat: and Truth, unlike the False with Truth's outside,  
Neither plumes up his will nor puffs him out with pride.  
I fancy, there must lurk some cogeny i' the claim,  
Man, such abatement made, submits to, all the same.

Soul finds no triumph, here, to register like Sense  
With whom 'tis ask and have, — the want, the evidence  
That the thing wanted, soon or late, will be supplied.  
This indeed plumes up will; this, sure, puffs out with pride,  
When, reading records right, man's instincts still attest  
Promotion comes to Sense because Sense likes it best;  
For bodies sprouted legs, through a desire to run:  
While hands, when fain to filch, got fingers one by one,  
And nature, that's ourself, accommodative brings  
To bear that, tired of legs which walk, we now bud wings  
Since of a mind to fly. Such savor in the nose  
Of Sense would stimulate Soul sweetly, I suppose,  
Soul with its proper itch of instinct, prompting clear  
To recognize soul's self soul's only master here  
Alike from first to last. But if time's pressure, light's  
Or rather dark's approach, wrest thoroughly the rights  
Of rule away, and bid the soul submissive bear  
Another soul than it play master everywhere  
In great and small, — this time, I fancy, none disputes  
There's something in the fact that such conclusion suits  
Nowise the pride of man, nor yet chimes in with attributes  
Conspicuous in the lord of nature. He receives  
And not demands — not first likes faith and then believes.

## CXXIX

And as with the last essence, so with its first faint type.  
Inconstancy means raw, 'tis faith alone means ripe  
I' the soul which runs its round: no matter how it range  
From Helen to Fifine, Elvire bids back the change  
To permanence. Here, too, love ends where love began.  
Such ending looks like law, because the natural man  
Inclines the other way, feels lordlier free than bound.  
Poor pabulum for pride when the first love is found  
Last also! and, so far from realizing gain,  
Each step aside just proves divergency in vain.  
The wanderer brings home no profit from his quest  
Beyond the sad surmise that keeping house were best  
Could life begin anew. His problem posed aright  
Was — "From the given point evolve the infinite!"

Not—"Spend thyself in space, endeavoring to  
 join  
 Together, and so make infinite, point and  
 point:  
 Fix into one Elvire a Fair-ful of Fifines!"  
 Fifine, the foam-flake, she: Elvire, the sea's  
 self, means  
 Capacity at need to shower how many such!  
 And yet we left her calm profundity, to clutch  
 Foam-flutter, bell on bell, that, bursting at a  
 touch,  
 Blistered us for our pains. But wise, we want  
 no more  
 O' the fickle element. Enough of foam and  
 roar!  
 Land-locked, we live and die henceforth: for  
 here's the villa door.

## CXXX

How pallidly you pause o' the threshold!  
 Hardly night,  
 Which drapes you, ought to make real flesh  
 and blood so white!  
 Touch me, and so appear alive to all intents!  
 Will the saint vanish from the sinner that  
 repents?  
 Suppose you are a ghost! A memory, a hope,  
 A fear, a conscience! Quick! Give back the  
 hand I grope  
 I' the dusk for!

## CXXXI

That is well. Our double horoscope  
 I cast, while you concur. Discard that simile  
 O' the fickle element! Elvire is land not sea—  
 The solid land, the safe. All these word-  
 bubbles came  
 O' the sea, and bite like salt. The unlucky  
 bath's to blame.  
 This hand of yours on heart of mine, no more  
 the bay  
 I beat, nor bask beneath the blue! In Pornic,  
 say,  
 The Mayor shall catalogue me duly domiciled,  
 Contributable, good-companion of the guild  
 And mystery of marriage. I stickle for the  
 town,  
 And not this tower apart; because, though,  
 halfway down,  
 Its mullions wink o'erwebbed with bloomy  
 greenness, yet  
 Who mounts to staircase top may tempt the  
 parapet,  
 And sudden there's the sea! No memories to  
 arouse,  
 No fancies to delude! Our honest civic house  
 Of the earth be earthy too!—or graced per-  
 chance with shell  
 Made prize of long ago, picked haply where  
 the swell  
 Menaced a little once—or seaweed-branch that  
 yet  
 Dampens and softens, notes a freak of wind, a  
 fret  
 Of wave: though, why on earth should sea-  
 change mend or mar  
 The calm contemplative householders that we  
 are?

So shall the seasons fleet, while our two selves  
 abide:  
 E'en past astonishment how sunrise and spring-  
 tide  
 Could tempt one forth to swim; the more if  
 time appoints  
 That swimming grow a task for one's rheu-  
 matic joints.  
 Such honest civic house, behold, I constitute  
 Our villa! Be but flesh and blood, and smile  
 to boot!  
 Enter for good and all! then fate bolt fast  
 the door,  
 Shut you and me inside, never to wander  
 more!

## CXXXII

Only,—you do not use to apprehend attack!  
 No doubt, the way I march, one idle arm,  
 thrown slack  
 Behind me, leaves the open hand defenceless at  
 the back,  
 Should an impertinent on tiptoe steal, and stuff  
 —Whatever can it be? A letter sure enough,  
 Pushed betwixt palm and glove! That largess  
 of a franc?  
 Perhaps unconsciously,—to better help the  
 blank  
 O' the nest, her tambourine, and, laying egg,  
 persuade  
 A family to follow, the nest-egg that I laid  
 May have contained—but just to foil suspicious  
 folk—  
 Between two silver whites a yellow double  
 yolk!  
 Oh, threaten no farewell! five minutes shall  
 suffice  
 To clear the matter up. I go, and in a trice  
 Return; five minutes past, expect me! If in  
 vain—  
 Why, slip from flesh and blood, and play the  
 ghost again!

## EPILOGUE

## THE HOUSEHOLDER

Savage I was sitting in my house, late, lone:  
 Dreary, weary with the long day's work:  
 Head of me, heart of me, stupid as a stone:  
 Tongue-tied now, now blaspheming like a  
 Turk;  
 When, in a moment, just a knock, call, cry,  
 Half a pang and all a rapture, there again  
 were we!—  
 "What, and is it really you again?" quoth I:  
 "I again, what else did you expect?" quoth  
 She.  
 "Never mind, hie away from this old house—  
 Every crumbling brick embrowned with sin  
 and shame!  
 Quick, in its corners ere certain shapes arouse!  
 Let them—every devil of the night—lay  
 claim,  
 Make and mend, or rap and rend, for me!  
 Good-by!

God be their guard from disturbance at their  
glee,  
Till, crash, comes down the carcass in a heap ! ”  
quoth I :  
“ Nay, but there’s a decency required ! ”  
quoth She.

“ Ah, but if you knew how time has dragged,  
days, nights !  
All the neighbor-talk with man and maid —  
such men !  
All the fuss and trouble of street-sounds,  
window-sights :  
All the worry of flapping door and echoing  
roof ; and then,  
All the fancies . . . Who were they had leave,  
dared try  
Darker arts that almost struck despair in  
me ?

If you knew but how I dwelt down here ! ”  
quoth I :

“ And was I so better off up there ? ” quoth  
She.

“ Help and get it over ! *Reunited to his wife*  
(How draw up the paper lets the parish-  
people know ?)

*Lies M. or N., departed from this life,*  
*Day the this or that, month and year the so and*  
*so,*

What i’ the way of final flourish ? Prose,  
verse ? Try !

*Affliction sore long time he bore, or, what is it*  
*to be ?*

*Till God did please to grant him ease. Do end ! ”*  
quoth I :

“ I end with — Love is all, and Death is  
naught ! ” quoth She.

## RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY

OR

### TURF AND TOWERS

TO MISS THACKERAY

THIS poem, dated January 23, 1873, was published in the early summer of the same year. Browning had been staying with his sister at St. Aubin, in Normandy, and there met Miss Thackeray, who was to tell a tale of the White Cotton Night-cap Country, but a tragedy then just coming to a culmination in the courts supplied Browning with the more suggestive title which he adopted. Mr. Cooke records : —

“ In the poem as written the names of the actors and places were correctly given, but when the poem was being revised in proof-sheets they were changed from prudential reasons, because the last act in the tragedy occurred only a brief period prior to the writing of the poem.

#### I

AND so, here happily we meet, fair friend !  
Again once more, as if the years rolled back  
And this our meeting-place were just that  
Rome

Out in the champaign, say, o’er-rioted  
By verdure, ravage, and gay winds that war  
Against strong sunshine settled to his sleep ;  
Or on the Paris Boulevard, might it prove,  
You and I came together sauntering,

“ Browning submitted the proof-sheets of the poem to his friend Lord Coleridge, then the English Attorney-General, afterwards Chief Justice, who thought that a case of libel might lie for what was said, however improbable such action might be. He accordingly changed the names to fictitious ones. It was the year following this, and the publication of the poem, that the appeal against the judgment in favor of the will of Mellerio was dismissed, and the case finally set at rest in harmony with the conclusion reached by the poet.”

In the second edition of her *Hand-Book* Mrs. Orr gives the correct names, as furnished to her by Browning himself. These names will be found in the notes at the end of this volume.

Bound for some shop-front in the Place Vendôme —

Goldsmithy and Golconda mine, that makes  
“ The Firm-Miranda ” blazed about the  
world —

Or, what if it were London, where my toe  
Trespassed upon your founce ? “ Small  
blame,” you smile,  
Seeing the Staircase Party in the Square  
Was Small and Early, and you broke no  
rib.



Even as we met where we have met so oft,  
 Now meet we on this unpretending beach  
 Below the little village: little, ay!  
 But pleasant, may my gratitude subjoin?  
 Meek, hitherto un-Murrayed bathing-place,  
 Best loved of seacoast-nookful Normandy!  
 That, just behind you, is mine own hired  
 house:

With right of pathway through the field in  
 front,

No prejudice to all its growth unsheaved  
 Of emerald luzern bursting into blue.  
 Be sure I keep the path that hugs the wall,  
 Of mornings, as I pad from door to gate!  
 You yellow — what if not wild-mustard  
 flower? —

Of that, my naked sole makes lawful prize,  
 Bruising the acrid aromatics out,  
 Till, what they preface, good salt savors sting  
 From, first, the sifted sands, then sands in slab,  
 Smooth save for pipy wreath-work of the  
 worm:

(Granite and mussel-shell are ground alike  
 To glittering paste, — the live worm troubles  
 yet.)

Then, dry and moist, the varech limit-line,  
 Burnt cinder-black, with brown uncrumpled  
 swathe  
 Of berried softness, sea-swoln thrice its size;  
 And, lo, the wave protrudes a lip at last,  
 And flecks my foot with froth, nor tempts in  
 vain.

Such is Saint-Rambert, wilder very much  
 Than Joyeux, that famed Joyous-Gard of  
 yours,  
 Some five miles farther down; much homelier  
 too —

Right for me, — right for you the fine and fair!  
 Only, I could endure a transfer — wrought  
 By angels famed still, through our country-  
 side,

For weights they fetched and carried in old  
 time

When nothing like the need was — transfer,  
 just

Of Joyeux church, exchanged for yonder prig,  
 Our brand-new stone cream-colored master-  
 piece.

Well — and you know, and not since this one  
 year,

The quiet seaside country? So do I:  
 Who like it, in a manner, just because  
 Nothing is prominently likable  
 To vulgar eye without a soul behind,  
 Which, breaking surface, brings before the ball  
 Of sight, a beauty buried everywhere.

If we have souls, know how to see and use,  
 One place performs, like any other place,  
 The proper service every place on earth  
 Was framed to furnish man with: serves alike  
 To give him note that, through the place he  
 sees,

A place is signified he never saw,  
 But, if he lack not soul, may learn to know.  
 Earth's ugliest walled and ceiled imprisonment  
 May suffer, through its single rent in roof,

Admittance of a cataract of light  
 Beyond attainment through earth's palace-  
 panes

Pinholed athwart their windowed filigree  
 By twinklings sobered from the sun outside.  
 Doubtless the High Street of our village here  
 Imposes hardly as Rome's Corso could:  
 And our projected race for sailing-boats  
 Next Sunday, when we celebrate our Saint,  
 Falls very short of that attractiveness,  
 That artistry in festive spectacle,  
 Paris ensures you when she welcomes back  
 (When shall it be?) the Assembly from Ver-  
 sailles;

While the best fashion and intelligence  
 Collected at the counter of our Mayor  
 (Dry-goods he deals in, grocery beside)  
 What time the post-bag brings the news from  
 Vire, —

I fear me much, it scarce would hold its  
 own,

That circle, that assorted sense and wit,  
 With Five-o'clock Tea in a house we know.

Still, 't is the cheek that gives the leap its lift.  
 The nullity of cultivated souls,  
 Even advantaged by their news from Vire,  
 Only conduces to enforce the truth  
 That, thirty paces off, this natural blue  
 Broods o'er a bag of secrets, all unbroached,  
 Beneath the bosom of the placid deep,  
 Since first the Post Director sealed them safe;  
 And formidable I perceive this fact —  
 Little Saint-Rambert touches the great sea.  
 From London, Paris, Rome, where men are  
 men,

Not mice, and mice not Mayors presumably,  
 Thought scarce may leap so fast, alight so far.  
 But this is a pretence, you understand,  
 Disparagement in play, to parry thrust  
 Of possible objector: nullity  
 And ugliness, the taunt be his, not mine  
 Nor yours, — I think we know the world too  
 well!

Did you walk hither, jog it by the plain,  
 Or jaunt it by the highway, braving bruise  
 From springless and uncushioned vehicle?  
 Much, was there not, in place and people both,  
 To lend an eye to? and what eye like yours —  
 The learned eye is still the loving one!  
 Our land; its quietude, productiveness,  
 Is length and breadth of grain-crop, meadow-  
 ground,

Its orchards in the pasture, farms a-field,  
 And hamlets on the road-edge, naught you  
 missed

Of one and all the sweet rusticities!  
 From stalwart strider by the wagon-side,  
 Brightening the acre with his purple blouse,  
 To those dark-featured comely women-folk,  
 Healthy and tall, at work, and work indeed,  
 On every cottage doorstep, plying brisk  
 Bobbins that bob you ladies out such lace!  
 Oh, you observed! and how that nimble play  
 Of finger formed the sole exception, bobbed  
 The one disturbance to the peace of things,  
 Where nobody esteems it worth his while,  
 If time upon the clock-face goes asleep,

To give the rusted hands a helpful push.  
 Nobody lifts an energetic thumb  
 And index to remove some dead and gone  
 Notice which, posted on the barn, repeats  
 For truth what two years' passage made a lie.  
 Still is for sale, next June, that same châteaueau

With all its immobilities. — were sold  
 Duly next June behind the last but last ;  
 And, woe 's me, still placards the Emperor  
 His confidence in war he means to wage,  
 God aiding and the rural populace.  
 No : rain and wind must rub the rags away  
 And let the lazy land untroubled snore.

Ah, in good truth ? and did the drowsihead  
 So suit, so soothe the learned loving eye,  
 That you were minded to confer a crown,  
 (Does not the poppy boast such ?) — call the land

By one slow slither-thither stretching, fast  
 Subsiding-into-slumber sort of name,  
 Symbolic of the place and people too,  
 "*White Cotton Night-cap Country* ?" Excel-  
 lent !

For they do, all, dear women young and old,  
 Upon the heads of them bear notably  
 This badge of soul and body in repose ;  
 Nor its fine thimble fits the acorn-top,  
 Keeps woolly ward above that oval brown,  
 Its placid feature, more than muffler makes  
 A safeguard, circumvents intelligence  
 In — what shall evermore be named and  
 famed,

If happy nomenclature aught avail,  
 "*White Cotton Night-cap Country*."

Do I hear —

Oh, better, very best of all the news —  
 You mean to catch and cage the winged word,  
 And make it breed and multiply at home  
 Till Norman idlesse stock our England too ?  
 Normandy shown minute yet magnified  
 In one of those small books, the truly great,  
 We never know enough, yet know so well ?  
 How I foresee the cursive diamond-dints, —  
 Composite pen that plays the pencil too, —  
 As, touch the page and up the glamour goes,  
 And filmlily o'er grain-crop, meadow-ground,  
 O'er orchard in the pasture, farm a-field,  
 And hamlet on the road-edge, floats and forms  
 And falls, at lazy last of all, the Cap  
 That crowns the country ! we, awake outside,  
 Farther than ever from the imminence  
 Of what cool comfort, what close coverture  
 Your magic, deftly weaving, shall surround  
 The unconscious captive with. Be theirs to  
 drowse

Trammelled, and ours to watch the trammel-  
 trick !

Ours be it, as we con the book of books,  
 To wonder how is winking possible !

All hail, "*White Cotton Night-cap Country*,"  
 then !

And yet, as on the beach you promise book, —  
 On beach, mere razor-edge 'twixt earth and  
 sea,

I stand at such a distance from the world  
 That 'tis the whole world which obtains regard,  
 Rather than any part, though part presumed  
 A perfect little province in itself,  
 When wayfare made acquaintance first there-  
 with.

So standing, therefore, on this edge of things,  
 What if the backward glance I gave, return  
 Loaded with other spoils of vagrancy  
 Than I dispatched it for, till I propose  
 The question — puzzled by the sudden store  
 Official fancy plumps beneath my nose —  
 "Which sort of Night-cap have you glorified ?"

You would be gracious to my ignorance :  
 What other Night-cap than the normal one ? —  
 Old honest guardian of man's head and hair  
 In its elastic yet continuous, soft,  
 No less persisting, circumambient gripe, —  
 Night's notice, life is respited from day !  
 Its form and fashion vary, suiting so  
 Each seasonable want of youth and age.  
 In infancy, the rosy naked ball  
 Of brain, and that faint golden fluff it bears,  
 Are smothered from disaster, — nurses know  
 By what foam-fabric ; but when youth suc-  
 ceeds,

The sterling value of the article  
 Discards adornment, cap is cap henceforth  
 Unfeathered by the futile row on row.  
 Manhood strains hard a sturdy stocking-stuff  
 O'er well-deserving head and ears : the cone  
 Is tassel-tipt, commendably takes pride,  
 Announcing workday done and wages pouched,  
 And liberty obtained to sleep, nay, snore.  
 Unwise, he peradventure shall essay  
 The sweets of independency for once —  
 Waive its advantage on his wedding-night :  
 Fool, only to resume it, night the next,  
 And never part companionship again.  
 Since, with advancing years, night's solace  
 soon

Intrudes upon the daybreak dubious life  
 Persuades it to appear the thing it is  
 Half-sleep ; and so, encroaching more and  
 more,

It lingers long past the abstemious meal  
 Of morning, and, as prompt to serve, precedes  
 The supper-summons, gruel grown a feast.  
 Finally, when the last sleep finds the eye  
 So tired it cannot even shut itself,  
 Does not a kind domestic hand unite  
 Friend to friend, lid from lid to part no more,  
 Consigned alike to that receptacle  
 So bleak without, so warm and white within ?

"Night-caps, night's comfort of the human  
 race :

Their usage may be growing obsolete,  
 Still, in the main, the institution stays.  
 And though yourself may possibly have lived,  
 And probably will die, undignified —  
 The Never-night-capped — more experienced  
 folk

Laugh you back answer — What should Night-  
 cap be  
 Save Night-cap pure and simple ? Sorts of  
 such ?

Take cotton for the medium, cast an eye  
This side to comfort, lambswool, or the like,  
That side to frilly cambric costliness,  
And all between proves Night-cap proper."

Add  
"Fiddle!" and I confess the argument.

Only, your ignoramus here again  
Proceeds as tardily to recognize  
Distinctions: ask him what a fiddle means,  
And "Just a fiddle" seems the apt reply.  
Yet, is not there, while we two pace the beach,  
This blessed moment, at your Kensington,  
A special Fiddle-show and rare array  
Of all the sorts were ever set to cheek,  
'Stablished on clavicle, sawn bow-hand-wise,  
Or touched lute-fashion and forefinger-plucked?  
I doubt not there be duly catalogued  
Achievements all and some of Italy,  
Guarnerius, Straduaris, — old and new,  
Augustly rude, refined to finicking,  
This mammoth with his belly full of blare,  
That mouse of music — inch-long silvery wheeze,  
And here a specimen has effloresced  
Into the scroll-head, there subsides supreme,  
And with the tailpiece satisfies mankind.  
Why should I speak of woods, grains, stains  
and streaks,

The topaz varnish or the ruby gum?  
We preferably pause where tickets teach,  
"Over this sample would Corelli croon,  
Grieving, by minors, like the cushat-dove,  
Most dulcet Giga, dreamiest Saraband."  
"From this did Paganini comb the fierce  
Electric sparks, or to tenuity  
Pull forth the inmost wailing of the wire —  
No cat-gut could swoon out so much of soul!"

Three hundred violin-varieties  
Exposed to public view! And dare I doubt  
Some future enterprise shall give the world  
Quite as remarkable a Night-cap-show?  
Methinks, we, arm-in-arm, that festal day,  
Pace the long range of relics shrined aright,  
Framed, glazed, each cushioned curiosity,  
And so begin to smile and to inspect:  
"Pope's sickly head-sustainment, damped with  
dews

Wrung from the all-unfair fight: such a frame —  
Though doctor and the devil helped their  
best —

Fought such a world that, waiving doctor's  
help,

Had the mean devil at its service too!  
Voltaire's imperial velvet! Hogarth eyed  
The thumb-nail record of some alley-phiz,  
Then chucklingly clapped yonder cosiness  
On pate, and painted with true flesh and blood!  
Poor hectic Cowper's soothing sarsnet-stripe!"  
And so we profit by the catalogue,  
Somehow our smile subsiding more and more,  
Till we decline into . . . but no! shut eyes  
And hurry past the shame unconfined here,  
The hangman's toilet! If we needs must trench,  
For science's sake which craves completeness  
still,

On the sad confine, not the district's self,  
The object that shall close review may be . . .

Well, it is French, and here are we in France:  
It is historic, and we live to learn,  
And try to learn by reading story-books.  
It is an incident of 'Ninety-two,  
And, twelve months since, the Commune had  
the sway.

Therefore resolve that, after all the Whites  
Presented you, a solitary Red  
Shall pain us both, a minute and no more!  
Do not you see poor Louis pushed to front  
Of palace-window, in persuasion's name,  
A spectacle above the howling mob  
Who tasted, as it were, with tiger-smack,  
The outstart, the first spurt of blood on brow,  
The Phrygian symbol, the new crown of thorns,  
The Cap of Freedom? See the feeble mirth  
At odds with that half-purpose to be strong  
And merely patient under misery!  
And note the ejaculation, ground so hard  
Between his teeth, that only God could hear,  
As the lean pale proud insignificance  
With the sharp-featured liver-worried stare  
Out of the two gray points that did him stead,  
And passed their eagle-owner to the front  
Better than his mob-elbowed undersize, —  
The Corsican lieutenant commented,  
"Had I but one good regiment of my own,  
How soon should volleys to the due amount  
Lay stiff upon the street-flags this canaille!  
As for the droll there, he that plays the king,  
And screws out smile with a Red night-cap on,  
He's done for! somebody must take his place."  
White Cotton Night-cap Country: excellent!  
Why not Red Cotton Night-cap Country too?

"Why not say swans are black and blackbirds  
white,

Because the instances exist?" you ask.

"Enough that white, not red, predominates.

Is normal, typical, in cleric phrase

*Quod semel, semper, et ubique.*" Here,

Applying such a name to such a land,

Especially you find inopportune,

Impertinent, my scruple whether white

Or red describes the local color best.

"Let be," (you say,) "the universe at large

Supplied us with exceptions to the rule,

So manifold, they bore no passing-by, —

Little Saint-Rambert has conserved at least

The pure tradition: white from head to heel,

Where is a hint of the ungracious hue?

See, we have traversed with hop, step, and

jump,

From heel to head, the main-street in a trice,

Measured the garment (help my metaphor!)

Not merely criticised the cap, forsooth;

And were you pricked by that collecting-itch,

That pruriency for writing o'er your reds,

'Rare, rarer, rarest, not rare but unique,' —

The shelf, Saint-Rambert, of your cabinet,

Unlabelled, — virginal, no Rahab-thread

For blushing token of the spy's success, —

Would taunt with vacancy, I undertake!

What, yonder is your best apology,

Pretence at most approach to naughtiness,

Impingement of the ruddy on the blank?

This is the criminal Saint-Rambertese

Who smuggled in tobacco, half-a-pound!



The Oetroi found it out and fined the wretch.  
This other is the culprit who dispatched  
A hare, he thought a hedgehog, (clods obstruct,)  
Unfurnished with Permission for the Chase!  
As to the womankind — renounce from those  
The hope of getting a companion-tinge,  
First faint touch promising romantic fault!"

Enough: there stands Red Cotton Night-cap  
shelf —

A cavern's ostentatious vacancy —  
My contribution to the show; while yours —  
Whites heap your row of pegs from every hedge  
Outside, and house inside Saint-Rambert here —  
We soon have come to end of. See, the church  
With its white steeple gives your challenge  
point,

Perks as it were the night-cap of the town,  
Starchedly warrants all beneath is matched  
By all above, one snowy innocence!

You put me on my mettle. British maid  
And British man, suppose we have it out  
Here in the fields, decide the question so?  
Then, British fashion, shake hands hard again,  
Go home together, friends the more confirmed  
That one of us — assuredly myself —  
Looks puff about eye, and pink at nose?  
Which "pink" reminds me that the arduous-  
ness

We both acknowledge in the enterprise,  
Claims, counts upon a large and liberal  
Acceptance of as good as victory  
In whatsoever just escapes defeat.  
You must be generous, strain point, and call  
Victory, any the least flush of pink  
Made prize of, labelled scarlet for the nonce —  
Faintest pretension to be wrong and red  
And picturesque, that varies by a splotch  
The righteous flat of insipidity.

Quick to the quest, then — forward, the firm  
foot!

Onward, the quarry-overtaking eye!  
For, what is this, by way of march-tune, makes  
The musicalest buzzing at my ear  
By reassurance of that promise old,  
*Though sins as scarlet they shall be as wool?*  
Whence — what fantastic hope do I deduce?  
I am no Liebig: when the dyer dyes  
A texture, can the red dye prime the white?  
And if we washed well, wrung the texture hard,  
Would we arrive, here, there and everywhere,  
At a fierce ground beneath the surface meek?

I take the first chance, rub to threads what rag  
Shall flutter snowily in sight. For see!  
Already these few yards upon the rise,  
Our back to brave Saint-Rambert, how we  
reach

The open, at a dozen steps or strides!  
Turn round and look about, a breathing-while!  
There lie, outspread at equidistance, thorpes  
And villages and towns along the coast,  
Distinguishable, each and all alike,  
By white persistent Night-cap, spire on spire.  
Take the left: yonder town is — what say you  
If I say "Londres"? Ay, the mother-mouse

(Reversing fable, as truth can and will)  
Which gave our mountain of a London birth!  
This is the Conqueror's country, bear in mind,  
And Londres-district blooms with London-pride.  
Turn round; La Roche, to right, where oysters  
thrive:

Monlieu — the lighthouse is a telegraph;  
This, full in front, Saint-Rambert; then suc-  
ceeds

Villeneuve, and Pons the Young with Pons the  
Old,

And — ere faith points to Joyeux, out of sight,  
A little nearer — oh, La Ravissante!

There now is something like a Night-cap spire,  
Donned by no ordinary Notre-Dame!  
For, one of the three safety-guards of France,  
You front now, lady! Nothing intercepts  
The privilege, by crow-flight, two miles far.  
She and her sisters Lourdes and La Salette  
Are at this moment hailed the cynosure  
Of poor dear France, such waves have buffeted  
Since she eschewed infallibility  
And chose to steer by the vague compass-box.  
This same midsummer month, a week ago,  
Was not the memorable day observed  
For reinstatement of the misused Three  
In old supremacy forevermore?  
Did not the faithful flock in pilgrimage  
By railway, diligence, and steamer — nay,  
On foot with staff and scrip, to see the sights  
Assured them? And I say best sight was  
here:

And nothing justified the rival Two  
In their pretension to equality;  
Our folk laid out their ticket-money best,  
And wiseliest, if they walked, wore shoe away;  
Not who went farther only to fare worse.  
For, what was seen at Lourdes and La Salette  
Except a couple of the common cures  
Such as all three can boast of, any day?  
While here it was, here and by no means there,  
That the Pope's self sent two great real gold  
crowns

As thick with jewelry as thick could stick,  
His present to the Virgin and her Babe —  
Provided for — who knows not? — by that  
fund,

Count Alessandro Sforza's legacy,  
Which goes to crown some Virgin every year.  
But this year, poor Pope was in prison-house,  
And money had to go for something else;  
And therefore, though their present seemed  
the Pope's,

The faithful of our province raised the sum  
Preached and prayed out of — nowise purse  
alone.

Gentle and simple paid in kind, not cash,  
The most part: the great lady gave her brooch,  
The peasant-girl, her hairpin; 't was the rough  
Bluff farmer mainly who, — admonished well  
By wife to care lest his new colewort-crop  
Stray sorrowfully sparse like last year's seed, —  
Lugged from reluctant pouch the fifty-franc,  
And had the Curé's hope that rain would cease.  
And so, the sum in evidence at length,  
Next step was to obtain the donative  
By the spontaneous bounty of the Pope —

No easy matter, since his Holiness  
Had turned a deaf ear, long and long ago,  
To much entreaty on our Bishop's part,  
Commendably we boast. "But no," quoth he,  
"Image and image needs must take their turn:  
Here stand a dozen as importunate."  
Well, we were patient; but the cup ran o'er  
When — who was it pressed in and took the  
prize

But our own offset, set far off indeed  
To grow by help of our especial name,  
She of the Ravissante — in Martinique!  
"What!" cried our patience at the boiling-  
point,

"The daughter crowned, the mother's head  
goes bare?"

Bishop of Rainbaux!" — that's our diocese —  
"Thou hast a summons to repair to Rome,  
Be efficacious at the Council there:  
Now is the time or never! Right our wrong!  
Hie thee away, thou valued Morillon,  
And have the promise, thou who hast the  
vote!"

So said, so done, so followed in due course  
(To cut the story short) this festival,  
This famous Twenty-second, seven days since.

Oh, but you heard at Joyeux! Pilgrimage,  
Concourse, procession with, to head the host,  
Cardinal Mirecourt, quenching lesser lights:  
The leafy street-length through, decked end to  
end

With August-stripping, and adorned with flags,  
That would have waved right well but that it  
rained

Just this picked day, by some perversity.  
And so were placed, on Mother and on Babe,  
The pair of crowns: the Mother's, you must  
see!

Miranda, the great Paris goldsmith, made  
The marvel, — he's a neighbor: that's his  
park

Before you, tree-topped wall we walk toward.  
His shop it was turned out the masterpiece,  
Probably at his own expenditure;  
Anyhow, his was the munificence  
Contributed the central and supreme  
Splendor that crowns the crown itself, The  
Stone.

Not even Paris, ransacked, could supply  
That gem: he had to forage in New York,  
This jeweller, and country-gentleman,  
And most undoubted devotee beside!  
Worthily wived, too: since his wife it was  
Bestowed "with friendly hand" — befitting  
phrase!

The lace which trims the coronation-robe —  
Stiff wear — a mint of wealth on the brocade.  
Do go and see what I saw yesterday!  
And, for that matter, see in fancy still,  
Since . . .

There now! Even for unthankful me,  
Who stuck to my devotions at high-tide  
That festal morning, never had a mind  
To trudge the little league and join the crowd —  
Even for me is miracle vouchsafed!  
How pointless proves the sneer at miracles!

As if, contrariwise to all we want  
And reasonably look to find, they graced  
Merely those graced-before, grace helps no  
whit,

Unless, made whole, they need physician still.  
I — sceptical in every inch of me —  
Did I deserve that, from the liquid name  
"Miranda," — faceted as lovelily  
As his own gift, the gem, — a shaft should  
shine,

Bear me along, another Abaris,  
Nor let me light till, lo, the Red is reached,  
And yonder lies in luminosity!

Look, lady! where I bade you glance but now!  
Next habitation, though two miles away, —  
No tenement for man or beast between, —  
That, park and domicile, is country-seat  
Of this same good Miranda! I accept  
The augury. Or there, or nowhere else,  
Will I establish that a Night-cap gleams  
Of visionary Red, not White for once!

"Heaven," saith the sage, "is with us, here  
inside  
Each man:" "Hell also," simpleness sub-  
joins,

By White and Red describing human flesh.

And yet as we continue, quicken pace,  
Approach the object which determines me  
Victorious or defeated, more forlorn  
My chance seems, — that is certainty at least.  
Halt midway, reconnoitre! Either side  
The path we traverse (turn and see) stretch  
fields

Without a hedge: one level, scallop-striped  
With bands of beet and turnip and luzern,  
Limited only by each color's end,  
Shelves down — we stand upon an eminence —  
To where the earth-shell scallops out the sea.  
A sweep of semicircle; and at edge —  
Just as the milk-white incrustations stud  
At intervals some shell-extremity,  
So do the little growths attract us here,  
Towns with each name I told you: say, they  
touch

The sea, and the sea them, and all is said,  
So sleeps and sets to slumber that broad blue!  
The people are as peaceful as the place.  
This, that I call "the path" is road, highway;  
But has there passed us by a market-cart,  
Man, woman, child, or dog to wag a tail?  
True, I saw weeders stooping in a field;  
But — formidably white the Cap's extent!

Round again! Come, appearance promises!  
The boundary, the park-wall, ancient brick.  
Upholds a second wall of tree-heads high  
Which overlean its top, a solid green.  
That surely ought to shut in mysteries!  
A jeweller — no unsuggestive craft!  
Trade that admits of much romance, indeed.  
For, whom but goldsmiths used old monarchs  
pledge

Regalia to, or seek a ransom from,  
Or pray to furnish dowry, at a pinch,  
According to authentic story-books?  
Why, such have revolutionized this land

With diamond-necklace-dealing ! not to speak  
Of families turned upside-down, because  
The gay wives went and pawned clandestinely  
Jewels, and figured, till found out, with paste,  
Or else redeemed them — how, is horrible !  
Then there are those enormous criminals  
That love their ware and cannot lose their love,  
And murder you to get your purchase back.  
Others go courting after such a stone,  
Make it their mistress, marry for their wife,  
And find out, some day, it was false the while,  
As ever wife or mistress, man too fond  
Has named his Pilgrim, Hermit, Ace of Hearts.

Beside — what style of edifice begins  
To grow in sight at last and top the scene ?  
That gray roof, with the range of lucarnes,  
four

I count, and that erection in the midst —  
Clock-house, or chapel-spire, or what, above ?  
Conventual, that, beyond manorial, sure !  
And reason good ; for Clairvaux, such its name,  
Was built of old to be a Priory,  
Dependence on that Abbey-for-the-Males  
Our Conqueror founded in world-famous Caen,  
And where his body sought the sepulture,  
It was not to retain : you know the tale.  
Such Priory was Clairvaux, prosperous  
Hundreds of years ; but nothing lasts below,  
And when the Red Cap pushed the Crown aside,  
The Priory became, like all its peers,  
A National Domain : which, bought and sold  
And resold, needs must change, with ownership.  
Both outside show and inside use ; at length  
The message, three-and-twenty years ago,  
Became the purchase of rewarded worth  
Impersonate in Father — I must stoop  
To French phrase for precision's sake, I fear —  
Father Miranda, goldsmith of renown :  
By birth a Madrilene, by domicile  
And sojourning accepted French at last.  
His energy it was which, trade transferred  
To Paris, thrived as with a golden thumb,  
Established in the Place Vendôme. He bought  
Not building only, but belongings far  
And wide, at Gonther there, Monlieu, Ville-  
neuve,

A plentiful estate : which, twelve years since,  
Passed, at the good man's natural demise,  
To Son and Heir Miranda — Clairvaux here,  
The Paris shop, the mansion — not to say  
Palatial residence on Quai Rousseau,  
With money, movables, a mine of wealth —  
And young Léonce Miranda got it all.

Ah, but — whose might the transformation be ?  
Were you prepared for this, now ? As we  
talked,

We walked, we entered the half-privacy,  
The partly-guarded precinct : passed beside  
The little pale-off islet, trees and turf,  
Then found us in the main ash-avenue  
Under the blessing of its branchage-roof :  
Till, on emergence, what affronts our gaze ?  
Priory — Conqueror — Abbey-for-the-Males —  
Hey, presto, pass, who conjured all away ?  
Look through the railwork of the gate : a park  
— Yes, but à l'Anglaise, as they compliment !

Grass like green velvet, gravel-walks like gold,  
Bosses of shrubs, embosomings of flowers,  
Lead you — through sprinkled trees of tiny  
breed

Disporting, within reach of coverture.

By some habitual acquiescent oak

Or elm, that thinks, and lets the youngsters  
laugh —

Lead, lift at last your soul that walks the air,  
Up to the house-front, or its back perhaps —  
Whether façade or no, one coquetry  
Of colored brick and carved stone ! Stucco ?  
Well,

The daintiness is cheery, that I know,  
And all the sportive floral framework fits  
The lightsome purpose of the architect.  
Those lucarnes which I called conventual, late,  
Those are the outlets in the mansard-roof ;  
And, underneath, what long light elegance  
Of windows here suggests how brave inside  
Lurk eyeballed gems they play the eyelids to !  
Festive arrangements look through such, be  
sure !

And now the tower a-top, I took for clock's  
Or bell's abode, turns out a quaint device,  
Pillared and temple-treated Belvedere —  
Pavilion safe within its railed-about  
Sublimity of area — whence what stretch,  
Of sea and land, throughout the seasons'   
change,

Must greet the solitary ! Or suppose,  
— If what the husband likes, the wife likes  
too, —

The happy pair of students cloistered high,  
Alone in April kiss when Spring arrives !  
Or no, he mounts there by himself to meet  
Winds, welcome wafts of sea-smell, first white  
bird

That flaps thus far to taste the land again,  
And all the promise of the youthful year ;  
Then he descends, unbosoms straight his store  
Of blessings in the bud, and both embrace,  
Husband and wife, since earth is Paradise,  
And man at peace with God. You see it all ?

Let us complete our survey, go right round  
The place : for here, it may be, we surprise  
The Priory, — these solid walls, big barns,  
Gray orchard-grounds, huge four-square stores  
for stock,

Betoken where the Church was busy once.  
Soon must we come upon the Chapel's self.  
No doubt next turn will treat us to . . . Aha,  
Again our expectation proves at fault !  
Still the bright graceful modern — not to say  
Modish adornment, meets us : *Parc Anglais*,  
Tree-sprinkle, shrub-embossment as before.  
See, the sun splits on yonder bauble world  
Of silvered glass concentrating, every side,  
All the adjacent wonder, made minute  
And touched grotesque by ball-convexity !  
Just so, a sense that something is amiss,  
Something is out of sorts in the display,  
Affects us, past denial, everywhere.

The right erection for the Fields, the Wood,  
(Fields — but *Elysées*, wood — but *de Boulogne*)  
Is peradventure wrong for wood and fields  
When Vire, not Paris, plays the Capital.



So may a good man have deficient taste ;  
 Since Son and Heir Miranda, he it was  
 Who, six years now elapsed, achieved the work  
 And truly made a wilderness to smile.  
 Here did their domesticity reside,  
 A happy husband and as happy wife,  
 Till . . . how can I in conscience longer keep  
 My little secret that the man is dead  
 I, for artistic purpose, talk about  
 As if he lived still ? No, these two years now  
 Has he been dead. You ought to sympathize,  
 Not mock the sturdy effort to redeem  
 My pledge, and wring you out some tragedy  
 From even such a perfect commonplace !  
 Suppose I boast the death of such desert  
 My tragic bit of Red ? Who contravenes  
 Assertion that a tragedy exists  
 In any stoppage of benevolence,  
 Utility, devotion above all ?  
 Benevolent ? There never was his like :  
 For poverty, he had an open hand  
 . . . Or stop — I use the wrong expression  
 here —  
 An open purse, then, ever at appeal ;  
 So that the unreflecting rather taxed  
 Profusion than penuriousness in alms.  
 One, in his day and generation, deemed  
 Of use to the community ? I trust,  
 Clairvaux thus renovated, regalized,  
 Paris expounded thus to Normandy,  
 Answers that question. Was the man devout ?  
 After a life — one mere munificence  
 To Church and all things churchly, men or  
 mice, —  
 Dying, his last bequeathment gave land, goods,  
 Cash, every stick and stiver, to the Church,  
 And notably to that church yonder, that  
 Beloved of his soul, La Ravissante —  
 Wherefrom, the latest of his gifts, the Stone  
 Gratefully bore me as on arrow-flash  
 To Clairvaux, as I told you.

" Ay, to find  
 Your Red desiderated article,  
 Where every scratch and scrape provokes my  
 White

To all the more superb a prominence !  
 Why, 't is the story served up fresh again —  
 How it befell the restive prophet old  
 Who came and tried to curse but blessed the  
 land.

Come, your last chance ! he disinherited  
 Children : he made his widow mourn too much  
 By this endowment of the other Bride —  
 Nor understood that gold and jewelry  
 Adorn her in a figure, not a fact.  
 You make that White I want, so very white,  
 'T is I say now — some trace of Red should be  
 Somewhere in this Miranda-sanctitude !"

Not here, at all events, sweet mocking friend !  
 For he was childless ; and what heirs he had  
 Were an uncertain sort of Cousinry  
 Scarce claiming kindred so as to withhold  
 The donor's purpose though fantastical :  
 Heirs, for that matter, wanting no increase  
 Of wealth, since rich already as himself ;  
 Heirs that had taken trouble off his hands,

Bought that productive goldsmith-business he,  
 With abnegation wise as rare, renounced  
 Precisely at a time of life when youth,  
 Nigh on departure, bids mid-age discard  
 Life's other loves and likings in a pack,  
 To keep, in lucre, comfort worth them all.  
 This Cousinry are they who boast the shop  
 Of " Firm-Miranda, London and New York."  
 Cousins are an unconscionable kind ;  
 But these — a pretension surely on their part  
 To share inheritance were too absurd !

" Remains then, he dealt wrongly by his wife,  
 Despoiled her somehow by such testament ?"  
 Farther than ever from the mark, fair friend !  
 The man's love for his wife exceeded bounds  
 Rather than failed the limit. 'T was to live  
 Hers and hers only, to abolish earth  
 Outside — since Paris holds the pick of earth —  
 He turned his back, shut eyes, stopped ears, to  
 all

Delicious Paris tempts her children with,  
 And fled away to this far solitude —  
 She peopling solitude sufficiently !  
 She, partner in each heavenward flight sublime,  
 Was, with each condescension to the ground,  
 Duly associate also : hand in hand,  
 . . . Or side by side, I say by preference —  
 On every good work sidlingly they went.  
 Hers was the instigation — none but she  
 Willed that, if death should summon first her  
 lord,

Though she, sad relict, must drag residue  
 Of days encumbered by this load of wealth —  
 (Submitted to with something of a grace  
 So long as her surviving vigilance  
 Might worthily administer, convert  
 Wealth to God's glory and the good of man,  
 Give, as in life, so now in death, effect  
 To cherished purpose) — yet she begged and  
 prayed

That, when no longer she could supervise  
 The House, it should become a Hospital :  
 For the support whereof, lands, goods, and  
 cash

Alike will go, in happy guardianship,  
 To yonder church, La Ravissante : who debt  
 To God and man undoubtedly will pay.

" Not of the world, your heroine !"

Do you know

I saw her yesterday — set eyes upon  
 The veritable personage, no dream ?  
 I in the morning strolled this way, as oft,  
 And stood at entry of the avenue.  
 When, out from that first garden-gate, we gazed  
 Upon and through, a small procession swept —  
 Madame Miranda with attendants five.  
 First, of herself : she wore a soft and white  
 Engaging dress, with velvet stripes and squares  
 Severely black, yet scarce discouraging :  
 Fresh Paris-manufacture ! (Vire's would do ?  
 I doubt it, but confess my ignorance.)  
 Her figure ? somewhat small and darling-like.  
 Her face ? well, singularly colorless,  
 For first thing : which scarce suits a blonde,  
 you know.

Pretty you would not call her : though perhaps  
 Attaining to the ends of prettiness,  
 And somewhat more, suppose enough of soul.  
 Then she is forty full : you cannot judge  
 What beauty was her portion at eighteen,  
 The age she married at. So, colorless  
 I stick to, and if featureless I add,  
 Your notion grows completer : for, although  
 I noticed that her nose was aquiline,  
 The whole effect amounts with me to — blank !  
 I never saw what I could less describe.  
 The eyes, for instance, unforgettable  
 Which ought to be, are out of mind as sight.

Yet is there not conceivably a face,  
 A set of wax-like features, blank at first,  
 Which, as you bendingly grow warm above,  
 Begins to take impressment from your breath ?  
 Which, as your will itself were plastic here  
 Nor needed exercise of handicraft,  
 From formless moulds itself to correspond  
 With all you think and feel and are — in fine  
 Grows a new revelation of yourself.  
 Who know now for the first time what you  
 want ?

Here has been something that could wait awhile,  
 Learn your requirement, nor take shape before,  
 But, by adopting it, make palpable  
 Your right to an importance of your own,  
 Companions somehow were so slow to see !  
 — Far delicate solace to conceit  
 Than should some absolute and final face,  
 Fit representative of soul inside,  
 Summon you to surrender — in no way  
 Your breath's impressment, nor, in stranger's  
 guise,  
 Yourself — or why of force to challenge you ?  
 Why should your soul's reflection rule your  
 soul ?

(“ You ” means not you, nor me, nor any one  
 Framed, for a reason I shall keep suppressed,  
 To rather want a master than a slave :  
 The slavish still aspires to dominate !)  
 So, all I say is, that the face, to me  
 One blur of blank, might flash significance  
 To who had seen his soul reflected there  
 By that symmetric silvery phantom-like  
 Figure, with other five processional.  
 The first, a black-dressed matron — maybe,  
 maid —

Mature, and dragonish of aspect, — marched ;  
 Then four came tripping in a joyous flock,  
 Two giant goats and two prodigious sheep  
 Pure as the arctic fox that suits the snow,  
 Tripped, trotted, turned the march to merri-  
 ment,

But ambled at their mistress' heel — for why ?  
 A rod of guidance marked the Châtelaine,  
 And ever and anon would sceptre wave,  
 And silky subject leave meandering.  
 Nay, one great naked sheep-face stopped to ask  
 Who was the stranger, snuffed inquisitive  
 My hand that made acquaintance with its nose,  
 Examined why the hand — of man at least —  
 Patted so lightly, warmly, so like life !  
 Are they such silly natures after all ?  
 And thus accompanied, the pale-off space,  
 Isleted shrubs and verdure, gained the group ;

Till, as I gave a furtive glance, and saw  
 Her back-hair was a block of solid gold,  
 The gate shut out my harmless question —  
 Hair

So young and yellow, crowning sanctity,  
 And claiming solitude . . . can hair be false ?

“ Shut in the hair and with it your last hope,  
 Yellow might on inspection pass for Red ! —  
 Red, Red, where is the tinge of promised Red  
 In this old tale of town and country life,  
 This rise and progress of a family ?  
 First comes the bustling man of enterprise,  
 The fortune-founding father, rightly rough,  
 As who must grub and grab, play pioneer.  
 Then, with a light and airy step, succeeds  
 The son, surveys the fabric of his sire,  
 And enters home, unsmirched from top to toe.  
 Polish and education qualify  
 Their fortunate possessor to confine  
 His occupancy to the first-floor suite  
 Rather than keep exploring needlessly  
 Where dwelt his sire content with cellarage :  
 Industry bustles underneath, no doubt,  
 And supervisors should not sit too close.  
 Next, rooms built, there 's the furniture to buy,  
 And what adornment like a worthy wife ?  
 In comes she like some foreign cabinet,  
 Purchased indeed, but purifying quick  
 What space receives it from all traffic-taint.  
 She tells of other habits, palace-life ;  
 Royalty may have pried into those depths  
 Of sandal-wooded drawer, and set a-creak  
 That pygmy portal pranked with lazuli.  
 More fit by far the ignoble we replace  
 By objects suited to such visitant,  
 Than that we desecrate her dignity  
 By neighborhood of vulgar table, chair,  
 Which haply helped old age to smoke and doze.  
 The end is, an exchange of city stir  
 And too intrusive burgess-fellowship,  
 For rural isolated elegance,  
 Careless simplicity, how preferable !  
 There one may fairly throw behind one's back  
 The used-up worn-out Past, we want away,  
 And make a fresh beginning of stale life.  
 ‘ In just the place ’ — does any one object ? —  
 ‘ Where aboriginal gentility  
 Will scout the upstart, twit him with each  
 trick  
 Of townish trade-mark that stamps word and  
 deed,  
 And most of all resent that here town-dross  
 He daubs with money-color to deceive ! ’  
 Rashly objected ! Is there not the Church  
 To intercede and bring benefic truce  
 At outset ? She it is shall equalize  
 The laborers ! the vineyard, last as first.  
 Pay court to her, she stops impertinence.  
 ‘ Duke, once your sires crusaded it, we know :  
 Our friend the newcomer observes, no less,  
 Your chapel, rich with their emblazonry,  
 Wants roofing — might he but supply the  
 means !  
 Marquise, you gave the honor of your name,  
 Titular patronage, abundant will  
 To what should be an Orphan Institute :  
 Gave everything but funds, in brief ; and these.

Our friend, the lady newly resident,  
Proposes to contribute, by your leave !'  
Brothers and sisters lie they in thy lap,  
Thou none-excluding, all-collecting Church !  
Sure, one has half a foot i' the hierarchy  
Of birth, when 'Nay, my dear,' laughs out the  
Duke,

'I'm the crown's cushion-carrier, but the  
crown —

Who gave its central glory, I or you ?'  
When Marquise jokes, 'My quest, forsooth ?  
Each doit

I scrape together goes for Peter-pence  
To purvey bread and water in his bonds  
For Peter's self imprisoned — Lord, how long ?  
Yours, yours alone the bounty, dear my dame,  
You plumped the purse, which, poured into the  
plate,

Made the Archbishop open brows so broad !  
And if you really mean to give that length  
Of lovely lace to edge the robe !' . . . Ah,  
friends,

Gem better serves so than by calling crowd,  
Round shop-front to admire the million's-  
worth !

Lace gets more homage than from lorgnette-  
stare,

And comment coarse to match, (should one  
display

One's robe a trifle o'er the baignoire-edge.)  
'Well may she line her slippers with the like,  
If minded so ! their shop it was produced  
That wonderful *parure*, the other day,  
Whereof the Baron said, it begared him.'  
And so the paired Mirandas built their house,  
Enjoyed their fortune, sighed for family,  
Found friends would serve their purpose quite  
as well,

And come, at need, from Paris — anyhow,  
With evident alacrity, from Vire —  
Endeavor at the chase, at least succeed  
In smoking, eating, drinking, laughing, and  
Preferring country, oh so much to town !  
Thus lived the husband ; though his wife  
would sigh

In confidence, when Countesses were kind,  
'Cut off from Paris and society !'

White, White, I once more round you in the  
ears !

Though you have marked it, in a corner, yours  
Henceforth, — Red - lettered 'Failure,' very  
plain,

I shall acknowledge, on the snowy hem  
Of ordinary Night-cap ! Come, enough !  
We have gone round its cotton vastitude,  
Or half-round, for the end's consistent still,  
A *cul-de-sac* with stoppage at the sea.  
Here we return upon our steps. One look  
May bid good-morning — properly good-night —  
To civic bliss, Miranda and his mate !  
Are we to rise and go ?"

No, sit and stay !

Now comes my moment, with the thrilling  
thrum

Of curtain from each side a shrouded case.  
Don't the rings shriek an ominous "Ha ! ha !  
So you take Human Nature upon trust" ?

List but with like trust to an incident  
Which speedily shall make quite Red enough  
Burn out of yonder spotless napery !  
Sit on the little mound here, whence you seize  
The whole of the gay front sun-satisfied,  
One laugh of color and embellishment !  
Because it was there, — past those laurustines,  
On that smooth gravel-sweep 'twixt flowers  
and sward, —

There tragic death befell ; and not one grace  
Outspread before you but is registered  
In that sinistrous coil these last two years  
Were occupied in winding smooth again.

"True ?" Well, at least it was concluded so,  
Sworn to be truth, allowed by Law as such,  
(With my concurrence, if it matter here.)  
A month ago : at Vire they tried the case.

## II

Monsieur Léonce Miranda, then, . . . but  
stay !

Permit me a preliminary word,  
And, after, all shall go so straight to end !

Have you, the travelled lady, found yourself  
Inside a ruin, fane or bath or cirque,  
Renowned in story, dear through youthful  
dream ?

If not, — imagination serves as well.  
Try fancy-land, go back a thousand years,  
Or forward, half the number, and confront  
Some work of art gnawn hollow by Time's  
tooth, —

Hellenic temple, Roman theatre,  
Gothic cathedral, Gallic Tuileries,  
But ruined, one and whichsoe'er you like.  
Obstructions choke what still remains intact,  
Yet proffer change that's picturesque in turn ;  
Since little life begins where great life ends,  
And vegetation soon amalgamates,  
Smooths novel shape from out the shapeless old,  
Till broken column, battered cornice-block,  
The centre with a bulk half weeds and flowers.  
Half relies you devoutly recognize.  
Devoutly recognizing, — hark, a voice  
Not to be disregarded ! "Man worked here  
Once on a time ; here needs again to work ;  
Ruins obstruct, which man must remedy."  
Would you demur "Let Time fulfil his task,  
And, till the scythe-sweep find no obstacle,  
Let man be patient" ?

The reply were prompt :  
"Glisteningly beneath the May-night moon,  
Herbage and floral coverture bedeck  
Yon splintered mass amidst the solitude :  
Wolves occupy the background, or some snake  
Glides by at distance : picturesque enough !  
Therefore, preserve it ? Nay, pour daylight  
in, —

The mound proves swarming with humanity.  
There never was a thorough solitude,  
Now you look nearer : mortal busy life  
First of all brought the crumbings down on  
pate,



Which trip man's foot still, plague his passage  
much,

And prove — what seems to you so picturesque  
To him is . . . but experiment yourself  
On how conducive to a happy home  
Will be the circumstance, your bed for base  
Boasts tessellated pavement, — equally  
Affected by the scorpion for his nest, —  
While what o'er-roofs bed is an architrave,  
Marble, and not unlikely to crush man  
To mummy, should its venerable prop,  
Some figtree-stump, play traitor underneath.  
Be wise! Decide! For conservation's sake,  
Clear the arena forthwith! lest the tread  
Of too-much-tried impatience trample out  
Solid and unsubstantial to one blank  
Mud-mixture, picturesque to nobody, —  
And, task done, quarrel with the parts intact  
Whence came the filtered fine dust, whence  
the crash

Bides but its time to follow. Quick conclude  
Removal, time effects so tardily,  
Of what is plain obstruction; rubbish cleared,  
Let partial-ruin stand while ruin may,  
And serve world's use, since use is manifold.  
Repair wreck, stanchion wall to heart's content,  
But never think of renovation pure  
And simple, which involves creation too:  
Transform and welcome! Yon tall tower may  
help

(Though built to be a belfry and naught else)  
Some Father Secchi, to tick Venus off  
In transit: never bring there bell again,  
To damage him aloft, brain us below,  
When new vibrations bury both in brick!"

Monsieur Léonce Miranda, furnishing  
The application at his cost, poor soul!  
Was instanced how, — because the world lay  
strewn

With ravage of opinions in his path,  
And neither he, nor any friendly wit,  
Knew and could teach him which was firm,  
which frail,

In his adventure to walk straight through life  
The partial-ruin, — in such enterprise,  
He straggled into rubbish, struggled on,  
And stumbled out again observably.

"Yon buttress still can back me up," he  
judged:

And at a touch down came both he and it.  
"A certain statue, I was warned against,  
Now, by good fortune, lies well underfoot,  
And cannot tempt to folly any more:"

So, lifting eye, aloft since safety lay,  
What did he light on? the Idalian shape,  
The undeposed, erectly Victrix still!

"These steps ascend the labyrinthine stair  
Whence, darkling and on all-fours, out I stand  
Exalt and safe, and bid low earth adieu —  
For so instructs 'Advice to who would  
climb:'"

And all at once the climbing landed him  
— Where, is my story.

Take its moral first.

Do you advise a climber? Have respect  
To the poor head, with more or less of brains

To spill, should breakage follow your advice!  
Head-break to him will be heart-break to you  
For having preached "Disturb no ruins here!  
Are not they crumbling of their own accord?  
Meantime, let poets, painters keep a prize!  
Beside, a sage pedestrian picks his way."  
A sage pedestrian — such as you and I!  
What if there trip, in merry carelessness,  
And come to grief, a weak and foolish child?  
Be cautious how you counsel climbing, then!

Are you adventurous and climb yourself?  
Plant the foot warily, accept a staff,  
Stamp only where you probe the standing-point,  
Move forward, well assured that move you may:  
Where you mistrust advance, stop short, there  
stick!

This makes advancing slow and difficult?  
Hear what comes of the endeavor of brisk youth  
To foot it fast and easy! Keep this same  
Notion of outside mound and inside mash,  
Towers yet intact round turfy rottenness,  
Symbolic partial-ravage, — keep in mind!  
Here fortune placed his feet who first of all  
Found no incumbance, till head found . . .  
But hear!

This son and heir then of the jeweller,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, at his birth,  
Mixed the Castilian passionate blind blood  
With answerable gush, his mother's gift,  
Of spirit, French and critical and cold.  
Such mixture makes a battle in the brain,  
Ending as faith or doubt gets uppermost;  
Then will has way a moment, but no more:  
So nicely balanced are the adverse strengths,  
That victory entails reverse next time.  
The tactics of the two are different  
And equalize the odds: for blood comes first,  
Surrounding life with undisputed faith.  
But presently a new antagonist,  
By scarce-suspected passage in the dark,  
Steals spirit, fingers at each crevice found  
Athwart faith's stronghold, fronts the aston-  
ished man:

"Such pains to keep me far, yet here stand I,  
Your doubt inside the faith-defence of you!"

With faith it was friends bulwarked him about  
From infancy to boyhood; so, by youth,  
He stood impenetrably circuted,  
Heaven-high and low as hell: what lacked he  
thus,

Guarded against aggression, storm or sap?  
What foe would dare approach? Historic  
Doubt?

Ay, were there some half-knowledge to attack!  
Batter doubt's best, sheer ignorance will beat.  
Acumen metaphysic? — drills its way  
Through what, I wonder! A thick feather-  
bed

Of thoughtlessness, no operating tool —  
Framed to transpierce the flint-stone — fumbles  
at,

With chance of finding an impediment!  
This Ravissante, now: when he saw the church  
For the first time, and to his dying-day,  
His firm belief was that the name fell fit

From the Delivering Virgin, niched and known;  
As if there wanted records to attest  
The appellation was a pleasantry,  
A pious rendering of Rare Vissante,  
The proper name which erst our province bore.  
He would have told you that Saint Aldabert  
Founded the church, (Heaven early favored  
France.)

About the second century from Christ;  
Though the true man was Bishop of Raimbaux,  
Eleventh in succession, Eldobert,  
Who flourished after some six hundred years.  
He it was brought the image "from afar."  
(Made out of stone the place produces still.)  
"Infantine Art divinely artless," (Art  
In the decrepitude of Decadence.)  
And set it up a-working miracles  
Until the Northmen's fury laid it low,  
Not long, however: an egregious sheep,  
Zealous with scratching hoof and routing horn,  
Unearthed the image in good Mailleville's time,  
Count of the country. "If the tale be false,  
Why stands it carved above the portal plain?"  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda used to ask.  
To Londres went the prize in solemn pomp,  
But, liking old abode and loathing new,  
Was borne — this time, by angels — back again.  
And, reinaugurated, miracle  
Succeeded miracle, a lengthy list,  
Until indeed the culmination came —  
Archbishop Chaumont prayed a prayer and  
vowed

A vow — gained prayer and paid vow properly —

For the conversion of Prince Vertgalant.  
These facts, sucked in along with mother's-milk,

Monsieur Léonce Miranda would dispute  
As soon as that his hands were flesh and bone,  
Milk-nourished two-and-twenty years before.  
So fortified by blind Castilian blood,  
What say you to the chances of French cold  
Critical spirit, should Voltaire besiege  
"Alp, Apennine, and fortified redoubt"?  
Ay, would such spirit please to play faith's  
game  
Faith's way, attack where faith defends so  
well!

But then it shifts, tries other strategy.  
Coldness grows warmth, the critical becomes  
Unquestioning acceptance. "Share and share  
Alike in facts, to truth add other truth!  
Why with old truth needs new truth disagree?"

Thus doubt was found invading faith, this  
time,

By help of not the spirit but the flesh:  
Fat Rabelais chuckled, where faith lay in wait  
For lean Voltaire's grimace — French, either  
foe.

Accordingly, while round about our friend  
Ran faith without a break which learned eye  
Could find at two-and-twenty years of age,  
The twenty-two-years-old frank footstep soon  
Assured itself there spread a standing-space  
Flowery and comfortable, nowise rock  
Nor pebble-pavement roughed for champion's  
tread

Who scorns discomfort, pacing at his post.  
Tall, long-limbed, shoulder right and shoulder  
left,

And 'twixt *acromia* such a latitude,  
Black heaps of hair on head, and blacker bush  
O'er-rioting chin, cheek and throat and chest, —  
His brown meridional temperament  
Told him — or rather pricked into his sense  
Plainer than language — "Pleasant station here!  
Youth, strength, and lustihood can sleep on turf  
Yet pace the stony platform afterward:  
First signal of a foe and up they start!  
Saint Eldobert, at all such vanity,  
Nay — sinfulness, had shaken head austere.  
Had he? But did Prince Vertgalant? And  
yet,

After how long a slumber, of what sort,  
Was it, he stretched octogenary joints,  
And, nigh on Day-of-Judgment trumpet-blast,  
Jumped up and manned wall, brisk as any  
bee?"

Nor Rabelais nor Voltaire, but Sganarelle,  
You comprehend, was pushing through the  
chink!

That stager in the saint's correct costume,  
Who ever has his speech in readiness  
For thick-head juvenility at fault:  
"Go pace yon platform and play sentinel!  
You won't? The worse! but still a worse  
might hap,

Stay then, provided that you keep in sight  
The battlement, one bold leap lands you by!  
Resolve not desperately 'Wall or turf,  
Choose this, choose that, but no alternative!'  
No! Earth left once were left for good and  
all:  
'With Heaven you may accommodate your-  
self.'

Saint Eldobert — I much approve his mode;  
With sinner Vertgalant I sympathize;  
But histrionic Sganarelle, who prompts  
While pulling back, refuses yet concedes, —  
Whether he preach in chair, or print in book,  
Or whisper due sustinment to weak flesh,  
Counting his sham beads threaded on a lie —  
Surely, one should bid pack that mountebank!  
Surely, he must have momentary fits  
Of self-sufficient stage-forgetfulness,  
Escapings of the actor-lassitude  
When he allows the grace to show the grin,  
Which ought to let even thickheads recognize  
(Through all the busy and benefic part, —  
Bridge-building, or rock-riving, or good clean  
Transport of church and congregation both  
From this to that place with no harm at all.)  
The Devil, that old stager, at his trick  
Of general utility, who leads  
Downward, perhaps, but fiddles all the way!

Therefore, no sooner does our candidate  
For sainthood spotlessly emerge soul-cleansed  
From First Communion to mount guard at post,  
Paris-proof, top to toe, than up there start  
The Spirit of the Boulevard — you know  
Who —

With jound "So, a structure fixed as fate,

Faith's tower joins on to tower, no ring more  
round,  
Full fifty years at distance, too, from youth !  
Once reach that precinct and there fight your  
best,

As looking back you wonder what has come  
Of daisy-dappled turf you danced across !  
Few flowers that played with youth shall  
pester age,

However age esteem the courtesy ;  
And Eldobert was something past his prime,  
Stocked Caen with churches ere he tried hand  
here.

Saint-Sauveur, Notre - Dame, Saint-Pierre,  
Saint-Jean

Attest his handiwork commenced betimes.  
He probably would preach that turf is mud.  
Suppose it mud, through mud one picks a way,  
And when, clay-clogged, the struggler steps to  
stone,

He uncakes shoe, arrives in manlier guise  
Than carried pick-a-back by Eldobert  
Big-baby-fashion, lest his leathers leak !  
All that parade about Prince Vertgalant  
Amounts to — your Castilian helps enough —  
*Inveni ovem quæ perierat.*

But ask the pretty votive statue-thing  
What the lost sheep's meantime amusements  
were

Till the Archbishop found him ! That stays  
blank :

They washed the fleece well and forgot the  
rest.

Make haste, since time flies, to determine,  
though ! ”

Thus opportunely took up parable, —  
Admonishing Miranda just emerged  
Pure from the Ravissante and Paris-proof, —  
Saint Sganarelle : then slipped aside, changed  
mask,

And made re-entry as a gentleman  
Born of the Boulevard, with another speech,  
I spare you.

So, the year or two revolved,  
And ever the young man was dutiful  
To altar and to hearth : had confidence  
In the whole Ravissantish history.  
Voltaire ? Who ought to know so much of  
him, —

Old sciolist, whom only boys think sage, —  
As one whose father's house upon the Quai  
Neighbored the very house where that Voltaire  
Died mad and raving, not without a burst  
Of squibs and crackers too significant ?  
Father and mother hailed their best of sons,  
Type of obedience, domesticity,  
Never such an example inside doors !  
Outside, as well not keep too close a watch ;  
Youth must be left to some discretion there.  
And what discretion proved, I find deposed  
At Vire, confirmed by his own words : to wit,  
How, with the spriteliness of twenty-five,  
Five — and not twenty, for he gave their names  
With laudable precision — were the few  
Appointed by him unto mistress-ship ;  
While meritoriously the whole long week

A votary of commerce only, week  
Ended, “ at shut of shop on Saturday,  
Do I, as is my wont, get drunk,” he writes  
In airy record to a confidant.  
“ Bragging and lies ! ” replies the apologist :  
“ And do I lose by that ? ” laughed Somebody.  
At the Court-edge a-tiptoe, ’mid the crowd,  
In his own clothes, a-listening to men's Law.

Thus while, prospectively a combatant,  
The volunteer bent brows, clenched jaws, and  
fierce

Whistled the march-tune “ Warrior to the  
wall ! ”

Something like flowery laughters round his feet  
Tangled him of a sudden with “ Sleep first ! ”  
And fairly flat upon the turf sprawled he,  
And let strange creatures make his mouth their  
home.

Anyhow, 't is the nature of the soul  
To seek a show of durability,  
Nor, changing, plainly be the slave of change.  
Outside the turf, the towers : but, round the  
turf,

A tent may rise, a temporary shroud,  
Mock-faith to suit a mimic dwelling-place :  
Tent which, while screening jollity inside  
From the external circuit — evermore  
A menace to who lags when he should march —  
Yet stands a-tremble, ready to collapse  
At touch of foot : turf is acknowledged grass,  
And grass, though pillowy, held contemptible  
Compared with solid rock, the rampired ridge.  
To truth a pretty homage thus we pay  
By testifying — what we dally with,  
Falsehood, (which, never fear we take for  
truth !)

We may enjoy, but then — how we despise !

Accordingly, on weighty business bound,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda stooped to play,  
But, with experience, soon reduced the game  
To principles, and thenceforth played by rule :  
Rule, dignifying sport as sport, proclaimed  
No less that sport was sport, and nothing more.  
He understood the worth of womankind, —  
To furnish man — provisionally — sport :  
Sport transitive — such earth's amusements  
are :

But, seeing that amusements pall by use,  
Variety therein is requisite.  
And since the serious work of life were wronged  
Should we bestow importance on our play,  
It follows, in such womankind-pursuit,  
Cheating is lawful chase. We have to spend  
An hour — they want a lifetime thrown away :  
We seek to tickle sense — they ask for soul,  
As if soul had no higher ends to serve !  
A stag-hunt gives the royal creature law :  
Bat-fowling is all fair with birds at roost,  
The lantern and the clap-net suit the hedge.  
Which must explain why, bent on Boulevard  
game,

Monsieur Léonce Miranda decently  
Was prudent in his pleasure — passed himself  
Off on the fragile fair about his path  
As the gay devil rich in mere good looks,



Youth, hope — what matter though the purse  
be void?

"If I were only young Miranda, now,  
Instead of a poor clerkly drudge at desk  
All day, poor artist vainly bruising brush  
On palette, poor musician scraping gut  
With horsehair teased that no harmonies come!  
Then would I love with liberality,  
Then would I pay! — who now shall be repaid,  
Repaid alike for present pain and past,  
If Mademoiselle permit the contre-danse,  
Sing 'Gay in garret youth at twenty lives,'  
And afterward accept a lemonade!"

Such sweet facilities of intercourse  
Afford the Winter-Garden and Mabile!  
"Oh, I unite" — runs on the confidence,  
Poor fellow, that was read in open Court,  
—"Amusement with discretion: never fear  
My escapades cost more than market-price!  
No durably-attached Miranda-dupe,  
Sucked dry of substance by two clinging lips,  
Promising marriage, and performing it!  
Trust me, I know the world, and know myself,  
And know where duty takes me—in good  
time!"

Thus fortified and realistic, then,  
At all points thus against illusion armed,  
He wisely did New Year inaugurate  
By playing truant to the favored five:  
And sat installed at "The Varieties," —  
Playhouse appropriately named, — to note  
(Prying amid the turf that's flowery there)  
What primrose, firstling of the year, might push  
The snows aside to deck his buttonhole —  
Unnoticed by that outline sad, severe,  
(Though fifty good long years removed from  
youth.)  
That tower and tower, — our image bear in  
mind!

No sooner was he seated than, behold,  
Out burst a polyanthus! He was 'ware  
Of a young woman niched in neighborhood;  
And ere one moment flitted, fast was he  
Found captive to the beauty evermore,  
For life, for death, for heaven, for hell, her own.  
Philosophy, bewail thy fate! Adieu,  
Youth realistic and illusion-proof!  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, — hero late  
Who "understood the worth of womankind,"  
"Who found therein — provisionally — sport," —  
Felt, in the fitting of a moment, fool  
Was he, and folly all that seemed so wise,  
And the best proof of wisdom's birth would be  
That he made all endeavor, body, soul,  
By any means, at any sacrifice  
Of labor, wealth, repute, and (— well, the time  
For choosing between heaven on earth, and  
heaven

In heaven, was not at hand immediately —)  
Made all endeavor, without loss incurred  
Of one least minute, to obtain her love.  
"Sport transitive?" "Variety required?"  
"In loving were a lifetime thrown away?"  
How singularly may young men mistake!  
The fault must be repaired with energy.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda ate her up  
With eye-devouring; when the unconscious fair  
Passed from the close-packed hall, he pressed  
behind;

She mounted vehicle, he did the same,  
Coach stopped, and cab fast followed, at one  
door —

Good house in unexceptionable street.  
Out stepped the lady, — never think, alone!  
A mother was not wanting to the maid,  
Or, maybe, wife, or widow, might one say?  
Out stepped and properly down flung himself  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda at her feet —  
And never left them after, so to speak,  
For twenty years, till his last hour of life,  
When he released them, as precipitate.  
Love proffered and accepted then and there!  
Such potency in word and look has truth.

Truth I say, truth I mean: this love was true,  
And the rest happened by due consequence.  
By which we are to learn that there exists  
A falsish false, for truth's inside the same,  
And truth that's only half true, falsish truth.  
The better for both parties! folks may taunt  
That half your rock-built wall is rubble-heap:  
Answer them, half their flowery turf is stones!  
Our friend had hitherto been decking coat  
If not with stones, with weeds that stones befit.  
With dandelions — "primrose-buds," smirked  
he;

This proved a polyanthus on his breast,  
Prize-lawful or prize-lawless, flower the same.  
So with his other instance of mistake:  
Was Christianity the Ravissante?

And what a flower of flowers he chanced on  
now!

To primrose, polyanthus I prefer  
As illustration, from the fancy-fact  
That out of simple came the composite  
By culture: that the florist bedded thick  
His primrose-root in ruddle, bullock's blood,  
Ochre and devils'-dung, for aught I know,  
Until the pale and pure grew fiery-fine,  
Ruby and topaz, rightly named anew.  
This lady was no product of the plain;  
Social manure had raised a rarity.  
Clara de Millefleurs (note the happy name)  
Blazed in the full-blown glory of her Spring.  
Peerlessly perfect, form and face: for both —  
"Imagine what, at seventeen, may have proved  
Miss Pages, the actress: Pages herself, my  
dear!"

Noble she was, the name denotes: and rich?

"The apartment in this Coliseum Street,  
Furnished, my dear, with such an elegance,  
Testifies wealth, my dear, sufficiently!  
What quality, what style and title, eh?  
Well now, waive nonsense, you and I are boys  
No longer: somewhere must a screw be slack!  
Don't fancy, Duchesses descend at door  
From carriage — step to stranger prostrate  
stretched,

And bid him take heart, and deliver mind,  
March in and make himself at ease forthwith, —  
However broad his chest and black his beard,  
And comely his belongings, — all through love

Protested in a world of ways save one —  
Hinting at marriage! — marriage which yet  
means

Only the obvious method, easiest help  
To satisfaction of love's first demand,  
That love endure eternally: "my dear,  
Somewhere or other must a screw be slack!"

Truth is the proper policy: from truth —  
Whate'er the force wherewith you fling your  
speech, —

Be sure that speech will lift you, by rebound,  
Somewhere above the lowliness of a lie!  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda heard too true  
A tale — perhaps I may subjoin, too trite!  
As the meek martyr takes her statued stand  
Above our pity, claims our worship just  
Because of what she puts in evidence,  
Signal of suffering, badge of torture borne  
In days gone by, shame then, but glory now,  
Barb, in the breast, turned aureole for the front!  
So, half timidity, composure half,  
Clara de Millefleurs told her martyrdom.

Of poor though noble parentage, deprived  
Too early of a father's guardianship,  
What wonder if the prodigality  
Of nature in the girl, whose mental gifts  
Matched her external dowry, form and face —  
If these suggested a too prompt resource  
To the resourceless mother? "Try the Stage,  
And so escape starvation! Prejudice  
Defames Mimetic Art: be yours to prove  
That gold and dross may meet and never mix,  
Purity plunge in pitch yet soil no plume!"

All was prepared in London — (you conceive  
The natural shrinking from publicity  
In Paris, where the name excites remark) —  
London was ready for the grand début;  
When some perverse ill-fortune, incident  
To art mimetic, some malicious thrust  
Of Jealousy who sidles 'twixt the scenes,  
Or pops up sudden from the prompter's hole, —  
Somewhat the brilliant bubble burst in suds.  
Want followed: in a foreign land, the pair!  
Oh, hurry over the catastrophe —  
Mother too sorely tempted, daughter tried  
Scarcely so much as circumvented, say!  
Caged unsuspecting artless innocence!

Monsieur Léonce Miranda tell the rest! —  
The rather that he told it in a style  
To puzzle Court Guide students, much more  
me.

"Brief, she became the favorite of Lord N.,  
An aged but illustrious Duke, thereby  
Breaking the heart of his competitor,  
The Prince of O. Behold her palaced straight  
In splendor, clothed in diamonds," (phrase how  
fit!)

"Giving tone to the City by the Thames!  
Lord N., the aged but illustrious Duke,  
Was even on the point of wedding her —  
Giving his name to her" (why not to us?)  
"But that her better angel interposed.  
She fled from such a fate to Paris back,  
A fortnight since: conceive Lord N.'s despair!"

Duke as he is, there's no invading France.  
He must restrict pursuit to postal plague  
Of writing letters daily, duly read  
As darily she hands them to myself,  
The privileged supplanter, who therewith  
Light a cigar and see abundant blue" —  
(Either of heaven or else Havana-smoke.)  
"Think! she, who helped herself to diamonds  
late,

In passion of disinterestedness  
Now — will accept no tribute of my love  
Beyond a paltry ring, three Louis'-worth!  
Little she knows I have the rummaging  
Of old Papa's shop in the Place Vendôme!"  
So wrote entrancedly to confidant,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda. Surely now,  
If Heaven, that see all, understands no less,  
It finds temptation pardonable here,  
It mitigates the promised punishment,  
It recognizes that to tarry just  
An April hour amid such dainty turf  
Means no rebellion against task imposed  
Of journey to the distant wall one day?  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda puts the case!  
Love, he is purposed to renounce, abjure;  
But meanwhile, is the case a common one?  
Is it the vulgar sin, none hates as he?  
Which question, put directly to "his dear"  
(His brother — I will tell you in a trice),  
Was doubtless meant, by due meandering,  
To reach, to fall not unobserved before  
The auditory cavern 'neath the cope  
Of Her, the placable, the Ravissante.  
But here's the drawback, that the image  
smiles,

Smiles on, smiles ever, says to supplicant  
"Ay, ay, ay" — like some kindly weathercock  
Which, stuck fast at Set Fair, Favonian  
Breeze,

Still warrants you from rain, though Auster's  
lead

Bring down the sky above your cloakless  
mirth.

Had he proposed this question to, nor "dear"  
Nor Ravissante, but prompt to the Police,  
The Commissary of his Quarter, now —  
There had been shaggy eyebrows elevate  
With twinkling apprehension in each orb  
Beneath, and when the sudden shut of mouth  
Relaxed, — lip pressing lip, lest out should  
plump

The pride of knowledge in too frank a flow, —  
Then, fact on fact forthcoming, dose were  
dealt

Of truth remedial, in sufficiency  
To save a chicken threatened with the pip,  
Head-staggers and a tumble from its perch.

Alack, it was the lady's self that made  
The revelation, after certain days  
— Nor so unwisely! As the haschisch-man  
Prepares a novice to receive his drug,  
Adroitly hides the soil with sudden spread  
Of carpet and he seats his customer:  
Then shows him how to smoke himself about  
With Paradise; and only when, at puff  
Of pipe, the Houri dances round the brain  
Of dreamer, does he judge no need is now

For circumspection and punctiliousness ;  
 He may resume the serviceable scrap  
 That made the votary unaware of muck.  
 Just thus the lady, when her brewage — love —  
 Was well a-fume about the novice-brain,  
 Saw she might boldly pluck from underneath  
 Her lover the preliminary lie.

Clara de Millefleurs, of the noble race,  
 Was Lucie Steiner, child to Dominique  
 And Magdalen Commercy ; born at Sierck,  
 About the bottom of the Social Couch.  
 The father having come and gone again,  
 The mother and the daughter found their way  
 To Paris, and professed mode-merchandise,  
 Were milliners, we English roughlier say ;  
 And soon a fellow-lodger in the house,  
 Monsieur Ulysse Muhlihausen, young and smart,  
 Tailor by trade, perceived his house-mate's  
 youth,

Smartness, and beauty over and above.  
 Courtship was brief, and marriage followed  
 quick,

And quicker — impecuniosity.  
 The young pair quitted Paris to reside  
 At London : which repaid the compliment  
 But scurvily, since not a whit the more  
 Trade prospered by the Thames than by the  
 Seine.

Failing all other, as a last resource,  
 " He would have trafficked in his wife," — she  
 said.

If for that cause they quarrelled, 't was, I fear,  
 Rather from reclamation of her rights  
 To wifely independence, than as wronged  
 Otherwise by the course of life proposed :  
 Since, on escape to Paris back again,  
 From horror and the husband, — ill-exchanged  
 For safe maternal home recovered thus, —  
 I find her domiciled and dominant  
 In that apartment, Coliseum Street,  
 Where all the splendid magic met and mazed  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda's venturesome eye.  
 Only, the same was furnished at the cost  
 Of some one notable in days long since,  
 Carlino Centofanti : he it was,  
 Found entertaining unawares — if not  
 An angel, yet a youth in search of one.

Why this revelation after reticence ?  
 Wherefore, beginning " Millefleurs," end at all  
 Steiner, Muhlihausen, and the ugly rest ?  
 Because the unsocial purse-controlling wight,  
 Carlino Centofanti, made aware  
 By misadventure that his wifely, crumbs  
 From table, comforted a visitant,  
 Took churlish leave, and left, too, debts to  
 pay.

Loaded with debts, the lady needs must bring  
 Her soul to bear assistance from a friend  
 Beside that paltry ring, three Louis'-worth ;  
 And therefore might the little circumstance  
 That Monsieur Léonce had the rummaging  
 Of old Papa's shop in the Place Vendôme,  
 Pass, perhaps, not so unobservably.

Frail shadow of a woman in the flesh,  
 These very eyes of mine saw yesterday,

Would I re-tell this story of your woes,  
 Would I have heart to do you detriment  
 By pinning all this shame and sorrow plain  
 To that poor chignon, — staying with me still,  
 Though form and face have well-nigh faded  
 now, —

But that men read it, rough in brutal print,  
 As two years since some functionary's voice  
 Rattled all this — and more by very much —  
 Into the ear of vulgar Court and crowd ?  
 Whence, by reverberation, rumblings grew  
 To what had proved a week-long roar in France  
 Had not the dreadful cannonry drowned all.  
 Was, now, the answer of your advocate  
 More than just this ? " The shame fell long  
 ago,

The sorrow keeps increasing : God forbid  
 We judge man by the faults of youth in age ! "  
 Permit me the expression of a hope  
 Your youth proceeded like your avenue,  
 Stepping by bush, and tree, and taller tree,  
 Until, columnar, at the house they end.  
 So might your creeping youth columnar rise  
 And reach, by year and year, symmetrical,  
 To where all shade stops short, shade's service  
 done.

Bushes on either side, and boughs above,  
 Darken, deform the path else sun would  
 streak ;

And, cornered halfway somewhere, I suspect  
 Stagnation and a horse-pond : hurry past !  
 For here 's the house, the happy half-and-half  
 Existence — such as stands for happiness  
 True and entire, howe'er the squeamish talk !  
 Twenty years long, you may have loved this  
 man ;

He must have loved you ; that 's a pleasant life,  
 Whatever was your right to lead the same.  
 The white domestic pigeon pairs secure,  
 Nay, does mere duty by bestowing egg  
 In authorized compartment, warm and safe,  
 Boarding about, and gilded spire above,  
 Hoisted on pole, to dogs' and cats' despair !  
 But I have spied a veriest trap of twigs  
 On tree-top, every straw a thievery,  
 Where the wild dove — despite the fowler's  
 snare,

The sportsman's shot, the urchin's stone —  
 crooned gay,

And solely gave her heart to what she hatched,  
 Nor minded a malignant world below.  
 I throw first stone forsooth ? 'T is mere assault  
 Of playful sugarplum against your cheek,  
 Which, if it makes cheek tingle, wipes off  
 rouge !

You, my worst woman ? Ah, that touches  
 pride,

Puts on his mettle the exhibitor  
 Of Night-caps, if you taunt him " This, no  
 doubt, —

Now we have got to Female-garniture, —  
 Crowns your collection, Reddest of the row ! "  
 O unimaginative ignorance  
 Of what dye's depth keeps best apart from  
 worst

In womankind ! — how heaven's own pure may  
 seem

To blush aurorally beside such blanched



Divineness as the women-wreaths named White :  
While hell, eruptive and fuliginous,  
Sickens to very pallor as I point  
Her place to a Red clout called woman too !  
Hail, heads that ever had such glory once  
Touch you a moment, like God's cloven tongues  
Of fire ! your lambent aureoles lost may leave  
You marked yet, dear beyond true diadems !  
And hold, each foot, nor spurn, to man's disgrace,  
What other twist of fetid rag may fall !  
Let slink into the sewer the cupping-cloth !

Lucie, much solaced, I re-finger you,  
The medium article ; if ruddy-marked  
With iron-mould, your cambric, — clean at least

From poison-speck of rot and purulence !  
Lucie Muhlhausen said — " Such thing am I :  
Love me, or love me not ! " Miranda said,  
" I do love, more than ever, most for this. "  
The revelation of the very truth  
Proved the concluding necessary shake  
Which bids the tardy mixture crystallize  
Or else stay ever liquid : shoot up shaft,  
Durably diamond, or evaporate —  
Sluggish solution through a minute's slip.  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda took his soul  
In both his hands, as if it were a vase,  
To see what came of the convulsion there,  
And found, amid subsidence, love new-born  
So sparkingly resplendent, old was new.  
" Whatever be my lady's present, past,  
Or future, this is certain of my soul,  
I love her ! in despite of all I know,  
Defiance of the much I have to fear,  
I venture happiness on what I hope,  
And love her from this day forevermore !  
No prejudice to old profound respect  
For certain Powers ! I trust they bear in mind  
A most peculiar case, and straighten out  
What's crooked there, before we close accounts.  
Renounce the world for them — some day I will :

Meantime, to me let her become the world ! "

Thus, mutely might our friend soliloquize  
Over the tradesmen's bills, his Clara's gift —  
In the apartment, Coliseum Street,  
Carlino Centofanti's legacy,  
Provided rent and taxes were discharged —  
In face of Steiner now, De Millefleurs once,  
The tailor's wife and runaway confessed.

On such a lady if election light,  
(According to a social prejudice.)  
If henceforth " all the world " she constitute  
For any lover, — needs must he renounce  
Our world in ordinary, walked about  
By couples loving as its laws prescribe, —  
Renunciation sometimes difficult.  
But, in this instance, time and place and thing  
Combined to simplify experiment,  
And make Miranda, in the current phrase,  
Master the situation passably.

For first facility, his brother died —  
Who was, I should have told you, confidant,

Adviser, referee, and substitute,  
All from a distance : but I knew how soon  
This younger brother, lost in Portugal,  
Had to depart and leave our friend at large.  
Cut off abruptly from companionship  
With brother-soul of bulk about as big,  
(Obvious recipient — by intelligence  
And sympathy, poor little pair of souls —  
Of much affection and some foolishness.)  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, meant to lean  
By nature, needs must shift the leaning-place  
To his love's bosom from his brother's neck,  
Or fall flat unrelieved of freight sublime.

Next died the lord of the Aladdin's cave,  
Master o' the mint, and keeper of the keys  
Of chests chokefull with gold and silver changed  
By Art to forms where wealth forgot itself,  
And caskets where reposed each pullet-egg  
Of diamond, slipping flame from fifty slants.  
In short, the father of the family  
Took his departure also from our scene,  
Leaving a fat succession to his heir  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, — " fortunate,  
If ever man was, in a father's death,"  
(So commented the world, — not he, too kind,  
Could that be, rather than scarce kind enough)  
Indisputably fortunate so far,  
That little of incumbrance in his path,  
Which money kicks aside, would lie there long.

And finally, a rough but wholesome shock,  
An accident which comes to kill or cure,  
A jerk which mends a dislocated joint !  
Such happy chance, at cost of twinge, no doubt,  
Into the socket back again put truth,  
And stopped the limb from longer dragging  
lie.

For love suggested, " Better shamle on,  
And bear your lameness with what grace you may ! "

And but for this rude wholesome accident,  
Continuance of disguise and subterfuge,  
Retention of first falsehood as to name  
And nature in the lady, might have proved  
Too necessary for abandonment.  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda probably  
Had else been loath to cast the mask aside,  
So politic, so self-preservative,  
Therefore so pardonable — though so wrong !  
For see the bugbear in the background !  
Breathe

But ugly name, and wind is sure to waft  
The husband news of the wife's whereabouts :  
From where he lies perdue in London town,  
Fourth steps the needy tailor on the stage,  
Deity-like from dusk machine of fog,  
And claims his consort, or his consort's worth  
In rubies which her price is far above.  
Hard to propitiate, harder to oppose, —  
Who but the man's self came to banish fear,  
A pleasant apparition, such as shocks  
A moment, tells a tale, then goes for good !

Monsieur Ulysse Muhlhausen proved no less  
Nor more than " Gustave," lodging opposite  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's diamond-cave  
And ruby-mine, and lacking little thence

Save that its gnome would keep the captive safe,  
 Never return his Clara to his arms.  
 For why? He was become the man in vogue,  
 The indispensable to who went clothed  
 Nor cared encounter Paris fashion's blame, —  
 Such miracle could London absence work.  
 Rolling in riches — so translate "the vogue" —  
 Rather his object was to keep off claw  
 Should griffin scent the gold, should wife lay  
 claim

To lawful portion at a future day,  
 Than tempt his partner from her private spoils.  
 Best forage each for each, nor coupled hunt!

Pursuantly, one morning, — knock at door  
 With knuckle, dry authoritative cough,  
 And easy stamp of foot, broke startlingly  
 On household slumber, Coliseum Street:  
 "Admittance in the name of Law!" In  
 marched

The Commissary and subordinate.  
 One glance sufficed them. "A marital pair:  
 We certify, and bid good morning, sir!  
 Madame, a thousand pardons!" Whereupon  
 Monsieur Ulysse Muhlhause, otherwise  
 Called "Gustave" for convenience of trade,  
 Depositing in due form complaint of wrong,  
 Made his demand of remedy — divorce  
 From bed, board, share of name, and part in  
 goods.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda owned his fault,  
 Protested his pure ignorance, from first  
 To last, of rights infringed in "Gustave's"  
 case:

Submitted him to judgment. Law decreed  
 "Body and goods be henceforth separate!"  
 And thereupon each party took its way,  
 This right, this left, rejoicing, to abide  
 Estranged yet amicable, opposites  
 In life as in respective dwelling-place.  
 Still does one read on their establishment  
 Huge-lettered "Gustave," — gold out-glittering  
 "Miranda, goldsmith," just across the street —  
 "A first-rate hand at riding-habits" — say  
 The instructed — "special cut of chamber-  
 robes."

Thus by a rude in seeming — rightlier judged  
 Beneficent surprise, publicity  
 Stopped further fear and trembling, and what  
 tale  
 Cowardice thinks a covert: one bold splash  
 Into the mid-shame, and the shiver ends,  
 Though cramp and drowning may begin per-  
 haps.

To cite just one more point which crowned  
 success:

Madame, Miranda's mother, most of all  
 An obstacle to his projected life  
 In license, as a daughter of the Church,  
 Duteous, exemplary, severe by right —  
 Moreover one most thoroughly beloved  
 Without a rival till the other sort  
 Possessed her son, — first storm of anger spent,  
 She seemed, though grumblingly and grudg-  
 ingly,  
 To let be what needs must be, acquiesce.

"With heaven — accommodation possible!"  
 Saint Sganarelle had preached with such effect,  
 She saw now mitigating circumstance.  
 "The erring one was most unfortunate,  
 No question: but worse Magdalens repent.  
 Were Clara free, did only Law allow,  
 What fitter choice in marriage could have  
 made

Léonce or anybody?" 'T is alleged  
 And evidenced, I find, by advocate,  
 "Never did she consider such a tie  
 As baleful, spring to snap whate'er the cost."  
 And when the couple were in safety once  
 At Clairvaux, motherly, considerate,  
 She shrank not from advice. "Since safe you  
 be,

Safely abide! for winter, I know well,  
 Is troublesome in a cold country-house.  
 I recommend the south room that we styled,  
 Your sire and I, the winter-chamber."

Chance

Or purpose, — who can read the mystery? —  
 Combined, I say, to bid "Intrrench yourself,  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda, on this turf,  
 About this flower, so firmly that, as tent  
 Rises on every side around you both,  
 The question shall become, — Which arrogates  
 Stability, this tent or those far towers?  
 May not the temporary structure suit  
 The stable circuit, co-exist in peace? —  
 Always until the proper time, no fear!  
 'Lay flat your tent!' is easier said than done."

So, with the best of auspices, betook  
 Themselves Léonce Miranda and his bride —  
 Provisionary — to their Clairvaux house,  
 Never to leave it — till the proper time.

I told you what was Clairvaux-Priory  
 Ere the improper time: an old demesne  
 With memories, — relic half, and ruin  
 whole, —

The very place, then, to repair the wits  
 Worn out with Paris-traffic, when its lord,  
 Miranda's father, took his month of ease  
 Purchased by industry. What contrast here!  
 Repose, and solitude, and healthy ways!  
 That ticking at the back of head, he took  
 For motion of an inmate, stopped at once,  
 Proved nothing but the pavement's rattle left  
 Behind at Paris: here was holiday!  
 Welcome the quaint succeeding to the spruce,  
 The large and lumbering and — might he  
 breathe

In whisper to his own ear — dignified  
 And gentry-fashioned old-style haunts of sleep!  
 Palatial gloomy chambers for parade,  
 And passage-lengths of lost significance,  
 Never constructed as receptacle,  
 At his odd hours, for him their actual lord  
 By dint of diamond-dealing, goldsmithry.  
 Therefore Miranda's father chopped and  
 changed

Nor roof-tile nor yet floor-brick, undismayed  
 By rains a-top or rats at bottom there.  
 Such contrast is so piquant for a month!  
 But now arrived quite other occupants

Whose cry was "Permanency, — life and death  
Here, here, not elsewhere, change is all we  
dread!"

Their dwelling-place must be adapted, then,  
To inmates, no mere truants from the town,  
No temporary sojourners, forsooth,  
At Clairvaux : change it into Paradise !

Fair friend, — who listen and let talk, alas ! —  
You would, in even such a state of things,  
Pronounce, — or am I wrong ? — for bidding  
stay

The old-world inconvenience, fresh as found.  
All folk of individuality  
Prefer to be reminded, now and then,  
Though at the cost of vulgar cosiness,  
That the shell-outside only harbors man  
The vital and progressive, meant to build,  
When build he may, with quite a difference,  
Some time, in that far land we dream about,  
Where every man is his own architect.  
But then the couple here in question, each  
At one in project for a happy life,  
Were by no acceptance of the word  
So individual that they must aspire  
To architecture all-appropriate,  
And, therefore, in this world impossible:  
They needed house to suit the circumstance,  
Proprietors, not tenants for a term.  
Despite a certain marking, here and there,  
Of fleecy black or white distinguishment,  
These vulgar sheep wore the flock's uniform.  
*They love the country, they renounce the town ?*  
They gave a kick, as our Italians say,  
To Paris ere it turned and kicked themselves !  
Acquaintances might prove too hard to seek,  
Or the reverse of hard to find, perchance,  
Since Monsieur Gustave's apparition there.  
And let me call remark upon the list  
Of notabilities invoked, in Court  
At Vire, to witness, by their phrases culled  
From correspondence, what was the esteem  
Of those we pay respect to, for "the pair  
Whereof they knew the inner life," 't is said.  
Three, and three only, answered the appeal.  
First Monsieur Vaillant, music-publisher,  
"Begs Madame will accept civilities."  
Next Alexandre Dumas, — sire, not son, —  
"Sends compliments to Madame and to you."  
And last — but now prepare for England's  
voice !

I will not mar nor make — here 's word for  
word —

"A rich proprietor of Paris, he  
To whom belonged that beauteous *Bagatelle*  
Close to the wood of Boulogne, Hertford hight,  
Assures of homages and compliments  
Affectionate" — not now Miranda but  
"Madame Muhlhausen." (Was this friend, the  
Duke

Redoubtable in rivalry before ?)  
Such was the evidence when evidence  
Was wanted, then if ever, to the worth  
Whereat acquaintances in Paris prized  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's household charm.  
No wonder, then, his impulse was to live,  
In Norman solitude, the Paris life:  
Surround himself with Art transported thence,

And nature like those famed Elysian Fields :  
Then, warm up the right color out of both,  
By Boulevard friendships tempted to come  
taste  
How Paris lived again in little there.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda practised Art.  
Do let a man for once live as man likes !  
Politics ? Spend your life, to spare the  
world's :

Improve each unit by some particle  
Of joy the more, deteriorate the orb  
Entire, your own : poor profit, dismal loss !  
Write books, paint pictures, or make music —  
since

Your nature leans to such life-exercise !  
Ay, but such exercise begins too soon,  
Concludes too late, demands life whole and  
sole,

Artistry being battle with the age  
It lives in ! Half life, — silence, while you  
learn

What has been done ; the other half, — attempt  
At speech, amid world's wail of wonderment —  
"Here's something done was never done be-  
fore !"

To be the very breath that moves the age  
Means not to have breath drive you bubble-  
like

Before it — but yourself to blow : that's  
strain ;

Strain's worry through the lifetime, till there's  
peace ;

We know where peace expects the artist-soul.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda knew as much.  
Therefore in Art he nowise cared to be  
Creative ; but creation, that had birth  
In storminess long years before was born  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, — Art, enjoyed  
Like fleshly objects of the chase that tempt  
In cookery, not in capture — these might feast  
The dilettante, furnish tavern-fare  
Open to all with purses open too.  
To sit free and take tribute seigneur-like —  
Now, not too lavish of acknowledgment,  
Now, self-indulgently profuse of pay.  
Always Art's seigneur, not Art's serving-man,  
Whate'er the style and title and degree, —  
That is the quiet life and easy death  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda would approve  
Wholly — provided (back I go again  
To the first simile) that while glasses clink,  
And viands steam, and banqueting laughs high  
All that 's outside the temporary tent,  
The dim grim outline of the circuit-wall,  
Forgets to menace "Soon or late will drop  
Pavilion, soon or late you needs must march,  
And laggards will be sorry they were slack !  
Always — unless excuse sound plausible !"

Monsieur Léonce Miranda knew as much :  
Whence his determination just to paint  
So creditably as might help the eye  
To comprehend how painter's eye grew dim  
Ere it produced L'Ingegno's piece of work —  
So to become musician that his ear  
Should judge, by its own tickling and turmoil,



Who made the Solemn Mass might well die deaf —

So cultivate a literary knack  
That, by experience how it wiles the time,  
He might imagine how a poet, rapt  
In rhyming wholly, grew so poor at last  
By carelessness about his banker's-book,  
That the *Sieur Boileau* (to provoke our smile)  
Began abruptly, — when he paid devoir  
To *Louis Quatorze* as he dined in state, —  
"Sire, send a drop of broth to *Pierre Corneille*  
Now dying and in want of sustenance!"  
— I say, these half-hour playings at life's toil,  
Diversified by billiards, riding, sport —  
With now and then a visitor — *Dumas*,  
*Hertford* — to check no aspiration's flight —  
While *Clara*, like a diamond in the dark,  
Should extract shining from what else were  
shade,  
And multiply chance rays a million-fold, —  
How could he doubt that all offence outside, —  
Wrong to the towers, which, pillowed on the  
turf,  
He thus shut eyes to, — were as good as gone?

So, down went *Clairvaux-Priory* to dust,  
And up there rose, in lieu, your structure gay  
Above the Norman ghosts: and where the  
stretch  
Of barren country girdled house about,  
Behold the Park, the English preference!  
Thus made undoubtedly a desert smile  
*Monsieur Léonce Miranda*.

Ay, but she?

One should not so merge soul in soul, you  
think?  
And I think: only, let us wait, nor want  
Two things at once — her turn will come in  
time.  
A cork-float danced upon the tide, we saw,  
This morning, blinding-bright with briny dew:  
There was no disengaging soaked from sound,  
Earth-product from the sister-element.  
But when we turn, the tide will turn, I think,  
And bare on beach will lie exposed the buoy:  
A very proper time to try, with foot  
And even finger, which was buoying wave,  
Which merely buoyant substance, — power to  
lift,  
And power to be sent skyward passively.  
Meanwhile, no separation of the pair!

### III

And so slept pleasantly away five years  
Of *Paradisiac* dream; till, as there fit  
Premonitory symptoms, pricks of pain,  
Because the dreamer has to start awake  
And find disease dwelt active all the while  
In head or stomach through his night-long  
sleep, —  
So happened here disturbance to content.

*Monsieur Léonce Miranda's* last of cares,  
Ere he composed himself, had been to make  
Provision that, while sleeping safe he lay,

Somebody else should, dragon-like, let fall  
Never a lid, coiled round the apple-stem,  
But watch the precious fruitage. Somebody  
Kept shop, in short, played *Paris* substitute.  
Himself, shrewd, well-trained, early-exercised,  
Could take in, at an eye-glance, luck or loss —  
Know commerce throve, though lazily uplift  
On elbow merely: leave his bed forsooth?  
Such active service was the substitute's.

But one October morning, at first drop  
Of applied gold, first summons to be grave  
Because rough *Autumn's* play turns earnest  
now,

*Monsieur Léonce Miranda* was required  
In *Paris* to take counsel, face to face,  
With *Madame-mother*: and be rated, too,  
Roundly at certain items of expense  
Whereat the government provisional,  
The *Paris* substitute and shopkeeper,  
Shook head, and talked of funds inadequate:  
Oh, in the long run, — not if remedy  
Occurred betimes! Else, — tap the generous bole  
Too near the quick, — it withers to the root —  
Leafy, prolific, golden apple-tree,  
"Miranda," sturdy in the *Place Vendôme*!

"What is this reckless life you lead?" began  
Her greeting she whom most he feared and  
loved,

*Madame Miranda*. "Luxury, extravagance  
*Sardanapalus's* self might emulate, —  
Did your good father's money go for this?  
Where are the fruits of education, where  
The morals which at first distinguished you,  
The faith which promised to adorn your age?  
And why such wastefulness outbreking now,  
When heretofore you loved economy?  
Explain this pulling-down and building-up  
Poor *Clairvaux*, which your father bought be-  
cause

*Clairvaux* he found it, and so left to you,  
Not a gilt-gingerbread big baby-house!  
True, we could somehow shake head and shut  
eye

To what was past prevention on our part —  
This reprehensible illicit bond:  
We, in a manner, winking, watched consort  
Our modest well-conducted pious son  
With *Delilah*: we thought the smoking flax  
Would smoulder soon away and end in snuff!  
Is spark to strengthen, prove consuming fire?  
No lawful family calls *Clairvaux* 'home' —  
Why play that fool of Scripture whom the voice  
Admonished 'Whose to-night shall be those  
things

Provided for thy morning jollity?'  
To take one specimen of pure caprice  
Out of the heap conspicuous in the plan, —  
Puzzle of change, I call it, — titled big  
'*Clairvaux Restored*:' what means this *Bel*  
*vedere*?

This Tower, stuck like a fool's-cap on the  
roof —

Do you intend to soar to heaven from thence?  
Tower, truly! Better had you planted turf —  
More fitly would you dig yourself a hole  
Beneath it for the final journey's help!

O we poor parents — could we prophesy ! ”  
 Léonce was found affectionate enough  
 To man, to woman, child, bird, beast, alike ;  
 But all affection, all one fire of heart  
 Flaming toward Madame-mother. Had she  
 posed

The question plainly at the outset “ Choose !  
 Cut clean in half your all-the-world of love,  
 The mother and the mistress : then resolve,  
 Take me or take her, throw away the one ! ” —  
 He might have made the choice and marred  
 my tale.

But, much I apprehend, the problem put  
 Was, “ Keep both halves, yet do no detriment  
 To either ! Prize each opposite in turn ! ”  
 Hence, while he prized at worth the Clairvaux-  
 life

With all its tolerated naughtiness,  
 He, visiting in fancy Quai Rousseau,  
 Saw, cornered in the cosiest nook of all,  
 That range of rooms through number Thirty-  
 three,

The lady-mother bent o’er her Bézique  
 While Monsieur Curé This, and Sister That, —  
 Superior of no matter what good House —  
 Did duty for Duke Hertford and Dumas,  
 Nay — at his mother’s age — for Clara’s self.  
 At Quai Rousseau, things comfortable thus,  
 Why should poor Clairvaux prove so trouble-  
 some ?

She played at cards, he built a Belvedere.  
 But here’s the difference : she had reached the  
 Towers

And there took pastime : he was still on Turf —  
 Though fully minded that, when once he  
 marched,

No sportive fancy should distract him more.

In brief, the man was angry with himself,  
 With her, with all the world and much beside :  
 And so the unseemly words were interchanged  
 Which crystallize what else evaporates.  
 And make mere misty petulance grow hard  
 And sharp inside each softness, heart and soul.  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda flung at last  
 Out of doors, fever-flushed : and there the  
 Seine

Rolled at his feet, obsequious remedy  
 For fever, in a cold autumnal flow.

“ Go and be rid of memory in a bath ! ”  
 Craftily whispered Who besets the ear  
 On such occasions.

Done as soon as dreamed.  
 Back shivers poor Léonce to bed — where else ?  
 And there he lies a month ’twixt life and death,  
 Raving. “ Remorse of conscience ! ” friends  
 opine.

“ Sirs, it may partly prove so,” represents  
 Beaumont — (the family physician, he  
 Whom last year’s Commune murdered, do you  
 mind ?)

Beaumont reports, “ There is some active cause,  
 More than mere pungency of quarrel past, —  
 Cause that keeps adding other food to fire.  
 I hear the words and know the signs, I say !  
 Dear Madame, you have read the Book of  
 Saints,

How Antony was tempted ? As for me,  
 Poor heathen, ’t is by pictures I am taught.  
 I say then, I see standing here, — between  
 Me and my patient, and that crucifix  
 You very properly would interpose —  
 A certain woman-shape, one white appeal,  
 ‘ Will you leave me, then, me, me, me for her ? ’  
 Since cold Seine could not quench this flame,  
 since flare

Of fever does not redden it away, —  
 Be rational, indulgent, mute — should chance  
 Come to the rescue — Providence, I mean —  
 The while I blister and phlebotomize ! ”

Well, somehow rescued by whatever power,  
 At month’s end, back again conveyed himself  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda, worn to rags,  
 Nay, tinder : stuff irreparably spoiled,  
 Though kindly hand should stitch and patch its  
 best.

Clairvaux in Autumn is restorative.  
 A friend stitched on, patched ever. All the  
 same,

Clairvaux looked grayer than a month ago.  
 Unglossed was shrubbery, unglorified  
 Each copse, so wealthy once ; the garden-plots,  
 The orchard-walks, showed dearth and dreari-  
 ness.

The sea lay out at distance crammed by cloud  
 Into a leaden wedge ; and sorrowful  
 Sulked field and pasture with persistent rain.  
 Nobody came so far from Paris now :  
 Friends did their duty by an invalid  
 Whose convalescence claimed entire repose.  
 Only a single ministrant was stanch  
 At quiet reparation of the stuff —  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda, worn to rags :  
 But she was Clara and the world beside.

Another month, the year packed up his plagues  
 And sullenly departed, peddler-like,  
 As apprehensive old-world ware might show  
 To disadvantage when the newcomer,  
 Merchant of novelties, young ‘Sixty-eight,  
 With brand-new bargains, whistled o’er the lea.  
 Things brightened somewhat o’er the Christmas  
 hearth,  
 As Clara plied assiduously her task.

“ Words are but words and wind. Why let the  
 wind  
 Sing in your ear, bite, sounding, to your brain ?  
 Old folk and young folk, still at odds, of course !  
 Age quarrels because Spring puts forth a leaf  
 While Winter has a mind that boughs stay bare ;  
 Or rather — worse than quarrel — age describes  
 Propriety in preaching life to death.  
 ‘ Enjoy nor youth, nor Clairvaux, nor poor me ? ’  
 Dear Madame, you enjoy your age, ’t is thought !  
 Your number Thirty-three on Quai Rousseau  
 Cost fifty times the price of Clairvaux, tipped  
 Even with our prodigious Belvedere ;  
 You entertain the Curé, — we, Dumas ;  
 We play charades, while you prefer Bézique :  
 Do lead your own life and let ours alone !  
 Cross Old Year shall have done his worst, my  
 friend !

Here comes gay New Year with a gift, no doubt !

Look up and let in light that longs to shine —  
One flash of light, and where will darkness  
hide?

Your cold makes me too cold, love! Keep me  
warm!"

Whereat Léonce Miranda raised his head  
From his two white thin hands, and forced a  
smile,

And spoke: "I do look up, and see your light  
Above me! Let New Year contribute warmth —  
I shall refuse no fuel that may blaze."

Nor did he. Three days after, just a spark  
From Paris, answered by a snap at Caen  
Or whither reached the telegraphic wire:  
"Quickly to Paris! On arrival, learn  
Why you are wanted!" Curt and critical!

Off starts Léonce, one fear from head to foot;  
Caen, Rouen, Paris, as the railway helps;  
Then come the Quai and Number Thirty-three.  
"What is the matter, concierge?" — a gri-  
mace!

He mounts the staircase, makes for the main  
seat

Of dreadful mystery which draws him there —  
Bursts in upon a bedroom known too well —  
There lies all left now of the mother once.  
Tapers define the stretch of rigid white,  
Nor want there ghastly velvets of the grave.

A blackness sits on either side at watch,  
Sisters, good souls but frightful all the same,  
Silent: a priest is spokesman for his corpse.  
"Dead, through Léonce Miranda! stricken  
down

Without a minute's warning, yesterday!  
What did she say to you, and you to her,  
Two months ago? This is the consequence!  
The doctors have their name for the disease;  
I, you, and God say — heart-break, nothing  
more!"

Monsieur Léonce Miranda, like a stone  
Fell at the bedfoot and found respite so,  
While the priest went to tell the company.  
What follows you are free to disbelieve.  
It may be true or false that this good priest  
Had taken his instructions, — who shall  
blame? —

From quite another quarter than, perchance,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda might suppose  
Would offer solace in such pressing need.  
All he remembered of his kith and kin  
Was, they were worthily his substitutes  
In commerce, did their work and drew their  
pay.

But they remembered, in addition, this —  
They fairly might expect inheritance,  
As nearest kin, called Family by law  
And gospel both. Now, since Miranda's life  
Showed nothing like abatement of distaste  
For conjugality, but preference  
Continued and confirmed of that smooth chain  
Which slips and leaves no knot behind, no  
heir —

Presumption was, the man, become mature,  
Would at a calculable day discard  
His old and outworn . . . what we blush to  
name,

And make society the just amends;  
Scarce by a new attachment — Heaven for-  
bid!

Still less by lawful marriage: that's reserved  
For those who make a proper choice at first —  
Not try both courses and would grasp in age  
The very treasure, youth preferred to spurn!  
No! putting decently such thought aside,  
The penitent must rather give his powers  
To such a reparation of the past  
As, edifying kindred, makes them rich,  
Now, how would it enrich prospectively  
The Cousins, if he lavished such expense  
On Clairvaux? — pretty as a toy, but then  
As toy, so much productive and no more!  
If all the outcome of the goldsmith's shop  
Went to gild Clairvaux, where remain the  
funds

For Cousinry to spread out lap and take?  
This must be thought of and provided for.  
I give it you a mere conjecture, mind!  
To help explain the wholesome unannounced  
Intelligence, the shock that startled guilt,  
The scenic show, much yellow, black and  
white

By taper-shine, the nuns — portentous pair,  
And, more than all, the priest's admonish-  
ment —

"No flattery of self! You murdered her!  
The gray lips, silent now, reprove by mine.  
You wasted all your living, rioted  
In harlotry — she warned and I repeat!  
No warning had she, for she needed none:  
If this should be the last yourself receive?"  
Done for the best, no doubt, though clumsily, —  
Such, and so startling, the reception here.  
You hardly wonder if down fell at once  
The tawdry tent, pictorial, musical,  
Poetical, besprent with hearts and darts;  
Its cobweb-work, betinselled stitchery,  
Lay dust about our sleeper on the turf,  
And showed the outer towers distinct and  
dread.

Senseless he fell, and long he lay, and much  
Seemed salutary in his punishment  
To planners and performers of the piece.  
When pain ends, pardon prompt may operate.  
There was a good attendance close at hand,  
Waiting the issue in the great saloon,  
Cousins with consolation and advice.

All things thus happily performed to point,  
No wonder at success commensurate.  
Once swooning stopped, once anguish subse-  
quent

Raved out, — a sudden resolution chilled  
His blood and changed his swimming eyes to  
stone,  
As the poor fellow raised himself upright,  
Collected strength, looked, once for all, his  
look,

Then, turning, put officious help aside  
And passed from out the chamber. "For af-  
fairs!"

So he announced himself to the saloon:  
"We owe a duty to the living too!" —  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda tried to smile.



How did the hearts of Cousinry rejoice  
 At their stray sheep returning thus to fold,  
 As, with a dignity, precision, sense,  
 All unsuspected in the man before,  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda made minute  
 Detail of his intended scheme of life  
 Thenceforward and forever. "Vanity  
 Was ended: its redemption must begin —  
 And, certain, would continue; but since life  
 Was awfully uncertain — witness here! —  
 Behooved him lose no moment but discharge  
 Immediate burden of the world's affairs  
 On backs that kindly volunteered to crouch.  
 Cousins, with easier conscience, blamelessly  
 Might carry on the goldsmith's trade, in brief,  
 Uninterfered with by its lord who late  
 Was used to supervise and take due tithe.  
 A stipend now sufficed his natural need:  
 Themselves should fix what sum allows man  
 live.

But half a dozen words concisely plain  
 Might, first of all, make sure that, on demise,  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda's property  
 Passed by bequeathment, every particle,  
 To the right heirs, the cousins of his heart.  
 As for that woman — they would understand!  
 This was a step must take her by surprise!  
 It were too cruel did he snatch away  
 Decent subsistence. She was young, and fair,  
 And . . . and attractive! Means must be sup-  
 plied

To save her from herself, and from the world,  
 And . . . from anxieties might haunt him else  
 When he were fain have other thoughts in  
 mind."

It was a sight to melt a stone, that thaw  
 Of rigid disapproval into dew  
 Of sympathy, as each extended palm  
 Of cousin hastened to enclose those five  
 Cold fingers, tendered so mistrustfully,  
 Despairingly of condonation now!  
 You would have thought, — at every fervent  
 shake,

In reassurance of those timid tips, —  
 The penitent had squeezed, considerate,  
 By way of fee into physician's hand  
 For physicking his soul, some diamond knob.

And now let pass a week. Once more behold  
 The same assemblage in the same saloon,  
 Waiting the entry of protagonist  
 Monsieur Léonce Miranda. "Just a week  
 Since the death-day, — was ever man trans-  
 formed

Like this man?" questioned cousin of his  
 mate.

Last seal to the repentance had been set  
 Three days before, at Sceaux in neighborhood  
 Of Paris where they laid with funeral pomp  
 Mother by father. Let me spare the rest:  
 How the poor fellow, in his misery,  
 Buried hot face and bosom, where heaped snow  
 Offered assistance, at the grave's black edge,  
 And there lay, till uprooted by main force  
 From wh he prayed to grow and ne'er again  
 Walk earth unworthily as heretofore.

It is not with impunity priests teach  
 The doctrine he was dosed with from his  
 youth —

"Pain to the body — profit to the soul;  
 Corporeal pleasure — so much woe to pay  
 When disembodied spirit gives account."

However, woe had done its worst, this time.  
 Three days allow subsidence of much grief.  
 Already, regular and equable,  
 Forward went purpose to effect. At once  
 The testament was written, signed and sealed.  
 Disposer of the commerce — that took time,  
 And would not suffer by a week's delay;  
 But the immediate, the imperious need,  
 The call demanding of the Cousinry  
 Co-operation, what convened them thus,  
 Was — how and when should deputation march  
 To Coliseum Street, the old abode  
 Of wickedness, and there acquaint — oh,  
 shame!

Her, its old inmate, who had followed up  
 And lay in wait in the old haunt for prey —  
 That they had rescued, they possessed Léonce,  
 Whose loathing at recapture equalled theirs —  
 Upbraided that sinner with her sinfulness,  
 Impart the fellow-sinner's firm resolve  
 Never to set eyes on her face again:  
 Then, after stipulations strict but just,  
 Hand her the first instalment — moderate  
 Enough, no question — of her salary:  
 Admonish for the future, and so end. —  
 All which good purposes, decided on  
 Sufficiently, were waiting full effect  
 When presently the culprit should appear.

Somehow appearance was delayed too long;  
 Chatting and chirping sunk unconsciously  
 To silence, nay, uneasiness, at length  
 Alarm, till — anything for certitude! —  
 A peeper was commissioned to explore,  
 At keyhole, what the laggard's task might  
 be —

What caused so palpable a disrespect!

Back came the tiptoe cousin from his quest.  
 "Monsieur Léonce was busy," he believed,  
 "Contemplating — those love-letters, perhaps,  
 He always carried, as if precious stones,  
 About with him. He read, one after one,  
 Some sort of letters. But his back was turned.  
 The empty coffer open at his side,  
 He leant on elbow by the mantelpiece  
 Before the hearth-fire; big and blazing too."

"Better he shovelled them all in at once,  
 And burned the rubbish!" was a cousin's  
 quip.

Warming his own hands at the fire the while,  
 I told you, snow had fallen outside, I think.

When suddenly a cry, a host of cries,  
 Screams, hubbub and confusion thrilled the  
 room.

All by a common impulse rushed thence,  
 reached

The late death-chamber, tricked with trappings  
 still,

Skulls, crossbones, and such moral broidery.  
Madame Muhlhausen might have played the  
witch,  
Dropped down the chimney and appalled Lé-  
once  
By some proposal, "Parting touch of hand!"  
If she but touched his foolish hand, you know!

Something had happened quite contrariwise.  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, one by one,  
Had read the letters and the love they held,  
And, that task finished, had required his soul  
To answer frankly what the prospect seemed  
Of his own love's departure — pledged to part!  
Then, answer being unmistakable,  
He had replaced the letters quietly,  
Shut coffer, and so, grasping either side  
By its convenient handle, plunged the whole —  
Letters and coffer and both hands to boot —  
Into the burning grate and held them there.  
"Burn, burn, and purify my past!" said he,  
Calmly, as if he felt no pain at all.

In vain they pulled him from the torture-place:  
The strong man, with the soul of tenfold  
strength,  
Broke from their clutch: and there again  
smiled he,  
The miserable hands re-bathed in fire —  
Constant to that ejaculation, "Burn,  
Burn, purify!" And when, combining force,  
They fairly dragged the victim out of reach  
Of further harm, he had no hands to hurt —  
Two horrible remains of right and left,  
"Whereof the bones, phalanges formerly,  
Carbonized, were still crackling with the  
flame."  
Said Beaumont. And he fought them all the  
while:  
"Why am I hindered when I would be pure?  
Why leave the sacrifice still incomplete?  
She holds me, I must have more hands to  
burn!"  
They were the stronger, though, and bound  
him fast.

Beaumont was in attendance presently.  
"What did I tell you? Preachment to the  
deaf!  
I wish he had been deafer when they preached,  
Those priests! But wait till next Republic  
comes!"

As for Léonce, a single sentiment  
Possessed his soul and occupied his tongue —  
Absolute satisfaction at the deed.  
Never he varied, 't is observable,  
Nor in the stage of agonies (which proved  
Absent without leave, — science seemed to  
think),  
Nor yet in those three months' febricity  
Which followed, — never did he vary tale —  
Remaining happy beyond utterance.  
"Ineffable beatitude" — I quote  
The words, I cannot give the smile — "such  
bliss  
Abolished pain! Pain might or might not be:  
He felt in heaven, where flesh desists to fret.

Purified now and henceforth, all the past  
Reduced to ashes with the flesh defiled!  
Why all those anxious faces round his bed?  
What was to pity in their patient, pray,  
When doctor came and went, and Cousins  
watched?  
— Kindness, but in pure waste!" he said and  
smiled.

And if a trouble would at times disturb  
The ambrosial mood, it came from other source  
Than the corporeal transitory pang.  
"If sacrifice be incomplete!" cried he —  
"If ashes have not sunk reduced to dust,  
To nullity! If atoms coalesce  
Till something grow, grow, get to be a shape  
I hate, I hoped to burn away from me!  
She is my body, she and I are one,  
Yet, all the same, there, there at bedfoot stands  
The woman wound about my flesh and blood,  
There, the arms open, the more wonderful,  
The whiter for the burning . . . Vanish thou!  
Avaunt, fiend's self found in the form I wore!"

"Whereat," said Beaumont, "since his hands  
were gone,  
The patient in a frenzy kicked and kicked  
To keep off some imagined visitant.  
So will it prove as long as priests may preach  
Spiritual terrors!" groaned the evidence  
Of Beaumont that his patient was stark mad —  
Produced in time and place: of which anon.  
"Mad, or why thus insensible to pain?  
Body and soul are one thing, with two names  
For more or less elaborated stuff."

Such is the new *Religio Medici*.  
Though antiquated faith held otherwise,  
Explained that body is not soul, but just  
Soul's servant: that, if soul be satisfied,  
Possess already joy or pain enough,  
It uses to ignore, as master may,  
What increase, joy or pain, its servant brings —  
Superfluous contribution: soul, once served,  
Has naught to do with body's service more.  
Each, speculated on exclusively,  
As if its office were the only one,  
Body or soul, either shows service paid  
In joy and pain, that's blind and objectless —  
A servant's toiling for no master's good —  
Or else shows good received and put to use,  
As if within soul's self grew joy and pain,  
Nor needed body for a ministrant.  
I note these old unscientific ways:  
Poor Beaumont cannot: for the Commune  
ruled  
Next year, and ere they shot his priests, shot  
him.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda raved himself  
To rest; lay three long months in bliss or bale,  
Inactive, anyhow: more need that heirs,  
His natural protectors, should assume  
The management, bestir their cousinship,  
And carry out that purpose of reform  
Such tragic work now made imperative.  
A deputation, with austerity,  
Nay, sternness, bore her sentence to the fiend  
Aforesaid, — she at watch for turn of wheel

And fortune's favor, Street — you know the name.

A certain roughness seemed appropriate :  
"You —

Steiner, Muhlhausen, whatsoever your name,  
Cause whole and sole of this catastrophe ! " —  
And so forth, introduced the embassy.

"Monsieur Léonce Miranda was divorced  
Once and forever from his — ugly word.  
Himself had gone for good to Portugal ;  
They came empowered to act and stipulate.  
Hold ! no discussion ! Terms were settled now :  
So much of present and prospective pay,  
But also — good engagement in plain terms  
She never seek renewal of the past ! "

This little harmless tale produced effect.  
Madame Muhlhausen owned her sentence just,  
Its execution gentle. " Stern their phrase,  
These kinsfolk with a right she recognized —  
But kind its import probably, which now  
Her agitation, her bewilderment,  
Rendered too hard to understand, perhaps.  
Let them accord the natural delay,  
And she would ponder and decide. Meantime,  
So far was she from wish to follow friend  
Who fled her, that she would not budge from  
place —

Now that her friend was fled to Portugal, —  
Never ! *She* leave this Coliseum Street ?  
No, not a footstep ! " she assured them.

So —

They saw they might have left that tale untold  
When, after some weeks more were gone to  
waste,

Recovery seemed incontestable,  
And the poor mutilated figure, once  
The gay and glancing fortunate young spark,  
Miranda, humble and obedient took  
The doctor's counsel, issued sad and slow  
From precincts of the sick-room, tottered down,  
And out, and into carriage for fresh air,  
And so drove straight to Coliseum Street,  
And tottered upstairs, knocked, and in a trice  
Was clasped in the embrace of whom you  
know —

With much asseveration, I omit,  
Of constancy henceforth till life should end.  
When all this happened, — " What reward,"  
cried she,

" For judging her Miranda by herself !  
For never having entertained a thought  
Of breaking promise, leaving home forsooth,  
To follow who was fled to Portugal !  
As if she thought they spoke a word of truth !  
She knew what love was, knew that he loved  
her ;

The Cousinry knew nothing of the kind. "

I will not scandalize you and recount  
How matters made the morning pass away.  
Not one reproach, not one acknowledgment,  
One explanation : all was understood !  
Matters at end, the home-uneasiness  
Cousins were feeling at this jaunt prolonged  
Was ended also by the entry of —

Not simply him whose exit had been made  
By mild command of doctor " Out with you !  
I warrant we receive another man ! "  
But — would that I could say, the married pair !  
And, quite another man assuredly,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda took on him  
Forthwith to bid the trio, priest and nuns,  
Constant in their attendance all this while,  
Take his thanks and their own departure too ;  
Politely but emphatically. Next,  
The Cousins were dismissed : " No protest,  
pray !

Whatever I engaged to do is done,  
Or shall be — I but follow your advice :  
Love I abjure : the lady, you behold,  
Is changed as I myself : her sex is changed :  
This is my Brother — He will tend me now,  
Be all my world henceforth as brother should.  
Gentlemen, of a kinship I revere,  
Your interest in trade is laudable ;  
I purpose to indulge it : manage mine,  
My goldsmith-business in the Place Vendôme,  
Wholly — through purchase at the price ad  
judged

By experts I shall have assistance from.  
If, in conformity with sage advice,  
I leave a busy world of interests  
I own myself unfit for — yours the care  
That any world of other aims, wherein  
I hope to dwell, be easy of access  
Through ministration of the moneys due,  
As we determine, with all proper speed,  
Since I leave Paris to repair my health,  
Say farewell to our Cousins, Brother mine ! "

And, all submissiveness, as brother might,  
The lady curtsied gracefully, and dropt  
More than mere curtsy, a concluding phrase  
So silver-soft, yet penetrative too,  
That none of it escaped the favored ears :  
" Had I but credited one syllable,  
I should to-day be lying stretched on straw,  
The produce of your miserable *rente* !  
Whereas, I hold him — do you comprehend ? "  
Cousin regarded cousin, turned up eye,  
And took departure, as our Tuscans laugh,  
Each with his added palm-breadth of long  
nose, —

Curtailed but imperceptibly, next week,  
When transfer was accomplished, and the trade  
In Paris did indeed become their own,  
But bought by them and sold by him on terms  
'Twixt man and man, — might serve 'twixt  
wolf and wolf,  
Substitute " bit and clawed " for " signed and  
sealed " —

Our ordinary business-terms, in short,  
Another week, and Clairvaux broke in bloom  
At end of April, to receive again  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda, gentleman,  
Ex-jeweller and goldsmith : never more —  
According to the purpose he professed —  
To quit this paradise, his property,  
This Clara, his companion : so it proved.

The Cousins, each with elongated nose,  
Discussed their bargain, reconciled them soon  
To hard necessity, disbursed the cash,



And hastened to subjoin, wherever type  
Proclaimed "Miranda" to the public, "Called  
Now Firm-Miranda." There, a colony,  
They flourish underneath the name that still  
Maintains the old repute, I understand.  
They built their Clairvaux, dream-Château, in  
Spain,

Perhaps — but Place Vendôme is waking  
worth :

Oh, they lost little ! — only, man and man  
Hardly conclude transactions of the kind  
As cousin think with cousin, — cousins think.  
For the rest, all was honorably done,  
So, ere buds break to blossom, let us breathe !  
Never suppose there was one particle  
Of recrudescence — wound, half-healed before,  
Set freshly running — sin, repressed as such,  
New loosened as necessity of life !  
In all this revocation and resolve,  
Far be sin's self-indulgence from your thought !  
The man had simply made discovery,  
By process I respect if not admire,  
That what was, was : — that turf, his feet had  
touched,

Felt solid just as much as yonder towers  
He saw with eyes, but did not stand upon,  
And could not, if he would, reach in a leap.  
People had told him flowery turf was false  
To footstep, tired the traveller soon, beside :  
That was untrue. They told him "One fair  
stride

Plants on safe platform, and secures man rest."  
That was untrue. Some varied the advice :  
"Neither was solid, towers no more than  
turf :

Double assertion, therefore twice as false,  
"I like these amateurs" — our friend had  
laughed,

Could he turn what he felt to what he thought,  
And, that again, to what he put in words :  
"I like their pretty trial, proof of paste  
Or precious stone, by delicate approach  
Of eye askance, fine feel of finger-tip,  
Or touch of tongue inquisitive for cold.  
I tried my jewels in a crucible :  
Fierce fire has felt them, licked them, left  
them sound.

Don't tell me that my earthly love is sham,  
My heavenly fear a clever counterfeit !  
Each may oppose each, yet be true alike ! "

To build up, independent of the towers,  
A durable pavilion o'er the turf,  
Had issued in disaster. "What remained  
Except, by tunnel, or else gallery,  
To keep communication 'twixt the two,  
Unite the opposites, both near and far,  
And never try complete abandonment  
(Of one or other ? " so he thought, not said.  
And to such engineering feat, I say,  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda saw the means  
Precisely in this revocation prompt  
Of just those benefits of worldly wealth  
Conferred upon his Cousinry — all but !

This Clairvaux — you would know, were you  
at top

O' yonder crowning grace, its Belvedere —

Is situate in one angle-niche of three,  
At equidistance from Saint-Rambert — there  
Behind you, and The Ravissante, beside —  
There : steeple, steeple, and this Clairvaux-top  
(A sort of steeple) constitute a trine,  
With not a tenement to break each side,  
Two miles or so in length, if eye can judge.

Now this is native land of miracle.

Oh, why, why, why, from all recorded time,  
Was miracle not wrought once, only once,  
To help whoever wanted help indeed ?  
If on the day when Spring's green girlishness  
Grew nubile, and she trembled into May,  
And our Miranda climbed to clasp the Spring  
A-tiptoe o'er the sea, those wafts of warmth,  
Those cloudlets scudding under the bare blue,  
And all that new sun, that fresh hope about  
His airy place of observation, — friend,  
Feel with me that if just then, just for once,  
Some angel, — such as the authentic pen  
Yonder records a daily visitant  
Of ploughman Claude, rheumatic in the joints,  
And spinster Jeanne, with megrim troubled  
sore, —

If such an angel, with naught else to do,  
Had taken station on the pinnacle  
And simply said, "Léonce, look straight be-  
fore !

Neither to right hand nor to left : for why ?  
Being a stupid soul, you want a guide  
To turn the goodness in you to account  
And make stupidity submit itself.  
Go to Saint-Rambert ! Straightway get such  
guide !

There stands a man of men. You, jeweller,  
Must needs have heard how once the biggest  
block

Of diamond now in Europe lay exposed  
'Mid specimens of stone and earth and ore,  
On huckster's stall, — Navona names the  
Square,

And Rome the city for the incident, —  
Labelled ' quartz-crystal, price one halfpenny.'  
Haste and secure that ha'p'worth, on your  
life !

That man will read you rightly head to foot,  
Mark the brown face of you, the bushy beard,  
The breadth 'twixt shoulderblades, and through  
each black

Castilian orbit, see into your soul.  
Talk to him for five minutes — nonsense, sense,  
No matter what — describe your horse, your  
hound, —

Give your opinion of the policy  
Of Monsieur Rouher, — will he succor Rome ?  
Your estimate of what may outcome be  
From (Ecumenical Assemblage there !  
After which samples of intelligence,  
Rapidly run through those events you call  
Your past life, tell what once you tried to do,  
What you intend on doing this next May !  
There he stands, reads an English newspaper,  
Stock-still, and now, again upon the move.  
Paces the beach to taste the Spring, like you,  
Since both are human beings in God's eye.  
He will have understood you, I engage.  
Endeavor, for your part, to understand

He knows more, and loves better, than the world

That never heard his name, and never may.  
He will have recognized, ere breath be spent  
And speech at end, how much that's good in man,

And generous, and self-devoting, makes  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda worth his help ;  
While sounding to the bottom ignorance  
Historical and philosophical

And moral and religious, all one couch  
Of crassitude, a portent of its kind.  
Then, just as he would pityingly teach  
Your body to repair maltreatment, give  
Advice that you should make those stumps to stir

With artificial hands of caoutchouc,  
So would he soon supply your crippled soul  
With crutches, from his own intelligence,  
Able to help you onward in the path  
Of rectitude whereto your face is set,  
And counsel justice — to yourself, the first,  
To your associate, very like a wife  
Or something better, — to the world at large,  
Friends, strangers, horses, hounds, and Cousinry —

All which amount of justice will include  
Justice to God. Go and consult his voice !"  
Since angel would not say this simple truth,  
What hinders that my heart relieve itself,  
Milsand, who maketh warm my wintry world,  
And wise my heaven, if there we consort too ?  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda turned, alas,  
Or was turned, by no angel, t' other way,  
And got him guidance of The Ravissante.

Now, into the originals of faith,  
Yours, mine, Miranda's, no inquiry here !  
Of faith, as apprehended by mankind,  
The causes, were they caught and catalogued,  
Would too distract, too desperately foil  
Inquirer. How may analyst reduce  
Quantities to exact their opposites,  
Value to zero, then bring zero back  
To value of supreme preponderance ?  
How substitute thing meant for thing expressed ?

Detect the wire-thread through that fluffy silk  
Men call their rope, their real compulsive power ?

Suppose effected such anatomy,  
And demonstration made of what belief  
Has moved believer — were the consequence  
Reward at all ? would each man straight deduce,

From proved reality of cause, effect  
Conformable — believe and unbelieve  
According to your True thus disengaged  
From all his heap of False called reason first ?

No : hand once used to hold a soft thick twist,  
Cannot now grope its way by wire alone :  
Childhood may catch the knack, scarce Youth,  
not Age !

That's the reply rewards you. Just as well  
Remonstrate to yon peasant in the blouse  
That, had he justified the true intent  
Of Nature who composed him thus and thus,

Weakly or strongly, here he would not stand  
Struggling with uncongenial earth and sky,  
But elsewhere tread the surface of the globe,  
Since one meridian suits the faulty lungs,  
Another bids the sluggish liver work.

"Here I was born, for better or for worse :  
I did not choose a climate for myself ;  
Admit, my life were healthy, led elsewhere,"  
(He answers,) "how am I to migrate, pray ?"

Therefore the course to take is — spare your pains,

And trouble uselessly with discontent  
Nor soul nor body, by parading proof  
That neither haply had known ailment, placed  
Precisely where the circumstance forbade  
Their lot should fall to either of the pair.  
But try and, what you find wrong, remedy,  
Accepting the conditions : never ask

"How came you to be born here with those lungs,

That liver ?" But bid asthma smoke a pipe,  
Stramonium, just as if no Tropics were,  
And ply with calomel the sluggish duet,  
Nor taunt "The born Norwegian breeds no bile !"

And as with body, so proceed with soul :  
Nor less discerningly, where faith you found,  
However foolish and fantastic, grudge  
To play the doctor and amend mistake,  
Because a wisdom were conceivable  
Whence faith had sprung robust above disease.  
Far beyond human help, that source of things !  
Since, in the first stage, so to speak, — first stare

Of apprehension at the invisible, —  
Begins divergency of mind from mind,  
Superior from inferior : leave this first !  
Little you change there ! What comes after-ward —

From apprehended thing, each inference  
With practicality concerning life,  
This you may test and try, confirm the right  
Or contravene the wrong which reasons there.  
The offspring of the sickly faith must prove  
Sickly act also : stop a monster-birth !  
When water's in the cup, and not the cloud,  
Then is the proper time for chemic test :  
Belief permits your skill to operate  
When, drop by drop condensed from misty heaven,

'T is wrung out, lies a bowl-full in the fleece.  
How dew by spoonfuls came, let Gideon say :  
What purpose water serves, your word or two  
May teach him, should he fancy it lights fire.

Concerning, then, our vaporous Ravissante —  
How fable first precipitated faith —

Silence you get upon such point from me.  
But when I see come posting to the pair  
At Clairvaux, for the cure of soul-disease,  
This Father of the Mission, Parish-priest,  
This Mother of the Convent, Nun I know —  
They practise in that second stage of things ;  
They boast no fresh distillery of faith ;  
'T is dogma in the bottle, bright and old,  
They bring ; and I pretend to pharmacy.  
They undertake the cure with all my heart !

He trusts them, and they surely trust themselves.

I ask no better. Never mind the cause,

*Fons et origo* of the malady:

Apply the drug with courage! Here's our case.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda asks of God,

— May a man, living in illicit tie,

Continue, by connivance of the Church,

No matter what amends he please to make

Short of forthwith relinquishing the sin?

Physicians, what do you propose for cure?

Father and Mother of The Ravissante,

Read your own records, and you find prescribed

As follows, when a couple out of sorts

Rather than gravely suffering, sought your skill

And thereby got their health again. Perpend!

Two and a half good centuries ago,

Luc de la Maison Rouge, a nobleman

Of Claise, (the river gives this country name,) —

And, just as noblewoman, Maude his wife,

Having been married many happy years

Spent in God's honor and man's service too,

Conceived, while yet in flower of youth and hope,

The project of departing each from each

Forever, and dissolving marriage-bonds

That both might enter a religious life.

Needing, before they came to such resolve,

Divine illumination, — course was clear, —

They visited your church in pilgrimage,

On Christmas morn: communicating straight,

They heard three Masses proper for the day,

"It is incredible with what effect" —

Quoth the Cistercian monk I copy from —

And, next day, came, again communicants,

Again heard Masses manifold, but now

With added thanks to Christ for special grace

And consolation granted: in the night,

Had been divorce from marriage, manifest

By signs and tokens. So, they made great gifts,

Left money for more Masses, and returned

Homeward rejoicing — he, to take the rules,

As Brother Dionysius, Capucin!

She, to become first postulant, then nun

According to the rules of Benedict,

Sister Scolastica: so ended they,

And so do I — not end nor yet commence

One note or comment. What was done was done.

Now, Father of the Mission, here's your case!

And, Mother of the Convent, here's its cure!

If separation was permissible,

And that decree of Christ "What God hath joined

Let no man put asunder" nullified

Because a couple, blameless in the world,

Had the conceit that, still more blamelessly,

Out of the world, by breach of marriage-vow,

Their life was like to pass, — you oracles

Of God, — since holy Paul says such you are, —

Hesitate, not one moment, to pronounce

When questioned by the pair now needing help,

"Each from the other go, you guilty ones,

Preliminary to your least approach

Nearer the Power that thus could strain a point

In favor of a pair of innocents

Who thought their wedded hands not clean enough

To touch and leave unsullied their souls' snow!

Are not your hands found filthy by the world,

Mere human law and custom? Not a step

Nearer till hands be washed and purified!"

What they did say is immaterial, since

Certainly it was nothing of the kind.

There was no washing hands of him (alack,

You take me? — in the figurative sense!)

But, somehow, gloves were drawn o'er dirt and all,

And practice with the Church procured thereby.

Seeing that, — all remonstrance proved in vain,

Persuasives tried and terrors put to use,

I nowise question, — still the guilty pair

Only embraced the closelier, obstinate, —

Father and Mother went from Clairvaux back

Their weary way, with heaviness of heart,

I grant you, but each palm well crossed with coin,

And nothing like a smutch perceptible.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda might compound

For sin? — no, surely! but by gifts — prepare

His soul the better for contrition, say!

Gift followed upon gift, at all events.

Good counsel was rejected, on one part:

Hard money, on the other — may we hope

Was unreflectingly consigned to purse?

Two years did this experiment engage

Monsieur Léonce Miranda: how, by gifts

To God and to God's poor, a man might stay

In sin and yet stave off sin's punishment.

No salve could be conceived more nicely mixed

For this man's nature: generosity, —

Susceptibility to human ills,

Corporeal, mental, — self-devotedness

Made up Miranda — whether strong or weak

Elsewhere, may be inquired another time.

In mercy he was strong, at all events.

Enough! he could not see a beast in pain,

Much less a man, without the will to aid;

And where the will was, oft the means were too,

Since that good bargain with the Cousinry.

The news flew fast about the countryside

That, with the kind man, it was ask and have;

And ask and have they did. To instance you: —

A mob of beggars at The Ravissante

Clung to his skirts one day, and cried "We thirst!"

Forthwith he bade a cask of wine be broached

To satisfy all comers, till, dead-drunk

So satisfied, they strewed the holy place.

For this was grown religious and a rite:

Such slips of judgment, gifts irregular,

Showed but as spillings of the golden grist

On either side the hopper, through blind zeal;

Steadily the main stream went pouring on



From mill to mouth of sack — held wide and close

By Father of the Mission, Parish-priest,  
And Mother of the Convent, Nun I know,  
With such effect that, in the sequel, proof  
Was tendered to the Court at Vire, last month,  
That in these same two years, expenditure  
At quiet Clairvaux rose to the amount  
Of Forty Thousand English Pounds: whereof  
A trifle went, no inappropriate close  
Of bounty, to supply the Virgin's crown  
With that stupendous jewel from New York,  
Now blazing as befits the Star of Sea.

Such signs of grace, outward and visible,  
I rather give you, for your sake and mine,  
Than put in evidence the inward strife,  
Spiritual effort to compound for fault  
By payment of devotion — thank the phrase!  
That payment was as punctual, do not doubt,  
As its far easier fellow. Yesterday  
I trudged the distance from The Ravissante  
To Clairvaux, with my two feet: but our friend,  
The more to edify the country-folk,  
Was wont to make that journey on both knees.  
"Maliciously perverted incident!"

Snarled the retort, when this was told at Vire:  
"The man paid mere devotion as he passed,  
Kneelt decently at just each wayside shrine!"

Alas, my lawyer, I trudged yesterday —  
On my two feet, and with both eyes wide ope, —  
The distance, and could find no shrine at all!

According to his lights, I praise the man.  
Enough! incessant was devotion, say —  
With her, you know of, praying at his side.

Still, there be relaxations of the tense:  
Or life indemnifies itself for strain,  
Or finds its very strain grow feebleness.

Monsieur Léonce Miranda's days were passed  
Much as of old, in simple work and play.  
His first endeavor, on recovery

From that sad ineffectual sacrifice,  
Had been to set about repairing loss:  
Never admitting, loss was to repair.

No word at any time escaped his lips  
— Betrayed a lurking presence, in his heart,  
Of sorrow; no regret for mischief done —

Punishment suffered, he would rather say,  
Good-tempered schoolboy-fashion, he preferred  
To laugh away his flogging, fair price paid

For pleasure out of bounds: if needs must be,  
Get pleasure and get flogged a second time!  
A sullen subject would have nursed the scars

And made excuse, for throwing grammar by,  
That bench was grown uneasy to the seat.  
No: this poor fellow cheerfully got hands

Fit for his stumps, and what hands failed to do,  
The other members did in their degree —  
Unwonted service. With his mouth alone

He wrote, nay, painted pictures — think of that!  
He played on a piano pedal-keyed,  
Kicked out — if it was Bach's — good music

thence.  
He rode, that's readily conceivable.  
But then he shot and never missed his bird,

With other feats as dexterous: I infer  
He was not ignorant what hands are worth,  
When he resolved on ruining his own.

So the two years passed somehow — who shall say

Foolishly, — as one estimates mankind,  
The work they do, the play they leave un-  
done? —

Two whole years spent in that experiment  
I told you of, at Clairvaux all the time,  
From April on to April: why that month

More than another, notable in life?  
Does the awakening of the year arouse  
Man to new projects, nerve him for fresh feats

Of what proves, for the most part of mankind  
Playing or working, novel folly too?  
At any rate, I see no slightest sign

Of folly (let me tell you in advance),  
Nothing but wisdom meets me manifest  
In the procedure of the Twentieth Day

Of April, 'Seventy, — folly's year in France.

It was delightful Spring, and out of doors  
Temptation to adventure. Walk or ride?  
There was a wild young horse to exercise,

And teach the way to go, and pace to keep:  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda chose to ride.  
So, while they clapped soft saddle straight on

back,  
And bitted jaw to satisfaction, — since  
The partner of his days must stay at home,

Teased by some trifling legacy of March  
To throat or shoulder, — visit duly paid  
And "farewell" given and received again, —

As chamber-door considerably closed  
Behind him, still five minutes were to spend.  
How better, than by clearing, two and two,

The staircase-steps and coming out aloft  
Upon the platform yonder (raise your eyes!)  
And tasting, just as those two years before,

Spring's bright advance upon the tower a-top,  
The feature of the front, the Belvedere?

Look at it for a moment while I breathe.

#### IV

Ready to hear the rest? How good you are!

Now for this Twentieth splendid day of Spring.  
All in a tale, — sun, wind, sky, earth and sea, —  
To bid man, "Up, be doing!" Mount the stair,

Monsieur Léonce Miranda mounts so brisk,  
And look — ere his elastic foot arrive —  
Your longest, far and wide, o'er fronting space.

Yon white streak — Havre lighthouse! Name  
and name,  
How the mind runs from each to each relay,

Town after town, till Paris' self be touched,  
Superlatively big with life and death  
To all the world, that very day perhaps!

He who stepped out upon the platform here,  
Pinnacled over the expanse, gave thought  
Neither to Rouher nor Ollivier, Roon

Nor Bismarck, Emperor nor King, but just  
To steeple, church, and shrine, The Ravissante!

He saw Her, whom myself saw, but when Spring  
Was passing into Fall: not robed and crowned  
As, thanks to him, and her you know about,

She stands at present ; but She smiled the same.  
Thither he turned — to never turn away.

He thought . . .

(Suppose I should prefer "He said" ?  
Along with every act — and speech is act —  
There go, a multitude impalpable  
To ordinary human faculty,  
The thoughts which give the act significance.  
Who is a poet needs must apprehend  
Alike both speech and thoughts which prompt  
to speak.  
Part these, and thought withdraws to poetry :  
Speech is reported in the newspaper.)

He said, then, probably no word at all,  
But thought as follows — in a minute's space —  
One particle of ore beats out such leaf !

"This Spring-morn I am forty-three years old :  
In prime of life, perfection of estate  
Bodily, mental, nay, material too, —  
My whole of worldly fortunes reach their height.  
Body and soul alike on eminence :  
It is not probable I ever raise  
Soul above standard by increase of worth,  
Nor reasonably may expect to lift  
Body beyond the present altitude.

"Behold me, Lady called The Ravissante !  
Such as I am, I — gave myself to you  
So long since, that I cannot say 'I give.'  
All my belongings, what is summed in life,  
I have submitted wholly — as man might,  
At least, as I might, who am weak, not strong, —  
Wholly, then, to your rule and governance,  
So far as I had strength. My weakness was —  
I felt a fascination, at each point  
And pore of me, a Power as absolute  
Claiming that soul should recognize her sway.  
Oh, you were no whit clearer Queen, I see,  
Throughout the life that rolls out ribbon-like  
Its shot-silk length behind me, than the strange  
Mystery — how shall I denominate  
The unrobed One ? Robed you go and crowned  
as well,

Named by the nations : she is hard to name,  
Though you have spelt out certain characters  
Obscure upon what fillet binds her brow,  
*Lust of the flesh, lust of the eye, life's pride.*  
'So call her, and condemn the enchantress !' —  
Crush

The despot, and recover liberty !'  
Cried despot and enchantress at each ear.  
You were conspicuous and pre-eminent,  
Authoritative and imperial, — you  
Spoke first, claimed homage : did I hesitate ?  
Born for no mastery, but servitude,  
Men cannot serve two masters, says the Book ;  
Master should measure strength with master,  
then,

Before on servant is imposed a task.  
You spoke first, promised best, and threatened  
most ;

The other never threatened, promised, spoke  
A single word, but, when your part was done,  
Lifted a finger, and I, prostrate, knew

Films were about me, though you stood aloof  
Smiling or frowning 'Where is power like mine  
To punish or reward thee ? Rise, thou fool !  
Will to be free, and, lo, I lift thee loose !'  
Did I not will, and could I rise a whit ?  
Lay I, at any time, content to lie ?  
'To lie, at all events, brings pleasure : make  
Amends by undemanded pain !' I said.  
Did not you prompt me ? 'Purchase now by  
pain

Pleasure hereafter in the world to come !'  
I could not pluck my heart out, as you bade :  
Unbidden, I burned off my hands at least.  
My soul retained its treasure ; but my purse  
Lightened itself with much alacrity.  
Well, where is the reward ? what promised  
fruit

Of sacrifice in peace, content ? what sense  
Of added strength to bear or to forbear ?  
What influx of new light assists me now  
Even to guess you recognize a gain  
In what was loss enough to mortal me ?  
But she, the less authoritative voice,  
Oh, how distinct enunciating, how  
Plain dealing ! Gain she gave was gain indeed !  
That, you deny : that, you contemptuous call  
Acorns, swine's food not man's meat ! 'Spurn  
the draff !'

Ay, but those life-tree apples I prefer,  
Am I to die of hunger till they drop ?  
Husks keep flesh from starvation, anyhow.  
Give those life-apples ! — one, worth woods of  
oak,

Worth acorns by the wagon-load, — one shoot  
Through heart and brain, assurance bright and  
brief

That you, my Lady, my own Ravissante,  
Feel, through my famine, served and satisfied,  
Own me, your starveling, soldier of a sort !  
Your soldier ! do I read my title clear  
Even to call myself your friend, not foe ?  
What is the pact between us but a truce ?  
At best I shall have staved off enmity,  
Obtained a respite, ransomed me from wrath.  
I pay, instalment by instalment, life,  
Earth's tribute-money, pleasures great and  
small,

Whereof should at the last one penny piece  
Fall short, the whole heap becomes forfeiture.  
You find in me deficient soldiership :  
Want the whole life or none. I grudge that  
whole,

Because I am not sure of recompense :  
Because I want faith. Whose fault ? I  
ask.

If insufficient faith have done thus much,  
Contributed thus much of sacrifice,  
More would move mountains, you are warrant.  
Well,

Grant, you, the grace, I give the gratitude !  
And what were easier ? 'Ask and have' folk  
call

Miranda's method : 'Have, nor need to ask !'  
So do they formulate your quality  
Superlative beyond my human grace.  
The Ravissante, you ravish men away  
From puny aches and petty pains, assuaged  
By man's own art with small expenditure

Of pill or potion, unless, put to shame,  
Nature is roused and sets things right herself.  
Your miracles are grown our commonplace;  
No day but pilgrim hobbles his last mile,  
Kneels down and rises up, flings crutch away,  
Or else appends it to the reverend heap  
Beneath you, votive cripple-carpentry.  
Some few meet failure — oh, they wanted faith,  
And may betake themselves to La Salette,  
Or seek Lourdes, so that hence the scandal  
limp!

The many get their grace and go their way  
Rejoicing, with a tale to tell, — most like,  
A staff to borrow, since the crutch is gone,  
Should the first telling happen at my house,  
And teller wet his whistle with my wine.  
I tell this to a doctor and he laughs:  
'Give me permission to cry — Out of bed,  
You loth rheumatic sluggard! Cheat you chair  
Of laziness, its gouty occupant! —  
You should see miracles performed! But now,  
I give advice, and take as fee ten francs,  
And do as much as does your Ravissante.  
Send her that case of cancer to be cured  
I have refused to treat for any fee,  
Bring back my would-be patient sound and  
whole,

And see me laugh on t'other side my mouth!'  
Can he be right, and are you hampered thus!  
Such pettiness restricts a miracle  
Wrought by the Great Physician, who hears  
prayer,

Visibly seated in your mother-lap!  
He, out of nothing, made sky, earth, and sea,  
And all that in them is, man, beast, bird, fish,  
Down to this insect on my parapet.  
Look how the marvel of a minin crawls!  
Were I to kneel among the halt and maimed,  
And pray 'Who mad'st the insect with ten  
legs,

Make me one finger grow where ten were  
once!

The very priests would thrust me out of church.  
'What folly does the madman dare expect?  
No faith obtains — in this late age, at least —  
Such cure as that! We ease rheumatics,  
though!'

"Ay, bring the early ages back again,  
What prodigy were unattainable?  
I read your annals. Here came Louis Onze,  
Gave thrice the sum he ever gave before  
At one time, some three hundred crowns, to  
wit —

On pilgrimage to pray for — health, he found?  
Did he? I do not read it in Commynes.  
Here sent poor joyous Marie-Antoinette  
To thank you that a Dauphin dignified  
Her motherhood — called Duke of Normandy  
And Martyr of the Temple, much the same  
As if no robe of hers had dressed you rich;  
No silver lamps, she gave, illumine your shrine!  
Here, following example, fifty years  
Ago, in gratitude for birth again  
Of yet another destined King of France,  
Did not the Duchess fashion with her hands,  
And frame in gold and crystal, and present  
A bouquet made of artificial flowers?

And was he King of France, and is not he  
Still Count of Chambord?

"Such the days of faith,  
And such their produce to encourage mine!  
What now, if I too count without my host?  
I too have given money, ornament,  
And 'artificial flowers' — which, when I  
plucked,  
Seemed rooting at my heart and real enough:  
What if I gain thereby nor health of mind,  
Nor youth renewed which perished in its prime,  
Burnt to a cinder 'twixt the red-hot bars,  
Nor gain to see my second baby-hope  
Of managing to live on terms with both  
Opposing potentates, the Power and you,  
Crowned with success? I dawdle out my days  
In exile here at Clairvaux, with mock love,  
That gives, while whispering 'Would I dared  
refuse!' —

What the loud voice declares my heart's free  
gift!

Mock worship, mock superiority  
O'er those I style the world's benighted ones,  
That irreligious sort I pity so,  
Dumas and even Hertford, who is Duke.

"Impiety? Not if I know myself!  
Not if you know the heart and soul I bare,  
I bid you cut, hack, slash, anatomize,  
Till peccant part be found and flung away!  
Demonstrate where I need more faith!

Describe  
What act shall evidence sufficiency  
Of faith, your warrant for such exercise  
Of power, in my behalf, as all the world,  
Except poor praying me, declares profuse?  
Poor me? It is that world, not me alone,  
That world which prates of fixed laws and the  
like,

I fain would save, poor world so ignorant!  
And your part were — what easy miracle?  
Oh, Lady, could I make your want like mine!"

Then his face grew one luminosity.

"Simple, sufficient! Happiness at height!  
I solve the riddle, I persuade mankind.  
I have been just the simpleton who stands —  
Summoned to claim his patrimonial rights —  
At shilly-shally, may he knock or no  
At his own door in his own house and home  
Whereof he holds the very title-deeds!  
Here is my title to this property,  
This power you hold for profit of myself  
And all the world at need — which need is  
now!

"My title — let me hear who controverts!  
Count Mailleville built yon church. Why did he  
so?  
Because he found your image. How came  
that?  
His shepherd told him that a certain sheep  
Was wont to scratch with hoof and scrape with  
horn  
At ground where once the Danes had razed a  
church.



Thither he went, and there he dug, and thence  
He disinterred the image he conveyed  
In pomp to Londres yonder, his domain.  
You liked the old place better than the new.  
The Count might surely have divined as much:  
He did not; some one might have spoke a  
word:

No one did. A mere dream had warned enough,  
That back again in pomp you best were borne:  
No dream warned, and no need of convoy was;  
An angel caught you up and clapped you  
down,—

No mighty task; you stand one metre high,  
And people carry you about at times.  
Why, then, did you despise the simple course?  
Because you are the Queen of Angels: when  
You front us in a picture, there flock they,  
Angels around you, here and everywhere.

"Therefore, to prove indubitable faith,  
Those angels that acknowledge your their queen,  
I summon them to bear me to your feet  
From Clairvaux through the air, an easy trip!  
Faith without flaw! I trust your potency,  
Benevolence, your will to save the world—  
By such a simplest of procedures, too!  
Not even by affording angel-help,  
Unless it please you: there's a simpler mode:  
Only suspend the law of gravity,  
And, while at back, permitted to propel,  
The air helps onward, let the air in front  
Cease to oppose my passage through the midst!

"Thus I bestride the railing, leg o'er leg,  
Thus, lo, I stand, a single inch away,  
At dizzy edge of death,—no touch of fear,  
As safe on tower above as turf below!  
Your smile enswathes me in beatitude,  
You lift along the votary—who vaults,  
Who, in the twinkling of an eye, revives,  
Dropt safely in the space before the church—  
How crowded, since this morn is market-day!  
I shall not need to speak. The news will run  
Like wild-fire. 'Thousands saw Miranda's  
flight!'

'T is telegraphed to Paris in a trice.  
The Boulevard is one buzz—'Do you believe?  
Well, this time, thousands saw Miranda's  
flight:

You know him, goldsmith in the Place Ven-  
dôme.'

In goes the Empress to the Emperor:  
'Now—will you hesitate to make disgorge  
Your wicked King of Italy his gains,  
Give the Legations to the Pope once more?'  
Which done,—why, grace goes back to oper-  
ate,

They themselves set a good example first,  
Resign the empire twenty years usurped,  
And Henry, the Desired One, reigns o'er  
France!

Regenerated France makes all things new!  
My house no longer stands on Quai Rousseau,  
But Quai rechristened Alacoque: a quai  
Where Renan burns his book, and Veuillot  
burns

Renan beside, since Veuillot rules the roast,  
Re-edits now indeed 'The Universe.'

O blessing, O superlatively big  
With blessedness beyond all blessing dreamed  
By man! for just that promise has effect,  
'Old things shall pass away and all be new!'  
Then, for a culminating mercy-feat,  
Wherefore should I dare dream impossible  
That I too have my portion in the change?  
My past with all its sorrow, sin and shame,  
Becomes a blank, a nothing! There she stands,  
Clara de Millefleurs, all deodorized,  
Twenty years' stain wiped off her innocence!  
There never was Muhlhausen, nor at all  
Duke Hertford: naught that was, remains, ex-  
cept

The beauty,—yes, the beauty is unchanged!  
Well, and the soul too, that must keep the  
same!

And so the trembling little virgin hand  
Melts into mine, that's back again, of course!  
—Think not I care about my poor old self!

I only want my hand for that one use,  
To take her hand, and say 'I marry you—  
Men, women, angels, you behold my wife!  
There is no secret, nothing wicked here,  
Nothing she does not wish the world to know!'  
None of your married women have the right  
To mutter 'Yes, indeed, she beats us all  
In beauty,—but our lives are pure at least!'  
Bear witness, for our marriage is no thing  
Done in a corner! 'T is The Ravissante  
Repairs the wrong of Paris. See, She smiles,  
She beckons, She bids 'Hither, both of you!'  
And may we kneel? And will you bless us  
both?

And may I worship you, and yet love her?  
Then!"—

A sublime spring from the balustrade  
About the tower so often talked about,  
A flash in middle air, and stone-dead lay  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda on the turf.

A gardener who watched, at work the while  
Dibbling a flower-bed for geranium-shoots,  
Saw the catastrophe, and, straightening back,  
Stood up and shook his brows. "Poor soul,  
poor soul,

Just what I prophesied the end would be!  
Ugh—the Red Night-cap!" (as he raised the  
head)

"This must be what he meant by those strange  
words

While I was weeding larkspurs, yesterday,  
'Angels would take him!' Mad!"

No! sane, I say.  
Such being the conditions of his life,  
Such end of life was not irrational.  
Hold a belief, you only half-believe,  
With all-momentous issues either way,—  
And I advise you imitate this leap.  
Put faith to proof, be cured or killed at once!  
Call you men, killed through cutting cancer  
out,

The worse for such an act of bravery?  
That's more than I know. In my estimate,  
Better lie prostrate on his turf at peace,  
Than, wistful, eye, from out the tent, the  
tower,

Racked with a doubt, "Will going on bare knees

All the way to The Ravissante and back,  
Saying my Ave Mary all the time,  
Somewhat excuse if I postpone my march?  
— Make due amends for that one kiss I gave  
In gratitude to her who held me out  
Superior Fricquot's sermon, hot from press,  
A-spread with hands so sinful yet so smooth?"

And now, sincerely do I pray she stand,  
Clara, with interposing sweep of robe,  
Between us and this horror! Any screen  
Turns white by contrast with the tragic pall;  
And her dubiety distracts at least,  
As well as snow, from such decided black.  
With womanhood, at least, we have to do:  
Ending with Clara — is the word too kind?

Let pass the shock! There's poignancy enough  
When what one parted with, a minute since,  
Alive and happy, is returned a wreck —  
All that was, all that seemed about to be,  
Razed out and ruined now forevermore,  
Because a straw descended on this scale  
Rather than that, made death o'erbalance life.  
But think of cage-mates in captivity,  
Inured to day-long, night-long vigilance  
Each of the other's tread and angry turn  
If behind prison bars the jailer knocked:  
These whom society shut out, and thus  
Penned in, to settle down and regulate  
By the strange law, the solitary life —  
When death divorces such a fellowship,  
Theirs may pair off with that prodigious woe  
Imagined of a ghastly brotherhood —  
One watcher left in lighthouse out at sea,  
With leagues of surf between the land and him,

Alive with his dead partner on the rock;  
One galley-slave, whom curse and blow compel

To labor on, ply oar — beside his chain,  
Encumbered with a corpse-companion now.  
Such these: although, no prisoners, self-entrenched,  
They kept the world off from their barricade.

Memory, gratitude, was poignant, sure,  
Though pride brought consolation of a kind.  
Twenty years long had Clara been — of whom  
The rival, nay, the victor, past dispute?  
What if in turn The Ravissante at length  
Proved victor — which was doubtful — anyhow,

Here lay the inconstant with, conspicuous too,  
The fruit of his good fortune!

"Has he gained  
By leaving me?" she might soliloquize:  
"All love could do, I did for him. I learned  
By heart his nature, what he loved and loathed.  
Leaned to with liking, turned from with distaste.

No matter what his least velleity,  
I was determined he should want no wish,  
And in conformity administered  
To his requirement; most of joy I mixed

With least of sorrow in life's daily draught,  
Twenty years long, life's proper average.  
And when he got to quarrel with my cup,  
Would needs out-sweeten honey, and discard  
That gall-drop we require lest nectar cloy, —  
I did not call him fool, and vex my friend,  
But quietly allowed experiment.  
Encouraged him to spice his drink, and now  
Grate *lignum vitae*, now bruise so-called grains  
Of Paradise, and pour now, for perfume,  
Distilment rare, the rose of Jericho,  
Holy-thorn, passion-flower, and what know I?  
Till beverage obtained the fancied smack.  
'T was wild-flower-wine that neither helped nor harmed

Who sipped and held it for restorative —  
What harm? But here has he been through the hedge

Straying in search of simples, while my back  
Was turned a minute, and he finds a prize,  
Monkshood and belladonna! O my child,  
My truant little boy, despite the beard,  
The body two feet broad and six feet long.  
And what the calendar counts middle age —  
You wanted, did you, to enjoy a flight?  
Why not have taken into confidence  
Me, that was mother to you? — never mind  
What mock disguise of mistress held you mine!  
Had you come laughing, crying, with request,  
'Make me fly, mother!' I had run upstairs  
And held you tight the while I danced you high

In air from tower-top, singing 'Off we go  
(On pilgrimage to Lourdes some day next month),

And swift we soar (to Rome with Peter-pence).  
And low we light (at Paris where we pick  
Another jewel from our store of stones  
And send it for a present to the Pope!)  
So, dropt indeed you were, but on my knees.  
Rolling and crowing, not a whit the worse  
For journey to your Ravissante and back.  
Now, no more Clairvaux — which I made you build,

And think an inspiration of your own —  
No more fine house, trim garden, pretty park,  
Nothing I used to busy you about,  
And make believe you worked for my surprise!

What weariness to me will work become  
Now that I need not seem surprised again!  
This boudoir, for example, with the doves  
(My stupid maid has damaged, dusting one)  
Embossed in stucco o'er the looking-glass  
Beside the toilet-table! dear — dear me!"

Here she looked up from her absorbing grief,  
And round her, crow-like grouped, the Cousinry,

(She grew aware) sat witnesses at watch.  
For, two days had elapsed since fate befell  
The courser in the meadow, stretched so stark.  
They did not cluster on the tree-tops, close  
Their sooty ranks, caw and confabulate  
For nothing: but, like calm determined crows,  
They came to take possession of their corpse.  
And who shall blame them? Had not they the right?

One spoke. "They would be gentle, not austere.

They understood, and were compassionate.

Madame Muhlhausen lay too abject now

For aught but the sincerest pity; still,  
Since plain speech salves the wound it seems to

make,  
They must speak plainly — circumstances

spoke!  
Sin had conceived and brought forth death in-

deed.  
As the commencement, so the close of things:

Just what might be expected all along!

Monsieur Léonce Miranda launched his youth

Into a cesspool of debauchery,  
And, if he thence emerged all dripping slime,  
— Where was the change except from thin to

thick,  
One warm rich mud-bath, Madame? — you, in

place  
Of Paris-drainage and distilment, you

He never needed budge from, boiled to rags!

True, some good instinct left the natural man,

Some touch of that deep dye wherewith imbued

By education, in his happier day,

The hopeful offspring of high parentage

Was fleece-marked moral and religious sheep, —

Some ruddle, faint reminder (we admit),

Stuck to Miranda, rubbed he ne'er so rude

Against the goatly coarseness: to the last,

Moral he styled himself, religious too!

Which means — what ineradicable good

You found, you never left till good's self proved

Perversion and distortion, nursed to growth

So monstrous, that the tree-stock, dead and

dry,  
Were seemlier far than such a heap grotesque

Of fungous flourishing excrescence. Here,

Sap-like affection, meant for family,

Stole off to feed one sucker fat — yourself;

While branchage, trained religiously aloft

To rear its head in reverence to the sun,

Was pulled down earthward, pegged and pick-

eted,  
By topiary contrivance, till the tree

Became an arbor where, at vulgar ease,

Sat superstition grinning through the loops.

Still, nature is too strong or else too weak

For cockney treatment: either, tree springs

back  
To pristine shape, or else degraded droops,

And turns to touchwood at the heart. So

here —

Body and mind, at last the man gave way.

His body — there it lies, what part was left

Unmutilated! for, the strife commenced

Two years ago, when, both hands burnt to ash,

— A branch broke loose, by loss of what choice

twigs!

As for his mind — behold our register

Of all its moods, from the incipient mad,

Nay, mere erratic, to the stark insane,

Absolute idiocy or what is worse!

All have we catalogued — extravagance

In worldly matters, luxury absurd,

And zeal as crazed in its expenditure

Of nonsense called devotion. Don't we know

— We Cousins, bound in duty to our kin, —

What mummeries were practised by you two

At Clairvaux? Not a servant got discharge

But came and told his grievance, testified

To acts which turn religion to a farce.

And as the private mock, so patent — see —

The public scandal! Ask the neighborhood —

Or rather, since we asked them long ago,

Read what they answer, depositions down,

Signed, sealed and sworn to! Brief, the man

was mad.

We are his heirs and claim our heritage.

Madame Muhlhausen, — whom good taste for-

bids

We qualify as do these documents, —

Fear not lest justice stifle mercy's prayer!

True, had you lent a willing ear at first,

Had you obeyed our call two years ago,

Restrained a certain insolence of eye,

A volubility of tongue, that time,

Your prospects had been none the worse, per-

haps.

Still, fear not but a decent competence

Shall smooth the way for your declining age!

What we propose, then" . . .

Clara dried her eyes,

Sat up, surveyed the consistory, spoke

After due pause, with something of a smile.

"Gentlemen, kinsfolk of my friend defunct,

In thus addressing me — of all the world! —

You much misapprehend what part I play.

I claim no property you speak about.

You might as well address the park-keeper,

Harangue him on some plan advisable

For covering the park with cottage-plots.

He is the servant, no proprietor,

His business is to see the sward kept trim,

Untrespassed over by the indiscreet:

Beyond that, he refers you to myself —

Another servant of another kind —

Who again — quite as limited in act —

Refer you, with your projects, — can I else?

To who in mastery is ultimate,

The Church. The Church is sole administrant,

Since sole possessor of what worldly wealth

Monsieur Léonce Miranda late possessed.

Often enough has he attempted, nay,

Forced me, wellnigh, to occupy the post

You seemingly suppose I fill, — receive

As gift the wealth intrusted me as grace.

This — for quite other reasons than appear

So cogent to your perspicacity —

This I refused; and, firm as you could wish,

Still was my answer, 'We two understand

Each one the other. I am intimate

— As how can be mere fools and knaves — or,

say,

Even your Cousins? — with your love to me,

Devotion to the Church. Would Providence

Appoint, and make me certain of the same,

That I survive you (which is little like,

Seeing you hardly overpass my age

And more than match me in abundant health)

In such case, certainly I would accept

Your bounty: better I than alien hearts

Should execute your planned benevolence

To man, your proposed largess to the Church,



But though I be survivor, — weakly frame,  
 With only woman's wit to make amends, —  
 When I shall die, or while I am alive,  
 Cannot you figure me an easy mark  
 For hypocritical rapacity,  
 Kith, kin and generation, crouching low,  
 Ever on the alert to pounce on prey?  
 Far be it I should say they profited  
 By that first frenzy-fit themselves induced, —  
 Cold-blooded scenical buffoons at sport  
 With horror and damnation o'er a grave:  
 That were too shocking — I absolve them  
 there!

Nor did they seize the moment of your swoon  
 To rifle pocket, wring a paper thence,  
 Their Cousinly dictation, and enrich  
 Thereby each mother's son as heart could wish,  
 Had nobody supplied a codicil.

But when the pain, poor friend! had prostrated  
 Your body, though your soul was right once  
 more,

I fear they turned your weakness to account!  
 Why else to me, who agonizing watched,  
 Sneak, cap in hand, now bribe me to forsake  
 My maimed Léonce, now bully, cap on head,  
 The impudent pretension to assuage  
 Such sorrows as demanded Cousins' care? —  
 For you rejected, hated, fled me, far  
 In foreign lands you laughed at me! — they  
 judged.

And, think you, will the unkind one hesitate  
 To try conclusions with my helplessness, —  
 To pounce on and misuse your derelict,  
 Helped by advantage that bereavement lends  
 Folk, who, while yet you lived, played tricks  
 like these?

You only have to die, and they detect,  
 In all you said and did, insanity!  
 Your faith was fetish-worship, your regard  
 For Christ's prime precept which endows the  
 poor

And strips the rich, a craze from first to last!  
 They so would limn your likeness, paint your  
 life,

That if it ended by some accident, —  
 For instance, if, attempting to arrange  
 The plants below that dangerous Belvedere  
 I cannot warn you from sufficiently.  
 You lost your balance and fell headlong — fine  
 Occasion, such, for crying *Suicide*!

*Non compos mentis*, naturally next,  
 Hands over Clairvaux to a Cousin-tribe  
 Who nor like me nor love The Ravissante:  
 Therefore be ruled by both! Life-interest  
 In Clairvaux, — conservation, guardianship  
 Of earthly good for heavenly purpose, — give  
 Such and no other proof of confidence!  
 Let Clara represent The Ravissante!  
 — To whom accordingly, he then and there  
 Bequeathed each stick and stone, by testament  
 In holograph, mouth managing the quill:  
 Go, see the same in Londres, if you doubt!"

Then smile grew laugh, as sudden up she stood  
 And out she spoke: intemperate the speech!

"And now, sirs, for your special courtesy,  
 Your candle held up to the character

Of Lucie Steiner, whom you qualify  
 As coming short of perfect womanhood.  
 Yes, kindly critics, truth for once you tell!  
 True is it that through childhood, poverty,  
 Sloth, pressure of temptation, I succumbed,  
 And, ere I found what honor meant, lost mine.  
 So was the sheep lost, which the Shepherd  
 found

And never lost again. My friend found me;  
 Or better say, the Shepherd found us both —  
 Since he, my friend, was much in the same mire  
 When first we made acquaintance. Each  
 helped each, —

A twofold extrication from the slough;  
 And, saving me, he saved himself. Since then,  
 Unsmirched we kept our cleanliness of coat.  
 It is his perfect constancy, you call  
 My friend's main fault — he never left his  
 love!

While as for me, I dare your worst, impute  
 One breach of loving bond, these twenty years,  
 To me whom only cobwebs bound, you count!  
 'He was religiously disposed in youth!'

That may be, though we did not meet at  
 church.

Under my teaching did he, like you scamps,  
 Become Voltairian — fools who mock his  
 faith?

'Infirm of body!' I am silent there:  
 Even yourselves acknowledge service done,  
 Whatever motive your own souls supply  
 As inspiration. Love made labor light."

Then laugh grew frown, and frown grew terri-  
 ble.

Do recollect what sort of person shrieked —  
 "Such was I, saint or sinner, what you please:  
 And who is it casts stone at me but you?  
 By your own showing, sirs, you bought and  
 sold,

Took what advantage bargain promised bag,  
 Abundantly did business, and with whom?  
 The man whom you pronounce imbecile, push  
 Indignantly aside if he presume  
 To settle his affairs like other folk!  
 How is it you have stepped into his shoes,  
 And stand there, bold as brass, 'Miranda, late;  
 Now, Firm-Miranda'? Sane, he signed away  
 That little birthright, did he? Hence to  
 trade!

I know and he knew who 't was dipped and  
 ducked,

Truckled and played the parasite in vain,  
 As now one, now the other, here you cringed,  
 Were feasted, took our presents, you — those  
 drops,

Just for your wife's adornment! you — that  
 spray  
 Exactly suiting, as most diamonds would,  
 Your daughter on her marriage! No word  
 then

Of somebody the wanton! Hence, I say,  
 Subscribers to the 'Siècle,' every snob —  
 For here the post brings me the 'Univers'!  
 Home and make money in the Place Vendôme,  
 Sully yourselves no longer by my sight,  
 And, when next Schneider wants a new *parure*,  
 Be careful lest you stick there by mischance

That stone beyond compare intrusted you  
To kindle faith with, when, Miranda's gift,  
Crowning the very crown, The Ravissante  
Shall claim it! As to Clairvaux—talk to  
Her!

She answers by the Chapter of Raimbaux!"  
Vituperative, truly! All this wrath  
Because the man's relations thought him mad!  
Whereat, I hope you see the Cousinry  
Turn each to other, blankly dolorous,  
Consult a moment, more by shrug and shrug  
Than mere man's language, — finally conclude  
To leave the reprobate untroubled now  
In her unholy triumph, till the Law  
Shall right the injured ones; for gentlemen  
Allow the female sex, this sort at least,  
Its privilege. So, simply "Cockatrice!" —  
"Jezebel!" — "Queen of the Camellias!" —  
cried

Cousin to cousin, as yon hinge a-creak  
Shut out the party, and the gate returned  
To custody of Clairvaux. "Pretty place!  
What say you, when it proves our property,  
To trying a concurrence with La Roche,  
And laying down a rival oyster-bed?  
Where the park ends, the sea begins, you  
know."  
So took they comfort till they came to Vire.

But I would linger, fain to snatch a look  
At Clara as she stands in pride of place,  
Somewhat more satisfying than my glance  
So furtive, so near futile, yesterday.  
Because one must be courteous. Of the masks  
That figure in this little history,  
She only has a claim to my respect,  
And one-eyed, in her French phrase, rules the  
blind.

Miranda hardly did his best with life:  
He might have opened eye, exerted brain,  
Attained conception as to right and law  
In certain points respecting intercourse  
Of man with woman — love, one likes to say;  
Which knowledge had dealt rudely with the  
claim

Of Clara to play representative  
And from perdition rescue soul, forsooth!  
Also, the sense of him should have sufficed  
For building up some better theory  
Of how God operates in heaven and earth,  
Than would establish Him participant  
In doings yonder at The Ravissante.  
The heart was wise according to its lights  
And limits; but the head refused more sun,  
And shrank into its mew, and craved less  
space.

Clara, I hold the happier specimen, —  
It may be, through that artist-preference  
For work complete, inferiorly proposed,  
To incompletion, though it aim aright.  
Morally, no! Aspire, break bounds! I say,  
Endeavor to be good, and better still,  
And best! Success is naught, endeavor's all.  
But intellect adjusts the means to ends,  
Tries the low thing, and leaves it done, at  
least;

No prejudice to high thing, intellect  
Would do and will do, only give the means.

Miranda, in my picture-gallery,  
Presents a Blake; be Clara — Meissonnier!  
Merely considered so by artist, mind!  
For, break through Art and rise to poetry,  
Bring Art to tremble nearer, touch enough  
The verge of vastness to inform our soul  
What orb makes transit through the dark  
above,

And there's the triumph! — there the incom-  
plete,

More than completion, matches the immense, —  
Then, Michelagnolo against the world!

With this proviso, let me study her  
Approvingly, the finished little piece!

Born, bred, with just one instinct, — that of  
growth, —

Her quality was, caterpillar-like,  
To all-unerringly select a leaf  
And without intermission feed her fill,  
Become the Painted Peacock, or belike  
The Brimstone-wing, when time of year should  
suit;

And 't is a sign (say entomologists)  
Of sickness, when the creature stops its meal  
One minute, either to look up at heaven,  
Or turn aside for change of aliment.  
No doubt there was a certain ugliness  
In the beginning, as the grub grew worm:  
She could not find the proper plant at once,  
But crawled and fumbled through a whole  
parterre.

Husband Muhlhausen served for stuff not long:  
Then came confusion of the slimy track  
From London, "where she gave the tone  
awhile,"

To Paris: let the stalks start up again.  
Now she is off them, all the greener they!  
But, settled on Miranda, how she sucked,  
Assimilated juices, took the tint,  
Mimicked the form and texture of her food!  
Was he for pastime? Who so frolic-fond  
As Clara? Had he a devotion-fit?  
Clara grew serious with like qualm, be sure!  
In health and strength he, — healthy too and  
strong,

She danced, rode, drove, took pistol-practice,  
fished,  
Nay, "managed sea-skiff with consummate  
skill."

In pain and weakness, he, — she patient watched  
And whiled the slow drip-dropping hours away.  
She bound again the broken self-respect,  
She picked out the true meaning from mistake,  
Praised effort in each stumble, laughed "Well-  
climbed!"

When others groaned "None ever grovelled  
so!"

"Rise, you have gained experience!" was her  
word:

"Lie satisfied, the ground is just your place!"  
They thought appropriate counsel. "Live, not  
die,

And take my full life to eke out your own:  
That shall repay me and with interest!  
Write! — is your mouth not clever as my  
hand?

Paint! — the last Exposition warrants me,  
Plenty of people must ply brush with toes.

And as for music — look, what folk nickname  
A lyre, those ancients played to ravishment, —  
Over the pendule, see, Apollo grasps  
A three-stringed gimerack which no Liszt could  
coax

Such music from as jew's-harp makes to-day !  
Do your endeavor like a man, and leave  
The rest to ' fortune who assists the bold ' —  
Learn, you, the Latin which you taught me  
first,  
You clever creature — clever, yes, I say !"

If he smiled " Let us love, love's wrong comes  
right,

Shows reason last of all ! Necessity  
Must meanwhile serve for plea — so, mind not  
much

Old Fricquot's menace ! " — back she smiled  
" Who minds ? "

If he sighed " Ah, but She is strict, they say,  
For all Her mercy at The Ravissante,  
She scarce will be put off so ! " — straight a sigh  
Returned " My lace must go to trim Her gown ! "  
I nowise doubt she inwardly believed  
Smiling and sighing had the same effect

Upon the venerated image. What  
She did believe in, I as little doubt,  
Was — Clara's self's own birthright to sustain  
Existence, grow from grub to butterfly,  
Upon unlimited Miranda-leaf ;

In which prime article of faith confirmed,  
According to capacity, she fed  
On and on till the leaf was eaten up,  
That April morning. Even then, I praise  
Her forethought which prevented leafless stalk  
Bestowing any hoarded succulence  
On earwig and black-beetle squat beneath ; —  
Clairvaux, that stalk whereto her hermitage  
She tacked by golden throw of silk, so fine,  
So anything but feeble, that her sleep  
Inside it, through last winter, two years long,  
Recked little of the storm and strife without.

" But — loved him ? " Friend, I do not praise  
her love !

True love works never for the loved one so,  
Nor spares skin - surface, smoothening truth  
away.

Love bids touch truth, endure truth, and em-  
brace

Truth, though, embracing truth, love crush  
itself.

" Worship not me, but God ! " the angels urge :

That is love's grandeur : still, in pettier love  
The nice eye can distinguish grade and grade.  
Shall mine degrade the velvet green and puce  
Of caterpillar, palmer-worm — or what —  
Ball in and out of ball, each ball with brush  
Of Venus' eye-fringe round the turquoise egg  
That nestles soft, — compare such paragon  
With any scarabæus of the brood  
Which, born to fly, keeps wing in wing-case,  
walks

Persistently a-trundling dung on earth ?

Egypt may venerate such hierophants,  
Not I — the couple yonder, Father Priest  
And Mother Nun, who came and went and  
came,

Beset this Clairvaux, trundled money-muck  
To midden and the main heap oft enough,  
But never bade unshut from sheath the gauze,  
Nor showed that, who would fly, must let fall  
filth,

And warn " Your jewel, brother, is a blotch :  
Sister, your lace trails ordure ! Leave your  
sins,

And so best gift with Crown and grace with  
Robe ! "

The superstition is extinct, you hope ?  
It were, with my good will ! Suppose it so,  
Bethink you likewise of the latest use  
Whereto a Night-cap is convertible,  
And draw your very thickest, thread and  
thrum,

O'er such a decomposing face of things,  
Once so alive, it seemed immortal too !

This happened two years since. The Cousinry  
Returned to Paris, called in help from Law,  
And in due form proceeded to dispute  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda's competence,  
Being insane, to make a valid Will.

Much testimony volunteered itself ;  
The issue hardly could be doubtful — but  
For that sad ' Seventy which must intervene,  
Provide poor France with other work to mind  
Than settling lawsuits, even for the sake  
Of such a party as The Ravissante.

It only was this Summer that the case  
Could come and be disposed of, two weeks  
since,

At Vire — Tribunal Civil — Chamber First.

Here, issued with all regularity,  
I hold the judgment — just, inevitable,  
Nowise to be contested by what few  
Can judge the judges ; sum and substance,  
thus : —

" Inasmuch as we find, the Cousinry,  
During that very period when they take  
Monsieur Léonce Miranda for stark mad,  
Considered him to be quite sane enough  
For doing much important business with —  
Nor showed suspicion of his competence  
Until, by turning of the tables, loss  
Instead of gain accrued to them thereby, —  
Plea of incompetence we set aside.

— " The rather, that the dispositions, sought  
To be impugned, are natural and right,  
Nor jar with any reasonable claim  
Of kindred, friendship, or acquaintance here.  
Nobody is despoiled, none overlooked ;  
Since the testator leaves his property  
To just that person whom, of all the world,  
He counted he was most indebted to.  
In mere discharge, then, of conspicuous debt,  
Madame Muhlhausen has priority.  
Enjoys the usufruct of Clairvaux.

" Next,  
Such debt discharged, such life determining,  
Such earthly interest provided for,



Monsieur Léonce Miranda may bequeath,  
In absence of more fit recipient, fund  
And usufruct together to the Church  
Whereof he was a special devotee.

" — Which disposition, being consonant  
With a long series of such acts and deeds  
Notorious in his lifetime, needs must stand,  
Unprejudiced by eccentricity  
Nowise amounting to distemper : since,  
In every instance signalized as such,  
We recognize no overleaping bounds,  
No straying out of the permissible :  
Duty to the Religion of the Land, —  
Neither excessive nor inordinate.

" The minor accusations are dismissed ;  
They prove mere freak and fancy, boyish mood  
In age mature of simple kindly man.  
Exuberant in generousities  
To all the world : no fact confirms the fear  
He meditated mischief to himself  
That morning when he met the accident  
Which ended fatally. The case is closed."

How otherwise ? So, when I grazed the skirts,  
And had the glimpse of whom made, yesterday, —  
Woman and retinue of goats and sheep, —  
The sombre path one whiteness, vision-like,  
As out of gate, and in at gate again,  
They wavered, — she was lady there for life :  
And, after life — I hope, a white-success  
Of some sort, wheresoever life resume  
School interrupted by vacation — death ;  
Seeing that home she goes with prize in hand,  
Confirmed the Châtelaine of Clairvaux.

## THE INN ALBUM

THE story told in this poem was suggested to  
Browning, but not followed in all its details, by  
an adventure of Lord De Ros, a friend of Wel-  
lington's and mentioned frequently by Greville

## I

" THAT oblong book's the Album ; hand it  
here !

Exactly ! page on page of gratitude  
For breakfast, dinner, supper, and the view !  
I praise these poets, they leave margin-space ;  
Each stanza seems to gather skirts around,  
And primly, trimly, keep the foot's confine,  
Modest and maidlike ; lubber prose o'ersprawls  
And straddling stops the path from left to right.  
Since I want space to do my cipher-work,  
Which poem spares a corner ? What comes  
first ?

' *Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot !*  
(Open the window, we burn daylight, boy !)  
Or see — succinct beauty, brief and bold —  
' *If a fellow can dine On rump-steaks and port  
wine,*

True,  
Such prize fades soon to insignificance.  
Though she have eaten her Miranda up,  
And spun a cradle-cone through which she  
pricks

Her passage, and proves peacock-butterfly,  
This Autumn — wait a little week of cold !  
Peacock and death's-head-moth end much the  
same.

And could she still continue spinning, — sure,  
Cradle would soon crave shroud for substitute,  
And o'er this life of hers distaste would drop  
Red-cotton-Nightcap-wise.

How say you, friend ?  
Have I redeemed my promise ? Smile assent  
Through the dark Winter-gloom between us  
both !

Already, months ago and miles away,  
I just as good as told you, in a flash,  
The while we paced the sands before my house,  
All this poor story — truth and nothing else.  
Accept that moment's flashing, amplified,  
Impalpability reduced to speech,  
Conception proved by birth, — no other change !  
Can what Saint-Rambert flashed me in a  
thought,

Good gloomy London make a poem of ?  
Such ought to be whatever dares precede,  
Play ruddy herald-star to your white blaze  
About to bring us day. How fail inbibe  
Some foretaste of effulgence ? Sun shall wax,  
And star shall wane : what matter, so star tell  
The drowsy world to start awake, rub eyes,  
And stand all ready for morn's joy a-blush ?

in his *Memoirs*. The circumstances of De Ros's  
villainy were much talked of in London at the  
time of their occurrence, just before the middle  
of this century.

*He needs not despair Of dining well here ' —  
' Here !' I myself could find a better rhyme !  
That bard 's a Browning ; he neglects the form :  
But ah, the sense, ye gods, the weighty sense !  
Still, I prefer this classic. Ay, throw wide !  
I 'll quench the bits of candle yet unburnt,  
A minute's fresh air, then to cipher-work !  
Three little columns hold the whole account :  
Ecarté, after which Blind Hookey, then  
Cutting-the-Pack, five hundred pounds the cut.  
'T is easy reckoning : I have lost, I think.'*

Two personages occupy this room  
Shabby-genteel, that 's parlor to the inn  
Perched on a view-commanding eminence ;  
— Inn which may be a veritable house  
Where somebody once lived and pleased good  
taste  
Till tourists found his coigne of vantage out,

And fingered blunt the individual mark,  
And vulgarized things comfortably smooth.  
On a sprig-pattern-papered wall there brays  
Complaint to sky Sir Edwin's dripping stag;  
His couchant coast-guard creature corresponds;  
They face the Huguenot and Light o' the  
World.

Grim o'er the mirror on the mantelpiece,  
Varnished and confined, *Salmo ferox* glares,  
— Possibly at the List of Wines which, framed  
And glazed, hangs somewhat prominent on peg.

So much describes the stuffy little room —  
Vulgar flat smooth respectability:  
Not so the burst of landscape surging in,  
Sunrise and all, as he who of the pair  
Is, plain enough, the younger personage  
Draws sharp the shrieking curtain, sends aloft  
The sash, spreads wide and fastens back to wall  
Shutter and shutter, shows you England's best.  
He leans into a living glory-bath  
Of air and light where seems to float and move  
The wooded watered country, hill and dale  
And steel-bright thread of stream, a-smoke  
with mist,

A-sparkle with May morning, diamond drift  
O' the sun-touched dew. Except the red-roofed  
patch

Of half a dozen dwellings that, crept close  
For hillside shelter, make the village-clump,  
This inn is perched above to dominate —  
Except such sign of human neighborhood,  
“And this surmised rather than sensible”  
There's nothing to disturb absolute peace,  
The reign of English nature — which means art  
And civilized existence. Wildness' self  
Is just the cultured triumph. Presently  
Deep solitude, be sure, reveals a Place  
That knows the right way to defend itself:  
Silence hems round a burning spot of life.  
Now, where a Place burns, must a village brood.  
And where a village broods, an inn should  
boast —

Close and convenient: here you have them both.  
This inn, the Something-arms — the family's —  
(Don't trouble Guillim: heralds leave out half!)  
Is dear to lovers of the picturesque,  
And epics have been planned here; but who plan  
Take holy orders and find work to do.  
Painters are more productive, stop a week,  
Declare the prospect quite a Corot, — ay,  
For tender sentiment, — themselves incline  
Rather to handsweep large and liberal;  
Then go, but not without success achieved  
— Happly some pencil-drawing, oak or beech,  
Ferns at the base and ivies up the bole,  
On this a slug, on that a butterfly.  
Nay, he who hooked the *salmo* pendent here,  
Also exhibited, this same May-month,  
“*Foxgloves: a study*” — so inspires the scene,  
The air, which now the younger personage  
Inflates him with till lungs o'erfraught are fain  
Sigh forth a satisfaction might bestir  
Even those tufts of tree-tops to the South  
I' the distance where the green dies off to gray,  
Which, easy of conjecture, front the Place;  
He eyes them, elbows wide, each hand to  
cheek.

His fellow, the much older — either say  
A youngish-old man or man oldish-young —  
Sits at the table: wicks are noisome-deep  
In wax, to detriment of plated ware;  
Above — piled, strewn — is store of playing-  
cards,

Counters and all that's proper for a game.  
He sets down, rubs out figures in the book,  
Adds and subtracts, puts back here, carries  
there,

Until the summed-up satisfaction stands  
Apparent, and he pauses o'er the work:  
Soothes what of brain was busy under brow,  
By passage of the hard palm, curing so  
Wrinkle and crowfoot for a second's space;  
Then lays down book and laughs out. No mis-  
take,  
Such the sum-total — ask Colenso else!

Roused by which laugh, the other turns, laughs  
too —

The youth, the good strong fellow, rough per-  
haps.

“Well, what's the damage — three, or four, or  
five?”

How many figures in a row? Hand here!  
Come now, there's one expense all yours not  
mine —

Scribbling the people's Album over, leaf  
The first and foremost too! You think, per-  
haps,

They'll only charge you for a brand-new book  
Nor estimate the literary loss?

Wait till the small account comes! ‘*To one  
night's*

*Lodging,*’ for — ‘beds’ they can't say, — ‘*pound  
or so;*

*Dinner, Apollinaris, — what they please,*  
*Attendance not included;*’ last looms large  
‘*Defacement of our Album, late enriched  
With*’ — let's see what! Here, at the window,  
though!

Ay, breathe the morning and forgive your  
luck!

Fine enough country for a fool like me  
To own, as next month I suppose I shall!

Eh? True fool's-fortune! so console yourself.  
Let's see, however — hand the book, I say!

Well, you've improved the classic by romance.  
Queer reading! Verse with parenthetic prose —

‘*Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot!*’  
(Three-two fives) ‘*life how profitably spent*’

(Five-naught, five-nine fives) ‘*yonder humble cot,*’  
(More and more naughts and fives) ‘*in mild  
content;*

*And did my feelings find the natural vent  
In friendship and in love, how blest my lot!*’

Then follow the dread figures — five! ‘*Con-  
tent?*’

That's appetite! Are you content as he —  
Simpkin the sonneteer? *Ten thousand pounds*

Give point to his effusion — by so much  
Leave me the richer and the poorer you

After our night's play; who's content the  
most.

If, you, or Simpkin?”

So the polished snob.

The elder man, refinement every inch  
From brow to boot-end, quietly replies:

"Simpkin's no name I know. I had my whim."

"Ay, had you! And such things make friendship thick.

Intimates, I may boast we were; henceforth,  
Friends—shall it not be?—who discard reserve,

Use plain words, put each dot upon each i,  
Till death us twain do part? The bargain's struck!

Old fellow, if you fancy—(to begin—)  
I failed to penetrate your scheme last week,  
You wrong your poor disciple. Oh, no airs!  
Because you happen to be twice my age  
And twenty times my master, must perforce  
No blink of daylight struggle through the web  
There's no unwinding? You entoil my legs,  
And welcome, for I like it: blind me,—no!  
A very pretty piece of shuttle-work  
Was that—your mere chance question at the club—

'Do you go anywhere this Whitsuntide?  
I'm off for Paris, there's the Opera—there's  
The Salon, there's a china-sale,—beside  
Chantilly; and, for good companionship,  
There's Such-and-such and So-and-so. Suppose  
We start together?' 'No such holiday!'  
I told you: 'Paris and the rest be hanged!  
Why plague me who am pledged to home-de-  
lights?

I'm the engaged now; through whose fault but  
yours?

On duty. As you well know. Don't I drowse  
The week away down with the Aunt and Niece?  
No help: it's leisure, loneliness, and love.  
'Wish I could take you; but fame travels fast,—  
A man of much newspaper-paragraph,  
You scare domestic circles; and beside  
Would not you like your lot, that second taste  
Of nature and approval of the grounds!  
You might walk early or lie late, so shirk  
Week-day devotions; but stay Sunday o'er,  
And morning church is obligatory:

No mundane garb permissible, or dread  
The butler's privileged monition! No!  
Pack off to Paris, nor wipe tear away!  
Whereon how artlessly the happy flash  
Followed, by inspiration! 'Tell you what—  
Let's turn their flank, try things on t' other side!  
Inns for my money! Liberty's the life!  
We'll lie in hiding: there's the crow-nest nook,  
The tourist's joy, the Inn they rave about,  
Inn that's out—out of sight and out of mind  
And out of mischief to all four of us—  
Aunt and niece, you and me. At night arrive;  
At morn, find time for just a Pisgah-view  
Of my friend's Land of Promise; then depart.  
And while I'm whizzing onward by first train,  
Bound for our own place (since my Brother sulks  
And says I shun him like the plague) yourself—  
Why, you have stepped thence, start from plat-  
form, gay

Despite the sleepless journey,—love lends  
wings,—

Hug aunt and niece who, none the wiser, wait

The faithful advent! Eh?' 'With all my  
heart,'

Said I to you; said I to mine own self:

'Does he believe I fail to comprehend  
He wants just one more final friendly snack  
At friend's exchequer ere friend runs to earth,  
Marries, renounces yielding friends such sport?'  
And did I spoil sport, pull face grim,—nay,  
grave?

Your pupil does you better credit! No!

I parleyed with my pass-book,—rubbed my  
pair

At the big balance in my banker's hands,—  
Folded a check cigar-case-shape,—just wants  
Filling and signing,—and took train, resolved  
To execute myself with decency  
And let you win—if not Ten thousand quite,  
Something by way of wind-up-farewell burst  
Of firework-nosegay! Where's your fortune  
fled?

Or is not fortune constant after all?

You lose ten thousand pounds: had I lost half  
Or half that, I should bite my lips, I think.  
You man of marble! Strut and stretch my best  
On tiptoe, I shall never reach your height.  
How does the loss feel! Just one lesson more!"

The more refined man smiles a frown away.

"The lesson shall be—only boys like you  
Put such a question at the present stage.  
I had a ball lodge in my shoulder once,  
And, full five minutes, never guessed the fact;  
Next day, I felt decidedly: and still,  
At twelve years' distance, when I lift my arm  
A twinge reminds me of the surgeon's probe.  
Ask me, this day month, how I feel my luck!  
And meantime please to stop impertinence,  
For—don't I know its object? All this chaff  
Covers the corn, this preface leads to speech,  
This boy stands forth a hero. 'There, my lord!  
Our play was true play, fun not earnest! I  
Empty your purse, inside out, while my poke  
Bulges to bursting? You can badly spare  
A doit, confess now, Duke though brother be!  
While I'm gold-daubed so thickly, spangles  
drop

And show my father's warehouse-apron: pshaw!  
Enough! We've had a palpitating night!  
Good morning! Breakfast and forget our  
dreams!

My mouth's shut, mind! I tell nor man nor  
mouse.'

There, see! He don't deny it! Thanks, my boy!  
Hero and welcome—only, not on me  
Make trial of your 'prentice-hand! Enough!  
We've played, I've lost and owe ten thousand  
pounds,

Whereof I muster, at the moment,—well,  
What's for the bill here and the back to town.  
Still, I've my little character to keep;  
You may expect your money at month's end."

The young man at the window turns round  
quick—

A clumsy giant handsome creature; grasps  
In his large red the little lean white hand  
Of the other, looks him in the sallow face.



"I say now — is it right to so mistake  
A fellow, force him in mere self-defence  
To spout like Mister *Mild Acclivity*  
In album-language? You know well enough  
Whether I like you — *like's* no album-word,  
Anyhow: point me to one soul beside  
In the wide world I care one straw about!  
I first set eyes on you a year ago;  
Since when you've done me good — I'll stick to  
it —

More than I got in the whole twenty-five  
That make my life up, Oxford years and all —  
Throw in the three I fooled away abroad,  
Seeing myself and nobody more sage  
Until I met you, and you made me man  
Such as the sort is and the fates allow.  
I do think, since we two kept company,  
I've learnt to know a little — all through you!  
It's nature if I like you. Taunt away!  
As if I need you teaching me my place —  
The snob I am, the Duke your brother is,  
When just the good you did was — teaching me  
My own trade, how a snob and millionaire  
May lead his life and let the Duke's alone,  
Clap wings, free jackdaw, on his steeple-perch,  
Burnish his black to gold in sun and air,  
Nor pick up stray plumes, strive to match in  
strut

Regular peacocks who can't fly an inch  
Over the courtyard-paling. Head and heart  
(That's album-style) are older than you know,  
For all your knowledge: boy, perhaps — ay, boy  
Had his adventure, just as he were man —  
His ball-experience in the shoulder-blade,  
His bit of life-long ache to recognize,  
Although he bears it cheerily about,  
Because you came and clapped him on the back,  
Advised him '*Walk and wear the aching off!*'

Why, I was minded to sit down for life  
Just in Dalmatia, build a seaside tower  
High on a rock, and so expend my days  
Pursuing chemistry or botany  
Or, very like, astronomy because  
I noticed stars shone when I passed the place:  
Letting my cash accumulate the while  
In England — to lay out in lump at last  
As Ruskin should direct me! All or some  
Of which should I have done or tried to do,  
And preciously repented, one fine day,  
Had you discovered Timon, climbed his rock  
And scaled his tower, some ten years thence,  
suppose,

And coaxed his story from him! Don't I see  
The pair conversing! It's a novel writ  
Already, I'll be bound, — our dialogue!  
'What?' cried the elder and yet youthful man —  
*So did the eye flash 'neath the lordly front,  
And the imposing presence swell with scorn,  
As the haught high-bred bearing and dispose  
Contrasted with his interlocutor  
The flabby low-born who, of bulk before,  
Had steadily increased, one stone per week,  
Since his abstention from horse-exercise: —  
'What? you, as rich as Rothschild, left, you say  
London the very year you came of age,  
Because your father manufactured goods —  
Commission-agent hight of Manchester —  
Partly, and partly through a baby case*

*Of disappointment I've pumped out at last —  
And here you spend life's prime in gaining flesh  
And giving science one more asteroid?*  
Brief, my dear fellow, you instructed me,  
At Alfred's and not Istria! proved a snob  
May turn a million to account although  
His brother be no Duke, and see good days  
Without the girl he lost and some one gained.  
The end is, after one year's tutelage,  
Having, by your help, touched society,  
Polo, Tent-pegging, Hurlingham, the Rink —  
I leave all these delights, by your advice,  
And marry my young pretty cousin here  
Whose place, whose oaks ancestral you behold.  
(Her father was in partnership with mine —  
Does not his purchase look a pedigree?)  
My million will be tails and tassels smart  
To this plump-bodied kite, this house and land  
Which, set a-soaring, pulls me, soft as sleep,  
Along life's pleasant meadow, — arm left free  
To lock a friend's in, — whose, but yours, old  
boy?

Arm in arm glide we over rough and smooth,  
While hand, to pocket held, saves cash from  
cards.

Now, if you don't esteem ten thousand pounds  
(— Which I shall probably discover snug  
Hid somewhere in the column-corner capped  
With '*Credit*,' based on '*Balance*,' — which, I  
swear,

By this time next month I shall quite forget  
Whether I lost or won — ten thousand pounds,  
Which at this instant I would give . . . let's  
see,

For Galopin — nay, for that Gainsborough  
Sir Richard won't sell, and, if bought by me,  
Would get my glance and praise some twice a  
year, —)

Well, if you don't esteem that price dirt-cheap  
For teaching me Dalmatia was mistake —  
Why then, my last illusion-bubble breaks,  
My one discovered phoenix proves a goose,  
My cleverest of all companions — oh,  
Was worth nor ten pence nor ten thousand  
pounds!

Come! Be yourself again! So endeth here  
The morning's lesson! Never while life lasts  
Do I touch card again. To breakfast now!  
To bed — I can't say, since you needs must  
start

For station early — oh, the down-train still,  
First plan and best plan — townward trip be  
hanged!

You're due at your big brother's — pay that  
debt,

Then owe me not a farthing! Order eggs —  
And who knows but there's trout obtainable?"

The fine man looks wellnigh malignant: then —

"Sir, please subdue your manner! Debts are  
debts:

I pay mine — debts of this sort — certainly.  
What do I care how you regard your gains,  
Want them or want them not? The thing I  
want

Is — not to have a story circulate  
From club to club — how, bent on clearing out,

Young So-and-so, young So-and-so cleaned me,  
Then set the empty kennel flush again,  
Ignored advantage and forgave his friend —  
For why? There was no wringing blood from  
stone!

Oh, don't be savage! You would hold your  
tongue,

Bite it in two, as man may; but those small  
Hours in the smoking-room, when instance apt  
Rises to tongue's root, tingles on to tip,  
And the thinned company consists of six  
Capital well-known fellows one may trust!  
Next week, it's in the 'World.' No, thank you  
much.

I owe ten thousand pounds: I'll pay them!"

"Now, —

This becomes funny. You've made friends  
with me:

I can't help knowing of the ways and means!

Or stay! they say your brother closets up

Correggio's long lost Leda: if he means  
To give you that, and if you give it me" . . .

"I polished snob off to aristocrat?

You compliment me! father's apron still  
Sticks out from son's court-vesture; still silk  
purse

Roughs finger with some bristle sow-ear-born!

Well, neither I nor you mean harm at heart!

I owe you and shall pay you: which premised,

Why should what follows sound like flattery?

The fact is — you do compliment too much

Your humble master, as I own I am;

You owe me no such thanks as you protest.

The polisher needs precious stone no less

Than precious stone needs polisher: believe

I struck no tint from out you but I found

Snugly lying first 'neath surface hairbreadth-deep!

Beside, I liked the exercise: with skill

Goes love to show skill for skill's sake. You

see,

I'm old and understand things: too absurd

It were you pitched and tossed away your life,

As diamond were Scotch-pebble! all the more,

That I myself misused a stone of price.

Born and bred clever — people used to say

Clever as most men, if not something more —

Yet here I stand a failure, cut awry

Or left opaque, — no brilliant named and known.

Whate'er my inner stuff, my outside's blank;

I'm nobody — or rather, look that same —

I'm — who I am — and know it; but I hold

What in my hand out for the world to see?

What ministry, what mission, or what book

— I'll say, book even? Not a sign of these!

I began — laughing — 'All these when I like!'

I end with — well, you've hit it! — 'This boy's

check

For just as many thousands as he'll spare!'

The first — I could, and would not; your spare

cash

I would, and could not: have no scruple, pray,

But, as I hoped to pocket yours, pouch mine

— When you are able!"

"Which is — when to be?

I've heard, great characters require a fall

Of fortune to show greatness by uprise:

*They touch the ground to jollily rebound,*

Add to the Album! Let a fellow share

Your secret of superiority!

I know, my banker makes the money breed

Money; I eat and sleep, he simply takes

The dividends and cuts the coupons off,

Sells out, buys in, keeps doubling, tripling cash,

While I do nothing but receive and spend.

But you, spontaneous generator, hatch

A wind-egg; cluck, and forth struts Capital

As Interest to me from egg of gold.

I am grown curious: pay me by all means!

How will you make the money?"

"Mind your own —

Not my affair. Enough: or money, or

Money's worth, as the case may be, expect

Ere month's end, — keep but patient for a  
month!

Who's for a stroll to station? Ten's the time;

Your man, with my things, follow in the trap;

At stoppage of the down-train, play the arrived

On platform, and you'll show the due fatigue

Of the night-journey, — not much sleep, — per-  
haps,

Your thoughts were on before you — yes, in-  
deed,

You join them, being happily awake

With thought's sole object as she smiling sits

At breakfast-table. I shall dodge meantime

In and out station-precinct, wile away

The hour till up my engine pants and smokes.

No doubt, she goes to fetch you. Never fear!

She gets no glance at me, who shame such  
saints!"

## II

So, they ring bell, give orders, pay, depart

Amid profuse acknowledgment from host

Who well knows what may bring the younger  
back.

They light cigar, descend in twenty steps

The "calm acclivity," inhale — beyond

Tobacco's balm — the better smoke of turf

And wood fire, — cottages at cookery

I' the morning, — reach the main road straight-  
ening on

'Twixt wood and wood, two black walls full of  
night

Slow to disperse, though mists thin fast before

The advancing foot, and leave the flint-dust  
fine

Each speck with its fire-sparkle. Presently

The road's end with the sky's beginning mix

In one magnificence of glare, due East,

So high the sun rides, — May's the merry  
month.

They slacken pace: the younger stops abrupt.

Discards cigar, looks his friend full in face.

"All right; the station comes in view at end;

Five minutes from the beech-clump, there you  
are!

I say: let's halt, let's borrow yonder gate

Of its two magpies, sit and have a talk!

Do let a fellow speak a moment ! More  
I think about and less I like the thing —  
No, you must let me ! Now, be good for once !  
Ten thousand pounds be done for, dead and  
damned !

We played for love, not hate : yes, hate ! I hate  
Thinking you beg or borrow or reduce  
To strychnine some poor devil of a lord  
Licked at Unlimited Loo. I had the cash  
To lose — you knew that ! — lose and none the  
less

Whistle to-morrow : it 's not every chap  
Affords to take his punishment so well !  
Now, don't be angry with a friend whose fault  
Is that he thinks — upon my soul, I do —  
Your head the best head going. Oh, one sees  
Names in the newspaper — great This, great  
That,  
Gladstone, Carlyle, the Laureate : — much I  
care !

Others have their opinion, I keep mine :  
Which means — by right you ought to have the  
things

I want a head for. Here 's a pretty place,  
My cousin's place, and presently my place,  
Not yours ! I'll tell you how it strikes a man.  
My cousin 's fond of music and of course  
Plays the piano (it won't be for long !)  
A brand-new bore she calls a ' *semi-grand* '  
Rosewood and pearl, that blocks the drawing-  
room,

And cost no end of money. Twice a week  
Down comes Herr Somebody and seats him-  
self,

Sets to work teaching — with his teeth on  
edge —

I've watched the rascal. ' *Does he play first-  
rate ?* '

I ask : ' *I rather think so,* ' answers she —  
' *He's What's-his-Name !* ' — ' *Why give you  
lessons then ?* ' —

' *I pay three guineas and the train beside.* ' —  
' *This instrument, has he one such at home ?* ' —  
' *He ? Has to practise on a table-top,  
When he can't hire the proper thing.* ' — ' *I see !  
You've the piano, he the skill, and God  
The distribution of such gifts.* ' So here :  
After your teaching, I shall sit and strum  
Polkas on this piano of a Place  
You 'd make resound with ' *Rule Britannia !* ' "

" Thanks !

I don't say but this pretty cousin's place,  
Appended with your million, tempts my  
hand

As key-board I might touch with some effect. "

" Then, why not have obtained the like ?  
House, land,

Money, are things obtainable, you see,  
By clever head-work : ask my father else !  
You, who teach me, why not have learned,  
yourself ?

Played like Herr Somebody with power to  
thump

And flourish and the rest, not bend demure  
Pointing out blunders — ' *Sharp, not natural !  
Permit me — on the black key use the thumb !* ' "

There 's some fatality, I 'm sure ! You say  
' *Marry the cousin, that 's your proper move !* '  
And I do use the thumb and hit the sharp :  
You should have listened to your own head 's  
hint,

As I to you ! The puzzle 's past my power,  
How you have managed — with such stuff, such  
means —

Not to be rich nor great nor happy man :  
Of which three good things where 's a sign at  
all ?

Just look at Dizzy ! Come, — what tripped  
your heels ?

Instruct a goose that boasts wings and can't  
fly !

I wager I have guessed it ! — never found  
The old solution of the riddle fail !

' *Who was the woman ?* ' I don't ask, but —  
' *Where*

' *I the path of life stood she who tripped you ?* ' "

" Goose

You truly are ! I own to fifty years.  
Why don't I interpose and cut out — you ?  
Compete with five-and- twenty ? Age, my  
boy ! "

" Old man, no nonsense ! — even to a boy  
That 's ripe at least for rationality  
Rapped into him, as maybe mine was, once !  
I've had my small adventure lesson me  
Over the knuckles ! — likely, I forget  
The sort of figure youth cuts now and then,  
Competing with old shoulders but young head  
Despite the fifty grizzling years ! "

" Aha ?

Then that means — just the bullet in the blade  
Which brought Dalmatia on the brain, — that,  
too,

Came of a fatal creature ? Can't pretend  
Now for the first time to surmise as much !  
Make a clean breast ! Recount ! a secret 's  
safe

' Twixt you, me, and the gate-post ! "

" — Can't pretend.

Neither, to never have surmised your wish !  
It 's no use, — case of unextracted ball —  
Winces at finger-touching. Let things be ! "

" Ah, if you love your love still ! I hate  
mine. "

" I can't hate. "

" I won't teach you ; and won't tell  
You, therefore, what you please to ask of me :  
As if I, also, may not have my ache ! "

" My sort of ache ? No, no ! and yet — per-  
haps !

All comes of thinking you superior still.  
But live and learn ! I say ! Time 's up !  
Good jump !

You old, indeed ! I fancy there 's a cut  
Across the wood, a grass-path : shall we try ?  
It 's venturesome, however ! "



"Stop, my boy !  
Don't think I'm stingy of experience ! Life  
— It's like this wood we leave. Should you  
and I

Go wandering about there, though the gaps  
We went in and came out by were opposed  
As the two poles still, somehow, all the same  
By nightfall we should probably have chanced  
On much the same main points of interest —  
Both of us measured girth of mossy trunk,  
Stript ivy from its strangled prey, clapped  
hands

At squirrel, sent a fir-cone after crow,  
And so forth, — never mind what time betwixt.  
So in our lives ; allow I entered mine  
Another way than you : 't is possible  
I ended just by knocking head against  
That plaguy low-hung branch yourself began  
By getting bump from ; as at last you too  
May stumble o'er that stump which first of all  
Bade me walk circumspectly. Head and feet  
Are vulnerable both, and I, foot-sure,  
Forgot that ducking down saves brow from  
bruise.

I, early old, played young man four years since  
And failed confoundedly ; so, hate alike  
Failure and who caused failure, — curse her  
cant ! "

" Oh, I see ! You, though somewhat past the  
prime,  
Were taken with a rosebud beauty ! Ah —  
But how should chits distinguish ? She admired  
Your marvel of a mind, I'll undertake !  
But as to body . . . nay, I mean . . . that is,  
When years have told on face and figure " . . .

" Thanks,  
Mister *Sufficiently-Instructed* ! Such  
No doubt was bound to be the consequence  
To suit your self-complacency : she liked  
My head enough, but loved some heart beneath  
Some head with plenty of brown hair a-top  
After my young friend's fashion ! What be-  
comes

Of that fine speech you made a minute since  
About the man of middle age you found  
A formidable peer at twenty-one ?  
So much for your mock-modesty ! and yet  
I back your first against this second sprout  
Of observation, insight, what you please.  
My middle age, Sir, had too much success !  
It's odd : my case occurred four years ago —  
I finished just while you commenced that turn  
I' the wood of life that takes us to the wealth  
Of honeysuckle, heaped for who can reach.  
Now, I don't boast : it's bad style, and beside,  
The feat proves easier than it looks : I plucked  
Full many a flower unnamed in that bouquet  
(Mostly of peonies and poppies, though !)  
Good-nature sticks into my buttonhole.  
Therefore it was with nose in want of snuff  
Rather than Ess or Psidium, that I chanced  
On what — so far from 'rosebud beauty' . . .  
Well —

She's dead : at least you never heard her name ;  
She was no courtly creature, had nor birth  
Nor breeding — mere fine-lady-breeding ; but

Oh, such a wonder of a woman ! Grand  
As a Greek statue ! Stick fine clothes on that  
Style that a Duchess or a Queen, — you know,  
Artists would make an outcry : all the more,  
That she had just a statue's sleepy grace  
Which broods o'er its own beauty. Nay, her  
fault

(Don't laugh ! ) was just perfection : for suppose  
Only the little flaw, and I had peeped  
Inside it, learned what soul inside was like.  
At Rome some tourist raised the grit beneath  
A Venus' forehead with his whittling-knife —  
I wish — now — I had played that brute,  
brought blood

To surface from the depths I fancied chalk !  
As it was, her mere face surprised so much  
That I stopped short there, struck on heap, as  
stares

The cockney stranger at a certain bust  
With drooped eyes, — she's the thing I have in  
mind, —

Down at my Brother's. All sufficient prize —  
Such outside ! Now, — confound me for a  
prig ! —

Who cares ? I'll make a clean breast once for  
all !

Beside, you've heard the gossip. My life long  
I've been a woman-liker, — liking means  
Loving and so on. There's a lengthy list  
By this time I shall have to answer for —  
So say the good folk : and they don't guess  
half —

For the worst is, let once collecting-itch  
Possess you, and, with perspicacity,  
Keeps growing such a greediness that theft  
Follows at no long distance, — there's the fact !  
I knew that on my Leporello-list

Might figure this, that, and the other name  
Of feminine desirability,  
But if I happened to desire inscribe,  
Along with these, the only Beautiful —  
Here was the unique specimen to snatch  
Or now or never. ' Beautiful ' I said —  
' Beautiful ' say in cold blood, — boiling then  
To tune of ' *Haste, secure whate'er the cost*  
*This rarity, die in the act, be damned,*  
*So you complete collection, crown your list !*  
It seemed as though the whole world, once  
aroused

By the first notice of such wonder's birth,  
Would break bounds to contest my prize with  
me

The first discoverer, should she but emerge  
From that safe den of darkness where she dozed  
Till I stole in, that country-parsonage  
Where, country-parson's daughter, motherless,  
Brotherless, sisterless, for eighteen years  
She had been vegetating lily-like.

Her father was my brother's tutor, got  
The living that way : him I chanced to see —  
Her I saw — her the world would grow one eye  
To see, I felt no sort of doubt at all !  
' *Secure her !* ' cried the devil : ' *afterward*  
*Arrange for the disposal of the prize !* '  
The devil's doing ! yet I seem to think —  
Now, when all's done, — think with ' *a head*  
*reposed* '

In French phrase — hope I think I meant to do

All requisite for such a rarity  
 When I should be at leisure, have due time  
 To learn requirement. But in evil day —  
 Bless me, at week's end, long as any year,  
 The father must begin, 'Young Somebody,  
 Much recommended — for I break a rule —  
 Comes here to read, next Long Vacation.' —  
 'Young!'  
 That did it. Had the epithet been 'rich,'  
 'Noble,' 'agenius,' even 'handsome,' — but  
 — 'Young'!

"I say — just a word! I want to know —  
 You are not married?"

"I?"

"Nor ever were?"

"Never! Why?"

"Oh, then — never mind! Go on!  
 I had a reason for the question."

"Come, —  
 You could not be the young man?"

"No, indeed!  
 Certainly — if you never married her!"

"That I did not: and there's the curse, you'll  
 see!"

Nay, all of it's one curse, my life's mistake  
 Which nourished with manure that's war-  
 ranted

To make the plant bear wisdom, blew out full  
 In folly beyond fieldflower-foolishness!  
 The lies I used to tell my womankind!  
 Knowing they disbelieved me all the time  
 Though they required my lies, their decent  
 due,

This woman — not so much believed, I'll say,  
 As just anticipated from my mouth:

Since being true, devoted, constant — she  
 Found constancy, devotion, truth, the plain  
 And easy commonplace of character.

No mock-heroics but seemed natural  
 To her who underneath the face, I knew  
 Was fairness' self, possessed a heart, I judged  
 Must correspond in folly just as far  
 Beyond the common, — and a mind to match, —  
 Not made to puzzle conjurers like me  
 Who, therein, proved the fool who fronts you,  
 Sir,

And begs leave to cut short the ugly rest!  
 'Trust me!' I said: she trusted. 'Marry me!'  
 Or rather, 'We are married: when, the rite?'

That brought on the collector's next-day qualm  
 At counting acquisition's cost. There lay  
 My marvel, though my purse more light by much  
 Because of its late lie-expenditure:  
 Ill-judged such moment to make fresh de-  
 mand —

To cage as well as catch my rarity!  
 So, I began explaining. At first word  
 Outbroke the horror. 'Then, my truths were  
 lies!'

I tell you, such an outbreak, such new strange

All-unsuspected revelation — soul  
 As supernaturally grand as face  
 Was far beyond example — that at once  
 Either I lost — or, if it please you, found  
 My senses, — stammered somehow — 'Jest! and  
 now,  
 Earnest! Forget all else but — heart has loved,  
 Does love, shall love you ever! take the hand!' —  
 Not she! no marriage for superb disdain,  
 Contempt incarnate!"

"Yes, it's different, —  
 It's only like in being four years since.  
 I see now!"

"Well, what did disdain do next,  
 Think you?"

"That's past me: did not marry you! —  
 That's the main thing I care for, I suppose.  
 Turned nun, or what?"

"Why, married in a month  
 Some parson, some smug crop-haired smooth-  
 chinned sort

Of curate-creature, I suspect, — dived down,  
 Down, deeper still, and came up somewhere  
 else —

I don't know where — I've not tried much to  
 know, —

In short, she's happy: what the clodpoles call  
 'Countrified' with a vengeance! leads the life  
 Respectable and all that drives you mad:  
 Still — where, I don't know, and that's best  
 for both."

"Well, that she did not like you, I conceive.  
 But why should you hate her, I want to  
 know?"

"My good young friend, — because or her or  
 else

Malicious Providence I have to hate.  
 For, what I tell you proved the turning-point  
 Of my whole life and fortune toward success  
 Or failure. If I drown, I lay the fault  
 Much on myself who caught at reed not rope,  
 But more on reed which, with a packthread's

pith,  
 Had buoyed me till the minute's cramp could  
 thaw

And I strike out afresh and so be saved.  
 It's easy saying — I had sunk before,

Disqualified myself by idle days  
 And busy nights, long since, from holding hard  
 On cable, even, had fate cast me such!  
 You boys don't know how many times men fail  
 Perforce o' the little to succeed i' the large,  
 Husband their strength, let slip the petty prey,  
 Collect the whole power for the final pounce!  
 My fault was the mistaking man's main prize  
 For intermediate boy's diversion; clap  
 Of boyish hands here frightened game away  
 Which, once gone, goes forever. Oh, at first  
 I took the anger easily, nor much

Minded the anguish — having learned that  
 storms

Subside, and teapot-tempests are akin.

Time would arrange things, mend whate'er  
might be

Somewhat amiss; precipitation, eh?  
Reason and rhyme prompt—reparation! Tiffs  
End properly in marriage and a dance!  
I said 'We'll marry, make the past a blank'—  
And never was such damnable mistake!  
That interview, that laying bare my soul,  
As it was first, so was it last chance—one  
And only. Did I write? Back letter came  
Unopened as it went. Inexorable  
She fled, I don't know where, consoled herself  
With the smug curate-creature: chop and  
change!

Sure am I, when she told her shaveling all  
His Magdalen's adventure, tears were shed,  
Forgiveness evangelically shown,  
'Loose hair and lifted eye,'—as some one says,  
And now, he's worshipped for his pains, the  
sneak!"

"Well, but your turning-point of life, — what's  
here

To hinder you contesting Finsbury  
With Orton, next election? I don't see" . . .

"Not you! But I see. Slowly, surely, creeps  
Day by day o'er me the conviction — here  
Was life's prize grasped at, gained, and then  
let go!

— That with her — maybe, for her — I had felt  
Ice in me melt, grow steam, drive to effect  
Any or all the fancies sluggish here  
If the head that needs the hand she would not  
take

And I shall never lift now. Lo, your wood —  
Its turnings which I likened life to! Well, —  
There she stands, ending every avenue,  
Her visionary presence on each goal  
I might have gained had we kept side by side!  
Still string nerve and strike foot? Her frown  
forbids:

The steam congeals once more: I'm old  
again!

Therefore I hate myself — but how much  
worse

Do not I hate who would not understand,  
Let me repair things — no, but sent a-slide  
My folly falteringly, stumblingly  
Down, down, and deeper down until I drop  
Upon — the need of your ten thousand pounds  
And consequently loss of mine! I lose  
Character, cash, nay, common-sense itself  
Recounting such a lengthy cock-and-bull  
Adventure, lose my temper in the act" . . .

"And lose beside, — if I may supplement  
The list of losses, — train and ten-o'clock!  
Hark, pant and puff, there travels the swart  
sign!

So much the better! You're my captive now!  
I'm glad you trust a fellow: friends grow  
thick

This way — that's twice said; we were thick-  
ish, though,

Even last night, and, ere night comes again,  
I prophesy good luck to both of us!  
For see now! — back to 'balmy eminence'

Or '*calm acclivity*' or what's the word!  
Bestow you there an hour, concoct at ease  
A sonnet for the Album, while I put  
Bold face on, best foot forward, make for  
house,

March in to aunt and niece, and tell the  
truth —

(Even white-lying goes against my taste  
After your little story.) Oh, the niece  
Is rationality itself! The aunt —  
If she's amenable to reason too —  
Why, you stopped short to pay her due respect,  
And let the Duke wait (I'll work well the  
Duke).

If she grows gracious, I return for you;  
If thunder's in the air, why — bear your doom,  
Dine on rump-steaks and port, and shake the  
dust

Of aunt from your shoes as off you go  
By evening-train, nor give the thing a thought  
How you shall pay me — that's as sure as fate,  
Old fellow! Off with you, face left about!  
Yonder's the path I have to pad. You see,  
I'm in good spirits, God knows why! Perhaps  
Because the woman did not marry you  
— Who look so hard at me, — and have the  
right,  
One must be fair and own."

The two stand still

Under an oak.

"Look here!" resumes the youth.  
"I never quite knew how I came to like  
You — so much — whom I ought not court at  
all:

Nor how you had a leaning just to me  
Who am assuredly not worth your pains.  
For there must needs be plenty such as you  
Somewhere about, — although I can't say  
where, —

Able and willing to teach all you know;  
While — how can you have missed a score like  
me

With money and no wit, precisely each  
A pupil for your purpose, were it — ease  
Fool's poke of tutor's *honorarium-fee*?  
And yet, how'er it came about, I felt  
At once my master: you as prompt descried  
Your man, I warrant, so was bargain struck.  
Now, these same lines of liking, loving, run  
Sometimes so close together they converge —  
Life's great adventures — you know what I  
mean —

In people. Do you know, as you advanced,  
It got to be uncommonly like fact  
We two had fallen in with — liked and loved  
Just the same woman in our different ways?  
I began life — poor groundling as I prove —  
Winged and ambitious to fly high: why not?  
There's something in 'Don Quixote' to the  
point.

My shrewd old father used to quote and  
praise —

'Am I born man?' asks Sancho; '*being man*,  
By possibility I may be Pope!'

So, Pope I meant to make myself, by step  
And step, whereof the first should be to find



A perfect woman; and I tell you this —  
 If what I fixed on, in the order due  
 Of undertakings, as next step, had first  
 Of all disposed itself to suit my tread,  
 And I had been, the day I came of age,  
 Returned at head of poll for Westminster  
 — Nay, and moreover summoned by the Queen  
 At week's end, when my maiden-speech bore  
 fruit,

To form and head a Tory ministry —  
 It would not have seemed stranger, no, nor  
 been

More strange to me, as now I estimate,  
 Than what did happen — sober truth, no dream.  
 I saw my wonder of a woman, — laugh,  
 I'm past that! — in Commemoration-week.  
 A plenty have I seen since, fair and foul, —  
 With eyes, too, helped by your sagacious wink;  
 But one to match that marvel — no least trace,  
 Least touch of kinship and community!  
 The end was — I did somehow state the fact,  
 Did, with no matter what imperfect words,  
 One way or other give to understand  
 That woman, soul and body were her slave  
 Would she but take, but try them — any test  
 Of will, and some poor test of power beside:  
 So did the strings within my brain grow tense  
 And capable of . . . hang similitudes!  
 She answered kindly but beyond appeal.

*'No sort of hope for me, who came too late.  
 She was another's. Love went — mine to her,  
 Hers just as loyally to some one else.'*  
 Of course! I might expect it! Nature's law —  
 Given the peerless woman, certainly  
 Somewhere shall be the peerless man to match!  
 I acquiesced at once, submitted me  
 In something of a stupor, went my way.  
 I fancy there had been some talk before  
 Of somebody — her father or the like —  
 To coach me in the holidays, — that's how  
 I came to get the sight and speech of her, —  
 But I had sense enough to break off sharp,  
 Save both of us the pain."

"Quite right there!"

"Eh?"

Quite wrong, it happens! Now comes worst of  
 all!

Yes, I did sulk aloof and let alone  
 The lovers — I disturb the angel-mates?"

'Seraph paired off with cherub!'

"Thank you! While

I never plucked up courage to inquire  
 Who he was, even, — certain-sure of this,  
 That nobody I knew of had blue wings  
 And wore a star-crown as he needs must do, —  
 Some little lady, — plainish, pock-marked girl, —  
 Finds out my secret in my woeful face,  
 Comes up to me at the Apollo Ball,  
 And pityingly pours her wine and oil  
 This way into the wound: '*Dear f-f-friend,  
 Why waste affection thus on — must I say,  
 A somewhat worthless object? Who's her choice —  
 Irrevocable as deliberate —  
 Out of the wide world? I shall name no names —*

*But there's a person in society,  
 Who, blessed with rank and talent, has grown  
 gray*

*In idleness and sin of every sort  
 Except hypocrisy: he's thrice her age,  
 A byword for 'successes with the sex',  
 As the French say — and, as we ought to say,  
 Consummately a liar and a rogue,  
 Since — show me where's the woman won without  
 The help of this one lie which she believes —  
 That — never mind how things have come to pass,  
 And let who loves have loved a thousand times —  
 All the same he now loves her only, loves  
 Her ever! if by 'won' you just mean 'sold',  
 That's quite another compact. Well, this scamp,  
 Continuing descent from bad to worse,  
 Must leave his fine and fashionable prey  
 (Who — fathered, brothered, husbanded, — are  
 hedged*

*About with thorny danger) and apply  
 His arts to this poor country ignorance  
 Who sees forthwith in the finer rag of man  
 Her model hero! Why continue waste  
 On such a woman treasures of a heart  
 Would yet find solace, — yes, my f-f-friend —  
 In some congenial — fiddle-diddle-dee?'"*

"Pray, is the pleasant gentleman described  
 Exact the portrait which my 'f-f-friends'  
 Recognize as so like? 'I is evident  
 You half surmised the sweet original  
 Could be no other than myself, just now!  
 Your stop and start were flattering!"

"Of course

Caricature's allowed for in a sketch!  
 The longish nose becomes a foot in length,  
 The swarthy cheek gets copper-colored, — still,  
 Prominent beak and dark-hued skin are facts:  
 And '*parson's daughter*' — '*young man coach-  
 able*' —

'*Elderly party*' — '*four years since*' — were facts  
 To fasten on, a moment! Marriage, though —  
 That made the difference, I hope."

"All right!

I never married; wish I had — and then  
 Unwish it: people kill their wives, sometimes!  
 I hate my mistress, but I'm murder-free.  
 In your case, where's the grievance? You  
 came last,

The earlier bird picked up the worm. Suppose  
 You, in the glory of your twenty-one,  
 Had happened to precede myself! 't is odds  
 But this gigantic juvenility,  
 This offering of a big arm's bony hand —  
 I'd rather shake than feel shake me, I know —  
 Had moved my dainty mistress to admire  
 An altogether new Ideal — deem  
 Idolatry less due to life's decline  
 Productive of experience, powers mature  
 By dint of usage, the made man — no boy  
 That's all to make! I was the earlier bird —  
 And what I found, I let fall; what you missed,  
 Who is the fool that blames you for?"

"Myself —

For nothing, everything! For finding out

She, whom I worshipped, was a worshipper  
In turn of . . . but why stir up settled mud?  
She married him — the fifty-years-old rake —  
How you have teased the talk from me! At  
last

My secret's told you. I inquired no more,  
Nay, stopped ears when informants unshut  
mouth;

Enough that she and he live, deuce take where,  
Murried and happy, or else miserable —  
It's 'Cut-the-pack;' she turned up ace or  
knave,

And I left Oxford, England, dug my hole  
Out in Dalmatia, till you drew me thence  
Badger-like, — 'Back to London' was the  
word —

'Do things, a many, there, you fancy hard,  
I'll undertake are easy!' — the advice.

I took it, had my twelvemonth's fling with  
you —

(Little hand holding large hand pretty tight  
For all its delicacy — eh, my lord?)

Until when, t'other day, I got a turn  
Somehow and gave up tired: and 'Rest!' bade  
you,

'Marry your cousin, double your estate,  
And take your ease by all means!' So, I loll  
On this the springy sofa, mine next month —  
Or should loll, but that you must needs beat  
rough

The very down you spread me out so smooth.  
I wish this confidence were still to make!  
Ten thousand pounds? You owe me twice the  
sum

For stirring up the black depths! There's  
repose

Or, at least, silence when misfortune seems  
All that one has to bear; but folly — yes,  
Folly, it all was! Fool to be so meek,  
So humble, — such a coward rather say!

Fool, to adore the adorer of a fool!  
Not to have faced him, tried (a useful hint)  
My big and bony, here, against the bunch  
Of lily-colored five with signet-ring,

Most like, for little-finger's sole defence —  
Much as you flaunt the blazon there! I grind  
My teeth, that bite my very heart, to think —  
To know I might have made that woman mine  
But for the folly of the coward — know —  
Or what 's the good of my apprenticeship  
This twelvemonth to a master in the art?  
Mine — had she been mine — just one moment  
mine

For honor, for dishonor — anyhow,  
So that my life, instead of stagnant . . . Well,  
You've poked and proved stagnation is not  
sleep —  
Hang you!"

"Hang you for an ungrateful goose!  
All this means — I who since I knew you first  
Have helped you to conceit yourself this cock  
O' the dunghill with all hens to pick and  
choose —

Ought to have helped you when shell first was  
chipped

By chick that wanted prompting 'Use the spur!'  
While I was elsewhere putting mine to use.

As well might I blame you who kept aloof,  
Seeing you could not guess I was alive,  
Never advised me 'Do as I have done —  
*Reverence such a jewel as your luck*  
*Has scratched up to enrich unworthiness!*'  
As your behavior was, should mine have been,  
— Faults which we both, too late, are sorry for:  
Opposite ages, each with its mistake:  
'If youth but would — if age but could,' you know.  
Don't let us quarrel! Come, we're — young  
and old —

Neither so badly off. Go you your way,  
Cut to the Cousin! I'll to Inn, await  
The issue of diplomacy with Aunt,  
And wait my hour on 'calm activity'  
In rumination manifold — perhaps  
About ten thousand pounds I have to pay!"

## III

Now, as the elder lights the fresh cigar  
Conducive to resource, and saunteringly  
Betakes him to the left-hand backward path, —  
While, much sedate, the younger strides away  
To right and makes for — islanded in lawn  
And edged with shrubbery — the brilliant bit  
Of Barry's building that's the Place, — a pair  
Of women, at this nick of time, one young,  
One very young, are ushered with due pomp  
Into the same lun-parlor — "*disengaged*  
*Entirely now!*" the obsequious landlord smiles,  
"*Since the late occupants — whereof but one*  
*Was quite a stranger*" — (smile enforced by  
bow)

"*Left, a full two hours since, to catch the train,*  
*Probably for the stranger's sake!*" (Bow, smile,  
And backing out from door soft-closed behind.)

Woman and girl, the two, alone inside,  
Begin their talk: the girl, with sparkling eyes —  
"Oh, I forewent him purposely! but you,  
Who joined at — journeyed from the Junction  
here —

I wonder how he failed your notice. Few  
Stop at our station: fellow-passengers  
Assuredly you were — I saw indeed  
His servant, therefore he arrived all right.  
I wanted, you know why, to have you safe  
Inside here first of all, so dodged about  
The dark end of the platform; that's his  
way —

To swing from station straight to avenue  
And stride the half a mile for exercise.  
I fancied you might notice the huge boy.  
He soon gets o'er the distance; at the house  
He'll hear I went to meet him and have  
missed;

He'll wait. No minute of the hour's too much  
Meantime for our preliminary talk:  
First word of which must be — oh, good beyond  
Expression of all goodness — you to come!"

The elder, the superb one, answers slow.

"There was no helping that. You called for  
me,  
Cried, rather: and my old heart answered you.

Still, thank me! since the effort breaks a  
vow —  
At least, a promise to myself."

"I know!

How selfish get you happy folk to be!  
If I should love my husband, must I needs  
Sacrifice straightway all the world to him,  
As you do? Must I never dare leave house  
On this dread Arctic expedition, out  
And in again, six mortal hours, though you,  
You even, my own friend forevermore,  
Adjure me — fast your friend till rude love  
pushed  
Poor friendship from her vantage — just to  
grant

The quarter of a whole day's company  
And counsel? This makes counsel so much  
more

Need and necessity. For here's my block  
Of stumbling: in the face of happiness  
So absolute, fear chills me. If such change  
In heart be but love's easy consequence,  
Do I love? If to marry mean — let go  
All I now live for, should my marriage be?"

The other never once has ceased to gaze  
On the great elm-tree in the open, posed  
Placidly full in front, smooth bole, broad branch,  
And leafage, one green plenitude of May.  
The gathered thought runs into speech at last.

"O you exceeding beauty, bosomful  
Of lights and shades, murmurs and silences,  
Sun-warmth, dew-coolness, — squirrel, bee and  
bird,  
High, higher, highest, till the blue proclaims  
'Leave earth, there's nothing better till next step  
Heavenward!' — so, off flies what has wings to  
help!"

And henceforth they alternate. Says the  
girl —

"That's saved then: marriage spares the early  
taste."

"Four years now, since my eye took note of  
tree!"

"If I had seen no other tree but this  
My life long, while yourself came straight, you  
said,  
From tree which overstretched you and was  
just

One fairy tent with pitcher-leaves that held  
Wine, and a flowery wealth of suns and moons,  
And magic fruits whereon the angels feed —  
I looking out of window on a tree  
Like yonder — otherwise well-known, much-  
liked,

Yet just an English ordinary elm —  
What marvel if you cured me of conceit  
My elm's bird-bee-and-squirrel tenantry  
Was quite the proud possession I supposed?  
And there is evidence you tell me true.  
The fairy marriage-tree reports itself  
Good guardian of the perfect face and form,

Fruits of four years' protection! Married  
friend,  
You are more beautiful than ever!"

"Yes:

I think that likely. I could well dispense  
With all thought fair in feature, mine or no,  
Leave but enough of face to know me by —  
With all found fresh in youth except such  
strength  
As lets a life-long labor earn repose  
Death sells at just that price, they say; and  
so,  
Possibly, what I care not for, I keep."

"How you must know he loves you! Chill,  
before,  
Fear sinks to freezing. Could I sacrifice —  
Assured my lover simply loves my soul —  
One nose-breadth of fair feature? No, indeed!  
Your own love" . . .

"The preliminary hour —  
Don't waste it!"

"But I can't begin at once!  
The angel's self that comes to hear me speak  
Drives away all the care about the speech.  
What an angelic mystery you are —  
Now — that is certain! when I knew you first,  
No break of halo and no bud of wing!  
I thought I knew you, saw you, round and  
through,  
Like a glass ball; suddenly, four years since,  
You vanished, how and whither? Mystery!  
Wherefore? No mystery at all: you loved,  
Were loved again, and left the world of course:  
Who would not? Lapped four years in fairy-  
land,  
Out comes, by no less wonderful a chance,  
The changeling, touched athwart her trellised  
bliss  
Of blush-rose bower by just the old friend's  
voice

That's now struck dumb at her own potency.  
I talk of my small fortunes? Tell me yours  
Rather! The fool I ever was — I am,  
You see that: the true friend you ever had,  
You have, you also recognize. Perhaps,  
Giving you all the love of all my heart,  
Nature, that's niggard in me, has denied  
The after-birth of love there's some one claims,  
— This huge boy, swinging up the avenue;  
And I want counsel: is defect in me,  
Or him who has no right to raise the love?  
My cousin asks my hand: he's young enough.  
Handsome, — my maid thinks, — manly's more  
the word:

He asked my leave to 'drop' the elm-tree there,  
Some morning before breakfast. Gentleness  
Goes with the strength, of course. He's hon-  
est too,

Limpidly truthful. For ability —  
All's in the rough yet. His first taste of life  
Seems to have somehow gone against the  
tongue:

He travelled, tried things — came back, tried  
still more —



He says he 's sick of all. He 's fond of me  
 After a certain careless-earnest way  
 I like : the iron 's crude, — no polished steel  
 Somebody forged before me. I am rich —  
 That 's not the reason, he 's far richer : no,  
 Nor is it that he thinks me pretty, — frank  
 Undoubtedly on that point ! He saw once  
 The pink of face-perfection — oh, not you —  
 Content yourself, my beauty ! — for she proved  
 So thoroughly a cheat, his charmer . . . nay,  
 He runs into extremes, I 'll say at once,  
 Lest you say ! Well, I understand he wants  
 Some one to serve, something to do : and both  
 Requisites so abound in me and mine  
 That here 's the obstacle which stops consent —  
 The smoothness is too smooth, and I mistrust  
 The unseen cat beneath the counterpane.  
 Therefore I thought — ' *Would she but judge for*  
*me,*

*Who, judging for herself, succeeded so !*  
 Do I love him, does he love me, do both  
 Mistake for knowledge — easy ignorance ?  
 Appeal to its proficient in each art !  
 I got rough-smooth through a piano-piece,  
 Rattled away last week till tutor came,  
 Heard me to end, then granted ' *Ach, mein Gott !*  
*Sagen Sie "easy" ? Every note is wrong !*  
*All thumped mit wrist — we 'll trouble fingers now.*  
*The Fräulein will please roll up Raff again*  
*And exercise at Czerny for one month !*  
 Am I to roll up cousin, exercise  
 At Trollope's novels for one month ? Pro-  
 nounce ! "

" Now, place each in the right position first,  
 Adviser and advised one ! I perhaps  
 Am three — nay, four years older ; am, beside,  
 A wife : advantages — to balance which,  
 You have a full fresh joyous sense of life  
 That finds you out life's fit food everywhere,  
 Detects enjoyment where I, slow and dull,  
 Fumble at fault. Already, these four years,  
 Your merest glimpses at the world without  
 Have shown you more than ever met my gaze ;  
 And now, by joyance you inspire joy, — learn  
 While you profess to teach, and teach, although  
 Avowedly a learner. I am dazed  
 Like any owl by sunshine which just sets  
 The sparrow preening plumage ! Here 's to spy  
 — Your cousin ! You have scanned him all  
 your life,

Little or much ; I never saw his face.  
 You have determined on a marriage — used  
 Deliberation therefore — I 'll believe  
 No otherwise, with opportunity  
 For judgment so abounding ! Here stand I —  
 Summoned to give my sentence, for a whim,  
 (Well, at first cloud-fleck thrown athwart your  
 blue.)

Judge what is strangeness' self to me, — say  
 ' *Wed !* '

Or ' *Wed not !* ' whom you promise I shall  
 judge

Presently, at propitious lunch-time, just  
 While he carves chicken ! Sends he leg for  
 wing ?

That revelation into character  
 And conduct must suffice me ! Quite as well

Consult with yonder solitary crow  
 That eyes us from your elm-top ! "

" Still the same !

Do you remember, at the library  
 We saw together somewhere, those two books  
 Somebody said were notice-worthy ? One  
 Lay wide on table, sprawled its painted leaves  
 For all the world's inspection ; shut on shelf  
 Reclined the other volume, closed, clasped  
 locked —

Clear to be let alone. Which page had we  
 Preferred the turning over of ? You were,  
 Are, ever will be the locked lady, hold  
 Inside you secrets written, — soul absorbed,  
 My ink upon your blotting-paper. I —  
 What trace of you have I to show in turn ?  
 Delicate secrets ! No one juvenile  
 Ever essayed at croquet and performed  
 Superiorly but I confided you  
 The sort of hat he wore and hair it held.  
 While you ? One day a calm note comes by  
 post —

' *I am just married, you may like to hear.*  
 Most men would hate you, or they ought ; we  
 love

What we fear, — I do ! ' *Cold* ' I shall expect  
 My cousin calls you. I — dislike not him,  
 But (if I comprehend what loving means)  
 Love you immeasurably more — more — more  
 Than even he who, loving you his wife,  
 Would turn up nose at who impertinent,  
 Frivolous, forward — *loves* that excellence  
 Of all the earth he bows in worship to !  
 And who 's this paragon of privilege ?  
 Simply a country parson : his the charm  
 That worked the miracle ! Oh, too absurd —  
 But that you stand before me as you stand !  
 Such beauty does prove something, everything !  
 Beauty 's the prize-flower which dispenses eye  
 From peering into what has nourished root —  
 Dew or manure : the plant best knows its  
 place.

Enough, from teaching youth and tending age  
 And hearing sermons, — haply writing tracts, —  
 From such strange love-besprinkled compost,  
 lo,

Out blows this triumph ! Therefore love 's the  
 soil

Plants find or fail of. You, with wit to find,  
 Exercise wit on the old friend's behalf,  
 Keep me from failure ! Scan and scrutinize  
 This cousin ! Surely he 's as worth your pains  
 To study as my elm-tree, crow and all,  
 You still keep staring at. I read your  
 thoughts."

" At last ? "

" At first ! ' *Would, tree, a-top of thee*  
*I winged were, like crow perched moveless there,*  
*And so could straightway soar, escape this bore,*  
*Back to my nest where broods whom I love best —*  
*The parson o'er his parish — garish — rarish,*  
*Oh, I could bring the rhyme in if I tried :*  
*The Album here inspires me ! Quite apart*  
*From lyrical expression, have I read*  
*The stare aright, and sings not soul just so ? "*

"Or rather so? 'Cool comfortable elm  
That men make coffins out of, — none for me  
At thy expense, so thou permit I glide  
Under thy ferny feet, and there sleep, sleep,  
Nor dread awaking though in heaven itself!'"

The younger looks with face struck sudden white.

The elder answers its inquiry.

"Dear,  
You are a guesser, not a 'clairvoyante.'  
I'll so far open you the locked and shelved  
Volume, my soul, that you desire to see,  
As let you profit by the title-page" —

"Paradise Lost?"

"Inferno! — All which comes  
Of tempting me to break my vow. Stop here!  
Friend, whom I love the best in the whole  
world,

Come at your call, be sure that I will do  
All your requirement — see and say my mind.  
It may be that by sad apprenticeship  
I have a keener sense: I'll task the same.  
Only indulge me, — here let sight and speech  
Happen, — this Inn is neutral ground, you  
know!

I cannot visit the old house and home,  
Encounter the old sociality  
Abjured forever. Peril quite enough  
In even this first — last, I pray it prove —  
Renunciation of my solitude!  
Back, you, to house and cousin! Leave me  
here,

Who want no entertainment, carry still  
My occupation with me. While I watch  
The shadow inching round those ferny feet,  
Tell him 'A school-friend wants a word with  
me

Up at the inn: time, tide, and train won't wait:  
I must go see her — on and off again —  
You'll keep me company?' Ten minutes'  
talk,

With you in presence, ten more afterward  
With who, alone, conveys me station-bound,  
And I see clearly — and say honestly  
To-morrow: pen shall play tongue's part, you  
know.

Go — quick! for I have made our hand-in-  
hand

Return impossible. So scared you look. —  
If cousin does not greet you with 'What ghost  
Has crossed your path?' I set him down ob-  
tuse."

And after one more look, with face still white,  
The younger does go, while the elder stands  
Occupied by the elm at window there.

#### IV

Occupied by the elm; and, as its shade  
Has crept clock-hand-wise till it ticks at fern  
Five inches further to the South, — the door  
Opens abruptly, some one enters sharp,

The elder man returned to wait the youth:  
Never observes the room's new occupant,  
Throws hat on table, stoops quick, elbow-  
propped

Over the Album wide there, bends down brow  
A cogitative minute, whistles shrill,  
Then, — with a cheery-hopeless laugh-and-lose  
Air of defiance to fate visibly  
Casting the toils about him — mouths once  
more

'Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot!'  
Then clasps-to cover, sends book spinning off  
T' other side table, looks up, starts erect  
Full-face with her who — roused from that ab-  
struse

Question 'Will next tick tip the fern or no?' —  
Fronts him as fully.

All her languor breaks,  
Away withers at once the weariness  
From the black-blooded brow, anger and hate  
Convulse. Speech follows slower, but at  
last —

"You here! I felt, I knew it would befall!  
Knew, by some subtle undividable  
Trick of the trickster, I should, silly-sooth,  
Late or soon, somehow be allured to leave  
Safe hiding and come take of him arrears,  
My torment due on four years' respite! Time  
To pluck the bird's healed breast of down o'er  
wound!

Have your success! Be satisfied this sole  
Seeing you has undone all heaven could do  
These four years, puts me back to you and  
hell!

What will next trick be, next success? No  
doubt

When I shall think to glide into the grave,  
There will you wait disguised as beckoning  
Death,

And catch and capture me forevermore!  
But, God, though I am nothing, be thou all!  
Contest him for me! Strive, for he is strong!"

Already his surprise dies palely out  
In laugh of acquiescing impotence.  
He neither gasps nor hisses: calm and plain —

"I also felt and knew — but otherwise!  
You out of hand and sight and care of me  
These four years, whom I felt, knew, all the  
while . . .

Oh, it's no superstition! It's a gift  
O' the gamester that he snuffs the unseen  
powers

Which help or harm him. Well I knew what  
lurked,

Lay perdu paralyzing me. — drugged, drowsed  
And damnified my soul and body both!  
Down and down, see where you have dragged  
me to,

You and your malice! I was, four years  
since,

— Well, a poor creature! I became a knave.  
I squandered my own pence: I plump my purse  
With other people's pounds. I practised play  
Because I liked it: play turns labor now

Because there 's profit also in the sport.  
I gamed with men of equal age and craft :  
I steal here with a boy as green as grass  
Whom I have tightened hold on slow and sure  
This long while, just to bring about to-day  
When the boy beats me hollow, buries me  
In ruin who was sure to beggar him.  
Oh, time indeed I should look up and laugh  
'Surely she closes on me!' Here you stand!

And stand she does: while volubility,  
With him, keeps on the increase, for his tongue  
After long locking-up is loosed for once.

"Certain the taunt is happy!" he resumes:  
"So, I it was allured you — only I  
— I, and none other — to this spectacle —  
Your triumph, my despair — you woman-fiend  
That front me! Well, I have my wish, then!  
See

The low wide brow oppressed by sweeps of hair  
Darker and darker as they coil and swathe  
The crowned corpse-wanness whence the eyes  
burn black,  
Not asleep now! not pin-points dwarfed be-  
neath

Either great bridging eyebrow — poor blank  
beads —

Babies, I've pleased to pity in my time:  
How they protrude and glow immense with hate!  
The long triumphant nose attains — retains  
Just the perfection; and there 's scarlet-skein  
My ancient enemy, her lip and lip,  
Sense-free, sense-frighting lips clenched cold  
and bold

Because of chin, that based resolve beneath!  
Then the columnar neck completes the whole  
Greek-sculpture-baffling body! Do I see?  
Can I observe? You wait next word to come?  
Well, wait and want! since no one blight I bid  
Consume one least perfection. Each and all,  
As they are rightly shocking now to me,  
So may they still continue! Value them?  
Ay, as the vendor knows the money-worth  
Of his Greek statue, fools aspire to buy,  
And he to see the back of! Let us laugh!  
You have absolved me from my sin at least!  
You stand stout, strong, in the rude health of  
hate,

No touch of the tame timid nullity  
My cowardice, forsooth, has practised on!  
Ay, while you seemed to hint some fine fifth act  
Of tragedy should freeze blood, end the farce,  
I never doubted all was joke. I kept,  
Maybe, an eye alert on paragraphs,  
Newspaper-notice, — let no inquest slip,  
Accident, disappearance: sound and safe  
Were you, my victim, not of mind to die!  
So, my worst fancy that could spoil the smooth  
Of pillow, and arrest descent of sleep,  
Was 'Into what dim hole can she have dived,  
She and her wrongs, her woe that 's wearing flesh  
And blood away?' Whereas, see, sorrow swells!  
Or, fattened, fulsome, have you fed on me,  
Sucked out my substance? How much gloss, I  
pray,  
O'erbloomed those hair-swathes when there  
crept from you

To me that craze, else unaccountable,  
Which urged me to contest our county-seat  
With whom but my own brother's nominee?  
Did that mouth's pulp glow ruby from carmine  
While I misused my moment, pushed, — one  
word, —

One hair's-breadth more of gesture, — idiot-like  
Past passion, floundered on to the grotesque,  
And lost the heiress in a grin? At least,  
You made no such mistake! You tickled fish,  
Landed your prize the true artistic way!  
How did the smug young curate rise to tune  
Of 'Friend, a fatal fact divides us. Love  
Suits me no longer. I have suffered shame,  
Betrayal: past is past; the future — yours —  
Shall never be contaminate by mine!  
I might have spared me this confession, not  
— Oh, never by some hideousest of lies,  
Easy, impenetrable! No! but say,  
By just the quiet answer — "I am cold."  
Falsehood aunt, each shadow of thee, hence!  
Had happier fortune willed . . . but dreams are  
vain.

Now, leave me — yes, for pity's sake!' Aha,  
Who fails to see the curate as his face  
Reddened and whitened, wanted handkerchief  
At wrinkling brow and twinkling eye, until  
Out burst the proper 'Angel, whom the fiend  
Has thought to smirch, — thy whiteness, at one  
wipe

Of holy cambric, shall disgrace the swan!  
Mine be the task' . . . and so forth! Fool? not  
he!

Cunning in flavors, rather! What but sour  
Suspected makes the sweetness doubly sweet,  
And what stings love from faint to flamboyant  
But the fear-sprinkle? Even horror helps —  
'Love's flame in me by such recited wrong  
Drenched, quenched, indeed? It burns the fierce-  
lier thence!'

Why, I have known men never love their wives  
Till somebody — myself, suppose — had  
'drenched

And quenched love,' so the blockheads whined:  
as if

The fluid fire that lifts the torpid limb  
Were a wrong done to palsy. But I thrilled  
No palsied person: half my age, or less,  
The curate was, I'll wager: o'er young blood  
Your beauty triumphed! Eh, but — was it he?  
Then, it was he, I heard of! None beside!  
How frank you were about the audacious boy  
Who fell upon you like a thunderbolt —  
Passion and protestation! He it was  
Reserved in petto! Ay, and 'rich' beside —  
'Rich' — how supremely did disdain curl nose!  
All that I heard was — 'wedded to a priest';  
Informants sunk youth, riches and the rest.  
And so my lawless love departed loves,  
That loves might come together with a rush!  
Surely this last achievement sucked me dry:  
Indeed, that way my wits went. Mistress-queen,  
Be merciful and let your subject slink  
Into dark safety! He's a beggar, see —  
Do not turn back his ship, Australia-bound,  
And bid her land him right amid some crowd  
Of creditors, assembled by your curse!  
Don't cause the very rope to crack (you can!)



Whereon he spends his last (friend's) sixpence,  
just  
The moment when he hoped to hang himself !  
Be satisfied you beat him ! ”

She replies —

“ Beat him ! I do. To all that you confess  
Of object failure, I extend belief.  
Your very face confirms it : God is just !  
Let my face — fix your eyes ! — in turn confirm  
What I shall say. All-abstract 's but half truth ;  
Add to all-abstract knave as perfect fool !  
So is it you probed human nature, so  
Prognosticated of me ? Lay these words  
To heart then, or where God meant heart should  
lurk !

That moment when you first revealed yourself,  
My simple impulse prompted — end forthwith  
The ruin of a life uprooted thus  
To surely perish ! How should such spoiled tree  
Henceforward balk the wind of its worst sport,  
Fail to go falling deeper, falling down  
From sin to sin until some depth were reached  
Doomed to the weakest by the wickedest  
Of weak and wicked human-kind ? But when,  
That self-display made absolute, — behold  
A new revelation ! — round you pleased to veer,  
Propose me what should prompt annul the past,  
Make me ‘ *amends by marriage* ’ — in your  
phrase,

Incorporate me henceforth, body and soul,  
With soul and body which mere brushing past  
Brought leprosy upon me — ‘ *marry* ’ these !  
Why, then despair broke, reassurance dawned,  
Clear-sighted was I that who hurled contempt  
As I — thank God ! — at the contemptible,  
Was scarce an utter weakling. Rent away  
By treason from my rightful pride of place,  
I was not destined to the shame below.  
A cleft had caught me : I might perish there,  
But thence to be dislodged and whirled at last  
Where the black torrent sweeps the sewage —  
no !

‘ *Bare breast be on hard rock,* ’ laughed out my  
soul

In gratitude, ‘ *howe’er rock’s grip may grind !  
The plain, rough, wretched holdfast shall suffice  
This wreck of me !* ’ The wind, — I broke in  
bloom

At passage of, — which stripped me bole and  
branch,

Twisted me up and tossed me here, — turns  
back,

And, playful ever, would replant the spoil ?  
Be satisfied, not one least leaf that’s mine  
Shall henceforth help wind’s sport to exercise !  
Rather I give such remnant to the rock  
Which never dreamed a straw would settle  
there.

Rock may not thank me, may not feel my  
breast,

Even : enough that I feel, hard and cold,  
Its safety my salvation. Safe and saved,  
I lived, live. When the tempter shall persuade  
His prey to slip down, slide off, trust the  
wind, —

Now that I know if God or Satan be

Prince of the Power of the Air, — then, then,  
indeed,  
Let my life end and degradation too ! ”

“ Good ! ” he smiles, “ true Lord Byron ! ”  
‘ *Tree and rock :*

Rock, — there’s advancement ! He’s at first  
a youth,

Rich, worthless therefore ; next he grows a  
priest :

Youth, riches prove a notable resource,  
When to leave me for their possessor gluts  
Malice abundantly ; and now, last change,  
The young rich parson represents a rock  
— Bloodstone, no doubt. He’s Evangelical ?  
Your Ritualists prefer the Church for spouse ! ”

She speaks.

“ I have a story to relate.

There was a parish-priest, my father knew,  
Elderly, poor : I used to pity him  
Before I learned what woes are pity-worth.  
Elderly was grown old now, scanty means  
Were straitening fast to poverty, beside  
The ailments which await in such a case.  
Limited every way, a perfect man  
Within the bounds built up and up since birth  
Breast-high about him till the outside world  
Was blank save o’erhead one blue bit of sky —  
Faith : he had faith in dogma, small or great,  
As in the fact that if he claved his skull  
He’d find a brain there : who proves such a fact  
No falsehood by experiment at price  
Of soul and body ? The one rule of life  
Delivered him in childhood was ‘ *Obe* !  
*Labor !* ’ He had obeyed and labored — tame,  
True to the mill-track blinked on from above.  
Some scholarship he may have gained in youth :  
Gone — dropt or flung behind. Some blossom-  
flake,

Spring’s boon, descends on every vernal head,  
I used to think ; but January joins  
December, as his year had known no May ;  
Trouble its snow-deposit, — cold and old !  
I heard it was his will to take a wife,  
A helpmate. Duty bade him tend and teach —  
How ? with experience null, nor sympathy  
Abundant, — while himself worked dogma  
dead,

Who would play ministrant to sickness, age,  
Womankind, childhood ? These demand a  
wife.

Supply the want, then ! theirs the wife ; for  
him —

No coarsest sample of the proper sex  
But would have served his purpose equally  
With God’s own angel, — let but knowledge  
match

Her coarseness : zeal does only half the work.  
I saw this — knew the purblind honest drudge  
Was wearing out his simple blameless life,  
And wanted help beneath a burden — borne  
To treasure-house or dust-heap, what cared I ?  
Partner he needed : I proposed myself,  
Nor much surprised him — duty was so clear !  
Gratitude ? What for ? Gain of Paradise —  
Escape, perhaps, from the dire penalty

Of who hides talent in a napkin? No:  
His scruple was — should I be strong enough  
— In body? since of weakness in the mind,  
Weariness in the heart — no fear of these?  
He took me as these Arctic voyagers  
Take an aspirant to their toil and pain:  
Can he endure them? — that's the point, and  
not

— Will he? Who would not, rather! Where-  
upon,

I pleaded far more earnestly for leave  
To give myself away, than you to gain  
What you called priceless till you gained the  
heart

And soul and body! which, as beggars serve  
Extorted alms, you straightway spat upon.  
Not so my husband, — for I gained my suit,  
And had my value put at once to proof.  
Ask him! These four years I have died away  
In village-life. The village? Ugliness  
At best and filthiness at worst, inside.  
Outside, sterility — earth sown with salt  
Or what keeps even grass from growing fresh.  
The life? I teach the poor and learn, myself,  
That commonplace to such stupidity  
Is all-recondite. Being brutalized  
Their true need is brute-language, cheery  
grunts

And kindly cluckings, no articulate  
Nonsense that's elsewhere knowledge. Tend  
the sick,

Sickened myself at pig-perversity,  
Cat-craft, dog-snarling — maybe, snapping" . . .

"Brief:

You eat that root of bitterness called Man  
— Raw: I prefer it cooked, with social sauce!  
So, he was not the rich youth after all!  
Well, I mistook. But somewhere needs must  
be

The compensation. If not young nor rich" . . .

"You interrupt!"

"Because you've daubed enough  
Bistre for background. Play the artist now,  
Produce your figure well-relieved in front!  
The contrast — do not I anticipate?  
Though neither rich nor young — what then?  
'Tis all

Forgotten, all this ignobility,  
In the dear home, the darling word, the smile,  
The something sweeter" . . .

"Yes, you interrupt.

I have my purpose and proceed. Who lives  
With beasts assumes beast-nature, look and  
voice,

And, much more, thought, for beasts think.  
Selfishness

In us met selfishness in them, deserved  
Such answer as it gained. My husband, bent  
On saving his own soul by saving theirs. —  
They, bent on being saved if saving soul  
Included body's getting bread and cheese  
Somehow in life and somehow after death, —  
Both parties were alike in the same boat,  
One danger, therefore one equality.

Safety induces culture: culture seeks  
To institute, extend and multiply  
The difference between safe man and man,  
Able to live alone now; progress means  
What but abandonment of fellowship?  
We were in common danger, still stuck close.  
No new books, — were the old ones mastered?  
yet?

No pictures and no music: these divert  
— What from? the staving danger off! You  
paint

The waterspout above, you set to words  
The roaring of the tempest round you?  
Thanks!

Amusement? Talk at end of the tired day  
Of the more tiresome morrow! I transcribed  
The page on page of sermon — scrawlings —  
stopped

Intellect's eye and ear to sense and sound —  
Vainly: the sound and sense would penetrate  
To brain and plague there in despite of me  
Maddened to know more moral good were done  
Had we two simply sallied forth and preached  
I' the 'Green' they call their grimy, — I with  
twang

Of long-disused guitar, — with cut and slash  
Of much-misvalued horsewhip he, — to bid  
The peaceable come dance, the peace-breaker  
Pay in his person! Whereas — Heaven and  
Hell,

Excite with that, restrain with this! — so dealt  
His drugs my husband; as he dosed himself,  
He drenched his cattle: and, for all my part  
Was just to dub the mortar, never fear  
But drugs, hand pestled at, have poisoned  
nose!

Heaven he let pass, left wisely undescribed:  
As applicable therefore to the sleep  
I want, that knows no waking — as to what's  
Conceived of as the proper prize to tempt  
Souls less world-weary: there, no fault to find!  
But Hell he made explicit. After death,  
Life: man created new, ingeniously  
Perfect for a vindictive purpose now,

That man, first fashioned in beneficence,  
Was proved a failure; intellect at length  
Replacing old obtuseness, memory  
Made mindful of delinquent's bygone deeds  
Now that remorse was vain, which life-long lay  
Dormant when lesson might be laid to heart;  
New gift of observation up and down  
And round man's self, new power to apprehend  
Each necessary consequence of act

In man for well or ill — things obsolete —  
Just granted to supplant the idiocy  
Man's only guide while act was yet to choose,  
With ill or well momentarily its fruit;  
A faculty of immense suffering  
Conferred on mind and body, — mind, erewhile  
Unvisited by one compunctious dream  
During sin's drunken slumber, startled up,  
Stung through and through by sin's significance  
Now that the holy was abolished — just  
As body which, alive, broke down beneath  
Knowledge, lay helpless in the path to good,  
Failed to accomplish aught legitimate,  
Achieve aught worthy, — which grew old in  
youth,

And at its longest fell a cut-down flower, —  
 Dying, this too revived by miracle  
 To bear no end of burden now that back  
 Supported torture to no use at all,  
 And live imperishably potent — since  
 Life's potency was impotent to ward  
 One plague off which made earth a hell before.  
 This doctrine, which one healthy view of  
 things,

One sane sight of the general ordinance —  
 Nature — and its particular object — man, —  
 Which one mere eye-cast at the character  
 Of Who made these and gave man sense to  
 boot,

Had dissipated once and evermore, —  
 This doctrine I have dosed our flock withal.  
 Why? Because none believed it. *They* desire  
 Such Heaven and dread such Hell, whom every  
 day

The alehouse tempts from one, a dog-fight bids  
 Defy the other? All the harm is done  
 Ourselves — done my good husband who in  
 youth

Perhaps read Dickens, done myself who still  
 Could play both Bach and Brahms. Such life  
 I lead —

Thanks to you, knave! You learn its qual-  
 ity —

Thanks to me, fool!"

He eyes her earnestly,

But she continues.

" — Life which, thanks once more  
 To you, arch-knave as exquisitest fool,  
 I acquiescingly — I gratefully  
 Take back again to heart! and hence this  
 speech

Which yesterday had spared you. Four years  
 long

Life — I began to find intolerable,  
 Only this moment. Ere your entry just,  
 The leap of heart which answered, spite of me,  
 A friend's first summons, first provocative,  
 Authoritative, nay, compulsive call  
 To quit, though for a single day, my house  
 Of bondage — made return seem horrible.  
 I heard again a human lucid laugh  
 All trust, no fear; again saw earth pursue  
 Its narrow busy way amid small cares,  
 Smaller contentments, much weeds, some few  
 flowers, —

Never suspicious of a thunderbolt  
 Avenging presently each daisy's death.  
 I recognized the beech-tree, knew the thrush  
 Repeated his old music-phrase, — all right,  
 How wrong was I, then! But your entry  
 broke

Illusion, bade me back to bounds at once.  
 I honestly submit my soul: which sprang  
 At love, and losing love lies signed and sealed  
 'Failure.' No love more? then, no beauty  
 more

Which tends to breed love! Purify my  
 powers,

Effortless till some other world procures  
 Some other chance of prize! or, if none be, —  
 Nor second world nor chance, — undesecrate

Die then this aftergrowth of heart, surmised  
 Where May's precipitation left June blank!  
 Better have failed in the high aim, as I,  
 Than vulgarly in the low aim succeed  
 As, God be thanked, I do not! Ugliness  
 Had I called beauty, falsehood — truth, and  
 you —

My lover! No — this earth's unchanged for  
 me,

By his enchantment whom God made the  
 Prince

O' the Power o' the Air, into a Heaven: there  
 is

Heaven, since there is Heaven's simulation —  
 earth.

I sit possessed in patience; prison-roof  
 Shall break one day and Heaven beam over-  
 head."

His smile is done with; he speaks bitterly.

"Take my congratulations, and permit  
 I wish myself had proved as teachable!

— Or, no! until you taught me, could I learn,  
 A lesson from experience ne'er till now  
 Conceded? Please you listen while I show  
 How thoroughly you estimate my worth  
 And yours — the immeasurably superior! I  
 Believed at least in one thing, first to last, —  
 Your love to me: I was the vile and you  
 The precious; I abused you, I betrayed,  
 But doubted — never! Why else go my way  
 Judas-like plodding to this Potters' Field  
 Where fate now finds me? What has dinned

my ear  
 And dogged my step? The spectre with the  
 shriek

'*Such she was, such were you, whose punishment  
 Is just!*' And such she was not, all the while!  
 She never owned a love to outrage, faith  
 To pay with falsehood! For, my heart knows  
 this —

Love once and you love always. Why, it's  
 down

Here in the Album: every lover knows  
 Love may use hate but — turn to hate, itself —  
 Turn even to indifference — no, indeed!  
 Well, I have been spellbound, deluded like  
 The witless negro by the Obeah-man  
 Who bids him wither: so, his eye grows dim,  
 His arm slack, arrow misses aim and spear  
 Goes wandering wide, — and all the woe be-  
 cause

He proved untrue to Fetish, who, he finds,  
 Was just a feather-phantom! I wronged love,  
 Am ruined, — and there was no love to  
 wrong!"

"No love? Ah, dead love! I invoke thy  
 ghost

To show the murderer where thy heart poured  
 life

At summings of the stroke he doubts was dealt  
 On pasteboard and pretence! Not love, my  
 love?

I changed for you the very laws of life:  
 Made you the standard of all right, all fair.  
 No genius but you could have been, no sage,



No sufferer — which is grandest — for the truth!

My hero — where the heroic only hid  
To burst from hiding, brighten earth one day!  
Age and decline were man's maturity;  
Face, form were nature's type: more grace,  
more strength,

What had they been but just superfluous  
gauds,

Lawless divergence? I have danced through  
day

On tiptoe at the music of a word,  
Have wondered where was darkness gone as  
night

Burst out in stars at brilliance of a smile!  
Lonely, I placed the chair to help me seat  
Your fancied presence; in companionship,  
I kept my finger constant to your glove  
Glued to my breast; then — where was all the  
world?

I schemed — not dreamed — how I might die  
some death

Should save your finger aching! Who creates  
Destroys, he only: I had laughed to scorn  
Whatever angel tried to shake my faith  
And make you seem unworthy: you yourself  
Only could do that! With a touch 't was done.

'Give me all, trust me wholly!' At the word,  
I did give, I did trust — and thereupon  
The touch did follow. Ah, the quiet smile,  
The masterfully-folded arm in arm,  
As trick obtained its triumph one time more!  
In turn, my soul too triumphs in defeat:  
Treason like faith moves mountains: love is  
gone!"

He paces to and fro, stops, stands quite close  
And calls her by her name. Then —

"God forgives:

Forgive you, delegate of God, brought near  
As never priests could bring him to this soul  
That prays you both — forgive me! I abase —  
Know myself mad and monstrous utterly  
In all I did that moment; but as God  
Gives me this knowledge — heart to feel and  
tongue

To testify — so be you gracious too!  
Judge no man by the solitary work  
Of — well, they do say and I can believe —  
The devil in him: his, the moment, — mine  
The life — your life!"

He names her name again.

"You were just — merciful as just, you were  
In giving me no respite: punishment  
Followed offending. Sane and sound once  
more,

The patient thanks decision, promptitude,  
Which flung him prone and fastened him from  
hurt,

Haply to others, surely to himself.  
I wake and would not you had spared one  
pang.

All 's well that ends well!"

Yet again her name.

"Had you no fault? Why must you change,  
forsooth,

Parts, why reverse positions, spoil the play?  
Why did your nobleness look up to me,  
Not down on the ignoble thing confessed?  
Was it your part to stoop, or lift the low?  
Wherefore did God exalt you? Who would  
teach

The brute man's tameness and intelligence  
Must never drop the dominating eye:  
Wink — and what wonder if the mad fit break,  
Followed by stripes and fasting? Sound and  
sane,

My life, chastised now, couches at your foot.  
Accept, redeem me! Do your eyes ask 'How?'  
I stand here penniless, a beggar: talk  
What idle trash I may, this final blow  
Of fortune tells me, I disburse, indeed,  
This boy his winnings? when each bubble-  
scheme

That danced athwart my brain, a minute since,  
The worse the better, — of repairing straight  
My misadventure by fresh enterprise,  
Capture of other boys in foolishness  
His fellows, — when these fancies faded away  
At first sight of the lost so long, the found  
So late, the lady of my life, before  
Whose presence I, the lost, am also found  
Incapable of one least touch of mean  
Expedient, I who teemed with plot and wile —  
That family of snakes your eye bids flee!  
Listen! Our troublesomest dreams die off  
In daylight: I awake, and dream is — where?  
I rouse up from the past: one touch dispels  
England and all here. I secured long since  
A certain refuge, solitary home  
To hide in, should the head strike work one  
day,

The hand forget its cunning, or perhaps  
Society grow savage, — there to end  
My life's remainder, which, say what fools will,  
Is or should be the best of life, — its fruit,  
All tends to, root and stem and leaf and flower.  
Come with me, love, loved once, loved only,  
come,

Blend loves there! Let this parenthetic doubt  
Of love, in me, have been the trial test  
Appointed to all flesh at some one stage  
Of soul's achievement, — when the strong man  
doubts

His strength, the good man whether goodness  
be,

The artist in the dark seeks, fails to find  
Vocation, and the saint forswears his shrine.  
What if the lover may elude, no more  
Than these, probative dark, must search the  
sky

Vainly for love, his soul's star? But the orb  
Breaks from eclipse: I breathe again: I love!  
Tempted, I fell; but fallen — fallen lie  
Here at your feet, see! Leave this poor pre-  
tence

Of union with a nature and its needs  
Repugnant to your needs and nature! Nay,  
False, beyond falsity you reprehend  
In me, is such mock marriage with such mere  
Man-mask as — whom you witless wrong, beside,  
By that expenditure of heart and brain

He reck's no more of than would yonder tree  
If watered with your life-blood : rains and dews  
Answer its ends sufficiently, while me  
One drop saves — sends to flower and fruit at  
last

The laggard virtue in the soul which else  
Cumbers the ground ! Quickened me ! Call me  
yours —

Yours and the world's — yours and the world's  
and God's !

Yes, for you can, you only ! Think ! Confirm  
Your instinct ! Say, a minute since, I seemed  
The castaway you count me, — all the more  
Apparent shall the angelic potency  
Lift me from out perdition's deep of deeps  
To light and life and love ! — that's love for  
you —

Love that already dares match might with  
yours.

You loved one worthy, — in your estimate, —  
When time was ; you desecrated the unworthy  
taint,

And where was love then ? No such test could  
e'er

Try my love : but you hate me and revile ;  
Hatred, revilement — had you these to bear,  
Would you, as I do, nor revile, nor hate,  
But simply love on, love the more, perchance ?  
Abide by your own proof ! *' Your love was  
love :*

*Its ghost knows no forgetting !* Heart of mine,  
Would that I dared remember ! Too unwise  
Were he who lost a treasure, did himself  
Enlarge upon the sparkling catalogue  
Of gems to her his queen who trusted late  
The keeper of her caskets ! Can it be  
That I, custodian of such relic still  
As your contempt permits me to retain,  
All I dare hug to breast is — *' How your glove  
Burst and displayed the long thin lily streak !*  
What may have followed — that is forfeit now !  
I hope the proud man has grown humble !  
True —

One grace of humbleness absents itself —  
Silence ! yet love lies deeper than all words,  
And not the spoken but the speechless love  
Waits answer ere I rise and go my way."

Whereupon, yet one other time the name.

To end she looks the large deliberate look,  
Even prolongs it somewhat ; then the soul  
Bursts forth in a clear laugh that lengthens on,  
On, till — thinned, softened, silvered, one  
might say

The bitter runnel hides itself in sand,  
Moistens the hard gray grimly comic speech.

" Ay — give the baffled angler even yet  
His supreme triumph as he hailes to shore  
A second time the fish once 'scaped from  
hook —

So artfully has new bait hidden old  
Blood-imbued iron ! Ay, no barb's beneath  
The gilded minnow here ! You bid break trust,  
This time, with who trusts me, — not simply  
bid

Me trust you, me who ruined but myself,

In trusting but myself ! Since, thanks to you,  
I know the feel of sin and shame, — be sure,  
I shall obey you and impose them both  
On one who happens to be ignorant  
Although my husband — for the lure is love,  
Your love ! Try other tackle, fisher-friend !  
Repentance, expiation, hopes and fears,  
What you had been, may yet be, would I but  
Prove helpmate to my hero — one and all  
These silks and worsteds round the hook seduce  
Hardly the late torn throat and mangled  
tongue.

Pack up, I pray, the whole assortment prompt !  
Who wonders at variety of wile  
In the Arch-cheat ? You are the Adversary !  
Your fate is of your choosing : have your  
choice !

Wander the world, — God has some end to  
serve,

Ere he suppress you ! He waits : I endure,  
But interpose no finger-tip, forsooth,  
To stop your passage to the pit. Enough  
That I am stable, uninvolved by you  
In the rush downwards : free I gaze and fixed ;  
Your smiles, your tears, prayers, curses move  
alike

My crowned contempt. You kneel ? Prostrate  
yourself !

To earth, and would the whole world saw you  
there !"

Whereupon — " All right ! " carelessly begins  
Somebody from outside, who mounts the stair,  
And sends his voice for herald of approach :  
Half in half out the doorway as the door  
Gives way to push.

" Old fellow, all's no good !  
The train's your portion ! Lay the blame on  
me !

I'm no diplomatist, and Bismarck's self  
Had hardly braved the awful Aunt at breach  
Of proposition — so has world-repute  
Preceded the illustrious stranger ! Ah ! " —

Quick the voice changes to astonishment,  
Then horror, as the youth stops, sees, and knows.

The man who knelt starts up from kneeling,  
stands  
Moving no muscle, and confronts the stare.

One great red outbreak buries — throat and  
brow —

The lady's proud pale queenliness of scorn :  
Then her great eyes that turned so quick, be-  
come

Intenser : — quail at gaze, not they indeed !

## V

It is the young man shatters silence first.

" Well, my lord — for indeed my lord you are,  
I little guessed how rightly — this last proof  
Of lordship-paramount confounds too much  
My simple headpiece ! Let's see how we stand

Each to the other ! how we stood i' the game  
Of life an hour ago, — the magpies, stile,  
And oak-tree witnessed. Truth exchanged for  
truth —

My lord confessed his four-years-old affair —  
How he seduced and then forsook the girl  
Who married somebody and left him sad.  
My pitiful experience was — I loved  
A girl whose gown's hem had I dared to touch  
My finger would have failed me, palsy-fixed.  
She left me, sad enough, to marry — whom ?  
A better man, — then possibly not you !  
How does the game stand ? Who is who and  
what

Is what, o' the board now, since an hour went  
by ?

My lord's '*seduced, forsaken, sacrificed,*'  
Starts up, my lord's familiar instrument,  
Associate and accomplice, mistress-slave —  
Shares his adventure, follows on the sly !  
— Ay, and since 'bag and baggage' is a  
phrase —

Baggage lay hid in carpet-bag belike,  
Was but unpadlocked when occasion came  
For holding council, since my back was turned,  
On how invent ten thousand pounds which,  
paid,

Would lure the winner to lose twenty more,  
Beside refunding these ! Why else allow  
The fool to gain them ? So displays herself  
The lady whom my heart believed — oh, laugh !  
Noble and pure : whom my heart loved at once,  
And who at once did speak truth when she said  
'*I am not mine now but another's*' — thus  
Would treat that other's ! Devil's-marriage, eh ?  
'*My lie weds thine till lucre us do part ?*'  
But pity me the snobbish simpleton,  
You two aristocratic tiptop swells  
At swindling ! Quits, I cry ! Decamp content  
With skin I'm peeled of : do not strip bones  
bare —

As that you could, I have no doubt at all !  
O you two rare ones ! Male and female, Sir !  
The male there smirked, this morning, '*Come,*  
*my boy —*  
*Out with it ! You've been crossed in love, I*  
*think :*

*I recognize the lover's hangdog look ;*  
*Make a clean breast and match my confidence,*  
*For, I'll be frank, I too have had my fling,*  
*Am punished for my fault, and smart enough !*  
*Where now the victim hides her head, God*  
*knows !'*

Here loomed her head, life-large, the devil  
knew !  
Look out, Salvini ! Here's your man, your  
match !

He and I sat applauding, stall by stall,  
Last Monday — '*Here's Othello*' was our word,  
'*But where's Iago ?*' Where ? Why, there !  
And now

The fellow-artist, female specimen —  
Oh, lady, you must needs describe yourself !  
He's great in art, but you — how greater still  
— (If I can rightly, out of all I learned,  
Apply one bit of Latin that assures  
'*Art means just art's concealment*' ) — tower your-  
self !

For he stands plainly visible henceforth —  
Liar and scamp : while you, in artistry  
Prove so consummate — or I prove perhaps  
So absolute an ass — that — either way —  
You still do seem to me who worshipped you  
And see you take the homage of this man,  
Your master, who played slave and knelt, no  
doubt,

Before a mistress in his very craft . . .  
Well, take the fact, I nor believe my eyes,  
Nor trust my understanding ! Still you seem  
Noble and pure as when we had the talk  
Under the tower, beneath the trees, that day.  
And there 's the key explains the secret : down  
He knelt to ask your leave to rise a grade  
I' the mystery of humbug : well he may !  
For how you beat him ! Half an hour ago,  
I held your master for my best of friends ;  
And now I hate him ! Four years since, you  
seemed

My heart's one love : well, and you so remain !  
What's he to you in craft ? "

She looks him through.

" My friend, 't is just that friendship have its  
turn —

Interrogate thus me whom one, of foes  
The worst, has questioned and is answered by.  
Take you as frank an answer ! answers both  
Begin alike so far, divergent soon  
World-wide — I own superiority  
Over you, over him. As him I searched,  
So do you stand seen through and through by me  
Who, this time, proud, report your crystal  
shrines

A dewdrop, plain as amber prisons round  
A spider in the hollow heart his house !  
Nowise are you that thing my fancy feared  
When out you stepped on me, a minute since,  
— This man's confederate ! no, you step not  
thus

Obsequiously at beck and call to help  
At need some second scheme, and supplement  
Guile by force, use my shame to pinion me  
From struggle and escape ! I fancied that !  
Forgive me ! Only by strange chance, — most  
strange

In even this strange world, — you enter now,  
Obtain your knowledge. Me you have not  
wronged

Who never wronged you — least of all, my  
friend,

That day beneath the College tower and trees,  
When I refused to say, — '*not friend, but love !*'  
Had I been found as free as air when first  
We met, I scarcely could have loved you. No —  
For where was that in you which claimed return  
Of love ? My eyes were all too weak to probe  
This other's seeming, but that seeming loved  
The soul in me, and lied — I know too late !  
While your truth was truth : and I knew at once  
My power was just my beauty — bear the word —  
As I must bear, of all my qualities,  
To name the poorest one that serves my soul  
And simulates myself ! So much in me  
You loved, I know : the something that's be-  
neath



Heard not your call, — uncalled, no answer comes!

For, since in every love, or soon or late,  
Soul must awake and seek out soul for soul,  
Yours, overlooking mine then, would, some day,  
Take flight to find some other; so it proved —  
Missing me, you were ready for this man.  
I apprehend the whole relation: his —  
The soul wherein you saw your type of worth  
At once, true object of your tribute. Well  
Might I refuse such half-heart's homage! Love  
Divining, had assured you I no more  
Stand his participant in infamy  
Than you — I need no love to recognize  
As simply dupe and nowise fellow-cheat!  
Therefore accept one last friend's-word, — your  
friend's,

All men's friend, save a felon's. Ravel out  
The bad embroilment howsoever you may,  
Distribute as it please you praise or blame  
To me — so you but fling this mockery far —  
Renounce this rag-and-feather hero-sham,  
This poodle clipt to pattern, lion-like!  
Throw him his thousands back, and lay to heart  
The lesson I was sent, — if man discerned  
Ever God's message, — just to teach. I judge —  
To far another issue than could dream  
Your cousin, — younger, fairer, as befits —  
Who summoned me to judgment's exercise.  
I find you, save in folly, innocent.  
And in my verdict lies your fate; at choice  
Of mine your cousin takes or leaves you.  
'Take!'

I bid her — for you tremble back to truth!  
She turns the scale, — one touch of the pure  
hand

Shall so press down, emprison past relapse  
Farther vibration 'twixt veracity —  
That's honest solid earth — and falsehood, theft  
And air, that's one illusive emptiness!  
That reptile capture you? I conquered her:  
You saw him cower before me! Have no fear  
He shall offend you farther. Spare to spurn —  
Safe let him slink hence till some subtler Eve  
Than I, anticipate the snake — bruise head  
Ere he bruise heel — or, wavier than the first,  
Some Adam purge earth's garden of its pest  
Before the slaver spoil the Tree of Life!

"You! Leave this youth, as he leaves you, as I  
Leave each! There's caution surely extant yet  
Though conscience in you were too vain a claim.  
Hence quickly! Keep the cash but leave un-  
soiled

The heart I resene and would lay to heal  
Beside another's! Never let her know  
How near came taint of your companionship!"

"Ah" — draws a long breath with a new  
strange look

The man she interpellates — soul astray  
Under its covert, as, beneath the dust,  
A coppery sparkle all at once denotes  
The hid snake has conceived a purpose.

"Ah —  
Innocence should be crowned with ignorance?  
Desirable indeed, but difficult!

As if yourself, now, had not glorified  
Your helpmate by imparting him a hint  
Of how a monster made the victim bleed  
Ere crook and courage saved her — hint, I say, —  
Not the whole horror, — that were needless  
risk, —

But just such inkling, fancy of the fact,  
As should suffice to qualify henceforth  
The shepherd, when another lamb would stray,  
For warning: 'Ware the wolf!' No doubt at all,  
Silence is generosity, — keeps wolf  
Unhunted by flock's warder! Excellent,  
Did — generous to me, mean — just to him!  
But, screening the deceiver, lamb were found  
Outraging the deceitless! So, — he knows!  
And yet, unharmed I breathe — perchance,  
repent —

Thanks to the mercifully-politic!"

"Ignorance is not innocence but sin —  
Witness yourself ignore what after-pangs  
Pursue the plague-infected. Merciful  
Am I? Perhaps! the more contempt, the less  
Hatred; and who so worthy of contempt  
As you that rest assured I cooled the spot  
I could not cure, by poisoning, forsooth,  
Whose hand I pressed there? Understand for  
once

That, sick, of all the pains corroding me  
This burnt the last and nowise least — the need  
Of simulating soundness. I resolved —  
No matter how the struggle tasked weak flesh —  
To hide the truth away as in a grave  
From — most of all — my husband: he nor  
knows

Nor ever shall be made to know your part,  
My part, the devil's part, — I trust, God's part  
In the foul matter. Saved, I yearn to save  
And not destroy: and what destruction like  
The abolishing of faith in him, that's faith  
In me as pure and true? Acquaint some child  
Who takes you true into his confidence,  
That, where he sleeps now, was a murder done,  
And that the grass which grows so thick, he  
thinks,

Only to pillow him is product just  
Of what lies festering beneath! 'Tis God  
Must bear such secrets and disclose them. Man?  
The miserable thing I have become  
By dread acquaintance with my secret — you —  
That thing had he become by learning me —  
The miserable, whom his ignorance  
Would wrongly call the wicked: ignorance  
Being, I hold, sin ever, small or great.  
No, he knows nothing!"

"He and I alike  
Are bound to you for such discreetness, then.  
What if our talk should terminate awhile?  
Here is a gentleman to satisfy,  
Settle accounts with, pay ten thousand pounds  
Before we part — as, by his face, I fear,  
Results from your appearance on the scene.  
Grant me a minute's parley with my friend  
Which scarce admits of a third personage!  
The room from which you made your entry first  
So opportunely — still untenanted —  
What if you please return there? Just a word

To my young friend first — then, a word to you,  
And you depart to fan away each fly  
From who, grass-pillowed, sleeps so sound at  
home ! ”

“ So the old truth comes back ! A wholesome  
change. —

At last the altered eye, the rightful tone !  
But even to the truth that drops disguise  
And stands forth grinning malice which but now  
Whined so contritely — I refuse assent  
Just as to malice. I, once gone, come back ?  
No, my lord ! I enjoy the privilege  
Of being absolutely loosed from you  
Too much — the knowledge that your power is  
null

Which was omnipotence. A word of mouth,  
A wink of eye would have detained me once,  
Body and soul your slave ; and now, thank  
God,

Your fawningest of prayers, your frightfullest  
Of curses — neither would avail to turn  
My footstep for a moment ! ”

“ Prayer, then, tries  
No such adventure. Let us cast about  
For something novel in expedient : take  
Command, — what say you ? I profess myself  
One fertile in resource. Commanding, then,  
I bid — not only wait there, but return  
Here, where I want you ! Disobey and — good !  
On your own head the peril ! ”

“ Come ! ” breaks in  
The boy with his good glowing face. “ Shut up !  
None of this sort of thing while I stand here  
— Not to stand that ! No bullying, I beg !  
I also am to leave you presently  
And never more set eyes upon your face —  
You won't mind that much ; but — I tell you  
frank —

I do mind having to remember this  
For your last word and deed — my friend who  
were !

Bully a woman you have ruined, eh ?  
Do you know, — I give credit all at once  
To all those stories everybody told  
And nobody but I would disbelieve :  
They all seem likely now, — nay, certain, sure !  
I daresay you did cheat at cards that night  
The row was at the Club : ‘ *sauter la coupe* ’ —  
That was your ‘ cut,’ for which your friends  
‘ cut ’ you ;

While I, the booby, ‘ cut ’ — acquaintanceship  
With who so much as laughed when I said  
‘ *luck !* ’

I daresay you had bets against the horse  
They doctored at the Derby ; little doubt,  
That fellow with the sister found you shirk  
His challenge and did kick you like a ball,  
Just as the story went about ! Enough :  
It only serves to show how well advised,  
Madam, you were in bidding such a fool  
As I, go hang. You see how the mere sight  
And sound of you suffice to tumble down  
Conviction topsy-turvy : no, — that 's false, —  
There 's no unknowing what one knows ; and  
yet

Such is my folly that, in gratitude  
For . . . well, I 'm stupid ; but you seemed to  
wish

I should know gently what I know, should slip  
Softly from old to new, not break my neck  
Between beliefs of what you were and are.  
Well then, for just the sake of such a wish  
To cut no worse a figure than needs must  
In even eyes like mine, I 'd sacrifice  
Body and soul ! But don't think danger —  
pray ! —

Menaces either ! He do harm to us ?  
Let me say ' us ' this one time ! You 'd allow  
I lent perhaps my hand to rid your ear  
Of some cur's yelping — hand that 's fortified,  
Into the bargain, with a horsewhip ? Oh,  
One crack and you shall see how curs decamp ! —  
My lord, you know your losses and my gains.  
Pay me my money at the proper time !  
If cash be not forthcoming — well, yourself  
Have taught me, and tried often, I 'll engage,  
The proper course : I post you at the Club,  
Pillory the defaulter. Crack, to-day,  
Shall, slash, to-morrow, slice through flesh and  
bone !

There, Madam, you need mind no cur, I  
think ! ”

“ Ah, what a gain to have an apt no less  
Than grateful scholar ! Nay, he brings to mind  
My knowledge till he puts me to the blush,  
So long has it lain rusty ! Post my name !  
That were indeed a wheal from whipcord !  
Whew !

I wonder now if I could rummage out  
— Just to match weapons — some old scorpion-  
scourge !

Madam, you hear my pupil, may applaud  
His triumph o'er the master. I — no more  
Bully, since I 'm forbidden : but entreat —  
Wait and return — for my sake, no ! but just  
To save your own defender, should he chance  
Get thwacked through awkward flourish of  
his thong.

And what if — since all waiting 's weary work —  
I help the time pass 'twixt your exit now  
And entry then ? for — pastime proper — here 's  
The very thing, the Album, verse and prose  
To make the laughing minutes launch away !  
Each of us must contribute. I 'll begin —  
‘ *Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot !* ’

I 'm confident I beat the bard, — for why ?  
My young friend owns me an *lago* — him  
Confessed, among the other qualities.  
A ready rhymers. Oh, he rhymed ! Here goes !  
— Something to end with ‘ *horsewhip !* ’ No,  
that rhyme

Beats me ; there 's ‘ *cowslip,* ’ ‘ *boltsprit,* ’  
nothing else !

So, Tennyson take my benison, — verse for  
bard,  
Prose suits the gambler's book best ! Dared  
and done ! ”

Wherewith he dips pen, writes a line or two,  
Closes and clasps the cover, gives the book,  
Bowing the while, to her who hesitates,  
Turns half away, turns round again, at last

Takes it as you touch carrion, then retires.  
The door shuts fast the couple.

## VI

With a change

Of his whole manner, opens out at once  
The Adversary.

“ Now, my friend, for you !  
Throughout my life's experience, you indulged  
Yourself and friend by passing in review  
So courteously but now, I vainly search  
To find one record of a specimen  
So perfect of the pure and simple fool  
As this you furnish me. Ingratitude  
I lump with folly, — all's one lot, — so — fool !  
Did I seek you or you seek me ? Seek ? sneak  
For service to, and service you would style —  
And did style — godlike, scarce an hour ago !  
Fool, there again, yet not precisely there  
First-rate in folly : since the hand you kissed  
Did pick you from the kennel, did plant firm  
Your footstep on the pathway, did persuade  
Your awkward shamle to true gait and pace,  
Fit for the world you walk in. Once a-strut  
On that firm pavement which your cowardice  
Was for renouncing as a pitfall, next  
Came need to clear your brains of their conceit  
They cleverly could distinguish who was who,  
Whatever folk might tramp the thoroughfare.  
Men, now — familiarly you read them off,  
Each phiz at first sight ! Oh, you had an eye !  
Who couched it ? made you disappoint each  
fox

Eager to strip my gosling of his fluff  
So golden as he cackled ‘ Goose trusts lamb ’ ?  
‘ Ay, but I saved you — wolf defeated fox —  
Wanting to pick your bones myself ? ’ then, wolf  
Has got the worst of it with goose for once.  
I, penniless, pay you ten thousand pounds  
(— No gesture, pray ! I pay ere I depart !)  
And how you turn advantage to account  
Here's the example ! Have I proved so wrong  
In my peremptory ‘ debt must be discharged ’ ?  
Oh, you laughed lovelily, were loth to leave  
The old friend out at elbows, pooh, a thing  
Not to be thought of ! I must keep my cash,  
And you forget your generosity !  
Ha ha ! I took your measure when I laughed  
My laugh to that ! First quarrel — nay, first  
faint

Pretenace at taking umbrage — ‘ Down with debt,  
Both interest and principal ! — The Club,  
Exposure and expulsion ! — stamp me out ! ’  
That's the magnanimous magnificent  
Renunciation of advantage ! Well,  
But whence and why did you take umbrage,  
Sir ?

Because your master, having made you know  
Somewhat of men, was minded to advance,

Expound you women, still a mystery !  
My pupil potted with a cloud on brow,  
A clod in breast : had loved, and vainly loved :  
Whence blight and blackness, just for all the  
world

As Byron used to teach us boys. Thought I —  
‘ Quick rid him of that rubbish ! Clear the cloud,  
And set the heart a-pulsing ! ’ — heart, this time :  
‘ T was nothing but the head I doctored late  
For ignorance of Man ; now heart's to dose,  
Palsied by over-palpitation due  
To Woman-worship — so, to work at once  
On first avowal of the patient's ache !  
This morning you described your malady, —  
How you dared love a piece of virtue — lost  
To reason, as the upshot showed : for scorn  
Fittingly repaid your stupid arrogance ;  
And, parting, you went two ways, she resumed  
Her path — perfection, while forlorn you paced  
The world that's made for beasts like you and  
me.

My remedy was — tell the fool the truth !  
Your paragon of purity had plumped  
Into these arms at their first outspread —  
‘ fallen

My victim,’ she prefers to turn the phrase —  
And, in exchange for that frank confidence,  
Asked for my whole life present and to come —  
Marriage : a thing uncovenanted for !  
Never so much as put in question ! Life —  
Implied by marriage — throw that trifle in  
And round the bargain off, no otherwise  
Than if, when we played cards, because you  
won

My money you should also want my head !  
That, I demurred to : we but played ‘ for  
love ’ —

She won my love ; had she proposed for stakes,  
‘ Marriage,’ — why, that's for whist, a wiser  
game.

Whereat she raved at me, as losers will,  
And went her way. So far the story's known,  
The remedy's applied, no farther — which  
Here's the sick man's first *honorarium* for —  
Posting his medicine-monger at the Club !  
That being, Sir, the whole you mean my fee —  
In gratitude for such munificence  
I'm bound in common honesty to spare  
No droplet of the draught : so, — pinch your  
nose,

Pull no wry faces ! — drain it to the dregs !  
I say ‘ She went off ’ — ‘ went off,’ you subjoin,  
‘ Since not to wedded bliss, as I supposed,  
Sure to some convent : solitude and peace  
Help her to hide the shame from mortal view,  
With prayer and fasting.’ No, my sapient Sir !  
Far wiser, straightway she betook herself  
To a prize-portent from the donkey-show  
Of leathern long-ears that compete for palm  
In clerical absurdity : since he,  
Good ass, nor practises the shaving-trick,  
The candle-crochet, nonsense which repays  
When you've young ladies congregant, — but  
schools

The poor, — toils, moils, and grinds the mill,  
nor means

To stop and munch one thistle in this life  
Till next life smother him with roses : just



The parson for her purpose! Him she stroked  
Over the muzzle; into mouth with bit,  
And on to back with saddle, — there he stood,  
The serviceable beast who heard, believed  
And meekly bowed him to the burden, —  
borne

Off in a canter to seclusion — ay,  
The lady's lost! But had a friend of mine  
— While friend he was — imparted his sad case  
To sympathizing counsellor, full soon  
One cloud at least had vanished from his brow.  
*'Don't fear!'* had followed reassuringly —  
*'The lost will in due time turn up again,*  
*Probably just when, weary of the world,*  
*You think of nothing less than settling-down*  
*To country life and golden days, beside*  
*A dearest best and brightest virtuous*  
*Wife: who needs no more hope to hold her own*  
*Against the naughty-and-repentant — no,*  
*Than water-gruel against Roman punch!'*  
And as I prophesied, it proves! My youth, —  
Just at the happy moment when, subdued  
To spooniness, he finds that youth fleets fast,  
That town-life tires, that men should drop  
boys'-play,

That property, position have, no doubt,  
Their exigency with their privilege,  
And if the wealthy wed with wealth, how dire  
The double duty! — in, behold, there beams  
Our long-lost lady, form and face complete!  
And where's my moralizing pupil now,  
Had not his master missed a train by chance?  
But, by your side instead of whirled away,  
How have I spoiled scene, stopped catastrophe,  
Struck flat the stage-effect I know by heart!  
Sudden and strange the meeting — improvised?  
Bless you, the last event she hoped or dreamed!  
But rude sharp stroke will crush out fire from  
flint —

Assuredly from flesh. *'T is you?'* *'Myself!'*  
*'Changed?'* *'Changeless!'* *'Then, what's*  
*earth to me?'* *'To me*  
*What's heaven?'* *'So, — thine!'* *'And thine!'*  
*'And likewise mine!'*

Had laughed *'Amen'* the devil, but for me  
Whose intermeddling hinders this hot haste,  
And bids you, ere concluding contract, pause —  
Ponder one lesson more, then sign and seal  
At leisure and at pleasure, — lesson's price  
Being, if you have skill to estimate,  
— How say you? — I'm discharged my debt in  
full!

Since paid you stand, to farthing uttermost,  
Unless I fare like that black majesty  
A friend of mine had visit from last Spring.  
Coasting along the Cape-side, he's becalmed  
Off an uncharted bay, a novel town  
Untouched at by the trader: here's a chance!  
Out paddles straight the king in his canoe,  
Comes over bulwark, says he means to buy  
Ship's cargo — being rich and having brought  
A treasure ample for the purpose. See!  
Four dragons, stalwart blackies, guard the  
same

Wrapped round and round: its hulls, a multi-  
tude, —

Palm-leaf and cocoa-mat and goat's-hair cloth  
All duly braeed about with bark and board, —

Suggest how brave, 'neath coat, must kernel  
be!

At length the peeling is accomplished, plain  
The casket opens out its core, and lo  
— A brand-new British silver sixpence — bid  
That's ample for the Bank, — thinks majesty!  
You are the Captain; call my sixpence cracked  
Or copper; *'what I've said is calumny;*  
*The lady's spotless!'* Then, — I'll prove my  
words,

Or make you prove them true as truth — your-  
self,

Here, on the instant! I'll not mince my  
speech,

Things at this issue. When she enters, then,  
Make love to her! No talk of marriage now —  
The point-blank bare proposal! Pick no  
phrase —

Prevent all misconception! Soon you'll see  
How different the tactics when she deals  
With an instructed man, no longer boy  
Who blushes like a booby. Woman's wit!  
Man, since you have instruction, blush no more!  
Such your five minutes' profit by my pains,  
'T is simply now, — demand and be possessed!  
Which means — you may possess — may strip  
the tree

Of fruit desirable to make one wise!  
More I nor wish nor want: your act's your act,  
My teaching is but — there's the fruit to pluck  
Or let alone at pleasure. Next advance  
In knowledge were beyond you! Don't expect  
I bid a novice — pluck, suck, send sky-high  
Such fruit, once taught that neither crab nor  
sloe

Falls readier prey to who but robs a hedge,  
Than this gold apple to my Hercules.  
Were you no novice but proficient — then,  
Then, truly, I might prompt you — Touch and  
taste,

Try flavor and be tired as soon as I!  
Toss on the prize to greedy mouths agape,  
Betake yours, sobered as the satiate grow,  
To wise man's solid meal of house and land,  
Consols and cousin! but, my boy, my boy,  
Such lore's above you!

Here's the lady back!  
So, Madam, you have conned the Album-page  
And come to thank its last contributor?  
How kind and condescending! I retire  
A moment, lest I spoil the interview,  
And mar my own endeavor to make friends —  
You with him, him with you, and both with  
me!  
If I succeed — permit me to inquire  
Five minutes hence! Friends bid good-by,  
you know." —  
And out he goes.

## VII

She, face, form, bearing, one  
Superb composure —

"He has told you all?  
Yes, he has told you all. your silence says —

What gives him, as he thinks, the mastery  
Over my body and my soul! — has told  
That instance, even, of their servitude  
He now exacts of me? A silent blush!  
That's well, though better would white igno-  
rance

Beseem your brow, undesecrate before —  
Ay, when I left you! I too learn at last  
— Hideously learned as I seemed so late —  
What sin may swell to. Yes, — I needed  
learn

That, when my prophet's rod became the snake  
I fled from, it would, one day, swallow up  
— Incorporate whatever serpentine  
Falseness and treason and unmanliness  
Beslime earth's pavement: such the power of  
Hell,

And so beginning, ends no otherwise  
The Adversary! I was ignorant,  
Blameworthy — if you will; but blame I take  
Nowise upon me as I ask myself  
— *You* — how can you, whose soul I seemed to  
read

The limpid eyes through, have declined so  
deep,

Even with him for consort? I revolve  
Much memory, pry into the looks and words  
Of that day's walk beneath the College wall,  
And nowhere can distinguish, in what gleams  
Only pure marble through my dusky past,  
A dubious cranny where such poison-seed  
Might harbor, nourish what should yield to-day  
This dread ingredient for the cup I drink.

Do not I recognize and honor truth  
In seeming? — take your truth, and for return,  
Give you my truth, a no less precious gift?  
You loved me: I believed you. I replied  
— How could I other? — '*I was not my own,*'  
No longer had the eyes to see, the ears  
To hear, the mind to judge, since heart and soul  
Now were another's. My own right in me,  
For well or ill, consigned away — my face  
Fronted the honest path, deflection whence  
Had shamed me in the furtive backward look  
At the late bargain — fit such chapman's  
phrase! —

As though — less hasty and more provident —  
Waiting had brought advantage. Not for me  
The chapman's chance! Yet while thus much  
was true,

I spared you — as I knew you then — one more  
Concluding word which, truth no less, seemed  
best

Buried away forever. Take it now,  
Its power to pain is past! Four years — that  
day —

Those lines that make the College avenue!  
I would that — friend and foe — by miracle,  
I had, that moment, seen into the heart  
Of either, as I now am taught to see!  
I do believe I should have straight assumed  
My proper function, and sustained a soul,  
— Nor aimed at being just sustained myself  
By some man's soul — the weaker woman's-  
want!

So had I missed the momentary thrill  
Of finding me in presence of a god,  
But gained the god's own feeling when he gives

Such thrill to what turns life from death be-  
fore.

'*Gods many and Lords many,*' says the Book:  
You would have yielded up your soul to me  
— Not to the false god who has burned its clay  
In his own image. I had shed my love  
Like Spring dew on the clod all flowery thence,  
Not sent up a wild vapor to the sun  
That drinks and then disperses. Both of us  
Blameworthy, — I first meet my punishment —  
And not so hard to bear. I breathe again!  
Forth from those arms' entwining leprosy  
At last I struggle — uncontaminate:  
Why must I leave *you* pressing to the breast  
That's all one plague-spot? Did you love me  
once?

Then take love's last and best return! I  
think,

Womanliness means only motherhood;  
All love begins and ends there, — roams  
enough,

But, having run the circle, rests at home.

Why is your expiation yet to make?

Pull shame with your own hands from your  
own head

Now, — never wait the slow envelopment

Submitted to by unelastic age!

One fierce throe frees the sapling: flake on  
flake

Lull till they leave the oak snow-stupefied.  
Your heart retains its vital warmth — or why  
That blushing reassurance? Blush, young  
blood!

Break from beneath this icy premature

Captivity of wickedness — I warn

Back, in God's name! No fresh encroachment  
here!

This May breaks all to bud — no winter now!

Friend, we are both forgiven! Sin no more!

I am past sin now, so shall you become!

Meanwhile I testify that, lying once,  
My foe lied ever, most lied last of all.

He, waking, whispered to your sense asleep

The wicked counsel, — and assent might seem;

But, roused, your healthy indignation breaks

The idle dream-pact. You would die — not  
dare

Confirm your dream-resolve, — nay, find the  
word

That fits the deed to bear the light of day!

Say I have justly judged you! then farewell

To blushing — nay, it ends in smiles, not tears!

Why tears now? I have justly judged, thank  
God!"

He does blush boy-like, but the man speaks  
out.

— Makes the due effort to surmount himself.

"I don't know what he wrote — how should I?  
Nor

How he could read my purpose, which, it  
seems,

He chose to somehow write — mistakenly

Or else for mischief's sake. I scarce believe

My purpose put before you fair and plain

Would need annoy so much; but there's my  
luck —

From first to last I blunder. Still, one more  
Turn at the target, try to speak my thought!  
Since he could guess my purpose, won't you read  
Right what he set down wrong? He said —  
let 's think!

Ay, so! — he did begin by telling heaps  
Of tales about you. Now, you see — suppose  
Any one told me — my own mother died  
Before I knew her — told me — to his cost! —  
Such tales about my own dead mother: why,  
You would not wonder surely if I knew,  
By nothing but my own heart's help, he lied,  
Would you? No reason 's wanted in the case.  
So with you! In they burnt on me, his tales,  
Much as when madhouse-inmates crowd around,  
Make captive any visitor and scream

All sorts of stories of their keeper — he 's  
Both dwarf and giant, vulture, wolf, dog, cat,  
Serpent and scorpion, yet man all the same;  
Sane people soon see through the gibberish!  
I just made out, you somehow lived somewhere  
A life of shame — I can't distinguish more —  
Married or single — how, don't matter much;  
Shame which himself had caused — that point  
was clear,

That fact confessed — that thing to hold and  
keep.

Oh, and he added some absurdity

— That you were here to make me — ha, ha,  
ha! —

Still love you, still of mind to die for you,  
Ha, ha — as if that needed mighty pains!  
Now, foolish as . . . but never mind myself;  
— What I am, what I am not, in the eye  
Of the world, is what I never cared for much.  
Fool then or no fool, not one single word  
In the whole string of lies did I believe,  
But this — this only — if I choke, who  
cares? —

I believe somehow in your purity  
Perfect as ever! Else what use is God?  
He is God, and work miracles he can!  
Then, what shall I do? Quite as clear, my  
course!

They've got a thing they call their Labyrinth  
I' the garden yonder: and my cousin played  
A pretty trick once, led and lost me deep  
Inside the briery maze of hedge round hedge;  
And there might I be staying now, stock-still,  
But that I laughing bade eyes follow nose  
And so straight pushed my path through let  
and stop

And soon was out in the open, face all  
scratched,

But well behind my back the prison-bars  
In sorry plight enough, I promise you!  
So here: I won my way to truth through  
lies —

Said, as I saw light, — if her shame be shame  
I'll rescue and redeem her, — shame 's no  
shame?

Then, I'll avenge, protect — redeem myself  
The stupidest of sinners! Here I stand!  
Dear, — let me once dare call you so, — you  
said,

Thus ought you to have done, four years ago,  
Such things and such! Ay, dear, and what  
ought I?

You were revealed to me: where 's gratitude,  
Where 's memory even, where the gain of you  
Discernible in my low after-life  
Of fancied consolation? why, no horse  
Once fed on corn, will, missing corn, go munch  
Mere thistles like a donkey! I missed you,  
And in your place found — him, made him my  
love,

Ay, did I, — by this token, that he taught  
So much beast-nature that I meant . . . God  
knows

Whether I bow me to the dust enough! . . .  
To marry — yes, my cousin here! I hope  
That was a master-stroke! Take heart of  
hers,

And give her hand of mine with no more heart  
Than now you see upon this brow I strike!

What atom of a heart do I retain  
Not all yours? Dear, you know it! Easily  
May she accord me pardon when I place

My brow beneath her foot, if foot so deign,  
Since uttermost indignity is spared —

Mere marriage and no love! And all this time  
Not one word to the purpose! Are you free?

Only wait! only let me serve — deserve  
Where you appoint and how you see the good!

I have the will — perhaps the power — at least  
Means that have power against the world. For  
time —

Take my whole life for your experiment!  
If you are bound — in marriage, say — why,  
still,

Still, sure, there 's something for a friend to do,  
Outside? A mere well-wisher, understand!  
I'll sit, my life long, at your gate, you know,  
Swing it wide open to let you and him  
Pass freely, — and you need not look, much less  
Fling me a 'Thank you — are you there, old  
friend?'

Don't say that even: I should drop like shot!  
So I feel now at least: some day, who knows?  
After no end of weeks and months and years  
You might smile 'I believe you did your best!'  
And that shall make my heart leap — leap such  
leap

As lands the feet in Heaven to wait you there!  
Ah, there 's just one thing more! How pale  
you look!

Why? Are you angry? If there 's, after all,  
Worst come to worst — if still there somehow  
be

The shame — I said was no shame, — none, I  
swear! —

In that case, if my hand and what it holds, —  
My name, — might be your safeguard now —  
at once —

Why, here 's the hand — you have the heart!  
Of course —

No cheat, no binding you, because I'm bound,  
To let me off probation by one day,  
Week, month, year, lifetime! Prove as you  
propose!

Here 's the hand with the name to take or leave!  
That 's all — and no great piece of news, I  
hope!"

"Give me the hand, then!" she cries hastily.  
"Quick, now! I hear his footstep!"



## Hand in hand

The couple face him as he enters, stops  
Short, stands surprised a moment, laughs away  
Surprise, resumes the much-experienced man.

"So, you accept him?"

"Till us death do part!"

"No longer? Come, that's right and rational!  
I fancied there was power in common sense,  
But did not know it worked thus promptly.

Well—

At last each understands the other, then?  
Each drops disguise, then? So, at supper-time  
These masquerading people doff their gear,  
Grand Turk his pompous turban, Quakeress  
Her stiff-starched bib and tucker,—make-be-  
lieve

That only bothers when, ball-business done,  
Nature demands champagne and *mayonnaise*.  
Just so has each of us sage three abjured  
His and her moral pet particular  
Pretension to superiority,  
And, cheek by jowl, we henceforth munch and  
joke!

Go, happy pair, paternally dismissed  
To live and die together—for a month,  
Discretion can award no more! Depart  
From whatso'er the calm sweet solitude  
Selected—Paris not improbably—  
At month's end, when the honeycomb's left  
wax,

—You, daughter, with a pocketful of gold  
Enough to find your village boys and girls  
In duffel cloaks and hobnailed shoes from May  
To—what's the phrase?—Christmas-come-  
never-mas!

You, son and heir of mine, shall reappear  
Ere Spring-time, that's the ring-time, lose one  
leaf,

And—not without regretful smack of lip  
The while you wipe it free of honey-smear—  
Marry the cousin, play the magistrate,  
Stand for the county, prove perfection's pink—  
Master of hounds, gay-coated dine—nor die  
Sooner than needs of gout, obesity,  
And sons at Christ Church! As for me,—ah  
me,

I abdicate—retire on my success,  
Four years well occupied in teaching youth  
—My son and daughter the exemplary!  
Time for me to retire now, having placed  
Proud on their pedestal the pair: in turn,  
Let them do homage to their master! You,—  
Well, your flushed cheek and flashing eye pro-  
claim

Sufficiently your gratitude: you paid  
The *honorarium*, the ten thousand pounds  
To purpose, did you not? I told you so!  
And you,—but, bless me, why so pale—so  
faint

At influx of good fortune? Certainly,  
No matter how or why or whose the fault,  
I save your life—save it, nor less nor more!  
You blindly were resolved to welcome death  
In that black boor-and-bumpkin-haunted hole  
Of his, the prig with all the preachments! You

Installed as nurse and matron to the crones  
And wenchies, while there lay a world outside  
Like Paris (which again I recommend),  
In company and guidance of—first, this,  
Then—all in good time—some new friend as  
fit—

What if I were to say, some fresh myself,  
As I once figured? Each dog has his day,  
And mine's at sunset: what should old dog do  
But eye young litters' frisky puppyhood?  
Oh, I shall watch this beauty and this youth  
Frisk it in brilliance! But don't fear! Dis-  
creet,

I shall pretend to no more recognize  
My quondam pupils than the doctor nods  
When certain old acquaintances may cross  
His path in Park, or sit down prim beside  
His plate at dinner-table: tip nor wink  
Scares patients he has put, for reason good,  
Under restriction,—maybe, talked sometimes  
Of *douche* or horsewhip to,—for why? be-  
cause

The gentleman would crazily declare  
His best friend was—Iago! Ay, and worse—  
The lady, all at once grown lunatic,  
In suicidal monomania vowed,  
To save her soul, she needs must starve herself!

They're cured now, both, and I tell nobody.  
Why don't you speak? Nay, speechless, each  
of you

Can spare—without unclasping plighted  
troth—

At least one hand to shake! Left-hands will  
do—

Yours first, my daughter! Ah, it guards—it it  
gripes

The precious Album fast—and prudently!  
As well obliterate the record there  
On page the last: allow me tear the leaf!  
Pray, now! And afterward, to make amends,  
What if all three of us contribute each  
A line to that prelusive fragment,—help  
The embarrassed bard who broke out to break  
down

Dumfounded at such unforeseen success?  
'Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot'

You begin—*place aux dames!* I'll prompt  
you then!

'Here do I take the good the gods allot!'  
Next you, Sir! What, still sulky? Sing, O  
Muse!

'Here does my lord in full discharge his shot!'  
Now for the crowning flourish! mine shall  
be" . . .

"Nothing to match your first effusion, mar  
What was, is, shall remain your masterpiece!  
Authorship has the alteration-itch!  
No, I protest against erasure. Read,  
My friend!" (she gasps out). "Read and  
quickly read

'Before us death do part,' what made you mine  
And made me yours—the marriage-license  
here!

Decide if he is like to mend the same!"

And so the lady, white to ghastliness,  
Manages somehow to display the page

With left-hand only, while the right retains  
The other hand, the young man's, — dreaming-  
drunk

He, with this drench of stupefying stuff,  
Eyes wide, mouth open, — half the idiot's stare  
And half the prophet's insight, — holding tight,  
All the same, by his one fact in the world —  
The lady's right-hand: he but seems to read —  
Does not, for certain; yet, how understand  
Unless he reads?

So, understand he does,  
For certain. Slowly, word by word, *she* reads  
Aloud that license — or that warrant, say.

"One against two — and two that urge their odds  
To uttermost — I needs must try resource!  
Madam, I laid me prostrate, bade you spurn  
Body and soul: you spurned and safely spurned  
So you had spared me the superfluous taunt  
'Prostration means no power to stand erect,  
Stand, trampling on who trampled — prostrate  
now!'

So, with my other fool-foe: I was fain  
Let the boy touch me with the buttoned foil,  
And him the infection gains, he too must needs  
Catch up the butcher's cleaver. Be it so!  
Since play turns earnest, here's my serious fence.  
He loves you; he demands your love: both know  
What love means in my language. Love him  
then!

Pursuant to a pact, love pays my debt:  
Therefore, deliver me from him, thereby  
Likewise delivering from me yourself!  
For, hesitate — much more, refuse consent —  
I tell the whole truth to your husband. Flat  
Cards lie on table, in our gamester-phrase!  
Consent — you stop my mouth, the only way."

"I did well, trusting instinct: knew your  
hand

Had never joined with his in fellowship  
Over this pact of infamy. You known —  
As he was known through every nerve of me.  
Therefore I 'stopped his mouth the only way'  
But my way! none was left for you, my  
friend —

The loyal — near, the loved one! No — no — no!  
Threaten? Chastise? The coward would but  
quail.

Conquer who can, the cunning of the snake!  
Stamp out his slimy strength from tail to head,  
And still you leave vibration of the tongue.  
His malice had redoubled — not on me  
Who, myself, choose my own refining fire —  
But on poor unsuspecting innocence;  
And, — victim, — to turn executioner  
Also — that feat effected, forky tongue  
Had done indeed its office! Once snake's  
'mouth'

Thus 'open' — how could mortal 'stop it'?"

"So!"

A tiger-flash — yell, spring, and scream: hal-  
loo!  
Death's out and on him, has and holds him —  
ugh!

*But ne trucidet coram populo  
Juvénis senem!* Right the Horatian rule!

There, see how soon a quiet comes to pass!

## VIII

The youth is somehow by the lady's side.  
His right-hand grasps her right-hand once  
again.

Both gaze on the dead body. Hers the word.

"And that was good but useless. Had I lived,  
The danger was to dread: but, dying now —  
Himself would hardly become talkative,  
Since talk no more means torture. Fools —  
what fools

These wicked men are! Had I borne four  
years,

Four years of weeks and months and days and  
nights,

Inured me to the consciousness of life  
Coiled round by his life, with the tongue to  
ply, —

But that I bore about me, for prompt use  
At urgent need, the thing that 'stops the mouth'  
And stays the venom? Since such need was  
now

Or never, — how should use not follow need?  
Bear witness for me, I withdraw from life  
By virtue of the license — warrant, say,  
That blackens yet this Album — white again,  
Thanks still to my one friend who tears the  
page!

Now, let me write the line of supplement,  
As counselled by my foe there: 'each a line!'"

And she does falteringly write to end.

"I die now through the villain who lies dead,  
Righteously slain. He would have outraged me,  
So, my defender slew him. God protect  
The right! Where wrong lay, I bear witness  
now.

Let man believe me, whose last breath is spent  
In blessing my defender from my soul!"

And so ends the Inn Album.

As she dies,  
Begins outside a voice that sounds like song,  
And is indeed half song though meant for  
speech

Muttered in time to motion — stir of heart  
That unsubduably must bubble forth  
To match the fawn-step as it mounts the stair.

"All's ended and all's over! Verdict found  
'Not guilty' — prisoner forthwith set free,  
'Mid cheers the Court pretends to disregard!  
Now Portia, now for Daniel, late severe.  
At last appeared, benignant! 'This young  
man —

Hem — has the young man's foibles but no fault.  
He's virgin soil — a friend must cultivate.  
I think no plant called "love" grows wild — a  
friend

*May introduce, and name the bloom, the fruit!'*  
 Here somebody dares wave a handkerchief —  
 She 'll want to hide her face with presently!  
 Good-by then! '*Cigno fedel, cigno fedel,*  
*Addio!*' Now, was ever such mistake —  
 Ever such foolish ugly omen? Pshaw!  
 Wagner, beside! '*Amo te solo, te*  
*Solo amai!*' That 's worth fifty such!  
 But, mum, the grave face at the opened door!"

And so the good gay girl, with eyes and  
 cheeks

Diamond and damask, — cheeks so white ere-  
 while

Because of a vague fancy, idle fear  
 Chased on reflection! — pausing, taps discreet;  
 And then, to give herself a countenance,  
 Before she comes upon the pair inside,  
 Loud — the oft-quoted, long-laughed-over  
 line —

"*'Hail, calm acclivity, salubrious spot!'*  
 Open the door!"

No: let the curtain fall!

## PACCHIAROTTO

AND

### HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER

WITH OTHER POEMS

#### PROLOGUE

Oh, the old wall here! How I could pass  
 Life in a long midsummer day,  
 My feet confined to a plot of grass,  
 My eyes from a wall not once away!

And lush and lithe do the creepers clothe  
 Yon wall I watch, with a wealth of green:  
 Its bald red bricks draped, nothing loth,  
 In lapnets of tangle they laugh between.

Now, what is it makes pulsate the robe?  
 Why tremble the sprays? What life o'er-  
 brims

The body, — the house, no eye can probe, —  
 Divined as, beneath a robe, the limbs?

And there again! But my heart may guess  
 Who tripped behind; and she sang perhaps:  
 So, the old wall throbbed, and its life's excess  
 Died out and away in the leafy wraps!

Wall upon wall are between us: life  
 And song should away from heart to heart!  
 I — prison-bird, with a ruddy strife  
 At breast, and a lip whence storm-notes  
 start —

Hold on, hope hard in the subtle thing  
 That 's spirit: though cloistered fast, soar  
 free;  
 Account as wood, brick, stone, this ring  
 Of the rueful neighbors, and — forth to thee!

#### OF PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER

I

QUERY: was ever a quainter  
 Crotchet than this of the painter

Giacomo Pacchiarotto  
 Who took "Reform" for his motto?

II

He, pupil of old Fungaio,  
 Is always confounded (heigho!)  
 With Pacchia, contemporaneous  
 No question, but how extraneous  
 In the grace of soul, the power  
 Of hand, — undoubted dower  
 Of Pacchia who decked (as we know,  
 My Kirkup!) San Bernardino,  
 Turning the small dark Oratory  
 To Siena's Art-laboratory,  
 As he made its straitness roomy  
 And glorified its gloomy,  
 With Bazzi and Beccafumi.  
 (Another heigho for Bazzi:  
 How people miscall him Razzi!)

III

This Painter was of opinion  
 Our earth should be his dominion  
 Whose Art could correct to pattern  
 What Nature had slurred — the slattern!  
 And since, beneath the heavens,  
 Things lay now at sixes and sevens,  
 Or, as he said, *sopra-sotto* —  
 Thought the painter Pacchiarotto  
 Things wanted reforming, therefore.  
 "Wanted it" — ay, but wherefore?  
 When earth held one so ready  
 As he to step forth, stand steady  
 In the middle of God's creation  
 And prove to demonstration  
 What the dark is, what the light is,  
 What the wrong is, what the right is,  
 What the ugly, what the beautiful,  
 What the restive, what the dutiful,  
 In Mankind profuse around him?  
 Man, devil as now he found him,  
 Would presently soar up angel



At the summons of such evangel,  
And owe — what would Man *not* owe  
To the painter Pacchiarotto?  
Ay, look to thy laurels, Giotto!

## IV

But Man, he perceived, was stubborn,  
Grew regular brute, once cub born;  
And it struck him as expedient —  
Ere he tried to make obedient  
The wolf, fox, bear, and monkey  
By piping advice in one key, —  
That his pipe should play a prelude  
To something heaven-tinged not hell-hued,  
Something not harsh but docile,  
Man-liquid, not Man-fossil —  
Not fact, in short, but fancy.  
By a laudable necromancy  
He would conjure up ghosts — a circle  
Deprived of the means to work ill  
Should his music prove distasteful  
And pearls to the swine go wasteful.  
To be rent of swine — that *was* hard!  
With fancy he ran no hazard:  
Fact might knock him o'er the mazard.

## V

So, the painter Pacchiarotto  
Constructed himself a grotto  
In the quarter of Stalloreggi —  
As authors of note allege ye.  
And on each of the whitewashed sides of it  
He painted — (none far and wide so fit  
As he to perform in fresco) —  
He painted nor cried *quiesco*  
Till he peopled its every square foot  
With Man — from the Beggar barefoot  
To the Noble in cap and feather;  
All sorts and conditions together.  
The Soldier in breastplate and helmet  
Stood frowningly — hail fellow well met —  
By the Priest armed with bell, book, and candle.  
Nor did he omit to handle  
The Fair Sex, our brave distemperer:  
Not merely King, Clown, Pope, Emperor —  
He diversified too his Hades  
Of all forms, pinched Labor and paid Ease,  
With as mixed an assemblage of Ladies.

## VI

Which work done, dry, — he rested him,  
Cleaned palette, washed brush, divested him  
Of the apron that suits *frescanti*,  
And, bonnet on ear stuck jaunty,  
This hand upon hip well planted,  
That, free to wave as it wanted,  
He addressed in a choice oration  
His folk of each name and nation,  
Taught its duty to every station.  
The Pope was declared an arrant  
Impositor at once, I warrant.  
The Emperor — truth might tax him  
With ignorance of the maxim  
“Shear sheep but nowise flay them!”  
And the Vulgar that obey them,  
The Ruled, well-matched with the Ruling,

They failed not of wholesome schooling  
On their knavery and their fooling,  
As for Art — where's decorum? Pooh-poohed  
it is

By Poets that plague us with lewd ditties,  
And Painters that pester with nudities!

## VII

Now, your rater and debater  
Is balked by a mere spectator  
Who simply stares and listens  
Tongue-tied, while eye nor glistens  
Nor brow grows hot and twitchy,  
Nor mouth, for a combat itchy,  
Quivers with some convincing  
Reply — that sets him wincing?  
Nay, rather — reply that furnishes  
Your debater with just what burnishes  
The crest of him, all one triumph,  
As you see him rise, hear him cry “Humph!  
Convinced am I? This confutes me?  
Receive the rejoinder that suits me!  
Confutation of vassal for prince meet —  
Wherein all the powers that convince meet,  
And mash my opponent to mincemeat!”

## VIII

So, off from his head flies the bonnet,  
His hip loses hand planted on it,  
While t' other hand, frequent in gesture,  
Slinks modestly back beneath vesture,  
As — hop, skip and jump, — he's along with  
Those weak ones he late proved so strong  
with!  
Pope, Emperor, lo, he's beside them,  
Friendly now, who late could not abide them,  
King, Clown, Soldier, Priest, Noble, Burgess;  
And his voice, that out-roared Boanerges,  
How minikin-mildly it urges  
In accents how gentled and gingered  
Its word in defence of the injured!  
“Oh, call him not culprit, this Pontiff!  
Be hard on this Kaiser ye won't if  
Ye take into con-si-der-ation  
What dangers attend elevation!  
The Priest — who expects him to descant  
On duty with more zeal and less cant?  
He preaches but rubbish he's reared in  
The Soldier, grown deaf (by the mere din  
Of battle) to mercy, learned tipling  
And what not of vice while a stripling.  
The Lawyer — his lies are conventional.  
And as for the Poor Sort — why mention all  
Obstructions that leave barred and bolted  
Access to the brains of each dolt-head?”

## IX

He ended, you wager? Not half! A bet?  
Precedence to males in the alphabet!  
Still, disposed of Man's A B C, there's X  
Y Z want assistance, — the Fair Sex!  
How much may be said in excuse of  
Those vanities — males see no use of —  
From silk shoe on heel to laced poll's-hood.  
What's their frailty beside our own falsehood?  
The boldest, most brazen of . . . trumpets,  
How kind can they be to their dumb pets!

Of their charms — how are most frank, how few  
venal !

While as for those charges of Juvenal —

*Que nemo dixisset in toto*

*Nisi (ædæpol) ore illoto —*

He dismissed every charge with an “*Apage !*”

## X

Then, cocking (in Scotch phrase) his cap  
a-gee,

Right hand disengaged from the doublet

— Like landlord, in house he had sublet

Resuming of guardianship gestion,

To call tenants’ conduct in question —

Hop, skip, jump, to inside from outside

Of chamber, he lords, ladies, louts eyed

With such transformation of visage

As fitted the censor of this age.

No longer an advocate tepid

Of frailty, but champion intrepid

Of strength, — not of falsehood but verity, —

He, one after one, with asperity

Stripped bare all the cant-clothed abuses,

Disposed of sophistic excuses,

Forced folly each shift to abandon,

And left vice with no leg to stand on.

So crushing the force he exerted,

That Man at his foot lay converted !

## XI

True — Man bred of paint-pot and mortar !

But why suppose folks of this sort are

More likely to hear and be tractable

Than folks all alive and, in fact, able

To testify promptly by action

Their ardor, and make satisfaction

For misdeeds *non verbis sed factis* ?

“ With folks all alive be my practice

Henceforward ! O mortar, paint-pot O,

Farewell to ye ! ” cried Pacchiarotto,

“ Let only occasion interpose ! ”

## XII

It did so: for, pat to the purpose

Through causes I need not examine,

There fell upon Siena a famine.

In vain did the magistrates busily

Seek succor, fetch grain out of Sicily,

Nay, throw mill and bakehouse wide open —

Such misery followed as no pen

Of mine shall depict ye. Faint, fainter

Waxed hope of relief: so, our painter,

Emboldened by triumph of recency,

How could he do other with decency

Than rush in this strait to the rescue,

Play schoolmaster, point as with fescue

To each and all slips in Man’s spelling

The law of the land ? — slips now telling

With monstrous effect on the city,

Whose magistrates moved him to pity

As, bound to read law to the letter,

They minded their hornbook no better.

## XIII

I ought to have told you, at starting,  
How certain, who itched to be carting

Abuses away clean and thorough

From Siena, both province and borough,

Had formed themselves into a company

Whose swallow could bolt in a lump any

Obstruction of scruple, provoking

The nicer throat’s coughing and choking :

Fit Club, by as fit a name dignified

Of “ Freed Ones ” — “ *Bardotti* ” — which sig-  
nified

“ Spare-Horses ” that walk by the wagon

The team has to drudge for and drag on.

This notable Club Pacchiarotto

Had joined long since, paid scot and lot to,

As free and accepted “ *Bardotto* .”

The Bailiwick watched with no quiet eye

The outrage thus done to society,

And noted the advent especially

Of Pacchiarotto their fresh ally.

## XIV

These Spare-Horses forthwith assembled :

Neighed words whereat citizens trembled

As oft as the chiefs, in the Square by

The Duomo, proposed a way whereby

The city were cured of disaster.

“ Just substitute servant for master,

Make Poverty Wealth and Wealth Poverty,

Unloose Man from overt and covert tie,

And straight out of social confusion

True Order would spring ! ” Brave illusion —

Aims heavenly attained by means earthy !

## XV

Off to these at full speed rushed our wor-  
thy,

Brain practised and tongue no less tutored,

In argument’s armor accoutred, —

Sprang forth, mounted rostrum, and essayed

Proposals like those to which “ Yes ” said

So glibly each personage painted

O’ the wall-side wherewith you’re acquainted.

He harangued on the faults of the Bailiwick :

“ Red soon were our State-candle’s paly wick,

If wealth would become but interfluous,

Fill voids up with just the superfluous ;

If ignorance gave way to knowledge

— Not pedantry picked up at college

From Doctors, Professors *et cætera* —

(*They say : ‘ kai ta loipa ’* — like better a

Long Greek string of *kappas, taus, lambdas*,

Tacked on to the tail of each damned ass) —

No knowledge we want of this quality,

But knowledge indeed — practicality

Through insight’s fine universality !

If you shout “ *Bailiffs, out on ye all ! Fie,*

*Thou Chief of our forces, Amalfi,*

*Who shieldest the rogue and the clotpoll !* ”

If you pounce on and poke out, with what  
pole

I leave ye to fancy, our Siena’s

Beast-litter of sloths and hyenas — ”

(Whoever to scan this is ill able

Forgets the town’s name’s a dissyllable) —

“ If, this done, ye did — as ye might — place

For once the right man in the right place,

If you listened to me ” . . .

## XVI

At which last "If"

There flew at his throat like a mastiff  
 One Spare-Horse — another and another !  
 Such outbreak of tumult and pother,  
 Horse-faces a-laughing and fleeing,  
 Horse-voices a-mocking and jeering,  
 Horse-hands raised to collar the caittiff  
 Whose impudence ventured the late "If" —  
 That, had not fear sent Pacchiarotto  
 Off tramping, as fast as could trot toe,  
 Away from the scene of discomfiture —  
 Had he stood there stock-still in a dumb fit —

sure

Am I he had paid in his person  
 Till his mother might fail to know her son,  
 Though she gazed on him never so wistful,  
 In the figure so tattered and tristful.  
 Each mouth full of curses, each fist full  
 Of cuffs — behold, Pacchiarotto,  
 The pass which thy project has got to,  
 Of trusting, nigh ashes still hot — tow !  
 (The paraphrase — which I much need — is  
 From Horace "*per ignes incedis*.")

## XVII

Right and left did he dash helter-skelter  
 In agonized search of a shelter.  
 No purlieu so blocked and no alley  
 So blind as allowed him to rally  
 His spirits and see — nothing hampered  
 His steps if he trudged and not scampered  
 Up here and down there in a city  
 That 's all ups and downs, more the pity  
 For folks who would outrun the constable.  
 At last he stopped short at the one stable  
 And sure place of refuge that 's offered  
 Humanity. Lately was coffered  
 A corpse in its sepulchre, situate  
 By St. John's Observance. "Habituate  
 Thyself to the strangest of bedfellows,  
 And, kicked by the live, kiss the dead fellows !"  
 So Misery counselled the craven.  
 At once he crept safely to haven  
 Through a hole left unbricked in the structure.  
 Ay, Misery, in have you tucked your  
 Poor client and left him conterminous  
 With — pah ! — the thing fetid and verminous !  
 (I gladly would spare you the detail,  
 But History writes what I retail.)

## XVIII

Two days did he groan in his domicile :  
 "Good Saints, set me free and I promise I'll  
 Abjure all ambition of preaching  
 Change, whether to minds touched by teaching  
 — The smooth folk of fancy, mere figments  
 Created by plaster and pigments. —  
 Or to minds that receive with such rudeness  
 Dissuasion from pride, greed and lewdness,  
 — The rough folk of fact, life's true specimens  
 Of mind — '*hanc in posse sed esse mens*'  
 As it was, is, and shall be forever  
 Despite of my utmost endeavor.  
 O live foes I thought to illumine,  
 Henceforth lie untroubled your gloom in !

I need my own light, every spark, as  
 I couch with this sole friend — a carcase !"

## XIX

Two days thus he maundered and rambled ;  
 Then, starved back to sanity, scrambled  
 From out his receptacle loathsome.  
 "A spectre !" — declared upon oath some  
 Who saw him emerge and (appalling  
 To mention) his garments a-crawling  
 With plagues far beyond the Egyptian.  
 He gained, in a state past description,  
 A convent of months, the Observancy.

## XX

Thus far is a fact : I reserve fancy  
 For Fancy's more proper employment :  
 And now she waves wing with enjoyment,  
 To tell ye how preached the Superior,  
 When somewhat our painter's exterior  
 Was sweetened. He needed (no mincing  
 The matter) much soaking and rinsing,  
 Nay, rubbing with drugs odoriferous,  
 Till, rid of his garments pestiferous,  
 And, robed by the help of the Brotherhood  
 In odds and ends, — this gown and t' other  
 hood, —  
 His empty inside first well-garnished, —  
 He delivered a tale round, unvarnished.

## XXI

"Ah, Youth !" ran the Abbot's admonish-  
 ment,  
 "Thine error scarce moves my astonishment.  
 For — why shall I shrink from asserting ? —  
 Myself have had hopes of converting  
 The foolish to wisdom, till, sober,  
 My life found its May grow October.  
 I talked and I wrote, but, one morning,  
 Life's Autumn bore fruit in this warning :  
 '*Let tongue rest, and quiet thy quill be !*  
*Earth is earth and not heaven, and ne'er will be.*'  
 Man's work is to labor and leaven —  
 As best he may — earth here with heaven ;  
 'Tis work for work's sake that he 's needing :  
 Let him work on and on as if speeding  
 Work's end, but not dream of succeeding !  
 Because if success were intended,  
 Why, heaven would begin ere earth ended.  
 A Spare-Horse ? Be rather a thill-horse,  
 Or — what 's the plain truth — just a mill-  
 horse !  
 Earth's a mill where we grind and wear  
 muffers :  
 A whip awaits shirkers and shufflers  
 Who slacken their pace, sick of lugging  
 At what don't advance for their tugging.  
 Though round goes the mill, we must still post  
 On and on as if moving the mill-post.  
 So, grind away, mouth-wise and pen-wise,  
 Do all that we can to make men wise !  
 And if men prefer to be foolish,  
 Ourselves have proved horse-like not mulish :  
 Sent grist, a good sackful, to hopper,  
 And worked as the Master thought proper.  
 Tongue I wag, pen I ply, who am Abbot ;



Stick, thou, Son, to daub-brush and dab-pot !  
 But, soft ! I scratch hard on the scab hot ?  
 Though cured of thy plague, there may linger  
 A pimple I fray with rough finger ?  
 So soon could my homily transmute  
 Thy brass into gold ? Why, the man 's mute ! ”

## XXII

“ Ay, Father, I 'm mute with admiring  
 How Nature 's indulgence untiring  
 Still bids us turn deaf ear to Reason 's  
 Best rhetoric — clutch at all seasons  
 And hold fast to what 's proved untenable !  
 Thy maxim is — Man 's not amenable  
 To argument : whereof by consequence —  
 Thine arguments reach me : a non-sequence !  
 Yet blush not discouraged, O Father !  
 I stand unconverted, the rather  
 That nowise I need a conversion.  
 No live man (I cap thy assertion)  
 By argument ever could take hold  
 Of me. 'T was the dead thing, the clay-cold,  
 Which grinned ' Art thou so in a hurry  
 That out of warm light thou must scurry  
 And join me down here in the dungeon  
 Because, above, one 's Jack and one — John,  
 One 's swift in the race, one — a hobbler,  
 One 's a crowned king and one — a capped cob-  
 bler,

Rich and poor, sage and fool, virtuous, vicious ?  
 Why complain ? Art thou so unsuspicious  
 That all 's for an hour of essaying  
 Who 's fit and who 's unfit for playing  
 His part in the after-construction  
 — Heaven 's Piece whereof Earth 's the Induction ?  
 Things rarely go smooth at Rehearsal.  
 Wait patient the change universal,  
 And act, and let act, in existence !  
 For, as thou art clapped hence or hissed hence,  
 Thou hast thy promotion or otherwise.  
 And why must wise thou have thy brother wise  
 Because in rehearsal thy cue be  
 To shine by the side of a booby ?  
 No polishing garnet to ruby !  
 All 's well that ends well — through Art 's magic.  
 Some end, whether comic or tragic,  
 The Artist has purposed, be certain !  
 Explained at the fall of the curtain —  
 In showing thy wisdom at odds with  
 That folly : he tries men and gods with  
 No problem for weak wits to solve meant,  
 But one worth such Author 's involvement.  
 So, back nor disturb play 's production  
 By giving thy brother instruction  
 To throw up his fool 's-part allotted !  
 Lest haply thyself prove besotted  
 When stript, for thy pains, of that costume  
 Of sage, which has bred the imposthume  
 I prick to relieve thee of, — Vanity ! ”

## XXIII

“ So, Father, behold me in sanity !  
 I 'm back to the palette and mahlstick :  
 And as for Man — let each and all stick  
 To what was prescribed them at starting !  
 (Once planted as fools — no departing  
 From folly one inch, *sæculorum*

*In sæcula !* Pass me the jorum,  
 And push me the platter — my stomach  
 Retains, through its fasting, still some ache —  
 And then, with your kind *Benedicite*,  
 Good-by ! ”

## XXIV

I have told with simplicity  
 My tale, dropped those harsh analytics,  
 And tried to content you, my critics,  
 Who greeted my early uprising !  
 I knew you through all the disguising,  
 Droll dogs, as I jumped up, cried “ Heyday !  
 This Monday is — what else but May-day ?  
 And these in the drabs, blues, and yellows,  
 Are surely the privileged fellows.  
 So, saltbox and bones, tongs and bellows ! ”  
 (I threw up the window) “ Your pleasure ? ”

## XXV

Then he who directed the measure —  
 An old friend — put leg forward nimbly,  
 “ We critics as sweeps out your chimbley !  
 Much soot to remove from your flue, sir !  
 Who spares coal in kitchen an't you, sir !  
 And neighbors complain it 's no joke, sir,  
 — You ought to consume your own smoke, sir ! ”

## XXVI

Ah, rogues, but my housemaid suspects  
 you —  
 Is confident oft she detects you  
 In bringing more filth into my house  
 Than ever you found there ! I 'm pious,  
 However : 't was God made you dingy  
 And me — with no need to be stingy  
 Of soap, when 't is sixpence the packet.  
 So, dance away, boys, dust my jacket,  
 Bang drum and blow fife — ay, and rattle  
 Your brushes, for that 's half the battle !  
 Don't trample the grass, — hocus-pocus  
 With grime my Spring snowdrop and crocus, —  
 And, what with your rattling and tinkling,  
 Who knows but you give me an inkling  
 How music sounds, thanks to the jangle  
 Of regular drum and triangle ?  
 Whereby, tap-tap, chink-chink, 't is proven  
 I break rule as bad as Beethoven.  
 “ That chord now — a groan or a grunt is 't ?  
 Schumann 's self was no worse contrapuntist.  
 No ear ! or if ear, so tough-gristled —  
 He thought that he sung while he whistled ! ”

## XXVII

So, this time I whistle, not sing at all,  
 My story, the largess I fling at all  
 And every the rough there whose *aubade*  
 Did its best to amuse me, — nor so bad !  
 Take my thanks, pick up largess, and scamper  
 Off free, ere your mirth gets a damper !  
 You 've Monday, your one day, your fun-day,  
 While mine is a year that 's all Sunday.  
 I 've seen you, times — who knows how  
 many ? —  
 Dance in here, strike up, play the zany,  
 Make mouths at the Tenant, hoot warning

You 'll find him decamped next May-morning;  
Then scuttle away, glad to 'scape hence  
With — kicks? no, but laughter and ha'pence!  
Mine's freehold, by grace of the grand Lord  
Who lets out the ground here, — my landlord:  
To him I pay quit-rent — devotion;  
Nor hence shall I budge, I've a notion,  
Nay, here shall my whistling and singing  
Set all his street's echoes a-ringing  
Long after the last of your number  
Has ceased my front-court to encumber  
While, treading down rose and ranunculus,  
You *Tommy-make-room-for-your-Uncle* us!  
Troop, all of you — man or homunculus,  
Quick march! for Xanthippe, my housemaid,  
If once on your pates she a souse made  
With what, pan or pot, bowl or *skoramis*,  
First comes to her hand — things were more  
amiss!

I would not for worlds be your place in —  
Recipient of slops from the basin!  
You, Jack-in-the-Green, leaf-and-twiggyishness  
Won't save a dry thread on your priggyishness!  
While as for Quilp-Hop-o'-my-thumb there,  
Banjo-Byron that twangs the strum-strum  
there —

He 'll think as the pickle he curses,  
I've discharged on his pate his own verses!  
"Dwarfs are saucy," says Dickens: so, sauced  
in  
Your own sauce,<sup>1</sup> . . .

## XXVIII

But, back to my Knight of the Pencil,  
Dismissed to his fresco and stencil!  
Whose story — begun with a chuckle,  
And throughout timed by raps of the  
knuckle, —

To small enough purpose were studied  
If it ends with crown cracked or nose bloodied.  
Come, critics, — not shake hands, excuse me!  
But — say have you grudged to amuse me  
This once in the forty-and-over

Long years since you trampled my clover  
And scared from my house-eaves each sparrow  
I never once harmed by that arrow

Of song, *karterotaton belos*,  
(Which Pindar declares the true *melos*.)  
I was forging and filing and finishing,  
And no whit my labors diminishing  
Because, though high up in a chamber  
Where none of your kidney may clamber  
Your hulloaloo would approach me?  
Was it "grammar" wherein you would  
"coach" me —

You, — pacing in even that paddock  
Of language allotted you *ad hoc*,  
With a clog on your fetlocks, — you — scorners  
Of me free of all its four corners?  
Was it "clearness of words which convey  
thought"?

Ay, if words never needed enswathe aught  
But ignorance, impudence, envy  
And malice — what word-swathe would then vie

<sup>1</sup> No, please! For

"Who would be satirical  
On a thing so very small?" — *Printer's Devil*.

With yours for a clearness crystalline?  
But had you to put in one small line  
Some thought big and bouncing — as noddle  
Of goose, born to cackle and waddle  
And bite at man's heel as goose-wont is,  
Never felt plague its puny *os frontis* —  
You'd know, as you hissed, spat and sput-  
tered,  
Clear cackle is easily uttered!

## XXIX

Lo, I've laughed out my laugh on this mirth-  
day!  
Beside, at week's end, dawns my birthday,  
That *hebdome, hieron emar* —  
(More things in a day than you deem are!)  
— *Tei gar Apollona chrusaora*  
*Egeinato Leto*. So, gray or ray  
Betide me, six days hence, I'm vexed here  
By no sweep, that's certain, till next year!  
"Vexed?" — roused from what else were in-  
sipid ease!

Leave snoring abed to Pheidippides!  
We'll up and work! won't we, Euripides?

## AT THE "MERMAID"

The figure that thou here seest . . . Tut!  
Was it for gentle Shakespeare put?

B. JONSON. (*Adapted*.)

I — "NEXT Poet?" No, my hearties,  
I nor am nor fain would be!  
Choose your chiefs and pick your parties,  
Not one soul revolt to me!  
I, forsooth, sow song-sedition?  
I, a schism in verse provoke?  
I, blown up by bard's ambition,  
Burst — your bubble-king? You joke.

Come, be grave! The sherris mantling  
Still about each mouth, mayhap,  
Breeds you insight — just a scantling —  
Brings me truth out — just a scrap.  
Look and tell me! Written, spoken,  
Here's my life-long work: and where  
— Where's your warrant or my token  
I'm the dead king's son and heir?

Here's my work: does work discover —  
What was rest from work — my life?  
Did I live man's hater, lover?  
Leave the world at peace, at strife?  
Call earth ugliness or beauty?  
See things there in large or small?  
Use to pay its Lord my duty?  
Use to own a lord at all?

Blank of such a record, truly,  
Here's the work I hand, this scroll,  
Yours to take or leave; as duly,  
Mine remains the unproffered soul.  
So much, no whit more, my debtors —  
How should one like me lay claim  
To that largess elders, betters  
Sell you cheap their souls for — fame?

Which of you did I enable

Once to slip inside my breast,  
There to catalogue and label

What I like least, what love best,  
Hope and fear, believe and doubt of,  
Seek and shun, respect — deride ?

Who has right to make a rout of  
Rarities he found inside ?

Rarities or, as he 'd rather,

Rubbish such as stocks his own :  
Need and greed (oh, strange) the Father  
Fashioned not for him alone !

Whence — the comfort set a-strutting,  
Whence — the outcry "Haste, behold !"  
Bard's breast open wide, past shutting,  
Shows what brass we took for gold !"

Friends, I doubt not he 'd display you  
Brass — myself call orichalc, —

Furnish much amusement ; pray you  
Therefore, be content I balk

Him and you, and bar my portal !  
Here 's my work outside : opine

What 's inside me mean and mortal !  
Take your pleasure, leave me mine !

Which is — not to buy your laurel  
As last king did, nothing loth.  
Tale adorned and pointed moral  
Gained him praise and pity both.  
Out rushed sighs and groans by dozens,  
Forth by scores oaths, curses flew :  
Proving you were cater-cousins,  
Kith and kindred, king and you !

Whereas do I ne'er so little  
(Thanks to sherris), leave ajar  
Bosom's gate — no jot nor tittle  
Grow we nearer than we are.  
Sinning, sorrowing, despairing,  
Body-ruined, spirit-wrecked, —  
Should I give my woes an airing, —  
Where 's one plague that claims respect ?

Have you found your life distasteful ?  
My life did and does smack sweet.  
Was your youth of pleasure wasteful ?  
Mine I saved and hold complete.  
Do your joys with age diminish ?  
When mine fail me, I 'll complain.  
Must in death your daylight finish ?  
My sun sets to rise again.

What, like you, he proved — your Pilgrim —  
This our world a wilderness,  
Earth still gray and heaven still grim,  
Not a hand there his might press,  
Not a heart his own might throb to,  
Men all rogues and women — say,  
Dolls which boys' heads duck and bob to,  
Grown folk drop or throw away ?

My experience being other,  
How should I contribute verse  
Worthy of your king and brother ?  
Balaam-like I bless, not curse.

I find earth not gray but rosy,  
Heaven not grim but fair of hue.  
Do I stoop ? I pluck a posy.  
Do I stand and stare ? All 's blue.

Doubtless I am pushed and shoved by  
Rogues and fools enough : the more  
Good luck mine, I love, am loved by  
Some few honest to the core.  
Scan the near high, scout the far low !  
"But the low come close : " what then ?  
Simpletons ? My match is Marlowe ;  
Sciologists ? My mate is Ben.

Womankind — "the cat-like nature,  
False and fickle, vain and weak" —  
What of this sad nomenclature  
Suits my tongue, if I must speak ?  
Does the sex invite, repulse so,  
Tempt, betray, by fits and starts ?  
So becalm but to convulse so,  
Decking heads and breaking hearts ?

Well may you blaspheme at fortune !  
I "threw Venus" (Ben, expound !)  
Never did I need importune  
Her, of all the Olympian round.  
Blessings on my benefactress !  
Cursings suit — for aught I know —  
Those who twitched her by the back tress.  
Tugged and thought to turn her — so !

Therefore, since no leg to stand on  
Thus I 'm left with, — joy or grief  
Be the issue, — I abandon  
Hope or care you name me Chief !  
Chief and king and Lord's anointed,  
I ? — who never once have wished  
Death before the day appointed :  
Lived and liked, not poohed and pished !

"Ah, but so I shall not enter,  
Scroll in hand, the common heart —  
Stopped at surface : since at centre  
Song should reach *Welt-schmerz*, world-  
smart !"

"Enter in the heart ?" Its shelly  
Cuirass guard mine, fore and aft !  
Such song "enters in the belly  
And is cast out in the draught."

Back then to our sherris-brewage !  
"Kingship" quotha ? I shall wait —  
Waive the present time : some new age . . .  
But let fools anticipate !  
Meanwhile greet me — "friend, good fellow,  
Gentle Will," my merry men !  
As for making Envy yellow  
With "Next Poet" — (Manners, Ben !)

## HOUSE

SHALL I sonnet-sing you about myself ?  
Do I live in a house you would like to see ?  
Is it scant of gear, has it store of pelf ?  
"Unlock my heart with a sonnet-key ?"



Invite the world, as my betters have done ?  
 "Take notice: this building remains on view,  
 Its suites of reception every one,  
 Its private apartment and bedroom too ;

"For a ticket, apply to the Publisher."  
 No : thanking the public, I must decline.  
 A peep through my window, if folk prefer ;  
 But, please you, no foot over threshold of mine !

I have mixed with a crowd and heard free talk  
 In a foreign land where an earthquake chanced  
 And a house stood gaping, naught to balk  
 Man's eye wherever he gazed or glanced.

The whole of the frontage shaven sheer,  
 The inside gaped : exposed to day,  
 Right and wrong and common and queer,  
 Bare, as the palm of your hand, it lay.

The owner ? Oh, he had been crushed, no doubt !  
 "Odd tables and chairs for a man of wealth !  
 What a parcel of musty old books about !  
 He smoked, — no wonder he lost his health !

"I doubt if he bathed before he dressed.  
 A brasier ? — the pagan, he burned perfumes !  
 You see it is proved, what the neighbors guessed :  
 His wife and himself had separate rooms."

Friends, the Goodman of the house at least  
 Kept house to himself till an earthquake came :  
 'T is the fall of its frontage permits you feast  
 On the inside arrangement you praise or blame.

Outside should suffice for evidence :  
 And whoso desires to penetrate  
 Deeper, must dive by the spirit-sense —  
 No optics like yours, at any rate !

"Hoity-toity ! A street to explore,  
 Your house the exception ! 'With this same key  
*Shakespeare unlocked his heart,* once more !"  
 Did Shakespeare ? If so, the less Shakespeare  
 he !

## SHOP

So, friend, your shop was all your house !  
 Its front, astonishing the street,  
 Invited view from man and mouse  
 To what diversity of treat  
 Behind its glass — the single sheet !

What gimcracks, genuine Japanese :  
 Gape-jaw and goggle-eye, the frog ;  
 Dragons, owls, monkeys, beetles, geese ;  
 Some crush-nosed human-hearted dog :  
 Queer names, too, such a catalogue !

I thought "And he who owns the wealth  
 Which blocks the window's vastitude,  
 — Ah, could I peep at him by stealth  
 Behind his ware, pass shop, intrude  
 On house itself, what scenes were viewed !

"If wide and showy thus the shop,  
 What must the habitation prove ?  
 The true house with no name a-top —  
 The mansion, distant one remove,  
 Once get him off his traffic-groove !

"Pictures he likes, or books perhaps ;  
 And as for buying most and best,  
 Commend me to these city chaps !  
 Or else he's social, takes his rest  
 On Sundays, with a Lord for guest.

"Some suburb-palace, parked about  
 And gated grandly, built last year :  
 The four-mile walk to keep off gout ;  
 Or big seat sold by bankrupt peer ;  
 But then he takes the rail, that's clear.

"Or, stop ! I wager, taste selects  
 Some out-o'-the-way, some all-unknown  
 Retreat : the neighborhood suspects  
 Little that he who rambles lone  
 Makes Rothschild tremble on his throne !"

Nowise ! Nor Mayfair residence  
 Fit to receive and entertain, —  
 Nor Hampstead villa's kind defence  
 From noise and crowd, from dust and drain, —  
 Nor country-box was soul's domain !

Nowise ! At back of all that spread  
 Of merchandise, woe's me, I find  
 A hole i' the wall where, heels by head,  
 The owner couched, his ware behind,  
 — In cupboard suited to his mind.

For why ? He saw no use of life  
 But, while he drove a roaring trade,  
 To chuckle "Customers are rife !"  
 To chafe "So much hard cash outlaid,  
 Yet zero in my profits made !

"This novelty costs pains, but — takes ?  
 Cumbers my counter ! Stock no more !  
 This article, no such great shakes,  
 Fizzes like wildfire ? Underscore  
 The cheap thing — thousands to the fore !"

'T was lodging best to live most nigh  
 (Cramp, coffinlike as crib might be)  
 Receipt of Custom ; ear and eye  
 Wanted no outworld : "Hear and see  
 The bustle in the shop !" quoth he.

My fancy of a merchant-prince  
 Was different. Through his wares we groped  
 Our darkling way to — not to mince  
 The matter — no black den where moped  
 The master if we interloped !

Shop was shop only : household-stuff ?  
 What did he want with comforts there ?  
 "Walls, ceiling, floor, stay blank and rough,  
 So goods on sale show rich and rare !  
 'Sell and scud home,' be shop's affair !"

What might he deal in ? Gems, suppose !  
 Since somehow business must be done

At cost of trouble, — see, he throws  
 You choice of jewels, every one,  
 Good, better, best, star, moon, and sun !

Which lies within your power of purse ?  
 This ruby that would tip aright  
 Solomon's sceptre ? Oh, your nurse  
 Wants simply coral, the delight  
 Of teething baby, — stuff to bite !

Howe'er your choice fell, straight you took  
 Your purchase, prompt your money rang  
 On counter, — scarce the man forsook  
 His study of the "Times," just swang  
 Till-ward his hand that stopped the clang, —

Then off made buyer with a prize,  
 Then seller to his "Times" returned ;  
 And so did day wear, wear, till eyes  
 Brightened apace, for rest was earned :  
 He locked door long ere candle burned.

And whither went he ? Ask himself,  
 Not me ! To change of scene, I think.  
 Once sold the ware and pursed the pelf,  
 Chaffer was scarce his meat and drink,  
 Nor all his music — money-chink.

Because a man has shop to mind  
 In time and place, since flesh must live,  
 Needs spirit lack all life behind,  
 All stray thoughts, fancies fugitive,  
 All loves except what trade can give ?

I want to know a butcher paints,  
 A baker rhymes for his pursuit,  
 Candlestick-maker much acquaints  
 His soul with song, or, haply mute,  
 Blows out his brains upon the flute !

But — shop each day and all day long !  
 Friend, your good angel slept, your star  
 Suffered eclipse, fate did you wrong !  
 From where these sorts of treasures are,  
 There should our hearts be — Christ, how far !

#### PISGAH-SIGHTS

When sanctioning a volume of *Selections* from  
 his poems, Browning made a third of *Pisgah-*  
*Sights* to consist of the *Proem* to *La Saisiaz*.

#### I

OVER the ball of it,  
 Peering and prying,  
 How I see all of it,  
 Life there, outlying !  
 Roughness and smoothness,  
 Shine and defilement,  
 Grace and uncouthness :  
 One reconciliation.

Orbed as appointed,  
 Sister with brother  
 Joins, ne'er disjointed  
 One from the other.

All 's lend-and-borrow ;  
 Good, see, wants evil,  
 Joy demands sorrow,  
 Angel weds devil !

" Which things must — *why* be ? "  
 Vain our endeavor !  
 So shall things aye be  
 As they were ever.  
 " Such things should *so* be ! "  
 Sage our desistence !  
 Rough-smooth let globe be,  
 Mixed — man's existence !

Man — wise and foolish,  
 Lover and scorner,  
 Docile and mulish —  
 Keep each his corner !  
 Honey yet gall of it !  
 There 's the life lying,  
 And I see all of it,  
 Only, I 'm dying !

#### II

Could I but live again  
 Twice my life over,  
 Would I once strive again ?  
 Would not I cover  
 Quietly all of it —  
 Greed and ambition —  
 So, from the pall of it,  
 Pass to fruition ?

" Soft ! " I 'd say, " Soul mine !  
 Three-score and ten years,  
 Let the blind mole mine  
 Digging out deniers !  
 Let the dazed hawk soar,  
 Claim the sun's rights too !  
 Turf 't is thy walk 's o'er,  
 Foliage thy flight 's to."

Only a learner,  
 Quick one or slow one,  
 Just a discernor,  
 I would teach no one.  
 I am earth's native :  
 No rearranging it !  
 I be creative,  
 Chopping and changing it ?

March, men, my fellows !  
 Those who, above me,  
 (Distance so mellows)  
 Fancy you love me :  
 Those who, below me,  
 (Distance makes great so)  
 Free to forego me,  
 Fancy you hate so !

Praising, reviling,  
 Worst head and best head,  
 Past me defiling,  
 Never arrested,  
 Wanters, abounders,  
 March, in gay mixture,  
 Men, my surroundsers !  
 I am the fixture.

So shall I fear thee,  
 Mightiness yonder !  
 Mock-sun — more near thee,  
 What is to wonder ?  
 So shall I love thee,  
 Down in the dark, — lest  
 Glowworm I prove thee,  
 Star that now sparklest !

## FEARS AND SCRUPLES

In answer to a letter of inquiry, addressed to him by Mr. W. G. Kingsland, Browning wrote the following in regard to the meaning of this poem : " I think that the point I wanted to illustrate was this : Where there is a genuine love of the ' letters ' and ' actions ' of the invisible ' friend,' — however these may be disadvantaged by an inability to meet the objections to their authenticity or historical value urged by ' experts ' who assume the privilege of learning over ignorance, — it would indeed be a wrong to the wisdom and goodness of the ' friend ' if he were supposed capable of overlooking the actual ' love ' and only considering the ' ignorance ' which, failing to in any degree affect ' love,' is really the highest evidence that ' love ' exists. So I meant, whether the result be clear or no."

HERE's my case. Of old I used to love him,  
 This same unseen friend, before I knew :  
 Dream there was none like him, none above  
 him, —  
 Wake to hope and trust my dream was true.

Loved I not his letters full of beauty ?  
 Not his actions famous far and wide ?  
 Absent, he would know I vowed him duty ;  
 Present, he would find me at his side.

Pleasant fancy ! for I had but letters,  
 Only knew of actions by hearsay :  
 He himself was busied with my betters ;  
 What of that ? My turn must come some day.

" Some day " proving — no day ! Here's the  
 puzzle.  
 Passed and passed my turn is. Why com-  
 plain ?  
 He's so busied ! If I could but muzzle  
 People's foolish mouths that give me pain !

" Letters ? " (hear them ! ) " You a judge of  
 writing ?  
 Ask the experts ! How they shake the head  
 O'er these characters, your friend's inditing —  
 Call them forgery from A to Z !

" Actions ? Where's your certain proof " (they  
 bother)  
 " He, of all you find so great and good,  
 He, he only, claims this, that, the other  
 Action — claimed by men, a multitude ? "

I can simply wish I might refute you,  
 Wish my friend would, — by a word, a  
 wink, —  
 Bid me stop that foolish mouth, — you brute  
 you !  
 He keeps absent, — why, I cannot think.

Never mind ! Though foolishness may flout  
 me,  
 One thing 's sure enough : 't is neither frost,  
 No, nor fire, shall freeze or burn from out me  
 Thanks for truth — though falsehood, gained  
 — though lost.

All my days, I'll go the softlier, sadlier,  
 For that dream's sake ! How forget the  
 thrill  
 Through and through me as I thought " The  
 gladlier  
 Lives my friend because I love him still ! "

Ah, but there's a menace some one utters !  
 " What and if your friend at home play  
 tricks ?  
 Peep at hide-and-seek behind the shutters ?  
 Mean your eyes should pierce through solid  
 bricks ?

" What and if he, frowning, wake you,  
 dreamy ?  
 Lay on you the blame that bricks — conceal ?  
 Say ' At least I saw who did not see me,  
 Does see now, and presently shall feel ' ? "

" Why, that makes your friend a monster ! " —  
 say you :  
 " Had his house no window ? At first nod,  
 Would you not have hailed him ? " Hush, I  
 pray you !  
 What if this friend happened to be — God ?

## NATURAL MAGIC

ALL I can say is — I saw it !  
 The room was as bare as your hand.  
 I locked in the swarth little lady, — I swear,  
 From the head to the foot of her — well, quite  
 as bare !  
 " No Nautch shall cheat me," said I, " taking  
 my stand  
 At this bolt which I draw ! " And this bolt —  
 I withdraw it,  
 And there laughs the lady, not bare, but em-  
 bowered  
 With — who knows what verdure, o'erfructed,  
 o'erflowered ?  
 Impossible ! Only — I saw it !

All I can sing is — I feel it !  
 This life was as blank as that room ;  
 I let you pass in here. Precaution, indeed ?  
 Walls, ceiling and floor, — not a chance for a  
 weed !  
 Wide opens the entrance : where's cold now,  
 where's gloom ?  
 No May to sow seed here, no June to reveal  
 it,



Behold you enshrined in these blooms of your  
bringing,  
These fruits of your bearing -- nay, birds of  
your winging!  
A fairy-tale! Only -- I feel it!

## MAGICAL NATURE

FLOWER -- I never fancied, jewel -- I profess  
you!

Bright I see and soft I feel the outside of a  
flower.

Save but glow inside and -- jewel, I should  
guess you,

Dim to sight and rough to touch: the glory is  
the dower.

You, forsooth, a flower? Nay, my love, a  
jewel --

Jewel at no mercy of a moment in your  
prime!

Time may fray the flower-face: kind be time  
or cruel,

Jewel, from each facet, flash your laugh at  
time!

## BIFURCATION

WE were two lovers; let me lie by her,  
My tomb beside her tomb. On hers inscribe --  
"I loved him; but my reason bade prefer  
Duty to love, reject the tempter's bribe  
Of rose and lily when each path diverged,  
And either I must pace to life's far end  
As love should lead me, or, as duty urged,  
Plod the worn causeway arm-in-arm with  
friend.

So, truth turned falsehood: '*How I loathe a  
flower,*

*How prize the pavement!*' still caressed his  
ear --

The deafish friend's -- through life's day, hour  
by hour,

As he laughed (coughing) '*Ay, it would ap-  
pear!*'

But deep within my heart of hearts there hid  
Ever the confidence, amends for all,

That heaven repairs what wrong earth's jour-  
ney did,

When love from life-long exile comes at call.  
Duty and love, one broad way, were the best --

Who doubts? But one or other was to choose,  
I chose the darkling half, and wait the rest

In that new world where light and darkness  
fuse."

Inscribe on mine -- "I loved her: love's track  
lay

O'er sand and pebble, as all travellers know.

Duty led through a smiling country, gay

With greensward where the rose and lily blow.  
'Our roads are diverse: farewell, love!' said  
she:

'*T is duty I abide by: homely sward*

*And not the rock-rough picturesque for me!*

*Above, where both roads join, I wait reward.*

*Be you as constant to the path whereon  
I leave you planted!*' But man needs must  
move,

Keep moving -- whither, when the star is gone  
Whereby he steps secure nor strays from love?  
No stone but I was tripped by, stumbling-block  
But brought me to confusion. Where I fell,  
There I lay flat, if moss disguised the rock,  
Thence, if flint pierced, I rose and cried '*All 's  
well!*'

*Duty be mine to tread in that high sphere*

*Where love from duty ne'er disparts, I trust,  
And two halves make that whole, whereof -- since  
here*

*One must suffice a man -- why, this one must!*' "

Inscribe each tomb thus: then, some sage  
acquaint

The simple -- which holds sinner, which holds  
saint!

## NUMPHOLEPTOS

The Browning Society became so puzzled  
over the interpretation of this poem that  
through Dr. Furnivall it applied to the poet for  
an explanation and he replied: "Is not the key  
to the meaning of the poem in its title *νυμφόληπ-  
τος* [caught or rapt by a nymph] not *γυναικε-  
παστρίς* [a woman lover]? An allegory, that is,  
of an impossible ideal object of love, accepted  
conventionally as such by a man who, all the  
while, cannot quite blind himself to the demon-  
strable fact that the possessor of knowledge  
and purity obtained without the natural conse-  
quences of obtaining them by achievement --  
not inheritance, -- such a being is imaginary,  
not real, a nymph and no woman; and only  
such an one would be ignorant of and surprised  
at the results of a lover's endeavor to emulate  
the qualities which the beloved is entitled to  
consider as pre-existent to earthly experience,  
and independent of its inevitable results. I  
had no particular woman in my mind; certainly  
never intended to personify wisdom, philosophy,  
or any other abstraction; and the orb, raying  
color out of whiteness, was altogether a fancy  
of my own. The 'seven spirits' are in the  
Apocalypse, also in Coleridge and Byron, -- a  
common image."

STILL you stand, still you listen, still you  
smile!

Still melts your moonbeam through me, white  
awhile,

Softening, sweetening, till sweet and soft

Increase so round this heart of mine, that oft  
I could believe your moonbeam-smile has past

The pallid limit, lies, transformed at last  
To sunlight and salvation -- warms the soul

It sweetens, softens! Would you pass that  
goal,

Gain love's birth at the limit's happier verge,  
And, where an iridescence lurks, but urge  
The hesitating pallor on to prime  
Of dawn! — true blood-streaked, sun-warmth,  
action-time,

By heart-pulse ripened to a ruddy glow  
Of gold above my clay — I scarce should know  
From gold's self, thus suffused! For gold  
means love.

What means the sad slow silver smile above  
My clay but pity, pardon? — at the best,  
But acquiescence that I take my rest,  
Contented to be clay, while in your heaven  
The sun reserves love for the Spirit-Seven  
Companioning God's throne they lamp before,  
— Leaves earth a mute waste only wandered  
o'er

By that pale soft sweet dispassioned moon  
Which smiles me slow forgiveness! Such, the  
boon

I beg? Nay, dear, submit to this — just this  
Supreme endeavor! As my lips now kiss  
Your feet, my arms convulse your shrouding  
robe,

My eyes, acquainted with the dust, dare probe  
Your eyes above for — what, if born, would  
blind

Mine with redundant bliss, as flash may find  
The inert nerve, sting awake the palsied limb,  
Bid with life's ecstasy sense overbrim  
And suck back death in the resurging joy —  
Love, the love whole and sole without alloy!

Vainly! The promise withers! I employ  
Lips, arms, eyes, pray the prayer which finds  
the word,  
Make the appeal which must be felt, not heard,  
And none the more is changed your calm regard:

Rather, its sweet and soft grow harsh and  
hard —

Forbearance, then repulsion, then disdain,  
Avert the rest! I rise, see! — make, again  
Once more, the old departure for some track  
Untried, yet through a world which brings me  
back

Ever thus fruitlessly to find your feet,  
To fix your eyes, to pray the soft and sweet  
Which smile there — take from his new pilgrim-  
age

Your outcast, once your inmate, and assuage  
With love — not placid pardon now — his thirst  
For a mere drop from out the ocean erst  
He drank at! Well, the quest shall be re-  
newed.

Fear nothing! Though I linger, unembued  
With any drop, my lips thus close. I go!  
So did I leave you, I have found you so,  
And doubtlessly, if fated to return,  
So shall my pleading persevere and earn  
Pardon — not love — in that same smile, I  
learn,  
And lose the meaning of, to learn once more,  
Vainly!

What fairy track do I explore?  
What magic hall return to, like the gem  
Centuply-angled o'er a diadem?

You dwell there, hearted; from your midmost  
home

Rays forth — through that fantastic world I  
roam

Ever — from centre to circumference,  
Shaft upon colored shaft: this crimsons thence,  
That purples out its precinct through the waste.  
Surely I had your sanction when I faced,  
Fared forth upon that untried yellow ray  
Whence I retrack my steps? They end to-day  
Where they began, before your feet, beneath  
Your eyes, your smile: the blade is shut in  
sheath,

Fire quenched in flint; irradiation, late  
Triumphant through the distance, finds its fate,  
Merged in your blank pure soul, alike the  
source

And tomb of that prismatic glow: divorce  
Absolute, all-conclusive! Forth I fared,  
Treading the lambent flamelet: little cared  
If now its flickering took the topaz tint,  
If now my dull-eaked path gave sulphury hint  
Of subterranean rage — no stay nor stint  
To yellow, since you sanctioned that I bathe,  
Burnish me, soul and body, swim and swathe  
In yellow license. Here I reek suffused  
With crocus, saffron, orange, as I used  
With scarlet, purple, every dye o' the bow  
Born of the storm-cloud. As before, you show  
Scarce recognition, no approval, some  
Mistrust, more wonder at a man become  
Monstrous in garb, nay — flesh disguised as well,  
Through his adventure. Whatsoe'er befell,  
I followed, wheresoe'er it wound, that vein  
You authorized should leave your whiteness,  
stain

Earth's sombre stretch beyond your midmost  
place

Of vantage, — trode that tint whereof the trace  
On garb and flesh repel you! Yes, I plead  
Your own permission — your command, indeed,  
That who would worthily retain the love  
Must share the knowledge shrined those eyes  
above,

Go boldly on adventure, break through bounds  
O' the quintessential whiteness that surrounds  
Your feet, obtain experience of each thing  
That bickers forth to broaden out, impinge  
Plainer his foot its pathway all distinct  
From every other. Ah, the wonder, linked  
With fear, as exploration manifests  
What agency it was first tipped the crests  
Of unnamed wildflower, soon protruding grew  
Portentous 'mid the sands, as when his hue  
Betrays him and the burrowing snake gleams  
through;

Till, last . . . but why parade more shame and  
pain?

Are not the proofs upon me? Here again  
I pass into your presence, I receive  
Your smile of pity, pardon, and I leave . . .  
No, not this last of times I leave you, mute,  
Submitted to my penance, so my foot  
May yet again adventure, tread, from source  
To issue, one more ray of rays which course  
Each other, at your bidding, from the sphere  
Silver and sweet, their birthplace, down that  
drear

Dark of the world, — you promise shall return  
Your pilgrim jewelled as with drops o' the urn  
The rainbow paints from, and no smatch at  
all

Of ghastliness at edge of some cloud-pall  
Heaven cowers before, as earth awaits the fall  
O' the bolt and flash of doom. Who trusts your  
word

Tries the adventure : and returns — absurd  
As frightful — in that sulphur-steeped disguise  
Mocking the priestly cloth-of-gold, sole prize  
The arch-heretic was wont to bear away  
Until he reached the burning. No, I say :  
No fresh adventure ! No more seeking love  
At end of toil, and finding, calm above  
My passion, the old statuesque regard,  
The sad petrific smile !

O you — less hard  
And hateful than mistaken and obtuse  
Unreason of a she-intelligence !  
You very woman with the pert pretence  
To match the male achievement ! Like enough !  
Ay, you were easy victors, did the rough  
Straightway efface itself to smooth, the gruff  
Grind down and grow a whisper, — did man's  
truth

Subdue, for sake of chivalry and ruth,  
Its rapier-edge to suit the bulrush-spear  
Womanly falsehood fights with ! O that ear  
All fact pricks rudely, that thrice-superfine  
Femininity of sense, with right divine  
To waive all process, take result stain-free  
From out the very muck wherein . . .

Ah me !  
The true slave's querulous outbreak ! All the  
rest  
Be resignation ! Forth at your behest  
I fare. Who knows but this — the crimson-  
quest —  
May deepen to a sunrise, not decay  
To that cold sad sweet smile ? — which I obey.

### APPEARANCES

AND so you found that poor room dull,  
Dark, hardly to your taste, my dear ?  
Its features seemed unbeautiful :  
But this I know — 't was there, not here,  
You plighted troth to me, the word  
Which — ask that poor room how it heard.

And this rich room obtains your praise  
Unqualified, — so bright, so fair,  
So all whereat perfection stays ?  
Ay, but remember — here, not there,  
The other word was spoken ! — Ask  
This rich room how you dropped the mask !

### ST. MARTIN'S SUMMER

No protesting, dearest !  
Hardly kisses even !  
Don't we both know how it ends ?  
How the greenest leaf turns serest,

Bluest outbreak — blankest heaven,  
Lovers — friends ?

You would build a mansion,  
I would weave a bower  
— Want the heart for enterprise.  
Walls admit of no expansion :  
Trellis-work may haply flower  
Twice the size.

What makes glad Life's Winter ?  
New buds, old blooms after.  
Sad the sighing " How suspect  
Beams would ere mid-Autumn splinter,  
Roof-tree scarce support a rafter,  
Walls lie wrecked ? "

You are young, my princess !  
I am hardly older :  
Yet — I steal a glance behind !  
Dare I tell you what convinces  
Timid me that you, if bolder,  
Bold — are blind ?

Where we plan our dwelling  
Glooms a graveyard surely !  
Headstone, footstone moss may drape, —  
Name, date, violets hide from spelling, —  
But, though corpses rot obscurely,  
Ghosts escape.

Ghosts ! O breathing Beauty,  
Give my frank word pardon !  
What if I — somehow, somewhere —  
Pledged my soul to endless duty  
Many a time and oft ? Be hard on  
Love — laid there ?

Nay, blame grief that's fickle,  
Time that proves a traitor,  
Chance, change, all that purpose warps, —  
Death who spares to thrust the sickle  
Laid Love low, through flowers which later  
Shroud the corpse !

And you, my winsome lady,  
Whisper with like frankness !  
Lies nothing buried long ago ?  
Are you — which shimmer 'mid the shady  
Where moss and violet run to rankness —  
Tombs or no ?

Who taxes you with murder ?  
My hands are clean — or nearly !  
Love being mortal needs must pass.  
Repentance ? Nothing were absurder.  
Enough : we felt Love's loss severely ;  
Though now — alas !

Love's corpse lies quiet therefore,  
Only Love's ghost plays truant,  
And warns us have in wholesome awe  
Durable mansionry ; that's wherefore  
I weave but trellis-work, pursuant  
— Life, to law.

The solid, not the fragile,  
Tempts rain and hail and thunder.



If bower stand firm at Autumn's close,  
Beyond my hope, — why, boughs were agile;  
If bower fall flat, we scarce need wonder  
Wreathing — rose!

So, truce to the protesting,  
So, muffled be the kisses!  
For, would we but avow the truth,  
Sober is genuine joy. No jesting!  
Ask else Penelope, Ulysses —  
Old in youth!

For why should ghosts feel angered?  
Let all their interference  
Be faint march-music in the air!  
"Up! Join the rear of us the vanguard!  
Up, lovers, dead to all appearance,  
Laggard pair!"

The while you clasp me closer,  
The while I press you deeper,  
As safe we chuckle, — under breath,  
Yet all the slyer, the jocosier, —  
"So, life can boast its day, like leap-year,  
Stolen from death!"

Ah me — the sudden terror!  
Hence quick — avant, avoid me,  
You cheat, the ghostly flesh-disguised!  
Nay, all the ghosts in one! Strange error!  
So, 't was Death's self that clipped and  
coyed me,  
Loved — and lied!

Ay, dead loves are the potent!  
Like any cloud they used you,  
Mere semblance you, but substance they!  
Build we no mansion, weave we no tent!  
Mere flesh — their spirit interfused you!  
Hence, I say!

All theirs, none yours the glamour!  
Theirs each low word that won me,  
Soft look that found me Love's, and left  
What else but you — the tears and clamor  
That's all your very own! Undone me —  
Ghost-bereft!

## HERVÉ RIEL

This ballad was printed first in the *Cornhill Magazine* for March, 1871. In a letter to Mr. George Smith, one of the publishers of the magazine, Browning stated that he intended to devote the proceeds of the poem to the aid of the people of Paris suffering from the Franco-German war. The publisher generously seconded his resolve and paid one hundred pounds for the poem.

## I

ON the sea and at the Hogue, sixteen hundred  
ninety-two,  
Did the English fight the French, — woe to  
France!

And, the thirty-first of May, helter-skelter  
through the blue,  
Like a crowd of frightened porpoises a shoal of  
sharks pursue,  
Came crowding ship on ship to Saint Malo  
on the Rance,  
With the English fleet in view.

## II

'T was the squadron that escaped, with the vic-  
tor in full chase;  
First and foremost of the drove, in his great  
ship, Damfreville;  
Close on him fled, great and small,  
Twenty-two good ships in all;  
And they signalled to the place  
"Help the winners of a race!  
Get us guidance, give us harbor, take us  
quick — or, quicker still,  
Here 's the English can and will!"

## III

Then the pilots of the place put out brisk and  
leapt on board;  
"Why, what hope or chance have ships like  
these to pass?" laughed they:  
"Rocks to starboard, rocks to port, all the  
passage scarred and scored,  
Shall the 'Formidable' here with her twelve  
and eighty guns  
Think to make the river-mouth by the single  
narrow way,  
Trust to enter where 't is ticklish for a craft of  
twenty tons,  
And with flow at full beside?  
Now, 't is slackest ebb of tide.  
Reach the mooring? Rather say,  
While rock stands or water runs,  
Not a ship will leave the bay!"

## IV

Then was called a council straight.  
Brief and bitter the debate:  
"Here 's the English at our heels; would you  
have them take in tow  
All that's left us of the fleet, linked together  
stern and bow,  
For a prize to Plymouth Sound?  
Better run the ships aground!"  
(Ended Damfreville his speech).  
"Not a minute more to wait!  
Let the Captains all and each  
Shove ashore, then blow up, burn the vessels  
on the beach!  
France must undergo her fate.

## V

"Give the word!" But no such word  
Was ever spoke or heard;  
For up stood, for out stepped, for in struck  
amid all these  
— A Captain? A Lieutenant? A Mate — first,  
second, third?  
No such man of mark, and meet  
With his betters to compete!

But a simple Breton sailor pressed by  
Tourville for the fleet,  
A poor coasting-pilot he, Hervé Riel the Croi-  
sickese.

## VI

And "What mockery or malice have we  
here?" cries Hervé Riel:  
"Are you mad, you Malouins? Are you  
cowards, fools, or rogues?  
Talk to me of rocks and shoals, me who took  
the soundings, tell  
On my fingers every bank, every shallow, every  
swell  
'Twixt the offing here and Grève where the  
river disembogues?  
Are you bought by English gold? Is it love  
the lying's for?  
Morn and eve, night and day,  
Have I piloted your bay,  
Entered free and anchored fast at the foot of  
Solidor.

Burn the fleet and ruin France? That were  
worse than fifty Hogues!  
Sirs, they know I speak the truth! Sirs,  
believe me there's a way!  
Only let me lead the line,  
Have the biggest ship to steer,  
Get this 'Formidable' clear,  
Make the others follow mine,  
And I lead them, most and least, by a passage  
I know well,  
Right to Solidor past Grève,  
And there lay them safe and sound;  
And if one ship misbehave,  
— Keel so much as grate the ground,  
Why, I've nothing but my life, — here's my  
head!" cries Hervé Riel.

## VII

Not a minute more to wait.  
"Steer us in, then, small and great!  
Take the helm, lead the line, save the squa-  
dron!" cried its chief.  
Captains, give the sailor place!  
He is Admiral, in brief,  
Still the north-wind, by God's grace!  
See the noble fellow's face  
As the big ship, with a bound,  
Clears the entry like a hound,  
Keeps the passage as its inch of way were the  
wide sea's profound!  
See, safe through shoal and rock,  
How they follow in a flock,  
Not a ship that misbehaves, not a keel that  
grates the ground,  
Not a spar that comes to grief!  
The peril, see, is past,  
All are harbored to the last,  
And just as Hervé Riel hollas "Anchor!" —  
sure as fate,  
Up the English come — too late!

## VIII

So, the storm subsides to calm:  
They see the green trees wave  
On the heights o'erlooking Grève.

Hearts that bled are stanch'd with balm.

"Just our rapture to enhance,  
Let the English rake the bay,  
Gnash their teeth and glare askance  
As they cannonade away!  
'Neath rampired Solidor pleasant riding on the  
Rance!"  
How hope succeeds despair on each Captain's  
countenance!  
Out burst all with one accord,  
"This is Paradise for Hell!  
Let France, let France's King  
Thank the man that did the thing!"  
What a shout, and all one word,  
"Hervé Riel!"  
As he stepped in front once more,  
Not a symptom of surprise  
In the frank blue Breton eyes,  
Just the same man as before.

## IX

Then said Damfreville, "My friend,  
I must speak out at the end,  
Though I find the speaking hard.  
Praise is deeper than the lips:  
You have saved the King his ships,  
You must name your own reward.  
'Faith, our sun was near eclipse!  
Demand whate'er you will,  
France remains your debtor still.  
Ask to heart's content and have! or my name's  
not Damfreville."

## X

Then a beam of fun outbroke  
On the bearded mouth that spoke,  
As the honest heart laughed through  
Those frank eyes of Breton blue:  
"Since I needs must say my say,  
Since on board the duty's done,  
And from Malo Roads to Croisic Point, what  
is it but a run? —  
Since 't is ask and have, I may —  
Since the others go ashore —  
Come! A good whole holiday!  
Leave to go and see my wife, whom I call the  
Belle Aurore!"  
That he asked and that he got, — nothing  
more.

## XI

Name and deed alike are lost:  
Not a pillar nor a post  
In his Croisic keeps alive the feat as it befell;  
Not a head in white and black  
On a single fishing-smack,  
In memory of the man but for whom had gone  
to wrack  
All that France saved from the fight whence  
England bore the bell.  
Go to Paris: rank on rank  
Search the heroes flung pell-mell  
On the Louvre, face and flank!  
You shall look long enough ere you come to  
Hervé Riel.  
So, for better and for worse,

Hervé Riel, accept my verse !  
In my verse, Hervé Riel, do thou once more  
Save the squadron, honor France, love thy wife  
the Belle Aurore !

## A FORGIVENESS

I AM indeed the personage you know.  
As for my wife, — what happened long ago —  
You have a right to question me, as I  
Am bound to answer.

(“Son, a fit reply !”

The monk half spoke, half ground through his  
clenched teeth,  
At the confession-grate I knelt beneath.)

Thus then all happened, Father! Power and  
place

I had as still I have. I ran life's race,  
With the whole world to see, as only strains  
His strength some athlete whose prodigious  
gains

Of good appall him: happy to excess, —  
Work freely done should balance happiness  
Fully enjoyed ; and, since beneath my roof  
Housed she who made home heaven, in heaven's  
behoof

I went forth every day, and all day long  
Worked for the world. Look, how the laborer's  
song

Cheers him ! Thus sang my soul, at each sharp  
throe  
Of laboring flesh and blood — “She loves me  
so !”

One day, perhaps such song so knit the nerve  
That work grew play and vanished. “I deserve  
Haply my heaven an hour before the time !”  
I laughed, as silverly the clockhouse-chime  
Surprised me passing through the postern-gate  
— Not the main entry where the menials wait  
And wonder why the world's affairs allow  
The master sudden leisure. That was how  
I took the private garden-way for once.

Forth from the alcove, I saw start, ensconce  
Himself behind the porphyry vase, a man.

My fancies in the natural order ran :  
“A spy, — perhaps a foe in ambushade, —  
A thief, — more like, a sweetheart of some maid  
Who pitched on the alcove for tryst perhaps.”

“Stand there !” I bid.

Whereat my man but wraps  
His face the closelier with uplifted arm  
Whereon the cloak lies, strikes in blind alarm  
This and that pedestal as, — stretch and stoop, —  
Now in, now out of sight, he thrids the group  
Of statues, marble god and goddess ranged  
Each side the pathway, till the gate's exchanged  
For safety: one step thence, the street, you  
know !

Thus far I followed with my gaze. Then, slow,  
Near on admiringly, I breathed again,

And — back to that last fancy of the train —  
“A danger risked for hope of just a word  
With — which of all my nest may be the bird  
This poacher covets for her plumage, pray ?  
Carmen ? Juana ? Carmen seems too gay  
For such adventure, while Juana's grave  
— Would scorn the folly. I applaud the knave !  
He had the eye, could single from my brood  
His proper fledgeling !”

As I turned, there stood  
In face of me, my wife stone-still stone-white.  
Whether one bound had brought her, — at first  
sight

Of what she judged the encounter, sure to be  
Next moment, of the venturesome man and me, —  
Brought her to clutch and keep me from my  
prey :

Whether impelled because her death no day  
Could come so absolutely opportune  
As now at joy's height, like a year in June  
Stayed at the fall of its first ripened rose ;  
Or whether hungry for my hate — who  
knows ? —

Eager to end an irksome lie, and taste  
Our tingling true relation, hate embraced  
By hate one naked moment : — anyhow  
There stone-still stone-white stood my wife, but  
now

The woman who made heaven within my house.  
Ay, she who faced me was my very spouse  
As well as love — you are to recollect !

“Stay !” she said. “Keep at least one soul  
unspecked

With crime, that's spotless hitherto — your  
own !

Kill me who court the blessing, who alone  
Was, am, and shall be guilty, first to last !  
The man lay helpless in the toils I cast  
About him, helpless as the statue there  
Against that strangling bell-flower's bondage :  
tear

Away and tread to dust the parasite,  
But do the passive marble no despite !  
I love him as I hate you. Kill me ! Strike  
At one blow both infinitudes alike  
Out of existence — hate and love ! Whence love ?  
That's safe inside my heart, nor will remove  
For any searching of your steel, I think.  
Whence hate ? The secret lay on lip, at brink  
Of speech, in one fierce tremble to escape,  
At every form wherein your love took shape,  
At each new provocation of your kiss.  
Kill me !”

We went in.

Next day after this,  
I felt as if the speech might come. I spoke —  
Easily, after all.

“The lifted cloak  
Was screen sufficient : I concern myself  
Hardly with laying hands on who for pelf —  
Whate'er the ignoble kind — may prowl and  
brave  
Cuffing and kicking proper to a knave



Detected by my household's vigilance.  
 Enough of such ! As for my love-romance —  
 I, like our good Hidalgo, rub my eyes  
 And wake and wonder how the film could rise  
 Which changed for me a barbers' basin straight  
 Into — Mambrino's helm ? I hesitate  
 Nowise to say — God's sacramental cup !  
 Why should I blame the brass which, burnished  
 up,  
 Will blaze, to all but me, as good as gold ?  
 To me — a warning I was overbold  
 In judging metals. The Hidalgo waked  
 Only to die, if I remember, — staked  
 His life upon the basin's worth, and lost :  
 While I confess torpidity at most  
 In here and there a limb ; but, lame and halt,  
 Still should I work on, still repair my fault  
 Ere I took rest in death, — no fear at all !  
 Now, work — no word before the curtain  
 fall ! ”

The “curtain” ? That of death on life, I  
 meant :

My “word,” permissible in death's event,  
 Would be — truth, soul to soul ; for, otherwise,  
 Day by day, three years long, there had to rise  
 And, night by night, to fall upon our stage —  
 Ours, doomed to public play by heritage —  
 Another curtain, when the world, perforce  
 Our critical assembly, in due course  
 Came and went, witnessing, gave praise or  
 blame

To art-mimetic. It had spoiled the game  
 If, suffered to set foot behind our scene,  
 The world had witnessed how stage-king and  
 queen,

Gallant and lady, but a minute since  
 Enamoring each the other, would evince  
 No sign of recognition as they took  
 His way and her way to whatever nook  
 Waited them in the darkness either side  
 Of that bright stage where lately groom and  
 bride

Had fired the audience to a frenzy-fit  
 Of sympathetic rapture — every whit  
 Earned as the curtain fell on her and me,  
 — Actors. Three whole years, nothing was to  
 see

But calm and concord : where a speech was  
 due

There came the speech ; when the smiles were  
 wanted too,

Smiles were as ready. In a place like mine,  
 Where foreign and domestic cares combine,  
 There's audience every day and all day long ;  
 But finally the last of the whole throng  
 Who linger lets one see his back. For her —  
 Why, liberty and liking : I aver,  
 Liking and liberty ! For me — I breathed,  
 Let my face rest from every wrinkle wreathed  
 Smile-like about the mouth, unlearned my task  
 Of personation till next day bade mask,  
 And quietly betook me from that world

To the real world, not pageant : there unfurled  
 In work, its wings, my soul, the fretted power.  
 Three years I worked, each minute of each  
 hour

Not claimed by acting : — work I may dispense

With talk about, since work in evidence,  
 Perhaps in history ; who knows or cares ?

After three years, this way, all unawares,  
 Our acting ended. She and I, at close  
 Of a loud night-feast, led, between two rows  
 Of bending male and female loyalty,  
 Our lord the king down staircase, while, held  
 high

At arm's length did the twisted tapers' flare  
 Herald his passage from our palace, where  
 Such visiting left glory evermore.  
 Again the ascent in public, till at door  
 As we two stood by the saloon — now blank  
 And disencumbered of its guests — there sank  
 A whisper in my ear, so low and yet  
 So unmistakable !

“ I half forget

The chamber you repair to, and I want  
 Occasion for one short word — if you grant  
 That grace — within a certain room you called  
 Our ‘Study,’ for you wrote there while I  
 scrawled

Some paper full of faces for my sport.  
 That room I can remember. Just one short  
 Word with you there, for the remembrance'  
 sake ! ”

“ Follow me thither ! ” I replied.

We break

The gloom a little, as with guiding lamp  
 I lead the way, leave warmth and cheer, by  
 damp

Blind disused serpentine ways afar  
 From where the habitable chambers are, —  
 Ascend, descend stairs tunnelled through the  
 stone, —

Always in silence, — till I reach the lone  
 Chamber sepulchred for my very own  
 Out of the palace-quarry. When a boy,  
 Here was my fortress, stronghold from annoy,  
 Proof-positive of ownership ; in youth  
 I garnered up my gleanings here — uncouth  
 But precious relics of vain hopes, vain fears ;  
 Finally, this became in after-years  
 My closet of entrenchment to withstand  
 Invasion of the foe on every hand —  
 The multifarious herd in bower and hall,  
 State-room, — rooms whatsoe'er the style,  
 which call

On masters to be mindful that, before  
 Men, they must look like men and something  
 more.

Here, — when our lord the king's bestowment  
 ceased

To deck me on the day that, golden-fleeced,  
 I touched ambition's height, — 't was here,  
 released

From glory (always symbolled by a chain !)  
 No sooner was I privileged to gain  
 My secret domicile than glad I flung  
 That last toy on the table — gazed where hung  
 On hook my father's gift, the arquebus —  
 And asked myself, “ Shall I envisage thus  
 The new prize and the old prize, when I reach  
 Another year's experience ? — own that each

Equalled advantage — sportsman's — states-  
man's tool?  
That brought me down an eagle, this — a fool!"

Into which room on entry, I set down  
The lamp, and turningsaw whose rustled gown  
Had told me my wife followed, pace for pace.  
Each of us looked the other in the face.  
She spoke. "Since I could die now" . . .

(To explain  
Why that first struck me, know — not once  
again

Since the adventure at the porphyry's edge  
Three years before, which sundered like a  
wedge

Her soul from mine, — though daily, smile to  
smile,

We stood before the public, — all the while  
Not once had I distinguished, in that face  
I paid observance to, the faintest trace  
Of feature more than requisite for eyes

To do their duty by and recognize:  
So did I force mine to obey my will

And pry no further. There exists such skill, —  
Those know who need it. What physician  
shrinks

From needless contact with a corpse? He  
drinks

No plague so long as thirst for knowledge — not  
An idler impulse — prompts inquiry. What,

And will you disbelieve in power to bid  
Our spirit back to bounds, as though we chid  
A child from scrutiny that 's just and right

In manhood? Sense, not soul, accomplished  
sight,

Reported daily she it was — not how  
Nor why a change had come to cheek and  
brow.)

"Since I could die now of the truth concealed,  
Yet dare not, must not die, — so seems revealed  
The Virgin's mind to me, — for death means  
peace

Wherein no lawful part have I, whose lease  
Of life and punishment the truth avowed  
May haply lengthen, — let me push the shroud  
Away, that steals to muffle ere is just

My penance-fire in snow! I dare — I must  
Live, by avowal of the truth — this truth —  
I loved you! Thanks for the fresh serpent's

tooth

That, by a prompt new pang more exquisite  
Than all preceding torture, proves me right!

I loved you yet I lost you! May I go  
Burn to the ashes, now my shame you know?"

I think there never was such — how express? —  
Horror coquetting with voluptuousness.

As in those arms of Eastern workmanship —  
Yataghan, kandjar, things that rend and rip,  
Gash rough, slash smooth, help hate so many  
ways,

Yet ever keep a beauty that betrays  
Love still at work with the artificer

Throughout his quaint devising. Why prefer,  
Except for love's sake, that a blade should  
writhe

And bicker like a flame? — now play the  
scythe

As if some broad neck tempted, — now con-  
tract

And needle off into a fineness lacked  
For just that puncture which the heart de-  
mands?

Then, such adornment! Wherefore need our  
hands

Enclose not ivory alone, nor gold  
Roughened for use, but jewels? Nay, behold!

Fancy my favorite — which I seem to grasp  
While I describe the luxury. No asp

Is diapered more delicate round throat  
Than this below the handle! These denote

— These mazy lines meandering, to end  
Only in flesh they open — what intend

They else but water-purlings — pale contrast  
With the life-crimson where they blend at  
last?

And mark the handle's dim pellucid green,  
Carved, the hard jadestone, as you pinch a  
bean,

Into a sort of parrot-bird! He pecks  
A grape-bunch; his two eyes are ruby-specks

Pure from the mine: seen this way, — glassy  
blank,

But turn them, — lo, the inmost fire, that  
shrank

From sparkling, sends a red dart right to aim!  
Why did I choose such toys? Perhaps the

game

Of peaceful men is warlike, just as men  
War-wearied get amusement from that pen

And paper we grow sick of — statesfolk tired  
Of merely (when such measures are required)

Dealing out doom to people by three words,  
A signature and seal: we play with swords

Suggestive of quick process. That is how  
I came to like the toys described you now,

Store of which glittered on the walls and  
strewn

The table, even, while my wife pursued  
Her purpose to its ending. "Now you know

This shame, my three years' torture, let me go,  
Burn to the very ashes! You — I lost,

Yet you — I loved!"

The thing I pity most  
In men is — action prompted by surprise

Of anger: men? nay, bulls — whose onset lies  
At instance of the firework and the goad!

Once the foe prostrate, — trampling once be-  
stowed, —

Prompt follows placability, regret,  
Atonement. Trust me, blood-warmth never

yet

Betokened strong will! As no leap of pulse  
Pricked me, that first time, so did none con-  
vulse

My veins at this occasion for resolve.  
Had that devolved which did not then devolve

Upon me, I had done — what now to do  
Was quietly apparent.

"Tell me who  
The man was, crouching by the porphyry  
vase!"

"No, never! All was folly in his case.  
All guilt in mine. I tempted, he complied."

"And yet you loved me?"

"Loved you. Double-dyed  
In folly and in guilt, I thought you gave  
Your heart and soul away from me to slave  
At statecraft. Since my right in you seemed  
lost,

I stung myself to teach you, to your cost,  
What you rejected could be prized beyond  
Life, heaven, by the first fool I threw a fond  
Look on, a fatal word to."

"And you still  
Love me? Do I conjecture well or ill?"

"Conjecture — well or ill! I had three years  
To spend in learning you."

"We both are peers  
In knowledge, therefore: since three years are  
spent

Ere thus much of yourself I learn — who went  
Back to the house, that day, and brought my  
mind

To bear upon your action, uncombined  
Motive from motive, till the dross, deprived  
Of every purer particle, survived  
At last in native simple hideousness,  
Utter contemptibility, nor less  
Nor more. Contemptibility — exempt  
How could I, from its proper due — contempt?  
I have too much despised you to divert  
My life from its set course by help or hurt  
Of your all-despicable life — perturb  
The calm I work in, by — men's mouths to curb,  
Which at such news were clamorous enough —  
Men's eyes to shut before my broidered stuff  
With the huge hole there, my emblazoned wall  
Blank where a scutcheon hung, — by, worse  
than all,

Each day's procession, my paraded life  
Robbed and impoverished through the wanting  
wife

— Now that my life (which means — my work)  
was grown

Riches indeed! Once, just this worth alone  
Seemed work to have, that profit gained thereby  
Of good and praise would — how rewardingly! —  
Fall at your feet, — a crown I hoped to cast  
Before your love, my love should crown at last.  
No love remaining to cast crown before,  
My love stopped work now: but contempt the  
more

Impelled me task as ever head and hand,  
Because the very fiends weave ropes of sand  
Rather than taste pure hell in idleness.  
Therefore I kept my memory down by stress  
Of daily work I had no mind to stay  
For the world's wonder at the wife away.  
Oh, it was easy all of it, believe,  
For I despised you! But your words retrieve  
Importantly the past. No hate assumed  
The mask of love at any time! There gloomed  
A moment when love took hate's semblance,  
urged

By causes you declare; but love's self purged  
Away a fancied wrong I did both loves  
— Yours and my own: by no hate's help, it  
proves,

Purgation was attempted. Then, you rise  
High by how many a grade! I did despise —  
I do but hate you. Let hate's punishment  
Replace contempt's! First step to which as-  
cent —

Write down your own words I re-utter you!  
'I loved my husband and I hated — who  
He was, I took up as my first chance, mere  
Mud-ball to fling and make love foul with!' Here  
Lies paper!"

"Would my blood for ink suffice!"

"It may: this minion from a land of spice,  
Silk, feather — every bird of jewelled breast —  
'This poniard's beauty, ne'er so lightly preste  
Above your heart there'" . . .

"Thus?"

"It flows, I see.  
Dip there the point and write!"

"Dictate to me!  
Nay, I remember."

And she wrote the words.  
I read them. Then — "Since love, in you,  
affords

License for hate, in me, to quench (I say)  
Contempt — why, hate itself has passed away  
In vengeance — foreign to contempt. Depart  
Peacefully to that death which Eastern art  
Imbued this weapon with, if tales be true!  
Love will succeed to hate. I pardon you —  
Dead in our chamber!"

True as truth the tale.  
She died ere morning; then, I saw how pale  
Her cheek was ere it wore day's paint-disguise,  
And what a hollow darkened 'neath her eyes,  
Now that I used my own. She sleeps, as erst  
Beloved, in this your church: ay, yours!

Immersed  
In thought so deeply, Father? Sad, perhaps?  
For whose sake, hers or mine or his who wraps  
— Still plain I seem to see! — about his head  
The idle cloak, — about his heart (instead  
Of cuirass) some fond hope he may elude  
My vengeance in the cloister's solitude?  
Hardly, I think! As little helped his brow  
The cloak then, Father — as your grate helps  
now!

# CENCIAJA

Ogni cencio vuol entrare in bucato. — *Italian Proverb.*

Mr. Buxton Forman, the editor of Shelley,  
upon asking Browning the precise value at-  
tached to the terminal *aja* in the title of his  
poem, received the following answer: —



"19 WARWICK CRESCENT, W., July 27, '76.

"DEAR MR. BUXTON FORMAN: There can be no objection to such a simple statement as you have inserted, if it seems worth inserting. 'Fact,' it is. Next: 'aia' is generally an accumulative yet depreciative termination: 'Cenciaja' — a bundle of rags — a trifle. The proverb means 'every poor creature will be pressing into the company of his betters,' and I used it to deprecate the notion that I intended anything of the kind. Is it any contribution to 'all connected with Shelley,' if I mention that my 'Book' (*The Ring and the Book*) [rather the 'old square yellow book' from which the details were taken] has a reference to the reason given by Farinacci, the advocate of the Cenci, of his failure in the defence of Beatrice? 'Fuisse punitam Beatricem (he declares) poenâ ultimi supplicii, non quia ex intervallo occidi mandavit insidiantem suo honori, sed quia ejus exceptionem non probavi tibi. *Prout, et idem firmiter sperabatur de sorore Beatrice si propositam excusationem probasset, prout non probavit.*' That is, she expected to avow the main outrage, and did not: in conformity with her words, 'That which I ought to confess, that will I confess; that to which I ought to assent, to that I assent; and that which I ought to deny, that will I deny.' Here is another Cenciaja!

"Yours very sincerely, ROBERT BROWNING."

MAY I print, Shelley, how it came to pass  
That when your Beatrice seemed — by lapse  
Of many a long month since her sentence fell —  
Assured of pardon for the parricide —  
By intercession of staunch friends, or, say,  
By certain pricks of conscience in the Pope  
Conniver at Francesco Cenci's guilt, —  
Suddenly all things changed and Clement grew  
"Stern," as you state, "nor to be moved nor  
bent,  
But said these three words coldly 'She must  
die;'

Subjoining 'Pardon? Paolo Santa Croce  
Murdered his mother also yestereve,  
And he is glad: she shall not flee at least!'"  
— So, to the letter, sentence was fulfilled?  
Shelley, I condense verbosity  
That lies before me, into some few words  
Of English, and illustrate your superb  
Achievement by a rescued anecdote,  
No great things, only new and true beside?  
As if some mere familiar of a house  
Should venture to accost the group at gaze  
Before its Titian, famed the wide world through,  
And supplement such pictured masterpiece  
By whisper, "Searching in the archives here,  
I found the reason of the Lady's fate,  
And how by accident it came to pass  
She wears the halo and displays the palm:  
Who, haply, else had never suffered — no,  
Nor graced our gallery, by consequence."  
Who loved the work would like the little news:

Who lauds your poem lends an ear to me  
Relating how the penalty was paid  
By one Marchese dell' Oriolo, called  
Onofrio Santa Croce otherwise,  
For his complicity in matricide  
With Paolo his own brother, — he whose crime  
And flight induced "those three words — She  
must die."

Thus I unroll you then the manuscript.

"God's justice" — (of the multiplicity  
Of such communications extant still,  
Recording, each, injustice done by God  
In person of his Vicar-upon-earth,  
Scarce one but leads off to the selfsame tune) —  
"God's justice, tardy though it prove perchance,  
Rests never on the track until it reach  
Delinquency. In proof I cite the case  
Of Paolo Santa Croce."

Many times  
The youngster, — having been importunate  
That Marchesine Costanza, who remained  
His widowed mother, should supplant the heir  
Her elder son, and substitute himself  
In sole possession of her faculty, —  
And meeting just as often with rebuff, —  
Blinded by so exorbitant a lust  
Of gold, the youngster straightway tasked his  
wits,  
Casting about to kill the lady — thus.

He first, to cover his iniquity,  
Writes to Onofrio Santa Croce, then  
Authoritative lord, acquainting him  
Their mother was contamination — wrought  
Like hell-fire in the beauty of their House  
By dissoluteness and abandonment  
Of soul and body to impure delight.

Moreover, since she suffered from disease,  
Those symptoms which her death made mani-  
fest  
Hydroptic, he affirmed were fruits of sin  
About to bring confusion and disgrace  
Upon the ancient lineage and high fame  
O' the family, when published. Duty bound,  
He asked his brother — what a son should do?

Which when Marchese dell' Oriolo heard  
By letter, being absent at his land  
Oriolo, he made answer, this, no more: —  
"It must beehove a son, — things haply so, —  
To act as honor prompts a cavalier  
And son, perform his duty to all three,  
Mother and brothers" — here advice broke off.

By which advice informed and fortified  
As he professed himself — since bound by birth  
To hear God's voice in primogeniture —  
Paolo, who kept his mother company  
In her domain Subiaco, straightway dared  
His whole enormity of enterprise.  
And, falling on her, stabbed the lady dead;  
Whose death demonstrated her innocence,  
And happened, — by the way, — since Jesus  
Christ  
Died to save man, just sixteen hundred years.

Costanza was of aspect beautiful  
Exceedingly, and seemed, although in age  
Sixty about, to far surpass her peers  
The coëtaneous dames, in youth and grace.

Done the misdeed, its author takes to flight,  
Foiling thereby the justice of the world :  
Not God's however, — God, be sure, knows  
well

The way to clutch a culprit. Witness here !  
The present sinner, when he least expects,  
Snug-cornered somewhere i' the Basilicate,  
Stumbles upon his death by violence.  
A man of blood assaults a man of blood  
And slays him somehow. This was afterward :  
Enough, he promptly met with his deserts,  
And, ending thus, permits we end with him,  
And push forthwith to this important point —  
His matricide tell out, of all the days,  
Precisely when the law-procedure closed  
Respecting Count Francesco Cenci's death  
Chargeable on his daughter, sons and wife.  
" Thus patricide was matched with matricide,"  
A poet not inelegantly rhymed :  
Nay, fratricide — those Princes Massimi ! —  
Which so disturbed the spirit of the Pope  
That all the likelihood Rome entertained  
Of Beatrice's pardon vanished straight,  
And she endured the piteous death.

Now see

The sequel — what effect commandment had  
For strict inquiry into this last case,  
When Cardinal Aldobrandini (great  
His efficacy — nephew to the Pope !)  
Was bidden crush — ay, though his very hand  
Got soil i' the act — crime spawning everywhere !  
Because, when all endeavor had been used  
To catch the aforesaid Paolo, all in vain —  
" Make perquisition," quoth our Eminence,  
" Throughout his now deserted domicile !  
Ransack the palace, roof and floor, to find  
If haply any scrap of writing, hid  
In nook or corner, may convict — who knows ? —  
Brother Onofrio of intelligence  
With brother Paolo, as in brotherhood  
Is but too likely : crime spawns everywhere."

And, every cranny searched accordingly,  
There comes to light — O lynx-eyed Cardinal ! —  
Onofrio's unconsidered writing-scrap,  
The letter in reply to Paolo's prayer,  
The word of counsel that — things proving so,  
Paolo should act the proper knightly part,  
And do as was incumbent on a son,  
A brother — and a man of birth, be sure !

Whereat immediately the officers  
Proceeded to arrest Onofrio — found  
At football, child's play, unaware of harm,  
Safe with his friends, the Orsini, at their seat  
Monte Giordano ; as he left the house  
He came upon the watch in wait for him  
Set by the Barigel, — was caught and caged.

News of which capture being, that same hour,  
Conveyed to Rome, forthwith our Eminence  
Commands Taverna, Governor and Judge,

To have the process in especial care,  
Be, first to last, not only president  
In person, but inquisitor as well,  
Nor trust the by-work to a substitute :  
Bids him not, squeamish, keep the bench, but  
scrub

The floor of Justice, so to speak, — go try  
His best in prison with the criminal :  
Promising, as reward for by-work done  
Fairly on all-fours, that, success obtained  
And crime avowed, or such connivency  
With crime as should procure a decent death —  
Himself will humbly beg — which means, pro-  
cure —

The Hat and Purple from his relative  
The Pope, and so repay a diligence  
Which, meritorious in the Cenci-case,  
Mounts plainly here to Purple and the Hat.

Whereupon did my lord the Governor  
So masterfully exercise the task  
Enjoined him, that he, day by day, and week  
By week, and month by month, from first to  
last  
Toiled for the prize : now, punctual at his place,  
Played Judge, and now, assiduous at his post,  
Inquisitor — pressed cushion and scoured plank,  
Early and late. Noon's fervor and night's  
chill,

Naught moved whom morn would, purpling,  
make amends !

So that observers laughed as, many a day,  
He left home, in July when day is flame,  
Posted to Tordinona-prison, plunged  
Into a vault where daylong night is ice,  
There passed his eight hours on a stretch, con-  
tent,

Examining Onofrio : all the stress  
Of all examination steadily  
Converging into one pin-point, — he pushed  
Tentative now of head and now of heart.  
As when the nut-hatch taps and tries the nut  
This side and that side till the kernel sound, —  
So did he press the sole and single point  
— What was the very meaning of the phrase  
" Do as befits an honored cavalier " ?

Which one persistent question-torture, —  
plied  
Day by day, week by week, and month by  
month,

Morn, noon and night, — fatigued away a mind  
Grown imbecile by darkness, solitude,  
And one vivacious memory gnawing there  
As when a corpse is confined with a snake :  
— Fatigued Onofrio into what might seem  
Admission that perchance his judgment groped  
So blindly, feeling for an issue — aught  
With semblance of an issue from the toils  
Cast of a sudden round feet late so free,  
He possibly might have envisaged, scarce  
Recoiled from — even were the issue death  
— Even her death whose life was death and  
worse !

Always provided that the charge of crime,  
Each jot and tittle of the charge were true.  
In such a sense, belike, he might advise  
His brother to expurgate crime with . . . well,

With blood, if blood must follow on "*the course*  
Taken as might besem a cavalier."

Whereupon process ended, and report  
Was made without a minute of delay  
To Clement, who, because of those two crimes  
O' the Massimi and Cenci flagrant late,  
Must needs impatiently desire result.

Result obtained, he bade the Governor  
Summon the Congregation and despatch.  
Summons made, sentence passed accordingly  
— Death by beheading. When his death-decree  
Was intimated to Onofrio, all  
Man could do — that did he to save himself.  
'T was much, the having gained for his defence  
The Advocate o' the Poor, with natural help  
Of many noble friendly persons fain  
To disengage a man of family,  
So young too, from his grim entanglement :  
But Cardinal Aldobrandini ruled  
There must be no diversion of the law.  
Justice is justice, and the magistrate  
Bears not the sword in vain. Who sins must  
die.

So, the Marchese had his head cut off,  
With Rome to see, a concourse infinite,  
In Place Saint Angelo beside the Bridge :  
Where, demonstrating magnanimity  
Adequate to his birth and breed, — poor boy ! —  
He made the people the accustomed speech,  
Exhorted them to true faith, honest works,  
And special good behavior as regards  
A parent of no matter what the sex,  
Bidding each son take warning from himself.  
Truly, it was considered in the boy  
Stark staring lunacy, no less, to snap  
So plain a bait, be hooked and hauled ashore  
By such an angler as the Cardinal !  
Why make confession of his privacy  
To Paolo's enterprise ? Mere sealing lips —  
Or, better, saying "When I counselled him  
To do as might besem a cavalier,"  
What could I mean but '*Hide our parent's*  
*shame*

As *Christian ought, by aid of Holy Church !*  
Bury it in a convent — ay, beneath  
Enough dotation to prevent its ghost  
From troubling earth !" Mere saying thus, —  
't is plain,

Not only were his life the recompense.  
But he had manifestly proved himself  
True Christian, and in lieu of punishment  
Got praise of all men ! — so the populace.

Anyhow, when the Pope made promise good  
(That of Aldobrandini, near and dear)  
And gave Taverna, who had toiled so much,  
A Cardinal's equipment, some such word  
As this from mouth to ear went saucily :  
"Taverna's cap is dyed in what he drew  
From Santa Croce's veins !" So joked the  
world.

I add : Onofrio left one child behind,  
A daughter named Valeria, dowered with  
grace

Abundantly of soul and body, doomed  
To life the shorter for her father's fate.  
By death of her, the Marquisate returned  
To that Orsini House from whence it came :  
Oriolo having passed as donative  
To Santa Croce from their ancestors.

And no word more ? By all means ! Would  
you know

The authoritative answer, when folk urged  
"What made Aldobrandini, hound-like stanch,  
Hunt out of life a harmless simpleton ?"  
The answer was — "Hatred implacable,  
By reason they were rivals in their love."  
The Cardinal's desire was to a dame  
Whose favor was Onofrio's. Pricked with  
pride,

The simpleton must ostentatiously  
Display a ring, the Cardinal's love-gift,  
Given to Onofrio as the lady's gage ;  
Which ring on finger, as he put forth hand  
To draw a tapestry, the Cardinal  
Saw and knew, gift and owner, old and young ;  
Whereon a fury entered him — the fire  
He quenched with what could quench fire only  
— blood.

Nay, more : "there want not who affirm to  
boot,

The unwise boy, a certain festal eye,  
Feigned ignorance of who the wight might be  
That pressed too closely on him with a crowd.  
He struck the Cardinal a blow : and then,  
To put a face upon the incident,  
Dared next day, smug as ever, go pay court  
I' the Cardinal's antechamber. Mark and  
mend,

Ye youth, by this example how may greed  
Vainglorious operate in worldly souls !"

So ends the chronicler, beginning with  
"God's justice, tardy though it prove per-  
chance,

Rests never till it reach delinquency."  
Ay, or how otherwise had come to pass  
That Victor rules, this present year, in Rome ?

## FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVI- LEGE OF BURIAL

A REMINISCENCE OF A. D. 1676

"No, boy, we must not" — so began  
My Uncle (he's with God long since),  
A-petting me, the good old man !  
"We must not" — and he seemed to wince,  
And lost that laugh whereto had grown  
His chuckle at my piece of news,  
How cleverly I aimed my stone —  
"I fear we must not pelt the Jews !

"When I was young indeed, — ah, faith  
Was young and strong in Florence too !  
We Christians never dreamed of scathe  
Because we cursed or kicked the crew.  
But now — well, well ! The olive-crops  
Weighed double then, and Arno's pranks  
Would always spare religious shops  
Whenever he o'erflowed his banks !



"I'll tell you" — and his eye regained  
Its twinkle — "tell you something choice!  
Something may help you keep unstained

Your honest zeal to stop the voice  
Of unbelief with stone-throw — spite  
Of laws, which modern fools enact,  
That we must suffer Jews in sight  
Go wholly unmolested! Fact!

"There was, then, in my youth, and yet  
Is, by our San Frediano, just  
Below the Blessed Olivet,  
A wayside ground wherein they thrust  
Their dead, — these Jews, — the more our  
shame!

Except that, so they will but die,  
Christians perchance incur no blame  
In giving hogs a hoist to sty.

"There, anyhow, Jews stow away  
Their dead; and — such their insolence —  
Slink at odd times to sing and pray  
As Christians do — all make pretence! —  
Which wickedness they perpetrate  
Because they think no Christians see.  
They reckoned here, at any rate,  
Without their host: ha, ha! he, he!

"For, what should join their plot of ground  
But a good Farmer's Christian field?  
The Jews had hedged their corner round  
With bramble-bush to keep concealed  
Their doings: for the public road  
Ran betwixt this their ground and that  
The Farmer's, where he ploughed and sowed,  
Grew corn for barn and grapes for vat.

"So, properly to guard his store  
And gall the unbelievers too,  
He builds a shrine and, what is more,  
Procures a painter whom I knew,  
One Buti (he 's with God), to paint  
A holy picture there — no less  
Than Virgin Mary free from taint  
Borne to the sky by angels: yes!

"Which shrine he fixed, — who says him nay? —  
A-facing with its picture-side  
Not, as you'd think, the public way.  
But just where sought these hounds to hide  
Their carrion from that very truth  
Of Mary's triumph: not a hound  
Could act his mummeries uncouth  
But Mary shamed the pack all round!

"Now, if it was amusing, judge!  
— To see the company arrive,  
Each Jew intent to end his trudge  
And take his pleasure (though alive)  
With all his Jewish kith and kin  
Below ground, have his venom out,  
Sharpen his wits for next day's sin,  
Curse Christians, and so home, no doubt!

"Whereas, each phiz upturned beholds  
Mary, I warrant, soaring brave!  
And in a trice, beneath the folds  
Of filthy garb which gowns each knave,

Down drops it — there to hide grimace,  
Contortion of the mouth and nose  
At finding Mary in the place  
They'd keep for Pilate, I suppose!

"At last, they will not brook — not they! —  
Longer such outrage on their tribe:  
So, in some hole and corner, lay  
Their heads together — how to bribe  
The meritorious Farmer's self  
To straight undo his work, restore  
Their chance to meet and muse on pelf —  
Pretending sorrow, as before!

"Forthwith, a posse, if you please,  
Of Rabbi This and Rabbi That  
Almost go down upon their knees  
To get him lay the picture flat.  
The spokesman, eighty years of age,  
Gray as a badger, with a goat's  
Not only beard but bleat, 'gins wage  
War with our Mary. Thus he dotes: —

"*'Friends, grant a grace! How Hebrews  
toil  
Through life in Florence — why relate  
To those who lay the burden, spoil  
Our paths of peace? We bear our fate.  
But when with life the long toil ends,  
Why must you — the expression craves  
Pardon, but truth compels me, friends! —  
Why must you plague us in our graves?*

"*'Thoughtlessly plague, I would believe!  
For how can you — the lords of ease  
By nurture, birthright — e'en conceive  
Our luxury to lie with trees  
And turf, — the cricket and the bird  
Left for our last companionship:  
No harsh deed, no unkindly word,  
No frowning brow nor scornful lip!*

"*'Death's luxury, we now rehearse  
While, living, through your streets we fare  
And take your hatred: nothing worse  
Have we, once dead and safe, to bear!  
So we refresh our souls, fulfil  
Our works, our daily tasks; and thus  
Gather your grain — earth's harvest — still  
The wheat for you, the straw for us.*

"*'What flouting in a face, what harm,  
In just a lady borne from bier  
By boys' heads, wings for leg and arm?'  
You question. Friends, the harm is here —  
That just when our last sigh is heaved,  
And we would fain thank God and you  
For labor done and peace achieved,  
Back comes the Past in full review!*

"*'At sight of just that simple flag,  
Starts the foe-feeling serpent-like  
From slumber. Leave it lulled, nor drag —  
Though fangless — forth what needs must strike  
When stricken sore, though stroke be vain  
Against the mailed oppressor! Give  
Play to our fancy that we gain  
Life's rights when once we cease to live!*

" Thus much to courtesy, to kind,  
 To conscience! Now to Florence folk!  
 There 's core beneath this apple-rind,  
 Beneath this white-of-egg there 's yolk!  
 Beneath this prayer to courtesy,  
 Kind, conscience — there 's a sum to pouch!  
 How many ducats down will buy  
 Our shame's removal, sirs? Avoch!

" Removal, not destruction, sirs!  
 Just turn your picture! Let it front  
 The public path! Or memory errs,  
 Or that same public path is wont  
 To witness many a chance befall  
 Of lust, theft, bloodshed — sins enough,  
 Wherein our Hebrew part is small.  
 Convert yourselves! — he cut up rough.

" Look you, how soon a service paid  
 Religion yields the servant fruit!  
 A prompt reply our Farmer made  
 So following: 'Sirs, to grant your suit  
 Involves much danger! How? Transpose  
 Our Lady? Stop the chastisement,  
 All for your good, herself bestows?  
 What wonder if I grudge consent?

" — Yet grant it: since, what cash I take  
 Is so much saved from wicked use.  
 We know you! And, for Mary's sake,  
 A hundred ducats shall induce  
 Concession to your prayer. One day  
 Suffices: Master Buti's brush  
 Turns Mary round the other way,  
 And deluges your side with slush.

" Down with the ducats therefore! ' Dump,  
 Dump, dump it falls, each counted piece,  
 Hard gold. Then out of door they stump,  
 These dogs, each brisk as with new lease  
 Of life, I warrant, — glad he 'll die  
 Henceforward just as he may choose,  
 Be buried and in clover lie!  
 Well said Esaias — 'stiff-necked Jews!'

" Off posts without a minute's loss  
 Our Farmer, once the cash in poke,  
 And summons Buti — ere its gloss  
 Have time to fade from off the joke —  
 To chop and change his work, undo  
 The done side, make the side, now blank,  
 Recipient of our Lady — who,  
 Displaced thus, had these dogs to thank!

" Now, boy, you 're hardly to instruct  
 In technicalities of Art!  
 My nephew's childhood sure has sucked  
 Along with mother's-milk some part  
 Of painter's-practice — learned, at least,  
 How expeditiously is plied  
 A work in fresco — never ceased  
 When once begun — a day, each side.

" So, Buti — (he 's with God) — begins:  
 First covers up the shrine all round  
 With hoarding; then, as like as twins,  
 Faints, t' other side the burial-ground,

New Mary, every point the same;  
 Next, sluices over, as agreed,  
 The old; and last — but, spoil the game  
 By telling you? Not I, indeed!

" Well, ere the week was half at end,  
 Out came the object of this zeal,  
 This fine alacrity to spend  
 Hard money for mere dead men's weal!  
 How think you? That old spokesman Jew  
 Was High Priest, and he had a wife  
 As old, and she was dying too,  
 And wished to end in peace her life!

" And he must humor dying whims,  
 And soothe her with the idle hope  
 They'd say their prayers and sing their hymns  
 As if her husband were the Pope!  
 And she did die — believing just  
 This privilege was purchased! Dead  
 In comfort through her foolish trust!  
 'Stiff-necked ones,' well Esaias said!

" So, Sabbath morning, out of gate  
 And on to way, what sees our arch  
 Good Farmer? Why, they hoist their freight —  
 The corpse — on shoulder, and so, march!  
 'Now for it, Buti!' In the nick  
 Of time 't is pully-hauly, hence  
 With hoarding! O'er the wayside quick  
 There 's Mary plain in evidence!

" And here 's the convoy halting: right!  
 Oh, they are bent on howling psalms  
 And growling prayers, when opposite!  
 And yet they glance, for all their qualms,  
 Approve that promptitude of his,  
 The Farmer 's — duly at his post  
 To take due thanks from every phiz,  
 Sour smirk — nay, surly smile almost!

" Then earthward drops each brow again;  
 The solemn task 's resumed; they reach  
 Their holy field — the unholy train:  
 Enter its precinct, all and each,  
 Wrapt somehow in their godless rites;  
 Till, rites at end, up-waking, lo,  
 They lift their faces! What delights  
 The mourners as they turn to go?

" Ha, ha! he, he! On just the side  
 They drew their purse-strings to make quit  
 Of Mary, — Christ the Crucified  
 Fronted them now — these biters bit!  
 Never was such a hiss and snort,  
 Such screwing nose and shooting lip!  
 Their purchase — honey in report —  
 Proved gall and verjuice at first sip!

" Out they break, on they bustle, where,  
 A-top of wall, the Farmer waits  
 With Buti: never fun so rare!  
 The Farmer has the best: he rates  
 The rascal, as the old High Priest  
 Takes on himself to sermonize —  
 Nay, sneer, 'We Jews supposed, at least,  
 Theft was a crime in Christian eyes!'

“ ‘Theft?’ cries the Farmer. ‘Eat your words!’

*Show me what constitutes a breach  
Of faith in aught was said or heard!  
I promised you in plainest speech  
I’d take the thing you count disgrace  
And put it here — and here ’t is put!  
Did you suppose I’d leave the place  
Blank therefore, just your rage to glut?*

“ ‘I guess you dared not stipulate  
For such a damned impertinence!  
So, quick, my graybeard, out of gate  
And in at Ghetto! Haste you hence!  
As long as I have house and land,  
To spite you irreligious chaps,  
Here shall the Crucifixion stand —  
Unless you down with cash, perhaps!’

“ So snickered he and Buti both,  
The Jews said nothing, interchanged  
A glance or two, renewed their oath  
To keep ears stopped and hearts estranged  
From grace, for all our Church can do;  
Then off they scuttled: sullen jog  
Homewards, against our Church to brew  
Fresh mischief in their synagogue.

“ But next day — see what happened, boy!  
See why I bid you have a care  
How you pelt Jews! The knaves employ  
Such methods of revenge, forbear  
No outrage on our faith, when free  
To wreak their malice! Here they took  
So base a method — plague o’ me  
If I record it in my Book!

“ For, next day, while the Farmer sat  
Laughing with Buti, in his shop,  
At their successful joke, — rat-tat, —  
Door opens, and they’re like to drop  
Down to the floor as in there stalks  
A six-feet-high hereulean-built  
Young he-Jew with a beard that balks  
Description. ‘Help ere blood be spilt!’

— “ Screamed Buti: for he recognized  
Whom but the son, no less no more,  
Of that High Priest his work surprised  
So pleasantly the day before!  
Son of the mother, then, whereof  
The bier he lent a shoulder to,  
And made the moans about, dared scoff  
At sober Christian grief — the Jew!

“ ‘Sirs, I salute you! Never rise!  
No apprehension!’ (Buti, white  
And trembling like a tub of size,  
Had tried to smuggle out of sight  
The picture’s self — the thing in oils,  
You know, from which a fresco’s dashed  
Which courage speeds while caution spoils)  
‘Stay and be praised, sir, unabashed!’

“ ‘Praised, — ay, and paid too: for I come  
To buy that very work of yours.  
My poor abode, which boasts — well, some  
Few specimens of Art, secures,

*Haply, a masterpiece indeed  
If I should find my humble means  
Suffice the outlay. So, proceed!  
Propose — ere prudence intervenes!’*

“ On Buti, cowering like a child,  
These words descended from aloft,  
In tone so ominously mild,  
With smile terrifically soft  
To that degree — could Buti dare  
(Poor fellow) use his brains, think twice?  
He asked, thus taken unaware,  
No more than just the proper price!

“ ‘Done!’ cries the monster. ‘I disburse  
Forthwith your moderate demand.  
Count on my custom — if no worse  
Your future work be, understand,  
Than this I carry off! No aid!  
My arm, sir, lacks nor bone nor thews:  
The burden’s easy, and we’re made,  
Easy or hard, to bear — we Jews!’

“ Crossing himself at such escape,  
Buti by turns the money eyes  
And, timidly, the stalwart shape  
Now moving doorwards; but, more wise,  
The Farmer — who, though dumb, this while  
Had watched advantage — straight conceived  
A reason for that tone and smile  
So mild and soft! The Jew — believed!

“ Mary in triumph borne to deck  
A Hebrew household! Pictured where  
No one was used to bend the neck  
In praise or bow the knee in prayer!  
Borne to that domicile by whom?  
The son of the High Priest! Through  
what?  
An insult done his mother’s tomb!  
Saul changed to Paul — the case came pat!

“ ‘Stay, dog-Jew . . . gentle sir, that is!  
Resolve me! Can it be, she crowned, —  
Mary, by miracle, — oh bliss! —  
My present to your burial-ground?  
Certain, a ray of light has burst  
Your vale of darkness! Had you else,  
Only for Mary’s sake, unpursed  
So much hard money? Tell — oh, tell’s!’

“ Round — like a serpent that we took  
For worm and trod on — turns his bulk  
About the Jew. First dreadful look  
Sends Buti in a trice to skulk  
Out of sight somewhere, safe — alack!  
But our good Farmer faith made bold:  
And firm (with Florence at his back)  
He stood, while gruff the gutturals rolled —

“ ‘Ay, sir, a miracle was worked,  
By quite another power, I trow,  
Than ever yet in canvas lurked,  
Or you would scarcely face me now!  
A certain impulse did suggest  
A certain grasp with this right-hand,  
Which probably had put to rest  
Our quarrel, — thus your throat once spanned!



" *But I remembered me, subdued  
That impulse, and you face me still !  
And soon a philosophic mood  
Succeeding (hear it, if you will !)  
Has altogether changed my views  
Concerning Art. Blind prejudice !  
Well may you Christians tax us Jews  
With scrupulosity too nice !*

" *For, don't I see, — let's issue join ! —  
Whenever I'm allowed pollute  
I — and my little bag of coin)  
Some Christian palace of repute, —  
Don't I see stuck up everywhere  
Abundant proof that cultured taste  
Has Beauty for its only care,  
And upon Truth no thought to waste ?*

" *'Jew, since it must be, take in pledge  
Of payment' — so a Cardinal  
Has sighed to me as if a wedge  
Entered his heart — 'this best of all  
My treasures !' — Leda, Ganymede  
Or Antiope: swan, eagle, ape,  
(Or what 's the beast of what 's the breed,)  
And Jupiter in every shape !*

" *'Whereat if I presume to ask  
'But, Eminence, though Titian's whisk  
Of brush have well performed its task,  
How comes it these false godships frisk  
In presence of — what yonder frame  
Pretends to image ? Surely, odd  
It seems, you let confront The Name  
Each beast the heathen called his god !'*

" *'Benignant smiles me pity straight  
The Cardinal. 'Tis Truth, we prize !  
Art 's the sole question in debate !  
These subjects are so many lies.  
We treat them with a proper scorn  
When we turn lies — called gods forsooth —  
To lies' fit use, now Christ is born.  
Drawing and coloring are Truth.*

" *'Think you I honor lies so much  
As scruple to parade the charms  
Of Leda — Titian, every touch —  
Because the thing within her arms  
Means Jupiter who had the praise  
And prayer of a benighted world ?  
He would have mine too, if, in days  
Of light, I kept the canvas furled !'*

" *'So ending, with some easy gibe,  
What power has logic ! I, at once,  
Acknowledged error in our tribe  
So squeamish that, when friends ensconce  
A pretty picture in its niche  
To do us honor, deck our graves,  
We fret and fume and have an itch  
To strangle folk — ungrateful knaves !*

" *'No, sir ! Be sure that — what 's its style,  
Your picture ? — shall possess ungrudged  
A place among my rank and file  
Of Leda's and what not — be judged*

*Just as a picture ! and (because  
I fear me much I scarce have bought  
A Titian) Master Buti's flaws  
Found there, will have the laugh flaws ought !'*

" *So, with a scowl, it darkens door —  
This bulk — no longer ! Buti makes  
Prompt glad re-entry ; there 's a score  
Of oaths, as the good Farmer wakes  
From what must needs have been a trance,  
Or he had struck (he swears) to ground  
The bold bad mouth that dared advance  
Such doctrine the reverse of sound !*

" *Was magic here ? Most like ! For, since,  
Somehow our city's faith grows still  
More and more lukewarm, and our Prince  
Or loses heart or wants the will  
To cheek increase of cold. 'Tis 'Live  
And let live ! Languidly repress  
The Dissident ! In short, — contrive  
Christians must bear with Jews : no less !'*

" *The end seems, any Israelite  
Wants any picture, — pishes, poohs,  
Purchases, hangs it full in sight  
In any chamber he may choose !  
In Christ's crown, one more thorn we rue !  
In Mary's bosom, one more sword !  
No, boy, you must not pelt a Jew !  
O Lord, how long ? How long, O Lord ?'*

## EPILOGUE

μεστοι . . .  
οί δ' ἀμφορῆς οἶνον μέλανος ἀνθοσμίου.

" *THE poets pour us wine — "*  
Said the dearest poet I ever knew,  
Dearest and greatest and best to me.  
You clamor athirst for poetry —  
We pour. "But when shall a vintage be" —  
You cry — "strong grape, squeezed gold from  
screw.  
Yet sweet juice, flavored flowery-fine ?  
That were indeed the wine !"

One pours your cup — stark strength,  
Meat for a man ; and you eye the pulp  
Strained, turbid still, from the viscous blood  
Of the snaky bough : and you grumble " Good !  
For it swells resolve, breeds hardihood ;  
Dispatch it, then, in a single gulp !"  
So, down, with a wry face, goes at length  
The liquor : stuff for strength.

One pours your cup — sheer sweet,  
The fragrant fumes of a year condensed :  
Suspicion of all that 's ripe or rathe,  
From the bud on branch to the grass in swathe  
"We suck mere milk of the seasons," saith  
A curl of each nostril — "dew, dispensed  
Nowise for nerving man to feat:  
Boys sip such honeyed sweet !"

And thus who wants wine strong,  
Waves each sweet smell of the year away ;

Who likes to swoon as the sweets suffuse  
His brain with a mixture of beams and dews  
Turned syrupy drink — rough strength eschews:

“What though in our veins your wine-stock  
stay?

The lack of the bloom does our palate wrong.

Give us wine sweet, not strong!”

Yet wine is — some affirm —

Prime wine is found in the world somewhere,  
Of portable strength with sweet to match.

You double your heart its dose, yet catch —  
As the draught descends — a violet-smatch,

Softness — however it came there,  
Through drops expressed by the fire and worm:

Strong sweet wine — some affirm.

Body and bouquet both?

’T is easy to ticket a bottle so;

But what was the case in the cask, my friends?

Cask? Nay, the vat — where the maker  
mends

His strong with his sweet (you suppose) and  
blends

His rough with his smooth, till none can know  
How it comes you may tittle, nothing loth,

Body and bouquet both.

“You” being just — the world.

No poets — who turn, themselves, the winch

Of the press; no critics — I’ll even say,

(Being flustered and easy of faith, to-day)

Who for love of the work have learned the way

Till themselves produce home-made, at a  
pinch:

No! You are the world, and wine ne’er purled

Except to please the world!

“For, oh the common heart!

And, ah the irremissible sin

Of poets who please themselves, not us!

Strong wine yet sweet wine pouring thus,

How please still — Pindar and Æschylus! —

Drink — dipt into by the bearded chin

Alike and the bloomy lip — no part

Denied the common heart!

“And might we get such grace,

And did you moderns but stock our vault

With the true half-brandy half-attar-gul,

How would seniors indulge at a hearty pull

While juniors tossed off their thimbleful!

Our Shakespeare and Milton escaped your  
fault,

So, they reign supreme o’er the weaker race

That wants the ancient grace!”

If I paid myself with words

(As the French say well) I were dupe in-  
deed!

I were found in belief that you quaffed and  
bowed

At your Shakespeare the whole day long,  
caroused

In your Milton pottle-deep nor drowsed

A moment of night — topped on, took heed

Of nothing like modern cream-and-curd.

Pay me with deeds, not words!

For — see your cellarage!

There are forty barrels with Shakespeare’s  
brand.

Some five or six are abroach: the rest

Stand spigoted, fauceted. Try and test

What yourselves call best of the very best!

How comes it that still untouched they  
stand?

Why don’t you try tap, advance a stage

With the rest in cellarage?

For — see your cellarage!

There are four big butts of Milton’s brew.

How comes it you make old drips and drops

Do duty, and there devotion stops?

Leave such an abyss of malt and hops

Embellied in butts which bungs still glue?

You hate your bard! A fig for your rage!

Free him from cellarage!

’T is said I brew stiff drink,

But the deuce a flavor of grape is there.

Hardly a May-go-down, ’t is just

A sort of a gruff Go-down-it-must —

No Merry-go-down, no gracious gust

Commingles the racy with Springtide’s rare!

“What wonder,” say you, “that we cough,  
and blink

At Autumn’s heady drink?”

Is it a fancy, friends?

Mighty and mellow are never mixed,

Though mighty and mellow be born at once.

Sweet for the future, — strong for the nonce!

Stuff you should stow away, ensconce

In the deep and dark, to be found fast-fixed

At the century’s close: such time strength  
spends

A-sweetening for my friends!

And then — why, what you quaff

With a smack of lip and a cluck of tongue,

Is leakage and leavings — just what haps

From the tun some learned taster taps

With a promise “Prepare your watery chaps!

Here’s properest wine for old and young!

Dispute its perfection — you make us laugh!

Have faith, give thanks, but — quaff!”

Leakage, I say, or — worse —

Leavings suffice pot-valiant souls.

Somebody, brinful, long ago,

Frothed flagon he drained to the dregs; and, lo,

Down whisker and beard what an overflow!

Lick spilth that has trickled from classic  
jowls,

Sup the single scene, sip the only verse —

Old wine, not new and worse!

I grant you: worse by much!

Renounce that new where you never gained

One glow at heart, one gleam at head,

And stick to the warrant of age instead!

No dwarf’s-lap! Fatten, by giants fed!

You fatten, with oceans of drink undrained?

You feed — who would choke did a cobweb  
smutch

The Age you love so much?

A mine's beneath a moor :  
 Acres of moor roof fathoms of mine  
 Which diamonds dot where you please to  
 dig ;  
 Yet who plies spade for the bright and big ?  
 Your product is — truffles, you hunt with a  
 pig !

Since large-and-big, when a man would  
 dine,  
 Suits badly : and therefore the Koh-i-noor  
 May sleep in mine 'neath moor !

Wine, pulse in might from me !  
 It may never emerge in must from vat,  
 Never fill cask nor furnish can,  
 Never end sweet, which strong began —  
 God's gift to gladden the heart of man ;  
 But spirit 's at proof, I promise that !  
 No sparing of juice spoils what should be  
 Fit brewage — mine for me.

Man's thoughts and loves and hates !  
 Earth is my vineyard, these grew there :  
 From grape of the ground, I made or marred  
 My vintage ; easy the task or hard,  
 Who set it — his praise be my reward !  
 Earth's yield ! Who yearn for the Dark  
 Blue Sea's,  
 Let them " lay, pray, bray " — the addle-pates !  
 Mine be Man's thoughts, loves, hates !

But some one says, " Good Sir ! "  
 ( 'Tis a worthy versed in what concerns  
 The making such labor turn out well, )  
 " You don't suppose that the nosegay-smell  
 Needs always come from the grape ? Each  
 bell  
 At your foot, each bud that your culture  
 spurns,  
 The very cowslip would act like myrrh  
 On the stiffest brew — good Sir !

" Cowslips, abundant birth  
 O'er meadow and hillside, vineyard too,  
 — Like a schoolboy's scrawlings in and out  
 Distasteful lesson-book — all about  
 Greece and Rome, victory and rout —  
 Love-verses instead of such vain ado !  
 So, fancies frolic it o'er the earth  
 Where thoughts have rightlier birth.

" Nay, thoughtlings they themselves :  
 Loves, hates — in little and less and least !  
 Thoughts ? ' *What is a man beside a mount !* "

Loves ? ' *Absent — poor lovers the minutes  
 count !* "

Hates ? ' *Fie — Pope's letters to Martha  
 Blount !* "

These furnish a wine for a children's-feast :  
 Inspid to man, they suit the elves  
 Like thoughts, loves, hates themselves."

And, friends, beyond dispute  
 I too have the cowslips dewy and dear.  
 Punctual as Springtide forth peep they :  
 I leave them to make my meadow gay.  
 But I ought to pluck and impound them, eh ?  
 Not let them alone, but deftly shear  
 And shred and reduce to — what may suit  
 Children, beyond dispute ?

And, here 's May-month, all bloom,  
 All bounty : what if I sacrifice ?  
 If I out with shears and shear, nor stop  
 Shearing till prostrate, lo, the crop ?  
 And will you prefer it to ginger-pop  
 When I've made you wine of the memories  
 Which leave as bare as a churchyard tomb  
 My meadow, late all bloom ?

Nay, what ingratitude  
 Should I hesitate to amuse the wits  
 That have pulled so long at my flask, nor  
 grudged  
 The headache that paid their pains, nor budged  
 From bungle before they sighed and judged  
 " Too rough for our taste, to-day, befits  
 The racy and right when the years conclude ! "  
 Out on ingratitude !

Grateful or ingrate — none,  
 No cowslip of all my fairy crew  
 Shall help to concoct what makes you wink,  
 And goes to your head till you think you think !  
 I like them alive : the printer's ink  
 Would sensibly tell on the perfume too.  
 I may use up my nettles, ere I've done ;  
 But of cowslips — friends get none !

Don't nettles make a broth  
 Wholesome for blood grown lazy and thick ?  
 Maws out of sorts make mouths out of taste.  
 My Thirty-four Port — no need to waste  
 On a tongue that 's fur and a palate — paste !  
 A magnum for friends who are sound ! the  
 sick —  
 I'll posset and cosset them, nothing loth,  
 Henceforward with nettle-broth !



## THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS

MAY I be permitted to chat a little, by way of recreation, at the end of a somewhat toilsome and perhaps fruitless adventure?

If, because of the immense fame of the following Tragedy, I wished to acquaint myself with it, and could only do so by the help of a translator, I should require him to be literal at every cost save that of absolute violence to our language. The use of certain allowable constructions which, happening to be out of daily favor, are all the more appropriate to archaic workmanship, is no violence; but I would be tolerant for once — in the case of so immensely famous an original — of even a clumsy attempt to furnish me with the very turn of each phrase in as Greek a fashion as English will bear: while, with respect to amplifications and embellishments, — anything rather than, with the good farmer, experience that most signal of mortifications, “to gape for Æschylus and get Theognis.” I should especially decline — what may appear to brighten up a passage — the employment of a new word for some old one, — *πόνος*, or *μέγας*, or *τέλος*, with its congeners, recurring four times in three lines: for though such substitution may be in itself perfectly justifiable, yet this exercise of ingenuity ought to be within the competence of the unaided English reader if he likes to show himself ingenious. Learning Greek teaches Greek, and nothing else: certainly not common sense, if that have failed to precede the teaching. Further, — if I obtained a mere strict bald version of thing by thing, or at least word pregnant with thing, I should hardly look for an impossible transmission of the reputed magniloquence and sonority of the Greek; and this with the less regret, inasmuch as there is abundant musicality elsewhere, but nowhere else than in his poem the ideas of the poet. And lastly, when presented with these ideas, I should expect the result to prove very hard reading indeed if it were meant to resemble Æschylus, *εὐμβάλεῖν οὐ ράδιος*, “not easy to understand,” in the opinion of his stoutest advocate among the ancients; while, I suppose, even modern scholarship sympathizes with that early declaration of the redoubtable Salmasius, when, looking about for an example of the truly obscure for the benefit of those who found obscurity in the sacred books, he protested that this particular play leaves them all behind in this respect, with their “Hebraisms, Syriasm, Hellenisms, and the whole

of such bag and baggage.”<sup>1</sup> For, over and above the proposed ambiguity of the Chorus, the text is sadly corrupt, probably interpolated, and certainly mutilated; and no unlearned person enjoys the scholar's privilege of trying his fancy upon each obstacle whenever he comes to a stoppage, and effectually clearing the way by suppressing what seems to lie in it.

All I can say for the present performance is, that I have done as I would be done by, if need were. Should anybody, without need, honor my translation by a comparison with the original, I beg him to observe that, following no editor exclusively, I keep to the earlier readings so long as sense can be made out of them, but disregard, I hope, little of importance in recent criticism so far as I have fallen in with it. Fortunately, the poorest translation, provided only it be faithful, — though it reproduce all the artistic confusion of tenses, moods, and persons, with which the original teems, — will not only suffice to display what an eloquent friend maintains to be the all-in-all of poetry — “the action of the piece” — but may help to illustrate his assurance that “the Greeks are the highest models of expression, the unapproached masters of the grand style: their expression is so excellent because it is so admirably kept in its right degree of prominence, because it is so simple and so well subordinated, because it draws its force directly from the pregnancy of the matter which it conveys . . . not a word wasted, not a sentiment capriciously thrown in, stroke on stroke!”<sup>2</sup> So may all happen!

Just a word more on the subject of my spelling — in a transcript from the Greek and there exclusively — Greek names and places precisely as does the Greek author. I began this practice, with great innocency of intention, some six-and-thirty years ago. Leigh Hunt, I remember, was accustomed to speak of his gratitude, when ignorant of Greek, to those writers (like Goldsmith) who had obliged him by using English characters, so that he might relish, for instance, the smooth quality of such

<sup>1</sup> “Quis Æschylum possit affirmare Græce nunc scienti magis patere explicabilem quam Evangelia aut Epistolas Apostolicas? Unus ejus Agamemnon obscuritate superat quantum est librorum sacrorum cum suis Hebraïsmis et Syriasmis et tota Hellenistica suppellectili vel farragine.” — SALMASIUS *de Hellenisticis*, Epist. Dedic.

<sup>2</sup> *Poems* by MATTHEW ARNOLD, Preface.

a phrase as "hapalunetai galené;" he said also that Shelley was indignant at "Firenze" having displaced the Dantesque "Firenza," and would contemptuously English the intruder "Firence." I supposed I was doing a simple thing enough: but there has been till lately much astonishment at *os* and *us*, *ai* and *oi*, representing the same letters in Greek. Of a sudden, however, whether in translation or out of it, everybody seems committing the offence, although the adoption of *u* for *v* still presents such difficulty that it is a wonder how we have hitherto escaped "Eyripides." But there existed a sturdy Briton who, Ben Jonson informs us, wrote "The Life of the Emperor Anthony Pie" — whom we now acquiesce in as Antoninus Pius: for "with time and patience the mulberry leaf becomes satin." Yet there is on all sides much profession of respect for what Keats called "vowelled Greek" — "consonanted," one would expect; and, in a criticism upon a late admirable translation of something of my own, it was deplored that, in a certain verse corresponding in measure to the fourteenth of the sixth Pythian Ode, "neither Professor Jebb in his Greek, nor Mr. Browning in his English, could emulate that matchlessly musical γόνον ἰδών κάλλιστον ἀνδρῶν." Now, undoubtedly, "Seeing her son the fairest of men" has more sense than sound to boast of: but then, would not an Italian roll us out

"Rimirando il figliuolo bellissimo degli uomini?" whereat Pindar, no less than Professor Jebb and Mr. Browning, τριακτῆρος οἰχεται τοῦχών.

It is recorded in the *Annals of Art*<sup>1</sup> that there was once upon a time, practising so far north as Stockholm, a painter and picture-cleaner — sire of a less unhappy son — Old Muytens: and the annalist, Baron de Tessé, has not concealed his profound dissatisfaction at Old Muytens' conceit "to have himself and something to do with the work of whatever master of eminence might pass through his hands." Whence it was — the Baron goes on to deplore — that much detriment was done to that excellent piece "The Recognition of Achilles," by Rubens, through the perversity of Old Muytens, "who must needs take on him to beautify every nymph of the twenty by the bestowment of a widened eye and an enlarged mouth." I, at least, have left eyes and mouths everywhere as I found them, and this conservatism is all that claims praise for — what is, after all ἀκλευστος ἡμισθος αἰοῦά. No, neither "uncommanded" nor "unrewarded:" since it was commanded of me by my venerated friend Thomas Carlyle, and rewarded will it indeed become, if I am permitted to dignify it by the prefatory insertion of his dear and noble name.

R. B.

LONDON, October 1, 1877.

<sup>1</sup> *Lettres à un jeune Prince, traduites du Suédois.*

## AGAMEMNON

### PERSONS OF THE DRAMA

WARDER.	AGAMEMNON.
CHOROS OF OLD MEN.	AIKISTHOS.
KLUTAIMNESTRA.	KASSANDRA.
TALTHUBIOS, <i>Herald.</i>	

*Warder.* The gods I ask deliverance from these labors.  
 Watch of a year's length whereby, slumbering through it  
 On the Atreidai's roofs on elbow, — dog-like — I know of nightly star-groups the assemblage.  
 And those that bring to men winter and summer,  
 Bright dynasts, as they pride them in the æther — Stars, when they wither, and the uprisings of them.  
 And now on ward I wait the torch's token,  
 The glow of fire, shall bring from Troia message  
 And word of capture: so prevails audacious  
 The man's face-planning hoping heart of woman.  
 But when I, driven from night-rest, dew-drenched, hold to  
 This couch of mine — not looked upon by visions,  
 Since fear instead of sleep still stands beside me,

So as that fast I fix in sleep no eyelids —  
 And when to sing or chirp a tune I fancy,  
 For slumber such song-remedy infusing,  
 I wait then, for this House's fortune groaning,  
 Not, as of old, after the best ways governed.  
 Now, lucky be deliverance from these labors,  
 At good news — the appearing dusky fire!  
 O hail, thou lamp of night, a day-long lightness  
 Revealing, and of dances the ordainment!  
 Halloo, halloo!  
 To Agamemnon's wife I show, by shouting,  
 That, from bed starting up at once, i' the household  
 Joyous acclaim, good-omened to this torch-blaze,  
 She send aloft if haply Ilion's city  
 Be taken, as the beacon boasts announcing.  
 Ay, and, for me, myself will dance a prelude.  
 For, that my masters' dice drop right, I'll reckon:  
 Since thrice-six has it thrown to me, this signal.  
 Well, may it hap that, as he comes, the loved hand  
 O' the household's lord I may sustain with this hand!  
 As for the rest, I'm mute: on tongue a big ox

Has trodden. Yet this House, if voice it take  
should,  
Most plain would speak. So, willing I myself  
speak

To those who know : to who know not — I'm  
blankness.

*Choros.* The tenth year this, since Priamos'  
great match,

King Menelaos, Agamemnon King,

— The strenuous yoke-pair of the Atreidai's  
honor

Two-throned, two-sceptred, whereof Zeus was  
donor —

Did from this land the aid, the armament dis-  
patch,

The thousand-sailored force of Argives clamor-  
ing

"Ares" from out the indignant breast, as fling  
Passion forth vultures which, because of grief  
Away, — as are their young ones, — with the  
thief,

Lofty above their brood-nests wheel in ring.  
Row round and round with oar of either wing,  
Lament the bedded chicks, lost labor that was  
love:

Which hearing, one above

— Whether Apollon, Pan or Zeus — that wail.  
Sharp-piercing bird-shriek of the guests who  
fare

Housemates with gods in air —

Such-an-one sends, against who these assail,

What, late-sent, shall not fail

Of punishing — Erinus. Here as there,

The Guardian of the Guest, Zeus, the excelling  
one,

Sends against Alexandros either son

Of Atreus: for that wife, the many-husbanded,

Appointing many a tug that tries the limb,

While the knee plays the prop in dust, while,  
shred

To morsels, lies the spear-shaft; in those  
grim

Marriage-prolusions when their Fury wed

Danaoi and Troes, both alike. All's said:

Things are where things are, and, as fate has  
willed,

So shall they be fulfilled.

Not gently-grieving, not just doling out

The drops of expiation — no, nor tears dis-  
tilled —

Shall he we know of bring the hard about

To soft — that intense ire

At those mock rites unsanctified by fire.

But we pay naught here: through our flesh, age-  
weighed,

Left out from who gave aid

In that day, — we remain,

Staying on staves a strength

The equal of a child's at length.

For when young marrow in the breast doth  
reign,

That's the old man's match, — Ares out of  
place

In either: but in oldest age's case,

Foliage a-fading, why, he wends his way

On three feet, and, no stronger than a child,

Wanders about gone wild,

A dream in day.

But thou, Tundareus' daughter, Klutaimnestra  
queen,

What need? What new? What having heard  
or seen,

By what announcement's tidings, everywhere

Settest thou, round about, the sacrifice aflame?

For, of all gods the city-swaying,

Those supernal, those infernal,

Those of the fields', those of the mart's  
obeying, —

The altars blaze with gifts;

And here and there, heaven-high the torch up-  
lifts

Flame — medicated with persuasions mild,

With foul admixture unbeguiled —

Of holy unguent, from the clotted chrism

Brought from the palace, safe in its abysm.

Of these things, speaking what may be in-  
deed

Both possible and lawful to concede,

Healer do thou become! — of this solicitude

Which, now, stands plainly forth of evil mood,

And, then . . . but from oblations, hope, to-  
day

Gracious appearing, wards away

From soul the insatiate care,

The sorrow at my breast, devouring there!

Empowered am I to sing

The omens, what their force which, journey-  
ing,

Rejoiced the potentates:

(For still, from God, inflates

My breast, song-snaison: age,

Born to the business, still such war can wage)

— How the fierce bird against the Teukris land

Dispatched, with spear and executing hand,

The Achaian's two-throned empery — o'er  
Hellas' youth

Two rulers with one mind:

The birds' king to these kings of ships, on high,

— The black sort, and the sort that's white  
behind, —

Appearing by the palace, on the spear-throw  
side,

In right sky-regions, visible far and wide, —

Devouring a hare-creature, great with young,

Balked of more racings they, as she from whom  
they sprung!

Ah, Linos, say — ah, Linos, song of wail!

But may the good prevail!

The prudent army-prophet seeing two

The Atreidai, two their tempers, knew

Those feasting on the hare

The armament-conductors were;

And thus he spoke, explaining signs in view.

"In time, this outset takes the town of  
Priamos:

But all before its towers, — the people's wealth  
that was,

Of flocks and herds, — as sure, shall booty-  
sharing thence

Drain to the dregs away, by battle violence.

Only, have care lest grudge of any god disturb

With cloud the unsullied shine of that great  
force, the curb

Of Troia, struck with damp



Beforehand in the camp !  
 For envyingly is  
 The virgin Artemis  
 Toward — her father's flying hounds — this  
 House —  
 The sacrificers of the piteous  
 And cowering beast,  
 Brood and all, ere the birth : she hates the  
 eagles' feast.  
 Ah, Linos, say — ah, Linos, song of wail !  
 But may the good prevail !

“ Thus ready is theauteous one with help  
 To those small dewdrop things fierce lions  
 whelp,  
 And udder-loving litter of each brute  
 That roams the mead ; and therefore makes  
 she suit,  
 The fair one, for fulfilment to the end  
 Of things these signs portend —  
 Which partly smile, indeed, but partly scowl —  
 The phantasms of the fowl.  
 I call Ieios Paian to avert  
 She work the Danaoi hurt  
 By any thwarting waffures, long and fast  
 Holdings from sail of ships :  
 And sacrifice, another than the last,  
 She for herself precipitate —  
 Something unlawful, feast for no man's lips,  
 Builder of quarrels, with the House cognate —  
 Having in awe no husband : for remains  
 A frightful, backward-darting in the path,  
 Willy house-keeping chronicler of wrath.  
 That has to punish that old children's fate ! ”  
 Such things did Kalchas, — with abundant  
 gains  
 As well, — vociferate,  
 Predictions from the birds, in journeying,  
 Above the abode of either king.  
 With these, symphonious, sing —  
 Ah, Linos, say — ah, Linos, song of wail !  
 But may the good prevail !

Zeus, whosoe'er he be, — if that express  
 Aught dear to him on whom I call —  
 So do I him address,  
 I cannot liken out, by all  
 Admeasurement of powers,  
 Any but Zeus for refuge at such hours,  
 If veritably needs I must  
 From off my soul its vague care-burden thrust.

Not — whosoever was the great of yore,  
 Bursting to bloom with bravery all round —  
 Is in our mouths : he was, but is no more.  
 And who it was that after came to be,  
 Met the thrice-throwing wrestler, — he  
 Is also gone to ground.  
 But “ Zeus ” — if any, heart and soul, that  
 name —

Shouting the triumph-praise — proclaim,  
 Complete in judgment shall that man be found.  
 Zeus, who leads onward mortals to be wise,  
 Appoints that suffering masterfully teach.  
 In sleep, before the heart of each,  
 A wee-remembering travail sheds in dew  
 Discretion, — ay, and melts the unwilling too  
 By what, perchance, may be a graciousness

Of gods, enforced no less, —  
 As they, commanders of the crew,  
 Assume the awful seat.

And then the old leader of the Achaian fleet,  
 Disparaging no seer —  
 With bated breath to suit misfortune's inrush  
 here  
 — (What time it labored, that Achaian host,  
 By stay from sailing, — every pulse at length  
 Emptied of vital strength, —  
 Hard over Kalchis shore-bound, current-croست  
 In Aulis station, — while the winds which post  
 From Strumon, ill-delayers, famine-fraught,  
 Tempters of man to sail where harborage is  
 naught,  
 Spendthrifts of ships and cables, turning time  
 To twice the length, — these carded, by delay,  
 To less and less away  
 The Argeians' flowery prime :  
 And when a remedy more grave and grand  
 Than aught before — yea, for the storm and  
 dearth —  
 The prophet to the foremost in command  
 Shrieked forth, as cause of this  
 Adducing Artemis,  
 So that the Atreidai striking staves on earth  
 Could not withhold the tear) —  
 Then did the king, the elder, speak this clear.

“ Heavy the fate, indeed — to disobey !  
 Yet heavy if my child I slay,  
 The adornment of my household : with the  
 tide  
 Of virgin-slaughter, at the altar-side,  
 A father's hands defiling : which the way  
 Without its evils, say ?  
 How shall I turn fleet-fugitive,  
 Failing of duty to allies ?  
 Since for a wind-abating sacrifice  
 And virgin blood, — 't is right they strive,  
 Nay, madden with desire.  
 Well may it work them — this that they re-  
 quire ! ”

But when he underwent necessity's  
 Yoke-trace, — from soul blowing unhallowed  
 change  
 Unclean, abominable, — thence — another  
 man —  
 The audacious mind of him began  
 Its wildest range.  
 For this it is gives mortals hardihood —  
 Some vice-devising miserable mood  
 Of madness, and first woe of all the brood.  
 The sacrificer of his daughter — strange ! —  
 He dared become, to expedite  
 Woman-avenging warfare, — anchors weighed  
 With such prelusive rite !

Prayings and callings “ Father ” — naught  
 they made  
 Of these, and of the virgin-age, —  
 Captains heart-set on war to wage !  
 His ministrants, vows done, the father bade —  
 Kid-like, above the altar, swathed in pall,  
 Take her — lift high, and have no fear at all,  
 Head-downward, and the fair mouth's guard

And frontage hold, — press hard  
 From utterance a curse against the House  
 By dint of bit — violence bridling speech.  
 And as to ground her saffron-vest she shed,  
 She smote the sacrificers all and each  
 With arrow sweet and piteous,  
 From the eye only sped, —  
 Significant of will to use a word,  
 Just as in pictures : since, full many a time,  
 In her sire's guest-hall, by the well-heaped  
 board  
 Had she made music, — lovingly with chime  
 Of her chaste voice, that unpolluted thing,  
 Honored the third libation, — paian that should  
 bring  
 Good fortune to the sire she loved so well.

What followed — those things I nor saw nor  
 tell.

But Kalchas' arts — whate'er they indicate —  
 Miss of fulfilment never : it is fate.  
 True, justice makes, in sufferers, a desire  
 To know the future woe preponderate.  
 But — hear before is need !  
 To that, farewell and welcome ! 't is the same,  
 indeed,  
 As grief beforehand : clearly, part for part,  
 Conformably to Kalchas' art,  
 Shall come the event.  
 But be they as they may, things subsequent, —  
 What is to do, prosperity betide  
 E'en as we wish it ! — we, the next allied,  
 Sole guarding barrier of the Apian land.

I am come, reverencing power in thee,  
 O Klutaimnestra ! For 't is just we bow  
 To the ruler's wife, — the male-seat man-be-  
 reaved.

But if thou, having heard good news, — or  
 none, —

For good news' hope dost sacrifice thus wide,  
 I would hear gladly : art thou mute, — no  
 grudge !

*Klutaimnestra.* Good-news-announcer, may —  
 as is the by-word —

Morn become, truly, — news from Night his  
 mother !

But thou shalt learn joy past all hope of hear-  
 ing.

Priamos' city have the Argeioi taken.

*Cho.* How sayest ? The word, from want of  
 faith, escaped me.

*Klu.* Troia the Achaioi hold : do I speak  
 plainly ?

*Cho.* Joy overcreeps me, calling forth the  
 tear-drop.

*Klu.* Right ! for, that glad thou art, thine  
 eye convicts thee.

*Cho.* For — what to thee, of all this, trusty  
 token ?

*Klu.* What's here ! how else ? unless the  
 god have cheated.

*Cho.* Haply thou flattering shows of dreams  
 respectest ?

*Klu.* No fancy would I take of soul sleep-  
 burdened.

*Cho.* But has there puffed thee up some un-  
 winged omen ?

*Klu.* As a young maid's my mind thou  
 mockest grossly.

*Cho.* Well, at what time was — even sacked,  
 the city ?

*Klu.* Of this same mother Night — the dawn,  
 I tell thee.

*Cho.* And who of messengers could reach this  
 swiftness ?

*Klu.* Hephaistos — sending a bright blaze  
 from Idé.

Beacon did beacon send, from fire the poster,  
 Hitherward : Idé to the rock Hermaian  
 Of Lemnos : and a third great torch o' the  
 island

Zeus' seat received in turn, the Athoan sum-  
 mit.

And, — so upsoaring as to stride sea over,  
 The strong lamp-voyager, and all for joyance —  
 Did the gold-glorious splendor, any sun like,  
 Pass on — the pine-tree — to Makistos' watch-  
 place ;

Who did not, — tardy, — caught, no wits about  
 him,

By sleep, — decline his portion of the missive.  
 And far the beacon's light, on stream Eurip-  
 os

Arriving, made aware Messapioi' warders.  
 And up they lit in turn, played herald on-  
 wards,

Kindling with flame a heap of gray old  
 heather.

And, strengthening still, the lamp, decaying  
 nowise,

Springing o'er Plain Asopos, — fullmoon-  
 fashion

Effulgent, — toward the crag of Mount Kitha-  
 iron,

Roused a new rendering-up of fire the escort —  
 And light, far escort, lacked no recognition.  
 O' the guard — as burning more than burnings  
 told you.

And over Lake Gorgopis light went leaping,  
 And, at Mount Aigioplanktos safe arriving,  
 Enforced the law — "to never stint the fire-  
 stuff."

And they send, lighting up with ungrudged  
 vigor,

Of flame a huge beard, ay, the very foreland  
 So as to strike above, in burning onward,

The look-out which commands the Strait  
 Saronic,

Then did it dart until it reached the outpost  
 Mount Arachnaios here, the city's neighbor ;  
 And then darts to this roof of the Atreidai  
 This light of Idé's fire not unforefathured !

Such are the rules prescribed the flambeau-  
 bearers :

He beats that's first and also last in running.  
 Such is the proof and token I declare thee,  
 My husband having sent me news from Troia.

*Cho.* The gods, indeed, anon will I pray.  
 woman !

But now, these words to hear, and sate my  
 wonder

Thoroughly, I am fain — if twice thou tell  
 them.

*Klu.* Troia do the Achaioi hold, this same  
 day.

I think a noise — no mixture — reigns i' the city.

Sour wine and unguent pour thou in one vessel —

Standers-apart, not lovers, would'st thou style them :

And so, of captives and of conquerors, partwise The voices are to hear, of fortune diverse.

For those, indeed, upon the bodies prostrate Of husbands, brothers, children upon parents

— The old men, from a throat that's free no longer,

Shriekingly wail the death-doom of their dearest :

While these — the after-battle hungry labor, Which prompts night-faring, marshals them to breakfast

On the town's store, according to no billet Of sharing, but as each drew lot of fortune.

In the spear-captured Troic habitations House they already : from the frosts upæthral

And dews delivered, will they, luckless creatures,

Without a watch to keep, slumber all night through.

And if they fear the gods, the city-guarders, And if the gods' structures of the conquered country,

They may not — capturers — soon in turn be captive.

But see no prior lust befall the army To sack things sacred — by gain-cravings vanquished !

For there needs homeward the return's salvation,

To round the new limb back o' the double race-course.

And guilty to the gods if came the army, Awakened up the sorrow of those slaughtered

Might be — should no outbursting evils happen. But may good beat — no turn to see i' the balance !

For, many benefits I want the gain of.

*Cho.* Woman, like prudent man thou kindly speakst.

And I, thus having heard thy trusty tokens, The gods to rightly hail forthwith prepare me ;

For, grace that must be paid has crowned our labors.

O Zeus the king, and friendly Night Of these brave boons bestower —

Thou who didst fling on Troia's every tower The o'er-roofing snare, that neither great thing might,

Nor any of the young ones, overpass Captivity's great sweep-net — one and all Of Atë held in thrall !

Ay, Zeus I fear — the guest's friend great — who was

The doer of this, and long since bent The bow on Alexandros with intent

That neither wide o' the white Nor o'er the stars the foolish dart should light.

The stroke of Zeus — they have it, as men say ! This, at least, from the source track forth we may !

As he ordained, so has he done.

" No " — said some one —

" The gods think fit to care

Nowise for mortals, such

As those by whom the good and fair

Of things denied their touch

Is trampled ! " but he was profane.

That they do care, has been made plain

To offspring of the over-bold,

Outbreathing " Ares " greater than is just —

Houses that spill with more than they can hold.

More than is best for man. Be man's what must

Keep harm off, so that in himself he find

Sufficiency — the well-endowed of mind !

For there's no bulwark in man's wealth to him

Who, through a surfeit, kicks — into the dim

And disappearing — Right's great altar.

Yes —

It urges him, the sad persuasiveness,

Atë's insufferable child that schemes

Treason beforehand : and all cure is vain.

It is not hidden : out it glares again,

A light dread-lamping-mischief, just as gleams

The badness of the bronze ;

Through rubbing, puttings to the touch,

Black-clotted is he, judged at once.

He seeks — the boy — a flying bird to clutch,

The insufferable brand

Setting upon the city of his land

Whereof not any god hears prayer ;

While him who brought about such evils there,

That unjust man, the god in grapple throws.

Such an one, Paris goes

Within the Atreidai's house —

Shamed the guest's board by robbery of the spouse.

And, leaving to her townsmen throngs a-spread With shields, and spear-thrusts of sea-armor,

And bringing Ilium, in a dowry's stead, Destruction — swiftly through the gates she went,

Daring the undareable. But many a groan out-broke

From prophets of the House as thus they spoke.

" Woe, woe the House, the House and Rulers, — woe

The marriage-bed and dints

A husband's love imprints !

There she stands silent ! meets no honor — no

Shame — sweetest still to see of things gone long ago !

And, through desire of one across the main, A ghost will seem within the house to reign :

And hateful to the husband is the grace

Of well-shaped statues : from — in place of eyes,

Those blanks — all Aphroditë dies.

" But dream-appearing mournful fantasies —

There they stand, bringing grace that's vain. For vain 't is, when brave things one seems to view ;



The fantasy has floated off, hands through ;  
Gone, that appearance, — nowise left to creep, —  
On wings, the servants in the paths of sleep ! ”  
Woes, then, in household and on hearth, are  
such

As these — and woes surpassing these by much.  
But not these only : everywhere —  
For those who from the land  
Of Hellas issued in a band,  
Sorrow, the heart must bear,  
Sits in the home of each, conspicuous there.  
Many a circumstance, at least,  
Touches the very breast.  
For those  
Whom any sent away, — he knows :  
And in the live man's stead,  
Armor and ashes reach  
The house of each.

For Ares, gold-exchanger for the dead,  
And balance-holder in the fight o' the spear,  
Due-weight from Ilion sends —  
What moves the tear on tear —  
A charred scrap to the friends :  
Filling with well-packed ashes every urn,  
For man — that was — the sole return.  
And they groan — praising much, the while,  
Now this man as experienced in the strife,  
Now that, fallen nobly on a slaughtered pile,  
Because of — not his own — another's wife.  
But things there be, one barks,  
When no man harks :  
A surreptitious grief that 's grudge  
Against the Atreidai who first sought the judge.  
But some there, round the rampart, have  
In Ilian earth, each one his grave :  
All fair-formed as at birth,  
It hid them — what they have and hold — the  
hostile earth.

And big with anger goes the city's word,  
And pays a debt by public curse incurred.  
And ever with me — as about to hear  
A something night-involved — remains my  
fear :

Since of the many-slayers — not  
Unwatching are the gods.  
The black Erines, at due periods —  
Whoever gains the lot  
Of fortune with no right —  
Him, by life's strain and stress  
Back-again-beaten from success,  
They strike blind : and among the out-of-sight  
For who has got to be, avails no might.  
The being praised outrageously  
Is grave, for at the eyes of such an one  
Is launched, from Zeus, the thunder-stone.  
Therefore do I decide  
For so much and no more prosperity  
Than of his envy passes unespied.  
Neither a city-sacker would I be,  
Nor life, myself by others captive, see.

A swift report has gone our city through,  
From fire, the good-news messenger : if true,  
Who knows ? Or is it not a god-sent lie ?  
Who is so childish and deprived of sense  
That, having, at announcements of the flame

Thus novel, felt his own heart fired thereby,  
He then shall, at a change of evidence,  
Be worsted just the same ?  
It is conspicuous in a woman's nature,  
Before its view to take a grace for granted :  
Too trustful, — on her boundary, usurpature  
Is swiftly made ;  
But swiftly, too, decayed,  
The glory perishes by woman vaunted.

*Klu.* Soon shall we know — of these light-  
bearing torches,  
And beacons and exchanges, fire with fire —  
If they are true, indeed, or if, dream-fashion,  
This gladsome light came and deceived our  
judgment.

Yon herald from the shore I see, o'ershadowed  
With boughs of olive : dust, mud's thirsty  
brother,

Close neighbors on his garb, thus testify me  
That neither voiceless, nor yet kindling for thee  
Mountain-wood-flame, shall he explain by fire-  
smoke :

But either tell out more the joyance, speak-  
ing . . .

Word contrary to which, I ought but love it !  
For may good be — to good that's known —  
appendage !

*Cho.* Whoever prays for aught else to this  
city

— May he himself reap fruit of his mind's  
error !

*Herald.* Ha, my forefathers' soil of earth Ar-  
geian !

Thee, in this year's tenth light, am I returned  
to —

Of many broken hopes, on one hope chancing ;  
For never prayed I, in this earth Argeian  
Dying, to share my part in tomb the dearest.  
Now, hail thou earth, and hail thou also, sun-  
light,

And Zeus, the country's lord, and king the Pu-  
thian

From bow no longer urging at us arrows !  
Enough, beside Skamandros, cam'st thou ad-  
verse :

Now, contrary, be saviour thou and healer,  
O king Apollon ! And gods conquest-granting,  
All — I invoke too, and my tutelary  
Hermes, dear herald, heralds' veneration, —  
And Heroes our forthsenders, — friendly, once  
more

The army to receive, the war-spear's leavings !  
Ha, mansions of my monarchs, roofs beloved,  
And awful seats, and deities sun-fronting —  
Receive with pomp your monarch, long time  
absent !

For he comes bringing light in night-time to you.  
In common with all these — king Agamemnon.  
But kindly greet him — for clear shows your  
duty —

Who has dug under Troia with the mattock  
Of Zeus the Avenger, whereby plains are out-  
ploughed,

Altars unrecognizable, and god's shrines,  
And the whole land's seed thoroughly has per-  
ished,

And such a yoke-strap having cast round Troia  
The elder king Atreides, happy man — he

Comes to be honored, worthiest of what mortals  
Now are. Nor Paris nor the accomplice-city  
Outvaunts their deed as more than they are  
done-by :

For, in a suit for rape and theft found guilty,  
He missed of plunder and, in one destruction,  
Fatherland, house and home has mowed to  
atoms :

Debts the Priamidai have paid twice over.

*Cho.* Hail, herald from the army of Achai-  
ans !

*Her.* I hail : — to die, will gainsay gods no  
longer !

*Cho.* Love of this fatherland did exercise  
thee ?

*Her.* So that I weep, at least, with joy, my  
eyes full.

*Cho.* What, of this gracious sickness were ye  
gainers ?

*Her.* How now ? instructed, I this speech  
shall master.

*Cho.* For those who loved you back, with  
longing stricken.

*Her.* This land yearned for the yearning  
army, say'st thou ?

*Cho.* So as to set me oft, from dark mind,  
groaning.

*Her.* Whence came this ill mind — hatred to  
the army ?

*Cho.* Of old, I use, for mischief's physic, si-  
lence.

*Her.* And how, the chiefs away, did you fear  
any ?

*Cho.* So that now — late thy word — much  
joy were — dying !

*Her.* For well have things been worked out :  
these, — in much time,

Some of them, one might say, had luck in fall-  
ing,

While some were faulty : since who, gods ex-  
cepted,

Goes, through the whole time of his life, un-  
grieving ?

For labors should I tell of, and bad lodgments,  
Narrow deckways ill-strewn, too, — what the

day's woe

We did not groan at getting for our portion ?  
As for land-things, again, on went more hatred !

Since beds were ours hard by the foemen's ram-  
parts,

And, out of heaven and from the earth, the  
meadow

Dews kept a sprinkle, an abiding damage  
Of vestures, making hair a wild-beast matting.

Winter, too, if one told of it — bird-slaying —  
Such as, unbearable, Idaian snow brought —

Or heat, when waveless, on its noontide couches  
Without a wind, the sea would slumber falling

— Why must one mourn these ? O'er and gone  
is labor :

O'er and gone is it, even to those dead ones,  
So that no more again they mind uprising.

Why must we tell in numbers those deprived  
ones,

And the live man be vexed with fate's fresh  
outbreak ?

Rather, I bid full farewell to misfortunes !  
For us, the left from out the Argeian army,

The gain beats, nor does sorrow counterbalance.  
So that 't is fitly boasted of, this sunlight,  
By us, o'er sea and land the aery flyers,  
"Troia at last taking, the band of Argives  
Hang up such trophies to the gods of Hellas  
Within their domes — new glory to grow an-  
cient !"

Such things men having heard must praise the  
city

And army-leaders : and the grace which  
wrought them —

Of Zeus, shall honored be. Thou hast my whole  
word.

*Cho.* O'ercome by words, their sense I do not  
gainsay.

For, aye this breeds youth in the old — "to  
learn well."

But these things most the house and Klutaim-  
nestra

Concern, 't is likely : while they make me rich,  
too.

*Klu.* I shouted long ago, indeed, for joyance,  
When came that first night-messenger of fire

Proclaiming Ilion's capture and dispersion.  
And some one, girding me, said, "Through

fire-bearers  
Persuaded — Troia to be sacked now, thinkst ?

Truly, the woman's way, — high to lift heart  
up !"

By such words I was made seem wit-bewildered :  
Yet still I sacrificed ; and, — female-song

with, —  
A shout one man and other, through the city,

Set up, congratulating in the gods' seats,  
Soothing the incense-eating flame right fra-  
grant.

And now, what's more, indeed, why need'st  
thou tell me ?

I of the king himself shall learn the whole  
word :

And, — as may best be, — I my revered hus-  
band

Shall hasten, as he comes back, to receive : for —  
What's to a wife sweeter to see than this light

(Her husband, by the god saved, back from  
warfare)

So as to open gates ? This tell my husband —  
To come at soonest to his loving city.

A faithful wife at home may he find, coming !  
Such an one as he left — the dog o' the house-

hold —  
Trusty to him, adverse to the ill-minded,

And, in all else, the same : no signet-impress  
Having done harm to, in that time's duration.

I know nor pleasure, nor blameworthy con-  
verse

With any other man more than — bronze-dip-  
pings !

*Her.* Such boast as this — brimful of the  
veracious —

Is for a high-born dame not bad to send forth !  
*Cho.* Ay, she spoke thus to thee — that hast

a knowledge  
From clear interpreters — a speech most seemly !

But speak, thou, herald ! Menelaos I ask of :  
If he, returning, back in safety also

Will come with you — this land's beloved chief-  
tain ?

*Her.* There's no way I might say things false and pleasant  
For friends to reap the fruits of through a long time.

*Cho.* How then, if, speaking good, things true thou chance on ?

*Her.* For not well-hidden things become they, sundered.

The man has vanished from the Achaic army, He and his ship too. I announce no falsehood.

*Cho.* Whether forth-putting openly from Ilion,

Or did storm — wide woe — snatch him from the army ?

*Her.* Like topping bowman, thou hast touched the target,

And a long sorrow hast succinctly spoken.

*Cho.* Whether, then, of him, as a live or dead man

Was the report by other sailors bruited ?

*Her.* Nobody knows so as to tell out clearly Excepting Helios who sustains earth's nature.

*Cho.* How say'st thou then, did storm the naval army

Attack and end, by the celestials' anger ?

*Her.* It suits not to defile a day auspicious With ill-announcing speech : distinct each god's due :

And when a messenger with gloomy visage To a city bears a fall'n host's woes — God ward off ! —

One popular wound that happens to the city, And many sacrificed from many households — Men, scourged by that two-tongued whip Ares loves so,

Double spear-headed curse, bloody yoke-couple, —

Of woes like these, doubtless, whoe'er comes weighted,

Him does it suit to sing the Erinues' pain. But who, of matters saved a glad-news-bringer, Comes to a city in good estate rejoicing. . . . How shall I mix good things with evil, telling Of storm against the Achaioi, urged by gods' wrath ?

For they swore league, being arch-foes before that,

Fire and the sea : and plighted troth approved they,

Destroying the unhappy Argeian army.

At night began the bad-wave-outbreak evils ; For, ships against each other Threikian breezes Shattered : and these, butted at in a fury By storm and typhoon, with surge rain-resounding, —

Off they went, vanished, through a bad herd's whirling.

And, when returned the brilliant light of Helios,

We view the Aigaian sea on flower with corpses Of men Achaian and with naval ravage.

But us indeed, and ship, unhurt i' the hull too, Either some one outstole us or outprayed us —

Some god — no man it was the tiller touching.

And Fortune, savior, willing on our ship sat. So as it neither had in harbor wave-surge

Nor ran aground against a shore all rocky.

And then, the water-Haides having fled from

In the white day, not trusting to our fortune, We chewed the cud in thoughts — this novel sorrow

O' the army laboring and badly pounded.

And now — if any one of them is breathing — They talk of us as having perished : why not ? And we — that they the same fate have, imagine.

May it be for the best ! Meneleos, then, Foremost and specially to come, expect thou ! If (that is) any ray o' the sun reports him Living and seeing too — by Zeus' contrivings, Not yet disposed to quite destroy the lineage — Some hope is he shall come again to household. Having heard such things, know, thou truth art hearing !

*Cho.* Who may he have been that named thus wholly with exactitude — (Was he some one whom we see not, by forecastings of the future

Guiding tongue in happy mood ?)

— Her with battle for a bridegroom, on all sides contention-wooded,

Helena ? Since — mark the suture ! —

Ship's-Hell, Man's-Hell, City's-Hell, From the delicately-pompous curtains that pavilion well,

Forth, by favor of the gale

Of earth-born Zephuros did she sail.

Many shield-bearers, leaders of the pack,

Sailed too upon their track,

Theirs who had directed oar,

Then visible no more,

To Simois' leaf-luxuriant shore —

For sake of strife all gore !

To Ilion Wrath, fulfilling her intent, This marriage-care — the rightly named so — sent :

In after-time, for the tables' abuse

And that of the hearth-partaker Zeus,

Bringing to punishment

Those who honored with noisy throat

The honor of the bride, the hymenæal note

Which did the kinsfolk then to singing urge.

But, learning a new hymn for that which was,

The ancient city of Priamos

Groans probably a great and general dirge,

Denominating Paris

“ The man that miserably marries : ” —

She who, all the while before,

A life, that was a general dirge

For citizens' unhappy slaughter, bore.

And thus a man, by no milk's help, Within his household reared a lion's whelp That loved the teat

In life's first festal stage :

Gentle as yet,

A true child-lover, and, to men of age,

A thing whereat pride warms ;

And oft he had it in his arms

Like any new-born babe, bright-faced, to hand

Wagging its tail, at belly's strict command.

But in due time upgrown,

The custom of progenitors was shown :

For — thanks for sustenance repaying



With ravage of sheep slaughtered —  
It made unbidden feast ;  
With blood the house was watered,  
To household came a woe there was no staying :  
Great mischief many-slaying !  
From God it was — some priest  
Of Até, in the house, by nurture thus increased.

At first, then, to the city of Iliou went  
A soul, as I might say, of windless calm —  
Wealth's quiet ornament,  
An eyes'-dart bearing balm,  
Love's spirit-biting flower.  
But — from the true course bending —  
She brought about, of marriage, bitter ending :  
Ill-resident, ill-mate, in power  
Passing to the Priamidai — by sending  
Of Hospitable Zeus —  
Erinus for a bride, — to make brides mourn,  
her dower.

Spoken long ago  
Was the ancient saying  
Still among mortals staying :  
" Man's great prosperity at height of rise  
Engenders offspring nor unchilded dies ;  
And, from good fortune, to such families,  
Buds forth insatiate woe."  
Whereas, distinct from any,  
Of my own mind I am :  
For 't is the unholy deed begets the many,  
Resembling each its dam.  
Of households that correctly estimate,  
Ever a beauteous child is born of Fate.  
But ancient Arrogance delights to generate  
Arrogance, young and strong 'mid mortals'  
sorrow,  
Or now, or then, when comes the appointed  
morrow.  
And she bears young Satiety ;  
And, fiend with whom nor fight nor war can  
be,  
Unholy Daring — twin black Curses  
Within the household, children like their  
nurses.

But Justice shines in smoke-grimed habita-  
tions,  
And honors the well-omened life ;  
While, — gold-besprinkled stations  
Where the hands' filth is rife,  
With backward-turning eyes  
Leaving, — to holy seats she hies,  
Not worshipping the power of wealth  
Stamped with applause by stealth :  
And to its end directs each thing begun.

Approach then, my monarch, of Troia the  
sacker, of Atreus the son !  
How ought I address thee, how ought I revere  
thee, — nor yet overhitting  
Nor yet underbending the grace that is fitting ?  
Many of mortals hasten to honor the seeming-  
to-be —  
Passing by justice : and, with the ill-faring, to  
groan as he groans all are free.  
But no bite of the sorrow their liver has reached  
to :

They say with the joyful, — one outside on  
each, too,  
As they force to a smile smileless faces.  
But whoever is good at distinguishing races  
In sheep of his flock — it is not for the eyes  
Of a man to escape such a shepherd's surprise,  
As they seem, from a well-wishing mind,  
In watery friendship to fawn and be kind.  
Thou to me, then, indeed, sending an army for  
Helena's sake,  
(I will not conceal it,) wast — oh, by no help of  
the Muses ! — depicted  
Not well of thy midriff the rudder directing, —  
convicted  
Of bringing a boldness they did not desire to  
the men with existence at stake.  
But now — from no outside of mind, nor un-  
lovingly — gracious thou art  
To those who have ended the labor, fulfilling  
their part ;  
And in time shalt thou know, by inquiry in-  
structed,  
Who of citizens justly, and who not to purpose,  
the city conducted.

*Agamemnon.* First, indeed, Argos, and the  
gods, the local,  
'Tis right addressing — those with me the  
partners

In this return and right things done the city  
Of Priamos: gods who, from no tongue hear-  
ing

The rights o' the cause, for Iliou's fate man-  
slaught'rous

Into the bloody vase, not oscillating,  
Put the vote-pebbles, while, o' the rival vessel,  
Hope rose up to the lip-edge: filled it was not.  
By smoke the captured city is still conspicuous:  
Até's burnt-offerings live: and, dying with  
them,

The ash sends forth the fulsome blasts of  
riches.

Of these things, to the gods grace many-mind-  
ful

'Tis right I render, since both nets outrageous  
We built them round with, and, for sake of  
woman,

It did the city to dust — the Argeian monster,  
The horse's nestling, the shield-bearing people  
That made a leap, at setting of the Pleiads,  
And, vaulting o'er the tower, the raw-flesh-  
feeding

Lion licked up his fill of blood tyrannic.  
I to the gods indeed prolonged this preface ;  
But — as for *thy* thought, I remember hear-  
ing —

I say the same, and thou co-pleader hast me.  
Since few of men this faculty is born with  
To honor, without grudge, their friend success-  
ful.

For moody, on the heart, a poison seated  
Its burden doubles to who gained the sickness :  
By his own griefs he is himself made heavy,  
And out-of-door prosperity seeing groans at.  
Knowing, I'd call (for well have I experi-  
enced)

" Fellowship's mirror," " phantom of a  
shadow,"  
Those seeming to be mighty gracious to me :

While just Odusseus — he who sailed not willing —

When joined on, was to me the ready trace-horse.

This of him, whether dead or whether living, I say. For other city-and-gods' concernment —

Appointing common courts, in full assemblage We will consult. And as for what holds seemingly

How it may lasting stay well, must be counselled:

While what has need of medicines Paionian We, either burning or else cutting kindly, Will make endeavor to turn pain from sickness. And now into the domes and homes by altar Going, I to the gods first raise the right-hand — They who, far sending, back again have brought me.

And Victory, since she followed, fixed remain she!

*Klu.* Men, citizens, Argeians here, my workshops!

I shall not shame me, consort-loving manners To tell before you: for in time there dies off The diffidence from people. Not from others Learning, I of myself will tell the hard life I bore so long as this man was 'neath Ilion. First: for a woman, from the male divided, To sit at home alone, is monstrous evil — Hearing the many rumors back-revenging: And for now This to come, now That bring after

Woe, and still worse woe, bawling in the household!

And truly, if so many wounds had chanced on My husband here, as homeward used to dribble Report, he's pierced more than a net to speak of!

While, were he dying (as the words abounded) A triple-bodied Geruon the Second, Plenty above — for loads below I count not — Of earth a three-share cloak he'd boast of taking,

Once only dying in each several figure! Because of such-like rumors back-revenging, Many the halters from my neck, above head, Others than I loosed — loosed from neck by main force!

From this cause, sure, the boy stands not beside me —

Possessor of our troth-plights, thine and mine too —

As ought Orestes: be not thou astonished! For, him brings up our well-disposed guest-captive

Strophios the Phokian — ills that told on both sides

To me predicting — both of thee 'neath Ilion The danger, and if anarchy's mob-uproar Should overthrow thy council; since 't is born with

Mortals, — whoe'er has fallen, the more to kick him.

Such an excuse, I think, no cunning carries! As for myself — why, of my wails the rushing Fountains are dried up: not in them a drop more!

And in my late-to-bed eyes I have damage Bewailing what concerned thee, those torch-holdings

Forever unattended to. In dreams — why, Beneath the light wing-beats o' the gnat, I woke up

As he went buzzing — sorrows that concerned thee

Seeing, that filled more than their fellow-sleep-time.

Now, all this having suffered, from soul grief-free

I would style this man here the dog o' the stables,

The savior forestay of the ship, the high roof's Ground-prop, son sole-begotten to his father, — Ay, land appearing to the sailors past hope, Loveliest day to see after a tempest, To the wayfaring-one athirst a well-spring, — The joy, in short, of 'scaping all that's — fatal!

I judge him worth addresses such as these are — Envy stand off! — for many those old evils We underwent. And now, to me — dear head-ship! —

Dismount thou from this car, not earthward setting

The foot of thine, O king, that's Ilion's spoiler! Slave-maids, why tarry? — whose the task allotted

To strew the soil o' the road with carpet-spreadings.

Immediately be purple-strewn the pathway, So that to home unhoped may lead him — Justice!

As for the rest, care shall — by no sleep conquered —

Dispose things — justly (gods to aid!) appointed. *Aga.* Offspring of Leda, of my household warder,

Suitably to my absence hast thou spoken, For long the speech thou didst outstretch! But aptly

To praise — from others ought to go this favor. And for the rest, — not me, in woman's fashion, Mollify, nor — as mode of barbarous man is — To me gape forth a groundward-falling clamor! Nor, strewing it with garments, make my passage

Envied! Gods, sure, with these behooves we honor:

But, for a mortal on these varied beauties To walk — to me, indeed, is nowise fear-free.

I say — as man, not god, to me do homage!

Apart from foot-mats both and varied vestures, Renown is loud, and — not to lose one's senses, God's greatest gift. Behooves we him call happy

Who has brought life to end in loved wellbeing. If all things I might manage thus — brave man, I!

*Klu.* Come now, this say, nor feign a feeling to me!

*Aga.* With feeling, know indeed, I do not tamper!

*Klu.* Vowed'st thou to the gods, in fear, to act thus?

*Aga.* If any, I well knew resolve I outspoke.

*Klu.* What think'st thou Priamos had done, thus victor?

*Aga.* On varied vests — I do think — he had passaged.

*Klu.* Then, do not, struck with awe at human censure. . . .

*Aga.* Well, popular mob-outry much avails too!

*Klu.* Ay, but the unenvied is not the much valued.

*Aga.* Sure, 't is no woman's part to long for battle!

*Klu.* Why, to the prosperous, even suits a beating!

*Aga.* What? thou this beating us in war dost prize too?

*Klu.* Persuade thee! power, for once, grant me — and willing!

*Aga.* But if this seem so to thee — shoes, let some one

Loose under, quick — foot's serviceable carriage!

And me, on these sea-products walking, may no Grudge from a distance, from the god's eye, strike at!

For great shame were my strewnment-spoiling — riches!

Spoiling with feet, and silver-purchased textures!

Of these things, thus then. But this female-stranger

Tenderly take inside! Who conquers mildly God, from afar, benignantly regardeth.

For, willing, no one wears a yoke that's servile:

And she, of many valuables, outpicked

The flower, the army's gift, myself has followed.

So — since to hear thee, I am brought about thus, —

I go into the palace — purples treading.

*Klu.* There is the sea — and what man shall exhaust it? —

Feeding much purple's worth-its-weight-in-silver

Dye, ever fresh and fresh, our garments' tincture;

At home, such wealth, king, we begin — by gods' help —

With having, and to lack, the household knows not.

Of many garments had I vowed a treading (In oracles if fore-enjoined the household)

Of this dear soul the safe-return-price scheming!

For, root existing, foliage goes up houses, O'erspreading shadow against Seirios dog-star;

And, thou returning to the hearth domestic, Warmth, yea, in winter dost thou show return-

ing.

And when, too, Zeus works, from the green-grape acrid,

Wine — then, already, cool in houses cometh — The perfect man his home perambulating!

Zeus, Zeus Perfecter, these my prayers perfect thou!

Thy care be — yea — of things thou mayst make perfect!

*Cho.* Wherefore to me, this fear —

Groundedly stationed here

Fronting my heart, the portent-watcher — flits she?

Wherefore should prophet-lay

The uncalled and unpaid lay,

Nor — having spat forth fear, like bad dreams — sits she

On the mind's throne beloved — well-suasive Boldness?

For time, since, by a throw of all the hands,

The boat's stern-cables touched the sands, Has passed from youth to oldness, —

When under Ilion rushed the ship-borne bands.

And from my eyes I learn —

Being myself my witness — their return.

Yet, all the same, without a lyre, my soul,

Itself its teacher too, chants from within

Erinus' dirge, not having now the whole

Of Hope's dear boldness: nor my inwards sin —

The heart that's rolled in whirls against the

mind

Justly presageful of a fate behind.

But I pray — things false, from my hope, may

fall

Into the fate that's not-fulfilled-at-all!

Especially at least, of health that's great

The term's insatiable: for, its weight

— A neighbor, with a common wall between —

Ever will sickness lean;

And destiny, her course pursuing straight,

Has struck man's ship against a reef unseen.

Now, when a portion, rather than the treasure,

Fear casts from sling, with peril in right measure,

It has not sunk — the universal freight,

(With misery freighted over-full,)

Nor has fear whelmed the hull.

Then too the gift of Zeus,

Two-handedly profuse,

Even from the furrows' yield for yearly use

Has done away with famine, the disease;

But blood of man to earth once falling, — deadly,

black, —

In times ere these, —

Who may, by singing spells, call back?

Zeus had not else stopped one who rightly knew

The way to bring the dead again.

But, did not an appointed Fate constrain

The Fate from gods, to bear no more than due,

My heart, outstripping what tongue utters,

Would have all out: which now, in darkness,

mutters

Moodily grieved, nor ever hopes to find

How she a word in season may unwind

From out the enkindling mind.

*Klu.* Take thyself in, thou too — I say, Kas-

sandra!

Since Zeus — not angrily — in household placed

thee

Partaker of hand-sprinklings, with the many

Slaves stationed, his the Owner's altar close to.

Descend from out this ear, nor be high-minded!

And truly they do say Alkmene's child once

Bore being sold, slaves' barley-bread his living.

If, then, necessity of this lot o'erbalance,

Much is the favor of old-wealthy masters:

For those who, never hoping, made fine harvest



Are harsh to slaves in all things, beyond measure.

Thou hast — with us — such usage as law warrants.

*Cho.* To thee it was, she paused plain speech from speaking.

Being inside the fatal nets — obeying,

Thou mayst obey: but thou mayst disobey too!

*Klu.* Why, if she is not, in the swallow's fashion,

Possessed of voice that's unknown and barbaric,  
I, with speech — speaking in mind's scope — persuade her.

*Cho.* Follow! The best — as things now stand — she speaks of.

Obey thou, leaving this thy ear-enthronement!

*Klu.* Well, with this thing at door, for me no leisure

To waste time: as concerns the hearth mid-navelled,

Already stand the sheep for fireside slaying  
By those who never hoped to have such favor.

If thou, then, aught of this wilt do, delay not!

But if thou, being witless, tak'st no word in,  
Speak thou, instead of voice, with hand as Kars do!

*Cho.* She seems a plain interpreter in need of,  
The stranger! and her way — a beast's new-captured!

*Klu.* Why, she is mad, sure, — hears her own bad senses, —

Who, while she comes, leaving a town new-captured,

Yet knows not how to bear the bit o' the bridle  
Before she has out-frothed her bloody fierceness.

Not I — throwing away more words — will shamed be!

*Cho.* But I, — for I compassionate, — will chafe not.

Come, O unhappy one, this ear vacating,  
Yielding to this necessity, prove yoke's use!

*Kassandra.* Ototoi, Gods, Earth —  
Apollon, Apollon!

*Cho.* Why didst thou "ototoi" concerning Loxias?

Since he is none such as to suit a mourner.

*Kas.* Ototoi, Gods, Earth, —  
Apollon, Apollon!

*Cho.* Ill-boding here again the god invokes she  
— Nowise empowered in woes to stand by helpful.

*Kas.* Apollon, Apollon,  
Guard of the ways, my destroyer!  
For thou hast quite, this second time, destroyed me.

*Cho.* To prophesy she seems of her own evils:  
Remains the god-gift to the slave-soul present.

*Kas.* Apollon, Apollon,  
Guard of the ways, my destroyer!  
Ha, whither hast thou led me? to what roof now?

*Cho.* To the Atreidai's roof: if this thou know'st not,  
I tell it thee, nor this wilt thou call falsehood.

*Kas.* How! how!  
God-hated, then! Of many a crime it knew —  
Self-slaying evils, halts too:  
Man's shambles, blood-besprinkler of the ground!

*Cho.* She seems to be good-nosed, the stranger: dog-like,

She snuffs indeed the victims she will find there.

*Kas.* How! how!

By the witnesses here I am certain now!

These children bemoaning their slaughters —  
flesh dressed in the fire

And devoured by their sire!

*Cho.* Ay, we have heard of thy soothsaying glory,

Doubtless: but prophets none are we in scent of!

*Kas.* Ah, gods, what ever does she meditate?  
What this new anguish great?

Great in the house here she meditates ill  
Such as friends cannot bear, cannot cure it:  
and still

Off stands all Resistance

Afar in the distance!

*Cho.* Of these I witless am — these prophesying.

But those I knew: for the whole city bruises them.

*Kas.* Ah, unhappy one, this thou consummatest?

Thy husband, thy bed's common guest,  
In the bath having brightened. . . . How shall I declare

Consummation? It soon will be there:

For hand after hand she outstretches,

At life as she reaches!

*Cho.* Nor yet I've gone with thee! for — after riddles —

Now, in blind oracles, I feel resourceless.

*Kas.* Eh, eh, papai, papai,

What this, I espy?

Some net of Haides undoubtedly!

Nay, rather, the snare

Is she who has share

In his bed, who takes part in the murder there!

But may a revolt —

Unceasing assault —

On the Race, raise a shout

Sacrificial, about

A victim — by stoning —

For murder atoning!

*Cho.* What this Erinus which i' the house thou callest

To raise her cry? Not me thy word enlightens!

To my heart has run

A drop of the crocus-dye:

Which makes for those

On earth by the spear that lie,

A common close

With life's descending sun.

Swift is the curse begun!

*Kas.* How! how!

See — see quick!

Keep the bull from the cow!

In the vesture she catching him, strikes him now

With the black-horned trick,

And he falls into the watery vase!

Of the craft-killing caldron I tell thee the case!

*Cho.* I would not boast to be a topping critic  
Of oracles: but to some sort of evil

I liken these. From oracles, what good speech  
To mortals, beside, is sent?

It comes of their evils : these arts word-abound-  
ing that sing the event  
Bring the fear 't is their office to teach.

*Kas.* Ah me, ah me —  
Of me unhappy, evil-destined fortunes !  
For I bewail my proper woe  
As, mine with his, all into one I throw.  
Why hast thou hither me unhappy brought ?  
— Unless that I should die with him — for  
naught !

What else was sought ?

*Cho.* Thou art some mind-mazed creature,  
god-possessed :

And all about thyself dost wail  
A lay — no lay !

Like some brown nightingale  
Insatiable of noise, who — well away ! —  
From her unhappy breast  
Keeps moaning Itus, Itus, and his life  
With evils, flourishing on each side, rife.

*Kas.* Ah me, ah me,  
The fate o' the nightingale, the clear resounder !  
For a body wing-borne have the gods cast  
round her,

And sweet existence, from misfortunes free :  
But for myself remains a sundering  
With spear, the two-edged thing !

*Cho.* Whence hast thou this on-rushing god-  
involving pain

And spasms in vain ?  
For, things that terrify,  
With changing unintelligible cry  
Thou strikest up in tune, yet all the while  
After that Orthian style !

Whence hast thou limits to the oracular road,  
That evils bode ?

*Kas.* Ah me, the nuptials, the nuptials of  
Paris, the deadly to friends !

Ah me, of Skamandros the draught  
Paternal ! There once, to these ends,  
On thy banks was I brought,  
The unhappy ! And now, by Kokutos and  
Acheron's shore  
I shall soon be, it seems, these my oracles  
singing once more !

*Cho.* Why this word, plain too much,  
Hast thou uttered ? A babe might learn of  
such !

I am struck with a bloody bite — here under —  
At the fate woe-wreaking  
Of thee shrill-shrieking :  
To me who hear — a wonder !

*Kas.* Ah me, the toils — the toils of the  
city

The wholly destroyed : ah, pity,  
Of the sacrificings my father made  
In the ramparts' aid —

Much slaughter of grass-fed flocks — that  
afforded no cure

That the city should not, as it does now, the  
burthen endure !

But I, with the soul on fire,  
Soon to the earth shall cast me and expire !

*Cho.* To things, on the former consequent,  
Again hast thou given vent :  
And 't is some evil-meaning fiend doth move  
thee,

Heavily falling from above thee,

To melodize thy sorrows — else, in singing,  
Calamitous, death-bringing !  
And of all this the end

I am without resource to apprehend.

*Kas.* Well then, the oracle from veils no  
longer

Shall be outlooking, like a bride new-married :  
But bright it seems, against the sun's uprisings  
Breathing, to penetrate thee : so as, wave-like.  
To wash against the rays a woe much greater  
Than this. I will no longer teach by riddles.  
And witness, running with me, that of evils  
Done long ago, I nosing track the footstep !  
For, this same roof here — never quits a Choros  
One-voiced, not well-tuned since no " well " it  
utters :

And truly having drunk, to get more courage,  
Man's blood — the Komos keeps within the  
household

— Hard to be sent outside — of sister Furies :  
They hymn their hymn — within the house  
close sitting —

The first beginning curse : in turn spit forth at  
The Brother's bed, to him who spurned it  
hostile.

Have I missed aught, or hit I like a bowman ?  
False prophet am I, — knock at doors, a bab-  
bler ?

Henceforward witness, swearing now, I know  
not

By other's word the old sins of this household !

*Cho.* And how should oath, bond honorably  
binding,

Become thy cure ? No less I wonder at thee  
— That thou, beyond sea reared, a strange-  
tongued city

Shouldst hit in speaking, just as if thou stood'st  
by !

*Kas.* Prophet Apollon put me in this office.

*Cho.* What, even though a god, with longing  
smitten ?

*Kas.* At first, indeed, shame was to me to  
say this.

*Cho.* For, more relaxed grows every one who  
fares well.

*Kas.* But he was athlete to me — huge grace  
breathing !

*Cho.* Well, to the work of children, went ye  
law's way ?

*Kas.* Having consented, I played false to  
Loxias.

*Cho.* Already when the wits inspired pos-  
sessed of ?

*Kas.* Already townsmen all their woes I fore-  
told.

*Cho.* How wast thou then unhurt by Loxias'  
anger ?

*Kas.* I no one aught persuaded, when I  
sinned thus.

*Cho.* To us, at least, now sooth to say thou  
seemest.

*Kas.* Halloo, halloo, ah, evils !

Again, straightforward foresight's fearful labor  
Whirls me, distracting with prelude last-lays !  
Behold ye those there, in the household  
seated, —

Young ones, — of dreams approaching to the  
figures ?

Children, as if they died by their beloveds —  
Hands they have filled with flesh, the meal domestic —

Entrails and vitals both, most piteous burthen,  
Plain they are holding! — which their father tasted!

For this, I say, plans punishment a certain  
Lion ignoble, on the bed that wallows,  
House-guard (ah, me!) to the returning master

— Mine, since to bear the slavish yoke behooves me!

The ships' commander, Ilion's desolator,  
Knows not what things the tongue of the lewd she-dog

Speaking, outspreading, shiny-souled, in fashion  
Of Atë hid, will reach to, by ill fortune!  
Such things she dares — the female, the male's slayer!

She is . . . how calling her the hateful bite-beast

May I hit the mark? Some amphibaina —  
Skulla

Housing in rocks, of mariners the mischief,  
Revelling Haides' mother, — curse, no truce with,

Breathing at friends! How piously she shouted,

The all-courageous, as at turn of battle!  
She seems to joy at the back-bringing safety!

Of this, too, if I taught persuade, all's one!  
Why?

What is to be will come! And soon thou, present,

"True prophet all too much" wilt pitying style me!

*Cho.* Thuestes' feast, indeed, on flesh of children,

I went with, and I shuddered. Fear too holds me

Listing what's true as life, nowise out-imaged!  
*Kas.* I say, thou Agamemnon's fate shalt look on!

*Cho.* Speak good words, O unhappy! Set mouth sleeping!

*Kas.* But Paian stands in no stead to the speech here.

*Cho.* Nay, if the thing be near: but never be it!

*Kas.* Thou, indeed, prayest: they to kill are busy!

*Cho.* Of what man is it ministered, this sorrow?

*Kas.* There again, wide thou look'st of my foretellings.

*Cho.* For, the fulfiller's scheme I have not gone with.

*Kas.* And yet too well I know the speech Hellenic.

*Cho.* For Puthian oracles, thy speech, and hard too!

*Kas.* Papai! what fire this! and it comes upon me!

Ototoi, Lukeion Apollon, ah me — me!  
She, the two-footed lioness that sleeps with

The wolf, in absence of the generous lion,  
Kills me the unhappy one: and as a poison

Brewing, to put my price too in the anger,

She vows, against her mate this weapon whetting

To pay him back the bringing me, with slaughter.

Why keep I then these things to make me laughed at,

Both wands and, round my neck, oracular fillets?

Thee, at least, ere my own fate will I ruin:  
Go, to perdition falling! Boons exchange

we —  
Some other Atë in my stead make wealthy!

See there — himself, Apollon stripping from me  
The oracular garment! having looked upon me

— Even in these adornments, laughed by friends at,

As good as foes, i' the balance weighed: and vainly —

For, called crazed stroller, — as I had been gypsy,

Beggar, unhappy, starved to death, — I bore it.  
And now the Prophet — prophet me undoing,

Has led away to these so deadly fortunes!  
Instead of my sire's altar, waits the hack-block

She struck with first warm bloody sacrificing!  
Yet nowise unavenged of gods will death be:

For there shall come another, our avenger,  
The mother-slaying scion, father's doomsman:

Fugitive, wanderer, from this land an exile,  
Back shall he come, — for friends, copestone

these curses!

For there is sworn a great oath from the gods that

Him shall bring hither his fallen sire's prostration.

Why make I then, like an indweller, moaning?  
Since at the first I foresaw Ilion's city

Suffering as it has suffered: and who took it,  
I go, by the judgment of the gods are faring.

Thus, will suffer, will submit to dying!  
But, Haides' gates — these same I call, I speak

to,

And pray that on an opportune blow chancing,  
Without a struggle, — blood the calm death

bringing  
In easy outflow, — I this eye may close up!

*Cho.* O much unhappy, but, again, much learned

Woman, long hast thou outstretched! But if truly

Thou knowest thine own fate, how comes that, like to

A god-led steer, to altar bold thou treadest?  
*Kas.* There's no avoidance, — strangers, no!

Some time more!  
*Cho.* He last is, anyhow, by time advantaged.

*Kas.* It comes, the day: I shall by flight gain little.

*Cho.* But know thou patient art from thy brave spirit!

*Kas.* Such things hears no one of the happy-fortuned.

*Cho.* But gloriously to die — for man is grace, sure!

*Kas.* Ah, sire, for thee and for thy noble children!

*Cho.* But what thing is it? What fear turns thee backwards?



*Kas.* Alas, alas!

*Cho.* Why this "alas"? if 't is no spirit's loathing . . .

*Kas.* Slaughter blood-dripping does the household smell of!

*Cho.* How else? This scent is of hearth-sacrifices.

*Kas.* Such kind of steam as from a tomb is proper!

*Cho.* No Surian honor to the House thou speak'st of!

*Kas.* But I will go, — even in the household wailing

My fate and Agamemnon's. Life suffice me!

Ah, strangers!  
I cry not "ah" — as bird at bush — through terror

Idly! to me, the dead thus much bear witness:  
When, for me — woman, there shall die a woman,

And, for a man ill-wived, a man shall perish!  
This hospitality I ask as dying.

*Cho.* O sufferer, thee — thy foretold fate I pity.

*Kas.* Yet once for all, to speak a speech, I fain am:

No dirge, mine for myself! The sun I pray to,

Fronting his last light! — to my own avengers —  
That from my hateful slayers they exact too  
Pay for the dead slave — easy-managed hand's work!

*Cho.* Alas for mortal matters! Happy-for-tuned, —

Why, any shade would turn them: if unhappy,  
By throws the wetting sponge has spoiled the picture!

And more by much in mortals this I pity.

The being well-to-do —

Insatiate a desire of this

Born with all mortals is,

Nor any is there who

Well-being forces off, aoints

From roofs whereat a finger points,

"No more come in!" exclaiming. This man, too,

To take the city of Priamos did the celestials give,

And, honored by the god, he homeward comes;

But now if, of the former, he shall pay

The blood back, and, for those who ceased to live,

Dying, for deaths in turn new punishment he dooms —

Who, being mortal, would not pray

With an unmischievous

Daimon to have been born — who would not, hearing thus?

*Ag.* Ah me! I am struck — a right-aimed stroke within me!

*Cho.* Silence! Who is it shouts "stroke" — "right-aimedly," a wounded one?

*Ag.* Ah me! indeed again, — a second, struck by!

*Cho.* This work seems to me completed by this "Ah me" of the king's:

But we somehow may together share in solid counsellings.

*Cho.* 1. I, in the first place, my opinion tell you:

— To cite the townsmen, by help-cry, to house here.

*Cho.* 2. To me, it seems we ought to fall upon them

At quickest — prove the fact by sword fresh-flowing!

*Cho.* 3. And I, of such opinion the partaker,  
Vote — to do something: not to wait — the main point!

*Cho.* 4. 'Tis plain to see: for they prelude as though of

A tyranny the signs they gave the city.

*Cho.* 5. For we waste time; while they, — this waiting's glory

Treading to ground, — allow the hand no slumber.

*Cho.* 6. I know not — chancing on some plan — to tell it:

'T is for the doer to plan of the deed also.

*Cho.* 7. And I am such another: since I'm schemeless

How to raise up again by words — a dead man!

*Cho.* 8. What, and, protracting life, shall we give way thus

To the disgracers of our home, these rulers?

*Cho.* 9. Why, 't is unbearable: but to die is better:

For death than tyranny is the riper finish!

*Cho.* 10. What, by the testifying "Ah me" of him,

Shall we prognosticate the man as perished?

*Cho.* 11. We must quite know ere speak these things concerning:

For to conjecture and "quite know" are two things.

*Cho.* 12. This same to praise I from all sides abound in —

Clearly to know, Atreides, what he's doing!

*Klu.* Much having been before to purpose spoken,

The opposite to say I shall not shamed be:

For how should one, to enemies, — in semblance,

Friends, — enmity proposing, — sorrow's net-frame

Enclose, a height superior to outleaping?

To me, indeed, this struggle of old — not mindless

Of an old victory — came: with time, I grant you!

I stand where I have struck, things once accomplished:

And so have done, — and this deny I shall not, —

As that his fate was nor to fly nor ward off.

A wrap-round with no outlet, as for fishes,

I fence about him — the rich woe of the garment:

I strike him twice, and in a double "Ah me!"

He let his limbs go — there! And to him, fallen,

The third blow add I, giving — of Below-ground

Zeus, guardian of the dead — the votive favor.  
Thus in the mind of him he rages, falling,

And blowing forth a brisk blood-spatter, strikes  
me  
With the dark drop of slaughterous dew, — re-  
joicing

No less than, at the god-given dewy-comfort,  
The sown-stuff in its birth-throes from the  
calyx.

Since so these things are, — Argives, my re-  
vered here, —

Ye may rejoice — if ye rejoice : but I — boast !  
If it were fit on corpse to pour libation,  
That would be right — right over and above,  
too !

The cup of evils in the house he, having  
Filled with such curses, himself coming drinks  
of.

*Cho.* We wonder at thy tongue : since bold-  
mouthed truly

Is she who in such speech boasts o'er her hus-  
band !

*Klu.* Ye test me as I were a witless woman :  
But I — with heart intrepid — to you knowers  
Say (and thou — if thou wilt or praise or blame  
me,

Comes to the same) — this man is Agamem-  
non,

My husband, dead, the work of the right hand  
here.

Ay, of a just artificer : so things are.

*Cho.* What evil, O woman, food or drink,  
earth-bred

Or sent from the flowing sea,

Of such having fee

Didst thou set on thee

This sacrifice

And popular cries

Of a curse on thy head ?

Off thou hast thrown him, off hast cut

The man from the city : but

Off from the city thyself shalt be

Cut — to the citizens

A hate immense !

*Klu.* Now, indeed, thou adjudgest exile to  
me,

And citizens' hate, and to have popular curses :  
Nothing of this against the man here bringing,  
Who, no more awe-checked than as 't were a  
beast's fate, —

With sheep abundant in the well-fleeced graze-  
flocks, —

Sacrificed his child, — dearest fruit of travail  
To me, — as song-spell against Threikian blow-  
ings.

Not him did it behoove thee hence to banish  
— Pollution's penalty ? But hearing my deeds  
Justicer rough thou art ! Now, this I tell thee :  
To threaten thus — me, one prepared to have  
thee

(On like conditions, thy hand conquering) o'er  
me

Rule : but if God the opposite ordain us,  
Thou shalt learn — late taught, certes — to be  
modest.

*Cho.* Greatly-intending thou art :  
Much-mindful too, hast thou cried  
(Since thy mind, with its slaughter-outpouring  
part,

Is frantic) that over the eyes, a patch

Of blood — with blood to match

Is plain for a pride !

Yet still, bereft of friends, thy fate

Is — blow with blow to expiate !

*Klu.* And this thou hearest — of my oaths,  
just warrant !

By who fulfilled things for my daughter, Jus-  
tice,

Até, Erinnus, — by whose help I slew him, —  
Not mine the fancy — Fear will tread my  
palace

So long as on my hearth there burns a fire,  
Aigisthos as before well-caring for me ;  
Since he to me is shield, no small, of boldness.  
Here does he lie — outrager of this female,  
Dainty of all the Chruiseids under Ilion ;  
And she — the captive, the soothsayer also  
And couchmate of this man, oracle-speaker,  
Faithful bedfellow, — ay, the sailors' benches  
They were in common, nor unpunished did so,  
Since he is — thus ! While, as for her, — swan-  
fashion,

Her latest having chanted, — dying wailing  
She lies, — to him, a sweetheart : me she  
brought to

My bed's by-nicety, the whet of dalliance.

*Cho.* Alas, that some

Fate would come

Upon us in quickness —

Neither much sickness

Neither bed-keeping —

And bear unended sleeping,

Now that subdued

Is our keeper, the kindest of mood !

Having borne, for a woman's sake, much  
strife —

By a woman he withered from life !

Ah me !

Law-breaking Helena who, one,

Hast many, so many souls undone

'Neath Troia ! and now the consummated

Much-memorable curse

Hast thou made flower-forth, red

With the blood no rains disperse,

That which was then in the House —

Strife all-subduing, the woe of a spouse.

*Klu.* Nowise, of death the fate —

Burdened by these things — supplicate !

Nor on Helena turn thy wrath

As the man-destroyer, as "she who hath,

Being but one,

Many and many a soul undone

Of the men, the Danaoi" —

And wrought immense annoy !

*Cho.* Daimon, whoallest

Upon this household and the double-raced  
Tantalidai, a rule, minded like theirs displaced,  
Thou rulest me with, now,

Whose heart thou gallest !

And on the body, like a hateful crow,

Stationed, all out of tune, his chant to chant

Doth Something vaunt !

*Klu.* Now, of a truth, hast thou set upright  
Thy mouth's opinion, —

Naming the Sprite,

The triply-cross,

O'er the race that has dominion : —

For through him it is that Eros

The carnage-licker

In the belly is bred : ere ended quite

Is the elder throe — new ichor !

*Cho.* Certainly, great of might

And heavy of wrath, the Sprite

Thou teldest of, in the palace

(Woe, woe !)

— An evil tale of a fate

By Até's malice

Rendered insatiate !

Oh, oh, —

King, king, how shall I bewEEP thee ?

From friendly soul what ever say ?

Thou liest where webs of the spider o'ersweep  
thee

In impious death, life breathing away.

O me — me !

This couch, not free !

By a slavish death subdued thou art,

From the hand, by the two-edged dart.

*Klu.* Thou boastest this deed to be mine :

But leave off styling me

" The Agamemnonian wife ! "

For, showing himself in sign

Of the spouse of the corpse thou dost see,

Did the ancient bitter avenging-ghost

Of Atreus, savage host,

Pay the man here as price —

A full-grown for the young one's sacrifice.

*Cho.* That no cause, indeed, of this killing  
art thou,

Who shall be witness-bearer ?

How shall he bear it — how ?

But the sire's avenging-ghost might be in the  
deed a sharer.

He is forced on and on

By the kin-born flowing of blood,

— Black Ares : to where, having gone,

He shall leave off, flowing done,

At the frozen-child's-flesh food.

King, king, how shall I bewEEP thee !

From friendly soul what ever say ?

Thou liest where webs of the spider o'ersweep  
thee,

In impious death, life breathing away.

Oh, me — me !

This couch not free !

By a slavish death subdued thou art,

From the hand, by the two-edged dart.

*Klu.* No death " unfit for the free "

Do I think this man's to be :

For did not himself a slavish curse

To his household decree ?

But the scion of him, myself did nurse —

That much-bewailed Iphigeneia, he

Having done well by, — and as well, nor worse,

Been done to, — let him not in Haides loudly

Bear himself proudly !

Being by sword-destroying death amerced

For that sword's punishment himself inflicted  
first.

*Cho.* I at a loss am left —

Of a feasible scheme of mind bereft —

Where I may turn : for the house is falling :

I fear the bloody crash of the rain

That ruins the roof as it bursts again :

The warning-drop

Has come to a stop.

Destiny doth Justice whet

For other deed of hurt, on other whetstones yet.

Woe, earth, earth — would thou hadst taken me

Ere I saw the man I see,

On the pallet-bed

Of the silver-sided bath-vase, dead !

Who is it shall bury him, who

Sing his dirge ? Can it be true

That thou wilt dare this same to do —

Having slain thy husband, thine own,

To make his funeral moan :

And for the soul of him, in place

Of his mighty deeds, a graceless grace

To wickedly institute ? By whom

Shall the tale of praise o'er the tomb

At the god-like man be sent —

From the truth of his mind as he toils intent ?

*Klu.* It belongs not to thee to declare

This object of care !

By us did he fall — down there !

Did he die — down there ! and down, no less,

We will bury him there, and not beneath

The wails of the household over his death :

But Iphigeneia, — with kindness, —

His daughter, — as the case requires,

Facing him full, at the rapid-flowing

Passage of Groans shall — both hands throwing

Around him — kiss that kindest of sires !

*Cho.* This blame comes in the place of blame :

Hard battle it is to judge each claim.

" He is borne away who bears away :

And the killer has all to pay. "

And this remains while Zeus is remaining,

" The doer shall suffer in time " — for, such his  
ordaining.

Who may cast out of the House its cursed  
brood ?

The race is to Até glued !

*Klu.* Thou hast gone into this oracle

With a true result. For me, then, — I will

— To the Daimon of the Pleisthenidai

Making an oath — with all these things comply

Hard as they are to bear. For the rest —

Going from out this House, a guest,

May he wear some other family

To naught, with the deaths of kin by kin !

And — keeping a little part of my goods —

Wholly am I contented in

Having expelled from the royal House

These frenzied moods

The mutually-murderous.

*Aigisthos.* O light propitious of day justice-  
bringing !

I may say truly, now, that men's avengers,

The gods from high, of earth behold the sor-  
rows —

Seeing, as I have, i' the spun robes of the Eri-  
nues,

This man here lying, — sight to me how  
pleasant ! —

His father's hands' contrivances repaying.

For Atreus, this land's lord, of this man father,

Thuestes, my own father — to speak clearly —

His brother too, — being i' the rule contested, —

Drove forth to exile from both town and house-  
hold :

And, coming back, to the hearth turned, a sup-  
pliant,



Wretched Thuestes found the fate assured him  
— Not to die, bloodying his paternal threshold  
Just there: but host-wise this man's impious  
father

Atræus, soul-keenly more than kindly, — seem-  
ing

To joyous hold a flesh-day, — to my father  
Served up a meal, the flesh of his own chil-  
dren.

The feet indeed and the hands' top divisions  
He hid, high up and isolated sitting:  
But, their unshowing parts in ignorance taking,  
He forthwith eats food — as thou seest — per-  
dition

To the race: and then, 'ware of the deed ill-  
omened,

He shrieked O! — falls back, vomiting, from  
the carnage,

And fate on the Pelopidai past bearing  
He prays down — putting in his curse together  
The kicking down o' the feast — that so might  
perish

The race of Pleisthenes entire: and thence is  
That it is given thee to see this man prostrate.  
And I was rightly of this slaughter stitch-  
man:

Since me, — being third from ten, — with my  
poor father

He drives out — being then a babe in swatie-  
bands:

But, grown up, back again has justice brought  
me:

And of this man I got hold — being without-  
doors —

Fitting together the whole scheme of ill-will.  
So, sweet, in fine, even to die were to me,  
Seeing as I have, this man i' the toils of  
justice!

*Cho.* Agisthos, arrogance in ills I love not.  
Dost thou say — willing, thou didst kill the  
man here,

And, alone, plot this lamentable slaughter?  
I say — thy head in justice will escape not  
The people's throwing — know that! — stones  
and curses!

*Aig.* Thou such things soundest — seated at  
the lower

Oarage to those who rule at the ship's mid-  
bench?

Thou shalt know, being old, how heavy is  
teaching

To one of the like age — bidden be modest!  
But chains and old age and the pangs of fasting  
Stand out before all else in teaching, — pro-  
phets

At souls'-cure! Dost not, seeing aught, see  
this too?

Against goads kick not, lest tript-up thou suf-  
fer!

*Cho.* Woman, thou, — of him coming new  
from battle

Houseguard — thy husband's bed the while  
disgracing, —

For the Army-leader didst thou plan this fate  
too?

*Aig.* These words too are of groans the  
prime-begetters!

Truly a tongue opposed to Orpheus hast thou:

For he led all things by his voice's grace-charm,  
But thou, upstirring them by these wild yelp-  
ings,

Wilt lead them! Forced, thou wilt appear the  
tamer!

*Cho.* So — thou shalt be my king then of  
the Argeians —

Who, not when for this man his fate thou  
plannedst,

Darest to do this deed — thyself the slayer!

*Aig.* For, to deceive him was the wife's part.  
certes:

I was looked after — foe, ay, old-begotten!  
But out of this man's wealth will I endeavor

To rule the citizens: and the no-man-minder  
— Him will I heavily yoke — by no means

trace-horse,  
A corned-up colt! but that bad friend in dark-  
ness,

Famine its housemate, shall behold him gentle.

*Cho.* Why then, this man here, from a  
coward spirit,

Didst not thou slay thyself? But, — helped,  
— a woman,

The country's pest, and that of gods o' the  
country,

Killed him! Orestes, where may he see light  
now?

That coming hither back, with gracious for-  
tune,

Of both these he may be the all-conquering  
slayer?

*Aig.* But since this to do thou thinkest —  
and not talk — thou soon shalt know!

Up then, comrades dear! the proper thing to  
do — not distant this!

*Cho.* Up then! hilt in hold, his sword let  
every one aright dispose!

*Aig.* Ay, but I myself too, hilt in hold, do  
not refuse to die!

*Cho.* Thou wilt die, thou say'st, to who  
accept it. We the chance demand!

*Klu.* Nowise, O belovedest of men, may we  
do other ills!

To have reaped away these, even, is a harvest  
much to me!

Go, both thou and these the old men, to the  
homes appointed each,

Ere ye suffer! It behooved one do these things  
just as we did:

And if of these troubles, there should be  
enough — we may assent

— By the Daimon's heavy heel unfortunately  
stricken ones!

So a woman's counsel hath it — if one judge it  
learning-worth.

*Aig.* But to think that these at me the idle  
tongue should thus o'erbloom,

And throw out such words — the Daimon's  
power experimenting on —

And, of modest knowledge missing, — me, the  
ruler, . . .

*Cho.* Ne'er may this befall Argeians —  
wicked man to fawn before!

*Aig.* Anyhow, in after-days, will I, yes, I,  
be at thee yet!

*Cho.* Not if hither should the Daimon make  
Orestes straightway come!

*Alg.* Oh, I know, myself, that fugitives on  
hopes are pasture-fed!  
*Cho.* Do thy deed, get fat, defiling justice,  
since the power is thine!  
*Alg.* Know that thou shalt give me satisfac-  
tion for this folly's sake!

*Cho.* Boast on, bearing thee audacious, like a  
cock his females by!  
*Klu.* Have not thou respect for these same  
idle yelpings! I and thou  
Will arrange it, o'er this household ruling  
excellently well.

## LA SAISIAZ

DEDICATED TO MRS. SUTHERLAND ORR

MISS A. EGERTON-SMITH was, at the time  
of her death, one of Browning's oldest women  
friends. "He first met her," says Mrs. Suther-  
land Orr, "as a young woman in Florence when  
she was visiting there; and the love for and  
proficiency in music soon asserted itself as a  
bond of sympathy between them. They did  
not, however, see much of each other till he  
had finally left Italy, and she also had made  
her home in London. . . . Mr. Browning was  
one of the very few persons whose society she

cared to cultivate: and for many years the com-  
mon musical interest took the practical, and for  
both of them convenient, form, of their going  
to concerts together." Browning was at La  
Saisiaz, under the Salève, when Miss Egerton-  
Smith, who was also domiciled there, died sud-  
denly in the autumn of 1877, and it was after  
the shock of her loss that he composed the  
poem to which he gave the title of their sum-  
mer resort. The poem is dated November 9,  
1877.

GOOD, to forgive;  
Best, to forget!  
Living, we fret;  
Dying, we live.  
Fretless and free,  
Soul, clap thy pinion!  
Earth have dominion,  
Body, o'er thee!

Wander at will,  
Day after day, —  
Wander away,  
Wandering still —  
Soul that canst soar!  
Body may slumber:  
Body shall cumber  
Soul-flight no more.

Waft of soul's wing!  
What lies above?  
Sunshine and Love,  
Skyblue and Spring!  
Body hides — where?  
Ferns of all feather,  
Mosses and heather,  
Yours be the care!

## LA SAISIAZ

A. E. S. SEPTEMBER 14, 1877.

DARED and done: at last I stand upon the  
summit, Dear and True!  
Singly dared and done; the climbing both of us  
were bound to do.  
Petty feat and yet prodigious: every side my  
glance was bent

O'er the grandeur and the beauty lavished  
through the whole ascent.  
Ledge by ledge, out broke new marvels, now  
minute and now immense:  
Earth's most exquisite disclosure, heaven's own  
God in evidence!  
And no berry in its hiding, no blue space in its  
outspread,  
Pleaded to escape my footstep, challenged my  
emerging head,  
(As I climbed or paused from climbing, now  
o'erbranched by shrub and tree,  
Now built round by rock and boulder, now at  
just a turn set free,  
Stationed face to face with — Nature? rather  
with Infinitude.)  
— No revelation of them all, as singly I my  
path pursued,  
But a bitter touched its sweetness, for the  
thought stung "Even so  
Both of us had loved and wondered just the  
same, five days ago!"  
Five short days, sufficient hardly to entice,  
from out its den  
Splintered in the slab, this pink perfection of  
the cyclamen;  
Scarce enough to heal and coat with amber gum  
the sloe-tree's gash,  
Bronze the clustered wilding apple, redden ripe  
the mountain-ash:  
Yet of might to place between us — Oh the bar-  
rier! Yon Profound  
Shrinks beside it, proves a pin-point: barrier  
this, without a bound!  
Boundless though it be, I reach you: somehow  
seem to have you here  
— Who are there. Yes, there you dwell now,  
plain the four low walls appear;  
Those are vineyards, they enclose from; and  
the little spire which points

— That 's Collonge, henceforth your dwelling.  
 All the same, howe'er disjoints  
 Past from present, no less certain you are here,  
 not there : have dared,  
 Done the feat of mountain-climbing, — five  
 days since, we both prepared  
 Daring, doing, arm in arm, if other help should  
 haply fail.  
 For you asked, as forth we sallied to see sunset  
 from the vale,  
 "Why not try for once the mountain, — take a  
 foretaste, snatch by stealth  
 Sight and sound, some unconsidered fragment  
 of the hoarded wealth ?  
 Six weeks at its base, yet never once have we  
 together won  
 Sight or sound by honest climbing : let us two  
 have dared and done  
 Just so much of twilight journey as may prove  
 to-morrow's jaunt  
 Not the only mode of wayfare — wheeled to  
 reach the eagle's haunt !"  
 So, we turned from the low grass-path you were  
 pleased to call "your own,"  
 Set our faces to the rose-bloom o'er the sum-  
 mit's front of stone  
 Where Salève obtains, from Jura and the sunken  
 sun she hides,  
 Due return of blushing "Good Night," rosy as  
 a borne-off bride's,  
 For his masculine "Good Morrow" when, with  
 sunrise still in hold,  
 Gay he hails her, and, magnifie, thrilled her  
 black length burns to gold.  
 Up and up we went, how careless — nay, how  
 joyous ! All was new,  
 All was strange. "Call progress toilsome ?  
 that were just insulting you !  
 How the trees must temper noontide ! Ah, the  
 thicket's sudden break !  
 What will be the morning glory, when at dusk  
 thus gleams the lake ?  
 Light by light puts forth Geneva : what a land  
 — and, of the land,  
 Can there be a lovelier station than this spot  
 where now we stand ?  
 Is it late, and wrong to linger ? True, to-mor-  
 row makes amends,  
 Toilsome progress ? child's play, call it —  
 specially when one descends !  
 There, the dread descent is over — hardly our  
 adventure, though !  
 Take the vale where late we left it, pace the  
 grass-path, 'mine, you know !  
 Proud completion of achievement !" And we  
 paced it, praising still  
 That soft tread on velvet verdure as it wound  
 through hill and hill ;  
 And at very end there met us, coming from  
 Collonge, the pair  
 — All our people of the Chalet — two, enough  
 and none to spare.  
 So, we made for home together, and we reached  
 it as the stars  
 One by one came lamping — chiefly that pre-  
 potency of Mars —  
 And your last word was "I owe you this enjoy-  
 ment !" — met with "Nay :

With yourself it rests to have a month of mor-  
 rows like to-day !"  
 Then the meal, with talk and laughter, and the  
 news of that rare nook  
 Yet untroubled by the tourist, touched on by  
 no travel-book,  
 All the same — though latent — patent, hybrid  
 birth of land and sea,  
 And (our travelled friend assured you) — if  
 such miracle might be —  
 Comparable for completeness of both blessings  
 — all around  
 Nature, and, inside her circle, safety from  
 world's sight and sound —  
 Comparable to our Saisiaz. "Hold it fast and  
 guard it well !  
 Go and see and vouch for certain, then come  
 back and never tell  
 Living soul but us ; and haply, prove our sky  
 from cloud as clear,  
 There may we four meet, praise fortune just as  
 now, another year !"  
 Thus you charged him on departure : not with-  
 out the final charge,  
 "Mind to-morrow's early meeting ! We must  
 leave our journey marge  
 Ample for the wayside wonders : there's the  
 stoppage at the inn  
 Three-parts up the mountain, where the hard-  
 ships of the track begin ;  
 There's the convent worth a visit ; but, the  
 triumph crowning all —  
 There's Salève's own platform facing glory  
 which strikes greatness small,  
 — Blanc, supreme above his earth-brood, need-  
 les red and white and green,  
 Horns of silver, fangs of crystal set on edge in  
 his demesne.  
 So, some three weeks since, we saw them : so,  
 to-morrow we intend  
 You shall see them likewise ; therefore Good  
 Night till to-morrow, friend !"  
 Last, the nothings that extinguish embers of a  
 vivid day :  
 "What might be the Marshal's next move,  
 what Gambetta's counter-play ?"  
 Till the landing on the staircase saw escape  
 the latest spark :  
 "Sleep you well !" "Sleep but as well, you !" —  
 — lazy love quenched, all was dark.  
 Nothing dark next day at sundown ! Up I  
 rose and forth I fared :  
 Took my plunge within the bath-pool, pacified  
 the watch-dog scared,  
 Saw proceed the transmutation — Jura's black  
 to one gold glow,  
 Trod your level path that let me drink the  
 morning deep and slow,  
 Reached the little quarry — ravage recom-  
 pensed by shrub and fern —  
 Till the overflowing ardors told me time was  
 for return.  
 So, return I did, and gayly. But, for once,  
 from no far mound  
 Waved salute a tall white figure. "Has her  
 sleep been so profound ?



Foresight, rather, prudent saving strength for  
day's expenditure!  
Ay, the chamber-window's open: out and on  
the terrace, sure!"

No, the terrace showed no figure, tall, white,  
leaning through the wreaths,  
Tangle-twine of leaf and bloom that intercept  
the air one breathes,

Interpose between one's love and Nature's  
loving, hill and dale

Down to where the blue lake's wrinkle marks  
the river's inrush pale

— Mazy Arve: whereon no vessel but goes  
sliding white and plain,

Not a steamboat pants from harbor but one  
hears pulsate amain,

Past the city's congregated peace of homes  
and pomp of spires

— Man's mild protest that there's something  
more than Nature, man requires,

And that, useful as is Nature to attract the  
tourist's foot,

Quiet slow sure money-making proves the  
matter's very root, —

Need for body, — while the spirit also needs a  
comfort reached

By no help of lake or mountain, but the texts  
whence Calvin preached.

"Here's the veil withdrawn from landscape:  
up to Jura and beyond,

All awaits us ranged and ready; yet she vio-  
lates the bond,

Neither leans nor looks nor listens: why is  
this?" A turn of eye

Took the whole sole answer, gave the undis-  
puted reason "why"!

This dread way you had your summons! No  
premonitory touch,

As you talked and laughed ('t is told me) scarce  
a minute ere the clutch

Captured you in cold forever. Cold? nay,  
warm you were as life

When I raised you, while the others used, in  
passionate poor strife,

All the means that seemed to promise any aid,  
and all in vain,

Gone you were, and I shall never see that  
earnest face again

Grow transparent, grow transfigured with the  
sudden light that leapt

At the first word's provocation, from the  
heart-deeps where it slept.

Therefore, paying piteous duty, what seemed  
You have we consigned

Peacefully to — what I think were, of all earth-  
beds, to your mind

Most the choice for quiet, yonder: low walls  
stop the vines' approach,

Lovingly Salève protects you; village-sports  
will ne'er encroach

On the stranger lady's silence, whom friends  
bore so kind and well

Thither "just for love's sake," — such their  
own word was: and who can tell?

You supposed that few or none had known and  
loved you in the world:

Maybe! flower that's full-blown tempts the  
butterfly, not flower that's furled.

But more learned sense unlocked you, loosed  
the sheath and let expand

Bud to bell and outspread flower-shape at the  
least warm touch of hand

— Maybe, throb of heart, beneath which —  
quickening farther than it knew —

Treasure oft was disembosomed, scent all  
strange and unguessed hue.

Disembosomed, re-embosomed, — must one  
memory suffice,

Prove I knew an Alpine-rose which all beside  
named Edelweiss?

Rare thing, red or white, you rest now: two  
days slumbered through; and since

One day more will see me rid of this same scene  
whereat I wince,

Tetchy at all sights and sounds and pettish at  
each idle charm

Proffered me who pace now singly where we  
two went arm in arm, —

I have turned upon my weakness: asked, "And  
what, forsooth, prevents

That, this latest day allowed me, I fulfil of  
her intents

One she had the most at heart — that we should  
thus again survey

From Salève Mont Blanc together?" There-  
fore, — dared and done to-day

Climbing, — here I stand: but you — where?

If a spirit of the place

Broke the silence, bade me question, promised  
answer, — what disgrace

Did I stipulate "Provided answer suit my  
hopes, not fears!"

Would I shrink to learn my lifetime's limit —  
days, weeks, months or years?

Would I shirk assurance on each point whereat  
I can but guess —

"Does the soul survive the body? Is there  
God's self, no or yes?"

If I know my mood, 't were constant — come  
in whatsoe'er uncouth

Shape it should, nay, formidable — so the  
answer were but truth.

Well, and wherefore shall it daunt me, when  
't is I myself am tasked,

When, by weakness weakness questioned,  
weakly answers — weakly asked?

Weakness never needs be falseness: truth is  
truth in each degree

— Thunder-pealed by God to Nature, whis-  
pered by my soul to me.

Nay, the weakness turns to strength and tri-  
umphs in a truth beyond:

"Mine is but man's truest answer — how were  
it did God respond?"

I shall no more dare to mimic such response in  
futile speech,

Pass off human lisp as echo of the sphere-song  
out of reach,

Than, — because it well may happen yonder,  
 where the far snows blanch  
 Mute Mont Blanc, that who stands near them  
 sees and hears an avalanche, —  
 I shall pick a clod and throw, — cry, "Such  
 the sight and such the sound!  
 What though I nor see nor hear them? Others  
 do, the proofs abound!"  
 Can I make my eye an eagle's, sharpen ear to  
 recognize  
 Sound o'er league and league of silence? Can  
 I know, who but surmise?  
 If I dared no self-deception when, a week  
 since, I and you  
 Walked and talked along the grass-path, pass-  
 ing lightly in review  
 What seemed hits and what seemed misses in a  
 certain fence-play, — strife  
 Sundry minds of mark engaged in "On the  
 Soul and Future Life," —  
 If I ventured estimating what was come of par-  
 ried thrust,  
 Subtle stroke, and, rightly, wrongly, estimat-  
 ing could be just  
 — Just, though life so seemed abundant in the  
 form which moved by mine,  
 I might well have played at feigning, fooling,  
 — laughed "What need opine  
 Pleasure must succeed to pleasure, else past  
 pleasure turns to pain,  
 And this first life claims a second, else I count  
 its good no gain?" —  
 Much less have I heart to palter when the  
 matter to decide  
 Now becomes "Was ending ending once and  
 always, when you died?"  
 Did the face, the form I lifted as it lay, reveal  
 the loss  
 Not alone of life but soul? A tribute to yon  
 flowers and moss,  
 What of you remains beside? A memory!  
 Easy to attest  
 "Certainly from out the world that one be-  
 lieves who knew her best  
 Such was good in her, such fair, which fair  
 and good were great perchance  
 Had but fortune favored, bidden each shy  
 faculty advance;  
 After all — who knows another? Only as I  
 know, I speak."  
 So much of you lives within me while I live  
 my year or week.  
 Then my fellow takes the tale up, not unwilling  
 to aver  
 Duly in his turn, "I knew him best of all, as he  
 knew her:  
 Such he was, and such he was not, and such  
 other might have been  
 But that somehow every actor, somewhere in  
 this earthly scene,  
 Fails." And so both memories dwindle, yours  
 and mine together linked,  
 Till there is but left for comfort, when the  
 last spark proves extinct,  
 This — that somewhere new existence led by  
 men and women new  
 Possibly attains perfection coveted by me and  
 you;

While ourselves, the only witness to what work  
 our life evolved,  
 Only to ourselves proposing problems proper to  
 be solved  
 By ourselves alone, — who working ne'er shall  
 know if work bear fruit  
 Others reap and garner, heedless how produced  
 by stalk and root, —  
 We who, darkling, timed the day's birth, —  
 struggling, testified to peace, —  
 Earned, by dint of failure, triumph, — we, cre-  
 ative thought, must cease  
 In created word, thought's echo, due to impulse  
 long since sped!  
 Why repine? There's ever some one lives  
 although ourselves be dead!

Well, what signifies repugnance? Truth is  
 truth howe'er it strike.  
 Fair or foul the lot apportioned life on earth, we  
 bear alike.  
 Stalwart body idly yoked to stunted spirit,  
 powers, that fain  
 Else would soar, condemned to grovel, ground-  
 lings through the fleshly chain, —  
 Help that hinders, hindrance proved but help  
 disguised when all too late, —  
 Hindrance is the fact acknowledged, howsoever  
 explained as Fate,  
 Fortune, Providence: we bear, own life a bur-  
 den more or less.  
 Life thus owned unhappy, is there supplemental  
 happiness  
 Possible and probable in life to come? or must  
 we count  
 Life a curse and not a blessing, summed-up in  
 its whole amount,  
 Help and hindrance, joy and sorrow?  
 Why should I want courage here?  
 I will ask and have an answer, — with no favor,  
 with no fear, —  
 From myself. How much, how little, do I in-  
 wardly believe  
 True that controverted doctrine? Is it fact to  
 which I cleave,  
 Is it fancy I but cherish, when I take upon my  
 lips  
 Phrase the solemn Tuscan fashioned, and de-  
 clare the soul's eclipse  
 Not the soul's extinction? take his "I believe  
 and I declare —  
 Certain am I — from this life I pass into a bet-  
 ter, there  
 Where that lady lives of whom enamored was  
 my soul" — where this  
 Other lady, my companion dear and true, she  
 also is?

I have questioned and am answered. Ques-  
 tion, answer presuppose  
 Two points: that the thing itself which ques-  
 tions, answers, — *is*, it knows;  
 As it also knows the thing perceived outside it-  
 self, — a force  
 Actual ere its own beginning, operative  
 through its course,  
 Unaffected by its end, — that this thing like-  
 wise needs must be;

Call this — God, then, call that — soul, and both — the only facts for me.  
 Prove them facts? that they o'erpass my power of proving, proves them such:  
 Fact it is I know I know not something which is fact as much.  
 What before caused all the causes, what effect of all effects  
 Haply follows, — these are fancy. Ask the rush if it suspects  
 Whence and how the stream which floats it had a rise, and where and how  
 Falls or flows on still! What answer makes the rush except that now  
 Certainly it floats and is, and, no less certain than itself,  
 Is the everyway external stream that now through shoal and shelf  
 Floats it onward, leaves it — maybe — wrecked at last, or lands on shore  
 There to root again and grow and flourish stable evermore.  
 — Maybe! mere surmise not knowledge: much conjecture styled belief,  
 What the rush conceives the stream means through the voyage blind and brief.  
 Why, because I doubtless am, shall I as doubtless be? "Because  
 God seems good and wise." Yet under this our life's apparent laws  
 Reigns a wrong which, righted once, would give quite other laws to life.  
 "He seems potent," Potent here, then: why are right and wrong at strife?  
 Has in life the wrong the better? Happily life ends so soon!  
 Right predominates in life? Then why two lives and double boon?  
 "Anyhow, we want it: wherefore want?" Because, without the want,  
 Life, now human, would be brutish: just that hope, however scant,  
 Makes the actual life worth leading; take the hope therein away,  
 All we have to do is surely not endure another day.  
 This life has its hopes for this life, hopes that promise joy: life done —  
 Out of all the hopes, how many had complete fulfilment? None.  
 "But the soul is not the body:" and the breath is not the flute;  
 Both together make the music: either marred and all is mute.  
 Truce to such old sad contention whence, according as we shape  
 Most of hope or most of fear, we issue in a half-escape:  
 "We believe" is sighed. I take the cup of comfort proffered thus,  
 Taste and try each soft ingredient, sweet infusion, and discuss  
 What their blending may accomplish for the cure of doubt, till — slow,  
 Sorrowful, but how decided! needs must I o'erturn it — so!  
 Cause before, effect behind me — blanks! The midway point I am,

Caused, itself — itself efficient: in that narrow space must cram  
 All experience — out of which there crowds conjecture manifold,  
 But, as knowledge, this comes only — things may be as I behold,  
 Or may not be, but, without me and above me, things there are;  
 I myself am what I know not — ignorance which proves no bar  
 To the knowledge that I am, and, since I am, can recognize  
 What to me is pain and pleasure: this is sure, the rest — surmise.  
 If my fellows are or are not, what may please them and what pain, —  
 Mere surmise: my own experience — that is knowledge, once again!

I have lived, then, done and suffered, loved and hated, learnt and taught  
 This — there is no reconciling wisdom with a world distraught,  
 Goodness with triumphant evil, power with failure in the aim,  
 If — (to my own sense, remember! though none other feel the same!)  
 If you bar me from assuming earth to be a pupil's place,  
 And life, time — with all their chances, changes — just probation-space,  
 Mine, for me. But those apparent other mortals — theirs, for them?  
 Knowledge stands on my experience: all outside its narrow hem,  
 Free surmise may sport and welcome! Pleasures, pains affect mankind  
 Just as they affect myself? Why, here's my neighbor color-blind,  
 Eyes like mine to all appearance: "green as grass" do I affirm?  
 "Red as grass" he contradicts me; — which employs the proper term?  
 Were we two the earth's sole tenants, with no third for referee,  
 How should I distinguish? Just so, God must judge 'twixt man and me.  
 To each mortal peradventure earth becomes a new machine,  
 Pain and pleasure no more tally in our sense than red and green;  
 Still, without what seems such mortal's pleasure, pain, my life were lost  
 — Life, my whole sole chance to prove — although at man's apparent cost —  
 What is beauteous and what ugly, right to strive for, right to shun,  
 Fit to help and fit to hinder, — prove my forces every one,  
 Good and evil, — learn life's lesson, hate of evil, love of good,  
 As 't is set me, understand so much as may be understood —  
 Solve the problem: "From thine apprehended scheme of things, deduce  
 Praise or blame of its contriver, shown a niggard or profuse



In each good or evil issue! nor miscalculate  
 alike  
 Counting one the other in the final balance,  
 which to strike,  
 Soul was born and life allotted: ay, the show  
 of things unfurled  
 For thy summing-up and judgment, — thine,  
 no other mortal's world!"

What though fancy scarce may grapple with the  
 complex and immense  
 — "His own world for every mortal?" Postu-  
 late omnipotence!

Limit power, and simple grows the complex:  
 shrunk to atom size,

That which loomed immense to fancy low before  
 my reason lies, —

I survey it and pronounce it work like other  
 work: success

Here and there, the workman's glory, — here  
 and there, his shame no less,

Failure as conspicuous. Taunt not "Human  
 work ape work divine?"

As the power, expect performance! God's be  
 God's as mine is mine!

God whose power made man and made man's  
 wants, and made, to meet those wants,

Heaven and earth which, through the body,  
 prove the spirit's ministrants,

Excellent all, — did he lack power or was the  
 will in fault

When ne let blue heaven be shrouded o'er by  
 vapors of the vault,

Gay earth drop her garlands shrivelled at the  
 first infecting breath

Of the serpent pains which herald, swarming  
 in, the dragon death?

What, no way but this that man may learn and  
 lay to heart how life

Life were with d lights would only death allow  
 their taste to life?

Must the rose sigh "Pluck — I perish!" must  
 the eve weep "Gaze — I fade!"

— Every sweet warn "Ware my bitter!"  
 every shine bid "Wait my shade"?

Can we love but on condition, that the thing we  
 love must die?

Needs there groan a world in anguish just to  
 teach us sympathy —

Multitudinously wretched that we, wretched  
 too, may guess

What a preferable state were universal hap-  
 piness?

Hardly do I so conceive the outcome of that  
 power which went

To the making of the worm there in yon clod  
 its tenement,

Any more than I distinguish aught of that  
 which, wise and good,

Framed the leaf, its plain of pasture, dropped  
 the dew, its finless food.

Nay, were fancy fact, were earth and all it  
 holds illusion mere,

Only a machine for teaching love and hate and  
 hope and fear

To myself, the sole existence, single truth 'mid  
 falsehood, — well!

If the harsh throes of the prelude die not off  
 into the swell

Of that perfect piece they sting me to become  
 a-strain for, — if

Roughness of the long rock-clamber lead not to  
 the last of cliff,

First of level country where is sward my  
 pilgrim-foot can prize, —

Plainlier! if this life's conception new life fail  
 to realize, —

Though earth burst and proved a bubble glass-  
 ing hues of hell, one huge

Reflex of the devil's doings — God's work by  
 no subterfuge —

(So death's kindly touch informed me as it  
 broke the glamour, gave

Soul and body both release from life's long  
 nightmare in the grave) —

Still, — with no more Nature, no more Man as  
 riddle to be read,

Only my own joys and sorrows now to reckon  
 real instead, —

I must say — or choke in silence — "Howsoever  
 came my fate,

Sorrow did and joy did nowise — life well  
 weighed — preponderate."

By necessity ordained thus? I shall bear as  
 best I can;

By a cause all-good, all-wise, all-potent? No,  
 as I am man!

Such were God: and was it goodness that the  
 good within my range

Or had evil in admixture or grew evil's self by  
 change?

Wisdom — that becoming wise meant making  
 slow and sure advance

From a knowledge proved in error to acknow-  
 ledged ignorance?

Power! 't is just the main assumption reason  
 most revolts at! power

Unavailing for bestowment on its creature of  
 an hour,

Man, of so much proper action rightly aimed  
 and reaching aim,

So much passion, — no defect there, no excess,  
 but still the same, —

As what constitutes existence, pure perfection  
 bright as brief

For yon worm, man's fellow-creature, on yon  
 happier world — its leaf!

No, as I am man, I mourn the poverty I must  
 impute:

Goodness, wisdom, power, all bounded, each a  
 human attribute!

But, O world outspread beneath me! only for  
 myself I speak,

Nowise dare to play the spokesman for my  
 brothers strong and weak,

Full and empty, wise and foolish, good and  
 bad, in every age,

Every elme, I turn my eyes from, as in one or  
 other stage

Of a torture writhe they, Job-like couched on  
 dung and crazed with blains

— Wherefore? whereto? ask the whirlwind  
 what the dread voice thence explains!

I shall "vindicate no way of God's to man,"  
 nor stand apart,  
 "Laugh, be candid," while I watch it traversing  
 the human heart!  
 Traversed heart must tell its story uncommented  
 on: no less  
 Mine results in, "Only grant a second life; I  
 acquiesce  
 In this present life as failure, count misfortune's  
 worst assaults  
 Triumph, not defeat, assured that loss so much  
 the more exalts  
 Gain about to be. For at what moment did I  
 so advance  
 Near to knowledge as when frustrate of escape  
 from ignorance?  
 Did not beauty prove most precious when its  
 opposite obtained  
 Rule, and truth seem more than ever potent  
 because falsehood reigned?  
 While for love—Oh how but, losing love, does  
 whoso loves succeed  
 By the death-pang to the birth-throe—learning  
 what is love indeed?  
 Only grant my soul may carry high through  
 death her cup unspilled,  
 Brimming though it be with knowledge, life's  
 loss drop by drop distilled,  
 I shall boast it mine—the balsam, bless each  
 kindly wrench that wrung  
 From life's tree its inmost virtue, tapped the  
 root whence pleasure sprung,  
 Barked the bole, and broke the bough, and  
 bruised the berry, left all grace  
 Ashes in death's stern alembic, loosed elixir in  
 its place!"

Witness, Dear and True, how little I was 'ware  
 of—not your worth  
 —That I knew, my heart assures me—but of  
 what a shade on earth  
 Would the passage from my presence of the  
 tall white figure throw  
 O'er the ways we walked together! Somewhat  
 narrow, somewhat slow,  
 Used to seem the ways, the walking: narrow  
 ways are well to tread  
 When there's moss beneath the footstep,  
 honeysuckle overhead:  
 Walking slow to beating bosom surest solace  
 soonest gives,  
 Liberates the brain o'erloaded—best of all  
 restoratives.  
 Nay, do I forget the open vast where soon or  
 late converged  
 Ways though winding?—world-wide heaven-  
 high sea where music slept or surged  
 As the angel had ascendant, and Beethoven's  
 Titan mace  
 Smote the immense to storm, Mozart would by  
 a finger's lifting chase?  
 Yes, I knew—but not with knowledge such as  
 thrills me while I view  
 Yonder precinct which henceforward holds and  
 hides the Dear and True.  
 Grant me (once again) assurance we shall each  
 meet each some day,

Walk—but with how bold a footstep! on a  
 way—but what a way!  
 —Worst were best, defeat were triumph, utter  
 loss were utmost gain.  
 Can it be, and must, and will it?

Silence! Out of fact's domain,  
 Just surmise prepared to mutter hope, and also  
 fear—dispute  
 Fact's inexorable ruling, "Outside fact, surmise  
 be mute!"  
 Well!  
 Ay, well and best, if fact's self I may force  
 the answer from!  
 'T is surmise I stop the mouth of! Not above  
 in yonder dome  
 All a rapture with its rose-glow,—not around,  
 where pile and peak  
 Strainingly await the sun's fall,—not beneath,  
 where crickets creak,  
 Birds assemble for their bedtime, soft the tree-  
 top swell subsides,—  
 No, nor yet within my deepest sentient self the  
 knowledge hides.  
 Aspiration, reminiscence, plausibilities of trust  
 —Now the ready "Man were wronged else,"  
 now the rash "and God unjust"—  
 None of these I need. Take thou, my soul, thy  
 solitary stand,  
 Umpire to the champions Fancy, Reason, as on  
 either hand  
 Amicable war they wage and play the foe in thy  
 behoof!  
 Fancy thrust and Reason parry! Thine the  
 prize who stand aloof!

## FANCY

I concede the thing refused: henceforth no  
 certainty more plain  
 Than this mere surmise that after body dies  
 soul lives again.  
 Two, the only facts acknowledged late, are now  
 increased to three—  
 God is, and the soul is, and, as certain, after  
 death shall be.  
 Put this third to use in life, the time for using  
 fact!

## REASON

I do:

Find it promises advantage, coupled with the  
 other two.  
 Life to come will be improvement on the life  
 that's now; destroy  
 Body's thwartings, there's no longer screen  
 betwixt soul and soul's joy.  
 Why should we expect new hindrance, novel  
 tether? In this first  
 Life, I see the good of evil, why our world  
 began at worst:  
 Since time means amelioration, tardily enough  
 displayed,  
 Yet a mainly onward moving, never wholly  
 retrograde.  
 We know more though we know little, we grow  
 stronger though still weak,

Partly see though all too purblind, stammer  
 though we cannot speak.  
 There is no such grudge in God as scared the  
 ancient Greek, no fresh  
 Substitute of trap for drag-net, once a break-  
 age in the mesh.  
 Dragons were, and serpents are, and blindworms  
 will be : ne'er emerged  
 Any new-created python for man's plague since  
 earth was purged.  
 Failing proof, then, of invented trouble to re-  
 place the old,  
 O'er this life the next presents advantage  
 much and manifold :  
 Which advantage—in the absence of a fourth  
 and farther fact  
 Now conceivably surmised, of harm to follow  
 from the act—  
 I pronounce for man's obtaining at this mo-  
 ment. Why delay?  
 Is he happy? happiness will change : anti-  
 cipate the day!  
 Is he sad? there's ready refuge : of all sadness  
 death's prompt cure!  
 Is he both, in mingled measure? cease a bur-  
 den to endure!  
 Pains with sorry compensations, pleasures  
 stinted in the dole,  
 Power that sinks and pettiness that soars, all  
 halved and nothing whole,  
 Idle hopes that lure man onward, forced back  
 by as idle fears—  
 What a load he stumbles under through his  
 glad sad seventy years.  
 When a touch sets right the turmoil, lifts his  
 spirit where, flesh-freed,  
 Knowledge shall be rightly named so, all that  
 seems be truth indeed!  
 Grant his forces no accession, nay, no faculty's  
 increase,  
 Only let what now exists continue, let him  
 prove in peace  
 Power whereof the interrupted unperfected  
 play enticed  
 Man through darkness, which to lighten any  
 spark of hope sufficed.—  
 What shall then deter his dying out of darkness  
 into light?  
 Death itself perchance, brief pain that's pang,  
 condensed and infinite?  
 But at worst, he needs must brave it one day,  
 while, at best, he laughs—  
 Drops a drop within his chalice, sleep not  
 death his science quaffs!  
 Any moment claims more courage, when, by  
 crossing cold and gloom,  
 Manfully man quits discomfort, makes for the  
 provided room  
 Where the old friends want their fellow, where  
 the new acquaintance wait,  
 Probably for talk assembled, possibly to sup in  
 state!  
 I affirm and reaffirm it therefore : only make  
 as plain  
 As that man now lives, that, after dying, man  
 will live again,—  
 Make as plain the absence, also, of a law to con-  
 travene

Voluntary passage from this life to that by  
 change of scene,—  
 And I bid him—at suspicion of first cloud  
 athwart his sky,  
 Flower's departure, frost's arrival—never  
 hesitate, but die!

## FANCY

Then I double my concession: grant, along  
 with new life sure  
 This same law found lacking now: ordain that,  
 whether rich or poor  
 Present life is judged in aught man counts  
 advantage—be it hope,  
 Be it fear that brightens, blackens most or  
 least his horoscope,—  
 He, by absolute compulsion such as made him  
 live at all,  
 Go on living to the fated end of life whate'er  
 befall.  
 What though, as on earth he darkling grovels,  
 man descry the sphere,  
 Next life's—call it, heaven of freedom, close  
 above and crystal-clear?  
 He shall find—say, hell to punish who in aught  
 curtails the term,  
 Fain would act the butterfly before he has  
 played out the worm!  
 God, soul, earth, heaven, hell,—five facts  
 now: what is to desiderate?

## REASON

Nothing! Henceforth man's existence bows to  
 the monition "Wait!  
 Take the joys and bear the sorrows—neither  
 with extreme concern!  
 Living here means nescience simply: 't is next  
 life that helps to learn.  
 Shut those eyes, next life will open,—stop  
 those ears, next life will teach  
 Hearing's office,—close those lips, next life  
 will give the power of speech!  
 Or, if action more amuse thee than the passive  
 attitude,  
 Bravely bustle through thy being, busy thee  
 for ill or good,  
 Reap this life's success or failure! Soon shall  
 things be unperplexed  
 And the right and wrong, now tangled, lie un-  
 unravelled in the next."

## FANCY

Not so fast! Still more concession! not alone  
 do I declare  
 Life must needs be borne,—I also will that  
 man become aware  
 Life has worth incalculable, every moment  
 that he spends  
 So much gain or loss for that next life which on  
 this life depends.  
 Good, done here, be there rewarded,—evil,  
 worked here, there amerced!  
 Six facts now, and all established, plain to man  
 the last as first.

## REASON

There was good and evil, then, defined to man  
 by this decree?



Was — for at its promulgation both alike have ceased to be.  
 Prior to this last announcement, "Certainly as God exists,  
 As He made man's soul, as soul is quenchless by the deathly mists,  
 Yet is, all the same, forbidden premature escape from time  
 To eternity's provided purer air and brighter clime, —  
 Just so certainly depends it on the use to which man turns  
 Earth, the good or evil done there, whether after death he earns  
 Life eternal, — heaven, the phrase be, or eternal death, — say, hell.  
 As his deeds, so proves his portion, doing ill or doing well!"  
 — Prior to this last announcement, earth was man's probation-place:  
 Liberty of doing evil gave his doing good a grace;  
 Once lay down the law, with Nature's simple "Such effects succeed  
 Causes such, and heaven or hell depends upon man's earthly deed  
 Just as surely as depends the straight or else the crooked line  
 On his making point meet point or with or else without incline," —  
 Thenceforth neither good nor evil does man, doing what he must.  
 Lay but down that law as stringent "Wouldst thou live again, be just!"  
 As this other "Wouldst thou live now, regularly draw thy breath!  
 For, suspend the operation, straight law's breach results in death" —  
 And (provided always, man, addressed this mode, be sound and sane)  
 Prompt and absolute obedience, never doubt, will law obtain!  
 Tell not me "Look round us! nothing each side but acknowledged law,  
 Now styled God's — now, Nature's edict!"  
 Where 's obedience without law  
 Paid to either? What 's the adage rife in man's mouth? Why, "The best  
 I both see and praise, the worst I follow" — which, despite professed  
 Seeing, praising, all the same he follows, since he disbelieves  
 In the heart of him that edict which for truth his head receives.  
 There 's evading and persuading and much making law amends  
 Somehow, there 's the nice distinction 'twixt fast foes and faulty friends,  
 — Any consequence except inevitable death when, "Die,  
 Whoso breaks our law!" they publish, God and Nature equally.  
 Law that 's kept or broken — subject to man's will and pleasure! Whence?  
 How comes law to bear eluding? Not because of impotence:  
 Certain laws exist already which to hear means to obey;

Therefore not without a purpose these man must, while those man may  
 Keep and, for the keeping, haply gain approval and reward.  
 Break through this last superstructure, all is empty air — no sward  
 Firm like my first fact to stand on, "God there is, and soul there is,"  
 And soul's earthly life-allotment: wherein, by hypothesis,  
 Soul is bound to pass probation, prove its powers, and exercise  
 Sense and thought on fact, and then, from fact educating fit surmise,  
 Ask itself, and of itself have solely answer, "Does the scope  
 Earth affords of fact to judge by warrant future fear or hope?"  
 Thus have we come back full circle: fancy's footsteps one by one  
 Go their round conducting reason to the point where they begun,  
 Left where we were left so lately, Dear and True! When, half a week  
 Since, we walked and talked and thus I told you, how suffused a cheek  
 You had turned me had I sudden brought the blush into the smile  
 By some word like "Idly argued! you know better all the while!"  
 Now, from me — Oh not a blush, but, how much more, a joyous glow,  
 Laugh triumphant, would it strike did your "Yes, better I do know"  
 Break, my warrant for assurance! which assurance may not be  
 If, supplanting hope, assurance needs must change this life to me.  
 So, I hope — no more than hope, but hope — no less than hope, because  
 I can fathom, by no plumb-line sunk in life's apparent laws,  
 How I may in any instance fix where change should meetly fall  
 Nor involve, by one revisal, abrogation of them all:  
 — Which again involves as utter change in life thus law-released,  
 Whence the good of goodness vanished when the ill of evil ceased.  
 Whereas, life and laws apparent reinstated, — all we know,  
 All we know not, — o'er our heaven again cloud closes, until, lo, —  
 Hope the arrowy, just as constant, comes to pierce its gloom, compelled  
 By a power and by a purpose which, if no one else beheld,  
 I behold in life, so — hope!

Sad summing-up of all to say!  
*Athanasius contra mundum*, why should he hope more than they?  
 So are men made notwithstanding, such magnetic virtue darts  
 From each head their fancy haloes to their unresisting hearts!

Here I stand, methinks a stone's throw from  
yon village I this morn  
Traversed for the sake of looking one last look  
at its forlorn  
Tenement's ignoble fortune: through a crevice  
its, plain its floor  
Piled with provender for cattle, while a dung-  
heap blocked the door.  
In that squalid Bossex, under that obscene red  
roof, arose,  
Like a fiery flying serpent from its egg, a soul  
— Rousseau's.  
Turn thence! Is it Diodati joins the glimmer  
of the lake?  
There I plucked a leaf, one week since, — ivy,  
plucked for Byron's sake.  
Famed unfortunates! And yet, because of that  
phosphoric fame  
Swathing blackness' self with brightness till  
putridity looked flame,  
All the world was witched: and wherefore?  
what could lie beneath, allure  
Heart of man to let corruption serve man's head  
as cynosure?  
Was the magic in the dictum "All that's good  
is gone and past;  
Bad and worse still grows the present, and the  
worst of all comes last:  
Which believe — for I believe it"? So  
preached one his gospel-news;  
While melodious moaned the other, "dying  
day with dolphin-hues!  
Storm, for loveliness and darkness like a wo-  
man's eye! Ye mounts  
Where I climb to 'scape my fellow, and thou sea  
wherein he counts  
Not one inch of vile dominion! What were  
your especial worth  
Failed ye to enforce the maxim 'Of all objects  
found on earth  
Man is meanest, much too honored when com-  
pared with — what by odds  
Beats him — any dog: so, let him go a-howling  
to his gods!'  
Which believe — for I believe it!" Such the  
comfort man received  
Sadly since perforce he must: for why? the  
famous bard believed!

Fame! Then, give me fame, a moment! As  
I gather at a glance  
Human glory after glory vivifying yon ex-  
panse,  
Let me grasp them altogether, hold on high and  
brandish well  
Beacon-like above the rapt world ready, whether  
heaven or hell  
Send the dazzling summons earthward, to sub-  
mit itself the same,  
Take on trust the hope or else despair flashed  
full on face by — Fame!  
Thanks, thou pine-tree of Makistos, wide thy  
giant torch I wave!  
Know ye whence I plucked the pillar, late with  
sky for architrave?  
This the trunk, the central solid Knowledge,  
kindled core, began

Tugging earth-deeps, trying heaven-heights,  
rooted yonder at Lausanne.  
This which flits and spits, the aspic, — sparkles  
in and out the boughs  
Now, and now condensed, the python, coiling  
round and round allows  
Scarcely the bole its due effulgence, dulled by  
flake on flake of Wit —  
Laughter so bejewels Learning, — what but  
Ferney nourished it?  
Nay, nor fear — since every resin feeds the  
flame — that I dispense  
With yon Bossex terebith-tree's all-explosive  
Eloquence:  
No, be sure! nor, any more than thy resplen-  
dency, Jean-Jacques,  
Dare I want thine, Diodati! What though  
monkeys and macaques  
Gibber "Byron"? Byron's ivy rears a branch  
beyond the crew,  
Green forever, no deciduous trash macaques  
and monkeys chew!  
As Rousseau, then, eloquent, as Byron prime  
in poet's power, —  
Detonations, fulgurations, smiles — the rain-  
bow, tears — the shower, —  
Lo, I lift the coruscating marvel — Fame! and,  
famed, declare  
— Learned for the nonce as Gibbon, witty as  
wit's self Voltaire . . .  
Oh, the sorriest of conclusions to whatever man  
of sense  
'Mid the millions stands the unit, takes no flare  
for evidence!  
Yet the millions have their portion, live their  
calm or troublous day,  
Find significance in fireworks: so, by help of  
mine, they may  
Confidently lay to heart and lock in head their  
life long — this:  
" He there with the brand flamboyant, broad  
o'er night's forlorn abyss,  
Crowned by prose and verse; and wielding,  
with Wit's bauble, Learning's rod" . . .  
Well? Why, he at least believed in Soul, was  
very sure of God!

So the poor smile played, that evening: pallid  
smile long since extinct  
Here in London's mid-November! Not so  
loosely thoughts were linked,  
Six weeks since as I, descending in the sunset  
from Salève,  
Found the chain, I seemed to forge there, flaw-  
less till it reached your grave, —  
Not so filmy was the texture, but I bore it in  
my breast  
Safe thus far. And since I found a something  
in me would not rest  
Till I, link by link, unravelled any tangle of  
the chain,  
— Here it lies, for much or little! I have lived  
all o'er again  
That last pregnant hour: I saved it, just as I  
could save a root  
Disinterested for reinterment when the time best  
helps to shoot.

Life is stocked with germs of torpid life; but  
 may I never wake  
 Those of mine whose resurrection could not be  
 without earthquake!

Rest all such, unraised forever! Be this, sad  
 yet sweet, the sole  
 Memory evoked from slumber! Least part  
 this: then what the whole?

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

Written immediately after *La Saisiaz*, being dated January 15, 1878.

SUCH a starved bank of moss  
 Till, that May-morn,  
 Blue ran the flash across:  
 Violets were born!

Sky — what a scowl of cloud  
 Till, near and far,  
 Ray on ray split the shroud:  
 Splendid, a star!

World — how it walled about  
 Life with disgrace  
 Till God's own smile came out:  
 That was thy face!

## I

"FAME!" Yes, I said it and you read it.  
 First,  
 Praise the good log-fire! Winter howls with-  
 out.

Crowd closer, let us! Ha, the secret nursed  
 Inside yon hollow, crusted roundabout  
 With copper where the clamp was, — how the  
 burst  
 Vindicates flame the stealthy feeder! Spout  
 Thy splendidest — a minute and no more?  
 So soon again all sobered as before?

## II

Nay, for I need to see your face! One stroke  
 Adroitly dealt, and lo, the pomp revealed!  
 Fire in his pandemonium, heart of oak  
 Palatial, where he wrought the works con-  
 cealed  
 Beneath the solid-seeming roof I broke,  
 As redly up and out and off they reeled  
 Like disconcerted imps, those thousand sparks  
 From fire's slow tunnelling of vaults and arcs!

## III

Up, out, and off, see! Were you never used, —  
 You now, in childish days or rather nights, —  
 As I was, to watch sparks fly? not amused  
 By that old nurse-taught game which gave  
 the sprites  
 Each one his title and career, — confused  
 Belief 't was all long over with the flights  
 From earth to heaven of hero, sage, and bard,  
 And bade them once more strive for Fame's  
 award?

## IV

New long bright life! and happy chance be-  
 fell —  
 That I know — when some prematurely lost

Child of disaster bore away the bell  
 From some too-pampered son of fortune,  
 crossed  
 Never before my chimney broke the spell!  
 Octogenarian Keats gave up the ghost,  
 While — never mind Who was it cumbered  
 earth —  
 Sank stifled, span-long brightness, in the birth.

## v

Well, try a variation of the game!  
 Our log is old ship-timber, broken bulk.  
 There's sea-brine spirits up the brimstone  
 flame,  
 That crimson-curly spiral proves the hulk  
 Was saturate with — ask the chloride's name  
 From somebody who knows! I shall not sulk  
 If yonder greenish tonguelet licked from brass  
 Its life, I thought was fed on copperas.

## VI

Anyhow, there they flutter! What may be  
 The style and prowess of that purple one?  
 Who is the hero other eyes shall see  
 Than yours and mine? That yellow, deep to  
 dun —  
 Conjecture how the sage glows, whom not we  
 But those unborn are to get warmth by!  
 Son  
 O' the coal, — as Job and Hebrew name a  
 spark, —  
 What bard, in thy red soaring, scares the dark?

## VII

Oh and the lesser lights, the dearer still  
 That they elude a vulgar eye, give ours  
 The glimpse repaying astronomic skill  
 Which searched sky deeper, passed those  
 patent powers  
 Constellate proudly, — swords, scrolls, harps,  
 that fill  
 The vulgar eye to surfeit, — found best  
 flowers  
 Hid deepest in the dark, — named unplucked  
 grace  
 Of soul, ungathered beauty, form or face!

## VIII

Up with thee, mouldering ash men never knew,  
 But I know! flash thou forth, and figure  
 bold,  
 Calm and columnar as yon flame I view!  
 Oh and I bid thee, — to whom fortune doled  
 Scantly all other gifts out — bicker blue,  
 Beauty for all to see, zinc's uncontrolled



Flake-brilliance! Not my fault if these were  
shown,  
Grandeur and beauty both, to me alone.

## IX

No! as the first was boy's play, this proves  
mere  
Stripling's amusement: manhood's sport be  
grave!  
Choose rather sparkles quenched in mid career,  
Their boldness and their brightness could not  
save  
(In some old night of time on some lone drear  
Sea-coast, monopolized by crag or cave)  
— Save from ignoble exit into smoke,  
Silence, oblivion, all death-damps that choke!

## X

Launched by our ship-wood, float we, once  
adrift  
In fancy to that land-strip waters wash,  
We both know well! Where uncouth tribes  
made shift  
Long since to just keep life in, billows dash  
Nigh over folk who shudder at each lift  
Of the old tyrant tempest's whirlwind-lash  
Though they have built the serviceable town  
Tempests but tease now, billows drench, not  
drown.

## XI

Croisic, the spit of sandy rock which juts  
Spitefully northward, bears nor tree nor  
shrub  
To tempt the ocean, show what Guérande shuts  
Behind her, past wild Batz whose Saxons grub  
The ground for crystals grown where ocean  
gluts  
Their promontory's breadth with salt: all  
stub  
Of rock and stretch of sand, the land's last  
strife  
To rescue a poor remnant for dear life.

## XII

And what life! Here was, from the world to  
choose,  
The Druids' chosen chief of homes: they  
reared  
— Only their women, — 'mid the slush and  
ooze  
Of yon low islet, — to their sun, revered  
In strange stone guise, — a temple. May-dawn  
dews  
Saw the old structure levelled; when there  
peered  
May's earliest eve-star, high and wide once  
more  
Up towered the new pile perfect as before:

## XIII

Seeing that priestesses — and all were such —  
Unbuilt and then rebuilt it every May,  
Each alike helping — well, if not too much!  
For, 'mid their eagerness to outstrip day  
And get work done, if any loosed her clutch  
And let a single stone drop, straight a prey

Herself fell, torn to pieces, limb from limb,  
By sisters in full chorus glad and grim.

## XIV

And still so much remains of that gray cult,  
That even now, of nights, do women steal  
To the sole Menhir standing, and insult  
The antagonistic church-spire by appeal  
To power disowned in vain, since each adult  
Believes the gruesome thing she clasps may  
heal  
Whatever plague no priestly help can cure:  
Kiss but the cold stone, the event is sure!

## XV

Nay more: on May-morns, that primeval rite  
Of temple-building, with its punishment  
For rash precipitation, lingers, spite  
Of all remonstrance; vainly are they shent,  
Those girls who form a ring and, dressed in  
white,  
Dance round it, till some sister's strength be  
spent:  
Touch but the Menhir, straight the rest turn  
roughs  
From gentles, fall on her with fisticuffs.

## XVI

Oh and, for their part, boys from door to door  
Sing unintelligible words to tunes  
As obsolete: "scraps of Druidic lore,"  
Sigh scholars, as each pale man importunes  
Vainly the numbling to speak plain once more.  
Enough of this old worship, rounds and  
runes!  
They serve my purpose, which is but to show  
Croisic to-day and Croisic long ago.

## XVII

What have we sailed to see, then, wafted there  
By fancy from the log that ends its days  
Of much adventure 'neath skies foul or fair,  
On waters rough or smooth, in this good  
blaze  
We two crouch round so closely, bidding care  
Keep outside with the snow-storm? Some-  
thing says  
"Fit time for story-telling!" I begin —  
Why not at Croisic, port we first put in?

## XVIII

Anywhere serves: for point me out the place  
Wherever man has made himself a home,  
And there I find the story of our race  
In little, just at Croisic as at Rome.  
What matters the degree? the kind I trace.  
Druids their temple, Christians have their  
dome:  
So with mankind; and Croisic, I'll engage,  
With Rome yields sort for sort, in age for age.

## XIX

No doubt, men vastly differ: and we need  
Some strange exceptional benevolence  
Of nature's sunshine to develop seed  
So well, in the less-favored clime, that thence

We may discern how shrub means tree indeed  
Though dwarfed till scarcely shrub in evidence.

Man in the ice-house or the hot-house ranks  
With beasts or gods : stove-forced, give warmth  
the thanks !

## XX

While, is there any ice-checked ? Such shall  
learn

I am thankworthy, who propose to slake  
His thirst for tasting how it feels to turn  
Cedar from hyssop-on-the-wall. I wake  
No memories of what is harsh and stern  
In ancient Croisic-nature, much less rake  
The ashes of her last warmth till out leaps  
Live Hervé Riel, the single spark she keeps.

## XXI

Take these two, see, each outbreak, — spirt  
and spirt

Of fire from our brave billet's either edge  
Which — call maternal Croisic ocean-girt !  
These two shall thoroughly redeem my  
pledge.

One flames fierce gules, its feeblcr rival —  
vert,

Heralds would tell you : heroes, I allege,  
They both were : soldiers, sailors, statesmen,  
priests,  
Lawyers, physicians — guess what gods or  
beasts !

## XXII

None of them all, but — poets, if you please !  
" What, even there, endowed with knack of  
rhyme,

Did two among the aborigines  
Of that rough region pass the ungracious  
time

Suiting, to rumble-tumble of the sea's,  
The songs forbidden a serener clime ?  
Or had they universal audience — that 's  
To say, the folk of Croisic, ay, and Batz ? "

## XXIII

Open your ears ! Each poet in his day  
Had such a mighty moment of success  
As pinnaced him straight, in full display,

For the whole world to worship — nothing  
less !

Was not the whole polite world Paris, pray ?  
And did not Paris, for one moment — yes,  
Worship these poet-flames, our red and green,  
One at a time, a century between ?

## XXIV

And yet you never heard their names ! Assist,  
Clio, Historic Muse, while I record  
Great deeds ! Let fact, not fancy, break the  
mist

And bid each sun emerge, in turn play lord  
Of day, one moment ! Hear the annalist  
Tell a strange story, true to the least word !  
At Croisic, sixteen hundred years and ten  
Since Christ, forth flamed yon liquid ruby,  
then.

## XXV

Know him henceforth as René Gentilhomme  
— Appropriate appellation ! noble birth  
And knightly blazon, the device wherefrom  
Was " Better do than say " ! In Croisic's  
dearth

Why prison his career while Christendom  
Lay open to reward acknowledged worth ?  
He therefore left it at the proper age  
And got to be the Prince of Condé's page.

## XXVI

Which Prince of Condé, whom men called  
" The Duke,"

— Failing the king, his cousin, of an heir,  
(As one might hold hap, would, without rebuke,  
Since Anne of Austria, all the world was  
ware,

Twenty-three years long sterile, scarce could  
look

For issue) — failing Louis of so rare  
A godsend, it was natural the Prince  
Should hear men call him " Next King " too,  
nor wince.

## XXVII

Now, as this reasonable hope, by growth  
Of years, nay, tens of years, looked plump  
almost

To bursting, — would the brothers, childless  
both,

Louis and Gaston, give but up the ghost —  
Condé, called " Duke " and " Next King,"  
nothing loth

Awaited his appointment to the post,  
And wiled away the time, as best he might,  
Till Providence should settle things aright.

## XXVIII

So, at a certain pleasure-house, withdrawn  
From cities where a whisper breeds offence,  
He sat him down to watch the streak of dawn  
Testify to first stir of Providence ;  
And, since dull country life makes courtiers  
yawn,

There wanted not a poet to dispense  
Song's remedy for spleen-fits all and some,  
Which poet was Page René Gentilhomme.

## XXIX

A poet born and bred, his very sire  
A poet also, author of a piece  
Printed and published, " Ladies — their attire : "

Therefore the son, just born at his decease,  
Was bound to keep alive the sacred fire,  
And kept it, yielding moderate increase  
Of songs and sonnets, madrigals, and much  
Rhyming thought poetry and praised as such.

## XXX

Rubbish unutterable (bear in mind !)  
Rubbish not wholly without value, though,  
Being to compliment the Duke designed  
And bring the complimenter credit so, —  
Pleasure with profit happily combined.  
Thus René Gentilhomme rhymed, rhymed  
till — lo,

This happened, as he sat in an alcove  
Elaborating rhyme for "love" — not "dove."

## XXXI

He was alone : silence and solitude  
Befit the votary of the Muse. Around,  
Nature — not our new picturesque and rude,  
But trim tree-cinctured stately garden-  
ground —  
Breathed polish and politeness. All-imbued  
With these, he sat absorbed in one profound  
Excogitation, "Were it best to hint  
Or boldly boast 'She loves me — Araminte'?"

## XXXII

When suddenly flashed lightning, searing sight  
Almost, so close to eyes ; then, quick on flash,  
Followed the thunder, splitting earth down-  
right  
Where René sat a-rhyming : with huge crash  
Of marble into atoms infinite —  
Marble which, stately, dared the world to  
dash  
The stone-thing proud, high-pillared, from its  
place :  
One flash, and dust was all that lay at base.

## XXXIII

So, when the horrible confusion loosed  
Its wrappage round his senses, and, with  
breath,  
Seeing and hearing by degrees induced  
Conviction what he felt was life, not death —  
His fluttered faculties came back to roost  
One after one, as fowls do : ay, beneath,  
About his very feet there, lay in dust  
Earthly presumption paid by heaven's disgust.

## XXXIV

For, what might be the thunder-smitten thing  
But, pillared high and proud, in marble guise,  
A ducal crown — which meant "Now Duke :  
Next, King" ?  
Since such the Prince was, not in his own  
eyes  
Alone, but all the world's. Pebble from sling  
Prostrates a giant ; so can pulverize  
Marble pretension — how much more, make  
moult  
A peacock-prince his plume — God's thunder-  
bolt !

## XXXV

That was enough for René, that first fact  
Thus flashed into him. Up he looked : all  
blue  
And bright the sky above ; earth firm, compact  
Beneath his footing, lay apparent too ;  
Opposite stood the pillar : nothing lacked  
There, but the Duke's crown : see, its frag-  
ments strew  
The earth, — about his feet lie atoms fine  
Where he sat nursing late his fourteenth line !

## XXXVI

So, for the moment, all the universe  
Being abolished, all 'twixt God and him, —

Earth's praise or blame, its blessing or its curse,  
Of one and the same value, — to the brim  
Flooded with truth for better or for worse, —  
He pounces on the writing-paper, prim  
Keeping its place on table : not a dint  
Nor speck had damaged "Ode to Araminte."

## XXXVII

And over the neat crowquill calligraph  
His pen goes blotting, blurring, as an ox  
Tramples a flower-bed in a garden, — laugh  
You may ! — so does not he, whose quick  
heart knocks  
Audibly at his breast : an epitaph  
On earth's break-up, amid the falling rocks,  
He might be penning in a wild dismay,  
Caught with his work half-done on Judgment  
Day.

## XXXVIII

And what is it so terribly he pens,  
Ruining "Cupid, Venus, wife and smile,  
Hearts, darts," and all his day's *divinior mens*  
Judged necessary to a perfect style ?  
Little reck's René, with a breast to cleanse,  
Of Rhadamanthine law that reigned erewhile :  
Brimful of truth, truth's outburst will con-  
vince  
(Style or no style) who bears truth's brunt — the  
Prince.

## XXXIX

"Condé, called 'Duke,' be called just 'Duke,'  
not more,  
To life's end ! 'Next King' thou forsooth  
wilt be ?  
Ay, when this bauble, as it decked before  
Thy pillar, shall again, for France to see,  
Take its proud station there ! Let France adore  
No longer an illusive mock-sun — thee —  
But keep her homage for Sol's self, about  
To rise and put pretenders to the rout !

## XL

"What ? France so God-abandoned that her  
root  
Regal, though many a Spring it gave no sign,  
Lacks power to make the bole, now branchless,  
shoot  
Greenly as ever ? Nature, though benign,  
Thwarts ever the ambitious and astute.  
In store for such is punishment condign :  
Sure as thy Duke's crown to the earth was  
hurled,  
So sure, next year, a Dauphin glads the world !"

## XLI

Which penned — some forty lines to this effect —  
Our René folds his paper, marches brave  
Back to the mansion, luminous, erect,  
Triumphant, an emancipated slave.  
There stands the Prince, "How now ? My  
Duke's-crown wrecked ?  
What may this mean ?" The answer René  
gave  
Was — handing him the verses, with the due  
Incline of body : "Sir, God's word to you !"



## XLII

The Prince read, paled, was silent; all around,  
 The courtier-company, to whom he passed  
 The paper, read, in equal silence bound.  
 René grew also by degrees aghast  
 At his own fit of courage — palely found  
 Way of retreat from that pale presence :  
 classed  
 Once more among the cony-kind. "Oh, son,  
 It is a feeble folk!" saith Solomon.

## XLIII

Vainly he apprehended evil: since,  
 When, at the year's end, even as foretold,  
 Forth came the Dauphin who disrowned the  
 Prince  
 Of that long-craved mere visionary gold,  
 'T was no fit time for envy to evince  
 Malice, be sure! The timidest grew bold:  
 Of all that courtier-company not one  
 But left the semblance for the actual sun.

## XLIV

And all sorts and conditions that stood by  
 At René's burning moment, bright escape  
 Of soul, bore witness to the prophecy.  
 Which witness took the customary shape  
 Of verse; a score of poets in full cry  
 Hailed the inspired one. Nantes and Tours  
 agape,  
 Soon Paris caught the infection; gaining strength,  
 How could it fail to reach the Court at length?

## XLV

"O poet!" smiled King Louis, "and besides,  
 O prophet! Sure, by miracle announced,  
 My babe will prove a prodigy. Who chides  
 Henceforth the unchilded monarch shall be  
 trounced  
 For irreligion: since the fool derides  
 Plain miracle by which this prophet pounced  
 Exactly on the moment I should lift  
 Like Simeon, in my arms, a babe, 'God's gift!'

## XLVI

"So call the boy! and call this bard and seer  
 By a new title! him I raise to rank  
 Of 'Royal Poet: ' poet without peer!  
 Whose fellows only have themselves to thank  
 If humbly they must follow in the rear  
 My René. He's the master: they must clank  
 Their chains of power, confessed his slaves; for  
 why?  
 They poetize, while he can prophesy!"

## XLVII

So said, so done; our René rose august,  
 "The Royal Poet;" straightway put in type  
 His poem-prophecy, and (fair and just  
 Procedure) added, — now that time was ripe  
 For proving friends did well his word to trust, —  
 Those attestations, tuned to lyre or pipe,  
 Which friends broke out with when he dared  
 foretell  
 The Dauphin's birth: friends trusted, and did  
 well.

## XLVIII

Moreover he got painted by Du Pré,  
 Engraved by Daret also; and prefixed  
 The portrait to his book: a crown of bay  
 Circled his brows, with rose and myrtle mixed;  
 And Latin verses, lovely in their way,  
 Described him as "the biforked hill betwixt:  
 Since he hath scaled Parnassus at one jump,  
 Joining the Delphic quill and Getic trump."

## XLIX

Whereof came . . . What, it lasts, our spirt,  
 thus long  
 — The red fire? That's the reason must  
 excuse  
 My letting flicker René's prophet-song  
 No longer; for its pertinacious hues  
 Must fade before its fellow joins the throng  
 Of sparks departed up the chimney, dues  
 To dark oblivion. At the word, it winks,  
 Rallies, relapses, dwindles, deathward sinks.

## L

So does our poet. All this burst of fame,  
 Fury of favor, Royal Poetship,  
 Prophetship, book, verse, picture — thereof  
 came  
 — Nothing! That's why I would not let  
 outstrip  
 Red his green rival flamelet: just the same  
 Ending in smoke waits both! In vain we rip  
 The past, no further faintest trace remains  
 Of René to reward our pious pains.

## LI

Somebody saw a portrait framed and glazed  
 At Croisic. "Who may be this glorified  
 Mortal unheard-of hitherto?" amazed  
 That person asked the owner by his side,  
 Who proved as ignorant. The question raised  
 Provoked inquiry; key by key was tried  
 On Croisic's portrait-puzzle, till back flew  
 The wards at one key's touch, which key was  
 — Who?

## LII

The other famous poet! Wait thy turn,  
 Thou green, our red's competitor! Enough  
 Just now to note 't was he that itched to learn  
 (A hundred years ago) how fate could puff  
 Heaven-high (a hundred years before), then  
 spurn  
 To suds so big a bubble in some huff:  
 Since green too found red's portrait, — having  
 heard  
 Hitherto of red's rare self not one word.

## LIII

And he with zeal addressed him to the task  
 Of hunting out, by all and any means,  
 — Who might the brilliant bard be, born to  
 bask  
 Butterfly-like in shine which kings and  
 queens  
 And baby-dauphins shed? Much need to ask!  
 Is fame so fickle that what perks and preens

The eyed wing, one imperial minute, dips  
Next sudden moment into blind eclipse?

## LIV

After a vast expenditure of pains,  
Our second poet found the prize he sought:  
Urged in his search by something that re-  
strains  
From undue triumph famed ones who have  
fought,  
Or simply, poetizing, taxed their brains:  
Something that tells such — dear is triumph  
bought  
If it means only basking in the midst  
Of fame's brief sunshine, as thou, René, didst.

## LV

For, what did searching find at last but this?  
Quoth somebody, "I somehow somewhere  
seem  
To think I heard one old De Chevaye is  
Or was possessed of René's works!" which  
gleam  
Of light from out the dark proved not amiss  
To track, by correspondence on the theme;  
And soon the twilight broadened into day,  
For thus to question answered De Chevaye.

## LVI

"True it is, I did once possess the works  
You want account of — works — to call them  
so, —  
Comprised in one small book: the volume lurks  
(Some fifty leaves in *duodecimo*)  
'Neath certain ashes which my soul it irks  
Still to remember, because long ago  
That and my other rare shelf-occupants  
Perished by burning of my house at Nantes.

## LVII

"Yet of that book one strange particular  
Still stays in mind with me" — and there-  
upon  
Followed the story. "Few the poems are;  
The book was two-thirds filled up with this  
one,  
And sundry witnesses from near and far  
That here at least was prophesying done  
By prophet, so as to prelude all doubt,  
Before the thing he prophesied about."

## LVIII

That's all he knew, and all the poet learned,  
And all that you and I are like to hear  
Of René; since not only book is burned  
But memory extinguished, — nay, I fear,  
Portrait is gone too: nowhere I discerned  
A trace of it at Croisic. "Must a tear  
Needs fall for that?" you smile. "How  
fortune fares  
With such a mediocrity, who cares?"

## LIX

Well, I care — intimately care to have  
Experience how a human creature felt  
In after-life, who bore the burden grave  
Of certainly believing God had dealt

For once directly with him: did not rave  
— A maniac, did not find his reason melt  
— An idiot, but went on, in peace or strife,  
The world's way, lived an ordinary life.

## LX

How many problems that one fact would solve!  
An ordinary soul, no more, no less,  
About whose life earth's common sights re-  
volve,  
On whom is brought to bear, by thunder-  
stress,  
This fact — God tasks him, and will not ab-  
solve  
Task's negligent performer! Can you guess  
How such a soul — the task performed to  
point —  
Goes back to life nor finds things out of joint?

## LXI

Does he stand stock-like henceforth? or pro-  
ceed  
Dizzily, yet with course straightforward still,  
Down-trampling vulgar hindrance? — as the  
reed  
Is crushed beneath its tramp when that blind  
will  
Hatched in some old-world beast's brain bids  
it speed  
Where the sun wants brute-presence to fulfil  
Life's purpose in a new far zone, ere ice  
Enwomb the pasture-tract its fortalice.

## LXII

I think no such direct plain truth consists  
With actual sense and thought and what  
they take  
To be the solid walls of life: mere mists —  
How such would, at that truth's first pier-  
cing, break  
Into the nullity they are! — slight lists  
Wherein the puppet-champions wage, for  
sake  
Of some mock-mistress, mimic war: laid low  
At trumpet-blast, there's shown the world, one  
foe!

## LXIII

No, we must play the pageant out, observe  
The tourney-regulations, and regard  
Success — to meet the blunted spear nor  
swerve,  
Failure — to break no bones yet fall on  
sward;  
Must prove we have — not courage? well then  
— nerve!  
And, at the day's end, boast the crown's  
award —  
Be warranted as promising to wield  
Weapons, no sham, in a true battlefield.

## LXIV

Meantime, our simulated thunderclaps  
Which tell us counterfeited truths — these  
same  
Are — sound, when music storms the soul, per-  
haps?  
— Sight, beauty, every dart of every aim

That touches just, then seems, by strange re-lapse,

To fall effortless from the soul it came  
As if to fix its own, but simply smote  
And startled to vague beauty more remote?

## LXV

So do we gain enough — yet not too much —  
Acquaintance with that outer element  
Wherein there 's operation (call it such!)  
Quite of another kind than we the pent  
On earth are proper to receive. Our hutch  
Lights up at the least chink: let roof be  
rent —

How inmates huddle, blinded at first spasm,  
Cognizant of the sun's self through the chasm!

## LXVI

Therefore, who knows if this our René's quick  
Subsidence from as sudden noise and glare  
Into oblivion was impolitic?

No doubt his soul became at once aware  
That, after prophecy, the rhyming-trick  
Is poor employment: human praises scare  
Rather than soothe ears all a-tingle yet  
With tones few hear and live, but none forget.

## LXVII

There's our first famous poet! Step thou  
forth

Second consummate songster! See, the tongue  
Of fire that typifies thee, owns thy worth  
In yellow, purple mixed its green among,  
No pure and simple resin from the North,  
But composite with virtues that belong  
To Southern culture! Love not more than  
hate

Helped to shape . . . But I anticipate.

## LXVIII

Prepare to witness a combustion rich  
And riotously splendid, far beyond  
Poor René's lambent little streamer which  
Only played candle to a Court grown fond  
By baby-birth: this soared to such a pitch,  
Alternately such colors doffed and donned,  
That when I say it dazzled Paris — please  
Know that it brought Voltaire upon his knees!

## LXIX

Who did it, was a dapper gentleman,  
Paul Desforges Maillard, Croisickese by  
birth,

Whose birth that century ended which began  
By similar bestowment on our earth  
Of the aforesaid René. Cease to scan  
The ways of Providence! See Croisic's  
dearth —

Not Paris in its plenitude — suffice  
To furnish France with her best poet twice!

## LXX

Till he was thirty years of age, the vein  
Poetic yielded rhyme by drops and spirits:  
In verses of society had lain  
His talent chiefly; but the Muse asserts  
Privilege most by treating with disdain  
Epics the bard mouths out, or odes he blurts

Spasmodically forth. Have people time  
And patience nowadays for thought in rhyme?

## LXXI

So, his achievements were the quatrain's inch  
Of homage, or at most the sonnet's ell  
Of admiration: welded lines with clinch  
Of ending word and word, to every belle  
In Croisic's bounds; these, brisk as any finch,  
He twittered till his fame had reached as  
well

Guérande as Batz; but there fame stopped, for  
— curse

On fortune — outside lay the universe!

## LXXII

That 's Paris. Well, — why not break bounds,  
and send

Song onward till it echo at the gates  
Of Paris whither all ambitions tend,  
And end too, seeing that success there sates  
The soul which hungers most for fame? Why  
spend

A minute in deciding, while, by Fate's  
Decree, there happens to be just the prize  
Proposed there, suiting souls that poetize?

## LXXIII

A prize indeed, the Academy's own self  
Proposes to what bard shall best indite  
A piece describing how, through shoal and shelf,  
The Art of Navigation, steered aright,  
Has, in our last king's reign, — the lucky elf, —  
Reached, one may say, Perfection's haven  
quite,

And there cast anchor. At a glance one sees  
The subject's crowd of capabilities!

## LXXIV

Neptune and Amphitrité! Thetis, who  
Is either Tethys or as good — both tag!  
Triton can shove along a vessel too:  
It's Virgil! Then the winds that blow or  
lag, —  
De Maille, Vendôme, Vermandois! Toulouse  
blew

Longest, we reckon: he must puff the flag  
To fullest outflare; while our lacking nymph  
Be Anne of Austria, Regent o'er the lymph!

## LXXV

Promised, performed! Since *irritabilis gens*  
Holds of the feverish impotence that strives  
To stay an itch by prompt resource to pen's  
Scratching itself on paper; placid lives,  
Leisurely works mark the *divinior mens*:  
Bees brood above the honey in their hives;  
Gnats are the busy bustlers. Splash and  
scrawl, —  
Completed lay thy piece, swift penman Paul!

## LXXVI

To Paris with the product! This dispatched,  
One had to wait the Forty's slow and sure  
Verdict, as best one might. Our penman  
scratched

Away perforce the itch that knows no cure  
But daily paper-friction: more than matched



His first feat by a second — tribute pure  
And heartfelt to the Forty when their voice  
Should peal with one accord "Be Paul our  
choice!"

## LXXXVII

Scratch, scratch went much laudation of that  
sane

And sound Tribunal, delegates august  
Of Phœbus and the Muses' sacred train —  
Whom every poetaster tries to thrust  
From where, high-throned, they dominate the  
Seine:

Fruitless endeavor, — fail it shall and must!  
Whereof in witness have not one and all  
The Forty voices pealed "Our choice be Paul"?

## LXXXVIII

Thus Paul discounted his applause. Alack  
For human expectation! Scarcely ink  
Was dry when, lo, the perfect piece came  
back

Rejected, shamed! Some other poet's clink  
"Thetis and Tethys" had seduced the pack  
Of pedants to declare perfection's pink  
A singularly poor production. "Whew!  
The Forty are stark fools, I always knew!"

## LXXXIX

First fury over (for Paul's race — to wit,  
Brain-vibrios — wriggle clear of protoplasm  
Into minute life that's one fury-fit),  
"These fools shall find a bard's enthusiasm  
Comports with what should counterbalance it —  
Some knowledge of the world! No doubt,  
orgasm

Effects the birth of verse which, born, demands  
Prosaic ministration, swaddling-bands!

## LXXX

"Verse must be cared for at this early stage,  
Handled, nay dandled even. I should play  
Their game indeed if, till it grew of age,  
I meekly let these dotards frown away  
My bantling from the rightful heritage  
Of smiles and kisses! Let the public say  
If it be worthy praises or rebukes,  
My poem, from these Forty old perukes!"

## LXXXI

So, by a friend, who boasts himself in grace  
With no less than the Chevalier La Roque, —  
Eminent in those days for pride of place,  
Seeing he had it in his power to block  
The way or smooth the road to all the race  
Of literators trudging up to knock  
At Fame's exalted temple-door — for why?  
He edited the Paris "Mercury:" —

## LXXXII

By this friend's help the Chevalier receives  
Paul's poem, prefaced by the due appeal  
To Cæsar from the Jews. As duly heaves  
A sigh the Chevalier, about to deal  
With case so customary — turns the leaves,  
Finds nothing there to borrow, beg, or steal —  
Then brightens up the critic's brow deep-lined.  
"The thing may be so cleverly declined!"

## LXXXIII

Down to desk, out with paper, up with quill,  
Dip and indite! "Sir, gratitude immense  
For this true draught from the Pierian rill!  
Our Academic clodpoles must be dense  
Indeed to stand unirrigated still.  
No less, we critics dare not give offence  
To grantees like the Forty: while we mock,  
We grin and bear. So, here's your piece!" La  
Roque."

## LXXXIV

"There now!" cries Paul: "the fellow can't  
avoid

Confessing that my piece deserves the palm;  
And yet he dares not grant me space enjoyed  
By every scribbler he permits embalm  
His crampo in the Journal's corner! Cloyed  
With stuff like theirs, no wonder if a qualm  
Be caused by verse like mine: though that's  
no cause  
For his defrauding me of just applause.

## LXXXV

"Aha, he fears the Forty, this poltroon?  
First let him fear me! Change smooth speech  
to rough!  
I'll speak my mind out, show the fellow soon  
Who is the foe to dread: insist enough  
On my own merits till, as clear as noon,  
He sees I am no man to take rebuff  
As patiently as scribblers may and must!  
Quick to the onslaught, out sword, cut and  
thrust!"

## LXXXVI

And thereupon a fierce epistle flings  
Its challenge in the critic's face. Alack!  
Our bard mistakes his man! The gauntlet rings  
On brazen visor proof against attack.  
Prompt from his editorial throne up springs  
The insulted magnate, and his mace falls,  
thwack,  
On Paul's devoted brainpan, — quite away  
From common courtesies of fencing-play!

## LXXXVII

"Sir, will you have the truth? This piece of  
yours  
Is simply execrable past belief.  
I shrank from saying so; but, since naught  
cures  
Conceit but truth, truth's at your service!  
Brief,  
Just so long as 'The Mercury' endures,  
So long are you excluded by its Chief  
From corner, nay, from cranny! Play the cock  
O' the roost, henceforth, at Croisic!" wrote  
La Roque.

## LXXXVIII

Paul yellowed, whitened, as his wrath from red  
Waxed incandescent. Now, this man of  
rhyne  
Was merely foolish, faulty in the head  
Not heart of him: conceit's a venial crime.  
"Oh by no means malicious!" cousins said:  
Fussily feeble, — harmless all the time,

Piddling at so-called satire — well-advised,  
He held in most awe whom he satirized.

## LXXXIX

Accordingly his kith and kin — removed  
From emulation of the poet's gift  
By power and will — these rather liked, nay,  
loved

The man who gave his family a lift  
Out of the Croisic level; disapproved  
Satire so trenchant." Thus our poet sniffed  
Home-incense, though too churlish to unlock  
"The Mercury's" box of ointment was La  
Roque.

## XC

But when Paul's visage grew from red to  
white,  
And from his lips a sort of mumbling fell  
Of who was to be kicked, — "And serve him  
right!"

A gay voice interposed, "Did kicking well  
Answer the purpose! Only — if I might  
Suggest as much — a far more potent spell  
Lies in another kind of treatment. Oh,  
Women are ready at resource, you know!

## XCI

"Talent should minister to genius! good:  
The proper and superior smile returns.  
Hear me with patience! Have you understood  
The only method whereby genius earns  
Fit guerdon nowadays? In knightly mood  
You entered lists with visor up; one learns  
Too late that, had you mounted Roland's crest,  
Room! they had roared — La Roque with all  
the rest!

## XCII

"Why did you first of all transmit your piece  
To those same priggish Forty unprepared  
Whether to rank you with the swans or geese  
By friendly intervention? If they dared  
Count you a cackler, — wonders never cease!  
I think it still more wondrous that you bared  
Your brow (my earlier image) as if praise  
Were gained by simple fighting nowadays!

## XCIII

"Your next step showed a touch of the true  
means  
Whereby desert is crowned: not force but  
wile  
Came to the rescue. 'Get behind the scenes!'  
Your friend advised: he writes, sets forth  
your style  
And title, to such purpose intervenes  
That you get velvet-compliment three-pile;  
And, though 'The Mercury' said 'nay,' nor  
stock  
Nor stone did his refusal prove La Roque.

## XCIV

"Why must you needs revert to the high hand,  
Imperative procedure — what you call  
'Taking on merit your exclusive stand?'  
Stand, with a vengeance! Soon you went to  
wall,

You and your merit! Only fools command  
When folks are free to disobey them, Paul!  
You've learnt your lesson, found out what's  
o'clock,  
By this uncivil answer of La Roque.

## XCV

"Now let me counsel! Lay this piece on shelf  
— Masterpiece though it be! From out your  
desk  
Hand me some lighter sample, verse the elf  
Cupid inspired you with, no god grotesque  
Presiding o'er the Navy! I myself  
Hand-write what's legible yet picturesque;  
I'll copy fair and femininely frock  
Your poem masculine that courts La Roque!

## XCVI

"Deidamia he — Achilles thou!  
Ha, ha, these ancient stories come so apt!  
My sex, my youth, my rank I next avow  
In a neat prayer for kind perusal. Sapped  
I see the walls which stand so stoutly now!  
I see the toils about the game entrapped  
By honest cunning! Chains of lady's-smock,  
Not thorn and thistle, tether fast La Roque!"

## XCVII

Now, who might be the speaker sweet and arch  
That laughed above Paul's shoulder as it  
heaved  
With the indignant heart? — bade steal a  
march  
And not continue charging? Who conceived  
This plan which set our Paul, like pea you  
parch  
On fire-shovel, skipping, of a load relieved,  
From arm-chair moodiness to escriptorie  
Sacred to Phœbus and the tuneful choir?

## XCVIII

Who but Paul's sister! named of course like  
him  
"Desforges;" but, mark you, in those days  
a queer  
Custom obtained, — who knows whence grew  
the whim? —  
That people could not read their title clear  
To reverence till their own true names, made  
dim  
By daily mouthing, pleased to disappear,  
Replaced by brand-new bright ones: Rouet,  
For instance, grew Voltaire; Desforges — Mal-  
craix.

## XCIX

"Demoiselle Malerais de la Vigne" — because  
The family possessed at Brederac  
A vineyard, — few grapes, many hips-and-  
haws, —  
Still a nice Breton name. As breast and  
back  
Of this vivacious beauty gleamed through  
gauze,  
So did her sprightly nature nowise lack  
Lustre when draped, the fashionable way,  
In "Malerais de la Vigne," — more short,  
"Malerais."

## C

Out from Paul's *escritoire* behold escape  
 The hoarded treasure! verse falls thick and fast,  
 Sonnets and songs of every size and shape.  
 The lady ponders on her prize; at last  
 Selects one which — O angel and yet ape! —  
 Her malice thinks is probably surpassed  
 In badness by no fellow of the flock,  
 Copies it fair, and "Now for my La Roque!"

## CI

So, to him goes, with the neat manuscript,  
 The soft petitionary letter. "Grant  
 A fledgeling novice that with wing unclipt  
 She soar her little circuit, habitant  
 Of an old manor; buried in which crypt,  
 How can the youthful *châtelaine* but pant  
 For disemprisonment by one *ad hoc*  
 Appointed 'Mercury's' Editor, La Roque?"

## CII

'T was an epistle that might move the Turk!  
 More certainly it moved our middle-aged  
 Pen-driver drudging at his weary work,  
 Raked the old ashes up and disengaged  
 The sparks of gallantry which always lurk  
 Somehow in literary breasts, assuaged  
 In no degree by compliments on style;  
 Are Forty wagging beards worth one girl's  
 smile?

## CIII

In trips the lady's poem, takes its place  
 Of honor in the gratified Gazette,  
 With due acknowledgment of power and  
 grace;  
 Prognostication, too, that higher yet  
 The Breton Muse will soar: fresh youth, high  
 race.  
 Beauty and wealth have amicably met  
 That Demoiselle Malerais may fill the chair  
 Left vacant by the loss of Deshoulières.

## CIV

"There!" cried the lively lady. "Who was  
 right —  
 You in the dumps, or I the merry maid  
 Who know a trick or two can baffle spite  
 Tenfold the force of this old fool's? Afraid  
 Of Editor La Roque? But come! next flight  
 Shall outsoar — Deshoulières alone? My  
 blade,  
 Sappho herself shall you confess outstript!  
 Quick, Paul, another dose of manuscript!"

## CV

And so, once well a-foot, advanced the game:  
 More and more verses, corresponding gush  
 On gush of praise, till everywhere acclaim  
 Rose to the pitch of uproar. "Sappho?  
 Tush!  
 Sure 'Malerais on her Parrot' puts to shame  
 Deshoulières' pastorals, clay not worth a rush  
 Beside this find of treasure, gold in crock.  
 Unearthed in Brittany, — nay, ask La Roque!"

## CVI

Such was the Paris tribute. "Yes," you sneer,  
 "Ninnies stock Noodledom, but folk more  
 sage  
 Resist contagious folly, never fear!"  
 Do they? Permit me to detach one page  
 From the huge Album which from far and  
 near  
 Poetic praises blackened in a rage  
 Of rapture! and that page shall be — who  
 stares  
 Confounded now, I ask you? — just Voltaire's!

## CVII

Ay, sharpest shrewdest steel that ever stabbed  
 To death Imposture through the armor-  
 joints!  
 How did it happen that gross Humbug grabbed  
 Thy weapons, gouged thine eyes out? Fate  
 appoints  
 That pride shall have a fall, or I had blabbed  
 Hardly that Humbug, whom thy soul aoints,  
 Could thus cross-buttock thee caught unawares,  
 And dismalest of tumbles proved — Voltaire's!

## CVIII

See his epistle extant yet, wherewith  
 "Henri" in verse and "Charles" in prose he  
 sent  
 To do her suit and service! Here's the pith  
 Of half a dozen stanzas — stones which went  
 To build that simulated monolith —  
 Sham love in due degree with homage blent  
 As sham — which in the vast of volumes scares  
 The traveller still: "That stucco-heap — Voi-  
 taire's?"

## CIX

"O thou, whose clarion-voice has overflowed  
 The wilds to startle Paris that's one ear!  
 Thou who such strange capacity hast shown  
 For joining all that's grand with all that's  
 dear,  
 Knowledge with power to please — Deshou-  
 lières grown  
 Learned as Dacier in thy person! mere  
 Weak fruit of idle hours, these crabs of mine  
 I dare lay at thy feet, O Muse divine!

## CX

"Charles was my task-work only; Henri trod  
 My hero erst, and now, my heroine — she  
 Shall be thyself! True — is it true, great God!  
 Certainly love henceforward must not be!  
 Yet all the crowd of Fine Arts fail — how  
 odd!  
 Tried turn by turn, to fill a void in me!  
 There's no replacing love with these, alas!  
 Yet all I can I do to prove no ass.

## CXI

"I labor to amuse my freedom; but  
 Should any sweet young creature slavery  
 preach,  
 And — borrowing thy vivacious charm, the  
 slut! —  
 Make me, in thy engaging words, a speech,  
 Soon should I see myself in prison shut



With all imaginable pleasure." Reach  
The washhand-basin for admirers ! 'There's  
A stomach-moving tribute — and Voltaire's !

## CXII

Suppose it a fantastic billet-doux,  
Adulatory flourish, not worth frown !  
What say you to the Fathers of Trévoux ?  
These in their Dictionary have her down  
Under the heading " Author : " " Malerais, too,  
Is ' Author ' of much verse that claims re-  
nown."  
While Jean-Baptiste Rousseau . . . but why  
proceed ?  
Enough of this — something too much, indeed !

## CXIII

At last La Roque, unwilling to be left  
Behindhand in the rivalry, broke bounds  
Of figurative passion hilt and heft,  
Plunged his huge downright love through  
what surrounds  
The literary female bosom ; reft  
Away its veil of coy reserve with " Zounds !  
I love thee, Breton Beauty ! All's no use !  
Body and soul I love, — the big word's loose !"

## CXIV

He's greatest now and to de-struc-ti-on  
Nearest. Attend the solemn word I quote,  
O Paul ! There's no pause at per-fec-ti-on.  
Thus knolls thy knell the Doctor's bronzèd  
throat !  
Greatness a period hath, no sta-ti-on !  
Better and truer verse none ever wrote  
(Despite the antique outstretched a-i-on)  
Than thou, revered and magisterial Donne !

## CXV

Flat on his face, La Roque, and — pressed to  
heart  
His dexter hand — Voltaire with bended  
knee !  
Paul sat and sucked-in triumph ; just apart  
Leaned over him his sister. " Well ? "   
smirks he,  
And " Well ? " she answers, smiling — woman's  
art  
To let a man's own mouth, not hers, decree  
What shall be next move which decides the  
game ;  
Success ? She said so. Failure ? His the  
blame.

## CXVI

" Well ! " this time forth affirmatively comes  
With smack of lip, and long-drawn sigh  
through teeth  
Close clenched o'er satisfaction, as the gums  
Were tickled by a sweetmeat teased beneath  
Palate by lubricating tongue : " Well ! crumbs  
Of comfort these, undoubtedly ! no death  
Likely from famine at Fame's feast ! 't is clear  
I may put claim in for my pittance, Dear !

## CXVII

" La Roque, Voltaire, my lovers ? Then dis-  
guise

Has served its turn, grows idle ; let it drop !  
I shall to Paris, flaunt there in men's eyes  
My proper manly garb and mount a-top  
The pedestal that waits me, take the prize  
Awarded Hercules. He threw a sop  
To Cerberus who let him pass, you know,  
Then, following, licked his heels : exactly so !

## CXVIII

" I like the prospect — their astonishment,  
Confusion : wounded vanity, no doubt,  
Mixed motives ; how I see the brows quick  
bent !  
' What, sir, yourself, none other, brought  
about  
This change of estimation ? Phœbus sent  
His shafts as from Diana ? ' Critic pout  
Turns courtier smile : ' Lo, him we took for  
her !  
Pleasant mistake ! You bear no malice, sir ? ' "

## CXIX

" Eh, my Diana ? " But Diana kept  
Smilingly silent with fixed needle-sharp  
Much-meaning eyes that seemed to intercept  
Paul's very thoughts ere they had time to  
warp  
From earnest into sport the words they leapt  
To life with — changed as when maltreated  
harp  
Renders in tinkle what some player-prig  
Means for a grave tune though it proves a jig.

## CXX

" What, Paul, and are my pains thus thrown  
away,  
My lessons end in loss ? " at length fall slow  
The pitying syllables, her lips allay  
The satire of by keeping in full flow,  
Above their coral reef, bright smiles at play :  
" Can it be, Paul thus fails to rightly know  
And altogether estimate applause  
As just so many asinine hee-haws ?

## CXXI

" I thought to show you " . . . " Show me,"  
Paul inbroke,  
" My poetry is rubbish, and the world  
That rings with my renown a sorry joke !  
What fairer test of worth than that, form  
furled,  
I entered the arena ? Yet you croak  
Just as if Phœbé and not Phœbus hurled  
The dart and struck the Python ! What, he  
crawls  
Humbly in dust before your feet, not Paul's ?

## CXXII

" Nay, 't is no laughing matter though absurd  
If there's an end of honesty on earth !  
La Roque sends letters, lying every word !  
Voltaire makes verse, and of himself makes  
mirth  
To the remotest age ! Rousseau's the third  
Who, driven to despair amid such dearth  
Of people that want praising, finds no one  
More fit to praise than Paul the simpleton !

## CXXIII

"Somebody says — if a man writes at all  
It is to show the writer's kith and kin  
He was unjustly thought a natural;  
And truly, sister, I have yet to win  
Your favorable word, it seems, for Paul  
Whose poetry you count not worth a pin  
Though well enough esteemed by these Vol-  
taires,  
Rousseaus and such-like: let them quack, who  
cares?"

## CXXIV

"— To Paris with you, Paul! Not one word's  
waste  
Further: my scrupulosity was vain!  
Go triumph! Be my foolish fears effaced  
From memory's record! Go, to come again  
With glory crowned, — by sister re-embraced,  
Cured of that strange delusion of her brain  
Which led her to suspect that Paris gloats  
On male limbs mostly when in petticoats!"

## CXXV

So laughed her last word, with the little touch  
Of malice proper to the outraged pride  
Of any artist in a work too much  
Shorn of its merits. "By all means, be tried  
The opposite procedure! Cast your crutch  
Away, no longer crippled, nor divide  
The credit of your march to the World's Fair  
With sister Cherry-cheeks who helped you  
there!"

## CXXVI

Crippled, forsooth! What courser sprightlier  
pranced  
Paris-ward than did Paul? Nay, dreams  
lent wings:  
He flew, or seemed to fly, by dreams en-  
tranced.  
Dreams? wide-awake realities: no things  
Dreamed merely were the missives that ad-  
vanced  
The claim of Malerais to consort with kings  
Crowned by Apollo — not to say with queens  
Cinctured by Venus for Idalian scenes.

## CXXVII

Soon he arrives, forthwith is found before  
The outer gate of glory. Bold tic-toc  
Announces there's a giant at the door.  
"Ay, sir, here dwells the Chevalier La  
Roque."  
"Lackey! Malerais — mind, no word less nor  
more! —  
Desires his presence. I've unearthed the  
brock:  
Now, to transfix him!" There stands Paul  
erect,  
Inched out his uttermost, for more effect.

## CXXVIII

A bustling entrance: "Idol of my flame!  
Can it be that my heart attains at last  
Its longing? that you stand, the very same  
As in my visions? . . . Ha! hey, how?"  
aghast

Stops short the rapture. "Oh, my boy's to  
blame!"

You merely are the messenger! Too fast  
My fancy rushed to a conclusion. Pooh!  
Well, sir, the lady's substitute is — who?"

## CXXIX

Then Paul's smirk grows inordinate. "Shake  
hands!  
Friendship not love awaits you, master mine,  
Though nor Malerais nor any mistress stands  
To meet your ardor! So, you don't divine  
Who wrote the verses wherewith ring the  
land's  
Whole length and breadth? Just he where-  
of no line  
Had ever leave to blot your Journal — eh?  
Paul Desforges Maillard — otherwise Malerais!"

## CXXX

And there the two stood, stare confronting  
smirk,  
A while uncertain which should yield the  
pas.  
In vain the Chevalier beat brain for quirk  
To help in this conjuncture; at length,  
"Bah!  
Boh! Since I've made myself a fool, why  
shirk  
The punishment of folly? Ha, ha, ha,  
Let me return your handshake!" Comie sock  
For tragic buskin prompt thus changed La  
Roque.

## CXXXI

"I'm nobody — a wren-like journalist;  
You've flown at higher game and winged  
your bird,  
The golden eagle! That's the grand acquist!  
Voltaire's sly Muse, the tiger-cat, has purred  
Prettily round your feet; but if she missed  
Priority of stroking, soon were stirred  
The dormant spitfire. To Voltaire! away,  
Paul Desforges Maillard, otherwise Malerais!"

## CXXXII

Whereupon, arm in arm, and head in air,  
The two begin their journey. Need I say,  
La Roque had felt the talon of Voltaire,  
Had a long-standing little debt to pay,  
And pounced, you may depend, on such a rare  
Occasion for its due discharge? So, gay  
And grenadier-like, marching to assault,  
They reach the enemy's abode, there halt.

## CXXXIII

"I'll be announcer!" quoth La Roque: "I  
know,  
Better than you, perhaps, my Breton bard,  
How to procure an audience! He's not slow  
To smell a rat, this scamp Voltaire! Dis-  
card  
The petticoats too soon, — you'll never show  
Your *haut-de-chausses* and all they've made  
or marred  
In your true person. Here's his servant.  
Pray,  
Will the great man see Demoiselle Malerais?"

## CXXXIV

Now, the great man was also, no whit less,  
The man of self-respect, — more great man  
he !  
And bowed to social usage, dressed the dress,  
And decorated to the fit degree  
His person ; 't was enough to bear the stress  
Of battle in the field, without, when free  
From outside foes, inviting friends' attack  
By — sword in hand ? No, — ill-made coat on  
back.

## CXXXV

And, since the announcement of his visitor  
Surprised him at his toilet, — never glass  
Had such solicitation ! " Black, now — or  
Brown be the killing wig to wear ? Alas,  
Where 's the rouge gone, this cheek were better  
for  
A tender touch of ? Melted to a mass,  
All my pomatum ! There 's at all events  
A devil — for he 's got among my scents ! "

## CXXXVI

So, " barbered ten times o'er," as Antony  
Paced to his Cleopatra, did at last  
Voltaire proceed to the fair presence : high  
In color, proud in port, as if a blast  
Of trumpet bade the world " Take note ! draws  
nigh  
To Beauty, Power ! Behold the Iconoclast,  
The Poet, the Philosopher, the Rod  
Of iron for imposture ! Ah my God ! "

## CXXXVII

For there stands smirking Paul, and — what  
lights fierce  
The situation as with sulphur flash —  
There grinning stands La Roque ! No carte-  
and-tierce  
Observes the grinning fencer, but, full dash  
From breast to shoulder-blade, the thrusts  
transpierce  
That armor against which so idly clash  
The swords of priests and pedants ! Victors  
there,  
Two smirk and grin who have befooled — Vol-  
taire !

## CXXXVIII

A moment's horror ; then quick turn-about  
On high-heeled shoe, — flurry of ruffles,  
flounce  
Of wig-ties and of coat-tails, — and so out  
Of door banged wrathfully behind, goes —  
bounce —  
Voltaire in tragic exit ! vows, no doubt,  
Vengeance upon the couple. Did he trounce  
Either, in point of fact ? His anger's flash  
Subsided if a culprit craved his cash.

## CXXXIX

As for La Roque, he having laughed his laugh  
To heart's content, — the joke defunct at  
once,  
Dead in the birth, you see, — its epitaph  
Was sober earnest. " Well, sir, for the  
nonee,

You 've gained the laurel ; never hope to graff  
A second sprig of triumph there ! Enseece  
Yourself again at Croisic : let it be  
Enough you mastered both Voltaire and — me !

## CXL

" Don't linger here in Paris to parade  
Your victory, and have the very boys  
Point at you ! 'There 's the little mouse  
which made  
Believe those two big lions that its noise,  
Nibbling away behind the hedge, conveyed  
Intelligence that — portent which destroys  
All courage in the lion's heart, with horn  
That 's fable — there lay couched the unicorn ! "

## CXLI

" Beware us, now we 've found who fooled us !  
Quick  
To cover ! 'In proportion to men's fright,  
Expect their fright's revenge ! ' quoth politic  
Old Macchiavelli. As for me, — all 's right :  
I 'm but a journalist. But no pin's prick  
The tooth leaves when Voltaire is roused to  
bite !  
So, keep your counsel, I advise ! Adieu !  
Good journey ! Ha, ha, ha, Malcraais was —  
you ! "

## CXLII

" — Yes, I 'm Malcraais, and somebody beside,  
You snickering monkey ! " thus winds up  
the tale  
Our hero, safe at home, to that black-eyed  
Cherry-cheeked sister, as she soothes the  
pale  
Mortified poet. " Let their worst be tried,  
I 'm their match henceforth — very man and  
male !  
Don't talk to me of knocking-under ! man  
And male must end what petticoats began !

## CXLIII

" How woman-like it is to apprehend  
The world will eat its words ! why, words  
transfixed  
To stone, they stare at you in print, — at end,  
Each writer's style and title ! Choose be-  
twixt  
Fool and knave for his name, who should intend  
To perpetrate a baseness so unmixed  
With prospect of advantage ! What is writ  
Is writ : they 've praised me, there 's an end of  
it !

## CXLIV

" No, Dear, allow me ! I shall print these  
same  
Pieces, with no omitted line, as Paul's.  
Malcraais no longer, let me see folk blame  
What they — praised simply ? — placed on  
pedestals,  
Each piece a statue in the House of Fame !  
Fast will they stand there, though their  
presence galls  
The envious crew : such show their teeth,  
perhaps,  
And snarl, but never bite ! I know the chaps ! "



## CXLV

O Paul, oh, piteously deluded! Pace  
Thy sad sterility of Croisic flats,  
Watch, from their southern edge, the foamy  
race

Of high-tide as it heaves the drowning mats  
Of yellow-berried web-growth from their place,  
The rock-ridge, when, rolling as far as Batz,  
One broadside crashes on it, and the crags,  
That needle under, stream with weedy rags!

## CXLVI

Or, if thou wilt, at inland Bergerac,  
Rude heritage but recognized domain,  
Do as two here are doing: make hearth crack  
With logs until thy chimney roar again  
Jolly with fire-glow! Let its angle lack  
No grace of Cherry-cheeks thy sister, fair  
To do a sister's office and laugh smooth  
Thy corrugated brow — that scowls forsooth!

## CXLVII

Wherefore? Who does not know how these  
La Roques,  
Voltaire, can say and unsay, praise and  
blame,  
Prove black white, white black, play at para-  
dox  
And, when they seem to lose it, win the  
game?  
Care not thou what this badger, and that fox,  
His fellow in rascality, call "fame!"  
Fiddlepin's end! Thou hadst it, — quack,  
quack, quack!  
Have quietude from geese at Bergerac!

## CXLVIII

Quietude! For, be very sure of this!  
A twelvemonth hence, and men shall know  
or care  
As much for what to-day they clap or hiss  
As for the fashion of the wigs they wear,  
Then wonder at. There's fame which, bale or  
bliss, —  
Got by no gracious word of great Voltaire  
Or not-so-great La Roque, — is taken back  
By neither, any more than Bergerac!

## CXLIX

Too true! or rather, true as ought to be!  
No more of Paul the man, Malerais the maid,  
Thenceforth forever! One or two, I see,  
Stuck by their poet: who the longest stayed  
Was Jean-Baptiste Rousseau, and even he  
Seemingly saddened as perforce he paid  
A rhyming tribute: "After death, survive —  
He hoped he should: and died while yet  
alive!"

## CL

No, he hoped nothing of the kind, or held  
His peace and died in silent good old age.  
Him it was, curiosity impelled  
To seek if there were extant still some page  
Of his great predecessor, rat who belled  
The cat once, and would never deign engage  
In after-combat with mere mice, — saved from  
More sonneteering, — René Gentilhomme.

## CLI

Paul's story furnished forth that famous play  
Of Piron's "Métromanie:" there you'll  
find  
He's Francalén, while Demoiselle Malcraïs  
Is Demoiselle No-end-of-names-behind!  
As for Voltaire, he's Damis. Good and gay  
The plot and dialogue, and all's designed  
To spite Voltaire: at "Something" such the  
laugh  
Of simply "Nothing!" (see his epitaph).

## CLII

But truth, truth, that's the gold! and all the  
good  
I find in fancy is, it serves to set  
Gold's inmost glint free, gold which comes up  
rude  
And rayless from the mine. All fume and  
fret  
Of artistry beyond this point pursued  
Brings out another sort of burnish: yet  
Always the ingot has its very own  
Value, a sparkle struck from truth alone.

## CLIII

Now, take this sparkle and the other spirt  
Of fitful flame, — twin births of our gray  
brand  
That's sinking fast to ashes! I assert,  
As sparkles want but fuel to expand  
Into a conflagration no mere squirt  
Will quench too quickly, so might Croisic  
strand,  
Had Fortune pleased posterity to chowse,  
Boast of her brace or beacons luminous.

## CLIV

Did earlier Agamemnons lack their bard?  
But later bards lacked Agamemnon too!  
How often frustrate they of fame's award  
Just because Fortune, as she listed, blew  
Some slight bark's sails to bellying, mauled  
and marred  
And forced to put about the First-rate!  
True,  
Such tacks but for a time: still — small-craft  
ride  
At anchor, rot while Beddoes breasts the tide!

## CLV

Dear, shall I tell you? There's a simple test  
Would serve, when people take on them to  
weigh  
The worth of poets. "Who was better, best,  
This, that, the other bard?" (Bards none  
gainsay  
As good, observe! no matter for the rest.)  
"What quality preponderating may  
Turn the scale as it trembles?" End the  
strife  
By asking "Which one led a happy life?"

## CLVI

If one did, over his antagonist  
That yelled or shrieked or sobbed or wept or  
wailed  
Or simply had the dumps, — dispute who list, —

I count him victor. Where his fellow failed,  
 Mastered by his own means of might, — acquist  
 Of necessary sorrows, — he prevailed,  
 A strong since joyful man who stood distinct  
 Above slave-sorrows to his chariot linked.

## CLVII

Was not his lot to feel more? What meant  
 "feel"  
 Unless to suffer! Not, to see more?  
 Sight —  
 What helped it but to watch the drunken reel  
 Of vice and folly round him, left and right,  
 One dance of rogues and idiots! Not, to deal  
 More with things lovely? What provoked  
 the spite  
 Of filth incarnate, like the poet's need  
 Of other nutriment than strife and greed!

## CLVIII

Who knows most, doubts most; entertaining  
 hope,  
 Means recognizing fear; the keener sense  
 Of all comprised within our actual scope  
 Recoils from aught beyond earth's dim and  
 dense.  
 Who, grown familiar with the sky, will grope  
 Henceforward among groundlings? That's  
 offence  
 Just as indubitably: stars abound  
 O'erhead, but then — what flowers make glad  
 the ground!

## CLIX

So, force is sorrow, and each sorrow, force:  
 What then? since Swiftmess gives the char-  
 ioteer  
 The palm, his hope be in the vivid horse  
 Whose neck God clothed with thunder, not  
 the steer  
 Sluggish and safe! Yoke Hatred, Crime, Re-  
 morse,  
 Despair: but ever 'mid the whirling fear,  
 Let, through the tumult, break the poet's face  
 Radiant, assured his wild slaves win the race!

## CLX

Therefore I say . . . no, shall not say, but  
 think,  
 And save my breath for better purpose.  
 White  
 From gray our log has burned to: just one  
 blink  
 That quivers, loth to leave it, as a sprite  
 The outworn body. Ere your eyelids' wink  
 Punish who sealed so deep into the night  
 Your mouth up, for two poets dead so long, —  
 Here pleads a live pretender: right your  
 wrong!

What a pretty tale you told me  
 Once upon a time  
 — Said you found it somewhere (scold me!)  
 Was it prose or was it rhyme,  
 Greek or Latin? Greek, you said,  
 While your shoulder propped my head.

Anyhow there's no forgetting  
 This much if no more,  
 That a poet (pray, no petting!)  
 Yes, a bard, sir, famed of yore,  
 Went where suchlike used to go,  
 Singing for a prize, you know.

Well, he had to sing, nor merely  
 Sing but play the lyre;  
 Playing was important clearly  
 Quite as singing: I desire,  
 Sir, you keep the fact in mind  
 For a purpose that's behind.

There stood he, while deep attention  
 Held the judges round,  
 — Judges able, I should mention,  
 To detect the slightest sound  
 Sung or played amiss: such ears  
 Had old judges, it appears!

None the less he sang out boldly,  
 Played in time and tune,  
 Till the judges, weighing coldly  
 Each note's worth, seemed, late or soon,  
 Sure to smile "In vain one tries  
 Picking faults out: take the prize!"

When, a mischief! Were they seven  
 Strings the lyre possessed?  
 Oh, and afterwards eleven,  
 Thank you! Well, sir, — who had guessed  
 Such ill luck in store? — it happened  
 One of those same seven strings snapped.

All was lost, then! No! a cricket  
 (What "cicada"? Pooh!)  
 — Some mad thing that left its thicket  
 For mere love of music — flew  
 With its little heart on fire,  
 Lighted on the crippled lyre.

So that when (Ah, joy!) our singer  
 For his truant string  
 Feels with disconcerted finger,  
 What does cricket else but fling  
 Fiery heart forth, sound the note  
 Wanted by the throbbing throat?

Ay and, ever to the ending,  
 Cricket chirps at need,  
 Executes the hand's intending,  
 Promptly, perfectly, — indeed  
 Saves the singer from defeat  
 With her chirrup low and sweet.

Till, at ending, all the judges  
 Cry with one assent  
 "Take the prize — a prize who grudges  
 Such a voice and instrument?  
 Why, we took your lyre for harp,  
 So it thrilled us forth F sharp!"

Did the conqueror spurn the creature,  
 Once its service done?  
 That's no such uncommon feature  
 In the case when Music's son

Finds his Lotta's power too spent  
For aiding soul-development.

No! This other, on returning  
Homeward, prize in hand,  
Satisfied his bosom's yearning :  
(Sir, I hope you understand !)  
— Said "Some record there must be  
Of this cricket's help to me!"

So, he made himself a statue :  
Marble stood, life-size ;  
On the lyre, he pointed at you,  
Perched his partner in the prize ;  
Never more apart you found  
Her, he throned, from him, she crowned.

That's the tale : its application ?  
Somebody I know  
Hopes one day for reputation  
Through his poetry that's — Oh,  
All so learned and so wise  
And deserving of a prize !

If he gains one, will some ticket,  
When his statue's built,  
Tell the gazer " 'T was a cricket  
Helped my crippled lyre, whose lilt  
Sweet and low, when strength usurped  
Softness' place ?' the scale, she chirped ?

" For as victory was nighest,  
While I sang and played, —  
With my lyre at lowest, highest,  
Right alike, — one string that made  
' Love ' sound soft was snapt in twain,  
Never to be heard again, —

" Had not a kind cricket fluttered,  
Perched upon the place  
Vacant left, and duly uttered  
' Love, Love, Love, ' where'er the bass  
Asked the treble to atone  
For its somewhat sombre drone."

But you don't know music ! Wherefore  
Keep on casting pearls

To a — poet ? All I care for  
Is — to tell him that a girl's  
" Love " comes aptly in when gruff  
Grows his singing. (There, enough !)

## OH LOVE! LOVE

Translation of a lyric in the *Hyppolytus* of Euripides, and printed by J. P. Mahaffy in his *Euripides*, 1879. Mr. Mahaffy writes : " Mr. Browning has honored me with the following translation of these stanzas, so that the general reader may not miss the meaning or the spirit of the ode. The English metre, though not a strict reproduction, gives an excellent idea of the original."

### I

OH Love ! Love, thou that from the eyes dif-  
fusest  
Yearning, and on the soul sweet grace indu-  
cest —  
Souls against whom thy hostile march is made —  
Never to me be manifest in ire,  
Nor, out of time and tune, my peace invade !  
Since neither from the fire —  
No, nor from the stars — is launched a bolt  
more mighty  
Than that of Aphrodité  
Hurled from the hands of Love, the boy with  
Zeus for sire.

### II

Idly, how idly, by the Alpheian river  
And in the Pythian shrines of Phœbus, quiver  
Blood-offerings from the bull, which Hellas  
heaps :  
While Love we worship not — the Lord of men !  
Worship not him, the very key who keeps  
Of Aphrodité, when  
She closes up her dearest chamber-portals :  
— Love, when he comes to mortals,  
Wide-wasting, through those deeps of woes be-  
yond the deep !



## DRAMATIC IDYLS

## FIRST SERIES

THE *Dramatic Idyls*, a group of poems which indicated a return to Browning's earlier manner, furnished the title for two successive volumes, the first series published in 1879, the second the year following. The poems in the first series were composed while Browning and his sister

## MARTIN RELPH

*My grandfather says he remembers he saw, when  
a youngster long ago,  
On a bright May day, a strange old man, with a  
beard as white as snow,  
Stand on the hill outside our town like a monu-  
ment of woe,  
And, striking his bare bald head the while, sob out  
the reason — so !*

If I last as long as Methuselah I shall never for-  
give myself :  
But — God forgive me, that I pray, unhappy  
Martin Relph,  
As coward, coward I call him — him, yes, him !  
Away from me !  
Get you behind the man I am now, you man  
that I used to be !

What can have sewed my mouth up, set me  
a-stare, all eyes, no tongue ?  
People have urged, " You visit a scare too hard  
on a lad so young !  
You were taken aback, poor boy," they urge,  
" no time to regain your wits ;  
Besides it had maybe cost your life." Ay, there  
is the cap which fits !

So, cap me, the coward, — thus ! No fear ! A  
cuff on the brow does good :  
The feel of it hinders a worm inside which bores  
at the brain for food.  
See now, there certainly seems excuse : for a  
moment, I trust, dear friends,  
The fault was but folly, no fault of mine, or if  
mine, I have made amends !

For, every day that is first of May, on the hill-  
top, here stand I,  
Martin Relph, and I strike my brow, and pub-  
lish the reason why,  
When there gathers a crowd to mock the fool.  
No fool, friends, since the bite  
Of a worm inside is worse to bear : pray God I  
have balked him quite !

I'll tell you. Certainly much excuse ! It came  
of the way they cooped  
Us peasantry up in a ring just here, close hud-  
dling because tight-hoop'd  
By the red-coats round us villagers all : they  
meant we should see the sight

were sojourning in a mountain hotel near the  
summit of the Splügen Pass in the summer of  
1878. So stimulated was Browning by the moun-  
tain air that he composed with extraordinary  
rapidity, even for him, bringing down upon him-  
self his sister's determined caution.

And take the example, — see, not speak, for  
speech was the Captain's right.

" You clowns on the slope, beware ! " cried he :  
" This woman about to die  
Gives by her fate fair warning to such acquaint-  
ance as play the spy.  
Henceforth who meddle with matters of state  
above them perhaps will learn  
That peasants should stick to their plough-  
tail, leave to the King the King's con-  
cern.

" Here 's a quarrel that sets the land on fire, be-  
tween King George and his foes :  
What call has a man of your kind — much less,  
a woman — to interpose ?  
Yet you needs must be meddling, folk like you,  
not foes — so much the worse !  
The many and loyal should keep themselves  
unmixed with the few perverse.

" Is the counsel hard to follow ? I gave it you  
plainly a month ago,  
And where was the good ? The rebels have  
learned just all that they need to know.  
Not a month since in we quietly marched : a  
wee t, and they had the news,  
From a list complete of our rank and file to a  
note of our caps and shoes.

" All about all we did and all we were doing  
and like to do !  
Only, I catch a letter by luck, and capture who  
wrote it, too.  
Some of you men look black enough, but the  
milk-white face demure  
Betokens the finger foul with ink : 't is a woman  
who writes, be sure !

" Is it ' Dearie, how much I miss your mouth ! '  
— good natural stuff, she pens ?  
Some sprinkle of that, for a blind, of course :  
with talk about cocks and hens,  
How ' robin has built on the apple-tree, and our  
creeper which came to grief  
Through the frost, we feared, is twining afresh  
round casement in famous leaf.

" But all for a blind ! She soon glides frank  
into ' Horrid the place is grown  
With Officers here and Privates there, no nook  
we may call our own :

And Farmer Giles has a tribe to house, and lodging will be to seek  
For the second Company sure to come ('t is whispered) on Monday week.'

"And so to the end of the chapter! There!  
The murder, you see, was out:  
Easy to guess how the change of mind in the rebels was brought about!  
Safe in the trap would they now lie snug, had treachery made no sign:  
But treachery meets a just reward, no matter if fools malign!

"That traitors had played us false, was proved — sent news which fell so pat:  
And the murder was out — this letter of love, the sender of this sent that!  
'T is an ugly job, though, all the same — a hateful, to have to deal  
With a case of the kind, when a woman's in fault: we soldiers need nerves of steel!

"So, I gave her a chance, despatched post-haste a message to Vincent Parkes  
Whom she wrote to; easy to find he was, since one of the King's own clerks,  
Ay, kept by the King's own gold in the town close by where the rebels camp:  
A sort of a lawyer, just the man to betray our sort — the scamp!

"'If her writing is simple and honest and only the lover-like stuff it looks,  
And if you yourself are a loyalist, nor down in the rebels' books,  
Come quick,' said I, 'and in person prove you are each of you clear of crime,  
Or martial law must take its course: this day next week's the time!'

"Next week is now: does he come? Not he!  
Clean gone, our clerk, in a trice!  
He has left his sweetheart here in the lurch: no need of a warning twice!  
His own neck free, but his partner's fast in the noose still, here she stands  
To pay for her fault. 'T is an ugly job: but soldiers obey commands.

"And hearken wherefore I make a speech!  
Should any acquaintance share  
The folly that led to the fault that is now to be punished, let fools beware!  
Look black, if you please, but keep hands white: and, above all else, keep wives —  
Or sweethearts or what they may be — from ink! Not a word now, on your lives!"

Black? but the Pit's own pitch was white to the Captain's face — the brute  
With the bloated cheeks and the bulgy nose and the bloodshot eyes to suit!  
He was muddled with wine, they say: more like, he was out of his wits with fear;

He had but a handful of men, that's true, — a riot might cost him dear.

And all that time stood Rosamund Page, with pinioned arms and face  
Bandaged about, on the turf marked out for the party's firing-place.  
I hope she was wholly with God: I hope 't was his angel stretched a hand  
To steady her so, like the shape of stone you see in our church-aisle stand.

I hope there was no vain fancy pierced the bandage to vex her eyes,  
No face within which she missed without, no questions and no replies —  
"Why did you leave me to die?" — "Because" . . . Oh, fiends, too soon you grin  
At merely a moment of hell, like that — such heaven as hell ended in!

Let mine end too! He gave the word, up went the guns in a line.  
Those heaped on the hill were blind as dumb, — for, of all eyes, only mine  
Looked over the heads of the foremost rank. Some fell on their knees in prayer,  
Some sank to the earth, but all shut eyes, with a sole exception there.

That was myself, who had stolen up last, had sidled behind the group:  
I am highest of all on the hill-top, there stand fixed while the others stoop!  
From head to foot in a serpent's twine am I tightened: I touch ground?  
No more than a gibbet's rigid corpse which the fetters rust around!

Can I speak, can I breathe, can I burst — aught else but see, see, only see?  
And see I do — for there comes in sight — a man, it sure must be! —  
Who staggeringly, stumbingly rises, falls, rises, at random flings his weight  
On and on, anyhow onward — a man that's mad he arrives too late!

Else why does he wave a something white high-flourished above his head?  
Why does not he call, cry, — curse the fool! — why throw up his arms instead?  
O take this fist in your own face, fool! Why does not yourself shout "Stay!  
Here's a man comes rushing, might and main, with something he's mad to say"?

And a minute, only a moment, to have hell-fire boil up in your brain,  
And ere you can judge things right, choose heaven, — time's over, repentance vain!  
They level: a volley, a smoke and the clearing of smoke: I see no more  
Of the man smoke hid, nor his frantic arms, nor the something white he bore.

But stretched on the field, some half-mile off,  
 is an object. Surely dumb,  
 Deaf, blind were we struck, that nobody heard,  
 not one of us saw him come!  
 Has he fainted through fright? One may well  
 believe! What is it he holds so fast?  
 Turn him over, examine the face! Heyday!  
 What, Vincent Parkes at last?

Dead! dead as she, by the selfsame shot: one  
 bullet has ended both,  
 Her in the body and him in the soul. They  
 laugh at our plighted troth.  
 "Till death us do part?" Till death us do  
 join past parting — that sounds like  
 Betrothal indeed! O Vincent Parkes, what  
 need has my fist to strike?

I helped you: thus were you dead and wed:  
 one bound, and your soul reached hers!  
 There is clenched in your hand the thing, signed,  
 sealed, the paper which plain avers  
 She is innocent, innocent, plain as print, with  
 the King's Arms broad engraved:  
 No one can hear, but if any one high on the hill  
 can see, she 's saved!

And torn his garb and bloody his lips with  
 heart-break — plain it grew  
 How the week's delay had been brought about:  
 each guess at the end proved true.  
 It was hard to get at the folk in power: such  
 waste of time! and then  
 Such pleading and praying, with, all the while,  
 his lamb in the lions' den!

And at length when he wrung their pardon out,  
 no end to the stupid forms —  
 The license and leave: I make no doubt —  
 what wonder if passion warns  
 The pulse in a man if you play with his heart?  
 — he was something hasty in speech;  
 Anyhow, none would quicken the work: he  
 had to beseech, beseech!

And the thing once signed, sealed, safe in his  
 grasp, — what followed but fresh delays?  
 For the floods were out, he was forced to take  
 such a roundabout of ways!  
 And 't was "Halt there!" at every turn of  
 the road, since he had to cross the thick  
 Of the red-coats: what did they care for him  
 and his "Quick, for God's sake, quick!"

Horse? but he had one: had it how long? till  
 the first knave smirked "You brag  
 Yourself a friend of the King's? then lend to a  
 King's friend here your nag!"  
 Money to buy another? Why, piece by piece  
 they plundered him still,  
 With their "Wait you must, — no help: if  
 aught can help you, a guinea will!"

And a borough there was — I forget the name  
 — whose Mayor must have the bench  
 Of Justices ranged to clear a doubt: for  
 "Vincent," thinks he, sounds French!

It well may have driven him daft, God knows!  
 all man can certainly know  
 Is — rushing and falling and rising, at last he  
 arrived in a horror — so!

When a word, cry, gasp, would have rescued  
 both! Ay, bite me! The worm begins  
 At his work once more. Had cowardice proved  
 — that only — my sin of sins!  
 Friends, look you here! Suppose . . . suppose  
 . . . But mad I am, needs must be!  
 Judas the Damned would never have dared  
 such a sin as I dream! For, see!

Suppose I had sneakingly loved her myself, my  
 wretched self, and dreamed  
 In the heart of me "She were better dead than  
 happy and his!" — while gleamed  
 A light from hell as I spied the pair in a per-  
 fectest embrace,  
 He the savior and she the saved, — bliss born  
 of the very murder-place!

No! Say I was scared, friends! Call me fool  
 and coward, but nothing worse!  
 Jeer at the fool and gibe at the coward! 'T was  
 ever the coward's curse  
 That fear breeds fancies in such: such take  
 their shadow for substance still,  
 — A fiend at their back. I liked poor Parkes,  
 — loved Vincent, if you will!

And her — why, I said "Good morrow" to her,  
 "Good even," and nothing more:  
 The neighborly way! She was just to me as  
 fifty had been before.  
 So, coward it is and coward shall be! There's  
 a friend, now! Thanks! A drink  
 Of water I wanted: and now I can walk, get  
 home by myself, I think.

## PHEIDIPPIDES

Χαίρετε, νικῶμεν.

FIRST I salute this soil of the blessed, river and  
 rock!  
 Gods of my birthplace, dæmons and heroes,  
 honor to all!  
 Then I name thee, claim thee for our patron,  
 co-equal in praise  
 — Ay, with Zeus the Defender, with Her of  
 the ægis and spear!  
 Also, ye of the bow and the buskin, praised be  
 your peer.  
 Now, henceforth and forever, — O latest to  
 whom I upraise  
 Hand and heart and voice! For Athens, leave  
 pasture and flock!  
 Present to help, potent to save, Pan — patron  
 I call!

Archons of Athens, topped by the tettix, see, I  
 return!  
 See, 't is myself here standing alive, no spectre  
 that speaks!



Crowned with the myrtle, did you command  
me, Athens and you,  
"Run, Pheidippides, run and race, reach Sparta  
for aid!  
Persia has come, we are here, where is She?"  
Your command I obeyed,  
Ran and raced: like stubble, some field which  
a fire runs through,  
Was the space between city and city: two  
days, two nights did I burn  
Over the hills, under the dales, down pits and  
up peaks.

Into their midst I broke: breath served but for  
"Persia has come!  
Persia bids Athens proffer slaves'-tribute, water  
and earth;  
Razed to the ground is Eretria—but Athens,  
shall Athens sink,  
Drop into dust and die—the flower of Hellas  
utterly die,  
Die, with the wide world spitting at Sparta,  
the stupid, the stander-by?  
Answer me quick, what help, what hand do  
you stretch o'er destruction's brink?  
How, — when? No care for my limbs! —  
there's lightning in all and some —  
Fresh and fit your message to bear, once lips  
give it birth!"

O my Athens — Sparta love thee? Did Sparta  
respond?  
Every face of her leered in a furrow of envy,  
mistrust,  
Malice, — each eye of her gave me its glitter  
of gratified hate!  
Gravely they turned to take counsel, to cast for  
excuses. I stood  
Quivering, — the limbs of me fretting as fire  
frets, an inch from dry wood:  
"Persia has come. Athens asks aid, and still  
they debate?  
Thunder, thou Zeus! Athene, are Spartans a  
quarry beyond  
Swing of thy spear? Phoibos and Artemis,  
clang them 'Ye must'!"

No bolt launched from Olumpus! Lo, their  
answer at last!  
"Has Persia come, — does Athens ask aid, —  
may Sparta befriend?  
Nowise precipitate judgment — too weighty  
the issue at stake!  
Count we no time lost time which lags through  
respect to the gods!  
Ponder that precept of old, 'No warfare, what-  
ever the odds  
In your favor, so long as the moon, half-orbed,  
is unable to take  
Full-circle her state in the sky!' Already she  
rounds to it fast:  
Athens must wait, patient as we — who judg-  
ment suspend."

Athens, — except for that sparkle, — thy name,  
I had mouldered to ash!  
That sent a blaze through my blood; off, off  
and away was I back,

— Not one word to waste, one look to lose on  
the false and the vile!  
Yet "O gods of my land!" I cried, as each  
hillock and plain,  
Wood and stream, I knew, I named, rushing  
past them again,  
"Have ye kept faith, proved mindful of honors  
we paid you erewhile?  
Vain was the filleted victim, the fulsome liba-  
tion! Too rash  
Love in its choice, paid you so largely service  
so slack!"

"Oak and olive and bay, — I bid you cease to  
enwreathe  
Brows made bold by your leaf! Fade at the  
Persian's foot,  
You that, our patrons were pledged, should  
never adorn a slave!  
Rather I hail thee, Parnes, — trust to thy wild  
waste tract!  
Treeless, herbless, lifeless mountain! What  
matter if slackened  
My speed may hardly be, for homage to crag  
and to cave  
No deity deigns to drape with verdure? at  
least I can breathe,  
Fear in thee no fraud from the blind, no lie  
from the mute!"

Such my cry as, rapid, I ran over Parnes'  
ridge;  
Gully and gap I clambered and cleared till,  
sudden, a bar  
Jutted, a stoppage of stone against me, block-  
ing the way.  
Right! for I minded the hollow to traverse,  
the fissure across:  
"Where I could enter, there I depart by!  
Night in the fosse?  
Out of the day dive, into the day as bravely  
arise! No bridge  
Better!" — when — ha! what was it I came on,  
of wonders that are?

There, in the cool of a cleft, sat he — majestic  
Pan!  
Ivy drooped wanton, kissed his head, moss  
cushioned his hoof:  
All the great god was good in the eyes grave-  
kindly — the curl  
Carved on the bearded cheek, amused at a  
mortal's awe,  
As, under the human trunk, the goat-thighs  
grand I saw.  
"Halt, Pheidippides!" — halt I did, my brain  
of a whirl:  
"Hither to me! Why pale in my presence?"  
he gracious began:  
"How is it, — Athens, only in Hellas, holds me  
aloof?"

"Athens, she only, rears me no fane, makes  
me no feast!  
Wherefore? Than I what godship to Athens  
more helpful of old?  
Ay, and still, and forever her friend! Test  
Pan, trust me!"

Go, bid Athens take heart, laugh Persia to scorn, have faith  
In the temples and tombs! Go, say to Athens,  
'The Goat-God saith:  
When Persia — so much as strews not the soil  
— is east in the sea,  
Then praise Pan who fought in the ranks with  
your most and least,  
Goat-thigh to greaved-thigh, made one cause  
with the free and the bold!

"Say Pan saith: 'Let this, foreshowing the  
place, be the pledge!'"  
(Gay, the liberal hand held out this herbage I  
bear  
— Fennel — I grasped it a-tremble with dew —  
whatever it bode)  
"While, as for thee" . . . But enough! He  
was gone. If I ran hitherto —  
Be sure that, the rest of my journey, I ran no  
longer, but flew.  
Parnes to Athens — earth no more, the air was  
my road:  
Here am I back. Praise Pan, we stand no  
more on the razor's edge!  
Pan for Athens, Pan for me! I too have a  
guerdon rare!

Then spoke Miltiades. "And thee, best run-  
ner of Greece,  
Whose limbs did duty indeed, — what gift is  
promised thyself?  
Tell it us straightway, — Athens the mother  
demands of her son!"  
Rosily blushed the youth: he paused: but,  
lifting at length  
His eyes from the ground, it seemed as he  
gathered the rest of his strength  
Into the utterance — "Pan spoke thus: 'For  
what thou hast done  
Count on a worthy reward! Henceforth be  
allowed thee release  
From the racer's toil, no vulgar reward in  
praise or in pelf!'"

"I am bold to believe, Pan means reward the  
most to my mind!  
Fight I shall, with our foremost, wherever this  
fennel may grow, —  
Pound — Pan helping us — Persia to dust, and,  
under the deep,  
Whelm her away forever; and then, — no  
Athens to save, —  
Marry a certain maid, I know keeps faith to  
the brave, —  
Hie to my house and home: and, when my  
children shall creep  
Close to my knees, — recount how the God was  
awful yet kind,  
Promised their sire reward to the full — re-  
warding him — so!"

Unforeseeing one! Yes, he fought on the Mara-  
thon day:  
So, when Persia was dust, all cried "To Akro-  
polis!

Run, Pheidippides, one race more! the meed is  
thy due!  
'Athens is saved, thank Pan,' go shout!" He  
flung down his shield,  
Ran like fire once more: and the space 'twixt  
the Fennel-field  
And Athens was stubble again, a field which a  
fire runs through,  
Till in he broke: "Rejoice, we conquer!"  
Like wine through clay,  
Joy in his blood bursting his heart, he died —  
the bliss!

So, to this day, when friend meets friend, the  
word of salute  
Is still "Rejoice!" — his word which brought  
rejoicing indeed.  
So is Pheidippides happy forever, — the noble  
strong man  
Who could race like a god, bear the face of a  
god, whom a god loved so well;  
He saw the land saved he had helped to save,  
and was suffered to tell  
Such tidings, yet never decline, but, gloriously  
as he began,  
So to end gloriously — once to shout, thereafter  
be mute:  
"Athens is saved!" — Pheidippides dies in the  
shout for his meed.

HALBERT AND HOB

HERE is a thing that happened. Like wild  
beasts whelped, for den,  
In a wild part of North England, there lived  
once two wild men  
Inhabiting one homestead, neither a hovel nor  
hut,  
Time out of mind their birthright: father and  
son, these — but —  
Such a son, such a father! Most wildness by  
degrees  
Softens away: yet, last of their line, the wild-  
est and worst were these.

Criminals, then? Why, no: they did not mur-  
der and rob;  
But, give them a word, they returned a blow —  
old Halbert as young Hob:  
Harsh and fierce of word, rough and savage of  
deed,  
Hated or feared the more — who knows? — the  
genuine wild-beast breed.

Thus were they found by the few sparse folk of  
the countryside;  
But how fared each with other? E'en beasts  
couch, hide by hide,  
In a growling, grudging agreement: so, father  
and son aye curled  
The closer up in their den because the last of  
their kind in the world.

Still, beast irks beast on occasion. One Christ-  
mas night of snow,  
Came father and son to words — such words!  
more cruel because the blow

To crown each word was wanting, while taunt  
 matched gibe, and curse  
 Competed with oath in wager, like pastime in  
 hell, — nay, worse :  
 For pastime turned to earnest, as up there  
 sprang at last  
 The son at the throat of the father, seized him  
 and held him fast.

“ Out of this house you go ! ” (there followed a  
 hideous oath) —  
 “ This oven where now we bake, too hot to  
 hold us both !  
 If there’s snow outside, there’s coolness : out  
 with you, bide a spell  
 In the drift and save the sexton the charge of a  
 parish shell ! ”

Now, the old trunk was tough, was solid as  
 stump of oak  
 Untouched at the core by a thousand years :  
 much less had its seventy broke  
 One whiplcord nerve in the musely mass from  
 neck to shoulder-blade  
 Of the mountainous man, whereon his child’s  
 rash hand like a feather weighed.

Nevertheless at once did the mammoth shut his  
 eyes,  
 Drop chin to breast, drop hands to sides, stand  
 stiffened — arms and thighs  
 All of a piece — struck mute, much as a sentry  
 stands,  
 Patient to take the enemy’s fire : his captain so  
 commands.

Whereat the son’s wrath flew to fury at such  
 sheer scorn  
 Of his puny strength by the giant eld thus act-  
 ing the babe new-born :  
 And “ Neither will this turn serve ! ” yelled he.  
 “ Out with you ! Trundle, log !  
 If you cannot tramp and trudge like a man, try  
 all-fours like a dog ! ”

Still the old man stood mute. So, logwise, —  
 down to floor  
 Pulled from his fireside place, dragged on from  
 hearth to door, —  
 Was he pushed, a very log, staircase along,  
 until  
 A certain turn in the steps was reached, a yard  
 from the house-door-sill.

Then the father opened eyes — each spark of  
 their rage extinct, —  
 Temples, late black, dead-blanchèd, — right-  
 hand with left-hand linked, —  
 He faced his son submissive ; when slow the  
 accents came,  
 They were strangely mild though his son’s rash  
 hand on his neck lay all the same.

“ Hob, on just such a night of a Christmas long  
 ago,  
 For such a cause, with such a gesture, did I  
 drag — so —

My father down thus far : but, softening here,  
 I heard  
 A voice in my heart, and stopped : you wait for  
 an outer word,

“ For your own sake, not mine, soften you too !  
 Untrod  
 Leave this last step we reach, nor brave the  
 finger of God !  
 I dared not pass its lifting : I did well. I nor  
 blame  
 Nor praise you. I stopped here : and, Hob, do  
 you the same ! ”

Straightway the son relaxed his hold of the  
 father’s throat.  
 They mounted, side by side, to the room again :  
 no note  
 Took either of each, no sign made each to  
 either : last  
 As first, in absolute silence, their Christmas-  
 night they passed.

At dawn, the father sate on, dead, in the self-  
 same place,  
 With an outburst blackening still the old bad  
 fighting-face :  
 But the son crouched all a-tremble like any  
 lamb new-yeaned.

When he went to the burial, some one’s staff he  
 borrowed, — tottered and leaned.  
 But his lips were loose, not locked, — kept mut-  
 tering, mumbling. “ There !  
 At his cursing and swearing ! ” the youngsters  
 cried : but the elders thought “ In  
 prayer.”  
 A boy threw stones : he picked them up and  
 stored them in his vest.

So tottered, muttered, mumbled he, till he  
 died, perhaps found rest.  
 “ Is there a reason in nature for these hard  
 hearts ? ” O Lear,  
 That a reason out of nature must turn them  
 soft, seems clear !

#### IVAN IVANOVITCH

“ THEY tell me, your carpenters,” quoth I to  
 my friend the Russ,  
 “ Make a simple hatchet serve as a tool-box  
 serves with us.  
 Arm but each man with his axe, ’t is a hammer  
 and saw and plane  
 And chisel, and — what know I else ? We  
 should imitate in vain  
 The mastery wherewithal, by a flourish of just  
 the adze,  
 He cleaves, clamps, dovetails in, — no need of  
 our nails and brads, —  
 The manageable pine : ’t is said he could shave  
 himself  
 With the axe, — so all adroit, now a giant and  
 now an elf,  
 Does he work and play at once ! ”



Quoth my friend the Russ to me,  
 "Ay, that and more beside on occasion! It  
 scarce may be  
 You never heard tell a tale told children, time  
 out of mind,  
 By father and mother and nurse, for a moral  
 that's behind,  
 Which children quickly seize. If the incident  
 happened at all,  
 We place it in Peter's time when hearts were  
 great not small,  
 Germanized, Frenchified. I wager 't is old to  
 you  
 As the story of Adam and Eve, and possibly  
 quite as true."

In the deep of our land, 't is said, a village  
 from out the woods  
 Emerged on the great main-road 'twixt two  
 great solitudes.  
 Through forestry right and left, black verst  
 and verst of pine,  
 From village to village runs the road's long  
 wide bare line.  
 Clearance and clearance break the else-uncon-  
 quered growth  
 Of pine and all that breeds and broods there,  
 leaving loth  
 Man's inch of masterdom, — spot of life, spirt  
 of fire, —  
 To star the dark and dread, lest right and rule  
 expire  
 Throughout the monstrous wild, a-hungered to  
 resume  
 Its ancient sway, suck back the world into its  
 womb:  
 Defrauded by man's craft which clove from  
 North to South  
 This highway broad and straight e'en from the  
 Neva's mouth  
 To Moscow's gates of gold. So, spot of life  
 and spirt  
 Of fire aforesaid, burn, each village death-  
 begirt  
 By wall and wall of pine — unprobed un-  
 dreamed abyss.

Early one winter morn, in such a village as  
 this,  
 Snow-whitened everywhere except the middle  
 road  
 Ice-roughed by track of sledge, there worked  
 by his abode  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch, the carpenter, employed  
 On a huge shipmast trunk; his axe now  
 trimmed and toyed  
 With branch and twig, and now some chop  
 athwart the bole  
 Changed bole to billets, bared at once the sap  
 and soul.  
 About him, watched the work his neighbors  
 sheepskin-clad;  
 Each bearded man puffed steam, each gray  
 eye twinkled glad  
 To see the sturdy arm which, never stopping  
 play,

Proved strong man's blood still boils, freeze  
 winter as he may.  
 Sudden, a burst of bells. Out of the road, on  
 edge  
 Of the hamlet — horse's hoofs galloping.  
 "How, a sledge?  
 What's here?" cried all as — in, up to the  
 open space,  
 Workyard and market-ground, folk's common  
 meeting-place, —  
 Stumbled on, till he fell, in one last bound for  
 life,  
 A horse: and, at his heels, a sledge held —  
 "Dmitri's wife!  
 Back without Dmitri too! and children —  
 where are they?  
 Only a frozen corpse!"

They drew it forth: then — "Nay,  
 Not dead, though like to die! Gone hence a  
 month ago:  
 Home again, this rough jaunt — alone through  
 night and snow —  
 What can the cause be? Hark — Droug, old  
 horse, how he groans:  
 His day's done! Chafe away, keep chafing,  
 for she moans:  
 She's coming to! Give here: see, motherkin,  
 your friends!  
 Cheer up, all safe at home! Warm inside  
 makes amends  
 For outside cold, — sup quick! Don't look as  
 we were bears!  
 What is it startles you? What strange ad-  
 venture stares  
 Up at us in your face? You know friends —  
 which is which?  
 I'm Vassili, he's Sergel, Ivàn Ivànovitch" —

At the word, the woman's eyes, slow-wander-  
 ing till they neared  
 The blue eyes o'er the bush of honey-colored  
 beard,  
 Took in full light and sense and — torn to rags,  
 some dream  
 Which hid the naked truth — O loud and long  
 the scream  
 She gave, as if all power of voice within her  
 throat  
 Poured itself wild away to waste in one dread  
 note!  
 Then followed gasps and sobs, and then the  
 steady flow  
 Of kindly tears: the brain was saved, a man  
 might know.  
 Down fell her face upon the good friend's  
 propping knee;  
 His broad hands smoothed her head, as fain to  
 brush it free  
 From fancies, swarms that stung like bees  
 unhived. He soothed —  
 "Loukèria, Louscha!" — still he, fondling,  
 smoothed and smoothed.  
 At last her lips formed speech.

"Ivàn, dear — you indeed!  
 You, just the same dear you! While I . . . Oh,  
 intercede,

Sweet Mother, with thy Son Almighty — let his  
might

Bring yesterday once more, undo all done last  
night!

But this time yesterday, Ivàn, I sat like you,  
A child on either knee, and, dearer than the  
two,

A babe inside my arms, close to my heart —  
that's lost

In morsels o'er the snow! Father, Son, Holy  
Ghost,

Cannot you bring again my blessed yesterday?"

When no more tears would flow, she told her  
tale: this way.

"Maybe, a month ago, — was it not? — news  
came here,

They wanted, deeper down, good workmen fit  
to rear

A church and roof it in. 'We'll go,' my  
husband said:

'None understands like me to melt and mould  
their lead.'

So, friends here helped us off — Ivàn, dear,  
you the first!

How gay we jingled forth, all five — (my heart  
will burst!) —

While Dmitri shook the reins, urged Droug  
upon his track!

"Well, soon the month ran out, we just were  
coming back,

When yesterday — behold, the village was on  
fire!

Fire ran from house to house. What help, as,  
nigh and nigher,

The flames came furious? 'Haste,' cried  
Dmitri, 'men must do

The little good man may: to sledge and in with  
you,

You and our three! We check the fire by  
laying flat

Each building in its path, — I needs must stay  
for that, —

But you . . . no time for talk! Wrap round  
you every rug,

Cover the couple close, — you'll have the babe  
to hug.

No care to guide old Droug, he knows his way,  
by guess,

Once start him on the road: but chirrup, none  
the less!

The snow lies glib as glass and hard as steel,  
and soon

You'll have rise, fine and full, a marvel of a  
moon.

Hold straight up, all the same, this lighted  
twist of pitch!

Once home and with our friend Ivàn Ivànovitch,  
All's safe: I have my pay in pouch, all's right  
with me,

So I but find as safe you and our precious  
three!

Off, Droug! — because the flames had reached  
us, and the men

Shouted 'But lend a hand, Dmitri — as good  
as ten!'

"So, in we bundled — I, and those God gave  
me once;

Old Droug, that's stiff at first, seemed youth-  
ful for the nonce:

He understood the case, galloping straight  
ahead.

Out came the moon: my twist soon dwindled,  
feebly red

In that unnatural day — yes, daylight, bred  
between

Moonlight and snow-light, lamped those grotto-  
depths which screen

Such devils from God's eye. Ah, pines, how  
straight you grow,

Nor bend one pitying branch, true breed of  
brutal snow!

Some undergrowth had served to keep the  
devils blind

While we escaped outside their border!

"Was that — wind?

Anyhow, Droug starts, stops, back go his ears,  
he snuffs,

Snorts, — never such a snort! then plunges,  
knows the sough's

Only the wind: yet, no — our breath goes up  
too straight!

Still the low sound, — less low, loud, louder, at  
a rate

There's no mistaking more! Shall I lean out  
— look — learn

The truth whatever it be? Pad, pad! At  
last, I turn —

"'T is the regular pad of the wolves in pursuit  
of the life in the sledge!

An army they are: close-packed they press like  
the thrust of a wedge:

They increase as they hunt: for I see, through  
the pine-trunks ranged each side,

Slip forth new fiend and fiend, make wider and  
still more wide

The four-footed steady advance. The fore-  
most — none may pass:

They are elders and lead the line, eye and eye  
— green-glowing brass!

But a long way distant still. Droug, save us!  
He does his best:

Yet they gain on us, gain, till they reach, —  
one reaches . . . How utter the rest?

O that Satan-faced first of the band! How he  
lolls out the length of his tongue,

How he laughs and lets gleam his white teeth!  
He is on me, his paws pry among

The wraps and the rugs! O my pair, my twin-  
pigeons, lie still and seem dead!

Stepàn, he shall never have you for a meal, —  
here's your mother instead!

No, he will not be counselled — must cry, poor  
Stiòpka, so foolish! though first

Of my boy-brood, he was not the best: nay,  
neighbors have called him the worst:

He was puny, an undersized slip, — a darling to  
me, all the same!

But little there was to be praised in the boy,  
and a plenty to blame.

I loved him with heart and soul, yes — but,  
deal him a blow for a fault,

He would sulk for whole days. 'Foolish boy!  
 lie still or the villain will vault,  
 Will snatch you from over my head!' No use!  
 he cries, screams, — who can hold  
 Fast a boy in a frenzy of fear! It follows — as  
 I foretold!  
 The Satan-face snatched and snapped: I  
 tugged, I tore — and then  
 His brother too needs must shriek! If one  
 must go, 't is men  
 The Tsar needs, so we hear, not ailing boys!  
 Perhaps  
 My hands relaxed their grasp, got tangled in  
 the wraps:  
 God, he was gone! I looked: there tumbled  
 the cursed crew,  
 Each fighting for a share: too busy to pursue!  
 That's so far gain at least: Droug, gallop an-  
 other verst  
 Or two, or three — God sends we beat them,  
 arrive the first!  
 A mother who boasts two boys was ever ac-  
 counted rich:  
 Some have not a boy: some have, but lose him,  
 — God knows which  
 Is worse: how pitiful to see your weakling  
 pine  
 And pale and pass away! Strong brats, this  
 pair of mine!

"O misery! for while I settle to what near  
 seems  
 Content, I am 'ware again of the tramp, and  
 again there gleams —  
 Point and point — the line, eyes, levelled  
 green brassy fire!  
 So soon is resumed your chase? Will nothing  
 appease, naught tire  
 The furies? And yet I think — I am certain  
 the race is slack,  
 And the numbers are nothing like. Not a quar-  
 ter of the pack!  
 Feasters and those full-fed are staying behind  
 . . . Ah, why?  
 We'll sorrow for that too soon! Now, — gallop,  
 reach home, and die,  
 Nor ever again leave house, to trust our life in  
 the trap  
 For life — we call a sledge! Teridscha, in my  
 lap!  
 Yes, I'll lie down upon you, tight-tie you with  
 the strings  
 Here — of my heart! No fear, this time, your  
 mother flings . . .  
 Flings? I flung? Never! But think! — a  
 woman, after all,  
 Contending with a wolf! Save you I must and  
 shall,  
 Terentii!

"How now? What, you still head the race,  
 Your eyes and tongue and teeth crave fresh  
 food, Satan-face?  
 There and there! Plain I struck green fire  
 out! Flash again?  
 All a poor fist can do to damage eyes proves  
 vain!  
 My fist — why not crunch that? He is wanton  
 for . . . O God,

Why give this wolf his taste? Common wolves  
 scrape and prod  
 The earth till out they scratch some corpse —  
 mere putrid flesh!  
 Why must this glutton leave the faded, choose  
 the fresh?  
 Terentii — God, feel! — his neck keeps fast  
 thy bag  
 Of holy things, saints' bones, this Satan-face  
 will drag  
 Forth, and devour along with him, our Pope  
 declared  
 The relics were to save from danger!

"Spurned, not spared!  
 'T was through my arms, crossed arms, he —  
 nuzzling now with snout,  
 Now ripping, tooth and claw — plucked, pulled  
 Terentii out,  
 A prize indeed! I saw — how could I else but  
 see? —  
 My precious one — I bit to hold back — pulled  
 from me!  
 Up came the others, fell to dancing — did the  
 imps! —  
 Skipped as they scampered round. There's  
 one is gray, and limps:  
 Who knows but old bad Mårpha — she always  
 owed me spite  
 And envied me my births — skulks out of  
 doors at night  
 And turns into a wolf, and joins the sisterhood,  
 And laps the youthful life, then slinks from  
 out the wood,  
 Squats down at door by dawn, spins there de-  
 mure as erst  
 — No strength, old crone, — not she! — to  
 crawl forth half a verst!

"Well, I escaped with one: 'twixt one and  
 none there lies  
 The space 'twixt heaven and hell. And see, a  
 rose-light dyes  
 The endmost snow: 't is dawn, 't is day, 't is  
 safe at home!  
 We have outwitted you! Ay, monsters, snarl  
 and foam,  
 Fight each the other fiend, disputing for a  
 share, —  
 Forgetful, in your greed, our finest off we bear,  
 Tough Droug and I, — my babe, my boy that  
 shall be man,  
 My man that shall be more, do all a hunter can  
 To trace and follow and find and catch and  
 erueify  
 Wolves, wolfkins, all your crew! A thousand  
 deaths shall die  
 The whimpering cub that ever squeezed the  
 teat!  
 'Take that!' we'll stab you with, — 'the ten-  
 derness we met  
 When, wretches, you danced round, — not this,  
 thank God — not this!  
 Hellhounds, we balk you!'

"But — Ah, God above! — Bliss, bliss, —  
 Not the band, no! And yet — yes, for Droug  
 knows him! One —



This only of them all has said 'She saves a son !'  
 His fellows disbelieve such luck : but he believes,  
 He lets them pick the bones, laugh at him in their sleeves :  
 He 's off and after us, — one speck, one spot, one ball  
 Grows bigger, bound on bound, — one wolf as good as all !  
 Oh, but I know the trick ! Have at the snaky tongue !  
 That 's the right way with wolves ! Go, tell your mates I wrung  
 The panting morsel out, left you to howl your worst !  
 Now for it — now ! Ah me ! I know him — thrice-accurst  
 Satan-face, — him to the end my foe !

" All fight 's in vain :  
 This time the green brass points pierce to my very brain.  
 I fall — fall as I ought — quite on the babe I guard :  
 I overspread with flesh the whole of him. Too hard  
 To die this way, torn piecemeal ? Move hence ? Not I — one inch !  
 Gnaw through me, through and through : flat thus I lie nor flinch !  
 O God, the feel of the fang furrowing my shoulder ! — see !  
 It grinds — it grates the bone. O Kirill under me,  
 Could I do more ? Besides he knew wolf's way to win :  
 I clung, closed round like wax : yet in he wedged and in,  
 Past my neck, past my breasts, my heart, until . . . how feels  
 The onion-bulb your knife parts, pushing through its peels,  
 Till out you scoop its clove wherein lie stalk and leaf  
 And bloom and seed unborn ?

" That slew me : yes, in brief,  
 I died then, dead I lay doubtlessly till Droug stopped  
 Here, I suppose. I come to life, I find me propped  
 Thus, — how or when or why — I know not. Tell me, friends,  
 All was a dream : laugh quick and say the nightmare ends !  
 Soon I shall find my house : 't is over there : in proof,  
 Save for that chimney heaped with snow, you 'd see the roof  
 Which holds my three — my two — my one — not one ?

" Life 's mixed  
 With misery, yet we live — must live. The Satan fixed  
 His face on mine so fast, I took its print as pitch

Takes what it cools beneath. Ivàn Ivànovitch,  
 'T is you unharden me, you thaw, disperse the thing !  
 Only keep looking kind, the horror will not cling.  
 Your face smooths fast away each print of Satan. Tears  
 — What good they do ! Life 's sweet, and all its after-years,  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch, I owe you ! Yours am I !  
 May God reward you, dear ! "

Down she sank. Solemnly  
 Ivàn rose, raised his axe, — for fitly, as she knelt,  
 Her head lay : well-apart, each side, her arms hung, — dealt  
 Lightning-swift thunder-strong one blow — no need of more !  
 Headless she knelt on still : that pine was sound at core  
 (Neighbors were used to say) — cast-iron-kerneled — which  
 Taxed for a second stroke Ivàn Ivànovitch.

The man was scant of words as strokes. " It had to be :  
 I could no other : God it was, bade ' Act for me ! ' "  
 Then stooping, peering round — what is it now he lacks ?  
 A proper strip of bark wherewith to wipe his axe.  
 Which done, he turns, goes in, closes the door behind.  
 The others mute remain, watching the blood-snake wind  
 Into a hiding-place among the splinter-heaps.

At length, still mute, all move : one lifts — from where it steeps  
 Redder each ruddy rag of pine — the head : two more  
 Take up the dripping body : then, mute still as before,  
 Move in a sort of march, march on till marching ends  
 Opposite to the church ; where halting, — who suspends,  
 By its long hair, the thing, deposits in its place  
 The piteous head : once more the body shows no trace  
 Of harm done : there lies whole the Louëscha, maid and wife  
 And mother, loved until this latest of her life.  
 Then all sit on the bank of snow which bounds a space  
 Kept free before the porch of judgment : just the place !

Presently all the souls, man, woman, child, which make  
 The village up, are found assembling for the sake  
 Of what is to be done. The very Jews are there :  
 A Gypsy-troop, though bound with horses for the Fair,

Squats with the rest. Each heart with its conception seethes  
And simmers, but no tongue speaks: one may say, — none breathes.

Anon from out the church totters the Pope — the priest —

Hardly alive, so old, a hundred years at least. With him, the Commune's head, a hoary senior too,

Stàrosta, that 's his style, — like Equity Judge with you, —

Natural Jurisconsult: then, fenced about with furs,

Pomeschik, — Lord of the Land, who wields — and none demurs —

A power of life and death. They stoop, survey the corpse.

Then, straightened on his staff, the Stàrosta — the thorpé's

Sagacious old man — hears what you just have heard,

From Droug's first inrush, all, up to Ivàn's last word —

"God bade me act for him: I dared not disobey!"

Silence — the Pomeschik broke with "A wild wrong way

Of righting wrong — if wrong there were, such wrath to rouse!

Why was not law observed? What article allows

Whoso may please to play the judge, and, judgment dealt,

Play executioner, as promptly as we pelt

To death, without appeal, the vermin whose sole fault

Has been — it dared to leave the darkness of its vault,

Intrude upon our day! Too sudden and too rash!

What was this woman's crime? Suppose the church should crash

Down where I stand, your lord: bound are my serfs to dare

Their utmost that I 'scape: yet, if the crashing scare

My children — as you are, — if sons fly, one and all,

Leave father to his fate, — poor cowards though I call

The runaways, I pause before I claim their life

Because they prized it more than mine. I would each wife

Died for her husband's sake, each son to save his sire:

"Tis glory, I applaud — scarce duty, I require. Ivàn Ivànovitch has done a deed that 's named

Murder by law and me: who doubts, may speak unblamed!"

All turned to the old Pope. "Ay, children, I am old —

How old, myself have got to know no longer. Rolled

Quite round, my orb of life, from infancy to age,

Seems passing back again to youth. A certain stage

At least I reach, or dream I reach, where I discern

Truer truths, laws behold more lawlike than we learn

When first we set our foot to tread the course I trod

With man to guide my steps: who leads me now is God.

'Your young men shall see visions:' and in my youth I saw

And paid obedience to man's visionary law: 'Your old men shall dream dreams:' and, in

my age, a hand

Conducts me through the cloud round law to where I stand

Firm on its base, — know cause, who, before, knew effect.

"The world lies under me: and nowhere I detect So great a gift as this — God's own — of human

life.

'Shall the dead praise thee?' No! 'The whole live world is rife,

God, with thy glory,' rather! Life then, God's best of gifts,

For what shall man exchange? For life — when so he shifts

The weight and turns the scale, lets life for life restore

God's balance, sacrifice the less to gain the more,

Substitute — for low life, another's or his own — Life large and liker God's who gave it: thus

alone

May life extinguish life that life may trulier be! How low this law descends on earth, is not for

me

To trace: complexed becomes the simple, intricate

The plain, when I pursue law's winding. 'Tis the straight

Outflow of law I know and name: to law, the fount

Fresh from God's footstool, friends, follow while I remount.

"A mother bears a child: perfection is complete

So far in such a birth. Enabled to repeat The miracle of life, — herself was born so just

A type of womankind, that God sees fit to trust Her with the holy task of giving life in turn.

Crowned by this crowning pride, how say you, should she spurn

Regality — discrowned, unchilded, by her choice Of barrenness exchanged for fruit which made

rejoice

Creation, though life's self were lost in giving birth

To life more fresh and fit to glorify God's earth? How say you, should the hand God trusted with

life's torch

Kindled to light the world — aware of sparks that scorch,

Let fall the same? Forsooth, her flesh a fire-flake stings:

The mother drops the child! Among what monstrous things  
 Shall she be classed? Because of motherhood,  
 each male  
 Yields to his partner place, sinks proudly in the  
 scale:  
 His strength owned weakness, wit — folly, and  
 courage — fear,  
 Beside the female proved male's mistress —  
 only here.  
 The fox-dam, hunger-pined, will slay the felon  
 sire  
 Who dares assault her whelp: the beaver,  
 stretched on fire,  
 Will die without a groan: no pang avails to  
 wrest  
 Her young from where they hide — her sanctu-  
 ary breast.  
 What's here then? Answer me, thou dead one,  
 as, I trow,  
 Standing at God's own bar, he bids thee answer  
 now!  
 Thrice crowned wast thou — each crown of  
 pride, a child — thy charge!  
 Where are they? Lost? Enough: no need  
 that thou enlarge  
 On how or why the loss: life left to utter 'lost'  
 Condemns itself beyond appeal. The soldier's  
 post  
 Guards from the foe's attack the camp he senti-  
 nels:  
 That he no traitor proved, this and this only  
 tells —  
 Over the corpse of him trod foe to foe's success.  
 Yet — one by one thy crowns torn from thee —  
 thou no less  
 To scare the world, shame God, — livedst! I  
 hold he saw  
 The unexampled sin, ordained the novel law,  
 Whereof first instrument was first intelligence  
 Found loyal here. I hold that, failing human  
 sense,  
 The very earth had oped, sky fallen, to efface  
 Humanity's new wrong, motherhood's first dis-  
 grace.  
 Earth op'd not, neither fell the sky, for prompt  
 was found  
 A man and man enough, head-sober and heart-  
 sound,  
 Ready to hear God's voice, resolute to obey.  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch, I hold, has done, this day,  
 No otherwise than I did, in ages long ago,  
 Moses when he made known the purport of that  
 flow  
 Of fire athwart the law's twain-tables! I pro-  
 claim  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch God's servant!"

At which name

Uprose that creepy whisper from out the crowd,  
 is wont,  
 To swell and surge and sink when fellow-men  
 confront  
 A punishment that falls on fellow flesh and  
 blood,  
 Appallingly beheld — shudderingly understood,  
 No less, to be the right, the just, the merciful.  
 "God's servant!" hissed the crowd.

When the Amen grew dull  
 And died away and left acquittal plain ad-  
 judged,  
 "Amen!" last sighed the lord. "There's  
 none shall say I grudged  
 Escape from punishment in such a novel case.  
 Deferring to old age and holy life, — be grace  
 Granted! say I. No less, scruples might shake  
 a sense  
 Firmer than I boast mine. Law's law, and  
 evidence  
 Of breach therein lies plain, — blood-red-bright,  
 — all may see!  
 Yet all absolve the deed: absolved the deed  
 must be!

"And next — as mercy rules the hour — me-  
 thinks 't were well  
 You signify forthwith its sentence, and dispel  
 The doubts and fears, I judge, which busy now  
 the head  
 Law puts a halter round — a halo — you, in-  
 stead!  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch — what think you he expects  
 Will follow from his feat? Go, tell him — law  
 protects  
 Murder, for once: no need he longer keep be-  
 hind  
 The Sacred Pictures — where skulks Innocence  
 enshrined,  
 Or I missay! Go, some! You others, haste  
 and hide  
 The dismal object there: get done, whate'er  
 betide!"

So, while the youngers raised the corpse, the  
 elders trooped  
 Silently to the house: where halting, some one  
 stooped,  
 Listened beside the door; all there was silent  
 too.  
 Then they held counsel; then pushed door  
 and, passing through,  
 Stood in the murderer's presence.

Ivàn Ivànovitch  
 Knelt, building on the floor that Kremlin rare  
 and rich  
 He deftly cut and carved on lazy winter nights.  
 Some five young faces watched, breathlessly, as,  
 to rights,  
 Piece upon piece, he reared the fabric nigh  
 complete.  
 Stèscha, Ivàn's old mother, sat spinning by the  
 heat  
 Of the oven where his wife Kàtia stood baking  
 bread.  
 Ivàn's self, as he turned his honey-colored head,  
 Was just in act to drop, 'twixt fir-cones, — each  
 a dome, —  
 The scooped-out yellow gourd presumably the  
 home  
 Of Kolokol the Big: the bell, therein to hitch.  
 — An acorn-cup — was ready: Ivàn Ivànovitch  
 Turned with it in his mouth.

They told him he was free  
 As air to walk abroad. "How otherwise?"  
 asked he.



## TRAY

This poem describes an actual incident witnessed in Paris by a friend of Browning's, and with accuracy of detail. The poem was written as a protest against vivisection, which the poet called "an infamous practice." He was early associated with Miss Frances Power Cobbe in her efforts to prevent vivisection; and he was a vice-president of the "Victoria Street Society for the Protection of Animals." Dr. Berdoe says, "He always expressed the utmost abhorrence of the practices which it opposes." To Miss Cobbe he wrote in 1874: "You have heard, 'I take an equal interest with yourself in the effort to suppress vivisection.' I dare not so honor my mere wishes and prayers as to put them for a moment beside your noble acts; but this I know, I would rather submit to the worst of deaths, so far as pain goes, than have a single dog or cat tortured on the pretence of sparing me a twinge or two." He goes even so far as to say that the person not willing to sign the petition against vivisection certainly could not be numbered among his friends. To Miss Stackpoole he wrote in April, 1883: "I despise and abhor the pleas on behalf of that infamous practice, vivisection." G. W. COOKE.

SING me a hero! Quench my thirst  
Of soul, ye bards!

Quoth Bard the first:

"Sir Olaf, the good knight, did don  
His helm and eke his habergeon" . . .  
Sir Olaf and his bard —!

"That sin-scathed brow" (quoth Bard the second),

"That eye wide ope as though Fate beckoned

My hero to some steep, beneath  
Which precipice smiled tempting death" . . .  
You too without your host have reckoned!

"A beggar-child" (let's hear this third!)

"Sat on a quay's edge: like a bird  
Sang to herself at careless play,  
And fell into the stream. 'Dismay!  
Help, you the standers-by!' None stirred.

'Bystanders reason, think of wives  
And children ere they risk their lives.  
Over the balustrade has bounced  
A mere instinctive dog, and pounced  
Plumb on the prize. 'How well he dives!

"Up he comes with the child, see, tight  
In mouth, alive too, clutched from quite  
A depth of ten feet — twelve, I bet!  
Good dog! What, off again? There's yet  
Another child to save? All right!

"How strange we saw no other fall!  
It's instinct in the animal.  
Good dog! But he's a long while under:  
If he got drowned I should not wonder —  
Strong current, that against the wall!

"Here he comes, holds in mouth this time  
— What may the thing be? Well, that's  
prime!

Now, did you ever? Reason reigns  
In man alone, since all Tray's pains  
Have fished — the child's doll from the slime!

"And so, amid the laughter gay,  
Trotted my hero off, — old Tray, —  
Till somebody, prerogative  
With reason, reasoned: 'Why he dived,  
His brain would show us, I should say.

"John, go and catch — or, if needs be,  
Purchase — that animal for me!  
By vivisection, at expense  
Of half-an-hour and eighteenpence,  
How brain secretes dog's soul, we'll see!"

## NED BRATTS

Written from memory of Bunyan's story of  
old Tod in *The Life and Death of Mr. Badman*.

'T WAS Bedford Special Assize, one daft Mid-  
summer's Day:

A broiling blasting June, — was never its like,  
men say.

Corn stood sheaf-ripe already, and trees looked  
yellow as that;

Ponds drained dust-dry, the cattle lay foaming  
around each flat.

Inside town, dogs went mad, and folk kept  
bibbing beer,

While the parsons prayed for rain. 'T was  
horrible, yes — but queer:

Queer — for the sun laughed gay, yet nobody  
moved a hand

To work one stroke at his trade; as given to  
understand

That all was come to a stop, work and such  
worldly ways,

And the world's old self about to end in a merry  
blaze,

Midsummer's day moreover was the first of  
Bedford Fair;

With Bedford Town's tag-rag and bobtail  
a-bowsing there.

But the Court House, Quality crammed:  
through doors ope, windows wide,

High on the Bench you saw sit Lordships side  
by side.

There frowned Chief Justice Jukes, fumed  
learned Brother Small,

And fretted their fellow Judge: like threshers,  
one and all,

Of a reek with laying down the law in a furnace.  
Why?

Because their lungs breathed flame — the regu-  
lar crowd forbye —

From gentry pouring in — quite a nosegay, to be sure!

How else could they pass the time, six mortal hours endure

Till night should extinguish day, when matters might haply mend?

Meanwhile no bad resource was — watching begin and end

Some trial for life and death, in a brisk five minutes' space,

And betting which knave would 'scape, which hang, from his sort of face.

So, their Lordships toiled and moiled, and a deal of work was done

(I warrant) to justify the mirth of the crazy sun, As this and t'other lout, struck dumb at the sudden show

Of red robes and white wigs, boggled nor answered "Boh!"

When asked why he, Tom Styles, should not — because Jack Nokes

Had stolen the horse — be hanged: for Judges must have their jokes,

And louts must make allowance — let 's say, for some blue fly

Which punctured a dewy scalp where the frizzles stuck awry —

Else Tom had fleeced scot-free, so nearly over and done

Was the main of the job. Full-measure, the gentles enjoyed their fun,

As a twenty-five were tried, rank puritans caught at prayer

In a cow-house and laid by the heels, — have at 'em, devil may care! —

And ten were prescribed the whip, and ten a brand on the cheek,

And five a slit of the nose — just leaving enough to tweak.

Well, things at jolly high-tide, amusement steeped in fire,

While noon smote fierce the roof's red tiles to heart's desire,

The Court a-simmer with smoke, one ferment of oozy flesh,

One spirituous humming musk mount-mounting until its mesh

Entoiled all heads in a fluster, and Serjeant Postlethwayte

— Dashing the wig oblique as he mopped his oily pate —

Cried "Silence, or I grow grease! No loophole lets in air?"

Jury men, — Guilty, Death! Gainsay me if you dare!"

— Things at this pitch, I say, — what hubbub without the doors?

What laughs, shrieks, hoots and yells, what rudest of uproars?

Bounce through the barrier throng a bulk comes rolling vast!

Thumps, kicks, — no manner of use! — spite of them rolls at last

Into the midst a ball, which, bursting, brings to view

Publican Black Ned Bratts and Tabby his big wife too:

Both in a muck-sweat, both . . . were never such eyes uplift

At the sight of yawning hell, such nostrils — snouts that sniffed

Sulphur, such mouths agape ready to swallow flame!

Horrified, hideous, frank fiend-faces! yet, all the same,

Mixed with a certain . . . eh? how shall I dare style — mirth

The desperate grin of the guess that, could they break from earth,

Heaven was above, and hell might rage in impotence

Below the saved, the saved!

"Confound you! (no offence!)

Out of our way, — push, wife! Yonder their Worships be!"

Ned Bratts has reached the bar, and "Hey, my Lords," roars he,

"A Jury of life and death, Judges the prime of the land,

Constables, javelineers, — all met, if I understand,

To decide so knotty a point as whether 't was Jack or Joan

Robbed the henroost, pinched the pig, hit the King's Arms with a stone,

Dropped the baby down the well, left the tithesman in the lurch,

Or, three whole Sundays running, not once attended church!

What a pother — do these deserve the parish-stocks or whip,

More or less brow to brand, much or little nose to snip, —

When, in our Public, plain stand we — that 's we stand here

I and my Tab, brass-bold, brick-built of beef and beer,

— Do not we, slut? Step forth and show your beauty, jade!

Wife of my bosom — that 's the word now! What a trade

We drove! None said us nay: nobody loved his life

So little as wag a tongue against us, — did they, wife?

Yet they knew us all the while, in their hearts, for what we are

— Worst couple, rogue and quean, unchanged — search near and far!

Eh, Tab? The peddler, now — o'er his noggin — who warned a mate

To cut and run, nor risk his pack where its loss of weight

Was the least to dread, — aha, how we two laughed a-good

As, stealing round the midden, he came on where I stood

With billet poised and raised, — you, ready with the rope, —

Ah, but that 's past, that 's sin repented of, we hope!

Men knew us for that same, yet safe and sound  
stood we!

The lily-livered knaves knew too (I've balked  
a d——)

Our keeping the 'Pied Bull' was just a mere  
pretence:

Tooslow the pounds make food, drink, lodging,  
from out the pence!

There's not a stoppage to travel has chanced,  
this ten long year,

No break into hall or grange, no lifting of nag  
or steer,

Not a single roguery, from the clipping of a  
purse

To the cutting of a throat, but paid us toll.  
Od's curse!

When Gypsy Smouch made bold to cheat us of  
our due,

—Eh, Tab? the Squire's strong-box we helped  
the rascal to—

I think he pulled a face, next Sessions' swinging-  
time!

He danced the jig that needs no floor, — and,  
here's the prime,

'Twas Scroggs that houghed the mare! Ay,  
those were busy days!

"Well, there we flourished brave, like scrip-  
ture-trees called bays,

Faring high, drinking hard, in money up to head  
— Not to say, boots and shoes, when . . .

Zounds, I nearly said —

Lord, to unlearn one's language! How shall  
we labor, wife?

Have you, fast hold, the Book? Grasp, grip it,  
for your life!

See, sirs, here's life, salvation! Here's —  
hold but out my breath —

When did I speak so long without once swear-  
ing? 'Sdeath,

No, nor unhelped by ale since man and boy!  
And yet

All yesterday I had to keep my whistle wet  
While reading Tab this Book: book? don't

say 'book' — they're plays,  
Songs, ballads, and the like: here's no such

strawy blaze,  
But sky wide ope, sun, moon, and seven stars

out full-flare!  
Tab, help and tell! I'm hoarse. A mug! or

— no, a prayer!  
Dip for one out of the Book! Who wrote it in

the Jail  
— He plied his pen unhelped by beer, sirs, I'll

be bail!

'I've got my second wind. In trundles she —  
that's Tab.

'Why, Gammer, what's come now, that —  
bobbing like a crab

On Yule-tide bowl — your head's a-work and  
both your eyes

Break loose? Afeard, you fool? As if the  
dead can rise!

Say — Bagman Dick was found last May with  
fuddling-cap

Stuffed in his mouth: to choke's a natural  
mishap!

'Gaffer, be — blessed,' cries she, 'and Bagman  
Dick as well!

I, you, and he are damned: this Public is our  
hell:

We live in fire: live coals don't feel! — once  
quenched, they learn —

Cinders do, to what dust they moulder while  
they burn!

"If you don't speak straight out," says I —  
belike I swore —

'A knobstick, well you know the taste of, shall,  
once more,

Teach you to talk, my maid!' She ups with  
such a face,

Heart sunk inside me. 'Well, pad on, my  
prate-apace!'

"I've been about those laces we need for . . .  
never mind!

If henceforth they tie hands, 't is mine they'll  
have to bind.

You know who makes them best — the Tinker  
in our cage,

Pulled-up for gospelling, twelve years ago: no  
age

To try another trade, — yet, so he scorned to  
take

Money he did not earn, he taught himself the  
make

Of laces, tagged and tough — Dick Bagman  
found them so!

Good customers were we! Well, last week,  
you must know,

His girl, — the blind young chit, who hawks  
about his wares, —

She takes it in her head to come no more —  
such airs

These hussies have! Yet, since we need a  
stoutish lace, —

"I'll to the jail-bird father, abuse her to his  
face!"

So, first I filled a jug to give me heart, and then,  
Primed to the proper pitch, I posted to their

den —

Patmore, they style their prison! I tip the  
turnkey, catch

My heart up, fix my face, and fearless lift the  
latch —

Both arms akimbo, in bounce with a good  
round oath

Ready for rapping out: no "Lawks" nor "By  
my troth!"

"There sat my man, the father. He looked  
up: what one feels

When heart that leapt to mouth drops down  
again to heels!

He raised his hand . . . Hast seen, when  
drinking out the night,

And in, the day, earth grow another something  
quite

Under the sun's first stare? I stood a very stone.

" "Woman!" (a fiery tear he put in every  
tone),

"How should my child frequent your house  
where lust is sport,



Violence — trade? Too true! I trust no vague report.

Her angel's hand, which stops the sight of sin, leaves clear

The other gate of sense, lets outrage through the ear.

What has she heard! — which, heard shall never be again.

Better lack food than feast, a Dives in the — wain

Or reign or train — of Charles!" (His language was not ours:

"T is my belief, God spoke: no tinker has such powers.)

"Bread, only bread they bring — my laces: if we broke

Your lump of leavened sin, the loaf's first crumb would choke!"

"Down on my marrow-bones! Then all at once rose he:

His brown hair burst a-spread, his eyes were suns to see:

Up went his hands: "Through flesh, I reach, I read thy soul!"

So may some stricken tree look blasted, bough and bole,

Champed by the fire-tooth, charred without, and yet, thrice-bound

With dreriment about, within may life be found, A prisoned power to branch and blossom as before,

Could but the gardener cleave the cloister, reach the core,

Loosen the vital sap: yet where shall help be found?

Who says 'How save it?' — nor 'Why cumbers it the ground?'

Woman, that tree art thou! All sloughed about with scurf,

Thy stag-horns fright the sky, thy snake-roots sting the turf!

Drunkenness, wantonness, theft, murder gnash and gnarl

Thine outward, ease thy soul with coating like the marle

Satan stamps flat upon each head beneath his hoof!

And how deliver such? The strong men keep aloof,

Lover and friend stand far, the mocking ones pass by,

Tophet gapes wide for prey: lost soul, despair and die!

What then? Look unto me and be ye saved!' saith God:

I strike the rock, outstreats the life-stream at my rod!<sup>1</sup>

Be your sins scarlet, wool shall they seem like, — although

As crimson red, yet turn white as the driven snow!"

"There, there, there! All I seem to somehow understand

His flesh, nor suck those oils which thence outstreat.

DONNE'S *Progress of the Soul*, line 344.

Is — that, if I reached home, 't was through the guiding hand

Of his blind girl which led and led me through the streets

And out of town and up to door again. What greets

First thing my eye, as limbs recover from their swoon?

A book — this Book she gave at parting. "Father's boon —

The Book he wrote: it reads as if he spoke himself:

He cannot preach in bonds, so, — take it down from shelf

When you want counsel, — think you hear his very voice!

"Wicked dear Husband, first despair and then rejoice!

Dear wicked Husband, waste no tick of moment more,

Be saved like me, bald trunk! There's greenness yet at core,

Sap under slough! Read, read!'

"Let me take breath, my lords!

I'd like to know, are these — hers, mine, or Bunyan's words?

I'm 'wildered — scarce with drink, — nowise with drink alone!

You'll say, with heat: but heat's no stuff to split a stone

Like this black boulder — this flint heart of mine: the Book —

That dealt the crashing blow! Sirs, here's the fist that shook

His beard till Wrestler Jem howled like a just-lugged bear!

You had brained me with a feather: at once I grew aware

Christmas was meant for me. A burden at your back,

Good Master Christmas? Nay, — yours was that Joseph's sack,

— Or whose it was, — which held the cup, — compared with mine!

Robbery loads my loins, perjury cracks my chine, Adultery . . . nay, Tab, you pitched me as I flung!

One word, I'll up with fist . . . No, sweet spouse, hold your tongue!

"I'm hasting to the end. The Book, sirs — take and read!

You have my history in a nutshell, — ay, indeed! It must off, my burden! See, — slack straps

and into pit,

Roll, reach the bottom, rest, rot there — a plague on it!

For a mountain's sure to fall and bury Bedford Town,

'Destruction' — that's the name, and fire shall burn it down!

Oh, 'scape the wrath in time! Time's now, if not too late.

How can I pilgrimage up to the wicket-gate? Next comes Despond the slough: not that I fear to pull

Through mud, and dry my clothes at brave  
House Beautiful —  
But it's late in the day, I reckon: had I left  
years ago  
Town, wife, and children dear . . . Well,  
Christmas did, you know! —  
Soon I had met in the valley and tried my cud-  
gel's strength  
On the enemy horned and winged, a-straddle  
across its length!  
Have at his horns, thwack — thwack: they  
snap, see! Hoof and hoof —  
Bang, break the fetlock-bones! For love's  
sake, keep aloof  
Angels! I'm man and match, — this cudgel  
for my flail, —  
To thresh him, hoofs and horns, bat's wing and  
serpent's tail!  
A chance gone by! But then, what else does  
Hopeful ding  
Into the deafest ear except — hope, hope 's the  
thing?  
Too late i' the day for me to thrid the wind-  
ings: but  
There's still a way to win the race by death's  
short cut!  
Did Master Faithful need climb the Delightful  
Mounts?  
No, straight to Vanity Fair, — a fair, by all ac-  
counts,  
Such as is held outside, — lords, ladies, grand  
and gay, —  
Says he in the face of them, just what you hear  
me say.  
And the Judges brought him in guilty, and  
brought him out  
To die in the market-place — St. Peter's Green's  
about  
The same thing: there they flogged, flayed,  
buffeted, lanced with knives,  
Pricked him with swords, — I'll swear, he'd  
full a cat's nine lives, —  
So to his end at last came Faithful, — ha, ha, he!  
Who holds the highest card? for there stands  
hid, you see,  
Behind the rabble-rout, a chariot, pair and all:  
He's in, he's off, he's up, through clouds, at  
trumpet-call,  
Carried the nearest way to Heaven-gate! Odds  
my life —  
Has nobody a sword to spare? not even a knife?  
Then hang me, draw and quarter! Tab — do  
the same by her!  
O Master Worldly-Wiseman . . . that's Master  
Interpreter,  
Take the will, not the deed! Our gibbet's  
handy, close:  
Foretell Last Judgment-Day! Be kindly, not  
morose!  
There wants no earthly judge-and-jurying: here  
we stand —  
Sentence our guilty selves: so, hang us out of  
hand!  
Make haste for pity's sake! A single moment's  
loss  
Means — Satan's lord once more: his whisper  
shoots across  
All singing in my heart, all praying in my brain,

'It comes of heat and beer!' — hark how he  
guffaws plain!  
'To-morrow you'll wake bright, and, in a safe  
skin, hug  
Your sound selves, Tab and you, over a foam-  
ing jug!  
You've had such qualms before, time out of  
mind!' He's right!  
Did not we kick and cuff and curse away, that  
night  
When home we blindly reeled, and left poor  
humpback Joe  
I' the lurch to pay for what . . . somebody  
did, you know!  
Both of us maundered then, 'Lame humpback,  
— never more  
Will he come limping, drain his tankard at our  
door!  
He'll swing, while — somebody' . . . Says Tab,  
'No, for I'll peach!'  
'I'm for you, Tab,' cries I, 'there's rope  
enough for each!'  
So blubbered we, and bussed, and went to bed  
upon  
The grace of Tab's good thought: by morning,  
all was gone!  
We laughed — 'What's life to him, a cripple  
of no account?'  
Oh, waves increase around — I feel them mount  
and mount!  
Hang us! To-morrow brings Tom Bearward  
with his bears:  
One new black-muzzled brute beats Sackerson,  
he swears:  
(Sackerson, for my money!) And, baiting o'er,  
the Brawl  
They lead on Turner's Patch, — lads, lasses, up  
tails all, —  
I'm i' the thick o' the throng! That means  
the Iron Cage,  
— Means the Lost Man inside! Where's hope  
for such as wage  
War against light? Light's left, light's here,  
I hold light still,  
So does Tab — make but haste to hang us both!  
You will?"

I promise, when he stopped you might have  
heard a mouse  
Sneak, such a death-like hush sealed up the  
old Mote House.  
But when the mass of man sank meek upon his  
knees,  
While Tab, alongside, wheezed a hoarse "Do  
hang us, please!"  
Why, then the waters rose, no eye but ran with  
tears,  
Hearts heaved, heads thumped, until, paying  
all past arrears  
Of pity and sorrow, at last a regular scream  
outbroke  
Of triumph, joy, and praise.

My Lord Chief Justice spoke,  
First mopping brow and cheek, where still, for  
one that budged,  
Another bead broke fresh: "What Judge, that  
ever judged

Since first the world began, judged such a case  
as this?  
Why, Master Bratts, long since, folks smelt  
you out, I wis!  
I had my doubts, i' faith, each time you played  
the fox  
Convicting geese of crime in yonder witness-  
box —  
Yea, much did I misdoubt, the thief that stole  
her eggs  
Was hardly goosey's self at Reynard's game, i'  
feggs!  
Yet thus much was to praise — you spoke to  
point, direct —  
Swore you heard, saw the theft: no jury could  
suspect —  
Dared to suspect, — I'll say, — a spot in white  
so clear:  
Goosey was throttled, true: but thereof godly  
fear  
Came of example set, much as our laws in-  
tend;  
And, though a fox confessed, you proved the  
Judge's friend.  
What if I had my doubts? Suppose I gave  
them breath,  
Brought you to bar: what work to do, ere  
'Guilty, Death'  
Had paid our pains! What heaps of witnesses  
to drag  
From holes and corners, paid from out the  
County's bag!  
Trial three dog-days long! *Amicus Curiae* —  
that's  
Your title, no dispute — truth-telling Master  
Bratts!  
Thank you, too, Mistress Tab! Why doubt  
one word you say?  
Hanging you both deserve, hanged both shall  
be this day!  
The tinker needs must be a proper man. I've  
heard

He lies in Jail long since: if Quality's good  
word  
Warrants me letting loose, — some householder,  
I mean —  
Freeholder, better still, — I don't say but —  
between  
Now and next Sessions . . . Well! Consider  
of his case,  
I promise to, at least: we owe him so much  
grace.  
Not that — no, God forbid! — I lean to think,  
as you,  
The grace that such repent is any jail-bird's due:  
I rather see the fruit of twelve years' pious  
reign —  
Astræa Redux, Charles restored his rights  
again!  
— Of which, another time! I somehow feel a  
peace  
Stealing across the world. May deeds like  
this increase!  
So, Master Sheriff, stay that sentence I pro-  
nounced  
On those two dozen odd: deserving to be  
trounced  
Soundly, and yet . . . well, well, at all events  
dispatch  
This pair of — shall I say, sinner-saints? — ere  
we catch  
Their jail-distemper too. Stop tears, or I'll in-  
dite  
All weeping Bedfordshire for turning Bunyan-  
ite!

So, forms were galloped through. If Justice,  
on the spur,  
Proved somewhat expeditious, would Quality  
demur?  
And happily hanged were they, — why lengthen  
out my tale? —  
Where Bunyan's Statue stands facing where  
stood his Jail.

## SECOND SERIES

"You are sick, that 's sure," — they say:  
"Sick of what?" — they disagree.  
"T is the brain," — thinks Doctor A;  
"T is the heart," — holds Doctor B;  
"The liver — my life I 'd lay!"  
"The lungs!" "The lights!"

Ah me!

So ignorant of man's whole  
Of bodily organs plain to see —  
So sage and certain, frank and free,  
About what 's under lock and key —  
Man's soul!

## ECHETLOS

HERE is a story, shall stir you! Stand up,  
Greeks dead and gone,  
Who breasted, beat Barbarians, stemmed Per-  
sia rolling on,  
Did the deed and saved the world, for the day  
was Marathon!

No man but did his manliest, kept rank and  
fought away  
In his tribe and file: up, back, out, down —  
was the spear-arm play:  
Like a wind-whipt branchy wood, all spear-  
arms a-swing that day!



But one man kept no rank, and his sole arm  
plied no spear,  
As a flashing came and went, and a form i' the  
van, the rear,  
Brightened the battle up, for he blazed now  
there, now here.

Nor helmed nor shielded, he! but, a goat-skin  
all his wear,  
Like a tiller of the soil, with a clown's limbs  
broad and bare,  
Went he ploughing on and on: he pushed with  
a ploughman's share.

Did the weak mid-line give way, as tunnies on  
whom the shark  
Precipitates his bulk? Did the right-wing  
halt when, stark  
On his heap of slain lay stretched Kallimachos  
Polemarch?

Did the steady phalanx falter? To the rescue,  
at the need,  
The clown was ploughing Persia, clearing  
Greek earth of weed,  
As he routed through the Sakian and rooted up  
the Meds.

But the deed done, battle won, — nowhere to  
be descried  
On the meadow, by the stream, at the marsh,  
— look far and wide  
From the foot of the mountain, no, to the last  
blood-plashed sea-side, —

Not anywhere on view blazed the large limbs  
thonged and brown,  
Shearing and clearing still with the share  
before which — down  
To the dust went Persia's pomp, as he ploughed  
for Greece, that clown!

How spake the Oracle? "Care for no name  
at all!  
Say but just this: 'We praise one helpful  
whom we call  
The Holder of the Ploughshare.' The great  
deed ne'er grows small."

Not the great name! Sing — woe for the  
great name Miltiadés  
And its end at Paros isle! Woe for Themis-  
tokles  
— Satrap in Sardis court! Name not the  
clown like these!

## CLIVE

Browning had this story from Mrs. Jameson  
as early as 1846, she in turn having just heard  
Macaulay tell it. Browning's own narrative  
preceded Clive's death by a week only.

I AND Clive were friends — and why not?  
Friends! I think you laugh, my lad.

Clive it was gave England India, while your  
father gives — egad,  
England nothing but the graceless boy who  
lures him on to speak —

"Well, Sir, you and Clive were comrades —"  
with a tongue thrust in your cheek!  
Very true: in my eyes, your eyes, all the  
world's eyes, Clive was man,  
I was, am, and ever shall be — mouse, nay,  
mouse of all its clan  
Sorriest sample, if you take the kitchen's esti-  
mate for fame;  
While the man Clive — he fought Plassy,  
spoiled the clever foreign game,  
Conquered and annexed and Englished!

Never mind! As o'er my punch  
(You away) I sit of evenings, — silence, save for  
biscuit crunch,

Black, unbroken, — thought grows busy, thrids  
each pathway of old years,  
Notes this forthright, that meander, till the  
long-past life appears

Like an outspread map of country plodded  
through, each mile and rood,  
Once, and well remembered still, — I'm star-  
tled in my solitude

Ever and anon by — what's the sudden mock-  
ing light that breaks  
On me as I slap the table till no rummer-glass  
but shakes

While I ask — aloud, I do believe, God help  
me! — "Was it thus?"

Can it be that so I faltered, stopped when just  
one step for us — "

(Us, — you were not born, I grant, but surely  
some day born would be)

"— One bold step had gained a province"  
(figurative talk, you see)

"Got no end of wealth and honor, — yet I  
stood stock-still no less?"

"— 'For I was not Clive,' you comment: but it  
needs no Clive to guess

Wealth were handy, honor ticklish, did no  
writing on the wall

Warn me "Trespasser, 'ware man-traps!"  
Him who braves that notice — call

Hero! none of such heroics suit myself who  
read plain words,

Doff my hat, and leap no barrier. Scripture  
says, the land's the Lord's:

Louts then — what avail the thousand, noisy  
in a smock-frocked ring,

All-agog to have me trespass, clear the fence,  
be Clive their king?

Higher warrant must you show me ere I set one  
foot before

T' other in that dark direction, though I stand  
forevermore

Poor as Job and meek as Moses. Evermore?  
No! By and by

Job grows rich and Moses valiant, Clive turns  
out less wise than I.

Don't object "Why call him friend, then?"  
Power is power, my boy, and still

Marks a man, — God's gift magnific, exercised  
for good or ill.

You've your boot now on my hearth-rug,  
tread what was a tiger's skin:  
Rarely such a royal monster as I lodged the  
bullet in!

True, he murdered half a village, so his own  
death came to pass;

Still, for size and beauty, cunning, courage —  
ah, the brute he was!

Why, that Clive, — that youth, that greenhorn,  
that quill-driving clerk, in fine, —

He sustained a siege in Arcot . . . But the  
world knows! Pass the wine.

Where did I break off at? How bring Clive  
in? Oh, you mentioned "fear"!

Just so: and, said I, that minds me of a story  
you shall hear.

We were friends then, Clive and I: so, when  
the clouds, about the orb

Late supreme, encroaching slowly, surely,  
threatened to absorb

Ray by ray its noontide brilliance, — friendship  
might, with steadier eye

Drawing near, bear what had burned else, now  
no blaze — all majesty.

Too much bee's-wing floats my figure? Well,  
suppose a castle's new:

None presume to climb its ramparts, none find  
foothold sure for shoe

'Twixt those squares and squares of granite  
playing the impervious pile

As his scale-mail's warty iron cuirasses a croc-  
odile.

Reels that castle thunder-smitten, storm-dis-  
mantled? From without

Scrambling up by crack and crevice, every  
cockney prates about

Towers — the heap he kicks now! turrets —  
just the measure of his cane!

Will that do? Observe moreover — (same si-  
militude again) —

Such a castle seldom crumbles by sheer stress  
of cannonade:

'Tis when foes are foiled and fighting's fin-  
ished that vile rains invade.

Grass o'ergrows, o'ergrows till night-birds con-  
gregating find no holes

Fit to build in like the topmost sockets made  
for banner-poles.

So Clive crumbled slow in London, crashed at  
last.

A week before,

Dining with him, — after trying churchyard  
chat of days of yore, —

Both of us stopped, tired as tombstones, head-  
piece, foot-piece, when they lean

Each to other, drowned in fog-smoke, o'er a  
coffined Past between.

As I saw his head sink heavy, guessed the soul's  
extinguishment

By the glazing eyeball, noticed how the furtive  
fingers went

Where a drug-box skulked behind the honest  
liquor, — "One more throw

Try for Clive!" thought I: "Let's venture  
some good rattling question!" So —

"Come Clive, tell us" — out I blurted —  
"what to tell in turn, years hence,

When my boy — suppose I have one — asks me  
on what evidence

I maintain my friend of Plassy proved a war-  
rior every whit

Worth your Alexanders, Cæsars, Marlboroughs  
and — what said Pitt? —

Frederick the Fierce himself! Clive told me  
once" — I want to say —

"Which feat out of all those famous doings bore  
the bell away

— In his own calm estimation, mark you, not  
the mob's rough guess —

Which stood foremost as evincing what Clive  
called courageousness!

Come! what moment of the minute, what  
speck-centre in the wide

Circle of the action saw your mortal fairly dei-  
fied?

(Let alone that filthy sleep-stuff, swallow bold  
this wholesome Port!)

If a friend has leave to question, — when were  
you most brave, in short?"

Up he arched his brows o' the instant — for-  
midably Clive again.

"When was I most brave? I'd answer, were  
the instance half as plain

As another instance that's a brain-lodged crys-  
tal — curse it! — here

Freezing when my memory touches — ugh! —  
the time I felt most fear.

Ugh! I cannot say for certain if I showed fear  
— anyhow,

Fear I felt, and, very likely, shuddered, since  
I shiver now."

"Fear!" smiled I. "Well, that's the rarer:  
that's a specimen to seek,

Ticket up in one's museum, *Mind-Freaks, Lord  
Clive's Fear, Unique!*"

Down his brows dropped. On the table pain-  
fully he pored as though

Tracing, in the stains and streaks there,  
thoughts encrusted long ago.

When he spoke 't was like a lawyer reading  
word by word some will,

Some blind jungle of a statement, — beating on  
and on until

Out there leaps fierce life to fight with.

"This fell in my factor-days.

Desk-drudge, slaving at Saint David's, one  
must game, or drink, or craze.

I chose gaming: and, — because your high-  
flown gamesters hardly take

Umbrage at a factor's elbow if the factor pays  
his stake, —

I was winked at in a circle where the company  
was choice.

Captain This and Major That, men high of  
color, loud of voice,

Yet indulgent, condescending to the modest  
juvenile

Who not merely risked but lost his hard-earned  
guineas with a smile.

"Down I sat to cards, one evening, — had for my antagonist  
 Somebody whose name 's a secret — you 'll know why — so, if you list,  
 Call him Cock o' the Walk, my scarlet son of Mars from head to heel!  
 Play commenced: and, whether Cocky fancied that a clerk must feel  
 Quite sufficient honor came of bending over one green baize,  
 I the scribe with him the warrior, guessed no penman dared to raise  
 Shadow of objection should the honor stay but playing end  
 More or less abruptly, — whether disinclined he grew to spend  
 Practice strictly scientific on a booby born to stare  
 At — not ask of — lace-and-ruffles if the hand they hide plays fair, —  
 Anyhow, I marked a movement when he bade me 'Cut!'

"I rose.  
 'Such the new manœuvre, Captain? I'm a novice: knowledge grows.  
 What, you force a card, you cheat, Sir?'

"Never did a thunder-clap  
 Cause emotion, startle Thyrsis locked with Chloe in his lap,  
 As my word and gesture (down I flung my cards to join the pack)  
 Fired the man of arms, whose visage, simply red before, turned black.

When he found his voice, he stammered 'That expression once again!'

"'Well, you forced a card and cheated!'

"Possibly a factor's brain,  
 Busied with his all-important balance of accounts, may deem  
 Weighing words superfluous trouble: *cheat* to clerkly ears may seem  
 Just the joke for friends to venture: but we are not friends, you see!  
 When a gentleman is joked with, — if he's good at repartee,  
 He rejoins, as do I — Sirrah, on your knees, withdraw in full!  
 Beg my pardon, or be sure a kindly bullet through your skull  
 Lets in light and teaches manner to what brain it finds! Choose quick —  
 Have your life snuffed out or, kneeling, pray me trim yon candle-wick!'

"Well, you cheated!'

"Then outbroke a howl from all the friends around.  
 To his feet sprang each in fury, fists were clenched and teeth were ground.  
 'End it! no time like the present! Captain, yours were our disgrace!  
 No delay, begin and finish! Stand back, leave the pair a space!

Let civilians be instructed: henceforth simply ply the pen,  
 Fly the sword! This clerk 's no swordsman? Suit him with a pistol, then!  
 Even odds! A dozen paces 'twixt the most and least expert  
 Make a dwarf a giant's equal: nay, the dwarf, if he 's alert,  
 Likelier hits the broader target!'

"Up we stood accordingly.  
 As they handed me the weapon, such was my soul's thirst to try  
 Then and there conclusions with this bully, tread on and stamp out  
 Every spark of his existence, that, — crept close to, curled about  
 By that toying tempting teasing fool-forefinger's middle joint, —  
 Don't you guess? — the trigger yielded. Gone my chance! and at the point  
 Of such prime success moreover: scarce an inch above his head  
 Went my ball to hit the wainscot. He was living, I was dead.

"Up he marched in flaming triumph — 't was his right, mind! — up, within  
 Just an arm's length. 'Now, my clerkling,' chuckled Cocky with a grin  
 As the levelled piece quite touched me, 'Now, Sir Counting-House, repeat  
 That expression which I told you proved bad manners! Did I cheat?'

"'Cheat you did, you knew you cheated, and, this moment, know as well.  
 As for me, my homely breeding bids you — fire and go to Hell!'

"Twice the muzzle touched my forehead.  
 Heavy barrel, flurried wrist,  
 Either spoils a steady lifting. Thrice: then, 'Laugh at Hell who list,  
 I can't! God's no fable either. Did this boy's eye wink once? No!  
 There 's no standing him and Hell and God all three against me, — so,  
 I did cheat!'

"And down he threw the pistol, out rushed — by the door  
 Possibly, but, as for knowledge if by chimney, roof or floor,  
 He effected disappearance — I 'll engage no glance was sent  
 That way by a single starrer, such a blank astonishment  
 Swallowed up their senses: as for speaking — mute they stood as mice.

"Mute not long, though! Such reaction, such a hubbub in a trice!  
 'Rogue and rascal! Who'd have thought it? What 's to be expected next,  
 When His Majesty's Commission serves a sharper as pretext



For . . . But where's the need of wasting  
time now? Naught requires delay:  
Punishment the Service cries for: let disgrace  
be wiped away  
Publicly, in good broad daylight! Resigna-  
tion? No, indeed!  
Drum and fife must play the Rogue's-March,  
rank and file be free to speed  
Tardy marching on the rogue's part by appli-  
ance in the rear  
-- Kicks administered shall right this wronged  
civilian, -- never fear,  
Mister Clive, for -- though a clerk -- you bore  
yourself -- suppose we say --  
Just as would besem a soldier?

"Gentlemen, attention -- pray!  
First, one word!"

"I passed each speaker severally in review.  
When I had precise their number, names and  
styles, and fully knew  
Over whom my supervision thenceforth must  
extend, -- why, then --

"Some five minutes since, my life lay -- as you  
all saw, gentlemen --  
At the mercy of your friend there. Not a  
single voice was raised  
In arrest of judgment, not one tongue -- before  
my powder blazed --  
Ventured "Can it be the youngster blundered,  
really seemed to mark  
Some irregular proceeding? We conjecture in  
the dark,  
Guess at random, -- still, for sake of fair play  
-- what if for a freak,  
In a fit of absence, -- such things have been! --  
if our friend proved weak  
-- What's the phrase? -- corrected fortune!  
Look into the case, at least!"  
Who dared interpose between the altar's victim  
and the priest?  
Yet he spared me! You eleven! Whosoever,  
all or each,  
To the disadvantage of the man who spared  
me, utters speech  
-- To his face, behind his back, -- that speaker  
has to do with me:  
Me who promise, if positions change and mine  
the chance should be,  
Not to imitate your friend and waive ad-  
vantage!"

"Twenty-five  
Years ago this matter happened: and 't is  
certain," added Clive,  
"Never, to my knowledge, did Sir Cocky have  
a single breath  
Breathed against him: lips were closed through-  
out his life, or since his death,  
For if he be dead or living I can tell no more  
than you.  
All I know is -- Cocky had one chance more;  
how he used it, -- grew  
Out of such unlucky habits, or relapsed, and  
back again

Brought the late-ejected devil with a score  
more in his train, --  
That 's for you to judge. Reprieve I procured,  
at any rate.  
Ugh -- the memory of that minute's fear makes  
gooseflesh rise! Why prate  
Longer? You've my story, there's your  
instance: fear I did, you see!"

"Well" -- I hardly kept from laughing -- "if  
I see it, thanks must be  
Wholly to your Lordship's candor. Not that  
-- in a common case --  
When a bully caught at cheating thrusts a  
pistol in one's face,  
I should under-rate, believe me, such a trial to  
the nerve!  
'T is no joke, at one-and-twenty, for a youth to  
stand nor swerve.  
Fear I naturally look for -- unless, of all men  
alive,  
I am forced to make exception when I come to  
Robert Clive.  
Since at Arcot, Plassy, elsewhere, he and death  
-- the whole world knows --  
Came to somewhat closer quarters."

Quarters? Had we come to blows,  
Clive and I, you had not wondered -- up he  
sprang so, out he rapped  
Such a round of oaths -- no matter! I'll en-  
deavor to adapt  
To our modern usage words he -- well, 't was  
friendly license -- flung  
At me like so many fire-balls, fast as he could  
wag his tongue.

"You -- a soldier? You -- at Plassy? Yours  
the faculty to nick  
Instantaneously occasion when your foe, if  
lightning-quick,  
-- At his mercy, at his malice, -- has you,  
through some stupid inch  
Undefended in your bulwark? Thus laid open,  
-- not to flinch  
-- That needs courage, you'll concede me.  
Then, look here! Suppose the man,  
Checking his advance, his weapon still ex-  
tended, not a span  
Distant from my temple, -- curse him! -- quiet-  
ly had bade me, 'There!  
Keep your life, calumniator! -- worthless life I  
freely spare:  
Mine you freely would have taken -- murdered  
me and my good fame  
Both at once -- and all the better! Go, and  
thank your own bad aim  
Which permits me to forgive you!' What if,  
with such words as these,  
He had cast away his weapon? How should  
I have borne me, please?  
Nay, I'll spare you pains and tell you. This,  
and only this, remained --  
Pick his weapon up and use it on myself. If  
so had gained  
Sleep the earlier, leaving England probably to  
pay on still

Rent and taxes for half India, tenant at the Frenchman's will."

"Such the turn," said I, "the matter takes with you? Then I abate

—No, by not one jot nor tittle,—of your act my estimate.

Fear—I wish I could detect there: courage fronts me, plain enough—

Call it desperation, madness—never mind! for here's in rough

Why, had mine been such a trial, fear had overcome disgrace.

True, disgrace were hard to bear: but such a rush against God's face

—None of that for me, Lord Plassy, since I go to church at times,

Say the creed my mother taught me! Many years in foreign climes

Rub some marks away—not all, though! We poor sinners reach life's brink,

Overlook what rolls beneath it, recklessly enough, but think

There's advantage in what's left us—ground to stand on, time to call

'Lord, have mercy!' ere we topple over—do not leap, that's all!"

Oh, he made no answer, re-absorbed into his cloud. I caught

Something like "Yes—courage: only fools will call it fear."

If aught

Comfort you, my great unhappy hero Clive, in that I heard,

Next week, how your own hand dealt you doom, and uttered just the word

"Fearfully courageous!"—this, be sure, and nothing else I groaned.

I'm no Clive, nor parson either: Clive's worst deed—we'll hope condoned.

### MULÉYKEH

If a stranger passed the tent of Hóseyn, he cried "A churl!"

Or haply "God help the man who has neither salt nor bread!"

—"Nay," would a friend exclaim, "he needs nor pity nor scorn

More than who spends small thought on the shore-sand, picking pearls,

—Holds but in light esteem the seed-sort, bears instead

On his breast a moon-like prize, some orb which of night makes morn.

"What if no flocks and herds enrich the son of Sinán?

They went when his tribe was mulct, ten thousand camels the due,

Blood-value paid perforce for a murder done of old.

'God gave them, let them go! But never since time began,

Muléykeh, peerless mare, owned master the match of you,  
And you are my prize, my Pearl: I laugh at men's land and gold!"

"So in the pride of his soul laughs Hóseyn—and right, I say.

Do the ten steeds run a race of glory? Outstripping all,

Ever Muléykeh stands first steed at the victor's staff.

Who started, the owner's hope, gets shamed and named, that day.

'Silence,' or, last but one, is 'The Cuffed,' as we use to call

Whom the paddock's lord thrusts forth. Right, Hóseyn, I say, to laugh!"

"Boasts he Muléykeh the Pearl?" the stranger replies: "Be sure

On him I waste nor scorn nor pity, but lavish both

On Duhl the son of Sheybán, who withers away in heart

For envy of Hóseyn's luck. Such sickness admits no cure.

A certain poet has sung, and sealed the same with an oath,

'For the vulgar—flocks and herds! The Pearl is a prize apart.'"

Lo, Duhl the son of Sheyban comes riding to Hóseyn's tent,

And he casts his saddle down, and enters and "Peace!" bids he.

"You are poor, I know the cause: my plenty shall mend the wrong.

'Tis said of your Pearl—the price of a hundred camels spent

In her purchase were scarce ill paid: such prudence is far from me

Who proffer a thousand. Speak! Long parley may last too long."

Said Hóseyn, "You feed young beasts a many, of famous breed,

Slit-eared, unblemished, fat, true offspring of Múzennem:

There stumbles no weak-eyed she in the line as it climbs the hill.

But I love Muléykeh's face: her forefront whitens indeed

Like a yellowish wave's cream-crest. Your camels—go gaze on them!

Her fetlock is foam-splashed too. Myself am the richer still."

A year goes by: lo, back to the tent again rides Duhl.

"You are open-hearted, ay—moist-handed, a very prince.

Why should I speak of sale? Be the mare your simple gift!

My son is pined to death for her beauty: my wife prompts 'Fool,

Beg for his sake the Pearl! Be God the rewarder, since

God pays debts seven for one : who squanders  
on Him shows thrift." "

Said Hóseyn, "God gives each man one life,  
like a lamp, then gives  
That lamp due measure of oil : lamp lighted —  
hold high, wave wide  
Its comfort for others to share ! once quench  
it, what help is left ?  
The oil of your lamp is your son : I shine while  
Muléykeh lives.  
Would I beg your son to cheer my dark if  
Muléykeh died ?  
It is life against life : what good avails to the  
life-bereft ? "

Another year, and — hist ! What craft is it  
Duhl designs ?  
He alights not at the door of the tent as he did  
last time,  
But, creeping behind, he gropes his stealthy  
way by the trench  
Half-round till he finds the flap in the folding,  
for night combines  
With the robber — and such is he : Duhl,  
covetous up to crime,  
Must wring from Hóseyn's grasp the Pearl, by  
whatever the wrench.

"He was hunger-bitten, I heard : I tempted  
with half my store,  
And a gibe was all my thanks. Is he generous  
like Spring dew ?  
Account the fault to me who chattered with  
such an one !  
He has killed, to feast chance comers, the  
creature he rode : nay, more —  
For a couple of singing-girls his robe has he  
torn in two :  
I will beg ! Yet I nowise gained by the tale of  
my wife and son.

"I swear by the Holy House, my head will  
I never wash  
Till I flich his Pearl away. Fair dealing I  
tried, then guile,  
And now I resort to force. He said we must  
live or die :  
Let him die, then, — let me live ! Be bold —  
but not too rash !  
I have found me a peeping-place : breast, bury  
your breathing while  
I explore for myself ! Now, breathe ! He  
deceived me not, the spy !

"As he said — there lies in peace Hóseyn —  
how happy ! Beside  
Stands tethered the Pearl : thrice winds her  
headstall about his wrist :  
'T is therefore he sleeps so sound — the moon  
through the roof reveals.  
And, loose on his left, stands too that other,  
known far and wide,  
Buhéyseh, her sister born : fleet is she yet ever  
missed  
The winning tail's fire-flash a-stream past the  
thunderous heels.

"No less she stands saddled and bridled, this  
second, in case some thief  
Should enter and seize and fly with the first, as  
I mean to do.  
What then ? The Pearl is the Pearl : once  
mount her we both escape."  
Through the skirt-fold in glides Duhl, — so a  
serpent disturbs no leaf  
In a bush as he parts the twigs entwining a nest :  
clean through,  
He is noiselessly at his work : as he planned, he  
performs the rape.

He has set the tent-door wide, has buckled the  
girth, has clipped  
The headstall away from the wrist he leaves  
thrice bound as before,  
He springs on the Pearl, is launched on the  
desert like bolt from bow.  
Up starts our plundered man : from his breast  
though the heart be ripped,  
Yet his mind has the mastery : behold, in a  
minute more,  
He is out and off and away on Buhéyseh, whose  
worth we know !

And Hóseyn — his blood turns flame, he has  
learned long since to ride,  
And Buhéyseh does her part, — they gain —  
they are gaining fast  
On the fugitive pair, and Duhl has Ed-Dárraj  
to cross and quit,  
And to reach the ridge El-Sabán, — no safety  
till that be spied !  
And Buhéyseh is, bound by bound, but a horse-  
length off at last,  
For the Pearl has missed the tap of the heel,  
the touch of the bit.

She shortens her stride, she chafes at her rider  
the strange and queer :  
Buhéyseh is mad with hope — beat sister she  
shall and must,  
Though Duhl, of the hand and heel so clumsy,  
she has to thank.  
She is near now, nose by tail — they are neck  
by croup — joy ! fear !  
What folly makes Hóseyn shout "Dog Duhl,  
Damned son of the Dust,  
Touch the right ear and press with your foot  
my Pearl's left flank !"

And Duhl was wise at the word, and Muléykeh  
as prompt perceived  
Who was urging redoubled pace, and to hear  
him was to obey,  
And a leap indeed gave she, and vanished  
forevermore.  
And Hóseyn looked one long last look as who,  
all bereaved,  
Looks, fain to follow the dead so far as the liv-  
ing may :  
Then he turned Buhéyseh's neck slow home-  
ward, weeping sore.

And, lo, in the sunrise, still sat Hóseyn upon  
the ground



Weeping: and neighbors came, the tribesmen  
of Bénu-Asád  
In the vale of green Er-Rass, and they ques-  
tioned him of his grief;  
And he told from first to last how, serpent-like,  
Duhl had wound  
His way to the nest, and how Duhl rode like an  
ape, so bad!  
And how Buhéseh did wonders, yet Pearl re-  
mained with the thief.

And they jeered him, one and all: "Poor  
Hóseyn is crazed past hope!  
How else had he wrought himself his ruin, in  
fortune's spite?  
To have simply held the tongue were a task for  
boy or girl,  
And here were Mulýkeh again, the eyed like  
an antelope,  
The child of his heart, by day, the wife of his  
breast by night!" —  
"And the beaten in speed!" wept Hóseyn.  
"You never have loved my Pearl."

## PIETRO OF ABANO

*Petrus Aponensis* — there was a magician!  
When that strange adventure happened, which  
I mean to tell my hearers,  
Nearly had he tried all trades — beside physi-  
cian,  
Architect, astronomer, astrologer, — or worse:  
How else, as the old books warrant, was he able,  
All at once, through all the world, to prove the  
promptest of appearers  
Where was prince to cure, tower to build as  
high as Babel,  
Star to name or sky-sign read, — yet pouch, for  
pains, a curse?

— Curse: for when a vagrant, — foot-sore,  
travel-tattered,  
Now a young man, now an old man, Turk or  
Arab, Jew or Gypsy, —  
Proffered folk in passing — Oh, for pay, what  
mattered? —  
"I'll be doctor, I'll play builder, star I'll  
name — sign read!"  
Soon as prince was cured, tower built, and fate  
predicted,  
"Who may you be?" came the question;  
when he answered "*Petrus ipse*,"  
"Just as we divined!" cried folk — "A  
wretch convicted  
Long ago of dealing with the devil — you in-  
deed!"

So, they cursed him roundly, all his labor's pay-  
ment,  
Motioned him — the convalescent prince would  
— to vacate the presence:  
Babylonians plucked his beard and tore his rai-  
ment,  
Drove him from that tower he built: while,  
had he peered at stars,  
Town howled "Stone the quack who styles our  
Dog-star — Sirius!"

Country yelled "Aroint the churl who prophe-  
sies we take no pleasure  
Under vine and fig-tree, since the year's deliri-  
ous,  
Bears no crop of any kind, — all through the  
planet Mars!"

Straightway would the whilom youngster grow  
a grisard,  
Or, as case might hap, the hoary eld drop off  
and show a stripling.  
Town and country groaned — indebted to a  
wizard!  
"Curse — nay, kick and cuff him — fit requital  
of his pains!  
Gratitude in word or deed were wasted truly!  
Rather make the Church amends by crying out  
on, cramping, crippling  
One who, on pretence of serving man, serves  
duly  
Man's arch foe: not ours, be sure, but Satan's  
— his the gains!"

Peter grinned and bore it, such disgraceful  
usage:  
Somehow, cuffs and kicks and curses seem or-  
dained his like to suffer:  
Prophet's pay with Christians, now as in the  
Jews' age,  
Still is — stoning: so, he meekly took his wage  
and went,  
— Safe again was found ensconced in those old  
quarters,  
Padua's blackest blindest by-street, — none the  
worse, nay, somewhat tougher:  
"Calculating," quoth he, "soon I join the mar-  
tyrs,  
Since, who magnify my lore on burning me are  
bent."<sup>1</sup>

Therefore, on a certain evening, to his alley  
Peter slunk, all bruised and broken, sore in  
body, sick in spirit,  
Just escaped from Cairo where he launched a  
galley  
Needing neither sails nor oars nor help of wind  
or tide,  
— Needing but the fume of fire to set a-flying  
Wheels like mad which whirled you quick —  
North, South, where'er you pleased re-  
quire it, —  
That is — would have done so had not priests  
come prying,  
Broke his engine up and bastinadoed him be-  
side,

As he reached his lodging, stopped there unmo-  
lestéd,  
(Neighbors feared him, urchins fled him, few  
were bold enough to follow)  
While his fumbling fingers tried the lock and  
tested  
Once again the queer key's virtue, oped the sul-  
len door, —  
Some one plucked his sleeve, cried, "Master,  
pray your pardon!"

<sup>1</sup> See note at end of volume.

Grant a word to me who patient wait you in  
your archway's hollow!  
Hard on you men's hearts are: be not your  
heart hard on  
Me who kiss your garment's hem, O Lord of  
magic lore!

"Mage — say I, who no less, scorning tittle-tattle,  
To the vulgar give no credence when they  
prate of Peter's magic,  
Deem his art brews tempest, hurts the crops  
and cattle,  
Hinders fowls from laying eggs and worms from  
spinning silk,  
Rides upon a he-goat, mounts at need a broom-  
stick:  
While the price he pays for this (so turns to  
comic what was tragic)  
Is — he may not drink — dreads like the Day  
of Doom's tick —  
One poor drop of sustenance ordained mere men  
— that's milk!

"Tell such tales to Padua! Think me no such  
dullard!  
Not from these benighted parts did I derive my  
breath and being!  
I am from a land whose cloudless skies are  
colored  
Livelier, suns orb largelier, airs seem incense,  
— while, on earth —  
What, instead of grass, our fingers and our  
thumbs cull,  
Proves true moly! sounds and sights there  
help the body's hearing, seeing,  
Till the soul grows godlike: brief, — you front  
no numskull  
Shaming by ineptitude the Greece that gave  
him birth!

"Mark within my eye its iris mystic-let-  
tered —  
That's my name! and note my ear — its swan-  
shaped cavity, my emblem!  
Mine's the swan-like nature born to fly unfet-  
tered  
Over land and sea in search of knowledge —  
food for song.  
Art denied the vulgar! Geese grow fat on  
barley,  
Swans require ethereal provend, undesirous to  
resemble 'em —  
Soar to seek Apollo — favored with a parley  
Such as, Master, you grant me — who will not  
hold you long.

"Leave to learn to sing — for that your swan  
petitions:  
Master, who possess the secret, say not nay to  
such a suitor!  
All I ask is — bless mine, purest of ambitions!  
Grant me leave to make my kind wise, free,  
and happy! How?  
Just by making me — as you are mine — their  
model!  
Geese have goose-thoughts: make a swan their  
teacher first, then coadjutor, —

Let him introduce swan-notions to each nod-  
dle, —  
Geese will soon grow swans, and men become  
what I am now!

"That's the only magic — had but fools dis-  
cernment,  
Could they probe and pass into the solid through  
the soft and seeming!  
Teach me such true magic — now, and no ad-  
journment!  
Teach your art of making fools subserve the  
man of mind!  
Magic is the power we men of mind should  
practice,  
Draw fools to become our drudges — docile  
henceforth, never dreaming —  
While they do our hests for fancied gain — the  
fact is  
What they toil and toil to get proves false-  
hood: truth's behind!

"See now! you conceive some fabric — say, a  
mansion  
Meet for monarch's pride and pleasure: this is  
truth — a thought has fired you,  
Made you fain to give some cramped concept  
expansion,  
Put your faculty to proof, fulfil your nature's  
task.  
First you fascinate the monarch's self: he fan-  
cies  
He it was devised the scheme you execute as he  
inspired you:  
He in turn sets slaving insignificances  
Toiling, moiling till your structure stands there  
— all you ask!

"Soon the monarch's known for what he was  
— a ninny:  
Soon the rabble-rout leave labor, take their  
work-day wage and vanish:  
Soon the late puffed bladder, pricked, shows  
lank and skinny —  
'Who was its inflator?' ask we, 'whose the  
giant lungs'  
*Petri en pulmones!* What though men prove  
ingrates?  
Let them — so they stop at crucifixion — buffet,  
ban and banish!  
Peter's power's apparent: human praise — its  
din grates  
Harsh as blame on ear unused to aught save  
angels' tongues.

"Ay, there have been always, since our world  
existed,  
Mages who possessed the secret — needed but to  
stand still, fix eye  
On the foolish mortal: straight was he enlisted  
Soldier, scholar, servant, slave — no matter for  
the style!  
Only through illusion; ever what seemed  
profit —  
Love or lucre — justified obedience to the *Ipsé*  
*dixi*:  
Work done — palace reared from pavement up  
to soffit —

Was it strange if builders smelt out cheating  
all the while ?

" Let them pelt and pound, bruise, bray you in  
a mortar !

What 's the odds to you who seek reward of  
quite another nature ?

You 've enrolled your name where sages of  
your sort are,

— Michael of Constantinople, Hans of Halber-  
stadt !

Nay and were you nameless, still you 've your  
conviction

You it was and only you — what signifies the  
nomenclature ? —

Ruled the world in fact, though how you ruled  
be fiction

Fit for fools : true wisdom's magic you — if  
e'er man — had 't !

" But perhaps you ask me, ' Since each igno-  
ramus

While he profits by such magic persecutes the  
benefactor,

What should I expect but — once I render  
famous

You as Michael, Hans, and Peter — just one  
ingrate more ?

If the vulgar prove thus, whatsoe'er the pelf  
be,

Pouched through my beneficence — and doom  
me dungeoned, chained, or racked, or

Fairly burned outright — how grateful will  
yourself be

When, his secret gained, you match your —  
master just before ?

" That 's where I await you ! Please, revert a  
little !

What do folk report about you if not this —  
which, though chimeric,

Still, as figurative, suits you to a tittle —

That, — although the elements obey your nod  
and wink,

Fades or flowers the herb you chance to smile  
or sigh at,

While your frown bids earth quake palled by  
obscuratation atmospheric, —

Brief, although through nature naught resists  
your fiat,

There 's yet one poor substance mocks you —  
milk you may not drink !

" Figurative language ! Take my explanation !  
Fame with fear, and hate with homage, these

your art procures in plenty.

All 's but daily dry bread : what makes moist  
the ration ?

Love, the milk that sweetens man his meal —  
alas, you lack :

I am he who, since he fears you not, can love  
you.

Love is born of heart not mind, *de corde natus*  
*haud de mente* ;

Touch my heart and love 's yours, sure as shines  
above you

Sun by day and star by night though earth  
should go to wrack !

" Stage by stage you lift me — kiss by kiss I  
hallow

Whose but your dear hand my helper, punctual  
as at each new impulse

I approach my aim ? Shell chipped, the eaglet  
callow

Needs a parent's pinion-push to quit the eyrie's  
edge :

But once fairly launched forth, denizen of ether,  
While each effort sunward bids the blood more

freely through each limb pulse,

Sure the parent feels, as gay they soar together,  
Fully are all pains repaid when love redeems

its pledge ! "

Then did Peter's tristful visage lighten some-  
what,

Vent a watery smile as though inveterate mis-  
trust were thawing.

" Well, who knows ? " he slow broke silence.  
" Mortals — come what

Come there may — are still the dupes of hope  
there 's luck in store.

Many scholars seek me, promise mounts and  
marvels :

Here stand I to witness how they step 'twixt  
me and clapper-clawing !

Dry bread, — that I 've gained me : truly I  
should starve else :

But of milk, no drop was mine ! Well, shuffle  
cards once more ! "

At the word of promise thus implied, our  
stranger —

What can he but cast his arms, in rapture of  
embrace, round Peter ?

" Hold ! I choke ! " the mage grunts. " Shall  
I in the manger

Any longer play the dog ? Approach, my calf,  
and feed !

*Bene . . .* won't you wait for grace ? " But  
sudden incense

Wool-white, serpent-solid, curled up — perfume  
growing sweet and sweeter

Till it reached the young man's nose and seemed  
to win sense

Soul and all from out his brain through nostril :  
yes, indeed !

Presently the young man rubbed his eyes.  
" Where am I ?

Too much bother over books ! Some reverie  
has proved amusing.

What did Peter prate of ? ' Faith, my brow is  
clammy !

How my head throbs, how my heart thumps !  
Can it be I swooned ?

Oh, I spoke my speech out — cribbed from  
Plato's tractate,

Dosed him with ' the Fair and Good, ' swore —  
Dog of Egypt — I was choosing

Plato's way to serve men ! What 's the hour ?  
Exact eight !

Home now, and to-morrow never mind how  
Plato mooned !

" Peter has the secret ! Fair and Good are  
products



(So he said) of Foul and Evil: one must bring  
to pass the other.  
Just as poisons grow drugs, steal through  
sundry odd ducts  
Doctors name, and ultimately issue safe and  
changed.  
You'd abolish poisons, treat disease with  
dainties  
Such as suit the sound and sane? With all  
such kickshaws vain you pother!  
Arsenic's the stuff puts force into the faint  
eyes,  
Opium sets the brain to rights — by cark and  
care deranged.

"What, he's safe within door? — would escape  
— no question —  
Thanks, since thanks and more I owe, and  
mean to pay in time befitting.  
What most presses now is — after night's  
digestion,  
Peter, of thy precepts! — promptest practice of  
the same.  
Let me see! The wise man, first of all, scorns  
riches:  
But to scorn them must obtain them: none  
believes in his permitting  
Gold to lie ungathered: who picks up, then  
pitches  
Gold away — philosophizes: none disputes his  
claim.

"So with worldly honors: 't is by abdicating.  
Incontestably he proves he could have kept the  
crown discarded.  
Sulla cuts a figure, leaving off dictating:  
Simpletons land private life? 'The grapes are  
sour,' laugh we.  
So, again — but why continue? All's tumultuous  
—  
Here: my head's a-whirl with knowledge.  
Speedily shall be rewarded  
He who taught me! Greeks prove ingrates?  
So insult you us?  
When your teaching bears its first-fruits, Peter  
— wait and see!"

As the word, the deed proved; ere a brief  
year's passage,  
Fop — that fool he made the jokes on — now he  
made the jokes for, *gratis*:  
Hunks — that hoarder, long left lonely in his  
crass age —  
Found now one appreciative deferential friend:  
Powder-paint-and-patch, Hag Jezebel — recovered,  
Strange to say, the power to please, got court-  
ship till she cried *Jam satis*!  
Fop be-flattered, Hunks be-friended, Hag be-  
loved —  
Nobody o'erlooked, save God — he soon attained  
his end.

As he lounged at ease one morning in his villa,  
(Hag's the dowry) estimated (Hunks' bequest)  
his coin in coffer,  
Mused on how a fool's good word (Fop's word)  
could fill a

Social circle with his praise, promote him man  
of mark, —  
All at once — "An old friend fain would see  
your Highness!"  
There stood Peter, skeleton and scarecrow,  
plain writ *Phi-lo-so-pher*  
In the woe-worn face — for yellowness and dry-  
ness,  
Parchment — with a pair of eyes — one hope  
their feeble spark.

"Did I counsel rightly? Have you, in ac-  
cordance,  
Prospered greatly, dear my pupil? Sure, at  
just the stage I find you,  
When your hand may draw me forth from the  
mad war-dance  
Savages are leading round your master — down,  
not dead.  
Padua wants to burn me: balk them, let me  
linger  
Life out — rueful though its remnant — hid in  
some safe hold behind you!  
Prostrate here I lie: quick, help with but a  
finger  
Lest I house in safety's self — a tombstone o'er  
my head!

"Lodging, bite and sup, with — now and then —  
a copper  
— Alms for any poorer still, if such there be, —  
is all my asking.  
Take me for your bedesman, — nay, if you think  
proper,  
Menial merely, — such my perfect passion for  
repose!  
Yes, from out your plenty Peter craves a pit-  
tance  
— Leave to thaw his frozen hands before the  
fire whereat you're basking!  
Double though your debt were, grant this boon  
— remittance  
He proclaims of obligation: 't is himself that  
owes!"

"Venerated Master — can it be, such treatment  
Learning meets with, magic fails to guard you  
from, by all appearance?  
Strange! for, as you entered, — what the  
famous feat meant,  
I was full of, — why you reared that fabric,  
Padua's boast.  
Nowise for man's pride, man's pleasure, did  
you slyly  
Raise it, but man's seat of rule whereby the  
world should soon have clearance  
(Happy world) from such a rout as now so vilely  
Handles you — and hampers me, for which I  
grieve the most.

"Since if it got wind you now were my familiar,  
How could I protect you — nay, defend myself  
against the rabble?  
Wait until the mob, now masters, willy-nilly  
are  
Servants as they should be: then has gratitude  
full play!  
Surely this experience shows how unbecfitting

'T is that minds like mine should rot in ease  
and plenty. Geese may gabble,  
Gorge, and keep the ground: but swans are  
soon for quitting  
Earthly fare — as fain would I, your swan, if  
taught the way.

"Teach me, then, to rule men, have them at  
my pleasure!

Solely for their good, of course, — impart a  
secret worth rewarding,  
Since the proper life's-prize! Tantalus's  
treasure

Aught beside proves, vanishes, and leaves no  
trace at all.

Wait awhile, nor press for payment prema-  
turely!

Over-haste defrauds you. Thanks! since, —  
even while I speak, — discarding  
Sloth and vain delights, I learn how — swiftly,  
surely —

Magic sways the sceptre, wears the crown and  
wields the ball!

"Gone again — what, is he? 'Faith, he's soon  
disposed of!

Peter's precepts work already, put within my  
lump their leaven!

Ay, we needs must don glove would we pluck  
the rose — doff

Silken garment would we climb the tree and  
take its fruit.

Why sharp thorn, rough rind? To keep un-  
violated

Either prize! We garland us, we mount from  
earth to feast in heaven,

Just because exist what once we estimated  
Hindrances which, better taught, as helps we  
now compute.

"Foolishly I turned disgusted from my fel-  
lows!

Pits of ignorance — to fill, and heaps of preju-  
dice — to level —

Multitudes in motley, whites and blacks and  
yellows —

What a hopeless task it seemed to discipline  
the host!

Now I see my error. Vices act like virtues  
— Not alone because they guard — sharp thorns

— the rose we first dishevel,

Not because they scrape, scratch — rough rind  
— through the dirt-shoes

Bare feet cling to bole with, while the half-  
moon boot we boast.

"No, my aim is nobler, more disinterested!  
Man shall keep what seemed to thwart him,

since it proves his true assistance,

Leads to ascertaining which head is the best  
head,

Would he crown his body, rule its members —  
lawless else.

Ignorant the horse stares, by deficient vision  
Takes a man to be a monster, lets him mount,

then, twice the distance  
Horse could trot unriden, gallops — dream  
Elysian! —

Dreaming that his dwarfish guide's a giant, —  
jockeys tell 's."

Brief, so worked the spell, he promptly had a  
riddance:

Heart and brain no longer felt the pricks which  
passed for conscience-scruples:

Free henceforth his feet, — *Per Bacco*, how  
they did dance

Merrily through lets and checks that stopped  
the way before!

Politics the prize now, — such adroit adviser,  
Opportune suggester, with the tact that triples

and quadruples

Merit in each measure, — never did the Kaiser  
Boast as subject such a statesman, friend, and  
something more!

As he, up and down, one noonday, paced his closet  
— Council o'er, each spark (his hint) blown

flame, by colleagues' breath applauded,  
Strokes of statecraft hailed with "*Salomo si*

*nôsset!*"

(His the nostrum) — every throw for luck come  
double-six, —

As he, pacing, hugged himself in satisfaction,  
Thump — the door went. "What, the Kaiser?"

By none else were I defrauded

Thus of well-earned solace. Since 'tis fate's  
exaction, —

Enter, Liege my Lord! Ha, Peter, you here?  
*Teneor viz!*"

"Ah, Sir, none the less, contain you, nor wax  
irate!

You so lofty, I so lowly, — vast the space which  
yawns between us!

Still, methinks, you — more than ever — at a  
high rate

Needs must prize poor Peter's secret since it  
lifts you thus.

Grant me now the boon whereat before you  
boggled!

Ten long years your march has moved — one  
triumph — (though e's short) — *hactenus*,

While I down and down disastrously have  
joggled

Till I pitch against Death's door, the true *Nec*  
*Ultra Plus*.

"Years ago — some ten 't is — since I sought  
for shelter,

Craved in your whole house a closet, out of all  
your means a comfort.

Now you soar above these: as is gold to spelter  
So is power — you urged with reason — para-  
mount to wealth.

Power you boast in plenty: let it grant me  
refuge!

House-room now is out of question: find for  
me some stronghold — some fort —

Privacy wherein, immured, shall this blind  
deaf hudge

Monster of a mob let stay the soul I'd save by  
stealth!

"Ay, for all too much with magic have I tam-  
pered!

— Lost the world, and gained, I fear, a certain  
place I'm to describe loth!  
Still, if prayer and fasting tame the pride long  
pampered,  
Mercy may be mine: amendment never comes  
too late.  
How can I amend beset by cursers, kickers?  
Pluck this brand from out the burning! Once  
away, I take my Bible-oath,  
Never more — so long as life's weak lamp-flame  
flickers —  
No, not once I'll tease you, but in silence bear  
my fate!"

"Gently, good my Genius, Oracle unerring!  
Strange now! can you guess on what — as in  
you peeped — it was I pondered?  
You and I are both of one mind in preferring  
Power to wealth, but — here's the point —  
what sort of power, I ask?  
Ruling men is vulgar, easy, and ignoble:  
Rid yourself of conscience, quick you have at  
beck and call the fond herd.  
But who wields the crozier, down may fling the  
crow-bill:  
That's the power I covet now; soul's sway o'er  
souls — my task!

" 'Well but,' you object, 'you have it, who by  
glamour  
Dress up lies to look like truths, mask folly in  
the garb of reason:  
Your soul acts on theirs, sure, when the people  
clamor,  
Hold their peace, now fight now fondle, — ear-  
wigged through the brains.'  
Possibly! but still the operation's mundane,  
Grosser than a taste demands which — craving  
manna — keeks at peason —  
Power o'er men by wants material: why should  
one deign  
Rule by sordid hopes and fears — a grunt for  
all one's pains?

"No, if men must praise me, let them praise to  
purpose!  
Would we move the world, not earth but  
heaven must be our fulcrum — *pou sto!*  
Thus I seek to move it: Master, why interpose —  
Balk my climbing close on what's the ladder's  
topmost round?  
Statecraft 't is I step from: when by priest-  
craft hoisted  
Up to where my foot may touch the highest  
rung which fate allows toe,  
Then indeed ask favor. On you shall be  
foisted  
No excuse: I'll pay my debt, each penny of  
the pound!

"Ho, my knaves without there! Lead this  
worthy downstairs!  
No farewell, good Paul — nay, Peter — what's  
your name remembered rightly?  
Come, he's humble: out another would have  
flounced — airs  
Suitors often give themselves when our sort  
bow them forth.

Did I touch his rags? He surely kept his dis-  
tance:  
Yet, there somehow passed to me from him —  
where'er the virtue might lie —  
Something that inspires my soul — Oh, by as-  
sistance  
Doubtlessly of Peter! — still, he's worth just  
what he's worth!

" 'T is my own soul soars now: soaring — how?  
By crawling!  
I'll to Rome, before Rome's feet the temporal-  
supreme lay prostrate!  
'Hands' (I'll say) 'proficient once in pulling,  
hauling  
This and that way men as I was minded — feet  
now clasp!'  
Ay, the Kaiser's self has wrung them in his  
fervor!  
Now — they only sue to slave for Rome, nor at  
one doit the cost rate.  
Rome's adopted child — no bone, no muscle,  
nerve or  
Sinew of me but I'll strain, though out my life  
I gasp!"

As he stood one evening proudly — (he had  
traversed  
Rome on horseback — peerless pageant! —  
claimed the Lateran as new Pope) —  
Thinking "All's attained now! Pontiff! Who  
could have erst  
Dreamed of my advance so far when, some ten  
years ago,  
I embraced devotion, grew from priest to  
bishop,  
Gained the Purple, bribed the Conclave, got  
the Two-thirds, saw my coop ope,  
Came out — what Rome hails me! O were  
there a wish-shop,  
Not one wish more would I purchase — lord of  
all below!

"Ha — who dares intrude now — puts aside the  
arras?  
What, old Peter, here again, at such a time, in  
such a presence?  
Satan sends this plague back merely to em-  
barrass  
Me who enter on my office — little needing  
you!  
'Faith, I'm touched myself by age, but you  
look Tithon!  
Were it vain to seek of you the sole prize left —  
rejuvenescence?  
Well, since flesh is grass which time must lay  
his scythe on,  
Say your say and so depart and make no more  
ado!"

Peter faltered — coughing first by way of pro-  
logue —  
"Holiness, your help comes late: a death at  
ninety little matters.  
Padua, build poor Peter's pyre now, on log roll  
log,  
Burn away — I've lived my day! Yet here's  
the sting in death —



I've an author's pride: I want my Book's survival:

See, I've hid it in my breast to warm me 'mid the rags and tatters!

Save it — tell next age your Master had no rival! Scholar's debt discharged in full, be 'Thanks' my latest breath!"

"Faugh, the frowsy bundle — scribblings harum-scarum

Scattered o'er a dozen sheepskins! What's the name of this farrago?

Ha — '*Conciliator Differentiarum*' —

Man and book may burn together, cause the world no loss!

Stop — what else? A tractate — eh, '*De Speciebus*

*Ceremonialis Ma-gi-æ*? I dream sure! Hence, away, go,

Wizard, — quick avoid me! Vain you clasp my knee, buss

Hand that bears the Fisher's ring or foot that boasts the Cross!

"Help! The old magician clings like an octopus!

Ah, you rise now — fuming, fretting, frowning, if I read your features!

Frown, who cares? We're Pope — once Pope, you can't unpop us!

Good — you muster up a smile: that's better! Still so brisk?

All at once grown youthful? But the case is plain! Ass —

Here I dally with the fiend, yet know the Word — compels all creatures

Earthly, heavenly, hellish. *Apaga, Sathanas Dicam verbum Salomonis* — "dicite!" When — whisk! —

What was changed? The stranger gave his eyes a rubbing:

There smiled Peter's face turned back a moment at him o'er the shoulder,

As the black-door shut, bang! "So he 'scapes a drubbing!"

(Quoth a boy who, unespied, had stopped to hear the talk.)

"That's the way to thank these wizards when they bid men

*Benedicite*! What ails you? You, a man, and yet no bolder?"

Foreign Sir, you look but foolish!" "*Idmen, idmen!*"

Groaned the Greek. "O Peter, cheese at last I know from chalk!"

Peter lived his life out, menaced yet no martyr, Knew himself the mighty man he was — such knowledge all his guerdon,

Left the world a big book — people but in part err

When they style a true *Scientiæ Com-pen-di-um*: "*Admiratorem incutit*" they sourly

Smile, as fast they shut the folio which myself was somehow spurred on

Once to ope: but love — life's milk which daily, hourly,

Blockheads lap — O Peter, still thy taste of love's to come!

Greek, was your ambition likewise doomed to failure?

True, I find no record you wore purple, walked with axe and fasces,

Played some antipope's part: still, friend, don't turn tail, you're

Certain, with but these two gifts, to gain earth's prize in time!

Cleverness incurbed by conscience — if you ran-sacked

Peter's book you'd find no potent spell like these to rule the masses;

Nor should want example, had I not to transact Other business. Go your ways, you'll thrive!

So ends my rhyme.

When these parts Tiberius — not yet Cæsar — travelled,

Passing Padua, he consulted Padua's Oracle of Geryon

(God three-headed, thrice wise) just to get unravelled

Certain tangles of his future. "Fling at Abano Golden dice," it answered: "dropt within the

fount there, Note what sum the pips present!" And still

we see each die, the very one, Turn up, through the crystal, — read the whole

account there Where 't is told by Suetonius, — each its highest

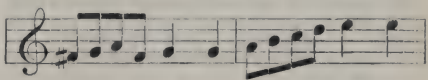
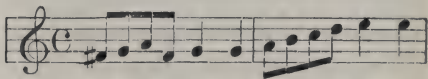
throw.

Scarce the sportive fancy-dice I fling show "Venus:"

Still — for love of that dear land which I so oft in dreams revisit —

I have — oh, not sung! but lilted (as — between us —

Grows my lazy custom) this its legend. What the lilt?



## DOCTOR ———

A RABBI told me : On the day allowed  
Satan for carping at God's rule, he came,  
Fresh from our earth, to brave the angel-  
crowd.

"What is the fault now?" "This I find to  
blame:

Many and various are the tongues below,  
Yet all agree in one speech, all proclaim

"Hell has no might to match what earth can  
show :

Death is the strongest-born of Hell, and yet  
Stronger than Death is a Bad Wife, we know,"

"Is it a wonder if I fume and fret—  
Robbed of my rights, since Death am I, and  
mine  
The issue of Strongest? Men pay Nature's  
debt

"Because they must at my demand; decline  
To pay it henceforth surely men will please,  
Provided husbands with bad wives combine

"To baffle Death. Judge between me and  
these!"

"Thyself shalt judge. Descend to earth in  
shape  
Of mortal, marry, drain from froth to lees

"The bitter draught, then see if thou escape  
Concluding, with men sorrowful and sage,  
A Bad Wife's strength Death's self in vain  
would ape!"

How Satan entered on his pilgrimage,  
Conformed himself to earthly ordinance,  
Wived and played husband well from youth to  
age

Intrepidly — I leave untold, advance  
Through many a married year until I reach  
A day when — of his father's countenance

The very image, like him too in speech  
As well as thought and deed, — the union's  
fruit  
Attained maturity. "I needs must teach

"My son a trade: but trade, such son to suit,  
Needs seeking after. He a man of war?  
Too cowardly! A lawyer wins repute —

"Having to toil and moil, though — both which  
are  
Beyond this sluggard. There's Divinity:  
No, that's my own bread-winner — that be  
far

"From my poor offspring! Physic? Ha, we'll  
try  
If this be practicable. Where's my wit?  
Asleep? — since, now I come to think . . . Ay,  
ay!"

"Hither, my son! Exactly have I hit  
On a profession for thee. *Medicus* —  
Behold, thou art appointed! Yea, I spit

"Upon thine eyes, bestow a virtue thus  
That henceforth not this human form I wear  
Shalt thou perceive alone, but — one of us

"By privilege — thy fleshly sight shall bear  
Me in my spirit-person as I walk  
The world and take my prey appointed there.

"Doctor once dubbed — what ignorance shall  
balk  
Thy march triumphant? Diagnose the gout  
As colic, and prescribe it cheese for chalk —

"No matter! All's one: cure shall come  
about  
And win thee wealth — fees paid with such a  
roar  
Of thanks and praise alike from lord and lout

"As never stunned man's ears on earth before,  
'How may this be?' Why, that's my skeptic!  
Soon  
Truth will corrupt thee, soon thou doubt'st no  
more!

"Why is it I bestow on thee the boon  
Of recognizing me the while I go  
Invisibly among men, morning, noon,

"And night, from house to house, and — quick  
or slow —  
Take my appointed prey? They summon thee  
For help, suppose: obey the summons! so!

"Enter, look round! Where's Death? Know  
— I am he,  
Satan who work all evil: I who bring  
Pain to the patient in whate'er degree.

"I, then, am there: first glance thine eye shall  
fling  
Will find me — whether distant or at hand,  
As I am free to do my spiriting.

"At such mere first glance thou shalt under-  
stand  
Wherefore I reach no higher up the room  
Than door or window, when my form is  
scanned.

"Howe'er friends' faces please to gather gloom,  
Bent o'er the sick, — howe'er himself de-  
sponds, —  
In such case Death is not the sufferer's doom.

"Contrariwise, do friends rejoice my bonds  
Are broken, does the captive in his turn  
Crow 'Life shall conquer'? Nip these foolish  
fronds

"Of hope a-sprout, if haply thou discern  
Me at the head — my victim's head, be sure!  
Forth now! This taught thee, little else to  
learn!"

And forth he went. Folk heard him ask demure,  
 "How do you style this ailment? (There he peeps,  
 My father through the arras!) Sirs, the cure

"Is plain as A B C! Experience steeps  
 Blossoms of pennyroyal half an hour  
 In sherries. *Sumat!* — Lo, how sound he sleeps —

"The subject you presumed was past the power  
 Of Galen to relieve!" Or else, "How's this?  
 Why call for help so tardily? Clouds lour

"Portentously indeed, Sirs! (Naught 's amiss;  
 He's at the bed-foot merely.) Still, the storm  
 May pass averted — not by quacks, I wis,

"Like you, my masters! You, forsooth, perform  
 A miracle? Stand, seiolists, aside!  
 Blood, ne'er so cold, at ignorance grows warm!"

Which boasting by result was justified,  
 Big as might words be: whether drugged or left  
 Drugless, the patient always lived, not died.

Great the heir's gratitude, so nigh bereft  
 Of all he prized in this world: sweet the smile  
 Of disconcerted rivals: "Cure? — say, theft

"From Nature in despite of Art — so style  
 This off-hand kill-or-cure work! You did much,  
 I had done more: folk cannot wait awhile!"

But did the case change? was it — "Scarcely such  
 The symptoms as to warrant our recourse  
 To your skill, Doctor! Yet since just a touch

"Of pulse, a taste of breath, has all the force  
 With you of long investigation claimed  
 By others, — tracks an ailment to its source

"Intuitively, — may we ask unblamed  
 What from this pimple you prognosticate?"  
 "Death!" was the answer, as he saw and named

The couchor by the sick man's head. "Too late  
 You send for my assistance. I am bold  
 Only by Nature's leave, and bow to Fate!"

"Besides, you have my rivals: lavish gold!  
 How comfortably quick shall life depart  
 Cosseted by attentions manifold!

"One day, one hour ago, perchance my art  
 Had done some service. Since you have your-  
 selves  
 Chosen — before the horse — to put the cart,

"Why, Sirs, the sooner that the sexton delves  
 Your patient's grave the better! How you stare  
 — Shallow, for all the deep books on your shelves!"

"Fare you well, fumblers!" Do I need declare  
 What name and fame, what riches recompensed  
 The Doctor's practice? Never anywhere

Such an adept as daily evidenced  
 Each new vaticination! Oh, not he  
 Like dolts who dallied with their scruples,  
 fenced

With subterfuge, nor gave out frank and free  
 Something decisive! If he said "I save  
 The patient," saved he was: if "Death will be

"His portion," you might count him dead.  
 Thus brave,  
 Behold our worthy, sans competitor  
 Throughout the country, on the architrave

Of Glory's temple golden-lettered for  
 Machaon *redivivus!* So, it fell  
 That, of a sudden, when the Emperor

Was smit by sore disease, I need not tell  
 If any other Doctor's aid was sought  
 To come and forthwith make the sick Prince well.

"He will reward thee as a monarch ought.  
 Not much imports the malady; but then,  
 He clings to life and cries like one distraught

"For thee — who, from a simple citizen,  
 Mayst look to rise in rank, — nay, haply wear  
 A medal with his portrait, — always when

"Recovery is quite accomplished. There!  
 Pass to the presence!" Hardly has he crossed  
 The chamber's threshold when he halts, aware

Of who stands sentry by the head. All's lost.  
 "Sire, naught avails my art: you near the goal,  
 And end the race by giving up the ghost."

"How?" cried the monarch: "Names upon  
 your roll  
 Of half my subjects resened by your skill —  
 Old and young, rich and poor — crowd cheek by  
 jowl

"And yet no room for mine? Be saved I will!  
 Why else am I earth's foremost potentate?  
 Add me to these and take as fee your fill

"Of gold — that point admits of no debate  
 Between us: save me, as you can and must, —  
 Gold, till your crown's pouch cracks beneath the  
 weight!"

This touched the Doctor. "Truly a home-  
 thrust,



Parent, you will not parry ! Have I dared  
Entreat that you forego the meal of dust

"— Man that is snake's meat — when I saw  
prepared  
Your daily portion ? Never ! Just this once,  
Go from his head, then, — let his life be  
spared !"

Whisper met whisper in the gruff response ;  
" Fool, I must have my prey : no inch I budge  
From where thou see'st me thus myself en-  
sconce."

" Ah," moaned the sufferer, " by thy look I  
judge  
Wealth fails to tempt thee : what if honors  
prove  
More efficacious ? Naught to him I grudge

" Who saves me. Only keep my head above  
The cloud that 's creeping round it — I 'll  
divide  
My empire with thee ! No ? What 's left but  
— love ?

" Does love allure thee ? Well then, take as  
bride  
My only daughter, fair beyond belief !  
Save me — to-morrow shall the knot be tied !"

" Father, you hear him ! Respite ne'er so  
brief  
Is all I beg : go now and come again  
Next day, for aught I care : respect the grief

" Mine will be if thy first-born snees in vain !"  
" Fool, I must have my prey !" was all he  
got  
In answer. But a fancy crossed his brain.

" I have it ! Sire, methinks a meteor shot  
Just now across the heavens and neutralized  
Jove's salutary influence : 'neath the blot

" Plumb are you placed now : well that I sur-  
mised  
The cause of failure ! Knaves, reverse the  
bed !"

" Stay !" groaned the monarch, " I shall be  
capsized —

" Jolt — jolt — my heels uplift where late my  
head  
Was lying — sure I 'm turned right round at  
last !  
What do you say now, Doctor ?" Naught he  
said,

For why ? With one brisk leap the Antic  
passed  
From couch-foot back to pillow, — as before,  
Lord of the situation. Long agast

The Doctor gazed, then " Yet one trial more  
Is left me" inwardly he uttered. " Shame  
Upon thy flinty heart ! Do I implore

" This trifling favor in the idle name  
Of mercy to the moribund ? I plead  
The cause of all thou dost affect : my aim

" Befits my author ! Why would I succeed ?  
Simply that by success I may promote  
The growth of thy pet virtues — pride and  
greed.

" But keep thy favors ! — curse thee ! I devote  
Henceforth my service to the other side.  
No time to lose : the rattle 's in his throat.

" So, — not to leave one last resource untried, —  
Run to my house with all haste, somebody !  
Bring me that knobstick thence, so often plied

" With profit by the astrologer — shall I  
Disdain its help, the mystic Jacob's-Staff ?  
Sire, do but have the courage not to die

" Till this arrive ! Let none of you dare laugh !  
Though rugged its exterior, I have seen  
That implement work wonders, send the chaff

" Quick and thick flying from the wheat — I  
mean,  
By metaphor, a human sheaf it threshed  
Flail-like. Go fetch it ! Or -- a word between

Just you and me, friend ! — go bid, unabashed,  
My mother, whom you 'll find there, bring the  
stick  
Herself — herself, mind !" Out the lackey  
dashed

Zealous upon the errand. Craft and trick  
Are meat and drink to Satan : and he grinned  
— How else ? — at an excuse so politic

For failure : scarce would Jacob's-Staff rescind  
Fate's firm decree ! And ever as he neared  
The agonizing one, his breath like wind

Froze to the marrow, while his eye-flash seared  
Sense in the brain up : closelier and more close  
Pressing his prey, when at the door appeared

— Who but his Wife the Bad ? Whereof one  
dose,  
One grain, one mite of the medicament,  
Sufficed him. Up he sprang. One word, too  
gross

To soil my lips with, — and through ceiling went  
Somehow the Husband. " That a storm 's  
dispersed

We know for certain by the sulphury scent !

" Hail to the Doctor ! Who but one so versed  
In all Dame Nature's secrets had prescribed  
The staff thus opportunely ? Style him first

" And foremost of physicians !" " I've imbibed  
Elixir surely," smiled the prince, — " have  
gained  
New lease of life. Dear Doctor, how you  
bribed

"Death to forego me, boots not: you've obtained  
My daughter and her dowry. Death, I've heard,  
Was still on earth the strongest power that  
reigned,

"Except a Bad Wife!" Whereunto demurred  
Nowise the Doctor, so refused the fee  
— No dowry, no bad wife!

"You think absurd  
This tale?" — the Rabbi added: "True, our  
Talmud  
Boasts sundry such: yet — have our elders  
erred  
In thinking there's some water there, not all  
mud?"  
I tell it, as the Rabbi told it me.

## PAN AND LUNA

Si credere dignum est. — *Georgic*, III. 390.

Oh, worthy of belief I hold it was,  
Virgil, your legend in those strange three lines!  
No question, that adventure came to pass  
One black night in Arcadia: yes, the pines,  
Mountains and valleys mingling made one mass  
Of black with void black heaven: the earth's  
confines,  
The sky's embrace, — below, above, around,  
All hardened into black without a bound.

Fill up a swart stone chalice to the brim  
With fresh-squeezed yet fast-thickening poppy-  
juice:  
See how the sluggish jelly, late a-swim,  
Turns marble to the touch of who would loose  
The solid smooth, grown jet from rim to rim,  
By turning round the bowl! So night can fuse  
Earth with her all-comprising sky. No less,  
Light, the least spark, shows air and emptiness.

And thus it proved when — diving into space,  
Striped of all vapor, from each web of mist  
Utterly film-free — entered on her race  
The naked Moon, full-orbed antagonist  
Of night and dark, night's dowry: peak to base,  
Upstart mountains, and each valley, kissed  
To sudden life, lay silver-bright: in air  
Flew she revealed, Maid-Moon with limbs all  
bare.

Still as she fled, each depth — where refuge  
seemed —  
Opening a lone pale chamber, left distinct  
Those limbs: 'mid still-retreating blue, she  
teemed  
Herself with whiteness, — virginal, uncinct  
By any halo save what finely gleamed  
To outline not disguise her: heaven was linked  
In one accord with earth to quaff the joy,  
Drain beauty to the dregs without alloy.

Whereof she grew aware. What help? When,  
lo,  
A succorable cloud with sleep lay dense:

Some pinetree-top had caught it sailing slow,  
And tethered for a prize: in evidence  
Captive lay fleece on fleece of piled-up snow  
Drowsily patient: flake-heaped how or whence,  
The structure of that succorable cloud,  
What matter? Shamed she plunged into its  
shroud.

Orbed — so the woman-figure poets call  
Because of rounds on rounds — that apple-  
shaped  
Head which its hair binds close into a ball  
Each side the curving ears — that pure undraped  
Pout of the sister paps — that . . . Once for  
all,  
Say — her consummate circle thus escaped  
With its innumerable circlelets, sank absorbed,  
Safe in the cloud — O naked Moon full-orbed!

But what means this? The downy swathes  
combine,  
Conglobe, the smothery coy-caressing stuff  
Curdles about her! Vain each twist and twine  
Those lithe limbs try, encroached on by a fluff  
Fitting as close as fits the dented spine  
Its flexible ivory outside-flesh: enough!  
The plummy drifts contract, condense, constringe,  
Till she is swallowed by the feathery springe.

As when a pearl slips lost in the thin foam  
Churned on a sea-shore, and, o'er-frothed, con-  
ceits  
Herself safe-housed in Amphitrite's dome, —  
If, through the bladdery wave-worked yeast,  
she meets  
What most she loathes and leaps from, — elf  
from gnome  
No gladlier, — finds that safest of retreats  
Bubble about a treacherous hand wide ope  
To grasp her — (divers who pick pearls so  
grobe) —

So lay this Maid-Moon clasped around and  
caught  
By rough red Pan, the god of all that tract:  
He it was schemed the snare thus subtly wrought  
With simulated earth-breath, — wool-tufts  
packed  
Into a billowy wrappage. Sheep far-sought  
For spotless shearings yield such: take the fact  
As learned Virgil gives it, — how the breed  
Whitens itself forever: yes, indeed!

If one forefather ram, though pure as chalk  
From time on fleece, should still display a  
tongue  
Black 'neath the beast's moist palate, prompt  
men balk  
The propagating plague: he gets no young:  
They rather slay him, — sell his hide to calk  
Ships with, first steeped in pitch, — nor hands  
are wrung  
In sorrow for his fate: protected thus,  
The purity we love is gained for us.

So did Girl-Moon, by just her attribute  
Of unmatched modesty betrayed, lie trapped,  
Bruised to the breast of Pan, half god half brute,

Raked by his bristly boar-sward while he lapped  
 — Never say, kissed her ! that were to pollute  
 Love's language — which moreover proves un-  
 apt  
 To tell how she recoiled — as who finds thorns  
 Where she sought flowers — when, feeling, she  
 touched — horns !

Then — does the legend say ? — first moon-  
 eclipse  
 Happened, first swooning-fit which puzzled sore  
 The early sages ? Is that why she dips  
 Into the dark, a minute and no more,  
 Only so long as serves her while she rips  
 The cloud's womb through and, faultless as  
 before,  
 Pursues her way ? No lesson for a maid  
 Left she, a maid herself thus trapped, betrayed ?

Ha, Virgil ? Tell the rest, you ! "To the deep  
 Of his domain the wildwood, Pan forthwith  
 Called her, and so she followed" — in her sleep,  
 Surely ? — "by no means spurning him." The  
 myth  
 Explain who may ! Let all else go, I keep  
 — As of a ruin just a monolith —  
 Thus much, one verse of five words, each a boon :  
 Arcadia, night, a cloud, Pan, and the moon.

The first ten lines that follow were printed as  
 epilogue to the second series of *Dramatic Idyls* ;  
 the second ten were added to them by Brown-  
 ing in the album of a young American girl in  
 Venice, October, 1880. See *The Century* for  
 November, 1882.

"Touch him ne'er so lightly, into song he broke :  
 Soil so quick-receptive, — not one feather-seed,  
 Not one flower-dust fell but straight its fall awoke  
 Vitalizing virtue : song would song succeed  
 Sudden as spontaneous — prove a poet-soul !"

Indeed ?

Rock's the song-soil rather, surface hard and bare :  
 Sun and dew their mildness, storm and frost their rage  
 Vainly both expend, — few flowers awaken there :  
 Quiet in its cleft broods — what the after-age  
 Knows and names a pine, a nation's heritage.

Thus I wrote in London, musing on my betters,  
 Poets dead and gone ; and lo, the critics cried,  
 "Out on such a boast !" as if I dreamed that fetters  
 Binding Dante bind up — me ! as if true pride  
 Were not also humble !

So I smiled and sighed  
 As I oped your book in Venice this bright morning,  
 Sweet new friend of mine ! and felt the clay or sand,  
 Whatsoe'er my soil be, break — for praise or scorning —  
 Out in grateful fancies — weeds ; but weeds expand  
 Almost into flowers, held by such a kindly hand.

## THE BLIND MAN TO THE MAIDEN

Browning translated the following from a  
 German poem in *Wilhelmine von Hillern's*  
 novel *The Hour Will Come* at the request of  
 Mrs. Clara Bell, the translator of the novel.  
 It there appeared as the work of an anonymous  
 friend, but was reprinted as Browning's in *The*  
*Whitehall Review* for March 1, 1883.

THE blind man to the maiden said,  
 "O thou of hearts the truest,  
 Thy countenance is hid from me ;  
 Let not my question anger thee !  
 Speak, though in words the fewest.

"Tell me, what kind of eyes are thine ?  
 Dark eyes, or light ones rather ?"  
 "My eyes are a decided brown —  
 So much, at least, by looking down,  
 From the brook's glass I gather."

"And is it red — thy little mouth ?  
 That too the blind must care for."  
 "Ah ! I would tell it soon to thee,  
 Only — none yet has told it me.  
 I cannot answer, therefore.

"But dost thou ask what heart I have —  
 There hesitate I never.  
 In thine own breast 't is borne, and so  
 'T is thine in weal, and thine in woe,  
 For life, for death — thine ever !"

## GOLDONI

The following sonnet was written by Brown-  
 ing for the album of the Committee of the  
 Goldoni monument, erected in Venice in 1883.

GOLDONI — good, gay, sunniest of souls, —  
 Glassing half Venice in that verse of thine, —  
 What though it just reflect the shade and shine  
 Of common life, nor render, as it rolls,  
 Grandeur and gloom ? Sufficient for thy shoals  
 Was Carnival ; Parini's depths enshrine  
 Secrets unsuited to that opaline  
 Surface of things which laughs along thy scrolls.  
 There throng the people : how they come and go,  
 Lisp the soft language, flaunt the bright  
 garb, — see, —

On Piazza, Calle, under Portico  
 And over Bridge ! Dear king of Comedy,  
 Be honored ! thou that didst love Venice so,  
 Venice, and we who love her, all love thee !  
 VENICE, November 27, 1883.



## JOCOSERIA

THIS collection of poems was published in 1883. The title of the volume is mentioned in a foot-note to the *Note* at the end of *Paracelsus*, where the poet speaks of "such rubbish as Melander's *Jocoseria*." In a letter, accompanying a copy of the volume, sent to a friend, Browning wrote: "The title is taken from the work of Melander (Schwartzmann), reviewed,

by a curious coincidence, in the *Blackwood* of this month [February, 1883]. I referred to it in a note to *Paracelsus*. The two Hebrew quotations [in the note to Jochanan Hakkadosh] (put in to give a grave look to what is mere fun and invention) being translated amount to (1) 'A Collection of Lies'; and (2), an old saying, 'From Moses to Moses arose none like Moses.'"

## WANTING IS — WHAT?

This is in the nature of a prelude to the entire group of poems.

WANTING is — what?

Summer redundant,

Blueness abundant,

— Where is the blot?

Beamy the world, yet a blank all the same,  
— Framework which waits for a picture to frame:

What of the leafage, what of the flower?  
Roses embowering with naught they embower!  
Come then, complete incompleteness, O come,  
Pant through the blueness, perfect the summer!

Breathe but one breath  
Rose-beauty above,  
And all that was death  
Grows life, grows love,  
Grows love!

DONALD

This story which Browning had from the lips of the hero has also been told in prose by Sir Walter Scott.

"WILL you hear my story also,  
— Huge Sport, brave adventure in plenty?"  
The boys were a band from Oxford,  
The oldest of whom was twenty.

The bothy we held carouse in  
Was bright with fire and candle;  
Tale followed tale like a merry-go-round  
Whereof Sport turned the handle.

In our eyes and noses — turf-smoke:  
In our ears a tune from the trivet,  
Whence "Boiling, boiling," the kettle sang,  
"And ready for fresh Glenlivet."

So, feat capped feat, with a vengeance:  
Truths, though, — the lads were loyal:  
"Grouse, five-score brace to the bag!  
Deer, ten hours' stalk of the Royal!"

Of boasting, not one bit, boys!

Only there seemed to settle  
Somehow above your curly heads,  
— Plain through the singing kettle,

Palpable through the cloud,  
As each new-puffed Havana  
Rewarded the teller's well-told tale, —  
This vaunt "To Sport — Hosanna!

"Hunt, fish, shoot,  
Would a man fulfil life's duty!  
Not to the bodily frame alone  
Does Sport give strength and beauty,

"But character gains in — courage?  
Ay, Sir, and much beside it!  
You don't sport, more 's the pity;  
You soon would find, if you tried it,

"Good sportsman means good fellow,  
Sound-hearted he, to the centre;  
Your mealy-mouthed mild milksops  
— There 's where the rot can enter!

"There 's where the dirt will breed,  
The shabbiness Sport would banish!  
Oh no, Sir, no! In your honored case  
All such objections vanish,

"'T is known how hard you studied:  
A Double-First — what, the jigger!  
Give me but half your Latin and Greek,  
I'll never again touch trigger!

"Still, tastes are tastes, allow me!  
Allow, too, where there 's keenness  
For Sport, there 's little likelihood  
Of a man's displaying meanness!"

So, put on my mettle, I interposed.

"Will you hear my story?" quoth I.  
"Never mind how long since it happened,  
I sat, as we sit, in a bothy;

"With as merry a band of mates, too,  
Undergrads all on a level:  
(One 's a Bishop, one 's gone to the Bench,  
And one 's gone — well, to the Devil.)

"When, lo, a scratching and tapping!  
In hobbled a ghastly visitor.  
Listen to just what he told us himself  
— No need of our playing inquisitor!"

Do you happen to know in Ross-shire  
Mount Ben . . . but the name scarce mat-  
ters:

Of the naked fact I am sure enough,  
Though I clothe it in rags and tatters.

You may recognize Ben by description;  
Behind him — a moor's immenseness:  
Up goes the middle mount of a range,  
Fringed with its firs in denseness.

Trimming the edge, its fir-fringe, mind!  
For an edge there is, though narrow;  
From end to end of the range, a strip  
Of path runs straight as an arrow.

And the mountaineer who takes that path  
Saves himself miles of journey  
He has to plod if he crosses the moor  
Through heather, peat, and burnie.

But a mountaineer he needs must be,  
For, look you, right in the middle  
Projects bluff Ben — with an end in *ich* —  
Why planted there, is a riddle:

Since all Ben's brothers little and big  
Keep rank, set shoulder to shoulder,  
And only this burliest out must bulge  
Till it seems — to the beholder

From down in the gully, — as if Ben's breast,  
To a sudden spike diminished,  
Would signify to the boldest foot  
"All further passage finished!"

Yet the mountaineer who sidles on  
And on to the very bending,  
Discovers, if heart and brain be proof,  
No necessary ending.

Foot up, foot down, to the turn abrupt  
Having trod, he, there arriving,  
Finds — what he took for a point was breadth,  
A mercy of Nature's contriving.

So, he rounds what, when 't is reached, proves  
straight,  
From one side gains the other:  
The wee path widens — resume the march,  
And he foils you, Ben my brother!

But Donald — (that name, I hope, will do) —  
I wrong him if I call "foiling"  
The tramp of the callant, whistling the while  
As blithe as our kettle's boiling.

He had dared the danger from boyhood up,  
And now, — when perchance was waiting  
A lass at the brig below, — 'twixt mount  
And moor would he stand debating?

Moreover this Donald was twenty-five,  
A glory of bone and muscle:  
Did a fiend dispute the right of way,  
Donald would try a tussle.

Lightsomely marched he out of the broad  
On to the narrow and narrow;  
A step more, rounding the angular rock,  
Reached the front straight as an arrow.

He stepped it, safe on the ledge he stood,  
When — whom found he full-facing?  
What fellow in courage and wariness too,  
Had scouted ignoble pacing,

And left low safety to timid mates,  
And made for the dread dear danger,  
And gained the height where — who could  
guess  
He would meet with a rival ranger?

'T was a gold-red stag that stood and stared,  
Gigantic and magnific,  
By the wonder — ay, and the peril — struck  
Intelligent and pacific:

For a red deer is no fallow deer  
Grown cowardly through park-feeding;  
He batters you like a thunderbolt  
If you brave his haunts unheeding.

I doubt he could hardly perform *volte-face*  
Had valor advised discretion:  
You may walk on a rope, but to turn on a rope  
No Blondin makes profession.

Yet Donald must turn, would pride permit,  
Though pride ill brooks retiring:  
Each eyed each — mute man, motionless beast —  
Less fearing than admiring.

These are the moments when quite new sense,  
To meet some need as novel,  
Springs up in the brain: it inspired resource:  
— "Nor advance nor retreat but — grovel!"

And slowly, surely, never a whit  
Relaxing the steady tension  
Of eye-stare which binds man to beast, —  
By an inch and inch declension,

Sank Donald sidewise down and down:  
Till flat, breast upwards, lying  
At his six-foot length, no corpse more still,  
— "If he cross me! The trick's worth try-  
ing."

Minutes were an eternity;  
But a new sense was created  
In the stag's brain too; he resolves! Slow,  
sure,  
With eye-stare unabated,

Feelingly he extends a foot  
Which tastes the way ere it touches  
Earth's solid and just escapes man's soft,  
Nor hold of the same unclutches

Till its fellow foot, light as a feather whisk,  
Lands itself no less finely :  
So a mother removes a fly from the face  
Of her babe asleep supinely.

And now 't is the haunch and hind-foot's turn  
— That 's hard : can the beast quite raise  
it ?

Yes, traversing half the prostrate length,  
His hoof-tip does not graze it.

Just one more lift ! But Donald, you see,  
Was sportsman first, man after :  
A fancy lightened his caution through,  
— He wellnigh broke into laughter :

" It were nothing short of a miracle !  
Unrivalled, unexampled —  
All sporting feats with this feat matched  
Were down and dead and trampled ! "

The last of the legs as tenderly  
Follows the rest : or never  
Or now is the time ! His knife in reach,  
And his right-hand loose — how clever !

For this can stab up the stomach's soft,  
While the left-hand grasps the pastern.  
A rise on the elbow, and — now 's the time  
Or never : this turn 's the last turn !

I shall dare to place myself by God  
Who scanned — for he does — each feature  
Of the face thrown up in appeal to him  
By the agonizing creature.

Nay, I hear plain words : " Thy gift brings  
this ! "

Up he sprang, back he staggered,  
Over he fell, and with him our friend  
— At following game no laggard.

Yet he was not dead when they picked next  
day

From the gully's depth the wreck of him ;  
His fall had been stayed by the stag beneath  
Who cushioned and saved the neck of him.

But the rest of his body — why, doctors said,  
Whatever could break was broken ;  
Legs, arms, ribs, all of him looked like a toast  
In a tumbler of port-wine soaked.

" That your life is left you, thank the stag ! "  
Said they when — the slow cure ended —  
They opened the hospital-door, and thence  
— Strapped, spliced, main fractures mended,

And minor damage left wisely alone, —  
Like an old shoe clouted and cobbled,  
Out — what went in a Goliath wellnigh, —  
Some half of a David hobbled.

" You must ask an alms from house to house :  
Sell the stag's head for a bracket,  
With its grand twelve times — I 'd buy it my-  
self —  
And use the skin for a jacket ! "

He was wiser, made both head and hide  
His win-penny : hands and knees on,  
Would manage to crawl — poor crab — by the  
roads  
In the misty stalking-season.

And if he discovered a bothy like this,  
Why, harvest was sure : folk listened.  
He told his tale to the lovers of Sport :  
Lips twitched, cheeks glowed, eyes glistened.

And when he had come to the close, and spread  
His spoils for the gazers' wonder,  
With " Gentlemen, here 's the skull of the stag  
I was over, thank God, not under ! " —

The company broke out in applause ;  
" By Jingo, a lucky cripple !  
Have a munch of grouse and a hunk of bread,  
And a tug, besides, at our tippie ! "

And " There 's my pay for your pluck ! " cried  
This,

" And mine for your jolly story ! "  
Cried That, while T' other — but he was  
drunk —  
Hiccapped " A trump, a Tory ! "

I hope I gave twice as much as the rest ;  
For, as Homer would say, " within grate  
Though teeth kept tongue, " my whole soul  
growled,  
" Rightly rewarded, — Ingrate ! "

SOLOMON AND BALKIS

SOLOMON King of the Jews and the Queen of  
Sheba, Balkis,  
Talk on the ivory throne, and we well may con-  
jecture their talk is  
Solely of things sublime : why else has she  
sought Mount Zion,  
Climbed the six golden steps, and sat betwixt  
lion and lion ?

She proves him with hard questions : before  
she has reached the middle  
He smiling supplies the end, straight solves  
them riddle by riddle ;  
Until, dead-beaten at last, there is left no spirit  
in her,  
And thus would she close the game whereof she  
was first beginner :

" O wisest thou of the wise, world's marvel and  
wellnigh monster,  
One erabbed question more to construe or *vulgo*  
conster !  
Who are those, of all mankind, a monarch of  
perfect wisdom  
Should open to, when they knock at *spheteron do*  
— that 's, his dome ? "

The King makes tart reply : " Whom else but  
the wise his equals  
Should he welcome with heart and voice ? —  
since, king though he be, such weak walls



Of circumstance — power and pomp — divide  
souls each from other  
That whoso proves kingly in craft I needs must  
acknowledge my brother.

“Come poet, come painter, come sculptor,  
come builder — whate’er his condition,  
Is he prime in his art? We are peers! My  
insight has pierced the partition  
And hails — for the poem, the picture, the  
statue, the building — my fellow!  
Gold’s gold though dim in the dust: court-  
polish soon turns it yellow.

“But tell me in turn, O thou to thy weakling  
sex superior,  
That for knowledge hast travelled so far yet  
seemest nowhit the wearier, —  
Who are those, of all mankind, a queen like  
thyself, consummate  
In wisdom, should call to her side with an  
affable ‘Up hither, come, mate’?”

“The Good are my mates — how else? Why  
doubt it?” the Queen upbridled:  
“Sure even above the Wise, — or in travel my  
eyes have idled, —  
I see the Good stand plain: be they rich, poor,  
shrewd, or simple,  
If Good they only are. . . . Permit me to drop  
my wimple!”

And, in that bashful jerk of her body, she —  
peace, thou scoffer! —  
Jostled the King’s right-hand stretched court-  
ously help to proffer,  
And so disclosed a portent: all unaware the  
Prince eyed  
The Ring which bore the Name — turned out-  
side now from inside!

The truth-compelling Name! — and at once,  
“I greet the Wise — oh,  
Certainly welcome such to my court — with  
this proviso:  
The building must be my temple, my person  
stand forth the statue,  
The picture my portrait prove, and the poem  
my praise — you eat, you!”

But Solomon nonplussed? Nay! “Be truth-  
ful in turn!” so bade he:  
“See the Name, obey its best!” And at once  
subjoins the lady,  
— “Provided the Good are the young, men  
strong and tall and proper,  
Such servants I straightway enlist, — which  
means” . . . But the blushes stop her.

“Ah, Soul,” the Monarch sighed, “that  
wouldst soar yet ever crawlest,  
How comes it thou canst discern the greatest  
yet choose the smallest,  
Unless because heaven is far, where wings find  
fit expansion.  
While creeping on all-fours suits, suffices the  
earthly mansion?”

“Aspire to the Best! But which? There are  
Bests and Bests so many,  
With a *habitat* each for each, earth’s Best as  
much Best as any!  
On Lebanon roots the cedar — soil lofty, yet  
stony and sandy —  
While hyssop, of worth in its way, on the wall  
grows low but handy.

“Above may the Soul spread wing, spurn body  
and sense beneath her;  
Below she must condescend to plodding un-  
buoyed by ether.  
In heaven I yearn for knowledge, account all  
else infancy;  
On earth I confess an itch for the praise of fools  
— that’s Vanity.

“It is naught, it will go, it can never presume  
above to trouble me;  
But here, — why, it toys and tickles and teases,  
howe’er I redouble me  
In a doggedest of endeavors to play the indif-  
ferent. Therefore,  
Suppose we resume discourse? Thou hast  
travelled thus far: but wherefore?”

“Solely for Solomon’s sake, to see whom earth  
styles Sagest?”  
Through her blushes laughed the Queen.  
“For the sake of a Sage? The gay  
jest!  
On high, be communion with Mind — there,  
Body concerns not Balkis:  
Down here, — do I make too bold? Sage  
Solomon, — one fool’s small kiss!”

#### CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI

AH, but how each loved each, Marquis!  
Here’s the gallery they trod  
Both together, he her god,  
She his idol, — lend your rod,  
Chamberlain! — ay, there they are — “*Quis  
Separabit?*” — plain those two  
Touching words come into view,  
Apposite for me and you:

Since they witness to incessant  
Love like ours: King Francis, he —  
Diane the adored one, she —  
Prototypes of you and me.  
Everywhere is carved her Crescent  
With his Salamander-sign —  
Flame-fed creature: flame benign  
To itself or, if malign,

Only to the meddling curious,  
— So, be warned, Sir! Where’s my head?  
How it wanders! What I said  
Merely meant — the creature, fed  
Thus on flame, was scarce injurious  
Save to fools who woke its ire,  
Thinking fit to play with fire.  
’Tis the Crescent you admire?

Then, be Diane ! I'll be Francis.  
 Crescents change, — true ! — wax and wane,  
 Woman-like : male hearts retain  
 Heat nor, once warm, cool again.  
 So, we figure — such our chance is —  
 I as man and you as . . . What ?  
 Take offence ? My Love forgot  
 He plays woman, I do not ?

I — the woman ? See my habit,  
 Ask my people ! Anyhow,  
 Be we what we may, one vow  
 Binds us, male or female. Now, —  
 Stand, Sir ! Read ! “ *Quis separabit ?* ”  
 Half a mile of pictured way  
 Past these palace-walls to-day  
 Traversed, this I came to say.

You must needs begin to love me ;  
 First I hated, then, at best,  
 — Have it so ! — I acquiesced ;  
 Pure compassion did the rest.  
 From below thus raised above me,  
 Would you, step by step, descend,  
 Pity me, become my friend,  
 Like me, like less, loathe at end ?

That 's the ladder's round you rose by !  
 That — my own foot kicked away,  
 Having raised you : let it stay,  
 Serve you for retreating ? Nay.  
 Close to me you climbed : as close by,  
 Keep your station, though the peak  
 Reached proves somewhat bare and bleak !  
 Woman 's strong if man is weak.

Keep here, loving me forever !  
 Love's look, gesture, speech, I claim :  
 Act love, lie love, all the same —  
 Play as earnest were our game !  
 Lonely I stood long : 't was clever  
 When you climbed, before men's eyes,  
 Spurned the earth and scaled the skies,  
 Gained my peak and grasped your prize.

Here you stood, then, to men's wonder ;  
 Here you tire of standing ? Kneel !  
 Cure what giddiness you feel,  
 This way ! Do your senses reel ?  
 Not unlikely ! What rolls under ?  
 Yawning death in yon abyss  
 Where the waters whirl and hiss  
 Round more frightful peaks than this.

Should my buffet dash you thither . . .  
 But be sage ! No watery grave  
 Needs await you : seeming brave  
 Kneel on safe, dear timid slave !  
 You surmised, when you climbed hither,  
 Just as easy were retreat  
 Should you tire, conceive unmeet  
 Longer patience at my feet ?

Me as standing, you as stooping, —  
 Who arranged for each the pose ?  
 Lest men think us friends turned foes,  
 Keep the attitude you chose !

Men are used to this same grouping —  
 I and you like statues seen.  
 You and I, no third between,  
 Kneel and stand ! That makes the scene.

Mar it — and one buffet . . . Pardon !  
 Needless warmth — wise words in waste !  
 'T was prostration that replaced  
 Kneeling, then ? A proof of taste.  
 Crouch, not kneel, while I mount guard on  
 Prostrate love — become no waif,  
 No estray to waves that chafe  
 Disappointed — love 's so safe !

Waves that chafe ? The idlest fancy !  
 Peaks that scare ? I think we know  
 Walls enclose our sculpture : so  
 Grouped, we pose in Fontainebleau.  
 Up now ! Wherefore hesitancy ?  
 Arm in arm and cheek by cheek,  
 Laugh with me at waves and peak !  
 Silent still ? Why, pictures speak.

See, where Juno strikes Ixion.  
 Primatice speaks plainly ! Pooh —  
 Rather, Florentine Le Roux !  
 I 've lost head for who is who —  
 So it swims and wanders ! Fie on  
 What still proves me female ! Here,  
 By the staircase ! — for we near  
 That dark “ Gallery of the Deer.”

Look me in the eyes once ! Steady !  
 Are you faithful now as erst  
 On that eve when we two first  
 Vowed at Avon, blessed and cursed  
 Faith and falsehood ? Pale already ?  
 Forward ! Must my hand compel  
 Entrance — this way ? Exit — well,  
 Somehow, somewhere. Who can tell ?

What if to the selfsame place in  
 Rustic Avon, at the door  
 Of the village church once more,  
 Where a tombstone paves the floor  
 By that holy-water basin  
 You appealed to — “ As, below.  
 This stone hides its corpse, e'en so  
 I your secrets hide ” ? What ho !

Friends, my four ! You, Priest, confess him !  
 I have judged the culprit there :  
 Execute my sentence ! Care  
 For no mail such cowards wear !  
 Done, Priest ? Then, absolve and bless him !  
 Now — you three, stab thick and fast,  
 Deep and deeper ! Dead at last ?  
 Thanks, friends — Father, thanks ! Aghast ?

What one word of his confession  
 Would you tell me, though I lured  
 With that royal crown adured  
 Just because its bars immured  
 Love too much ? Love burst compression,  
 Fled free, finally confessed  
 All its secrets to that breast  
 Whence . . . let Avon tell the rest !

## MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT AND FUSELI

Oh, but is it not hard, Dear ?

Mine are the nerves to quake at a mouse :

If a spider drops I shrink with fear :

I should die outright in a haunted house ;

While for you — did the danger dared bring help —

From a lion's den I could steal his whelp,  
With a serpent round me, stand stock-still,  
Go sleep in a churchyard, — so would will  
Give me the power to dare and do  
Valiantly — just for you !

Much amiss in the head, Dear,

I toil at a language, tax my brain

Attempting to draw — the scratches here !

I play, play, practise, and all in vain :

But for you — if my triumph brought you pride,

I would grapple with Greek Plays till I died,

Paint a portrait of you — who can tell ?

Work my fingers off for your " Pretty well : "

Language and painting and music too,

Easily done — for you !

Strong and fierce in the heart, Dear,

With — more than a will — what seems a power

To pounce on my prey, love outbroke here

In flame devouring and to devour.

Such love has labored its best and worst

To win me a lover ; yet, last as first,

I have not quickened his pulse one beat,

Fixed a moment's fancy, bitter or sweet :

Yet the strong fierce heart's love's labor's due,

Utterly lost, was — you !

## ADAM, LILITH, AND EVE

ONE day, it thundered and lightened.

Two women, fairly frightened,

Sank to their knees, transformed, transfixed,

At the feet of the man who sat betwixt ;

And " Mercy ! " cried each — " if I tell the truth  
Of a passage in my youth ! "

Said This : " Do you mind the morning

I met your love with scorning ?

As the worst of the venom left my lips,

I thought, ' If, despite this lie, he strips

The mask from my soul with a kiss — I crawl

His slave, — soul, body, and all ! "

Said That : " We stood to be married ;

The priest, or some one, tarried ;

' If Paradise-door prove locked ? ' smiled you.

I thought, as I nodded, smiling too,

' Did one, that 's away, arrive — nor late

Nor soon should unlock Hell's gate ! "

It ceased to lighten and thunder.

Up started both in wonder,

Looked round and saw that the sky was clear,

Then laughed " Confess you believed us, Dear ! "

" I saw through the joke ! " the man replied

They re-seated themselves beside.

## IXION

HIGH in the dome, suspended, of Hell, sad tri-  
umph, behold us !

Here the revenge of a God, there the amends  
of a Man.

Whirling forever in torment, flesh once mortal,  
immortal

Made — for a purpose of hate — able to die  
and revive,

Pays to the uttermost pang, then, newly for  
payment replenished,

Doles out — old yet young — agonies ever  
afresh ;

Whence the result above me : torment is bridged  
by a rainbow, —

Tears, sweat, blood, — each spasm, ghastly  
once, glorified now.

Wrung, by the rush of the wheel ordained my  
place of reposing,

Off in a sparklike spray, — flesh become vapor  
through pain, —

Flies the bestowment of Zeus, soul's vaunted  
bodily vesture,

Made that his feats observed gain the approval  
of Man, —

Flesh that he fashioned with sense of the earth  
and the sky and the ocean,

Framed should pierce to the star, fitted to  
pore on the plant, —

All, for a purpose of hate, re-framed, re-fash-  
ioned, re-fitted,

Till, consummate at length, — lo, the employ-  
ment of sense !

Pain's mere minister now to the soul, once  
pledged to her pleasure —

Soul, if untrammelled by flesh, unapprehen-  
sive of pain !

Body, professed soul's slave, which serving be-  
guiled and betrayed her,

Made things false seem true, cheated through  
eye and through ear,

Lured thus heart and brain to believe in the  
lying reported, —

Spurn but the trait'rous slave, uttermost  
atom, away,

What should obstruct soul's rush on the real,  
the only apparent ?

Say I have erred, — how else ? Was I Ixion  
or Zeus ?

Foiled by my senses I dreamed ; I doubtless  
awaken in wonder :

This proves shine, that — shade ? Good was  
the evil that seemed ?

Shall I, with sight thus gained, by torture be  
taught I was blind once ?

Sisuphos, teaches thy stone — Tantalos,  
teaches thy thirst

Aught which unaided sense, purged pure, less  
plainly demonstrates ?

No, for the past was dream : now that the  
dreamers awake,

Sisuphos scouts low fraud, and to Tantalos  
treason is folly.

Ask of myself, whose form melts on the  
murderous wheel,



What is the sin which throe and throe prove  
sin to the sinner!

Say the false charge was true, — thus do I  
expiate, say,

Arrogant thought, word, deed, — mere man  
who conceited me godlike,

Sat beside Zeus, my friend — knelt before  
Heré, my love!

What were the need but of pitying power to  
touch and disperse it,

Film-work — eye's and ear's — all the dis-  
traction of sense?

How should the soul not see, not hear, — per-  
ceive and as plainly

Render, in thought, word, deed, back again  
truth — not a lie?

"Ay, but the pain is to punish thee!" Zeus,  
once more for a pastime,

Play the familiar, the frank! Speak and  
have speech in return!

I was of Thessaly king, there ruled and a peo-  
ple obeyed me:

Mine to establish the law, theirs to obey it or  
die:

Wherefore? Because of the good to the peo-  
ple, because of the honor

Thence accruing to me, king, the king's law  
was supreme.

What of the weakling, the ignorant criminal?  
Not who, excuseless.

Breaking my law braved death, knowing his  
deed and its due —

Nay, but the feeble and foolish, the poor trans-  
gressor, of purpose

No whit more than a tree, born to erectness of  
bole,

Palm or plane or pine, we laud if lofty, colum-  
nar —

Loathe if athwart, askew, — leave to the axe  
and the flame!

Where is the vision may penetrate earth and  
beholding acknowledge

Just one pebble at root ruined the straight-  
ness of stem?

Whose fine vigilance follows the sapling, ac-  
counts for the failure,

— Here blew wind, so it bent: there the snow  
lodged, so it broke?

Also the tooth of the beast, bird's bill, mere bite  
of the insect

Gnawed, gnarled, warped their worst: passive  
it lay to offence.

King — I was man, no more: what I recognized  
faulty I punished,

Laying it prone: be sure, more than a man  
had I proved,

Watch and ward o'er the sapling at birthtime  
had saved it, nor simply

Owened the distortion's excuse, — hindered it  
wholly: nay, more —

Even a man, as I sat in my place to do judg-  
ment, and pallid

Criminals passing to doom shuddered away at  
my foot,

Could I have probed through the face to the  
heart, read plain a repentance,

Crime confessed fools' play, virtue ascribed to  
the wise,

Had I not stayed the consignment to doom, not  
dealt the renewed ones

Life to retrace the past, light to retrieve  
the misdeed?

Thus had I done, and thus to have done much  
more it behooves thee,

Zeus who madest man — flawless or faulty,  
thy work!

What if the charge were true, as thou mouthe-  
st, — Ixion the cherished

Minion of Zeus grew vain, vied with the god-  
ships and fell,

Forfeit through arrogance? Stranger! I  
clothed, with the grace of our hu-  
man,

Inhumanity — gods, natures I likened to ours.  
Man among men I had borne me till gods for-  
sooth must regard me

— Nay, must approve, applaud, claim as a  
comrade at last.

Summoned to enter their circle, I sat — their  
equal, how other?

Love should be absolute love, faith is in ful-  
ness or naught.

"I am thy friend, be mine!" smiled Zeus: "If  
Heré attract thee,"

Blushed the imperial cheek, "then — as thy  
heart may suggest!"

Faith in me sprang to the faith, my love hailed  
love as its fellow,

"Zeus, we are friends — how fast! Heré, my  
heart for thy heart!"

Then broke smile into fury of frown, and the  
thunder of "Hence, fool!"

Then through the kiss laughed scorn "Limbs  
or a cloud was to clasp?"

Then from Olumpus to Erebus, then from the  
rapture to torment,

Then from the fellow of gods — misery's  
mate, to the man!

— Man henceforth and forever, who lent from  
the glow of his nature

Warmth to the cold, with light colored the  
black and the blank.

So did a man conceive of your passion, you pas-  
sion-protesters!

So did he trust, so love — being the truth of  
your lie!

You to aspire to be Man! Man made you who  
vainly would ape him:

You are the hollowness, he — filling you, fal-  
sities void.

Even as — witness the emblem, Hell's sad tri-  
umph suspended,

Born of my tears, sweat, blood — bursting to  
vapor above —

Arching my torment, an iris ghostlike startles  
the darkness,

Cold white — jewelry quenched — justifies,  
glorifies pain.

Strive, mankind, though strife endure through  
endless obstruction,

Stage after stage, each rise marred by as cer-  
tain a fall!

Baffled forever — yet never so baffled but, e'en  
in the baffling,

When Man's strength proves weak, checked  
in the body or soul,

Whatsoever the medium, flesh or essence, —  
 Ixion's  
 Made for a purpose of hate, — clothing the  
 entity Thou,  
 — Medium whence that entity strives for the  
 Not-Thou beyond it,  
 Fire elemental, free, frame unnumbered,  
 the All, —  
 Never so baffled but — when, on the verge of  
 an alien existence,  
 Heartened to press, by pangs burst to the in-  
 finite Pure,  
 Nothing is reached but the ancient weakness  
 still that arrests strength,  
 Circumbient still, still the poor human ar-  
 ray,  
 Pride and revenge and hate and cruelty — all it  
 has burst through,  
 Thought to escape, — fresh formed, found in  
 the fashion it fled,  
 Never so baffled but — when Man pays the price  
 of endeavor,  
 Thunderstruck, downthrust, Tartaros-doomed  
 to the wheel, —  
 Then, ay, then, from the tears and sweat and  
 blood of his torment,  
 E'en from the triumph of Hell, up let him  
 look and rejoice!  
 What is the influence, high o'er Hell, that  
 turns to a rapture  
 Pain — and despair's murk mist blends in a  
 rainbow of hope?  
 What is beyond the obstruction, stage by stage  
 though it baffle?  
 Back must I fall, confess "Ever the weakness  
 I fled"?  
 No, for beyond, far, far is a Purity all-unob-  
 structed!  
 Zeus was Zeus — not Man: wrecked by his  
 weakness, I whirl.  
 Out of the wreck I rise — past Zeus to the Po-  
 tency o'er him!  
 I — to have hailed him my friend! I — to  
 have clasped her — my love!  
 Pallid birth of my pain, — where light, where  
 light is, aspiring  
 Thither I rise, whilst thou — Zeus, keep the  
 godship and sink!

#### JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

"THIS now, this other story makes amends  
 And justifies our Mishna," quoth the Jew  
 Aforesaid. "Tell it, learnedest of friends!"

A certain morn broke beautiful and blue  
 O'er Schiphaz city, bringing joy and mirth,  
 — So had ye deemed; while the reverse was true,

Since one small house there gave a sorrow birth  
 In such black sort that, to each faithful eye,  
 Midnight, not morning settled on the earth.

How else, when it grew certain thou wouldst die,  
 Our much-enlightened master, Israel's prop,  
 Eximious Jochanan Ben Sabbathai?

Old, yea, but, undiminished of a drop,  
 The vital essence pulsed through heart and  
 brain;  
 Time left unsickled yet the plenteous crop

On poll and chin and cheek, whereof a skein  
 Handmaids might weave — hairs silk-soft, sil-  
 ver-white,  
 Such as the wool-plant's; none the less in vain

Had Physic striven her best against the spite  
 Of fell disease: the Rabbi must succumb;  
 And, round the couch whereon in piteous plight

He lay a-dying, scholars, — awe-struck, dumb  
 Throughout the night-watch, — roused them-  
 selves and spoke  
 One to the other: "Ere death's touch benumb

"His active sense, — while yet 'neath Reason's  
 yoke  
 Obedient toils his tongue, — befits we claim  
 The fruit of long experience, bid this oak

"Shed us an acorn which may, all the same,  
 Grow to a temple-pillar, — dear that day! —  
 When Israel's scattered seed finds place and  
 name

"Among the envious nations. Lamp us, pray,  
 Thou the Enlightener! Partest hence in peace?  
 Hailest without regret — much less, dismay —

"The hour of thine approximate release  
 From fleshly bondage soul hath found obstruct?  
 Calmly envisageth the sure increase

"Of knowledge? Eden's tree must hold un-  
 plucked  
 Some apple, sure, has never tried thy tooth,  
 Juicy with sapience thou hast sought, not  
 sucked?

"Say, does age acquiesce in vanished youth?  
 Still towers thy purity above — as erst —  
 Our pleasant follies? Be thy last word —  
 truth!"

The Rabbi groaned; then, grimly, "Last as first  
 The truth speak I — in boyhood who began  
 Striving to live an angel, and, amerced

"For such presumption, die now hardly man.  
 What have I proved of life? 'To live, indeed,  
 That much I learned: but here lies Jochanan

"More luckless than stood David when, to speed  
 His fighting with the Philistine, they brought  
 Saul's harness forth: whereat, 'Alack, I need

"Armor to arm me, but have never fought  
 With sword and spear, nor tried to manage  
 shield,  
 Proving arms' use, as well-trained warrior ought

"Only a sling and pebbles can I wield!"  
 So he: while I, contrariwise, 'No trick  
 Of weapon helpful on the battlefield

" 'Comes unfamiliar to my theoric :  
But, bid me put in practice what I know,  
Give me a sword — it stings like Moses' stick,

" 'A serpent I let drop apace.' E'en so,  
I, — able to comport me at each stage  
Of human life as never here below

" Man played his part, — since mine the heri-  
tage  
Of wisdom carried to that perfect pitch,  
Ye rightly praise, — I, therefore, who, thus  
sage,

" Could sure act man triumphantly, enrich  
Life's annals, with example how I played  
Lover, Bard, Soldier, Statist, — (all of which

" Parts in presentment failing, cries invade  
The world's ear — 'Ah, the Past, the pearl-  
gift thrown  
To hogs, time's opportunity we made

" 'So light of, only recognized when flown !  
Had we been wise !' — in fine, I — wise  
enough, —  
What profit brings me wisdom never shown

" Just when its showing would from each re-  
buff  
Shelter weak virtue, threaten back to bounds  
Encroaching vice, tread smooth each track too  
rough

" For youth's unsteady footstep, climb the  
rounds  
Of life's long ladder, one by slippery one,  
Yet make no stumble ? Me hard fate con-  
founds

" With that same crowd of wailers I outrun  
By promising to teach another cry  
Of more hilarious mood than theirs, the sun

" I look my last at is insulted by.  
What cry, — ye ask ? Give ear on every side !  
Witness yon Lover ! 'How entrapped am I !

" 'Methought, because a virgin's rose-lip vied  
With ripe Khubbeleh's, needs must beauty  
mate  
With meekness and discretion in a bride :

" 'Bride she became to me who wail — too  
late —  
*Unwise I loved !* ' That's one cry. 'Mind 's  
my gift :  
I might have loaded me with lore, full weight

" 'Pressed down and running over at each rift  
O' the brain-bag where the famished clung and  
fed,  
I filled it with what rubbish ! — would not sift

" 'The wheat from chaff, sound grain from  
musty — shed  
Poison abroad as oft as nutriment —  
And sighing say but as my fellows said,

" ' *Unwise I learned !* ' That's two. 'In  
dwarf's-play spent  
Was giant's prowess : warrior all unversed  
In war's right waging, I struck brand, was  
lent

" 'For steel's fit service, on mere stone — and  
cursed  
Alike the shocked limb and the shivered steel,  
Seeing too late the blade's true use which erst

" 'How was I blind to ! My cry swells the  
peal —  
*Unwise I fought !* ' That's three. But where-  
fore waste  
Breath on the wailings longer ? Why reveal

" 'A root of bitterness whereof the taste  
Is noisome to Humanity at large ?  
First we get Power, but Power absurdly placed

" 'In Folly's keeping, who resigns her charge  
To Wisdom when all Power grows nothing  
worth :  
Bones marrowless are mocked with helm and  
targe

" 'When, like your Master's, soon below the  
earth  
With worms shall warfare only be. Fare-  
well,  
Children ! I die a failure since my birth ! "

" 'Not so ! ' arose a protest, as, pell-mell,  
They pattered from his chamber to the street,  
Bent on a last resource. Our Targums tell

That such resource there is. Put case, there  
meet  
The Nine Points of Perfection — rarest  
chance —  
Within some saintly teacher whom the fleet

Years, in their blind implacable advance,  
O'er take before fit teaching born of these  
Have magnified his scholars' countenance, —

If haply folk compassionating please  
To render up — according to his store,  
Each one — a portion of the life he sees

Hardly worth saving when 't is set before  
Earth's benefit should the Saint, Hakkadosh,  
Favored thereby, attain to full fourscore —

If such contribute (Scoffer, spare thy " Bosh ! ")  
A year, a month, a day, an hour — to eke  
Life out, — in him away the gift shall wash

That much of ill-spent time recorded, streak  
The twilight of the so-assisted sage  
With a new sunrise : truth, though strange to  
speak !

Quick to the doorway, then, where youth and  
age,  
All Israel, thronging, waited for the last  
News of the loved one. " 'T is the final stage :



"Art's utmost done, the Rabbi's feet tread fast  
The way of all flesh!" So announced that apt  
Olive-branch Tsaddik: "Yet, O Brethren, cast

"No eye to earthward! Look where heaven  
has clapped

Morning's extinguisher — yon ray-shot robe  
Of sun-threads — on the constellation mapped

"And mentioned by our Elders, — yea, from  
Job

Down to Satam, — as figuring forth — what?  
Perpend a mystery! Ye call it *Dob*,

"The Bear': I trow, a wiser name than  
that

Were *Aish* — 'The Bier': a corpse those four  
stars hold,

Which — are not those Three Daughters weep-  
ing at

"*Banoth*? I judge so: list while I unfold  
The reason. As in twice twelve hours this  
Bier

Goes and returns, about the east-cone rolled,

"So may a setting luminary here  
Be rescued from extinction, rolled anew  
Upon its track of labor, strong and clear,

"About the Pole — that Salem, every Jew  
Helps to build up when thus he saves some  
Saint  
Ordained its architect. Ye grasp the clue

"To all ye seek? The Rabbi's lamp-flame faint  
Sinks: would ye raise it? Lend then life from  
yours,  
Spare each his oil-drop! Do I need acquaint

"The Chosen how self-sacrifice ensures  
Tenfold requital? — urge ye emulate  
The fame of those Old Just Ones death procures

"Such praise for, that 't is now men's sole de-  
bate  
Which of the Ten, who volunteered at Rome  
To die for glory to our Race, was great

"Beyond his fellows? Was it thou — the comb  
Of iron carded, flesh from bone, away,  
While thy lips sputtered through their bloody  
foam

"Without a stoppage (O brave Akiba!)  
'Hear, Israel, our Lord God is One'? Or thou,  
Jischab? — who smiledst, burning, since there  
lay,

"Burning along with thee, our Law! I trow,  
Such martyrdom might tax flesh to afford:  
While that for which I make petition now,

"To what amounts it? Youngster, wilt thou  
hoard  
Each minute of long years thou look'st to spend  
In dalliance with thy spouse? Hast thou so  
soared,

"Singer of songs, all out of sight of friend  
And teacher, warbling like a woodland bird,  
There's left no Selah, 'twixt two psalms, to  
lend

"Our late-so-tuneful quirit? Thou, averred  
The fighter born to plant our lion-flag  
Once more on Zion's mount, — doth all-un-  
heard,

"My pleading fail to move thee? Toss some  
rag  
Shall stanch our wound, some minute never  
missed  
From swordsman's lustihood like thine! Wilt  
lag

"In liberal bestowment, show close fist  
When open palm we look for, — thou, wide-  
known  
For statecraft? whom, 'tis said, and if thou  
list,

"The Shah himself would seat beside his  
throne,  
So valued were advice from thee" . . . But  
here  
He stopped short: such a hubbub! Not alone

From those addressed, but far as well as near  
The crowd brought into clamor: "Mine, mine,  
mine —  
Lop from my life the excrescence, never fear!

"At me thou lookedst, markedst me! As-  
sign  
To me that privilege of granting life —  
Mine, mine!" Then he: "Be patient! I  
combine

"The needful portions only, wage no strife  
With Nature's law nor seek to lengthen out  
The Rabbi's day unduly. 'T is the knife

"I stop, — would cut its thread too short.  
About  
As much as helps life last the proper term,  
The appointed Fourscore, — that I crave, and  
scout

"A too-prolonged existence. Let the worm  
Change at fit season to the butterfly!  
And here a story strikes me, to confirm

"This judgment. Of our worthies, none ranks  
high  
As Perida who kept the famous school:  
None rivalled him in patience: none! For  
why?

"In lecturing it was his constant rule,  
Whatever he expounded, to repeat  
— Ay, and keep on repeating, lest some fool

"Should fail to understand him fully — (feat  
Unparalleled, Uzzean!) — do ye mark? —  
Five hundred times! So might he entrance  
beat

"For knowledge into howsoever dark  
And dense the brain-pan. Yet it happed, at  
close  
Of one especial lecture, not one spark

"Of light was found to have illumed the rows  
Of pupils round their pedagogue. 'What, still  
Impenetrable to me? Then—here goes!'

"And for a second time he sets the rill  
Of knowledge running, and five hundred times  
More re-repeats the matter—and gains *nil*.

"Out broke a voice from heaven: 'Thy patience  
climbs  
Even thus high. Choose! Wilt thou, rather,  
quick  
Ascend to bliss—or, since thy zeal sublimes

"Such drudgery, will thy back still bear its  
erick,  
Bent o'er thy class,—thy voice drone spite of  
drouth,—  
Five hundred years more at thy desk wilt  
stick?'

"To heaven with me!' was in the good man's  
mouth,  
When all his scholars—cruel-kind were they!—  
Stopped utterance, from East, West, North and  
South,

"Rending the welkin with their shout of  
'Nay—  
No heaven as yet for our instructor! Grant  
Five hundred years on earth for Perida!'

"And so long did he keep instructing! Want  
Our Master no such misery! I but take  
Three months of life marital. Ministrant

"Be thou of so much, Poet! Bold I make,  
Swordsman, with thy frank offer!—and con-  
clude,  
Statist, with thine! One year,—ye will not  
shake

"My purpose to accept no more. So rude?  
The very boys and girls, forsooth, must press  
And proffer their addition? Thanks! The  
mood

"Is laudable, but I reject, no less,  
One month, week, day of life more. Leave my  
gown,  
Ye overbold ones! Your life's gift, you guess,

"Were good as any? Rudesby, get thee down!  
Set my feet free, or fear my staff! Farewell,  
Seniors and saviors, sharers of renown

"With Jochanan henceforward!" Straight-  
way fell  
Sleep on the sufferer: he awoke in health,  
Hale everyway, so potent was the spell.

O the rare Spring-time! Who is he by stealth  
Approaches Jochanan?—embowered that sits  
Under his vine and figtree 'mid the wealth

Of garden-sights and sounds, since intermits  
Never the turtle's coo, nor stays nor stints  
The rose her smell. In homage that befits

The musing Master, Tsaddik, see, imprints  
A kiss on the extended foot, low bends  
Forehead to earth, then, all-obsequious, hints

"What if it should be time? A period ends—  
That of the Lover's gift—his quarter-year  
Of lustihood: 't is just thou make amends,

"Return that loan with usury: so, here  
Come I, of thy Disciples delegate,  
Claiming our lesson from thee. Make appear

"Thy profit from experience! Plainly state  
How men should Love!" Thus he: and to  
him thus  
The Rabbi: "Love, ye call it?—rather, Hate!

"What wouldst thou? Is it needful I discuss  
Wherefore new sweet wine, poured in bottles  
caked  
With old strong wine's deposit, offers us

"Spoilt liquor we recoil from, thirst-unslaked?  
Like earth-smoke from a crevice, out there  
wound—  
Languors and yearnings: not a sense but ached

"Weighed on by fancied form and feature,  
sound  
Of silver word and sight of sunny smile:  
No beckoning of a flower-branch, no profound

"Purple of noon-oppression, no light wile  
O' the West wind, but transformed itself till—  
brief—  
Before me stood the phantasy ye style

"Youth's love, the joy that shall not come to  
grief,  
Born to endure, eternal, unimpaired  
By custom the accloyer, time the thief.

"Had Age's hard cold knowledge only spared  
That ignorance of Youth! But now the dream,  
Fresh as from Paradise, alighting fared

"As fares the pigeon, finding what may seem  
Her nest's safe hollow holds a snake inside  
Coiled to enclasp her. See, Eve stands supreme

"In youth and beauty! Take her for thy  
bride!  
What Youth deemed crystal, Age finds out was  
dew

Morn set a-sparkle, but which noon quick dried

"While Youth bent gazing at its red and blue  
Supposed perennial,—never dreamed the sun  
Which kindled the display would quench it too.

"Graces of shape and color — every one  
With its appointed period of decay  
When ripe to purpose! 'Still, these dead and  
done,

" 'Survives the woman-nature — the soft sway  
Of undefinable omnipotence  
O'er our strong male-stuff, we of Adam's  
clay.'

"Ay, if my physics taught not why and whence  
The attraction! Am I like the simple steer  
Who, from his pasture lured inside the fence,

"Where yoke and goad await him, holds that  
mere  
Kindliness prompts extension of the hand  
Hollowed for barley, which drew near and  
near

"His nose — in proof that, of the hornèd band,  
The farmer best affected him? Beside,  
Steer, since his calfhood, got to understand

"Farmers a many in the world so wide  
Were ready with a handful just as choice  
Or choicer — maize and cummin, treats untried.

"Shall I wed wife, and all my days rejoice  
I gained the peacock? 'Las me, round I look,  
And lo — 'With me thou wouldst have blamed  
no voice

" 'Like hers that daily deafens like a rook:  
I am the phoenix!' — 'I, the lark, the dove,  
— The owl,' for aught knows he who blindly  
took

"Peacock for partner, while the vale, the  
grove,  
The plain held bird-mates in abundance.  
There!  
Youth, try fresh capture! Age has found out  
Love

"Long ago. War seems better worth man's  
care.  
But leave me! Disappointment finds a balm  
Haply in slumber." "This first step o' the  
stair

"To knowledge fails me, but the victor's palm  
Lies on the next to tempt him overleap  
A stumbling-block. Experienced, gather calm,

"Thou excellence of Judah, cured by sleep  
Which ushers in the Warrior, to replace  
The Lover! At due season I shall reap

"Fruit of my planting!" So, with length-  
ened face,  
Departed Tsaddik: and three moons more  
waxed  
And waned, and not until the summer-space

Waned likewise, any second visit taxed  
The Rabbi's patience. But at three months' end  
Behold, supine beneath a rock, relaxed

The sage lay musing till the noon should spend  
Its ardor. Up comes Tsaddik, who but he,  
With "Master, may I warn thee, nor offend,

"That time comes round again? We look to  
see  
Sprout from the old branch — not the young-  
ling twig —  
But fruit of sycamine: deliver me,

"To share among my fellows, some plump fig,  
Juicy as seedy! That same man of war,  
Who, with a scantling of his store, made big

"Thy starveling nature, caused thee, safe from  
sear,  
To share his gains by long acquaintanceship  
With bump and bruise and all the knocks that  
are

"Of battle dowry, — he bids loose thy lip.  
Explain the good of battle! Since thou know'st,  
Let us know likewise! Fast the moments slip,

"More need that we improve them!" — "Ay.  
we boast,  
We warriors in our youth, that with the sword  
Man goes the swiftest to the uttermost —

"Takes the straight way through lands yet un-  
explored  
To absolute Right and Good, — may so obtain  
God's glory and man's weal too long ignored,

"Too late attained by preachments all in  
vain —  
The passive process. Knots get tangled worse  
By toying with: does cut cord close again?

"Moreover there is blessing in the curse  
Peace-praisers call war. What so sure evolves  
All the capacities of soul, proves nurse

"Of that self-sacrifice in men which solves  
The riddle — *Wherein differs Man from beast?*  
Foxes boast cleverness and courage wolves:

"Nowhere but in mankind is found the least  
Touch of an impulse 'To our fellows — good  
I' the highest! — not diminished but increased

" 'By the condition plainly understood  
— Such good shall be attained at price of hurt  
I' the highest to ourselves!' Fine sparks,  
that brood

"Confusedly in Man, 't is war bids spurt  
Forth into flame: as fares the meteor-mass,  
Whereof no particle but holds inert

"Some seed of light and heat, however crass  
The enclosure, yet avails not to discharge  
Its radiant birth before there come to pass

"Some push external, — strong to set at large  
Those dormant fire-seeds, whirl them in a trice  
Through heaven, and light up earth from  
marge to marge:



"Since force by motion makes — what erst was  
ice —  
Crash into fervency and so expire,  
Because some Djinn has hit on a device

"For proving the full prettiness of fire!  
Ay, thus we prattle — young: but old — why,  
first,  
Where 's that same Right and Good — (the wise  
inquire) —

"So absolute, it warrants the outburst  
Of blood, tears, all war's woeful consequence,  
That comes of the fine flaring? Which plague  
cursed

"The more your benefited Man — offence,  
Or what suppressed the offender? Say it did —  
Show us the evil cured by violence,

"Submission cures not also! Lift the lid  
From the maturing crucible, we find  
Its slow sure coaxing-out of virtue, hid

"In that same meteor-mass, hath uncombined  
Those particles and, yielding for result  
(Gold, not mere flame, by so much leaves be-  
hind

"The heroic product. E'en the simple cult  
Of Edom's children wisely bids them turn  
Cheek to the smiter with '*Sic Jesus vult.*'

"Say there 's a tyrant by whose death we earn  
Freedom, and justify a war to wage:  
Good! — were we only able to discern

"Exactly how to reach and catch and cage  
Him only and no innocent beside!  
Whereas the folk whereon war wreaks its rage

"— How shared they his ill-doing? Far and  
wide  
The victims of our warfare strew the plain,  
Ten thousand dead, whereof not one but died

"In faith that vassals owed their suzerain  
Life: therefore each paid tribute — honest  
soul —  
To that same Right and Good ourselves are  
fain

"To call exclusively our end. From bole  
(Since ye accept in me a sycamine)  
Pluck, eat, digest a fable — yea, the sole

"Fig I afford you! 'Dost thou dwarf my  
vine?'  
(So did a certain husbandman address  
The tree which faced his field.) 'Receive con-  
dign

"Punishment, prompt removal by the stress  
Of axe I forthwith lay unto thy root!' —  
Long did he hack and hew, the root no less

"As long defied him, for its tough strings  
shoot

As deep down as the boughs above aspire:  
All that he did was — shake to the tree's foot

"Leafage and fruitage, things we most require  
For shadow and refreshment: which good deed  
Thoroughly done, behold the axe-haft tires

"His hand, and he desisting leaves unfreed  
The vine he hacked and hewed for. Comes a  
frost,  
One natural night's work, and there's little  
need

"Of hacking, hewing: lo, the tree's a ghost!  
Perished it starves, black death from topmost  
bough  
To farthest-reaching fibre! Shall I boast

"My rough work — warfare — helped more?  
Loving, now —  
That, by comparison, seems wiser, since  
The loving fool was able to avow

"He could effect his purpose, just evince  
Love's willingness, — once 'ware of what she  
lacked,  
His loved one, — to go work for that, nor wince

"At self-expenditure: he neither hacked  
Nor hewed, but when the lady of his field  
Required defence because the sun attacked,

"He, failing to obtain a fitter shield,  
Would interpose his body, and so blaze,  
Blest in the burning. Ah, were mine to wield

"The intellectual weapon — poet-lays, —  
How preferably had I sung one song  
Which . . . but my sadness sinks me: go your  
ways!

"I sleep out disappointment." "Come along,  
Never lose heart! There's still as much again  
Of our bestowment left to right the wrong

"Done by its earlier moiety — explain  
Wherefore, who may! The Poet's mood comes  
next.  
Was he not wishful the poetic vein

"Should pulse within him? Jochanan, thou  
reck'st  
Little of what a generous flood shall soon  
Float thy clogged spirit free and unperplexed

"Above dry dubitation! Song's the boon  
Shall make amends for my untoward mistake  
That Joshua-like thou couldst bid sun and  
moon —

"Fighter and Lover, — which for most men  
make  
All thy desery in heaven, — stand both stock-  
still  
And lend assistance. Poet shalt thou wake!"

Autumn brings Tsaddik. "Ay, there speeds  
the rill

Loaded with leaves: a scowling sky, beside:  
The wind makes olive-trees up yonder hill

"Whiten and shudder — symptoms far and wide  
Of gleaming-time's approach; and glean good  
store  
May I presume to trust we shall, thou tried

"And ripe experimenter! Three months more  
Have ministered to growth of Song: that graft  
Into thy sterile stock has found at core

"Moisture, I warrant, hitherto unquaffed  
By boughs, however florid, wanting sap  
Of prose-experience which provides the draught

"Which song-sprouts, wanting, wither: vain  
we tap  
A youngling stem all green and immature;  
Experience must secrete the stuff, our hap

"Will be to quench Man's thirst with, glad and  
sure  
That fancy wells up through corrective fact:  
Missing which test of truth, though flowers  
allure

"The goodman's eye with promise, soon the  
pact  
Is broken, and 't is flowers — mere words — he  
finds  
When things — that's fruit — he looked for.  
Well, once cracked

"The nut, how glad my tooth the kernel grinds!  
Song may henceforth boast substance! There-  
fore, hail  
Proser and poet, perfect in both kinds!

"Thou from whose eye hath dropped the en-  
vious scale  
Which hides the truth of things and substitutes  
Deceptive show, unaided optics fail

"To transpierce, — hast entrusted to the lute's  
Soft but sure guardianship some unrevealed  
Secret shall lift mankind above the brutes

"As only knowledge can?" "A fount un-  
sealed"  
(Sighed Jochanan) "should seek the heaven in  
leaps  
To die in dew-gems — not find death, congealed

"By contact with the cavern's nether deeps,  
Earth's secretest foundation where, enswathed  
In dark and fear, primeval mystery sleeps —

"Petrific fount wherein my fancies bathed  
And straight turned ice. My dreams of good  
and fair  
In soaring upwards had dissolved, unscathed

"By any influence of the kindly air,  
Singing, as each took flight, 'The Future —  
that's  
Our destination, mists turn rainbows there,

"Which sink to fog, confounded in the flats  
O' the Present! Day's the song-time for the  
lark,  
Night for her music boasts but owls and bats.

"And what's the Past but night — the deep  
and dark  
Ice-spring I speak of, corpse-thickened with its  
drowned  
Dead fancies which no sooner touched the  
mark

"They aimed at — fact — than all at once  
they found  
Their film-wings freeze, henceforth unfit to  
reach  
And roll in ether, revel — robed and crowned

"As truths confirmed by falsehood all and  
each —  
Sovereign and absolute and ultimate!  
Up with them, skyward, Youth, ere Age im-  
peach

"Thy least of promises to reinstate  
Adam in Eden!' Sing on, ever sing,  
Chirp till thou burst! — the fool cicada's fate,

"Who holds that after Summer next comes  
Spring,  
Than Summer's self sun-warmed, spice-scented  
more.  
Fighting was better! There, no fancy-fling

"Pitches you past the point was reached of  
yore  
By Samsons, Abners, Joabs, Judases,  
The mighty men of valor who, before

"Our little day, did wonders none profess  
To doubt were fable and not fact, so trust  
By fancy-flights to emulate much less.

"Were I a Statesman, now! Why, that were  
just  
To pinnacle my soul, mankind above,  
A-top the universe: no vulgar lust

"To gratify — fame, greed, at this remove  
Looked down upon so far — or overlooked  
So largely, rather — that mine eye should rove

"World-wide and rummage earth, the many-  
nooked,  
Yet find no unit of the human flock  
Caught straying but straight comes back  
hooked and crooked

"By the strong shepherd who, from out his  
stock  
Of aids proceeds to treat each ailing fleece,  
Here stimulate to growth, curtail and dock

"There, baldness or excrescence, — that, with  
grease,  
This, with up-grubbing of the bristly patch  
Born of the tick-bite. How supreme a peace

"Steals o'er the Statist, — while, in wit, a  
match  
For shrewd Ahithophel, in wisdom . . . well,  
His name escapes me — somebody, at watch

"And ward, the fellow of Ahithophel  
In guidance of the Chosen!" — at which word  
Eyes closed and fast asleep the Rabbi fell.

"Cold weather!" shivered Tsaddik. "Yet  
the hoard  
Of the sagacious ant shows garnered grain,  
Ever abundant most when fields afford

"Least pasture, and alike disgrace the plain  
Tall tree and lowly shrub. 'T is so with us  
Mortals: our age stores wealth ye seek in vain

"While busy youth culls just what we discuss  
At leisure in the last days: and the last  
Truly are these for Jochanan, whom thus

"I make one more appeal to! Thine amassed  
Experience, now or never, let escape  
Some portion of! For I perceive aghast

"The end approaches, while they jeer and  
jape,  
These sons of Shinei: 'Justify your boast!  
What have ye gained from Death by twelve  
months' rape?

"Statesman, what cure hast thou for — least  
and most —  
Popular grievances? What nostrum, say,  
Will make the Rich and Poor, expertly dosed,

"Forget disparity, bid each go gay,  
That, with his bauble, — with his burden, this?  
Propose an alkahest shall melt away

"Men's lacquer, show by prompt analysis  
Which is the metal, which the make-believe,  
So that no longer brass shall find, gold miss

"Coinage and currency? Make haste, retrieve  
The precious moments, Master!" Whereunto  
There snarls an "Ever laughing in thy sleeve,

"Pert Tsaddik? Youth indeed sees plain a  
clue  
To guide man where life's wood is intricate:  
How shall he fail to thrud its thickest through

"When every oak-trunk takes the eye? Elate  
He goes from hole to brushwood, plunging  
finds —  
Smothered in briers — that the small's the  
great!

"All men are men: I would all minds were  
minds!  
Whereas 't is just the many's mindless mass  
That most needs helping: laborers and hinds

"We legislate for — not the cultured class  
Which law-makes for itself nor needs the whip  
And bridle, — proper help for mule and ass,

"Did the brutes know! In vain our states-  
manship  
Strives at contenting the rough multitude:  
Still the ox cries " 'T is me thou shouldst equip

" 'With equine trappings!' or, in humbler  
mood,  
 'Cribful of corn for me! and, as for work —  
Adequate rumination o'er my food!'

"Better remain a Poet! Needs it irk  
Such an one if light, kindled in his sphere,  
Fail to transfuse the Mizraim cold and murky

"Round about Goshen? Though light disap-  
pear,  
Shut inside, — temporary ignorance  
Got outside of, lo, light emerging clear

"Shows each astonished starrer the expanse  
Of heaven made bright with knowledge!  
That's the way,  
The only way — I see it at a glance —

"To legislate for earth! As poet . . . Stay!  
What is . . . I would that . . . were it . . . I  
had been . . .  
O sudden change, as if my arid clay

"Burst into bloom!" . . . "A change indeed,  
I ween,  
And change the last!" sighed Tsaddik as he  
kissed  
The closing eyelids. "Just as those serene

"Princes of Night apprised me! Our acquist  
Of life is spent, since corners only four  
Hath Aisch, and each in turn was made desist

"In passage round the Pole (O Mishna's lore —  
Little it profits here!) by strenuous tug  
Of friends who eked out thus to full fourscore

"The Rabbi's years. I see each shoulder shrug!  
What have we gained? Away the Bier may  
roll!  
To-morrow, when the Master's grave is dug,

"In with his body I may pitch the scroll  
I hoped to glorify with, text and gloss,  
My Science of Man's Life: one blank's the  
whole!

"Love, war, song, statesmanship — no gain, all  
loss,  
The stars' bestowment! We on our return  
To-morrow merely find — not gold but dross,

"The body not the soul. Come, friends, we  
learn  
At least thus much by our experiment —  
That — that . . . well, find what, whom it may  
concern!"

But next day through the city rumors went  
Of a new persecution; so, they fled  
All Israel, each man, — this time, — from his  
tent,



Tsaddik among the foremost. When, the dread  
Subsiding, Israel ventured back again  
Some three months after, to the cave they sped

Where lay the Sage, — a reverential train !  
Tsaddik first enters. "What is this I view ?  
The Rabbi still alive ? No stars remain

"Of Aisch to stop within their courses. True,  
I mind me, certain gamesome boys must urge  
Their offerings on me : can it be — one threw

"Life at him and it stuck ? There needs the  
scourge  
To teach that urchin manners ! Prithee, grant  
Forgiveness if we pretermitt thy dirge

"Just to explain no friend was ministrant,  
This time, of life to thee ! Some jackanapes,  
I gather, has presumed to foist his seant

"Scurvy unripe existence — wilding grapes  
Grass-green and sorrel-sour — on that grand  
wine,  
Mighty as mellow, which, so fancy shapes

"May fitly image forth this life of thine  
Fed on the last low fattening lees — condensed  
Elixir, no milk-mildness of the vine !

"Rightly with Tsaddik wert thou now incensed  
Had he been witting of the mischief wrought  
When, for elixir, verjuice he dispensed ! "

And slowly woke, — like Shushan's flower be-  
sought  
By over-curious handling to unloose  
The curtained secrecy wherein she thought

Her captive bee, 'mid store of sweets to choose,  
Would loll, in gold pavilioned lie unteased.  
Sucking on, sated never, — whose, O whose

Might seem that countenance, uplift, all eased  
Of old distraction and bewilderment,  
Absurdly happy ? "How ye have appeased

"The strife within me, bred this whole con-  
tent,  
This utter acquiescence in my past,  
Present and future life, — by whom was lent

"The power to work this miracle at last, —  
Exceeds my guess. Though — *ignorance con-*  
*firmed*  
By knowledge sounds like paradox, I cast

"Vainly about to tell you — fitlier termed —  
Of calm struck by encountering opposites,  
Each nullifying either ! Henceforth wormed

"From out my heart is every snake that bites  
The dove that else would brood there : doubt,  
which kills  
With hiss of 'What if sorrows end delights ?'

"Fear which stings ease with 'Work the Master  
wills !'

Experience which coils round and strangles  
quick  
Each hope with 'Ask the Past if hoping skills

"To work accomplishment, or proves a trick  
Wiling thee to endeavor ! Strive, fool, stop  
Nowise, so live, so die — that 's law ! why kick

"Against the pricks ?' All out-wormed !  
Slumber, drop  
Thy films once more and veil the bliss within !  
Experience strangle hope ? Hope waves a-top

"Her wings triumphant ! Come what will, I  
win,  
Whoever loses ! Every dream 's assured  
Of soberest fulfilment. Where 's a sin

"Except in doubting that the light, which  
lured  
The unwary into darkness, meant no wrong  
Had I but marched on bold, nor paused immured

"By mists I should have pressed through,  
passed along  
My way henceforth rejoicing ? Not the boy's  
Passionate impulse he conceits so strong,

"Which, at first touch, truth, bubble-like, de-  
stroys, —  
Not the man's slow conviction 'Vanity  
Of vanities — alike my griefs and joys !'

"Ice ! — thawed (look up) each bird, each insect  
by —  
(Look round) by all the plants that break in  
bloom,  
(Look down) by every dead friend's memory

"That smiles 'Am I the dust within my  
tomb ?'  
Not either, but both these — amalgam rare —  
Mix in a product, not from Nature's womb,

"But stuff which He the Operant — who shall  
dare  
Describe His operation ? — strikes alive  
And thaumaturgic. I nor know nor care

"How from this tohu-bohu — hopes which dive,  
And fears which soar — faith, ruined through  
and through  
By doubt, and doubt, faith treads to dust —  
revive

"In some surprising sort, — as see, they do ! —  
Not merely foes no longer but fast friends.  
What does it mean unless — O strange and  
new

"Discovery ! — this life proves a wine-press —  
blends  
Evil and good, both fruits of Paradise,  
Into a novel drink which — who intends

"To quaff, must bear a brain for ecstasies  
Attempted, not this all-inadequate  
Organ which, quivering within me, dies

"—Nay, lives!—what, how,—too soon, or  
else too late—  
I was—I am"—... ("He babbleth!" Tsad-  
dik mused)

"O Thou Almighty, who canst reinstate

"Truths in their primal clarity, confused  
By man's perception, which is man's and made  
To suit his service,—how, once disabused

"Of reason which sees light half shine half  
shade,

Because of flesh, the medium that adjusts  
Purity to his visuals, both an aid

"And hindrance,—how to eyes earth's air en-  
crusts,

When purged and perfect to receive truth's  
beam

Pouring itself on the new sense it trusts

"With all its plenitude of power,—how seem  
The intricacies now, of shade and shine,  
Oppugnant naturen—Right and Wrong, we  
deem

"Irreconcilable? O eyes of mine,  
Freed now of imperfection, ye avail  
To see the whole sight, nor may uncombine

"Henceforth what, erst divided, caused you  
quail—

So huge the chasm between the false and true,  
The dream and the reality! All hail,

"Day of my soul's deliverance—day the new,  
The never-ending! What though every shape  
Whereon I wreaked my yearning to pursue

"Even to success each semblance of escape  
From my own bounded self to some all-fair  
All-wise external fancy, proved a rape

"Like that old giant's, feigned of fools—on air,  
Not solid flesh? How otherwise? To love—  
That lesson was to learn not here—but there—

"On earth, not here! 'Tis there we learn,—  
there prove

Our parts upon the stuff we needs must spoil,  
Striving at mastery, there bend above

"The spoiled clay potsherds, many a year of toil  
Attests the potter tried his hand upon,  
Till sudden he arose, wiped free from soil

"His hand, cried 'So much for attempt—anon  
Performance! Taught to mould the living vase,  
What matter the cracked pitchers dead and  
gone?'

"Could I impart and could thy mind embrace  
The secret, 'Tsaddik!'" "Secret none to me!"  
Quoth Tsaddik, as the glory on the face

Of Jochanan was quenched. "The truth I see  
Of what that excellence of Judah wrote,  
Doughty Halaphta. This a case must be

"Wherein, though the last breath have passed  
the throat,

So that 'The man is dead' we may pronounce,  
Yet is the Ruach—(thus do we denote

"The imparted Spirit)—in no haste to bounce  
From its entrusted Body,—some three days  
Lingers ere it relinquish to the pounce

"Of hawk-clawed Death his victim. Further  
says

Halaphta, 'Instances have been, and yet  
Again may be, when saints, whose earthly ways

"Tend to perfection, very nearly get  
To heaven while still on earth: and, as a fine  
Interval shows where waters pure have met

"Waves brackish, in a mixture, sweet with  
brine,

That 's neither sea nor river but a taste  
Of both—so meet the earthly and divine

"And each is either.' Thus I hold him  
graced—

Dying on earth, half inside and half out,  
Wholly in heaven, who knows? My mind em-  
braced

"Thy secret, Jochanan, how dare I doubt?  
Follow thy Ruach, let earth, all it can,  
Keep of the leavings!" Thus was brought about

The sepulture of Rabbi Jochanan:  
Thou hast him,—sinner-saint, live-dead, boy-  
man,—  
Schiphaz, on Bendimir, in Farzistan!

NOTE.—This story can have no better authority than  
that of the treatise, existing dispersedly in fragments  
of Rabbinical writing, מִיָּדָהּ שֶׁל רַבִּי מֹשֶׁה, from which I might have helped myself more liberally,  
Thus, instead of the simple reference to "Moses' stick,"  
—but what if I make amends by attempting three illus-  
trations, when some thirty might be composed on the  
same subject, equally justifying that pithy proverb  
מֹשֶׁה עַד מֹשֶׁה לֹא קָם כְּמֹשֶׁה.

I

Moses the Meek was thirty cubits high,  
The staff he strode with—thirty cubits long;  
And when he leapt, so muscular and strong  
Was Moses that his leaping neared the sky  
By thirty cubits more: we learn thereby  
He reached full ninety cubits—am I wrong?—  
When, in a fight slurred o'er by sacred song,  
With staff outstretched he took a leap to try  
The just dimensions of the giant Og.  
And yet he barely touched—this marvel lacked  
Posterity to crown earth's catalogue  
Of marvels—barely touched—to be exact—  
The giant's ankle-bone, remained a frog  
That fain would match an ox in stature: fact!

II

And this same fact has met with unbelief!  
How saith a certain traveller? "Young, I chanced  
To come upon an object—if thou canst,

Guess me its name and nature ! 'T was, in brief,  
 White, hard, round, hollow, of such length, in chief,  
 — And this is what especially enhanced  
 My wonder — that it seemed, as I advanced,  
 Never to end. Bind up within thy sheaf  
 Of marvels, this — Posterity ! I walked  
 From end to end, — four hours walked I, who go  
 A goodly pace, — and found — I have not balked  
 Thine expectation, Stranger ? Ay or No ? —  
 'T was but Og's thighbone, all the while, I stalked  
 Alongside of : respect to Moses, though !

## III

Og's thighbone — if ye deem its measure strange,  
 Myself can witness to much length of shank  
 Even in birds. Upon a water's bank  
 Once halting, I was minded to exchange  
 Noon heat for cool. Quoth I, "On many a grange  
 I have seen storks perch — legs both long and lank :  
 Yon stork's must touch the bottom of this tank,  
 Since on its top doth wet no plume derange  
 Of the smooth breast. I'll bathe there !" "Do not  
 so !"  
 Warned me a voice from heaven. "A man let drop  
 His axe into that shallow rivulet —  
 As thou accountest — seventy years ago :  
 It fell and fell and still without a stop  
 Keeps falling, nor has reached the bottom yet."

## NEVER THE TIME AND THE PLACE

NEVER the time and the place  
 And the loved one all together !  
 This path — how soft to pace !  
 This May — what magic weather !  
 Where is the loved one's face ?  
 In a dream that loved one's face meets mine,  
 But the house is narrow, the place is bleak  
 Where, outside, rain and wind combine  
 With a furtive ear, if I strive to speak,  
 With a hostile eye at my flushing cheek,  
 With a malice that marks each word, each sign !  
 O enemy sly and serpentine,  
 Uncoil thee from the waking man !  
 Do I hold the Past  
 Thus firm and fast  
 Yet doubt if the Future hold I can ?  
 This path so soft to pace shall lead  
 Through the magic of May to herself indeed !  
 Or narrow if needs the house must be,  
 Outside are the storms and strangers : we —  
 Oh, close, safe, warm sleep I and she,  
 — I and she !

## PAMBO

SUPPOSE that we part (work done, comes play)  
 With a grave tale told in crambo  
 — As our hearty sires were wont to say —  
 Whereof the hero is Pambo ?

Do you happen to know who Pambo was ?  
 Nor I — but this much have heard of him :

He entered one day a college-class,  
 And asked — was it so absurd of him ? —

"May Pambo learn wisdom ere practise it ?  
 In wisdom I fain would ground me :  
 Since wisdom is centred in Holy Writ,  
 Some psalm to the purpose expound me !"

"That psalm," the Professor smiled, "shall be  
 Untroubled by doubt which dirtieth  
 Pellucid streams when an ass like thee  
 Would drink there — the Nine-and-thirtieth.

"Verse First : *I said I will look to my ways  
 That I with my tongue offend not.*  
 How now ? Why stare ? Art struck in amaze ?  
 Stop, stay ! The smooth line hath an end knot !

"He's gone ! — disgusted my text should prove  
 Too easy to need explaining ?  
 Had he waited, the blockhead might find I move  
 To matter that pays remaining !"

Long years went by, when — "Ha, who's this ?  
 Do I come on the restive scholar  
 I had driven to Wisdom's goal, I wis,  
 But that he slipped the collar ?

"What ? Arms crossed, brow bent, thought-  
 immersed ?  
 A student indeed ! Why scruple  
 To own that the lesson proposed him first  
 Scarce suited so apt a pupil ?

"Come back ! From the beggarly elements  
 To a more recondite issue  
 We pass till we reach, at all events,  
 Some point that may puzzle . . . Why 'pish'  
 you ?"

From the ground looked piteous up the head :  
 "Daily and nightly, Master.  
 Your pupil plods through that text you read,  
 Yet gets on never the faster.

"At the selfsame stand, — now old, then young !  
*I will look to my ways* — were doing  
 As easy as saying ! — *that I with my tongue  
 Offend not* — and 'scape pooh-poohing

"From sage and simple, doctor and dunce ?  
 Ah, nowise ! Still doubts so muddy  
 The stream I would drink at once, — but once !  
 That — thus I resume my study !"

Brother, brother, I share the blame,  
*Arcades sumus ambo !*  
 Darkling, I keep my sunrise-aim,  
 Lack not the critic's flambeau,  
 And look to my ways, yet, much the same,  
*Offend with my tongue* — like Pambo !



## FERISHTAH'S FANCIES

His genius was jocular, but, when disposed, he could be very serious. — Article "Shakespear," JEREMY COLLIER'S *Historical etc. Dictionary*, 2d edition, 1701.

You, Sir, I entertain you for one of my Hundred; only, I do not like the fashion of your garments: you will say they are Persian: but let them be changed. — *King Lear*, Act III. Sc. 6.

THERE is a loose connection between this group of poems and certain forms of Oriental literature, notably *The Fables of Bidpai* or *Pilpay*, Firdausi's *Shāh-Nāme*, and the *Book of Job*; specific instances may easily be noted; but Browning himself said in a letter to a friend, written soon after the publication of *Ferishtah's Fancies*: "I hope and believe that one or two careful readings of the Poem will make its sense clear enough. Above all, pray allow for

the Poet's inventiveness in any case, and do not suppose there is more than a thin disguise of a few Persian names and allusions. There was no such person as Ferishtah — the stories are all inventions. . . . The Hebrew quotations are put in for a purpose, as a direct acknowledgment that certain doctrines may be found in the Old Book, which the Concoctors of Novel Schemes of Morality put forth as discoveries of their own."

## PROLOGUE

PRAY, Reader, have you eaten ortolans  
Ever in Italy?  
Recall how cooks there cook them: for my  
plan 's  
To — Lyre with Spit ally.  
They pluck the birds, — some dozen luscious  
lumps,  
Or more or fewer, —  
Then roast them, heads by heads and rumps by  
rumps,  
Stuck on a skewer.  
But first, — and here 's the point I fain would  
press, —  
Don't think I'm tattling! —  
They interpose, to curb its lusciousness,  
— What, 'twixt each fatling?  
First comes plain bread, crisp, brown, a toasted  
square:  
Then, a strong sage-leaf:  
(So we find books with flowers dried here and  
there  
Lest leaf engage leaf.)  
First, food — then, piquancy — and last of all  
Follows the thirlding:  
Through wholesome hard, sharp soft, your tooth  
must bite  
Ere reach the birdling.  
Now, were there only crust to crunch, you'd  
wince:  
Unpalatable!  
Sage-leaf is bitter-pungent — so 's a quince:  
Eat each who 's able!  
But through all three bite boldly — lo, the gust!  
Flavor — no fixture —  
Flies permeating flesh and leaf and crust  
In fine admixture.  
So with your meal, my poem: masticate  
Sense, sight, and song there!

Digest these, and I praise your peptics' state,  
Nothing found wrong there.  
Whence springs my illustration who can tell?  
— The more surprising  
That here eggs, milk, cheese, fruit suffice so  
well  
For gormandizing.  
A fancy-freak by contrast born of thee,  
Delightful Gressoney!  
Who laughest "Take what is, trust what may  
be!"  
That 's Life's true lesson, — eh?  
MAISON DELAPIERRE,  
Gressoney St. Jean, Val d'Aosta,  
September 12, '83.

## I. THE EAGLE

This poem is drawn quite closely from *The Fables of Bidpai*.

DERVISH — (though yet un-dervished, call him  
so  
No less beforehand: while he drudged our way,  
Other his worldly name was: when he wrote  
Those verses we Persians praise him for,  
— True fairy-work — Ferishtah grew his style) —  
Dervish Ferishtah walked the woods one eve,  
And noted on a bough a raven's nest  
Whereof each youngling gaped with callow beak  
Widened by want; for why? beneath the tree  
Dead lay the mother-bird. "A piteous chance!  
How shall they 'scape destruction?" sighed the  
sage  
— Or sage about to be, though simple still.  
Responsive to which doubt, sudden there  
swooped  
An eagle downward, and behold he bore  
(Great-hearted) in his talons flesh wherewith

He stayed their craving, then resought the sky.  
 "Ah, foolish, faithless me!" the observer  
 smiled,

"Who toil and toil to eke out life, when, lo,  
 Providence cares for every hungry mouth!"  
 To profit by which lesson, home went he,  
 And certain days sat musing, — neither meat  
 Nor drink would purchase by his handiwork.  
 Then — for his head swam and his limbs grew  
 faint —

Sleep overtook the unwise one, whom in dream  
 God thus admonished: "Hast thou marked  
 my deed?"

Which part assigned by providence dost judge  
 Was meant for man's example? Should he  
 play

The helpless weakling, or the helpful strength  
 That captures prey and saves the perishing?  
 Sluggard, arise: work, eat, then feed who  
 lack!"

Waking, "I have arisen, work I will,  
 Eat, and so following. Which lacks food the  
 more.

Body or soul in me? I starve in soul:  
 So may mankind: and since men congregate  
 In towns, not woods, — to Ispahan forthwith!"

Round us the wild creatures, overhead the trees,  
 Underfoot the moss-tracks, — life and love with these!  
 I to wear a fawn-skin, thou to dress in flowers:  
 All the long lone summer-day, that greenwood life of  
 ours!

Rich-pavilioned, rather, — still the world without, —  
 Inside — gold-roofed silk-walled silence round about!  
 Queen it thou on purple, — I, at watch, and ward  
 Couched beneath the columns, gaze, thy slave, love's  
 guard!

So, for us no world? Let throngs press thee to me!  
 Up and down amid men, heart by heart fare we!  
 Welcome squalid vesture, harsh voice, hateful face!  
 God is soul, souls I and thou: with souls should souls  
 have place.

## II. THE MELON-SELLER

GOING his rounds one day in Ispahan, —  
 Halfway on Dervishhood, not wholly there, —  
 Ferishtah, as he crossed a certain bridge,  
 Came startled on a well-remembered face.

"Can it be? What, turned melon-seller —  
 thou?"

Clad in such sordid garb, thy seat yon step  
 Where dogs brush by thee and express con-  
 tempt?

Methinks, thy head-gear is some scooped-out  
 gourd!

Nay, sunk to slicing up, for readier sale,  
 One fruit whereof the whole scarce feeds a  
 swine?

Wast thou the Shah's Prime Minister, men saw  
 Ride on his right-hand while a trumpet blew  
 And Persia hailed the Favorite? Yea, twelve  
 years

Are past, I judge, since that transcendency,  
 And thou didst speculate and art abased;

No less, twelve years since, thou didst hold in  
 hand

Persia, couldst halve and quarter, mince its  
 pulp

As pleased thee, and distribute — melon-like —  
 Portions to whoso played the parasite,  
 Or suck — thyself — each juicy morsel. How  
 Enormous thy abjection, — hell from heaven,  
 Made tenfold hell by contrast! Whisper me!  
 Dost thou curse God for granting twelve years'  
 bliss

Only to prove this day's the direr lot?"

Whereon the beggar raised a brow, once more  
 Luminous and imperial, from the rags.

"Fool, does thy folly think my foolishness  
 Dwells rather on the fact that God appoints  
 A day of woe to the unworthy one,  
 Than that the unworthy one, by God's award,  
 Tasted joy twelve years long? Or buy a slice,  
 Or go to school!"

To school Ferishtah went;  
 And, schooling ended, passed from Ispahan  
 To Nishapur, that Elburz looks above  
 — Where they dig turquoise: there kept school  
 himself.

The melon-seller's speech, his stock in trade.  
 Some say a certain Jew adduced the word  
 Out of their book, it sounds so much the same.

אֲתִיחָשׁוּב נִקְבַּל מֵאֵת הָאֱלֹהִים  
 וְאֲתִיחָרַע לֹא נִקְבַּל. In Persian phrase.

"Shall we receive good at the hand of God  
 And evil not receive?" But great wits jump.

Wish no word unspoken, want no look away!  
 What if words were but mistake, and looks — too sud-  
 den, say!

Be unjust for once, Love! Bear it — well I may!

Do me justice always? Bid my heart — their shrine —  
 Render back its store of gifts, old looks and words of  
 thine

— Oh, so all unjust — the less deserved, the more di-  
 vine?

## III. SHAH ABBAS

ANYHOW, once full Dervish, youngsters came  
 To gather up his own words, 'neath a rock  
 Or else a pahn, by pleasant Nishapur.

Said some one, as Ferishtah paused abrupt,  
 Reading a certain passage from the roll  
 Wherein is treated of Lord Ali's life:

"Master, explain this incongruity!  
 When I dared question 'It is beautiful,  
 But is it true?' — thy answer was 'In truth  
 Lives beauty.' I persisting — 'Beauty — yes,  
 In thy mind and in my mind, every mind  
 That apprehends: but outside — so to speak —  
 Did beauty live in deed as well as word,  
 Was this life lived, was this death died — not  
 dreamed?"

'Many attested it for fact,' saidst thou.

'Many!' but mark, Sir! Half as long ago  
 As such things were, — supposing that they  
 were, —

Reigned great Shah Abbas: he too lived and died

— How say they? Why, so strong of arm, of foot  
So swift, he stayed a lion in his leap  
On a stag's haunch, — with one hand grasped  
the stag,

With one struck down the lion: yet, no less,  
Himself, that same day, feasting after sport.  
Perceived a spider drop into his wine,  
Let fall the flagon, died of simple fear.  
So all say, — so dost thou say?"

"Wherefore not?"

Ferishtah smiled: "though strange, the story  
stands  
Clear-chronicled: none tells it otherwise:  
The fact's eye-witness bore the cup, beside."

"And dost thou credit one cup-bearer's tale,  
False, very like, and futile certainly,  
Yet hesitate to trust what many tongues  
Combine to testify was beautiful  
In deed as well as word? No fool's report,  
Of lion, stag and spider, but immense  
With meaning for mankind, thy race, thyself?"

Whereto the Dervish: "First amend, my son,  
Thy faulty nomenclature, call belief  
Belief indeed, nor grace with such a name  
The easy acquiescence of mankind  
In matters nowise worth dispute, since life  
Lasts merely the allotted moment. Lo —  
That lion-stag-and-spider tale leaves fixed  
The fact for us that somewhen Abbas reigned,  
Died, somehow slain, — a useful registry, —  
Which therefore we — 'believe' — Stand for-  
ward, thou,

My Yakub, son of Yusuf, son of Zal!  
I advertise thee that our liege, the Shah  
Happily regnant, hath become assured,  
By opportune discovery, that thy sires,  
Son by the father upwards, track their line  
To — whom but that same bearer of the cup  
Whose inadvertency was chargeable  
With what therefrom ensued, disgust and  
death

To Abbas Shah, the over-nice of soul?  
Whence he appoints thee, — such his clem-  
ency, —

Not death, thy due, but just a double tax  
To pay, on thy particular bed of reeds  
Which flower into the brush that makes a broom  
Fit to sweep ceilings clear of vermin. Sure,  
Thou dost believe the story nor dispute  
That punishment should signalize its truth?  
Down therefore with some twelve dinars!

Why start,  
— The stag's way with the lion hard on  
haunch?

'Believe the story?' — how thy words throng  
fast! —

'Who saw this, heard this, said this, wrote  
down this,

That and the other circumstance to prove  
So great a prodigy surprised the world?  
Needs must thou prove me fable can be fact  
Or ere thou coax one piece from out my  
pouch!"

"There we agree, Sir: neither of us knows,  
Neither accepts that tale on evidence  
Worthy to warrant the large word — belief.  
Now I get near thee! Why didst pause ab-  
rupt,

Disabled by emotion at a tale  
Might match — be frank! — for credibility  
The figment of the spider and the cup?  
— To wit, thy roll's concerning Ali's life,  
Unevidenced — thine own word! Little boots  
Our sympathy with fiction! When I read  
The annals and consider of Tahmasp  
And that sweet sun-surpassing star his love,  
I weep like a cut vine-twig, though aware  
Zurah's sad fate is fiction, since the snake  
He saw devour her, — how could such exist,  
Having nine heads? No snake boasts more  
than three!

I weep, then laugh — both actions right alike.  
But thou, Ferishtah, sapiency confessed,  
When at the Day of Judgment God shall ask  
'Didst thou believe?' — what wilt thou plead?  
Thy tears?

(Nay, they fell fast and stain the parchment  
still.)

What if thy tears meant love? Love lacking  
ground

— Belief, — avails thee as it would avail  
My own pretence to favor since, forsooth,  
I loved the lady — I who needs must laugh  
To hear a snake boasts nine heads: they have  
three!"

"Thanks for the well-timed help that's born,  
behold,

Out of thy words, my son, — belief and love!  
Hast heard of Ishak son of Absal? Ay,  
The very same we heard of, ten years since,  
Slain in the wars: he comes back safe and  
sound, —

Though twenty soldiers saw him die at  
Yezdt, —

Just as a single mule-and-baggage boy  
Declared 't was like he some day would, — for  
why?

The twenty soldiers lied, he saw him stout,  
Cured of all wounds at once by smear of salve,  
A Mubid's manufacture: such the tale.

Now, when his pair of sons were thus apprised  
Effect was twofold on them. 'Hail!' crowed  
This:

'Dearer the news than dayspring after night!  
The cure-reporting youngster warrants me  
Our father shall make glad our eyes once more,  
For whom, had outpoured life of mine sufficed  
To bring him back, free broached were every  
vein!'

'Avant, delusive tale-concocter, news  
Cruel as meteor simulating dawn!'

Whimpered the other: 'Who believes this boy,  
Must disbelieve his twenty seniors: no,  
Return our father shall not! Might my death  
Purchase his life, how promptly would the dole  
Be paid as due!' Well, ten years pass, —  
aha,

Ishak is marching homeward, — doubts, not he,  
Are dead and done with! So, our townsfolk  
straight



Must take on them to counsel. 'Go thou gay,  
Welcome thy father, thou of ready faith!  
Hide thee, contrariwise, thou faithless one,  
Expect paternal frowning, blame and blows!' <sup>1</sup>  
So do our townfolk counsel: dost demur?"

"Ferishtah like those simpletons — at loss  
In what is plain as pikestaff? Pish! Suppose  
The trustful son had sighed 'So much the  
worse!

Returning means — retaking heritage  
Enjoyed these ten years, who should say me  
nay?"

How would such trust reward him? Trustless-  
ness

— O' the other hand — were what procured  
most praise

To him who judged return impossible,  
Yet hated heritage procured thereby.  
A fool were Ishak if he failed to prize  
Mere head's work less than heart's work: no  
fool he!"

"Is God less wise? Resume the roll!" They  
did.

You groped your way across my room i' the drear dark  
dead of night;

At each fresh step a stumble was: but, once your lamp  
alight,

Easy and plain you walked again: so soon all wrong  
grew right!

What lay on floor to trip your foot? Each object, late  
awry,

Looked fitly placed, nor proved offence to footing free  
— for why?

The lamp showed all, discordant late, grown simple  
symmetry.

Be love your light and trust your guide, with these  
explore my heart!

No obstacle to trip you then, strike hands and souls  
apart!

Since rooms and hearts are furnished so, — light shows  
you, — needs love start?

#### IV. THE FAMILY

A CERTAIN neighbor lying sick to death,  
Ferishtah grieved beneath a palm-tree, whence  
He rose at peace: whereat objected one  
"Gudarz our friend gasps in extremity.

Sure, thou art ignorant how close at hand  
Death presses, or the cloud, which fouled so  
late

Thy face, had deepened down not lightened  
off."

"I judge there will be respite, for I prayed."

"Sir, let me understand, of charity!

Yestereve, what was thine admonishment?

'All-wise, all-good, all-mighty — God is such!'

How then should man, the all-unworthy, dare

Propose to set aside a thing ordained?

To pray means — substitute man's will for  
God's:

Two best wills cannot be: by consequence,

What is man bound to but — assent, say I?  
Rather to rapture of thanksgiving; since  
That which seems worst to man to God is best,  
So, because God ordains it, best to man.  
Yet man — the foolish, weak, and wicked —  
prays!

Urges 'My best were better, didst Thou  
know?'"

"List to a tale. A worthy householder  
Of Shiraz had three sons, beside a spouse  
Whom, cutting gourds, a serpent bit, whereon  
The offended limb swelled black from foot to  
fork.

The husband called in aid a leech renowned  
World-wide, confessed the lord of surgery,  
And bade him dictate — who forthwith de-  
clared

'Sole remedy is amputation.' Straight  
The husband sighed 'Thou knowest: be it so!'

His three sons heard their mother sentenced:  
'Pause!'

Outbroke the elder: 'Be precipitate  
Nowise, I pray thee! Take some gentler way.

Thou sage of much resource! I will not doubt  
But science still may save foot, leg, and thigh!'

The next in age snapped petulant: 'Too rash!  
No reason for this maiming! What, Sir

Leech,  
Our parent limps henceforward while we leap?'

Shame on thee! Save the limb thou must and  
shalt!'

'Shame on yourselves, ye bold ones!' followed  
up

The brisk third brother, youngest, pertest too:

'The leech knows all things, we are ignorant;

What he proposes, gratefully accept!

For me, had I some unguent bound to heal

Hurts in a twinkling, hardly would I dare

Essay its virtue and so cross the sage

By cure his skill pronounces folly. Quick!

No waiting longer! There the patient lies:

Out then with implements and operate!'"

"Ah, the young devil!"

"Why, his reason chimed  
Right with the Hakim's."

"Hakim's, ay — but chit's?  
How? what the skilled eye saw and judged of  
weight

To overbear a heavy consequence,  
That — shall a sciolist affect to see?

All he saw — that is, all such oaf should see,  
Was just the mother's suffering."

"In my tale,  
Be God the Hakim: in the husband's case,  
Call ready acquiescence — aptitude  
Angelic, understanding swift and sure:  
Call the first son — a wise humanity,  
Slow to conceive but duteous to adopt:  
See in the second son — humanity,  
Wrong-headed yet right-hearted, rash but kind  
Last comes the cackler of the brood, our chit  
Who, aping wisdom all beyond his years,  
Thinks to discard humanity itself:

Fares like the beast which should affect to fly  
 Because a bird with wings may spurn the  
 ground,  
 So, missing heaven and losing earth—drops  
 how  
 But hell-ward? No, be man and nothing  
 more—  
 Man who, as man conceiving, hopes and fears,  
 And craves and deprecates, and loves, and  
 loathes,  
 And bids God help him, till death touch his  
 eyes  
 And show God granted most, denying all."

Man I am and man would be, Love — merest man and  
 nothing more.  
 Bid me seem no other! Eagles boast of pinions — let  
 them soar!  
 I may put forth angel's plumage, once unmanned, but  
 not before.

Now on earth, to stand suffices, — nay, if kneeling  
 serves, to kneel:  
 Here you front me, here I find the all of heaven that  
 earth can feel:  
 Sense looks straight, — not over, under, — perfect sees  
 beyond appeal.

Good you are and wise, full circle: what to me were  
 more outside?  
 Wiser wisdom, better goodness? Ah, such want the  
 angel's wide  
 Sense to take and hold and keep them! Mine at least  
 has never tried.

## V. THE SUN

"AND what might that bold man's announce-  
 ment be?" —  
 Ferishtah questioned — "which so moved thine  
 ire  
 That thou didst curse, nay, cuff and kick — in  
 short,  
 Confute the announcer? Wipe those drops  
 away  
 Which start afresh upon thy face at mere  
 Mention of such enormity: now, speak!"

"He scrupled not to say — (thou warrantest,  
 O patient Sir, that I unblamed repeat  
 Abominable words which blister tongue?)  
 God once assumed on earth a human shape:  
 (Lo, I have spitten!) Dared I ask the grace,  
 Fain would I hear, of thy subtlety,  
 From out what hole in man's corrupted heart  
 Creeps such a maggot: fancies verminous  
 Breed in the clots there, but a monster born  
 Of pride and folly like this pest — thyself  
 Only canst trace to egg-shell it hath chipped."

The sun rode high. "During our ignorance" —  
 Began Ferishtah — "folk esteemed as God  
 Yon orb: for argument, suppose him so, —  
 Be it the symbol, not the symbolized,  
 I and thou safelier take upon our lips.  
 Accordingly, yon orb that we adore  
 — What is he? Author of all light and life:  
 Such one must needs be somewhere: this is he.  
 Like what? If I may trust my human eyes,

A ball composed of spirit-fire, whence springs  
 — What, from this ball, my arms could circle  
 round?

All I enjoy on earth. By consequence,  
 Inspiring me with — what? Why, love and  
 praise.

I eat a palatable fig — there's love  
 In little: who first planted what I pluck,  
 Obtains my little praise, too: more of both  
 Keeps due proportion with more cause for each:  
 So, more and ever more, till most of all  
 Completes experience, and the orb, descried  
 Ultimate giver of all good, perforce  
 Gathers unto himself all love, all praise,  
 Is worshipped — which means loved and praised  
 at height.

Back to the first good: 't was the gardener gave  
 Occasion to my palate's pleasure: grace,  
 Plain on his part, demanded thanks on mine.  
 Go up above this giver, — step by step,  
 Gain a conception of what — (how and why,  
 Matters not now) — occasioned him to give,  
 Appointed him the gardener of the ground, —  
 I mount by just progression slow and sure  
 To some prime giver — here assumed yon orb —  
 Who takes my worship. Whom have I in  
 mind,

Thus worshipping, unless a man, my like  
 Howe'er above me? Man, I say — how else,  
 I being man who worship? Here's my hand  
 Lifts first a mustard-seed, then weight on  
 weight

Greater and ever greater, till at last  
 It lifts a melon. I suppose, then stops —  
 Hand-strength expended wholly: so, my love  
 First lauds the gardener for the fig his gift,  
 Then, looking higher, loves and lauds still more,  
 Who hires the ground, who owns the ground,  
 Sheikh, Shah,

On and away, away and ever on,  
 Till, at the last, it loves and lauds the orb  
 Ultimate cause of all to laud and love.  
 Where is the break, the change of quality  
 In hand's power, soul's impulsion? Gift was  
 grace,

The greatest as the smallest. Had I stopped  
 Anywhere in the scale, stayed love and praise  
 As so far only fit to follow gift,  
 Saying, 'I thanked the gardener for his fig.  
 But now that, lo, the Shah has filled my purse  
 With tomans which avail to purchase me  
 A fig-tree forest, shall I pay the same  
 With love and praise, the gardener's proper  
 fee?'

Justly would whose bears a brain object,  
 'Giving is giving, gift claims gift's return,  
 Do thou thine own part, therefore: let the Shah  
 Ask more from one has more to pay.' Per-  
 chance

He gave me from his treasure less by much  
 Than the soil's servant: let that be! My part  
 Is plain — to meet and match the gift and gift  
 With love and love, with praise and praise, till  
 both

Cry 'All of us is thine, we can no more!'  
 So shall I do man's utmost — man to man:  
 For as our liege the Shah's sublime estate  
 Merely enhaloes, leaves him man the same,

So must I count that orb I call a fire  
(Keep to the language of our ignorance)  
Something that's fire and more beside : mere  
fire

— Is it a force which, giving, knows it gives,  
And wherefore, so may look for love and praise  
From me, fire's like so far, however less  
In all beside ? Prime cause this fire shall be,  
Uncaus'd, all-causing : hence begin the gifts,  
Thither must go my love and praise — to what ?  
Fire ? Symbol fitly serves the symbolized  
Herein, — that this same object of my thanks,  
While to my mind nowise conceivable  
Except as mind no less than fire, refutes  
Next moment mind's conception : fire is fire —  
While what I needs must thank, must needs in-  
clude

Purpose with power, — humanity like mine,  
Imagined, for the dear necessity,  
One moment in an object which the next  
Confesses unimaginable. Power !  
— What need of will, then ? Naught opposes  
power :

Why, purpose ? any change must be for worse :  
And what occasion for beneficence  
When all that is, so is and so must be ?  
Best being best now, change were for the  
worse.

Accordingly discard these qualities  
Proper to imperfection, take for type  
Mere fire, eject the man, retain the orb, —  
The perfect and, so, inconceivable, —  
And what remains to love and praise ? A  
stone

Fair-colored proves a solace to my eye,  
Rolled by my tongue brings moisture curing  
drouth,

And struck by steel emits a useful spark :  
Shall I return it thanks, the insentient thing ?  
No, — man once, man forever — man in soul  
As man in body : just as this can use  
Its proper senses only, see and hear,  
Taste, like or loathe according to its law  
And not another creature's, — even so  
Man's soul is moved by what, if it in turn  
Must move, is kindred soul : receiving good  
— Man's way — must make man's due acknow-  
ledgment,

No other, even while he reasons out  
Plainly enough that, were the man unmanned,  
Made angel of, angelic every way,  
The love and praise that rightly seek and find  
Their man-like object now, — instructed more,  
Would go forth idly, air for emptiness.  
Our human flower, sun-ripened, proffers scent  
Though reason prove the sun lacks nose to feed  
On what himself made grateful : flower and  
man,

Let each assume that scent and love alike  
Being once born, must needs have use ! Man's  
part

Is plain — to send love forth, — astray, perhaps :  
No matter, he has done his part."

"Wherefrom

What is to follow — if I take thy sense —  
But that the sun — the inconceivable  
Confessed by man — comprises, all the same,

Man's every-day conception of himself —  
No less remaining unconceived !"

"Agreed !"

"Yet thou, insisting on the right of man  
To feel as man, not otherwise, — man, bound  
By man's conditions neither less nor more,  
Obliged to estimate as fair or foul,  
Right, wrong, good, evil, what man's faculty  
Adjudges such, — how canst thou, — plainly  
bound

To take man's truth for truth and only truth, —  
Dare to accept, in just one case, as truth  
Falseness confessed ? Flesh simulating fire —  
Our fellow-man whom we his fellows know  
For dust — instinct with fire unknowable !  
Where's thy man-needed truth — its proof, nay  
print

Of faintest passage on the tablets traced  
By man, termed knowledge ? 'T is conceded  
thee,

We lack such fancied union — fire with flesh :  
But even so, to lack is not to gain  
Our lack's supplience : where's the trace of  
such  
Recorded ?"

"What if such a tracing were ?  
If some strange story stood, — whate'er its  
worth, —  
That the immensely yearned-for, once befell,  
— The sun was flesh once ? — (keep the fig-  
ure !)"

"How ?  
An union inconceivable was fact ?"

"Son, if the stranger have convinced himself  
Fancy is fact — the sun, besides a fire,  
Holds earthly substance somehow fire pervades  
And yet consumes not, — earth, he understands,  
With essence he remains a stranger to, —  
Fittier thou saidst 'I stand appalled before  
Conception unattainable by me  
Who need it most' — than this — 'What ?  
boast he holds

Conviction where I see conviction's need,  
Alas, — and nothing else ? then what remains  
But that I straightway curse, cuff, kick the  
fool !"

Fire is in the flint : true, once a spark escapes,  
Fire forgets the kinship, soars till fancy shapes  
Some befitting cradle where the babe had birth —  
Wholly heaven's the product, unallied to earth.  
Splendors recognized as perfect in the star ! —  
In our flint their home was, housed as now they are.

## VI. MIHRAB SHAH

QUOTH AN INQUIRER, "Praise the Merciful !  
My thumb which yesterday a scorpion nipped —  
(It swelled and blackened) — lo, is sound again !  
By application of a virtuous root  
The burning has abated : that is well.  
But now methinks I have a mind to ask, —



Since this discomfort came of culling herbs  
Nor meaning harm, — why needs a scorpion be?  
Yea, there began, from when my thumb last  
throbbed,

Advance in question-framing, till I asked  
Wherefore should any evil hap to man —  
From ache of flesh to agony of soul —  
Since God's All-mercy mates All-potency?  
Nay, why permits he evil to himself —  
Man's sin, accounted such? Suppose a world  
Purged of all pain, with fit inhabitant —  
Man pure of evil in thought, word, and deed —  
Were it not well? Then, wherefore otherwise?  
Too good result? But he is wholly good!  
Hard to effect? Ay, were he impotent!  
Teach me, Ferishtah!"

Said the Dervish: "Friend,  
My chance, escaped to-day, was worse than  
thine:

I, as I woke this morning, raised my head,  
Which never tumbled but stuck fast on neck.  
Was not I glad and thankful!"

"How could head  
Tumble from neck, unhopped — inform me  
first!

Unless we take Firdausi's tale for truth,  
Who ever heard the like?"

"The like might hap  
By natural law: I let my staff fall thus —  
It goes to ground, I know not why. Suppose,  
Whene'er my hold was loosed, it skyward  
sprang

As certainly, and all experience proved  
That, just as staves when unsupported sink,  
So, unconfined, they soar?"

"Let such be law —  
Why, a new chapter of sad accidents  
Were added to humanity's mischance,  
No doubt at all, and as a man's false step  
Now lays him prone on earth, contrariwise,  
Removal from his shoulder of a weight  
Might start him upwards to perdition. Ay!  
But, since such law exists in just thy brain,  
I shall not hesitate to doff my cap  
For fear my head take flight."

"Nor feel relief  
Finding it firm on shoulder. Tell me, now!

What were the bond 'twixt man and man,  
dost judge,

Pain once abolished? Come, be true! Our  
Shah —

How stands he in thy favor? Why that  
shrug?

Is not he lord and ruler?"

"Easily!  
His mother bore him, first of those four wives  
Provided by his father, such his luck:

Since when his business simply was to breathe  
And take each day's new bounty. There he  
stands —

Where else had I stood, were his birth-star  
mine?

No, to respect men's power, I needs must see  
Men's bare hands seek, find, grasp and wield  
the sword

Nobody else can brandish! Bless his heart,  
'T is said, he scarcely counts his fingers right!"

"Well, then — his princely doles! from every  
feast

Off go the feasted with the dish they ate  
And cup they drank from, — nay, a change  
besides

Of garments" . . .

"Sir, put case, for service done, —  
Or best, for love's sake, — such and such a slave  
Sold his allowance of sour lentil-soup  
To herewith purchase me a pipe-stick, — nay,  
If he, by but one hour, cut short his sleep  
To clout my shoe, — that were a sacrifice!"

"All praise his gracious bearing."

"All praise mine —  
Or would praise did they never make approach  
Except on all-fours, crawling till I bade,  
'Now that with eyelids thou hast touched the  
earth,

Come close and have no fear, poor nothingness!  
What wonder that the lady-rose I woo  
And palisade about from every wind,  
Holds herself handsomely? The wilding, now,  
Ruffled outside at pleasure of the blast,  
That still lifts up with something of a smile  
Its poor attempt at bloom" . . .

"A blameless life,  
Where wrong might revel with impunity —  
Remember that!"

"The falcon on his fist —  
Reclaimed and trained and belled and beautified  
Till she believes herself the Simorgh's match —  
She only deigns destroy the antelope,  
Stoops at no carrion-crow: thou marvellest?

"So be it, then! He wakes no love in thee  
For any one of divers attributes  
Commonly deemed love-worthy. All the same,  
I would he were not wasting, slow but sure,  
With that internal ulcer" . . .

"Say'st thou so?  
How should I guess? Alack, poor soul! But  
stay —

Sure in the reach of art some remedy  
Must lie to hand: or if it lurk, — that leech  
Of fame in Tebriz, why not seek his aid?  
Couldst not thou, Dervish, counsel in the  
case?"

"My counsel might be — what imports a pang  
The more or less, which puts an end to one  
Odious in spite of every attribute  
Commonly deemed love-worthy?"

"Attributes?  
Faugh! — nay, Ferishtah, — 't is an ulcer,  
think!

Attributes, quotha? Here's poor flesh and blood,  
Like thine and mine and every man's, a prey  
To hell-fire! Hast thou lost thy wits for  
once?"

"Friend, here they are to find and profit by!  
Put pain from out the world, what room were  
left

For thanks to God, for love to Man? Why  
thanks,—

Except for some escape, whate'er the style,  
From pain that might be, name it as thou  
mayst?

Why love,—when all thy kind, save me, sup-  
pose,

Thy father, and thy son, and . . . well, thy  
dog,

To eke the decent number out—we few  
Who happen—like a handful of chance stars  
From the unnumbered host—to shine o'erhead  
And lend thee light,—our twinkle all thy  
store,—

We only take thy love! Mankind, forsooth?  
Who sympathizes with their general joy  
Foolish as undeserved? But pain—see God's  
Wisdom at work!—man's heart is made to  
judge

Pain deserved nowhere by the common flesh  
Our birthright,—bad and good deserve alike  
No pain, to human apprehension! Lust,  
Greed, cruelty, injustice crave (we hold)  
Due punishment from somebody, no doubt:  
But ulcer in the midriff! that brings flesh  
Triumphant from the bar whereto arraigned  
Soul quakes with reason. In the eye of God  
Pain may have purpose and be justified:  
Man's sense avails to only see, in pain,  
A hateful chance no man but would avert  
Or, failing, needs must pity. Thanks to God  
And love to man,—from man take these away,  
And what is man worth? Therefore, Mihrab  
Shah,

Tax me my bread and salt twice over, claim  
Laila my daughter for thy sport,—go on!  
Slay my son's self, maintain thy poetry  
Beats mine,—thou meritest a dozen deaths!  
But—ulcer in the stomach,—ah, poor soul,  
Try a fig-plaster: may it ease thy pangs!"

So, the head aches and the limbs are faint!  
Flesh is a burden—even to you!  
Can I force a smile with a fancy quaint?  
Why are my ailments none or few?

In the soul of me sits sluggishness:  
Body so strong and will so weak:  
The slave stands fit for the labor—yes,  
But the master's mandate is still to seek.

You, now—what if the outside clay  
Helped, not hindered the inside flame?  
My dim to-morrow—your plain to-day,  
Yours the achievement, mine the aim?

So were it rightly, so shall it be!  
Only, while earth we pace together  
For the purpose apportioned you and me,  
Closer we tread for a common tether.

You shall sigh, "Wait for his sluggish soul!  
Shame he should lag, not lamed as I!"  
May not I smile, "Ungained her goal:  
Body may reach her—by and by?"

## VII. A CAMEL-DRIVER

"How of his fate, the Pilgrims' soldier-guide  
Condemned" (Ferishtah questioned), "for he  
slew  
The merchant whom he convoyed with his  
bales  
—A special treachery?"

"Sir, the proofs were plain:  
Justice was satisfied: between two boards  
The rogue was sawn asunder, rightly served."

"With all wise men's approval—mine at  
least."

"Himself, indeed, confessed as much. 'I die  
Justly' (groaned he) 'through over-greediness  
Which tempted me to rob: but grieve the most  
That he who quickened sin at slumber,—ay,  
Prompted and pestered me till thought grew  
deed,—

The same is fled to Syria and is safe,  
Laughing at me thus left to pay for both.  
My comfort is that God reserves for him  
Hell's hottest'" . . .

"Idle words."

"Enlighten me!"

Wherefore so idle? Punishment by man  
Has thy assent,—the word is on thy lips.  
By parity of reason, punishment  
By God should likelier win thy thanks and  
praise."

"Man acts as man must: God, as God beseems.  
A camel-driver, when his beast will bite,  
Thumps her athwart the muzzle; why?"

"How else  
Instruct the creature—mouths should munch  
not bite?"

"True, he is man, knows but man's trick to  
teach.  
Suppose some plain word, told her first of all,  
Had hindered any biting?"

"Find him such  
And fit the beast with understanding first!  
No understanding animals like Rakhsh  
Nowadays, Master! Till they breed on earth,  
For teaching—blows must serve."

"Who deals the blow—  
What if by some rare method,—magic, say,—  
He saw into the biter's very soul,  
And knew the fault was so repented of  
It could not happen twice?"

"That's something: still.  
I hear, methinks, the driver say, 'No less

Take thy fault's due! Those long-necked  
sisters, see,  
Lean all a-stretch to know if biting meets  
Punishment or enjoys impunity.  
For their sakes — thwack!"

"The journey home at end,  
The solitary beast safe-stabled now,  
In comes the driver to avenge a wrong  
Suffered from six months since, — apparently  
With patience, nay, approval: when the jaws  
Met i' the small o' the arm. 'Ha, Ladykin,  
Still at thy frolics, girl of gold?' laughed he:  
'Eat flesh? Rye-grass content thee rather with,  
Whereof accept a bundle!' Now, — what  
change!"

Laughter by no means! Now 't is, 'Fiend, thy  
frisk  
Was fit to find thee provender, didst judge?  
Behold this red-hot twy-prong, thus I stick  
To hiss i' the soft of thee!"

"Behold? behold  
A crazy noddle, rather! Sure the brute  
Might wellnigh have plain speech coaxed out of  
tongue,  
And grow as voluble as Rakhsh himself  
At such mad outrage. 'Could I take thy mind,  
Guess thy desire? If biting was offence,  
Wherefore the rye-grass bundle, why each  
day's  
Patting and petting, but to intimate  
My playfulness had pleased thee? Thou en-  
dowed  
With reason, truly!'"

"Reason aims to raise  
Some makeshift scaffold-vantage midway,  
whence  
Man dares, for life's brief moment, peer below:  
But ape omniscience? Nay! The ladder lent  
To climb by, step and step, until we reach  
The little foothold-rise allowed mankind  
To mount on and thence guess the sun's sur-  
vey —

Shall this avail to show us world-wide truth  
Stretched for the sun's desecrating? Reason  
bids,

'Teach, Man, thy beast his duty first of all  
Or last of all, with blows if blows must be, —  
How else accomplish teaching?' Reason adds,  
'Before man's First, and after man's poor Last,  
God operated and will operate.'  
— Process of which man merely knows this  
much, —

That nowise it resembles man's at all,  
Teaching or punishing."

"It follows, then,  
That any malefactor I would smite  
With God's allowance, God himself will spare  
Presumably. No scapegrace? Then, rejoice  
Thou snatch-grace safe in Syria!"

"Friend, such view  
Is but man's wonderful and wide mistake.  
Man jumps his kind i' the mass: God singles  
thence

Unit by unit. Thou and God exist —  
So think! — for certain: think the mass —  
mankind —

Disparts, disperses, leaves thyself alone!  
Ask thy lonesoul what laws are plain to thee, —  
Thee and no other, — stand or fall by them!  
That is the part for thee: regard all else  
For what it may be — Time's illusion. This  
Be sure of — ignorance that sins, is safe.  
No punishment like knowledge! Instance,  
now!

My father's choicest treasure was a book  
Wherein he, day by day and year by year,  
Recorded gains of wisdom for my sake  
When I should grow to manhood. While a  
child,

Coming upon the casket where it lay  
Unguarded, — what did I but toss the thing  
Into a fire to make more flame therewith,  
Meaning no harm? So acts man three-years-  
old!

I grieve now at my loss by witlessness,  
But guilt was none to punish. Man mature —  
Each word of his I lightly held, each look  
I turned from — wish that wished in vain —  
nay, will

That willed and yet went all to waste — 't is these  
Ramble like fire. Forgiveness? rather grant  
Forgetfulness! The past is past and lost.  
However near I stand in his regard,  
So much the nearer had I stood by steps  
Offered the feet which rashly spurned their  
help

That I call Hell; why further punishment?"

When I vexed you and you chid me,  
And I owned my fault and turned  
My cheek the way you bid me,  
And confessed the blow well earned, —

My comfort all the while was  
— Fault was faulty — near, not quite!  
Do you wonder why the smile was?  
O'erpunished wrong grew right.

But faults, you ne'er suspected,  
Nay, praised, no faults at all, —  
Those would you had detected —  
Crushed eggs whence snakes could crawl!

## VIII. TWO CAMELS

QUOTH one: "Sir, solve a scruple! No true  
sage

I hear of, but instructs his scholar thus:  
'Wouldst thou be wise? Then mortify thy-  
self!

Balk of its craving every bestial sense!  
Say, "If I relish melons — so do swine!  
Horse, ass, and mule consume their provender  
Nor leave a pea-pod: fasting feeds the soul."'  
Thus they admonish: while thyself, I note,  
Eatest thy ration with an appetite,  
Nor fallest foul of whoso licks his lips  
And sighs — 'Well-saffroned was that barley-  
soup!'

Can wisdom coexist with — gorge-and-swill.  
I say not, — simply sensual preference



For this or that fantastic meat and drink ?  
 Moreover, wind blows sharper than its wont  
 This morning, and thou hast already donned  
 Thy sheepskin over-garment : sure the sage  
 Is busied with conceits that soar above  
 A petty change of season and its chance  
 Of causing ordinary flesh to sneeze ?  
 I always thought, Sir " . . .

"Son," Ferishtah said,  
 "Truth ought to seem as never thought before.  
 How if I give it birth in parable ?

A neighbor owns two camels, beasts of price  
 And promise, destined each to go, next week,  
 Swiftly and surely with his merchandise  
 From Nishapur to Sebzevar, no truce  
 To tramp, but travel, spite of sands and drouth,  
 In days so many, lest they miss the Fair.  
 Each falls to meditation o'er his crib  
 Piled high with provender before the start.  
 Quoth this : ' My soul is set on winning praise  
 From goodman lord and master, — hump to hoof,  
 I dedicate me to his service. How ?

Grass, purslane, lupines, and I know not what,  
 Crammed in my manger ? Ha, I see — I see !  
 No, master, spare thy money ! I shall trudge  
 The distance and yet cost thee not a doit  
 Beyond my supper on this mouldy bran.'  
 ' Be magnified, O master, for the meal  
 So opportunely liberal !' quoth that.

' What use of strength in me but to surmount  
 Sands and simooms, and bend beneath thy bales  
 No knee until I reach the glad bazaar ?  
 Thus I do justice to thy fare : no sprig  
 Of toothsome chervil must I leave unchewed !  
 Too bitterly should I reproach myself  
 Did I sink down in sight of Sebzevar,  
 Remembering how the merest mouthful more  
 Had heartened me to manage yet a mile !'  
 And so it proved : the too-abstemious brute  
 Midway broke down, his pack rejoiced the  
 thieves,

His carcass fed the vultures : not so he  
 The wisely thankful, who, good market-drudge,  
 Let down his lading in the market-place,  
 No damage to a single pack. Which beast,  
 Think ye, had praise and patting and a brand  
 Of good-and-faithful-servant fixed on flank ?  
 So, with thy squeamish scruple. What imports  
 Fasting or feasting ? Do thy day's work, dare  
 Refuse no help thereto, since help refused  
 Is hindrance sought and found. Win but the  
 race —

Who shall object ' He tossed three wine-cups off,  
 And, just at starting, Lilith kissed his lips ?'

"More soberly, — consider this, my Son !  
 Put case I never have myself enjoyed,  
 Known by experience what enjoyment means,  
 How shall I — share enjoyment ? — no, in-  
 deed ! —

Supply it to my fellows, — ignorant,  
 As so I should be of the thing they crave,  
 How it affects them, works for good or ill.  
 Style my enjoyment self-indulgence — sin —  
 Why should I labor to infect my kind  
 With sin's occasion, bid them too enjoy,  
 Who else might neither catch nor give again

Joy's plague, but live in righteous misery ?  
 Just as I cannot, till myself convinced,  
 Impart conviction, so, to deal forth joy  
 Adroitly, needs must I know joy myself.  
 Renounce joy for my fellows' sake ? That's joy  
 Beyond joy ; but renounced for mine, not theirs ?  
 Why, the physician called to help the sick,  
 Cries ' Let me, first of all, discard my health !'  
 No, Son : the richness hearted in such joy  
 Is in the knowing what are gifts we give,  
 Not in a vain endeavor not to know !  
 Therefore, desire joy and thank God for it !  
 The Adversary said, — a Jew reports, —

הֲיֵשׁוּב רַח אֱיֹב אֱלֹהִים  
 In Persian phrase, 'Does Job fear God for  
 naught ?'

Job's creatureship is not abjured, thou fool !  
 He nowise isolates himself and plays  
 The independent equal, owns no more  
 Than himself gave himself, so why thank God ?

A proper speech were this מַלְאָכִים  
 ' Equals we are, Job, labor for thyself,  
 Nor bid me help thee : bear, as best flesh may,  
 Pains I inflict not nor avail to cure :  
 Beg of me nothing thou thyself mayst win  
 By work, or waive with magnanimity,  
 Since we are peers acknowledged, — scarcely  
 peers,

Had I implanted any want of thine  
 Only my power could meet and gratify.'  
 No : rather hear, at man's indifference —  
 ' Wherefore did I contrive for thee that ear  
 Hungry for music, and direct thine eye  
 To where I hold a seven-stringed instrument,  
 Unless I meant thee to beseech me play ?' "

Once I saw a chemist take a pinch of powder  
 — Simple dust it seemed — and half-unstop a phial :  
 — Out dropped harmless dew. "Mixed nothings make"  
 (quoth he)  
 "Something !" So they did : a thunderclap, but  
 louder —  
 Lightning-flash, but fiercer — put spectators' nerves to  
 trial :  
 Sure enough, we learned what was, imagined what  
 might be.

Had I no experience how a lip's mere tremble,  
 Look's half hesitation, cheek's just change of color,  
 These effect a heartquake, — how should I conceive  
 What a heaven there may be ? Let it but resemble  
 Earth myself have known ! No bliss that's finer, fuller,  
 Only — bliss that lasts, they say, and fain would I be-  
 lieve.

## IX. CHERRIES

"WHAT, I disturb thee at thy morning-meal :  
 Cherries so ripe already ? Eat apace !  
 I recollect thy lesson yesterday.  
 Yet — thanks, Sir, for thy leave to inter-  
 rupt" . . .

"Friend, I have finished my repast, thank  
 God !"

"There now, thy thanks for breaking fast on  
 fruit ! —

Thanks being praise, or tantamount thereto.  
 Prithee consider, have not things degree,  
 Lofty and low? Are things not great and small,  
 Thence claiming praise and wonder more or less?  
 Shall we confuse them, with thy warrant too,  
 Whose doctrine otherwise begins and ends  
 With just this precept, 'Never faith enough  
 In man as weakness, God as potency'?  
 When I would pay soul's tribute to that same,  
 Why not look up in wonder, bid the stars  
 Attest my praise of the All-mighty One?  
 What are man's puny members and as mean  
 Requirements weighed with Star-King Mushtari?  
 There is the marvel!"

"Not to man — that 's me.  
 List to what happened late, in fact or dream.  
 A certain stranger, bound from far away,  
 Still the Shah's subject, found himself before  
 Ispahan palace-gate. As duty bade,  
 He enters in the courts, will, if he may,  
 See so much glory as befits a slave  
 Who only comes, of mind to testify  
 How great and good is shown our lord the Shah.  
 In he walks, round he casts his eye about,  
 Looks up and down, admires to heart's content,  
 Ascends the gallery, tries door and door,  
 None says his reverence nay: peeps in at each,  
 Wonders at all the unimagined use,  
 Gold here and jewels there, — so vast, that hall —  
 So perfect yon pavilion! — lamps above  
 Bidding look up from luxuries below, —  
 Evermore wonder topping wonder, — last —  
 Sudden he comes upon a cosy nook,  
 A nest-like little chamber, with his name,  
 His own, yea, his and no mistake at all,  
 Plain o'er the entry, — what, and he describes  
 Just those arrangements inside, — oh, the  
 care! —  
 Suited to soul and body both, — so snug  
 The cushion — nay, the pipe-stand furnished so!  
 Whereat he cries aloud, — what think'st thou,  
 Friend?  
 'That these my slippers should be just my  
 choice,  
 Even to the color that I most affect,  
 Is nothing: ah, that lamp, the central sun,  
 What must it light within its minaret  
 I scarce dare guess the good of! Who lives  
 there?  
 That let me wonder at, — no slipper toys  
 Meant for the foot, forsooth, which kicks them  
 — thus!'

"Never enough faith in omnipotence, —  
 Never too much, by parity, of faith  
 In impuissance, man's — which turns to strength  
 When once acknowledged weakness every way.  
 How? Hear the teaching of another tale.

"Two men once owed the Shah a mighty sum,  
 Beggars they both were: this one crossed his  
 arms  
 And bowed his head, — 'whereof,' sighed he,  
 'each hair  
 Proved it a jewel, how the host's amount  
 Were idly strewn for payment at thy feet!'

'Lord, here they lie, my havings poor and  
 scant!

All of the berries on my currant-bush,  
 What roots of garlic have escaped the mice,  
 And some five pippins from the seedling tree, —  
 Would they were half-a-dozen! Anyhow,  
 Accept my all, poor beggar that I am!'  
 'Received in full of all demands!' smiled back  
 The apportioner of every lot of ground  
 From inch to acre. Littleness of love  
 Befits the littleness of loving thing.  
 What if he boasted 'Seeing I am great,  
 Great must my corresponding tribute be'?  
 Mushtari, — well, suppose him seven times seven  
 The sun's superior, proved so by some sage:  
 Am I that sage? To me his twinkle blue  
 Is all I know of him and thank him for,  
 And therefore I have put the same in verse —  
 'Like yon blue twinkle, twink's thine eye, my  
 Love!'

Neither shalt thou be troubled overmuch  
 Because thy offering — littleness itself —  
 Is lessened by admixture sad and strange  
 Of mere man's motives, — praise with fear, and  
 love

With looking after that same love's reward.  
 Alas, Friend, what was free from this alloy, —  
 Some smatch thereof, — in best and purest love  
 Proffered thy earthly father? Dust thou art,  
 Dust shalt be to the end. Thy father took  
 The dust, and kindly called the handful — gold,  
 Nor cared to count what sparkled here and  
 there

Sagely unanalytic. Thank, praise, love  
 (Sum up thus) for the lowest favors first,  
 The commonest of comforts! aught beside  
 Very omnipotence had overlooked  
 Such needs, arranging for thy little life.  
 Nor waste thy power of love in wonderment  
 At what thou wiselier lettest shine unsoiled  
 By breath of word. That this last cherry soothes  
 A roughness of my palate, that I know:  
 His Maker knows why Mushtari was made."

Verse-making was least of my virtues: I viewed with  
 despair  
 Wealth that never yet was but might be — all that verse-  
 making were  
 If the life would but lengthen to wish, let the mind be  
 laid bare.  
 So I said "To do little is bad, to do nothing is worse" —  
 And made verse.

Love-making, — how simple a matter! No depths to  
 explore,  
 No heights in a life to ascend! No disheartening Before,  
 No affrighting Hereafter, — love now will be love ever-  
 more.  
 So I felt "To keep silence were folly:" — all language  
 above,  
 I made love.

## X. PLOT-CULTURE

"Ay, but, Ferishtah," — a disciple smirked, —  
 "That verse of thine 'How twink's thine eye,  
 my Love,  
 Blue as yon star-beam!' much arrides myself

Who haply may obtain a kiss therewith  
 This eve from Laila where the palms abound —  
 My youth, my warrant — so the palms be close !  
 Suppose when thou art earnest in discourse  
 Concerning high and holy things, — abrupt  
 I out with — 'Laila's lip, how honey-sweet !' —  
 What say'st thou, were it scandalous or no ?  
 I feel thy shoe sent flying at my mouth  
 For daring — prodigy of impudence —  
 Publish what, secret, were permissible.  
 Well, — one slide further in the imagined  
 slough, —  
 Knee-deep therein, (respect thy reverence ! ) —  
 Suppose me well aware thy very self  
 Stooped prying through the palm-screen, while  
 I dared

Solace me with caressings all the same ?  
 Unutterable, nay — unthinkable,  
 Undreamable a deed of shame ! Alack,  
 How will it fare shouldst thou impress on me  
 That certainly an Eye is over all  
 And each, to mark the minute's deed, word,  
 thought,  
 As worthy of reward or punishment ?  
 Shall I permit my sense an Eye-viewed shame,  
 Broad daylight perpetration, — so to speak, —  
 I had not dared to breathe within the Ear,  
 With black night's help about me ? Yet I stand  
 A man, no monster, made of flesh not cloud :  
 Why made so, if my making prove offence  
 To Maker's eye and ear ? ”

“Thou wouldst not stand  
 Distinctly Man,” — Ferishtah made reply,  
 “Not the mere creature, — did no limit-line  
 Round thee about, apportion thee thy place  
 (Clean-cut from out and off the illimitable, —  
 Minuteness severed from immensity.  
 All of thee for the Maker, — for thyself,  
 Workings inside the circle that evolve  
 Thine all, — the product of thy cultured plot.  
 So much of grain the ground's lord bids thee  
 yield :

Bring sacks to granary in Autumn ! spare  
 Daily intelligence of this manure,  
 That compost, how they tend to feed the soil :  
 There thou art master sole and absolute  
 — Only, remember doomsday ! Twit'st thou me  
 Because I turn away my outraged nose  
 Shouldst thou obtrude thereon a shovelful  
 Of fertilizing kisses ? Since thy sire  
 Wills and obtains thy marriage with the maid,  
 Enough ! Be reticent, I counsel thee,  
 Nor venture to acquaint him, point by point,  
 What he procures thee. Is he so obtuse ?  
 Keep thy instruction to thyself ! My ass —  
 Only from him expect acknowledgment,  
 The while he champs my gift, a thistle-bunch,  
 How much he loves the largess : of his love  
 I only tolerate so much as tells  
 By wrinkling nose and inarticulate grunt,  
 The meal, that heartens him to do my work,  
 Tickles his palate as I meant it should.”

Not with my Soul, Love ! — bid no soul like mine  
 Lap thee around nor leave the poor Sense room !

Soul, — travel-worn, toil-weary, — would confine  
 Along with Soul, Soul's gains from glow and gloom,  
 Captures from soarings high and divings deep.  
 Spoil-laden Soul, how should such memories sleep ?  
 Take Sense, too — let me love entire and whole —  
 Not with my Soul !

Eyes shall meet eyes and find no eyes between,  
 Lips feed on lips, no other lips to fear !  
 No past, no future — so thine arms but screen  
 The present from surprise ! not there, 't is here —  
 Not then, 't is now : — back, memories that intrude !  
 Make, Love, the universe our solitude,  
 And, over all the rest, oblivion roll —  
 Sense quenching Soul !

## XI. A PILLAR AT SEBZEVAR

“KNOWLEDGE deposed, then ! ” — groaned  
 whom that most grieved  
 As foolishhest of all the company.  
 “What, knowledge, man's distinctive attribute,  
 He doffs that crown to emulate an ass  
 Because the unknowing long-ears loves at least  
 Husked lupines, and belike the feeder's self  
 — Whose purpose in the dole what ass divines ? ”

“Friend,” quoth Ferishtah, “all I seem to know  
 Is — I know nothing save that love I can  
 Boundlessly, endlessly. My curls were crowned  
 In youth with knowledge, — off, alas, crown  
 slipped

Next moment, pushed by better knowledge still  
 Which nowise proved more constant: gain, to-day,

Was toppling loss to-morrow, lay at last  
 — Knowledge, the golden ? — lacquered igno-  
 rance !

As gain — mistrust it ! Not as means to gain :  
 Lacquer we learn by : cast in fining-pot,  
 We learn, when what seemed ore assayed proves  
 dross, —

Surelier true gold's worth, guess how purity  
 I' the lode were precious could one light on ore  
 Clarified up to test of crucible.

The prize is in the process : knowledge means  
 Ever-renewed assurance by defeat  
 That victory is somehow still to reach,  
 But love is victory, the prize itself :  
 Love — trust to ! Be rewarded for the trust  
 In trust's mere act. In love success is sure,  
 Attainment — no delusion, whatsoever  
 The prize be : apprehended as a prize,  
 A prize it is. Thy child as surely grasps  
 An orange as he fails to grasp the sun  
 Assumed his capture. What if soon he finds  
 The foolish fruit unworthy grasping ? Joy  
 In shape and color, — that was joy as true —  
 Worthy in its degree of love — as grasp  
 Of sun were, which had singed his hand beside.  
 What if he said the orange held no juice  
 Since it was not that sun he hoped to suck ?  
 This constitutes the curse that spoils our life  
 And sets man maundering of his misery,  
 That there's no meanest atom he obtains  
 Of what he counts for knowledge but he cries  
 ‘Hold here, — I have the whole thing, — know,  
 this time,

Nor need search farther !’ Whereas, strew his  
 path



With pleasures, and he scorns them while he stoops :

' This fitly call'st thou pleasure, pick up this  
And praise it, truly ? I reserve my thanks  
For something more substantial.' Fool not thus  
In practising with life and its delights !  
Enjoy the present gift, nor wait to know  
The unknowable. Enough to say ' I feel  
Love's sure effect, and, being loved, must love  
The love its cause behind, — I can and do !'  
Nor turn to try thy brain-power on the fact,  
(Apart from as it strikes thee, here and now —  
Its how and why, i' the future and elsewhere)  
Except to — yet once more, and ever again,  
Confirm thee in thy utter ignorance :  
Assured that, whatsoe'er the quality  
Of love's cause, save that love was caused  
thereby,

This — nigh upon revelation as it seemed  
A minute since — defies thy longing looks,  
Withdrawn into the unknowable once more.  
Wholly distrust thy knowledge, then, and trust  
As wholly love allied to ignorance !  
There lies thy truth and safety. Love is praise,  
And praise is love ! Refine the same, contrive  
An intellectual tribute — ignorance  
Appreciating ere approbative  
Of knowledge that is infinite ? With us,  
The small, who use the knowledge of our  
kind

Greater than we, more wisely ignorance  
Restricts its apprehension, sees and knows  
No more than brain accepts in faith of sight,  
Takes first what comes first, only sure so far.  
By Sebzevar a certain pillar stands  
So aptly that its gnomon tells the hour ;  
What if the townsmen said ' Before we thank  
Who placed it, for his serviceable craft,  
And go to dinner since its shade tells noon,  
Needs must we have the craftsman's purpose  
clear

On half a hundred more recondite points  
Than a mere summons to a vulgar meal !'  
Better they say ' How opportune the help !  
Be loved and praised, thou kindly-hearted sage  
Whom Hudhud taught, — the gracious spirit-  
bird, —

How to construct the pillar, teach the time !'  
So let us say — not ' Since we know, we love,'  
But rather ' Since we love, we know enough.'  
Perhaps the pillar by a spell controlled  
Mushtari in his courses ? Added grace  
Surely I count it that the sage devised,  
Beside celestial service, ministry  
To all the land, by one sharp shade at noon  
Falling as folk foresee. Once more, then,  
Friend —

(What ever in those careless ears of thine  
Withal I needs must round thee) — knowledge  
doubt

Even wherein it seems demonstrable !  
Love, — in the claim for love, that's gratitude  
For apprehended pleasure, nowise doubt !  
Pay its due tribute, — sure that pleasure is,  
While knowledge may be, at the most. See,  
now !

Eating my breakfast, I thanked God. — ' For  
love

Shown in the cherries' flavor ? Consecrate  
So petty an example ? ' There 's the fault !  
We circumscribe omnipotence. Search sand  
To unearth water : if first handful scooped  
Yields thee a draught, what need of digging  
down

Full fifty fathoms deep to find a spring  
Whereof the pulse might deluge half the land ?  
Drain the sufficient drop, and praise what  
checks

The drouth that glues thy tongue, — what more  
would help

A brimful cistern ? Ask the cistern's boon  
When thou wouldst solace camels : in thy case,  
Relish the drop and love the lovable !"

" And what may be unlovable ? "

" Why, hate !

If out of sand comes sand and naught but sand,  
Affect not to be quaffing at mirage,  
Nor nickname pain as pleasure. That, belike,  
Constitutes just the trial of thy wit  
And worthiness to gain promotion, — hence,  
Proves the true purpose of thine actual life,  
Thy soul's environment of things perceived,  
Things visible and things invisible,  
Fact, fancy — all was purposed to evolve  
This and this only — was thy wit of worth  
To recognize the drop's use, love the same,  
And loyally declare against mirage  
Though all the world asseverated dust  
Was good to drink ? Say, ' what made moist  
my lip,

That I acknowledged moisture : ' thou art  
saved !

For why ? The creature and creator stand  
Rightly related so. Consider well !  
Were knowledge all thy faculty, then God  
Must be ignored : love gains him by first leap.  
Frankly accept the creatureship : ask good  
To love for : press bold to the tether's end  
Allotted to this life's intelligence !  
' So we offend ? ' Will it offend thyself  
If — impuissance praying potency —  
Thy child beseech that thou command the sun  
Rise bright to-morrow — thou, he thinks su-  
preme

In power and goodness, why shouldst thou  
refuse ?

Afterward, when the child matures, perchance  
The fault were greater if, with wit full-grown,  
The stripling dared to ask for a dinar.

Than that the boy cried ' Pluck Sitara down  
And give her me to play with ! ' ' Tis for him  
To have no bounds to his belief in thee :

For thee it also is to let her shine  
Lustrous and lonely, so best serving him ! "

Ask not one least word of praise !

Words declare your eyes are bright ?

What then meant that summer day's

Silence spent in one long gaze ?

Was my silence wrong or right ?

Words of praise were all to seek !

Face of you and form of you,

Did they find the praise so weak  
When my lips just touched your cheek —  
Touch which let my soul come through?

## XII. A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO APPLE-EATING

"Look, I strew beans" . . .

(Ferishtah, we premise,

Strove this way with a scholar's cavilment  
Who put the peevish question: "Sir, be frank!  
A good thing or a bad thing — Life is which?  
Shine and shade, happiness and misery  
Battle it out there: which force beats, I  
ask?

If I pick beans from out a bushelful —  
This one, this other, — then demand of thee  
What color names each justly in the main, —  
'Black' I expect, and 'White' ensues reply:  
No hesitation for what speck, spot, splash  
Of either color's opposite, intrudes  
To modify thy judgment. Well, for beans  
Substitute days, — show, ranged in order, Life —  
Then, tell me its true color! Time is short,  
Life's days compose a span, — as brief be  
speech!

Black I pronounce for, like the Indian Sage, —  
Black — present, past, and future, interspersed  
With blanks, no doubt, which simple folk style  
Good

Because not Evil: no, indeed? Forsooth,  
Black's shade on White is White too! What's  
the worst

Of Evil but that, past, it overshades  
The else-exempted present? — memory,  
We call the plague! 'Nay, but our memory  
fades

And leaves the past unsullied! Does it so?  
Why, straight the purpose of such breathing-  
space,

Such respite from past ills, grows plain enough!  
What follows on remembrance of the past?  
Fear of the future! Life, from birth to death,  
Means — either looking back on harm escaped,  
Or looking forward to that harm's return  
With tenfold power of harming. Black, not  
White,

Never the whole consummate quietude  
Life should be, troubled by no fear! — nor  
hope —

I'll say, since lamplight dies in noontide, hope  
Loses itself in certainty. Such lot  
Man's might have been: I leave the conse-  
quence

To bolder critics or the Primal Cause;  
Such am not I: but, man — as man I speak:  
Black is the bean-throw: evil is the Life!")

"Look, I strew beans," — resumed Ferishtah,  
— "beans

Blackish and whitish; what they figure forth  
Shall be man's sum of moments, bad and  
good,

That make up Life, — each moment when he  
feels

Pleasure or pain, his poorest fact of sense,  
Consciousness anyhow: there's stand the first;

Whence next advance shall be from points to  
line,

Singulars to a series, parts to whole,  
And moments to the Life. How look they now.  
Viewed in the large, those little joys and griefs  
Ranged duly all a-row at last, like beans  
— These which I strew? This bean was white,

this — black,  
Set by itself, — but see if good and bad  
Each following either in companionship,  
Black have not grown less black and white less  
white,

Till blackish seems but dun, and whitish —  
gray,

And the whole line turns — well, or black to  
thee

Or white belike to me — no matter which:  
The main result is — both are modified  
According to our eye's scope, power of range  
Before and after. Black dost call this bean?  
What, with a whiteness in its wake, which —  
see —

Suffuses half its neighbor? — and, in turn,  
Lowers its pearliness late absolute,  
Frowned upon by the jet which follows hard —  
Else wholly white my bean were. Choose a  
joy!

Bettered it was by sorrow gone before,  
And sobered somewhat by the shadowy sense  
Of sorrow which came after or might come.  
Joy, sorrow, — by precedence, subsequence —  
Either on each, make fusion, mix in Life  
That's both and neither wholly: gray or dun?  
Dun thou decidest? gray prevails, say I:  
Wherefore? Because my view is wide enough,  
Reaches from first to last nor winks at all:  
Motion achieves it: stop short — fast we  
stick, —

Probably at the bean that's blackest.

"Since —

Son, trust me, — this I know and only this —  
I am in motion, and all things beside  
That circle round my passage through their  
midst, —

Motionless, these are, as regarding me:  
— Which means, myself I solely recognize.  
They too may recognize themselves, not me,  
For aught I know or care: but plain they serve  
This, if no other purpose — stuff to try  
And test my power upon of raying light  
And lending hue to all things as I go  
Moonlike through vapor. Mark the flying orb!  
Think'st thou the halo, painted still afresh  
At each new cloud-fleece pierced and passaged  
through,

This was and is and will be evermore  
Colored in permanence? The glory swims  
Girdling the glory-giver, swallowed straight  
By night's abysmal gloom, unglorified  
Behind as erst before the advance: gloom?  
Faced by the onward-faring, see, succeeds  
From the abandoned heaven a next surprise,  
And where's the gloom now? — silver-smitten  
straight,

One glow and variegation! So with me,  
Who move and make — myself — the black, the  
white,

The good, the bad, of life's environment.  
Stand still! black stays black: start again!  
there's white

Asserts supremacy: the motion's all  
That colors me my moment: seen as joy? —  
I have escaped from sorrow, or that was  
Or might have been: as sorrow? — thence shall  
be

Escape as certain: white preceded black,  
Black shall give way to white as duly, — so,  
Deepest in black means white most imminent,  
Stand still, — have no before, no after! — life  
Proves death, existence grows impossible  
To man like me. 'What else is blessed sleep  
But death, then?' Why, a rapture of release  
From toil, — that's sleep's approach: as cer-  
tainly,

The end of sleep means, toil is triumphed o'er:  
These round the blank unconsciousness between  
Brightness and brightness, either pushed to  
blaze

Just through that blank's interposition. Hence  
The use of things external: man — that's I —  
Practise thereon my power of casting light,  
And calling substance, — when the light I cast  
Breaks into color, — by its proper name  
— A truth and yet a falsity: black, white,  
Names each bean taken from what lay so close  
And threw such tint: pain might mean pain  
indeed

Seen in the passage past it, — pleasure prove  
No mere delusion while I pause to look, —  
Though what an idle fancy was that fear  
Which overhung and hindered pleasure's hue!  
While how, again, pain's shade enhanced the  
shine

Of pleasure, else no pleasure! Such effects  
Came of such causes. Passage at an end, —  
Past, present, future pains and pleasures fused  
So that one glance may gather blacks and  
whites

Into a lifetime, — like my bean-streak there,  
Why, white they whirl into, not black — for  
me!"

"Ay, but for me? The indubitable blacks,  
Immeasurable miseries, here, there  
And everywhere i' the world — world outside  
thine

Paled off so opportunely, — body's plague,  
Torment of soul, — where's found thy fellow-  
ship

With wide humanity all round about  
Reeling beneath its burden? What's despair?  
Behold that man, that woman, child — nay,  
brute!

Will any speck of white unblacken life  
Splashed, splotted, dyed hell-deep now from  
end to end  
For him or her or it — who knows? Not I!"

"Nor I, Son! 'It' shall stand for bird, beast,  
fish,

Reptile, and insect even: take the last!  
There's the palm-aphis, minute miracle  
As wondrous every whit as thou or I:  
Well, and his world's the palm-frond, there  
he's born,

Lives, breeds, and dies in that circumference,  
An inch of green for cradle, pasture-ground,  
Purlieu and grave: the palm's use, ask of him!  
'To furnish these,' replies his wit: ask thine —  
Who see the heaven above, the earth below,  
Creation everywhere, — these, each and all  
Claim certain recognition from the tree  
For special service rendered branch and bole,  
Top-tuft and tap-root: — for thyself, thus seen,  
Palms furnish dates to eat, and leaves to shade,  
— Maybe, thatch huts with, — have another use  
Than strikes the aphis. So with me, my Son!  
I know my own appointed patch i' the world,  
What pleasures me or pains there: all out-  
side —

How he, she, it, and even thou, Son, live,  
Are pleased or pained, is past conjecture, once  
I pry beneath the semblance, — all that's fit,  
To practise with, — reach where the fact may  
lie

Fathom-deep lower. There's the first and last  
Of my philosophy. Blacks blur thy white?  
Not mine! The aphis feeds, nor finds his leaf  
Untenable, because a lance-thrust, nay,  
Lightning strikes sere a moss-patch close be-  
side,

Where certain other aphids live and love.  
Restriction to his single inch of white,  
That's law for him, the aphis: but for me,  
The man, the larger-souled, beside my stretch  
Of blacks and whites, I see a world of woe  
All round about me: one such burst of black  
Intolerable o'er the life I count  
White in the main, and, yea — white's faintest  
trace

Were clean abolished once and evermore.  
Thus fare my fellows, swallowed up in gloom  
So far as I discern: how far is that?  
God's care be God's! 'Tis mine — to boast no  
joy

Unsobered by such sorrows of my kind  
As sully with their shade my life that shines."

"Reflected possibilities of pain,  
Forsooth, just chasten pleasure! Pain itself, —  
Fact and not fancy, does not this affect  
The general color?"

"Here and there a touch  
Taught me, betimes, the artifice of things —  
That all about, external to myself,  
Was meant to be suspected, — not revealed  
Demonstrably a cheat, — but half seen through,  
Lest white should rule unchecked along the  
line

Therefore white may not triumph. All the  
same,

Of absolute and irretrievable  
And all-subduing black, — black's soul of black  
Beyond white's power to disintensify, —  
Of that I saw no sample: such may wreck  
My life and ruin my philosophy  
To-morrow, doubtless: hence the constant  
shade

Cast on life's shine, — the tremor that intrudes  
When firmest seems my faith in white. Dost  
ask

'Who is Ferishtah, hitherto exempt



From black experience? Why, if God be just,  
Were sundry fellow-mortals singled out  
To undergo experience for his sake,  
Just that the gift of pain, bestowed on them,  
In him might temper to the due degree  
Joy's else-excessive largess? 'Why, indeed!  
Back are we brought thus to the starting-point—

Man's impotency, God's omnipotence,  
These stop my answer. Aphis that I am,  
How leave my inch-allotment, pass at will  
Into my fellow's liberty of range,  
Enter into his sense of black and white,  
As either, seen by me from outside, seems  
Predominatingly the color? Life,  
Lived by my fellow, shall I pass into  
And myself live there? No—no more than  
pass

From Persia, where in sun since birth I bask  
Daily, to some ungracious land afar,  
Told of by travellers, where the night of snow  
Smothers up day, and fluids lose themselves  
Frozen to marble. How I bear the sun,  
Beat though he may unduly, that I know:  
How blood once curdled ever creeps again,  
Baffles conjecture: yet since people live  
Somehow, resist a clime would conquer me,  
Somehow provided for their sake must dawn  
Compensative resource. 'No sun, no grapes,—  
Then, no subsistence!'—were it wisely said?  
Or this well-reasoned—'Do I dare feel warmth  
And please my palate here with Persia's vine,  
Though, over-mounts,—to trust the travel-  
ler,—

Snow, feather-thick, is falling while I feast?  
What if the cruel winter force his way  
Here also?' Son, the wise reply were this:  
When cold from over-mounts spikes through  
and through  
Blood, bone and marrow of Ferishtah,—then,  
Time to look out for shelter—time, at least,  
To wring the hands and cry 'No shelter serves!'  
Shelter, of some sort, no experienced chill  
Warrants that I despair to find."

"No less,  
Doctors have differed here; thou say'st thy  
say;

Another man's experience masters thine,  
Flat controverted by the sourly-Sage,  
The Indian witness who, with faculty  
Fine as Ferishtah's, found no white at all  
Chequer the world's predominating black,  
No good out evil from supremacy,  
So that Life's best was that it led to death.  
How of his testimony?"

"Son, suppose  
My camel told me: 'Threescore days and ten  
I traversed hill and dale, yet never found  
Food to stop hunger, drink to stay my drouth;  
Yet, here I stand alive, which take in proof  
That to survive was found impossible!'  
'Nay, rather take thou, non-surviving beast,'  
(Reply were prompt,) 'on flank this thwack of  
staff

Nowise affecting flesh that's dead and dry!  
Thou wincest? Take correction twice, amend

Next time thy nomenclature! Call white—  
white!"

The sourly-Sage, for whom life's best was death,  
Lived out his seventy years, looked hale,  
laughed loud,

Liked—above all—his dinner,—lied, in  
short."

"Lied is a rough phrase: say he fell from  
truth

In climbing towards it!—sure less faulty so  
Than had he sat him down and stayed content  
With thy safe orthodoxy, 'White, all white,  
White everywhere for certain I should see  
Did I but understand how white is black,  
As clearer sense than mine would.' Clearer  
sense,—

Whose may that be? Mere human eyes I  
boast,

And such distinguish colors in the main,  
However any tongue, that's human too,  
Please to report the matter. Dost thou blame  
A soul that strives but to see plain, speak true,  
Truth at all hazards? Oh, this false for real,  
This emptiness which feigns solidity,—

Ever some gray that's white and dun that's  
black,—

When shall we rest upon the thing itself  
Not on its semblance?—Soul—too weak, for-  
sooth,

To cope with fact—wants fiction everywhere!  
Mine tires of falsehood: truth at any cost!"

"Take one and try conclusions—this, sup-  
pose!

God is all-good, all-wise, all-powerful: truth?  
Take it and rest there. What is man? Not  
God:

None of these absolutes therefore,—yet him-  
self,

A creature with a creature's qualities.

Make them agree, these two conceptions!  
Each

Abolishes the other. Is man weak,  
Foolish and bad? He must be Ahriman,  
Co-equal with an Ormuzd, Bad with Good,  
Or else a thing made at the Prime Sole Will,  
Doing a maker's pleasure—with results  
Which—call, the wide world over, 'what must  
be'—

But, from man's point of view, and only point  
Possible to his powers, call—evidence  
Of goodness, wisdom, strength? we mock our-  
selves

In all that's best of us,—man's blind but  
sure

Craving for these in very deed not word,  
Reality and not illusions. Well,—

Since these nowhere exist—nor there where  
cause

Must have effect, nor here where craving means  
Craving unfollowed by fit consequence  
And full supply, aye sought for, never found—  
These—what are they but man's own rule of  
right?

A scheme of goodness recognized by man,

Although by man unrealizable,—

Not God's with whom to will were to perform:

Nowise performed here, therefore never willed.  
 What follows but that God, who could the  
     best,  
 Has willed the worst, — while man, with power  
     to match  
 Will with performance, were deservedly  
 Hailed the supreme — provided . . . here's the  
     touch  
 That breaks the bubble . . . this concept of  
     man's  
 Were man's own work, his birth of heart and  
     brain,  
 His native grace, no alien gift at all.  
 The bubble breaks here. Will of man create ?  
 No more than this my hand which strewed the  
     beans  
 Produced them also from its finger-tips.  
 Back goes creation to its source, source prime  
 And ultimate, the single and the sole."

"How reconcile discordancy, — unite  
 Notion and notion — God that only can  
 Yet does not, — man that would indeed  
 But just as surely cannot, — both in one ?  
 What help occurs to thy intelligence ?"

"Ah, the beans, — or, — example better yet, —  
 A carpet-web I saw once leave the loom  
 And lie at gorgeous length in Ispahan !  
 The weaver plied his work with lengths of silk  
 Dyed each to match some jewel as it might,  
 And wove them, this by that. 'How comes it,  
     friend,' —

(Quoth I) — 'that while, apart, this fiery hue,  
 That watery dimness, either shocks the eye,  
 So blinding bright, or else offends again,  
 By dulness, — yet the two, set each by each,  
 Somehow produce a color born of both,  
 A medium profitable to the sight ?'  
 'Such medium is the end whereat I aim,' —  
 Answered my craftsman: 'there's no single  
     tinct

Would satisfy the eye's desire to taste  
 The secret of the diamond: join extremes  
 Results a serviceable medium-ghost,  
 The diamond's simulation. Even so  
 I needs must blend the quality of man  
 With quality of God, and so assist  
 Mere human sight to understand my Life,  
 What is, what should be, — understand thereby  
 Wherefore I hate the first and love the last, —  
 Understand why things so present themselves  
 To me, placed here to prove I understand.  
 Thus, from beginning runs the chain to end,  
 And binds me plain enough. By consequence,  
 I bade thee tolerate, — not kick and cuff  
 The man who held that natures did in fact  
 Blend so, since so thyself must have them blend  
 In fancy, if it take a flight so far."

"A power, confessed past knowledge, nay,  
     past thought,  
 — Thus thought thus known !"

"To know of, think about —  
 Is all man's sum of faculty effects  
 When exercised on earth's least atom, Son !  
 What was, what is, what may such atom be ?

No answer ! Still, what seems it to man's  
     sense ?

An atom with some certain properties  
 Known about, thought of as occasion needs,  
 — Man's — but occasions of the universe ?  
 Unthinkable, unknowable to man.  
 Yet, since to think and know fire through and  
     through  
 Exceeds man, is the warmth of fire unknown,  
 Its uses — are they so unthinkable ?  
 Pass from such obvious power to powers un-  
     seen,  
 Undreamed of save in their sure consequence :  
 Take that, we spoke of late, which draws to  
     ground  
 The staff my hand lets fall : it draws, at least —  
 Thus much man thinks and knows, if nothing  
     more."

"Ay, but man puts no mind into such power !  
 He neither thanks it, when an apple drops,  
 Nor prays it spare his pate while underneath.  
 Does he thank Summer though it plumped the  
     rind ?  
 Why thank the other force — whate'er its  
     name —  
 Which gave him teeth to bite and tongue to  
     taste  
 And throat to let the pulp pass ? Force and  
     force,  
 No end of forces ! Have they mind like man ?"

"Suppose thou visit our lord Shalim-Shah,  
 Bringing thy tribute as appointed. 'Here  
 Come I to pay my due !' Whereat one slave  
 Obsequious spreads a carpet for thy foot,  
 His fellow offers sweetmeats, while a third  
 Prepares a pipe: what thanks or praise have  
     they ?

Such as befit prompt service. Gratitude  
 Goes past them to the Shah whose gracious nod  
 Set all the sweet civility at work ;  
 But for his ordinance, I much suspect,  
 My scholar had been left to cool his heels  
 Uncarpeted, or warm them — likelier still —  
 With bastinado for intrusion. Slaves  
 Needs must obey their master: 'force and  
     force,

No end of forces,' act as bids some force  
 Supreme o'er all and each: where find that  
     one ?

How recognize him ? Simply as thou didst  
 The Shah — by reasoning 'Since I feel a debt,  
 Behooves me pay the same to one aware  
 I have my duty, he his privilege.'  
 Didst thou expect the slave who charged thy  
     pipe

Would serve as well to take thy tribute-bag  
 And save thee further trouble ?"

"Be it so !

The sense within me that I owe a debt  
 Assures me — somewhere must be somebody  
 Ready to take his due. All comes to this —  
 Where due is, there acceptance follows: find  
 Him who accepts the due ! and why look far ?  
 Behold thy kindred compass thee about !  
 Ere thou wast born and after thou shalt die,

Heroic man stands forth as Shahan-Shah,  
Rustem and Gew, Gudarz and all the rest,  
How come they short of lordship that's to seek?

Dead worthies! but men live undoubtedly  
Gifted as Sindokht, sage Sulayman's match,  
Valiant like Kawah: ay, and while earth lasts  
Such heroes shall abound there — all for thee  
Who profitest by all the present, past,  
And future operation of thy race.  
Why, then, o'erburdened with a debt of thanks,  
Look wistful for some hand from out the clouds  
To take it, when, all round, a multitude  
Would ease thee in a trice?"

"Such tendered thanks

Would tumble back to who craved riddance,  
Son!

— Who but my sorry self? See! stars are out—

Stars which, unconscious of thy gaze beneath,  
Go glorifying, and glorify thee too  
— Those Seven Thrones, Zurah's beauty, weird  
Parwin!

Whether shall love and praise to stars be paid  
Or — say — some Mubid who, for good to thee  
Blind at thy birth, by magic all his own  
Opened thine eyes, and gave the sightless sight,  
Let the stars' glory enter? Say his charm  
Worked while thyself lay sleeping: as he went  
Thou wakedst: 'What a novel sense have I!  
Whom shall I love and praise?' 'The stars,  
each orb

Thou standest rapt beneath,' proposes one:  
'Do not they live their life, and please themselves,

And so please thee? What more is requisite?'  
Make thou this answer: 'If indeed no mage  
Opened my eyes and worked a miracle,  
Then let the stars thank me who apprehend  
That such an one is white, such other blue!  
But for my apprehension both were blank.  
Cannot I close my eyes and bid my brain  
Make whites and blues, conceive without stars'  
help,

New qualities of color? were my sight  
Lost or misleading, would yon red — I judge  
A ruby's benefaction — stand for aught  
But green from vulgar glass? Myself appraise  
Lustre and lustre: should I overlook  
Fomalhaut and declare some fen-fire king,  
Who shall correct me, lend me eyes he trusts  
No more than I trust mine? My mage for me!  
I never saw him: if he never was,  
I am the arbitrator!' No, my Son!  
Let us sink down to thy similitude:  
I eat my apple, relish what is ripe —  
The sunny side, admire its rarity  
Since half the tribe is wrinkled, and the rest  
Hide commonly a maggot in the core, —  
And down Zerdusht goes with due smack of  
lips:

But — thank an apple? He who made my  
mouth

To masticate, my palate to approve,  
My maw to further the concoction — Him  
I thank, — but for whose work, the orchard's  
wealth

Might prove so many gall-nuts — stocks or  
stones  
For aught that I should think, or know, or  
care."

"Why from the world," Ferishtah smiled, "should  
thanks

Go to this work of mine? If worthy praise,  
Praised let it be and welcome: as verse ranks,  
So rate my verse: if good therein outweighs  
Aught faulty judged, judge justly! Justice says:  
Be just to fact, or blaming or approving:  
But — generous? No, nor loving!

"Loving! what claim to love has work of mine?

Concede my life were emptied of its gains  
To furnish forth and fill world's strict confine,  
Who works so for the world's sake — he complains  
With cause when hate, not love, rewards his pains.  
I looked beyond the world for truth and beauty:  
Sought, found, and did my duty."

## EPILOGUE

OH, Love — no, Love! All the noise below,  
Love,

Groanings all and moanings — none of Life I  
lose!

All of Life's a cry just of weariness and woe,  
Love —

"Hear at least, thou happy one!" How can  
I, Love, but choose?

Only, when I do hear, sudden circle round  
me

— Much as when the moon's might frees a  
space from cloud —

Iridescent splendors: gloom — would else con-  
found me —

Barrièred off and banished far — bright-  
edged the blackest shroud!

Thronging through the cloud-rift, whose are  
they, the faces

Faint revealed yet sure divined, the famous  
ones of old?

"What" — they smile — "our names, our  
deeds so soon erases

Time upon his tablet where Life's glory lies  
enrolled?

"Was it for mere fool's-play, make-believe  
and mumming,

So we battled it like men, not boylike sulked  
or whined?

Each of us heard clang God's 'Come!' and  
each was coming:

Soldiers all, to forward-face, not sneaks to  
lag behind!

"How of the field's fortune? That concerned  
our Leader!

Led, we struck our stroke nor cared for do-  
ings left and right:

Each as on his sole head, failer or succeder,  
Lay the blame or lit the praise: no care for  
cowards: fight!"



Then the cloud-rift broadens, spanning earth  
that's under,

Wide our world displays its worth, man's  
strife and strife's success ;

All the good and beauty, wonder crowning  
wonder,

Till my heart and soul applaud perfection,  
nothing less.

Only, at heart's utmost joy and triumph, terror  
Sudden turns the blood to ice : a chill wind  
disenchants

All the late enchantment ! What if all be  
error —

If the halo irised round my head were, Love,  
thine arms ?

Palazzo Giustinian-Recanati, VENICE :  
December 1, 1883.

#### RAWDON BROWN

"Tutti ga i so gusti, e mi go i miù."  
(*Venetian saying.*)

Mr. Rawdon Brown was an Englishman who  
went to Venice on some temporary errand, and  
lived there for forty years, dying in that city in  
the summer of 1883. He had an enthusiastic  
love for Venice, and is mentioned in books of  
travel as one who knew the city thoroughly.  
The Venetian saying means that "everybody  
follows his taste as I follow mine." Toni was  
the gondolier and attendant of Brown. The in-  
scription on Brown's tomb is given in the third  
and fourth lines. G. W. COOKE.

SIGHED Rawdon Brown : "Yes, I'm departing,  
Toni !

I needs must, just this once before I die,  
Revisit England : *Anglus* Brown am I,  
Although my heart's Venetian. Yes, old  
crony —

Venice and London — London's 'Death the  
bony'

Compared with Life — that's Venice ! What  
a sky,

A sea, this morning ! One last look ! Good-by,  
*Cà Pesaro* ! No, lion — I'm a coney  
To weep ! I'm dazzled ; 't is that sun I view  
Rippling the . . . the . . . *Cospetto*, Toni !  
Down

With carpet-bag, and off with valise-straps !  
*Bella Venezia, non ti lascio più !*"

Nor did Brown ever leave her : well, per-  
haps

Browning, next week, may find himself quite  
Brown !

November 28, 1883.

#### THE FOUNDER OF THE FEAST

Inscribed in an Album presented to Mr.  
Arthur Chappell, of the Saint James Hall  
Saturday and Monday popular concerts.

"ENTER my palace," if a prince should say —  
"Feast with the Painters ! See, in bounteous  
row,

They range from Titian up to Angelo !"

Could we be silent at the rich survey ?

A host so kindly, in as great a way

Invites to banquet, substitutes for show

Sound that's diviner still, and bids us know  
Bach like Beethoven ; are we thankless, pray ?

Thanks, then, to Arthur Chappell, — thanks  
to him

Whose every guest henceforth not idly vaunts

"Sense has received the utmost Nature  
grants,

My cup was filled with rapture to the brim,

When, night by night, — ah, memory, how it  
haunts ! —

Music was poured by perfect ministrants,  
By Halle, Schumann, Piatti, Joachim.

April 5, 1884.

#### THE NAMES

At Dr. F. J. Furnivall's suggestion, Brown-  
ing was asked to contribute a sonnet to the  
*Shakesperean Show-Book* of the "Shakesperean  
Show" held in Albert Hall, London, on May  
29-31, 1884, to pay off the debt on the Hospital  
for Women, in Fulham Road. The poet sent  
to the committee a sonnet on the names of Je-  
hovah and Shakespere.

SHAKESPEARE ! — to such name's sounding,  
what succeeds

Fitly as silence ? Falter forth the spell, —

Act follows word, the speaker knows full  
well,

Nor tampers with its magic more than needs.

Two names there are : That which the Hebrew  
reads

With his soul only : if from lips it fell,

Echo, back thundered by earth, heaven and  
hell,

Would own "Thou didst create us !" Naught  
impedes

We voice the other name, man's most of might,

Awesomely, lovingly : let awe and love

Mutely await their working, leave to sight

All of the issue as — below — above —

Shakespeare's creation rises : one remove,  
Though dread — this finite from that infinite.

March 12, 1884.

#### EPITAPH

ON LEVI LINCOLN THAXTER

Born in Watertown, Massachusetts, February 1, 1824.  
Died May 31, 1884.

Mr. Thaxter was early a student of Browning's  
genius and in his later years gave readings from  
his poems, which were singularly interpretative.  
The boulder over his grave bears these lines.

THOU, whom these eyes saw never ! Say friends  
true  
Who say my soul, helped onward by my song,  
Though all unwittingly, has helped thee too ?  
I gave of but the little that I knew :  
How were the gift requited, while along  
Life's path I pace, couldst thou make weak-  
ness strong !  
Help me with knowledge — for Life's Old —  
Death's New !

R. B. to L. L. T., *April*, 1885.

### WHY I AM A LIBERAL

Contributed to a volume edited by Andrew Reid, in which a number of leaders of English thought answered the question, "Why I am a Liberal ?"

"WHY ?" Because all I haply can and do,  
All that I am now, all I hope to be, —  
Whence comes it save from fortune setting  
free  
Body and soul the purpose to pursue,  
God traced for both ? If fetters, not a few,  
Of prejudice, convention, fall from me,  
These shall I bid men — each in his de-  
gree  
Also God-guided — bear, and gayly, too ?

But little do or can the best of us :  
That little is achieved through Liberty.  
Who, then, dares hold, emancipated thus,  
His fellow shall continue bound ? Not I,  
Who live, love, labor freely, nor discuss  
A brother's right to freedom. That is  
"Why."

## PARLEYINGS WITH CERTAIN PEOPLE OF IMPORTANCE IN THEIR DAY

IN MEMORIAM J. MILSAND, OBIT IV. SEPTEMBER, MDCCCLXXXVI.

*Absens Absentem Auditque Videtque.*

### APOLLO AND THE FATES

#### A PROLOGUE

(Hymn in Mercurium, v. 559. Eumenides, vv. 693-4,  
697-8. Alcestit, vv. 12, 33.)

*Apollo.* (From above.) Flame at my footfall,  
Parnassus ! Apollo,  
Breaking ablaze on thy topmost peak,  
Burns thence, down to the depths — dread  
hollow —  
Haunt of the Dire Ones. Haste ! They  
wreak  
Wrath on Admetus whose respite I seek.

*The Fates.* (Below. Darkness.) Dragonwise  
couched in the womb of our Mother,  
Coiled at thy nourishing heart's core,  
Night !  
Dominant Dreads, we, one by the other,  
Deal to each mortal his dole of light  
On earth — the upper, the glad, the bright.

*Clotho.* Even so : thus from my loaded spin-  
dle  
Plucking a pinch of the fleece, lo, "Birth"  
Brays from my bronze lip : life I kindle :  
Look, 't is a man ! go, measure on earth  
The minute thy portion, whatever its worth !

*Lachesis.* Woe-purfl'd, weal-prankt, — if it  
speed, if it linger, —  
Life's substance and show are determined by  
me,  
Who, meting out, mixing with sure thumb and  
finger,

Lead life the due length : is all smoothness  
and glee,  
All tangle and grief ? Take the lot, my decree !

*Atropos.* — Which I make an end of : the  
smooth as the tangled  
My shears cut asunder : each snap shrieks  
"One more  
Mortal makes sport for us Moirai who dangled  
The puppet grotesquely till earth's solid floor  
Proved firm he fell through, lost in Naught as  
before."

*Clo.* I spin thee a thread. Live, Admetus !  
Produce him !

*Lac.* Go, — brave, wise, good, happy ! Now  
chequer the thread !  
He is slaved for, yet loved by a god. I unloose  
him

A goddess-sent plague. He has conquered,  
is wed,

Men crown him, he stands at the height, —

*Atr.* He is . . .  
*Apollo.* (Entering : Light.) "Dead ?"

Nay, swart spinsters ! So I surprise you  
Making and marring the fortunes of Man ?  
Huddling — no marvel, your enemy eyes you —  
Head by head bat-like, blots under the ban  
Of daylight earth's blessing since time began !

*The Fates.* Back to thy blest earth, prying  
Apollo !  
Shaft upon shaft transpierce with thy beams  
Earth to the centre, — spare but this hollow  
Hewn out of Night's heart, where our  
mystery seems

Mewed from day's malice: wake earth from her dreams!

*Apol.* Crones, 't is your dusk selves I startle from slumber:

Day's god deposes you — queens Night-crowned!

— Plying your trade in a world ye encumber,  
Fashioning Man's web of life — spun, wound,  
Left the length ye allot till a clip strews the ground!

Behold I bid truce to your doleful amusement —

Annulled by a sunbeam!

*The Fates.* Boy, are not we peers?

*Apol.* You with the spindle grant birth: whose inducement

But yours — with the niggardly digits — endears

To mankind chance and change, good and evil?  
Your shears . . .

*Atr.* Ay, mine end the conflict: so much is no fable.

We spin, draw to length, cut asunder: what then?

So it was, and so is, and so shall be: art able  
To alter life's law for ephemeral men?

*Apol.* Nor able nor willing. To threescore and ten

Extend but the years of Admetus! Disaster  
O'ertook me, and, banished by Zeus, I became

A servant to one who forbore me though master:

True lovers were we. Discontinue your game,

Let him live whom I loved, then hate on, all the same!

*The Fates.* And what if we granted — law-flouter, use-trampler —

His life at the suit of an upstart? Judge, thou —

Of joy were it fuller, of span because ampler?

For love's sake, not hate's, end Admetus — ay, now —

Not a gray hair on head, nor a wrinkle on brow!

For, boy, 't is illusion: from thee comes a glimmer

Transforming to beauty life blank at the best.

Withdraw — and how looks life at worst, when to shimmer

Succeeds the sure shade, and Man's lot frowns — confessed

Mere blackness chance-brightened? Whereof shall attest

The truth this same mortal, the darling thou stylest,

Whom love would advantage, — eke out, day by day,

A life which 't is solely thyself reconcilest

Thy friend to endure, — life with hope: take away  
Hope's gleam from Admetus, he spurns it.  
For, say —

What's infancy? Ignorance, idleness, mis-chief:

Youth ripens to arrogance, foolishness, greed:  
Age — impotence, churlishness, rancor: call *this* chief

Of boons for thy loved one? Much rather bid speed

Our function, let live whom thou hatest indeed!

Persuade thee, bright boy-thing! Our eld be instructive!

*Apol.* And certes youth owns the experience of age.

Ye hold then, grave seniors, my beams are productive

— They solely — of good that's mere semblance, engage

Man's eye — gilding evil, Man's true heritage?

*The Fates.* So, even so! From without, — at due distance

If viewed, — set a-sparkle, reflecting thy rays, —

Life mimics the sun: but withdraw such assistance,

The counterfeit goes, the reality stays — An ice-ball disguised as a fire-orb.

*Apol.* What craze

Possesses the fool then whose fancy conceits him

As happy?

*The Fates.* Man happy?

*Apol.* If otherwise — solve

This doubt which besets me! What friend ever greets him

Except with "Live long as the seasons revolve,"

Not "Death to thee straightway"? Your doctrines absolve

Such hailing from hatred: yet Man should know best.

He talks it, and glibly, as life were a load  
Man fain would be rid of: when put to the test,

He whines "Let it lie, leave me trudging the road

That is rugged so far, but methinks" . . .

*The Fates.* Ay, 't is owed

To that glamour of thine, he bethinks him "Once past

The stony, some patch, nay, a smoothness of swarth

Awaits my tired foot: life turns easy at last" —

Thy largess so lures him, he looks for reward  
Of the labor and sorrow.

*Apol.* It seems, then — debarred

Of illusion — (I needs must acknowledge the plea)

Man desponds and despairs. Yet, — still further to draw



Due profit from counsel, — suppose there should  
 be  
 Some power in himself, some compensative  
 law  
 By virtue of which, independently . . .

*The Fates.* Faugh!  
 Strength hid in the weakling!  
 What bowl-shape hast there,  
 Thus laughingly proffered? A gift to our  
 shrine?  
 Thanks — worsted in argument! Not so? De-  
 clare  
 Its purpose!  
*Apol.* I proffer earth's product, not mine.  
 Taste, try, and approve Man's invention of —  
 WINE!

*The Fates.* We feeding suck honeycombs.  
*Apol.* Sustenance meagre!  
 Such fare breeds the fumes that show all  
 things amiss.  
 Quaff wine, — how the spirits rise nimble and  
 eager,  
 Unscale the dim eyes! To Man's cup grant  
 one kiss  
 Of your lip, then allow — no enchantment like  
 this!

*C/o.* Unhook wings, unhood brows! Dost  
 hearken?  
*Lach.* I listen:  
 I see — smell the food these fond mortals  
 prefer  
 To our feast, the bee's bounty!  
*Atr.* The thing leaps! But — glisten  
 Its best, I withstand it — unless all concur  
 In adventure so novel.  
*Apol.* Ye drink?  
*The Fates.* We demur.

*Apol.* Sweet Trine, be indulgent nor scout  
 the contrivance  
 Of Man — Bacchus-prompted! The juice, I  
 uphold,  
 Illuminates gloom without sunny connivance,  
 Turns fear into hope and makes cowardice  
 bold, —  
 Touching all that is leadlike in life turns it  
 gold!

*The Fates.* Faith foolish as false!  
*Apol.* But essay it, soft sisters!  
 Then mock as ye may. Lift the chalice to lip!  
 Good: thou next — and thou! Seems the web,  
 to you twisters  
 Of life's yarn, so worthless?  
*C/o.* Who guessed that one sip  
 Would impart such a lightness of limb?  
*Lach.* I could skip

In a trice from the pied to the plain in my  
 woof!  
 What parts each from either? A hair's  
 breadth, no inch.  
 Once learn the right method of stepping aloof,  
 Though on black next foot falls, firm I fix it,  
 nor flinch,

— Such my trust white succeeds!  
*Atr.* One could live — at a pinch!

*Apol.* What, beldames? Earth's yield, by  
 Man's skill, can effect  
 Such a cure of sick sense that ye spy the re-  
 lation  
 Of evil to good? But drink deeper, correct  
 Blear sight more convincingly still! Take  
 your station  
 Beside me, drain dregs! Now for edification!

Whose gift have ye gulped? Thank not me  
 but my brother,  
 Blithe Bacchus, our youngest of godships.  
 'T was he  
 Found all boons to all men, by one god or other  
 Already conceded, so judged there must be  
 New guerdon to grace the new advent, you  
 see!

Else how would a claim to Man's homage arise?  
 The plan lay arranged of his mixed woe and  
 weal,  
 So disposed — such Zeus' will — with design to  
 make wise  
 The witless — that false things were mingled  
 with real,  
 Good with bad: such the lot whereto law set  
 the seal.

Now, human of instinct — since Semele's son,  
 Yet minded divinely — since fathered by Zeus,  
 With naught Bacchus tampered, undid not  
 things done,  
 Owned wisdom anterior, would spare wont  
 and use,  
 Yet change — without shock to old rule — in-  
 troduce.

Regard how your cavern from crag-tip to base  
 Frowns sheer, height and depth adamantine,  
 one death!  
 I rouse with a beam the whole rampart, displace  
 No splinter — yet see how my flambeau, be-  
 neath  
 And above, bids this gem wink, that crystal  
 unsheathe!

Withdraw beam — disclosure once more Night  
 forbids you  
 Of spangle and sparkle — Day's chance-gift,  
 surmised  
 Rock's permanent birthright: my potency rids  
 you  
 No longer of darkness, yet light — recog-  
 nized —  
 Proves darkness a mask: day lives on though  
 disguised.

If Bacchus by wine's aid avail so to fluster  
 Your sense, that life's fact grows from adverse  
 and thwart  
 To helpful and kindly by means of a cluster —  
 Mere hand-squeeze, earth's nature sublimed  
 by Man's art —  
 Shall Bacchus claim thanks wherein Zeus has  
 no part?

Zeus — wisdom anterior? No, maids, be admonished!

If morn's touch at base worked such wonders, much more

Had noontide in absolute glory astonished

Your den, filled a-top to o'erflowing. I pour  
No such mad confusion. 'Tis Man's to explore

Up and down, inch by inch, with the taper his reason:

No torch, it suffices — held deftly and straight.  
Eyes, purblind at first, feel their way in due season,

Accept good with bad, till unseemly debate  
Turns concord — despair, acquiescence in fate.

Who works this but Zeus? Are not instinct and impulse,

Not concept and incept his work through Man's soul

On Man's sense? Just as wine ere it reach brain must brim pulse,

Zeus' flash stings the mind that speeds body to goal,

Bids pause at no part but press on, reach the whole.

For petty and poor is the part ye envisage

When — (quaff away, cummers!) — ye view, last and first,

As evil Man's earthly existence. Come! *Is age, Is infancy* — manhood — so uninterspersed

With good — some faint sprinkle?

*Clo.* I'd speak if I durst.

*Apol.* Draughts dregward loose tongue-tie.  
*Lach.* I'd see, did no web

Set eyes somehow winking.

*Apol.* Drains-deep lies their purge  
— True collyrium!

*Atr.* Words, surging at high-tide, soon ebb  
From starved ears.

*Apol.* Drink but down to the source, they resurge.

Join hands! Yours and yours too! A dance  
or a dirge?

*Cho.* Quashed be our quarrel! Sourly and smilingly,

Bare and gowned, bleached limbs and browned,  
Drive we a dance, three and one, reconcilingly.

Thanks to the cup where dissension is drowned,  
Defeat proves triumphant and slavery crowned.

Infancy? What if the rose-streak of morning

Pale and depart in a passion of tears?

Once to have hoped is no matter for scorning!  
Love once — e'en love's disappointment endears!

A minute's success pays the failure of years.

Manhood — the actual? Nay, praise the potential!

(Bound upon bound, foot it around!)

What *is*? No, what *may* be — sing! that's Man's essential!

(Ramp, tramp, stamp and compound

Fancy with fact — the lost secret is found!)

Age? Why, fear ends there: the contest concluded,

Man *did* live his life, *did* escape from the fray:

Not scratchless but unscathed, he somehow eluded

Each blow fortune dealt him, and conquers to-day:

To-morrow — new chance and fresh strength, — might we say?

Laud then Man's life — no defeat but a triumph!  
[*Explosion from the earth's centre.*]

*Clo.* Ha, loose hands!

*Lach.* I reel in a swoond.

*Atr.* Horror yawns under me, while from on high — humph!

Lightnings astound, thunders resound,

Vault-roof reverberates, groans the ground!

[*Silence*]

*Apol.* I acknowledge.

*The Fates.* Hence, trickster! Straight sobered are we!

The portent assures 't was our tongue spoke the truth,

Not thine. While the vapor encompassed us three

We conceived and bore knowledge — a bantling uncouth,

Old brains shudder back from: so — take it, rash youth!

Lick the lump into shape till a cry comes!

*Apol.* I hear.

*The Fates.* Dumb music, dead eloquence! Say it, or sing!

What was quickened in us and thee also?

*Apol.* I fear.

*The Fates.* Half female, half male — go, ambiguous thing!

While we speak — perchance sputter — pick up what we fling!

Known yet ignored, nor divined nor unguessed,  
Such is Man's law of life. Do we strive to declare

What is ill, what is good in our spinning? Worst, best,

Change hues of a sudden: now here and now there

Flits the sign which decides: all about yet nowhere.

'T is willed so, — that Man's life be lived, first to last,

Up and down, through and through — not in portions, forsooth,

To pick and to choose from. Our shuttles fly fast,

Weave living, not life sole and whole: as age — youth,

So death completes living, shows life in its truth.

Man learningly lives: till death helps him — no lore!

It is doom and must be. Dost submit?

*Apol.* I assent —

Concede but Admetus! So much if no more

Of my prayer grant as peace-pledge ! Be gracious, though, blent,  
Good and ill, love and hate streak your life-gift !  
*The Fates.* Content !

Such boon we accord in due measure. Life's term  
We lengthen should any be moved for love's sake  
To forego life's fulfilment, renounce in the germ  
Fruit mature — bliss or woe — either infinite.  
Take  
Or leave thy friend's lot: on his head be the stake !

*Apol.* On mine, griesly gammers ! Admetus, I know thee !  
Thou prizest the right these unwittingly give  
Thy subjects to rush, pay obedience they owe thee !  
Importunate one with another they strive  
For the glory to die that their king may survive.

Friends rush : and who first in all Pheræ appears  
But thy father to serve as thy substitute ?  
*Clo.* Bah !  
*Apol.* Ye wince ? Then his mother, well stricken in years,  
Advances her claim — or his wife —  
*Lach.* Tra-la-la !  
*Apol.* But he spurns the exchange, rather dies !  
*Atro.* Ha, ha, ha !  
[Apollo ascends. Darkness.]

#### WITH BERNARD DE MANDEVILLE

##### I

AY, this same midnight, by this chair of mine,  
Come and review thy counsels : art thou still  
Stanch to their teaching ? — not as fools opine  
Its purport might be, but as subtler skill  
Could, through turbidity, the loaded line  
Of logic casting, sound deep, deeper, till  
It touched a quietude and reached a shrine  
And recognized harmoniously combine  
Evil with good, and hailed truth's triumph —  
thine,  
Sage dead long since, Bernard de Mandeville !

##### II

Only, 'tis no fresh knowledge that I crave,  
Fuller truth yet, new gainings from the grave ;  
Here we alive must needs deal fairly, turn  
To what account Man may Man's portion, learn  
Man's proper play with truth in part, before  
Entrusted with the whole. I ask no more  
Than smiling witness that I do my best  
With doubtful doctrine : afterwards the rest !  
So, silent face me while I think and speak !  
A full disclosure ? Such would outrage law.  
Law deals the same with soul and body : seek  
Full truth my soul may, when some babe, I saw  
A new-born weakling, starts up strong — not weak —

Man every whit, absolved from earning awe,  
Pride, rapture, if the soul attains to wreak  
Its will on flesh, at last can thrust, lift, draw,  
As mind bids muscle — mind which long has striven,  
Painfully urging body's impotence  
To effort whereby — once law's barrier riven,  
Life's rule abolished — body might dispense  
With infancy's probation, straight be given  
— Not by foiled darings, fond attempts back-driven,  
Fine faults of growth, brave sins which saint when shriven —  
To stand full-statured in magnificence.

##### III

No : as with body so deals law with soul  
That's stung to strength through weakness.  
strives for good  
Through evil, — earth its race-ground, heaven its goal,  
Presumably : so far I understood  
Thy teaching long ago. But what means this  
— Objected by a mouth which yesterday  
Was magisterial in antithesis  
To half the truths we hold, or trust we may,  
Though tremblingly the while ? "No sign"  
— groaned he —  
"No stirring of God's finger to denote  
He wills that right should have supremacy  
On earth, not wrong ! How helpful could we quote  
But one poor instance when he interposed  
Promptly and surely and beyond mistake  
Between oppression and its victim, closed  
Accounts with sin for once, and bade us wake  
From our long dream that justice bears no sword,  
Or else forgets whereto its sharpness serves !  
So might we safely mock at what unnerves  
Faith now, be spared the sapping fear's increase  
That haply evil's strife with good shall cease  
Never on earth. Nay, after earth, comes peace  
Born out of life-long battle ? Man's lip curves  
With scorn : there, also, what if justice swerves  
From dealing doom, sets free by no swift stroke  
Right fettered here by wrong, but leaves life's yoke —  
Death should loose man from — fresh laid, past release ?"

##### IV

Bernard de Mandeville, confute for me  
This parlous friend who captured or set free  
Thunderbolts at his pleasure, yet would draw  
Back, panic-stricken by some puny straw  
Thy gold-rimmed amber-headed cane had whisked  
Out of his pathway if the object risked  
Encounter, 'scaped thy kick from buckled shoe !  
As when folk heard thee in old days pooh-pooh  
Addison's tye-wig preachment, grant this friend —  
(Whose groan I hear, with guffaw at the end  
Disposing of mock-melancholy) — grant  
His bilious mood one potion, ministrant  
Of homely wisdom, healthy wit ! For, hear !  
"With power and will, let preference appear



By intervention ever and aye, help good  
 When evil's mastery is understood  
 In some plain outrage, and triumphant wrong  
 Tramples weak right to nothingness: nay, long  
 Ere such sad consummation brings despair  
 To right's adherents, ah, what help it were  
 If wrong lay strangled in the birth — each head  
 Of the hatched monster promptly crushed,  
 instead

Of spared to gather venom! We require  
 No great experience that the inch-long worm,  
 Free of our heel, would grow to vomit fire,  
 And one day plague the world in dragon form.  
 So should wrong merely peep abroad to meet  
 Wrong's due quietus, leave our world's way  
 safe  
 For honest walking."

v

Sage, once more repeat  
 Instruction! 'T is a sore to soothe not chafe.  
 Ah, Fabulist, what luck, could I contrive  
 To coax from thee another "Grumbling  
 Hive"!

My friend himself wrote fables short and sweet:  
 Ask him — "Suppose the Gardener of Man's  
 ground

Plants for a purpose, side by side with good,  
 Evil — (and that he does so — look around!  
 What does the field show?) — were it under-  
 stood

That purposely the noxious plant was found  
 Vexing the virtuous, poison close to food,  
 If, at first stealing-forth of life in stalk  
 And leaflet-promise, quick his spud should  
 balk

Evil from budding foliage, bearing fruit?  
 Such timely treatment of the offending root  
 Might strike the simple as wise husbandry,  
 But swift sure extirpation would scarce suit  
 Shrewder observers. Seed once sown thrives:  
 why

Frustrate its product, miss the quality  
 Which sower binds himself to count upon?  
 Had seed fulfilled the destined purpose, gone  
 Unhindered up to harvest — what know I  
 But proof were gained that every growth of  
 good

Sprang consequent on evil's neighborhood?"  
 So said your shrewdness: true — so did not  
 say

That other sort of theorists who held  
 Mere unintelligence prepared the way  
 For either seed's upsprouting: you repelled  
 Their notion that both kinds could sow them-  
 selves.

True! but admit 't is understanding delves  
 And drops each germ, what else but folly  
 thwarts

The doer's settled purpose? Let the sage  
 Concede a use to evil, though there starts  
 Full many a burgeon thence, to disengage  
 With thumb and finger lest it spoil the yield  
 Too much of good's main tribute! But our  
 main

Tough-tendoned mandrake-monster — purge  
 the field

Of him for once and all? It follows plain

Who set him there to grow beholds repealed  
 His primal law: his ordinance proves vain:  
 And what besseems a king who cannot reign,  
 But to drop sceptre valid arm should wield?

vi

"Still there's a parable" — retorts my friend —  
 "Shows agriculture with a difference!  
 What of the crop and weeds which solely blend  
 Because, once planted, none may pluck them  
 thence?

The Gardener contrived thus? Vain pretence!  
 An enemy it was who unawares  
 Ruined the wheat by interspersing tares.

Where's our desiderated forethought?  
 Where's

Knowledge, where power and will in evidence?  
 'T is Man's-play merely! Craft foils rectitude,  
 Malignity defeats beneficence.

And grant, at very last of all, the feud  
 'Twixt good and evil ends, strange thoughts in-  
 trude

Though good be garnered safely, and good's foe  
 Bundled for burning. Thoughts steal: 'Even  
 so —

Why grant tares leave to thus o'ertop, o'ertower  
 Their field-mate, boast the stalk and flaunt  
 the flower,

Triumph one sunny minute? Knowledge,  
 power,

And will thus worked? 'Man's fancy makes  
 the fault!

Man, with the narrow mind, must cram inside  
 His finite God's infinitude, — earth's vault  
 He bids comprise the heavenly far and wide,  
 Since Man may claim a right to understand  
 What passes understanding. So, succinct  
 And trimly set in order, to be scanned  
 And scrutinized, lo — the divine lies linked  
 Fast to the human, free to move as moves  
 Its proper match: awhile they keep the grooves,  
 Discreetly side by side together pace,  
 Till sudden comes a stumble incident  
 Likely enough to Man's weak-footed race,  
 And he discovers — wings in rudiment,  
 Such as he boasts, which full-grown, free-  
 distent

Would lift him skyward, fail of flight while  
 pent

Within humanity's restricted space.  
 Abjure each fond attempt to represent  
 The formless, the illimitable! Trace  
 No outline, try no hint of human face  
 Or form or hand!"

vii

Friend, here's a tracing meant  
 To help a guess at truth you never knew.  
 Bend but those eyes now, using mind's eye too,  
 And note — sufficient for all purposes —  
 The ground-plan — map you long have yearned  
 for — yes,

Make out in markings — more what artist  
 can? —

Goethe's Estate in Weimar, — just a plan!  
 A is the House, and B the Garden-gate,  
 And C the Grass-plot — you've the whole  
 estate

Letter by letter, down to Y the Pond,  
And Z the Pigsty. Do you look beyond  
The algebraic signs, and captious say  
"Is A the House? But where's the Roof to  
A,

Where's Door, where's Window? Needs  
must House have such!"

Ay, that were folly. Why so very much  
More foolish than our mortal purblind way  
Of seeking in the symbol no mere point  
To guide our gaze through what were else inane,  
But things — their solid selves? "Is, joint  
by joint,

Orion man-like, — as these dots explain  
His constellation? Flesh composed of suns —  
How can such be?" exclaim the simple ones.  
Look through the sign to the thing signified —  
Shown nowise, point by point at best desierd,  
Each an orb's topmost sparkle: all beside  
Its shine is shadow: turn the orb one jot —  
Up flies the new flash to reveal 't was not  
The whole sphere late flamboyant in your ken!

## VIII

"What need of symbolizing? Fittier men  
Would take on tongue mere facts — few, faint  
and far,

Still facts not fancies: quite enough they are.  
That Power, that Knowledge, and that Will,  
— add then

Immensity, Eternity: these jar  
Nowise with our permitted thought and  
speech.

Why human attributes?"

A myth may teach:

Only, who better would expound it thus  
Must be Euripides, not Æschylus.

## IX

Boundingly up through Night's wall dense and  
dark,

Embattled crags and clouds, outbroke the Sun  
Above the conscious earth, and one by one  
Her heights and depths absorbed to the last  
spark

His fluid glory, from the far fine ridge  
Of mountain-granite which, transformed to  
gold,

Laughed first the thanks back, to the vale's  
dusk fold

On fold of vapor-swathing, like a bridge  
Shattered beneath some giant's stamp. Night  
wist

Her work done and betook herself in mist  
To marsh and hollow, there to bide her time  
Blindly in acquiescence. Everywhere  
Did earth acknowledge Sun's embrace sublime,  
Thrilling her to the heart of things: since  
there

No ore ran liquid, no spar branched anew,  
No arrowy crystal gleamed, but straightway  
grew

Glad through the inrush — glad nor more nor  
less

Than, 'neath his gaze, forest and wilderness,  
Hill, dale, land, sea, the whole vast stretch and  
spread,

The universal world of creatures bred  
By Sun's munificence, alike gave praise —  
All creatures but one only: gaze for gaze,  
Joyless and thankless, who — all scowling  
can —

Protests against the innumerable praises?  
Man,

Sullen and silent.

Stand thou forth then, state

Thy wrong, thou sole aggrieved — disconso-  
late —

While every beast, bird, reptile, insect, gay  
And glad acknowledges the bounteous day!

## X

Man speaks now: "What avails Sun's earth-  
felt thrill

To me? Sun penetrates the ore, the plant —  
They feel and grow: perchance with subtler  
skill

He interfuses fly, worm, brute, until  
Each favored object pays life's ministrant  
By pressing, in obedience to his will,  
Up to completion of the task prescribed,  
So stands and stays a type. Myself imbibed  
Such influence also, stood and stand complete —  
The perfect Man, — head, body, hands and  
feet,

True to the pattern: but does that suffice?  
How of my superadded mind which needs  
— Not to be, simply, but to do, and pleads  
For — more than knowledge that by some  
deceive

Sun quickens matter: mind is nobly fain  
To realize the marvel, make — for sense  
As mind — the unseen visible, condense  
— Myself — Sun's all-pervading influence  
So as to serve the needs of mind, explain  
What now perplexes. Let the oak increase  
His corrugated strength on strength, the palm  
Lift joint by joint her fan-fruit, ball and balm, —  
Let the coiled serpent bask in bloated peace, —  
The eagle, like some skyeey derelict,  
Drift in the blue, suspended, glorying, —  
The lion lord it by the desert-spring, —  
What know or care they of the power which  
pricked

Nothingness to perfection? I, instead,  
When all-developed still am found a thing  
All-incomplete: for what though flesh had  
force

Transcending theirs — hands able to unring  
The tightened snake's coil, eyes that could out  
course

The eagle's soaring, voice whereat the king  
Of carnage couched discrowned? Mind seeks  
to see,

Touch, understand, by mind inside of me,  
The outside mind — whose quickening I attain  
To recognize — I only. All in vain  
Would mind address itself to render plain  
The nature of the essence. Drag what lurks  
Behind the operation — that which works  
Latently everywhere by outward proof —  
Drag that mind forth to face mine? No! aloof  
I solely crave that one of all the beams  
Which do Sun's work in darkness, at my will

Should operate — myself for once have skill  
To realize the energy which streams  
Flooding the universe. Above, around,  
Beneath — why mocks that mind my own thus  
found

Simply of service, when the world grows dark,  
To half-surmise — were Sun's use understood,  
I might demonstrate him supplying food,  
Warmth, life, no less the while? To grant  
one spark

Myself may deal with — make it thaw my  
blood

And prompt my steps, were truer to the mark  
Of mind's requirement than a half-surmise  
That somehow secretly is operant,  
A power all matter feels, mind only tries  
To comprehend! Once more — no idle vaunt  
'Man comprehends the Sun's self!' Myste-  
ries

At source why probe into? Enough: display,  
Make demonstrable, how, by night as day,  
Earth's centre and sky's outspan, all 's informed  
Equally by Sun's efflux! — source from whence  
If just one spark I drew, full evidence  
Were mine of fire ineffably enthroned —  
Sun's self made palpable to Man!"

## XI

Thus moaned

Man till Prometheus helped him, — as we  
learn, —

Offered an artifice whereby he drew  
Sun's rays into a focus, — plain and true,  
The very Sun in little: made fire burn  
And henceforth do Man service — glass-con-  
globed

Though to a pin-point circle — all the same  
Comprising the Sun's self, but Sun disrobed  
Of that else-unconceived essential flame  
Borne by no naked sight. Shall mind's eye  
strive

Achingly to companion as it may  
The supersubtle effluence, and contrive  
To follow beam and beam upon their way  
Hand-breadth by hand-breadth, till sense faint —  
confessed

Frustrate, eluded by unknown unguessed  
Infinitude of action? Idle quest!  
Rather ask aid from optics. Sense, descry  
The spectrum — mind, infer immensity!  
Little? In little, light, warmth, life are  
blessed —

Which, in the large, who sees to bless? Not I  
More than yourself: so, good my friend, keep  
still

Trustful with — me? with thee, sage Mande-  
ville!

## WITH DANIEL BARTOLI

## I

DON, the divinest women that have walked  
Our world were scarce those saints of whom we  
talked.

My saint, for instance — worship if you will!  
'T is pity poets need historians' skill:  
What legendary 's worth a chronicle?

## II

Come, now! A great lord once upon a time  
Visited — oh a king, of kings the prime,  
To sign a treaty such as never was:  
For the king's minister had brought to pass  
That this same duke — so style him — must  
engage

Two of his dukedoms as an heritage  
After his death to this exorbitant  
Craver of kingship. "Let who lacks go scant,  
Who owns much, give the more to!" Why  
rebuke?

So bids the devil, so obeys the duke.

## III

Now, as it happened, at his sister's house  
— Duchess herself — indeed the very spouse  
Of the king's uncle, — while the deed of gift  
Whereby our duke should cut his rights adrift  
Was drawing, getting ripe to sign and seal —  
What does the frozen heart but uncongeal  
And, shaming his transcendent kin and kith,  
Whom do the duke's eyes make acquaintance  
with?

A girl. "What, sister, may this wonder be?"  
"Nobody! Good as beautiful is she,  
With gifts that match her goodness, no faint  
flaw

I! the white: she were the pearl you think you  
saw,

But that she is — what corresponds to white?  
Some other stone, the true pearl's opposite,  
As cheap as pearls are costly. She 's — now,  
guess

Her parentage! Once — twice — thrice? Foiled,  
confess!

Drugs, duke, her father deals in — faugh, the  
scents! —

Manna and senna — such medicaments  
For payment he compounds you. Stay — stay  
— stay!

I'll have no rude speech wrong her! Whither  
away,

The hot-head? Ah, the scapegrace! She de-  
serves

Respect — compassion, rather! right it serves  
My folly, trusting secrets to a fool!

Already at it, is he? She keeps cool —  
Helped by her fan's spread. Well, our state  
atones

For thus much license, and words break no  
bones!"

(Hearts, though, sometimes.)

## IV

Next morn 't was "Reason, rate,  
Rave, sister, on till doomsday! Sure as fate,  
I wed that woman — what a woman is  
Now that I know, who never knew till this!"  
So swore the duke. "I wed her: once again —  
Rave, rate, and reason — spend your breath in  
vain!"

## V

At once was made a contract firm and fast,  
Published the banns were, only marriage, last,  
Required completion when the Church's rite



Should bless and bid depart, make happy quite  
The coupled man and wife forevermore:  
Which rite was soon to follow. Just before —  
All things at all but end — the folk o' the bride  
Flocked to a summons. Pomp the duke defied:  
"Of ceremony — so much as empowers,  
Naught that exceeds, suits best a tie like  
ours" —

He smiled — "all else were mere futility.  
We vow, God hears us: God and you and I —  
Let the world keep at distance! This is why  
We choose the simplest forms that serve to  
bind

Lover and lover of the human kind,  
No care of what degree — of kings or clowns —  
Come blood and breeding. Courtly smiles and  
frowns

Miss of their mark, would idly soothe or strike  
My style and yours — in one style merged  
alike —

God's man and woman merely. Long ago  
"I was rounded in my ears 'Duke, wherefore  
slow

To use a privilege? Needs must one who  
reigns

Pay reigning's due: since statecraft so or-  
dains —

Wed for the commonweal's sake! law pre-  
scribes

One wife: but to submission license bribes  
Unruly nature: mistresses accept  
— Well, at discretion! — Prove I so inept  
A scholar, thus instructed? Dearest, be  
Wife and all mistresses in one to me,  
Now, henceforth, and forever!" So smiled he.

## VI

Good: but the minister, the crafty one,  
Got ear of what was doing — all but done —  
Not sooner, though, than the king's very self,  
Warned by the sister on how sheer a shelf  
Royalty's ship was like to split. "I bar  
The abomination! Mix with muck my star?  
Shall earth behold prodigiously enorbed  
An upstart marsh-born meteor sun-absorbed?  
Nuptial me no such nuptials!" "Past dis-  
pute,

Majesty speaks with wisdom absolute,"  
Admired the minister: "yet, all the same,  
I would we may not — while we play his game,  
The ducal meteor's — also lose our own,  
The solar monarch's: we relieve your throne  
Of an ungracious presence, like enough:  
Balked of his project he departs in huff,  
And so cuts short — dare I remind the king? —  
Our not so unsuccessful bargaining.  
The contract for eventual heritage  
Happens to *pari passu* reach the stage  
Attained by just this other contract, — each  
Unfixed by signature though fast in speech.  
Off goes the duke in dudgeon — off withal  
Go with him his two dukedoms past recall.  
You save a fool from tasting folly's fruit,  
Obtain small thanks thereby, and lose to boot  
Sagacity's reward. The jest is grim:  
The man will mulct you — for amerceing him?  
Nay, for . . . permit a poor similitude!  
A witless wight in some fantastic mood

Would drown himself: you plunge into the  
wave,  
Pluck forth the undeserving: he, you save,  
Pulls you clean under also for your pains.  
Sire, little need that I should tax my brains  
To help your inspiration!" "Let him sink!  
Always contriving" — hints the royal wink —  
"To keep ourselves dry while we claim his  
clothes."

## VII

Next day, the appointed day for plighting  
troths

At eve, — so little time to lose, you see,  
Before the Church should weld indissolubly  
Bond into bond, wed these who, side by side,  
Sit each by other, bold groom, blushing bride, —  
At the preliminary banquet, graced  
By all the lady's kinsfolk come in haste  
To share her triumph, — lo, a thunderclap!  
"Who importunes now?" "Such is my mis-  
hap —

In the king's name! No need that any stir  
Except this lady!" bids the minister:  
"With her I claim a word apart, no more:  
For who gainsays — a guard is at the door.  
Hold, duke! Submit you, lady, as I bow  
To him whose mouthpiece speaks his pleasure  
now!

It well may happen I no whit arrest  
Your marriage: be it so, — we hope the best!  
By your leave, gentles! Lady, pray you,  
hence!

Duke, with my soul and body's deference!"

## VIII

Doors shut, mouth opens and persuasion flows  
Copiously forth. "What flesh shall dare op-  
pose

The king's command? The matter in debate  
— How plain it is! Yourself shall arbitrate,  
Determine. Since the duke affects to rate  
His prize in you beyond all goods of earth,  
Accounts as naught old gains of rank and birth,  
Ancestral obligation, recent fame,  
(We know his feats) — nay, ventures to dis-  
claim

Our will and pleasure almost — by report —  
Waives in your favor dukeliness, in short, —  
We — ('t is the king speaks) — who might forth-  
with stay

Such suicidal purpose, brush away  
A bad example shame would else record, —  
Lean to indulgence rather. At his word  
We take the duke: allow him to complete  
The cession of his dukedoms, leave our feet  
Their footstool when his own head, safe in  
vault,

Sleeps sound. Nay, would the duke repair his  
fault

Handsomely, and our forfeited esteem  
Recover, — what if wisely he redeem  
The past, — in earnest of good faith, at once  
Give us such jurisdiction for the nonce  
As may suffice — prevent occasion slip —  
And constitute our actual ownership?  
Concede this — straightway be the marriage  
blessed

By warrant of this paper ! Things at rest,  
This paper duly signed, down drops the bar,  
To-morrow you become — from what you are,  
The druggist's daughter — not the duke's mere  
spouse,

But the king's own adopted : heart and house  
Open to you — the idol of a court  
' Which heaven might copy ' — sing our poet-  
sort.

In this emergency, on you depends  
The issue : plead what bliss the king intends !  
Should the duke frown, should arguments and  
prayers,  
Nay, tears if need be, prove in vain, — who  
cares ?

We leave the duke to his obduracy,  
Companionless, — you, madam, follow me  
Without, where divers of the body-guard  
Wait signal to enforce the king's award  
Of strict seclusion : over you at least  
Vibratingly the sceptre threats increased  
Precipitation ! How avert its crash ? ”

## IX

“ Re-enter, sir ! A hand that's calm, not rash,  
Averts it ! ” quietly the lady said.  
“ Yourself shall witness.”

At the table's head  
Where, mid the hushed guests, still the duke  
sat glued

In blank bewilderment, his spouse pursued  
Her speech to end — syllabled quietude.

## X

“ Duke, I, your duchess of a day, could take  
The hand you proffered me for love's sole sake,  
Conscious my love matched yours ; as you, my-  
self

Would waive, when need were, all but love —  
from pelf

To potency. What fortune brings about  
Haply in some far future, finds me out,  
Faces me on a sudden here and now.  
The better ! Read — if beating heart allow —  
Read this, and bid me rend to rags the shame !  
I and your conscience — hear and grant our  
claim !

Never dare alienate God's gift you hold  
Simply in trust for him ! Choose nuck for  
gold ?

Could you so stumble in your choice, cajoled  
By what I count my least of worthiness  
— The youth, the beauty, — you renounce  
then — yes,

With all that's most too : love as well you lose,  
Slain by what slays in you the honor ! Choose !  
Dear — yet my husband — dare I love you  
yet ? ”

## XI

How the duke's wrath o'erboiled, — words,  
words, and yet

More words, — I spare you such fool's fever-  
fret.

They were not of one sort at all, one size,  
As souls go — he and she. 'T is said, the eyes  
Of all the lookers-on let tears fall fast.  
The minister was mollified at last :

“ Take a day, — two days even, ere through  
pride  
You perish, — two days' counsel — then de-  
cide ! ”

## XII

“ If I shall save his honor and my soul ?  
Husband, — this one last time, — you tear the  
scroll ?

Farewell, duke ! Sir, I follow in your train ! ”

## XIII

So she went forth : they never met again,  
The duke and she. The world paid compli-  
ment

(Is it worth noting ?) when, next day, she sent  
Certain gifts back — “ jewelry fit to deck  
Whom you call wife.” I know not round what  
neck

They took to sparkling, in good time — weeks  
thence.

## XIV

Of all which was the pleasant consequence,  
So much and no more — that a fervid youth,  
Big-hearted boy, — but ten years old, in  
truth —

Laid this to heart and loved, as boyhood can,  
The unduchessed lady : boy and lad grew man :  
He loved as man perchance may : did mean-  
while

Good soldier-service, managed to beguile  
The years, no few, until he found a chance :  
Then, as at trumpet-summons to advance,  
Outbroke the love that stood at arms so long,  
Brooked no withstanding longer. They were  
wed.

Whereon from camp and court alike he fled,  
Renounced the sun-king, dropped off into night,  
Evermore lost, a ruined satellite :

And, oh, the exquisite deliciousness  
That lapped him in obscurity ! You guess  
Such joy is fugitive : she died full soon.  
He did his best to die — as sun, so moon  
Left him, turned dusk to darkness absolute.  
Failing of death — why, saintship seemed to  
suit :

Yes, your sort, Don ! He trembled on the  
verge

Of monkhood : trick of cowl and taste of  
seourge

He tried : then, kicked not at the pricks per-  
verse,

But took again, for better or for worse,  
The old way in the world, and, much the same  
Man o' the outside, fairly played life's game.

## XV

“ Now, Saint Scholastica, what time she fared  
In Paynimrie, behold, a lion glared  
Right in her path ! Her waist she promptly  
strips

Of girdle, binds his teeth within his lips,  
And, leashed all lamblake, to the Soldan's  
court

Leads him.” Ay, many a legend of the sort  
Do you praiseworthy authenticate :  
Spare me the rest. This much of no debate

Admits: my lady flourished in grand days  
 When to be duchess was to dance the hays  
 Up, down, across the heaven amid its host:  
 While to be hailed the sun's own self almost —  
 So close the kinship — was — was —

Saint, for this.  
 Be yours the feet I stoop to — kneel and  
 kiss!  
 So human? Then the mouth too, if you will!  
 Thanks to no legend but a chronicle.

## XVI

One leans to like the duke, too: up we'll patch  
 Some sort of saintship for him — not to match  
 Hers — but man's best and woman's worst  
 amount

So nearly to the same thing, that we count  
 In man a miracle of faithfulness  
 If, while unfaithful somewhat, he lay stress  
 On the main fact that love, when love indeed,  
 Is wholly solely love from first to last —  
 Truth — all the rest a lie. Too likely, fast  
 Enough that necklace went to grace the throat  
 — Let's say, of such a dancer as makes doat  
 The senses when the soul is satisfied —  
*Troglia*, say the Greeks — a sweetmeat tried  
 Approvingly by sated tongue and teeth,  
 Once body's proper meal consigned beneath  
 Such unconsidered munching.

## XVII

Fancy's flight  
 Makes me a listener when, some sleepless night,  
 The duke reviewed his memories, and aghast  
 Found that the Present intercepts the Past  
 With such effect as when a cloud enwraps  
 The moon and, moon-suffused, plays moon per-  
 haps  
 To who walks under, till comes, late or soon,  
 A stumble: up he looks, and lo, the moon  
 Calm, clear, convincingly herself once more!  
 How could he 'scape the cloud that thrust be-  
 tween  
 Him and effulgence? Speak, fool — duke, I  
 mean!

## XVIII

"Who bade you come, brisk-marching bold  
 she-shape,  
 A terror with those black-balled worlds of  
 eyes,  
 That black hair bristling solid-built from nape  
 To crown its coils about? O dread surmise!  
 Take, tread on, trample under past escape  
 Your capture, spoil and trophy! Do — de-  
 vise  
 Insults for one who, fallen once, ne'er shall  
 rise!  
 "Mock on, triumphant o'er the prostrate  
 shame!  
 Laugh — Here lies he among the false to  
 Love —  
 Love's loyal liegeman once: the very same  
 Who, scorning his weak fellows, towered  
 above  
 Inconstancy: yet why his faith defame?

Our eagle's victor was at least no dove,  
 No dwarfish knight picked up our giant's  
 glove —

"When, putting prowess to the proof, faith  
 urged

Her champion to the challenge: had it  
 chanced  
 That merely virtue, wisdom, beauty — merged  
 All in one woman — merely these advanced  
 Their claim to conquest, — hardly had he purged  
 His mind of memories, dearnesses enhanced  
 Rather than harmed by death, nor, disen-  
 tranced,

"Promptly had he abjured the old pretence  
 To prove his kind's superior — first to last  
 Display erect on his heart's eminence  
 An altar to the never-dying Past.  
 For such feat faith might boast fit play of  
 fence  
 And easily disarm the iconoclast  
 Called virtue, wisdom, beauty: impudence

"Fought in their stead, and how could faith  
 but fall?  
 There came a bold she-shape brisk-marching  
 bent

No inch of her imperious stature, tall  
 As some war-engine from whose top was sent  
 One shattering volley out of eye's black ball,  
 And prone lay faith's defender! Mockery  
 spent?

Malice discharged in full? In that event,

"My queenly impudence, I cover close,  
 I wrap me round with love of your black hair,  
 Black eyes, black every wicked inch of those  
 Limbs' war-tower tallness: so much truth  
 lives there

'Neath the dead heap of lies. And yet — who  
 knows?

What if such things are? No less, such  
 things were,

Then was the man your match whom now you  
 dare

"Treat as existent still. A second truth!  
 They held — this heap of lies you rightly  
 scorn —

A man who had approved himself in youth  
 More than a match for — you? for sea-foam-  
 born

Venus herself: you conquer him forsooth?  
 'Tis me his ghost: he died since left and lorn,  
 As needs must Samson when his hair is shorn.

"Some day, and soon, be sure himself will rise,  
 Called into life by her who long ago  
 Left his soul whiling time in flesh-disguise.

Ghosts tired of waiting can play tricks, you  
 know!

Tread, trample me — such sport we ghosts de-  
 vise,

Waiting the morn-star's reappearance —  
 though  
 You think we vanish scared by the cock's  
 crow."



## WITH CHRISTOPHER SMART

## I

It seems as if . . . or did the actual chance  
Startle me and perplex? Let truth be said!  
How might this happen? Dreaming, blindfold  
led

By visionary hand, did soul's advance  
Precede my body's, gain inheritance  
Of fact by fancy — so that when I read  
At length with waking eyes your Song, instead  
Of mere bewilderment, with me first glance  
Was but full recognition that in trance  
Or merely thought's adventure some old day  
Of dim and done-with boyishness, or — well,  
Why might it not have been, the miracle  
Broke on me as I took my sober way  
Through veritable regions of our earth  
And made discovery, many a wondrous one?

## II

Anyhow, fact or fancy, such its birth:  
I was exploring some huge house, had gone  
Through room and room complacently, no  
dearth

Anywhere of the signs of decent taste,  
Adequate culture: wealth had run to waste  
Nowise, nor penury was proved by stint:  
All showed the Golden Mean without a hint  
Of brave extravagance that breaks the rule.  
The master of the mansion was no fool  
Assuredly, no genius just as sure!  
Safe mediocrity had scorned the lure  
Of now too much and now too little cost,  
And satisfied me sight was never lost  
Of moderate design's accomplishment  
In calm completeness. On and on I went  
With no more hope than fear of what came  
next,

Till lo, I push a door, sudden uplift  
A hanging, enter, chance upon a shift  
Indeed of scene! So — thus it is thou deck'st  
High heaven, our low earth's brick-and-mortar  
work?

## III

It was the Chapel. That a star, from murk  
Which hid, should flashingly emerge at last,  
Were small surprise: but from broad day I  
passed

Into a presence that turned shine to shade.  
There fronted me the Rafael Mother-Maid,  
Never to whom knelt votarist in shrine  
By Nature's bounty helped, by Art's divine  
More varied — beauty with magnificence —  
Than this: from floor to roof one evidence  
Of how far earth may rival heaven. No niche  
Where glory was not prisoned to enrich  
Man's gaze with gold and gems, no space but  
glowed

With color, gleamed with carving — hues which  
owed

Their outburst to a brush the painter fed  
With rainbow-substance — rare shapes never  
wed

To actual flesh and blood, which, brain-born  
once,

Became the sculptor's dowry, Art's response  
To earth's despair. And all seemed old yet  
new:

Youth, — in the marble's curve, the canvas'  
hue,

Apparent, — wanted not the crowning thrill  
Of age the consecrator. Hands long still  
Had worked here — could it be, what lent them  
skill

Retained a power to supervise, protect,  
Enforce new lessons with the old, connect  
Our life with theirs? No merely modern touch  
Told me that here the artist, doing much,  
Elsewhere did more, perchance does better,  
lives —

So needs must learn.

## IV

Well, these provocatives  
Having fulfilled their office, forth I went  
Big with anticipation — well-nigh fear —  
Of what next room and next for startled eyes  
Might have in store, surprise beyond surprise.  
Next room and next and next — what followed  
here?

Why, nothing! not one object to arrest  
My passage — everywhere too manifest  
The previous decent null and void of best  
And worst, mere ordinary right and fit,  
Calm commonplace which neither missed, nor  
hit

Inch-high, inch-low, the placid mark proposed.

## V

Armed with this instance, have I diagnosed  
Your case, my Christopher? The man was  
sound

And sane at starting: all at once the ground  
Gave way beneath his step, a certain smoke  
Curled up and caught him, or perhaps down  
broke

A fireball wrapping flesh and spirit both  
In conflagration. Then — as heaven were loth  
To linger — let earth understand too well  
How heaven at need can operate — off fell  
The flame-robe, and the untransfigured man  
Resumed sobriety, — as he began,  
So did he end nor alter pace, not he!

## VI

Now, what I fain would know is — could it be  
That he — whoe'er he was that furnished forth  
The Chapel, making thus, from South to  
North,

Rafael touch Leighton, Michelagnolo  
Join Watts, was found but once combining so  
The elder and the younger, taking stand  
On Art's supreme, — or that yourself who sang  
A Song where flute-breath silvers trumpet-  
clang,

And stations you for once on either hand  
With Milton and with Keats, empowered to  
claim

Affinity on just one point — (or blame  
Or praise my judgment, thus it fronts you  
full) —

How came it you resume the void and null,  
Subside to insignificance, — live, die

— Proved plainly two mere mortals who drew  
nigh

One moment — that, to Art's best hierarchy,  
This, to the superhuman poet-pair?

What if, in one point only, then and there  
The otherwise all-unapproachable  
Allowed impingement? Does the sphere pre-  
tend

To span the cube's breadth, cover end to end  
The plane with its embrace? No, surely!  
Still,

Contact is contact, sphere's touch no whit less  
Than cube's superimposure. Such success  
Befell Smart only out of throngs between  
Milton and Keats that donned the singing-  
dress —

Smart, solely of such songmen, pierced the  
screen

"Twixt thing and word, lit language straight  
from soul, —

Left no fine film-flake on the naked coal  
Live from the censer — shapely or uncouth,  
Fire-suffused through and through, one blaze  
of truth

Undeclared by a lie, — (you have my mind) —  
For, think! this blaze outleapt with black be-  
hind

And blank before, when Hayley and the  
rest . . .

But let the dead successors worst and best  
Bury their dead: with life be my concern —  
Yours with the fire-flame: what I fain would  
learn

Is just — (suppose me haply ignorant  
Down to the common knowledge, doctors  
vaunt)

Just this — why only once the fire-flame was:  
No matter if the marvel came to pass  
The way folk judged — if power too long sup-  
pressed

Broke loose and maddened, as the vulgar  
guessed

Or simply brain-disorder (doctors said),  
A turmoil of the particles disturbed,  
Brain's workaday performance in your head,  
Spurred spirit to wild action health had curbed,  
And so verse issued in a cataract  
Whence prose, before and after, unperturbed  
Was wont to wend its way. Concede the fact  
That here a poet was who always could —  
Never before did — never after would —  
Achieve the feat: how were such fact ex-  
plained?

## VII

Was it that when, by rarest chance, there  
fell

Disguise from Nature, so that Truth remained  
Naked, and whoso saw for once could tell  
Us others of her majesty and might  
In large, her lovelinesses infinite  
In little, — straight you used the power where-  
with

Sense, penetrating as through rind to pith  
Each object, thoroughly revealed might view  
And comprehend the old things thus made new,  
So that while eye saw, soul to tongue could  
trust

Thing which struck word out, and once more  
adjust

Real vision to right language, till heaven's  
vault

Pompous with sunset, storm-stirred sea's as-  
sault

On the swilled rock-ridge, earth's embosomed  
brood

Of tree and flower and weed, with all the life  
That flies or swims or crawls, in peace or strife,  
Above, below, — each had its note and name  
For Man to know by, — Man who, now — the  
same

As erst in Eden, needs that all he sees  
Be named him ere he note by what degrees  
Of strength and beauty to its end Design  
Ever thus operates — (your thought and mine,  
No matter for the many dissident) —  
So did you sing your Song, so truth found vent  
In words for once with you?

## VIII

Then — back was furled  
The robe thus thrown aside, and straight the  
world

Darkened into the old oft-catalogued  
Repository of things that sky, wave, land,  
Or show or hide, clear late, accretion-clogged  
Now, just as long ago, by tellings and  
Re-tellings to satiety, which strike  
Muffled upon the ear's drum. Very like  
None was so startled as yourself when friends  
Came, hailed your fast-returning wits:

"Health mends  
Importantly, for — to be plain with you —  
This scribble on the wall was done — in lieu  
Of pen and paper — with — ha, ha! — your key  
Denting it on the wainscot! Do you see  
How wise our caution was? Thus much we  
stopped

Of babble that had else grown print: and  
lopped

From your trim bay-tree this unsightly bough —  
Smart's who translated Horace! Write us  
now" . . .

Why, what Smart did write — never afterward  
One line to show that he, who paced the sward,  
Had reached the zenith from his madhouse cell.

## IX

Was it because you judged (I know full well  
You never had the fancy) — judged — as some —  
That who makes poetry must reproduce  
Thus ever and thus only, as they come,  
Each strength, each beauty, everywhere diffuse  
Throughout creation, so that eye and ear,  
Seeing and hearing, straight shall recognize,  
At touch of just a trait, the strength appear, —  
Suggested by a line's lapse see arise  
All evident the beauty, — fresh surprise  
Startling at fresh achievement? "So, indeed,  
Wallows the whale's bulk in the waste of brine,  
Nor otherwise its feather-tufts make fine  
Wild Virgin's Bower when stars faint off to  
seed!"

(My prose — your poetry I dare not give,  
Purpling too much my mere gray argument.)  
— Was it because you judged — when fugitive

Was glory found, and wholly gone and spent  
Such power of startling up deaf ear, blind eye,  
At truth's appearance, — that you humbly bent  
The head and, bidding vivid work good-by,  
Doffed lyric dress and trod the world once more  
A drab-clothed decent proseman as before?  
Strengths, beauties, by one word's flash thus  
laid bare

— That was effectual service: made aware  
Of strengths and beauties, Man but hears the  
text,

Awaits your teaching. Nature? What comes  
next?

Why all the strength and beauty? — to be  
shown

Thus in one word's flash, thenceforth let alone  
By Man who needs must deal with aught that's  
known

Never so lately and so little? Friend,  
First give us knowledge, then appoint its use!  
Strength, beauty are the means: ignore their  
end?

As well you stopped at proving how profuse  
Stones, sticks, nay stubble lie to left and right  
Ready to help the builder, — careless quite  
If he should take, or leave the same to strew  
Earth idly, — as by word's flash bring in view  
Strength, beauty, then bid who beholds the  
same

Go on beholding. Why gains unemployed?  
Nature was made to be by Man enjoyed  
First; followed duly by enjoyment's fruit,  
Instruction — haply leaving joy behind:

And you, the instructor, would you slack pursuit  
Of the main prize, as poet help mankind  
Just to enjoy, there leave them? Play the fool,  
Abjuring a superior privilege?

Please simply when your function is to rule —  
By thought incite to deed? From edge to edge  
Of earth's round, strength and beauty every-  
where

Pullulate — and must you particularize  
All, each and every apparition? Spare  
Yourself and us the trouble! Ears and eyes  
Want so much strength and beauty, and no less  
Nor more, to learn life's lesson by. Oh, yes —  
The other method's favored in our day!  
The end ere the beginning: as you may  
Master the heavens before you study earth,  
Make you familiar with the meteor's birth  
Ere you descend to scrutinize the rose!  
I say, o'erstep no least one of the rows  
That lead man from the bottom where he plants  
Foot first of all, to life's last ladder-top:  
Arrived there, vain enough will seem the vaunts  
Of those who say — "We scale the skies, then  
drop

To earth — to find, how all things there are loth  
To answer heavenly law: we understand  
The meteor's course, and lo, the rose's growth —  
How other than should be by law's command!"  
Would not you tell such — "Friends, beware  
lest fume

Offuscate sense: learn earth first ere presume  
To teach heaven legislation. Law must be  
Active in earth or nowhere: earth you see, —  
Or there or not at all, Will, Power and Love  
Admit discovery, — as below, above

Seek next law's confirmation! But reverse  
The order, where's the wonder things grow  
worse

Than, by the law your fancy formulates,  
They should be? Cease from anger at the fates  
Which thwart themselves so madly. Live and  
learn,

Not first learn and then live, is our concern.

## WITH GEORGE BUBB DODINGTON

I

AH, George Bubb Dodington Lord Melcombe,  
— no,

Yours was the wrong way! — always under-  
stand,

Supposing that permissibly you planned  
How statesmanship — your trade — in outward  
show

Might figure as inspired by simple zeal  
For serving country, king and commonweal,  
(Though service tire to death the body, tease  
The soul from out an o'ertasked patriot-drudge)  
And yet should prove zeal's outward show agrees  
In all respects — right reason being judge —  
With inward care that, while the statesman  
spends

Body and soul thus freely for the sake  
Of public good, his private welfare take  
No harm by such devotedness. Intends  
Scripture aught else — let captious folk in-  
quire —

Which teaches "Laborers deserve their hire,  
And who neglects his household bears the bell  
Away of sinning from an infidel?"

Wiselier would fools that carp bestow a thought  
How birds build nests; at outside, roughly  
wrought,

Twig knots with twig, loam plasters up each  
chink,

Leaving the inmate rudely lodged — you think?  
Peep but inside! That specious rude-and-  
rough

Covers a domicile where downy fluff  
Embeds the ease-deserving architect,  
Who toiled and moiled not merely to effect  
'Twixt sprig and spray a stop-gap in the teeth  
Of wind and weather, guard what swung be-  
neath

From upset only, but contrived himself  
A snug interior, warm and soft and sleek.  
Of what material? Oh, for that, you seek  
How nature prompts each volatile! Thus — pelf  
Smoothens the human mudlark's lodging, power  
Demands some hardier wrappage to embrace  
Robuster heart-beats: rock, not tree nor tower,  
Contents the building eagle: rock shoves close  
To brother rook on branch, while crow morose  
Apart keeps balance perched on topmost bough.  
No sort of bird but suits his taste somehow:  
Nay, Darwin tells of such as love the bower —  
His bower-birds opportunely yield us yet  
The lacking instance when at loss to get  
A feathered parallel to what we find  
The secret motor of some mighty mind  
That worked such wonders — all for vanity!  
Worked them to haply figure in the eye



Of intimates as first of — doers' kind?  
Actors', that work in earnest sportively,  
Paid by a sourish smile. How says the Sage?  
Birds born to strut prepare a platform-stage  
With sparkling stones and speckled shells, all  
sorts

Of slimy rubbish, odds and ends and orts,  
Whereon to pose and posture and engage  
The priceless female simper.

## II

I have gone

Thus into detail, George Bubb Dodington,  
Lest, when I take you presently to task  
For the wrong way of working, you should ask  
"What fool conjectures that profession means  
Performance? that who goes behind the scenes  
Finds, — acting over, — still the soot-stuff  
screens

Othello's visage, still the self-same cloak's  
Bugle-bright-blackness half reveals half chokes  
Hamlet's emotion, as ten minutes since?"  
No, each resumes his garb, stands — Moor or  
prince —

Decently draped: just so with statesmanship!  
All outside show, in short, is sham — why  
vince?

Concede me — while our parley lasts! Your trip  
Afterwards — lay but this to heart! (there  
lurks

Somewhere in all of us a lump which irks  
Somewhat the spriteliest-scheming brain that's  
bent

On brave adventure, would but heart consent!)  
— Here trip you, that — your aim allowed as  
right —

Your means thereto were wrong. Come, we,  
this night,

Profess one purpose, hold one principle,  
Are at odds only as to — not the will  
But way of winning solace for ourselves  
— No matter if the ore for which zeal delves  
Be gold or coprolite, while zeal's pretence  
Is — we do good to men at — whose expense  
But ours? who tire the body, tease the soul,  
Simply that, running, we may reach fame's goal  
And wreath at last our brows with bay — the  
State's

Disinterested slaves, nay — please the Fates —  
Saviors and nothing less: such lot has been!  
Statesmanship triumphs pedestalled, serene, —  
O happy consummation! — brought about  
By managing with skill the rabble-rout  
For which we labor (never mind the name —  
People or populace, for praise or blame)  
Making them understand — their heaven, their  
hell,

Their every hope and fear is ours as well.  
Man's cause — what other can we have at heart?  
Whence follows that the necessary part  
High o'er Man's head we play, — and freelier  
breathe

Just that the multitude which gasps beneath  
May reach the level where unstified stand  
Ourselves at vantage to put forth a hand,  
Assist the prostrate public. 'T is by right  
Merely of such pretence, we reach the height

Where storms abound, to brave — nay, court  
their stress,

Though all too well aware — of pomp the less,  
Of peace the more! But who are we, to spurn  
For peace' sake, duty's pointing? Up, then —  
earn

Albeit no prize we may but martyrdom!  
Now, such fit height to launch salvation from,  
How get and gain? Since help must needs be  
craved

By would-be saviours of the else-unsaved,  
How coax them to co-operate, lend a lift,  
Kneel down and let us mount?

## III

You say, "Make shift

By sham — the harsh word: preach and teach,  
persuade

Somehow the Public — not despising aid  
Of salutary artifice — we seek  
Solely their good: our strength would raise the  
weak,

Our cultivated knowledge supplement  
Their rudeness, rawness: why to us were lent  
Ability except to come in use?  
Who loves his kind must by all means induce  
That kind to let his love play freely, press  
In Man's behalf to full performance!"

## IV

Yes —

Yes, George, we know! — whereat they hear,  
believe,

And bend the knee, and on the neck receive  
Who fawned and cringed to purpose? Not so,  
George!

Try simple falsehood on shrewd folk who forge  
Lies of superior fashion day by day  
And hour by hour? With craftsmen versed as  
they

What chance of competition when the tools  
Only a novice wields? Are knaves such fools?  
Disinterested patriots, spare your tongue  
The tones thrice-silvery, cheek save smiles it  
flung

Pearl-like profuse to swine — a herd, whereof  
No unit needs be taught, his neighbor's trough  
Scarce holds for who but grunts and whines the  
husks

Due to a wrinkled snout that shows sharp tusks.  
No animal — much less our lordly Man —  
Obeys its like: with strength all rule began,  
The stoutest awes the pasture. Soon succeeds  
Discrimination, — nicer power Man needs  
To rule him than is bred of bone and thew:  
Intelligence must move strength's self. This  
too

Lasts but its time: the multitude at length  
Looks inside for intelligence and strength  
And finds them here and there to pick and  
choose:

"All at your service, mine, see!" Ay, but  
who's

My George, at this late day, to make his boast  
"In strength, intelligence, I rule the roast,  
Beat, all and some, the ungraced who crowd  
your ranks?"

"Oh, but I love, would lead you, gain your thanks

By unexampled yearning for Man's sake —  
 Passion that solely waits your help to take  
 Effect in action!" George, which one of us  
 But holds with his own heart communion thus:  
 "I am, if not of men the first and best,  
 Still — to receive enjoyment — properest:  
 Which since by force I cannot, nor by wit  
 Most likely — craft must serve in place of it.  
 Flatter, cajole! If so I bring within  
 My net the gains which wit and force should

win,  
 What hinders?" "T is a trick we know of old:  
 Try, George, some other of tricks manifold!  
 The multitude means mass and mixture — right!  
 Are mixtures simple, pray, or composite?  
 Dive into Man, your medley: see the waste!  
 Sloth-stifled genius, energy disgraced  
 By ignorance, high aims with sorry skill,  
 Will without means and means in want of will  
 — Sure we might fish, from out the mothers' sons  
 That welter thus, a dozen Dodingtons!  
 Why call up Dodington, and none beside,  
 To take his seat upon our backs and ride  
 As statesman conquering and to conquer? Well,  
 The last expedient, which must needs excel  
 Those old ones — this it is, — at any rate  
 To-day's conception thus I formulate:  
 As simple force has been replaced, just so  
 Must simple wit be: men have got to know  
 Such wit as what you boast is nowise held  
 The wonder once it was, but, paralleled  
 Too plentifully, counts not, — puts to shame  
 Modest possessors like yourself who claim,  
 By virtue of it merely, power and place  
 — Which means the sweets of office. Since our  
 race

Teems with the like of you, some special gift,  
 Your very own, must coax our hands to lift,  
 And backs to bear you: is it just and right  
 To privilege your nature?

v

"State things quite  
 Other than so" — make answer! "I pretend  
 No such community with men. Perpend  
 My key to domination! Who would use  
 Man for his pleasure needs must introduce  
 The element that awes Man. Once for all,  
 His nature owns a Supernatural  
 In fact as well as phrase — which found must be  
 — Where, in this doubting age? Old mystery  
 Has served its turn — seen through and sent  
 adrift

For nothingness: new wizard-craft makes shift  
 Nowadays shorn of help by robe and book, —  
 Otherwise, elsewhere, for success must look  
 Than chalked-ring, incantation-gibberish.  
 Somebody comes to conjure: that's he? Pish!  
 He's like the roomful of rapt gazers, — there's  
 No sort of difference in the garb he wears  
 From ordinary dressing, — gesture, speech,  
 Deportment, just like those of all and each  
 That eye their master of the minute. Stay!  
 What of the something — call it how you may —  
 Uncanny in the — quack? That's easy said!  
 Notice how the Professor turns no head

And yet takes cognizance of who accepts,  
 Denies, is puzzled as to the adept's  
 Supremacy, yields up or lies in wait  
 To trap the trickster! Doubtless, out of date  
 Are dealings with the devil: yet, the stir  
 Of mouth, its smile half smug half sinister,  
 Mock-modest boldness masked in diffidence, —  
 What if the man have — who knows how or  
 whence? —

Confederate potency unguessed by us —  
 Prove no such cheat as he pretends?"

VI

Ay, thus

Had but my George played statesmanship's  
 new card

That carries all! "Since we" — avers the  
 Bard —

"All of us have one human heart" — as good  
 As say — by all of us is understood  
 Right and wrong, true and false — in rough, at  
 least,

We own a common conscience. God, man,  
 beast —

How should we qualify the statesman-shape  
 I fancy standing with our world agape?  
 Disguise, flee, fight against with tooth and nail  
 The outrageous designation! "Quack" men  
 quail

Before? You see, a little year ago  
 They heard him thunder at the thing which, lo,  
 To-day he vaunts for unscathed, while what erst  
 Heaven-high he lauded, lies hell-low, accursed!  
 And yet where's change? Who, awe-struck,  
 cares to point

Critical finger at a dubious joint  
 In armor, true *es triplex*, breast and back  
 Binding about, defiant of attack,  
 An imperturbability that's — well,  
 Or innocence or impudence — how tell  
 One from the other? Could ourselves broach  
 lies,

Yet brave mankind with those unaltered eyes,  
 Those lips that keep the quietude of truth?  
 Dare we attempt the like? What quick uncouth  
 Disturbance of thy smug economy,  
 O coward visage! Straight would all descry  
 Back on the man's brow the boy's blush once  
 more!

No; he goes deeper — could our sense explore —  
 Finds conscience beneath conscience such as  
 ours.

Genius is not so rare, — prodigious powers —  
 Well, others boast such, — but a power like this  
 Mendacious intrepidity — *quid vis*?  
 Besides, imposture plays another game,  
 Admits of no diversion from its aim  
 Of captivating hearts, sets zeal aflame  
 In every shape at every turn, — nowhere  
 Allows subsidence into ash. By stress  
 Of what does guile succeed but earnestness,  
 Earnest word, look and gesture? Touched  
 with aught

But earnestness, the levity were fraught  
 With ruin to guile's film-work. Grave is  
 guile;

Here no act wants its qualifying smile,  
 Its covert pleasantry to neutralize

The outward ardor. Can our chief despise  
Even while most he seems to adulate?  
As who should say "What though it be my  
fate  
To deal with fools? Among the crowd must  
lurk

Some few with faculty to judge my work  
Spite of its way which suits, they understand,  
The crass majority: — the Sacred Band,  
No duping them forsooth!" So tells a touch  
Of subintelligent nod and wink —  
Turning foes friends. Coarse flattery moves  
the gorge:

Mine were the mode to awe the many, George!  
They guess you half despise them while most  
bent

On demonstrating that your sole intent  
Strives for their service. Sneer at them?  
Yourself

'Tis you disparage, — tricky as an elf,  
Scorning what most you strain to bring to pass,  
Laughingly careless, — triply cased in brass, —  
While pushing strenuous to the end in view.  
What follows? Why, you formulate within  
The vulgar headpiece this conception: "Win  
A master-mind to serve us needs we must,  
One who, from motif as we but take on trust,  
Acts strangelier — haply wiselier than we  
know

Stronglier, for certain. Did he say 'I throw  
Aside my good for yours, in all I do  
Care nothing for myself and all for you' —  
We should both understand and disbelieve:  
Said he, 'Your good I laugh at in my sleeve,  
My own it is I solely labor at,  
Pretending yours the while' — that, even that,  
We, understanding well, give credence to,  
And so will none of it. But here 'tis through  
Our recognition of his service, wage  
Well earned by work, he mounts to such a stage  
Above competitors as all save Bubb  
Would agonize to keep. Yet — here's the  
rub —

So slightly does he hold by our esteem  
Which solely fixed him fast there, that we seem  
Mocked every minute to our face, by gibe  
And jest — scorn insuppressive: what ascribe  
The rashness to? Our pay and praise to  
boot —

Do these avail him to tread under foot  
Something inside us all and each, that stands  
Somehow instead of somewhat which com-  
mands

'Lie not'? Folk fear to jeopardize their soul,  
Stumble at times, walk straight upon the  
whole, —

That's nature's simple instinct: what may be  
The portent here, the influence such as we  
Are strangers to? " —

## VII

Exact the thing I call  
Man's despot, just the Supernatural  
Which, George, was wholly out of — far be-  
yond

Your theory and practice. You had conned  
But to reject the precept "To succeed  
In gratifying selfishness and greed,

Asseverate such qualities exist  
Nowise within yourself! then make acquist  
By all means, with no sort of fear!" Alack,  
That well-worn lie is obsolete! Fall back  
On still a working pretext — "Hearth and  
Home,

The Altar, love of England, hate of Rome" —  
That's serviceable lying — that perchance  
Had screened you decently: but 'ware ad-  
vance

By one step more in perspicacity  
Of these our dupes! At length they get to see  
As through the earlier, this the latter plea —  
And find the greed and selfishness at source!  
*Ventum est ad triarios*: last resource

Should be to what but — exquisite disguise  
Disguise-abjuring, truth that looks like lies,  
Frankness so sure to meet with unbelief?  
Say — you hold in contempt — not them in  
chief —

But first and foremost your own self! No use  
In men but to make sport for you, induce  
The puppets now to dance, now stand stock-  
still,

Now knock their heads together, at your will  
For will's sake only — while each plays his  
part

Submissive: why? through terror at the  
heart:

"Can it be — this bold man, whose hand we saw  
Openly pull the wires, obeys some law  
Quite above Man's — nay, God's?" On face  
fall they.

This was the secret missed, again I say,  
Out of your power to grasp conception of,  
Much less employ to purpose. Hence the scoff  
That greets your very name: folk see but one  
Pool more, as well as knave, in Dodgington.

## WITH FRANCIS FURINI

## I

NAY, that, Furini, never I at least  
Mean to believe! What man you were I  
know,

While you walked Tuscan earth, a painter-  
priest,

Something about two hundred years ago.  
Priest — you did duty punctual as the sun  
That rose and set above Saint Sano's church,  
Blessing Mugello: of your flock not one  
But showed a whiter fleece because of smirch,  
Your kind hands wiped it clear from: were  
they poor?

Bounty broke bread apace, — did marriage lag  
For just the want of moneys that ensure  
Fit hearth-and-home provision? — straight your  
bag

Unplumbed itself, — reached hearts by way of  
palms

Goodwill's shake had but tickled. All about  
Mugello valley, felt some parish qualms  
At worship offered in bare walls without  
The comfort of a picture? — prompt such need  
Our painter would supply, and throngs to see  
Witnessed that goodness — no unholy greed  
Of gain — had coaxed from Don Furini — he



Whom princes might in vain implore to toil  
For worldly profit — such a masterpiece.  
Brief — priest, you poured profuse God's wine  
and oil

Praiseworthy, I know : shall praising cease  
When, priestly vesture put aside, mere man,  
You stand for judgment? Rather — what ac-  
claim

— " Good son, good brother, friend in whom we  
scan

No fault nor flaw " — salutes Furini's name,  
The loving as the liberal! Enough :  
Only to ope a lily, though for sake  
Of setting free its scent, disturbs the rough  
Loose gold about its anther. I shall take  
No blame in one more blazon, last of all —  
Good painter were you : if in very deed  
I styled you great — what modern art dares  
call

My word in question? Let who will take heed  
Of what he seeks and misses in your brain  
To balance that precision of the brush  
Your hand could ply so deftly : all in vain  
Strives poet's power for outlet when the push  
Is lost upon a barred and bolted gate  
Of painter's impotency. Agnolo —  
Thine were alike the head and hand, by fate  
Doubly endowed! Who boasts head only — woe  
To hand's presumption should brush emulate  
Fancy's free passage by the pen, and show  
Thought wrecked and ruined where the inex-  
pert

Foolhardy fingers half grasped, half let go  
Film-wings the poet's pen arrests unhurt!  
No — painter such as that miraculous  
Michael, who deems you? But the ample gift  
Of gracing walls else blank of this our house  
Of life with imagery, one bright drift  
Poured forth by pencil, — man and woman  
mere,

Glorified till half owned for gods, — the dear  
Fleshly perfection of the human shape, —  
This was apportioned you whereby to praise  
Heaven and bless earth. Who clumsily essays,  
By slighting painter's craft, to prove the ape  
Of poet's pen-creation, just betrays  
Twofold ineptitude.

## II

By such sure ways  
Do I return, Furini, to my first  
And central confidence — that he I proved  
Good priest, good man, good painter, and re-  
hearsed

Praise upon praise to show — not simply loved  
For virtue, but for wisdom honored too  
Needs must Furini be, — it follows — who  
Shall undertake to breed in me belief  
That, on his death-bed, weakness played the  
thief

With wisdom, folly ousted reason quite?  
List to the chronicler! With main and might —  
So fame runs — did the poor soul beg his  
friends

To buy and burn his hand-work, make amends  
For having reproduced therein — (Ah me!  
Sighs fame — that's friend Filippo) — nudity!  
Yes, I assure you : he would paint — not men

Merely — a pardonable fault — but when  
He had to deal with — oh, not mother Eve  
Alone, permissibly in Paradise  
Naked and unashamed, — but dared achieve  
Dreadful distinction, at soul-safety's price,  
By also painting women — (why the need?)  
Just as God made them : there, you have the  
truth!

Yes, rosed from top to toe in flush of youth,  
One foot upon the moss-fringe, would some  
Nymph

Try, with its venturous fellow, if the lymph  
Were chillier than the slab-stepped fountain-  
edge ;

The while a-heap her garments on its ledge  
Of boulder lay within hand's easy reach,  
— No one least kid-skin cast around her!

## Speech

Shrinks from enumerating ease and ease  
Of — were it but Diana at the chase,  
With tunie tucked discreetly hunting-high!  
No, some Queen Venus set our necks awry,  
Turned faces from the painter's all-too-frank  
Triumph of flesh! For — whom had he to  
thank

— This self-appointed nature-student? Whence  
Picked he up practice? By what evidence  
Did he unhandsonably become adept  
In simulating bodies? How exempt  
By actual sight of such? Himself confessed  
The enormity : quoth Philip, " When I pressed  
The painter to acknowledge his abuse  
Of artistry else potent — what excuse  
Made the infatuated man? I give  
His very words : ' Did you but know, as I,  
— O scruple-splitting sickly-sensitive  
Mild-moral-monger, what the agony  
Of Art is ere Art satisfy herself  
In imitating Nature — (Man, poor elf,  
Striving to match the finger-mark of Him  
The immeasurably matchless) — gay or grim,  
Pray, would your smile be? Leave mere fools  
to tax

Art's high-strung brain's intentness as so lax  
That, in its mid-throe, idle fancy sees  
The moment for admittance! ' Pleadings  
these —

Specious, I grant." So adds, and seems to wince  
Somewhat, our censor — but shall truth con-  
vince

Blockheads like Baldinucci?

## III

## I resume

My incredulity : your other kind  
Of soul, Furini, never was so blind,  
Even through death-mist, as to grope in gloom  
For cheer beside a bonfire piled to turn  
Ash s and dust all that your noble life  
Did homage to life's Lord by, — bid them burn  
— These Baldinucci blockheads — pictures rife  
With record, in each rendered loveliness,  
That one appreciative creature's debt  
Of thanks to the Creator, more or less,  
Was paid according as heart's-will had met  
Hand's-power in Art's endeavor to express  
Heaven's most consummate of achievements,  
bless

Earth by a semblance of the seal God set  
On woman his supremest work. I trust  
Rather, Furini, dying breath had vent  
In some fine fervor of thanksgiving just  
For this—that soul and body's power you  
spent—

Agonized to adumbrate, trace in dust  
That marvel which we dream the firmament  
Copies in star-device when fancies stray  
Outlining, orb by orb, Andromeda—  
God's best of beauteous and magnificent  
Revealed to earth—the naked female form.  
Nay, I mistake not: wrath that's but luke-  
warm

Would boil indeed were such a critic styled  
Himself an artist: artist! Ossa piled  
Topping Olympus—the absurd which crowns  
The extravagant—whereat one laughs, not  
frowns.

Paints he? One bids the poor pretender take  
His sorry self, a trouble and disgrace,  
From out the sacred presence, void the place  
Artists claim only. What—not merely wake  
Our pity that suppressed concupiscence—  
A satyr masked as matron—makes pretence  
To the coarse blue-fly's instinct—can perceive  
No better reason why she should exist—  
—God's lily-limbed and blushrose-bosomed  
Eve—

Than as a hot-bed for the sensualist  
To fly-blow with his fancies, make pure stuff  
Breed him back filth—this were not crime  
enough?

But further—fly to style itself—nay, more—  
To steal among the sacred ones, crouch down  
Though but to where their garments sweep the  
floor—

—Still catching some faint sparkle from the  
crown

Crowning transcendent Michael, Leonard,  
Rafael,—to sit beside the feet of such,  
Unspurned because unnoticed, then reward  
Their toleration—mercy overmuch—  
By stealing from the throne-step to the fools  
Curious outside the gateway, all-agape  
To learn by what procedure, in the schools  
Of Art, a merest man in outward shape  
May learn to be Correggio! Old and young,  
These learners got their lesson: Art was just  
A safety-screen—(Art, which Correggio's  
tongue

Calls "Virtue")—for a skulking vice: mere  
lust

Inspired the artist when his Night and Morn  
Slept and awoke in marble on that edge  
Of heaven above our awe-struck earth: lust-  
born

His Eve low bending took the privilege  
Of life from what our eyes saw—God's own  
palm

That put the flame forth—to the love and  
thanks

Of all creation save this recreant!

IV

Our phrase, Furini! Not the artist-ranks  
Claim riddance of an interloper: no—

Calm

This Baldinucci did but grunt and sniff  
Outside Art's pale—ay, grubbed, where pine-  
trees grow,  
For pignuts only.

V

You the Sacred! If  
Indeed on you has been bestowed the dower  
Of Art in fullness, graced with head and hand,  
Head—to look up not downwards, hand—of  
power

To make head's gain the portion of a world  
Where else the uninstructed ones too sure  
Would take all outside beauty—film that's  
furled

About a star—for the star's self, endure  
No guidance to the central glory,—nay,  
(Sadder) might apprehend the film was fog,  
Or (worst) wish all but vapor well away,  
And sky's pure product thickened from earth's  
bog—

Since so, nor seldom, have your worthiest  
failed

To trust their own soul's insight—why? except  
For warning that the head of the adept  
May too much prize the hand, work unassailed  
By scruple of the better sense that finds  
An orb within each halo, bids gross flesh  
Free the fine spirit-pattern, nor enmesh  
More than is meet a marvel, custom blinds  
Only the vulgar eye to. Now, less fear  
That you, the foremost of Art's fellowship,  
Will oft—will ever so offend! But—hip  
And thigh—smite the Philistine! You—  
slunk here—

Connived at, by too easy tolerance,  
Not to scrape palette simply or squeeze brush,  
But dub your very self an Artist? Tush—  
You, of the daubings, is it, dare advance  
This doctrine that the Artist-mind must needs  
Own to affinity with yours—confess  
Provocative acquaintance, more or less,  
With each impurely-peevisish worm that breeds  
Inside your brain's receptacle?

VI

Enough.  
Who owns "I dare not look on diadems  
Without an itch to pick out, purloin gems  
Others contentedly leave sparkling"—gruff  
Answers the guard of the regalia: "Why—  
Consciously kleptomaniac—thrust yourself  
Where your illicit craving after pelf  
Is tempted most—in the King's treasury?  
Go elsewhere! Sort with thieves, if thus you  
feel—

When folk clean-handed simply recognize  
Treasure whereof the mere sight satisfies—  
But straight your fingers are on itch to steal!  
Hence with you!"

Pray, Furini!

VII

"Bounteous God,  
Deviser and dispenser of all gifts  
To soul through sense,—in Art the soul uplifts  
Man's best of thanks! What but thy measur-  
ing-rod

Meted forth heaven and earth? more intimate,  
Thy very hands were busied with the task  
Of making, in this human shape, a mask —  
A match for that divine. Shall love abate  
Man's wonder? Nowise! True — true — all  
too true —

No gift but, in the very plenitude  
Of its perfection, goes maimed, misconstrued  
By wickedness or weakness: still, some few  
Have grace to see thy purpose, strength to mar  
Thy work by no admixture of their own,  
— Limn truth not falsehood, bid us love alone  
The type untampered with, the naked star!"

## VIII

And, prayer done, painter — what if you should  
preach?

Not as of old when playing pulpiteer  
To simple-witted country folk, but here  
In actual London try your powers of speech  
On us the cultured, therefore skeptical —  
What would you? For, suppose he has his  
word

In faith's behalf, no matter how absurd,  
This painter-theologian? One and all  
We lend an ear — nay, Science takes thereto —  
Encourages the meanest who has racked  
Nature until he gains from her some fact,  
To state what truth is from his point of view,  
Mere pin-point though it be: since many such  
Conduce to make a whole, she bids our friend  
Come forward unabashed and haply lend  
His little life-experience to our much  
Of modern knowledge. Since she so insists,  
Up stands Furini.

## IX

"Evolutionists!

At truth I glimpse from depths, you glance from  
heights,

Our stations for discovery opposites, —  
How should ensue agreement? I explain:  
'T is the tip-top of things to which you strain  
Your vision, until atoms, protoplasm,  
And what and whence and how may be the  
spasm

Which sets all going, stop you: down perforce  
Needs must your observation take its course,  
Since there's no moving upwards: link by link  
You drop to where the atoms somehow think,  
Feel, know themselves to be: the world's  
begun,

Such as we recognize it. Have you done  
Descending? Here's ourself, — Man, known  
to-day,

Duly evolved at last, — so far, you say,  
The sum and seal of being's progress. Good!  
Thus much at least is clearly understood —  
Of power does Man possess no particle:  
Of knowledge — just so much as shows that  
still

It ends in ignorance on every side:  
But righteousness — ah, Man is deified  
Thereby, for compensation! Make survey  
Of Man's surroundings, try creation — nay,  
Try emulation of the minimized  
Minuteness fancy may conceive! Surprised  
Reason becomes by two defeats for one —

Not only power at each phenomenon  
Baffled, but knowledge also in default —  
Asking what is minuteness — yonder vault  
Speckled with suns, or this the millionth —  
thing,

How shall I call? — that on some insect's wing  
Helps to make out in dyes the mimic star?  
Weak, ignorant, accordingly we are:  
What then? The worse for Nature! Where  
began

Righteousness, moral sense except in Man?  
True, he makes nothing, understands no whit:  
Had the initiator-spasm seen fit  
Thus doubly to endow him, none the worse  
And much the better were the universe.  
What does Man see or feel or apprehend  
Here, there, and everywhere, but faults to  
mend,

Omissions to supply, — one wide disease  
Of things that are, which Man at once would  
ease

Had will but power and knowledge? failing  
both —

Things must take will for deed — Man, nowise  
loth,

Accepts pre-eminence: mere blind force —  
Mere knowledge undirected in its course  
By any care for what is made or marred  
In either's operation — these award  
The crown to? Rather let it deck thy brows,  
Man, whom alone a righteousness endows  
Would cure the wide world's ailing! Who  
disputes

Thy claim thereto? Had Spasm more attributes  
Than power and knowledge in its gift, before  
Man came to pass? The higher that we soar,  
The less of moral sense like Man's we find:  
No sign of such before, — what comes behind,  
Who guesses! But until there crown our sight  
The quite new — not the old mere infinite  
Of changings, — some fresh kind of sun and  
moon, —

Then, not before, shall I expect a boon  
Of intuition just as strange, which turns  
Evil to good, and wrong to right, unlearns  
All Man's experience learned since Man was he.  
Accept in Man, advanced to this degree,  
The Prime Mind, therefore! neither wise nor  
strong —

Whose fault? but were he both, then right, not  
wrong

As now, throughout the world were paramount  
According to his will, — which I account  
The qualifying faculty. He stands  
Confessed supreme — the monarch whose com-  
mands

Could he enforce, how bettered were the world!  
He's at the height this moment — to be hurled  
Next moment to the bottom by rebound  
Of his own peal of laughter. All around  
Ignorance wraps him, — whence and how and  
why

Things are, — yet cloud breaks and lets blink  
the sky

Just overhead, not elsewhere! What assures  
His optics that the very blue which lures  
Comes not of black outside it, doubly dense?  
Ignorance overwraps his moral sense,



Winds him about, relaxing, as it wraps,  
So much and no more than lets through perhaps  
The murmured knowledge — 'Ignorance exists.'

x

"I at the bottom, Evolutionists,  
Advise beginning, rather. I profess  
To know just one fact — my self-conscious-  
ness, —

'Twixt ignorance and ignorance enisled, —  
Knowledge : before me was my Cause — that's  
styled

God : after, in due course succeeds the rest, —  
All that my knowledge comprehends — at  
best —

At worst, conceives about in mild despair.  
Light needs must touch on either darkness :  
where?

Knowledge so far impinges on the Cause  
Before me, that I know — by certain laws  
Wholly unknown, whate'er I apprehend  
Within, without me, had its rise : thus blend  
I, and all things perceived, in one Effect.

How far can knowledge any ray project  
On what comes after me — the universe ?

Well, my attempt to make the cloud disperse  
Begins — not from above but underneath :  
I climb, you soar, — who soars soon loses breath  
And sinks, who climbs keeps one foot firm on  
fact

Ere hazarding the next step : soul's first act  
(Call consciousness the soul — some name we  
need)

Getting itself aware, through stuff decreed  
Thereto (so call the body) — who has stept  
So far, there let him stand, become adept  
In body ere he shift his station thence

One single hair's breadth. Do I make pretence  
To teach, myself unskilled in learning ? Lo,

My life's work ! Let my pictures prove I know  
Somewhat of what this fleshly frame of ours

Or is or should be, how the soul empowers  
The body to reveal its every mood

Of love and hate, pour forth its plenitude  
Of passion. If my hand attained to give

Thus permanence to truth else fugitive,  
Did not I also fix each fleeting grace

Of form and feature — save the beauteous  
face —

Arrest decay in transitory might  
Of bone and muscle — cause the world to bless

Forever each transcendent nakedness  
Of man and woman ? Were such feats

achieved  
By sloth, or strenuous labor unrelieved,

— Yet lavished vainly ? Ask that underground  
(So may I speak) of all on surface found

Of flesh-perfection ! Depths on depths to probe  
Of all-inventive artifice, disrobe

Marvel at hiding under marvel, pluck  
Veil after veil from Nature — were the luck

Ours to surprise the secret men so name,  
That still eludes the searcher — all the same,

Repays his search with still fresh proof — 'Ex-  
terne,

Not inmost, is the Cause, fool ! Look and  
learn !'

Thus teach my hundred pictures : firm and fast

There did I plant my first foot. And the  
next ?

Nowhere ! 'Twas put forth and withdrawn,  
perplexed

At touch of what seemed stable and proved  
stuff

Such as the colored clouds are : plain enough  
There lay the outside universe : try Man —

My most immediate ! and the dip began  
From safe and solid into that profound

Of ignorance I tell you surges round  
My rock-spit of self-knowledge. Well and ill

Evil and good irreconcilable  
Above, beneath, about my every side, —

How did this wild confusion far and wide  
Tally with my experience when my stamp —

So far from stirring — struck out, each a lamp,  
Spark after spark of truth from where I

stood —  
Pedestalled triumph ? Evil there was good,

Want was the promise of supply, defect  
Ensured completion, — where and when and

how ?  
Leave that to the First Cause ! Enough that

now,  
Here where I stand, this moment's me and

mine,  
Shows me what is, permits me to divine

What shall be. Wherefore ? Nay, how other-  
wise ?

Look at my pictures ! What so glorifies  
The body that the permeating soul

Finds there no particle elude control  
Direct, or fail of duty, — most obscure

When most subservient ? Did that Cause en-  
sure

The soul such raptures as its fancy stings  
Body to furnish when, uplift by wings

Of passion, here and now, it leaves the earth,  
Loses itself above, where bliss has birth —

(Heaven, be the phrase) — did that same Cause  
contrive

Such solace for the body, soul must dive  
At drop of fancy's pinion, condescend

To bury both alike on earth, our friend  
And fellow, where minutely exquisite

Low lie the pleasures, now and here — no herb  
But hides its marvel, peace no doubts perturb

In each small mystery of insect life —  
— Shall the soul's Cause thus gift the soul, yet

strife  
Continue still of fears with hopes, — for why ?

What if the Cause, whereof we now desery  
So far the wonder-working, lack at last

Will, power, benevolence — a protoplast,  
No consummator, sealing up the sum

Of all things, — past and present and to  
come —

Perfection ? No, I have no doubt at all !  
There's my amount of knowledge — great or

small,  
Sufficient for my needs : for see ! advance

Its light now on that depth of ignorance  
I shrank before from — yonder where the

world  
Lies wreck-strewn, — evil towering, prone good

— hurled  
From pride of place, on every side. For me

Patience, beseech you ! knowledge can but be  
 Of good by knowledge of good's opposite —  
 Evil, — since, to distinguish wrong from right,  
 Both must be known in each extreme, beside —  
 (Or what means knowledge — to aspire or bide  
 Content with half-attaining ? Hardly so !)  
 Made to know on, know ever, I must know  
 All to be known at any halting-stage  
 Of my soul's progress, such as earth, where  
 wage  
 War, just for soul's instruction, pain with joy,  
 Folly with wisdom, all that works annoy  
 With all that quiets and contents, — in brief,  
 Good strives with evil.

“ Now then for relief,  
 Friends, of your patience kindly curbed so long.  
 ‘ What ? ’ snarl you, ‘ is the fool's conceit thus  
 strong —

Must the whole outside world in soul and sense  
 Suffer, that he grow sage at its expense ? ’  
 By no means ! ‘ T is by merest touch of toe  
 I try — not trench on — ignorance, just know —  
 And so keep steady footing : how you fare,  
 Caught in the whirlpool — that's the Cause's  
 care,

Strong, wise, good, — this I know at any rate  
 In my own self, — but how may operate  
 With you — strength, wisdom, goodness — no  
 least blink

Of knowledge breaks the darkness round me.  
 Think !

Could I see plain, be somehow certified  
 All was illusion, — evil far and wide  
 Was good disguised, — why, out with one huge  
 wipe

Goes knowledge from me. Type needs anti-  
 type :

As night needs day, as shine needs shade, so  
 good

Needs evil : was were pity understood  
 Unless by pain ? Make evident that pain  
 Permissibly masks pleasure — you abstain  
 From outstretch of the finger-tip that saves  
 A drowning fly. Who proffers help of hand  
 To weak Andromeda exposed on strand  
 At mercy of the monster ? Were all true,  
 Help were not wanting : ‘ But 'tis false, ’ cry  
 you,

‘ Mere fancy-work of paint and brush ! ’ No  
 less,

Were mine the skill, the magic, to impress  
 Beholders with a confidence they saw  
 Life, — veritable flesh and blood in awe  
 Of just as true a sea-beast, — would they stare  
 Simply as now, or cry out, curse and swear,  
 Or call the gods to help, or catch up stick  
 And stone, according as their hearts were  
 quick

Or sluggish ? Well, some old artificer  
 Could do as much, — at least, so books aver, —  
 Able to make believe, while I, poor wight,  
 Make fancy, nothing more. Though wrong  
 were right,

Could we but know — still wrong must needs  
 seem wrong

To do right's service, prove men weak or  
 strong,

Choosers of evil or of good. ‘ No such  
 Illusion possible ! ’ Ah, friends, you touch  
 Just here my solid standing-place amid  
 The wash and welter, whence all doubts are  
 bid

Back to the ledge they break against in foam,  
 Futility : my soul, and my soul's home  
 This body, — how each operates on each,  
 And how things outside, fact or feigning, teach  
 What good is and what evil, — just the same,  
 Be feigning or be fact the teacher, — blame  
 Diffidence nowise if, from this I judge  
 My point of vantage, not an inch I budge.  
 All — for myself — seems ordered wise and  
 well

Inside it, — what reigns outside, who can tell ?  
 Contrariwise, who needs be told ‘ The space  
 Which yields thee knowledge, — do its bounds  
 embrace

Well-willing and wise-working, each at height ?  
 Enough : beyond thee lies the infinite —  
 Back to thy circumscription ! ’

“ Back indeed !

Ending where I began — thus : retrocede,  
 Who will, — what comes first, take first, I ad-  
 vise !

Acquaint you with the body ere your eyes  
 Look upward : this Andromeda of mine —  
 Gaze on the beauty, Art hangs out for sign  
 There 's finer entertainment underneath.  
 Learn how they ministrate to life and death —  
 Those incommensurably marvellous  
 Contrivances which furnish forth the house  
 Where soul has sway ! Though Master keep  
 aloof,

Signs of his presence multiply from roof  
 To basement of the building. Look around,  
 Learn thoroughly, — no fear that you confound  
 Master with message ! He's away, no doubt,  
 But what if, all at once, you come upon  
 A startling proof — not that the Master gone  
 Was present lately — but that something —  
 whence

Light comes — has pushed him into residence ?  
 Was such the symbol's meaning, — old, un-  
 couth —

That circle of the serpent, tail in mouth ?  
 Only by looking low, ere looking high,  
 Comes penetration of the mystery.”

XI

Thanks ! After sermonizing, psalmody !  
 Now praise with pencil, Painter ! Fools attain  
 Your fame, forsooth, because its power inclines  
 To livelier colors, more attractive lines  
 Than suit some orthodox sad sickly saint  
 — Gray male emaciation, haply streaked  
 Carmine by scourgings — or they want, far  
 worse —

Some self-scathed woman, framed to bless not  
 curse

Nature that loved the form whereon hate  
 wreaked

The wrongs you see. No, rather paint some full  
 Benignancy, the first and foremost boon

Of youth, health, strength, — show beauty's  
 May, ere June

Undo the bud's blush, leave a rose to cull  
— No poppy, neither! yet less perfect-pure,  
Divinely-precious with life's dew besprent.  
Show saintliness that 's simply innocent  
Of guessing sinnership exists to cure  
All in good time! In time let age advance  
And teach that knowledge helps — not ignorance —

The healing of the nations. Let my spark  
Quicken your tinder! Burn with — Joan of Arc!

Not at the end, nor midway when there grew  
The brave delusions, when rare fancies flew  
Before the eyes, and in the ears of her  
Strange voices woke imperiously astir:  
No, — paint the peasant girl all peasant-like,  
Spirit and flesh — the hour about to strike  
When this should be transfigured, that inflamed,

By heart's admonishing "Thy country shamed,  
Thy king shut out of all his realm except  
One sorry corner!" and to life forth leapt  
The indubitable lightning "Can there be  
Country and king's salvation — all through me?"

Memorize that burst's moment, Francis!  
Tush —

None of the nonsense-writing! Fitlier brush  
Shall clear off fancy's film-work and let show  
Not what the foolish feign but the wise know —  
Ask Sainte-Beuve else! — or better, Quicherat,  
The downright-digger into truth that 's — Bah,  
Bettered by fiction? Well, of fact thus much  
Concerns you, that "of prudishness no touch  
From first to last defaced the maid; anon,  
Camp-use compelling" — what says D'Alençon

Her fast friend? — "though I saw while she undressed

How fair she was — especially her breast —  
Never had I a wild thought!" — as indeed  
I nowise doubt. Much less would she take heed —

When eve came, and the lake, the hills around  
Were all one solitude and silence, — found  
Barrièred impenetrably safe about, —  
Take heed of interloping eyes shut out,  
But quietly permit the air imbibe  
Her naked beauty till . . . but hear the scribe!

Now as she fain would bathe, one even-tide,  
God's maid, this Joan, from the pool's edge she spied

The fair blue bird clowns call the Fisher-king:  
And "Las, sighed she, my Liege is such a thing  
As thou, lord but of one poor lonely place  
Out of his whole wide France: were mine the grace

To set my Dauphin free as thou, blue bird!"  
Properly Martin-fisher — that 's the word,  
Not yours nor mine: folk said the rustic oath

In common use with her was — "By my troth?"

No, — "By my Martin"! Paint this! Only, turn

Her face away — that face about to burn  
Into an angel's when the time is ripe!

That task 's beyond you. Finished, Francis?  
Wipe

Pencil, scrape palette, and retire content!  
"Omnia non omnibus" — no harm is meant!

#### WITH GERARD DE LAIRESSE

*The Art of Painting* by Gerard le Lairesse, translated by J. F. Fritsch, was the "tome" to which Browning refers as having interested him when he was a boy and so given rise to this poem. The song at the end of the poem was first printed in a small volume called *The New Amphion*, published for the Edinburgh University Union Fancy Fair in 1886.

#### I

AH, but — because you were struck blind,  
could bless

Your sense no longer with the actual view  
Of man and woman, those fair forms you drew  
In happier days so duteously and true, —  
Must I account my Gerard de Lairesse  
All sorrow-smitten? He was hindered too  
— Was this no hardship? — from producing,  
plain

To us who still have eyes, the pageantry  
Which passed and passed before his busy brain  
And, captured on his canvas, showed our sky  
Traversed by flying shapes, earth stocked with  
brood

Of monsters, — centaurs bestial, satyrs lewd, —  
Not without much Olympian glory, shapes  
Of god and goddess in their gay escapes  
From the severe serene: or haply paced  
The antique ways, god-counselled, nymph-embraced,

Some early human kingly personage.  
Such wonders of the teeming poet's age  
Were still to be: nay, these indeed began —  
Are not the pictures extant? — till the ban  
Of blindness struck both palette from his  
thumb

And pencil from his finger.

#### II

Blind — not dumb,  
Else, Gerard, were my inmost bowels stirred  
With pity beyond pity: no, the word  
Was left upon your unmolested lips:  
Your mouth unsealed, despite of eyes' eclipse,  
Talked all brain's yearning into birth. I lack  
Somehow the heart to wish your practice back  
Which boasted hand's achievement in a score  
Of veritable pictures, less or more,  
Still to be seen: myself have seen them, —  
moved

To pay due homage to the man I loved  
Because of that prodigious book he wrote  
On Artistry's Ideal, by taking note,  
Making acquaintance with his artist-work.  
So my youth's piety obtained success  
Of all too dubious sort: for, though it irk  
To tell the issue, few or none would guess  
From extant lines and colors, De Lairesse.



Your faculty, although each deftly-grouped  
And aptly-ordered figure-piece was judged  
Worthy a prince's purchase in its day.  
Bearded experience bears not to be duped  
Like boyish fancy: 't was a boy that budged  
No foot's breath from your visioned steps away  
The while that memorable "Walk" he trudged  
In your companionship, — the Book must say  
Where, when and whither, — "Walk," come  
what come may,

No measurer of steps on this our globe  
Shall ever match for marvels. Faustus' robe,  
And Fortunatus' cap were gifts of price:  
But — oh, your piece of sober sound advice  
That artists should desery abundant worth  
In trivial commonplace, nor groan at dearth  
If fortune bade the painter's craft be plied  
In vulgar town and country! Why despond  
Because hemmed round by Dutch canals?

Beyond  
The ugly actual, lo, on every side  
Imagination's limitless domain  
Displayed a wealth of wondrous sounds and  
sights

Ripe to be realized by poet's brain  
Acting on painter's brush! "Ye doubt?

Poor wights,  
What if I set example, go before,  
While you come after, and we both explore  
Holland turned Dreamland, taking care to note  
Objects whereto my pupils may devote  
Attention with advantage?"

## III

So commenced  
That "Walk" amid true wonders — none to  
you,

But huge to us ignobly common-sensed,  
Purblind, while plain could proper optics view  
In that old sepulchre by lightning split,  
Whereof the lid bore carven, — any dolt  
Imagines why, — Jove's very thunderbolt:  
You who could straight perceive, by glance at  
it,

This tomb must needs be Phaeton's! In a  
trice,

Confirming that conjecture, close on hand,  
Behold, half out, half in the ploughed-up sand,  
A chariot-wheel explained its bolt-device:  
What other than the Chariot of the Sun  
Ever let drop the like? Consult the tome —  
I bid inglorious tarriers-at-home —  
For greater still surprise the while that "Walk"  
Went on and on, to end as it begun,  
'Chokefull of chances, changes, every one  
No whit less wondrous. What was there to balk  
Us, who had eyes, from seeing? You with none  
Missed not a marvel: wherefore? Let us talk.

## IV

Say am I right? Your sealed sense moved  
your mind,

Free from obstruction, to compassionate  
Art's power left powerless, and supply the blind  
With fancies worth all facts denied by fate.  
Mind could invent things, add to — take away,  
At pleasure, leave out trifles mean and base  
Which vex the sight that cannot say them nay

But, where mind plays the master, have no place.  
And bent on banishing was mind, be sure,  
All except beauty from its mustered tribe  
Of objects apparitional which lure  
Painter to show and poet to describe —  
That imagery of the antique song  
Truer than truth's self. Fancy's rainbow-birth  
Conceived 'mid clouds in Greece, could glance  
along

Your passage o'er Dutch veritable earth,  
As with ourselves, who see, familiar throng  
About our pacings men and women worth  
Nowise a glance — so poets apprehend —  
Since naught avails portraying them in verse:  
While painters turn upon the heel, intend  
To spare their work the critic's ready curse  
Due to the daily and undignified.

## V

I who myself contentedly abide  
Awake, nor want the wings of dream, — who  
tramp

Earth's common surface, rough, smooth, dry or  
damp,

— I understand alternatives, no less  
Conceive your soul's leap, Gerard de Lairese!  
How were it could I mingle false with true,  
Boast, with the sights I see, your vision too?  
Advantage would it prove or detriment  
If I saw double? Could I gaze intent  
On Dryope plucking the blossoms red,  
As you, whereat her lote-tree writhed and bled,  
Yet lose no gain, no hard fast wide-awake  
Having and holding nature for the sake  
Of nature only — nymph and lote-tree thus  
Gained by the loss of fruit not fabulous,  
Apple of English homesteads, where I see  
Nor seek more than crisp buds a struggling bee  
Uncrumpled, caught by sweet he clammers  
through?

Truly, a moot point: make it plain to me,  
Who, bee-like, sate sense with the simply true,  
Nor seek to heighten that sufficiency  
By help of feignings proper to the page —  
Earth's surface-blank whereon the elder age  
Put color, poetizing — poured rich life  
On what were else a dead ground — nothing  
ness —

Until the solitary world grew rife  
With Joves and Junos, nymphs and satyrs. Yes,  
The reason was, fancy composed the strife  
'Twixt sense and soul: for sense, my De Lai-  
resse,

Cannot content itself with outward things,  
Mere beauty: soul must needs know whence  
there springs —

How, when and why — what sense but loves,  
nor lists  
To know at all.

## VI

Not one of man's acquists  
Ought he resignedly to lose, methinks:  
So, point me out which was it of the links  
Snapt first, from out the chain which used to  
bind

Our earth to heaven, and yet for you, since blind,  
Subsisted still efficient and intact?

Oh, we can fancy too! but somehow fact  
Has got to — say, not so much push aside  
Fancy, as to declare its place supplied  
By fact unseen but no less fact the same,  
Which mind bids sense accept. Is mind to  
blame,

Or sense, — does that usurp, this abdicate?  
First of all, as you "walked" — were it too late  
For us to walk, if so we willed? Confess  
We have the sober feet still, *De Laïresse!*  
Why not the freakish brain too, that must needs  
Supplement nature — not see flowers and weeds  
Simply as such, but link with each and all  
The ultimate perfection — what we call  
Rightly enough the human shape divine?  
The rose? No rose unless it disentwine  
From *Venus's* wreath the while she bends to kiss  
Her deathly love?

## VII

Plain retrogression, this!

No, no: we poets go not back at all:  
What you did we could do — from great to small  
Sinking assuredly: if this world last  
One moment longer when Man finds its Past  
Exceed its Present — blame the Protoplast!  
If we no longer see as you of old,  
'Tis we see deeper. Progress for the bold!  
You saw the body, 't is the soul we see.  
Try now! Bear witness while you walk with me,  
I see as you: if we loose arms, stop pace.  
'T is that you stand still, I conclude the race  
Without your company. Come, walk once more  
The "Walk:" if I to-day as you of yore  
See just like you the blind — then sight shall ery  
— The whole long day quite gone through —  
victory!

## VIII

Thunders on thunders, doubling and redoubling  
Doom o'er the mountain, while a sharp white  
fire  
Now shone, now sheared its rusty herbage,  
troubling  
Hardly the fir-boles, now discharged its ire  
Full where some pine-tree's solitary spire  
Crashed down, defiant to the last: till — lo,  
The motive of the malice! — all aglow,  
Circled with flame there yawned a sudden rift  
I' the rock-face, and I saw a form erect  
Front and defy the outrage, while — as checked,  
Chidden, beside him dauntless in the drift —  
Cowered a heaped creature, wing and wing out-  
spread  
In deprecation o'er the crouching head  
Still hungry for the feast foregone awhile.  
O thou, of scorn's unconquerable smile,  
Was it when this — *Jove's* feathered fury —  
slipped  
Gore-glutted from the heart's core whence he  
ripped —  
This eagle-hound — neither reproach nor  
prayer —  
Baffled, in one more fierce attempt to tear  
Fate's secret from thy safeguard, — was it then  
That all these thunders rent earth, ruined air  
To reach thee, pay thy patronage of men?  
He thundered, — to withdraw, as beast to lair,

Before the triumph on thy pallid brow.  
Gather the night again about thee now,  
Hate on, love ever! Morn is breaking there —  
The granite ridge pricks through the mist,  
tur s gold

As wrong turns right. O laughter manifold  
Of ocean's ripple at dull earth's despair!

## IX

But morning's laugh sets all the crags alight  
Above the baffled tempest: tree and tree  
Stir themselves from the stupor of the night,  
And every strangled branch resumes its right  
To breathe, shakes loose dark's clinging dregs,  
waves free

In dripping glory. Prone the runnels plunge,  
While earth, distent with moisture like a sponge,  
Smokes up, and leaves each plant its gem to see,  
Each grass-blade's glory-glitter. Had I known  
The torrent now turned river? — masterful  
Making its rush o'er tumbled ravage — stone  
And stub which barred the froths and foams:  
no bull

Ever broke bounds in formidable sport  
More overwhelmingly, till lo, the spasm  
Sets him to dare that last mad leap: report  
Who may — his fortunes in the deathly chasm  
That swallows him in silence! Rather turn  
Whither, upon the upland, pedestalled  
Into the broad day-splendor, whom discern  
These eyes but thee, supreme one, rightly called  
Moon-maid in heaven above and, here below,  
Earth's huntress-queen? I note the garb suc-  
cinct

Saving from smirch that purity of snow  
From breast to knee — snow's self with just the  
tinct

Of the apple-blossom's heart-blush. Ah, the  
low

Slack-strung her fingers grasp, where, ivory-  
linked

Horn curving blends with horn, a moonlike pair  
Which mimic the brow's crescent sparkling so —  
As if a star's live restless fragment winked  
Proud yet repugnant, captive in such hair!  
What hope along the hillside, what far bliss  
Lets the crisp hair-plaits fall so low they kiss  
Those lucid shoulders? Must a morn so blithe  
Needs have its sorrow when the twang and hiss  
Tell that from out thy sheaf one shaft makes  
writhe

Its victim, thou unerring *Artemis*?  
Why did the chamois stand so fair a mark  
Arrested by the novel shape he dreamed  
Was bred of liquid marble in the dark  
Depths of the mountain's womb which ever  
teemed

With novel births of wonder? Not one spark  
Of pity in that steel-gray glance which gleamed  
At the poor hoof's protesting as it stamped  
Idly the granite? Let me glide unseen  
From thy proud presence: well mayst thou be  
queen

Of all those strange and sudden deaths which  
damped

So oft *Love's* torch and *Hymen's* taper lit  
For happy marriage till the maidens paled  
And perished on the temple-step, assailed

By — what except to envy must man's wit  
 Impute that sure implacable release  
 Of life from warmth and joy? But death  
 means peace.

## x

Noon is the conqueror, — not a spray, nor leaf,  
 Nor herb, nor blossom but has rendered up  
 Its morning dew : the valley seemed one cup  
 Of cloud-smoke, but the vapor's reign was brief ;  
 Sun-smitten, see, it hangs — the filmy haze —  
 Gray-garmenting the herbless mountain-side,  
 To soothe the day's sharp glare : while far and  
 wide

Above unclouded burns the sky, one blaze  
 With fierce inimitable blue, no bird  
 Ventures to spot by passage. E'en of peaks  
 Which still presume there, plain each pale point  
 speaks

In wan transparency of waste incurred  
 By over-daring : far from me be such !  
 Deep in the hollow, rather, where combine  
 Tree, shrub and brier to roof with shade and  
 cool

The remnant of some lily-strangled pool,  
 Edged round with mossy fringing soft and fine.  
 Smooth lie the bottom slabs, and overhead  
 Watch elder, bramble, rose, and service-tree  
 And one beneficent rich barberry  
 Jewelled all over with fruit-pendants red.  
 What have I seen ! O Satyr, well I know  
 How sad thy case, and what a world of woe  
 Was hid by the brown visage furry-framed  
 Only for mirth : who otherwise could think —  
 Marking thy mouth gape still on laughter's  
 brink,

Thine eyes a-swim with merriment unnamed  
 But haply guessed at by their furtive wink ?  
 And all the while a heart was panting sick  
 Behind that shaggy bulwark of thy breast —  
 Passion it was that made those breath-bursts  
 thick

I took for mirth subsiding into rest.  
 So, it was Lyda — she of all the train  
 Of forest-thridding nymphs, — 't was only she  
 Turned from thy rustic homage in disdain,  
 Saw but that poor uncouth outside of thee,  
 And, from her circling sisters, mocked a pain  
 Echo had pitied — whom Pan loved in vain —  
 For she was wishful to partake thy glee,  
 Minnie thy mirth — who loved her not again,  
 Savage for Lyda's sake. She crouches there —  
 Thy cruel beauty, slumberously laid  
 Supine on heaped-up beast-skins, unaware  
 Thy steps have traced her to the briery glade,  
 Thy greedy hands disclose the cradling lair,  
 Thy hot eyes reach and revel on the maid !

## xi

Now, what should this be for ? The sun's de-  
 cline

Seems as he lingered lest he lose some act  
 Dread and decisive, some prodigious fact  
 Like thunder from the safe sky's sapphire  
 About to alter earth's conditions, packed  
 With fate for nature's self that waits, aware  
 What mischief unsuspected in the air  
 Menaces momentarily a cataract.

Therefore it is that yonder space extends  
 Untrenched upon by any vagrant tree,  
 Shrub, weed well-nigh ; they keep their bounds,  
 leave free

The platform for what actors ? Foes or friends,  
 Here come they trooping silent : heaven sus-  
 pends

Purpose the while they range themselves. I see !  
 Bent on a battle, two vast powers agree  
 This present and no after-contest ends  
 One or the other's grasp at rule in reach  
 Over the race of man — host fronting host,  
 As statue statue fronts — wrath-molten each,  
 Solidified by hate, — earth halved almost,  
 To close once more in chaos. Yet two shapes  
 Show prominent, each from the universe  
 Of minions round about him, that disperse  
 Like cloud-obstruction when a bolt escapes.  
 Who flames first ? Macedonian, is it thou ?  
 Ay, and who fronts thee, King Darius, drapes  
 His form with purple, fillet-folds his brow.

## xii

What, then the long day dies at last ? Abrupt  
 The sun that seemed, in stooping, sure to melt  
 Our mountain-ridge, is mastered : black the  
 belt

Of westward crags, his gold could not corrupt,  
 Barriers again the valley, lets the flow  
 Of lavish glory waste itself away  
 — Whither ? For new climes, fresh eyes breaks  
 the day !

Night was not to be baffled. If the glow  
 Were all that's gone from us ! Did clouds,  
 afloat

So firmly but now, discard no rose,  
 Sombre throughout the fleeciness that grows  
 A sullen uniformity. I note  
 Rather displeasure, — in the overspread  
 Change from the swim of gold to one pale lead  
 Oppressive to malevolence, — than late  
 Those amorous yearnings when the aggregate  
 Of cloudlets pressed that each and all might sate  
 Its passion and partake in relics red  
 Of day's bequeathment : now, a frown instead  
 Estranges, and affrights who needs must fare  
 On and on till his journey ends : but where ?  
 Caucasus ? Lost now in the night. Away  
 And far enough lies that Arcadia.  
 The human heroes tread the world's dark way  
 No longer. Yet I dimly see almost —  
 Yes, for my last adventure ! 'T is a ghost.  
 So drops away the beauty ! There he stands  
 Voiceless, scarce strives with deprecating  
 hands . . .

## xiii

Enough ! Stop further fooling, De Lairese !  
 My fault, not yours ! Some fitter way express  
 Heart's satisfaction that the Past indeed  
 Is past, gives way before Life's best and last,  
 The all-including Future ! What were life  
 Did soul stand still therein, forego her strife  
 Through the ambiguous Present to the goal  
 Of some all-reconciling Future ? Soul,  
 Nothing has been which shall not bettered be  
 Hereafter, — leave the root, by law's decree  
 Whence springs the ultimate and perfect tree !



Busy thee with unearthing root? Nay, climb —  
Quit trunk, branch, leaf and flower — reach,  
rest sublime

Where fruitage ripens in the blaze of day!  
O'erlook, despise, forget, throw flower away,  
Intent on progress? No whit more than stop  
Ascent therewith to dally, screen the top  
Sufficiency of yield by interposed  
Twistwork bold foot gets free from. Wherefore  
glozed

The poets — "Dream afresh old godlike shapes,  
Recapture ancient fable that escapes,  
Push back reality, repeople earth  
With vanished falseness, recognize no worth  
In fact new-born unless 't is rendered back  
Pallid by fancy, as the western rack  
Of fading cloud bequeaths the lake some gleam  
Of its gone glory!"

## XIV

Let things be — not seem,  
I counsel rather, — do, and nowise dream!  
Earth's young significance is all to learn:  
The dead Greek lore lies buried in the urn  
Where who seeks fire finds ashes. Ghost, for-  
sooth!

What was the best Greece babbled of as truth?  
"A shade, a wretched nothing, — sad, thin,  
drear,

Cold, dark, it holds on to the lost loves here,  
If hand have haply sprinkled o'er the dead  
Three charitable dust-heaps, made mouth red  
One moment by the sip of sacrifice:  
Just so much comfort thaws the stubborn ice  
Slow-thickening upward till it choke at length  
The last faint flutter craving — not for strength,  
Not beauty, not the riches and the rule  
O'er men that made life life indeed." Sad  
school

Was Hades! Gladly, — might the dead but  
slink

To life back, — to the dregs once more would  
drink

Each interloper, drain the humblest cup  
Fate mixes for humanity.

## XV

Cheer up, —  
Be death with me, as with Achilles erst,  
Of Man's calamities the last and worst:  
Take it so! By proved potency that still  
Makes perfect, be assured, come what come will,  
What once lives never dies — what here attains  
To a beginning, has no end, still gains  
And never loses aught: when, where, and how —  
Lies in Law's lap. What's death then? Even  
now

With so much knowledge is it hard to bear  
Brief interposing ignorance? Is care  
For a creation found at fault just there —  
There where the heart breaks bond and out-  
runs time,

To reach not follow what shall be?

## XVI

Here's rhyme  
Such as one makes now, — say, when Spring  
repeats

That miracle the Greek Bard sadly greets:  
"Spring for the tree and herb — no Spring for  
us!"

Let Spring come: why, a man salutes her  
thus:

Dance, yellows and whites and reds, —  
Lead your gay orgy, leaves, stalks, heads  
Astir with the wind in the tulip-beds!

There's sunshine; scarcely a wind at all  
Disturbs starved grass and daisies small  
On a certain mound by a churchyard wall.

Daisies and grass be my heart's bedfellows  
On the mound wind spares and sunshine mel-  
lows:

Dance you, reds and whites and yellows!

## WITH CHARLES AVISON

The manuscript of the *Grand March* written  
by Avison was in the possession of Browning's  
father, and a copy is given at the end of the  
poem. The *Relfe* who is two or three times  
mentioned was Browning's teacher of music,  
who was a learned contrapuntist.

## I

How strange! — but, first of all, the little fact  
Which led my fancy forth. This bitter morn  
Showed me no object in the stretch forlorn  
Of garden-ground beneath my window, backed  
By yon worn wall wherefrom the creeper,  
tacked

To clothe its brickwork, hangs now, rent and  
racked

By five months' cruel winter, — showed no torn  
And tattered ravage worse for eyes to see  
Than just one ugly space of clearance, left  
Bare even of the bones which used to be  
Warm wrappage, safe embracement: this one  
cleft —

— Oh, what a life and beauty filled it up  
Startlingly, when methought the rude clay cup  
Ran over with poured bright wine! 'T was a  
bird

Breast-deer there, tugging at his prize, de-  
terred

No whit by the fast-falling snow-flake: gain  
Such prize my blackcap must by might and  
main —

The cloth-shred, still a-flutter from its nail  
That fixed a spray once. Now, what told the  
tale

To thee, — no townsman but born orchard-  
thief, —

That here — surpassing moss-tuft, beard from  
sheaf

Of sun-scorched barley, horsehairs long and  
stout,

All proper country-pillage — here, no doubt,  
Was just the scrap to steal should line thy nest  
Superbly? Off he flew, his bill possessed  
The booty sure to set his wife's each wing  
Greenly a-quiver. How they climb and cling,

Hang parrot-wise to bough, these blackcaps !  
 Strange  
 Seemed to a city-dweller that the finch  
 Should stray so far to forage : at a pinch,  
 Was not the fine wool's self within his range  
 — Filchings on every fence ? But no : the  
 need  
 Was of this rag of manufacture, spoiled  
 By art, and yet by nature near unsoiled,  
 New-suited to what scheming finch would  
 breed  
 In comfort, this uncomfortable March.

## II

Yet — by the first pink blossom on the  
 larch ! —  
 This was scarce stranger than that memory, —  
 In want of what should cheer the stay-at-home,  
 My soul, — must straight clap pinion, well-nigh  
 roam  
 A century back, nor once close plume, descry  
 The appropriate rag to plunder, till she  
 pounced —  
 Pray, on what relic of a brain long still ?  
 What old-world work proved forage for the  
 bill  
 Of memory the far-flyer ? “ March ” an-  
 nounced,  
 I verily believe, the dead and gone  
 Name of a music-maker : one of such  
 In England as did little or did much,  
 But, doing, had their day once. Avison !  
 Singly and solely for an air of thine,  
 Bold-stepping “ March,” foot stept to ere my  
 hand  
 Could stretch an octave, I o'erlooked the band  
 Of majesties familiar, to decline  
 On thee — not too conspicuous on the list  
 Of worthies who by help of pipe or wire  
 Expressed in sound rough rage or soft desire —  
 Thou, whilom of Newcastle organist !

## III

So much could one — well, thinish air effect !  
 Am I ungrateful ? for, your March, styled  
 “ Grand,”  
 Did veritably seem to grow, expand,  
 And greatness to title as, unchecked,  
 Dream-marchers marched, kept marching, slow  
 and sure,  
 In time, to tune, unchangeably the same,  
 From nowhere into nowhere, — out they came,  
 Onward they passed, and in they went. No  
 lure  
 Of novel modulation pricked the flat  
 Forthright persisting melody, — no hint  
 That discord, sound asleep beneath the flint,  
 Struck — might spring spark-like, claim due  
 tit-for-tat,  
 Quenched in a concord. No ! Yet, such the  
 might  
 Of quietude's immutability,  
 That somehow coldness gathered warmth, well-  
 nigh  
 Quickened — which could not be ! — grew  
 burning-bright  
 With fife-shriek, cymbal-clash and trumpet-  
 blare,

To drum-accentuation : pacing turned  
 Striding, and striding grew gigantic, spurned  
 At last the narrow space 'twixt earth and air,  
 So shook me back into my sober self.

## IV

And where woke I ? The March had set me  
 down  
 There whence I plucked the measure, as his  
 brown  
 Frayed flannel-bit my blackcap. Great John  
 Relfe,  
 Master of mine, learned, redoubtable,  
 It little needed thy consummate skill  
 To fitly figure such a bass ! The key  
 Was — should not memory play me false —  
 well, C.  
 Ay, with the Greater Third, in Triple Time,  
 Three crochets to a bar : no change, I grant,  
 Except from Tonic down to Dominant.  
 And yet — and yet — if I could put in rhyme  
 The manner of that marching ! — which had  
 stopped  
 — I wonder, where ? — but that my weak self  
 dropped  
 From out the ranks, to rub eyes disentranced  
 And feel that, after all the way advanced,  
 Back must I foot it, I and my compeers,  
 Only to reach, across a hundred years,  
 The bandsman Avison whose little book  
 And large tune thus had led me the long way  
 (As late a rag my blackcap) from to-day  
 And to-day's music-manufacture, — Brahms,  
 Wagner, Dvorak, Liszt, — to where — trumpets,  
 shawms,  
 Show yourselves joyful ! — Handel reigns —  
 supreme ?  
 By no means ! Buononcini's work is theme  
 For fit laudation of the impartial few :  
 (We stand in England, mind you !) Fashion too  
 Favors Geminiani — of those choice  
 Concertos : nor there wants a certain voice  
 Raised in thy favor likewise, famed Pepusch  
 Dear to our great-grandfathers ! In a bush  
 Of Doctor's wig, they prized thee timing beats  
 While Greenway trilled “ Alexis,” Such were  
 feats  
 Of music in thy day — dispute who list —  
 Avison, of Newcastle organist !

## V

And here 's your music all alive once more —  
 As once it was alive, at least : just so  
 The figured worthies of a waxwork-show  
 Attest — such people, years and years ago,  
 Looked thus when outside death had life be-  
 low,  
 — Could say “ We are now ” not “ We were of  
 yore,”  
 — “ Feel how our pulses leap ! ” and not “ Ex-  
 plore —  
 Explain why quietude has settled o'er  
 Surface once all awork ! ” Ay, such a “ Suite ”  
 Roused heart to rapture, such a “ Fugue ”  
 would catch  
 Soul heavenwards up, when time was : why  
 attach  
 Blame to exhausted faultlessness, no match

For fresh achievement? Feat once — ever  
feat!

How can completion grow still more complete?  
Hear Avison! He tenders evidence  
That music in his day as much absorbed  
Heart and soul then as Wagner's music now,  
Perfect from centre to circumference —  
Orbed to the full can be but fully orbed:  
And yet — and yet — whence comes it that  
"O Thou" —

Sighed by the soul at eve to Hesperus —  
Will not again take wing and fly away  
(Since fatal Wagner fixed it fast for us)  
In some unmodulated minor? Nay,  
Even by Handel's help!

## VI

I state it thus:

There is no truer truth obtainable  
By Man than comes of music. "Soul" —  
(accept

A word which vaguely names what no adept  
In word-use fits and fixes so that still  
Thing shall not slip word's fetter and remain  
Innominate as first, yet, free again,  
Is no less recognized the absolute  
Fact underlying that same other fact  
Concerning which no cavil can dispute  
Our nomenclature when we call it "Mind" —  
Something not Matter) — "Soul," who seeks  
shall find

Distinct beneath that something. You exact  
An illustrative image? This may suit.

## VII

We see a work: the worker works behind,  
Invisible himself. Suppose his act  
Be to o'erarch a gulf: he digs, transports,  
Shapes and, through enginery — all sizes,  
sorts,

Lays stone by stone until a floor compact  
Proves our bridged causeway. So works Mind  
— by stress

Of faculty, with loose facts, more or less,  
Builds up our solid knowledge: all the same,  
Underneath rolls what Mind may hide not  
tame,

An element which works beyond our guess,  
Soul, the unsounded sea — whose lift of surge,  
Spite of all superstructure, lets emerge,  
In flower and foam, Feeling from out the deeps  
Mind arrogates no mastery upon —

Distinct indisputably. Has there gone  
To dig up, drag forth, render smooth from  
rough

Mind's flooring, — operosity enough?  
Still the successive labor of each inch,  
Who lists may learn: from the last turn of  
winch

That let the polished slab-stone find its place,  
To the first prod of pickaxe at the base  
Of the unquarried mountain, — what was all  
Mind's varied process except natural,  
Nay, easy even, to descry, describe,  
After our fashion? "So worked Mind: its  
tribe

Of senses ministrant above, below,  
Far, near, or now or haply long ago

Brought to pass knowledge." But Soul's sea,  
— drawn whence,

Fed how, forced whither, — by what evidence  
Of ebb and flow, that's felt beneath the tread,  
Soul has its course 'neath Mind's work over-  
head, —

Who tells of, tracks to source the founts of  
Soul?

Yet wherefore heaving sway and restless roll  
This side and that, except to emulate  
Stability above? To match and mate  
Feeling with knowledge, — make as manifest  
Soul's work as Mind's work, turbulence as rest,  
Hates, loves, joys, woes, hopes, fears, that rise  
and sink

Ceaselessly, passion's transient flit and wink,  
A ripple's tinting or a spume-sheet's spread  
Whitening the wave, — to strike all this life  
dead,

Run mercury into a mould like lead,  
And henceforth have the plain result to show —  
How we Feel, hard and fast as what we Know —  
This were the prize and is the puzzle! — which  
Music essays to solve: and here's the hitch  
That balks her of full triumph else to boast.

## VIII

All Arts endeavor this, and she the most  
Attains thereto, yet fails of touching: why?  
Does Mind get Knowledge from Art's min-  
istry?

What's known once is known ever: Arts  
arrange,

Dissociate, re-distribute, interchange  
Part with part, lengthen, broaden, high or  
deep

Construct their bravest, — still such pains  
produce

Change, not creation: simply what lay loose  
At first lies firmly after, what design  
Was faintly traced in hesitating line  
Once on a time, grows firmly resolute  
Henceforth and evermore. Now, could we  
shoot

Liquidity into a mould, — some way  
Arrest Soul's evanescent moods, and keep  
Unalterably still the forms that leap  
To life for once by help of Art! — which yearns

To save its capture: Poetry discerns,  
Painting is 'ware of passion's rise and fall,  
Bursting, subsidence, intermixture — all  
A-seethe within the gulf. Each Art a-strain

Would stay the apparition, — nor in vain:  
The Poet's word-mesh, Painter's sure and  
swift

Color-and-line-throw — proud the prize they  
lift!

Thus felt Man and thus looked Man, — passions  
caught

I' the midway swim of sea, — not much, if  
aught,

Of nether-brooding loves, hates, hopes and  
fears,

Enwombed past Art's disclosure. Fleet the  
years,

And still the Poet's page holds Helena  
At gaze from topmost Troy — "But where are  
they,



My brothers, in the armament I name  
 Hero by hero? Can it be that shame  
 For their lost sister holds them from the war?"  
 — Knowing not they already slept afar  
 Each of them in his own dear native land.  
 Still on the Painter's fresco, from the hand  
 Of God takes Eve the life-spark wherewith  
 She trembles up from nothingness. Outdo  
 Both of them, Music! Dredging deeper yet,  
 Drag into day, — by sound, thy master-net, —  
 The abysmal bottom-growth, ambiguous thing  
 Unbroken of a branch, palpitating  
 With limbs' play and life's semblance! There  
 it lies,

Marvel and mystery, of mysteries  
 And marvels, most to love and laud thee for!  
 Save it from chance and change we most ab-  
 hor!

Give momentary feeling permanence.  
 So that thy capture hold, a century hence,  
 Truth's very heart of truth as, safe to-day,  
 The Painter's Eve, the Poet's Helena  
 Still rapturously bend, afar still throw  
 The wistful gaze! Thanks, Homer, Angelo!  
 Could Music rescue thus from Soul's profound,  
 Give feeling immortality by sound,  
 Then were she queenliest of Arts! Alas —  
 As well expect the rainbow not to pass!  
 "Praise 'Radamisto' — love attains therein  
 To perfect utterance! Pity — what shall win  
 Thy secret like 'Rinaldo'?" — so men said:  
 Once all was perfume — now, the flower is  
 dead —

They spied tints, sparks have left the spar!  
 Love, hate,

Joy, fear, survive, — alike importunate  
 As ever to go walk the world again,  
 Nor ghost-like pant for outlet all in vain  
 Till Music loose them, fit each filnily  
 With form enough to know and name it by  
 For any recognizer sure of ken  
 And sharp of ear, no grosser denizen  
 Of ether than needs be. Nor to such appeal  
 Is Music long obdurate: off they steal —  
 How gently, dawn-doomed phantoms! back  
 come they

Full-blooded with new crimson of broad day —  
 Passion made palpable once more. Ye look  
 Your last on Handel? Gaze your first on  
 Gluck!

Why wistful search, O waning ones, the chart  
 Of stars for you while Haydn, while Mozart  
 Occupies heaven? These also, fanned to fire,  
 Flamboyant wholly, — so perfections tire, —  
 Whiten to wanness, till . . . let others note  
 The ever-new invasion!

IX

I devote

Rather my modicum of parts to use  
 What power may yet avail to re-infuse  
 (In fancy, please you!) sleep that looks like  
 death

With momentary liveliness, lend breath  
 To make the torpor half inhale. O Relfe,  
 An all-unworthy pupil, from the shelf  
 Of thy laboratory, dares unstop  
 Bottle, ope box, extract thence pinch and drop

Of dusts and dews a many thou didst shrine  
 Each in its right receptacle, assign  
 To each its proper office, letter large  
 Label and label, then with solemn charge,  
 Reviewing learnedly the list complete  
 Of chemical reactives, from thy feet  
 Push down the same to me, attend below,  
 Power in abundance: armed wherewith I go  
 To play the enlivener. Bring good antique  
 stuff!

Was it alight once? Still lives spark enough  
 For breath to quicken, run the smouldering  
 ash

Red right-through. What, "stone-dead" were  
 fools so rash

As style my Avison, because he lacked  
 Modern appliance, spread out phrase unracked  
 By modulations fit to make each hair  
 Stiffen upon his wig? See there — and there!  
 I sprinkle my reactives, pitch broadcast  
 Discords and resolutions, turn agast  
 Melody's easy-going, jostle law  
 With license, modulate (no Bach in awe)  
 Change enharmonically (Hudl to thank)  
 And lo, upstart the flamelets, — what was  
 blank

Turns scarlet, purple, crimson! Straightway  
 scanned

By eyes that like new lustre — Love once more  
 Yearns through the Largo, Hatred as before  
 Rages in the Rubato: e'en thy March,  
 My Avison, which, sooth to say — (ne'er arch  
 Eyebrows in anger!) — timed, in Georgian  
 years

The step precise of British Grenadiers  
 To such a nicety, — if score I crowd,  
 If rhythm I break, if beats I vary, — tap  
 At bar's off-starting turns true thunder-clap,  
 Ever the pace augmented till — what's here?  
 Titanic striding toward Olympus!

X

Fear

No such irreverent innovation! Still  
 Glide on, go rolling, water-like, at will —  
 Nay, were thy melody in monotone,  
 The due three-parts dispensed with!

XI

This alone

Comes of my tiresome talking: Music's throne  
 Seats somebody whom somebody unseats,  
 And whom in turn — by who knows what new  
 feats

Of strength — shall somebody as sure push  
 down,

Consign him dispossessed of sceptre, crown,  
 And orb imperial — whereto? Never dream  
 That what once lived shall ever die! They  
 seem

Dead — do they? lapsed things lost in limbo?  
 Bring

Our life to kindle theirs, and straight each  
 king

Starts, you shall see, stands up, from head to  
 foot

No inch that is not Purcell! Wherefore? (Suit  
 Measure to subject, first — no marching on

Yet in thy bold C major, Avison,  
As suited step a minute since : no : wait —  
Into the minor key first modulate —  
Gently with A, now — in the Lesser Third !)

## XII

Of all the lamentable debts incurred  
By Man through buying knowledge, this were  
worst :

That he should find his last gain prove his  
first

Was futile — merely nescience absolute,  
Not knowledge in the bud which holds a fruit  
Haply undreamed of in the soul's Spring-tide,  
Pursd in the petals Summer opens wide,  
And Autumn, withering, rounds to perfect  
ripe, —

Not this, — but ignorance, a blur to wipe  
From human records, late it graced so much.  
" Truth — this attainment ? Ah, but such and  
such

Beliefs of yore seemed inexpugnable  
When we attained them ! E'en as they, so  
will

This their successor have the due morn, noon,  
Evening and night — just as an old-world  
tune

Wears out and drops away, until who hears  
Smiling questions — ' This it was brought  
tears

Once to all eyes, — this roused heart's rapture  
once ?

So will it be with truth that, for the nonce,  
Styles itself truth perennial : ' ware its wile !  
Knowledge turns nescience, — foremost on the  
file,

Simply proves first of our delusions. "

## XIII

Now —

Blare it forth, bold C major ! Lift thy brow,  
Man, the immortal, that waster never fooled  
With gifts no gifts at all, nor ridiculed —  
Man knowing — he who nothing knew ! As  
Hope,

Fear, Joy, and Grief, — though ampler stretch  
and scope

They seek and find in novel rhythm, fresh  
phrase, —

Were equally existent in far days  
Of Music's dim beginning — even so,  
Truth was at full within thee long ago,  
Alive as now it takes what latest shape  
May startle thee by strangeness. Truths es-  
cape

Time's insufficient garniture : they fade,  
They fall — those sheathings now grown sere,  
whose aid

Was infinite to truth they wrapped, saved fine  
And free through March frost : May dews  
crystalline

Nourish truth merely, — does June boast the  
fruit

As — not new vesture merely but, to boot,  
Novel creation ? Soon shall fade and fall  
Myth after myth — the husk-like lies I call  
New truth's corolla-sateguard : Autumn comes,  
So much the better !

## XIV

Therefore — bang the drums,  
Blow the trumpets, Avison ! March-motive ?  
that's

Truth which endures resetting. Sharps and flats,  
Lavish at need, shall dance athwart thy score  
When opficleide and bombardon's uproar  
Mate the approaching trample, even now  
Big in the distance — or my ears deceive —  
Of federated England, fitly weave  
March-music for the Future !

## XV

Or suppose

Back, and not forward, transformation goes ?  
Once more some sable-stoled procession — say,  
From Little-ease to Tyburn — wends its way.  
Out of the dungeon to the gallows-tree  
Where heading, hacking, hanging is to be  
Of half-a-dozen recusants — this day  
Three hundred years ago ! How duly drones  
Elizabethan plain-song — dim antique  
Grown clarion-clear the while I humbly wreak  
A classic vengeance on thy March ! It  
moans —

Larges and Longs and Breves displacing quite  
Crotchet-and-quaver pertness — brushing bars  
Aside and filling vacant sky with stars  
Hidden till now that day return to night.

## XVI

Nor night nor day : one purpose move us both,  
Be thy mood mine ! As thou wast minded,  
Man's

The cause our music champions : I were loth  
To think we cheered our troop to Preston Pans  
Ignobly : back to times of England's best !  
Parliament stands for privilege — life and limb  
Guards Hollis, Haselrig, Strode, Hampden,  
Pym,

The famous Five. There's rumor of arrest.  
Bring up the Train Bands, Southwark ! They  
protest :

Shall we not all join chorus ? Hark the hymn.  
— Rough, rude, robustious — homely heart a-  
throb,

Harsh voice a-hallo, as beseems the mob !  
How good is noise ! what's silence but de-  
spair

Of making sound match gladness never there ?  
Give me some great glad " subject," glorious  
Bach,

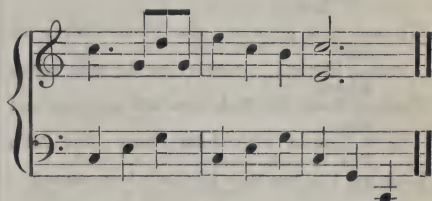
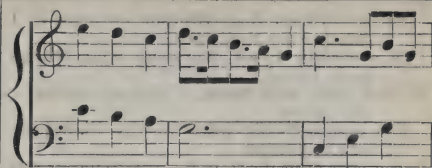
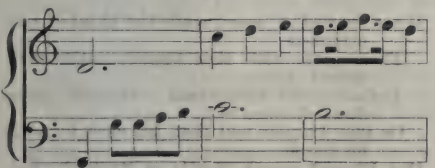
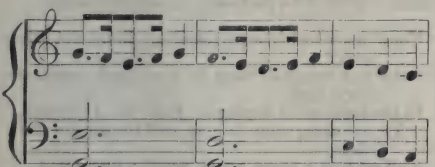
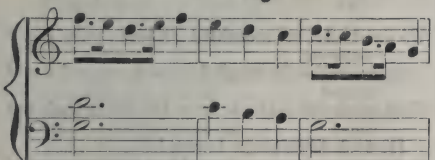
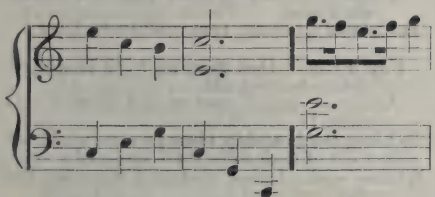
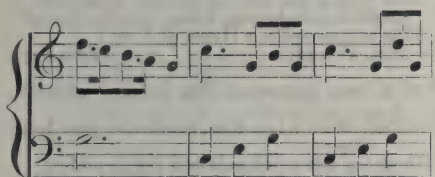
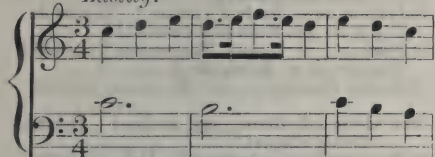
Where cannon-roar not organ-peal we lack !  
Join in, give voice robustious rude and rough, —  
Avison helps — so heart lend noise enough !

Fife, trump, drum, sound ! and singers then  
Marching say " Pym, the man of men ! "  
Up, heads, your proudest, — out throats, your  
loudest —  
" Somerset's Pym ! "

Stafford from the block, Eliot from the den,  
Foes, friends, shout " Pym, our citizen ! "  
Wail, the foes he quelled, — hail, the friends  
he held,  
" Tavistock's Pym ! "

Hearts prompt heads, hands that ply the pen  
Teach babes unborn the where and when.  
— Tyrants, he braved them, — patriots, he  
saved them —  
“ Westminster's Pym ! ”

*Lustily.*



## FUST AND HIS FRIENDS

### AN EPILOGUE

(*Inside the House of Fust, Mayence, 1457.*)

*First Friend.* Up, up, up — next step of the staircase

Lands us, lo, at the chamber of dread !

*Second Friend.* Locked and barred ?

*Third Friend.* Door open — the rare case !

*Fourth Friend.* Ay, there he leans — lost wretch !

*Fifth Friend.* His head  
Sunk on his desk 'twixt his arms outspread !

*Sixth Friend.* Hallo, — wake, man, ere God  
thunderstrike Mayence

— Mulet for thy sake who art Satan's, John  
Fust !

Satan installed here, God's rule in abeyance,  
Mayence some morning may crumble to dust.  
Answer our questions thou shalt and thou must !

*Seventh Friend.* Softly and fairly ! Wherefore  
a-gloom ?

Greet us, thy gossipry, cousin and sib !

Raise the forlorn brow, Fust ! Make room —

Let daylight through arms which, enfolding  
thee, crib

From those clenched lids the comfort of sun-  
shine !

*First Friend.* So glib

Thy tongue slides to “ comfort ” already ?  
Not mine !

Behoove us deal roundly : the wretch is dis-  
traught

— Too well I guess wherefore ! Behooves a  
Divine

— Such as I, by grace, boast me — to threaten  
one caught

In the enemy's toils, — setting “ comfort ” at  
naught.



*Second Friend.* Nay, Brother, so hasty? I heard — nor long since —  
Of a certain Black Art'sman who, — help-  
lessly bound  
By rash pact with Satan, — through paying —  
why mince  
The matter? — fit price to the Church, —  
safe and sound  
Full a year after death in his grave-clothes was  
found.

Whereas 't is notorious the Fiend claims his  
due

During lifetime, — comes clawing, with talons  
afame,  
The soul from the flesh-rags left smoking and  
blue:

So it happened with John Faust; lest John  
Fust fare the same, —  
Look up, I adjure thee by God's holy name!

For neighbors and friends — no foul hell-brood  
flock we!

Saith Solomon "Words of the wise are as  
goads:"

Ours prick but to startle from torpor, set free  
Soul and sense from death's drowse!

*First Friend.* And soul, wakened, unloads  
Much sin by confession: no mere palinodes!

— "I was youthful and wanton, am old yet no  
sage:

When angry I cursed, struck and slew: did I  
want?

Right and left did I rob: though no war I  
dared wage

With the Church (God forbid!) — harm her  
least ministrant —

Still I outraged all else. Now that strength is  
grown scant,

"I am probity's self" — no such bleatings as  
these!

But avowal of guilt so enormous, it balks  
Tongue's telling. Yet penitence prompt may  
appease

God's wrath at thy bond with the Devil who  
stalks

— Strides hither to strangle thee!

*Fust.* Childhood so talks. —

Not rare wit nor ripe age — ye boast them, my  
neighbors! —

Should lay such a charge on your townsman,  
this Fust

Who, known for a life spent in pleasures and  
labors

If freakish yet venial, could scarce be induced  
To traffic with fiends.

*First Friend.* So, my words have unloosed

A plie from those pale lips corrugate but now?  
*Fust.* Lost count me, yet not as ye lean to  
surmise.

*First Friend.* To surmise? to establish!  
Unbury that brow!

Look up, that thy judge may read clear in  
thine eyes!

*Second Friend.* By your leave, Brother  
Barnabite! Mine to advise!

— Who arraign thee, John Fust! What was  
bruted erewhile

Now bellows through Mayence. All cry —  
thou hast trucked

Salvation away for lust's solace! Thy smile  
Takes its hue from hell's smoulder!

*Fust.* Too certain! I sucked  
— Got drunk at the nipple of sense.

*Second Friend.* Thou hast ducked —

Art drowned there, say rather! Faugh —  
fleshly disport!

How else but by help of Sir Belial didst win  
That Venus-like lady, no drudge of thy sort

Could lure to become his accomplice in sin?  
Folk nicknamed her Helen of Troy!

*First Friend.* Best begin

At the very beginning. Thy father, — all knew,  
A mere goldsmith . . .

*Fust.* Who knew him, perchance may know  
this —

He dying left much gold and jewels no few:  
Whom these help to court with, but seldom  
shall miss

The love of a leman: true witchcraft, I wis!

*First Friend.* Dost flout me? 'T is said, in  
debauchery's guild

Admitted prime guttler and guzzler — O  
swine! —

To honor thy headship, those tosspots so swilled  
That out of their table there sprouted a vine

Whence each claimed a cluster, awaiting thy  
sign

To out knite, off mouthful: when — who could  
suppose

Such malice in magic? — each sot woke and  
found

Cold steel but an inch from the neighbor's red  
nose

He took for a grape-bunch!

*Fust.* Does that so astound  
Sagacity such as ye boast, — who surround

Your mate with eyes staring, hairs standing  
erect

At his magical feats? Are good burghers  
unversed

In the humors of toping? Full oft, I suspect,  
Ye, counting your fingers, call thumbkin their  
first,

And reckon a groat every guilder disbursed.

What marvel if wags, while the skinker fast  
brimmed

Their glass with rare tipples' enticement,  
should gloat

— Befooled and befuddled — through optics  
drink-dimmed —

On this draught and that, till each found in  
his throat

Our Rhenish smack rightly as Raphal? For.  
note —

They fancied — their fuddling deceived them so grossly —

That liquor sprang out of the table itself  
Through gimlet-holes drilled there, — nor noticed how closely

The skinker kept plying my guests, from the shelf

O'er their heads, with the potable madness.  
No elf

Had need to persuade them a vine rose umbrageous,

Fruit-bearing, thirst-quenching! Enough!  
I confess

To many such fool-pranks, but none so outrageous

That Satan was called in to help me: excess

I own to, I grieve at — no more and no less.

*Second Friend.* Strange honors were heaped on thee — medal for breast,

Chain for neck, sword for thigh: not a lord of the land

But acknowledged thee peer! What ambition possessed

A goldsmith by trade, with craft's grime on his hand,

To seek such associates?

*Fust.* Spare taunts! Understand —

I submit me! Of vanities under the sun,  
Pride seized me at last as concupiscence first,

Crapulosity ever: true Fiends, every one,  
Haled this way and that my poor soul: thus amerced —

Forgive and forget me!

*First Friend.* Had flesh sinned the worst,

Yet help were in counsel: the Church could absolve:

But say not men truly thou barredst escape  
By signing and sealing . . .

*Second Friend.* On me must devolve  
The task of extracting . . .

*First Friend.* Shall Barnabites ape  
Us Dominican experts?

*Seventh Friend.* Nay, Masters, — agape

When Hell yawns for a soul, 't is myself claim the task

Of extracting, by just one plain question,  
God's truth!

Where 's Peter Genesheim thy partner? I ask

Why, cloistered up still in thy room, the pale youth

Slaves tongue-tied — thy trade brooks no tattling forsooth!

No less he, thy *famulus*, suffers entrapping,  
Succumbs to good fellowship: barrel-a-broach

Runs freely nor needs any subsequent tapping:  
Quoth Peter, "That room, none but I dare approach,

Holds secrets will help me to ride in my coach."

He prattles, we profit: in brief, he assures

Thou hast taught him to speak so that all men may hear

— Each alike, wide world over, Jews, Pagans, Turks, Moors,

The same as we Christians — speech heard far and near

At one and the same magic moment!

*Fust.*

That 's clear!

Said he — how?

*Seventh Friend.* Is it like he was licensed to learn?

Who doubts but thou dost this by aid of the Fiend?

Is it so? So it is, for thou smilest! Go, burn To ashes, since such proves thy portion, un-

screened  
By bell, book and candle! Yet lately I weened

Balm yet was in Gilead, — some healing in store

For the friend of my bosom. Men said thou wast sunk

In a sudden despondency: not, as before,  
Fast gallant and gay with his pottle and punk,

But sober, sad, sick as one yesterday drunk!

*Fust.* Spare *Fust*, then, thus contrite! — who, youthful and healthy,

Equipped for life's struggle with culture of mind,

Sound flesh and sane soul in coherence, born wealthy,

Nay, wise — how he wasted endowment designed

For the glory of God and the good of mankind!

That much were misused such occasions of grace

Ye well may upbraid him, who bows to the rod.

But this should bid anger to pity give place —  
He has turned from the wrong, in the right

path to plod,  
Makes amends to mankind and craves pardon of God.

“Yea, friends, even now from my lips the *Heureka* —

Soul saved!” was nigh bursting — unduly elate!

Have I brought Man advantage, or hatched — so to speak — a

Strange serpent, no cygnet? 'T is this I de-

bate  
Within me. Forbear, and leave *Fust* to his fate!

*First Friend.* So abject, late lofty? Methinks I spy respite.

Make clean breast, discover what mysteries hide

In thy room there!

*Second Friend.* Ay, out with them! Do Satan despite!

Remember what caused his undoing was pride!  
*First Friend.* Dumb devil! Remains one resource to be tried!

*Second Friend.* Exorcise!

*Seventh Friend.* Nay, first — is there any remembers

In substance that potent "*Ne pulvis*" — a psalm

Whereof some live spark haply lurks 'mid the embers

Which choke in my brain. Talk of "*Gilead and balm*"?

I mind me, sung half through, this gave such a qualm

To Asmodeus inside of a Hussite, that, queasy,  
 He broke forth in brimstone with curses.

I'm strong

In — at least the commencement: the rest should go easy,

Friends helping. "*Ne pulvis et ignis*" . . .

*Sixth Friend.* All wrong!

*Fifth Friend.* I've conned till I captured the whole.

*Seventh Friend.* Get along!

"*Ne pulvis et cinis superbe te geras, Nam fulmina*" . . .

*Sixth Friend.* Fiddlestick! Peace, dolts and dorrers!

Thus runs it "*Ne Numinis fulmina feras*" —

Then "*Homini perfidi justa sunt sors Fulmen et grando et horrida mors.*"

*Seventh Friend.* You blunder . . . "*Irati ne.*"

*Sixth Friend.* Mind your own business!

*Fifth Friend.* I do not so badly, who gained the monk's leave

To study an hour his choice parchment. A dizziness

May well have surprised me. No Christian dares thieve,

Or I scarce had returned him his treasure. These cleave:

"*Nos pulvis et cinis. trementes, gementes, Venimus*" — some such word — "*ad te, Domine!*"

*Da lumen, juvamen, ut sancta sequeris*

*Cor . . . corda*" . . . Plague take it!

*Seventh Friend.* — "*erecta sint spe:*"

Right text, ringing rhyme, and ripe Latin for me!

*Sixth Friend.* A Canon's self wrote it me fair: I was tempted

To part with the sheepskin.

*Seventh Friend.* Didst grasp and let go

Such a godsend, thou Judas? My purse had been empti'd

Ere part with the prize!

*Fust.* Do I dream? Say ye so?

Clouds break, then! Move, world! I have gained my "*Pou sto*"!

I am saved: Archimedes, salute me!

*Omnes.* Assistance!

Help, Angels! He summons . . . Aroint thee! — by name,

His familiar!

*Fust.* Approach!

*Omnes.* Devil, keep thy due distance!

*Fust.* Be tranquilized, townsmen! The knowledge ye claim

Behold, I prepare to impart. Praise or blame, —

Your blessing or banning, whatever betide me,

At last I accept. The slow travail of years,  
 The long-teeming brain's birth — applaud me,

deride me, —

At last claims revelation. Wait!

*Seventh Friend.* Wait till appears  
 Unceasing Archimedes cooped-up there?

*Second Friend.* Who fears?

Here's have at thee!

*Seventh Friend.* Correctly now! "*Pulvis et cinis*" . . .

*Fust.* The verse ye so value, it happens I hold  
 In my memory safe from *initium* to *finis*.

Word for word, I produce you the whole,  
 plain enrolled,

Black letters, white paper — no scribe's red and gold!

*Omnes.* Aroint thee!

*Fust.* I go and return.

(*He enters the inner room.*)

*First Friend.* Ay, 't is "*ibis*"

No doubt: but as boldly "*redibis*" — who'll say?

I rather conjecture "*in Orco peribis!*"

*Seventh Friend.* Come, neighbors!

*Sixth Friend.* I'm with you! Show courage and stay

Hell's outbreak? Sirs, cowardice here wins the day!

*Fifth Friend.* What luck had that student of  
 Bamberg who ventured

To peep in the cell where a wizard of note  
 Was busy in getting some black deed debentured

By Satan? In dog's guise there sprang at  
 his throat

A flame-breathing fury. *Fust* favors, I note,

An ugly huge lurcher!

*Seventh Friend.* If I placed reliance  
 As thou, on the beads thou art telling so

fast,

I'd risk just a peep through the keyhole.

*Sixth Friend.* Appliance

Of ear might be safer. Five minutes are

past.

*Omnes.* Saints, save us! The door is thrown

open at last!

*Fust* (*re-enters, the door closing behind him*).  
 As I promised, behold I perform! Apprehend

you

The object I offer is poison or pest?

Receive without harm from the hand I extend  
 you



A gift that shall set every scruple at rest !  
Shrink back from mere paper-strips ? Try  
them and test !

Still hesitate ? Myk, was it thou who lament-  
edst

Thy five wits clean failed thee to render  
aright

A poem read once and no more ? — who re-  
pentedst

Vile pelf had induced thee to banish from  
sight

The characters none but our clerics indite ?

Take and keep !

*First Friend.* Blessed Mary and all Saints  
about her !

*Second Friend.* What imps deal so deftly, —  
five minutes suffice

To play thus the penman ?

*Third Friend.* By Thomas the Doubter,  
Five minutes, no more !

*Fourth Friend.* Out on arts that entice  
Such scribes to do homage !

*Fifth Friend.* Stay ! Once — and now  
twice —

Yea, a third time, my sharp eye completes the  
inspection

Of line after line, the whole series, and  
finds

Each letter join each — not a fault for detec-  
tion !

Such upstrokes, such downstrokes, such  
strokes of all kinds

In the criss-cross, all perfect !

*Sixth Friend.* There's nobody minds

His quill-craft with more of a conscience, o'er-  
scratches

A sheepskin more nimbly and surely with  
ink,

Than Paul the Sub-Prior : here's paper that  
matches

His parchment with letter on letter, no link

Overleapt — underlost !

*Seventh Friend.* No erasure, I think —

No blot, I am certain !

*Fust.* Accept the new treasure !

*Sixth Friend.* I remembered full half !

*Seventh Friend.* But who other than I  
(Bear witness, bystanders !) when he broke the  
measure

Repaired fault with "fulmen" ?

*Fust.* Put bickerings by !

Here's for thee — thee — and thee, too : at  
need a supply

(*Distributing Proofs.*)

For Mayence, though seventy times seven  
should muster !

How now ? All so feeble of faith that no  
face

Which fronts me but whitens — or yellows,  
were juster ?

Speak out lest I summon my Spirits !

*Omnes.* Grace — grace !

Call none of thy — helpmates ! We 'll answer  
apace !

My paper — and mine — and mine also — they  
vary

In nowise — agree in each tittle and jot !

Fust, how — why was this ?

*Fust.* Shall such "Cur" miss a "quare" ?

Within, there ! Throw doors wide ! Be-  
hold who complot

To abolish the scribe's work — blur, blunder  
and blot !

(*The doors open, and the Press is discovered in oper-  
ation.*)

Brave full-bodied birth of this brain that con-  
ceived thee

In splendor and music, — sustained the slow  
drag

Of the days stretched to years dim with doubt,  
— yet believed thee,

Had faith in thy first leap of life ! Pulse  
might flag —

— Mine fluttered how faintly ! — Arch-moment  
might lag

Its longest — I bided, made light of endurance,  
Held hard by the hope of an advent which —

dreamed,

Is done now : night yields to the dawn's reas-  
surance :

I have thee — I hold thee — my fancy that  
seemed,

My fact that proves palpable ! Ay, Sirs, I  
schemed

Completion that's fact : see this Engine — be  
witness

Yourselves of its working ! Nay, handle my  
Types !

Each block bears a Letter : in order and fitness  
I range them. Turn, Peter, the winch !

See, it gripes

What's under ! Let loose — draw ! In regu-  
lar stripes

Lies plain, at one pressure, your poem —  
touched, tinted,

Turned out to perfection ! The sheet, late a  
blank,

Filled — ready for reading, — not written but  
PRINTED !

Omniscient omnipotent God, thee I thank,  
Thee ever, thee only ! — thy creature that  
shrank

From no task thou, Creator, imposedst !  
Creation

Revealed me no object, from insect to Man,  
But bore thy hand's impress : earth glowed  
with salvation :

"Hast sinned ? Be thou saved, Fust ! Con-  
tinue my plan,

Who spake and earth was : with my word  
things began.

"As sound so went forth, to the sight be ex-  
tended

Word's mission henceforward ! The task I  
 assign,  
 Embrace — thy allegiance to evil is ended !  
 Have cheer, soul impregnate with purpose !  
 Combine  
 Soul and body, give birth to my concept —  
 called thine !

“ Far and wide, North and South, East and  
 West, have dominion  
 O'er thought, wingèd wonder, O Word !  
 Traverse world  
 In sun-flash and sphere-song ! Each beat of  
 thy pinion  
 Bursts night, beckons day : once Truth's ban-  
 ner unfurled,  
 Where's Falsehood ? Sun-smitten, to nothing-  
 ness hurled ! ”

More humbly — so, friends, did my fault find  
 redemption.

I sinned, soul-entailed by the tether of sense :  
 My captor reigned master : I plead no exemp-  
 tion,

From Satan's award to his servant : defence  
 From the fiery and final assault would be —  
 whence ?

By making — as man might — to truth restitu-  
 tion !

Truth is God : trample lies and lies' father,  
 God's foe !

Fix fact fast : truths change by an hour's  
 revolution :

What deed's very doer, unaided, can show  
 How 't was done a year — month — week —  
 day — minute ago ?

At best, he relates it — another reports it —  
 A third — nay, a thousandth records it : and  
 still

Narration, tradition, no step but distorts it,  
 As down from truth's height it goes sliding  
 until

At the low level lie-mark it stops — whence no  
 skill

Of the scribe, intervening too tardily, rescues  
 — Once fallen — lost fact from lie's fate  
 there. What scribe

— Eyes horny with poring, hands crippled with  
 desk-use,

Brains fretted by fancies — the volatile tribe  
 That tease weary watchers — can boast that no  
 bribe

Shuts eye and frees hand and remits brain  
 from toiling ?

Truth gained — can we stay, at whatever the  
 stage,

Truth a-slide, — save her snow from its ulti-  
 mate soiling

In mire, — by some process, stamp promptly  
 on page

Fact spoiled by pen's plodding, make truth  
 heritage

Not merely of clerics, but poured out, full  
 measure,  
 On clowns — every mortal endowed with a  
 mind ?

Read, gentle and simple ! Let labor win leis-  
 ure

At last to bid truth do all duty assigned,  
 Not pause at the noble but pass to the hind !

How bring to effect such swift sure simultane-  
 ous

Unlimited multiplication ? How spread  
 By an arm-sweep a hand-throw — no helping  
 extraneous —

Truth broadcast o'er Europe ? “ The gold-  
 smith,” I said,

“ Graves limning on gold : why not letters on  
 lead ? ”

So, Tuscan artificer, grudge not thy pardon

To me who played false, made a furtive  
 descent,

Found the sly secret workshop, — thy genius  
 kept guard on

Too slackly for once, — and surprised thee  
 low-bent

O'er thy labor — some chalice thy tool would  
 indent

With a certain free scroll-work framed round  
 by a border

Of foliage and fruitage : no scratching so fine,  
 No shading so shy but, in ordered disorder,

Each flourish came clear, — unbewildered by  
 shine,

On the gold, irretrievably right, lay each line.

How judge if thy hand worked thy will ? By  
 reviewing,

Revising again and again, piece by piece,  
 Tool's performance, — this way, as I watched.

'T was through glueing  
 A paper-like film-stuff — thin, smooth, void  
 of crease,

On each cut of the graver : press hard ! at re-  
 lease,

No mark on the plate but the paper showed  
 double :

His work might proceed : as he judged —  
 space or speck

Up he filled, forth he flung — was relieved thus  
 from trouble

Lest wrong — once — were right never more :  
 what could check

Advancement, completion ? Thus lay at my  
 beck —

At my call — triumph likewise ! “ For,” cried  
 I, “ what hinders

That gravings turns Printing ? Stamp one  
 word — not one

But fifty such, phoenix-like, spring from death's  
 cinders, —

Since death is word's doom, clerics hide from  
 the sun

As some churl closets up this rare chalice." Go, run

Thy race now, Fust's child! High, O Printing, and holy  
Thy mission! These types, see, I chop and I change

Till the words, every letter, a pageful, not slowly  
Yet surely lies fixed: last of all, I arrange  
A paper beneath, stamp it, loosen it!  
*First Friend.* Strange!

*Second Friend.* How simple exceedingly!  
*Fust.* Bustle, my Schœffer!

Set type, — quick, Genesheim! Turn screw now!

*Third Friend.* Just that!

*Fourth Friend.* And no such vast miracle!

*Fust.* "Plough with my heifer,  
Ye find out my riddle," quoth Samson, and pat  
He speaks to the purpose. Grapes squeezed in the vat

Yield to sight and to taste what is simple — a liquid

Mere urchins may sip: but give time, let ferment —

You've wine, manhood's master! Well, "*rectius si quid*

*Novistis im-per-ti-te!*" Wait the event,  
Then weigh the result! But, whate'er Thy intent,

O Thou, the one force in the whole variation  
Of visible nature, — at work — do I doubt? —  
From Thy first to our last, in perpetual creation —

A film hides us from Thee — 'twixt inside and out,

A film, on this earth where Thou bringest about

New marvels, new forms of the glorious, the gracious,

We bow to, we bless for: no star bursts heaven's dome

But Thy finger impels it, no weed peeps audacious

Earth's clay-floor from out, but Thy finger makes room

For one world's-want the more in Thy Cosmos: presume

Shall Man, Microcosmos, to claim the conception

Of grandeur, of beauty, in thought, word or deed?

I toiled, but Thy light on my dubious step shone:

If I reach the glad goal, is it I who succeed  
Who stumbled at starting tripped up by a reed,

Or Thou? Knowledge only and absolute, glory  
As utter be Thine who concedest a spark

Of Thy spheric perfection to earth's transitory Existences! Nothing that lives, but Thy mark

Gives law to — life's light: what is doomed to the dark?

Where's ignorance? Answer, creation! What height,

What depth has escaped Thy commandment — to Know?

What birth in the ore-bed but answers aright  
Thy sting at its heart which impels — bids

"E'en so,

Not otherwise move or be motionless, — grow,

"Decline, disappear!" Is the plant in default  
How to bud, when to branch forth? The bird and the beast

— Do they doubt if their safety be found in assault

Or escape? Worm or fly, of what atoms the least

But follows light's guidance, — will famish, not feast?

In such various degree, fly and worm, ore and plant,

All know, none is witless: around each, a wall

Encloses the portion, or ample or scant,  
Of Knowledge: beyond which one hair's breadth, for all

Lies blank — not so much as a blackness — a pall

Some sense unimagined must penetrate: plain  
Is only old license to stand, walk or sit,

Move so far and so wide in the narrow domain  
Allotted each nature for life's use: past it

How immensity spreads does he guess? Not a whit.

Does he care? Just as little. Without? No, within

Concerns him? he Knows. Man Ignores — thanks to Thee

Who madest him know, but — in knowing — begin

To know still new vastness of knowledge must be

Outside him — to enter, to traverse, in fee

Have and hold! "Oh, Man's ignorance!" hear the fool whine!

How were it, for better or worse, didst thou grunt

Contented with sapience — the lot of the swine  
Who knows he was born for just truffles to hunt? —

Monks' Paradise — "*Semper sint res uti sunt!*"

No, Man's the prerogative — knowledge once gained —

To ignore, — find new knowledge to press for, to swerve

In pursuit of, no, not for a moment: attained —  
Why, onward through ignorance! Dare and deserve!

As still to its asymptote speedeth the curve,

So approximates Man — Thee, who, reachable not,

Hast formed him to yearningly follow Thy whole

Sole and single omniscience!



Such, friends, is my lot :

I am back with the world : one more step to  
the goal  
Thanks for reaching I render — Fust's help to  
Man's soul !

Mere mechanical help ? So the hand gives a toss  
To the falcon, — aloft once, spread pinions  
and fly,

Beat air far and wide, up and down and across !  
My Press strains a-tremble : whose masterful  
eye

Will be first, in new regions, new truth to  
descrie ?

Give chase, soul ! Be sure each new capture  
consigned

To my Types will go forth to the world, like  
God's bread

— Miraculous food not for body but mind,  
Truth's manna ! How say you ? Put case  
that, instead

Of old leasing and lies, we superiorly fed

These Heretics, Hussites . . .

*First Friend.* First answer my query !

If saved, art thou happy ?

*Fust.* I was and I am.

*First Friend.* Thy visage confirms it : how  
comes, then, that — weary

And woe-begone late — was it show, was it  
sham ? —

We found thee sunk thiswise ?

*Second Friend.* — In need of the dram

From the flask which a provident neighbor  
might carry !

*Fust.* Ah, friends, the fresh triumph soon  
flickers, fast fades !

I hailed Word's dispersion : could heartleaps  
but tarry !

Through me does Print furnish Truth wings ?  
The same aids

Cause Falsehood to range just as widely. What  
raids

On a region undreamed of does Printing en-  
able

Truth's foe to effect ! Printed leasing and lies  
May speed to the world's farthest corner —  
gross fable

No less than pure fact — to impede, neutralize,  
Abolish God's gift and Man's gain !

*First Friend.* Dost surmise

What struck me at first blush ? Our Beghards,  
Waldenses,

Jeronimites, Hussites — does one show his  
head,

Spout heresy now ? Not a priest in his senses  
Deigns answer mere speech, but piles fagots

instead,  
Refines as by fire, and, him silenced, all 's said.

Whereas if in future I pen an opuscle

Defying retort, as of old when rash tongues  
Were easy to tame, — straight some knave of  
the Huss-School

Prints answer forsooth ! Stop invisible lungs ?  
The barrel of blasphemy broached once, who  
bungs ?

*Second Friend.* Does my sermon, next Easter,  
meet fitting acceptance ?

Each captious disputative boy has his quirk  
“ *An cuique credendum sit ?* ” Well, the Church  
kept “ *ans* ”

In order till Fust set his engine at work !  
What trash will come flying from Jew, Moor,  
and Turk

When, goosequill, thy reign o'er the world is  
abolished !

Goose — ominous name ! With a goose woe  
began :

Quoth Huss — which means “ goose ” in his  
idiom unpolished —

“ Ye burn now a Goose : there succeeds me a  
Swan

Ye shall find quench your fire ! ”

*Fust.* I foresee such a man.

## ASOLANDO

TO MRS. ARTHUR BRONSON

To whom but you, dear Friend, should I dedicate verses — some few written, all of them supervised, in the comfort of your presence, and with yet another experience of the gracious hospitality now bestowed on me since so many a year, — adding a charm even to my residences at Venice, and leaving me little regret for the surprise and delight at my visits to Asolo in bygone days ?

I unite, you will see, the disconnected poems by a title-name popularly ascribed to the inventiveness of the ancient secretary of Queen Cornaro whose palace-tower still overlooks us : *Asolare* — “ to disport in the open air, amuse one's self at random.” The objection that such a word nowhere occurs in the works of the Cardinal is hardly important — Bembo was too thorough a purist to conserve in print a term which in talk he might possibly toy with : but the word is more likely derived from a Spanish source. I use it for

love of the place, and in requital of your pleasant assurance that an early poem of mine first attracted you thither — where and elsewhere, at La Mura as Cà Alvisi, may all happiness attend you!

Asolo: October 15, 1889.

Gratefully and affectionately yours,

R. B.

THE greater part of *Asolando* was written in 1888-89, though in one instance at least an early poem was included in the collection. The title

of the volume is explained in the dedication. The book, by a strange coincidence, was published on the day of Browning's death.

## PROLOGUE

"THE Poet's age is sad: for why?  
In youth, the natural world could show  
No common object but his eye  
At once involved with alien glow —  
His own soul's iris-bow.

"And now a flower is just a flower:  
Man, bird, beast are but beast, bird, man —  
Simply themselves, uncinct by dower  
Of dyes which, when life's day began,  
Round each in glory ran."

Friend, did you need an optic glass,  
Which were your choice? A lens to drape  
In ruby, emerald, chrysopras,  
Each object — or reveal its shape  
Clear outlined, past escape,

The naked very thing? — so clear  
That, when you had the chance to gaze,  
You found its inmost self appear  
Through outer seeming — truth ablaze,  
Not falsehood's fancy-haze?

How many a year, my Asolo,  
Since — one step just from sea to land —  
I found you, loved yet feared you so —  
For natural objects seemed to stand  
Palpably fire-clothed! No —

No mastery of mine o'er these!  
Terror with beauty, like the Bush  
Burning but unconsumed. Bend knees,  
Drop eyes to earthward! Language? Tush!  
Silence 't is awe decrees.

And now? The lambent flame is — where?  
Lost from the naked world: earth, sky,  
Hill, vale, tree, flower, — Italia's rare  
O'er-running beauty crowds the eye —  
But flame? The Bush is bare.

Hill, vale, tree, flower — they stand distinct,  
Nature to know and name. What then?  
A Voice spoke thence which straight unlinked  
Fancy from fact: see, all 's in ken:  
Has once my eyelid winked?

No, for the purged ear apprehends  
Earth's import, not the eye late dazed.  
The Voice said, "Call my works thy friends!  
At Nature dost thou shrink amazed?  
God is it who transcends."

Asolo: September 6, 1889.

## ROSNY

WOE, he went galloping into the war,  
Clara, Clara!  
Let us two dream: shall he 'scape with a  
scar?  
Scarcely disfigurement, rather a grace  
Making for manhood which nowise we mar:  
See, while I kiss it, the flush on his face —  
Rosny, Rosny!

Light does he laugh: "With your love in my  
soul" —  
(Clara, Clara!)  
"How could I other than — sound, safe, and  
whole —  
Cleave who opposed me asunder, yet stand  
Scatheless beside you, as, touching love's goal,  
Who won the race kneels, craves reward at  
your hand —  
Rosny, Rosny?"

Ay, but if certain who envied should see!  
Clara, Clara,  
Certain who simper: "The hero for me  
Hardly of life were so chary as miss  
Death — death and fame — that's love's guer-  
don when She  
Boasts, proud bereaved one, her choice fell on  
this  
Rosny, Rosny!"

So, — go on dreaming, — he lies mid a heap  
(Clara, Clara.)  
Of the slain by his hand: what is death but a  
sleep?  
Dead, with my portrait displayed on his  
breast:  
Love wrought his undoing: "No prudence  
could keep  
The love-maddened wretch from his fate."  
That is best.  
Rosny, Rosny!

## DUBIETY

I WILL be happy if but for once:  
Only help me, Autumn weather,  
Me and my cares to screen, ensconce  
In luxury's sofa-lap of leather!

Sleep? Nay, comfort — with just a cloud  
Suffusing day too clear and bright:  
Eve's essence, the single drop allowed  
To sully, like milk. Noon's water-white.

Let gauziness shade, not shroud, — adjust,  
 Dim and not deaden, — somehow sheathe  
 Aught sharp in the rough world's busy thrust,  
 If it reach me through dreaming's vapor-  
 wreath.

Be life so, all things ever the same!  
 For, what has disarmed the world? Out-  
 side,  
 Quiet and peace: inside, nor blame  
 Nor want, nor wish whate'er betide.

What is it like that has happened before?  
 A dream? No dream, more real by much.  
 A vision? But fanciful days of yore  
 Brought many: mere musing seems not  
 such.

Perhaps but a memory, after all!  
 — Of what came once when a woman leant  
 To feel for my brow where her kiss might  
 fall.  
 Truth ever, truth only the excellent!

#### NOW

OUT of your whole life give but a moment!  
 All of your life that has gone before,  
 All to come after it, — so you ignore,  
 So you make perfect the present, — condense,  
 In a rapture of rage, for perfection's endow-  
 ment,  
 Thought and feeling and soul and sense —  
 Merged in a moment which gives me at  
 last  
 You around me for once, you beneath me,  
 above me —  
 Me — sure that despite of time future, time  
 past, —  
 This tick of our life-time's one moment you  
 love me!  
 How long such suspension may linger? Ah,  
 Sweet —  
 The moment eternal — just that and no more —  
 When ecstasy's utmost we clutch at the core  
 While cheeks burn, arms open, eyes shut and  
 lips meet!

#### HUMILITY

WHAT girl but, having gathered flowers,  
 Strip the beds and spoil the bowers,  
 From the lapful light she carries  
 Drops a careless bud? — nor tarries  
 To regain the waif and stray:  
 "Store enough for home" — she'll say.

So say I too: give your lover  
 Heaps of loving — under, over,  
 Whelm him — make the one the wealthy!  
 Am I all so poor who — stealthy  
 Work it was! — picked up what fell:  
 Not the worst bud — who can tell?

#### POETICS

"So say the foolish!" Say the foolish so,  
 Love?  
 "Flower she is, my rose" — or else, "My  
 very swan is she" —  
 Or perhaps, "Yon maid-moon, blessing earth  
 below, Love,  
 That art thou!" — to them, belike: no such  
 vain words from me.  
 "Hush, rose, blush! no balm like breath," I  
 chide it:  
 "Bend thy neck its best, swan, — hers the  
 whiter curve!"  
 Be the moon the moon: my Love I place be-  
 side it:  
 What is she? Her human self, — no lower  
 word will serve.

#### SUMMUM BONUM

ALL the breath and the bloom of the year in  
 the bag of one bee:  
 All the wonder and wealth of the mine in the  
 heart of one gem:  
 In the core of one pearl all the shade and the  
 shine of the sea:  
 Breath and bloom, shade and shine, — won-  
 der, wealth, and — how far above them —  
 Truth, that's brighter than gem,  
 Trust, that's purer than pearl, —  
 Brightest truth, purest trust in the universe —  
 all were for me  
 In the kiss of one girl.

#### A PEARL, A GIRL

A SIMPLE ring with a single stone,  
 To the vulgar eye no stone of price:  
 Whisper the right word, that alone —  
 Forth starts a sprite, like fire from ice,  
 And lo, you are lord (says an Eastern scroll)  
 Of heaven and earth, lord whole and sole  
 Through the power in a pearl.

A woman ('t is I this time that say)  
 With little the world counts worthy praise:  
 Utter the true word — out and away  
 Escapes her soul: I am wrapt in blaze,  
 Creation's lord, of heaven and earth  
 Lord whole and sole — by a minute's birth —  
 Through the love in a girl!

#### SPECULATIVE

OTHERS may need new life in Heaven —  
 Man, Nature, Art — made new, assume!  
 Man with new mind old sense to leaven,  
 Nature, — new light to clear old gloom,  
 Art that breaks bounds, gets soaring-room.

I shall pray: "Fugitive as precious —  
 Minutes which passed. — return. remain!"



Let earth's old life once more enmesh us,  
You with old pleasure, me — old pain,  
So we but meet nor part again ! ”

## WHITE WITCHCRAFT

When a boy Browning had a humble friend  
in the person of a toad. “ He visited it daily  
where it burrowed under a white rosetree, an-  
nouncing himself by a pinch of gravel dropped  
into its hole ; and the creature would crawl  
forth, allow its head to be gently tickled, and  
reward the act with a loving glance of its soft  
full eyes.” MRS. ORR.

If you and I could change to beasts, what  
beast should either be ?  
Shall you and I play Jove for once ? Turn fox  
then, I decree !  
Shy wild sweet stealer of the grapes ! Now do  
your worst on me !

And thus you think to spite your friend —  
turned loathsome ? What, a toad ?  
So, all men shrink and shun me ! Dear men,  
pursue your road !  
Leave but my crevice in the stone, a reptile's fit  
abode !

Now say your worst, Canidia ! “ He 's loath-  
some, I allow :  
There may or may not lurk a pearl beneath his  
puckered brow :  
But see his eyes that follow mine — love lasts  
there, anyhow.”

## BAD DREAMS

## I

LAST night I saw you in my sleep :  
And how your charm of face was changed !  
I asked, “ Some love, some faith you keep ? ”  
You answered, “ Faith gone, love estranged.”

Whereat I woke — a twofold bliss :  
Waking was one, but next there came  
This other : “ Though I felt, for this,  
My heart break, I loved on the same.”

## BAD DREAMS

## II

You in the flesh and here —  
Your very self ! Now, wait !  
One word ! May I hope or fear ?  
Must I speak in love or hate ?  
Stay while I ruminate !

The fact and each circumstance  
Dare you disown ? Not you !  
That vast dome, that huge danger,  
And the gloom which overgrew  
A — possibly festive crew !

For why should men dance at all —  
Why women — a crowd of both —  
Unless they are gay ? Strange ball —  
Hands and feet plighting troth,  
Yet partners enforced and loth !

Of who danced there, no shape  
Did I recognize : thwart, perverse,  
Each grasped each, past escape  
In a whirl or weary or worse :  
Man's sneer met woman's curse,

While he and she toiled as if  
Their guardian set galley-slaves  
To supple chained limbs grown stiff :  
Unmanacled trulls and knaves —  
The lash for who misbehaves !

And a gloom was, all the while,  
Deeper and deeper yet  
O'ergrowing the rank and file  
Of that army of haters — set  
To mimic love's fever-fret.

By the wall-side close I crept,  
Avoiding the livid maze,  
And, safely so far, outstepped  
On a chamber — a chapel, says  
My memory or betrays —  
Closet-like, kept aloof  
From unseemly witnessing  
What sport made floor and roof  
Of the Devil's palace ring  
While his Damned amused their king.

Ay, for a low lamp burned,  
And a silence lay about  
What I, in the midst, discerned  
Though dimly till, past doubt,  
'T was a sort of throne stood out —

High seat with steps, at least :  
And the topmost step was filled  
By — whom ? What vested priest ?  
A stranger to me, — his guild,  
His cult, unreconciled

To my knowledge how guild and cult  
Are clothed in this world of ours :  
I pondered, but no result  
Came to — unless that Giaours  
So worship the Lower Powers.

When suddenly who entered ?  
Who knelt — did you guess I saw ?  
Who — raising that face were centred  
Allegiance to love and law  
So lately — off-casting awe,

Down-treading reserve, away  
Thrusting respect . . . but mine  
Stands firm — firm still shall stay !  
Ask Satan ! for I decline  
To tell — what I saw, in fine !

Yet here in the flesh you come —  
Your same self, form and face, —

In the eyes, mirth still at home !  
On the lips, that commonplace  
Perfection of honest grace !

Yet your errand is — needs must be —  
To palliate — well, explain,  
Expurgate in some degree  
Your soul of its ugly stain.  
Oh, you — the good in grain —

How was it your white took tinge ?  
“ A mere dream ” — never object !  
Sleep leaves a door on hinge  
Whence soul, ere our flesh suspect,  
Is off and away : detect

Her vagaries when loose, who can !  
Be she pranksome, be she rude,  
Disguise with the day began :  
With the night — ah, what ensued  
From draughts of a drink hell-brewed ?

Then She : “ What a queer wild dream !  
And perhaps the best fun is —  
Myself had its fellow — I seem  
Scarce awake from yet. ’T was this —  
Shall I tell you ? First, a kiss !

“ For the fault was just your own, —  
’T is myself expect apology :  
You warned me to let alone  
(Since our studies were mere philology)  
That ticklish (you said) Anthology.

“ So I dreamed that I passed *exam*  
Till a question posed me sore :  
‘ Who translated this epigram  
By — an author we best ignore ? ’  
And I answered, ‘ Hannah More ! ’”

### BAD DREAMS

#### III

THIS was my dream : I saw a Forest  
Old as the earth, no track nor trace  
Of unmade man. Thou, Soul, explorest —  
Though in a trembling rapture — space  
Immeasurable ! Shrubs, turned trees,  
Trees that touch heaven, support its freize  
Studded with sun and moon and star :  
While — oh, the enormous growths that bar  
Mine eye from penetrating past  
Their tangled twine where lurks — nay, lives  
Royally lone, some brute-type east  
I’ the rough, time cancels, man forgives.

On, Soul ! I saw a lucid City  
Of architectural device  
Every way perfect. Paise for pity,  
Lightning ! nor leave a cicatrice  
On those bright marbles, dome and spire,  
Structures palatial, — streets which mire  
Dares not defile, paved all too fine  
For human footstep’s smirch, not thine —  
Proud solitary traverser,  
My Soul, of silent lengths of way —  
With what ecstatic dread, aver,  
Lest life start sanctioned by thy stay !

Ah, but the last sight was the hideous !  
A City, yes, — a Forest, true, —  
But each devouring each, Perfidious  
Snake-plants had strangled what I knew  
Was a pavilion once : each oak  
Held on his horns some spoil he broke  
By surreptitiously beneath  
Upthrusting : pavements, as with teeth,  
Gripped huge weed widening crack and split  
In squares and circles stone-work erst.  
Oh, Nature — good ! Oh, Art — no whit  
Less worthy ! Both in one — accurst !

### BAD DREAMS

#### IV

It happened thus : my slab, though new,  
Was getting weather-stained, — beside,  
Herbage, balm, peppermint o’ergrew  
Letter and letter : till you tried  
Somewhat, the Name was scarce descried.

That strong stern man my lover came :  
— Was he my lover ? Call him, pray,  
My life’s cold critic bent on blame  
Of all poor I could do or say  
To make me worth his love one day —

One far day when, by diligent  
And dutiful amending faults,  
Foibles, all weaknesses which went  
To challenge and excuse assaults  
Of culture wronged by taste that halts —

Discrepancies should mar no plan  
Symmetric of the qualities  
Claiming respect from — say — a man  
That’s strong and stern. “ Once more he pries  
Into me with those critic eyes ! ”

No question ! so — “ Conclude, condemn  
Each failure my poor self avows !  
Leave to its fate all you condemn !  
There ’s Solomon’s selected spouse :  
Earth needs must hold such maids — choose  
them ! ”

Why, he was weeping ! Surely gone  
Sternness and strength : with eyes to ground  
And voice a broken monotone —  
“ Only be as you were ! Abound  
In foibles, faults, — laugh, robed and crowned

“ As Folly’s veriest queen, — care I  
One feather-fluff ? Look pity, Love,  
On prostrate me — your foot shall try  
This forehead’s use — mount thence above,  
And reach what Heaven you dignify ! ”

Now, what could bring such change about ?  
The thought perplexed : till, following  
His gaze upon the ground, — why, out  
Came all the secret ! So, a thing  
Thus simple has deposed my king !

For, spite of weeds that strove to spoil  
Plain reading on the lettered slab.

My name was clear enough — no soil  
 Effaced the date when one chance stab  
 Of scorn . . . if only ghosts might blab!

## INAPPREHENSIVENESS

WE two stood simply friend-like side by side,  
 Viewing a twilight country far and wide,  
 Till she at length broke silence. "How it towers  
 Yonder, the ruin o'er this vale of ours!  
 The West's faint flare behind it so relieves  
 Its rugged outline — sight perhaps deceives,  
 Or I could almost fancy that I see  
 A branch wave plain — belike some wind-sown  
 tree

Chance-rooted where a missing turret was.  
 What would I give for the perspective glass  
 At home, to make out if 't is really so!  
 Has Ruskin noticed here at Asolo  
 That certain weed-growths on the ravaged wall  
 Seem " . . . something that I could not say at all,  
 My thought being rather — as absorbed she  
 sent

Look onward after look from eyes distent  
 With longing to reach Heaven's gate left ajar —  
 "Oh, fancies that might be, oh, facts that are!  
 What of a wilding? By you stands, and may  
 So stand unnoticed till the Judgment Day,  
 One who, if once aware that your regard  
 Claimed what his heart holds, — woke, as from  
 its sword

The flower, the dormant passion, so to speak —  
 Then what a rush of life would startling wreak  
 Revenge on your inapprehensive stare  
 While, from the ruin and the West's faint flare,  
 You let your eyes meet mine, touch what you  
 term

Quietude — that 's an universe in germ —  
 The dormant passion needing but a look  
 To burst into immense life!"

"No, the book  
 Which noticed how the wall-growths wave,"  
 said she,  
 "Was not by Ruskin."

I said, "Vernon Lee."

## WHICH?

So, the three Court-ladies began  
 Their trial of who judged best  
 In esteeming the love of a man:  
 Who preferred with most reason was thereby  
 confessed  
 Boy-Cupid's exemplary catcher and eager;  
 An Abbé crossed legs to decide on the wager.

FIRST the Duchesse: "Mine for me —  
 Who were it but God's for Him,  
 And the King's for — who but he?  
 Both faithful and loyal, one grace more shall  
 brim  
 His cup with perfection: a lady's true lover,  
 He holds — save his God and his king — none  
 above her."

"I require" — outspoke the Marquise —  
 "Pure thoughts, ay, but also fine deeds:"

Play the paladin must he, to please  
 My whim, and — to prove my knight's service  
 exceeds  
 Your saint's and your loyalist's praying and  
 kneeling —  
 Show wounds, each wide mouth to my mercy  
 appealing."

Then the Comtesse: "My choice be a  
 wretch,  
 Mere losel in body and soul,  
 Thrice accurst! What care I, so he stretch  
 Arms to me his sole savior, love's ultimate  
 goal,  
 Out of earth and men's noise — names of 'in-  
 fidel,' 'traitor,'  
 Cast up at him? Crown me, crown's adjudica-  
 tor!"

And the Abbé uncrossed his legs,  
 Took snuff, a reflective pinch,  
 Broke silence: "The question begs  
 Much pondering ere I pronounce. Shall I  
 flinch?  
 The love which to one and one only has refer-  
 ence  
 Seems terribly like what perhaps gains God's  
 preference."

## THE CARDINAL AND THE DOG

This poem was written in May, 1842, at the  
 same time as the *Pied Piper*, both having been  
 written at the request of Macready's little son,  
 who was confined to the house by illness and  
 wanted Browning to write him some poems for  
 which he could make pictures.

CRESCENZIO, the Pope's Legate at the High  
 Council, Trent,  
 — Year Fifteen hundred twenty-two, March  
 Twenty-five — intent  
 On writing letters to the Pope till late into the  
 night,  
 Rose, weary, to refresh himself, and saw a  
 monstrous sight:  
 (I give mine Author's very words: he penned,  
 I reindite.)

A black Dog of vast bigness, eyes flaming, ears  
 that hung  
 Down to the very ground almost, into the  
 chamber sprung  
 And made directly for him, and laid himself  
 right under  
 The table where Crescenzo wrote — who called  
 in fear and wonder  
 His servants in the ante-room, commanded  
 every one  
 To look for and find out the beast: but, look-  
 ing, they found none.

The Cardinal fell melancholy, then sick, soon  
 after died:  
 And at Verona, as he lay on his death-bed, he  
 cried



Aloud to drive away the Dog that leapt on his bedside.

Heaven keep us Protestants from harm : the rest . . . no ill betide !

### THE POPE AND THE NET

WHAT, he on whom our voices unanimously ran,  
Made Pope at our last Conclave ? Full low his life began :

His father earned the daily bread as just a fisherman.

So much the more his boy minds book, gives  
proof of mother-wit,  
Becomes first Deacon, and then Priest, then  
Bishop : see him sit  
No less than Cardinal ere long, while no one  
cries " Unfit ! "

But some one smirks, some other smiles, jogs  
elbow and nods head :  
Each winks at each : " I'-faith, a rise ! Saint  
Peter's net, instead  
Of sword and keys, is come in vogue ! " You  
think he blushes red ?

Not he, of humble holy heart ! " Unworthy  
me ! " he sighs :  
" From fisher's drudge to Church's prince — it  
is indeed a rise :  
So, here 's my way to keep the fact forever in  
my eyes ! "

And straightway in his palace-hall, where  
commonly is set  
Some coat-of-arms, some portraiture ancestral,  
lo, we met  
His mean estate's reminder in his fisher-father's  
net !

Which step conciliates all and some, stops cavil  
in a trice :  
" The humble holy heart that holds of new-  
born pride no spice !  
He 's just the saint to choose for Pope ! "  
Each adds, " 'T is my advice. "

So, Pope he was : and when we flocked — its  
sacred slipper on —  
To kiss his foot, we lifted eyes, alack, the thing  
was gone —  
That guarantee of lowlihead, — eclipsed that  
star which shone !

Each eyed his fellow, one and all kept silence.  
I eried, " Pish !  
I 'll make me spokesman for the rest, express  
the common wish.  
Why, Father, is the net removed ? " " Son, it  
hath caught the fish. "

### THE BEAN-FEAST

HE was the man — Pope Sixtus, that Fifth,  
that swineherd's scs

He knew the right thing, did it, and thanked  
God when 't was done :  
But of all he had to thank for, my fancy some-  
how leans  
To thinking, what most moved him was a cer-  
tain meal on beans.

For one day, as his wont was, in just enough  
disguise  
As he went exploring wickedness, — to see with  
his own eyes  
If law had due observance in the city's entrail  
dark  
As well as where, i' the open, crime stood an  
obvious mark, —

He chanced, in a blind alley, on a tumble-down  
once house  
Now hovel, vilest structure in Rome the ruinous :  
And, as his tact impelled him, Sixtus advent-  
ured bold,  
To learn how lowliest subjects bore hunger,  
toil, and cold.

There sat they at high-supper — man and wife,  
lad and lass,  
Poor as you please, but cleanly all and care-  
free : pain that was  
— Forgotten, pain as sure to be let bide aloof  
its time, —  
Mightily munched the brave ones — what  
mattered gloom or grime ?

Said Sixtus, " Feast, my children ! who works  
hard needs eat well.  
I 'm just a supervisor, would hear what you  
can tell.  
Do any wrongs want righting ? The Father  
tries his best,  
But, since he 's only mortal, sends such as I to  
test  
The truth of all that 's told him — how folk  
like you may fare :  
Come ! — only don't stop eating — when mouth  
has words to spare —

" You " — smiled he — " play the spokesman,  
bell-wether of the flock !  
Are times good, masters gentle ? Your griev-  
ances unlock !  
How of your work and wages ? — pleasures, if  
such may be —  
Pains, as such are for certain. " Thus smiling  
questioned he.

But somehow, spite of smiling, awe stole upon  
the group —  
An inexpressible surmise : why should a priest  
thus stoop —  
Pry into what concerned folk ? Each visage  
fell. Aware,  
Cries Sixtus interposing : " Nay, children, have  
no care !

" Fear nothing ! Who employs me requires  
the plain truth. Pelf  
Beguiles who should inform me : so, I inform  
myself.

See!" And he drew his hood back, let the close vesture ope,  
Showed face, and where on tippet the cross lay: 't was the Pope.

Imagine the joyful wonder! "How shall the like of us —  
Poor souls — requite such blessing of our rude bean-feast?" "Thus —  
Thus amply!" laughed Pope Sixtus. "I early rise, sleep late:  
Who works may eat: they tempt me, your beans there: spare a plate!"

Down sat he on the door-step: 't was they this time said grace:  
He ate up the last mouthful, wiped lips, and then, with face  
Turned heavenward, broke forth thankful:  
"Not now, that earth obeys  
Thy word in mine, that through me the peoples know Thy ways —

"But that Thy care extendeth to Nature's homely wants,  
And, while man's mind is strengthened, Thy goodness nowise scants  
Man's body of its comfort, — that I whom kings and queens  
Crouch to, pick crumbs from off my table, relish beans!  
The thunders I but seem to launch, there plain Thy hand all see:  
That I have appetite, digest, and thrive — that boon's for me."

## MUCKLE-MOUTH MEG

FROWNED the Laird on the Lord: "So, red-handed I catch thee?

Death-doomed by our Law of the Border!  
We've a gallows outside and a chiel to dispatch thee:

Who trespasses — hangs: all's in order."  
He met frown with smile, did the young English gallant:  
Then the Laird's dame: "Nay, Husband, I beg!  
He's comely: be merciful! Grace for the callant  
— If he marries our Muckle-mouth Meg!

"No mile-wide-mouthed monster of yours do I marry:  
Grant rather the gallows!" laughed he.  
"Foul fare kith and kin of you — why do you tarry?"  
"To tame your fierce temper!" quoth she.

"Shove him quick in the Hole, shut him fast for a week:  
Cold, darkness, and hunger work wonders:  
Who lion-like roars now, mouse-fashion will squeak,  
And 'it rains' soon succeed to 'it thunders.'"

A week did he bide in the cold and the dark  
— Not hunger: for duly at morning  
In flitted a lass, and a voice like a lark  
Chirped, "Muckle-mouth Meg still ye're scorning?"

"Go hang, but here's parritch to hearten ye first!"

"Did Meg's muckle-mouth boast within some  
Such music as yours, mine should match it or burst:

No frog-jaws! So tell folk, my Winsome!"

Soon week came to end, and, from Hole's door set wide,

Out he marched, and there waited the lassie:  
"Yon gallows, or Muckle-mouth Meg for a bride!

Consider! Sky's blue and turf's grassy:

"Life's sweet: shall I say ye wed Muckle-mouth Meg?"

"Not I," quoth the stout heart: "too eerie  
The mouth that can swallow a bubblyjock's egg;

Shall I let it munch mine? Never, Dearie!

"Not Muckle-mouth Meg? Wow, the obstinate man!

Perhaps he would rather wed me!"

"Ay, would he — with just for a dowry your can!"

"I'm Muckle-mouth Meg," chirruped she.

"Then so — so — so — so —" as he kissed her apace —

"Will I widen thee out till thou turnest  
From Margaret Minnikin-mou', by God's grace,

To Muckle-mouth Meg in good earnest!"

## ARCADES AMBO

A. You blame me that I ran away?  
Why, Sir, the enemy advanced:  
Balls flew about, and — who can say  
But one, if I stood firm, had glanced  
In my direction? Cowardice?  
I only know we don't live twice,  
Therefore — shun death, is my advice.

B. Shun death at all risks? Well, at some!  
True, I myself, Sir, though I scold  
The cowardly, by no means come  
Under reproof as overbold  
— I, who would have no end of brutes  
Cut up alive to guess what suits  
My case and saves my toe from shoots.

## THE LADY AND THE PAINTER

She. YET womanhood you reverence,  
So you profess!

He. With heart and soul.  
She. Of which fact this is evidence!

To help Art-study, — for some dole

Of certain wretched shillings, — you  
Induce a woman — virgin too —  
To strip and stand stark-naked ?

He. True.

She. Nor feel you so degrade her ?

He. What  
— (Excuse the interruption) — clings  
Half-savage-like around your hat ?

She. Ah, do they please you ? Wild-bird-  
wings !

Next season, — Paris-prints assert, —  
We must go feathered to the skirt :  
My modiste keeps on the alert.

Owls, hawks, jays — swallows most ap-  
prove.

He. Dare I speak plainly ?

She. Oh, I trust !

He. Then, Lady Blanche, it less would move

In heart and soul of me disgust

Did you strip off those spoils you wear,  
And stand — for thanks, not shillings —  
bare

To help Art like my Model there.

She well knew what absolved her —  
praise

In me for God's surpassing good,

Who granted to my reverent gaze

A type of purest womanhood.

You — clothed with murder of his best

Of harmless beings — stand the test !

What is it you know ?

She. That you jest !

#### PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE

STOP rowing ! This one of our bye-canals  
O'er a certain bridge you have to cross  
That's named, "Of the Angel : " listen why !  
The name "Of the Devil" too much appalls  
Venetian acquaintance, so — his the loss,  
While the gain goes . . . look on high !

An angel visibly guards yon house :  
Above each scutcheon — a pair — stands he,  
Enfolds them with droop of either wing :  
The family's fortune were perilous  
Did he thence depart — you will soon agree,  
If I hitch into verse the thing.

For, once on a time, this house belonged  
To a lawyer of note, with law and to spare,  
But also with overmuch lust of gain :  
In the matter of law you were nowise wronged,  
But alas for the lure ! He picked you bare  
To the bone. Did folk complain ?

"I exact," growled he, "work's rightful due :  
'T is folk seek me, not I seek them.  
Advice at its price ! They succeed or fail,  
Get law in each case — and a lesson too :  
Keep clear of the Courts — is advice *ad rem* :  
They'll remember, I'll be bail !"

So, he pocketed fee without a qualm.  
What reason for squeamishness ? Labor done,  
To play he betook him with lightened heart,

Ate, drank, and made merry with song or  
psalm.

Since the yoke of the Church is an easy one —  
Fits neck nor causes smart.

Brief : never was such an extortionate  
Rascal — the word has escaped my teeth !  
And yet — (all's down in a book no ass  
Indited, believe me ! — this reprobate  
Was punctual at prayer-time : gold lurked be-  
neath  
Alloy of the rankest brass.

For, play the extortioner as he might,  
Fleece folk each day and all day long,  
There was this redeeming circumstance :  
He never lay down to sleep at night  
But he put up a prayer first, brief yet strong,  
"Our Lady avert mischance !"

Now it happened at close of a fructuous week  
"I must ask," quoth he, "some Saint to dine :  
I want that widow well out of my ears  
With her ailing and wailing. Who bade her  
seek

Redress at my hands ? 'She was wronged !'  
Folk whine

If to Law wrong right appears.

"Matteo da Bascio — he's my man !  
No less than Chief of the Capucins :  
His presence will surely suffumigate  
My house — fools think lies under a ban  
If somebody loses what somebody wins.  
Hark, there he knocks at the grate !

"Come in, thou blessed of Mother Church !  
I go and prepare — to bid, that is,  
My trusty and diligent servitor  
Get all things in readiness. Vain the search  
Through Venice for one to compare with this  
My model of ministrants : for —

"For — once again, nay, three times over,  
My helpmate's an ape ! so intelligently,  
I train him to drudge at household work :  
He toils and he moils, I live in clover :  
Oh, you shall see ! There's a goodly scent —  
From his cooking, or I'm a Turk !

"Scarcely need to descend and supervise :  
I'll do it, however : wait here awhile !"  
So, down to the kitchen gayly scuttles  
Our host, nor notes the alarmed surmise  
Of the holy man. "O depth of guile !  
He blindly guzzles and guttles,

"While — who is it dresses the food and pours  
The liquor ? Some fiend — I make no doubt —  
In likeness of — which of the loathly brutes ?  
An ape ! Where hides he ? No bull that gores,  
No bear that hugs — 't is the mock and flout  
Of an ape, fiend's face that suits.

"So — out with thee, creature, wherever thou  
hidest !  
I charge thee, by virtue of . . . right do I  
judge !



There skulks he perdue, crouching under the bed.  
Well done! What, forsooth, in beast's shape thou confidest?  
I know and would name thee but that I begrudge  
Breath spent on such carrion. Instead —  
“I adjure thee by ——” “Stay!” laughed the portent that rose  
From floor up to ceiling: “No need to adjure! See Satan in person, late ape by command Of Him thou adjurest in vain. A saint's nose Scent's brimstone though incense be burned for a lure.  
Yet, hence! for I'm safe, understand!”  
“'T is my charge to convey to fit punishment's place  
This lawyer, my liegeman, for cruelty wrought On his clients, the widow and orphan, poor souls He has plagued by exactions which proved law's disgrace.  
Made equity void and to nothingness brought God's pity. Fiends, on with fresh coals!”  
“Stay!” nowise confounded, withstands Hell its match:  
“How comes it, were truth in this story of thine.  
God's punishment suffered a minute's delay? Weeks, months have elapsed since thou squattedst at watch  
For a spring on thy victim: what caused thee decline  
Advantage till challenged to-day?”  
“That challenge I meet with contempt,” quoth the fiend.  
“Thus much I acknowledge: the man's armed in mail:  
I wait till a joint's loose, then quick ply my claws.  
Thy friend's one good custom — he knows not — has screened  
His flesh hitherto from what else would assail: At ‘Save me, Madonna!’ I pause.  
“That prayer did the losel but once pretermit, My pounce were upon him. I keep me attent: He's in safety but till he's caught napping.  
Enough!”  
“Ay, enough!” smiles the Saint — “for the biter is bit,  
The spy caught in somnolence. Vanish! I'm sent  
To smooth up what fiends do in rough.”  
“I vanish? Through wall or through roof?” the ripost  
Grinned gayly. “My orders were — ‘Leave not unharmed  
The abode of this lawyer! Do damage to prove ‘T was for something thou quittedst the land of the lost —  
To add to their number this unit!’ Though charmed  
From descent there, on earth that's above

“I may haply amerce him.” “So do, and be gone,  
I command thee! For, look! Though there's a doorway behind  
And window before thee, go straight through the wall,  
Leave a breach in the brickwork, a gap in the stone  
For who passes to stare at!” “Spare speech! I'm resigned:  
Here goes!” roared the goblin, as all —  
Wide bat-wings, spread arms and legs, tail out a-stream,  
Crash obstacles went, right and left, as he soared  
Or else sank, was clean gone through the hole anyhow.  
The Saint returned thanks: then a satisfied gleam  
On the bald polished pate showed that triumph was scored.  
“To dinner with appetite now!”  
Down he trips. “In good time!” smirks the host. “Didst thou scent  
Rich savor of roast meat? Where hides he, my ape?  
Look alive, be alert! He's away to wash plates.  
Sit down, Saint! What's here? Dost examine a rent  
In the napkin thou twistest and twirlest? Agape . . .  
Ha, blood is it drips nor abates  
“From thy wringing a cloth, late was laved and fair?  
What means such a marvel?” “Just this does it mean:  
I convince and convict thee of sin!” answers straight  
The Saint, wringing on, wringing ever — oh, rare! —  
Blood — blood from a napery snow not more clean.  
“A miracle shows thee thy state!”  
“See — blood thy extortions have wrung from the flesh  
Of thy clients who, sheep-like, arrived to be shorn,  
And left thee — or fleeced to the quick or so flayed  
That, behold, their blood gurgles and grumbles afresh  
To accuse thee! Ay, down on thy knees, get up sworn  
To restore! Restitution once made,  
“Sin no more! Dost thou promise? Absolved, then, arise!  
Upstairs follow me! Art amazed at yon breach?  
Who battered and shattered and scattered, escape  
From thy purloins obtaining? That Father of Lies

Thou wast wont to extol for his feats, all and each  
The Devil's disguised as thine ape ! "

Be sure that our lawyer was torn by remorse,  
Shed tears in a flood, vowed and swore so to alter

His ways that how else could our Saint but declare

He was cleansed of past sin ? " For sin future  
— fare worse

Thou undoubtedly wilt," warned the Saint,  
" shouldst thou falter

One whit ! " " Oh, for that have no care !

" I am firm in my purposed amendment. But,  
prithée,

Must ever affront and affright me yon gap ?

Who made it for exit may find it of use

For entrance as easy. If, down in his smithy

He forges me fetters — when heated, mayhap,

He'll up with an armful ! Broke loose —

" How bar him out henceforth ? " " Judiciously urged ! "

Was the good man's reply. " How to balk him is plain.

There's nothing the Devil objects to so much,  
So speedily flies from, as one of those purged  
Of his presence, the angels who erst formed his train —

His, their emperor. Choose one of such !

" Get fashioned his likeness and set him on high

At back of the breach thus adroitly filled up :  
Display him as guard of two scutcheons, thy arms :

I warrant no devil attempts to get by

And disturb thee so guarded. Eat, drink, dine,  
and sup,

In thy rectitude, safe from alarms ! "

So said and so done. See, the angel has place  
Where the Devil has passage ! All's down in a book.

Gainsay me ? Consult it ! Still faithless ?  
Trust me ?

Trust Father Boverio who gave me the case  
In his Annals — gets of it, by hook or by crook,  
Two confirmative witnesses : three

Are surely enough to establish an act :

And thereby we learn — would we ascertain truth —

To trust wise tradition which took, at the time,  
Note that served till slow history ventured on fact,

Though folk have their fling at tradition forsooth !

Row, boys, fore and aft, rhyme and chime !

#### BEATRICE SIGNORINI

THIS strange thing happened to a painter once :  
Viterbo boasts the man among her sons  
Of note, I seem to think : his ready tool

Picked up its precepts in Cortona's school —  
That's Pietro Berretini, whom they call  
Cortona, these Italians : greatish-small,  
Our painter was his pupil, by repute  
His match if not his master absolute,  
Though whether he spoiled fresco more or less,  
And what's its fortune, scarce repays your guess.

Still, for one circumstance, I save his name  
— Francesco Romanelli : do the same !

He went to Rome and painted : there he knew

A wonder of a woman painting too —

For she, at least, was no Cortona's drudge :

Witness that ardent fancy-shape — I judge

A semblance of her soul — she called, " Desire "

With starry front for guide, where sits the fire  
She left to brighten Buonarroti's house.

If you see Florence, pay that piece your vows,

Though blockhead Baldinucci's mind, imbued  
With monkish morals, bade folk " Drape the nude

And stop the scandal ! " quoth the record prim  
I borrow this of : hang his book and him !

At Rome, then, where these fated ones met first,

The blossom of his life had hardly burst

While hers was blooming at full beauty's stand :

No less Francesco — when half-ripe he scanned

Consummate Artemisia — grew one want

To have her his and make her ministrant

With every gift of body and of soul

To him. In vain. Her spherish self was whole —

Might only touch his orb at Art's sole point.

Suppose he could persuade her to enjoin

Her life — past, present, future — all in his

At Art's sole point by some explosive kiss  
Of love through lips, would love's success defeat

Artistry's haunting curse — the Incomplete ?

Artists no doubt they both were, — what beside

Was she ? who long had felt heart, soul spread wide

Her life out, knowing much and loving well,

On either side Art's narrow space where fell

Reflection from his own speck : but the germ

Of individual genius — what we term

The very self, the God-gift whence had grown

Heart's life and soul's life — how make that his own ?

Vainly his Art, reflected, smiled in small

On Art's one facet of her ampler ball ;

The rest, touch-free, took in, gave back  
heaven, earth,

All where he was not. Hope, well-nigh ere birth

Came to Desire, died off all-unfulfilled.

" What though in Art I stand the abler-skilled,"

(So he conceded : mediocrity

Turns on itself the self-transforming eye)

" If only Art were suing, mine would plead

To purpose : man — by nature I exceed

Woman the bounded : but how much beside

She boasts, would sue in turn and be denied !

Love her ? My own wife loves me in a sort

That suits us both : she takes the world's report

Of what my work is worth, and, for the rest,

Concedes that, while his consort keeps her nest,

The eagle soars a licensed vagrant, lives  
A wide free life which she at least forgives —  
Good Beatrice Signorini! Well  
And wisely did I choose her. But the spell  
To subjugate this Artemisia — where?  
She passionless? — she resolute to care  
Nowise beyond the plain sufficiency  
Of fact that she is she and I am I  
— Acknowledged arbitrator for us both  
In her life as in mine which she were loth  
Even to learn the laws of? No, and no,  
Twenty times over! Ay, it must be so:  
I for myself, alas! "

Whereon, instead  
Of the checked lover's utterance — why, he said  
— Leaning over her easel: "Flesh is red"  
(Or some such just remark) — "by no means  
white

As Guido's practice teaches: you are right."  
Then came the better impulse: "What if  
pride

Were wisely trampled on, whate'er betide?  
If I grow hers, not mine — join lives, confuse  
Bodies and spirits, gain her not but lose  
Myself to Artemisia? That were love!  
Of two souls — one must bend, one rule above:  
If I crouch under proudly, lord turned slave,  
Were it not worthier both than if she gave  
Herself — in treason to herself — to me?"

And, all the while, he felt it could not be.  
Such love was true love: love that way who  
can!

Some one that's born half woman, not whole  
man:

For man, prescribed man better or man worse,  
Why, whether microcosm or universe,  
What law prevails alike through great and  
small,

The world and man — world's miniature we  
call?

Male is the master. "That way" smiled and  
sighed

Our true male estimator — "puts her pride  
My wife in making me the outlet whence  
She learns all Heaven allows: 't is my pretence  
To paint: her lord should do what else but  
paint?"

Do I break brushes, cloister me turned saint?  
Then, best of all suits sanctity her spouse  
Who acts for Heaven, allows and disallows  
At pleasure, past appeal, the right, the wrong  
In all things. That's my wife's way. But this  
strong

Confident Artemisia — an adept  
In Art does she conceit herself? 'Except  
In just this instance,' tell her, 'no one draws  
More rigidly observant of the laws  
Of right design: yet here, — permit me hint, —  
If the acromion had a deeper dint,  
That shoulder were perfection.' What surprise  
— Nay scorn, shoots black fire from those  
startled eyes!

She to be lessoned in design forsooth!  
I'm doomed and done for, since I spoke the  
truth.

Make my own work the subject of dispute —  
Fails it of just perfection absolute  
Somewhere? Those motors, flexors, — don't I  
know

Ser Santi, styled 'Tirititototo  
The pencil-prig,' might blame them? Yet my  
wife —

Were he and his nicknamer brought to life,  
Tito and 'Litian, to pronounce again —  
Ask her who knows more — I or the great  
Twain,

Our colorist and draughtsman! "I help her,  
Not she helps me; and neither shall demur  
Because my portion is" — he chose to think —  
"Quite other than a woman's: I may drink

At many waters, must repose by none —  
Rather arise and fare forth, having done  
Duty to one new excellence the more,  
Ablar thereby, though impotent before  
So much was gained of knowledge. Best de-  
part,

From this last lady I have learned by heart!"

Thus he concluded of himself — resigned  
To play the man and master: "Man boasts  
mind:

Woman, man's sport calls mistress, to the same  
Does body's suit and service. Would she claim  
— My placid Beatrice-wife — pretence  
Even to blame her lord if, going hence,  
He wistfully regards one whom — did fate  
Concede — he might accept queen, abdicate  
Kingship because of? — one of no meek sort  
But masterful as he: man's match in short?  
Oh, there's no secret I were best conceal!  
Bicé shall know; and should a stray tear steal  
From out the blue eye, stain the rose cheek —  
bah!

A smile, a word's gay reassurance — ah,  
With kissing interspersed, — shall make amends,  
Turn pain to pleasure."

"What, in truth so ends  
Abruptly, do you say, our intercourse?"

Next day, asked Artemisia: "I'll divorce  
Husband and wife no longer. Go your ways,  
Leave Rome! Viterbo owns no equal, says  
The by-word, for fair women: you, no doubt,  
May boast a paragon all specks without,  
Using the painter's privilege to choose  
Among what's rarest. Will your wife refuse  
Acceptance from — no rival — of a gift?  
You paint the human figure I make shift  
Humbly to reproduce: but, in my hours  
Of idlesse, what I fain would paint is — flowers.  
Look now!"

She twitched aside a veiling cloth.  
"Here is my keepsake — frame and picture  
both:

For see, the frame is all of flowers festooned  
About an empty space, — left thus, to wound  
No natural susceptibility:  
How can I guess? 'T is you must fill, not I.  
The central space with — her whom you like  
best!

That is your business, mine has been the rest.  
But judge!"  
How judge them? Each of us, in flowers.



Chooses his love, allies it with past hours,  
 Old meetings, vanished forms and faces: no —  
 Here let each favorite unmolested blow  
 For one heart's homage, no tongue's banal praise,  
 Whether the rose appealingly bade "Gaze  
 Your fill on me, sultana who dethrone  
 The gaudy tulip!" or 't was "Me alone  
 Rather do homage to, who lily am,  
 No unabashed rose!" "Do I vainly cram  
 My cup with sweets, your jonquil?" "Why  
 forget

Vernal endearments with the violet?"  
 So they contested yet concerted, all  
 As one, to circle round about, enthral  
 Yet, self-forgetting, push to prominence  
 The midmost wonder, gained no matter whence.

There 's a tale extant, in a book I conned  
 Long years ago, which treats of things beyond  
 The common, antique times and countries queer  
 And customs strange to match. " 'T is said,  
 last year,"

(Recounts my author) "that the King had mind  
 To view his kingdom — guessed at from behind  
 A palace-window hitherto. Announced  
 No sooner was such purpose than 't was pounced  
 Upon by all the ladies of the land —  
 Loyal but light of life: they formed a band  
 Of loveliest ones but lithest also, since  
 Proudly they all combined to bear their prince.  
 Backs joined to breasts, — arms, legs, — nay,  
 ankles, wrists,  
 Hands, feet, I know not by what turns and  
 twists,

So interwoven lay that you believed  
 'T was one sole beast of burden which received  
 The monarch on its back, of breadth not scant,  
 Since fifty girls made one white elephant."  
 So with the fifty flowers which shapes and hues  
 Blent, as I tell, and made one fast yet loose  
 Mixture of beauties, composite, distinct  
 No less in each combining flower that linked  
 With flower to form a fit environment  
 For — whom might be the painter's heart's in-  
 tent

Thus, in the midst enhaloed, to enshrine?

"This glory-guarded middle space — is mine?  
 For me to fill?"

"For you, my Friend! We part,  
 Never perchance to meet again. Your Art —  
 What if I mean it — so to speak — shall wed  
 My own, be witness of the life we led  
 When sometimes it has seemed our souls near  
 found

Each one the other as its mate — unbound  
 Had yours been haply from the better choice  
 — Beautiful Biccé: 't is the common voice,  
 The crowning verdict. Make whom you like best  
 Queen of the central space, and manifest  
 Your predilection for what flower beyond  
 All flowers finds favor with you. I am fond  
 Of — say — yon rose's rich predominance,  
 While you — what wonder? — more affect the  
 glance

The gentler violet from its leafy screen  
 Ventures: so — choose your flower and paint  
 your queen!"

Oh, but the man was ready, head as hand,  
 Instructed and adroit. "Just as you stand,  
 Stay and be made — would Nature but relent —  
 By Art immortal!"

Every implement  
 In tinning reach — a palette primed, each  
 squeeze  
 Of oil-paint in its proper patch — with these,  
 Brushes, a veritable sheaf to grasp!  
 He worked as he had never dared.

"Unclasp  
 My Art from yours who can!" — he cried at  
 length,  
 As down he threw the pencil — "Grace from  
 Strength  
 Dissociate, from your flowery fringe detach  
 My face of whom it frames, — the feat will  
 match

With that of Time should Time from me extract  
 Your memory, Artemisia!" And in fact, —  
 What with the pricking impulse, sudden glow  
 Of soul — head, hand cooperated so  
 That face was worthy of its frame, 't is said —  
 Perfect, suppose!

They parted. Soon instead  
 Of Rome was home, — of Artemisia — well,  
 The placid-perfect wife. And it befell  
 That after the first incontestably  
 Blessedest of all blisses (— wherefore try  
 Your patience with embracings and the rest  
 Due from Calypso's all-unwilling guest  
 To his Penelope?) — there somehow came  
 The coolness which as duly follows flame.  
 So, one day, "What if we inspect the gifts  
 My Art has gained us?"

Now the wife uplifts  
 A casket-lid, now tries a medal's chain  
 Round her own lithe neck, fits a ring in vain  
 — Too loose on the fine finger, — vows and  
 swears

The jewel with two pendent pearls like pears  
 Betters a lady's bosom — witness else!  
 And so forth, while Ulysses smiles.

"Such spells  
 Subdue such natures — sex must worship toys  
 — Trinkets and trash: yet, ah, quite other joys  
 Must stir from sleep the passionate abyss  
 Of — such an one as her I know — not this  
 My gentle consort with the milk for blood!  
 Why, did it chance that in a careless mood  
 (In those old days, gone — never to return —  
 When we talked — she to teach and I to learn)  
 I dropped a word, a hint which might imply  
 Consorts exist — how quick flashed fire from  
 eye,

Brow blackened, lip was pinched by furious lip!  
 I needed no reminder of my slip:  
 One warning taught me wisdom. Whereas  
 here . . .

Aha, a sportive fancy! Eh, what fear  
 Of harm to follow? Just a whim indulged!

"My Beatrice, there 's an undivulged  
 Surprise in store for you: the moment 's fit  
 For letting loose a secret: out with it!  
 Tributes to worth, you rightly estimate  
 These gifts of Prince and Bishop, Church and  
 State:

Yet, may I tell you? Tastes so disagree!  
There 's one gift, preciouslest of all to me,  
I doubt if you would value as well worth  
The obvious sparkling gauds that men unearth  
For toy-cult mainly of you womankind;  
Such make you marvel, I concede: like blind  
The sex proves to the greater marvel here  
I veil to balk its envy. Be sincere!  
Say, should you search creation far and wide,  
Was ever face like this?"

He drew aside

The veil, displayed the flower-framed portrait  
kept

For private delectation.

No adept

In florist's lore more accurately named  
And praised or, as appropriately, blamed  
Specimen after specimen of skill,  
Than Biccé. "Rightly placed the daffodil —  
Scarcely so right the blue germander. Gray  
Good mouse-ear! Hardly your auricula  
Is powdered white enough. It seems to me  
Scarlet not crimson, that anemone:  
But there 's amends in the pink saxifrage.  
O darling dear ones, let me disengage  
You innocents from what your harmlessness  
Clasps lovingly! Out thou from their caress,  
Serpent!"

Whereat forth-flashing from her coils  
On coils of hair, the *spilla* in its toils  
Of yellow wealth, the dagger-plaything kept  
To pin its plaits together, life-like leapt  
And — woe to all inside the coronal!  
Stab followed stab, — cut, slash, she ruined all  
The masterpiece. Alack for eyes and mouth  
And dimples and endearment — North and  
South,

East, West, the tatters in a fury flew:  
There yawned the circlet. What remained to  
do?

She flung the weapon, and, with folded arms  
And mien defiant of such low alarms  
As death and doom beyond death, Biccé stood  
Passively statuesque, in quietude  
Awaiting judgment.

And out judgment burst  
With frank unloading of love's laughter, first  
Freed from its unsuspected source. Some  
throe

Must needs unload love's prison-bars, let flow  
The joyance.

"Then you ever were, still are,  
And henceforth shall be — no occulted star  
But my resplendent Biccé, sun-revealed,  
Full-rondure! Woman-glory unconcealed,  
So front me, find and claim and take your  
own —

My soul and body yours and yours alone,  
As you are mine, mine wholly! Heart's love,  
take —

Use your possession — stab or stay at will  
Here — hating, saving — woman with the skill  
To make man beast or god!"

And so it proved:  
For, as beseeemed new godship, thus he loved,  
Past power to change, until his dying-day, —  
Good fellow! And I fain would hope — some say

Indeed for certain — that our painter's toils  
At fresco-splashing, finer stroke in oils,  
Were not so mediocre after all;  
Perhaps the work appears unduly small  
From having loomed too large in old esteem,  
Patronized by late Papacy. I seem  
Myself to have cast eyes on certain work  
In sundry galleries, no judge needs shirk  
From moderately praising. He designed  
Correctly, nor in color lagged behind  
His age: but both in Florence and in Rome  
The elder race so make themselves at home  
That scarce we give a glance to ceilingfuls  
Of such like as Francesco. Still, one culls  
From out the heaped laudations of the time  
The pretty incident I put in rhyme.

# FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH AN ACCOMPANIMENT

He. An, the bird-like fluting

Through the ash-tops yonder —  
Bullfinch-bubbings, soft sounds suiting  
What sweet thoughts, I wonder?  
Fine-pearled notes that surely  
Gather, dewdrop-fashion,  
Deep-down in some heart which purely  
Secretes globuled passion —  
Passion insuppressive —  
Such is piped, for certain;  
Love, no doubt, nay, love excessive  
'T is, your ash-tops curtain.

Would your ash-tops open

We might spy the player —  
Seek and find some sense which no pen  
Yet from singer, sayer,  
Ever has extracted:  
Never, to my knowledge,  
Yet has pedantry enacted  
That, in Cupid's College,  
Just this variation  
Of the old, old yearning  
Should by plain speech have salvation,  
Yield new men new learning.

"Love!" but what love, nicely  
New from old parted,  
Would the player teach precisely?  
First of all, he started  
In my brain Assurance —  
Trust — entire Contentment —  
Passion proved by much endurance;  
Then came — not resentment,  
No, but simply Sorrow:  
What was seen had vanished:  
Yesterday so blue! To-morrow  
Blank, all sunshine banished.

Hark! 'T is Hope resurges,  
Struggling through obstruction —  
Forces a poor smile which verges  
On Joy's introduction.  
Now, perhaps, mere Musing:  
"Holds earth such a wonder?  
Fairly-mortal, soul-sense-fusing  
Past thought's power to sunder!"

What? calm Acquiescence?  
 "Daisied turf gives room to  
 Trefoil, plucked once in her presence —  
 Growing by her tomb too!"

*She.* All's your fancy-spinning!  
 Here's the fact: a neighbor  
 Never-ending, still beginning,  
 Recreates his labor:  
 Deep o'er desk he drudges,  
 Adds, divides, subtracts and  
 Multiplies, until he judges  
 Noonday-hour's exact sand  
 Shows the hour-glass emptied:  
 Then comes lawful leisure,  
 Minutes rare from toil exempted,  
 Fit to spend in pleasure.

Out then with — what treatise?  
*Youth's Complete Instructor*  
*How to play the Flute. Quid petis?*  
 Follow Youth's conductor  
 On and on, through *Easy*,  
 Up to *Harder, Hardest*,  
*Flute-piece*, till thou, flautist wheezy,  
 Possibly discardst  
 Tootlings hoarse and husky,  
 Mayst expend with courage  
 Breath — on tunes once bright, now dusky —  
 Meant to cool thy porridge.

That's an air of Tulou's  
 He maltreats persistent,  
 Till as lief I'd hear some Zulu's  
 Bone-piped bag, breath-distent,  
 Madden native dances.  
 I'm the man's familiar:  
 Unexpectedness enhances  
 What your ear's auxiliar  
 — Fancy — finds suggestive.  
 Listen! That's *legato*  
 Rightly played, his fingers restive  
 Touch as if *staccato*.

*He.* Ah, you trick-betrayer!  
 Telling tales, unwise one?  
 So the secret of the player  
 Was — he could surprise one  
 Well-nigh into trusting  
 Here was a musician  
 Skilled consummately, yet lusting  
 Through no vile ambition  
 After making captive  
 All the world, — rewarded  
 Amply by one stranger's rapture,  
 Common praise discarded.

So, without assistance  
 Such as music rightly  
 Needs and claims, — defying distance,  
 Overleaping lightly  
 Obstacles which hinder,  
 He, for my approval,  
 All the same and all the kinder  
 Made mine what might move all  
 Earth to kneel adoring:  
 Took — while he piped Gounod's

Bit of passionate imploring —  
 Me for Juliet: who knows?

No! as you explain things,  
 All's mere repetition,  
 Practise-pother: of all vain things  
 Why waste pooh or pish on  
 Toilsome effort — never  
 Ending, still beginning  
 After what should pay endeavor  
 — Right-performance? winning  
 Weariness from you who,  
 Ready to admire some  
 Owl's fresh hooting — Tu-whit, tu-who —  
 Find stale thrush-songs tiresome.

*She.* Songs, Spring thought perfection,  
 Summer criticisms:  
 What in May escaped detection,  
 August, past surprises,  
 Notes, and names each blunder.  
 You, the just-initiate,  
 Praise to heart's content (what wonder?)  
 Tootings I hear vitiate  
 Romeo's serenading —  
 I who, times full twenty,  
 Turned to ice — no ash-tops aiding —  
 At his *caldamente*.

So, 't was distance altered  
 Sharps to flats? The missing  
 Bar when syncopation faltered  
 (You thought — paused for kissing!)  
 Ash-tops too felonious  
 Intercepted? Rather  
 Say — they well-nigh made euphonious  
 Discord, helped to gather  
 Phrase, by phrase, turn patches  
 Into simulated  
 Unity which botching matches, —  
 Scraps reintegrated.

*He.* Sweet, are you suggestive  
 Of an old suspicion  
 Which has always found me restive  
 To its admonition  
 When it ventured whisper  
 "Fool, the strifes and struggles  
 Of your trembler — blusher — lisper  
 Were so many juggles,  
 Tricks tried — oh, so often! —  
 Which once more do duty,  
 Find again a heart to soften,  
 Soul to snare with beauty."

Birth-blush of the briar-rose,  
 Mist-bloom of the hedge-sloe,  
 Some one gains the prize: admire rose  
 Would he, when noon's wedge — slow —  
 Sure, has pushed, expanded  
 Rathe pink to raw redness?  
 Would he covet sloe when sanded  
 By road-dust to deadness?  
 So — restore their value!  
 Ply a water-sprinkle!  
 Then guess sloe is fingered, shall you?  
 Find in rose a wrinkle?



Here what played Aquarius?  
Distance — ash-tops aiding,  
Reconciled scraps else contrarious,  
Brightened stuff fast fading:  
Distance — call your shyness:  
Was the fair one peevish?  
Coyness softened out of slyness.  
Was she cunning, thievish,  
All-but-proved impostor?  
Bear but one day's exile,  
Ugly traits were wholly lost or  
Screened by fancies flexible —

Ash-tops these, you take me?  
Fancies' interference  
Changed . . .

But since I sleep, don't wake me!  
What if all's appearance?  
Is not outside seeming  
Real as substance inside?  
Both are facts, so leave me dreaming:  
If who loses wins I'd  
Ever lose, — conjecture,  
From one phrase trilled deftly,  
All the piece. So, end your lecture,  
Let who lied be left lie!

"IMPERANTE AUGUSTO NATUS  
EST—"

WHAT it was struck the terror into me?  
This, Publius: closer! while we wait our turn  
I'll tell you. Water's warm (they ring inside)  
At the eighth hour, till when no use to bathe.

Here in the vestibule where now we sit,  
One scarce stood yesterday, the throng was such  
Of loyal gapers, folk all eye and ear  
While Lucius Varius Rufus in their midst  
Read out that long-planned late-completed  
piece,

His Panegyric on the Emperor.  
"Nobody like him," little Flaccus laughed,  
"At leading forth an Epos with due pomp!  
Only, when godlike Caesar swells the theme,  
How should mere mortals hope to praise aright?  
Tell me, thou offshoot of Etruscan kings!"  
Whereat Mæcenas smiling sighed assent.

I paid my quadrans, left the Thermæ's roar  
Of rapture as the poet asked, "What place  
Among the godships Jove, for Caesar's sake,  
Would bid its actual occupant vacate  
In favor of the new divinity?"  
And got the expected answer, "Yield thine  
own!" —

Jove thus dethroned, I somehow wanted air,  
And found myself a-pacing street and street,  
Letting the sunset, rosy over Rome,  
Clear my head dizzy with the hubbub — say,  
As if thought's dance therein had kicked up  
dust

By trampling on all else: the world lay prone,  
As — poet-propped, in brave hexameters —  
Their subject triumphed up from man to God.  
Caius Octavius Cæsar the August —  
Where was escape from his prepotency?

I judge I may have passed — how many piles  
Of structure dropt like doles from his free hand  
To Rome on every side? Why, right and left,  
For temples you've the Thundering Jupiter,  
Avenging Mars, Apollo Palatine:  
How count Piazza, Forum — there's a third  
All but completed. You've the Theatre  
Named of Marcellus — all his work, such  
work! —

One thought still ending, dominating all —  
With warrant Varius sang, "Be Cæsar God!"  
By what a hold arrests he Fortune's wheel,  
Obtaining and retaining heaven and earth  
Through Fortune, if you like, but favor — no!  
For the great deeds flashed by me, fast and  
thick

As stars which storm the sky on autumn  
nights —  
Those conquests! but peace crowned them, —  
so, of peace

Count up his titles only — these, in few —  
Ten years Triumvir, Consul thirteen times,  
Emperor, nay — the glory topping all —  
Hailed Father of his Country, last and best  
Of titles, by himself accepted so:  
And why not? See but feats achieved in  
Rome —

Not to say, Italy — he planted there  
Some thirty colonies — but Rome itself  
All new-built, "marble now, brick once," he  
boasts:

This Portico, that Circus. Would you sail?  
He has drained Tiber for you: would you walk?  
He straightened out the long Flaminian Way.  
Poor? Profit by his score of donatives!  
Rich — that is, mirthful? Half-a-hundred  
games

Challenge your choice! There's Rome — for  
you and me

Only? The centre of the world besides!  
For, look the wide world over, where ends  
Rome?

To sunrise? There's Euphrates — all between!  
To sunset? Ocean and immensity:  
North, stare till Danube stops you: South, see  
Nile,

The Desert and the earth-upholding Mount.  
Well may the poet-people each with each  
Vie in his praise, our company of swans,  
Virgil and Horace, singers — in their way —  
Nearly as good as Varius, though less famed:  
Well may they cry, "No mortal, plainly God!"

Thus to myself myself said, while I walked:  
Or would have said, could thought attain to  
speech,

Clean baffled by enormity of bliss  
The while I strove to scale its heights and  
sound

Its depths — this masterdom o'er all the world  
Of one who was but born — like you, like me,  
Like all the world he owns — of flesh and blood.  
But he — how grasp, how gauge his own conceit  
Of bliss to me near inconceivable?

Or, since such flight too much makes reel the  
brain,

Let's sink — and so take refuge, as it were,  
From life's excessive altitude — to life's

Breathable wayside shelter at its base !  
 If looms thus large this Cæsar to myself  
 — Of senatorial rank and somebody —  
 How must he strike the vulgar nameless crowd,  
 Innumerable swarm that 's nobody at all ?  
 Why, — for an instance, — much as yon gold  
 shape

Crowned, sceptred, on the temple opposite —  
 Fulgurous Jupiter — must daze the sense  
 Of — say, yon outcast begging from its step !  
 " What, Anti-Cæsar, monarch in the mud,  
 As he is pinnaled above thy pate ?  
 Ay, beg away ! thy lot contrasts full well  
 With his whose bounty yields thee this sup-  
 port —

Our Holy and Inviolable One,  
 Cæsar, whose bounty built the fane above !  
 Dost read my thought ? Thy garb, alack, dis-  
 plays

Sore usage truly in each rent and stain —  
 Faugh ! Wash though in Suburra ! 'Ware  
 the dogs

Who may not so disdain a meal on thee !  
 What, stretchest forth a palm to catch my  
 alms ?

Aha, why yes : I must appear — who knows ? —  
 I, in my toga, to thy rags and thee —  
 Quæstor — nay, Ædile, Censor — Pol ! perhaps  
 The very City-Prætor's noble self !  
 As to me Cæsar, so to thee am I ?  
 Good : nor in vain shall prove thy quest, poor  
 rogue !

Hither — hold palm out — take this quarter-  
 as !

And who did take it ? As he raised his head,  
 (My gesture was a trifle — well — abrupt,)  
 Back fell the broad flap of the peasant's-hat,  
 The homespun cloak that muffled half his  
 cheek

Dropped somewhat, and I had a glimpse —  
 just one !

One was enough. Whose — whose might be  
 the face ?

That unkempt careless hair — brown, yellow-  
 ish —

Those sparkling eyes beneath their eyebrows'   
 ridge

(Each meets each, and the hawk-nose rules   
 between)

— That was enough, no glimpse was needed   
 more !

And terrifyingly into my mind  
 Came that quick-hushed report was whispered   
 us,

" They do say, once a year in sordid garb  
 He plays the mendicant, sits all day long,  
 Asking and taking alms of who may pass,  
 And so averting, if submission help,  
 Fate's envy, the dread chance and change of   
 things

When Fortune — for a word, a look, a   
 naught —

Turns spiteful and — the petted lioness —  
 Strikes with her sudden paw, and prone falls   
 each

Who patted late her neck superiorly,

Or trifled with those claw-tips velvet-  
 sheathed."

" He 's God ! " shouts Lucius Varius Rufus :  
 " Man

And worms'-meat any moment ! " mutters low  
 Some Power, admonishing the mortal-born.

Ay, do you mind ? There 's meaning in the  
 fact

That whoso conquers, triumphs, enters Rome,  
 Climbing the Capitolian, soaring thus  
 To glory's summit, — Publius, do you mark —  
 Ever the same attendant who, behind,  
 Above the Conqueror's head supports the crown  
 All-too-demonstrative for human wear,  
 — One hand's employment — all the while re-  
 serves

Its fellow, backward flung, to point how, close  
 Appended from the car, beneath the foot  
 Of the up-borne exulting Conqueror,  
 Frown — half-descried — the instruments of  
 shame,

The malefactor's due. Crown, now — Cross,  
 when ?

Who stands secure ? Are even Gods so safe ?  
 Jupiter that just now is dominant —  
 Are not there ancient dismal tales how once  
 A predecessor reigned ere Saturn came,  
 And who can say if Jupiter be last ?  
 Was it for nothing the gray Sibyl wrote  
 " Cæsar Augustus regnant, shall be born  
 In blind Judæa " — one to master him,  
 Him and the universe ? An old-wife's tale ?

Bath-drudge ! Here, slave ! No cheating !  
 Our turn next.

No loitering, or be sure you taste the lash !  
 Two strigils, two oil-drippers, each a sponge !

## DEVELOPMENT

My Father was a scholar and knew Greek.  
 When I was five years old, I asked him once  
 " What do you read about ? "

" The siege of Troy." "  
 " What is a siege, and what is Troy ? "

Whereat  
 He piled up chairs and tables for a town,  
 Set me a-top for Priam, called our cat  
 — Helen, enticed away from home (he said)  
 By wicked Paris, who couched somewhere   
 close

Under the footstool, being cowardly,  
 But whom — since she was worth the pains,  
 poor puss —

Towzer and Tray, — our dogs, the Atreidai, —  
 sought

By taking Troy to get possession of  
 — Always when great Achilles ceased to sulk,  
 (My pony in the stable) — forth would prance  
 And put to flight Hector — our page-boy's self.  
 This taught me who was who and what was   
 what :

So far I rightly understood the case  
 At five years old ; a huge delight it proved

And still proves—thanks to that instructor  
 My Father, who knew better than turn straight  
 Learning's full flare on weak-eyed ignorance,  
 Or, worse yet, leave weak eyes to grow sand-  
 blind,  
 Content with darkness and vacuity.

It happened, two or three years afterward,  
 That—I and playmates playing at Troy's  
 Siege—

My Father came upon our make-believe,  
 "How would you like to read yourself the tale  
 Properly told, of which I gave you first  
 Merely such notion as a boy could bear?  
 Pope, now, would give you the precise account  
 Of what, some day, by dint of scholarship,  
 You'll hear—who knows?—from Homer's  
 very mouth.

Learn Greek by all means, read the 'Blind Old  
 Man,

Sweetest of Singers'—*tuphlos* which means  
 'blind,'

*Hedistos* which means 'sweetest.' Time  
 enough!

Try, anyhow, to master him some day;  
 Until when, take what serves for substitute,  
 Read Pope, by all means!"

So I ran through Pope,  
 Enjoyed the tale—what history so true?  
 Also attacked my Primer, duly drudged,  
 Grew fitter thus for what was promised next—  
 The very thing itself, the actual words,  
 When I could turn—say, Buttmann to account.

Time passed, I ripened somewhat: one fine  
 day,

"Quite ready for the Iliad, nothing less?  
 There's Heine, where the big books block the  
 shelf:

Don't skip a word, thumb well the Lexicon!"

I thumbed well and skipped nowise till I  
 learned

Who was who, what was what, from Homer's  
 tongue,

And there an end of learning. Had you asked  
 The all-accomplished scholar, twelve years old,  
 "Who was it wrote the *Iliad*?"—what a  
 laugh!

"Why, Homer, all the world knows: of his  
 life

Doubtless some facts exist: it's everywhere:  
 We have not settled, though, his place of birth:  
 He begged, for certain, and was blind beside:  
 Seven cities claimed him—Scio, with best  
 right,

Thinks Byron. What he wrote? Those  
 Hymns we have.

Then there's the 'Battle of the Frogs and  
 Mice,'

That's all—unless they dig 'Margites' up  
 (I'd like that) nothing more remains to know."

Thus did youth spend a comfortable time;  
 Until—"What's this the Germans say in fact  
 That Wolf found out first? It's unpleasant  
 work

Their chop and change, unsettling one's be-  
 lief:

All the same, where we live, we learn, that's  
 sure."

So, I bent brow o'er *Prolegomena*.

And after Wolf, a dozen of his like

Proved there was never any Troy at all,

Neither Besiegers nor Besieged,—nay,  
 worse,—

No actual Homer, no authentic text,

No warrant for the fiction I, as fact,

Had treasured in my heart and soul so long—

Ay, mark you! and as fact held still, still  
 hold,

Spite of new knowledge, in my heart of hearts  
 And soul of souls, fact's essence freed and  
 fixed

From accidental fancy's guardian sheath.

Assuredly thenceforward—thank my stars!—

However it got there, deprive who could—

Wring from the shrine my precious tenantry,

Helen, Ulysses, Hector and his Spouse,

Achilles and his Friend?—though Wolf—ah,  
 Wolf!

Why must he needs come doubting, spoil a  
 dream?

But then, "No dream's worth waking"—  
 Browning says:

And here's the reason why I tell thus much.

I, now mature man, you anticipate,

May blame my Father justifiably

For letting me dream out my nonage thus,

And only by such slow and sure degrees

Permitting me to sift the grain from chaff,

Get truth and falsehood known and named as  
 such.

Why did he ever let me dream at all,

Not bid me taste the story in its strength?

Suppose my childhood was scarce qualified

To rightly understand mythology.

Silence at least was in his power to keep:

I might have—somehow—correspondingly—

Well, who knows by what method, gained my  
 gains

Been taught, by forthrights not meanderings,

My aim should be to loathe, like Peleus' son,

A lie as Hell's Gate, love my wedded wife,

Like Hector, and so on with all the rest.

Could not I have excoagitated this

Without believing such man really were?

That is—he might have put into my hand

The "Ethics"? In translation, if you please,

Exact, no pretty lying that improves,

To suit the modern taste: no more, no less—

The "Ethics"? 't is a treatise I find hard

To read aright now that my hair is gray,

And I can manage the original.

At five years old—how ill had fared its leaves!

Now, growing double o'er the Stagirite,

At least I soil no page with bread and milk,

Nor crumple, dogs-ear and deface—boys' way.

## REPHAN

Suggested by a very early recollection of a  
 prose story by the noble woman and imagina-



tive writer, Jane Taylor, of Norwich, [more correctly, of Ongar]. R. B.

How I lived, ere my human life began  
In this world of yours, — like you, made man, —  
When my home was the Star of my God Rephan?

Come then around me, close about,  
World-weary earth-born ones! Darkest doubt  
Or deepest despondency keeps you out?

Nowise! Before a word I speak,  
Let my circle embrace your worn, your weak,  
Brow-furrowed old age, youth's hollow cheek —

Diseased in the body, sick in soul,  
Pinched poverty, satiate wealth, — your whole  
Array of despairs! Have I read the roll?

All here? Attend, perpend! O Star  
Of my God Rephan, what wonders are  
In thy brilliance fugitive, faint and far!

Far from me, native to thy realm,  
Who shared its perfections which o'erwhelm  
Mind to conceive. Let drift the helm,

Let drive the sail, dare unconfined  
Embark for the vastitude, O Mind,  
Of an absolute bliss! Leave earth behind!

Here, by extremes, at a mean you guess:  
There, all's at most — not more, not less:  
Nowhere deficiency nor excess.

No want — whatever should be, is now:  
No growth — that's change, and change comes  
— how  
To royalty born with crown on brow?

Nothing begins — so needs to end:  
Where fell it short at first? Extent!  
Only the same, no change can mend!

I use your language: mine — no word  
Of its wealth would help who spoke, who heard,  
To a gleam of intelligence. None preferred,

None felt distaste when better and worse  
Were uncontrastable: bless or curse  
What — in that uniform universe?

Can your world's phrase, your sense of things  
Forth-figure the Star of my God? No springs,  
No winters throughout its space. Time brings

No hope, no fear: as to-day, shall be  
To-morrow: advance or retreat need we  
At our stand-still through eternity?

All happy: needs must we so have been,  
Since who could be otherwise? All serene:  
What dark was to banish, what light to screen?

Earth's rose is a bud that's checked or grows  
As beams may encourage or blasts oppose:  
Our lives leapt forth, each a full-orbed rose —

Each rose sole rose in a sphere that spread  
Above and below and around — rose-red:  
No fellowship, each for itself instead.

One better than I — would prove I lacked  
Somewhat: one worse were a jarring fact  
Disturbing my faultlessly exact.

How did it come to pass there lurked  
Somehow a seed of change that worked  
Obscure in my heart till perfection irked? —

Till out of its peace at length grew strife —  
Hopes, fears, loves, hates, — obscurely rife, —  
My life grown a-tremble to turn your life?

Was it Thou, above all lights that are,  
Prime Potency, did Thy hand unbar  
The prison-gate of Rephan my Star?

In me did such potency wake a pulse  
Could trouble tranquillity that lulls  
Not lashes inertion till throes convulse

Soul's quietude into discontent?  
As when the completed rose bursts, rent  
By ardors till forth from its orb are sent

New petals that mar — unmake the disk —  
Spoil rondure: what in it ran brave risk,  
Changed apathy's calm to strife, bright, brisk,

Pushed simple to compound, sprang and spread  
Till, fresh-formed, faceted, floreted,  
The flower that slept woke a star instead?

No mimic of Star Rephan! How long  
I stagnated there where weak and strong,  
The wise and the foolish, right and wrong,

Are merged alike in a neutral Best,  
Can I tell? No more than at whose behest  
The passion arose in my passive breast,

And I yearned for no sameness but difference  
In thing and thing, that should shock my sense  
With a want of worth in them all, and thence

Startle me up, by an Infinite  
Discovered above and below me — height  
And depth alike to attract my flight,

Repel my descent: by hate taught love.  
Oh, gain were indeed to see above  
Supremacy ever — to move, remove,

Not reach — aspire yet never attain  
To the object aimed at! Scarce in vain, —  
As each stage I left nor touched again.

To suffer, did pangs bring the loved one bliss,  
Wring knowledge from ignorance, — just for  
this —  
To add one drop to a love-abyss!

Enough: for you doubt, you hope, O men,  
You fear, you agonize, die: what then?  
Is an end to your life's work out of ken?

Have you no assurance that, earth at end,  
Wrong will prove right? Who made shall mend  
In the higher sphere to which yearnings tend?

Why should I speak? You divine the test.  
When the trouble grew in my pregnant breast  
A voice said, "So wouldst thou strive, not rest?"

"Burn and not smoulder, win by worth,  
Not rest content with a wealth that's dearth?  
Thou art past Rephan, thy place be Earth!"

REVERIE

I KNOW there shall dawn a day  
— Is it here on homely earth?  
Is it yonder, worlds away,  
Where the strange and new have birth,  
That Power comes full in play?

Is it here, with grass about,  
Under befriending trees,  
When shy buds venture out,  
And the air by mild degrees  
Puts winter's death past doubt?

Is it up amid whirl and roar  
Of the elemental flame  
Which star-flecks heaven's dark floor,  
That, new yet still the same,  
Full in play comes Power once more?

Somewhere, below, above,  
Shall a day dawn — this I know —  
When Power, which vainly strove  
My weakness to o'erthrow,  
Shall triumph. I breathe, I move,

I truly am, at last!  
For a veil is rent between  
Me and the truth which passed  
Fitful, half-guessed, half-seen,  
Grasped at — not gained, held fast.

I for my race and me  
Shall apprehend life's law:  
In the legend of man shall see  
Writ large what small I saw  
In my life's; tale both agree.

As the record from youth to age  
Of my own, the single soul —  
So the world's wide book: one page  
Deciphered explains the whole  
Of our common heritage.

How but from near to far  
Should knowledge proceed, increase?  
Try the clod ere test the star!  
Bring our inside strife to peace  
Ere we wage, on the outside, war!

So, my annals thus begin:  
With body, to life awoke  
Soul, the immortal twin  
Of body which bore soul's yoke  
Since mortal and not akin.

By means of the flesh, grown fit,  
Mind, in surview of things,  
Now soared, anon alit  
To treasure its gatherings  
From the ranged expanse — to-wit,

Nature, — earth's, heaven's wide show  
Which taught all hope, all fear:  
Acquainted with joy and woe,  
I could say, "Thus much is clear,  
Doubt annulled thus much: I know."

"All is effect of cause:  
As it would, has willed and done  
Power: and my mind's applause  
Goes, passing laws each one,  
To Omnipotence, lord of laws."

Head praises, but heart refrains  
From loving's acknowledgment.  
Whole losses outweigh half-gains:  
Earth's good is with evil blent:  
Good struggles but evil reigns.

Yet since Earth's good proved good —  
Incontrovertibly  
Worth loving — I understood  
How evil — did mind desecry  
Power's object to end pursued —

Were haply as cloud across  
Good's orb, no orb itself:  
Mere mind — were it found at loss  
Did it play the tricky elf  
And from life's gold purge the dross?

Power is known infinite:  
Good struggles to be — at best  
Seems — scanned by the human sight,  
Tried by the senses' test —  
Good palpably: but with right

Therefore to mind's award  
Of loving, as power claims praise?  
Power — which finds naught too hard,  
Fulfilling itself all ways  
Unchecked, unchanged: while barred,

Baffled, what good began  
Ends evil on every side.  
To Power submissive man  
Breathes, "E'en as Thou art, abide!"  
While to good "Late-found, long-sought"

"Would Power to a plenitude  
But liberate, but enlarge  
Good's strait confine, — renewed  
Were ever the heart's discharge  
Of loving!" Else doubts intrude.

For you dominate, stars all!  
For a sense informs you — brute,  
Bird, worm, fly, great and small,  
Each with your attribute  
Or low or majestic!

Thou earth that embosomest  
Offspring of land and sea —

How thy hills first sank to rest,  
How thy vales bred herb and tree  
Which dizen thy mother-breast —

Do I ask? "Be ignorant  
Ever!" the answer clangs:  
Whereas if I plead world's want,  
Soul's sorrows and body's pangs,  
Play the human applicant, —

Is a remedy far to seek?  
I question and find response:  
I — all men, strong or weak,  
Conceive and declare at once  
For each want its cure. "Power, speak!

"Stop change, avert decay  
Fix life fast, banish death,  
Eclipse from the star bid stay,  
Abridge of no moment's breath  
One creature! Hence, Night, hail, Day!"

What need to confess again  
No problem this to solve  
By impotence? Power, once plain  
Proved Power — let on Power devolve  
Good's right to co-equal reign!

Past mind's conception — Power!  
Do I seek how star, earth, beast,  
Bird, worm, fly, gain their dower  
For life's use, most and least?  
Back from the search I cover.

Do I seek what heals all harm,  
Nay, hinders the harm at first,  
Saves earth? Speak, Power, the charm!  
Keep the life there unamerced  
By chance, change, death's alarm!

As promptly as mind conceives,  
Let Power in its turn declare  
Some law which wrong retrieves,  
Abolishes everywhere  
What thwarts, what irks, what grieves!

Never to be! and yet  
How easy it seems — to sense  
Like man's — if somehow met  
Power with its match — immense  
Love, limitless, unbeset

By hindrance on every side!  
Conjectured, nowise known,  
Such may be: could man confide  
Such would match — were Love but shown  
Strip of the veils that hide —

Power's self now manifest!  
So reads my record: thine,  
O world, how runs it? Guessed  
Were the purport of that prime line,  
Prophetic of all the rest!

"In a beginning God  
Made heaven and earth." Forth flashed  
Knowledge: from star to clod

Man knew things: doubt abashed  
Closed its long period.

Knowledge obtained Power praise.  
Had Good been manifest,  
Broke out in cloudless blaze,  
Unchequered as unrepressed,  
In all things Good at best —

Then praise — all praise, no blame —  
Had hailed the perfection. No!  
As Power's display, the same  
Be Good's — praise forth shall flow  
Unisonous in acclaim!

Even as the world its life,  
So have I lived my own —  
Power seen with Love at strife,  
That sure, this dimly shown,  
— Good rare and evil rife.

Whereof the effect be — faith  
That, some far day, were found  
Ripeness in things now rather,  
Wrong righted, each chain unbound,  
Renewal born out of scathe.

Why faith — but to lift the load,  
To leaven the lump, where lies  
Mind prostrate through knowledge owed  
To the loveless Power it tries  
To withstand, how vain! In flowed

Ever resistless fact:  
No more than the passive clay  
Disputes the potter's act,  
Could the whelmed mind disobey  
Knowledge the cataract.

But, perfect in every part,  
Has the potter's moulded shape,  
Leap of man's quickened heart,  
Throe of his thought's escape,  
Stings of his soul which dart

Through the barrier of flesh, till keen  
She climbs from the calm and clear,  
Through turbidity all between,  
From the known to the unknown here,  
Heaven's "Shall be," from Earth's "Has  
been"?

Then life is — to wake not sleep,  
Rise and not rest, but press  
From earth's level where blindly creep  
Things perfected, more or less,  
To the heaven's height, far and steep,

Where, amid what strifes and storms  
May wait the adventurous quest,  
Power is Love — transports, transforms  
Who aspired from worst to best.  
Sought the soul's world, spurned the worms'.

I have faith such end shall be:  
From the first, Power was — I knew.  
Life has made clear to me



That, strive but for closer view,  
Love were as plain to see.

When see? When there dawns a day,  
If not on the homely earth,  
Then yonder, worlds away,  
Where the strange and new have birth,  
And Power comes full in play.

## EPILOGUE

In regard to the third verse of this poem the *Pall Mall Gazette* of February 1, 1890, related this incident: "One evening, just before his death-illness, the poet was reading this from a proof to his daughter-in-law and sister. He said: 'It almost looks like bragging to say this, and as if I ought to cancel it; but it's the simple truth; and as it's true, it shall stand.'"

At the midnight in the silence of the sleep-time,  
When you set your fancies free,  
Will they pass to where — by death, fools think,  
imprisoned —

Low he lies who once so loved you, whom you  
loved so,

— Pity me?

Oh to love so, be so loved, yet so mistaken!

What had I on earth to do

With the slothful, with the mawkish, the un-  
manly?

Like the aimless, helpless, hopeless, did I drivel  
— Being — who?

One who never turned his back but marched  
breast forward,

Never doubted clouds would break,

Never dreamed, though right were worsted,  
wrong would triumph,

Held we fall to rise, are baffled to fight better,  
Sleep to wake.

No, at noonday in the bustle of man's work-time

Greet the unseen with a cheer!

Bid him forward, breast and back as either  
should be,

"Strive and thrive!" cry "Speed, — fight on,  
fare ever

There as here!"

## APPENDIX

### I. AN ESSAY ON SHELLEY

SHELLEY's influence on Browning is so frequently referred to, that it seems best, inasmuch as this *Essay* is the only distinct piece of prose in Browning's writings, to print it here in the Appendix to his *Complete Poetic and Dramatic Writings*. The paper was written in 1852 at the request of Mr. Moxon, the publisher, under the circumstances named in the first paragraph of the *Essay*. Before the book was actually published, it was discovered to be a fabrication and was immediately suppressed. A very few copies only escaped the publisher's hands; apparently, those only which went to the depositories of copyright matter. The present copy is taken from the one issued in 1888 by the Shelley Society, London, under the editorship of W. Tyas Harden.

AN opportunity having presented itself for the acquisition of a series of unedited letters by Shelley, all more or less directly supplementary to and illustrative of the collection already published by Mr. Moxon, that gentleman has decided on securing them. They will prove an acceptable addition to a body of correspondence, the value of which, towards a right understanding of its author's purpose and work, may be said to exceed that of any similar contribution exhibiting the worldly relations of a poet whose genius has operated by a different law.

Doubtless we accept gladly the biography of an objective poet, as the phrase now goes; one whose endeavor has been to reproduce things external (whether the phenomena of the scenic universe, or the manifested action of the human heart and brain), with an immediate reference, in every case, to the common eye and apprehension of his fellow-men, assumed capable of receiving and profiting by this reproduction. It has been obtained through the poet's double faculty of seeing external objects more clearly, widely, and deeply than is possible to the average mind, at the same time that he is so acquainted and in sympathy with its narrower comprehension as to be careful to supply it with no other materials than it can combine into an intelligible whole. The auditory of such a poet will include, not only the intelligences which, save for such assistance, would have missed the deeper meaning and enjoyment of the original objects, but also the spirits of a like endowment with his own, who, by means of his abstract, can forthwith pass to the reality

it was made from, and either corroborate their impressions of things known already, or supply themselves with new from whatever shows in the inexhaustible variety of existence may have hitherto escaped their knowledge. Such a poet is properly the ποιητής, the fashioner; and the thing fashioned, his poetry, will of necessity be substantive, projected from himself and distinct. We are ignorant what the inventor of *Othello* conceived of that fact as he beheld it in completeness, how he accounted for it, under what known law he registered its nature, or to what unknown law he traced its coincidence. We learn only what he intended we should learn by that particular exercise of his power, — the fact itself, — which, with its infinite significances, each of us receives for the first time as a creation, and is hereafter left to deal with, as, in proportion to his own intelligence, he best may. We are ignorant, and would fain be otherwise.

Doubtless, with respect to such a poet, we covet his biography. We desire to look back upon the process of gathering together in a lifetime the materials of the work we behold entire; of elaborating, perhaps under difficulty and with hindrance, all that is familiar to our admiration in the apparent facility of success. And the inner impulse of this effort and operation, what induced it? Did a soul's delight in its own extended sphere of vision set it, for the gratification of an insuppressible power, on labor, as other men are set on rest? Or did a sense of duty or of love lead it to communicate its own sensations to mankind? Did an irresistible sympathy with men compel it to bring down and suit its own provision of knowledge and beauty to their narrow scope? Did the personality of such an one stand like an open watchtower in the midst of the territory it is erected to gaze on, and were the storms and calms, the stars and meteors, its watchman was wont to report of, the habitual variegation of his everyday life, as they glanced across its open door or lay reflected on its four-square parapet? Or did some sunken and darkened chamber of imagery witness, in the artificial illumination of every storied compartment we are permitted to contemplate, how rare and precious were the outlooks through here and there an embrasure upon a world beyond, and how blankly would have pressed on the artificer the boundary of his daily life, except for the amorous diligence with which he had rendered permanent by art whatever came to diversify the gloom? Still, fraught with instruction and interest as such

details undoubtedly are, we can, if needs be, dispense with them. The man passes, the work remains. The work speaks for itself, as we say; and the biography of the worker is no more necessary to an understanding or enjoyment of it than is a model or anatomy of some tropical tree to the right tasting of the fruit we are familiar with on the market-stall,—or a geologist's map and stratification to the prompt recognition of the hill-top, our landmark of every day.

We turn with stronger needs to the genius of an opposite tendency,—the subjective poet of modern classification. He, gifted like the objective poet with the fuller perception of nature and man, is impelled to embody the thing he perceives, not so much with reference to the many below as to the one above him, the supreme Intelligence which apprehends all things in their absolute truth,—an ultimate view ever aspired to, if but partially attained, by the poet's own soul. Not what man sees, but what God sees,—the *Ideas* of Plato, seeds of creation lying burningly on the Divine Hand,—it is toward these that he struggles. Not with the combination of humanity in action, but with the primal elements of humanity, he has to do; and he digs where he stands,—preferring to seek them in his own soul as the nearest reflex of that absolute Mind, according to the intuitions of which he desires to perceive and speak. Such a poet does not deal habitually with the picturesque groupings and tempestuous tossings of the forest trees, but with their roots and fibres naked to the chalk and stone. He does not paint pictures and hang them on the walls, but rather carries them on the retina of his own eyes; we must look deep into his human eyes to see those pictures on them. He is rather a seer, accordingly, than a fashioner, and what he produces will be less a work than an effluence. That effluence cannot be easily considered in abstraction from his personality,—being indeed the very radiance and aroma of his personality, projected from it but not separated. Therefore, in our approach to the poetry, we necessarily approach the personality of the poet; in apprehending it we apprehend him, and certainly we cannot love it without loving him. Both for love's and for understanding's sake we desire to know him, and, as readers of his poetry, must be readers of his biography also.

I shall observe, in passing, that it seems not so much from any essential distinction in the faculty of the two poets, or in the nature of the objects contemplated by either, as in the more immediate adaptability of these objects to the distinct purpose of each, that the objective poet, in his appeal to the aggregate human mind, chooses to deal with the doings of men (the result of which dealing, in its pure form, when even description, as suggesting a describer, is dispensed with, is what we call dramatic poetry); while the subjective poet, whose study has been himself, appealing through himself to the absolute Divine mind, prefers to dwell upon those external scenic appearances which strike

out most abundantly and uninterruptedly his inner light and power, selects that silence of the earth and sea in which he can best hear the beating of his individual heart, and leaves the noisy, complex, yet imperfect exhibitions of nature in the manifold experience of man around him, which serve only to distract and suppress the working of his brain. These opposite tendencies of genius will be more readily described in their artistic effect than in their moral spring and cause. Pushed to an extreme and manifested as a deformity, they will be seen plainest of all in the fault of either artist when, subsidiarily to the human interest of his work, his occasional illustrations from scenic nature are introduced as in the earlier works of the originate painters,—men and women filling the foreground with consummate mastery, while mountain, grove, and rivulet show like an anticipatory revenge on that succeeding race of landscape-painters, whose “figures” disturb the perfection of their earth and sky. It would be idle to inquire, of these two kinds of poetic faculty in operation, which is the higher or even rarer endowment. If the subjective might seem to be the ultimate requirement of every age, the objective, in the strictest state, must still retain its original value. For it is with this world, as starting point and basis alike, that we shall always have to concern ourselves: the world is not to be learned and thrown aside, but reverted to and relearned. The spiritual comprehension may be infinitely subtilized, but the raw material it operates upon must remain. There may be no end of the poets who communicate to us what they see in an object with reference to their own individuality: what it was before they saw it, in reference to the aggregate human mind, will be as desirable to know as ever. Nor is there any reason why these two modes of poetic faculty may not issue hereafter from the same poet in successive perfect works, examples of which, according to what are now considered the exigencies of art, we have hitherto possessed in distinct individuals only. A mere running in of the one faculty upon the other is, of course, the ordinary circumstance. Far more rarely it happens that either is found so decidedly prominent and superior as to be pronounced comparatively pure; while of the perfect shield, with the gold and the silver side set up for all comers to challenge, there has yet been no instance. Either faculty in its eminent state is doubtless conceded by Providence as a best gift to men, according to their especial want. There is a time when the general eye has, so to speak, absorbed its fill of the phenomena around it, whether spiritual or material, and desires rather to learn the exacter significance of what it possesses than to receive any augmentation of what is possessed. Then is the opportunity for the poet of loftier vision to lift his fellows, with their half-apprehensions, up to his own sphere, by intensifying the import of details and rounding the universal meaning. The influence of such an achievement will not soon die out. A tribe of successors



(Homerides), working more or less in the same spirit, dwell on his discoveries and reinforce his doctrine; till, at unawares, the world is found to be subsisting wholly on the shadow of a reality, on sentiments diluted from passions, on the tradition of a fact, the convention of a moral, the straw of last year's harvest. Then is the imperative call for the appearance of another sort of poet, who shall at once replace this intellectual rumination of food swallowed long ago, by a supply of the fresh and living swathe; getting at new substance by breaking up the assumed wholes into parts of independent and unclassified value, careless of the unknown laws for recombining them (it will be the business of yet another poet to suggest those hereafter), prodigal of objects for men's outer and not inner sight; shaping for their uses a new and different creation from the last, which it displaces by the right of life over death,—to endure until, in the inevitable process, its very sufficiency to itself shall require at length an exposition of its affinity to something higher, when the positive yet conflicting facts shall again precipitate themselves under a harmonizing law, and one more degree will be apparent for a poet to climb in that mighty ladder, of which, however cloud-involved and undefined may glimmer the topmost step, the world dares no longer doubt that its gradations ascend.

Such being the two kinds of artists, it is naturally, as I have shown, with the biography of the subjective poet that we have the deeper concern. Apart from his recorded life altogether, we might fail to determine with satisfactory precision to what class his productions belong, and what amount of praise is assignable to the producer. Certainly, in the fact of any conspicuous achievement of genius, philosophy no less than sympathetic instinct warrants our belief in a great moral purpose having mainly inspired even where it does not visibly look out of the same. Greatness in a work suggests an adequate instrumentality; and none of the lower incitements, however they may avail to initiate or even effect many considerable displays of power, simulating the nobler inspiration to which they are mistakenly referred, have been found able, under the ordinary conditions of humanity, to task themselves to the end of so exacting a performance as a poet's complete work. As soon will the galvanism, that provokes to violent action the muscles of a corpse, induce it to cross the chamber steadily: sooner. The love of displaying power for the display's sake; the love of riches, of distinction, of notoriety; the desire of a triumph over rivals, and the vanity in the applause of friends,—each and all of such whetted appetites grow intenser by exercise, and increasingly sagacious as to the best and readiest means of self-appeasement: while for any of their ends, whether the money or the pointed finger of the crowd, or the flattery and hate to heart's content, there are cheaper prices to pay, they will all find soon enough, than the bestowment of a life upon a labor hard, slow, and not sure. Also, assuming the proper moral aim to have

produced a work, there are many and various states of an aim: it may be more intense than clear-sighted, or too easily satisfied with a lower field of activity than a steadier aspiration would reach. All the bad poetry in the world (accounted poetry, that is, by its affinities) will be found to result from some one of the infinite degrees of discrepancy between the attributes of the poet's soul, occasioning a want of correspondence between his work and the verities of nature,—issuing in poetry, false under whatever form, which shows a thing, not as it is to mankind generally, nor as it is to the particular describer, but as it is supposed to be for some unreal neutral mood, midway between both and of value to neither, and living its brief minute simply through the indolence of whoever accepts it or his incapacity to denounce a cheat. Although of such depths of failure there can be no question here, we must in every case betake ourselves to the review of a poet's life ere we determine some of the nicer questions concerning his poetry,—more especially if the performance we seek to estimate aright has been obstructed and cut short of completion by circumstances,—a disastrous youth or a premature death. We may learn from the biography whether his spirit invariably saw and spoke from the last height to which it had attained. An absolute vision is not for this world, but we are permitted a continual approximation to it, every degree of which in the individual, provided it exceed the attainment of the masses, must procure him a clear advantage. Did the poet ever attain to a higher platform than where he rested and exhibited a result? Did he know more than he spoke of?

I concede, however, in respect to this subject of our study as well as some few other illustrious examples, that the unmistakable quality of the verse would be evidence enough, under usual circumstances, not only of the kind and degree of the intellectual but of the moral constitution of Shelley; the whole personality of the poet shining forward from the poems, without much need of going further to seek it. The "Remains"—produced within a period of ten years, and at a season of life when other men of at all comparable genius have hardly done more than prepare the eye for future sight and the tongue for speech—present us with the complete enginery of a poet, as signal in the excellence of its several aptitudes as transcendent in the combination of effects,—examples, in fact, of the whole poet's function of beholding with an understanding keenness the universe, nature and man, in their actual state of perfection in imperfection; of the whole poet's virtue of being untempted, by the manifold partial developments of beauty and good on every side, into leaving them the ultimates he found them,—induced by the facility of the gratification of his own sense of those qualities, or by the pleasure of acquiescence in the shortcomings of his predecessors in art, and the pain of disturbing their conventionalisms,—the whole poet's virtue, I repeat, of looking higher than any manifestation yet made of both beauty and good,

in order to suggest from the utmost realization of the one a corresponding capability in the other, and out of the calm, purity, and energy of nature to reconstitute and store up, for the forthcoming stage of man's being, a gift in repayment of that former gift in which man's own thought and passion had been lavished by the poet on the else-incomplete magnificence of the sunrise, the else-uninterpreted mystery of the lake, — so drawing out, lifting up, and assimilating this ideal of a future man, thus described as possible, to the present reality of the poet's soul already arrived at the higher state of development, and still aspirant to elevate and extend itself in conformity with its still-improving perceptions of, no longer the eventual Human, but the actual Divine. In conjunction with which noble and rare powers came the subordinate power of delivering these attained results to the world in an embodiment of verse more closely answering to and indicative of the process of the informing spirit, (failing, as it occasionally does, in art, only to succeed in highest art), — with a diction more adequate to the task in its natural and acquired richness, its material color and spiritual transparency, — the whole being moved by and suffused with a music at once of the soul and the sense, expressive both of an external might of sincere passion and an internal fitness and consonancy, — than can be attributed to any other writer whose record is among us. Such was the spheric poetical faculty of Shelley, as its own self-sacrificing central light, radiating equally through immaturity and accomplishment, through many fragments and occasional completion, reveals it to a competent judgment.

But the acceptance of this truth by the public has been retarded by certain objections which cast us back on the evidence of biography, even with Shelley's poetry in our hands. Except for the particular character of these objections, indeed, the non-appreciation of his contemporaries would simply class, now that it is over, with a series of experiences which have necessarily happened, and needlessly been wondered at, ever since the world began, and concerning which any present anger may well be moderated, no less in justice to our forerunners than in policy to ourselves. For the misapprehensiveness of his age is exactly what a poet is sent to remedy; and the interval between his operation and the generally perceptible effect of it is no greater, less indeed, than in many other departments of great human effort. The "*E pur si muove*" of the astronomer was as bitter a word as any uttered before or since by a poet over his rejected living work, in that depth of conviction which is so like despair.

But in this respect was the experience of Shelley peculiarly unfortunate, — that the disbelief in him as a man even preceded the disbelief in him as a writer; the misconstruction of his moral nature preparing the way for the misappreciation of his intellectual labors. There existed from the beginning — simultaneous

with, indeed anterior to, his earliest noticeable works, and not brought forward to counteract any impression they had succeeded in making — certain charges against his private character and life, which, if substantiated to their whole breadth, would materially disturb, I do not attempt to deny, our reception and enjoyment of his works, however wonderful the artistic qualities of these. For we are not sufficiently supplied with instances of genius of his order to be able to pronounce certainly how many of its constituent parts have been tasked and strained to the production of a given lie, and how high and pure a mood of the creative mind may be dramatically simulated as the poet's habitual and exclusive one. The doubts, therefore, arising from such a question, required to be set at rest, as they were effectually, by those early authentic notices of Shelley's career and the corroborative accompaniment of his letters, in which not only the main tenor and principal result of his life, but the purity and beauty of many of the processes which had conduced to them, were made apparent enough for the general reader's purpose, — whoever lightly condemned Shelley first, on the evidence of reviews and gossip, as lightly acquitting him now, on that of memoirs and correspondence. Still, it is advisable to lose no opportunity of strengthening and completing the chain of biographical testimony; much more, of course, for the sake of the poet's original lovers, whose volunteered sacrifice of particular principle in favor of absorbing sympathy we might desire to dispense with, than for the sake of his foolish haters, who have long since diverted upon other objects their obtuseness or malignancy. A full life of Shelley should be written at once, while the materials for it continue in reach; not to minister to the curiosity of the public, but to obliterate the last stain of that false life which was forced on the public's attention before it had any curiosity on the matter, — a biography composed in harmony with the present general disposition to have faith in him, yet not shrinking from a candid statement of all ambiguous passages, through a reasonable confidence that the most doubtful of them will be found consistent with a belief in the eventual perfection of his character, according to the poor limits of our humanity. Nor will men persist in confounding, any more than God confounds, with genuine infidelity and atheism of the heart those passionate, impatient struggles of a boy towards distant truth and love, made in the dark, and ended by one sweep of the natural seas before the full moral sunrise could shine out on him. Crude convictions of boyhood, conveyed in imperfect and inapt forms of speech, — for such things all boys have been pardoned. There are growing-pains, accompanied by temporary distortion, of the soul also. And it would be hard indeed upon this young Titan of genius, murmuring in divine music his human ignorances through his very thirst for knowledge, and his rebellion in mere aspiration to law, if the melody itself substantiated the error, and the tragic cutting short of life per-



petuated into sins such faults as, under happier circumstances, would have been left behind by the consent of the most arrogant moralist, forgotten on the lowest steps of youth.

The responsibility of presenting to the public a biography of Shelley does not, however, lie with me: I have only to make it a little easier by arranging these few supplementary letters, with a recognition of the value of the whole collection. This value I take to consist in a most truthful conformity of the Correspondence, in its limited degree, with the moral and intellectual character of the writer as displayed in the highest manifestations of his genius. Letters and poems are obviously an act of the same mind, produced by the same law, only differing in the application to the individual or collective understanding. Letters and poems may be used indifferently as the basement of our opinion upon the writer's character; the finished expression of a sentiment in the poems giving light and significance to the rudiments of the same in the letters, and these again, in their incipency and unripeness, authenticating the exalted mood and reattaching it to the personality of the writer. The musician speaks on the note he sings with; there is no change in the scale as he diminishes the volume into familiar intercourse. There is nothing of that jarring between the man and the author, which has been found so amusing or so melancholy; no dropping of the tragic mask as the crowd melts away; no mean discovery of the real motives of a life's achievement, often in other lives laid bare as pitifully as when, at the close of a holiday, we catch sight of the internal lead-pipes and wood-valves to which, and not to the ostensible conch and dominant Triton of the fountain, we have owed our admired water-work. No breaking out, in household privacy, of hatred, anger, and scorn, incongruous with the higher mood, and suppressed artistically in the book; no brutal return to self-delighting, when the audience of philanthropic schemes is out of hearing; no indecent stripping off the grander feeling and rule of life as too costly and cumbrous for every-day wear. Whatever Shelley was, he was with an admirable sincerity. It was not always truth that he thought and spoke; but in the purity of truth he spoke and thought always. Everywhere is apparent his belief in the existence of Good, to which Evil is an accident; his faithful holding by what he assumed to be the former going everywhere in company with the tenderest pity for those acting or suffering on the opposite hypothesis. For he was tender, though tenderness is not always the characteristic of very sincere natures; he was eminently both tender and sincere. And not only do the same affection and yearning after the well-being of his kind appear in the letters as in the poems, but they express themselves by the same theories and plans, however crude and unsound. There is no reservation of a subtler, less costly, more serviceable remedy for his own ill than he has proposed for the general one; nor does he ever contemplate an object on his own account from a less elevation than he uses

in exhibiting it to the world. How shall we help believing Shelley to have been, in his ultimate attainment, the splendid spirit of his own best poetry, when we find even his carnal speech to agree faithfully, at faintest as at strongest, with the tone and rhythm of his most oracular utterances?

For the rest, these new letters are not offered as presenting any new feature of the poet's character. Regarded in themselves, and as the substantive productions of a man, their importance would be slight. But they possess interest beyond their limits, in confirming the evidence just dwelt on, of the poetical mood of Shelley being only the intensification of his habitual mood; the same tongue only speaking, for want of the special excitement to sing. The very first letter, as one instance for all, strikes the key-note of the predominating sentiment of Shelley throughout his whole life — his sympathy with the oppressed. And when we see him at so early an age, casting out, under the influence of such a sympathy, letters and pamphlets on every side, we accept it as the simple exemplification of the sincerity, with which, at the close of his life, he spoke of himself, as —

"One whose heart a stranger's tear might wear  
As water-drops the sandy fountain stone;  
Who loved and pitied all things, and could moan  
For woes which others hear not, and could see  
The absent with the glass of phantasy,  
And near the poor and trampled sit and weep,  
Following the captive to his dungeon deep —  
One who was as a nerve o'er which do creep  
The else-unfelt oppressions of this earth."

Such sympathy with his kind was evidently developed in him to an extraordinary and even morbid degree, at a period when the general intellectual powers it was impatient to put in motion were immature or deficient.

I conjecture, from a review of the various publications of Shelley's youth, that one of the causes of his failure at the outset was the peculiar *practicalness* of his mind, which was not without a determinate effect on his progress in theorizing. An ordinary youth, who turns his attention to similar subjects, discovers falsities, incongruities, and various points for amendment, and, in the natural advance of the purely critical spirit unchecked by considerations of remedy, keeps up before his young eyes so many instances of the same error and wrong, that he finds himself unawares arrived at the startling conclusion, that all must be changed — or nothing: in the face of which plainly impossible achievement, he is apt (looking perhaps a little more serious by the time he touches at the decisive issue) to feel, either carelessly or considerably, that his own attempting a single piece of service would be worse than useless even, and to refer the whole task to another age and person — safe in proportion to his incapacity. Wanting words to speak, he has never made a fool of himself by speaking. But, in Shelley's case, the early fervor and power to *see* was accompanied by as precocious a fertility to *contrive*: he endeavored to realize as he



went on idealizing; every wrong had simultaneously its remedy, and, out of the strength of his hatred for the former, he took the strength of his confidence in the latter—till suddenly he stood pledged to the defence of a set of miserable little expedients, just as if they represented great principles, and to an attack upon various great principles, really so, without leaving himself time to examine whether because they were antagonistical to the remedy he had suggested, they must therefore be identical or even essentially connected with the wrong he sought to cure,—playing with blind passion into the hands of his enemies, and dashing at whatever red cloak was held forth to him, as the cause of the fireball he had last been stung with—mistaking Churchdom for Christianity, and for marriage, “the sale of love” and the law of sexual oppression.

Gradually, however, he was leaving behind him this low practical dexterity, unable to keep up with his widening intellectual perception; and, in exact proportion as he did so, his true power strengthened and proved itself. Gradually he was raised above the contemplation of spots and the attempt at effacing them, to the great Abstract Light, and through the discrepancy of the creation, to the sufficiency of the First Cause. Gradually he was learning that the best way of removing abuses is to stand fast by truth. Truth is one, as they are manifold; and innumerable negative effects are produced by the upholding of one positive principle. I shall say what I think,—had Shelley lived he would have finally ranged himself with the Christians; his very instinct for helping the weaker side (if numbers make strength), his very “hate of hate,” which at first mistranslated itself into delirious Queen Mab notes and the like, would have got clear-sighted by exercise. The preliminary step to following Christ, is the leaving the dead to bury their dead—not clamoring on his doctrine for an especial solution of difficulties which are referable to the general problem of the universe. Already he had attained to a profession of “a worship to the Spirit of good within, which requires (before it sends that inspiration forth, which impresses its likeness upon all it creates) devoted and disinterested homage,” as Coleridge says,—and Paul likewise. And we find in one of his last exquisite fragments, avowedly a record of one of his own mornings and its experience, as it dawned on him at his soul and body’s best in his boat on the Serchio—that as surely as

“The stars burnt out in the pale blue air,  
And the thin white moon lay withering there—  
Day had kindled the dewy woods,  
And the rocks above, and the stream below,  
And the vapors in their multitudes,  
And the Apennine’s shroud of summer snow—  
Day had awakened all things that be;”

just so surely, he tells us (stepping forward from this delicious dance-music, choragus-like, into the grander measure befitting the final enunciation),—

“All rose to do the task He set to each,  
Who shaped us to His ends and not our own;  
The million rose to learn, and One to teach  
What none yet ever knew or can be known.”

No more difference than this, from David’s pregnant conclusion so long ago!

Meantime, as I call Shelley a moral man, because he was true, simple-hearted, and brave, and because what he acted corresponded to what he knew, so I call him a man of religious mind, because every audacious negative cast up by him against the Divine was interpenetrated with a mood of reverence and adoration,—and because I find him everywhere taking for granted some of the capital dogmas of Christianity, while most vehemently denying their historical basement. There is such a thing as an efficacious knowledge of and belief in the politics of Junius, or the poetry of Rowley, though a man should at the same time dispute the title of Chatterton to the one, and consider the author of the other, as Byron wittily did, “really, truly, nobody at all.”<sup>1</sup>

There is even such a thing, we come to learn wonderingly in these very letters, as a profound sensibility and adaptitude for art, while the science of the percipient is so little advanced as to admit of his stronger admiration for Guido (and Carlo Dolce!) than for Michael Angelo. A Divine Being has Himself said, that “a word against the Son of man shall be forgiven to a man,” while “a word against the Spirit of God” (implying a general deliberate preference of perceived evil to perceived good) “shall not be forgiven to a man.” Also, in religion, one earnest and unextorted assertion of belief should outweigh, as a matter of testimony, many assertions of unbelief. The fact that there is a gold-region is established by finding one lump, though you miss the vein never so often.

He died before his youth ended. In taking the measure of him as a man, he must be considered on the whole and at his ultimate spiritual stature, and not to be judged of at the immaturity and by the mistakes of ten years before: that, indeed, would be to judge of the author of “Julian and Maddalo” by “Zastrozzi.” Let the whole truth be told of his worst mistake. I believe, for my own part, that if anything could now shame or grieve Shelley, it would be an attempt to vindicate him at the expense of another.

In forming a judgment, I would, however,

<sup>1</sup> Or, to take our illustrations from the writings of Shelley himself, there is such a thing as admirably appreciating a work by Andrea Verocchio,—and fancifully characterizing the Pisan Torre Guelfa by the Ponte a Mare, black against the sunsets,—and consummately painting the islet of San Clemente with its penitentiary for rebellious priests, to the west between Venice and the Lido—while you believe the first to be a fragment of an antique sarcophagus,—the second, Ugolino’s Tower of Famine (the vestiges of which should be sought for in the Piazza de’ Cavalieri)—and the third (as I convinced myself last summer at Venice), San Servolo with its mad-house— which, far from being “windowless,” is as full of windows as a barrack.

press on the reader the simple justice of considering tenderly his constitution of body as well as mind, and how unfavorable it was to the steady symmetries of conventional life; the body, in the torture of incurable disease, refusing to give repose to the bewildered soul, tossing in its hot fever of the fancy, — and the laudanum-bottle making but a perilous and pitiful truce between these two. He was constantly subject to "that state of mind" (I quote his own note to *Hellas*) "in which ideas may be supposed to assume the force of sensation, through the confusion of thought, with the objects of thought, and excess of passion animating the creations of the imagination:" in other words, he was liable to remarkable delusions and hallucinations. The nocturnal attack in Wales, for instance, was assuredly a delusion; and I venture to express my own conviction, derived from a little attention to the circumstances of either story, that the idea of the enamored lady following him to Naples, and of the "man in the cloak" who struck him at the Pisan post-office, were equally illusory, — the mere projection, in fact, from himself, of the image of his own love and hate.

"To thirst and find no fill — to wail and wander  
With short unsteady step — to pause and ponder —  
To feel the blood run through the veins and tingle  
When busy thought and blind sensation mingle, —  
To nurse the image of *unfelt caresses*  
Till dim imagination just possesses  
The half-created shadow" —

of unfelt caresses, — and of unfelt blows as well: to such conditions was his genius subject. It was not at Rome only (where he heard a mystic voice exclaiming, "Cenci, Cenci," in reference to the tragic theme which occupied him at the time), — it was not at Rome only that he mistook the cry of "old rags." The habit of somnambulism is said to have extended to the very last days of his life.

Let me conclude with a thought of Shelley as a poet. In the hierarchy of creative minds, it is the presence of the highest faculty that gives first rank, in virtue of its kind, not degree; no pretension of a lower nature, whatever the completeness of development of, variety of effect, impeding the precedence of the rarer endowment though only in the germ. The contrary is sometimes maintained; it is attempted to make the lower gifts (which are potentially included in the higher faculty) of independent value, and equal to some exercise of the special function. For instance, should not a poet possess common sense? Then the possession of abundant common sense implies a step towards becoming a poet. Yes; such a step as the lapidary's, when, strong in the fact of carbon entering largely into the composition of the diamond, he heaps up a sack of charcoal in order to compete with the Koh-i-noor. I pass at once, therefore, from Shelley's minor excellences to his noblest and predominating characteristic.

This I call his simultaneous perception of Power and Love in the absolute, and of Beauty and Good in the concrete, while he throws, from his poet's station between both, swifter,

subtler, and more numerous films for the connection of each with each, than have been thrown by any modern artificer of whom I have knowledge; proving how, as he says,

"The spirit of the worm within the sod  
In love and worship blends itself with God."

I would rather consider Shelley's poetry as a sublime fragmentary essay towards a presentment of the correspondency of the universe to Deity, of the natural to the spiritual, and of the actual to the ideal, than I would isolate and separately appraise the worth of many detachable portions which might be acknowledged as utterly perfect in a lower moral point of view, under the mere conditions of art. It would be easy to take my stand on successful instances of objectivity in Shelley: there is the unrivalled *Cenci*; there is the *Julian and Maddalo* too; there is the magnificent *Ode to Naples*: why not regard, it may be said, the less organized matter as the radiant elemental foam and solution, out of which would have been evolved, eventually, creations as perfect even as those? But I prefer to look for the highest attainment, not simply the high, — and, seeing it, I hold by it. There is surely enough of the work "Shelley" to be known enduringly among men, and, I believe, to be accepted of God, as human work may; and around the imperfect proportions of such, the most elaborated productions of ordinary art must arrange themselves as inferior illustrations.

It is because I have long held these opinions in assurance and gratitude, that I catch at the opportunity offered to me of expressing them here; knowing that the alacrity to fulfil an humble office conveys more love than the acceptance of the honor of a higher one, and that better, therefore, than the signal service it was the dream of my boyhood to render to his fame and memory, may be the saying of a few inadequate words upon these scarcely more important supplementary letters of Shelley.

## II. NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS

Page 2. PAULINE. A translation of the passage from Cornelius Agrippa may be found in Cooke, p. 285.

V. A. XX. i. e., Vixi annos viginti. I was twenty years old.

Page 3.

*Had not the glow I felt at his award*

*Sun-treader, life and light be thine forever.*

The whole passage refers to Shelley. Many annotations to the poem are given in *Poet-Lore*, January and February, 1889.

Page 9. *O God, where does this tend — these struggling aims?*

Browning appends the following note, a translation of which may be found in Cooke, p. 332.

"Je crains bien que mon pauvre ami ne soit pas toujours parfaitement compris dans ce qui reste à lire de cet étrange fragment, mais il est moins propre que tout autre à éclaircir ce qui de sa nature ne peut jamais être que songe et confusion



D'ailleurs je ne sais trop si en cherchant à mieux co-ordonner certaines parties l'on ne courrait pas le risque de nuire au seul mérite auquel une production si singulière peut prétendre, celui de donner une idée assez précise du genre qu'elle n'a fait qu'ébaucher. Ce début sans prétention, ce remuement des passions qui va d'abord en accroissant et puis s'apaise par degrés, ces élans de l'âme, ce retour soudain sur soi-même, et par-dessus tout, la tournure d'esprit tout particulière de mon ami, rendent les changements presque impossibles. Les raisons qu'il fait valoir ailleurs, et d'autres encore plus puissantes, ont fait trouver grâce à mes yeux pour cet écrit qu'autrement je lui eusse conseillé de jeter au feu. Je n'en crois pas moins au grand principe de toute composition — à ce principe de Shakespeare, de Raphaële, de Beethoven, d'où il suit que la concentration des idées est dûe bien plus à leur conception qu'à leur mise en exécution : j'ai tout lieu de craindre que la première de ces qualités ne soit encore étrangère à mon ami, et je doute fort qu'un redoublement de travail lui fasse acquiescer la seconde. Le mieux serait de brûler ceci ; mais que faire ?

"Je crois que dans ce qui suit il fait allusion à un certain examen qu'il fit autrefois de l'âme ou plutôt de son âme, pour découvrir la suite des objets auxquels il lui serait possible d'attendre, et dont chacun une fois obtenu devait former une espèce de plateau d'où l'on pouvait apercevoir d'autres buts, d'autres projets, d'autres jouissances qui, à leur tour, devaient être surmontées. Il en résultait que l'oubli et le sommeil devaient tout terminer. Cette idée, que je ne saisis pas parfaitement, lui est peut-être aussi intelligible qu'à moi."

PAULINE.

Page 12. PARACELSUS. The following historical note and comment was provided by Brown- ing to accompany the poem. The notes indicated by the superior numbers in the text will be found at the end of the article.

The liberties I have taken with my subject are very trifling ; and the reader may slip the foregoing scenes between the leaves of any memoir of Paracelsus he pleases, by way of commentary. To prove this, I subjoin a popular account, translated from the *Biographie Universelle*, Paris, 1822, which I select, not as the best, certainly, but as being at hand, and sufficiently concise for my purpose. I also append a few notes, in order to correct those parts which do not bear out my own view of the character of Paracelsus ; and have incorporated with them a notice or two, illustrative of the poem itself.

"PARACELSUS (Philippus Aureolus Theophrastus Bombastus ab Hohenheim) was born in 1493 at Einsiedeln,<sup>1</sup> a little town in the canton of Schwyz, some leagues distant from Zurich. His father, who exercised the profession of medicine at Villach in Carinthia, was nearly related

to George Bombast de Hohenheim, who became afterward Grand Prior of the Order of Malta : consequently Paracelsus could not spring from the dregs of the people, as Thomas Erastus, his sworn enemy, pretends.\* It appears that his elementary education was much neglected, and that he spent part of his youth in pursuing the life common to the travelling *literati* of the age ; that is to say, in wandering from country to country, predicting the future by astrology and cheiromancy, evoking apparitions, and practising the different operations of magic and alchemy, in which he had been initiated whether by his father or by various ecclesiastics, among the number of whom he particularizes the Abbot Tritheim,<sup>2</sup> and many German bishops.

"As Paracelsus displays everywhere an ignorance of the rudiments of the most ordinary knowledge, it is not probable that he ever studied seriously in the schools : he contented himself with visiting the universities of Germany, France, and Italy ; and in spite of his boasting himself to have been the ornament of those institutions, there is no proof of his having legally acquired the title of Doctor, which he assumes. It is only known that he applied himself long, under the direction of the wealthy Sigismond Fugger of Schwatz, to the discovery of the *Magnum Opus*.

"Paracelsus travelled among the mountains of Bohemia, in the east, and in Sweden, in order to inspect the labors of the miners, to be initiated in the mysteries of the oriental adepts, and to observe the secrets of nature and the famous mountain of loadstone.<sup>3</sup> He professes also to have visited Spain, Portugal, Prussia, Poland, and Transylvania ; everywhere communicating freely, not merely with the physicians, but the old women, charlatans, and conjurers of these several lands. It is even believed that he extended his journeyings as far as Egypt and Tartary, and that he accompanied the son of the Khan of the Tartars to Constantinople, for the purpose of obtaining the secret of the tincture of Trismegistus from a Greek who inhabited that capital.

"The period of his return to Germany is unknown : it is only certain that, at about the age of thirty-three, many astonishing cures which he wrought on eminent personages procured him such a celebrity, that he was called in 1526, on the recommendation of Ecolampadius,<sup>4</sup> to fill a chair of physic and surgery at the University of Basle. There Paracelsus began by burning publicly in the amphitheatre the works of Avicenna and Galen, assuring his auditors that the latches of his shoes were more instructed than those two physicians ; that all universities, all writers put together, were less gifted than the hairs of his beard and of the crown of his head ; and that, in a word, he was to be re-

\* I shall diagnose M. Renaudin's next sentence a little. "Hic (Erastus sc.) Paracelsum trimum a milite quodam, alii a sue exectum ferunt : constat imberbem illum, mulierumque osorem fuisse." A standing High-Dutch joke in those days at the expense of a number of learned men, as may be seen by referring to such rubbish as Melander's *Jocoseria*, etc. In the prints from his por-

trait by Tintoretto, painted a year before his death, Paracelsus is *barbatus*, at all events. But Erastus was never without a good reason for his faith — *e. g.*, "Helvetium fuisse (Paracelsum) vix credo, vix enim ea regio tale monstrum ediderit" (*De Medicina Nova*.)



garded as the legitimate monarch of medicine, "You shall follow me," cried he, "you, Avicenna, Galen, Rhasis, Montagnana, Mesues, you, gentlemen of Paris, Montpellier, Germany, Cologne, Vienna,\* and whomsoever the Rhine and Danube nourish; you who inhabit the isles of the sea; you, likewise, Dalmatians, Athenians: thou, Arab; thou, Greek; thou, Jew: all shall follow me, and the monarchy shall be mine."†

"But at Basle it was speedily perceived that the new Professor was no better than an egregious quack. Scarcely a year elapsed before his lectures had fairly driven away an audience incapable of comprehending their emphatic jargon. That which above all contributed to sully his reputation was the debauched life he led. According to the testimony of Oporinus, who lived two years in his intimacy, Paracelsus scarcely ever ascended the lecture-desk unless half drunk, and only dictated to his secretaries when in a state of intoxication: if summoned to attend the sick, he rarely proceeded thither without previously drenching himself with wine. He was accustomed to retire to bed without changing his clothes; sometimes he spent the night in pot-houses with peasants, and in the morning knew no longer what he was about; and, nevertheless, up to the age of twenty-five his only drink had been water.<sup>5</sup>

"At length, fearful of being punished for a serious outrage on a magistrate,<sup>6</sup> he fled from Basle towards the end of the year 1527, and took refuge in Alsatia, whither he caused Oporinus to follow with his chemical apparatus.

"He then entered once more upon the career of ambulatory theosophist.‡ Accordingly we find him at Colmar in 1528; at Nuremberg in 1529; at St. Gall in 1531; at Pfeffers in 1535; and at Augsburg in 1536: he next made some stay in Moravia, where he still further compromised his reputation by the loss of many distinguished patients, which compelled him to betake himself to Vienna; from thence he passed into Hungary; and in 1538 was at Villach, where he dedicated his *Chronicle* to the States of Carinthia, in gratitude for the many kindnesses with which they had honored his father. Finally, from Mindelheim, which he visited in 1540, Paracelsus proceeded to Salzburg, where he died in the hospital of St. Stephen (*Sebastian* is meant), Sept. 24, 1541."—(Here follows a criticism on his writings, which I omit.)

<sup>1</sup> Paracelsus would seem to be a fantastic version of *Von Hohenheim*; Einsiedeln is the Lat-

\* Erastus, who relates this, here oddly remarks, "mirum quod non et Garamantos, Indos et *Anglos* adjunxit." Not so wonderful neither, if we believe what another adversary "had heard somewhere,"—that all Paracelsus' system came of his pillaging "Anglum quendam, Rogerium Bacchonem."

† See his works, *passim*. I must give one specimen:—Somebody had been styling him "Luther alter." "And why not?" (he asks, as he well might.) "Luther is abundantly learned, therefore you hate him and me; but we are at least a match for you.—Nam et contra vos et vestros universos principes Avicennam, Galenum, Aristotelem, etc. me satis superque munitum esse novi. Et vertex iste meus calvus ac depilis multo

inized Eremus, whence Paracelsus is sometimes called, as in the correspondence of Erasmus, Eremita. Bombast, his proper name, probably acquired, from the characteristic phraseology of his lectures, that unlucky signification which it has ever since retained.

<sup>2</sup> Then Bishop of Spanheim, and residing at Würzburg in Franconia; a town situated in a grassy fertile country, whence its name, Herbilopolis. He was much visited there by learned men, as may be seen by his *Epistolæ Familiares*, Hag. 1536: among others, by his stanch friend Cornelius Agrippa, to whom he dates thence, in 1510, a letter in answer to the dedicatory epistle prefixed to the treatise *De Occult. Philosoph.* which last contains the following ominous allusion to Agrippa's sojourn: "Quum nuper tecum, R. P. in cœnobio tuo apud Herbilopolim aliquamdiu conversatus, multa de chymicis, multa de magicis, multa de cabalisticis, cæterisque quæ adhuc in occulto delitescunt, arcanis scientiis atque artibus una contulissemus," etc.

<sup>3</sup> "Inexplebilis illa aviditas naturæ perscrutandi secreta et reconditarum supellectile scientiarum animum locupletandi, uno eodemque loco diu persistere non patiebatur, sed Mercurii instar, omnes terras, nationes et urbes perlustrandi igniculos supponebat, ut cum viris naturæ scrutatoribus, chymicis præsertim, ore tenuis conferret, et quæ diuturnis laboribus nocturnisque vigiliis invenerant una vel altera communicatione obtineret." (BITISKIUS in *Prefat.*) "Patris auxilio primum, deinde propria industria doctissimos viros in Germania, Italia, Gallia, Hispania, aliisque Europæ regionibus, nactus est præceptores; quorum liberali doctrina, et potissimum propria inquisitione ut qui esset ingenio acutissimo ac fere divino, tantum profecit, ut multi testati sint, in universa philosophia, tam ardua, tam arcana et abdita eruisse mortalium neminem." (MELCH. ADAM, in *Vit. Germ. Medic.*) "Paracelsus qui in intima naturæ viscera sic penitus introierit, metallorum stirpiumque vires et facultates tam incredibili ingenii acumine exploraverit ac perviderit, ad morbos omnes vel desperatos et opinione hominum insanabiles percurandum; ut cum Theophrasto nata primum medicina perfectaque videtur." (PETRI RAMI, *Orat. de Basilea.*) His passion for wandering is best described in his own words: "Ecce amatorem adolescentem difficillimi itineris haud piget, ut venustam saltem puellam vel feminam aspiciat: quanto

plura et sublimiora novit quam vester vel Avicenna vel universe academici. Prodit, et signum date, qui viri sitis, quid roboris habeatis? quid autem sitis? Doctores et magistri, pediculos pectentes et fricantes podicem." (*Frag. Med.*)

‡ "So migratory a life could afford Paracelsus but little leisure for application to books, and accordingly he informs us that for the space of ten years he never opened a single volume, and that his whole medical library was not composed of six sheets: in effect, the inventory drawn up after his death states that the only books which he left were the Bible, the New Testament, the Commentaries of St. Jerome on the Gospels, a printed volume on Medicine, and seven manuscripts."

minus nobilissimarum artium amore laboris ac  
eujuslibet tædi pugebit ? ” etc. (*Defensiones*  
*Septem adversus amulos suos*. 1573. Def. 4ta  
“ De peregrinationibus et exilio.”)

4 The reader may remember that it was in  
conjunction with Ecolampadius, then Divinity  
Professor at Basle, that Zuinglius published in  
1520 an answer to Luther's Confession of Faith ;  
and that both proceeded in company to the sub-  
sequent conference with Luther and Melancthon  
at Marburg. Their letters fill a large volume.  
— *D. D. Johannis Ecolampadii et Huldrici*  
*Zuinglii Epistolarum lib. quatuor*. Bas. 1536.  
It must be also observed that Zuinglius began  
to preach in 1516, and at Zurich in 1519, and  
that in 1525 the Mass was abolished in the can-  
tons. The tenets of Ecolampadius were sup-  
posed to be more evangelical than those up to  
that period maintained by the glorious German,  
and our brave Bishop Fisher attacked them as  
the fouler heresy : — “ About this time arose out  
of Luther's school one Ecolampadius, like a  
mighty and fierce giant ; who, as his master  
had gone beyond the Church, went beyond his  
master (or else it had been impossible he could  
have been reputed the better scholar), who de-  
nied the real presence ; him, this worthy cham-  
pion (the Bishop) sets upon, and with five books  
(like so many smooth stones taken out of the  
river that doth always run with living water)  
slays the Philistine ; which five books were  
written in the year of our Lord 1526, at which  
time he had governed the See of Rochester  
twenty years.” (*Life of Bishop Fisher*, 1655.)  
Now, there is no doubt of the Protestantism of  
Paracelsus, Erasmus, Agrippa, etc., but the  
nonconformity of Paracelsus was always scan-  
dalous. L. Crasso (*Elog. d' Huomini Letterati*,  
Ven. 1606) informs us that his books were ex-  
communicated by the Church. Quenstedt (*de*  
*Patr. Doct.*) affirms “ nec tantum novæ medi-  
cinæ, verum etiam novæ theologiæ autor est.”  
Delrio, in his *Disquisit. Magicar.*, classes him  
among those “ partim atheos, partim hæreti-  
cos ” (lib. I. cap. 3). “ Omnino tamen multa  
theologica in ejusdem scriptis plane atheismum  
olent, ac duriusculè sonant in auribus vere Chris-  
tiani.” (D. GABRIELIS CLAUDERI SCHEDIASMA,  
*de Tinct. Univ. Norimb.* 1736.) I shall only  
add one more authority : — “ Oporinus dicit se  
(Paracelsum) aliquando Lutherum et Papam,  
non minus quam nunc Galenum et Hippocratem  
redacturum in ordinem minabatur, neque enim  
eorum qui hactenus in scripturam sacram scrip-  
sissent, sive veteres, sive recentiores, quenquam  
scripturæ nucleum recte euisse, sed circa cor-  
ticem et quasi membranam tantum herere.”  
(TH. ERASTUS, *Disputant. de Med. Nova*.) These  
and similar notions had their due effect on Opor-  
inus, who, says Zuingerus, in his *Theatrum*,  
“ longum vale dixit ei (Paracelo), ne ob præ-

ceptoris, alioqui amicissimi. horrendas blasphe-  
mias, ipse quoque aliquando poenas Deo Opt.  
Max. lueret.”

5 His defenders allow the drunkenness. Take  
a sample of their excuses : “ Gentis hoc, non  
viri vitium est, a Taciti seculo ad nostrum  
usque non interrupto filo devolutum, sinceri-  
tati forte Germanæ coævum, et nescio an aliquo  
consanguinitas vinculo junctum.” (BITISKIUS.)  
The other charges were chiefly trumped up by  
Oporinus : “ Domi, quod Oporinus amanuensis  
ejus sæpe narravit, nunquam nisi potus ad ex-  
plicanda sua accessit, atque in medio conclavi  
ad columnam τετυρωμένος adstans, apprehenso  
manibus capulo ensis, cuius κοίωμα hospitium  
præbuit, ut aiunt, spiritui familiari, imagina-  
tiones aut concepta sua protulit : — alii illud  
quod in capulo habuit, ab ipso Azoth appel-  
latum, medicinam fuisse præstantissimam  
aut lapidem Philosophicum putant.” (MELCH.  
ADAM.) This famous sword was no laughing-  
matter in those days, and it is now a material  
feature in the popular idea of Paracelsus. I  
recollect a couple of allusions to it in our own  
literature, at the moment.

Ne had been known the Danish Gonswart,  
Or Paracelsus with his long sword.

*Volpone*, Act ii. Sc. 2.

Bumbastus kept a devil's bird  
Shut in the pummel of his sword,  
That taught him all the cunning pranks  
Of past and future mountebanks.

*Hudibras*, Part ii. Cant. 3.

This Azoth was simply “ *laudanum suum*.”  
But in his time he was commonly believed to  
possess the double tincture — the power of cur-  
ing diseases and transmuting metals. Oporinus  
often witnessed, as he declares, both these ef-  
fects, as did also Francisus, the servant of  
Paracelsus, who describes, in a letter to Nean-  
der, a successful projection at which he was  
present, and the results of which, good golden  
ingots, were confided to his keeping. For the  
other quality, let the following notice vouch  
among many others : — “ Degebat Theophras-  
tus Norimbergæ prociis a mendicibus illius ur-  
bis, et vaniloquus deceptorque proclamatus, qui,  
ut laboranti famæ subveniat, viros quosdam  
authoritatis summæ in Republica illa adit, et  
infamiae amoliendæ, artique suæ asserendæ,  
specimen ejus pollicetur editurum, nullo stipen-  
dio vel accepto pretio, horum faciles præben-  
tium aures jussu elephantiacos aliquot, a com-  
mune hominum cæterorum segregatos, et in  
valetudinarium detrusos, alieno arbitrio eligan-  
tur, quos virtute singulari remediatorum suorum  
Theophrastus a fœda Græcorum lepra mundat,  
pristinæque sanitati restituit ; conservat illustre  
harum curationum urbs in archivis suis testi-  
monium.” (BITISKIUS.)\* It is to be remarked  
that Oporinus afterwards repented of his treach-

\* The premature death of Paracelsus casts no man-  
ner of doubt on the fact of his having possessed the  
Elixir Vitæ : the alchemists have abundant reasons to  
adduce, from which I select the following, as explana-  
tory of a property of the Tincture not calculated on by  
its votaries : — “ Objectionem illam, quod Paracelsus

non fuerit longævus, non nulli quoque solvunt per ra-  
tiones physicas : vitæ nimirum abbreviationem fortasse  
talibus accidere posse, ab Tincturam frequentiore ac  
lariori dorsi sumtam, dum a summe efficaci et penetra-  
bili hujus virtute calor immatus quasi suffocatur.” (GA-  
BRIELIS CLAUDERI SCHEDIASMA.)



ery: "Sed resipuit tandem, et quem vivum convitiis insectatus fuerat defunctum veneratione prosequutus, infames famæ præceptoris morsus in remorsus conscientie conversi penitentia, heu nimis tarda, vulnera clausere exanimi quæ spiranti inflixerant." For these "bites" of Oporinus, see Disputat. Erasti, and Andreae Joicisci *Oratio de Vit. ob Opori*; for the "remorse," *Mic. Toxita in præf. Testamenti*, and Conringius (otherwise an enemy of Paracelsus), who says it was contained in a letter from Oporinus to Doctor Vegerus.\*

Whatever the moderns may think of these marvellous attributes, the title of Paracelsus to be considered the father of modern chemistry is indisputable. Gerardus Vossius, *De Philos<sup>a</sup> et Phil<sup>um</sup> sectis*, thus prefaces the ninth section of cap. 9, *De Chymia* — "Nobilem hanc medicinæ partem, diu sepultam avorum ætate, quasi ab orco revocavit Th. Paracelsus." I suppose many hints lie scattered in his neglected books, which clever appropriators have since developed with applause. Thus, it appears from his treatise *De Phlebotomia*, and elsewhere, that he had discovered the circulation of the blood and the sanguification of the heart; as did after him Realdo Colombo, and still more perfectly Andrea Cesalpino of Arezzo, as Bayle and Bartoli observe. Even Lavater quotes a passage from his work *De Natura Rerum*, on practical Physiology, in which the definitions and axioms are precise enough: he adds, "though an astrological enthusiast, a man of prodigious genius." See Holcroft's Translation, vol. iii. p. 179 — "The Eyes." While on the subject of the writings of Paracelsus, I may explain a passage in the third part of the Poem. He was, as I have said, unwilling to publish his works, but in effect did publish a vast number. Valentius (*in Præfat in Paramyr.*) declares "quod ad librorum Paracelsi copiam attinet, audio, a Germanis prope trecentos recenseri." "O fecunditas ingenii!" adds he, appositely. Many of these were, however, spurious; and Fred. Bitiskius gives his good edition (3 vols. fol. Gen. 1658) "rejectis suppositis solo ipsius nomine superbientibus quorum ingens circumfertur numerus." The rest were "charissimum et pretiosissimum authoris pignus, extorsor potius ab illo quam obtentum." "Jam minime eo volente atque jubente hæc ipsius scripta in lucem prodire videntur; quippe quæ nullo inclusa ipso absente, servi ejusdam indicio, furto surrepta atque sublata sunt," says Valentius. These have been the study of a host of commentators, amongst whose labors are most notable, Petri Severini, *Idea Medicinæ Philosophiæ*, Bas. 1571; Mic. Toxetis, *Onomastica*, Arg. 1574; Dornei, *Dict. Parac.* Franc. 1584; and *Pi Phil<sup>os</sup> Compendium cum scholiis auctore Leone Suavio*. Paris. (This last, a good book.)

\* A disgraceful affair. One Liechtenfels, a canon, having been rescued in extremis by the "laudanium" of Paracelsus, refused the stip-

\* For a good defence of Paracelsus I refer the reader to Olavus Borrichius' treatise — *Hermetis etc. Sapientia vindicata*, 1674. Or, if he is no more learned than my-

ulated fee, and was supported in his meanness by the authorities, whose interference Paracelsus would not brook. His own liberality was allowed by his bitterest foes, who found a ready solution of his indifference to profit in the aforesaid sword-handle and its guest. His freedom from the besetting sin of a profession he abhorred — (as he curiously says somewhere, "Quis quæso deinceps honorem deferat professione tali, quæ a tam facinorosis nebulonibus obitur et administratur?") — is recorded in his epitaph, which affirms — "Bona sua in pauperes distribuenda collocandaque erogavit," *honoravit*, or *ordinavit* — for accounts differ.

Page 52. Act I. sc. 2. LADY CARLISLE and WENTWORTH.

Lady Carlisle, whose part was taken by Helen Faucit, afterward Lady Martin, was in history daughter to the ninth Earl of Northumberland. In 1639 she had been for three years a widow.

Page 71.

... Consign  
To the low ground once more the ignoble Term,  
And raise the Genius on his orb again.

The term was a statue representing the Roman term, the god who presides over boundaries. The genius was the image that represented the guardian spirit. Mr. Browning commenting on this passage has said: "Suppose the enemies of a man to have thrown down the image and replaced it by a mere Term, and you have what I put into Strafford's head." "Putting the Genius on the pedestal usurped by the Term means — or tries to mean — substituting eventually the true notion of Strafford's endeavor and performance in the world for what he conceives to be the ignoble and distorted conception of these by his contemporary judge."

Page 90. BOCAFOLI and PLARA.

"Purely supposititious poets. Browning chooses to invent them as types of two opposite poetic defects; Bocafoli as the writer of stark-naked or totally jejune and inartistic psalms; Plara as the writer of petted and over-finished sonnets." [W. M. ROSSSETTI.]

Page 101. Patron-friend. Walter Savage Landor.

Page 101. Eyebright.

"Stands for 'Euphrasia,' its Greek equivalent, and refers to one of Mr. Browning's oldest friends." Miss Euphrasia Fanny Haworth. [MRS. ORR.]

Page 129. Asolo.

It is interesting to note the choice of scene for *Pippa Passes* in view of the dedicatory letter of Browning's latest volume *Asolando*. In a letter written on his first journey to Italy he speaks of "delicious Asolo."

Page 137.

Kate? The Cornaro doubtless, who renounced  
The crown of Cyprus to be lady here  
At Asolo.

Caterina Cornaro, the daughter of a wealthy and noble citizen of Venice, was born in 1454. self in such matters, I mention simply that Paracelsus introduced the use of Mercury and Laudanum.



In 1471 she married the king of Cyprus. He died the next year and for seven years Caterina was nominal queen, but Venice compelled her at the end of that time to resign, and gave her for residence Castle Asolo.

Page 138. BLUPHOCKS.

The curious Biblical scholia on this character is Browning's own. It is said that the name was simply another way of spelling Blue Fox, a slang-phrase for the Edinburgh Review.

Page 168. THE LABORATORY.

*Which is the poison to poison her, prithee?*

D. G. Rossetti's first water-color was an illustration of this poem, and bore beneath it this line.

Page 169. CRISTINA.

The Cristina of this poem is fashioned after Cristina Maria, daughter of Francis I., King of the Two Sicilies. She was born in 1806; was married in 1829 to Ferdinand VII. King of Spain; became Regent in 1833, on the death of the king; and in 1843 her daughter ascended the throne as Isabel II. Her life was given to intrigue, and to the use of tyrannical power. She was hated by those she ruled, and despised by them because of her personal character.

Page 175. A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI'S.

Baldassere Galuppi was born near Venice in 1706, and died in Venice in 1785. He was in London for three or four years, and was a most prolific composer.

Page 176. *You're wroth—can you slay your snake like Apollo?*

In a volume of selections from his poem, revised by Browning himself, occurs the following note on this line, by the poet.

"A word on the line about Apollo the snake-slayer, which my friend Professor Colvin condemns, believing that the god of the Belvedere grasps no bow, but the ægis, as described in the 15th Iliad. Surely the text represents that portentous object (ὄφιν, δεινόν, ἀμυδάσσαν, ἀπρηπὲς — μαριαρῆν) as 'shaken violently' or 'held immovably' by both hands, not a single one, and that the left hand:—

ἀλλά σύ γ' ἐν χεῖρεσσι λάβ' αἰγίδα θυσανόεσσαν  
τὴν μάλ' ἐπίσσειν φοβέειν ἥρως Ἀχαιοῦς.

and so on, τὴν ἄρ' ὁ γ' ἐν χεῖρεσσιν ἔχων — χερσιν ἔχ' ἄπρημα, κ.τ.λ. Moreover, while he shook it he 'shouted enormously,' σείσ', ἐπὶ δ' αὐτὸς αὔσε μάλ' αἰγίδα, which the statue does not. Presently when Teukros, on the other side, plies the bow, it is τόξον ἔχων ἐν χειρὶ παλιντονον. Besides, by the act of discharging an arrow, the right arm and hand are thrown back as we see, — a quite gratuitous and theatrical display in the case supposed. The conjecture of Flaxman that the statue was suggested by the bronze Apollo Alexikakos of Kalamis, mentioned by Pausanias, remains probable; though the 'hardness' which Cicero considers to distinguish the artist's workmanship from that of Muron is not by any means apparent in our marble copy, if it be one. — Feb. 16, 1880."

Page 181.

The last four lines of the ninth section of *Saul* which ended the first part in *Bells and Pomegranates*, were as follows, 1845:—

"On one head the joy and the pride, even rage like the  
throe  
That opes the rock, helps its glad labor, and lets the  
gold go—  
And ambition that sees a man lead it — oh, all of these  
— all  
Combine to unite in one creature — Saul!"

Page 191. RESPECTABILITY.

"These two unconventional Bohemian lovers," says Professor Corson, "strolling together at night, at their own sweet will, see down the court along which they are strolling, three lamp-pions flare, which indicate some big place or other where the respectables do congregate; and the woman says to the companion, with a humorous sarcasm, Put forward your best foot! that is, we must be very correct passing along here in this brilliant light. By the lovers are evidently meant George Sand (the speaker) and Jules Sandeau, with whom she lived in Paris, after she left her husband, M. Dudevant. They took just such unconventional night-strolls together, in the streets of Paris."

Page 194. THE GUARDIAN ANGEL.

The picture which Browning describes, called *L' Angelo Custode*, is in the church of St. Augustine at Fano; and it "represents an angel standing with outstretched wings by a little child. The child is half-kneeling on a kind of pedestal, while the angel joins its hands in prayer; its gaze is directed upwards towards the sky, from which cherubs are looking down." It is not regarded as one of his chief pictures, but it interested Browning because of the subject, and its simple pathos.

Page 194. *Alfred, dear friend.*

Alfred Domett, the hero of *Waring*, an early friend of Browning, and at the time living in New Zealand. Mrs. Orr writes: "When he read the apostrophe to 'Alfred, dear friend,' he had reached the last line before it occurred to him that the person invoked could be he."

Page 254. INSTANS TYRANNUS.

The title of this poem was suggested by Horace's ode, III. iii. 1. beginning

Justum et tenacem propositi virum,  
Non civium ardor prava jubentium  
Non vultus instantis tyranni.

Page 264. WARING.

Alfred Domett, son of Nathaniel Domett, was born at Camberwell Grove, Surrey, May 20, 1811. His father was a seaman under Nelson, and a gallant sailor. Alfred entered St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1829; but after a residence of three years he left without graduation. His attention was early turned to literature, and in 1832 he published a volume of poems. He also contributed to *Blackwood's Magazine* various lyrics which attracted attention to him as a rising poet. One of these was *A Christmas Hymn*, which is the best known of all his poems, and has been highly praised. It may be found in several poetical collections, and among them *Festival Poems*. In 1839, in the same magazine, he published a poem on *Venice*.

Domett was called to the bar in 1841, and lived in the Middle Temple with Joseph Arnold, who became Chief Justice of Bombay.

He was handsome and attractive, well received in society, and a favorite with his literary friends. Before this, however, he had spent two years in travelling in America, including a winter in the backwoods of Canada; and then two years more in Switzerland, Italy, and other Continental countries. In 1842 he was persuaded to go to New Zealand by his cousin, William Young, whose father was a large land owner there, in connection with the New Zealand Company. In May, 1842, he went out to that colony among the earliest settlers. It was immediately after his departure that Browning wrote his *Waring*, which describes his friend very accurately, and the circumstances of his sudden absence from London. On arriving in New Zealand, Domett found that his cousin had just been drowned. He settled in the county of Wairoa, on the North Island. In *The Guardian Angel* Browning addressed him:—

“Where are you, dear old friend?  
How rolls the Wairoa at your world’s far end?”

Soon after his arrival Domett was made a magistrate with a salary of £700 a year. Before leaving England Domett was permanently lamed by an accident to one of his legs, which saved his life soon after he reached the colony, for it prevented his accepting the invitation of some treacherous native chiefs to a banquet at which all the English guests were killed. In his *Narrative of the Wairou Massacre*, 1843, he described this event.

In 1843 he was made the Colonial Secretary for the southern part of the North Island; and in 1851 he was also appointed the Civil Secretary for the whole of New Zealand, holding both offices until the introduction of the new constitution, in 1853. Having resigned these offices, he accepted one of more work and less remuneration, as Commissioner of Crown Lands, and Resident Magistrate at Hawke’s Bay; and of this district he had virtually the sole official management. In 1859 he represented the town of Nelson in the House of Representatives, and he was reelected the following year.

In 1862, at a critical moment in the affairs of New Zealand, Domett was called upon to form a new government, which he successfully accomplished, becoming the Prime Minister.

In 1871, Domett returned to London, and took up his residence at Phillimore Terrace, Kensington; and afterwards at St. Charles’s Square, North Kensington. He had married a handsome English lady while yet a resident in New Zealand. He saw much of Browning; he became an interested member of the Browning Society, and one of its vice-presidents. “His grand white head,” says Mr. F. J. Farnivall, “was to be seen at all the Society’s performances and at several of its meetings. He naturally preferred Mr. Browning’s early works to the later ones. He could not be persuaded to write any account of his early London days. Mr. Domett produced with pride his sea-stained copy of Browning’s *Bells and Pomegranates*. A sterling, manly, independent nature was Alfred Domett’s. He impressed every one with whom

he came in contact, and is deeply regretted by his remaining friends.”

In 1872 Domett published in London his *Ranolf and Amohia, a South-Sea Day Dream*, a poem descriptive of New Zealand, its scenery, and the legends and habits of the Maori inhabitants. This poem was afterwards revised, enlarged, and published in two volumes. In 1877 appeared a volume of his short poems, including those published before he went to New Zealand, under the title of *Flotsam and Jetsam, Rhymes Old and New*. [G. W. COOKE.]

Page 280.

*He settled Hoti’s business—let it be!*

*Properly based Oun—*

*Gave us the doctrine of the enclitic De.*

—*Hoti* is the Greek particle *ὅτι*, that, etc. —*Oun* is the Greek particle *οὐν*, then, now then, etc. —*The enclitic De* is the Greek *δε*, which Browning refers to in a letter to the London *Daily News* of Nov. 21, 1874: “To the Editor: Sir,—In a clever article this morning you speak of ‘the doctrine of enclitic De’—‘which, with all deference to Mr. Browning, in point of fact does not exist.’ No, not to Mr. Browning: but pray defer to Herr Buttmann, whose fifth list of ‘enclitics’ ends with ‘the inseparable *De*’—or to Curtius, whose fifth list ends also with ‘*De* (meaning “towards” and as a demonstrative appendage).’ That this is not to be confounded with the accentuated ‘*De*, meaning *but*’ was the ‘doctrine’ which the Grammarian bequeathed to those capable of receiving it.—I am, sir, yours obediently, R. B.”

Page 287. CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER CAME.

In an article describing a visit to the poet, Rev. John W. Chadwick speaks of this tapestry and Mr. Browning’s comments on the poem:—

“Upon the lengthwise wall of the room, above the Italian furniture, sombre and richly carved, was a long, wide band of tapestry, on which I thought I recognized the miserable horse of Childe Roland’s pilgrimage:—

“‘One stiff blind horse, his every bone a-stare,

Stood stupefied, however he came there:

Thrust out past service from the devil’s stud!’”

I asked Mr. Browning if the beast of the tapestry was the beast of the poem; and he said yes, and descanted somewhat on his lean monstrosity. But only a Browning could have evolved the stanzas of the poem from the woven image. I further asked him if he had said that he only wrote *Childe Roland* for its realistic imagery, without any moral purpose,—a notion to which Mrs. Sutherland Orr has given currency; and he protested that he never had. When I asked him if constancy to an ideal—“He that endureth to the end shall be saved”—was not a sufficient understanding of the central purpose of the poem, he said, “Yes, just about that.”

Page 337. ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES.

Mrs. Orr prints in her *Handbook* a note from Browning with reference to the attacks upon him for the form he adopted in the printing of Greek names. It is in reply to an article in the



*Nineteenth Century*, for January, 1886, written by Mr. Frederick Harrison. "I have just noticed," wrote Browning, "in this month's *Nineteenth Century* that it is inquired by a humorous objector to the practice of spelling (under exceptional conditions) Greek proper names as they are spelled in Greek literature, why the same principle should not be adopted by Ægyptologists, Hebraists, Sanscrittists, Accadians, Moabites, Hittites, and Cuneiformists? Adopt it by all means whenever the particular language enjoyed by any fortunate possessor of these shall, like Greek, have been for about three hundred years insisted upon in England, as an acquisition of paramount importance at school and college, for every aspirant to distinction in learning, even at the cost of six or seven years' study — a sacrifice considered well worth making for even an imperfect acquaintance with the most perfect language in the world. Further, it will be adopted whenever the letters substituted for those in ordinary English use shall do no more than represent to the unscholarly what the scholar accepts without scruple, when, for the hundredth time, he reads the word which, for once, he has occasion to write in English, and which he concludes must be as euphonic as the rest of a language renowned for euphony. And finally, the practice will be adopted whenever the substituted letters effect no sort of organic change, so as to jostle the word from its pride of place in English verse or prose. 'Themistokles' fits in quietly everywhere, with or without the 'k'; but in a certain poetical translation I remember by a young friend, of the *Anabasis*, beginning thus felicitously, 'Cyrus the Great and Artaxerxes (Whose temper bloodier than a Turk's is) Were children both of the mild, pious, And happy monarch King Darius; who fails to see that, although a correct 'Kuraush' may pass, yet 'Darayavash' disturbs the metre as well as the rhyme? It seems, however, that 'Themistokles' may be winked at; not so the 'harsh and subversive "Kirke." But let the objector ask somebody with no knowledge to subvert, how he supposes 'Circe' is spelled in Greek, and the answer will be, 'With a soft c.' Inform him that no such letter exists, and he guesses, 'Then with s, if there be anything like it.' Tell him that to eye and ear equally, his own *k* answers the purpose, and you have at all events taught him that much, if little enough — and why does he live unable to learn a little!" This note is signed "R. B." Its date is January 4, 1886.

Page 341. JOHANNES AGRICOLA IN MEDITATION.

"Antinomians, so denominated for rejecting the Law as a thing of no use under the Gospel dispensation: they say, that good works do not further, nor evil works hinder salvation; that the child of God cannot sin, that God never chastiseth him, that murder, drunkenness, etc., are sins in the wicked but not in him, that the child of grace being once assured of salvation, afterwards never doubteth, . . . that God doth not love any man for his holiness, that sanctification is no evidence of justification, etc.

Pontanus, in his *Catalogue of Heresies*, says John Agricola was the author of this sect, A. D. 1535." *Dictionary of all Religions*, 1704."

"Browning," says Mr. Cooke, "does not correctly represent the teachings of Agricola, though his poem is correct so far as many Antinomians are concerned. Agricola held that the Law and the Gospel are incompatible, that the Law is only for the Jew, and that the spirit of Christ abolishes it for the Christian. The moral obligations, however, he held were for the Christian as much as for any other person. In the New Testament he found all the principles and motives necessary to give true impulse and guidance to the Christian. It was the use made of his teachings by fanatics which cast an odium on the name of Antinomians; and it is this fanatical and sentimental religion which Browning has interpreted correctly in his poem. Many of the Antinomians taught what is attributed to them in the *Dictionary of all Religions*, from which Browning quoted when his poem was first published."

Page 348. THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB.

"I know no other piece of modern English, prose or poetry, in which there is so much told, as in these lines, of the Renaissance spirit, — its worldliness, inconsistency, pride, hypocrisy, ignorance of itself, love of art, of luxury, and of good Latin. It is nearly all that I said of the central Renaissance in thirty pages of the *Stones of Venice*, put into as many lines, Browning's being also the antecedent work. The worst of it is that this kind of concentrated writing needs so much solution before the reader can fairly get the good of it, that people's patience fails them, and they give the thing up as insoluble; though, truly, it ought to be to the current of common thought like Saladin's talisman, dipped in clear water, not soluble altogether, but making the element medicinal." [JOHN RUSKIN.]

Page 387. *Is not his love at issue still with sin.*

In the first edition there followed this line: *Closed with and cast and conquered, crucified.*

Page 602. BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE.

Mr. Richard G. Moulton, in the *Transactions of the Browning Society*, 1890-1891, offers a detailed criticism of Browning's poem as a reproduction of the thought of Euripides, especially in regard to the character of Admetus. The chief points will be found in Berdoo's *The Browning Cyclopaedia*.

Page 699. PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWANGAU.

Of the description of the succession of Roman high priests, Mrs. Orr says: "Mr. Browning desires me to say that he has been wrong in associating this custom with the little temple by the river Clitumnus, which he describes from personal knowledge. That to which the tradition refers stood by the lake of Nemi."

Page 736. RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY.

The equivalents in point of fact of names are as follows.

The Firm Miranda = Mellerio Brothers.



St. Rambert = St. Aubin. Joyeux, Joyous-Gard = Lion, Lionesse.

Vire = Caen.

St. Rambertese = St. Aubinese.

Londres = Douvres.

London = Dover. La Roche = Courcelle.

Monlieu = Bernières. Villeneuve = Langrune.

Pons = Luc. La Ravissante = La Délivrante.

Raimbaux = Bayeux. Morillon = Hugonin.

Mirecourt = Bonnechose.

New York = Madrid.

Clairvaux = Tailleville. Gonthier = Béný.

Rousseau = Voltaire. Léonce = Antoine.

Of "Firm Miranda, London and New York"

= "Mellerio Brothers;" Meller, people say.

Rare Vissante = Dell Yvrande. Aldabert =

Regnobert. Eldobert = Ragnobert. Mailleville =

Beaudoin. Chaumont = Quelen. Vertga-

lant = Talleyrand.

Ravissantish = Délivrandish.

Clara de Millefleurs = Anna de Beaupré.

Coliseum Street = Miromesnil Street.

Steiner = Mayer. Commercý = Larocý. Sierck

= Metz.

Muhlhausen = Debacker. Carliño Centofanti

= Miranda di Mongino.

Portugal = Italy.

Vaillant = Mériel.

Thirty-three = Twenty-five.

Beaumont = Pasquier.

Sceaux = Garges.

The "guide" recommended to Miranda was M. Joseph Milsand, who was always at St. Aubin during the bathing season, and who was an old friend of Browning's.

Luc de la Maison Rouge = Jean de la Becquettière. Claise = Vire. Maude = Anne.

Dionysius = Eliezer. Scholastica = Elizabeth.

Twentieth = Thirteenth.

Fricquot = Picot.

Page 802. *My Kirkup*.

Baron Kirkup, a connoisseur in literature and art, who was numbered among Browning's Florentine friends. He was ennobled by the King of Italy, because of his literary and patriotic services to his country. He discovered a portrait of Dante in the Bargello at Florence.

Page 827. EPILOGUE.

The poet referred to is Mrs. Browning in *Wine of Cyprus*.

Page 880. IVÁN IVÁNOVITCH.

Mr. Nathan Haskell Dole, the author of a *History of Russia*, and the translator of Tolstoi and other Russian authors, furnishes for Mr. Cooke's *Browning Guide Book* the following notes:—

"A *verst* is about .66 of a mile (3500 feet). — I take it the *highway broad and straight from the Neva's mouth to Moscow's gates of gold* must refer to the legend that when the first railroad was built from one city to the other, the Emperor Nicholas ordered that it should run absolutely straight, himself marking it with a ruler on the map. I do not think the old highway ran straight. — *Iván Ivánovitch* is equivalent to John Johnson, or more correctly Jack Jackson, *Iván* being the familiar of *Ioánn*, John. The

ending *vitch*, however, is not exactly an equivalent to son; it really means father. — *Droug*, more correctly spelt *druk* (pronounced drook), means friend. — Browning's *motherkin* corresponds to the Russian *matushka*, and is an endearing diminutive of *mat*, mother; it is always applied to any old peasant woman; it is a familiar form of address, often applied to any woman or even girl. — *Vässili* (accented by Browning incorrectly on the first syllable) should be spelt *Vasili*: it is our Basil. — *Lukeria* is a colloquial form of *Glikeria*, *Glyceria*; the proper diminutive is *Lusha* and also *Lushka*. — Browning makes one odd mistake in the poem; it would be impossible for the breath to go up straight when the people were riding fast in a Russian sledge. — He speaks of *twín pigeons*; the most familiar term of endearment in Russian is *golubchik*, which is the diminutive of the word for pigeon. — *Stiöpka* is the proper diminutive of *Stepàn*, Stephen; the *io* merely represents the sound of the *e* (as in *yelk*) with which it is written in Russian. — *Pope* should not be with a capital; it simply means priest. — *Marpha* should be spelt *Marfa*; it is our Martha, but the Russians cannot pronounce *th*; they represent it by *f*. — *Pomeschik* should be *pomyeschik*; it means merely a landed proprietor. — *Stàrosta* is correctly accented; it is the bailiff of a village, also overseer, inspector; it merely means old man (from *stàrost*, old age, *star*, old.). — *Kremlin* is better *kremli*; it is any fortress, but especially the fortress of Moscow. — *Kàtia* is the diminutive of *Yekaterina*, Katherine. — *Kolokol* is pronounced as though it were two syllables, accent on the first. — I am not certain about the correctness of *Teriösha*. It should have no *c*: nor should *Stèscha*."

Page 899. PIETRO OF ABANO.

"Studiando le mie cifre col compasso,

Rilevo che sarò presto sotterra,

Perchè del mio saper si fa gran chiasso,

E gl'ignoranti m' hanno mosso guerra."

Said to have been found in a well at Abano in the last century. They were extemporaneously Englished thus: not as Father Prout chose to prefer them:—

Studying my ciphers with the compass,

I reckon — I soon shall be below-ground;

Because, of my lore folk make great rumpus,

And war on myself makes each dull rogue round.

R. B.

Page 914. CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI.

The subjects of this poem are Queen Christina of Sweden, daughter of Gustavus Adolphus, and her master of horse.

Page 955. WITH DANIEL BARTOLI.

A learned and ingenious writer. "Fu Gesuita e Storico della Compagnia; onde scrisse lunghissime storie, le quali sarebbono lette se non fossero ripiene traboccanti di tutte le superstizioni. . . . Egli vi ha ficcati dentro tanti miracoloni, che diviene una noia insopportabile a chiunque voglia leggere quelle storie: e anche a me, non mi bastò l'animo di proseguire molto avanti." — ANGELO CERUTTI.

III. A LIST OF MR. BROWNING'S  
POEMS AND DRAMAS

ARRANGED IN THE ORDER OF FIRST PUBLICATION IN BOOK FORM

The following list is drawn from the careful Bibliography, prepared by Mr. Thomas J. Wise, and published in *The Athenaeum* for August 11, 25, September 29, October 27, 1894.

1833. Pauline : A Fragment of a Confession.  
1835. Paracelsus.  
1837. Strafford : An Historical Tragedy.  
1840. Sordello.  
1841. Bells and Pomegranates. No. I. Pippa Passes.  
1842. Bells and Pomegranates. No. II. King Victor and King Charles.  
1843. Bells and Pomegranates. No. III. Dramatic Lyrics.

## Contents

## Cavalier Tunes :

- (1) Marching Along.  
(2) Give a Rouse.  
(3) My Wife Gertrude.

Italy and France.  
Camp and Cloister.  
In a Gondola.  
Artemis Prologizes.  
Waring.

## Queen-Worship.

- (1) Rudel and the Lady of Tripoli.  
(2) Cristina.

## Madhouse Cells.

Through the Metidja to Abd-el-Kadr.  
1842.

## The Pied Piper of Hamelin.

1843. Bells and Pomegranates. No. IV. The Return of the Druses. A Tragedy in five Acts.  
1843. Bells and Pomegranates. No. V. A Blot in the 'Scutcheon. A Tragedy in three Acts.  
1844. Bells and Pomegranates. No. VI. Colombe's Birthday. A Play in five Acts.  
1845. Bells and Pomegranates. No. VII. Dramatic Romances and Lyrics.

## Contents

"How they brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix."

Pictor Ignotus.  
Italy in England.  
England in Italy.  
The Lost Leader.  
The Lost Mistress.  
Home Thoughts from Abroad.  
The Tomb at St. Praxed's.  
Garden Fancies :

- (1) The Flower's Name.  
(2) Sibrandus Schafnaburgensis.

## France and Spain :

(1) The Laboratory.  
(2) The Confessional.  
The Flight of the Duchess.  
Earth's Immortalities.

Song : "Nay but you, who do not love her."

The Boy and the Angel.

Night and Morning.

Claret and Tokay.

Saul.

Time's Revenges.

The Glove.

1846. Bells and Pomegranates. No. VIII. and last. Luria ; and A Soul's Tragedy.

1850. Christmas-Eve and Easter-Day.

1855. Cleon.

1855. The Statue and the Bust.

1855. Men and Women. In two volumes.

## Contents. I.

Love among the Ruins.

A Lovers' Quarrel.

Evelyn Hope.

Up at a Villa — down in the City. (As Distinguished by an Italian Person of Quality.)

A Woman's Last Word.

Fra Lippo Lippi.

A Toccata of Galuppi's.

By the Fireside.

Any Wife to Any Husband.

An Epistle containing the Strange Medical Experience of Karshish, the Arab Physician.

Mesmerism.

A Serenade at the Villa.

My Star.

Instans Tyrannus.

A Pretty Woman.

"Childe Roland to the Dark Tower came."

Respectability.

A Light Woman.

The Statue and the Bust.

Love in a Life.

Life in a Love.

How it strikes a Contemporary.

The Last Ride Together.

The Patriot — An Old Story.

Master Hugues of Saxe-Gotha.

Bishop Blougram's Apology.

Memorabilia.

## Contents. II.

Andrea del Sarto. (Called "The Faultless Painter.")

Before.

After.

In Three Days.

In a Year.

Old Pictures in Florence.

In a Balcony. — First Part.

In a Balcony. — Second Part.

In a Balcony. — Third Part.

Saul.

"De Gustibus —"

Women and Roses.

Protus.

Holy-Cross Day. (On which the Jews were forced to attend an Annual Christian Sermon in Rome.)

- The Guardian-Angel: A Picture at Fano.  
 Cleon.  
 The Twins.  
 Popularity.  
 The Heretic's Tragedy. A Middle-Age  
 Interlude.  
 Two in the Campagna.  
 A Grammarian's Funeral.  
 One Way of Love.  
 Another Way of Love.  
 "Transcendentalism:" A Poem in  
 Twelve Books.  
 Misconceptions.  
 One Word More. To E. B. B.  
 1864. Gold Hair: A Legend of Pornic.  
 Dramatis Personæ.

## Contents

- James Lee.  
 Gold Hair: A Legend of Pornic.  
 The Worst of it.  
 Dis Aliter Visum; or, Le Byron de Nos  
 Jours.  
 Too Late.  
 Abt Vogler.  
 Rabbi Ben Ezra.  
 A Death in the Desert.  
 Caliban upon Setebos; or Natural Theo-  
 logy in the Island.  
 Confessions.  
 May and Death.  
 Prospice.  
 Youth and Art.  
 A Face.  
 A Likeness.  
 Mr. Sludge, "The Medium."  
 Apparent Failure.  
 Epilogue.  
 1868. The Ring and the Book.  
 1871. Balaustion's Adventure: Including a  
 Transcript from Euripides.  
 1871. Prince Hohenstiel-Schwangau, Saviour  
 of Society.  
 1872. Fifiue at the Fair.  
 1873. Red Cotton Night-cap Country, or Turf  
 and Towers.  
 1875. Aristophanes' Apology: Including a  
 Transcript from Euripides, Being the  
 Last Adventure of Balaustion.  
 1875. The Inn Album.  
 1876. Pacchiarotto, and How he Worked in  
 Distemper: with other Poems.

## Contents

- Prologue.  
 Of Pacchiarotto, and How he Worked in  
 Distemper.  
 At the "Mermaid."  
 House.  
 Shop.  
 Pisgah-Sights. (1).  
 Pisgah-Sights. (2).  
 Fears and Scruples.  
 Natural Magic.  
 Magical Nature.  
 Bifurcation.  
 Numpholeptos.

- Appearances.  
 St. Martin's Summer.  
 Hervé Riel.  
 A Forgiveness.  
 Cenciája.  
 Filippo Baldinucci on the Privilege of  
 Burial.  
 Epilogue.  
 1877. The Agamemnon of Æschylus.  
 1878. La Saisiaz.  
 The Two Poets of Croisic.  
 1879. Dramatic Idyls.

## Contents

- Martin Relph.  
 Pheidippides.  
 Halbert and Hob.  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch.  
 Tray.  
 Ned Bratts.  
 1880. Dramatic Idyls; Second Series.

## Contents

- Echetlos.  
 Clive.  
 Mulýkeh.  
 Pietro of Abano.  
 Doctor —.  
 Pan and Luna.  
 1883. Jocoseria.

## Contents

- Wanting is — What?  
 Donald.  
 Solomon and Balkis.  
 Cristina and Monaldeschi.  
 Mary Wollstonecraft and Fuseli.  
 Adam, Lilith, and Eve.  
 Ixion.  
 Jochanan Hakkadosh.  
 Never the Time and the Place.  
 Pambo.  
 1884. Ferishtah's Fancies.

## Contents

- Prologue.  
 The Eagle.  
 The Melon-Seller.  
 Shah Abbas.  
 The Family.  
 The Sun.  
 Mihrab Shah.  
 A Camel-Driver.  
 Two Camels.  
 Cherries.  
 Plot Culture.  
 A Pillar at Sebzevar.  
 A Bean-Stripe: also Apple-Eating.  
 Epilogue.  
 1887. Parleyings with certain People of import-  
 ance in their day: To wit: Bernard  
 de Mandeville, Daniel Bartoli, Christo-  
 pher Smart, George Bubb Dodington,  
 Francis Furini, Gerard de Laireesse,  
 and Charles Avison. Introduced by  
 A Dialogue between Apollo and the



- Fates ; concluded by another between  
 John Fust and his Friends.  
 1890. Asolando : Fancies and Facts.

## Contents

Prologue.  
 Rosny.  
 Dubiety.  
 Now.  
 Humility.  
 Poetics.  
 Summum Bonum.  
 A Pearl, A Girl.  
 Speculative.  
 White Witchcraft.  
 Bad Dreams : I.  
 " " II.  
 " " III.

Bad Dreams : IV.  
 Inapprehensiveness.  
 Which ?  
 The Cardinal and the Dog.  
 The Pope and the Net.  
 The Bean-Feast.  
 Muckle-mouth Meg.  
 Arcades Ambo.  
 The Lady and the Painter.  
 Ponte dell' Angelo, Venice.  
 Beatrice Signorini.  
 Flute-Music, with an Accompaniment.  
 " Imperante Augusto natus est — "  
 Development.  
 Rephan.  
 Reverie.  
 Epilogue.



## INDEX OF FIRST LINES OF POEMS

- About that strangest, saddest, sweetest song,  
602.
- A certain neighbor lying sick to death, 932.
- Ah, but — because you were struck blind, could  
bless, 970.
- Ah, but how each loved each, Marquis ! 914.
- Ah, did you once see Shelley plain, 195.
- Ah, George Bubb Dodington Lord Melcombe,  
— no, 961.
- Ah, Love, but a day, 373.
- Ah, the bird-like fluting, 999.
- A king lived long ago, 140.
- All I believed is true, 255.
- All I can say is — I saw it ! 811.
- All June I bound the rose in sheaves, 190.
- All service ranks the same with God, 145.
- All's over then : does truth sound bitter, 170.
- All that I know, 185.
- All the breath and the bloom of the year in the  
bag of one bee, 988.
- Among these latter busts we count by scores, 283.
- And so, here happily we meet, fair friend, 736.
- And so you found that poor room dull, 814.
- "And what might that bold man's announce-  
ment be," 933.
- Anyhow, once full Dervish, youngsters came,  
930.
- A Rabbi told me : On the day allowed, 906.
- A simple ring with a single stone, 988.
- As I ride, as I ride, 165.
- Ask not one least word of praise ! 941.
- "As like as a Hand to another Hand ! " 375.
- At the midnight in the silence of the sleep-time,  
1007.
- "Ay, but, Ferishtah," — a disciple smirked,  
939.
- Ay, this same midnight, by this chair of mine,  
952.
- Beautiful Evelyn Hope is dead ! 171.
- Boot, saddle, to horse, and away ! 163.
- But do not let us quarrel any more, 346.
- But give them me, the mouth, the eyes, the  
brow ! 395.
- Christ God, who savest man, save most, 252.
- Cleon the poet, from the sprinkled isles, 358.
- Come close to me, dear friends ; still closer ;  
thus ! 12.
- Crescenzo, the Pope's Legate at the High  
Council, Trent, 991.
- Dared and done : at last I stand upon the sum-  
mit, Dear and True ! 849.
- Dear and great Angel, would'st thou only leave,  
194.
- Dear, had the world in its caprice, 191.
- Dervish — though yet un-dervished, call him  
so, 929.
- Don, the divinest women that have walked, 955.
- "Enter my palace," if a prince should say, 947.
- Escape me ? 191.
- Eyes, calm beside thee (Lady, couldst thou  
know ! ) 11.
- "Fame !" Yes, I said it and you read it. First,  
859.
- Fear death ? — to feel the fog in my throat, 395.
- Fee, faw, fum ! bubble and squeak ! 281.
- Fire is in the flint : true, once a spark escapes,  
934.
- First I salute this soil of the blessed, river and  
rock, 877.
- Flame at my footfall, Parnassus ! Apollo, 948.
- Flower — I never fancied, jewel — I profess  
you ! 812.
- Flower o' the broom, 342.
- Fortù, Fortù, my beloved one, 260.
- Frowned the Laird on the Lord : So, red-handed  
I catch thee ? 993.
- Give her but a least excuse to love me, 137.
- Going his rounds one day in Ispahan, 920.
- Goldoni — good, gay, sunniest of souls, 910.
- Good, to forgive, 849.
- Grand rough old Martin Luther, 266.
- Grow old along with me ! 383.
- Gr-r-r — there go, my heart's abhorrence ! 167.
- Had I but plenty of money, money enough and  
to spare, 174.
- Hamelin Town's in Brunswick, 268.
- Heap cassia, sandal-buds and stripes, 36.
- "Heigho," yawned one day King Francis, 256.
- Here is a story, shall stir you ! Stand up, Greeks  
dead and gone, 892.
- Here is a thing that happened. Like wild  
beasts whelped, for den, 879.
- Here's my case. Of old I used to love him  
811.
- Here's the garden she walked across, 166.
- Here's to Nelson's memory ! 166.
- Here was I with my arm and heart, 380.
- He was the man — Pope Sixtus, that Fifth, that  
swineherd's son, 992.
- High in the dome, suspended, of Hell, sad  
triumph, behold us, 916.
- Hist, but a word, fair and soft ! 195.
- How I lived, ere my human life began, 1004.
- How of his fate, the Pilgrims' soldier-guide,  
936.
- How strange ! — but, first of all, the little fact,  
974.



How very hard it is to be, 327.  
How well I know what I mean to do, 185.

I am a goddess of the ambrosial courts, 337.  
I am a painter who cannot paint, 137.  
I am indeed the personage you know, 817.  
I am poor brother Lippo, by your leave! 342.  
I and Clive were friends — and why not? 893.  
I could have painted pictures like that youth's, 341.  
I dream of a red-rose tree, 193.  
If a stranger passed the tent of Hóseyñ, he cried "A churl's!" 897.  
If one could have that little head of hers, 396.  
If you and I could change to beasts, what beast should either be? 989.  
I hear a voice, perchance I heard, 22.  
I know a Mount, the gracious Sun perceives, 361.  
I know there shall dawn a day, 1005.  
I leaned on the turf, 374.  
I — "Next Poet?" No, my hearties, 807.  
I only knew one poet in my life, 336.  
I said — Then, dearest, since 't is so, 267.  
Is all our fire of shipwreck wood, 373.  
I send my heart up to thee, all my heart, 262.  
I sprang to the stirrup, and Joris, and he, 164.  
It happened thus: my slab, though new, 990.  
It is a lie — their Priests, their Pope, 169.  
It once might have been, once only, 396.  
It seems as if . . . or did the actual chance, 959.  
It was roses, roses, all the way, 251.  
I've a Friend, over the sea, 258.  
I will be happy if but for once, 987.  
I will be quiet and talk with you, 374.  
I wish that when you died last May, 395.  
I wonder do you feel to-day, 189.

John, Master of the Temple of God, 280.  
June was not over, 190.  
Just for a handful of silver he left us, 164.

Karshish, the picker-up of learning's crumbs, 338.  
Kentish Sir Byng stood for his King, 163.  
King Charles, and who'll do him right now? 163.  
"Knowledge deposed, then!" — groaned whom that most grieved, 940.

Last night I saw you in my sleep, 989.  
Let's contend no more, Love, 171.  
Let them fight it out, friend! things have gone too far, 193.  
Let the watching lids wink! 130.  
Let us begin and carry up this corpse, 279.  
"Look, I strew beans," 942.

Man I am and man would be, Love — merest man and nothing more, 933.  
May I print, Shelley, how it came to pass, 821.  
Morning, evening, noon and night, 273.  
Moses the Meek was thirty cubits high, 927.  
My father was a scholar and knew Greek, 1002.  
My first thought was, he lied in every word, 287.  
My grandfather says he remembers he saw, when a youngster long ago, 875.

My heart sank with our Claret-flask, 166.  
My love, this is the bitterest, that thou, 187.

Nay but you, who do not love her, 170.  
Nay, *that*, Furini, never I at least, 964.  
Never any more, 192.  
Never the time and the place, 928.  
Nobly, nobly Cape Saint Vincent to the North-west died away, 179.  
"No, boy, we must not" — so began, 823.  
No, for I'll save it! Seven years since, 412.  
No more wine? then we'll push back chairs, and talk, 349.  
No protesting, dearest! 814.  
Not with my Soul, Love! — bid no soul like mine, 940.  
Now, don't, sir! Don't expose me! Just this once! 397.  
Now that I, tying thy glass mask tightly, 168.

O bell' andare, 70.  
Of the million or two, more or less, 254.  
Oh, but is it not hard, Dear? 916.  
Oh Galuppi, Baldassare, this is very sad to find! 175.  
Oh, good gigantic smile o' the brown old earth, 375.  
Oh Love! Love, thou that from the eyes diffus'est, 874.  
Oh, Love — no, Love! All the noise below, Love, 946.  
Oh, the beautiful girl, too white, 377.  
Oh, to be in England, 179.  
Oh, what a dawn of day! 172.  
Oh worthy of belief I hold it was, 909.  
Once I saw a chemist take a pinch of powder, 938.  
One day, it thundered and lightened, 916.  
Only the prism's obstruction shows aright, 395.  
On the first of the Feast of Feasts, 413.  
On the sea and at the Hogue, sixteen hundred ninety-two, 815.  
O the old wall here! How I could pass, 802.  
Others may need new life in Heaven, 988.  
O trip and skip, Elvire! Link arm in arm with me! 702.  
Out of the little chapel I burst, 316.  
Out of your whole life give but a moment! 988.  
Overhead the treetops meet, 144.  
Over the ball of it, 810.  
Over the sea our galleys went, 38.

Past we glide, and past, and past! 262.  
Pauline, mine own, bend o'er me — thy soft breast, 2.  
*Petrus Aponensis* — there was a magician! 899.  
Plague take all your pedants, say I! 167.  
Pray, Reader, have you eaten ortolans, 929.

Query: was ever a quainter, 802.  
Quoth an inquirer, Praise the Merciful! 934.  
Quoth one: Sir, solve a scruple! No true sage, 937.

Room after room, 191.  
Round the cape of a sudden came the sea, 170.  
Round us the wild creatures, overhead the trees, 930.

Said Abner, "At last thou art come! Ere I tell, ere thou speak, 179.  
 Savage I was sitting in my house, late, lone, 735.  
 See, as the prettiest graves will do in time, 170.  
 Shakespeare! — to such name's sounding, what succeeds, 947.  
 Shall I sonnet-sing you about myself? 808.  
 She should never have looked at me, 169.  
 Sighed Rawdon Brown: Yes, I'm departing, Toni! 947.  
 Sing me a hero! Quench my thirst, 887.  
 So far as our story approaches the end, 267.  
 So, friend, your shop was all your house! 809.  
 So, I shall see her in three days, 192.  
 Solomon King of the Jews and the Queen of Sheba, Balkis, 913.  
 Some people hang portraits up, 396.  
 "So say the foolish!" Say the foolish so, Love? 988.  
 So, the head aches and the limbs are faint! 936.  
 So, the three Court-ladies began, 991.  
 So, the year's done with! 170.  
 Stand still, true poet that you are! 195.  
 Still ailing, Wind? Wilt be appeased or no? 374.  
 Still you stand, still you listen, still you smile! 812.  
 Stop, let me have the truth of that! 379.  
 Stop playing, poet! May a brother speak? 335.  
 Stop rowing! This one of our bye-canal, 994.  
 Such a starved bank of moss, 859.  
 Supposed of Pamphylax the Antiochene, 385.  
 Suppose that we part (work done, comes play), 923.  
 Take the cloak from his face, and at first, 194.  
 That fawn-skin-dappled hair of hers, 190.  
 That oblong book 's the Album; hand it here! 773.  
 That second time they hunted me, 258.  
 That 's my last Duchess painted on the wall, 252.  
 That was I, you heard last night, 189.  
 The bee with his comb, 144.  
 The blind man to the maiden said, 910.  
 The fancy I had to-day, 701.  
 The gods I ask deliverance from these labors, 831.  
 The gray sea and the long black land, 170.  
 The Lord, we look to once for all, 280.  
 The morn when first it thunders in March, 176.  
 The moth's kiss, first! 262.  
 The Poet's age is sad: for why? 987.  
 "The poets pour us wine —" 827.  
 The rain set early in to-night, 286.  
 There is nothing to remember in me, 376.  
 There 's a palace in Florence, the world knows well, 283.  
 There 's a woman like a dew-drop, she 's so purer than the purest, 220.  
 There 's heaven above, and night by night, 341.  
 There they are, my fifty men and women, 361.  
 The swallow has set her six young on the rail, 373.  
 The year 's at the spring, 133.  
 "They tell me, your carpenters," quoth I to my friend the Russ, 880.

This is a spray the Bird clung to, 189.  
 This now, this other story makes amends, 918.  
 This strange thing happened to a painter once, 996.  
 This was my dream; I saw a Forest, 990.  
 Thou, whom these eyes saw never! Say friends true, 948.  
 Thus I wrote in London, musing on my betters, 910.  
 Touch him ne'er so lightly, into song he broke, 910.  
 'T was Bedford Special Assize, one daft Midsummer's Day, 887.  
 Up jumped Tokay on our table, 166.  
 Up, up, up — next step of the staircase, 979.  
 Vanity, saith the preacher, vanity! 348.  
 Verse-making was least of my virtues: I viewed with despair, 939.  
 Wanting is — what? 911.  
 We two stood simply friend-like side by side, 991.  
 We were two lovers; let me lie by her, 812.  
 What are we two? 263.  
 What girl but, having gathered flowers, 988.  
 What, he on whom our voices unanimously ran, 992.  
 What, I disturb thee at thy morning meal, 938.  
 What is he buzzing in my ears? 394.  
 What it was struck the terror into me? 1001.  
 What 's become of Waring, 264.  
 When I vexed you and you chid me, 937.  
 Where the quiet-colored end of evening smiles, 171.  
 Who hears of Helen's Tower, may dream perchance, 601.  
 Who will, may hear Sordello's story told, 75.  
 "Why?" Because all I haply can and do, 948.  
 Why from the world, Ferishtah smiled, should thanks, 946.  
 Will sprawl, now that the heat of day is best, 392.  
 Will you hear my story also, 911.  
 Wind, wave, and bark, bear Euthukles and me, 628.  
 Wish no word unspoken, want no look away, 930.  
 Woe, he went galloping into the war, 987.  
 Would a man 'scape the rod? 372.  
 Would it were I had been false, not you! 378.  
 Would that the structure brave, the manifold music I build, 382.  
 Yet womanhood you reverence, 993.  
 "You are sick, that 's sure," — they say, 892.  
 You blame me that I ran away? 993.  
 You groped your way across my room i' the drear dark dead of night, 932.  
 You have seen better days, dear? So have I, 682.  
 You in the flesh and here, 989.  
 You know, we French stormed Ratisbon, 251.  
 You 'll love me yet! — and I can tarry, 142.  
 You 're my friend, 271.  
 Your ghost will walk, you lover of trees, 178.





## GENERAL INDEX OF TITLES

*[The titles of major works and general divisions are set in SMALL CAPITALS.]*

- Abt Vogler, (after he has been Extemporizing upon the Musical Instrument of his Invention), 382.  
Adam, Lilith, and Eve, 916.  
After, 194.  
AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS, THE, 830.  
Andrea del Sarto, 346.  
Another Way of Love, 190.  
Any Wife to Any Husband, 187.  
Apollo and the Fates, 948.  
Apparent Failure, 412.  
Appearances, 814.  
Arcades Ambo, 993.  
ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY, 628.  
Artemis Prologizes, 337.  
ASOLANDO, 986.  
At the "Mermaid," 807.  
  
Bad Dreams, 989.  
BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE, 602.  
Bean-Feast, The, 992.  
Bean-Stripe, A : also Apple-Eating, 942.  
Beatrice Signorini, 996.  
Before, 193.  
Ben Karshook's Wisdom, 372.  
Bernard de Mandeville, Parleyings with, 952.  
Bifurcation, 812.  
Bishop Blougram's Apology, 349.  
Bishop, The, orders his Tomb at Saint Praxed's Church, 348.  
Blind Man to the Maiden, The, 910.  
BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON, A, 216.  
Boot and Saddle, 163.  
Boy and the Angel, The, 253.  
By the Fireside, 185.  
  
Caliban upon Setebos, 392.  
Camel-Driver, A, 936.  
Cardinal and the Dog, The, 991.  
Cavalier Tunes, 163.  
Cenciaja, 820.  
Charles Avison, Parleyings with, 974.  
Cherries, 938.  
"Childe Roland to the Dark Tower came," 287.  
CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY, 316.  
Christopher Smart, Parleyings with, 959.  
Cleon, 358.  
Clive, 893.  
COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY, 230.  
Confessional, The, 169.  
Confessions, 394.  
Count Gismond, 252.  
Cristina, 169.  
Cristina and Monaldeschi, 914.  
  
Daniel Bartoli, Parleyings with, 955.  
Deaf and Dumb, 395.  
Death in the Desert, A, 385.  
"De Gustibus," 178.  
Development, 1002.  
Dis Aliter Visum, 379.  
Doctor —, 906.  
Donald, 911.  
DRAMATIC IDYLS, 875.  
DRAMATIC LYRICS, 163.  
DRAMATIC ROMANCES, 251.  
DRAMATIS PERSONÆ, 373.  
Dubiety, 987.  
  
Eagle, The, 929.  
Earth's Immortalities, 170.  
Easter-Day, 327.  
Echetlos, 892.  
Englishman in Italy, The, 260.  
Epilogue (to Asolando), 1007.  
Epilogue (to Dramatis Personæ), 413.  
Epilogue (to Ferishtah's Fancies), 946.  
Epilogue (to *Fine at the Fair*), 735.  
Epilogue (to *Pachiarotto*), 827.  
Epistle, An, containing the Strange Medical Experience of Karshish, the Arab Physician, 338.  
Epitaph on Levi Lincoln Thaxter, 947.  
Eurydice to Orpheus, 395.  
Evelyn Hope, 171.  
  
Face, A, 396.  
Fame, 170.  
Family, The, 922.  
Fears and Scruples, 811.  
FERISHTAH'S FANCIES, 929.  
FINE AT THE FAIR, 701.  
Filippo Balducci on the Privilege of Burial, 823.  
Flight of the Duchess, The, 271.  
Flower's Name, The, 166.  
Flute-Music, with an Accompaniment, 999.  
Forgiveness, A, 817.  
Founder of the Feast, The, 947.  
Fra Lippo Lippi, 342.  
Francis Furini, Parleyings with, 964.  
Fust and his Friends, 979.  
  
Garden Fancies, 166.  
George Bubb Dodington, Parleyings with, 961.  
Gerard de Lairesse, Parleyings with, 970.  
Give a Rouse, 163.  
Glove, The, 256.  
Gold Hair, 376.

- Goldoni, 910.  
 Grammarian's Funeral, A, 279.  
 Guardian Angel, The, 194.
- Halbert and Hob, 879.  
 Helen's Tower, 601.  
 Herakles, 660.  
 Heretic's Tragedy, The, 280.  
 Hervé Riel, 815.  
 Holy-Cross Day, 281.  
 Home-Thoughts, from Abroad, 179.  
 Home-Thoughts, from the Sea, 179.  
 House, 808.  
 How it strikes a Contemporary, 336.  
 "How they brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix," 164.  
 Humility, 988.
- "Imperante Augusto Natus Est — " 1001.  
 IN A BALCONY, 364.  
 In a Gondola, 262.  
 Inapprehensiveness, 991.  
 In a Year, 192.  
 Incident of the French Camp, 251.  
 INN ALBUM, THE, 773.  
 Instans Tyrannus, 254.  
 In Three Days, 192.  
 Italian in England, The, 258.  
 Ivàn Ivànovitch, 880.  
 Ixion, 916.
- James Lee's Wife, 373.  
 Jochanan Hakkadosh, 918.  
 JOCOSERIA, 911.  
 Johannes Agricola in Meditation, 341.
- KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES, 145.
- Laboratory, The, 168.  
 Lady and the Painter, The, 993.  
 LA SAISIAZ, 849.  
 Last Ride Together, The, 267.  
 Life in a Love, 191.  
 Light Woman, A, 267.  
 Likeness, A, 396.  
 Lost Leader, The, 164.  
 Lost Mistress, The, 170.  
 Love, 170.  
 Love among the Ruins, 171.  
 Love in a Life, 191.  
 Lovers' Quarrel, A, 172.  
 LURLA, 299.
- Magical Nature, 812.  
 Marching Along, 163.  
 Martin Relph, 875.  
 Mary Wollstonecraft and Fuseli, 916.  
 Master Hugues of Saxe-Gotha, 195.  
 May and Death, 395.  
 Meeting at Night, 170.  
 Melon-Seller, The, 930.  
 Memorabilia, 195.  
 MEN AND WOMEN, 335.  
 Mesmerism, 255.  
 Misconceptions, 189.  
 Mīhrab Shah, 934.  
 Mr. Sludge, "the Medium," 397.  
 Muckle-Mouth Meg, 993.
- Mulýkeh, 897.  
 My Last Duchess, 252.  
 My Star, 184.
- Names, The, 947.  
 Nationality in Drinks, 166.  
 Natural Magic, 811.  
 Ned Bratts, 887.  
 Never the Time and the Place, 928.  
 Now, 988.  
 Numpholeptos, 812.
- Oh Love ! Love, 874.  
 Old Pictures in Florence, 176.  
 One Way of Love, 190.  
 One Word More, 361.
- PACCHIAROTTO, OF, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER, 802.  
 Pambo, 928.  
 Pan and Luna, 909.  
 PARACELSUS, 12.  
 PARLEYINGS WITH CERTAIN PEOPLE OF IMPORTANCE IN THEIR DAY, 948.  
 Parting at Morning, 170.  
 Patriot, The, 251.  
 PAULINE, 1.  
 Pearl, a Girl, A, 988.  
 Pheidippides, 877.  
 Pictor Ignotus, 341.  
 Pied Piper of Hamelin, The, 268.  
 Pietro of Abano, 899.  
 Pillar at Sebzevar, A, 940.  
 PIPPA PASSES, 128.  
 Pisgah-Sights, 810.  
 Plot-Culture, 739.  
 Poetics, 988.  
 Ponte Dell' Angelo, Venice, 994.  
 Pope and the Net, The, 992.  
 Popularity, 195.  
 Porphyria's Lover, 286.  
 Pretty Woman, A, 190.  
 PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWANGAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY, 681.  
 Prologue (to Asolando), 987.  
 Prologue (to Ferishtah's Fancies), 929.  
 Prologue (to Fifine at the Fair), 701.  
 Prologue (to Pacchiarotto), 802.  
 Prospice, 395.  
 Protus, 283.
- Rabbi Ben Ezra, 383.  
 Rawdon Brown, 947.  
 RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY ; OR TURF AND TOWERS, 726.  
 Rephan, 1003.  
 Respectability, 191.  
 RETURN OF THE DRUSES, THE, 197.  
 Reverie, 1005.  
 RING AND THE BOOK, THE, 414.  
 Rosny, 987.  
 Rudel to the Lady of Tripoli, 361.
- St. Martin's Summer, 814.  
 Saul, 179.  
 Serenade at the Villa, A, 189.  
 Shah Abbas, 930.  
 Shop, 809.

- Sibrandus Schafnaburgensis, 167.  
 Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister, 167.  
 Solomon and Balkis, 913.  
 Song: "Nay but you, who do not love her," 170.  
 Sonnet: "Eyes, calm beside thee (Lady, couldst  
     thou know!)," 11.  
 SORDELLO, 74.  
 SOUL'S TRAGEDY, A, 289.  
 Speculative, 988.  
 Statue and the Bust, The, 283.  
 STRAFFORD, 49.  
 Summum Bonum, 988.  
 Sun, The, 933.  
  
 Thaxter, Levi Lincoln, Epitaph on, 947.  
 Through the Metidja to Abd-el-Kadr, 165.  
 Time's Revenges, 258.  
 Toccata of Galuppi's, A, 175.  
 Too Late, 380.  
 "Touch him ne'er so lightly," 910.  
  
 "Transcendentalism: A Poem in Twelve  
     Books," 335.  
 Tray, 887.  
 Twins, The, 266.  
 Two Camels, 937.  
 Two in the Campagna, 189.  
 TWO POETS OF CROISIC, THE, 859.  
  
 Up at a Villa — Down in the City, 174.  
  
 Wanting is — What? 911.  
 Waring, 264.  
 Which? 991.  
 White Witchcraft, 989.  
 Why I am a Liberal, 948.  
 Woman's Last Word, A, 171.  
 Women and Roses, 193.  
 Worst of It, The, 378.  
  
 Youth and Art, 396.













BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 08816 942 8

# Cambridge Editions

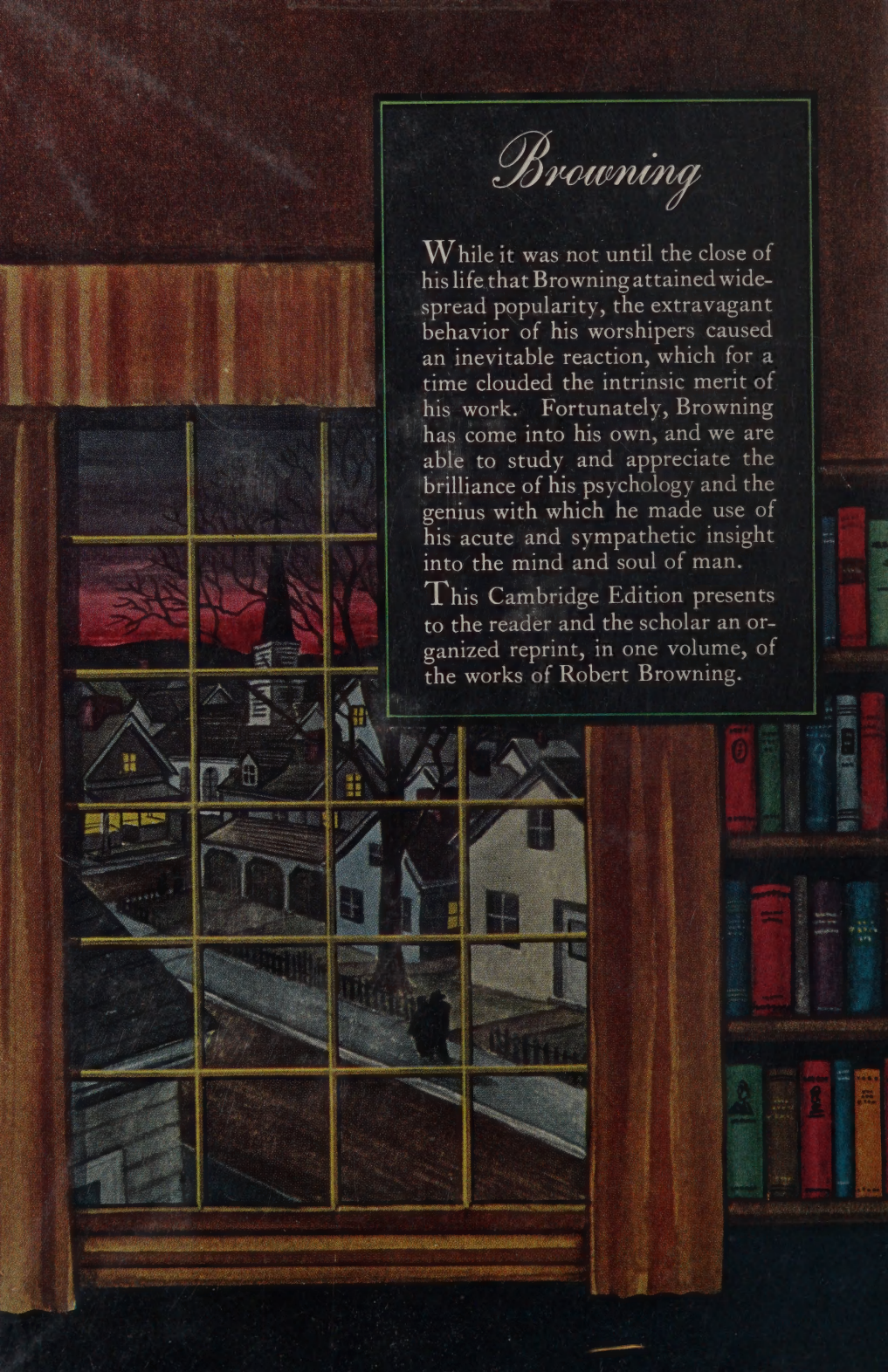
THE Cambridge Editions have hitherto been composed of complete one-volume editions of major English and American poets. The careful and scholarly editing attached to each volume has made the Cambridge name a byword in household and school libraries.

Now, after long consideration, the publishers have decided to add a number of prose writers to this imposing gallery of Cambridge poets. Each prose volume will contain the selected works of one man, chosen because his writings have had a continuing impact on present-day thinking. By the same token, contemporary writers will not be considered for this series, until there has been time for a later generation to test the value of what they wrote.

Outstanding scholars, with a demonstrated ability to write, will select and edit these editions with a comprehensive introduction and biographical sketch of each author. THE WORKS OF THOREAU, selected and edited by Henry Seidel Canby, is the first volume to be published. It sets the standard for each succeeding volume that will occupy a place on the Cambridge bookshelf.

Every volume will appear in a binding of attractive and enduring proportions, designed for the bookshelf rather than the pocket.





## *Browning*

While it was not until the close of his life that Browning attained widespread popularity, the extravagant behavior of his worshipers caused an inevitable reaction, which for a time clouded the intrinsic merit of his work. Fortunately, Browning has come into his own, and we are able to study and appreciate the brilliance of his psychology and the genius with which he made use of his acute and sympathetic insight into the mind and soul of man.

This Cambridge Edition presents to the reader and the scholar an organized reprint, in one volume, of the works of Robert Browning.